



Portrait of a man, likely a historical figure, wearing a dark jacket and a white shirt. The portrait is framed in an oval.

THE  
WORKS  
OF  
BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER,

With an Introduction

BY  
GEORGE DARLEY.



LONDON  
EDWARD MONKS, LOWER STREET.  
MDCCLXXXIX.

Digitized by Google

1079.

THE  
WORKS  
OF  
BEAUMONT AND FLETCHER.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION

BY  
GEORGE DARLEY.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:  
EDWARD MOXON, DOVER STREET.

MDCCCXL.

LONDON :  
BRADBURY AND EVANS, PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.



# CONTENTS

OF

## VOLUME THE SECOND.

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| THE PROPHETESS . . . . .                         | 1    |
| THE QUEEN OF CORINTH . . . . .                   | 23   |
| BONDUCA . . . . .                                | 47   |
| THE KNIGHT OF THE BURNING PESTLE. . . . .        | 73   |
| THE DOUBLE MARRIAGE . . . . .                    | 98   |
| THE KNIGHT OF MALTA . . . . .                    | 126  |
| LOVE'S CURE; OR, THE MARTIAL MAID . . . . .      | 154  |
| WOMEN PLEASED . . . . .                          | 176  |
| THE WOMAN'S PRIZE; OR, THE TAMER TAMED . . . . . | 203  |
| THE ISLAND PRINCESS . . . . .                    | 232  |
| THE NOBLE GENTLEMAN . . . . .                    | 259  |
| THE COXCOMB . . . . .                            | 282  |
| THE SEA-VOYAGE . . . . .                         | 308  |
| WIT AT SEVERAL WEAPONS . . . . .                 | 329  |
| THE FAIR MAID OF THE INN . . . . .               | 356  |
| CUPID'S REVENGE . . . . .                        | 381  |

|  | PAGE |
|--|------|
| THIERRY AND THEODORET . . . . .  | 405  |
| THE WOMAN-HATER . . . . .  | 428  |
| THE NICE VALOUR; OR. THE PASSIONATE MADMAN . . . . .   | 454  |
| THE HONEST MAN'S FORTUNE . . . . .   | 473  |
| FOUR PLAYS. OR MORAL REPRESENTATIONS, IN ONE . . . . .   | 500  |
| THE TRIUMPH OF HONOUR . . . . .  | 502  |
| THE TRIUMPH OF LOVE . . . . .  | 508  |
| THE TRIUMPH OF DEATH . . . . .   | 515  |
| THE TRIUMPH OF TIME . . . . .  | 522  |
| THE FAITHFUL FRIENDS . . . . .   | 526  |
| THE TWO NOBLE KINSMEN . . . . .  | 553  |
| THE MAID IN THE MILL . . . . .   | 581  |
| LOVE'S PILGRIMAGE . . . . .  | 607  |
| THE LOVERS' PROGRESS . . . . .   | 635  |
| THE NIGHT-WALKER; OR. THE LITTLE THIEF . . . . .   | 661  |
| THE MASQUE OF THE INNER-TEMPLE AND GRAY'S INN. GRAY'S INN<br>AND THE INNER-TEMPLE . . . . .              | 686  |
| <b>RECOMMENDATORY POEMS—</b>   |      |
| TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFUL THE WORTHILY HONOURED ROBERT PARKHURST.<br>ESQ., BY LAWRENCE BLAIKLOCK . . . . . | 693  |
| IN LAUDEM AUTHORIS. BY W. B. . . . .   | 693  |
| TO THE AUTHOR. BY SIR JOHN BRAUMONT . . . . .  | 693  |
| TO THE AUTHOR. BY JOHN FLETCHER . . . . .  | 693  |
| <b>BEAUMONT'S POEMS—</b>   |      |
| TO THE TRUE PATRONESS OF ALL POETRY, CALLIOPE . . . . .  | 694  |
| THE AUTHOR TO THE READER . . . . .   | 694  |
| SALMACIS AND HERMAPHRODITUS; OR, THE HERMAPHRODITE. FROM OVID . . . . .                                  | 694  |
| THE REMEDY OF LOVE. FROM OVID . . . . .  | 701  |
| THE CONCLUSION . . . . .   | 705  |
| AN ELEGY ON THE LADY MARKEHAM . . . . .  | 705  |

| BEAUMONT'S POEMS ( <i>continued</i> )—   | PAGE |
|--|------|
| A CHARM . . . . .  | 705  |
| ON THE MARRIAGE OF A BEAUTROUS YOUNG GENTLEWOMAN WITH AN ANCIENT MAN                   | 706  |
| THE GLANCE . . . . .   | 706  |
| A SONNET . . . . .   | 706  |
| TRUE BEAUTY . . . . .  | 706  |
| THE INDIFFERENT . . . . .  | 707  |
| LOVE'S FREEDOM . . . . .   | 707  |
| AN EPITAPH . . . . .   | 707  |
| A SONNET . . . . .   | 707  |
| A FUNERAL ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF THE LADY PENELOPE CLIFTON . . . . .                    | 708  |
| THE EXAMINATION OF HIS MISTRESS'S PERFECTIONS . . . . .                                | 708  |
| TO THE MUTABLE FAIR . . . . .  | 708  |
| PIE ON LOVE . . . . .  | 709  |
| SECRECY PROTESTED . . . . .  | 709  |
| ETERNITY OF LOVE PROTESTED . . . . .   | 709  |
| THE WILLING PRISONER TO HIS MISTRESS . . . . .   | 709  |
| ON THE TOMBS IN WESTMINSTER-ABBEY . . . . .  | 709  |
| MR. FRANCIS BEAUMONT'S LETTER TO BEN JONSON . . . . .                                  | 710  |
| AD COMITISSAM RUTLANDIÆ . . . . .  | 710  |
| AN ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF THE VIRTUOUS LADY ELIZABETH, COUNTESS OF<br>RUTLAND . . . . . | 711  |
| TO MY DEAR FRIEND M. BEN JONSON, UPON HIS FOX. 1605 . . . . .                          | 712  |
| UPON THE SILENT WOMAN. 1609 . . . . .  | 712  |
| TO MY FRIEND M. BEN JONSON, UPON HIS CATILINE. 1611 . . . . .                          | 712  |
| TO MY FRIEND MR. JOHN FLETCHER, UPON HIS FAITHFUL SHEPHERDESS . . . . .                | 712  |
| GLOSSARY . . . . .   | 713  |

# THE PROPHETESS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CHARINUS, *Emperor of Rome.*  
COSMOE, *King of Persia.*  
DIOCLES, *of a Private Soldier elected Co-Emperor, afterwards called DIOCLESIAN.*  
MAXIMINIAN, *Nephew to DIOCLES, and Emperor by his Donation.*  
VOLUTUS APER, *Murderer of NUMERIANUS, the late Emperor.*  
NIGER, *a noble Soldier, Servant to the Emperor.*  
CANURIUS, *a Captain, and creature of APER.*  
GITA, *a Jester, Servant to DIOCLES, a merry Knave.*  
Persian Lords.  
Senators.  
Soldiers.  
Guard.  
Suitors.

Ambassadors.  
Lictors.  
Flamen.  
Countrymen.  
Shepherds.  
Attendants.  
Spirits.  
Chorus.

AURELLA, *Sister to CHARINUS.*  
CASANA, *Sister to COSMOE, a Captive, waiting on AURELLA.*  
DELPHIA, *a Prophetess.*  
DRUSILLA, *Niece to DELPHIA, in Love with DIOCLES.*  
A She-Devil.

SCENE,—ROME, AND OTHER PARTS OF THE EMPIRE; IN PART OF THE  
FOURTH ACT, PERSIA.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—ROME. *An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter CHARINUS, AURELLA, and NIGER.*

*Char.* You buz into my head strange likelihoods,  
And fill me full of doubts: But what proofs, Niger,  
What certainties, that my most noble brother  
Came to his end by murder? Tell me that;  
Assure me by some circumstance.

*Niger.* I will, sir;  
And as I tell you truth, so the gods prosper me!  
I have often named this Aper.

*Char.* True, you have done;  
And in mysterious senses I have heard you  
Break out o' th' sudden, and abruptly.

*Niger.* True, sir;  
Fear of your unbelief, and the time's giddiness,  
Made me I durst not then go further. So your  
    grace please,  
Out of your wonted goodness, to give credit,  
I shall unfold the wonder.

*Aur.* Do it boldly:  
You shall have both our hearty loves and hearings.  
*Niger.* This Aper then, this too-much-honour'd  
    villain,

(For he deserves no mention of a good man)—  
Great sir, give ear—this most ungrateful, spiteful,  
Above the memory of mankind mischievous,  
With his own bloody hands—

*Char.* Take heed!

*Niger.* I am in, sir;  
And, if I make not good my story—

*Aur.* Forward!

I see a truth would break out: Be not fearful.

*Niger.* I say, this Aper, and his damn'd ambi-  
    tion,

Cut off your brother's hopes, his life, and fortunes:  
The honour'd Numerianus fell by him,  
Fell basely, most untimely, and most treacherously;  
For, in his litter, as he bore him company,  
Most privately and cunningly he kill'd him.  
Yet still he fills the faithful soldiers' ears  
With stories of his weakness; of his life;  
That he dare not venture to appear in open,  
And shew his warlike face among the soldiers,  
The tenderness and weakness of his eyes,  
Being not able to endure the sun yet:  
Slave that he is, he gives out this infirmity  
(Because he would dispatch his honour too)  
To arise from wantonness, and love of women;  
And thus he juggles still.

*Aur.* Oh, most pernicious,  
Most bloody, and most base! Alas, dear brother,  
Art thou accused, and after death thy memory  
Loaden with shames and lies? those pious tears  
Thou daily shower'st upon my father's monument,  
(When in the Persian expedition  
He fell unfortunately by a stroke of thunder)  
Made thy defame and sins? those wept-out eyes,  
The fair examples of a noble nature,  
Those holy drops of love, turn'd by depravers  
(Malicious poison'd tongues) to thy abuses?  
We must not suffer this.

*Char.* It shews a truth now:

And sure this Aper is not right nor honest,  
He will not now come near me.

*Niger.* No; he dare not:  
He has an inmate here, that's call'd a conscience,  
Bids him keep off.

*Char.* My brother honour'd him,  
Made him, first, captain of his guard, his next  
friend;

Then to my mother (to assure him nearer)  
He made him husband.

*Niger.* And withal ambitious;  
For when he trod so nigh, his false feet itch'd, sir,  
To step into the state.

*Aur.* If you believe, brother,  
Aper a bloody knave, as 'tis apparent,  
Let's leave disputing, and do something noble.

*Char.* Sister, be ruled. I am not yet so powerful  
To meet him in the field: He has under him  
The flower of all the empire, and the strength,  
The Britain and the German cohorts; pray you be  
patient.—

*Niger,* how stands the soldier to him?

*Niger.* In fear more, sir,  
Than love or honour: He has lost their fair  
affections,

By his most covetous and greedy griping.  
Are you desirous to do something on him,  
That all the world may know you loved your  
And do it safely too, without an army? [brother

*Char.* Most willingly.

*Niger.* Then send out a proscription,  
Send suddenly; and to that man that executes it,  
(I mean that brings his head) add a fair payment,  
No common sum: Then you shall see, I fear not,  
Even from his own camp, from those men that  
follow him,

Follow and flatter him, we shall find one,  
And, if he miss, one hundred, that will venture it.

*Aur.* For his reward, (it shall be so, dear brother,  
So far I'll honour him that kills the villain;  
For so far runs my love to my dead brother)  
Let him be what he will, base, old, or crooked,  
He shall have me: Nay, which is more, I'll love  
I will not be denied. [him.

*Char.* You shall not, sister:  
But you shall know, my love shall go along too.—  
See a proscription drawn; and for his recompense,  
My sister, and half partner in the empire;  
And I will keep my word.

*Aur.* Now you do bravely.

*Niger.* And, though it cost my life, I'll see it  
publish'd.

*Char.* Away then, for the business.

*Niger.* I am gone, sir:  
You shall have all dispatch'd to-night.

*Char.* Be prosperous.

*Aur.* And let the villain fall.

*Niger.* Fear nothing, madam. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*A Room in the House of the  
Prophetess.*

*Enter DELPHIA and DRUSILLA.*

*Drus.* 'Tis true, that Diocles is courteous,  
And of a pleasant nature, sweet and temperate;  
His cousin Maximinian, proud and bloody.

*Delp.* Yes, and mistrustful too, my girl: Take  
heed:

Although he seem to love thee, and affect,

Like the more courtier, curious compliment,  
Yet have a care.

*Drus.* You know all my affection,  
And all my heart-desires, are set on Diocles:  
But, aunt, how coldly he requites this courtesy,  
How dull and heavily he looks upon me!  
Although I woo him sometimes beyond modesty,  
Beyond a virgin's care, how still he slights me!  
And puts me still off with your prophecy,  
And the performance of your late prediction,  
That when he is emperor, then he will marry me!  
Alas, what hope of that?

*Delp.* Peace, and be patient;  
For though he be now a man most miserable,  
Of no rank, nor no badge of honour on him,  
Bred low and poor, no eye of favour shining;  
And though my sure prediction of his rising,  
Which can no more fail than the day or night does,  
Nay, let him be asleep, will overtake him,  
Have found some rubs and stops, yet (hear me,  
niece,

And hear me with a faith.) it shall come to him.  
I'll tell thee the occasion.

*Drus.* Do, good aunt;  
For yet I am ignorant.

*Delp.* Chiding him one day,  
For being too near and sparing for a soldier,  
Too griping, and too greedy, he made answer,  
"When I am Cæsar, then I will be liberal:"  
I presently, inspired with holy fire,  
And my prophetic spirit burning in me,  
Gave answer from the gods; and this it was:  
*Imperator eris Roma, cum Aprum grandem in-*  
*terfeceris:*

"Thou shalt be emperor, oh Diocles,  
When thou hast kill'd a mighty boar." From that  
time,

As giving credit to my words, he has employ'd  
Much of his life in hunting: Many boars,  
Hideous and fierce, with his own hands he has  
But yet not lighted on the fatal one, [kill'd too,  
Should raise him to the empire. Be not sad, niece;  
Ere long he shall. Come; let's go entertain him:  
For by this time, I guess, he comes from hunting:  
And, by my art, I find this very instant  
Some great design's a-foot.

*Drus.* The gods give good, aunt! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*The Street before the same.*

*Enter DIOCLES, MAXIMINIAN, and GETA carrying a Boar.*

*Dio.* Lay down the boar.

*Geta.* With all my heart; I am weary on't:  
I shall turn Jew, if I carry many such burdens.  
Do you think, master, to be emperor  
With killing swine? You may be an honest butcher,  
Or allied to a seemly family of souse-wives.  
Can you be such an ass, my reverend master,  
To think these springs of pork will shoot up Cæsars?

*Mari.* The fool says true.

*Dio.* Come, leave your fooling, sirrah,  
And think of what thou shalt be when I am emperor.

*Geta.* 'Would it would come with thinking! for  
then o' my conscience

I should be at least a senator.

*Mari.* A sower;

For that's a place more fitted to thy nature,  
If there could be such an expectation.  
Or, say the devil could perform this wonder,

Can such a rascal as thou art hope for honour?  
Such a log-carrying lout?

*Geta.* Yes; and bear it too,  
And bear it swimmingly. I am not the first ass, sir,  
Has borne good office, and perform'd it reverently.

*Dio.* Thou being the son of a tiler, canst thou hope  
To be a senator?

*Geta.* Thou being the son of a tanner, canst thou  
To be an emperor? [hope]

*Dio.* Thou say'st true, *Geta*; there's a stop  
But yet the bold and virtuous— [indeed:]

*Geta.* You are right, master,  
Right as a gun! For we, the virtuous,  
Though we be kennel-rakers, scabs, and scoundrels,  
We, the discreet and bold—And yet, now I re-  
We tilers may deserve to be senators, [member it,  
(And there we step before you thick-skinn'd  
tanners)]

For we are born three stories high; no base ones,  
None of your groundlings, master.

*Dio.* I like thee well;  
Thou hast a good mind, as I have, to this honour.

*Geta.* As good a mind, sir, of a simple plaisterer:  
And, when I come to execute my office,  
Then you shall see—

*Mari.* What?

*Geta.* An officer in fury,  
An officer as he ought to be. Do you laugh at it?  
Is a senator, in hope, worth no more reverence?  
By these hands, I'll clap you by the heels the first  
hour of it!

*Mari.* O' my conscience, the fellow believes!  
*Dio.* Ay, do, do, *Geta*;

For if I once be emperor—  
*Geta.* Then will I

(For wise men must be had to prop the republic)  
Not bate you a single ace of a sound senator.

*Dio.* But what shall we do the whilst?  
*Geta.* Kill swine, and souse 'em,  
And eat 'em when we have bread.

*Mari.* Why didst thou run away  
When the boar made toward thee? art thou not  
valiant?

*Geta.* No, indeed am I not; and 'tis for mine  
honour too:

I took a tree, 'tis true, gave way to the monster;  
Hark what Discretion says: "Let fury pass;

From the tooth of a mad beast, and the tongue of  
Preserve thine honour." [a slanderer,

*Dio.* He talks like a full senator.  
Go, take it up, and carry it in. 'Tis a huge one;

We never kill'd so large a swine; so fierce too,  
I never met with yet.

*Mari.* Take heed! it stirs again.—  
How nimbly the rogue runs up! he climbs like a  
squirrel.

*Dio.* Come down, you dunce! Is it not dead?  
*Geta.* I know not.

*Dio.* His throat is cut, and his bowels out.  
*Geta.* That's all one.

I am sure his teeth are in; and, for anything I know,  
He may have pigs of his own nature in's belly.

*Dio.* Come, take him up, I say, and see him  
dress'd;

He is fat, and will be lusty meat; away with him,  
And get some of him ready for our dinner.

*Geta.* Shall he be roasted whole,  
And served up in a souse-tub? a portly service!  
I'll run i' th' wheel myself.

*Mari.* Sirrah, leave your prating,

And get some piece of him ready presently;  
We are weary both, and hungry.

*Geta.* I'll about it.  
What an inundation of brewis shall I swim in!

[Exit into the house with the boar.]  
*Dio.* Thou art ever dull and melancholy, cousin,  
Distrustful of my hopes.

*Mari.* Why, can you blame me?  
Do men give credit to a juggler?

*Dio.* Thou know'st she is a prophetess.  
*Mari.* A small one,

And as small profit to be hoped for by her.  
*Dio.* Thou art the strangest man!—How does  
The boar came near you, sir. [thy hurt?

*Mari.* A scratch, a scratch.  
*Dio.* It aches and troubles thee, and that makes  
thee angry.

*Mari.* Not at the pain, but at the practice, uncle,  
The butcherly base custom of our lives now:

Had a brave enemy's sword drawn so much from  
Or danger met me in the head o' th' army, [me,  
To have blush'd thus in my blood had been mine  
honour;

But to live base, like swine-herds, and believe too!  
To be fool'd out with tales, and old wives' dreams,  
Dreams when they are drunk!

*Dio.* Certain, you much mistake her.  
*Mari.* Mistake her? hang her! To be made  
her purveyors,

To feed her old chaps, to provide her daily,  
And bring in feasts, whilst she sits farting at us,  
And blowing out her prophecies at both ends!

*Dio.* Pr'ythee be wise: Dost thou think, *Maxi-  
minian*,

So great a reverence, and so staid a knowledge—  
*Mari.* Sur-reverence, you would say! What  
truth? what knowledge?

What anything, but eating, is good in her?  
'Twould make a fool prophesy, to be fed continually.  
What do you get? Your labour and your danger,  
Whilst she sits bathing in her larded fury.

Inspired with full deep cups, who cannot prophesy?  
A tinker, out of ale, will give predictions;  
But who believes?

*Dio.* She is a holy druid,  
A woman noted for that faith, that piety,  
Beloved of Heaven.

*Mari.* Heaven knows, I do not believe it.  
Indeed, I must confess, they are excellent jugglers;  
Their age upon some fools too flings a confidence:  
But what grounds have they, what elements to work  
on?

Shew me but that! the sieve and sheers? a learned  
I have no patience to dispute this question, [one.  
'Tis so ridiculous! I think the devil does help 'em;  
Or rather, mark me well, abuse 'em, uncle:  
For they are as fit to deal with him, these old  
women,

They are as jump and squared out to his nature—  
*Dio.* Thou hast a perfect malice.

*Mari.* So I would have  
Against these purblind prophets; for, look ye, sir,  
Old women will lie monstrously, so will the devil,  
Or else he has had much wrong; upon my know-  
Old women are malicious, so is he; [ledge  
They are proud, and covetous, revengeful, lecherous,  
All which are excellent attributes o' th' devil:  
They would at least seem holy, so would he;  
And, to veil o'er these villainies, they would pro-  
phesy;

He gives them leave now and then to use their  
cunnings,

Which is to kill a cow, or blast a harvest,  
Make young pigs pipe themselves to death, choke  
And chafe a dairy-wench into a fever [poultry,  
With pumping for her butter :

But when he makes these agents to raise emperors,  
When he disposes fortune as his servant,  
And ties her to old wives' tails—

*Dio.* Go thy ways ;  
Thou art a learned scholar, against credit.  
You hear the prophecy.

*Mari.* Yes ; and I laugh at it,  
And so will any man can tell but twenty,  
That is not blind as you are, blind and ignorant.  
Do you think she knows your fortune ?

*Dio.* I do think it.

*Mari.* I know she has the name of a rare sooth-  
sayer ;

But do you in your conscience believe her holy ?  
Inspired with such prophetic fire ?

*Dio.* Yes, in my conscience.

*Mari.* And that you must, upon necessity,  
From her words, be a Cæsar ?

*Dio.* If I live—

*Mari.* There's one stop yet.

*Dio.* And follow her directions.

*Mari.* But do not juggle with me.

*Dio.* In faith, cousin,

So full a truth hangs ever on her prophecies,  
That how I should think otherwise—

*Mari.* Very well, sir ;

You then believe (for methinks 'tis most necessary)  
She knows her own fate ?

*Dio.* I believe it certain.

*Mari.* Dare you but be so wise to let me try it ?  
For I stand doubtful.

*Dio.* How.

*Mari.* Come nearer to me,  
Because her cunning devil shall not prevent me ;  
Close, close, and hear.—If she can turn this  
destiny,

I'll be of your faith too. [Whispers Diocles.

*Dio.* Forward, I fear not ;

For if she knows not this, sure she knows nothing.

Enter DELPHIA.

I am so confident—

*Mari.* 'Faith, so am I too,

That I shall make her devil's sides hum.

*Dio.* She comes here ;

Go take your stand.

*Mari.* Now holy, or you howl for't ! [Retires.

*Dio.* 'Tis pity this young man should be so  
stubborn :

Valiant he is, and to his valour temperate,  
Only distrustful of delays in fortune ;  
I love him dearly well.

*Delp.* Now, my son Diocles,

Are you not weary of your game to-day ?

And are you well ?

*Dio.* Yes, mother, well and lusty ;

Only you make me hunt for empty shadows.

*Delp.* You must have patience : Rome was not  
built in one day ;

And he that hopes, must give his hopes their cur-  
You have kill'd a mighty boar. [rears.

*Dio.* But I'm no emperor.

Why do you fool me thus, and make me follow  
Your flattering expectation hour by hour ?

Rise early, and sleep late ? to feed your appetites,  
Forget my trade, my arms ? forsake mine honour ?  
Labour and sweat to arrive at a base memory ?  
Oppose myself to hazards of all sorts,  
Only to win the barbarous name of butcher ?

*Delp.* Son, you are wise.

*Dio.* But you are cunning, mother ;  
And with that cunning, and the faith I give you,  
You lead me blindly to no end, no honour.

You find you are daily fed, you take no labour,  
Your family at ease, they know no market ;  
And therefore, to maintain this, you speak darkly,  
As darkly still you nourish it ; whilst I

(Being a credulous and obsequious coxcomb)

Hunt daily, and sweat hourly ; to find out,

To clear your mystery, kill boar on boar,

And make your spits and pots bow with my bounties :

Yet I still poorer, further still—

*Delp.* Be provident,

And tempt not the gods' dooms ; stop not the glory

They are ready to fix on you ; you are a fool then :

Cheerful and grateful takers the gods love,

And such as wait their pleasures with full hopes ;

The doubtful and distrustful man Heaven frowns at.

What I have told you by my inspiration,

I tell you once again, must and shall find you.

*Dio.* But when ? or how ?

*Delp.* Cum Aprum interfeceris.

*Dio.* I have kill'd many.

*Delp.* Not the boar they point you ;

Nor must I reveal further, till you clear it :

The lots of glorious men are wrapt in mysteries,

And so deliver'd ; common and slight creatures,

That have their ends as open as their actions,

Easy and open fortunes follow.

*Mari.* [Coming silently forward with his bow  
bent.] I shall try

How deep your inspiration lies hid in you,

And whether your brave spirit have a buckler

To keep this arrow off ; I'll make you smoke else.

*Dio.* Knowing my fortune so precisely, punc-  
tually,

And that it must fall without contradiction,

Being a stranger, of no tie unto you,

Methinks you should be studied in your own ;

In your own destiny, methinks, most perfect :

And every hour, and every minute, mother,

(So great a care should Heaven have of her mi-  
nisters)

Methinks your fortunes both ways should appear  
to you,

Both to avoid, and take. Can the stars now,

And all those influences you receive into you,

Or secret insinuations you make show of,

If an hard fortune hung, and were now ready

To pour itself upon your life, deliver you ?

Can they now say, "Take heed ?"

*Delp.* Ha ? Pray you come hither.

*Mari.* I would know that : I fear your devil will  
cozen you ; [Apart.

And, stand as close as you can, I shall be with you.

*Delp.* I find a present ill.

*Dio.* How ?

*Delp.* But I scorn it.

*Mari.* Do you so ? do you so ? [Apart.

*Delp.* Yes, and laugh at it, Diocles.

Is it not strange, these wild and foolish men

Should dare to oppose the power of destiny ?

That power the gods shake at ? Look yonder, son.

*Mari.* Have you spied me ? then have at you.

*Delp.* Do; shoot boldly;  
Hit me, and spare not, if thou canst.

*Dio.* Shoot, cousin.

*Mari.* I cannot; mine arm's dead; I have no feeling!

Or, if I could shoot, so strong is her arm'd virtue,  
She would catch the arrow flying.

*Delp.* Poor doubtful people!

I pity your weak faiths.

*Dio.* Your mercy, mother!

And, from this hour, a deity I crown you.

*Delp.* No more of that.

*Mari.* Oh, let my prayers prevail too!

Here, like a tree I dwell else: Free me, mother,  
And, greater than great Fortune, I'll adore thee!

*Delp.* Be free again, and have more pure thoughts in you.

*Dio.* Now I believe your words most constantly;  
And when I have that power you have promised to me—

*Delp.* Remember then your vow: My niece  
Drusilla,

I mean to marry her, and then you prosper.

*Dio.* I shall forget my life else. [worship.]

*Delp.* I am a poor weak woman; to me no

*Enter NIGER, GETA, and Soldiers.*

*Geta.* And shall he have as you say, that kills this

*Delp.* Now mark, and understand. [Aper—

*Niger.* The proscription's up,  
I' th' market-place 'tis up; there you may read it:  
He shall have half the empire.

*Geta.* A pretty farm, i' faith.

*Niger.* And the emperor's sister, bright Aurelia,  
Her with his wife.

*Geta.* You say well, friend: But hark you;  
Who shall do this?

*Niger.* You, if you dare.

*Geta.* I think so:

Yet I could poison him in a pot of perry;  
He loves that vengeance. But when I have done  
May I lie with the gentlewoman? [this,

*Niger.* Lie with her?

What else, man?

*Geta.* Yes, man; I have known  
A man married that never lay with his wife:  
Those dancing days are done.

*Niger.* These are old soldiers,  
And poor, it seems. I'll try their appetites.—  
'Save ye, brave soldiers!

*Mari.* Sir, you talk'd of proscriptions?

*Niger.* 'Tis true; there is one set up from the  
Against Volutius Aper. [emperor,

*Dio.* Aper?

*Delp.* Now!

Now have you found the boar?

*Dio.* I have the meaning;

And, blessed mother—

*Niger.* He has scorned his master,  
And bloodily cut off by treachery  
The noble brother to him.

*Dio.* He lives here, sir,  
Sickly and weak.

*Niger.* Did you see him?

*Mari.* No.

*Niger.* He is murder'd;

So you shall find it mention'd from the emperor,  
And, honest faithful soldiers, but believe it;  
For, by the gods, you'll find it so; he's murder'd!  
The manner how, read in the large proscription.

*Delp.* It is most true, son, and he cozens you;  
Aper's a villain false.

*Dio.* I thank you, mother,  
And dare believe you.—Hark you, sir! the re-  
compense

As you related—

*Niger.* Is as firm as faith, sir,  
Bring him alive or dead.

*Mari.* You took a fit time,  
The general being out o' the town; for though we  
love him not,  
Yet, had he known this first, you had paid for't  
dearly.

*Dio.* 'Tis Niger; now I know him, honest Niger,  
A true sound man: and I believe him constantly.  
Your business may be done, make no great hurry  
For your own safety.

*Niger.* No; I am gone, I thank you. [Exit.

*Dio.* Pray, Maximinian, pray.

*Mari.* I'll pray and work too.

*Dio.* I'll to the market-place, and read the offer;  
And, now I have found the boar—

*Delp.* Find your own faith too,  
And remember what you have vow'd.

*Dio.* Oh, mother!—

*Delp.* Prosper.

*Geta.* If my master and I do do this, there's two  
emperors,

And what a show will that make! how we shall  
bounce it! [Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of the  
Prophetess.*

*Enter DRUSILLA and DELPHIA.*

*Drus.* Leave us, and not vouchsafe a parting  
To her, that in his hopes of greatness lives, [kiss  
And goes along with him in all his dangers?

*Delp.* I grant 'twas most inhuman.

*Drus.* Oh, you give it

Too mild a name! 'twas more than barbarous!  
And you a partner in it.

*Delp.* I, Drusilla? [that vastness,

*Drus.* Yes; you have blown his swollen pride to  
As he believes the earth is in his fathom:  
This makes him quite forget his humble being:

And can I hope that he, that only fed  
With the imagined food of future empire,  
Disdains even those that gave him means, and life,  
To nourish such desires, when he's possess'd  
Of his ambitious ends (which must fall on him,  
Or your predictions are false) will ever  
Descend to look on me?

*Delp.* Were his intents

Perfidious as the seas or winds; his heart  
Composed of falsehood; yet the benefit,  
The greatness of the good he has from you,  
(For what I have conferr'd is thine, Drusilla)  
Must make him firm and thankful: But if all  
Remembrance of the debts he stands engaged for,

Find a quick grave in his ingratitude,  
My powerful art, that guides him to this height,  
Shall make him curse the hour he e'er was raised,  
Or sink him to the centre.

*Drus.* I had rather

Your art could force him to return that ardour  
To me, I bear to him; or give me power  
To moderate my passions: Yet I know not;  
I should repent your grant, though you had sign'd  
(So well I find he's worthy of all service.) [it  
But to believe that any check to him  
In his main hopes, could yield content to me,  
Were treason to true love, that knows no pleasure,  
The object that it dotes on ill affected!

*Delp.* Pretty simplicity! I love thee for't,  
And will not sit an idle looker-on,  
And see it cozen'd. Dry thy innocent eyes,  
And cast off jealous fears, (yet promises  
Are but lip-comforts) and but fancy aught  
That's possible in nature, or in art,  
That may advance thy comfort, and be bold  
To tell thy soul 'tis thine; therefore speak freely.

*Drus.* You new-create me! To conceal from you  
My virgin fondness, were to hide my sickness  
From my physician. Oh, dear aunt, I languish  
For want of Diocles' sight. He is the sun  
That keeps my blood in a perpetual spring;  
But, in his absence, cold benumbing winter  
Seizes on all my faculties. Would you bind me  
(That am your slave already) in more fetters,  
And, in the place of service, to adore you?  
Oh, bear me then (but 'tis impossible,  
I fear, to be effected) where I may  
See how my Diocles breaks through his dangers,  
And in what heaps his honours flow upon him,  
That I may meet him in the height and pride  
Of all his glories, and there (as your gift)  
Challenge him as mine own.

*Delp.* Enjoy thy wishes:

This is an easy boon, which, at thy years,  
I could have given to any; but now grown  
Perfect in all the hidden mysteries  
Of that inimitable art, which makes us  
Equal even to the gods, and nature's wonders,  
It shall be done as fits my skill and glory:  
To break through bolts and locks, a scholar's prize  
For thieves and pick-locks! to pass through an army  
Cover'd with night, or some disguise, the practice  
Of poor and needy spies! No, my Drusilla,  
From Ceres I will force her winged dragons,  
And in the air hang over the tribunal,  
The music of the spheres attending on us.  
There, as his good star, thou shalt shine upon him,  
If he prove true, and as his angel guard him:  
But if he dare be false, I, in a moment,  
Will put that glorious light out, with such horror  
As if the eternal night had seized the sun,  
Or all things were return'd to the first chaos,  
And then appear like furies.

*Drus.* I will do

Whate'er you shall command.

*Delp.* Rest then assured,

I am the mistress of my art, and fear not.

[Soft Music. Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—The Camp of APER.

Enter APER, CAMURIUS, GUARD, with a Litter covered.

*Aper.* Your care of your sick emperor, fellow-  
soldiers,

In colours to the life doth shew your love,  
And zealous duty: Oh, continue in it!  
And though I know you long to see and hear him,  
Impute it not to pride or melancholy,  
That keeps you from your wishes; such state-vice  
(Too, too familiar with great princes) are  
Strangers to all the actions of the life  
Of good Numerianus. Let your patience  
Be the physician to his wounded eyes,  
(Wounded with pious sorrow for his father)  
Which time and your strong patience will recover,  
Provided it prove constant. [Goes to the Litter.]

1 *Guard.* If he counterfeit,

[Apart to the other Guards.]

I will hereafter trust a prodigal heir,  
When he weeps at his father's funeral.

2 *Guard.* Or a young widow, following a bed-  
rid husband

(After a three years' groaning) to the fire.

3 *Guard.* Note his humility, and with what soft  
He does inquire his pleasures. [murmurs]

1 *Guard.* And how soon

He is instructed.

2 *Guard.* How he bows again too.

*Aper.* All your commands, dread Cæsar, I'll  
impart

To your most ready soldier, to obey them;  
So take your rest in peace. [Turning from the litter  
to the Guards.]—It is the pleasure

Of mighty Cæsar (his thanks still remember'd

For your long patience, which a donative,  
Fitting his state to give, shall quickly follow)

That you continue a strict guard upon

His sacred person, and admit no stranger

Of any other legion to come near him;

You being most trusted by him. I receive

Your answer in your silence.—Now, Camurius,  
[Apart to him.]

Speak without flattery: Hath thy Aper acted  
This passion to the life?

*Cam.* I would applaud him,

Were he saluted Cæsar: But I fear  
These long-protracted counsels will undo us;  
And 'tis beyond my reason, he being dead,  
You should conceal yourself, or hope it can  
Continue undiscovered.

*Aper.* That I have kill'd him,  
Yet feed these ignorant fools with hopes he lives,  
Has a main end in't. The Pannonian cohorts  
(That are my own, and sure) are not come up;  
The German legions waver; and Charinus,  
Brother to this dead dog, (hell's plagues on Niger!)  
Is jealous of the murder, and, I hear,  
Is marching up against me. 'Tis not safe,

Till I have power to justify the act,

To shew myself the author: Be therefore careful

For an hour or two (till I have fully sounded

How the tribunes and centurions stand affected)

That none come near the litter. If I find them

Firm on my part, I dare profess myself;

And then, live Aper's equal!

*Cam.* Does not the body

Begin to putrify?

*Aper.* That exacts my haste:

When, but even now, I feign'd obedience to it,  
As I had some great business to impart,  
The scent had almost choak'd me; be therefore  
All keep at distance. [curious]

*Cam.* I am taught my parts;

Haste you, to perfect yours. [Exit APER.]

1 *Guard*. I had rather meet  
An enemy i' th' field, than stand thus nodding  
Like to a rug-gown'd watchman.

*Enter DIOCLES, MAXIMINIAN, and GETA.*

*Mari*. The watch at noon?  
This is a new device.

*Cam*. Stand!

*Dio*. I am arm'd  
Against all danger.

*Mari*. If I fear to follow,  
A coward's name pursue me!

*Dio*. Now, my fate,  
Guide and direct me!

*Cam*. You are rude and saucy,  
With your forbidden feet to touch this ground,  
Sacred to Cæsar only, and to these  
That do attend his person! Speak, what are you?

*Dio*. What thou, nor any of thy faction are,  
Nor ever were; soldiers, and honest men.

*Cam*. So blunt?

*Geta*. Nay, you shall find he's good at the sharp  
too.

*Dio*. No instruments of craft, engines of murder,  
That serve the emperor only with oil'd tongues,  
Sooth and applaud his vices, play the bawds  
To all his appetites; and when you have wrought  
So far upon his weakness, that he's grown  
Odious to the subject and himself,  
And can no further help your wicked ends,  
You rid him out o' th' way.

*Cam*. Treason!

*Dio*. 'Tis truth,  
And I will make it good.

*Cam*. Lay hands upon 'em;  
Or kill them suddenly!

*Geta*. I am out at that;  
I do not like the sport.

*Dio*. What's he that is  
Owner of any virtue worth a Roman,  
Or does retain the memory of the oath  
He made to Cæsar, that dares lift his sword  
Against the man that (careless of his life)  
Comes to discover such a horrid treason,  
As, when you hear't, and understand how long  
You have been abused, will run you mad with fury?  
I am no stranger, but (like you) a soldier,  
Train'd up one from my youth: And there are  
some

With whom I have served, and (not to praise  
myself)

Must needs confess they have seen Diocles,  
In the late Britain wars, both dare and do  
Beyond a common man.

1 *Guard*. Diocles?

2 *Guard*. I know him;

The bravest soldier of the empire.

*Cam*. Stand!

If thou advance an inch, thou art dead.

*Dio*. Die thou, [Kills CAMARUS.  
That durst oppose thyself against a truth  
That will break out, though mountains cover it!

*Geta*. I fear this is a sucking pig, no boar,  
He falls so easy.

*Dio*. Hear me, fellow-soldiers;  
And if I make it not apparent to you  
This is an act of justice, and no murder,  
Cut me in pieces. I'll disperse the cloud  
That hath so long obscured a bloody act  
Ne'er equal'd yet. You all know with what favours

The good Numerianus ever graced  
The provost Aper?

*Guard*. True.

*Dio*. And that those bounties  
Should have contain'd him (if he e'er had learn'd  
The elements of honesty and truth)  
In loyal duty: But Ambition never  
Looks backward on Desert, but with blind haste  
Boldly runs on: But I lose time. You are here  
Commanded by this Aper to attend  
The emperor's person, to admit no stranger  
To have access to him, or come near his litter,  
Under pretence, forsooth, his eyes are sore,  
And his mind troubled: No, my friends, you are  
The good Numerianus now is past [cozen'd;  
The sense of wrong or injury.

[Opens the litter, and discovers the dead body of  
NUMERIANUS.

*Guard*. How! dead?

*Dio*. Let your own eyes inform you.

*Geta*. An emperor's cabinet?

Fough! I have known a charnel-house smell  
sweeter.

If emperor's flesh have this savour, what will mine  
When I am rotten? [do

1 *Guard*. Most unheard-of villainy!

2 *Guard*. And with all cruelty to be revenged.

3 *Guard*. Who is the murderer? Name him,  
Punish it in his family. [that we may

*Dio*. Who but Aper?

The barbarous and most ingrateful Aper?  
His desperate poniard printed on his breast  
This deadly wound. Hate to vow'd enemies  
Finds a full satisfaction in death,  
And tyrants seek no further: He, a subject,  
And bound by all the ties of love and duty,  
Ended not so; but does deny his prince  
(Whose ghost, forbade a passage to his rest,  
Mourns by the Stygian shore) his funeral-rites.  
Nay, weep not; let your loves speak in your anger;  
And, to confirm you gave no suffrage to  
The damned plot, lend me your helping hands,  
To wreak the paricide; and if you find  
That there is worth in Diocles to deserve it,  
Make him your leader.

*Guard*. A Diocles, a Diocles!

*Dio*. We'll force him from his guards.—And  
now, my stars,

If you have any good for me in store,  
Shew it, when I have slain this fatal Boar!

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—ROME. *Before the Capitol.*

*Enter on a Cloud, DELPHIA and DRUSILLA, in a Throne,  
drawn by Dragons.*

*Delp*. Fix here, and rest awhile your sail-stretched  
wings,

That have out-strip the winds. The eye of Heaven  
Durst not behold your speed, but hid itself  
Behind the grossest clouds; and the pale moon  
Pluck'd in her silver horns, trembling for fear  
That my strong spells should force her from her  
Such is the power of art. [sphere:

*Drus*. Good aunt, where are we?

*Delp*. Look down, Drusilla, on these lofty  
towers,

These spacious streets, where every private house  
Appears a palace to receive a king:  
The site, the wealth, the beauty of the place,

Will soon inform thee 'tis imperious Rome,  
Rome, the great mistresses of the conquer'd world.

*Drus.* But, without Diocles, it is to me  
Like any wilderness we have pass'd o'er:  
Shall I not see him?

*Delp.* Yes, and in full glory,  
And glut thy greedy eyes with looking on  
His prosperous success. Contain thyself;  
For though all things beneath us are transparent,  
The sharpest-sighted (were he eagle-eyed)  
Cannot discover us. Nor will we hang  
Idle spectators to behold his triumph;  
But, when occasion shall present itself,  
Do something to add to it.

*Enter* **DIOCLES, MAXIMINIAN, GETA, APER** guarded,  
Senators, Officers, with the litter.

See, he comes.

*Drus.* How god-like he appears! With such a  
grace,

The giants that attempted to scale Heaven,  
When they lay dead on the Phlegrean plain,  
Mars did appear to Jove.

*Delp.* Forbear.

*Dio.* Look on this,  
And when with horror thou hast view'd thy deed,  
Thy most accursed deed, be thine own judge,  
And see (thy guilt consider'd) if thou canst  
Persuade thyself, whom thou stand'st bound to hate,  
To hope or plead for mercy.

*Aper.* I confess

My life's a burden to me.

*Dio.* Thou art like thy name,  
A cruel Boar, whose snout hath rooted up  
The fruitful vineyard of the commonwealth.  
I long have hunted for thee; and since now  
Thou art in the toil, it is in vain to hope  
Thou ever shalt break out. Thou dost deserve  
The hangman's hook, or to be punished  
*More majorum*, whipt with rods to death,  
Or any way that were more terrible:  
Yet, since my future fate depends upon thee,  
Thus to fulfil great Delphia's prophecy,  
*Aper* (thou fatal Boar) receive the honour  
To fall by Diocles' hand!—[*Kills APER.*] Shine  
clear, my stars,

That usher'd me to taste this common air,  
In my entrance to the world, and give applause  
To this great work!

*Delp.* Strike music from the spheres! [*Music.*]

*Drus.* Oh, now you honour me!

*Dio.* Ha! in the air?

*All.* Miraculous!

*Mari.* This shows the gods approve  
The person and the act. Then if the senate  
(For in their eyes I read the soldiers' love)  
Think Diocles worthy to supply the place  
Of dead Numerianus, as he stands  
His heir in his revenge, with one consent  
Salute him emperor.

*Sen.* Long live Diocles!

Augustus, *Pater Patriæ*, and all titles  
That are peculiar only to the Cæsars,  
We gladly throw upon him.

*Guard.* We confirm it,

And will defend his honour with our swords  
Against the world. Raise him to the tribunal.

*I Sen.* Fetch the imperial robes; and, as a sign  
We give him absolute power of life and death,  
Bind this sword to his side.

*2 Sen.* Omit no ceremony  
That may be for his honour.

[*Song.*]

*Mari.* Still the gods  
Express that they are pleased with this election.

*Geta.* My master is an emperor, and I feel  
A senator's itch upon me: 'Would I could hire  
These fine invisible fiddlers to play to me  
At my instalment.

*Dio.* I embrace your loves,  
And hope the honours that you heap upon me  
Shall be with strength supported: It shall be  
My study to appear another Atlas,  
To stand firm underneath this heaven of empire,  
And bear it boldly. I desire no titles,  
But as I shall deserve 'em. I will keep  
The name I had, being a private man,  
Only with some small difference; I will add  
To Diocles but two short syllables,  
And be call'd Dioclesianus.

*Geta.* That is fine!  
I'll follow the fashion; and, when I am a senator,  
I will be no more plain Geta, but be call'd  
Lord Gétianus.

*Drus.* He ne'er thinks of me,  
Nor of your favour.

*Enter* **NIGER.**

*Delp.* If he dares prove false,  
These glories shall be to him as a dream,  
Or an enchanted banquet.

*Niger.* From Charinus,  
From great Charinus, who with joy hath heard  
Of your proceedings, and confirms your honours:  
He, with his beautiful sister, fair Aurelia,  
Are come in person, like themselves attended,  
To congratulate your fortune. [*Loud music.*]

*Dio.* For thy news,  
Be thou in France pro-consul.

*Enter* **CHARINUS, AURELIA, and Attendants.**

Let us meet

The emperor with all honour, and embrace him.

*Drus.* Oh, aunt, I fear this princess doth eclipse  
The opinion of my beauty, though I were  
Myself to be the judge!

*Delp.* Rely on me.

*Char.* 'Tis virtue, and not birth, that makes us  
noble:

Great actions speak great minds, and such should  
govern;

And you are graced with both. Thus, as a brother,  
A fellow, and co-partner in the empire,  
I do embrace you. May we live so far  
From difference, or emulous competition,  
That all the world may say, although two bodies,  
We have one mind!

*Aur.* When I look on the trunk  
Of dear Numerianus, I should wash  
His wounds with tears, and pay a sister's sorrow  
To his sad fate; but since he lives again  
In your most brave revenge, I bow to you,  
As to a power that gave him second life,  
And will make good my promise. If you find  
That there is worth in me that may deserve you,  
And that in being your wife, I shall not bring  
Disquiet and dishonour to your bed,  
(Although my youth and fortune should require  
Both to be sued and sought to) here I yield  
Myself at your devotion.

*Dio.* Oh, you gods,  
Teach me how to be thankful! You have pour'd

All blessings on me, that ambitious man  
 Could ever fancy: Till this happy minute  
 I ne'er saw beauty, or believed there could be  
 Perfection in a woman! I shall live  
 To serve and honour you. Upon my knees  
 I thus receive you; and, so you vouchsafe it,  
 This day I am doubly married, to the empire,  
 And your best self.

*Delp.* False and perfidious villain!

*Drus.* Let me fall headlong on him! Oh, my  
 This I foresaw and fear'd. [stars!]

*Char.* Call forth a flamen.

This knot shall now be tied.

*Delp.* But I will loose it,  
 If art or hell have any strength.

[Thunder and lightning.]

*Enter a Flamen.*

*Char.* Prodigious!

*Mari.* How soon the day's o'ercast!

*Flamen.* The signs are fatal;

Juno smiles not upon this match, and shews too  
 She has her thunder.

*Dio.* Can there be a stop  
 In my full fortune?

*Char.* We are too violent,  
 And I repent the haste: We first should pay  
 Our latest duty to the dead, and then  
 Proceed discreetly. Let's take up the body;  
 And when we have placed his ashes in his urn,  
 We'll try the gods again; for, wise men say,  
 Marriage and obsequies do not suit one day.

[Exit all but DELPHIA and DRUSILLA.]

*Delp.* So; 'tis deferr'd yet, in despite of false-  
 Comfort, Drusilla; for he shall be thine, [hood.  
 Or wish, in vain, he were not. I will punish  
 His perjury to the height.—Mount up, my birds.  
 Some rites I am to perform to Hecatè,  
 To perfect my designs; which, once perform'd,  
 He shall be made obedient to thy call,  
 Or in his ruin I will bury all. [Ascend in the throne.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—Before the Palace.

*Enter MAXIMINIAN.*

*Mari.* What powerful star shined at this man's  
 nativity,

And bless'd his homely cradle with full glory?  
 What throngs of people press and buz about him,  
 and with their humming flatteries sing him Cæsar?  
 Sing him aloud, and grow hoarse with saluting him?  
 How the fierce-minded soldier steals in to him,  
 Adores and courts his honour? at his devotion  
 Their lives, their virtues, and their fortunes laying?  
 Charinus sues, the emperor entreats him,  
 And, as a brighter flame, takes his beams from  
 him;

The bless'd and bright Aurelia, she dotes on him;  
 And as the god of love, burns incense to him;  
 All eyes live on him: Yet I am still Maximinian,  
 Still the same poor and wretched thing, his servant.  
 Wha have I got by this? where lies my glory?  
 How'm I rais'd and honour'd? I have gone as far  
 To wo this purblind honour, and have pass'd  
 As many dangerous expeditions,  
 As noble, and as high; nay, in his destiny,  
 Whilst 'twas unknown, have run as many hazards,  
 And done as much, sweat through as many perils;  
 Only the hangman of Volutius Aper,  
 Which mistook, has made him emperor,  
 And methis slave.

*Enter DELPHIA and DRUSILLA.*

*Delp.* Stand still! he cannot see us,  
 Till I please. Mark him well; this discontentment  
 I have forc'd into him, for thy cause, Drusilla.

*Mari.* Can the gods see this,  
 See it with justice, and confer their blessings  
 On him, that never flung one grain of incense  
 Upon their altars? never bow'd his knee yet?  
 And I that have march'd foot by foot, struck  
 equally,

And, whilst he was a-gleaning, have been praying,  
 Contemning his base, covetous—

*Delp.* Now we'll be open. [They come forward.]

*Mari.* Blas me! and with all reverence—  
 [Kneels.]

*Delp.* Stand up, son,  
 And wonder not at thy ungrateful uncle:  
 I know thy thoughts, and I appear to ease 'em.

*Mari.* Oh, mother, did I stand the tenth part  
 to you

Engaged and fetter'd, as mine uncle does,  
 How would I serve, how would I fall before you!  
 The poorer powers we worship—

*Delp.* Peace, and flatter not;  
 Necessity and anger draw this from you,  
 Of both which I will quit you. For your uncle  
 I spoke this honour, and it fell upon him,  
 Fell to his full content: He has forgot me,  
 For all my care, forgot me, and his vow too;  
 As if a dream had vanish'd, so he has lost me,  
 And I him; let him now stand fast! Come hither;  
 My care is now on you.

*Mari.* Oh, blessed mother!

*Delp.* Stand still, and let me work.—So!—Now,  
 Maximinian,

Go, and appear in court, and eye Aurelia;  
 Believe what I have done concerns you highly.  
 Stand in her view, make your addresses to her;  
 She is the stair of honour. I'll say no more,  
 But Fortune is your servant: Go.

*Mari.* With reverence,  
 All this as holy truths— [Exit.]

*Delp.* Believe, and prosper.

*Drus.* Yet all this cures not me! But as much  
 As much belief from Dioclesian— [credit.]

*Delp.* Be not dejected; I have warn'd you often,  
 The proudest thoughts he has I'll humble.—Who's  
 this?

*Enter GETA, LIOTORS, and SUITORS, with petitions.*

Oh, 'tis the fool and knave grown a grave officer.  
 Here's hot and high preferment.

*Geta.* What's your bill?  
 For gravel for the Applan way, and pills?  
 Is the way rheumatic?

1 *Suit.* 'Tis piles, an't please you.

*Geta.* Remove me those piles to Port Esquiline,  
 Fitter the place, my friend: you shall be paid.

1 *Suit.* I thank your worship.

*Geta.* Thank me when you have it,  
Thank me another way, you are an ass else :  
I know my office. You are for the streets, sir.  
Lord, how ye throng! That knave has eaten gar-  
Whip him, and bring him back. [lick ;  
3 *Suit.* I beseech your worship ;  
Here's an old reckoning for the dung and dirt, sir.

*Geta.* It stinks like thee ; away ! Yet let him  
tarry ;

His bill shall quit his breath. Give your petitions  
In seemly sort, and keep your hats off, decently.

[*Reads.*  
"For scouring the water-courses through the  
A fine periphrasis of a kennel-raker ! [cities ;"  
Did you scour all, my friend ? You had some  
business ;

Who shall scour you ? You are to be paid I take it,  
When surgeons swear you have perform'd your  
4 *Suit.* Your worship's merry. [office.

*Geta.* We must be sometimes witty,  
To knick a knave ; 'tis as useful as our gravity.  
I'll take no more petitions : I am pester'd !  
Give me some rest.

4 *Suit.* I have brought the gold, an't please you,  
About the place you promised.

*Geta.* See him enter'd.  
How does your daughter ?

4 *Suit.* Better your worship thinks of her.  
*Geta.* This is with the least. But let me see  
your daughter :

'Tis a good forward maid ; I'll join her with you.—  
I do beseech ye leave me !

*Lict.* Ye see the edile's busy.  
*Geta.* And look to your places, or I'll make ye  
smoke else !—

*Sirrah,* I drank a cup of wine at your house yester-  
A good smart wine. [day,

*Lict.* Send him the piece ; he likes it.  
*Geta.* And eat the best wild boar at that same  
farmer's.

2 *Suit.* I have half left yet ; your worship shall  
command it.  
*Geta.* A bit will serve. Give me some rest !  
Gods help me,

How shall I labour when I am a senator !  
*Delp.* 'Tis a fit place indeed.—'Save your mas-  
Do you know us, sir ? [tership !

*Geta.* These women are still troublesome.  
There be houses providing for such wretched  
women,

And some small rents to set ye a-spinning.  
*Drus.* Sir,

We are no spinsters ; nor, if you look upon us,  
So wretched as you take us.

*Delp.* Does your mightiness,  
That is a great destroyer of your memory,  
Yet understand our faces ?

*Geta.* Pr'ythee keep off, woman !  
It is not fit I should know every creature.  
Although I have been familiar with thee heretofore,  
I must not know thee now ; my place neglects thee.  
Yet, because I deign a glimpse of your remem-  
brances,

Give me your suits, and wait me a month hence.  
*Delp.* Our suits are, sir, to see the emperor,  
The emperor Dioclesian, to speak to him,  
And not to wait on you. We have told you all, sir.

*Geta.* I laugh at your simplicity, poor women.  
See the emperor ? Why, you are deceived ; now  
The emperor appears but once in seven years,

And then he shines not on such weeds as you are.—  
Forward, and keep your state : and keep beggars  
*Drus.* Here is a pretty youth. [from me.

[*Exeunt Geta, Lictors, and Suitors.*  
*Delp.* He shall be pretty,  
Or I will want my will. Since you are so high, sir,  
I'll raise you higher, or my art shall fail me.—

*Enter Dioclesian.*

Stand close ; he comes.

*Dio.* How am I cross'd and tortured !  
My most-wish'd happiness, my lovely mistress,  
That must make good my hopes, and link my  
greatness,

Yet severed from mine arms ! Tell me, high  
Heaven,  
How have I sinn'd, that you should speak in  
thunder,

In horrid thunder, when my heart was ready  
To leap into her breast ? the priest was ready ?  
The joyful virgins and the young men ready ?  
When Hymen stood, with all his flames about him,  
Blessing the bed ? the house with full joy sweating ?  
And Expectation, like the Roman eagle,  
Took stand, and call'd all eyes ? It was your  
honour ;

And, ere you give it full, do you destroy it ?  
Or was there some dire star, some devil, that did it ?  
Some sad malignant angel to mine honour ?  
With you I dare not rage.

*Delp.* With me thou canst not,  
Though it was I. Nay, look not pale and frighted ;  
I'll fright thee more : With me thou canst not  
quarrel.

I raised the thunder to rebuke thy falsehood,  
(Look here) to her thy falsehood. Now be angry,  
And be as great in evil as in empire.

*Dio.* Bless me, ye powers !  
*Delp.* Thou hast full need of blessing.

'Twas I that, at thy great inauguration,  
Hung in the air unseen ; 'twas I that honour'd thee  
With various musics, and sweet-sounding airs ;  
'Twas I inspired the soldier's heart with wouler,  
And made him throw himself with love and duty,  
Low at thy feet ; 'twas I that fix'd him to thee.

But why did I all this ? To keep thy honest,  
Thy vow, and faith : That once forgot and sighted,  
Aurelia in regard, the marriage ready,  
The priest and all the ceremonies present,  
'Twas I that thunder'd loud, 'twas I that threaten'd,  
'Twas I that cast a dark face over Heaven.  
And smote ye all with terror.

*Drus.* Yet consider,  
As you are noble, as I have deserved you ;  
For yet you are free : If neither faith nor promise,  
The deeds of elder times, may be remember'd,  
Let these new-dropping tears, (for I still love you)  
These hands held up to Heaven—

*Dio.* I must not pity you ;  
'Tis not wise in me.

*Delp.* How ! not wise ?  
*Dio.* Nor honourable.

A princess is my love, and dotes upon me ;  
A fair and lovely princess is my mistress :  
I am an emperor. Consider, Prophetess,  
Now my embraces are for queens and princesses,  
For ladies of high mark, for divine beauties :  
To look so low as this cheap common sweetness  
Would speak me base, my names and glories nothing.  
I grant I made a vow ; what was I then ?

As she is now, of no sort, (hope made me promise)  
But [as] now I am, to keep this vow were  
monstrous,

A madness, and a low inglorious fondness.

*Delp.* Take heed, proud man!

*Drus.* Princes may love with titles,

But I with truth.

*Delp.* Take heed! Here stands thy destiny;  
Thy fate here follows.

*Dia.* Thou dotting sorceress,  
Wouldst have me love this thing, that is not worthy  
To kneel unto my saint, to kiss her shadow?  
Great princes are her slaves; selected beauties  
Bow at her beck; the mighty Persian's daughter  
(Bright as the breaking East, as mid-day glorious)  
Waits her commands, and grows proud in her  
pleasures.

I'll see her honour'd; some match I shall think of,  
That shall advance ye both; mean time, I'll favour  
ye. [Exit.]

*Delp.* Meantime, I'll haunt thee!—Cry not,  
wench; be confident,  
Ere long, thou shalt more pity him (observe me)  
And pity him in truth, than now thou seek'st him:  
My art and I are yet companions. Come, girl.  
[Exit.]

SCENE II.—*The Court of the Edile.*

*Geta discovered in his chair; Lictors and Suitors about him.*

*Geta.* I am too merciful, I find it, friends,  
Of too soft a nature, to be an officer;  
I bear too much remorse.

*1 Lict.* 'Tis your own fault, sir;  
For, look you, one so newly warm in office  
Should lay about him blindfold, like true justice:  
Hit where it will, the more you whip and hang, sir,  
(Though without cause; let that declare itself  
The more you are admired. [afterward])

*Geta.* I think I shall be.

*2 Lict.* Your worship is a man of a spare body,  
And prone to anger.

*Geta.* Nay, I will be angry;  
And the best is, I need not shew my reason.

*2 Lict.* You need not, sir; your place is without  
reason;

And what you want in growth and full proportion,  
Make up in rule and rigour.

*Geta.* A rare counsellor!  
Instruct me further. Is it fit, my friends,  
The emperor, my master Dioclesian,  
Should now remember or the times or manners  
That call'd him plain down Diocles?

*1 Lict.* He must not;  
It stands not with his royalty.

*Geta.* I grant ye,  
I being then the edile Getianus,  
A man of place, and judge, is it held requisite  
I should commit to my consideration  
Those rascals of removed and ragged hours,  
That with unreverend mouths call'd me slave Geta?

*2 Lict.* You must forget their names; your  
honour bids you.

*Geta.* I do forget; but I will hang their natures.  
I will ascend my place, which is of justice;  
And, Mercy, I forget thee.

*Suit.* A rare magistrate!

Another Solon sure.

*Geta.* Bring out the offenders.

*1 Lict.* There are none yet, sir; but no doubt  
there will be.

But if you please touch some things of those  
natures—

*Geta.* And am I ready, and mine anger too,  
The melancholy of a magistrate upon me,  
And no offenders to execute my fury?  
Ha! no offenders, knaves?

*1 Lict.* There are knaves indeed, sir;  
But we hope shortly to have 'em for your worship.

*Geta.* No men to hang or whip? Are ye good  
officers,

That provide no fuel for a judge's fury?  
In this place something must be done; this chair,  
I tell ye,

When I sit down, must savour of severity:  
Therefore, I warn ye all, bring me lewd people,  
Or likely to be lewd, (twigs must be cropt too;)  
Let me have evil persons in abundance,  
Or make 'em evil; 'tis all one, do but say so,  
That I may have fit matter for a magistrate,  
And let me work. If I sit empty once more,  
And lose my longing, as I am true Edile,  
And as I hope to rectify my country,  
You are those scabs I'll scratch off from the com-  
monwealth,

You are those rascals of the state I treat of;  
And you shall find and feel—

*2 Lict.* You shall have many,  
Many notorious people.

*Geta.* Let 'em be people,  
And take ye notorious to yourselves. Mark me,  
And you the rest of my officials; [my Lictors,  
If I be angry, (as my place will ask it)  
And want fit matter to dispose my authority,  
I'll hang a hundred of ye: I'll not stay longer,  
Nor inquire no further into your offences;  
It is sufficient that I find no criminals,  
And therefore I must make some; if I cannot,  
Suffer myself; for so runs my commission.

*Suit.* An admirable, zealous, and true justice!

*1 Lict.* I cannot hold! If there be any people,  
Of what degree soever, or what quality,  
That would behold the wonderful works of justice  
In a new officer, a man conceal'd yet,  
Let him repair, and see, and hear, and wonder  
At the most wise and gracious Getianus!

*Enter DELPHIA and DRUSILLA.*

*Geta.* This qualifies a little.—What are these?

*Delp.* You shall not mourn still: Times of  
recreation,

To allay this sadness, must be sought.—What's  
A superstitious flock of senseless people [here?  
Worshipping a sign in office?

*Geta.* Lay hold on her, [Guards seize her.  
And hold her fast,

She will slip through your fingers like an eel else;  
I know her tricks. Hold her, I say, and bind her;  
Or, hang her first, and then I'll tell her wherefore.

*Delp.* What have I done?

*Geta.* Thou hast done enough to undo thee;  
Thou hast pressed to the emperor's presence  
without my warrant,

I being his key and image.

*Delp.* You are an image indeed,  
And of the coarsest stuff, and the worst making,  
That e'er I look'd on yet:

I'll make as good an image of an ass.

*Geta.* Besides, thou art a woman of a lewd life.

*Delp.* I am no whore, sir ; nor no common fame  
Has yet proclaim'd me to the people vicious.

*Geta.* Thou art to me a damnable lewd woman,  
Which is as much as all the people swore it.  
I know thou art a keeper of tame devils :  
And whereas great and grave men of my place  
Can by the laws be allow'd but one a-piece,  
For their own services and recreations,  
Thou, like a traitorous quean, keep'st twenty devils,  
Twenty in ordinary !

*Delp.* Pray you, sir, be pacified :  
If that be all, and if you want a servant,  
You shall have one of mine shall serve for nothing,  
Faithful, and diligent, and a wise devil too ;  
Think for what end.

*Geta.* Let her alone : 'Tis useful ;

[Guards release her.

We men of business must use speedy servants.  
Let me see your family.

*Delp.* Think but one, he is ready.

*Geta.* A devil for intelligence ? No, no,  
He'll lie beyond all travellers. A state-devil ?  
Neither ; he will undo me at mine own weapon.  
For execution ? He will hang me too.  
I would have a handsome, pleasant, and a fine she-  
To entertain the ladies that come to me ; [devil,  
A travell'd devil too, that speaks the tongues,  
And a neat carving devil.

[Music. DELPHIA conjures.

Enter a She-devil.

*Delp.* Be not fearful.

*Geta.* A pretty brown devil, i'faith. May I not  
kiss her ?

*Delp.* Yes, and embrace her too ; she is your  
Fear not, her lips are cool enough. [servant.

*Geta.* She is marvellous well mounted. What's

*Delp.* Lucifera. [her name ?

*Geta.* Come hither, Lucifera, and kiss me.

*Delp.* Let her sit on your knee.

*Geta.* The chair turns ! Hey, boys !

Pleasant, i'faith ! and a fine facetious devil. [Dance.

*Delp.* She would whisper in your ear, and tell  
you wonders.

*Geta.* Come !—What's her name ?

*Delp.* Lucifera.

*Geta.* Come, Lucie ;

Come, speak thy mind.—I am certain burnt to  
ashes ! [Exeunt all but GETA.

I have a kind of glass-house in my cod-piece !

Are these the flames of state ? I am roasted over,

Over, and over-roasted. Is this office ?

The pleasure of authority ? I'll no more on't ;

Till I can punish devils too, I'll quit it.

Some other trade now, and some course less dan-  
gerous,

Or certainly I'll tile again for two-pence. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—An Apartment in the Palace.

Enter CRAMBUS, AURELIA, CASSANA, Ambassadors, and  
Attendants.

*Aur.* Never dispute with me ; you cannot have  
her.

Nor name the greatness of your king ; I scorn him.  
Your knees to me are nothing ; should he bow too,  
It were his duty, and my power to slight him.

*Char.* She is her woman, (never sue to me)  
And in her power to render her or keep her ;

And she, my sister, not to be compell'd,  
Nor have her own snatch'd from her.

*Amb.* We desire not,

But for what ransom she shall please to think of ;  
Jewels, or towns, or provinces.

*Aur.* No ransom ;

No, not your king's own head, his crown upon it,  
And all the low subjections of his people.

*Amb.* Fair princess should have tender thoughts.

*Aur.* Is she too good

To wait upon the mighty emperor's sister ?

What princess of that sweetness, or that excellence,  
Sprung from the proudest and the mightiest mo-  
narchs,

But may be highly blest to be my servant ?

*Cas.* 'Tis most true, mighty lady.

*Aur.* Has my fair usage

Made you so much despise me and your fortune,

That you grow weary of my entertainments ?

Henceforward, as you are, I will command you,

And as you were ordain'd, my prisoner,

My slave, and one I may dispose of any way ;

No more my fair companion. Tell your king so ;

And if he had more sisters, I would have 'em,

And use 'em as I please. You have your answer.

*Amb.* We must take some other way : Force  
must compel it. [Exeunt Ambassadors.

Enter MAXIMILIAN.

*Masi.* [Apart.] Now, if thou be'st a pro-  
phetess, and canst do

Things of that wonder that thy tongue delivers,

Canst raise me too, I shall be bound to speak thee :

I half believe ; confirm the other to me,

And monuments to all succeeding ages,

Of thee, and of thy piety—Now she eyes me.

Now work, great power of art ! She moves unto  
me :

How sweet, how fair, and lovely her aspects are !

Her eyes, like bright Eoan flames, shoot through  
me.

*Aur.* Oh, my fair friend, where have you been ?

*Masi.* What am I ?

What does she take me for ? Work still, work  
strongly !

*Aur.* Where have you fled my loves and my em-  
braces ?

*Masi.* I am beyond my wits ! [braces ?

*Aur.* Can one poor thunder,

Whose causes are as common as his noises,

Make you defer your lawful and free pleasures ?

Strike terror to a soldier's heart, a monarch's ?

Through all the fires of angry Heaven, through  
tempests

That sing of nothing but destruction,

Even underneath the bolt of Jove, then ready,

And aiming dreadfully, I would seek you,

And fly into your arms.

*Masi.* I shall be mighty,

And (which I never knew yet) I am goodly ;

For certain, a most handsome man.

*Char.* Fy, sister !

What a forgetful weakness is this in you !

What a light presence ! These are words and offers

Due only to your husband, Dioclesian ;

This free behaviour only his.

*Aur.* 'Tis strange,

That only empty names compel affections :

This man you see, give him what name or title,

Let it be ne'er so poor, ne'er so despised, brother,

This lovely man—

*Mari.* Though I be hang'd, I'll forward!  
For, certain, I am excellent, and knew not.

*Aur.* This rare and sweet young man—See how  
he looks, sir.

*Mari.* I'll jstle hard, dear uncle.

*Aur.* This thing, I say,  
Let him be what he will, or bear what fortune,  
This most unequal'd man, this spring of beauty,  
Deserves the bed of Juno.

*Char.* You are not mad?

*Mari.* I hope she be; I am sure I am little better.

*Aur.* Oh, fair, sweet man!

*Char.* For shame, refrain this impudence!

*Mari.* Would I had her alone, that I might seal  
this blessing!

Sure, sure she should not beg. If this continue,  
As I hope Heaven it will, uncle, I'll nick you,  
I'll nick you, by this life! Some would fear killing  
In the pursuit now of so rare a venture:  
I am covetous to die for such a beauty.

*Enter DIOCLESIAN.*

Mine uncle comes; now, if she stand, I am happy.

*Char.* Be right again, for honour's sake!

*Dio.* Fair mistress—

*Aur.* What man is this? Away! what saucy  
fellow?

Dare any such base groom press to salute me?

*Dio.* Have you forgot me, fair? or do you jest  
with me?

I'll tell you what I am. Come, pray you look lovely.  
Nothing but frowns and scorns?

*Aur.* Who is this fellow?

*Dio.* I'll tell you who I am; I am your husband.

*Aur.* Husband to me?

*Dio.* To you. I am Dioclesian.

*Mari.* More of this sport, and I am made, old  
mother!

Effect but this thou hast begun—

*Dio.* I am he, lady,

Revenged your brother's death, slew cruel Ape; I  
am he the soldier courts, the empire honours,  
Your brother loves; am he, my lovely mistress,  
Will make you empress of the world.

*Mari.* Still excellent!

Now I see too, mine uncle may be cozen'd;

An emperor may suffer like another.

Well said, old mother! hold but up this miracle—

*Aur.* Thou liest! thou art not he; thou a brave  
fellow?

*Char.* Is there no shame, no modesty, in women?

*Aur.* Thou one of high and full mark?

*Dio.* Gods, what ails she?

*Aur.* Generous and noble? Fy! thou liest most  
basely.

Thy face, and all aspect upon thee, tells me  
Thou art a poor Dalmatian slave, a low thing,  
Not worth the name of Roman: Stand off further!

*Dio.* What may this mean?

*Aur.* Come hither, my Endymion;  
Come, shew thyself, and all eyes be bless'd in thee!

*Dio.* Ha! what is this?

*Aur.* Thou, fair star that I live by,  
Look lovely on me, break into full brightness!  
Look; here's a face now of another making,  
Another mould; here's a divine proportion;  
Eyes fit for Phoebus' self, to gild the world with;  
And there's a brow arch'd like the state of Heaven:  
Look how it bends, and with what radiance,  
As if the synod of the gods sat under:

Look there, and wonder! Now behold that fellow,  
That admirable thing, cut with an axe out.

*Mari.* Old woman, though I cannot give thee  
recompence, [*Aside.*

Yet, certainly, I'll make thy name as glorious—

*Dio.* Is this in truth?

*Char.* She is mad, and you must pardon her.

*Dio.* She hangs upon him; see!

*Char.* Her fit is strong now.

Be not you passionate.

*Dio.* She kisses!

*Char.* Let her;

'Tis but the fondness of her fit.

*Dio.* I am fool'd!

And if I suffer this—

*Char.* Pray you, friend, be pacified;

This will be of anon. She goes in. [*Exit AURELIA.*

*Dio.* Sirrah!

*Mari.* What say you, sir?

*Dio.* How dare thy lips, thy base lips—

*Mari.* I am your kinsman, sir, and no such base  
I sought no kisses, nor I had no reason [*one.*

To kick the princess from me; 'twas no manners:  
I never yet compell'd her; of her courtesy  
What she bestows, sir, I am thankful for.

*Dio.* Be gone, villain!

*Mari.* I will, and I will go off with that glory,  
And magnify my fate. [*Exit.*

*Dio.* Good brother, leave me:

I am to myself a trouble now.

*Char.* I am sorry for't.

You'll find it but a woman-fit to try you.

*Dio.* It may be so; I hope so.

*Char.* I am ashamed, and what I think I blush at.  
[*Exit.*

*Dio.* What misery hath my great fortune bred  
me!

And how far must I suffer! Poor and low states,  
Though they know wants and hungers, know not  
these,

Know not these killing fates: Little contents them,  
And with that little they live kings, commanding  
And ordering both their ends and loves. Oh,  
Honour!

How greedily men seek thee, and, once purchased,  
How many enemies to man's peace bring'st thou!  
How many griefs and sorrows, that like sheers,  
Like fatal sheers, are sheering off our lives still!  
How many sad eclipses do we shine through!  
When I presumed I was bless'd in this fair woman—

*Enter DELPHIA and DRUILLA veiled, and stand apart.*

*Delp.* Behold him now, and tell me how thou  
likest him.

*Dio.* When all my hopes were up, and Fortune  
dealt me

Even for the greatest and the happiest monarch,  
Then to be cozen'd, to be cheated basely!  
By mine own kinsman cross'd! Oh, villain kins-  
man!

Curse of my blood! because a little younger,  
A little smoother-faced! Oh, false, false woman,  
False and forgetful of thy faith! I'll kill him.  
But can I kill her hate too? No. He woos not,  
Nor worthy is of death; because she follows him,  
Because she courts him, shall I kill an innocent?  
Oh, Diocles! 'Would thou hadst never known this,  
Nor surfeited upon this sweet ambition,  
That now lies bitter at thy heart! Oh, Fortune,  
That thou hast none to fool and blow like bubbles,  
But kings, and their contents!

*Delp.* What think you now, girl?

*Drus.* Upon my life, I pity his misfortune.

See how he weeps! I cannot hold.

*Delp.* Away, fool!

He must weep bloody tears before thou hast him.—

How fare you now, brave Dioclesian?

[*Comes forward.*]

What! lazy in your loves? Has too much pleasure  
Dull'd your most mighty faculties?

*Dio.* Art thou there,  
More to torment me? Dost thou come to mock  
me?

*Delp.* I do! and I do laugh at all thy sufferings:  
I, that have wrought 'em, come to scorn thy  
wailings.

I told thee once, "This is thy fate, this woman;  
And as thou usest her, so thou shalt prosper."  
It is not in thy power to turn this destiny,  
Nor stop the torrent of those miseries  
(If thou neglect'st her still) shall fall upon thee.  
Sigh that thou art dishonest, false of faith,  
Proud, and dost think no power can cross thy  
pleasures;

Thou wilt find a fate above thee.

*Drus.* Good aunt, speak mildly:

See how he looks and suffers.

*Dio.* I find and feel, woman,

That I am miserable.

*Delp.* Thou art most miserable.

*Dio.* That as I am the most, I am most miser-  
But didst thou work this? [able.

*Delp.* Yes, and will pursue it.

*Dio.* Stay there, and have some pity. Fair  
Drusilla,

Let me persuade thy mercy, (thou hast loved me)  
Although I know my suit will sound unjustly,  
To make thy love the means to lose itself,  
Have pity on me!

*Drus.* I will do.

*Delp.* Peace, niece!

Although this softness may become your love,  
Your care must scorn it. Let him still contemn  
thee,

And still I'll work; the same affection  
He ever shews to thee, be it sweet or bitter,  
The same Aurelia shall shew him; no further:  
Nor shall the wealth of all his empire free this.

*Dio.* I must speak fair.—Lovely young maid,  
forgive me,  
Look gently on my sorrows! You that grieve too,  
I see it in your eyes, and thus I meet it.

[*Kisses her.*]

*Drus.* Oh, aunt, I am bless'd!

*Dio.* Be not both young and cruel;  
Again I beg it, thus.

*Enter AURELIA.*

*Drus.* Thus, sir, I grant it.  
He's mine own now, aunt.

*Delp.* Not yet, girl; thou art cozen'd.

*Aur.* Oh, my dear lord, how have I wrong'd  
your patience!

How wander'd from the truth of my affections!  
How, like a wanton fool, shunn'd that I loved most!  
But you are full of goodness to forgive, sir,  
As I of grief to beg, and shame to take it:  
Sure I was not myself! some strange illusion,  
Or what you please to pardon—

*Dio.* All, my dearest;  
All, my delight! and with more pleasure take thee,  
Than if there had been no such dream; for, certain,  
It was no more.

*Aur.* Now you have seal'd forgiveness,  
I take my leave; and the gods keep your goodness!  
[*Exit.*]

*Delp.* You see how kindness prospers: Be but  
so kind

To marry her, and see then what new fortunes,  
New joys and pleasures, far beyond this lady,  
Beyond her greatness too—

*Dio.* I'll die a dog first!

Now I am reconciled, I will enjoy her  
In spite of all thy spirits, and thy witchcrafts.

*Delp.* Thou shalt not, fool!

*Dio.* I will, old doting devil!

And wert thou any thing but air and spirit,  
My sword should tell thee—

*Delp.* I contemn thy threatenings;  
And thou shalt know I hold a power above thee.—  
We must remove Aurelia. Come.—Farewell, fool!  
When thou shalt see me next, thou shalt bow to  
me.

*Dio.* Look thou appear no more to cross my  
pleasures!  
[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.

*Enter Chorus.*

So full of matter is our history,  
Yet mix'd, I hope, with sweet variety,  
The accidents not vulgar too, but rare,  
And fit to be presented, that there wants  
Room in this narrow stage, and time, to express,  
In action to the life, our Dioclesian  
In his full lustre: Yet, as the statuary,  
That by the large size of Alcides' foot,  
Guess'd at his whole proportion; so we hope  
Your apprehensive judgments will conceive  
Out of the shadow we can only shew,  
How fair the body was; and will be pleased,  
Out of your wonted goodness, to behold,  
As in a silent mirror, what we cannot,

With fit conveniency of time allow'd  
For such presentments, clothe in vocal sounds.  
Yet with such art the subject is convey'd,  
That every scene and passage shall be clear,  
Even to the grossest understander here.

[*Loud music.*]

DUMB SHOW.

*Enter, at one door, DELPHIA and Ambassadors; they  
whisper together; they take an oath upon her hand;  
she circles them, kneeling, with her magic rod; they  
rise and draw their swords. Enter, at the other  
door, DIOCLESIAN, CHARINUS, MAXIMINIAN, NIGER,  
AURELIA, CASSANA, and Guard; CHARINUS and NIGER  
persuading AURELIA; she offers to embrace MAXIMI-  
NIAN; DIOCLESIAN draws his sword, keeps off MAXI-  
MINIAN, turns to AURELIA, kneels to her, lays his  
sword at her feet; she scornfully turns away;  
DELPHIA gives a sign; the Ambassadors and Soldiers*

rush upon them, seize on AURELIA, CASSANA, CHARINUS, and MAXIMINIAN; DIOCLESIAN and others offer to rescue them; DELPHIA raises a mist. Exit Ambassadors and Prisoners, and the rest discontented.

The skilful Delphia finding, by sure proof,  
The presence of Aurelia dimm'd the beauty  
Of her Drusilla; and, in spite of charms,  
The emperor her brother, great Charinus,  
Still urged her to the love of Dioclesian,  
Deals with the Persian Legates that were bound  
For the ransom of Cassana, to remove  
Aurelia, Maximinian, and Charinus,  
Out of the sight of Rome; but takes their oaths  
(In lieu of her assistance) that they shall not,  
On any terms, when they were in their power,  
Presume to touch their lives: This yielded to,  
They lie in ambush for 'em. Dioclesian,  
Still mad for fair Aurelia, that doted  
As much on Maximinian, twice had kill'd him,  
But that her frown restrain'd him: He pursues  
her

With all humility, but she continues  
Proud and disdainful. The sign given by Delphia,  
The Persians break through, and seize upon  
Charinus and his sister, with Maximinian,  
And free Cassana. For their speedy rescue,  
Enrag'd Dioclesian draws his sword,  
And bids his guard assist him: Then too weak  
Had been all opposition and resistance  
The Persians could have made against their fury,  
If Delphia by her cunning had not raised  
A foggy mist, which as a cloud conceal'd them,  
Deceiving their pursuers. Now be pleased,  
That your imaginations may help you  
To think them safe in Persia, and Dioclesian  
For this disaster circled round with sorrow,  
Yet mindful of the wrong. Their future fortunes  
We will present in action; and are bold,  
In that which follows, that the most shall say,  
'Twas well begun, but the end crown'd the play.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—Before the Capitol.

Enter DIOCLESIAN, NIGER, Senators, and Guard.

Dio. Talk not of comfort! I have broke my  
faith,

And the gods fight against me: And proud man,  
However magnified, is but as dust  
Before the raging whirlwind of their justice.  
What is it to be great, adored on earth,  
When the immortal powers that are above us  
Turn all our blessings into horrid curses,  
And laugh at our resistance, or prevention,  
Of what they purpose! Oh, the furies that  
I feel within me! whipp'd on, by their angers,  
For my tormentors! Could it else have been  
In nature, that a few poor fugitive Persians,  
Unfriended, and unarm'd too, could have robb'd  
me

(In Rome, the world's metropolis, and her glory;  
In Rome, where I command, environ'd round  
With such invincible troops that know no fear,  
But want of noble enemies) of those jewels  
I priz'd above my life, and I want power  
To free them, if those gods I have provoked  
Had not given spirit to the undertakers,  
And in their deed protected 'em?

Niger. Great Cæsar,  
Your safety does confirm you are their care;

And that, how'er their practices reach others,  
You stand above their malice.

1 Sen. Rome in us  
Offers (as means to further your revenge)  
The lives of her best citizens, and all  
They stand possess'd of.

1 Guard. Do but lead us on  
With that invincible and undaunted courage  
Which waited bravely on you, when you appear'd  
The minion of Conquest, married rather  
To glorious Victory, and we will drag  
(Though all the enemies of life conspire  
Against our undertakings) the proud Persian  
Out of his strongest hold.

2 Guard. Be but yourself,  
And do not talk, but do.

3 Guard. You have hands and swords,  
Limbs to make up a well-proportion'd army,  
That only want in you an head to lead us.

Dio. The gods reward your goodness! and  
believe,

How'er (for some great sin) I am mark'd out  
The object of their hate, though Jove stood ready  
To dart his three-fold thunder on this head,  
It could not fright me from a fierce pursuit  
Of my revenge. I will redeem my friends,  
And, with my friends, mine honour; at least, fall  
Like to myself, a soldier.

Niger. Now we hear  
Great Dioclesian speak.

Dio. Draw up our legions:  
And let it be your care, my much loved Niger,  
To hasten the remove. And, fellow-soldiers,  
Your love to me will teach you to endure  
Both long and tedious marches.

1 Guard. Die he accursed,  
That thinks of rest or sleep before he sets  
His foot on Persian earth!

Niger. We know our glory,  
The dignity of Rome, and, what's above  
All can be urged, the quiet of your mind,  
Depends upon our haste.

Dio. Remove to-night;  
Five days shall bring me to you.

All. Happiness  
To Cæsar, and glorious victory! [Exit.]

Dio. The cheerfulness of my soldiers gives  
assurance  
Of good success abroad, if first I make  
My peace at home here. There is something chides  
me,

And sharply tells me, that my breach of faith  
To Delphia and Drusilla is the ground  
Of my misfortunes: And I must remember  
While I was loved, and in great Delphia's grace,  
She was as my good angel, and bound Fortune  
To prosper my designs: I must appease her.  
Let others pay their knees, their vows, their prayers,  
To weak imagined powers; she is my all,  
And thus I do invoke her.—Knowing Delphia,

[Kneels.]

Thou more than woman! and, though thou vouch-  
safest

To grace the earth with thy celestial steps,  
And taste this grosser air, thy heavenly spirit  
Hath free access to all the secret counsels  
Which a full senate of the gods determine  
When they consider man; the brass-leaved book  
Of fate lies open to thee, where thou read'st,  
And fashionest the destinies of men

At thy wish'd pleasure; look upon thy creature,  
And, as thou twice hast pleased to appear  
To reprehend my falsehood, now vouchsafe  
To see my low submission!

*DELPHIA and DRUSILLA appear.*

*Delp.* What's thy will?

False, and unthankful, (and in that deserving  
All human sorrows) dar'st thou hope from me  
Relief or comfort?

*Dio.* Penitence does appease

The incensed powers, and sacrifice takes off  
Their heavy angers: Thus I tender both;  
The master of great Rome, and, in that, lord  
Of all the sun gives heat and being to,  
Thus sues for mercy. Be but as thou wert,  
The pilot to the bark of my good fortunes,  
And once more steer my actions to the port  
Of glorious Honour, and if I fall off  
Hereafter from my faith to this sweet virgin,  
Join with those powers that punish perjury  
To make me an example, to deter  
Others from being false!

*Drus.* Upon my soul,  
You may believe him! Nor did he e'er purpose  
To me but nobly; he made trial how  
I could endure unkindness; I see truth  
Triumphant in his sorrow. Dearest aunt,  
Both credit him, and help him! and, on assurance  
That what I plead for you cannot deny,  
I raise him thus, and with this willing kiss  
I seal his pardon.

*Dip.* Oh, that I e'er look'd

Beyond this abstract of all woman's goodness!

*Delp.* I am thine again; thus I confirm our  
league.

I know thy wishes, and how much thou suffer'st  
In honour for thy friends; thou shalt repair all,  
For to thy fleet I'll give a fore-right wind  
To pass the Persian Gulf; remove all lets  
That may molest thy soldiers in their march  
That pass by land; and Destiny is false,  
If thou prove not victorious. Yet remember,  
When thou art raised up to the highest point  
Of human happiness, such as move beyond it  
Must of necessity descend. Think on't;  
And use those blessings that the gods pour on you  
With moderation!

*Dio.* As their oracle,

I hear you and obey you, and will follow  
Your grave directions.

*Delp.* You will not repent it. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—*The Roman Camp.*

*Enter NIGER, GETA, Guard, and Soldiers, with ensigns.*

*Niger.* How do you like your entrance to the war?  
When the whole body of the army moves,  
Shews it not gloriously?

*Geta.* 'Tis a fine May-game;  
But eating and drinking, I think, are forbade in't;  
(I mean, with leisure) we walk on, and feed  
Like hungry boys that haste to school; or, as  
We carried fish to the city, dare stay no where,  
For fear our ware should stink.

*Guard.* That's the necessity  
Of our speedy march.

*Geta.* Sir, I do love my ease,

And though I hate all seats of judicature,  
I mean in the city, for conveniency,  
I still will be a justice in the war,  
And ride upon my foot-cloth. I hope a captain  
(And a gown'd captain too) may be dispensed with.  
I tell you (and do not mock me), when I was poor,  
I could endure, like others, cold and hunger;  
But since I grew rich, let but my finger ache,  
Or feel but the least pain in my great toe,  
Unless I have a doctor, mine own doctor,  
That may assure me, I am gone.

*Niger.* Come, fear not;  
You shall want nothing.

*Guard.* Will you make you fight  
As you were mad.

*Geta.* Not too much of fighting, friend;  
It is thy trade, that art a common soldier;  
We officers, by our place, may share the spoil,  
And never sweat for't.

*Guard.* You shall kill, for practice,  
But your dozen or two a-day.

*Geta.* Thou talk'st as if  
Thou wert lousing thyself; but yet I will make  
danger;

If I prove one o' th' worthies, so: However,  
I'll have the fear of the gods before my eyes,  
And do no hurt, I warrant you.

*Niger.* Come, march on,  
And humour him for our mirth.

*Guard.* 'Tis a fine pea-goose.

*Niger.* But one that fools to the emperor, and,  
in that,  
A wise man, and a soldier.

*Guard.* True morality! [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—*PERSIA. The Royal Court.*

*Enter COSROE, CASSANA, Persians; and CHARINUS, MAXI-  
MINIAN, AURELIA, bound, with Soldiers and Attendants.*

*Cosroe.* Now, by the Persian gods, most truly  
welcome!

Encompass'd thus with tributary kings,  
I entertain you. Lend your helping hands  
To seat her by me; and, thus raised, bow all,  
To do her honour.—Oh, my best Cassana,  
Sister, and partner of my life and empire,  
We'll teach thee to forget, with present pleasures,  
Thy late captivity; and this proud Roman,  
That used thee as a slave, and did disdain  
A princely ransom, shall, if she repine,  
Be forced by various tortures to adore  
What she of late contemn'd.

*Cas.* All greatness ever  
Attend Cosroe! Though Persia be styled  
The nurse of pomp and pride, we'll leave to Rome  
Her native cruelty.—For know, Aurelia,  
(A Roman princess, and a Cæsar's sister)  
Though late, like thee, captured, I can forget  
Thy barbarous usage; and though thou to me,  
When I was in thy power, didst shew thyself  
A most insulting tyranness, I to thee  
May prove a gentle mistress.

*Aur.* Oh, my stars!  
A mistress? Can I live, and owe that name  
To flesh and blood? I was born to command,  
Train'd up in sovereignty; and I, in death,  
Can quit the name of slave: She, that scorns life,  
May mock captivity.

*Char.* Rome will be Rome

When we are nothing; and her power's the same,  
Which you once quaked at.

*Mari.* Dioclesian lives;  
(Hear it, and tremble!) lives, thou king of Persia,  
The master of his fortune, and his honour:  
And though by devilish arts we were surprised,  
And made the prey of magic and of theft,  
And not won nobly, we shall be redeem'd,  
And by a Roman war; and every wrong  
We suffer here, with interest be return'd  
On the insulting doer!

1 *Pers.* Sure these Romans  
Are more than men.

2 *Pers.* Their great hearts will not yield;  
They cannot bend to any adverse fate,  
Such is their confidence.

*Cosroe.* They then shall break!—  
Why, you rebellious wretches, dare you still  
Contend, when the least breath or nod of mine  
Marks you out for the fire, or to be made  
The prey of wolves or vultures? The vain name  
Of Roman legions I slight thus, and scorn;  
And for that boasted bugbear, Dioclesian,  
Which you presume on, would he were the master  
But of the spirit to meet me in the field!  
He soon should find, that our immortal squadrons,  
That with full numbers ever are supplied,  
(Could it be possible they should decay)  
Dare front his boldest troops, and scatter 'em,  
As an high-towering falcon on her stretches  
Severs the fearful fowl. And, by the sun,  
The moons, the winds, the nourishers of life,  
And by this sword, the instrument of death,  
Since that you fly not humbly to our mercy,  
But yet dare hope your liberty by force,  
If Dioclesian dare not attempt  
To free you with his sword, all slavery  
That cruelty can find out to make you wretched,  
Falls heavy on you!

*Mari.* If the sun keeps his course,  
And the earth can bear his soldier's march, I fear  
*Aur.* Or liberty, or revenge! [not.]

*Chr.* On that I build too. [A trumpet.]

*Aur.* A Roman trumpet?

*Mari.* 'Tis: Comes it not like  
A pardon to a man condemn'd?

*Enter Niger.*

*Cosroe.* Admit him.—

The purpose of thy coming?

*Niger.* My great master,  
The lord of Rome, (in that all power is spoken)  
Hoping that thou wilt prove a noble enemy,  
And (in thy bold resistance) worth his conquest,  
Defies thee, Cosroe.

*Mari.* There is fire in this.

*Niger.* And to encourage thy laborious powers  
To tug for empire, dares thee to the field,  
With this assurance; if thy sword can win him,  
Or force his legions with thy barbed horse  
But to forsake their ground, that not alone  
Wing'd Victory shall take stand on thy tent,  
But all the provinces and kingdoms held  
By the Roman garrisons in this eastern world,  
Shall be deliver'd up, and he himself  
Acknowledge thee his sovereign. In return  
Of this large offer, he asks only this,  
That till the doubtful die of war determine  
Who has most power, and should command the  
other,

Thou wouldst entreat thy prisoners like their  
births,

And not their present fortune; and to bring 'em  
Guarded into thy tent, with thy best strengths,  
Thy ablest men of war, and thou thyself  
Sworn to make good the place. And if he fail  
(Maugre all opposition can be made)  
In his own person to compel his way,  
And fetch them safely off, the day is thine,  
And he, like these, thy prisoner.

*Cosroe.* Though I receive this  
But as a Roman brave, I do embrace it,  
And love the sender. Tell him, I will bring  
My prisoners to the field, and, without odds,  
Against his single force, alone defend 'em;  
Or else with equal numbers. [*Exit NIGER.*]—Cou-  
rage, noble princes!

And let posterity record, that we  
This memorable day restored to Persia  
That empire of the world great Philip's son  
Ravish'd from us, and Greece gave up to Rome.  
This our strong comfort, that we cannot fall  
Ingloriously, since we contend for all. [*Excunt.*  
Flourish, alarms.]

SCENE V.—*The Field of Battle on the Persian  
Frontiers.*

*Enter GETA, Guard, and Soldiers.*

*Geta.* I'll swear the peace against 'em! I am  
hurt:

Run for a surgeon, or I faint!

1 *Guard.* Bear up, man;

'Tis but a scratch.

*Geta.* Scoring a man o'er the coxcomb  
Is but a scratch with you. Pox o' your occupation,  
Your scurvy scuffling trade! I was told before,  
My face was bad enough; and now I look  
Like Bloody-Bone, and Raw-Head, to fright chil-  
dren:

I am for no use else.

2 *Guard.* Thou shalt fright men.

1 *Guard.* You look so terrible now! But see  
your face

I' th' pummel of my sword.

*Geta.* I die! I am gone!

Oh, my sweet physiognomy!

*Enter three Persians.*

2 *Guard.* They come;

Now fight, or die indeed.

*Geta.* I will 'scape this way.

I cannot hold my sword: What would you have  
Of a maim'd man?

1 *Guard.* Nay, then I have a goad

To prick you forward, ox.

2 *Guard.* Fight like a man,

Or die like a dog.

*Geta.* Shall I, like Caesar, fall  
Among my friends? no mercy? *Et tu, Brute?*  
You shall not have the honour of my death;  
I'll fall by the enemy first. [*They fight.*

1 *Guard.* Oh, brave, brave Geta!

[*Persians driven off.*

He plays the devil now.

*Enter NIGER.*

*Niger.* Make up for honour!  
The Persians shrink; the passage is laid open;

Great Dioclesian, like a second Mars,  
(His strong arm govern'd by the fierce Bellona)  
Performs more than a man: His shield, struck full

Of Persian darts, which now are his defence  
Against the enemies' swords, still leads the way.  
Of all the Persian forces, one strong squadron,

[Alarms continued.]

In which Cosroe in his own person fights,  
Stands firm, and yet unroured: Break through that,  
The day and all is ours. [Retreat sounded.]

All. Victory, victory! [Exeunt. Flourish.]

SCENE VI.—*Before the Tent of DIOCLESIAN.*

*Enter (in triumph, with Roman ensigns) Guard, DIOCLESIAN, CHARINUS, AURELIA, MAXIMINIAN, NIGER, GETA; COSROE, CASSANA, Persians, as Prisoners; DELPHIA and DRUSILLA, privately.*

*Dio.* I am rewarded in the act; your freedom  
To me's ten thousand triumphs: You, sir, share  
In all my glories. And, unkind Aurelia,  
From being a captive, still command the victor.  
Nephew, remember by whose gift you are free.  
You I afford my pity; baser minds  
Insult on the afflicted: You shall know,  
Virtue and courage are admired and loved  
In enemies; but more of that hereafter.—  
Thanks to your valour; to your swords I owe  
This wreath triumphant. Nor be thou forgot,  
My first poor bondman! Geta, I am glad  
Thou art turn'd a fighter.

*Geta.* 'Twas against my will;  
But now I am content with't.

*Char.* But imagine  
What honours can be done to you beyond these,  
Transcending all example; 'tis in you  
To will, in us to serve it.

*Niger.* We will have  
His statue of pure gold set in the Capitol,  
And he that bows not to it as a god,  
Makes forfeit of his head.

*Mari.* I burst with envy! [Apart.]  
And yet these honours, which, conferr'd on me,  
Would make me pace on air, seem not to move  
him.

*Dio.* Suppose this done, or were it possible  
I could rise higher still, I am a man;  
And all these glories, empires heap'd upon me,  
Confirm'd by constant friends, and faithful guards,  
Cannot defend me from a shaking fever,  
Or bribe the uncorrupted dart of Death  
To spare me one short minute. Thus adorn'd  
In these triumphant robes, my body yields not  
A greater shadow than it did when I  
Lived both poor and obscure; a sword's sharp  
point

Enters my flesh as far; dreams break my sleep,  
As when I was a private man; my passions  
Are stronger tyrants on me; nor is greatness  
A saving antidote to keep me from  
A traitor's poison. Shall I praise my fortune,  
Or raise the building of my happiness  
On her uncertain favour? or presume  
She is my own, and sure, that yet was never  
Constant to any? Should my reason fail me,  
(As flattery oft corrupts it) here's an example  
To speak, how far her smiles are to be trusted:

The rising sun, this morning, saw this man  
The Persian monarch, and those subjects proud  
That had the honour but to kiss his feet;  
And yet, ere his diurnal progress ends,  
He is the scorn of Fortune. But you'll say,  
That she forsook him for his want of courage,  
But never leaves the bold: Now, by my hopes  
Of peace and quiet here, I never met  
A braver enemy! And, to make it good,  
Cosroe, Cassana, and the rest, be free,  
And ransomless return!

*Cos.* To see this virtue

Is more to me than empire; and to be  
O'ercome by you, a glorious victory.

*Mari.* What a devil means he next! [Apart.]

*Dio.* I know that glory

Is like Alcides' shirt, if it stay on us  
Till pride hath mix'd it with our blood; nor can we  
Part with it at pleasure; when we would uncase,  
It brings along with it both flesh and sinews,  
And leaves us living monsters.

*Mari.* 'Would 'twere come [Apart.]  
To my turn to put it on! I'd run the hazard.

*Dio.* No; I will not be pluck'd up by the ears  
Out of this glorious castle; uncompell'd,  
I will surrender rather: Let it suffice,  
I have touch'd the height of human happiness,  
And here I fix *nil ultra*. Hitherto  
I have lived a servant to ambitious thoughts,  
And fading glories; what remains of life,  
I dedicate to Virtue; and, to keep  
My faith untainted, farewell, pride and pomp!  
And circumstance of glorious majesty,  
Farewell for ever!—Nephew, I have noted,  
That you have long with sore eyes look'd upon  
My flourishing fortune; you shall have possession  
Of my felicity; I deliver up  
My empire, and this gem I prized above it,  
And all things else that made me worth your envy,  
Freely unto you.—Gentle sir, your suffrage,

[To CHARINUS.]

To strengthen this. The soldier's love I doubt not:  
His valour, gentlemen, will deserve your favours,  
Which let my prayers further. All is yours.—  
But I have been too liberal, and given that  
I must beg back again.

*Mari.* What am I fallen from!

*Dio.* Nay, start not: It is only the poor grange,  
The patrimony which my father left me,  
I would be tenant to.

*Mari.* Sir, I am yours:  
I will attend you there.

*Dio.* No; keep the court;  
Seek you in Rome for honour: I will labour  
To find content elsewhere. Dissuade me not;  
By Heaven, I am resolv'd!—And now, Drusilla,  
Being as poor as when I vow'd to make thee  
My wife, if thy love since hath felt no change,  
I am ready to perform it.

*Drus.* I still loved

Your person, not your fortunes; in a cottage,  
Being yours, I am an empress.

*Delp.* And I'll make  
The change most happy.

*Dio.* Do me then the honour,  
To see my vow perform'd. You but attend  
My glories to the urn; where be it ashes,  
Welcome my mean estate! and, as a due,  
Wish rest to me, I honour unto you. [Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.

*Enter Chorus.*

*Chorus.* The war with glory ended, and Cosroe,  
Acknowledging his fealty to Charinus,  
Dismiss'd in peace, returns to Persia:  
The rest, arriving safely unto Rome,  
Are entertain'd with triumphs: Maximinian,  
By the grace and intercession of his uncle,  
Saluted Cæsar: But good Dioclesian,  
Wearied of pomp and state, retires himself,  
With a small train, to a most private grange  
In Lombardy; where the glad country strives  
With rural sports to give him entertainment:  
With which delighted, he with ease forgets  
All specious trifles, and securely tastes  
The certain pleasures of a private life.  
But oh, Ambition, that eats into,  
With venom'd teeth, true thankfulness and honour,  
And, to support her greatness, fashions fears,  
Doubts, and preventions to decline all dangers,  
Which, in the place of safety, prove her ruin!  
All which be pleased to see in Maximinian,  
To whom his conferr'd sovereignty was like  
A large sail fill'd full with a fore-right wind,  
That drowns a smaller bark: And he once fall'n  
Into ingratitude, makes no stop in mischief,  
But violently runs on. Allow Maximinian all,  
Honour, and empire, absolute command;  
Yet, being ill, long great he cannot stand. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—ROME. *An Apartment in the Palace.**Enter MAXIMINIAN and AURELIA.*

*Aur.* Why droops my lord, my love, my life,  
my Cæsar?  
How ill this dulness doth comport with greatness!  
Does not, with open arms, your fortune court you?  
Rome know you for her master? I myself  
Confess you for my husband? love and serve you?  
If you contemn not these, and think them curses,  
I know no blessings that ambitious flesh  
Could wish to feel beyond 'em.

*Mari.* Best Aurelia,  
The parent and the nurse to all my glories,  
'Tis not that, thus embracing you, I think  
There is a heaven beyond it, that begets  
These sad retirements; but the fear to lose  
What it is hell to part with. Better to have lived  
Poor and obscure, and never scaled the top  
Of hilly empire, than to die with fear  
To be thrown headlong down, almost as soon  
As we have reach'd it!

*Aur.* These are panic terrors  
You fashion to yourself. Is not my brother  
(Your equal and co-partner in the empire)  
Vow'd and confirm'd your friend? the soldier con-  
Hath not your uncle Dioclesian taken [*stant?*]  
His last farewell o' th' world? What then can  
shake you?

*Mari.* The thought I may be shaken, and  
assurance  
That what we do possess is not our own,  
But has depending on another's favour:  
For nothing's more uncertain, my Aurelia,

Than power that stands not on his proper basis,  
But borrows his foundation. I'll make plain  
My cause of doubts and fears; for what should I  
Conceal from you, that are to be familiar  
With my most private thoughts? Is not the  
empire

My uncle's gift? and may he not resume it  
Upon the least distaste? Does not Charinus  
Cross me in my designs? and what is majesty  
When 'tis divided? Does not the insolent soldier  
Call my command his donative? and what can take  
More from our honour? No, my wise Aurelia,  
If I to you am more than all the world,  
As sure you are to me; as we desire  
To be secure, we must be absolute,  
And know no equal; when your brother borrows  
The little splendour that he has from us,  
And we are served for fear, not at entreaty,  
We may live safe; but till then, we but walk  
With heavy burthens on a sea of glass,  
And our own weight will sink us.

*Aur.* Your mother brought you  
Into the world an emperor; you persuade  
But what I would have counsell'd. Nearness of  
blood,

Respect of piety, and thankfulness,  
And all the holy dreams of virtuous fools,  
Must vanish into nothing, when Ambition  
(The maker of great minds, and nurse of honour)  
Puts in for empire. On then, and forget  
Your simple uncle; think he was the master  
(In being once an emperor) of a jewel,  
Whose worth and use he knew not. For Charinus,  
(No more my brother) if he be a stop  
To what you purpose, he to me's a stranger,  
And so to be removed.

*Mari.* Thou more than woman!  
Thou masculine greatness, to whose soaring spirit  
To touch the stars seems but an easy flight,  
Oh, how I glory in thee! Those great women  
Antiquity is proud of, thou but named,  
Shall be no more remember'd. But persevere,  
And thou shalt shine among those lesser lights,  
To all posterity, like another Phœbe,  
And so adored as she is.

*Enter CHARINUS, NIGRA, and Guard.*

*Aur.* Here's Charinus,  
His brow furrow'd with anger.

*Mari.* Let him storm!  
And you shall hear me thunder.

*Char.* He dispose of  
My provinces at his pleasure? and confer  
Those honours, that are only mine to give,  
Upon his creatures?

*Niger.* Mighty sir, ascribe it  
To his assurance of your love and favour,  
And not to pride or malice.

*Char.* No, good Niger;  
Courtesy shall not fool me; he shall know  
I lent a hand to raise him, and defend him,  
While he continues good; but the same strength,  
If pride make him usurp upon my right,  
Shall strike him to the centre.—You are well met,  
sir.

*Mari.* As you make the encounter. Sir, I hear  
That you repine, and hold yourself much grieved,

In that, without your good leave, I bestow'd  
The Gallian proconsulship upon  
A follower of mine.

*Char.* 'Tis true; and wonder  
You durst attempt it.

*Mari.* Durst, Charinus?

*Char.* Durst;

Again I speak it. Think you me so tame,  
So leaden and unactive, to sit down  
With such dishonour? But, recall your grant,  
And speedily; or, by the Roman gods,  
Thou tripp'st thine own heels up, and hast no part  
In Rome, or in the empire.

*Mari.* Thou hast none,  
But by permission. Alas, poor Charinus,  
Thou shadow of an emperor, I scorn thee,  
Thee, and thy foolish threats! The gods appoint  
The absolute disposer of the earth, [him  
That has the sharpest sword: I am sure, Charinus,  
Thou wear'st one without edge. When cruel Aper  
Had kill'd Numerianus, thy brother,  
(An act that would have made a trembling coward  
More daring than Alcides) thy base fear  
Made thee wink at it; then rose up my uncle,  
For the honour of the empire, and of Rome,  
Against the traitor, and, among his guards,  
Punish'd the treason. This bold daring act  
Got him the soldiers' suffrages to be Cæsar.  
And howsoever his too-gentle nature  
Allow'd thee the name only, as his gift,  
I challenge the succession.

*Char.* Thou art cozen'd.

When the receiver of a courtesy  
Cannot sustain the weight it carries with it,  
'Tis but a trial, not a present act.  
Thou hast in a few days of thy short reign,  
In over-weening pride, riot, and lusts,  
Shamed noble Dioclesian, and his gift;  
Nor doubt I, when it shall arrive unto  
His certain knowledge, how the empire groans  
Under thy tyranny, but he will forsake  
His private life, and once again resume  
His laid-by majesty; or, at least, make choice  
Of such an Atlas as may bear this burden,  
Too heavy for thy shoulders.—To effect this, [not  
Lend your assistance, gentlemen; and then doubt  
But that this mushroom, sprung up in a night,  
Shall as soon wither.—And for you, Aurelia,  
If you esteem your honour more than tribute  
Paid to your loathsome appetite, as a fury  
Fly from his loose embraces. So, farewell!  
Ere long you shall hear more. [Exit.

*Aur.* Are you struck dumb,  
That you make no reply?

*Mari.* Sweet, I will do,

And after talk: I will prevent their plots,  
And turn them on their own accursed heads.  
My uncle? good! I must not know the names  
Of piety or pity. Steel my heart,  
Desire of empire, and instruct me, that  
The prince that over others would bear away,  
Checks at no let that stops him in his way!  
[Exit.

SCENE III.—LOMBARDY. Before the Farm of  
DIOCLESIAN. A Well in the back-ground.

Enter three Shepherds and two Countrymen.

1 *Shep.* Do you think this great man will con-  
tinue here?

2 *Shep.* Continue here? what else? he has  
bought the great farm;

A great man, with a great inheritance,  
And all the ground about it, all the woods too,  
And stock'd it like an emperor. Now, all our  
sports again,

And all our merry gambols, our May-ladies,  
Our evening dances on the green, our songs,  
Our holiday good cheer, our bagpipes now, boys,  
Shall make the wanton lasses skip again,  
Our sheep-shearings, and all our knacks.

3 *Shep.* But hark you,  
We must not call him emperor.

1 *Countr.* That's all one;

He is the king of good fellows, that's no treason;  
And so I'll call him still, though I be hang'd for't.  
I grant you he has given his honour to another  
man,

He cannot give his humour; he's a brave fellow,  
And will love us, and we'll love him. Come hither,  
Ladon;

What new songs, and what geers?

3 *Shep.* Enough. I'll tell ye;  
He comes abroad anon to view his grounds,  
And with the help of Thirsis, and old Egon,  
(If his whorson could be gone) and Amaryllis,  
And some few more o' th' wenches, we will meet  
him,  
And strike him such new springs, and such free  
welcomes,

Shall make him scorn an empire, forget majesty,  
And make him bless the hour he lived here happy.

2 *Countr.* And we will second ye, we honest  
carters,

We lads o' th' lash, with some blunt entertainment;  
Our teams to two-pence, we'll give him some con-  
Or we'll bawl fearfully! [tent,

3 *Shep.* He cannot expect now  
His courtly entertainments, and his rare musics,  
And ladies to delight him with their voices;  
Honest and cheerful toys from honest meanings,  
And the best hearts they have. We must be neat  
On goes my russet jerkin with blue buttons. [all;

1 *Shep.* And my green slops I was married in;  
my bonnet,

With my carnation point with silver tags, boys;  
You know where I won it.

1 *Countr.* Thou wilt ne'er be old, Alexis.

1 *Shep.* And I shall find some toys that have  
been favours,  
And nose-gays, and such knacks; for there be  
wenches.

3 *Shep.* My mantle goes on too I play'd young  
Paris in,

And the new garters Amaryllis sent me.

1 *Countr.* Yes, yes; we'll all be handsome, and  
wash our faces.

Neighbour, I see a remnant of March dust  
That's hatch'd into your chaps: I pray you be  
And mundify your muzzle. [careful,

Enter Geta.

2 *Countr.* I'll to the barber's;  
It shall cost me I know what.—Who's this?

3 *Shep.* Give room, neighbours!  
A great man in our state. Gods bless your wor-  
2 *Countr.* Increase your mastership! [ship!  
Geta. Thanks, my good people.

Stand off, and know your duties!—As I take it,  
You are the labouring people of this village,

And you that keep the sheep. Stand further off  
And mingle not with my authority ; [yet,  
I am too mighty for your company.

3 *Shep.* We know it, sir ; and we desire your  
worship

To reckon us amongst your humble servants ;  
And that our country sports, sir—

*Geta.* For your sports, sir,  
They may be seen, when I shall think convenient,  
When, out of my discretion, I shall view 'em,  
And hold 'em fit for license.—Ye look upon me,  
And look upon me seriously, as you knew me :

'Tis true, I have been a rascal, as you are,  
A fellow of no mention, nor no mark,  
Just such another piece of dirt, so fashion'd ;  
But time, that purifies all things of merit,  
Has set another stamp. Come nearer now,  
And be not fearful (I take off my austerity ;)  
And know me for the great and mighty steward  
Under this man of honour ; know ye for my vassals,  
And at my pleasure I can dispeople ye,  
Can blow you and your cattle out o' th' country :  
But fear me, and have favour. Come, go along  
with me,

And I will hear your songs, and perhaps like 'em.

3 *Shep.* I hope you will, sir.  
*Geta.* 'Tis not a thing impossible.

Perhaps I'll sing myself, the more to grace ye ;  
And if I like your women—

3 *Shep.* We'll have the best, sir,  
Handsome young girls.

*Geta.* The handsomer the better.

*Enter DELPHIA.*

'May bring your wives too ; 'twill be all one charge  
For I must know your families. [to ye ;

*Delph.* 'Tis well said,  
'Tis well said, honest friends. I know ye are hatch-  
ing

Some pleasurable sports for your great landlord ;  
Fill him with joy, and win him a friend to ye,  
And make this little grange seem a large empire,  
Set out with home contents : I'll work his favour,  
Which daily shall be on ye.

3 *Shep.* Then we'll sing daily,  
And make him the best sports—

*Delph.* Instruct 'em, *Geta*,  
And be a merry man again.

*Geta.* Will you lend me a devil,  
That we may dance a while ?

*Delph.* I'll lend thee two ;  
And bagpipes that shall blow alone.

*Geta.* I thank you ;  
But I'll know your devils of a cooler complexion  
Come, follow, follow ; I'll go sit and see ye. [first.  
*Delph.* Do ; and be ready an hour hence, and  
bring 'em ;

For in the grove you'll find him. [Exeunt.

*Enter DIOCLESIAN and DRUSILLA.*

*Dio.* Come, *Drusilla*,  
The partner of my best contents ! I hope now  
You dare believe me.

*Drus.* Yes, and dare say to you,  
I think you now most happy.

*Dio.* You say true, sweet :  
For, by my soul, I find now by experience,  
Content was never courtier.

*Drus.* I pray you walk on, sir ;  
The cool shades of the grove invite you.

*Dio.* Oh, my dearest !  
When man has cast off his ambitious greatness,

And sunk into the sweetness of himself ;  
Built his foundation upon honest thoughts ;  
Not great, but good, desires his daily servants ;  
How quietly he sleeps ! How joyfully  
He wakes again, and looks on his possessions,  
And from his willing labours feeds with pleasure !  
Here hang no comets in the shapes of crowns  
To shake our sweet contents ; nor here, *Drusilla*,  
Cares, like eclipses, darken our endeavours :  
We love here without rivals, kiss with innocence :  
Our thoughts as gentle as our lips, our children  
The double heirs both of our forms and faiths.

*Drus.* I am glad ye make this right use of this  
This sweet retiredness. [sweetness,

*Dio.* 'Tis sweet indeed, love,  
And every circumstance about it shews it.  
How liberal is the spring in every place here !  
The artificial court shews but a shadow,  
A painted imitation of this glory.  
Smell to this flower ; here Nature has her ex-  
cellence ;

Let all the perfumes of the empire pass this,  
The careful! at lady's cheek shew such a colour ;  
They are gilded and adulterate vanities.  
And here in poverty dwells noble nature.  
What pains we take to cool our wines, to allay us,  
And bury quick the fuming god to quench us.  
Methinks this crystal well— [Music below.] Ha !  
what strange music ?

'Tis underneath, sure !—How it stirs and joys me !  
How all the birds set on ! the fields redouble  
Their odoriferous sweets ! Hark how the echoes—

*Enter DELPHIA.*

*Drus.* See, sir, those flowers  
From out the well, spring to your entertainment.

*A Spirit rises from the Well.*

*Dio.* Bless me !  
*Drus.* Be not afraid ; 'tis some good angel  
That's come to welcome you.

*Delph.* Go near, and hear, son. [Song.

*Dio.* Oh, mother, thank you, thank you ! this  
was your will.

*Delph.* You shall not want delights to bless your  
presence.

Now you are honest, all the stars shall honour you.

*Enter Shepherds and Dancers.*

Stay ; here are country shepherds ; here's some  
sport too.

And you must grace it, sir ; 'twas meant to wel-  
come you.

A king shall never feel your joy : Sit down, son.  
*A Dance of Shepherds and Shepherdesses ; one disguised  
as Pan leading the men, another as Ceres, the maids.*

Hold, hold ! my messenger appears. Leave off,  
Leave off a while, and breathe. [friends,

*Dio.* What news ? You are pale, mother.

*Delph.* No ; I am careful of thy safety, son.

Be not affrighted, but sit still ; I am with thee.

*Enter MAXIMINIAN, AURELIA, and Soldiers.*

And now, dance out your dance.—Do you know  
that person ?

Be not amazed, but let him shew his dreadfullest.  
*Mari.* How confident he sits amongst his plea-  
sures,

And what a cheerful colour shews in's face !  
And yet he sees me too, the soldiers with me.

*Aur.* Be speedy in your work, (you will be stopt  
And then you are an emperor ! [else)

*Mari.* I'll about it.

*Dio.* My royal cousin, how I joy to see you,  
You and your royal empress!

*Mari.* You are too kind, sir.

I come not to eat with you, and to surfet  
In these poor clownish pleasures! but to tell you,  
I look upon you like my winding-sheet,  
The coffin of my greatness, nay, my grave:  
For whilst you are alive—

*Dio.* Alive, my cousin?

*Mari.* I say, alive—I am no emperor;  
I am nothing but my own disquiet.

*Dio.* Stay, sir!

*Mari.* I cannot stay. The soldiers dote upon  
you.

I would fain spare you; but mine own security  
Compels me to forget you are my uncle,  
Compels me to forget you made me Cæsar;  
For, whilst you are remember'd, I am buried.

*Dio.* Did not I make you emperor, dear cousin?  
The free gift from my special grace?

*Delp.* Fear nothing.

*Dio.* Did not I chuse this poverty, to raise you?  
That royal woman gave into your arms too?  
Bless'd you with her bright beauty? Gave the  
soldier,

The soldier that hung to me, fix'd him on you?  
Gave you the world's command?

*Mari.* This cannot help you.

*Dio.* Yet this shall ease me. Can you be so  
base, cousin,

So far from nobleness, so far from nature,  
As to forget all this? to tread this tie out?  
Raise to yourself so foul a monument  
That every common foot shall kick asunder?  
Must my blood glue you to your peace?

*Mari.* It must, uncle;

I stand too loose else, and my foot too feeble:  
You gone once, and their love retired, I am rooted.

*Dio.* And cannot this removed poor state ob-  
scure me?

I do not seek for yours, nor inquire ambitiously  
After your growing fortunes. Take heed, my  
kinsman!

Ungratefulness and blood mingled together,  
Will, like two furious tides—

*Mari.* I must sail through 'em;

Let 'em be tides of death, sir, I must stem up.

*Dio.* Hear but this last, and wisely yet consider!

Place round about my grange a garrison,  
That if I offer to exceed my limits,  
Or ever in my common talk name emperor,  
Ever converse with any greedy soldier,  
Or look for adoration, nay, for courtesy,  
Above the day's salute—Think who has fed you,  
Think, cousin, who I am. Do you slight my misery?  
Nay, then I charge thee! Nay, I meet thy cruelty.

[*Draws.*

*Mari.* This cannot serve; prepare. Now fall  
on, soldiers,  
And all the treasure that I have—

[*Thunder and lightning.*

1 *Sold.* The earth shakes;

We totter up and down; we cannot stand, sir;  
Methinks the mountains tremble too.

2 *Sold.* The flashes,

How thick and hot they come! We shall be burnt  
*Delp.* Fall on, soldiers! [all]

You that sell innocent blood, fall on full bravely!

1 *Sold.* We cannot stir.

*Delp.* You have your liberty;  
So have you, lady: One of you come do it.

[*A hand with a bolt appears above.*

Do ye stand amazed? Look o'er thy head, Maxi-  
minian,

Look, to thy terror, what overhangs thee;  
Nay, it will nail thee dead: Look how it threatens  
thee!

“The bolt for vengeance on ungrateful wretches;  
The bolt of innocent blood:” Read those hot cha-  
racters,

And spell the will of Heaven. Nay, lovely lady,  
You must take part too, as spur to Ambition.

Are you humble? Now speak; my part is ended.  
Does all your glory shake?

*Mari.* Hear us, great uncle, [*They kneel.*  
Good and great sir, be pitiful unto us!

Below your feet we lay our lives; be merciful!  
Begin you, Heaven will follow.

*Aur.* Oh, it shakes still!

*Mari.* And dreadfully it threatens. We ac-  
knowledge

Our base and foul intentions: Stand between us!  
For faults confess'd, they say, are half forgiven:  
We are sorry for our sins. Take from us, sir,  
That glorious weight that made us swell, that poi-  
That mass of majesty I labour'd under, [son'd us;  
(Too heavy and too mighty for my manage)  
That my poor innocent days may turn again,  
And my mind, pure, may purge me of these curses.  
By your old love, the blood that runs between us—  
[*The hand taken in.*

*Aur.* By that love once you bare to me! by that,  
That blessed maid enjoys— [sir,

*Dio.* Rise up, dear cousin,  
And be your words your judges! I forgive you.  
Great as you are, enjoy that greatness ever,  
Whilst I mine own content make mine own empire.  
Once more I give you all; learn to deserve it,  
And live to love your good more than your great-  
ness.—

Now shew your loves to entertain this emperor,  
My honest neighbours! Geta, see all handsome.—  
Your grace must pardon us; our house is little;  
But such an ample welcome as a poor man  
And his true love can make you and your empress—  
Madam, we have no dainties.

*Aur.* 'Tis enough, sir;  
We shall enjoy the riches of your goodness.

*Sold.* Long live the good and gracious Dioclesian!

*Dio.* I thank you, soldiers; I forgive your rash-  
ness.

And, royal sir, long may they love and honour  
you! [Drums beat a march afar off.

What drums are those?

*Delp.* Meet 'em, my honest son;  
They are thy friends, Charinus and the old soldiers,  
That come to rescue thee from thy hot cousin.

But all is well; and turn all into welcomes!  
Two emperors you must entertain now.

*Dio.* Oh, dear mother,

I have will enough, but I want room and glory.

*Delp.* That shall be my care. Sound your pipes  
now merrily,

And all your handsome sports: Sing 'em full wel-  
comes!

*Dio.* And let 'em know, our true love breeds  
more stories,

And perfect joys, than kings do, and their glories.  
[*Exeunt.*

# THE QUEEN OF CORINTH.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

AGENOR, *Prince of Argos.*

THEANOR, *Son of the Queen of Corinth, a vicious Prince.*

LEONIDAS, *the Corinthian General, Brother to MERIONE.*

EUPHANES, *a noble young Gentleman, Favourite to the Queen.*

CRATES, *Elder Brother to EUPHANES, a malicious Beauviseam.*

CONON, *EUPHANES'S Confidant and Fellow-Traveller.*

NEANTHES, }  
SOICLES, } *Courtiers.*  
ERATON, }

ONOS, *or LAMPRIAS, a very foolish Traveller.*

Tutor, }  
Uncle, } *to ONOS, two Foolish Knaves.*

Gentlemen, *Servants to AGENOR.*

A Page to Lord EUPHANES.

Marshal, Vintner, Drawers, Tavern Boys, and Six Ruffians.

QUEEN OF CORINTH, *a wise and virtuous Widow.*  
MERIONE, *a virtuous Lady, honourably solicited by Prince AGENOR.*

BELISA, *a noble Lady, Mistress to EUPHANES.*

SCENE,—CORINTH.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*Before the Palace.*

*Enter NEANTHES, SOICLES, and ERATON.*

*Eraton.* The general is return'd then ?

*Nean.* With much honour.

*Sos.* And peace concluded with the prince of Argos ?

*Nean.* To the queen's wishes : The conditions So far beyond her hopes, to the advantage [sign'd Of Corinth, and the good of all her subjects, That though Leonidas, our brave general, Ever came home a fair and great example, He never yet return'd or with less loss Or more deserved honour.

*Era.* Have you not heard

The motives to this general good ?

*Nean.* The main one

Was admiration first in young Agenor (For by that name we know the prince of Argos) Of our Leonidas' wisdom and his valour ; Which, though an enemy, first in him bred wonder, That liking, love succeeded that, which was Follow'd by a desire to be a friend, Upon what terms soever, to such goodness. They had an interview ; and, that their friendship Might with our peace be ratified, 'twas concluded, Agenor, yielding up all such strong places As he held in our territories, should receive (With a sufficient dowry paid by the queen) The fair Merione for his wife.

*Era.* But how

Approves the queen of this ? since we well know, Nor was her highness ignorant, that her son The prince Theanor made love to this lady, And in the noblest way.

*Nean.* Which she allowed of ;

And I have heard from some familiar with Her nearest secrets, she so deeply prized her, Being from an infant train'd up in her service, (Or, to speak better, rather her own creature) She once did say, that if the prince should steal A marriage without her leave or knowledge, With this Merione, with a little suit, She should grant both their pardons ; whereas now, To shew herself forsooth a Spartan lady, And that 'tis in her power, now it concerns The common good, not alone to subdue Her own affections, but command her son's, She has not only forced him with rough threats To leave his mistress, but compell'd him, when Agenor made his entrance into Corinth, To wait upon his rival.

*Sos.* Can it be

The prince should sit down with this wrong ?

*Nean.* I know not ;

I am sure I should not.

*Era.* Trust me, nor I :

A mother is a name ; but, put in balance

With a young wench, 'tis nothing. Where did you leave him ?

*Nean.* Near Vesta's temple (for there he dismiss'd me)

And full of troubled thoughts, calling for Crates : He went with him, but whither, or to what purpose, I am a stranger.

*Enter THEANOR and CRATES.*

*Era.* They are come back, Neanthes.

*The.* I like the place well.

*Cra.* Well, sir ? it is built

As if the architect had been a prophet,  
And fashion'd it alone for this night's action;  
The vaults so hollow, and the walls so strong,  
As Dian there might suffer violence,  
And with loud shrieks in vain call Jove to help her;  
Or should he hear, his thunder could not find  
An entrance to it.

*The.* I give up myself

Wholly to thy direction, worthiest Crates:  
And yet the desperate cure that we must practise  
Is in itself so foul, and full of danger,  
That I stand doubtful whether 'twere more manly  
To die not seeking help, or, that help being  
So deadly, to pursue it.

*Cra.* To those reasons

I have already urged, I will add these;  
For, but consider, sir— [They talk apart.]

*Era.* It is of weight

Whate'er it be, that with such vehement action  
Of eye, hand, foot, nay, all his body's motion,  
Crates incites the prince to.

*Nean.* Then observe,

With what variety of passions he  
Receives his reasons: Now he's pale, and shakes  
For fear or anger; now his natural red  
Comes back again, and with a pleasing smile  
He seems to entertain it. 'Tis resolved on,  
Be it what 'twill: To his ends may it prosper,  
Though the state sink for't!

*Cra.* Now you are a prince

Fit to rule others, and, in shaking off  
The bonds in which your mother fetters you,  
Discharge your debt to Nature: She's your guide;  
Follow her boldly, sir.

*The.* I am confirm'd,

Fall what may fall.

*Cra.* Yet still disguise your malice

In your humility.

*The.* I am instructed.

*Cra.* Though in your heart there rage a thousand tempests,

All calmness in your looks.

*The.* I shall remember.

*Cra.* And at no hand, though these are used as agents,

Acquaint them with your purpose, till the instant  
That we employ them; 'tis not fit they have  
Time to consider: When 'tis done, reward  
Or fear will keep them silent. Yet you may  
Grace them as you pass by; 'twill make them surer  
And greedier to deserve you.

*The.* I'll move only

As you would have me. Good day, gentlemen!  
Nay, spare this ceremonious form of duty  
To him that brings love to you, equal love,  
And is in nothing happier than in knowing  
It is return'd by you; we are as one.

*Sos.* I am o'erjoyed! I know not  
How to reply; but—

*Era.* Hang all *buts*!—My lord,  
For this your bounteous favour—

*Nean.* Let me speak—

If to feed vultures here, after the halter  
Has done his part, or if there be a hall  
To take a swinge or two there, may deserve this—

*Sos.* We are ready.

*Era.* Try us any way.

*Nean.* Put us to it.

*The.* What jewels I have in you!

*Cra.* Have these souls,

*Aside.*

That for a good look, and a few kind words,  
Part with their essence?

*The.* Since you will compel me  
To put that to the trial which I doubt not,  
Crates, may be suddenly, will instruct you  
How, and in what, to shew your loves: Obey him  
As you would bind me to you.

*Cra.* 'Tis well grounded:  
Leave me to rear the building.

*Nean.* We will do—

*Cra.* I know it.

*Era.* Anything you'll put us to. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Room in the House of LEONIDAS.

Enter LEONIDAS, MERIONE, and BELIZA.

*Leo.* Sister, I reap the harvest of my labours  
In your preferment; be you worthy of it,  
And with an open bosom entertain  
A greater fortune than my love durst hope for!  
Be wise and welcome it: Play not the coy  
And foolish wanton, with the offer'd bounties  
Of him that is a prince. I was woo'd for you,  
And won, Merione; then, if you dare  
Believe the object that took me was worthy,  
Or trust my judgment, in me think you were  
Court'd, sued to, and conquer'd.

*Mer.* Noble brother,  
I have and still esteem you as a father,  
And will as far obey you: my heart speaks it:  
And yet, without your anger, give me leave  
To say, that in the choice of that on which  
All my life's joys or sorrows have dependence,  
It had been fit, ere you had made a full  
And absolute grant of me to any other,  
I should have used mine own eyes, or at least  
Made you to understand, whether it were  
Within my power to make a second gift  
Of my poor self.

*Leo.* I know what 'tis you point at,  
The prince Theanor's love: let not that cheat you;  
His vows were but mere courtship; all his service  
But practice how to entrap a credulous lady,  
Or, grant it serious, yet you must remember,  
He's not to love, but where the queen his mother  
Must give allowance, which to you is barr'd up;  
And therefore study to forget that ever  
You cherish'd such a hope.

*Mer.* I would I could!

*Leo.* But brave Agenor, who is come in person  
To celebrate this marriage, for your love  
Forgives the forfeit of ten thousand lives,  
That must have fall'n under the sword of war  
Had not this peace been made; which general good  
Both countries owe to his affection to you.  
Oh, happy sister, ask this noble lady,  
Your bosom friend (since I fail in my credit)  
What palm Agenor's name, above all princes  
That Greece is proud of, carries, and with lustre.

*Bel.* Indeed, fame gives him out for excellent;  
And, friend, I doubt not but when you shall see him,

Enter a Servant, who whispers BELIZA.

He'll so appear to you—Art sure 'tis he?

*Ser.* As I live madam—

*Bel.* Virtue enable me to contain my joy!  
'Tis my Euphanes?

*Ser.* Yes.

*Bel.* And he's in health?

*Ser.* Most certainly, madam.

*Bel.* I'll see him instantly.

So, pr'ythee tell him. [*Exit* Servant.]

*Mer.* I yield myself too weak

In argument to oppose you; you may lead me  
Whither you please.

*Leo.* 'Tis answer'd like my sister;  
And if in him you find not ample cause  
To pray for me, and daily, on your knees,  
Conclude I have no judgment.

*Mer.* May it prove so!—

Friend, shall we have your company?

*Bel.* Two hours hence

I will not fail you.

*Leo.* At your pleasure, madam.

[*Exit* LEONIDAS and MERIONE.]

*Enter* EUPHANEUS.

*Bel.* Could I in one word speak a thousand  
welcomes,

And hearty ones, you have 'em. *Fy!* my hand?  
We stand at no such distance: By my life,  
The parting kiss you took before your travel  
Is yet a virgin on my lips, preserved  
With as much care as I would do my fame,  
To entertain your wish'd return.

*Euph.* Best lady,

That I do honour you, and with as much reason  
As ever man did virtue; that I love you,  
Yet look upon you with that reverence  
As holy men behold the sun, the stars,  
The temples, and their gods, they all can witness;  
And that you have deserved this duty from me,  
The life, and means of life, for which I owe you,  
Commands me to profess it, since my fortune  
Affords no other payment.

*Bel.* I had thought,

That for the trifling courtesies, as I call them,  
(Though you give them another name) you had  
Made ample satisfaction in the acceptance;  
And therefore did presume you had brought home  
Some other language.

*Euph.* No one I have learn'd  
Yields words sufficient to express your goodness;  
Nor can I ever chuse another theme,  
And not be thought unthankful.

*Bel.* Pray you no more,

As you respect me.

*Euph.* That charm is too powerful  
For me to disobey it. 'Tis your pleasure,  
And not my boldness, madam.

*Bel.* Good Euphanes,

Believe I am not one of those weak ladies,  
That (barren of all inward worth) are proud  
Of what they cannot truly call their own,  
Their birth or fortune, which are things without  
Nor in this will I imitate the world, [*them*:]  
Whose greater part of men think when they give  
They purchase bondmen, not make worthy friends:  
By all that's good I swear, I never thought  
My great estate was an addition to me,  
Or that your wants took from you.

*Euph.* There are few

So truly understanding or themselves  
Or what they do possess.

*Bel.* Good Euphanes, where benefits  
Are ill conferr'd, as on unworthy men,  
That turn them to bad uses, the bestower,  
For wanting judgment how and on whom to place  
Is partly guilty: But when we do favours [*them*],

To such as make them grounds on which they build  
Their noble actions, there we improve our fortunes  
To the most fair advantage. If I speak  
Too much, though I confess I speak well,  
Pr'ythee remember 'tis a woman's weakness,  
And then thou wilt forgive it.

*Euph.* You speak nothing

But what would well become the wisest man:  
And that by you deliver'd is so pleasing  
That I could hear you ever.

*Bel.* Fly not from

Your word, for I arrest it: And will now  
Express myself a little more, and prove  
That whereas you profess yourself my debtor,  
That I am yours.

*Euph.* Your ladyship then must use  
Some sophistry I ne'er heard of.

*Bel.* By plain reasons;

For, look you, had you never sunk beneath  
Your wants, or if those wants had found supply  
From Crates, your unkind and covetous brother,  
Or any other man, I then had miss'd  
A subject upon which I worthily  
Might exercise my bounty: Whereas now,  
By having happy opportunity  
To furnish you before, and in your travels,  
With all conveniencies that you thought useful,  
That gold which would have rusted in my coffers,  
Being thus employ'd, has render'd me a partner  
In all your glorious actions. And whereas,  
Had you not been, I should have died a thing  
Scarce known, or soon forgotten; there's no trophy  
In which Euphanes for his worth is mention'd,  
But there you have been careful to remember,  
That all the good you did came from Beliza.

*Euph.* That was but thankfulness.

*Bel.* 'Twas such an honour,

And such a large return for the poor trash  
I ventured with you, that, if I should part  
With all that I possess, and myself too,  
In satisfaction for it, 'twere still short  
Of your deservings.

*Euph.* You o'erprize them, madam.

*Bel.* The queen herself hath given me gracious  
thanks

In your behalf; for she hath heard, Euphanes,  
How gallantly you have maintain'd her honour  
In all the courts of Greece; And rest assured  
(Though yet unknown) when I present you to  
her,

Which I will do this evening, you shall find  
That she intends good to you.

*Euph.* Worthiest lady,

Since all you labour for is the advancement  
Of him that will live ever your poor servant,  
He must not contradict it.

*Bel.* Here's your brother;

'Tis strange to see him here.

*Enter* CRATES.

*Cra.* You're welcome home, sir!—  
Your pardon, madam.—I had thought my house,  
Considering who I am, might have been worthy  
Of your first visit.

*Euph.* 'Twas not open to me  
When last I saw you; and to me 'tis wonder  
That absence, which still renders men forgotten,  
Should make my presence wish'd for.

*Bel.* That's not it;

Your too-kind brother, understanding that

You stand in no need of him, is bold to offer  
His entertainment.

*Cra.* He had never wanted  
Or yours, or your assistance, had he practised  
The way he might have took, to have commanded  
Whatever I call mine.

*Euph.* I studied many,  
But could find none.

*Cra.* You would not find yourself, sir,  
Or in yourself, what was from you due to me ;  
The privilege my birth bestow'd upon me  
Might challenge some regard.

*Euph.* You had all the land, sir ;  
What else did you expect ? And I am certain  
You kept such strong guards to preserve it yours,  
I could force nothing from you.

*Cra.* Did you ever  
Demand help from me ?

*Euph.* My wants have, and often,  
With open mouths, but you nor heard nor saw them.  
May be, you look'd I should petition to you,  
As you went to your horse ; flatter your servants,  
To play the brokers for my furtherance ;  
Sooth your worst humours, act the parasite  
On all occasions ; write my name with theirs  
That are but one degree removed from slaves ;  
Be drunk when you would have me, then wench  
with you,

Or play the pandar ; enter into quarrels,  
Although unjustly grounded, and defend them,  
Because they were yours : These are the tyrannies  
Most younger brothers groan beneath ; yet bear  
them

From the insulting heir, selling their freedoms  
At a less rate than what the state allows  
The salary of base and common strumpets :  
For my part, ere on such low terms I feed  
Upon a brother's trencher, let me die  
The beggar's death, and starve !

*Cra.* 'Tis bravely spoken,  
Did what you do rank with it.

*Bel.* Why, what does he  
You would not wish were yours ?

*Cra.* I'll tell you, lady,  
Since you rise up his advocate, and boldly  
(For now I find, and plainly, in whose favour  
My love and service to you was neglected).  
For all your wealth, nay, add to that your beauty,  
And put your virtues in, (if you have any)  
I would not yet be pointed at, as he is,  
For the fine courtier, the woman's man,  
That tells my lady stories, dissolves riddles,  
Ushers her to her coach, lies at her feet  
At solemn masques, applauding what she laughs  
at ;

Reads her asleep a-nights, and takes his oath  
Upon her pantofles, that all excellence  
In other madams does but zany hers :  
These you are perfect in, and yet these take not  
Or from your birth or freedom.

*Euph.* Should another  
Say this, my deeds, not looks, should shew——

*Bel.* Contemn it :  
His envy feigns this, and he's but reporter,  
Without a second, of his own dry fancies.

*Cra.* Yes, madam, the whole city speaks it with  
me ;

And though it may distaste, 'tis certain you  
Are brought into the scene, and with him censured ;  
For you are given out for the provident lady,

That, not to be unfurnish'd for her pleasures,  
(As, without them, to what vain use is greatness !)  
Have made choice of an able man, a young man,  
Of an Herculean back, to do you service ;  
And one you may command too, that is active,  
And does what you would have him.

*Bel.* You are foul-mouth'd !

*Cra.* That can speak well, write verses too, and  
good ones,  
Sharp and conceited, whose wit you may lie with  
When his performance fails him ; one you have  
Maintain'd abroad to learn new ways to please  
you ;

And, by the gods, you well reward him for it.  
No night in which, while you lie sick and panting,  
He watches by you, but is worth a talent ;  
No conference in your coach, which is not paid with  
A scarlet suit : This the poor people mutter,  
Though I believe, for I am bound to do so,  
A lady of your youth, that feeds high too,  
And a most exact lady, may do all this  
Out of a virtuous love, the last-bought vizard  
That lechery purchased.

*Euph.* Not a word beyond this ! [Draws.]  
The reverence I owe to that one womb  
In which we both were embrions, makes me suffer  
What's past ; but if continued——

*Bel.* Stay your hand !  
The queen shall right mine honour.

*Cra.* Let him do it ;  
It is but marrying him. And, for your anger,  
Know that I slight it ! When your goddess here  
Is weary of your sacrifice, as she will be,  
You know my house, and there amongst my ser-  
vants

Perhaps you'll find a livery. [Exit.]

*Bel.* Be not moved ;  
I know the rancour of his disposition,  
And turn it on himself by laughing at it ;  
And in that let me teach you.

*Euph.* I learn gladly. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter NEANTHES, SOBICLES, and ERATON, severally.*

*Nean.* You are met unto my wishes ; if you ever  
Desired true mirth so far as to adventure  
To die with the extremity of laughter,  
I come before the object that will do it ;  
Or let me live your fool.

*Sos.* Who is't, Neanthes ?

*Nean.* Lamprias, the usurer's son.

*Era.* Lamprias ? the youth  
Of six and fifty ?

*Sos.* That was sent to travel  
By rich Beliza, till he came to age  
And was fit for a wife ?

*Nean.* The very same.

This gallant, with his guardian and his tutor,  
(And, of the three, who is most fool I know not)  
Are newly come to Corinth : I'll not stale them  
By giving up their characters, but leave you  
To make your own discoveries. Here they are, sir.

*Enter ONOS, UNCLE, and Tutor.*

*Tutor.* That leg a little higher ; very well.  
Now put your face into the traveller's posture ;  
Exceeding good.

*Uncle.* Do you mark how they admire him ?

*Tutor.* They will be all my scholars, when they know

And understand him truly.

*Era.* Phœbus guard me  
From this new Python!

*Sos.* How they have trimm'd him up  
Like an old reveller!

*Nean.* Curl'd him and perfum'd him;  
But that was done with judgment, for he looks  
Like one that purged perpetually. Trust me,  
That witch's face of his is painted too,  
And every ditch upon it buries more  
Than would set off ten bawds and all their tenants!

*Sos.* See how it moves towards us.

*Nean.* There's a salutation!—  
'Troth, gentlemen, you have bestow'd much travel  
In training up your pupil.

*Tutor.* Sir, great buildings  
Require great labours; which yet we repent not,  
Since for the country's good we have brought  
home

An absolute man.

*Uncle.* As any of his years,  
Corinth can shew you.

*Era.* He's exceeding meagre.

*Tutor.* His contemplation—

*Uncle.* Besides, 'tis fit  
Learners should be kept hungry.

*Nean.* You all contemplate:  
For three such wretched pictures of lean famine  
I never saw together.

*Uncle.* We have fat minds, sir,  
And travell'd to save charges. Do you think  
'Twas fit a young and hopeful gentleman  
Should be brought up a glutton? He's my ward;  
Nor was there ever, where I bore the bag,  
Any superfluous waste.

*Era.* Pray you, can it speak?

*Tutor.* He knows all languages, but will use  
none;  
They are all too big for his mouth, or else too  
little

To express his great conceits. And yet of late,  
With some impulsion, he hath set down  
In a strange method, by the way of question,  
And briefly too, all business whatsoever,  
That may concern a gentleman.

*Nean.* Good sir, let's hear him.

*Tutor.* Come on, sir.

*Nean.* They have taught him, like an ape,  
To do his tricks by signs. Now he begins.

*Onos.* When shall we be drunk together?

*Tutor.* That's the first.

*Onos.* Where shall we whore to-night?

*Uncle.* That ever follows.

*Era.* Odds me, he now looks angry.

*Onos.* Shall we quarrel?

*Nean.* With me at no hand, sir.

*Onos.* Then let's protest.

*Era.* Is this all?

*Tutor.* These are, sir, the four new virtues  
That are in fashion; many a mile we measured  
Before we could arrive unto this knowledge.

*Nean.* You might have spared that labour, for  
at home here

There's little else in practice.—Ha! the queen?  
Good friends, for half an hour remove your motion;  
To-morrow willingly, when we have more leisure,  
We'll look on him again.

*Onos.* Did I not rarely?

*Uncle.* Excellent well.

*Tutor.* He shall have six plumbs for it.

[*Exeunt* ONOS, UNCLE, and *Tutor.*]

*Enter* AGENOR, LEONIDAS, THEANOR, QUEEN, MERIONE,  
BELIZA, EUPHANES, CRATES, Ladies and Attendants  
with lights.

*Queen.* How much my court is honour'd,  
princely brother,  
In your vouchsafing it your long'd-for presence,  
Were tedious to repeat, since 'tis already  
(And heartily) acknowledged. May the gods,  
That look into kings' actions, smile upon  
The league we have concluded; and their justice  
Find me out to revenge it, if I break  
One article!

*Age.* Great miracle of queens!  
How happy I esteem myself, in being  
Thought worthy to be number'd in the rank  
Of your confederates, my love and best service  
Shall teach the world hereafter; but this gift  
With which you have confirm'd it, is so far  
Beyond my hopes and means e'er to return,  
That of necessity I must die obliged  
To your unanswer'd bounty.

*The.* The sweet lady,  
In blushes gives your highness thanks.

*Queen.* Believe it,  
On the queen's word, she is a worthy one;  
And I am so acquainted with her goodness,  
That but for this peace that hath changed my  
purpose,

And to her more advancement, I should gladly  
Have call'd her daughter.

*The.* Though I am deprived of  
A blessing, 'tis not in the fates to equal,  
To shew myself a subject as a son,  
Here I give up my claim, and willingly  
With mine own hand deliver you what once  
I loved above myself; and from this hour,  
(For my affection yields now to my duty)  
Vow never to solicit her.

*Cra.* 'Tis well cover'd.—

[*Aside.*]

Neantes, and the rest!

[*Exeunt* CRATES, NEANTES, SOBICLES, ERATON.

*Queen.* Nay, for this night  
You must (for 'tis our country fashion, sir)  
Leave her to her devotions; in the morning  
We'll bring you to the temple.

*Leo.* How in this  
Your highness honours me!

*Mer.* Sweet rest to all!

*Age.* This kiss, and I obey you.

*Bel.* Please it your highness,  
This is the gentleman.

*Queen.* You are welcome home, sir.—  
Now, as I live, one of a promising presence.—  
I have heard of you before, and you shall find  
I'll know you better; find out something that  
May do you good, and rest assured to have it.  
Were you at Sparta lately?

*Euph.* Three days since,  
Madam, I came from thence.

*Queen.* 'Tis very late.  
Good night, my lord!—Do you, sir, follow me;  
I must talk further with you.

*Age.* All rest with you!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*An Aisle of the Temple of Vesta.*

*Enter CRATES, NEANTRES, ERATON, and SOMICLES, disguised.*

*Cra.* She must pass through this cloister;  
And boldly seize upon her. [suddenly

*Nean.* Where's the prince?

*Cra.* He does expect us at the place I shew'd you.

*Enter MERIONS and Servant.*

I hear one's footing; peace, 'tis she.

*Mer.* Now leave me; [Exit Servant.

I know the way; though, Vesta witness with me,  
I never trod it with such fear.—Help, help!

[*They seize her.*

*Cra.* Stop her mouth close; out with the light;  
I'll guide you. [Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Vault under the Temple.*

*Enter MERIONS.*

*Mer.* To whom now shall I cry? What power  
thus kneel to,

And beg my ravish'd honour back upon me?  
Deaf, deaf, you gods of goodness, deaf to me,  
Deaf heaven to all my cries; deaf hope, deaf justice!  
I am abused, and you, that see all, saw it,  
Saw it, and smiled upon the villain did it;  
Saw it, and gave him strength: Why have I pray'd  
to ye, [slumbers?

When all the world's eyes have been sunk in  
Why have I then poured out my tears? kneel'd to  
And from the altar of a pure heart sent ye [ye?  
Thoughts like yourselves, white, innocent, vows  
purer

And of a sweeter flame than all earth's odours?  
Why have I sung your praises, strew'd your  
temples,

And crown'd your holy priests with virgin roses?  
Is it we hold ye powerful, to destroy us?  
Believe and honour ye, to see us ruin'd?  
These tears of anger thus I sprinkle towards ye,  
You that dare sleep secure whilst virgins suffer;  
These stick like comets, blaze eternally,  
Till, with the wonder, they have waked your justice,  
And forced ye fear our curses, as we yours!

*Enter THEANOR, and CRATES, with vizards.*

My shame still follows me, and still proclaims me.  
He turns away in scorn! I am contemn'd too;  
A more unmanly violence than the other:  
Bitten, and flung away?—Whate'er you are,  
Sir, you that have abused me, and now most basely  
And sacrilegiously robbed this fair temple,  
I fling all these behind me, but look upon me,  
But one kind loving look, be what you will,  
So from this hour you will be mine, my husband.—  
And you, his hand in mischief, I speak to you too,  
Counsel him nobly now; you know the mischief,  
The most unrighteous act he has done; persuade  
him,

Persuade him like a friend, knock at his conscience  
Till fair repentance follow. Yet be worthy of me.  
And shew yourself, if ever good thought guided you:  
You have had your foul will; make it yet fair with  
marriage;

Open yourself and take me, wed me now.

[*THEANOR draws his dagger.*

More fruits of villainy? Your dagger? Come;  
You are merciful; I thank you for your medicine.

*Enter NEANTRES, SOMICLES, and ERATON, disguised.*

Is that too worthy thou? Devil! thou with him!  
Thou penny bawd to his lust! Will not that stir  
thee?

Do you work by tokens now? Be sure I live not,  
For your own safeties, knaves. I will sit patiently:  
But, as you are true villains, the devil's own  
servants,

And those he loves and trusts, make it as bloody  
An act, of such true horror, Heaven would shake  
at;

'Twill shew the braver. Goodness, hold my hope  
And in thy mercies look upon my ruins, [fast,

*Enter Six disguised, singing and dancing to a horrid  
music, and sprinkling water on her face.*

And then I am right!—My eyes grow dead and  
heavy.—

Wrong me no more, as ye are men! [Faints.

*The.* She's fast.

*Cra.* Away with her. [Exit, bearing her off.

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter AORNOR and Gentlemen, with torches.*

*Age.* Now, gentlemen, the time's come now to  
enjoy

That fruitful happiness my heart has long'd for.  
This day be happy call'd; and when old Time  
Brings it about each year, crown'd with that sweet-  
It gives me now, see every man observe it, [neat  
And, laying all aside bears show of business,  
Give this to joy and triumph. How sit my clothes?  
1 *Gent.* Handsome, and wondrous well, sir.

*Age.* Do they shew richly?

For to those curious eyes even Beauty envies,  
I must not now appear poor, or low-fashion'd.  
Methinks I am younger than I was, far younger;  
And such a promise in my blood I feel now,  
That, if there may be a perpetual youth  
Bestow'd on man, I am that soul shall win it.  
Does my hair stand well? Lord, how ill-favour'dly  
You have dress'd me to-day! how badly! Why  
this cloak?

2 *Gent.* Why, 'tis the richest, sir.

*Age.* And here you have put me on  
A pair of breeches look like a pair of bagpipes.

1 *Gent.* Believe sir, they shew bravely.

*Age.* Why these stockings?

2 *Gent.* Your leg appears—

*Age.* Poh! I would have had 'em peach-colour;  
All young and new about me. And this scarf here,  
A goodly thing! you have trick'd me like a puppet.

1 *Gent.* I'll undertake to rig forth a whole navy,  
And with less labour, than one man in love:  
They are never pleased.

2 *Gent.* Methinks he looks well.

1 *Gent.* Well

As man can look, as handsome. Now do I wonder

He found not fault his nose was put on ugly,  
Or his eyes looked too grey, and rail at us :  
They are the wayward'st things, these lovers.

2 *Genl.* All will be right

When once it comes to th' push.

1 *Genl.* I would they were at it,  
For our own quiet sake.

*Age.* Come, wait upon me ;  
And bear yourselves like mine, my friends, and  
nobly. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*Before the House of LEONIDAS.*

*Enter THEANOR, CRATES, and ERATON, bringing  
MERIONE.*

*Era.* This is her brother's door.

*Cra.* There lay her down then ;

Lay her along. She is fast still ?

*Era.* As forgetfulness.

*Cra.* Be not you stirr'd now, but away to your  
mother,  
Give all attendance, let no stain appear  
Of fear, or doubt in your face ; carry yourself  
confidently.

*The.* But whither runs your drift now ?

*Cra.* When she wakes,  
Either what's done will shew a mere dream to her,  
And carry no more credit ; or, say she find it,  
Say she remember all the circumstances,  
Twenty to one the shapes in which they were acted,  
The horrors, and the still affrights we shew'd her,  
Rising in wilder figures to her memory,  
Will run her mad, and no man guess the reason :  
If all these fail, and that she rise up perfect,  
And so collect herself, believe this, sir,  
Not knowing who it was that did this to her,  
Nor having any power to guess ; the thing done  
Being the utter undoing of her honour [too  
If it be known, and to the world's eye publish'd,  
Especially at this time when Fortune courts her,  
She must and will conceal it, nay, forget it :  
The woman is no Lucrece. Get you gone, sir ;  
And, as you would have more of this sport, fear not.

*The.* I am confirm'd. Farewell ! [Exit THEANOR.]

*Cra.* Farewell ! Away, sir.—  
Disperse yourselves ; and, as you love his favour,  
And that that crowns it, gold, no tongues amongst  
ye !

Ye know your charge ; this way goes no suspicion.  
[Exeunt.]

*Enter AGENOR, and LEONIDAS, with two Gentlemen,  
with lights.*

*Age.* You are stirring early, sir.

*Leo.* It was my duty  
To wait upon your grace.

*Age.* How fares your sister,  
Myauteous mistress ? What, is she ready yet ?

*Leo.* No doubt she'll lose no time, sir : Young  
maids in her way

Tread upon thorns, and think an hour an age,  
Till the priest has done his part, that theirs may  
follow.

I saw her not since yesterday i' th' evening ;  
But, sir, I am sure she is not slack : Believe me,  
Your grace will find a loving soul.

*Age.* A sweet one ;  
And so much joy I carry in the thought of it,  
So great a happiness to know she is mine,  
(Believe me, noble brother) that to express it

Methinks a tongue's a poor thing, can do nothing,  
Imagination less.—Who's that that lies there ?

*Leo.* Where, sir ?

*Age.* Before the door ; it looks like a woman.

*Leo.* This way I came abroad, but then there  
was nothing.

One of the maids o'erwatched, belike.

*Age.* It may be.

*Leo.* But methinks this is no fit place to sleep in.

1 *Genl.* 'Tis sure a woman, sir ; she has jewels  
She fears no foul play, sure. [on too :

*Leo.* Bring a torch hither ;

Yet 'tis not perfect day. I should know those

*Age.* How sound she sleeps ! [garments.

*Leo.* I am sorry to see this !

*Age.* Do you know her ?

*Leo.* And you now, I am sure, sir.

*Age.* My mistress ? How comes this ?

*Enter QUEEN, THEANOR, BELIDA, EUPHRANES, NEANTHES,  
and Attendants.*

*Leo.* The queen and her train.—

*Queen.* You know my pleasure.

*Euph.* And will be most careful.

*Queen.* Be not long absent ;

The suit you preferr'd is granted.—

*Nean.* This fellow mounts

Apace, and will tower o'er us like a falcon.—

*Queen.* Good morrow to ye all ! Why stand ye  
wond'ring ?

*Enter the house, sir, and bring out your mistress ;  
You must observe our ceremonies.—What's the  
matter ?*

What's that ye stand at ?—How ! Merione ?

Asleep i' th' street ; Belike some sudden palsy,

As she stept out last night upon devotion,

To take her farewell of her virgin state,

The air being sharp and piercing, struck her sud-  
See if she breathe. [denly.

*Leo.* A little.

*Queen.* Wake her then ;

'Tis sure a fit.

*Age.* She wakes herself : Give room to her.

*Queen.* See how the spirits struggle to recover,  
And strongly reinforce their strengths ; for certain,  
This was no natural sleep.

*The.* I am of your mind, madam.

*Queen.* No, son, it cannot be.

*The.* Pray Heaven, no trick in't !

Good soul, she little merits such a mischief.

*Queen.* She is broad awake now, and her sense  
'Twas sure a fit. Stand off. [clears up ;

*Mer.* The queen, my love here,

And all my noble friends ? Why, where am I ?

How am I tranced, and moped ! I' th' street ?  
Heaven bless me !

Shame to my sex ! o' th' ground too ?—Oh, I

*Leo.* How wild she looks ! [remember—

*Age.* Oh, my cold heart, how she trembles !

*Mer.* Oh, I remember, I remember !

*Queen.* What's that ?

*Mer.* My shame, my shame, my shame ! Oh,  
My never-dying shame ! [I remember,

*The.* Here has been villainy.

*Queen.* I fear so too.

*Mer.* You are no furies, are ye ?

No horrid shapes sent to affright me ?

*Age.* No, sweet ;

We are your friends. Look up ; I am Agenor,

(Oh, my Merione !) that loves you dearly,

And come to marry you.

*Leo.* Sister, what ail you ?  
Sweep out your griefs, and boldly.

*Age.* Something sticks here  
Will choke you else.

*Mer.* I hope it will.

*Queen.* Be free, lady ;

You have your loving friends about you.

*Age.* Dear Merione,  
By the unspotted love I ever bore you,  
By thine own goodness—

*Mer.* Oh, 'tis gone, 'tis gone, sir ;  
I am now I know not what ; pray ye look not on  
No name is left me, nothing to inherit, [me ;  
But that detested, base, and branded—

*Age.* Speak it,  
And how : Diseases of most danger,  
Their causes once discover'd, are easily cured.  
My fair Merione—

*Mer.* I thank your love, sir :  
When I was fair Merione, unspotted,  
Pure, and unblasted in the bud you honour'd,  
White, as the heart of truth, then, prince Agenor,  
Even then I was not worthy of your favour.  
Wretch that I am, less worthy now of pity !  
Let no good thing come near me ; Virtue fly me ;  
You that have honest noble names, despise me :  
For I am nothing now but a main pestilence,  
Able to poison all ! Send those unto me  
That have forgot their names, ruin'd their fortunes,  
Despised their honours ; those that have been  
virgins

Ravish'd and wrong'd, and yet dare live to tell it.  
*The.* Now it appears too plain.

*Mer.* Send those sad people  
That hate the light, and curse society ;  
Whose thoughts are graves, and from whose eyes  
continually

Their melting souls drop out, send those to me ;  
And when their sorrows are most excellent,  
So full that one grief more cannot be added,  
My story like a torrent shall devour 'em.  
Hark ! it must out : But pray stand close together,  
And let not all the world hear.

*Leo.* Speak it boldly.

*Mer.* And, royal lady, think but charitably !  
Your grace has known my breeding.

*Queen.* Pr'ythee, speak it.

*Mer.* Is there no stranger here ? Send off your  
servants.

And yet it must be known.—I shake.

*Age.* Sweet mistress !

*Mer.* I am abused, basely abused ! do you guess  
yet ?

Come close ; I'll tell ye plainer ; I am whored,  
Ravish'd, and robb'd of honour !

*Leo.* Oh, the devil !

*Age.* What hellish slave was this ?

*The.* A wretch, a wretch,  
A damn'd wretch ! Do you know the villain, lady ?

*Mer.* No.

*The.* Not by guess ?

*Mer.* Oh, no.

*The.* It must be known.

*Queen.* Where was the place ?

*Mer.* I know not neither.

*Age.* Oh, Heaven !

Is this the happy time ? my hope to this come ?

*Leo.* Neither the man nor circumstances ?

*The.* His tongue,

Did you not hear his tongue ? no voice ?

*Mer.* None, none, sir :

All I know of him was his violence.

*Age.* How came you hither, sweet ?

*Mer.* I know not neither.

*The.* A cunning piece of villainy.

*Mer.* All I remember

Is only this : Going to Vesta's temple,  
To give the goddess my last virgin prayers,  
Near to that place I was suddenly surpris'd,  
By five or six disguised, and from thence violently  
To my dishonour haled : That act perform'd,  
Brought back ; but how, or whither, till I waked  
here—

*The.* This is so monstrous, the gods cannot  
I have not read, in all the villainies [suffer it ;  
Committed by the most obdurate rascals,  
An act so truly impious.

*Leo.* 'Would I knew him !

*The.* He must be known ; the devil cannot hide  
him.

*Queen.* If all the art I have, or power, can do it,  
He shall be found ; and such a way of justice  
Inflicted on him—A lady wrong'd in my court ?  
And this way robb'd and ruin'd ?

*The.* Be contented, madam ;  
If he be above ground, I will have him.

*Age.* Fair virtuous maid, take comfort yet, and  
flourish,  
In my love flourish ; the stain was forced upon you,  
None of your will's, nor yours. Rise, and rise  
mine still,  
And rise the same white, sweet, fair soul, I loved  
Take me the same. [ye ;

*Mer.* I kneel and thank you, sir ;  
And I must say you are truly honourable,  
And dare confess my will yet still a virgin :  
But so unfit and weak a cabinet  
To keep your love and virtue in am I now,  
That have been forced and broken, lost my lustre ;  
I mean this body, so corrupt a volume,  
For you to study goodness in, and honour,  
I shall entreat your grace, confer that happiness  
Upon a beauty sorrow never saw yet.

And when this grief shall kill me, (as it must do)  
Only remember yet you had such a mistress ;  
And if you then dare shed a tear, yet honour me.—  
Good gentlemen, express your pities to me,  
In seeking out this villainy. And my last suit  
Is to your grace, that I may have your favour  
To live a poor recluse nun with this lady,  
From court and company, till Heaven shall hear me,  
And send me comfort, or death end my misery.

*Queen.* Take your own will ; my very heart bleeds  
for thee.

*Age.* Farewell, Merione ! since I have not thee,  
I'll wed thy goodness, and thy memory.

*Leo.* And I her fair revenge.

*The.* Away ; let's follow it ;

For he's so rank i' th' wind we cannot miss him.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—A Street before a Tavern.

*Enter CRATES and CONON.*

*Cra.* Conon ? You are welcome home ! you are  
wondrous welcome !

Is this your first arrival ?

*Con.* Sir, but now

I reach'd the town.

*Cra.* You are once more welcome then.

*Con.* I thank you, noble sir.

*Cra.* Pray you do me the honour  
To make my poor house first—

*Con.* Pray, sir, excuse me ;

I have not seen mine own yet ; nor made happy  
These longing eyes with those I love there.—

What's this ? a tavern ?

*Cra.* It seems so by the outside.

*Con.* Step in here then ;

And since it offers itself so freely to us,  
A place made only for liberal entertainment,  
Let's seek no further, but make use of this,  
And, after the Greek fashion, to our friends  
Crown a round cup or two.

[*They go into the Tavern.*]

*Enter Vintner and Drawer.*

*Cra.* Your pleasure, sir.—

*Drawers !* who waits within ?

*Draw.* Anon, anon, sir.

*Vint.* Look into the Lilly-pot. Why, Mark,  
there !—

You are welcome, gentlemen ! heartily welcome,  
My noble friend !

*Cra.* Let's have good wine, mine host,  
And a fine private room.

*Vint.* Will you be there, sir ?

What is't you'll drink ? I'll draw your wine  
myself.—

*Cushions, ye knaves !* Why, when ?

*Re-enter Drawers with Cushions.*

*Draw.* Anon, anon, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Vint.* Chios, or Lesbos, Greek ?

*Cra.* Your best and neatest.

*Vint.* I'll draw ye that shall dance.

*Cra.* Away ; be quick then. [*Exit Vintner.*]

*Con.* How does your brother, sir, my noble friend,  
The good Euphanes ? In all my course of travel,  
I met not with a gentleman so furnish'd  
In gentleness and courtesy ; believe, sir,  
So many friendly offices I received from him,  
So great and timely, and enjoyed his company  
In such an open and a liberal sweetness,  
That when I dare forget him—

*Cra.* He's in good health, sir ;

But you will find him a much alter'd man ;  
Grown a great courtier, sir.

*Con.* He's worthy of it.

*Cra.* A man drawn up, that leaves no print  
behind him

Of what he was. Those goodnesses you speak of  
That have been in him, those that you call freedoms,  
Societies, and sweetness, look for now, sir,  
You'll find no shadows of them left, no sound ;  
The very air he has lived in alter'd. Now behold  
him,

And you shall see a thing walk by, look big upon  
you,

And cry for place : ' I am the queen's ; give room  
there !'

If you bow low, may be he'll touch the bonnet,  
Or fling a forc'd smile at you for a favour.

*Con.* He is your brother, sir.

*Cra.* These forms put off,  
Which travel and court holy-water sprinkle on him,  
I dare accept and know him. You'll think it  
strange, sir,

That even to me, to me, his natural brother,  
And one by birth he owes a little honour to—

*Enter Vintner with wine.*

But that's all one.—Come, give me some wine,  
mine host.—

Here's to your fair return !

[*Drinks.*]

*Con.* I wonder at it !

But sure he has found a nature not worth owning  
In this way ; else I know he is tender carried.—  
I thank you, sir. And now durst I presume,  
For all you tell me of these alterations  
And stops in his sweet nature (which till I find so,  
I have known him now so long, and look'd so  
through him,

You must give me leave to be a little faithless)  
I say, for all these, if you please to venture,  
I'll lay the wine we drink, let me send for him  
(Even I, that am the poorest of his fellowship)  
But by a boy o' th' house too, let him have business,  
Let him attend the queen, and let his mistress  
Hold him betwixt her arms, he shall come to me,  
And shall drink with me too, love me, and heartily ;  
Like a true honest man, bid me welcome home :  
I am confident.

*Cra.* You'll lose.

*Con.* You'll stand to th' wager ?

*Cra.* With all my heart.

*Con.* Go, boy, and tell Euphanes—

*Enter Boy.*

*Boy.* He's now gone up the street, sir,  
With a great train of gallants.

*Cra.* What think you now, sir !

*Con.* Go, and overtake him :

Commend my love unto him, (my name's Conon)

Tell him I am new arrived, and where I am,

And would request to see him presently.—

You see I use old dudgeon phrase to draw him.

*Cra.* I'll hang and quarter when you draw him  
hither.

*Con.* Away, boy.

*Boy.* I am gone, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Con.* Here's to you now !

And you shall find his travel has not stopt him,  
As you suppose, nor alter'd any freedom :  
But made him far more clear and excellent.  
It draws the grossness of the understanding,  
And renders active and industrious spirits :  
He that knows most men's manners, must of  
necessity

Best know his own, and mend those by example.

'Tis a dull thing to travel like a mill-horse,  
Still in the place he was born in, lamed and blinded ;  
Living at home is like it. Pure and strong spirits,  
That, like the fire, still covet to fly upward,  
And to give fire, as well as take it, cased up and  
mew'd here,

I mean at home, like lusty mettled horses,  
Only tied up in stables, to please their masters,  
Beat out their fiery lives in their own litters.  
Why don't you travel, sir ?

*Cra.* I have no belief in't ;

I see so many strange things, half unhatch'd too,  
Return, those that went out men, and good men,  
They look like poach'd eggs, with the soul suck'd  
out,

Empty and full of wind : All their affections  
Are baked in rye-crust, to hold carriage  
From this good town to th' other ; and when they  
are open'd,

They are so ill-cook'd and mouldy—

*Con.* You are pleasant.

*Cra.* I'll shew you a pack of these : I have 'em  
That have been long in travel too. [for you,  
*Con.* Please you, sir.

*Enter second Boy.*

*Cra.* You know the Merchant's Walk, boy ?

*2 Boy.* Very well.

*Cra.* And you remember those gentlemen were  
The other day with me ? [here

*2 Boy.* Yes.

*Cra.* Then go thither,  
For there I am sure they are ; pray 'em come hither,  
(And use my name) I would be glad to see 'em.

*Enter first Boy.*

*1 Boy.* Your brother's coming in, sir.

*Vint.* 'Ods my passion !

Out with the plate, ye knaves ; bring the new  
cushions,

And wash those glasses I set by for high-days ;  
Perfume the rooms along. Why, sirrah !

*1 Boy.* Here, sir.

*Vint.* Bid my wife make herself ready hand-  
And put on her best apron ; it may be, [some]ly,  
The noble gentleman will look upon her.

*Enter EUPHANES and two Gentlemen.*

*Euph.* Where is he, boy ?

*Vint.* Your worship's heartily welcome !  
It joys my very heart to see you here, sir.

The gentleman that sent for your honour——

*Euph.* Oh, good mine host !

*Vint.* To my poor homely house, an't like your  
honour——

*Euph.* I thank thine honour, good mine host.  
Where is he ?

*Con.* What think you now ?—My best Euphanes !

*Euph.* Conon !

Welcome, my friend ! my noble friend, how is it ?  
Are you in safety come, in health ?

*Con.* All health, all safety,  
Riches, and all that makes content and happiness,  
Now I am here, I have. How have you fared, sir ?

*Euph.* Well, I thank Heaven ; and never nearer,  
To catch at great occasion. [friend,

*Con.* Indeed I joy in't.

*Euph.* Nor am I for myself born in these for-  
In truth I love my friends. [tunes ;

*Con.* You were noble ever.

[EUPHANES salutes CRATES.

*Cra.* I thought you had not known me.

*Euph.* Yes ; you are my brother,  
My elder brother too : 'Would your affections  
Were able but to ask that love I owe to you,  
And, as I give, preserve it !—Here, friend Conon,  
To your fair welcome home ! [They drink.

*Con.* Dear sir, I thank you.—

Fill it to th' brim, boy.—Crates !

*Cra.* I will pledge you ;

But for that glorious comet, lately fired——

*Con.* Fy, fy, sir, fy !

*Euph.* Nay, let him take his freedoms ;  
He stirs not me, I vow to you ; much less stains me.

*Cra.* Sir, I cannot talk with that neat travelling  
tongue.

*Con.* As I live, he has the worst belief in men  
I am glad I am come home. [abroad !

*Enter second Boy.*

*2 Boy.* Here are the gentlemen.

*Cra.* Oh, let 'em enter. Now you that trust in  
travel,

And make sharp beards and little breeches deities,  
You that enhance the daily price of toothpicks,  
And hold there is no home-bred happiness,  
Behold a model of your minds and actions.

*Euph.* Though this be envious, yet, done i' th'  
I am content to thank you for't. [way of mirth,

*Con.* 'Tis well yet.

*Cra.* Let the masque enter.

*Enter Onos, Uncle, and Tutor.*

*Onos.* A pretty tavern, 'faith, of a fine structure !  
*Uncle.* Bear yourself like a gentleman ; here's  
And be sure you break no glasses. [sixpence,

*Tutor.* Hark ye, pupil ;

Go as I taught you, hang more upon your hams,  
And put your knees out bent ; there ; yet a little.  
Now I beseech ye, be not so improvident  
To forget your travelling pace, 'tis a main posture,  
And to all unsair'd gentlemen will betray you :  
Play with your Pisa beard. Why, where's your  
He must have a brush, sir. [brush, pupil ?

*Uncle.* More charge yet ?

*Tutor.* Here, take mine ;  
These elements of travel, he must not want, sir.

*Uncle.* *Mafoy*, he has had some nineteen-pence  
What would you more ? [in elements ;

*Tutor.* *Durus meherole pater !*

*Con.* What, monsieur Onos, the very pump of  
travel !

Sir, as I live, you have done me the greatest  
kindness——

Oh, my fair sir, Lampree, the careful uncle  
To this young hopeful issue ! Monsieur Tutor too,  
The father to his mind ! Come, come, let's hug,  
boys.

Why, what a bunch of travel do I embrace now !  
Methinks I put a girdle about Europe.  
How has the boy profited ?

*Uncle.* He has enough, sir,

If his too fiery mettle do not mar it.

*Con.* Is he not thrifty yet ?

*Tutor.* That's all his fault ;  
Too bounteous minded, being under age too ;  
A great consumer of his stock in pippins :

He had ever a hot stomach.

*Con.* Come hither, Onos.

Will you love me for this fine apple ?

*Onos.* Ouy.

*Con.* And will you be ruled by me sometimes ?

*Onos.* 'Faith, I will.

*Con.* That's a good boy.

*Uncle.* Pray give not the child so much fruit ;  
He's of a raw complexion.

*Euph.* You, monsieur Hard-Egg !

Do you remember me ? Do you remember  
When you and your consort travell'd through

*Con.* He's in that circuit still. [Hungary ?

*Euph.* Do you remember

The cantle of immortal cheese you carried with you,  
The half-cold cabbage in a leather satchel,  
And those invincible eggs that would lie in your  
bowels

A fortnight together, and then turn to bedstaves ;  
Your sour milk that would choak an Irishman,  
And bread was baked in Cæsar's time-for the army ?

*Con.* Providence, providence.

*Tutor.* The soul of travel.

*Euph.* Can the boy speak yet ?

*Tutor.* Yes ; and as fine a gentleman,  
I thank my able knowledge, he has arrived at,

Only a little sparing of his language,  
Which every man of observation—

*Uncle.* And of as many tongues—

*Tutor.* Pray be content, sir ;

You know you are for the bodily part, the purse,  
I for the magazine, the mind.

*Euph.* Come hither, Springal.

*Onos.* That in the Almain tongue signifies a  
gentleman.

*Euph.* What think you of the forms of Italy or  
Spain ?

*Onos.* I love mine own country pippin.

*Tutor.* Nobly answer'd ;

Born for his country first.

*Euph.* A great philosopher !—

What horses do you prefer ?

*Onos.* The white horse, sir ;

There where I lie ; honest, and a just beast.

*Tutor.* *O caput lepidum !* A child to say this !

Are these figures for the mouths of infants ?

*Con.* Onos, what wenches ? [*Apart to him.*]

Come, tell me true.

*Onos.* I cannot speak without book.

*Con.* When shall we have one ? ha ?

*Onos.* Steal me from mine uncle ;

For, look you, I am broke out horribly

For want of fleshly physick ; they say I am too  
young,

And that 'twill spoil my growth ; but, could you  
help me—

*Con.* Meet me to-morrow, man ; no more.—

*Euph.* You think now

You have open'd such a shame to me of travel,

By shewing these thin cubs ! You have honour'd  
us

Against your will, proclaim'd us excellent :

Three frails of aprats, carried from mart to mart,

Are as much meat as these, to more use travell'd ;

A bunch of bloated fools ! Methinks your judgment

Should look abroad sometimes, without your envy.

*Cra.* Such are most of you. So I take my leave,  
And when you find your women's favour fail,

'Tis ten to one you'll know yourself, and seek me,  
Upon a better muster of your manners.

*Con.* This is not handsome, sir.

*Euph.* Pray take your pleasure :

You wound the wind as much.

*Cra.* Come you with me ;

I have business for you presently. There's for  
your wine ;

I must confess I lost it. [*Exit.*]

*Onos.* Shall I steal to you ?

And shall we see the wench ?

*Con.* A dainty one.

*Onos.* And have a dish of pippins ?

*Con.* What ? a peck, man.

*Tutor.* Will you wait, sir ?

*Con.* Pray let's meet oftner, gentlemen ;

I would not lose ye.

*Tutor.* Oh, sweet sir !

*Con.* Do you think I would ?

Such noted men as you ?

*Onos, Uncle, Tutor.* We are your servants !

[*Exeunt.*]

*Euph.* That thing they would keep in everlasting  
nonage,

My brother, for his own ends, has thrust on

Upon my mistress : 'Tis true, he shall be rich,

If ever he can get that rogue his uncle

To let him be of years to come to inherit it.

Now, what the main drift is—

*Con.* Say you so ? no more words :

I'll keep him company till he be of years,

(Though it be a hundred years) but I'll discover

And ten to one I'll cross it too. [*It ;*]

*Euph.* You are honest,

And I shall study still your love. Farewell, sir !

For these few hours I must desire your pardon ;

I have business of importance. Once a-day,

At least, I hope you'll see me ; I must see you else :

So, once more, you are welcome !

*Con.* All my thanks, sir :

And when I leave to love you, life go from me !

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter THEANOR and CRAES.*

*Cra.* Why, sir, the kingdom's his ; and no man  
Can come to Corinth, or from Corinth go, [*now*]

Without his licence ; he puts up the tithes

Of every office through Achaia ;

From courtier to the carter hold of him ;

Our lands, our liberties, nay, very lives,

Are shut up in his closet, and let loose

But at his pleasure ; books, and all discourse,

Have now no patron, nor direction,

But glorified Euphanes ; our cups are guilty

That quench our thirsts, if not unto his health.

Oh, I could eat my heart, and fling away

My very soul, for anguish ! Gods, nor men,

Should tolerate such disproportion.

*The.* And yet is he beloved ; whether it be  
virtue,

Or seeming virtue, which he makes the cloak

To his ambition.

*Cra.* Be it which it will,

VOL. II.

Your highness is too tame, your eyes too film'd,

To see this, and sit still : The lion should not

Tremble to hear the bellowing of the bull.

Nature, excuse me ! though he be my brother,

You are my country's father, therefore mine :

One parallel line of love I bend on him,

All lines of love and duty meet in you,

As in their centre ; therefore hear, and weigh,

What I shall speak. You know the queen your

mother

Did, from a private state, your father raise ;

So all your royalty you hold from her :

She is older than she was, therefore more doting ;

And what know we but blindness of her love

(That hath, from underneath the foot of Fortune,

Set even Euphanes' foot on Fortune's head)

Will take him by the hand, and cry, " Leap now

Into my bed ! " 'tis but a trick of age ;

Nothing impossible.

*The.* What do you infer on this ?

*Cra.* Your pardon, sir,

With reverence to the queen : Yet why should I

d

Fear to speak plain what pointeth to your good ?  
A good old widow is a hungry thing  
(I speak of other widows, not of queens.)

*The.* Speak to thy purpose.

*Cra.* I approach it. Sir,

Should young Euphanes clasp the kingdom thus,  
And please the good old lady some one night,  
What might not she be wrought to put on you,  
Quite to supplant your birth ? neither is she  
Past children, as I take it.

*The.* Crates, thou shak'at me !

Thou, that dost hate thy brother for my love,  
In my love find one ; henceforth be my brother.  
This giant I will fell beneath the earth ;  
I will shine out, and melt his artful wings :  
Euphanes, from my mother's sea of favours,  
Spreads like a river, and runs calmly on,  
Secure yet from my storms ; like a young pine  
He grows up planted under a fair oak,  
Whose strong large branches yet do shelter him,  
And every traveller admires his beauty :  
But, like a wind, I'll work into his cranks,  
Trouble his stream, and drown all vessels that  
Ride on his greatness. Under my mother's arms,  
Like to a stealing tempest will I search,  
And rend his root from her protection.

*Cra.* Ay ; now Theanor speaks like prince  
Theanor.

*The.* But how shall we provoke him to our  
He has a temper malice cannot move {snares ?  
To exceed the bounds of judgment ; he is so wise,  
That we can pick no cause to affront him.

*Cra.* No ?

What better than his crossing your intent ?  
The suit I had to you ? Conon's forfeit state  
(Before he travell'd) for a riot, he  
Hath from your mother got restored to him.

*The.* Durst he ? What is this Conon ?

*Cra.* One that hath,  
As people say, in foreign countries pleased him.

*Enter ONOS, UNCLE, TUTOR, NEANTHES, SOSICLES, and ERATON.*

But now no more ;  
They have brought the travellers I told you of.  
That's the sweet youth that is my brother's rival,  
That curls his head, for he has little hair,  
And paints his vizzor, for it is no face,  
That so desires to follow you, my lord :  
Shew 'em some countenance, and it will beget  
Our sport at least.—

*The.* What villainous crab-tree legs  
He makes ! His shins are full of true-love knots.

*Cra.* His legs were ever villainous, since I  
knew him.

*Era.* 'Faith, his uncle's shanks are somewhat  
the better.

*Nean.* But is it possible he should believe he's  
not of age ? Why, he is fifty, man ; in's jubilee, I  
warrant ! 'Slight, he looks older than a groat ; the  
very stamp on's face is worn out with handling.

*Sos.* Why, I tell you, all men believe it when  
they hear him speak, he utters such single matter  
in so infantly a voice.

*Nean.* He looks as like a fellow that I have  
seen accommodate gentlemen with tobacco in our  
theatres—

*Onos.* Most illustrious prince ?

*Era.* A pox on him, he is gelt ! how he trebles !

*Onos.* I am a gentleman o' both sides.

*Tutor.* He means (so't please your highness) both  
by father and mother.

*Sos.* Thou a gentleman ? thou an ass.

*Nean.* He is ne'er the farther from being a gen-  
tleman, I assure you.

*Tutor.* May it please your grace, I am another.

*Nean.* He is another ass, he says ; I believe him.

*Uncle.* We be three, herolical prince.

*Nean.* Nay then, we must have the picture of  
'em, and the word *nos sumus*.

*Tutor.* That have travell'd all parts of the globe  
together.

*Uncle.* For my part, I have seen the vicissitude  
of Fortune before.

*Onos.* Peace, uncle ; for though you speak a  
little better than I—

*Nean.* 'Tis a very little, in truth.

*Onos.* Yet we must both give place, as they say,  
to the best speaker, the tutor.

*Tutor.* Yet since it hath pleased your radiance,  
to decline so low, as on us poor and unworthy  
dunghills—

*Nean.* What a stinking knave's this !

*Tutor.* Our peregrination was ne'er so felicitated,  
as since we entered the line of your gracious favour,  
under whose beamy aspect, and by which infallible  
mathematical compass, may we but hereafter pre-  
sume to sail, our industries have reach'd their  
desired termination and period ; and we shall  
voluntarily sacrifice our lives to your resplendent  
eyes, both the altars and fires of our devoted offer-  
ings.

*Onos.* Oh, divine tutor !

*Cra.* Can you hold, sir ?

*Era.* He has spoken this very speech to some  
where in Corinth.

*Nean.* A plague on him for a fustian dictionary !  
On my conscience, this is the Ulyssean Traveller  
that sent home his image riding upon elephants to  
the great Mogol.

*Sos.* The same ; his wit is so huge, nought but  
an elephant could carry him.

*Era.* So heavy, you mean.

*Nean.* These three are even the finest one fool  
tripartite that was e'er discover'd.

*Sos.* Or a treatise of famine, divided into three  
branches.

*Era.* The prince speaks.

*The.* I thank ye for your loves ; but, as I told  
you,

I have so little means to do for those  
Few followers I have already, that  
I would have none shipwreck themselves and  
Upon my barren shelf. Sue to Euphanes, [fortune  
For he is prince, and queen ; I would have no man  
Curse me in his old age.

*Cra.* Alas, sir, they desire to follow you  
But afar off ; the farther off the better.

*Tutor.* Ay, sir ; an't be seven mile off, so we  
may but follow you, only to countenance us in the  
confronts and affronts, which (according to your  
highness' will) we mean on all occasions to put  
upon the lord Euphanes.

*Onos.* He shall not want gibing nor jeering, I  
warrant him ; if he do, I'll forswear wit.

*Nean.* It has forsworn thee, I'll swear ; it is  
the ancient enemy to thy house.

*The.* Well, be it so ; I here receive you, for  
My followers a great way off.

*Nean.* Seven miles, my lord ; no further.

*Onos.* By what time, sir, (by this measure) may I come to follow him in his chamber?

*Near.* Why, when his chamber, sir, is seven miles long.

*Enter EUPHANES, CONON, PAGE, GENTLEMEN, and ATTENDANTS.*

*Genl.* Make way there for my lord Euphanes!

*Cra.* Look, sir, Jove appears,

The peacock of our state, that spreads a train  
Brighter than Iris' blushes after rain.—

*Euph.* You need not thank me, Conon: In  
You antedated what I can do for you, [your love  
And I in gratitude was bound to this,  
And am to much more; and whate'er he be  
Can with unthankfulness assail me, let him  
Dig out mine eyes, and sing my name in verse,  
In ballad verse, at every drinking house,  
And no man be so charitable to lend me  
A dog to guide my steps.

*Near.* Hail to Euphanes!

*Ses.* Mighty Euphanes!

*Era.* The great prince Euphanes!

*Tutor.* Key of the court, and jewel of the queen!

*Uncle.* Sol in our firmament!

*Onos.* Pearl in the state's eye!

*Near.* Being a black man!

*Era.* Mistress of the land!

*Near.* Our humble, humble, poor petitions are,  
That we may hold our places.

*All.* May we?

*Euph.* Yes;

Be you malicious knaves still; and you fools.

*Con.* This is the prince's and your brother's spite.

*Euph.* I know't, but will not know it.

*Con.* Yonder they are.—

Whose fine child's this?

*Uncle.* Sir!

*Onos.* Uncle, le'be,

Let him alone, he is a mighty prince.

*Euph.* I ask your highness' pardon! I protest  
By Jupiter I saw you not.

*The.* Humph! it may be so.

You have raised such mountains 'twixt your eyes  
and me,

That I am hidden quite. What do you mean, sir?  
You much forget yourself.

*Euph.* I should much more,

Not to remember my due duty to your grace.

I know not wherein I have so transgress'd

My service to your highness, to deserve

This rigour and contempt, not from you only,

But from your followers, with the best of whom

I was an equal in my lowest ebb:

Beseech you, sir, respect me as a gentleman;

I will be never more in heart to you.

Five fair descents I can derive myself,

From fathers worthy both in arts and arms.

I know your goodness companies your greatness,

But that you are perverted: Royal sir,

I am your humblest subject; use your pleasure,

But do not give protection to the wrongs

Of these subordinate slaves, whom I could crush

By that great destined favour which my mistress

And your majestic mother deigns to me,

But in respect of you. I know lean envy

Waits ever on the steps of virtue advanced;

But why your mother's grace gets me disgrace,

Or renders me a slave to bear these wrongs,

I do not know.—Oh, mediocrity,

Thou priceless jewel, only mean men have,

But cannot value; like the precious gem

Found in the muckhill by the ignorant cock!

*The.* Your creamy words but cozen; how durst

Intercept me so lately to my mother? [you

And what I meant your brother, you obtain'd

Unto the forfeiter again.

*Cra.* Your answer

To that, my lord my brother.

*Euph.* May I perish

If e'er I heard you intended such a suit!

Though 'twould have stuck an ignominious brand

Upon your highness, to have given your servant

A gentleman's whole state of worth and quality,

Confiscate only for a youthful brawl.

*The.* Your rudiments are too saucy; teach your  
page.

*Con.* Ay, so are all things but your flatterers.

*Onos.* Hold you your prating!

*Con.* You know where you are, you fleeten face!

*Euph.* Yet, sir, to appease and satisfy your anger,

Take what you please from me, and give it him,

In lieu of this. You shall not take it neither,

I freely will impart it, half my state;

Which, brother, if you please—

*Cra.* I'll starve in chains first,

Eat my own arms!

*Euph.* Oh, that you saw yourself!

You ne'er made me such offer in my poorness;

And 'cause, to do you ease, I sought not to you,

You thus malign me; yet your nature must not

Corrupt mine, nor your rude examples lead me:

If mine can mend you, I shall joy. You know

I fear you not; you've seen me proved a man

In every way of fortune; 'tis my comfort

I know no more such brothers in the world

As Crates is.

*Con.* Nor I such as Euphanes:

The temper of an angel reigns in thee!

*Euph.* Your royal mother, sir, (I had forgot)

Entreats your presence.

*The.* You have done her errand;

I may do yours. [Exit.

*Euph.* Let it be truth, my lord.

*Con.* Crates, I'll question you for this.

*Cra.* Pish, your worst!

*Con.* Away, you hounds, after your scent! [Exit.

*Onos.* Come, we'll scorn to talk to 'em: Now

they are gone,

We'll away too. [Exit.

*Con.* Why bear you this, my lord?

*Euph.* To shew the passive fortitude the best;

Virtue's a solid rock, wheret being aim'd

The keenest darts of envy, yet unhurt

Her marble heroes stand, built on such bases,

Whilst they recoil, and wound the shooters' faces.

*Enter QUEEN and Ladies.*

*Con.* My lord, the queen.

*Queen.* Gentle Euphanes, how,

How dost thou, honest lord! Oh, how I joy

To see what I have made! like a choice workman,

That, having framed a master-piece, doth reap

An universal commendation!

Princes are gods in this. I'll build thee yet,

The good foundation so pleases me,

A story or two higher; let dogs bark:

They are fools that hold them dignified by blood,

They should be only made great that are good.

*Euph.* Oraculous madam!

*Queen.* Sirrah, I was thinking,

If I should marry thee, what merry tales  
Our neighbour islands would make of us :  
But let that pass ; you have a mistress  
That would forbid our banns. 'Troth, I have wish'd  
A thousand times that I had been a man ;  
Then I might sit a day with thee alone, and talk ;  
But as I am, I must not. There's no skill  
In being good, but in not being thought ill.  
Sirrah, who's that ?

*Euph.* So't please your majesty,  
Conon, the friend I sued for.

*Queen.* 'Tis dispatch'd.

*Con.* Gracious madam,  
I owe the gods and you my life.

*Queen.* I thank you,  
I thank you heartily ; and I do think you  
A very honest man ; he says you are.—  
But now I'll chide thee : What's the cause my son  
(For my eye's every where, and I have heard)  
So insolently does thee contumelias  
Past sufferance (I am told,) yet you complain not ?  
As if my justice were so partial

As not to right the meanest : Credit me,  
I'll call him to a strict account, and fright,  
By his example, all that dare curb me  
In any thing that's just. I sent you for him.

*Euph.* Humbly he did return, he would wait on  
But let me implore your majesty, not to give [you.  
His highness any check, for worthless me ;  
They are court-cankers, and not counsellors,  
That thus inform you ; they do but hate the prince,  
And would subvert me. I should curse my fortune,  
Even at the highest, to be made the gin  
To unscrew a mother's love unto her son :  
Better had my pale flame in humble shades  
Been spent unseen, than to be raised thus high,  
Now to be thought a meteor to the state,  
Portending ruin and contagion.

Beseech you then rest satisfied, the prince  
Is a most noble-natured gentleman,  
And never did to me but what I took  
As favours from him ; my blown billows must not  
Strive 'gainst my shore, that should confine me, nor  
Jostle with rocks to break themselves to pieces.

*Queen.* Well, thou'rt the composition of a god :  
My lion, lamb, my eagle, and my dove,  
Whose soul runs clearer than Diana's fount !  
Nature pick'd several flowers from her choice banks,  
And bound them up in thee, sending thee forth  
A posy for the bosom of a queen.

*Lady.* The prince attends you.

*Queen.* Farewell, my good lord,  
My honest man. Stay ; hast no other suit ?  
I prythee tell me ; sirrah, thine eye speaks  
As if thou hadst ; out with it, modest fool !

*Euph.* With favour, madam, I would crave your  
To marry, where I am bound in gratitude ; [leave  
The immediate means she was to all my being,  
Nor do I think your wisdom, sacred queen,  
Fetters in favours, taking from me so  
The liberty that meanest men enjoy.

*Queen.* To marry ? you're a fool ! thou'st an-  
Leave me ; I'll think on't.— [ger'd me.

[*Exeunt EUPHANEAS and CONON.*]

Only to try thee this, for though I love thee,  
I can subdue myself ; but she that can  
Enjoy thee, doth enjoy more than a man.—

[*Enter THEANOR and KNEELS.*]

Nay, rise without a blessing, or kneel still !  
What's, sir, the reason you oppose me thus,

And seek to darken what I would have shine ?  
Eclipse a fire much brighter than thyself,  
Making your mother not a competent judge  
Of her own actions ?

*The.* Gracious madam, I

Have done no more than what in royalty,  
And to preserve your fame, was fit to do :  
Heard you the people's talk of you, and him  
You favour so, his greatness, and your love,  
The pity given to me, you would excuse me.  
They prate as if he did dishonour you ;  
And what know I, but his own lavish tongue  
Has utter'd some such speeches ? he is call'd  
The king of Corinth.

*Queen.* They are traitors all :  
I wear a crystal casement 'fore my heart,  
Through which each honest eye may look into't ;  
Let it be prospect unto all the world,  
I care not this.

*The.* [*Aside.*] This must not be my way.—  
Your pardon, gracious madam ! These incitements  
Made me not shew so clear a countenance  
Upon the lord Euphanes as I would ;  
Which since your majesty affects so grievously,  
I'll clear the black cloud off it, and henceforth  
Vow on this knee all love and grace to him.

*Queen.* Rise, with my blessing ; and, to prove  
Bear him from me this cabinet of jewels [this true,  
In your own person ; tell him, for his marrying,  
He may dispose him how and when he please.

*The.* I shall discharge my duty and your will.—  
[*Exit QUEEN.*]

Crates !

[*Enter CRATES.*]

*Cra.* I have heard all, my lord : How luckily  
Fate pops her very spindle in our hands !  
This marriage with Beliza you shall cross ;  
Then have I one attempt for Lamprias more  
Upon this Phaeton : Where's Merione's ring,  
That in the rape you took from her ?

*The.* 'Tis here.

*Cra.* In, and effect our purpose. You, my lord,  
Shall disobey your mother's charge, and send  
This cabinet by some servant of her own,  
That what succeeds may have no reference  
Unto your highness.

*The.* On, my engine, on !

*Cra.* Now, if we be not struck by Heaven's own  
hand,  
We'll ruin him, and on his ruins stand. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the House of LEONIDAS,*  
*hung with black ; Tapers on the Walls.*

[*Enter AGRONOR, LEONIDAS, MERIONE, and BELIZA.*]

SONG.

Weep no more, nor s'gh nor groan,  
Sorrow calls no time that's gone ;  
Violets pluck'd, the sweetest rain  
Makes not fresh nor grow again ;  
Trim thy locks, look cheerfully,  
Fate's hidden ends eyes cannot see.  
Joys as winged dreams fly fast,  
Why should sadness longer last ?  
Grief is but a wound to woe ;  
Gentlest fair, mourn, mourn no moe.

*Age.* These airs feed sorrow in her, lady,  
And nourish it too strongly ; like a mother  
That spoils her child with giving on't the will.

*Bel.* Some lighter note.

## SONG.

Court-ladies, laugh and wonder. Here is one  
That weeps because her maidenhead is gone ;  
Whilst you do never fret, nor chafe, nor cry,  
But when too long it keeps you company.  
Too well you know, maids are like towns on fire,  
Wasting themselves, if no man quench desire.  
Weep then no more, fool! A new maidenhead  
Thou suffer'st at loss of, in each chaste tear shed.

*Leo.* How like a hill of snow she sits, and melts  
Before the unchaste fires of others' lust!  
What heart can see her passion, and not break?

*Age.* Take comfort, gentle madam! You know  
Even actual sins, committed without will, [well  
Are neither sins nor shame, much more compell'd;  
Your honour's no whit less, your chastity  
No whit impair'd, for fair Merione  
Is more a virgin yet than all her sex.

*Mer.* Alas, 'tis done!

*Age.* Why burn these tapers now?  
Wicked and frantic creatures joy in night.

*Leo.* Imagine fair Merione had dream'd  
She had been ravish'd, would she sit thus then  
Excruciate?

*Mer.* Oh!

*Bel.* Py, fy! how fond is this!

What reason for this surfeit of remorse?  
How many that have done ill, and proceed,  
Women that take degrees in wantonness,  
Commence, and rise in rudiments of lust,  
That feel no scruple of this tenderness?

*Mer.* Fish!

*Bel.* Nor are you matchless in mishap; even I  
Do bear an equal part of misery;  
That love, beloved, a man the crown of men,  
Whom I have friended, and how raised, 'tis better  
That all do know and speak it than myself.  
When he sail'd low I might have made him mine,  
Now, at his full gale, it is questionable  
If ever I o'ertake him.

*Age.* Wherefore sits  
My Phoebe shadow'd in a sable cloud?  
Those pearly drops which thou let'st fall like beads,  
Numb'ring on them thy vestal orisons,  
Alas, are spent in vain! I love thee still;  
In midst of all these showers thou sweetlier scent'st,  
Like a green meadow on an April-day,  
In which the sun and west wind play together,  
Striving to catch and drink the balmy drops.

*Enter EUPHANES and Servant.*

*Serv.* The lord Euphanes, madam. [*Exit MERIONE.*]

*Age.* Poor Merione!  
She loaths the light, and men.

[*Exit with LEONIDAS.*]

*Euph.* The virtuous gods preserve my mistress!  
*Bel.* Oh, my most honour'd lord, those times  
are changed.

*Euph.* Let times and men change! Could Hea-  
ven change, Euphanes  
Should never change to be devoted ever  
To fair Beliza. Should my load of honours,  
Or any grace which you were author of,  
Deduct mine honour, and diminish grace?  
The gods forbid! You here behold your servant,  
Your creature, gentle lady, whose sound sleeps  
You purchased for him, whose food you paid for,  
Whose garments were your charge, whose first  
preferment

You founded; then, what since the gracious queen  
Hath, or can rear, is upon your free land,  
And you are mistress of.

*Bel.* Mock me not, gentle lord;  
You shine now in too high a sphere for me:  
We are planets now disjoin'd for ever! Yet,  
Poor superstitious innocent that I am,  
Give leave that I may lift my hands, and love,  
Not in idolatry, but perfect zeal:  
For, credit me, I repent nothing I have done,  
But, were it to begin, would do the same.

*Euph.* There are two seas in Corinth, and two  
queens,  
And but there, not two such in the spacious uni-  
verse.

I came to tender you the man you have made,  
And, like a thankful stream, to retribute  
All you, my ocean, have enrich'd me with.  
You told me once you'd marry me.

*Bel.* Another mock? You were wont to play  
fair play.

You scorn poor helps; he, that is sure to win,  
May slight mean hearts, whose hand commands  
the queen.

*Euph.* Let me be held the knave through all the  
stock,

When I do slight my mistress! You know well  
The gracious inclination of the queen,  
Who sent me leave this morning to proceed  
To marry as I saw convenience,  
And a great gift of jewels: Three days hence  
The general sacrifice is done to Vesta,  
And can you by then be accommodated,  
Your servant shall wait on you to the temple.

*Bel.* Till now I never felt a real joy indeed.

*Euph.* Here then I seal my duty, here my love.  
Till which vouchsafe to wear this ring, dear mis-  
tress;

'Twas the queen's token, and shall celebrate  
Our nuptials.

*Bel.* Honour still raise, and preserve  
My honour'd lord, as he preserves all honour!  
[*Exit EUPHANES.*]

*Enter AGNOR, LEONIDAS, and MERIONE.*

*Age.* Why shift you places thus, Merione,  
And will not lend a word? Couldst thou so soon  
Leave sorrow as the place, how blest were I!  
But 'twill not be; grief is an impudent guest,  
A follower everywhere, a hanger-on,  
That words nor blows can drive away.

*Leo.* Dear sister!

*Bel.* Who can be sad? Out with these tragic  
And let day repossess her natural hours; [lights,  
Tear down these blacks, cast ope the casements  
That we may jocularly behold the sun. [wide,  
I did partake with sad Merione  
In all her mourning; let her now rejoice  
With glad Beliza, for Euphanes is  
As full of love, full of humility,  
As when he wanted.

*Mer.* Oh! that—

*Leo.* Help! she faints!  
Her grief has broke her heart.

*Mer.* No: That—that—

*Age.* Mistress, what point you at?  
Her lamps are out, yet still she extends her hand  
As if she saw something antipathous  
Unto her virtuous life.

*Leo.* Still, still she points,

And her lips move, but no articulate sound  
Breathes from 'em.—Sister, speak, what moves you  
*Bel.* Her spirits return. [thus?]

*Mer.* Oh, hide that fatal ring!

Where had it you, Beliza?

*Bel.* What hid fate

Depends on it?—Euphanes gave it me,  
As holy pledge of future marriage.

*Mer.* Then is Euphanes the foul ravisher!  
Let me speak this, and die. That dismal night  
Which seal'd my shame upon me, was that ring  
The partner of my robb'd virginity.

*Leo.* Euphanes?

*Age.* Strange!

*Bel.* Impossible!

*Mer.* Impossible to have redress on him,  
Chief servant to the queen. Ha! I have read  
Somewhere, I am sure, of such an injury  
Done to a lady, and how she durst die! [Exit.]

*Age.* Oh, follow her, Beliza.

*Bel.* To assure her

The unlikelihood of this. [Exit.]

*Age.* Love hides all sins,

What's to be done, Leonidas?

*Leo.* Why, this—

Amazement takes up all my faculties!  
The plagues of gods and men will muster all,  
To avenge this tyranny. Oh, frontless man,  
To dare do ill, and hope to bear it thus!  
First let's implore, then cure.

*Age.* Who, who can trust

The gentle looks and words of two-faced man?  
Like Corinth's double torrent, you and I  
Will rush upon the land; nor shall the queen  
Defend this villain in his villainy:  
Lust's violent flames can never be withstood,  
Nor quench'd, but with as violent streams of blood. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—Before the Palace.

Enter CRATES, Uncle, Tutor, and ONOS.

*Onos.* Thinks he to carry her, and live?

*Cra.* It seems so.

And she will carry him, the story says.

*Onos.* Well; hum!

Have I for this, thou fair, but falsest fair,  
Stretch'd this same simple leg over the sea?  
What though my bashfulness, and tender years,  
Durst ne'er reveal my affection to thy teeth?  
Deep Love ne'er rattles, and, say they, Love's bit  
The deeper dipp'd, the sweeter still is it.

*Tutor.* Oh, see the power of love! he speaks in  
rhyme.

*Cra.* Oh, love will make a dog howl in rhyme.

Of all the lovers yet I have heard or read,  
This is the strangest: But his guardian,  
And you, his tutor, should inform him better;  
Thinks he that love is answer'd by instinct?

*Tutor.* He should make means;

For certain, sir, his bashfulness undoes him,  
For from his cradle, he had a shameful face.  
Thus walks he night and day, eats not a bit,  
Nor sleeps one jot, but's grown so humorous,  
Drinks ale, and takes tobacco as you see,  
Wears a stiletto at his codpiece close,  
Stabs on the least occasion; strokes his beard,  
Which now he puts i' th' posture of a T,  
The Roman T; your T beard is the fashion,  
And twifold doth express the enamour'd courtier,  
As full as your fork-carving traveller.

*Onos.* Oh,

Black clouds of discontent, envelop me;  
Garters, fly off; go, hatband, bind the wrogs  
Of some dull citizen that fears to ake;  
And, leg, appear now in simplicity,  
Without the trappings of a courtier;  
Burst, buttons, burst, your bachelor is worm'd!

*Cra.* A worm-eaten bachelor thou art indeed.

*Onos.* And, devil Melancholy, possess me now!

*Uncle.* Cross him not in this fit, I advise you,  
sir. [cheeks,

*Onos.* Die, crimson rose, that didst adorn these  
For itch of love is now broke forth on me!

*Uncle.* Poor boy, 'tis true; his wrists and hands  
are scabby.

*Onos.* Burn, eyes, out in your sockets, sink and  
Teeth, I will pick you to the very bones; [stink];  
Hang, hair, like hemp, or like the Iceland curs,  
For never powder, nor the crisping-iron,  
Shall touch these dangling locks; oh, ruby lips,  
Love hath to you been like wine vinegar,  
Now you look wan and pale, lips, ghosts ye are,  
And my disgrace sharper than mustard seed!

*Cra.* How like a chandler he does vent his pas-  
Risum teneatis? [sions!]

*Onos.* Well sung the poet,  
Love is a golden *bubo*, full of dreams;  
That ripen'd breaks, and fills us with extremes.

*Tutor.* A golden *bubble*, pupil; oh, gross sole-  
To chaster ears that understand the Latin. [cism]

*Onos.* I will not be corrected now;  
I am in love! Revenge is now the cud  
That I do chew: I'll challenge him.

*Cra.* Ay, marry, sir.

*Uncle.* Your honour bids you, nephew; on and  
prosper.

*Onos.* But none will bear it from me; times are

*Cra.* Carry it yourself, man. [dangerous.]

*Onos.* Tutor, your counsel.—I'll do nothing, sir,  
Without him.

*Uncle.* This may rid thee, valiant coz, [Aside.]

Whom I have kept this forty year my ward;  
Fain would I have his state, and now of late  
He did enquire at Ephesus for his age,  
But the church-book being burnt with Dian's  
temple,

He lost his aim. I have tried to famish him,  
Marry he'll live o' stones; and then for poisons,  
He is an antidote 'gainst all of 'em;  
He sprung from Mithridates; he's so dry and hot,  
He will eat spiders faster than a monkey;  
His maw, unhurt, keeps quicksilver like a bladder;  
The largest dose of camphire, opium,  
Harms not his brain; I think his scull's as empty  
As a suck'd egg; vitriol and oil of tartar  
He will eat toasts of; henbane, I am sure,  
And hemlock, I have made his pot-herbs often.—

*Cra.* If he refuse you, yours is then the honour;

If he accept, he being so great, you may;  
Crave both to chuse the weapon, time, and place,  
Which may be ten years hence, and Calicut,  
Or underneath the Line, to avoid advantage.

*Onos.* I am resolved.

*Tutor.* By your favour, pupil,  
Whence shall this challenge rise? for you must  
ground it

On some such fundamental base, or matter,  
As now the gentry set their lives upon.  
Did you e'er cheat him at some ordinary,  
And durst he say so, and be angry? if thus,  
Then you must challenge him. Hath he call'd your  
whore

Whore? though she be, beside yours, twenty men's,  
Your honour, reputation, is touch'd then,  
And you must challenge him. Has he denied  
On thirty *dassme's* to accommodate money?  
Though you have broke threescore before to him,  
Here you must challenge him. Durst he ever shun  
To drink two pots of ale wi' ye? or to wench,  
Though weighty business otherwise importuned!  
He is a proud lord,

And you may challenge him. Has he familiarly  
Disliked your yellow starch, or said your doublet  
Was not exactly frenchified? or that, that report  
In fair terms was untrue? or drawn your sword,  
Cried 'twas ill mounted? has he given the lie  
In circle, or oblique, or semi-circle,  
Or direct parallel? you must challenge him.

*Onos.* He never gave my direct apparel the lie  
in's life.

*Tutor.* But, for the crown of all, has he refused  
To pledge your mistress' health? though he were  
sick,

And craved your pardon, you must challenge him,  
There's no avoiding; one or both must drop.

*Onos.* Exquisite Tutor!

*Enter NEANTHES and Page.*

*Nean.* Crates, I have sought you long; what  
make you here

Fooled with these three-farthings, while the town  
Is all in uproar, and the prince our master,  
Seized by Leonidas and Agenor, carried  
And prisoner kept i' th' castle flanks  
The west part of the city, where they vow  
To hold him till your brother, lord Euphanes,  
Be render'd to 'em, with his life to satisfy  
The rape, by him suspected to Merione?  
The queen refuses to deliver him,  
Pawning her knowledge for his innocency,  
And dares 'em do their worst on prince Theanor;  
The whole state's in combustion.

*Cra.* Fatal ring!

*Uncle.* What will become of us?

*Nean.* And she hath given commission to Eu-  
And Conon, who have levied men already, [phanes  
With violence to surprise the tower, and take 'em.  
What will you do?

*Cra.* Along wi' ye, and prevent  
A further mischief. Gentlemen, our intents  
We must defer; you are the prince's followers.

*Nean.* Will ye walk with us?

*Uncle.* You shall pardon us.

*Tutor.* We are his followers afar off, you know,  
And are contented to continue so.

[*Exit* CRATES and NEANTHES.]

*Onos.* Sir boy!

*Page.* Sir fool! a challenge to my lord?

[*Draws.*

How dar'st thou, or thy ambs-ace here, think of  
him?

Ye crow-pick'd heads, which your thin shoulders  
bear

As do the poles on Corinth bridge the traitors';  
Why, you three nine-pins, you talk of my lord,  
And challenges? you shall not need: Come, draw!  
His page is able to swinge three such whelps.  
Uncle, why stand ye off? Long-ran, advance.

*Onos.* 'Slight, what have we done, Tutor?

*Tutor.* He is a boy,

And we may run away with honour.

*Page.* That ye shall not;

And, being a boy, I am fitter to encounter

A child in law as you are, under twenty.  
Thou sot, thou three-score sot! and that's a child  
Again, I grant you.

*Uncle.* Nephew, here's an age!

Boys are turn'd men, and men are children.

*Page.* Away, ye peasants, with your bought  
gentry!

Are not you he, when your fellow passengers,  
Your last transportment, being assail'd by a galley,  
Hid yourself i' the cabin; and, the fight done,  
Peep'd above hatches, and cried, "Have we taken,  
Or are we ta'en?" Come, I do want a slipper,  
But this shall serve: Swear all as I would have  
Or I will call some dozen brother pages, [you,  
(They are not far off, I am sure) and we will  
Until you piss again. [blanket you

*All.* Nay, we will swear, sir.

*Page.* 'Tis your best course.

First, you shall swear never to name my lord,  
Or hear him named hereafter, but bare-headed;  
Next, to begin his health in every place,  
And never to refuse to pledge it, though  
You surfeit to the death; lastly, to hold  
The poorest, littlest page in reverence,  
To think him valianter, and a better gentleman,  
Than you three stamped together, and to give him  
Wine and tobacco wheresoe'er you meet,  
And the best meat, if he can stay.

*All.* We swear it loyally.

*Page.* Then I dismiss you,  
True liegemen to the pantofle;  
I had more articles, but I have business  
And cannot stay now: So adieu, dear monsieur,  
*Tres noble et tres puissant!*

*Uncle.* Adieu, monsieur!

*Onos.* *A vostre service et commandement.*

*Tutor.* I told you, pupil, you'd repent this  
foolery.

*Onos.* Who? I repent? you are mistaken, Tutor,  
I ne'er repented anything yet in my life,  
And scorn to begin now. Come, let's be melan-  
choly. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter* QUEEN, EUPHANES, CONON, and Lords.

*Lord.* 'Twere better treat with 'em.

*Queen.* I will no treaties

With a league-breaker and a rebel; shall I  
Article with a traitor? be compell'd  
To yield an innocent unto their fury,  
Whom I have proved so to you?

*Euph.* Gracious Queen,

Though your own godlike disposition  
Would succour virtue and protect the right;

Yet, for the public good, for the dear safety  
Of your most royal only son, consent  
To give me up the sacrifice to their malice :  
My life is aim'd at, and 'twere better far  
The blood of twenty thousand such as I  
Purpled our seas, than that your princely son  
Should be endanger'd.

*Queen.* Still well said, honest fool !  
Were their demand but one hair from thy head,  
By all the gods, I'd scorn 'em ! Were they here,  
The majesty that dwells upon this brow  
Should strike 'em on their knees. As for my son,  
Let 'em no more dare than they'll answer : I  
An equal mother to my country am,  
And every virtuous son of it is son  
Unto my bosom, tender as mine own.

*Con.* Oh, you are heavenly, madam, and the  
Can suffer nothing pass to injure you ! [gods  
The life that Conon promised, he stands now  
Ready to pay with joy.

*Queen.* Farewell both ;  
Success attend you ! you have soldiers been,  
*Tam Marti quam Mercurio* ; if you bring not  
Bring me their heads. [peace,

*Con.* I will put fair for one.

[Exeunt QUEEN and Lords.

*Euph.* Double the guard upon her highness'  
person.

Conon, you must perform a friendly part,  
Which I shall counsel you.

*Con.* I am your servant. [Exeunt.

### SCENE III.—*Before the Castle.*

*Enter THEANOR, AGENOR, and LEONIDAS, on the  
battlements.*

*Leo.* Make good that fortification, and the watch  
Keep still upon the battlements. Royal sir,  
Weigh but our injuries : we have told you fully  
The manner and the matter hales us thus ;  
Nor shall this upstart mushroom, bred i' th' night,  
Sit brooding underneath your mother's wings  
His damn'd impieties.

*Age.* For yourself, brave prince,  
Fear nothing that this face of arms presents ;  
We ask the ravisher, and have no means  
To win him from your most indulgent mother  
But by this practice.

*The.* Stout Leonidas,  
Princely Agenor, your wrongs cry so loud,  
That whoso would condemn you is not heard ;  
I blame you not ; who but Euphanes durst  
Make stories like to this ? My wrongs, as strong,  
Ask my revengeful arm to strengthen yours ;  
As for my fear, know you, and Greece throughout,  
Our mother was a Spartan princess born,  
That never taught me to spell such a word.

*Enter EUPHANES and CONON below, with Soldiers.*

*Con.* Sir, you do tempt your life.

*Euph.* Conon, no more.  
Do thus, as thou wouldst save it.

[Sound trumpet within.

*Age.* What trumpet's this ?

*Leo.* Beneath I do perceive  
Two armed men single, that give us summons  
As they would treat.

*Age.* Let us descend.

[Exeunt from above.

*Con.* My lord,

I would you would excuse me, and proceed  
According to the queen's directions.

*Euph.* Friend,  
As thou wouldst wear that title after death,  
Perform my charge.—

*Enter below, THEANOR, AGENOR, LEONIDAS, and Soldiers.*

No soldier, on his life,

Approach us nearer.

*Con.* Safety to both the princes ; loyalty  
To you, lord general. The queen, your mistress  
As well as ours, though not through fear, to cut  
Civil dissention from her land, and save  
Much guiltless blood, that uproar ever thirsts,  
And for the safeguard of her son, by me  
(As you demand) hath sent the lord Euphanes  
To plead his own cause, or to suffer death,  
As you shall find him worthy ; so, delivering  
The prince back, I shall leave him to your guard.

*Leo.* The queen is good and gracious : Kiss her  
hand.

*Age.* And seal our duties. Sir, depart in peace.

*The.* Oh, sir, you now perceive, when in the  
Nature and fond affection weigh together, [scales  
One poises like a feather : and you know, my lords,  
What's to be done.

*Euph.* Your highness is unarm'd ;  
Please you to use mine, and to lead the army  
Back to your mother.—Conon, march you with  
'em.

*Con.* I will, my lord.—But not so far as not  
To bring you help, if danger look upon you.

[Aside.  
Exeunt THEANOR, CONON, and Soldiers.

*Euph.* Why do you look so strangely, fearfully,  
Or stay your deathful hand ? Be not so wise  
To stop your rage. Look how unmovedly here  
I give myself my country's sacrifice,  
An innocent sacrifice : Truth laughs at death,  
And terrifies the killer more than kill'd ;  
Integrity thus armless seeks her foes,  
And never needs the target nor the sword,  
Bow, nor envenom'd shafts.

*Leo.* We are amazed,  
Not at your eloquence, but impudence,  
That dare thus front us.

*Age.* Kill him ! Who knows not  
The iron forehead that bold Mischief wears ?

*Leo.* Forbear awhile, Agenor ; I do tremble,  
And something sits like virtue in his face,  
Which the gods keep.

*Euph.* Agenor, strike ; Leonidas,  
You that have purchased fame on certain grounds,  
Lose it on supposition : Smear your hands  
In guiltless blood, laugh at my martyrdom ;  
But yet remember, when posterity  
Shall read your volumes fill'd with virtuous acts,  
And shall arrive at this black bloody leaf,  
Noting your foolish barbarism, and my wrong,  
(As time shall make it plain) what follows this  
Decyphering any noble deed of yours  
Shall be quite lost, for men will read no more.

*Leo.* Why, dare you say you are innocent ?

*Euph.* By all the gods, as they, of this foul crime.  
Why, gentlemen, pry clean thorough my life,  
Then weigh these circumstances. Think you that  
he

Which made day night, and men to furies turn'd,  
Durst not trust silence, vizors, nor her sense  
That suffer'd ; but with charms and potions

Cast her asleep, (for all this I've enquired)  
Acted the fable of Proserpine's rape,  
The place (by all description) like to hell;  
And all to perpetrate, unknown, his lust;  
Would fondly in his person bring a ring,  
And give it a betroth'd wife, i' th' same house  
Where the poor injured lady lived and groan'd?

*Age.* Hell gives us art to reach the depth of sin,  
But leaves us wretched fools, when we are in.

*Euph.* Had it given me that art, and left me so,  
I would not thus into the lion's jaws  
Have thrust myself defenceless, for your good,  
The prince's safety, or the commonweal's.  
You know the Queen denied me, and sent us  
Commanders to surprise you, and to raze  
This tower down; we had power enough to do it,  
Or starve you, as you saw, and not to tender  
My person to your wrath, which I have done,  
Knowing my heart as pure as infants' sleep,

*Leo.* What think you, sir?

*Age.* No harm, I am sure; I weep.

*Euph.* The gods are just, and mighty. But to  
give you

Further assurance, and to make yourselves  
Judges and witnesses of my innocency,  
Let me demand this question; on what night  
Was this foul deed committed?

*Age.* On the eve

Before our marriage meant.

*Euph.* Leonidas,

(Your rage being off, that still draws memory)  
Where was yourself and I that very night,  
And what our conference?

*Leo.* By the gods, 'tis true!

Both in her highness' chamber, conferring  
Even of this match until an hour of day,  
And then came I to call you. We are shamed!

*Age.* Utterly lost, and shamed!

*Euph.* Neither: be cheer'd;

He, that could find this out, can pardon it.  
And know, this ring was sent me from the Queen;  
How she came by it, yet is not enquired:  
Deeper occurrences hang on't, and pray Heaven  
That my suspicions prove as false as yours!  
Which for the world (till I have greater proof)  
I dare not utter what, nor whom they touch:  
Only this build upon, with all my nerves  
I'll labour with ye, till Time waken Truth.

*Age.* There are our swords, sir; turn the points  
on us. [They kneel.

*Leo.* Punish rebellion, and revenge your wrong.

*Euph.* Sir, my revenge shall be to make you  
Neither was this rebellion, but rash love. [peace:

*Enter Conon.*

*Con.* How's this? Unarm'd left, now found  
doubly arm'd?

And those, that would have slain him, at his feet?  
Oh, Truth, thou art a mighty conqueress.—  
The Queen, my lord, perplex'd in care of you,  
That, cross to her command, hazard yourself,  
In person here is come into the field,  
And, like a leader, marches in the head  
Of all her troops; vows that she will demolish  
Each stone of this proud tower, be you not safe;  
She chafes like storms in groves, now sighs, now  
weeps,

And both sometimes, like rain and wind commix'd;  
Abjures her son for ever, 'less himself  
Do fetch you off in person, that did give

Yourself to save him of your own free will,  
And swears he must not, nor is fit to live.

*Euph.* Oh, she's a mistress for the gods!

*Age.* And thou

A godlike servant, fit for her.

*Leo.* Wide Greece

May boast, because she cannot boast thy like.

*Euph.* Thus, Conon, tell her highness.

*Con.* My joy flies!

*Euph.* Let's toward her march. Stern drum,  
speak gentle peace.

*Leo.* We are prisoners; lead us. Ne'er was  
A precedent like this; one unarm'd man, [known  
Suspected, to captive with golden words  
(Truth being his shield) so many arm'd with swords.

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—An open Place in the City.

*Enter, at one door, QUEEN, THEANOR, CRATES, CONON,  
Lords and Soldiers; at another, EUPHANES (with two  
swords), AGENOR, LEONIDAS, and Soldiers. EUPHANES  
presents LEONIDAS on his knees to the QUEEN; AGENOR,  
bare-headed, makes show of sorrow to the QUEEN; she  
stamps, and seems to be angry at the first. EUPHANES  
persuades her, lays their swords at her feet; she  
kisses him, gives them their swords again, they kiss  
her hand and embrace; the Soldiers lift up EUPHANES,  
and shout. THEANOR and CRATES discovered; CONON  
whispers with CRATES, EUPHANES with AGENOR, and  
LEONIDAS observes it, who seem to promise something;  
EUPHANES directs his Page somewhat. Exit all but  
THEANOR and CRATES.*

*The.* We are not lucky, Crates; this great  
Bears all before him. [torrent

*Cra.* Such an age as this

Shall ne'er be seen again. Virtue grows fat,  
And Villainy pines; and the furies are asleep;  
Mischief, 'gainst goodness aim'd, is like a stone,  
Unnaturally forced up an eminent hill,  
Whose weight falls on our heads and buries us;  
We springe ourselves, we sink in our own bogs.

*The.* What's to be done?

*Cra.* Repent and grow good.

*The.* Fish!

'Tis not the fashion, fool, till we grow old.  
The people's love to him now scares me more  
Than my fond mother's; both which, like two  
floods,

Bearing Euphanes up, will o'erflow me;  
And he is worthy: 'Would he were in Heaven!  
But that hereafter. Crates, help me now,  
And henceforth be at ease.

*Cra.* Your will, my lord?

*The.* Beliza is to marry him forthwith;  
I long to have the first touch of her too;  
That will a little quiet me.

*Cra.* Fy, sir!

You'll be the tyrant to Virginity;  
To fall but once is manly, to perséver  
Beastly, and desperate.

*The.* Cross me not, but do't:  
Are not the means, the place, the instruments,  
The very same? I must expect you suddenly.

[Exit.

*Cra.* I must obey you.—

Who is in evil once a companion,  
Can hardly shake him off, but must run on.  
Here I appointed Conon to attend,  
Him, and his sword; he promised to come single,  
To avoid prevention: He's a man on's word.

*Enter CONON and PAGE.*

*Con.* You are well met, Crates.

*Cra.* If we part so, Conon.

*Con.* Come, we must do these mutual offices ;  
We must be our own seconds, our own surgeons,  
And fairly fight, like men, not on advantage.

*Cra.* You have an honest bosom.

*Con.* Yours seems so.

*Cra.* Let's pair our swords : You're a just gentleman.

*Con.* You might be so. Now shake hands, if you please ;

Though it be the cudgel fashion, 'tis a friendly one.

*Cra.* So ; stand off.

*Page.* That's my cue to beckon 'em. [*Exit.*]

*Con.* Crates, to expostulate your wrongs to me  
Were to doubt of 'em, or wish your excuse  
In words, and so return like maiden knights ;  
Yet freely thus much I profess ; your spleen  
And rugged carriage toward your honour'd brother  
Hath much more stirr'd me up, than mine own  
For I did ne'er affect these bloody men, [*cause ;*  
But hold 'em fitter be made public hangmen,  
Or butchers call'd than valiant gentlemen.

'Tis true, stamp'd valour does upon just grounds ;  
Yet for whom justlier should I expose my life  
Than him, unto whose virtue I owe all ?

*Cra.* Conon, you think by this great deed of  
To insinuate yourself a lodging nearer [*you*  
Unto my brother's heart : Such men as you  
Live on their undertakings for their lords,  
And more disable them by answering for 'em,  
Than if they sat still ; make 'em but their whores,  
For which end gallants now-a-days do fight.  
But here we come not to upbraid ; what men  
Seem, the rash world will judge ; but what they are,  
Heaven knows : And this—Horses ? we are descried :  
One stroke, and for fear of laughter.

*Enter EUPHANES, AGENOR, LEONIDAS, and PAGE.*

*Con.* Half a score. [*They fight.*]

*Euph.* Hold, hold ! on your allegiance hold !

*Age.* He that strikes next—

*Leo.* Falls like a traitor on our swords.

*Euph.* Oh, Heaven, my brother bleeds !—  
Conon, thou art

A villain, an unthankful man, and shalt  
Pay me thy blood for his, for his is mine !  
Thou wert my friend, but he is still my brother ;  
And though a friend sometimes be nearer said,  
In some gradation, it can never be,  
Where that same brother can be made a friend ;  
Which, dearest Crates, thus low I implore :  
What in my poverty I would not seek, [*Knells.*]  
Because I would not burden you, now here  
In all my height of bliss I beg of you,  
Your friendship ; my advancement, sir, is yours ;  
I never held it strange ; pray use it so.

We are but two, which number Nature fram'd  
In the most useful faculties of man,  
To strengthen mutually and relieve each other :  
Two eyes, two ears, two arms, two legs and feet,  
That where one fail'd, the other might supply ;  
And I, your other eye, ear, your arm and leg,  
Tender my service, help, and succour to you.

*Age., Leo.* A most divine example !

*Euph.* For, dear brother,  
You have been blind, and lame, and deaf to me :  
Now be no more so : In humility  
I give you the duty of a younger brother,  
Which take you as a brother, not a father,  
And then you'll pay a duty back to me.

*Cra.* Till now I have not wept these thirty years.

*Euph.* Discording brothers are like mutual legs,  
Supplanting one another ; he that seeks  
Aid from a stranger, and forsakes his brother,  
Does but like him that madly lops his arm,  
And to his body joins a wooden one ;  
Cuts off his natural leg, and trusts a crutch ;  
Plucks out his eye to see with spectacles.

*Cra.* Most dear Euphanes, in this crimson flood  
Wash my unkindness out ; you have o'ercome me,  
Taught me humanity and brotherhood :  
Full well knew Nature thou wert fitter far  
To be a ruler o'er me than a brother,  
Which henceforth be ! Jove surely did descend,  
When thou wert gotten, in some heavenly shape,  
And greet my mother, as the poets tell  
Of other women.

*Age.* Be this holiday !

*Leo.* And noted ever with the whitest stone !

*Con.* And pardon me, my lord ! Look you, I  
bleed

Faster than Crates. What I have done, I did  
To reconcile your loves, to both a friend ;  
Which my blood cement, never to part or end !

*Age.* Most worthy Conon !

*Leo.* Happy rise ; this day  
Contracts more good than a whole age hath done.

*Euph.* Royal Agenor, brave Leonidas,  
You are main causes, and must share the fame.

*Cra.* Which, in some part, this hour shall  
requite,

For I have aim'd my black shafts at white marks,  
And now I'll put the clue into your hands,  
Shall guide you most perspicuously to the depth  
Of this dark labyrinth, where so long you were lost  
Touching this old rape, and a new intent,  
Wherein your counsel, and your active wit,  
My dearest brother, will be necessary.

*Euph.* My prophecy is come ; prove my hopes  
Agenor shall have right, and you no wrong. [*true,*  
Time now will pluck her daughter from her cave.  
Let's hence, to prevent rumour. My dear brother,  
Nature's divided streams the highest shelf  
Will over-run at last, and flow to itself. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A Street.*

*Enter CRATES, EUPHANES, NEANTHES, SOBICLES, and ERATON.*

*Euph.* I have won the lady to it, and that good  
Which is intended to her, your faith only  
And secrecy must make perfect ; think not, sir,

I speak as doubting it, for I dare hazard  
My soul upon the trial.

*Cra.* You may safely ;  
But are Agenor and Leonidas ready  
To rush upon him in the act, and seize him  
In the height of his security ?

*Euph.* At all parts  
As you could wish them.

*Cra.* Where's the lady ?

*Euph.* There

Where you appointed her to stay.

*Cra.* 'Tis wisely order'd.

*Euph.* Last, when you have him sure, compel  
him this way ;

For, as by accident, here I'll bring the queen  
To meet you ; 'twill strike greater terror to him,  
To be ta'en unprovided of excuse,  
And make more for our purposes. [Exit.

*Cra.* Come, Neanthes ;

Our fames and all are at the stake.

*Nean.* 'Tis fit,

That, since relying on your skill we venture  
So much upon one game, you play with cunning,  
Or we shall rise such losers as—

*Sos.* The prince !

*Enter THEANOR.*

*Cra.* The plot is laid, sir ; howsoe'er I seem'd  
A little scrupulous, upon better judgment  
I have effected it.

*The.* 'Tis the last service  
Of this foul kind I will employ you in.

*Cra.* We hope so, sir.

*The.* And I will so reward it—

*Nean.* You are bound to that ; in every family  
That does write lustful, your fine bawd gains more  
(For, like your broker, he takes fees on both sides)  
Than all the officers of the house.

*Sos.* For us then

To be a great man's pandars, and live poor,  
That were a double fault.

*Cra.* Come, you lose time, sir ;  
We will be with you instantly : The deed done,  
We have a masque that you expect not.

*The.* Thou  
Art ever careful ; for Jove's Mercury  
I would not change thee. [Exit.

*Era.* There's an honour for you.

*Nean.* To be compared with the celestial pimp,  
Jove's smock-sworn squire, don Hermes.

*Cra.* I'll deserve it ;

And, gentlemen, be assured, though what we do now  
Will to the prince Theanor look like treason  
And base disloyalty, yet the end shall prove,  
And base disloyalty, yet the end shall prove,  
(When he's first taught to know himself, then you)  
In what he judged us false, we were most true. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*Before the Palace.*

*Enter EUPHANES, AEGNOR, LEONIDAS, and CONON.*

*Euph.* Only make haste, my lords ; in all things  
else

You are instructed : You may draw your swords  
For show, if you think good, but on my life  
You will find no resistance in his servants,  
And he's himself unarm'd.

*Age.* I would he were not ;  
My just rage should not then be lost.

*Euph.* Good sir,  
Have you a care no injury be done  
Unto the person of the prince ; but, Conon,  
Have you an eye on both ; it is your trust  
That I rely on.

*Con.* Which I will discharge,  
Assure yourself, most faithfully.

*Euph.* For the lady,  
I know your best respect will not be wanting :  
Then, to avoid suspicion and discovery,  
I hold it requisite, that as soon as ever  
The Queen hath seen her, she forsake the place,  
And fit herself for that which is projected  
For her good and your honour.

*Leo.* If this proper,  
Believe it you have made a purchase of  
My service and my life.

*Euph.* Your love I aim at.

*Leo.* Here I shall find you ?

*Euph.* With the Queen.

*Con.* Enough, sir. [Exit.

*Enter Page.*

*Page.* The Queen enquires for you, my lord ;  
A dozen messengers in search of you. [I have met

*Enter QUEEN, Ladies, and Attendants.*

*Euph.* I knew I should be sought for. As I  
She's come herself in person. [wish'd,

*Queen.* Are you found, sir ?

I wonder where you spend your hours ; methinks  
Since I so love your company, and profess  
'Tis the best comfort this life yields me, mine  
Should not be tedious to you.

*Euph.* Gracious madam,  
To have the happiness to see and hear you,  
Which by your bounty is conferr'd upon me,  
I hold so great a blessing, that my honours  
And wealth, compared to that, are but as cyphers  
To make that number greater ; yet your pardon  
For borrowing from my duty so much time,  
As the provision for my sudden marriage  
Exacted from me.

*Queen.* I perceive this marriage  
Will keep you often from me ; but I'll bear it.  
She's a good lady, and a fair, Euphanes ;  
Yet, by her leave, I will share with her in you ;  
I am pleased that in the night she shall enjoy you,  
And that's sufficient for a wife ; the day-time  
I will divorce you from her.

*Leo.* [Within.] We will force you.  
If you resist.

*Queen.* What noise is that ?

*The.* [Within.] Base traitors !

*Euph.* It moves this way.

*Enter AEGNOR, LEONIDAS with THEANOR, MERIONE disguised like BELIZA, CONON, CRATES, NEANTHES, SOICLES, ERATON, and Guard.*

*Queen.* Whate'er it be, I'll meet it ;  
I was not born to fear.—Who's that ? Beliza ?  
*Euph.* My worthiest, noblest mistress ! [Exit MERIONE.

*Queen.* Stay her ! ha ?

All of you look as you were rooted there,  
And wanted motion : What new Gorgon's head  
Have you beheld, that you are all turn'd statues ?  
This is prodigious ! has none a tongue  
To speak the cause ?

*Leo.* Could every hair, great queen,  
Upon my head, yield an articulate sound,  
And all together speak, they could not yet  
Express the villainy we have discover'd :  
And yet, when with a few unwilling words  
I have deliver'd what must needs be known,  
You'll say I am too eloquent, and wish  
I had been born without a tongue.

*Queen.* Speak boldly ;  
For I, unmoved with any loss, will hear,

*Leo.* Then know, we have found out the raviſher  
Of my poor ſiſter, and the place and means  
By which the unfortunate, though fair Beliza,  
Hath met a ſecond violence.

*Euph.* This confirms  
What but before I doubted to my ruin.  
My lady raviſh'd ?

*Queen.* Point me out the villain,  
That guilty wretched monſter, that hath done this,  
That I may look on him ; and in mine eye  
He read his ſentence.

*Leo.* That I truly could  
Name any other but the prince ! that heard,  
You have it all.

*Queen.* Wonder not that I ſhake ;  
The miracle is greater that I live,  
Having endured the thunder that thy words  
Have thrown upon me !—Dareſt thou kneel with  
hope [THEANOR kneels.]

Of any favour, but a ſpeedy death,  
And that too in the dreadfull'ſt ſhape that can  
Appear to a deſpairing leprous ſoul,  
If thou haſt any ? No, libidinous beaſt,  
Thy luſt hath alter'd ſo thy former being,  
By Heaven I know thee not !

*The.* Although unworthy,  
Yet ſtill I am your ſon.

*Queen.* Thou lieſt, lieſt falſely !  
My whole life never knew but one chaſte bed,  
Nor ne'er deſir'd warmth but from lawful fires ;  
Can I be then the mother to a goat,  
Whoſe luſt is more inſatiate than the grave,  
And like infectious air engenders plagues,  
To murder all that's chaſte or good in woman ?  
The gods I from my youth have ſerved and fear'd,  
Whoſe holy temples thou haſt made thy brothels ;  
Could a religious mother then bring forth  
So damn'd an atheiſt ? Read but o'er my life,  
My actions, manners ; and, made perfect in them,  
But look into the ſtory of thyſelf  
As thou art now, (not as thou wert, Theanor)  
And reaſon will compel thee to confeſs,  
Thou art a ſtranger to me.

*Age.* Note but how heavy  
The weight of guilt is ! it ſo low hath ſunk him,  
That he wants power to riſe up in defence  
Of his bad cauſe.

*Queen.* Perſuade me not, Euphanes !  
This is no prince ! nor can claim part in me :  
My ſon was born a freeman, this, a ſlave  
To beaſtly paſſions, a fugitive  
And run-away from virtue. Bring bonds for him !  
By all the honour that I owe to juſtice,  
He loſes me for ever that ſeeks to ſave him !  
Bind him, I ſay ; and like a wretch that knows  
He ſtands condemn'd before he hears the ſentence,  
With his baſe agents, from my ſight remove him,  
And lodge them in the dungeon ! as a queen  
And patronreſs to juſtice, I command it.—  
Thy tears are like unſeaſonable ſhowers,  
And in my heart now ſteel'd can make no entrance ;  
Thou art cruel to thyſelf, fool, 'tis not want  
In me of ſoft compaſſion ; when thou left'ſt  
To be a ſon, I ceas'd to be a mother.—  
Away with them ! The children I will leave  
To keep my name to all poſterities,  
Shall be the great examples of my juſtice,  
The government of my country, which ſhall witneſs  
How well I ruled myſelf. Bid the wrong'd ladies  
Appear in court to-morrow ; we will hear them ;

And by one act of our ſeverity,  
For fear of puniſhment, or love to virtue,  
Teach others to be honeſt : All will ſhun  
To tempt her laws, that would not ſpare her ſon.  
[Exit.]

## SCENE III.—A Street.

Enter ONOS, Uncle, and Tutor.

*Uncle.* Nay, nephew !

*Tutor.* Pupil, hear but reaſon !

*Onos.* No ;

I have none, and will hear none. Oh, my honour !  
My honour blaſted in the bud ! my youth,  
My hopeful youth, and all my expectation  
Ever to be a man, are loſt for ever !

*Uncle.* Why, nephew, we as well as you are dubb'd  
Knights of the pantofle.

*Tutor.* And are ſhouted at,  
Kick'd, ſcorn'd, and laugh'd at, by each page and  
Yet with erected heads we bear it. [groom ;

*Onos.* Alas,  
You have years, and ſtrength to do it ; but were you,  
As I, a tender grittle, apt to bow,  
You would, like me, with cloaks enveloped,  
Walk thus, then ſtamp, then ſtare.

*Uncle.* He will run mad,  
I hope, and then all's mine.

*Tutor.* Why, look you, pupil,  
There are for the recovery of your honour  
Degrees of medicines : For a tweak by the noſe  
A man's to travel but ſix months, then blow it,  
And all is well again ; the baſtinado  
Requires a longer time, a year or two,  
And then 'tis buried. I grant you have been baffled ;  
'Tis but a journey of ſome thirty years,  
And it will be forgotten.

*Onos.* Think you ſo ?

*Tutor.* Aſſuredly.

*Uncle.* He may make a ſhorter cut,  
But hang or drown himſelf, and, on my life,  
'Twill no more trouble him.

*Onos.* I could ne'er endure  
Or hemp or water, they are dangerous tools  
For youth to deal with ; I will rather follow  
My tutor's counſel.

*Tutor.* Do ſo.

*Onos.* And put in  
For my ſecurity, that I'll not return  
In thirty years, my whole 'ſtate to my uncle.

*Uncle.* That I like well of.

*Onos.* Still provided, uncle,  
That at my coming home, you will allow me  
To be of age, that I may call to account.  
This Page that hath abuſed me.

*Uncle.* 'Tis a match.

*Onos.* Then, Corinth, thus the baſhful Lamprias  
Takes leave of thee ; and for this little time  
Of thirty years, will labour all he can,  
Though he goes young forth, to come home a man.  
[Exit.]

## SCENE IV.—A Court of Juſtice.

Enter EUPHANES and Marshal.

*Euph.* Are your priſoners ready ?

*Mar.* When it ſhall pleaſe the queen  
To call them forth, my lord.

*Euph.* Pray you do me the favour

Totell me how they have borne themselves this night  
Of their imprisonment ?

*Mar.* Gladly, sir : Your brother,  
With the other courtiers, willingly received  
All courtesies I could offer ; eat, and drank,  
And were exceeding merry, so dissembling  
Their guilt, or confident in their innocence,  
That I much wonder'd at it. But the prince,  
That, as born highest, should have graced his fall  
With greatest courage, is so sunk with sorrow,  
That to a common judgment he would seem  
To suffer like a woman ; but to me,  
That from the experience I have had of many,  
Look further in him, I do find the deep  
Consideration of what's past, more frights him  
Than any other punishment.

*Euph.* That is indeed  
True magnanimity ; the other but  
A desperate bastard valour.

*Mar.* I press'd to him,  
And, notwithstanding the queen's strict command,  
(Having your lordship's promise to secure me)  
Offer'd to free him from his bonds, which he  
Refused, with such a sorrow, mix'd with scorn,  
That it amazed me ; yet I urged his highness  
To give one reason for't : He briefly answer'd,  
That he had sat in judgment on himself,  
And found that he deserved them ; that he was  
A ravisher, and so to suffer like one ;  
"Which is the reason of my tears," he addeth,  
"For were't not I again should break the laws  
By scoring all their rigour can inflict,  
I should die smiling."

*Euph.* I forbear to wonder  
That you were moved that saw this, I am struck  
With the relation so. 'Tis very well ;  
See all things ready. I do wish I could  
Send comfort to the prince ; (be ready with him)  
'Tis in the queen's breast only, which for us  
To search into were sauciness, to determine  
What she thinks fit. [Exit Marshal.

*Enter LEONIDAS, with MERIONE in white ; EUPHANESE,  
with BELLEA in black ; QUEEN, and takes her place  
behind the bar ; AGENOR, CONON ; Marshal, with  
TREASON, CRATES, SOBICLES, ERATON ; Lords, Ladies,  
and Guard.*

*Lord.* Make way there for the queen !

*Queen.* Read first the law, and what our ancestors  
Have in this case provided, to deter  
Such-like offenders.—To you, gentle ladies,  
This only : 'Would I could as well give comfort,  
As bid you be secure from fear or doubt  
Of our displeasure ! be as confident  
As if your plea were 'gainst a common man,  
To have all right from us ; I will not grieve  
For what's not worth my pity.—Read the law.

*Clerk.* [Reading.] Lycurgus the nineteenth against  
rapes : It is provided, and publicly enacted and confirmed,  
That any man of what degree soever, offering violence to  
the chastity of a virgin, shall, *ipso facto*, be liable to her  
accusation, and according to the said law be censured ;  
ever provided, that it shall be in the choice of the said  
virgin so abused, either to compel the offender to marry  
her without a dowry, if so she will be satisfied, or de-  
manding his head for the offence, to have that accordingly  
performed.

*Queen.* You hear this : What do you demand ?

*Mer.* The benefit  
The law allows me.

*Bel.* For the injury  
Done to mine honour, I require his head.

*Mer.* I likewise have an eye upon mine honour ;  
But knowing that his death cannot restore it,  
I ask him for my husband.

*Bel.* I was ravish'd,  
And will have justice.

*Mer.* I was ravish'd too ;  
I kneel for mercy.

*Bel.* I demand but what  
The law allows me.

*Mer.* That which I desire  
Is by the same law warranted.

*Bel.* The rape  
On me hath made a forfeit of his life,  
Which in revenge of my disgrace I plead for.

*Mer.* The rape on me gives me the privilege  
To be his wife, and that is all I sue for.

*Age.* A doubtful case.

*Leo.* Such pretty lawyers, yet  
I never saw nor read of.

*Euph.* May the queen  
Favour your sweet plea, madam !

*Bel.* Is that justice ?  
Shall one that is to suffer for a rape  
Be by a rape defended ? Look upon  
The public enemy of chastity,  
This lustful satyr, whose enraged desires  
The ruin of one wretched virgin's honour  
Would not suffice ; and shall the wreck of two  
Be his protection ? May-be I was ravish'd  
For his lust only, thou for his defence ;  
Oh, fine evasion ! shall with such a slight  
Your justice be deluded ? your laws cheated ?  
And he that for one fact deserved to die,  
For sinning often, find impunity ?  
But that I know thee, I would swear thou wert  
A false impostor, and suborn'd to this :  
And it may be thou art, Merione ;  
For hadst thou suffer'd truly what I have done,  
Thou wouldst like me complain, and call for ven-  
And, our wrongs being equal, I alone [geance,  
Should not desire revenge : But be it so !  
If thou prevail, even he will punish it,  
And foolish mercy shewed to him undo thee.  
Consider, fool, before it be too late,  
What joys thou canst expect from such a husband,  
To whom thy first, and what's more, forced em-  
braces,

Which men say heighten pleasure, were distasteful.

*Mer.* 'Twas in respect that then they were un-  
lawful,

Unbless'd by Hymen, and left stings behind them,  
Which from the marriage-bed are ever banish'd.  
Let this court be then the image of Jove's throne,  
Upon which grace and mercy still attend,  
To intercede between him and his justice ;  
And since the law allows as much to me  
As she can challenge, let the milder sentence,  
Which best becomes a mother and a queen,  
Now overcome, nor let your wisdom suffer :  
In doing right to her, I in my wrong  
Endure a second ravishment.

*Bel.* You can free him  
Only from that which does concern yourself,  
Not from the punishment that's due to me ;  
Your injuries you may forgive, not mine ;  
I plead mine own just wreak, which will right both,  
Where that which you desire robs me of justice :  
'Tis that which I appeal to.

*Mer.* Bloody woman,  
Dost thou desire his punishment ? Let him live then ;

For any man to marry where he likes not  
Is still a ling'ring torment.

*Bel.* For one rape

One death's sufficient ; that way cannot catch me.

*Mer.* To you I fly then, to your mercy, madam !  
Exempting not your justice, be but equal ;  
And since in no regard I come behind her,  
Let me not so be undervalued in  
Your highness' favour, that the world take notice  
You so prefer'd her, that in her behalf  
You kill'd that son you would not save for me ;  
Mercy, oh, mercy, madam !

*Bel.* Great Queen, justice !

*Age.* With what a masculine constancy the grave  
Hath heard them both ! [lady

*Leo.* Yet how unmoved she sits  
In that which most concerns her !

*Con.* Now she rises ;  
And, having well weigh'd both their arguments,  
Resolves to speak.

*Euph.* And yet again she pauses :  
Oh, Conon, such a resolution once  
A Roman told me he had seen in Cato  
Before he kill'd himself.

*Queen.* 'Tis now determin'd.—  
Merione, I could wish I were no queen,  
To give you satisfaction ; no mother,  
Beliza, to content you ; and would part  
Even with my being, both might have their wishes ;  
But since that is impossible, in few words  
I will deliver what I am resolv'd on.

The end for which all profitable laws  
Were made looks two ways only, the reward  
Of innocent good men, and the punishment  
Of bad delinquents : Ours, concerning rapes,  
Provided that same latter-clause of marriage  
For him that had fall'n once, not then foreseeing  
Mankind could prove so monstrous, to tread twice  
A path so horrid. The great law-giver  
Draco, that for his strange severity  
Was said to write his stern decrees in blood,  
Made none for parricides, presuming that  
No man could be so wicked : Such might be  
Lycurgus' answer (did he live) for this.  
But since I find that in my son which was not  
Doubted in any else, I will add to it :

He cannot marry both, but for both dying,  
Both have their full revenge.—You see, Beliza,  
You have your wish. With you, Merione,  
I'll spend a tear or two. So, Heaven forgive thee !

*The.* Upon my knees I do approve your judgment,  
And beg that you would put it into act  
With all speed possible ; only that I may,  
Having already made peace with myself,  
Part so with all the world. Princely Agenor,  
I ask your pardon. Yours, my lord Euphanes.

And, Crates, with the rest too, I forgive you ;  
Do you the like for me. Yours, gracious mother,  
I dare not ask ; and yet if that my death  
Be like a son of yours, though my life was not,  
Perhaps you may vouchsafe it. Lastly, that  
Both these whom I have wrong'd may wish my  
No heavy burden, ere I suffer death, [ashes  
For the restoring of Merione's honour,  
Let me be married to her ; and then die  
For you, Beliza.

*Queen.* Thou hast made in this

Part of amends to me, and to the world :  
Thy suit is granted.—Call a Flamen forth  
To do this holy work ; with him a headsman.

*Enter Flamen and Executioner.*

Raise up thy weeping eyes, Merione ;  
With this hand I confirm thy marriage,  
Wishing that now the gods would shew some mi-  
That this might not divorce it. [racle,

*Cra.* To that purpose  
I am their minister. Stand not amazed ;  
To all your comforts, I will do this wonder.—  
Your majesty (with your pardon I must speak it)  
Allow'd once heretofore of such a contract,  
Which you repenting afterwards, revoked it,  
Being fully bent to match her with Agenor ;  
The grieved prince knowing this, and yet not daring  
To cross what you determined, by an oath  
Bound me and these his followers to do something  
That he might once enjoy her ; we, sworn to it,  
And easily persuaded, being assured  
She was his wife before the face of Heaven,  
Although some ceremonious forms were wanting,  
Committed the first rape, and brought her to him,  
Which broke the marriage ; but when we perceived  
He purposed to abuse our ready service  
In the same kind, upon the chaste Beliza,  
Holding ourselves less tied to him than goodness,  
I made discovery of it to my brother,  
Who can relate the rest.

*Euph.* It is most true.

*Queen.* I would it were !

*Euph.* In every circumstance

It is, upon my soul : For, this known to me,  
I won Merione in my lady's habit  
To be again (but willingly) surprised ;  
But with Agenor, and her noble brother,  
With my approved friend Conon, with such speed  
She was pursued, that, the lewd act scarce ended,  
The prince (assured he had enjoy'd Beliza,  
For all the time Merione's face was cover'd)  
Was apprehended and brought to your presence,  
But not till now discover'd, in respect  
I hoped the imminent danger of the prince,  
To which his loose unquenched heats had brought  
him,

Being pursued unto the latest trial,  
Would work in him compunction, which it has done ;  
And these two ladies, in their feign'd contentions,  
To your delight I hope have served as masquers  
To their own nuptials.

*Queen.* My choice was worthy  
When first I look'd on thee : As thou hast order'd,  
All shall be done ; and not the meanest that  
Play'd in this unexpected comedy,  
But shall partake our bounty.—And, my lord,

[To AGONOR.

That with the rest you may seem satisfied,  
If you dare venture on a queen, not yet  
So far in debt to years but that she may  
Bring you a lusty boy, I offer up  
Myself and kingdom, during my life, to you.

*Age.* It is a blessing which I durst not hope for,  
But with all joy receive.

*All.* We all applaud it.

*Queen.* Then on unto the temple, where, the rites  
Of marriage ended, we'll find new delights. [Exit.

# BONDUCA.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CARATACH, *General of the Britons, Cousin to BONDUCA.*

NENNIUS, *a great Soldier, a British Commander.*

HENGO, *a brave Boy, Nephew to CARATACH and BONDUCA.*

SUBONTIUS, *General to the Roman Army in Britain.*

PENIUS, *a brave Roman Commander, but stubborn to the General.*

JUNIUS, *a Roman Captain, in Love with BONDUCA's Daughter.*

PETILLIUS, *a merry Roman Captain, but somewhat wanton.*

DEMETRIUS, } *Roman Commanders.*  
DECIUS, }

REOULUS, } *Roman Officers.*  
DRUSIUS, }  
MACER, }  
CURIUS, }

JUDAS, *a Corporal, a cowardly hungry Knave.*

Herald.

Druids.

Soldiers.

Guides.

BONDUCA, *Queen of the Iceni, a brave virgin.*  
*Her two Daughters, by PRASUTAGUS.*

## SCENE,—BRITAIN.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—*The British Camp.*

*Enter BONDUCA, Daughters, HENGO, NENNIUS, and Soldiers.*

*Bond.* The hardy Romans? Oh, ye gods of Britain,  
The rust of arms, the blushing shame of soldiers!

*Enter CARATACH.*

Are these the men that conquer by inheritance?  
The fortune-makers? these the Julians,  
That with the sun measure the end of nature,  
Making the world but one Rome, and one Cæsar?  
Shame, how they flee! Cæsar's soft soul dwells  
in 'em,

Their mothers got 'em sleeping, Pleasure nursed  
'em;

Their bodies sweat with sweet oils, love's allurements,

Not lusty arms. Dare they send these to seek us,  
These Roman girls? Is Britain grown so wanton?  
Twice we have beat 'em, Nennius, scatter'd 'em:  
And through their big-boned Germans, on whose  
The honour of their actions sits in triumph, [pikes  
Made themes for songs to shame 'em: And a  
woman,

A woman beat 'em, Nennius; a weak woman,  
A woman, beat these Romans!

*Car.* So it seems;

A man would shame to talk so.

*Bond.* Who's that?

*Car.* I.

*Bond.* Cousin, do you grieve my fortunes?

*Car.* No, Bonduca;

If I grieve, 'tis the bearing of your fortunes:

You put too much wind to your sail; discretion  
And hardy valour are the twins of honour,  
And, nursed together, make a conqueror;  
Divided, but a talker. 'Tis a truth,  
That Rome has fled before us twice, and routed;  
A truth we ought to crown the gods for, lady,  
And not our tongues; a truth is none of ours,  
Nor in our ends, more than the noble bearing;  
For then it leaves to be a virtue, lady,  
And we, that have been victors, beat ourselves,  
When we insult upon our honour's subject.

*Bond.* My valiant cousin, is it foul to say  
What liberty and honour bid us do,  
And what the gods allow us?

*Car.* No, Bonduca;

So what we say exceed not what we do.

You call the Romans "fearful, fleeing Romans,  
And Roman girls, the lees of tainted pleasures:"  
Does this become a doer? are they such?

*Bond.* They are no more.

*Car.* Where is your conquest then?

Why are your altars crown'd with wreaths of  
flowers?

The beasts with gilt horns waiting for the fire?  
The holy Druides composing songs  
Of everlasting life to victory?

Why are these triumphs, lady? for a May-game?  
For hunting a poor herd of wretched Romans?

Is it no more? Shut up your temples, Britons,  
And let the husbandman redeem his heifers,  
Put out your holy fires, no timbrel ring,  
Let's home and sleep; for such great overthrows,  
A candle burns too bright a sacrifice,  
A glow-worm's tail too full of flame.—Oh,

Nennius,

Thou hadst a noble uncle knew a Roman,  
And how to speak him, how to give him weight  
In both his fortunes.

*Bond.* By the gods, I think

You dote upon these Romans, Caratach!

*Car.* Witness these wounds, I do; they were  
fairly given:

I love an enemy; I was born a soldier;  
And he that in the head on's troop defies me,  
Bending my manly body with his sword,  
I make a mistress. Yellow-tressed Hymen  
Ne'er tied a longing virgin with more joy,  
Than I am married to that man that wounds me:  
And are not all these Roman? Ten struck battles  
I suck'd these honour'd scars from, and all Roman;  
Ten years of bitter nights and heavy marches,  
(When many a frozen storm sung through my  
cuirass,

And made it doubtful whether that or I  
Were the more stubborn metal) have I wrought  
through,

And all to try these Romans. Ten times a-night  
I have swam the rivers, when the stars of Rome  
Shot at me as I floated, and the billows  
Tumbled their watry ruins on my shoulders,  
Charging my batter'd sides with troops of agues;  
And still to try these Romans, whom I found  
(And, if I lie, my wounds be henceforth back-  
ward,

And be you witness, gods, and all my dangers)  
As ready, and as full of that I brought,  
(Which was not fear, nor flight) as valiant,  
As vigilant, as wise, to do and suffer,  
Ever advanced as forward as the Britons,  
Their sleeps as short, their hopes as high as ours,  
Ay, and as subtle, lady. 'Tis dishonour,  
And, follow'd, will be impudence, Bonduca,  
And grow to no belief, to taint these Romans.  
Have not I seen the Britons —

*Bond.* What?

*Car.* Dishearten'd,

Run, run, Bonduca! not the quick rack swifter;  
The virgin from the hated ravisher  
Not half so fearful; not a flight drawn home,  
A round stone from a sling, a lover's wish.  
E'er made that haste that they have. By the gods,  
I have seen these Britons, that you magnify,  
Run as they would have out-run time, and roaring,  
Basely for mercy roaring; the light shadows,  
That in a thought scur o'er the fields of corn,  
Halted on crutches to 'em.

*Bond.* Oh, ye powers,  
What scandals do I suffer!

*Car.* Yes, Bonduca,

I have seen thee run too; and thee, Nennius;  
Yea, run apace, both; then, when Penius  
(The Roman girl!) cut through your armed carts,  
And drove 'em headlong on ye, down the hill;  
Then, when he hunted ye like Britain foxes,  
More by the scent than sight; then did I see  
These valiant and approved men of Britain,  
Like boding owls, creep into tods of ivy,  
And hoot their fears to one another nightly.

*Nen.* And what did you then, Caratach?

*Car.* I fled too,

But not so fast; your jewel had been lost then,  
Young Hengo there; he traasht me, Nennius:  
For, when your fears out-run him, then stept I,  
And in the head of all the Roman fury  
Took him, and, with my tough belt, to my back

I buckled him; behind him my sure shield;  
And then I follow'd. If I say I fought  
Five times in bringing off this bud of Britain,  
I lie not, Nennius. Neither had you heard  
Me speak this, or ever seen the child more,  
But that the sun of virtue, Penius,  
Seeing me steer through all these storms of danger,  
My helm still in my hand (my sword,) my prow  
Turn'd to my foe (my face,) he cried out nobly,  
"Go, Briton, bear thy lion's whelp off safely;  
Thy manly sword has ransom'd thee; grow strong,  
And let me meet thee once again in arms;  
Then, if thou stand'st, thou'rt mine." I took his  
And here I am to honour him. [offer,

*Bond.* Oh, cousin,  
From what a fight of honour hast thou check'd  
What wouldst thou make me, Caratach? [me!

*Car.* See, lady,  
The noble use of others in our losses.  
Does this afflict you? Had the Romans cried this,  
And, as we have done theirs, sung out these  
fortunes,

Rail'd on our base condition, hooted at us,  
Made marks as far as th' earth was ours, to shew us  
Nothing but sea could stop our fights, despised us,  
And held it equal whether banqueting  
Or beating of the Britons were more business,  
It would have gall'd you.

*Bond.* Let me think we conquer'd.

*Car.* Do; but so think, as we may be con-  
quer'd;  
And where we have found virtue, though in those  
That came to make us slaves, let's cherish it.  
There's not a blow we gave since Julius landed,  
That was of strength and worth, but, like records,  
They file to after-ages. Our registers  
The Romans are, for noble deeds of honour;  
And shall we burn their mentions with upbraid-  
ings?

*Bond.* No more; I see myself. Thou hast made  
me, cousin,  
More than my fortunes durst, for they abused me,  
And wound me up so high, I swell'd with glory:  
Thy temperance has cured that tympany,  
And given me health again, nay, more, discretion.  
Shall we have peace? for now I love these Romans.

*Car.* Thy love and hate are both unwise ones.  
*Bond.* Your reason? [lady.

*Nen.* Is not peace the end of arms?

*Car.* Not where the cause implies a general  
conquest:

Had we a difference with some petty isle,  
Or with our neighbours, lady, for our land-marks,  
The taking in of some rebellious lord,  
Or making head against commotions,  
After a day of blood, peace might be argued;  
But where we grapple for the ground we live on,  
The liberty we hold as dear as life,  
The gods we worship, and, next those, our honours,  
And with those swords that know no end of battle:  
Those men, beside themselves, allow no neighbour;  
Those minds that where the day is, claim inheri-  
tance,

And where the sun makes ripe the fruits, their  
harvest,  
And where they march, but measure out more  
ground

To add to Rome, and here i' th' bowels on us;  
It must not be. No, as they are our foes,  
And those that must be so until we tire 'em,

Let's use the peace of honour, that's fair dealing,  
But in our hands our swords. That hardy Roman  
That hopes to graft himself into my stock,  
Must first begin his kindred under-ground,  
And be allied in ashes.

*Bond.* Caratach,  
As thou hast nobly spoken, shall be done ;  
And Hengo to thy charge I here deliver :  
The Romans shall have worthy wars.

*Car.* They shall :  
And, little sir, when your young bones grow stiffer,  
And when I see you able in a morning  
To beat a dozen boys, and then to breakfast,  
I'll tie you to a sword.

*Hengo.* And what then, uncle ?  
*Car.* Then you must kill, sir, the next valiant  
That calls you knave. [Roman]

*Hengo.* And must I kill but one ?

*Car.* An hundred, boy, I hope.

*Hengo.* I hope five hundred.

*Car.* That is a noble boy !—Come, worthy lady,  
Let's to our several charges, and henceforth  
Allow an enemy both weight and worth. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The Roman Camp.*

*Enter JUNIUS and PETILLIUS.*

*Pet.* What ail'st thou, man ? dost thou want  
*Jun.* No. [meat ?]

*Pet.* Clothes ?

*Jun.* Neither. For Heaven's love, leave me !

*Pet.* Drink ?

*Jun.* You tire me.

*Pet.* Come, it is drink ; I know 'tis drink.

*Jun.* 'Tis no drink.

*Pet.* I say 'tis drink ; for what affliction  
Can light so heavy on a soldier,  
To dry him up as thou art, but no drink ?  
Thou shalt have drink.

*Jun.* Pr'ythee, Petillius—

*Pet.* And, by mine honour, much drink, valiant  
drink :

Never tell me, thou shalt have drink. I see,  
Like a true friend, into thy wants ; 'tis drink ;  
And when I leave thee to a desolation,  
Especially of that dry nature, hang me.

*Jun.* Why do you do this to me ?

*Pet.* For I see,

Although your modesty would fain conceal it,  
Which sits as sweetly on a soldier  
As an old side-saddle—

*Jun.* What do you see ?

*Pet.* I see as fair as day, that thou want'st drink.  
Did I not find thee gaping like an oyster  
For a new tide ? . Thy very thoughts lie bare,  
Like a low ebb ; thy soul, that rid in sack,  
Lies moor'd for want of liquor. Do but see  
Into thyself ; for, by the gods, I do ;  
For all thy body's chapt and crack'd like timber,  
For want of moisture : What is't thou want'st  
An if it be not drink ? [there, Junius,

*Jun.* You have too much on't.

*Pet.* It may be a whore too ; say it be ; come,  
meecher,

Thou shalt have both ; a pretty valiant fellow,  
Die for a little lap and lechery ?  
No, it shall ne'er be said in our country,  
Thou diest o' th' chin-cough. Hear, thou noble  
The son of her that loves a soldier, [Roman,

vol. II.

Hear what I promised for thee ! thus I said :

“ Lady, I take thy son to my companion ;  
Lady, I love thy son, thy son loves war,  
The war loves danger, danger drink, drink discipline,  
Which is society and lechery ;  
These two beget commanders : Fear not, lady ;  
Thy son shall lead.”

*Jun.* 'Tis a strange thing, Petillius,  
That so ridiculous and loose a mirth  
Can master your affections.

*Pet.* Any mirth,

And any way, of any subject, Junius,  
Is better than unmanly mustiness.  
What harm's in drink ? in a good wholesome  
I do beseech you, sir, what error ? Yet [wench ?  
It cannot out of my head handsomely,  
But thou wouldst fain be drunk ; come, no more  
fooling ;

The general has new wine, new come over.

*Jun.* He must have new acquaintance for it too,  
For I will none, I thank ye.

*Pet.* “ None, I thank you ? ”

A short and touchy answer ! “ None, I thank  
You do not scorn it, do you ? [you ? ”

*Jun.* Gods defend, sir !

I owe him still more honour.

*Pet.* “ None, I thank you ? ”

No company, no drink, no wench, “ I thank you ? ”  
You shall be worse entreated, sir.

*Jun.* Petillius,

As thou art honest, leave me !

*Pet.* “ None, I thank you ? ”

A modest and a decent resolution,  
And well put on. Yes ; I will leave you, Junius,  
And leave you to the boys, that very shortly  
Shall all salute you, by your new surname  
Of “ Junius None-I-thank-you.” I would starve  
now,

Hang, drown, despair, deserve the forks, lie open  
To all the dangerous passes of a wench,  
Bound to believe her tears, and wed her aches,  
Ere I would own thy follies. I have found you,  
Your lays, and out-leaps, Junius, haunts, and  
lodges ;

I have viewed you, and I have found you by my  
To be a fool o' th' first head, Junius, [skill  
And I will hunt you : You are in love, I know it ;  
You are an ass, and all the camp shall know it ;  
A peevish idle boy, your dame shall know it ;  
A wronger of my care, yourself shall know it.

*Enter JUDAS and four Soldiers.*

*Judas.* A bean ? a princely diet, a full banquet,  
To what we compass.

1 *Sold.* Fight like hogs for acorns ?

2 *Sold.* Venture our lives for pig-nuts ?

*Pet.* What ail these rascals ?

3 *Sold.* If this hold we are starved.

*Judas.* For my part, friends,  
Which is but twenty beans a-day, (a hard world  
For officers, and men of action !)

And those so clipt by Master Mouse, and rotten—  
(For understand 'em French beans, where the fruits  
Are ripen'd like the people, in old tubs)

For mine own part, I say, I am starved already,  
Not worth another bean, consumed to nothing,  
Nothing but flesh and bones left, miserable :  
Now if this musty provender can prick me  
To honourable matters of achievement, gentlemen,  
Why, there's the point.

4 *Sold.* I'll fight no more.

*Pet.* You'll hang then!

A sovereign help for hunger. Ye eating rascals,  
Whose gods are beef and brewis! whose brave  
Do execution upon these, and chibbals! [angers  
Ye dog's head in the porridge-pot! ye fight no  
Does Rome depend upon your resolution [more?  
For eating mouldy pie-crust?

3 *Sold.* 'Would we had it!

*Judas.* I may do service, captain.

*Pet.* In a fish-market.

You, corporal Curry-comb, what will your fighting  
Profit the commonwealth? Do you hope to  
triumph?

Or dare your vamping valour, Goodman Cobler,  
Clap a new sole to th' kingdom? 'Sdeath, ye  
You fight, or not fight! [dog-whelps,

*Judas.* Captain!

*Pet.* Out, ye flesh-flies!

Nothing but noise and nastiness!

*Judas.* Give us meat,

Whereby we may do.

*Pet.* Whereby hangs your valour?

*Judas.* Good bits afford good blows.

*Pet.* A good position:

How long is't since thou eat'st last? Wipe thy  
And then tell truth. [mouth,

*Judas.* I have not eat to th' purpose—

*Pet.* "To th' purpose?" what's that? half a  
cow and garlick?

Ye rogues, my company eat turf, and talk not;  
Timber they can digest, and fight upon't;  
Old mats, and mud with spoons, rare meats. Your  
shoes, slaves;

Dare ye cry out for hunger, and those extant?

Suck your sword-hilts, ye slaves; if ye be valiant,  
Honour will make 'em marchpane. "To the  
purpose?"

A grievous penance! Dost thou see that gentleman,  
That melancholy monsieur?

*Jun.* Pray you, Petillius!

*Pet.* He has not eat these three weeks.

2 *Sold.* He has drunk the more then.

3 *Sold.* And that's all one.

*Pet.* Nor drunk nor slept these two months.

*Judas.* Captain, we do beseech you, as poor  
soldiers,

Men that have seen good days, whose mortal  
stomachs

May sometimes feel afflictions— [To *JUNUS.*

*Jun.* This, Petillius,

Is not so nobly done.

*Pet.* 'Tis common profit;

Urge him to th' point, he'll find you out a food  
That needs no teeth nor stomach; a strange furnity  
Will feed you up as fat as hens i' th' foreheads,  
And make ye fight like fishoks; to him.

*Judas.* Captain—

*Jun.* Do you long to have your throats cut?

*Pet.* See what mettle

It makes in him: Two meals more of this  
And there lies Caratach. [melancholy,

*Judas.* We do beseech you—

2 *Sold.* Humbly beseech your valour—

*Jun.* Am I only

Become your sport, Petillius?

*Judas.* But to render

In way of general good, in preservation—

*Jun.* Out of my thoughts, ye slaves!

4 *Sold.* Or rather pity—

3 *Sold.* Your warlike remedy against the maw-  
worms.

*Judas.* Or notable receipt to live by nothing.

*Pet.* Out with your table-books!

*Jun.* Is this true friendship?

And must my killing griefs make others' May-  
games? [Draws.

Stand from my sword's point, slaves! your poor  
starved spirits

Can make me no oblations; else, oh, Love,  
Thou proudly-blind destruction, I would send thee  
Whole hecatombs of hearts, to bleed my sorrows. [Exit *JUNUS.*

*Judas.* Alas, he lives by love, sir.

*Pet.* So he does, sir;

And cannot you do so too? All my company  
Are now in love; ne'er think of meat, nor talk  
Of what provant is: *Ay-mes*, and hearty *hey-hoes*  
Are sallads fit for soldiers. Live by meat?

By larding up your bodies? 'tis lewd, and lazy,  
And shews ye merely mortal, dull, and drives ye  
To fight, like camels, with baskets at your noses.

Get ye in love! Ye can whore well enough,  
That all the world knows; fast ye into famine,  
Yet ye can crawl like crabs to wenches; hand-  
Fall but in love now, as ye see example, [somerly  
And follow it but with all your thoughts, *probatum*,  
There's so much charge saved, and your hunger's  
ended. [Drum afar off.

Away! I hear the general. Get ye in love all,  
Up to the ears in love, that I may hear  
No more of these rude murmurings; and discretely  
Carry your stomachs, or I prophesy  
A pickled rope will choke ye. Jog, and talk not!  
[Exit.

Enter *BENONIUS*, *DEMETRIUS*, *DACIUS*, *Drum* and *Colours*.

*Suet.* Demetrius, is the messenger dispatch'd  
To Penius, to command him to bring up  
The Volans regiment!

*Dem.* He's there by this time.

*Suet.* And are the horse well view'd we brought  
from Mona?

*Dec.* The troops are full and lusty.

*Suet.* Good Petillius,

Look to those eating rogues, that bawl for victuals,  
And stop their throats a day or two: Provision  
Waits but the wind to reach us.

*Pet.* Sir, already

I have been tampering with their stomachs, which  
I find

As deaf as adders to delays: Your clemency  
Hath made their murmurs, mutinies; nay, rebel-  
lions;

Now, an they want but mustard, they are in  
No oil but Candy, Lusitanian figs, [uproars!

And wine from Leabos, now can satisfy 'em;

The British waters are grown dull and muddy,

The fruit disgusting; Orontes must be sought for,

And apples from the Happy Isles; the truth is,

They are more curious now in having nothing,

Than if the sea and land turned up their treasures.

This lost the colonies, and gave Bonduca

(With shame we must record it) time and strength

To look into our fortanes; great discretion

To follow offer'd victory; and last, full pride

To brave us to our teeth, and scorn our ruins.

*Suet.* Nay, chide not, good Petillius! I confess

My will to conquer Mona, and long stay

To execute that will, let in these losses;

All shall be right again, and, as a pine,

Rent from Oëta by a sweeping tempest,  
Jointed again, and made a mast, defies  
Those angry winds that split him ; so will I,  
Pieced to my never-failing strength and fortune,  
Steer through these swelling dangers, plough their  
prides up,

And bear like thunder through their loudest  
They keep the field still? [tempesta.

*Dem.* Confident and full.

*Pet.* In such a number, one would swear they  
The hills are wooded with their partizans, [grew :  
And all the vallies overgrown with darts,  
As moors are with rank rushes ; no ground left us  
To charge upon, no room to strike. Say fortune  
And our endeavours bring us into 'em,  
They are so infinite, so ever-springing,  
We shall be kill'd with killing ; of desperate women,  
That neither fear or shame e'er found, the devil  
Has rank'd amongst 'em multitudes ; say the men  
fail,

They'll poison us with their petticoats ; say they fail,  
They have priests enough to pray us into nothing.

*Suet.* These are imaginations, dreams of nothings ;  
The man that doubts or fears—

*Dec.* I am free of both.

*Dem.* The self-same I.

*Pet.* And I as free as any ;  
As careless of my flesh, of that we call life,  
So I may lose it nobly, as indifferent  
As if it were my diet. Yet, noble general,  
It was a wisdom learn'd from you, I learn'd it,  
And worthy of a soldier's care, most worthy,  
To weigh with most deliberate circumstance  
The ends of accidents, above their offers ;  
How to go on, and yet to save a Roman,  
Whose one life is more worth in way of doing,  
Than millions of these painted wasps ; how,  
viewing,

To find advantage out ; how, found, to follow it  
With counsel and discretion, lest mere fortune  
Should claim the victory.

*Suet.* 'Tis true, Petillius,  
And worthily remember'd : The rule is certain,  
The uses no less excellent ; but where time  
Cuts off occasions, danger, time and all  
Tend to a present peril, 'tis required  
Our swords and manhoods be best counsellors,  
Our expeditions, precedents. To win is nothing,  
Where Reason, Time, and Counsel are our camp-  
masters :

But there to bear the field, then to be conquerors,  
Where pale Destruction takes us, takes us beaten,  
In wants and mutinies, ourselves but handfuls,  
And to ourselves our own fears, needs a new way,  
A sudden and a desperate execution :  
Here, how to save, is loss ; to be wise, dangerous ;  
Only a present well-united strength,  
And minds made up for all attempts, dispatch it :

Disputing and delay here cool the courage ;  
Necessity gives [no] time for doubts ; things infinite,  
According to the spirit they are preached to ;  
Rewards like them, and names for after-ages,  
Must steel the soldier, his own shame help to arm  
And having forced his spirit, ere he cools, [him :  
Fling him upon his enemies ; sudden and swift,  
Like tigers amongst foxes, we must fight for't :  
Fury must be our fortune ; shame we have lost,  
Spurs ever in our sides to prick us forward :  
There is no other wisdom nor discretion  
Due to this day of ruin, but destruction ;  
The soldier's order first, and then his anger.

*Dem.* No doubt they dare redeem all.

*Suet.* Then no doubt

The day must needs be ours. That the proud  
Is infinite in number better likes me, [woman  
Than if we dealt with squadrons ; half her army  
Shall choke themselves, their own swords dig their  
I'll tell ye all my fears ; one single valour, [graves.

The virtues of the valiant Caratach,  
More doubts me than all Britain. He's a soldier  
So forged out, and so temper'd for great fortunes,  
So much man thrust into him, so old in dangers,  
So fortunate in all attempts, that his mere name  
Fights in a thousand men, himself in millions,  
To make him Roman : But no more.—Petillius,  
How stands your charge ?

*Pet.* Ready for all employments,  
To be commanded too, sir.

*Suet.* 'Tis well govern'd ;  
To-morrow we'll draw out, and view the cohorts :  
I' th' mean time, all apply their offices.

Where's Junius ?

*Pet.* In's cabin, sick o' th' mumps, sir.

*Suet.* How ?

*Pet.* In love, indeed in love, most lamentably  
To the tune of Queen Dido. [loving,

*Dec.* Alas poor gentleman !

*Suet.* 'Twill make him fight the nobler. With  
I'll be a spokesman for him. [what lady ?

*Pet.* You'll scant speed, sir.

*Suet.* Who is't ?

*Pet.* The devil's dam, Bonduca's daughter,  
Her youngest, crack'd i' th' ring.

*Suet.* I am sorry for him :  
But sure his own discretion will reclaim him ;  
He must deserve our anger else. Good captains,  
Apply yourselves in all the pleasing forms  
Ye can, unto the soldiers ; fire their spirits,  
And set 'em fit to run this action ;  
Mine own provisions shall be shared amongst 'em,  
Till more come in ; tell 'em, if now they conquer,  
The fat of all the kingdom lies before 'em.  
Their shames forgot, their honours infinite,  
And want for ever banish'd. Two days hence,  
Our fortunes, and our swords, and gods be for us !

[Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The same. The Tent of PENIUS.*

*Enter PENIUS, REGULUS, MACRA, and DRUSUS.*

*Pen.* I must come ?

*Macer.* So the general commands, sir.

*Pen.* I must bring up my regiment ?

*Macer.* Believe, sir,  
I bring no lie.

*Pen.* But did he say, I must come ?

*Mar.* So delivered.

*Pen.* How long is't, Regulus, since I com-  
in Britain here ? [manded

*Reg.* About five years, great Penius.

*Pen.* The general some five months. Are all my actions

So poor and lost, my services so barren,  
That I am remember'd in no nobler language  
But *must* come up?

*Macer.* I do beseech you, sir,  
Weigh but the time's estate.

*Pen.* Yes, good lieutenant,  
I do, and his that sways it. *Must* come up?  
Am I turn'd bare centurion? *Must* and *shall*,  
Fit embassies to court my honour?

*Macer.* Sir—

*Pen.* Set me to lead a handful of my men  
Against an hundred thousand barbarous slaves,  
That have march'd name by name with Rome's best  
doers?

Serve 'em up some other meat; I'll bring no food  
To stop the jaws of all those hungry wolves;  
My regiment's mine own. I *must*, my language?

*Enter CURIUS.*

*Cur.* Penius, where lies the host?

*Pen.* Where Fate may find 'em.

*Cur.* Are they ingirt?

*Pen.* The battle's lost.

*Cur.* So soon?

*Pen.* No; but 'tis lost, because it must be won;  
The Britons must be victors. Whoe'er saw  
A troop of bloody vultures hovering  
About a few corrupted carcasses,  
Let him behold the silly Roman host,  
Girded with millions of fierce Britain swains,  
With deaths as many as they have had hopes;  
And then go thither, he that loves his shame!  
I scorn my life, yet dare not lose my name.

*Cur.* Do not you hold it a most famous end,  
When both our names and lives are sacrificed  
For Rome's increase?

*Pen.* Yes, Curius; but mark this too:  
What glory is there, or what lasting fame  
Can be to Rome or us, what full example,  
When one is smother'd with a multitude,  
And crowded in amongst a nameless press?  
Honour got out of flint, and on their heads  
Whose virtues, like the sun, exhaled all valours,  
Must not be lost in mists and fogs of people,  
Noteless and not of name, but rude and naked:  
Nor can Rome task us with impossibilities,  
Or bid us fight against a flood; we serve her,  
That she may proudly say she has good soldiers,  
Not slaves, to choke all hazards. Who but fools,  
That make no difference betwixt certain dying,  
And dying well, would fling their fames and for-  
tunes

Into this Britain gulf, this quicksand ruin,  
That, sinking, swallows us? what noble hand  
Can find a subject fit for blood there? or what sword  
Room for his execution? what air to cool us,  
But poison'd with their blasting breaths and curses,  
Where we lie buried quick above the ground,  
And are with labouring sweat, and breathless pain,  
Kill'd like to slaves, and cannot kill again?

*Drus.* Penius, mark ancient wars, and know  
that then  
A captain weigh'd an hundred thousand men.

*Pen.* Drusius, mark ancient wisdom, and you'll  
find then,  
He gave the overthrow that saved his men.  
I must not go.

*Reg.* The soldiers are desirous,  
Their eagles all drawn out, sir.

*Pen.* Who drew up, Regulus?

Ha? speak! did you? whose bold will durst at-  
tempt this?

Drawn out? why, who commands, sir? on whose  
warrant

Durst they advance?

*Reg.* I keep mine own obedience.

*Drus.* 'Tis like the general cause, their love of  
Relieving of their wants— [honour,

*Pen.* Without my knowledge?

Am I no more? my place but at their pleasures?  
Come, who did this?

*Drus.* By Heaven, sir, I am ignorant.

[*Drum softly within, then enter Soldiers, with drum  
and colours.*

*Pen.* What! am I grown a shadow?—Hark!  
they march.

I'll know, and will be myself.—Stand! Disobe-  
dience?

He that advances one foot higher, dies for't.  
Run through the regiment, upon your duties,  
And charge 'em on command, beat back again;  
By Heaven, I'll tithe 'em all else!

*Reg.* We'll do our best.

[*Exit DRUSIUS and REGULUS.*

*Pen.* Back! cease your bawling drums there,  
I'll beat the tubs about your brains else. Back!  
Do I speak with less fear than thunder to ye?  
Must I stand to beseech ye? Home, home!—Ha!  
Do ye stare upon me? Are those minds I moulded,  
Those honest valiant tempers I was proud  
To be a fellow to, those great discretions  
Made your names fear'd and honour'd, turn'd to  
wildfires?

Oh, gods, to disobedience? Command, farewell!  
And be ye witness with me, all things sacred,  
I have no share in these men's shames! March,  
soldiers,

And seek your own sad ruins; your old Penius  
Dares not behold your murders.

1 *Sold.* Captain!

2 *Sold.* Captain!

3 *Sold.* Dear, honour'd captain!

*Pen.* Too, too dear-loved soldiers,  
Which made ye weary of me, and Heaven yet knows,  
Though in your mutinies, I dare not hate you;  
Take your own wills! 'tis fit your long experience  
Should now know how to rule yourselves; I wrong  
ye,

In wishing ye to save your lives and credits,  
To keep your necks whole from the axe hangs o'er  
ye:

Alas, I much dishonour'd ye; go, seek the Britons,  
And say ye come to girt their sacrifices;  
But do not say I sent ye. What ye have been,  
How excellent in all parts, good and govern'd,  
Is only left of my command, for story;  
What now ye are, for pity. Fare ye well! [*Going.*

[*Enter DRUSIUS and REGULUS.*

*Drus.* Oh, turn again, great Penius! see the  
In all points apt for duty. [soldier

*Reg.* See his sorrow

For his disobedience, which he says was haste,  
And haste, he thought, to please you with. See,  
captain,

The toughness of his courage turn'd to water;  
See how his manly heart melts.

*Pen.* Go; beat homeward;

There learn to eat your little with obedience ;  
And henceforth strive to do as I direct ye.

[*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

*Macer.* My answer, sir.

*Pen.* Tell the great general,  
My companies are no faggots to fill breaches :  
Myself no man that *must*, or *shall*, can carry :  
Bid him be wise, and where he is, he's safe then ;  
And when he finds out possibilities,  
He may command me. Commend me to the cap-  
*Macer.* All this I shall deliver. [*tains.*]

*Pen.* Farewell, *Macer* ! [*Exit.*]

*Cur.* Pray gods this breed no mischief !

*Reg.* It must needs,

If stout *Suetonius* win ; for then his anger,  
Besides the soldiers' loss of due and honour,  
Will break together on him.

*Drus.* He's a brave fellow ;  
And but a little hide his haughtiness,  
(Which is but sometimes neither, on some causes)  
He shews the worthiest Roman this day living.  
You may, good *Curius*, to the general  
Make all things seem the best.

*Cur.* I shall endeavour.

Pray for our fortunes, gentlemen ; if we fall,  
This one farewell serves for a funeral.  
The gods make sharp our swords, and steel our  
hearts !

*Reg.* We dare, alas, but cannot fight our parts.  
[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—*The Tent of JUNIUS.*

*Enter JUNIUS, PETILLIUS, and a Herald.*

*Pet.* Let him go on. Stay ; now he talks.

*Jun.* Why,  
Why should I love mine enemy ? what is beauty ?  
Of what strange violence, that, like the plague,  
It works upon our spirits ? Blind they feign him ;  
I am sure, I find it so—

*Pet.* A dog shall lead you,

*Jun.* His fond affections blinder—

*Pet.* Hold you there still !

*Jun.* It takes away my sleep—

*Pet.* Alas, poor chicken !

*Jun.* Mycompany, content, almost my fashion—

*Pet.* Yes, and your weight too, if you follow it.

*Jun.* 'Tis sure the plague, for no man dare come  
near me

Without an antidote ; 'tis far worse, hell.

*Pet.* Thou art damn'd without redemption then.

*Jun.* The way to't

Strew'd with fair western smiles, and April blushes,  
Led by the brightest constellations ; eyes,  
And sweet proportions, envying Heaven ; but from  
thence

No way to guide, no path, no wisdom brings us.

*Pet.* Yes, a smart water, *Junius*.

*Jun.* Do I fool ?

Know all this, and fool still ? Do I know further,  
That when we have enjoy'd our ends we lose 'em,  
And all our appetites are but as dreams  
We laugh at in our ages ?—

*Pet.* Sweet philosopher !

*Jun.* Do I know on still, and yet know nothing ?

Mercy, gods !

Why am I thus ridiculous ?

*Pet.* Motley on thee !

Thou art an arrant ass.

*Jun.* Can red and white,  
An eye, a nose, a cheek—

*Pet.* But one cheek, *Junius* ?

An half faced mistress ?

*Jun.* With a little trim,

That wanton fools call fashion, thus abuse me ?  
Take me beyond my reason ? Why should not I  
Dote on my horse well trapt, my sword well  
hatch'd ?

They are as handsome things, to me more useful,  
And possible to rule too. Did I but love,

Yet 'twere excusable, my youth would bear it :  
But to love there, and that no time can give me,  
Mine honour dare not ask (she has been ravish'd,)  
My nature must not know (she hates our nation,)  
Thus to dispose my spirit !

*Pet.* Stay a little ; he will declaim again.

*Jun.* I will not love ! I am a man, have reason,  
And I will use it ; I'll no more tormenting,  
Nor whining for a wench ; there are a thousand—

*Pet.* Hold thee there, boy !

*Jun.* A thousand will entreat me.

*Pet.* Ten thousand, *Junius*.

*Jun.* I am young and lusty,  
And to my fashion valiant ; can please nightly.

*Pet.* I'll swear thy back's *probatum*, for I have  
Leap at sixteen like a strong stallion. [known thee

*Jun.* I will be man again.

*Pet.* Now mark the working !  
The devil and the spirit tug for't : Twenty pound  
Upon the devil's head !

*Jun.* I must be wretched !

*Pet.* I knew I had won.

*Jun.* Nor have I so much power  
To shun my fortune.

*Pet.* I will hunt thy fortune  
With all the shapes imagination breeds,  
But I will fright thy devil. Stay, he sings now.

[*Song by JUNIUS, and PETILLIUS after him in mockage.*]

*Jun.* Must I be thus abused ?

*Pet.* Yes, marry must you.

Let's follow him close : Oh, there he is ; now  
read it.

*Herald.* [*Reads.*] It is the general's command, that all  
sick persons, old and unable, retire within the trenches ;  
he that fears, has liberty to leave the field : Fools, boys,  
and cowards, must not come near the regiments, for  
fear of their infections ; especially those cowards they call  
lovers.

*Jun.* Ha ?

*Pet.* Read on.

*Herald.* [*Reads.*] If any common soldier love an enemy,  
he's whipp'd and made a slave : If any captain, cast, with  
loss of honours, flung out o' th' army, and made unable  
ever after to bear the name of a soldier.

*Jun.* The pox consume ye all, rogues ! [*Exit.*]

*Pet.* Let this work ;

He has something now to chew upon. He's gone ;  
Come, shake no more.

*Herald.* Well, sir, you may command me,  
But not to do the like again for Europe ;  
I would have given my life for a bent two-pence.  
If I e'er read to lovers whilst I live again,  
Or come within their confines—

*Pet.* There's your payment,  
And keep this private.

*Herald.* I am school'd for talking. [*Exit.*]

*Enter DEMETRIUS.*

*Pet.* How now, *Demetrius* ? are we drawn ?

*Dem.* 'Tis doing :

Your company stands fair. But pray you, where's Junius?

Half his command are wanting, with some forty That Decius leads.

*Pet.* Hunting for victuals.

Upon my life, free-booting rogues! their stomachs Are like a widow's lust, ne'er satisfied.

*Dem.* I wonder how they dare stir, knowing the Master of all the country. [enemy]

*Pet.* Resolute hunger

Know neither fears nor faiths; they tread on ladders,

Ropes, gallows, and overdo all dangers.

*Dem.* They may be hang'd though.

*Pet.* There's their joyful supper; And no doubt they are at it.

*Dem.* But, for Heaven's sake,

How does young Junius?

*Pet.* Drawing on, poor gentleman.

*Dem.* What, to his end?

*Pet.* To the end of all flesh, woman.

*Dem.* This love has made him a stout soldier.

*Pet.* Oh, a great one,

Fit to command young goalings. But what news?

*Dem.* I think the messenger's come back from By this time; let's go know. [Penius]

*Pet.* What will you say now

If he deny to come, and take exceptions At some half syllable, or sound deliver'd

With an ill accent, or some style left out?

*Dem.* I cannot think he dare.

*Pet.* He dare speak treason,

Dare say what no man dares believe, dares do—

But that's all one; I'll lay you my black armour To twenty crowns, he comes not.

*Dem.* Done.

*Pet.* You'll pay?

*Dem.* I will.

*Pet.* Then keep thine old use, Penius!

Be stubborn and vain-glorious, and I thank thee.

Come, let's go pray for six hours; most of us

I fear will trouble Heaven no more: Two good blows

Struck home at two commanders of the Britons,

And my part's done.

*Dem.* I do not think of dying.

*Pet.* 'Tis possible we may live; but, Demetrius, With what strange legs, and arms, and eyes, and noses,

Let carpenters and copper-smiths consider.

If I can keep my heart whole, and my windpipe,

That I may drink yet like a soldier—

*Dem.* Come, let's have better thoughts; mine's on your armour.

*Pet.* Mine's in your purse, sir; let's go try the wager! [Exit.]

SCENE III.—*The British Camp. In the background, the Tent of BONDUCA, with a raised Platform.*

*Enter Soldiers, bringing in JUDAS and his four companions, (halters about their necks) BONDUCA, her Daughters, and NENNIUS following.*

*Bond.* Come, hang 'em presently.

*Nen.* What made your rogueships

Harrying for victuals here? are we your friends?

Or do you come for spies? Tell me directly,

Would you not willingly be hang'd now? Don't ye long for't?

*Judas.* What say ye? shall we hang in this vein? Hang we must,

And 'tis as good to dispatch it merrily, As pull an arse like dogs to't.

*1 Sold.* Any way,

So it be handsome.

*3 Sold.* I had as lieve 'twere toothsome too:

But all agree, and I'll not [stick] out, boys.

*4 Sold.* Let us hang pleasantly.

*Judas.* Then pleasantly be it:

Captain, the truth is,

We had as lieve hang with meat in our mouths,

As ask your pardon empty.

*Bond.* These are brave hungers.—

What say you to a leg of beef now, sirrah?

*Judas.* Bring me acquainted with it, and I'll tell ye.

*Bond.* Torment 'em, wench, '(I must back) then hang 'em. [Exit.]

*Judas.* We humbly thank your grace!

*1 Daugh.* The rogues laugh at us.

*2 Daugh.* Sirrah, what think you of a wench

*Judas.* A wench, lady? [now?]

I do beseech your ladyship, retire;

I'll tell you presently: You see the time's short;

One crash, even to the settling of my conscience.

*Nen.* Why, is't no more but up, boys?

*Judas.* Yes, ride too, captain;

Will you but see my seat?

*1 Daugh.* Ye shall be set, sir,

Upon a jade shall shake ye.

*Judas.* Sheets, good madam,

Will you let it ten times better.

*1 Daugh.* Whips, good soldier,

Which you shall taste before you hang, to mortify

'Tis pity you should die thus desperate. [you;

*2 Daugh.* These are the merry Romans, the brave madcaps:

'Tis ten to one we'll cool your resolutions.

Bring out the whips.

*Judas.* 'Would your good ladyships

Would exercise 'em too!

*4 Sold.* Surely, ladies,

We'll shew you a strange patience.

*Nen.* Hang 'em, rascals!

They'll talk thus on the wheel.

*Enter CARATACH.*

*Car.* Now, what's the matter?

What are these fellows? what's the crime com- That they wear necklaces? [mitted,

*Nen.* They are Roman rogues,

Taken a-foraging.

*Car.* Is that all, Nennius?

*Judas.* 'Would I were fairly hang'd! This is the

The kill-cow Caratach. [devil,

*Car.* And you would hang 'em?

*Nen.* Are they not enemies?

*1 Sold.* My breech makes buttons.

*1 Daugh.* Are they not our tormentors?

*Car.* Tormentors? flea-traps!—

Pluck off your halters, fellows.

*Nen.* Take heed, Caratach;

Taint not your wisdom.

*Car.* Wisdom, Nennius?

Why, who shall fight against us, make our honours,

And give a glorious day into our hands,

If we dispatch our foes thus? What's their

offence?

Stealing a loaf or two to keep out hunger?

A piece of greasy bacon, or a pudding ?  
Do these deserve the gallows ? They are hungry,  
Poor hungry knaves, no meat at home left, starved :  
Art thou not hungry ?

*Judas.* Monstrous hungry.

*Car.* He looks like Hunger's self. Get 'em  
some victuals,  
And wine to cheer their hearts ; quick ! Hang up  
poor pilchers ?

*2 Sold.* This is the bravest captain——

*Ven.* Caratach,

I'll leave you to your will.

*Car.* I'll answer all, sir.

*2 Daugh.* Let's up and view his entertainment  
of 'em !

I am glad they are shifted any way ; their tongues  
Would still have murder'd us. [else

*1 Daugh.* Let's up and see it ! [Exeunt.

*Enter Hæroo.*

*Car.* Sit down, poor knaves ! Why, where's  
this wine and victuals ?

Who waits there ?

*Serv.* [Within.] Sir, 'tis coming.

*Hengo.* Who are these, uncle ?

*Car.* They are Romans, boy.

*Hengo.* Are these they

That vex mine aunt so ? can these fight ? they  
look

Like empty scabbards all, no mettle in 'em ;  
Like men of clouts, set to keep crows from orchards :  
Why, I dare fight with these.

*Enter Servants with victuals and wine, and set out  
a table.*

*Car.* That's my good chicken !—And how do ye ?  
How do ye feel your stomachs ?

*Judas.* Wond'rous apt, sir ;  
As shall appear when time calls.

*Car.* That's well ; down with't.

A little grace will serve your turns. Eat softly !

You'll choke, ye knaves, else.—Give 'em wine !

*Judas.* Not yet, sir ;

We are even a little busy.

*Hengo.* Can that fellow

Do anything but eat ?—Thou fellow !

*Judas.* Away, boy ;

Away ; this is no boy's play.

*Hengo.* By Heaven, uncle,

If his valour lie in's teeth, he's the most valiant.

*Car.* I am glad to hear you talk, sir.

*Hengo.* Good uncle, tell me,

What's the price of a couple of cramm'd Romans ?

*Car.* Some twenty Britons, boy ; these are good  
soldiers.

*Hengo.* Do not the cowards eat hard too ?

*Car.* No more, boy.—

Come, I'll sit with you too.—Sit down by me, boy.

*Judas.* Pray bring your dish then.

*Car.* Hearty knaves !—More meat there.

*1 Sold.* That's a good hearing.

*Car.* Stay now, and pledge me.

*Judas.* This little piece, sir.

*Car.* By Heaven, square eaters !—

More meat, I say !—Upon my conscience,  
The poor rogues have not eat this month ! how  
terribly

They charge upon their victuals !—Dare ye fight

*Judas.* Believe it, sir, like devils. [thus ?

*Car.* Well said, Famine !

Here's to thy general. [Drinks.

*Judas.* Most excellent captain,  
I will now pledge thee.

*Car.* And to-morrow night, say to him,  
His head is mine.

*Judas.* I can assure you, captain,  
He will not give it for this washing.

*Car.* Well said.

*Enter the Daughters on the Platform.*

*1 Daugh.* Here's a strange entertainment : How  
the thieves drink !

*2 Daugh.* Danger is dry ; they look'd for colder  
liquor.

*Car.* Fill 'em more wine ; give 'em full bowls.—  
Which of you all now,

In recompence of this good, dare but give me  
A sound knock in the battle ?

*Judas.* Delicate captain,

To do thee a sufficient recompence,

I'll knock thy brains out.

*Car.* Do it.

*Hengo.* Thou darest as well be damn'd ! Thou  
knock his brains out ?

Thou skin of man ?—Uncle, I will not hear this.

*Judas.* Tie up your whelp.

*Hengo.* Thou kill my uncle ? Would I

Had but a sword for thy sake, thou dried dog !

*Car.* What a mettle

This little vermin carries !

*Hengo.* Kill mine uncle ?

*Car.* He shall not, child.

*Hengo.* He cannot ; he's a rogue,  
An only eating rogue ! kill my sweet uncle ?  
Oh, that I were a man !

*Judas.* By this wine, which I

Will drink to Captain Junius, who loves  
The queen's most excellent majesty's little daughter  
Most sweetly, and most fearfully, I will do it.

*Hengo.* Uncle, I'll kill him with a great pin.

*Car.* No more, boy !

I'll pledge thy captain. To ye all, good fellows !

[Drinks.

*2 Daugh.* In love with me ? that love shall cost  
your lives all.—

Come, sister, and advise me ; I have here

A way to make an easy conquest of 'em,

If fortune favour me. [Exeunt Daughters.

*Car.* Let's see you sweat

To-morrow blood and spirit, boys, this wine

Turn'd to stern valour.

*1 Sold.* Hark you, Judas ;

If he should hang us after all this ?

*Judas.* Let him :

I'll hang like a gentleman, and a Roman.

*Car.* Take away there ;

They have enough. [The table removed.

*Judas.* Captain we thank you heartily

For your good cheer : and if we meet to-morrow,

One of us pays for't.

*Car.* Get 'em guides ; their wine

Has over-master'd 'em.

*Enter second Daughter with a letter, and a Servant.*

*2 Daugh.* That hungry fellow  
With the red beard there, give it him, and this,  
To see it well deliver'd.

*Car.* Farewell, knaves !

Speak nobly of us ; keep your words to-morrow,  
And do something worthy your meat.—

*Enter a Guide.*

Go, guide 'em,  
And see 'em fairly onward.

*Judas.* Meaning me, sir?

*Serv.* The same.

The youngest daughter to the queen entreats you  
To give this privately to Captain Junius;  
This for your pains!

*Judas.* I rest her humble servant;

Commend me to thy lady.—Keep your files, boys.

*Serv.* I must instruct you further.

*Judas.* Keep your files there!

Order, sweet friends; faces about now.

*Guide.* Here, sir;

Here lies your way.

*Judas.* Bless the founders, I say!

Fairly, good soldiers, fairly march now; close,  
boys! *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE IV.—*The Roman Camp.*

*Enter SUTONIUS, PETILLIUS, DEMETRIUS, DECIVS,  
and MACER.*

*Suet.* Bid me be wise, and keep me where I am,  
And so be safe? not come, because commanded?  
Was it not thus?

*Macer.* It was, sir.

*Pet.* What now think you?

*Suet.* Must come so heinous to him, so distaste-

*Pet.* Give me my money. [ful?]

*Dem.* I confess 'tis due, sir,

And presently I'll pay it.

*Suet.* His obedience

So blind at his years and experience,

It cannot find where to be tender'd?

*Macer.* Sir,

The regiment was willing, and advanced too,  
The captains at all points steel'd up; their pre-  
parations

Full of resolve and confidence; youth and fire,

Like the fair breaking of a glorious day,

Gilded their phalanx; when the angry Penius

Stept like a stormy cloud 'twixt them and hopes.

*Suet.* And stopt their resolutions?

*Macer.* True; his reason

To them was odds, and odds so infinite,

Discretion durst not look upon.

*Suet.* Well, Penius,

I cannot think thee coward yet; and treacherous

I dare not think: thou hast lopt a limb off from

And let it be thy glory, thou wast stubborn, [me;

Thy wisdom, that thou left'st thy general naked!

Yet, ere the sun set, I shall make thee see

All valour dwells not in thee, all command

In one experience. Thou wilt too late repent this,

And wish "I must come up" had been thy blessing.

*Pet.* Let's force him.

*Suet.* No, by no means; he's a torrent

We cannot easily stem.

*Pet.* I think, a traitor.

*Suet.* No ill words! let his own shame first  
revile him.—

That wine I have, see it, Demetrius,

Distributed amongst the soldiers,

To make 'em high and lusty; when that's done,

Petillius, give the word through, that the eagles

May presently advance; no man discover

Upon his life, the enemies' full strength,

But make it of no value. Decius,

Are your starved people yet come home?

*Dec.* I hope so.

*Suet.* Keep 'em in more obedience: This is no  
time

To chide, I could be angry else, and say more to  
you;

But come, let's order all. Whose sword is sharpest,  
And valour equal to his sword this day,  
Shall be my saint.

*Pet.* We shall be holy all then.

*[Exeunt all but DECIVS.]*

*Enter JUDAS and his Company.*

*Judas.* Captain, captain, I have brought 'em off  
The drunkeat slaves! [again;

*Dec.* Pox confound your rogueships!

I'll call the general, and have ye hang'd all.

*Judas.* Pray who will you command then?

*Dec.* For you, sirrah,

That are the ringleader to these devices,  
Whose maw is never cramm'd, I'll have an engine—

*Judas.* A wench, sweet captain.

*Dec.* Sweet Judas, even the forks,

Where you shall have two lictors with two whips  
Hammer your hide.

*Judas.* Captain, good words, fair words,  
Sweet words, good captain; if you like not us,  
Farewell! we have employment.

*Dec.* Where hast thou been?

*Judas.* There where you dare not be, with all

*Dec.* Where's that! [your valour.]

*Judas.* With the best good fellow living.

*1 Sold.* The king of all good fellows.

*Dec.* Who's that?

*Judas.* Caratach.

Shake now, and say, we have done something  
worthy!

Mark me, with Caratach; by this light, Caratach!  
Do you as much now, an you dare.—Sweet Car-  
tatch!

You talk of a good fellow, of true drinking;  
Well, go thy ways, old Caratach!—Besides the  
drink, captain,

The bravest running banquet of black puddings,  
Pieces of glorious beef—

*Dec.* How 'scaped ye hanging?

*Judas.* Hanging's a dog's death, we are gentle-  
And I say still, old Caratach! [men;

*Dec.* Belike then,

You are turn'd rebels all.

*Judas.* We are Roman boys all,  
And boys of mettle. I must do that, captain,  
This day, this very day—

*Dec.* Away, ye rascal!

*Judas.* Fair words, I say again!

*Dec.* What must you do, sir?

*Judas.* I must do that my heart-strings yearn to  
But my word's past. [do;

*Dec.* What is it?

*Judas.* Why, kill Caratach,  
That's all he ask'd us for our entertainment.

*Dec.* More than you'll pay.

*Judas.* 'Would I had sold myself  
Unto the skin I had not promised it!  
For such another Caratach—

*Dec.* Come, fool,

Have you done your country service?

*Judas.* I have brought that

To captain Junius—

*Dec.* How?

*Judas.* I think will do all;

I cannot tell; I think so.

*Dec.* How ! to Junius ?  
I'll more enquire of this.—You'll fight now ?  
*Judas.* Promise,  
Take heed of promise, captain !  
*Dec.* Away, and rank then.  
*Judas.* But, hark you, captain ; there is wine  
I would fain know what share I have. [distributing ;  
*Dec.* Be gone ;  
You have too much.  
*Judas.* Captain, no wine, no fighting :  
There's one called Caratach that has wine.  
*Dec.* Well, sir,  
If you'll be ruled now, and do well—  
*Judas.* Do excellent.  
*Dec.* You shall have wine, or anything. Go file ;

I'll see you have your share. Drag out your dormice,  
And stow 'em somewhere, where they may sleep  
They'll hear a hunts-up shortly. [handsomely ;  
*Judas.* Now I love thee ;  
But no more forks nor whips !  
*Dec.* Deserve 'em not then.  
Up with your men ; I'll meet you presently ;  
And get 'em sober quickly. [Exit.  
*Judas.* Arm, arm, bullies !  
All's right again and straight ; and which is more,  
More wine, more wine. Awake, ye men of Memphis,  
Be sober and discreet ; we have much to do, boys. [Exeunt.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A Temple of the Druids.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* Prepare there for the sacrifice ! the queen comes.

*Music.* Enter in solemnity the Druids singing ; the second Daughter strewn flowers ; then BONDUCA, CARATACH, NENNIUS, and others.

*Bond.* Ye powerful gods of Britain, hear our prayers ;  
Hear us, ye great revengers : and this day  
Take pity from our swords, doubt from our valours ;  
Double the sad remembrance of our wrongs  
In every breast ; the vengeance due to those  
Make infinite and endless ! On our pikes  
This day pale Terror sit, horrors and ruins  
Upon our executions ; claps of thunder  
Hang on our armed carts ; and 'fore our troops  
Despair and Death ; Shame beyond these attend 'em !  
Rise from the dust, ye relics of the dead,  
Whose noble deeds our holy Druids sing ;  
Oh, rise, ye valiant bones ! let not base earth  
Oppress your honours, whilst the pride of Rome  
Treads on your stocks, and wipes out all your stories !

*Nen.* Thou great Tiranes, whom our sacred priests,  
Armed with dreadful thunder, place on high  
Above the rest of the immortal gods,  
Send thy consuming fires and deadly bolts,  
And shoot 'em home ; stick in each Roman heart  
A fear fit for confusion ; blast their spirits,  
Dwell in 'em to destruction ; through their phalanx  
Strike, as thou strikest a proud tree ; shake their bodies,

Make their strengths totter, and their topless for-  
Uroot, and reel to ruin ! [tunes

*1 Daugh.* Oh, thou god,  
Thou feared god, if ever to thy justice  
Insulting wrongs, and ravishments of women,  
(Women derived from thee) their shames, the suf-  
Of those that daily fill'd thy sacrifice [ferings  
With virgin incense, have access, now hear me !  
Now smatch thy thunder up, now on these Romans,  
Despisers of thy power, of us defacers,  
Revenge thyself ; take to thy killing anger,  
To make thy great work full, thy justice spoken,  
An utter rooting from this blessed isle  
Of what Rome is or has been !

*Bond.* Give me more incense !  
The gods are deaf and drowsy, no happy flame  
Rises to raise our thoughts. Pour on.

*2 Daugh.* See, Heaven,  
And all you powers that guide us, see and shame,  
We kneel so long for pity. O'er your altars,  
Since 'tis no light oblation that you look for,  
No incense-offering, will I hang mine eyes ;  
And as I wear these stones with hourly weeping,  
So will I melt your powers into compassion.  
This tear for Prosutagus my brave father ;  
(Ye gods, now think on Rome !) this for my mother,  
And all her miseries ; yet see, and save us !  
But now ye must be open-eyed. See, Heaven,  
Oh, see thy showers stolen from thee ; our disho-  
Oh, sister, our dishonours ! Can ye be gods, [nours,  
And these sins smother'd ? [A smoke from the altar.

*Bond.* The fire takes.  
*Car.* It does so,  
But no flame rises. Cease your fretful prayers,  
Your whinings, and your tame petitions ;  
The gods love courage arm'd with confidence,  
And prayers fit to pull them down : Weak tears  
And troubled hearts, the dull twins of cold spirits,  
They sit and smile at. Hear how I salute 'em :— [Kneels.

Divine Andate, thou who hold'st the reins  
Of furious battles, and disorder'd war,  
And proudly roll'st thy swarty chariot wheels  
Over the heaps of wounds and carcasses,  
Sailing through seas of blood ; thou sure-steel'd  
sternness,

Give us this day good hearts, good enemies,  
Good blows o' both sides, wounds that fear or flight  
Can claim no share in ; steel us both with angers  
And warlike executions fit thy viewing ;  
Let Rome put on her best strength, and thy Bri-  
Thy little Britain, but as great in fortune, [tain,  
Meet her as strong as she, as proud, as daring !  
And then look on, thou red-eyed god ; who does  
best,

Reward with honour ; who despair makes fly,  
Unarm for ever, and brand with infamy !  
Grant this, divine Andate ! tis but justice ;  
And my first blow thus on thy holy altar  
I sacrifice unto thee. [A flame arises.

*Bond.* It flames out. [Music.  
*Car.* Now sing, ye Druids. [Song.  
*Bond.* 'Tis out again.

*Car.* He has given us leave to fight yet ; we ask  
The rest hangs in our resolutions : [no more ;  
Tempt him no more.

*Bond.* I would know further, cousin.

*Car.* His hidden meaning dwells in our endeavours,  
Our valours are our best gods. Cheer the soldier,  
And let him eat.

*Mess.* He's at it, sir.

*Car.* Away then ;  
When he has done, let's march.—Come, fear not,  
lady ;

This day the Roman gains no more ground here,  
But what his body lies in.

*Bond.* Now I'm confident.

[*Exeunt. Recorders playing.*]

SCENE II.—*The Roman Camp.*

*Enter JUNIUS, CURIUS, and DECUS.*

*Dec.* We dare not hazard it ; beside our lives,  
It forfeits all our understandings.

*Jun.* Gentlemen,  
Can ye forsake me in so just a service,  
A service for the commonwealth, for honour ?  
Read but the letter ; you may love too.

*Dec.* Read it.  
If there be any safety in the circumstance,  
Or likelihood 'tis love, we will not fail you :  
Read it, good Curius.

*Cur.* Willingly.

*Jun.* Now mark it.

*Cur.* [*Reading.*] "Health to thy heart, my honour'd  
And all thy love requit ! I am thine, [*Junius,*  
Thine everlastingly ; thy love has won me ;  
And let it breed no doubt, our new acquaintance  
Compels this ; 'tis the gods' decree to bless us.  
The times are dangerous to meet, yet fall not ;  
By all the love thou bear'st me I conjure thee,  
Without distrust of danger, to come to me !  
For I have purposed a delivery  
Both of myself and fortune this bless'd day  
Into thy hands, if thou think'st good. To shew thee  
How infinite my love is, even my mother  
Shall be thy prisoner, the day yours without hazard ;  
For I beheld your danger like a lover,  
A just affecter of thy faith : Thy goodness,  
I know, will use us nobly ; and our marriage,  
If not redeem, yet lessen Rome's ambition :  
I am weary of these miseries. Use my mother  
(If you intend to take her) with all honour ;  
And let this disobedience to my parent  
Be laid on love, not me. Bring with thee, Junius,  
Spirits resolv'd to fetch me off, the noblest,  
Forty will serve the turn, just at the joining  
Of both the battles ; we will be weakly guarded,  
And for a guide, within this hour, shall reach thee  
A faithful friend of mine. The gods, my Junius,  
Keep thee, and me to serve thee ! Young Bonvica"—

This letter carries much belief, and most objections  
Answer'd, we must have doubted.

*Dec.* Is that fellow  
Come to you for a guide yet ?

*Jun.* Yes.

*Dec.* And examined ?

*Jun.* Far more than that ; he has felt tortures,  
He vows he knows no more than this truth. [*yet*

*Dec.* Strange !

*Cur.* If she mean what she writes, as it may be  
probable,

'Twill be the happiest vantage we can lean to.

*Jun.* I'll pawn my soul she means truth.

*Dec.* Think an hour more ;  
Then, if your confidence grow stronger on you,  
We'll set in with you.

*Jun.* Nobly done ! I thank ye.

Ye know the time.

*Cur.* We will be either ready  
To give you present counsel, or join with you.

*Enter SUSTONIUS, PETILLIUS, DEMETRIUS, and MACER.*

*Jun.* No more, as ye are gentlemen. The general !

*Suet.* Draw out space ; the enemy waits for us.  
Are ye all ready ?

*Jun.* All our troops attend, sir.

*Suet.* I am glad to hear you say so, Junius :  
I hope you are disposess'd.

*Jun.* I hope so too, sir.

*Suet.* Continue so. And, gentlemen, to you  
now !

To bid you fight is needless ; ye are Romans,  
The name will fight itself : To tell ye who  
You go to fight against, his power, and nature,  
But loss of time ; ye know it, know it poor,  
And oft have made it so : To tell ye further,  
His body shews more dreadful than it has done,  
To him that fears less possible to deal with,  
Is but to stick more honour on your actions,  
Load ye with virtuous names, and to your memo-  
ries

Tie never-dying Time and Fortune constant.  
Go on in full assurance ! draw your swords  
As daring and as confident as justice ;  
The gods of Rome fight for ye ; loud Fame calls ye,  
Pitch'd on the topless Apennine, and blows  
To all the under-world, all nations,  
The seas and unfrequented deserts, where the  
snow dwells ;

Wakens the ruin'd monuments ; and there,  
Where nothing but eternal death and sleep is,  
Informs again the dead bones with your virtues.  
Go on, I say : Valiant and wise rule Heaven,  
And all the great aspects attend 'em ; Do but blow  
Upon this enemy, who, but that we want foes,  
Cannot deserve that name ; and like a mist,  
A lazy fog, before your burning valours  
You'll find him fly to nothing. This is all,  
We have swords, and are the sons of ancient Ro-  
mans,

Heirs to their endless valours ; fight and conquer !

*Dec. Dem.* 'Tis done.

*Pet.* That man that loves not this day,  
And hugs not in his arms the noble danger,  
May he die fameless and forgot !

*Suet.* Sufficient !

Up to your troops, and let your drums beat  
thunder ;  
March close and sudden, like a tempest : All  
executions [*Marc.*  
Done without sparkling of the body ; keep your  
phalanx

Sure lined, and pieced together, your pikes for-  
ward,

And so march like a moving fort. Ere this day  
run,

We shall have ground to add to Rome, well won.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The open Country between the Camps.**Enter CARATACH and NENNIUS.*

*Nen.* The Roman is advanced; from yond' hill's  
We may behold him, Caratach. [brow

*Car.* Let's thither;

[*Drums within at one place afar off.*

I see the dust fly. Now I see the body.  
Observe 'em, Nennius; by Heaven, a handsome  
And, of a few, strongly and wisely jointed! [body,  
Suetonius is a soldier.

*Nen.* As I take it,  
That's he that gallops by the regiments,  
Viewing their preparations.

*Car.* Very likely;

He shews no less than general. See how bravely  
The body moves, and in the head how proudly  
The captains stick like plumes; he comes apace on.  
Good Nennius, go, and bid my stout lieutenant  
Bring on the first square body to oppose 'em,  
And, as he charges, open to enclose 'em;  
The queen move next with hers, and wheel about,  
To gain their backs, in which I'll lead the van-  
guard.

We shall have bloody crowns this day, I see by't.  
Haste thee, good Nennius; I'll follow instantly.

[*Exit NENNIUS.*

How close they march, as if they grew together,  
[*March.*

No place but lined alike, sure from oppression!  
They will not change this figure; we must charge  
'em,

And charge 'em home at both ends, van and rear;  
[*Drums in another place afar off.*

They never totter else. I hear our music,  
And must attend it. Hold, good sword, but this  
day,

And bite hard where I hound thee! and hereafter  
I'll make a relic of thee, for young soldiers  
To come like pilgrims to, and kiss for conquests.  
[*Exit.*

SCENE IV.—*In front of the Roman Camp.**Enter JUNIUS, CURIUS, and DECIVS.*

*Jun.* Now is the time; the fellow stays.

*Dec.* What think ye?

*Cur.* I think 'tis true.

*Jun.* Alas, if 'twere a question,  
If any doubt or hazard fell into't,  
Do ye think mine own discretion so self-blind,  
My care of ye so naked, to run headlong?

*Dec.* Let's take Petillius with us!

*Jun.* By no means;

He's never wise but to himself, nor courteous,  
But where the end's his own: We are strong  
If not too many. Behind yonder hill, [enough,  
The fellow tells me, she attends, weak guarded,  
Her mother and her sister.

*Cur.* I would venture.

*Jun.* We shall not strike five blows for't. Weigh  
The general good may come. [the good,

*Dec.* Away! I'll with ye;

But with what doubt—

*Jun.* Fear not! my soul for all!

[*Excunt. Alarms, drums and trumpets in several  
places afar off, as at a main battle.*

SCENE V.—*Near the Field of Battle. In the Back-ground the Tent of PENIUS, with a Plat-form.**Enter DRUSUS and PENIUS above.*

*Drus.* Here you may see them all, sir; from  
The country shews off level. [this hill

*Pen.* Gods defend me,  
What multitudes they are, what infinites!  
The Roman power shews like a little star  
Hedged with a double halo.—Now the knell rings:  
[*Loud shouts.*

Hark, how they shout to the battle! how the air  
Totters and reels, and rends a-pieces, Drusius,  
With the huge-vollied clamours!

*Drus.* Now they charge  
(Oh, gods!) of all sides, fearfully.

*Pen.* Little Rome,  
Stand but this growing Hydra one short hour,  
And thou hast out-done Hercules!

*Drus.* The dust hides 'em;  
We cannot see what follows.

*Pen.* They are gone,  
Gone, swallow'd, Drusius; this eternal sun  
Shall never see 'em march more.

*Drus.* Oh, turn this way,  
And see a model of the field! some forty,  
Against four hundred!

*Pen.* Well fought, bravely followed!  
Oh, nobly charged again, charged home too!  
Drusius,

They seem to carry it. Now they charge all;  
[*Loud shouts.*

Close, close, I say! they follow it. Ye gods,  
Can there be more in men? more daring spirits?  
Still they make good their fortunes. Now they  
are gone too,

For ever gone! see, Drusius, at their backs  
A fearful ambush rises. Farewell, valours,  
Excellent valours! oh, Rome, where's thy wisdom?  
*Drus.* They are gone indeed, sir.

*Pen.* Look out toward the army;  
I am heavy with these slaughters.

*Drus.* 'Tis the same still,  
Cover'd with dust and fury.

*Enter the two Daughters, with JUNIUS, CURIUS, DECIVS,  
Soldiers, and Servants.*

*2 Daugh.* Bring 'em in;  
Tie 'em, and then unarm 'em.

*1 Daugh.* Valiant Romans,  
Ye are welcome to your loves!

*2 Daugh.* Your death, fools!

*Dec.* We deserve 'em;  
And, women, do your worst.

*1 Daugh.* Ye need not beg it.

*2 Daugh.* Which is kind Junius?

*Serv.* This.

*2 Daugh.* Are you my sweetheart?  
It looks ill on't! How long is't, pretty soul,

Since you and I first loved? Had we not reason  
To dote extremely upon one another?

How does my love? This is not he; my chicken  
Could prate finely, sing a love-song.

*Jun.* Monster—

*2 Daugh.* Oh, now it courts!

*Jun.* Arm'd with more malice

Than he that got thee has, the devil.

*2 Daugh.* Good!

Proceed, sweet chick.

*Jun.* I hate thee; that's my last.

*2 Daugh.* Nay, an you love me, forward!—  
No?—Come, sister,

Let's prick our answers on our arrows' points,  
And make 'em laugh a little. Ye damn'd lechers,  
Ye proud improvident fools, have we now caught ye?  
Are ye i' th' noose? Since ye are such loving  
creatures,

We'll be your Cupids: Do ye see these arrows?  
We'll send 'em to your wanton livers, goats.

*1 Daugh.* Oh, how I'll trample on your hearts,  
ye villains,

Ambitious salt-itch'd slaves, Rome's master-sins!  
The mountain-rams tupt your hot mothers.

*2 Daugh.* Dogs,

To whose brave founders a salt whore gave suck!  
Thieves, honour's hangmen, do ye grin? Perdition  
Take me for ever, if in my fell anger,  
I do not out-do all example.

*Enter CARATACH.*

*Car.* Where,  
Where are these ladies?—Ye keep noble quarter!  
Your mother thinks you dead or taken, upon  
which

She will not move her battle.—Sure these faces  
I have beheld and known; they are Roman leaders!  
How came they here?

*2 Daugh.* A trick, sir, that we used;  
A certain policy conducted 'em  
Unto our snare: We have done you no small  
service.

These used as we intend, we are for the battle.

*Car.* As you intend? Taken by treachery?

*1 Daugh.* Is't not allow'd?

*Car.* Those that should gild our conquest,  
Make up a battle worthy of our winning,  
Catch'd up by craft?

*2 Daugh.* By any means that's lawful.

*Car.* A woman's wisdom in our triumphs? Out!  
Out, [out,] ye sluts, ye follies! From our swords  
Filch our revenges basely?—Arm again, gentle-  
Soldiers, I charge ye help 'em. [men!—

*2 Daugh.* By Heaven, unclie,  
We will have vengeance for our rapes!

*Car.* By Heaven,  
Ye should have kept your legs close then.—Dis-  
*1 Daugh.* I will not off thus! [patch there!

*Car.* He that stirs to execute,  
Or she, though it be yourselves, by him that got  
me,

Shall quickly feel mine anger! One great day  
given us,

Not to be snatch'd out of our hands but basely,  
And must we shame the gods from whence we  
have it,

With setting snares for soldiers? I'll run away  
Be hooted at, and children call me coward, [first,  
Before I set up stales for victories.

Give 'em their swords.

*2 Daugh.* Oh, Gods!

*Car.* Bear off the women  
Unto their mother!

*2 Daugh.* One shot, gentle uncle!

*Car.* One cut her fiddle-string!—Bear 'em off,

*1 Daugh.* The devil take this fortune! [I say.

*Car.* Learn to spin, [Re-  
And curse your knotted hemp!—Go, gentlemen,  
Safely go off, up to your troops; be wiser;  
There thank me like tall soldiers: I shall seek ye.  
[Exit with Soldiers, &c.

*Cur.* A noble worth!

*Dec.* Well, Junius?

*Jun.* Pray ye, no more!

*Cur.* He blushes; do not load him.

*Dec.* Where's your love now?

[Drums loud again.

*Jun.* Puff! there it flies. Come, let's redeem  
our follies.

[Exit JUNIUS, CURIUS, and DECIVS.

*Drus.* Awake, sir; yet the Roman body's whole;  
I see 'em clear again.

*Pen.* Whole? 'tis not possible;

Drusius, they must be lost.

*Drus.* By Heaven, they are whole, sir,  
And in brave doing; see, they wheel about  
To gain more ground.

*Pen.* But see there, Drusius, see,  
See that huge battle moving from the mountains!  
Their gilt coats shine like dragons' scales, their  
march

Like a rough tumbling storm; see 'em, and view  
'em,

And then see Rome no more. Say they fail, look,  
Look where the armed carts stand; a new army!  
Look how they hang like falling rocks, as murder-  
ing!

Death rides in triumph, Drusius, fell Destruction  
Lashes his fiery horse, and round about him  
His many thousand ways to let out souls.

Move me again when they charge, when the moun-  
tain

Melts under their hot wheels, and from their  
ax'trees

Huge claps of thunder plough the ground before  
Till then, I'll dream what Rome was. ['em!

*Enter SUBOTONIS, PETILLIUS, DEMETRIUS, MACER, and  
Soldiers.*

*Suet.* Oh, bravely fought!

Honour 'till now ne'er shew'd her golden face  
I'the field; Like lions, gentlemen, you have held  
Your heads up this day. Where's young Junius,  
Curius, and Decius?

*Pet.* Gone to heaven, I think, sir.

*Suet.* Their worths go with 'em! Breathe a  
while. How do ye?

*Pet.* Well; some few scurvy wounds; my heart's  
whole yet.

*Dem.* 'Would they would give us more ground!

*Suet.* Give? we'll have it.

*Pet.* Have it? and hold it too, despite the devil.

*Enter JUNIUS, DECIVS, and CURIUS.*

*Jun.* Lead up to th' head, and line sure! The  
queen's battle

Begins to charge like wildfire. Where's the  
general?

*Suet.* Oh, they are living yet.—Come, my brave  
soldiers,

Come, let me pour Rome's blessing on ye; Live,  
Live, and lead armies all! Ye bleed hard.

*Jun.* Best;

We shall appear the sterner to the foe.

*Dec.* More wounds, more honour.

*Pet.* Lose no time.

*Suet.* Away then;

And stand this shock, ye have stood the world.

*Pet.* We'll grow to't.

Is not this better now than lousy loving?

*Jun.* I am myself, Petillius.

*Pet.* 'Tis I love thee.

[Exit Roman.

*Enter BONDUCA, CARATACH, Daughters, NENNIUS, and Soldiers.*

*Car.* Charge 'em i' th' flanks! Oh, you have play'd the fool, The fool extremely, the mad fool!

*Bond.* Why, cousin? [word

*Car.* The woman fool! Why did you give the Unto the carts to charge down, and our people, In gross before the enemy? We pay for't; Our own swords cut our throats! Why, pox on't! Why do you offer to command? The devil, The devil, and his dam too! who bid you Meddle in men's affairs?

*Bond.* I'll help all. [*Exeunt all but CARATACH. Car.* Home, Home and spin, woman, spin, go spin! you trifle. Open before there, or all's ruin'd!—How?

[*Shouts within.* Now comes the tempest on ourselves, by Heaven! *Within.* Victoria!

*Car.* Oh, woman, scurvy woman, beastly woman! [*Exit.*

*Drus.* Victoria, victoria!

*Pen.* How's that, Drusius?

*Drus.* They win, they win, they win! Oh, look, look, look, sir, For Heaven's sake, look! The Britons fly, the Britons fly! Victoria!

*Enter SUTTONIUS, Soldiers, and Captains.*

*Suet.* Soft, soft, pursue it soft, excellent soldiers!

Close, my brave fellows, honourable Romans! Oh, cool thy mettle, Junius; they are ours, The world cannot redeem 'em: Stern Petillius, Govern the conquest nobly. Soft, good soldiers! [*Exeunt.*

*Enter BONDUCA, Daughters, and Britons flying.*

*Bond.* Shame! whither fly ye, ye unlucky Britons? Will ye creep into your mothers' wombs again?

Back, cowards! [me? Hares, fearful hares, doves in your angers! leave Leave your queen desolate? her hapless children To Roman rape again, and fury?

*Enter CARATACH and HENGO.*

*Car.* Fly, ye buzzards! Ye have wings enough, ye fear! Get thee gone, woman, [*Low shout within.*

Shame tread upon thy heels! All's lost, all's lost! Hark how the Romans ring our knells! [Hark, [*Exeunt BONDUCA, Daughters, &c.*

*Hengo.* Good uncle, Let me go too.

*Car.* No, boy; thy fortune's mine; I must not leave thee. Get behind me; shake not;

I'll breech you, if you do, boy.—

*Enter PETILLIUS, JUNIUS, and DECIVS.*

Come, brave Romans!

All is not lost yet.

*Jun.* Now I'll thank thee, Caratach.

[*Fight. Drums.*

*Car.* Thou art a soldier; strike home, home! Have at you!

*Pen.* His blows fall like huge sledges on an anvil.

*Dec.* I am weary.

*Pet.* So am I.

*Car.* Send more swords to me.

[*Exeunt Britons.*

*Jun.* Let's sit and rest.

*Drus.* What think you now?

*Pen.* Oh, Drusius,

I have lost mine honour, lost my name, Lost all that was my light: These are true Romans, And I a Briton coward, a base coward! Guide me where nothing is but desolation, That I may never more behold the face Of man, or mankind know me! Oh, blind Fortune, Hast thou abused me thus?

*Drus.* Good sir, be comforted; It was your wisdom ruled you. Pray you go home; Your day is yet to come, when this great fortune Shall be but foil unto it. [*Retreat.*

*Pen.* Fool, fool, coward!

[*Exeunt PENIUS, and DRUSIUS into the Tent.*

*Enter SUTTONIUS, DEMETRIUS, Soldiers, drum and colours.*

*Suet.* Draw in, draw in!—Well have you fought, and worthy

Rome's noble recompense. Look to your wounds; The ground is cold and hurtful. The proud queen Has got a fort, and there she and her daughters Defy us once again: To-morrow morning We'll seek her out, and make her know our fortunes

Stop at no stubborn walls.—Come, sons of Honour, True Virtue's heirs, thus hatch'd with Britain blood, Let's march to rest, and set in gules like suns.

Beat a soft march, and each one ease his neighbours! [*Exeunt.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Roman Camp. The Tent of JUNIUS.*

*Enter PETILLIUS, JUNIUS, DECIVS, and DEMETRIUS, singing.*

*Pet.* Smooth was his cheek,

*Dec.* And his chin it was sleek,

*Jun.* With, whoop, he has done wooing!

*Dem.* Junius was this captain's name,

A lad for a lass's viewing.

*Pet.* Full black his eye, and plump his thigh,

*Dec.* Made up for love's pursuing.

*Dem.* Smooth was his cheek,

*Pet.* And his chin it was sleek,

*Jun.* With, whoop, he has done wooing!

*Pet.* O my vex'd thief, art thou come home Are thy brains perfect? [again?

*Jun.* Sound as bells.

*Pet.* Thy back-worm Quiet, and cast his sting, boy?

*Jun.* Dead, Petillius,

Dead to all folly, and now my anger only—

*Pet.* Why, that's well said; hang Cupid and his quiver,

A drunken brawling boy! Thy honour'd saint Be thy ten shillings, Junius; there's the money, And there's the ware; square dealing: This but sweats thee

Like a nesh nag, and makes thee look pin-buttock'd ;  
The other runs thee whining up and down  
Like a pig in a storm, fills thy brains full of ballads,  
And shews thee like a long Lent, thy brave body  
Turn'd to a tail of green fish without butter.

*Dec.* When thou lovest next, love a good cup  
of wine,

A mistress for a king ! she leaps to kiss thee,  
Her red and white's her own, she makes good blood,  
Takes none away ; what she heats sleep can help,  
Without a groping surgeon.

*Jun.* I am counsel'd ;

And henceforth, when I dote again——

*Dem.* Take heed ;

Ye had almost paid for't.

*Pet.* Love no more great ladies ; [in 'em :  
Thou canst not step amiss then ; there's no delight  
All's in the whistling of their snatch-up silks ;  
They're only made for handsome view, not hand-  
Their bodies of so weak and wash a temper, [ling ;  
A rough-paced bed will shake them all to pieces ;  
A tough hen pulls their teeth out, tires their souls ;  
*Plena rimarum sunt*, they are full of rinct,  
And take the skin off where they're tasted : Shun  
They live in cullisses, like rotten cocks, ['em ;  
Stew'd to a tenderness that holds no tack ;  
Give me a thing I may crush.

*Jun.* Thou speak'st truly :

The wars shall be my mistress now.

*Pet.* Well chosen !

For she's a bouncing lass ; she'll kiss thee at night,  
And break thy pate i' th' morning. [boy,

*Jun.* Yesterday

I found those favours infinite.

*Dem.* Wench good enough,  
But that she talks too loud.

*Pet.* She talks to the purpose, [pling,  
Which never woman did yet. She'll hold grap-  
And he that lays on best is her best servant ;  
All other loves are mere catching of dottrels,  
Stretching of legs out only, and trim laziness.  
Here comes the general.

*Enter Sutorius, Curvus, and Macka.*

*Suet.* I'm glad I have found ye ;  
Are those come in yet that pursued bold Caratach ?

*Pet.* Not yet, sir, for I think they mean to lodge  
him ;

Take him I know they dare not, 'twill be dangerous.

*Suet.* Then haste, Pettilius, haste to Fenius :  
I fear the strong conceit of what disgrace  
He has pull'd upon himself, will be his ruin ;  
I fear his soldiers' fury too : Haste presently ;  
I would not lose him for all Britain. Give him,  
Pettilius——

*Pet.* That that shall choke him. [Aside.

*Suet.* All the noble counsel,  
His fault forgiven too, his place, his honour——

*Pet.* For me, I think, as handsome—— [Aside

*Suet.* All the comfort ;  
And tell the soldier, 'twas on our command  
He drew not to the battle.

*Pet.* I conceive, sir,  
And will do that shall cure all.

*Suet.* Bring him with you  
Before the queen's fort, and his forces with him ;  
There you shall find us following of our conquest.  
Make haste !

*Pet.* The best I may. [Exit.

*Suet.* And, noble gentlemen,

Up to your companies ! we'll presently  
Upon the queen's pursuit. There's nothing done  
Till she be seiz'd ; without her, nothing won.

[*Exeunt. Short flourish.*

SCENE II.—*Open Country between the Camps.*

*Enter CARATACH and HENGO.*

*Car.* How does my boy ?

*Hengo.* I would do well ; my heart's well ;  
I do not fear.

*Car.* My good boy !

*Hengo.* I know, uncle,  
We must all die ; my little brother died,  
I saw him die, and he died smiling ; sure  
There's no great pain in't, uncle. But pray tell me,  
Whether must we go when we are dead ?

*Car.* Strange questions !—

Why, to the blessedest place, boy—Ever sweet-  
And happiness dwells there. [ness

*Hengo.* Will you come to me ?

*Car.* Yes, my sweet boy.

*Hengo.* Mine aunt too, and my cousins ?

*Car.* All, my good child.

*Hengo.* No Romans, uncle ?

*Car.* No, boy.

*Hengo.* I should be loth to meet them there.

*Car.* No ill men,

That live by violence, and strong oppression,  
Come thither ; 'tis for those the gods love, good  
men.

*Hengo.* Why, then, I care not when I go, for  
I am persuaded they love me : I never [surely  
Blasphemed 'em, uncle, nor transgressed my pa-  
I always said my prayers. [rents ;

*Car.* Thou shalt go then,

Indeed thou shalt.

*Hengo.* When they please.

*Car.* That's my good boy !

Art thou not weary, Hengo ?

*Hengo.* Weary, uncle ?

I have heard you say you have march'd all day in  
Car. I have, boy. [armour.

*Hengo.* Am not I your kinsman ?

*Car.* Yes.

*Hengo.* And am not I as fully allied unto you  
In those brave things as blood ?

*Car.* Thou art too tender.

*Hengo.* To go upon my legs ? they were made  
to bear me.

I can play twenty mile a-day ; I see no reason,  
But to preserve my country and myself,  
I should march forty.

*Car.* What wouldst thou be, living

To wear a man's strength !

*Hengo.* Why, a Caratach,  
A Roman-hater, a scourge sent from Heaven  
To whip these proud thieves from our kingdom.

Hark, [Drum.

Hark, uncle, hark ! I hear a drum.

*Enter JUDAS and his Soldiers, and stand on one side of  
the stage.*

*Judas.* Beat softly,

Softly, I say : they are here. Who dare charge ?  
I Sold. He

That dares be knock'd o' th' head : I'll not come  
near him.

*Judas.* Retire again, and watch then. How he  
stares ! [well ;

He has eyes would kill a dragon. Mark the boy

If we could take or kill him—A pox on ye,  
How fierce ye look! See, how he broods the boy!  
The devil dwells in's scabbard. Back, I say!  
Apace, apace! he has found us. [*They retire.*]

*Car.* Do ye hunt us? [*rascal,*]

*Hengo.* Uncle, good uncle, see! the thin starved  
The eating Roman, see where he thrids the thickets:  
Kill him, dear uncle, kill him! one good blow  
To knock his brains into his breech; strike's head  
That I may piss in's face. [*off*]

*Car.* Do ye make us foxes?—  
Here, hold my charging-staff, and keep the place,  
I am at bay, and like a bull I'll bear me.— [*boy!*]  
Stand, stand, ye rogues, ye squirrels! [*Exit.*]

*Hengo.* Now he pays 'em;  
Oh, that I had a man's strength!

*Enter JUDAS.*

*Judas.* Here's the boy;  
Mine own, I thank my fortune.

*Hengo.* Uncle, uncle!

Famine is fallen upon me, uncle.

*Judas.* Come, sir,

Yield willingly, (your uncle's out of hearing),  
I'll tickle your young tail else.

*Hengo.* I defy thee,

Thou mock-made man of mat! Charge home, sirrah!  
Hang thee, base slave, thou shakest.

*Judas.* Upon my conscience,

The boy will beat me! how it looks, how bravely,  
How confident the worm is! a scabb'd boy  
To handle me thus!—Yield, or I cut thy head off.

*Hengo.* Thou darest not cut my finger; here  
'tis, touch it.

*Judas.* The boy speaks sword and buckler!

Pr'ythee yield, boy;

Come, here's an apple, yield.

*Hengo.* By Heaven, he fears me!

I'll give you sharper language:—When, ye coward,  
When come ye up?

*Judas.* If he should beat me—

*Hengo.* When, sir?

I long to kill thee! Come, thou canst not 'scape  
I have twenty ways to charge thee, twenty deaths  
Attend my bloody staff.

*Judas.* Sure 'tis the devil,

A dwarf devil in a doublet!

*Hengo.* I have killed [*done,*]

A captain, sirrah, a brave captain, and when I have  
I have kicked him thus. Look here; see how I  
This staff! [*charge*]

[*Kicks and beats him with the truncheon of CARATACH.*]

*Judas.* Most certain this boy will cut my throat  
yet.

*Enter two Soldiers running.*

1 *Sold.* Flee, flee! he kills us.

2 *Sold.* He comes, he comes!

*Judas.* The devil take the hindmost!

[*Exit JUDAS and Soldiers.*]

*Hengo.* Run, run, ye rogues, ye precious rogues,  
ye rank rogues!

'A comes, 'a comes, 'a comes, 'a comes! that's he,  
What a brave cry they make! [*boys!*]

*Enter CARATACH with a Head.*

*Car.* How does my chicken?

*Hengo.* 'Faith, uncle, grown a soldier, a great  
soldier;

For, by the virtue of your charging-staff,  
And a strange fighting face I put upon't,  
I have out-brav'd Hunger.

*Car.* That's my boy, my sweet boy!  
Here, here's a Roman's head for thee.

*Hengo.* Good provision!

Before I starve, my sweet-faced gentleman,  
I'll try your favour.

*Car.* A right complete soldier!

Come, chicken, let's go seek someplace of strength  
(The country's full of scouts) to rest a while in;  
Thou wilt not else be able to endure  
The journey to my country. Fruits and water  
Must be your food a while, boy.

*Hengo.* Anything;

I can eat moss, nay, I can live on anger,  
To vex these Romans. Let's be wary, uncle.

*Car.* I warrant thee; come cheerfully.

*Hengo.* And boldly! [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.—*The Tent of PENIUS.*

*Enter PENIUS, DRUSIUS, and REGULUS.*

*Reg.* The soldier shall not grieve you.

*Pen.* Pray ye forsake me;

Look not upon me, as ye love your honours!  
I am so cold a coward, my infection  
Will choke your virtues like a damp else.

*Drus.* Dear captain!

*Reg.* Most honoured sir!

*Pen.* Most hated, most abhorred!

Say so, and then ye know me, nay, ye please me.

Oh, my dear credit, my dear credit!

*Reg.* Sure

His mind is dangerous.

*Drus.* The good gods cure it!

*Pen.* My honour, got through fire, through  
stubborn breaches, [*heaven,*]

Through battles that have been as hard to win as  
Through Death himself, in all his horrid trims,  
Is gone for ever, ever, gentlemen!

And now I am left to scornful tales and laughers,  
To hootings at, pointing with fingers, 'That's he,  
That's the brave gentleman forsook the battle,  
The most wise Penius, the disputing coward.'

Oh, my good sword, break from my side, and kill  
Cut out the coward from my heart! [*me;*]

*Reg.* You are none.

*Pen.* He lies that says so; by Heaven, he lies,  
lies basely,

Basely than I have done! Come, soldiers, seek me;  
I have robb'd ye of your virtues! Justice seek me,  
I have broke my fair obedience! lost! Shame take  
me,

Take me, and swallow me, make ballads of me,  
Shame, endless shame! and pray do you forsake

*Drus.* What shall we do? [*me!*]

*Pen.* Good gentlemen, forsake me;

You were not wont to be commanded. Friends,  
pray do it,

And do not fear; for, as I am a coward,  
I will not hurt myself, (when that mind takes me,  
I'll call to you, and ask your help,) I dare not.

[*Throws himself upon the ground.*]

*Enter PETILLIUS.*

*Pet.* Good-morrow, gentlemen! Where's the

*Reg.* There. [*tribune?*]

*Drus.* Whence come you, good Petillius?

*Pet.* From the general.

*Drus.* With what, for Heaven's sake?

*Pet.* With good counsel, Drusius,  
And love, to comfort him.

*Drus.* Good Regulus,  
Step to the soldier and allay his anger;  
For he is wild as winter.

[*Exeunt DRUUS and REGULUS.*]

*Pet.* Oh, are you there? have at you!—Sure  
he's dead, [Half aside.

It cannot be he dare out-live this fortune;  
He must die, 'tis most necessary; men expect it,  
And thought of life in him goes beyond coward.  
Forsake the field so basely? Fy upon't!  
So poorly to betray his worth? So coldly  
To cut all credit from the soldier? Sure  
If this man mean to live, (as I should think it  
Beyond belief,) he must retire where never  
The name of Rome, the voice of arms, or honour,  
Was known or heard of yet. He's certain dead,  
Or strongly means it; he's no soldier else,  
No Roman in him; all he has done but outside,  
Fought either drunk or desperate. Now he rises.—  
How does lord Penius?

*Pen.* As you see.

*Pet.* I am glad on't;  
Continue so still. The lord general,  
The valiant general, great Suetonius—

*Pen.* No more of me is spoken; my name's  
perished.

*Pet.* He that commanded fortune and the day,  
By his own valour and discretion,  
(When, as some say, Penius refused to come,  
But I believe 'em not,) sent me to see you.

*Pen.* Ye are welcome; and pray see me, see  
You shall not see me long. [me well;

*Pet.* I hope so, Penius.— [Aside.

*Pen.* See me and understand me: This is he,  
Left to fill up your triumph; he that basely  
Whistled his honour off to th' wind, that coldly  
Shrunk in his politic head, when Rome, like  
reapers,

Sweat blood and spirit for a glorious harvest,  
And bound it up, and brought it off; that fool,  
That having gold and copper offered him,  
Refused the wealth, and took the waste; that  
soldier,

That being courted by loud Fame and Fortune,  
Labour in one hand that propounds us gods,  
And in the other Glory that creates us,  
Yet durst doubt and be damned!

*Pet.* It was an error.

*Pen.* A foul one, and a black one.

*Pet.* Yet the blackest  
May be washed white again.

*Pen.* Never.

*Pet.* Your leave, sir;  
And I beseech you note me, for I love you,  
And bring along all comfort: Are we gods,  
Allied to no infirmities? are our natures  
More than men's natures? When we slip a little  
Out of the way of virtue, are we lost?  
Is there no medicine called sweet mercy?

*Pen.* None, Petillius;

There is no mercy in mankind can reach me,  
Nor is it fit it should; I have sinned beyond it.

*Pet.* Forgiveness meets with all faults.

*Pen.* 'Tis all faults,

All sins I can commit, to be forgiven;  
'Tis loss of whole man in me, my discretion,  
To be so stupid, to arrive at pardon!

*Pet.* Oh, but the general—

*Pen.* He is a brave gentleman,

A valiant, and a loving; and I dare say  
He would, as far as honour durst direct him,  
Make even with my fault; but 'tis not honest,  
Nor in his power: Examples that may nourish  
Neglect and disobedience in whole bodies,  
And totter the estates and faiths of armies,  
Must not be played withal; nor out of pity  
Make a general forget his duty;  
Nor dare I hope more from him than is worthy.

*Pet.* What would you do?

*Pen.* Die.

*Pet.* So would sullen children,  
Women that want their wills, slaves disobedient,  
That fear the law. Die? Fy, great captain! you  
A man to rule men, to have thousand lives  
Under your regiment, and let your passion  
Betray your reason? I bring you all forgiveness,  
The noblest kind commends, your place, your  
honour—

*Pen.* Pr'ythee no more; 'tis foolish. Didst not  
thou

(By Heaven, thou didst; I overheard thee, there,  
There where thou stand'st now) deliver me for  
rascal,

Poor, dead, cold, coward, miserable, wretched,  
If I out-lived this ruin?

*Pet.* I?

*Pen.* And thou didst it nobly,  
Like a true man, a soldier; and I thank thee,  
I thank thee, good Petillius, thus I thank thee!

*Pet.* Since you are so justly made up, let me  
'Tis fit you die indeed. [tell you,

*Pen.* Oh, how thou lovest me!

*Pet.* For say he had forgiven you, say the peo-  
ple's whispers

Were tame again, the time run out for wonder,  
What must your own command think, from whose  
swords

You have taken off the edges, from whose valours  
The due and recompense of arms; nay, made it  
doubtful

Whether they knew obedience? must not these  
kill you?

Say they are won to pardon you, by mere miracle  
Brought to forgive you, what old valiant soldier,  
What man that loves to fight, and fight for Rome,  
Will ever follow you more? Dare you know these  
ventures?

If so, I bring you comfort; dare you take it?

*Pen.* No, no, Petillius, no.

*Pet.* If your mind serve you,  
You may live still; but how?—yet pardon me:  
You may out-wear all too;—but when?—and  
certain

There is a mercy for each fault, if tamely

A man will take't upon conditions.

*Pen.* No, by no means: I am only thinking  
now, sir,

(For I am resolved to go) of a most base death,  
Fitting the baseness of my fault. I'll hang.

*Pet.* You shall not: you are a gentleman I  
honour,

I would else flatter you, and force you live,  
Which is far baser. Hanging? 'tis a dog's death,  
An end for slaves.

*Pen.* The fitter for my baseness.

*Pet.* Besides, the man that's hanged preaches  
his end,

And sits a sign for all the world to gape at.

*Pen.* That's true; I'll take a fitter; poison.

*Pet.* No,  
'Tis equal ill; the death of rats and women,  
Lovers, and lazy boys, that fear correction;  
Die like a man.

*Pen.* Why, my sword, then.

*Pet.* Ay, if your sword be sharp, sir.  
There's nothing under Heaven that's like your  
Your sword's a death indeed! [sword;

*Pen.* It shall be sharp, sir.

*Pet.* Why, Mithridates was an arrant ass  
To die by poison, if all Bosphorus  
Could lend him swords: Your sword must do the  
deed:

'Tis shame to die choak'd, fame to die and bleed.

*Pen.* Thou hast confirm'd me; and, my good  
Tell me no more I may live. [Petillius,

*Pet.* 'Twas my commission;  
But now I see you in a nobler way,  
A way to make all even.

*Pen.* Farewell, captain!  
Be a good man, and fight well; be obedient;  
Command thyself, and then thy men. Why shakest  
*Pet.* I do not, sir. [thou?

*Pen.* I would thou hadst, Petillius!  
I would find something to forsake the world with  
Worthy the man that dies: A kind of earthquake  
Through all stern valours but mine own.

*Pet.* I feel now  
A kind of trembling in me.

*Pen.* Keep it still;  
As thou lovest virtue, keep it.

*Pet.* And, brave captain,  
The great and honour'd Penius!

*Pen.* That again!  
Oh, how it heightens me! again, Petillius!

*Pet.* Most excellent commander—  
*Pen.* Those were mine!

Mine, only mine!  
*Pet.* They are still.

*Pen.* Then, to keep 'em  
For ever falling more, have at ye!—Heavens,  
Ye everlasting powers, I am yours:  
The work is done, [Falls upon his sword.

That neither fire, nor age, nor melting envy,  
Shall ever conquer. Carry my last words:  
To the great general: Kiss his hands, and say,  
My soul I give to Heaven, my fault to justice,  
Which I have done upon myself; my virtue,  
If ever there was any in poor Penius.  
Made more, and happier, light on him!—I faint—  
And where there is a foe, I wish him fortune.  
I die: Lie lightly on my ashes, gentle earth!

[Dies.  
*Pet.* And on my sin! Farewell, great Penius!—  
The soldier is in fury; now I am glad [Noise within.  
'Tis done before he comes. This way for me,  
The way of toil;—for thee, the way of honour!  
[Exit.

*DAVUS, REGULUS, and Soldiers, are heard without.*

*Sold.* Kill him, kill him, kill him!

*Drus.* What will ye do?

*Reg.* Good soldiers, honest soldiers—

*Sold.* Kill him, kill him, kill him!

*Drus.* Kill us first: we command too.

*Reg.* Valiant soldiers,

Consider but whose life ye seek.—Oh, Drusius,  
Bid him be gone; he dies else.—[DAVUS enters.]

—Shall Rome say,

Ye most approved soldiers, her dear children  
Devoted the fathers of the fights? shall rage

And stubborn fury guide those swords to slaughter,  
To slaughter of their own, to civil ruin?

*Drus.* Oh, let 'em in; all's done, all's ended,  
Regulus;

Penius has found his last eclipse. Come, soldiers,  
Come and behold your miseries; come bravely,  
Full of your mutinous and bloody angers,  
And here bestow your darts.—Oh, only Roman,  
Oh, father of the wars!

*Enter REGULUS and Soldiers.*

*Reg.* Why stand ye stupid?  
Where be your killing furies? whose sword now  
Shall first be sheathed in Penius? Do ye weep?  
Howl out, ye wretches, ye have cause; howl ever!  
Who shall now lead ye fortunate? whose valour  
Preserve ye to the glory of your country?  
Who shall march out before ye, coyed and courted,  
By all the mistresses of war, care, counsel,  
Quick-eyed experience, and victory twined to him?  
Who shall beget ye deeds beyond inheritance  
To speak your names, and keep your honours

living,  
When children fail, and Time, that takes all with  
Build houses for ye to oblivion? [him,

*Drus.* Oh, ye poor desperate fools, no more  
now soldiers,

Go home, and hang your arms up; let rust rot 'em;  
And humble your stern valours to soft prayers!  
For ye have sunk the frame of all your virtues;  
The sun that warmed your bloods is set for ever.—  
I'll kiss thy honoured cheek. Farewell, great  
Penius,

Thou thunderbolt, farewell!—Take up the body:  
To-morrow morning to the camp convey it,  
There to receive due ceremonies. That eye,  
That blinds himself with weeping, gets most glory.  
[Exit, bearing out the body. A dead march.

SCENE IV.—*Before the Fort of BONDUCA.*

*Enter Suetonius, Junius, Decius, Demetrius, Curius, and  
Soldiers: BONDUCA, two Daughters, and NENNIUS, on  
the ramparts. Drums and colours.*

*Suet.* Bring up the catapults, and shake the  
We will not be out-braved thus. [wall;

*Nen.* Shake the earth,  
Ye cannot shake our souls. Bring up your rams,  
And with their armed heads make the fort totter,  
Ye do but rock us into death. [Exit.

*Jun.* See, sir,  
See the Icenian queen in all her glory,  
From the strong battlements proudly appearing,  
As if she meant to give us lashes!

*Dec.* Yield, queen.

*Bond.* I am unacquainted with that language,  
Roman. [mercy

*Suet.* Yield, honour'd lady, and expect our  
We love thy nobleness. [Exit DACIUS.

*Bond.* I thank ye! ye say well;  
But mercy and love are sins in Rome and hell.

*Suet.* You cannot 'scape our strength; you must  
yield, lady:

You must adore and fear the power of Rome.

*Bond.* If Rome be earthly, why should any knee  
With bending adoration worship her?

She's vicious; and, your partial selves confess,

Aspires the height of all impiety;

Therefore 'tis fitter I should reverence

The thatched houses where the Britons dwell

In careless mirth; where the bless'd household gods

See nought but chaste and simple purity.  
'Tis not high power that makes a place divine,  
Nor that the men from gods derive their line ;  
But sacred thoughts, in holy bosoms stored,  
Make people noble, and the place adored.

*Suet.* Beat the wall deeper !

*Bond.* Beat it to the centre,  
We will not sink one thought.

*Suet.* I'll make ye.

*Bond.* No.

*Enter PETILLIUS, who whispers SEXTONIUS.*

*2 Daugh.* O mother, these are fearful hours ;  
speak gently  
To these fierce men, they will afford ye pity.

*Bond.* Pity ? Thou fearful girl, 'tis for those  
wretches

That misery makes tame. Wouldst thou live less ?  
Wast not thou born a princess ? Can my blood,  
And thy brave father's spirit, suffer in thee  
So base a separation from thyself,  
As mercy from these tyrants ? Thou lovest lust sure,  
And long'st to prostitute thy youth and beauty  
To common slaves for bread. Say they had mercy,  
The devil a relenting conscience,  
The lives of kings rest in their diadems,  
Which to their bodies lively souls do give,  
And, ceasing to be kings, they cease to live.  
Shew such another fear, and, by the Gods,  
I'll fling thee to their fury.—

*Suet.* He is dead then ?

*Pet.* I think so certainly ; yet all my means, sir,  
Even to the hazard of my life—

*Suet.* No more :

We must not seem to mourn here.

*Enter DECIVS.*

*Deo.* There is a breach made ;  
Is it your will we charge, sir !

*Suet.* Once more, mercy,  
Mercy to all that yield !

*Bond.* I scorn to answer :—  
Speak to him, girl,—and hear thy sister.

*1 Daugh.* General,  
Hear me, and mark me well, and look upon me,  
Directly in my face, my woman's face,  
Whose only beauty is the hate it bears ye ;  
See with thy narrowest eyes, thy sharpest wishes,  
Into my soul, and see what there inhabits ;  
See if one fear, one shadow of a terror,  
One paleness dare appear but from my anger,  
To lay hold on your mercies. No, ye fools,  
Poor fortune's fools, we were not born for triumphs,  
To follow your gay sports, and fill your slaves  
With hoots and acclamations.

*Pet.* Brave behaviour !

*1 Daugh.* The children of as great as Rome, as  
noble,

Our names before her, and our deeds her envy,  
Must we gild o'er your conquest, make your state,  
That is not fairly strong, but fortunate ?  
No, no, ye Romans, we have ways to 'scape ye,  
To make ye poor again, indeed our prisoners,  
And stick our triumphs full.

*Pet.* 'Sdeath, I shall love her !

*1 Daugh.* To torture ye with suffering, like our  
slaves ;

To make ye curse our patience, wish the world  
Were lost again, to win us only, and esteem [it]  
The end of all ambitions.

*Bond.* Do ye wonder ?

We'll make our monuments in spite of fortune ;  
In spite of all your eagles' wings, we'll work  
A pitch above you ; and from our height we'll  
stoop

As fearless of your bloody soars, and fortunate,  
As if we prey'd on heartless doves.

*Suet.* Strange stiffness !

*Decius,* go charge the breach. [*Exit DECIVS.*]

*Bond.* Charge it home, Roman ;  
We shall deceive thee else.—Where's Nennius !

*Enter NENNIUS.*

*Nen.* They have made a mighty breach.

*Bond.* Stick in thy body,  
And make it good but half an hour.

*Nen.* I'll do it.

*1 Daugh.* And then be sure to die.

*Nen.* It shall go hard else.

*Bond.* Farewell, with all my heart ! We shall  
Where few of these must come. [*meet yonder,*]

*Nen.* Gods take thee, lady ! [*Exit.*]

*Bond.* Bring up the swords and poison.

*Enter one with Swords and a great Cup of Poison.*

*2 Daugh.* Oh, my fortune !

*Bond.* How, how, ye whore ?

*2 Daugh.* Good mother, nothing to offend you.

*Bond.* Here, wench.—

Behold us, Romans !

*Suet.* Mercy yet.

*Bond.* No talking !

Puff ! there goes all your pity.—Come, short  
prayers,

And let's dispatch the business ! You begin ;  
Shrink not, I'll see you do't.

*2 Daugh.* Oh, gentle mother !

Oh, Romans ! oh, my heart ! I dare not.

*Suet.* Woman, woman,

Unnatural woman !

*2 Daugh.* Oh, persuade her, Romans !  
Alas, I am young, and would live.—Noble mother,  
Can ye kill that ye gave life ? Are my years  
Fit for destruction ?

*Suet.* Yield, and be a queen still,  
A mother, and a friend.

*Bond.* Ye talk !—Come, hold it,  
And put it home.

*1 Daugh.* Fy, sister, fy !

What would you live to be ?

*Bond.* A whore still ?

*2 Daugh.* Mercy !

*Suet.* Hear her, thou wretched woman !

*2 Daugh.* Mercy, mother !

Oh, whither will you send me ? I was once  
Your darling, your delight.

*Bond.* Oh, gods ! fear in my family ?—Do it,  
and nobly.

*2 Daugh.* Oh, do not frown then.

*1 Daugh.* Do it, worthy sister ;

'Tis nothing ; 'tis a pleasure : We'll go with you.

*2 Daugh.* Oh, if I knew but whither !

*1 Daugh.* To the blessed :

Where we shall meet our father—

*Suet.* Woman !

*Bond.* Talk not.

*1 Daugh.* Where nothing but true joy is—

*Bond.* That's a good wench ! [*2 DAUGHTERS drink.*]

Mine own sweet girl ! put it close to thee.

*2 Daugh.* Oh,

Comfort me still, for Heaven's sake.

*1 Daugh.* Where eternal

Our youths are, and our beauties; where no wars  
Nor lustful slaves to ravish us. [come,

2 *Daugh.* That steals me;  
A long farewell to this world! [Dies.

*Bond.* Good; I'll help thee.

1 *Daugh.* The next is mine.—

Shew me a Roman lady in all your stories,  
Dare do this for her honour; they are cowards,  
Eat coals like compell'd cats: your great saint,  
Lucrece,

Died not for honour; Tarquin tupt her well,  
And, mad she could not hold him, bled.

*Pet.* By Heaven,

I am in love! I would give an hundred pound  
now

But to lie with this woman's behaviour. Oh, the  
devil!

1 *Daugh.* Ye shall see me example: All your  
If I were proud and loved ambition, [Rome,

If I were lustful, all your ways of pleasure,

If I were greedy, all the wealth ye conquer—

*Bond.* Make haste.

1 *Daugh.* I will.—[*Drinks.*]—Could not entice  
to live,

But two short hours, this frailty. Would ye learn  
How to die bravely, Romans, to fling off  
This case of flesh, lose all your cares for ever?

Live, as we have done, well, and fear the gods;  
Hunt honour, and not nations, with your swords;

Keep your minds humble, your devotions high;  
So shall ye learn the noblest part, to die. [Dies.

*Bond.* I come, wench.—To ye all, Fate's hang-  
men, you

That ease the aged Destinies, and cut  
The threads of kingdoms as they draw 'em! here,

Here is a draught would ask no less than Cæsar  
To pledge it for the glory's sake!

*Cur.* Great lady!

*Suet.* Make up your own conditions.

*Bond.* So we will.

*Suet.* Stay!

*Dem.* Stay!

*Suet.* Be anything.

*Bond.* A saint, Suetonius, [Drinks.

When thou shalt fear, and die like a slave. Ye  
fools,

Ye should have tied up Death first, when ye con-  
quer'd;

Ye sweat for us in vain else: See him here!

He is ours still, and our friend; laughs at your  
pities;

And we command him with as easy reins

As do our enemies.—I feel the poison.—

Poor vanquish'd Romans, with what matchless  
tortures

Could I now rack ye! But I pity ye,

Desiring to die quiet: Nay, so much

I hate to prosecute my victory,

That I will give ye counsel ere I die:

If you will keep your laws and empire whole,

Place in your Roman flesh a Briton soul. [Dies.

*Suet.* Desperate and strange!

Enter DECIUS.

*Dec.* 'Tis won, sir, and the Britons

All put to th' sword;

*Suet.* Give her fair funeral;

She was truly noble, and a queen.

*Pet.* Pox take it,

A love-mange grown upon me! What a spirit!

*Jun.* I am glad of this! I have found you.

*Pet.* In my belly,

Oh, how it tumbles!

*Jun.* Ye good gods, I thank ye! [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A mountainous Country.

CARATACH discovered upon the Rock in the Back-ground,  
and HENGO by him sleeping.

*Car.* Thus we afflicted Britons climb for safeties,  
And, to avoid our dangers, seek destructions;

Thus we awake to sorrows.—Oh, thou woman,

Thou agent for adversities, what curses

This day belong to thy providence!

To Britanic, by thy means, what sad millions

Of widows' weeping eyes! The strong man's valour

Thou hast betrayed to fury, the child's fortune

To fear, and want of friends; whose pieties

Might wipe his mournings off, and build his sorrows

A house of rest by his bless'd ancestors:

The virgins thou hast robb'd of all their wishes,

Blasted their blowing hopes, turned their songs,

Their mirthful marriage-songs, to funerals;

The land thou hast left a wilderness of wretches.—

The boy begins to stir; thy safety made,

'Would my soul were in heaven!

*Hengo.* Oh, noble uncle,

Look out; I dreamed we were betray'd.

*Car.* No harm, boy;

'Tis but thy emptiness that breeds these fancies:

Thou shalt have meat anon.

[A soft dead march within.

*Hengo.* A little, uncle,

And I shall hold out bravely.—What are those,  
(Look, come, look!) those multitudes that march  
They come upon us stealing by. [there?

*Car.* I see 'em;

And pr'ythee be not fearful.

*Hengo.* Now you hate me;—

'Would I were dead!

*Car.* Thou knowest I love thee dearly.

*Hengo.* Did I e'er shrink yet, uncle? Were

I a man now

I should be angry with you.

Enter DRUSSIUS, REORLUS, and Soldiers, with PERUS'S  
Hearse, Drums, and Colours.

*Car.* My sweet chicken!—

See, they have reached us; and, as it seems, they  
bear

Some soldier's body, by their solemn gestures,

And sad solemnities; it well appears too

To be of eminence.—Most worthy soldiers,

Let me entreat your knowledge to inform me

What noble body that is, which you bear

With such a sad and ceremonious grief,

As if ye meant to woo the world and nature

To be in love with death? Most honourable

Excellent Romans, by your ancient valours,

As ye love fame, resolve me!

*Sold.* 'Tis the body

Of the great captain Penius, by himself  
Made cold and spiritless.

*Car.* Oh, stay, ye Romans,  
By the religion which ye owe those gods  
That lead ye on to victories! by those glories  
Which made even pride a virtue in ye!

*Drus.* Stay.—

What's thy will, Caratach?

*Car.* Set down the body,  
The body of the noblest of all Romans;  
As ye expect an offering at your graves  
From your friends' sorrows, set it down a-while,  
That with your griefs an enemy may mingle,  
(A noble enemy, that loves a soldier)  
And lend a tear to virtue! Even your foes,  
Your wild foes, as you called us, are yet stored  
With fair affections, our hearts fresh, our spirits,  
Though sometime stubborn, yet, when Virtue dies,  
Soft and relenting as a virgin's prayers:  
Oh, set it down!

*Drus.* Set down the body, soldiers.

*Car.* Thou hallowed relic, thou rich diamond,  
Cut with thine own dust; thou, for whose wide  
fame

The world appears too narrow, man's all thoughts,  
Had they all tongues, too silent; thus I bow  
To thy most honour'd ashes! Though an enemy,  
Yet friend to all thy worths, sleep peaceably;  
Happiness crown thy soul, and in thy earth  
Some laurel fix his seat, there grow and flourish,  
And make thy grave an everlasting triumph!  
Farewell all glorious wars, now thou art gone,  
And honest arms adieu! All noble battles,  
Maintain'd in thirst of honour, not of blood,  
Farewell for ever!

*Hengo.* Was this Roman, uncle,  
So good a man?

*Car.* Thou never knewest thy father.

*Hengo.* He died before I was born.

*Car.* This worthy Roman

Was such another piece of endless honour,  
Such a brave soul dwelt in him; their proportions  
And faces were not much unlike, boy.—Excellent  
nature!

See how it works into his eyes!—mine own boy!

*Hengo.* The multitudes of these men, and their  
fortunes,

Could never make me fear yet; one man's good-  
ness—

*Car.* Oh, now thou pleasest me; weep still,  
my child,

As if thou saw'st me dead! with such a flux  
Or flood of sorrow, still thou pleasest me.—  
And, worthy soldiers, pray receive these pledges,  
These hatchments of our griefs, and grace us so  
much

To place 'em on his hearse. Now, if ye please,  
Bear off the noble burden; raise his pile  
High as Olympus, making Heaven to wnder  
To see a star upon earth out-shining theirs:  
And ever-loved, ever-living be  
Thy honour'd and most sacred memory!

*Drus.* Thou hast done honestly, good Caratach;  
And when thou diest, a thousand virtuous Romans  
Shall sing thy soul to Heaven.—Now march on,  
soldiers.

[*Exeunt Romans. A dead march.*]

*Car.* Now dry thine eyes, my boy.

*Hengo.* Are they all gone?

I could have wept this hour yet.

*Car.* Come, take cheer,  
And raise thy spirit, child; if but this day  
Thou canst bear out thy faintness, the night coming  
I'll fashion our escape.

*Hengo.* Pray fear not me;  
Indeed I am very hearty.

*Car.* Be so still;  
His mischiefs lessen, that controls his ill. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Roman Camp.*

*Enter PERILLIUS.*

*Pet.* What do I ail, i' th' name of Heaven? I  
did but see her,

And see her die; she stinks by this time strongly,  
Abominably stinks. She was a woman,  
A thing I never cared for; but to die so,  
So confidently, bravely, strongly—Oh, the devil,  
I have the bots!—By Heaven, she scorned us  
strangely,

All we could do, or durst do; threaten'd us  
With such a noble anger, and so govern'd  
With such a fiery spirit—The plain bots!  
A pox upon the bots, the love-bots! Hang me,  
Hang me even out o' th' way, directly hang me!  
Oh, penny pipers, and most painful penners  
Of bountiful new ballads, what a subject  
What a sweet subject for your silver sounds,  
Is crept upon ye!

*Enter JUNIUS.*

*Jun.* Here he is; have at him! [*Sings.*]

She set the sword unto her breast,  
Great pity it was to see,  
That three drops of her life-warm blood,  
Run trickling down her knee.

Art thou there, bonny boy? And i' faith how dost  
thou?

*Pet.* Well, gramercy; how dost thou?—He has  
found me,  
Scented me out; the shame the devil owed me,  
He has kept his day with.—And what news,  
Junius?

*Jun.* It was an old tale ten thousand times told,  
Of a young lady was turn'd into mould,  
Her life was lovely, her death it was bold.

*Pet.* A cruel rogue! now he has drawn pursuit  
on me,

He hunts me like a devil.—No more singing!  
Thou hast got a cold: Come, let's go drink some

*Jun.* Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha! [*sack, boy.*]

*Pet.* Why dost thou laugh?  
What mare's nest hast thou found?

*Jun.* Ha, ha, ha!  
I cannot laugh alone.—Decius! Demetrius!  
Curius!—oh, my sides! ha, ha, ha, ha!  
The strangest jest!

*Pet.* Pr'ythee no more.

*Jun.* The admirablest fooling!

*Pet.* Thou art the prettiest fellow!

*Jun.* Sirs!

*Pet.* Why, Junius,

Pr'ythee, away, sweet Junius?

*Jun.* Let me sing then.

*Pet.* Whoa, here's a stir, now! *Sing a song o'  
sixpence!*

By Heaven, if—pr'ythee—pox on't, Junius!

*Jun.* I must either sing or laugh.

*Pet.* And what's your reason?

*Jun.* What's that to you ?

*Pet.* And I must whistle.

*Jun.* Do so.

Oh, I hear 'em coming.

*Pet.* I have a little business.

*Jun.* Thou shalt not go, believe it : What ! a gentleman

Of thy sweet conversation ?

*Pet.* Captain Junius,

Sweet captain, let me go with all celerity ! Things are not always one ; and do not question, Nor jeer, nor gibe : None of your doleful ditties, Nor your sweet conversation ; you will find then I may be angered.

*Jun.* By no means, Petillius ;

Anger a man that never knew passion ?

'Tis most impossible : A noble captain, A wise and generous gentleman ?

*Pet.* Tom Puppy,

Leave this way to abuse me ! I have found you, But, for your mother's sake, I will forgive you. Your subtle understanding may discover, As you think, some trim toy to make you merry, Some straw to tickle you ; but do not trust to't ; You are a young man, and may do well ; be sober, Carry yourself discreetly.

*Enter DECIDUS, DEMETRIUS, and CURIUS.*

*Jun.* Yes, forsooth.

*Dem.* How does the brave Petillius ?

*Jun.* Monstrous merry.

We two were talking what a kind of thing I was when I was in love ; what a strange monster For little boys and girls to wonder at ; How like a fool I looked !

*Dec.* So they do all,

Like great dull slaving fools.

*Jun.* Petillius saw too.

*Pet.* No more of this ; 'tis scurvy ; peace !

*Jun.* How nastily,

Indeed how beastly, all I did became me ! How I forgot to blow my nose ! There he stands, An honest and a wise man ; if himself (I dare avouch it boldly, for I know it) Should find himself in love——

*Pet.* I am angry.

*Jun.* Surely his wise self would hang his beastly self ;

His understanding self so mawl his ass self——

*Dec.* He's bound to do it ; for he knows the follies,

The poverties, and baseness, that belongs to't ; He has read upon the reformations long.

*Pet.* He has so.

*Jun.* 'Tis true, and he must do't : Nor is it fit Any such coward—— [indeed

*Pet.* You'll leave prating ?

*Jun.* Should dare come near the regiments, especially

Those curious puppies (for believe there are such) That only love behaviours : Those are dog-whelps, Dwindle away because a woman dies well ; Commit with passions only ; fornicate With the free spirit merely. You, Petillius, For you have long observed the world——

*Pet.* Dost thou hear ?

I'll beat thee damnably within these three hours ! Go pray ; may be I'll kill thee. Farewell, Jack-daws ! [Exit PETILLIUS.

*Dec.* What a strange thing he's grown !

*Jun.* I am glad he is so ;

And stranger he shall be before I leave him.

*Cur.* Is't possible her mere death——

*Jun.* I observed him,

And found him taken, infinitely taken, With her bravery ; I have followed him, And seen him kiss his sword since, court his scabbard,

Call *dying* dainty dear, her *brave mind* mistress ; Casting a thousand ways to give those forms, That he might lie with 'em, and get old armours. He had got me o' the hip once ; it shall go hard, But he shall find his own coin. [friends,

*Enter MACER.*

*Dec.* How now, Macer ?

Is Judas yet come in ?

*Enter JUDAS.*

*Macer.* Yes, and has lost Most of his men too. Here he is.

*Cur.* What news ?

*Judas.* I have lodged him ; rouse him, he that dares !

*Dem.* Where, Judas ?

*Judas.* On a steep rock i' th' woods, the boy too with him ;

And there he swears he'll keep his Christmas, gentlemen,

But he will come away with full conditions, Bravely, and like a Briton. He paid part of us ; Yet I think we fought bravely : For mine own part, I was four several times at half-sword with him, Twice stood his partizan ; but the plain truth is, He's a mere devil, and no man. I' th' end, he swunged us,

And swunged us soundly too : He fights by witchcraft ;

Yet for all that I saw him lodged.

*Jun.* Take more men, And scout him round. Macer, march you along. What victuals has he ?

*Judas.* Not a piece of biscuit, Not so much as will stop a tooth, nor water More than they make themselves : They lie Just like a brace of bear-whelps, close, and crafty, Sucking their fingers for their food.

*Dec.* Cut off then

All hope of that way ; take sufficient forces.

*Jun.* But use no foul play, on your lives ! that man

That does him mischief by deceit, I'll kill him.

*Macer.* He shall have fair play ; he deserves it.

*Judas.* Hark ye !

What should I do there then ? You are brave captains,

Most valiant men : Go up yourselves ; use virtue ; See what will come on't ; pray the gentleman

To come down, and be taken. Ye all know him, I think ye have felt him too : There ye shall find him,

His sword by his side, plums of a pound weight by him,

Will make your chops ache : You'll find it a more labour

To win him living, than climbing of a crow's nest.

*Dec.* Away, and compass him ; we shall come up, I am sure, within these two hours. Watch him close.

*Macer.* He shall flee through the air, if he escape us.

*Jun.* What's this loud lamentation ?

[*A sad noise within.*]

*Macer.* The dead body

Of the great Penius is new come to th' camp, sir.

*Dem.* Dead ?

*Macer.* By himself, they say.

*Jun.* I fear'd that fortune.

*Cur.* Peace guide him up to Heaven !

*Jun.* Away, good *Macer.*

[*Exeunt MACER and JUDAS.*]

*Enter SERTONIUS, DRUSIUS, REGULUS, and PETILLIUS.*

*Suet.* If thou be'st guilty,  
Some sullen plague, thou hat'st most, light upon  
The regiment return on Junius ; [thee !  
He well deserves it.

*Pet.* So !

*Suet.* Draw out three companies,  
(Yours, Decius, Junius, and thou, Petillius.)  
And make up instantly to Caratach ;  
He's in the wood before ye : We shall follow,  
After due ceremony done to th' dead,  
The noble dead. Come, let's go burn the body.

[*Exeunt all but PETILLIUS.*]

*Pet.* The regiment given from me ? disgraced  
In love too with a trifle to abuse me ? [openly ?  
A merry world, a fine world ! served seven years  
To be an ass o' both sides ? sweet Petillius,  
You have brought your hogs to a fine market !

You are wise, sir,

Your honourable brain-pan full of crotchets,  
An understanding gentleman ; your projects  
Cast with assurance ever ! Wouldst not thou now  
Be bang'd about the pate, Petillius ?  
Answer to that, sweet soldier ! surely, surely,  
I think you would ; pull'd by the nose, kick'd ?

Hang thee,

Thou art the arrant'st rascal ! Trust thy wisdom  
With anything of weight ? the wind with feathers !  
Out, you blind puppy ! you command ? you  
govern ?

Dig for a groat a-day, or serve a swine herd,  
Too noble for thy nature too !—I must up ;  
But what I shall do there, let time discover.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The mountainous Country, with  
the Rock in the Back-ground.*

*Enter MACER and JUDAS, with meat and a bottle.*

*Macer.* Hang it o' th' side o' th' rock, as though  
the Britons  
Stole hither to relieve him : Who first ventures  
To fetch it off is ours. I cannot see him.

*Judas.* He lies close in a hole above, I know it,  
Gnawing upon his anger.—Ha ! no ; 'tis not he.

*Macer.* 'Tis but the shaking of the boughs.

*Judas.* Pox shake 'em !

I am sure they shake me soundly.—There !

*Macer.* 'Tis nothing.

*Judas.* Make no noise ; if he stir, a deadly  
tempest

Of huge stones falls upon us. 'Tis done ! away,  
close ! [Exeunt.

*CARATACH appears on the rock.*

*Car.* Sleep still, sleep sweetly, child ; 'tis all  
thou feed'st on !

No gentle Briton near, no valiant charity,  
To bring thee food ? Poor knave, thou art sick,  
extreme sick,

Almost grown wild for meat ; and yet thy goodness  
Will not confess, nor shew it. All the woods  
Are double lined with soldiers ; no way left us  
To make a noble 'scape. I'll sit down by thee,  
And, when thou wak'st, either get meat to save  
thee,

Or lose my life i' th' purchase ; good Gods com-  
fort thee ! [Exit.

*Enter below JUNIUS, DECIUS, PETILLIUS, and Guide.*

*Guide.* You are not far off now, sir.

*Jun.* Draw the companies

The closest way through the woods ; we'll keep on  
this way.

*Guide.* I will, sir : Half a furlong more you'll  
come

Within the sight o' th' rock. Keep on the left  
side,

You'll be discover'd else : I'll lodge your compa-  
In the wild vines beyond ye. [nies

*Dec.* Do you mark him ?

[*Pointing to PETILLIUS.*]

*Jun.* Yes, and am sorry for him.

*Pet.* Junius,

Pray let me speak two words with you.

*Jun.* Walk afore ;

I'll overtake you straight.

*Dec.* I will. [Exit.

*Jun.* Now, captain ?

*Pet.* You have oft told me, you have loved me,

*Jun.* Most sure I told you truth then. [Junius.

*Pet.* And that love

Should not deny me any honest thing.

*Jun.* It shall not.

*Pet.* Dare you swear it ?

I have forgot all passages between us  
That have been ill, forgiven too, forgot.

*Jun.* What would this man have ?—By the gods,  
So it be fit to grant you. [I do, sir,

*Pet.* 'Tis most honest.

*Jun.* Why, then I'll do it.

*Pet.* Kill me.

*Jun.* How !

*Pet.* Pray kill me.

*Jun.* Kill you ?

*Pet.* Ay, kill me quickly, suddenly ;

Now kill me.

*Jun.* On what reason ? You amaze me !

*Pet.* If you do love me, kill me ; ask me not why :  
I would be kill'd, and by you.

*Jun.* Mercy on me !

What ails this man ? Petillius !

*Pet.* Pray you dispatch me ;  
You are not safe whilst I live : I am dangerous,  
Troubled extremely, even to mischief, Junius,  
An enemy to all good men. Fear not ; 'tis justice ;  
I shall kill you else.

*Jun.* Tell me but the cause,  
And I will do it.

*Pet.* I am disgraced, my service  
Slighted and unrewarded by the general,  
My hopes left wild and naked ; besides these,  
I am grown ridiculous, an ass, a folly,  
I dare not trust myself with : Pr'ythee, kill me !

*Jun.* All these may be redeem'd as easily  
As you would heal your finger.

*Pet.* Nay—

*Jun.* Stay, I'll do it ;

You shall not need your anger. But first, Petillius,  
You shall unarm yourself ; I dare not trust  
A man so bent to mischief.

*Pet.* There's my sword, [Gives up his sword.  
And do it handsomely.

*Jun.* Yes, I will kill you,  
Believe that certain; but first I'll lay before you  
The most extreme fool you have play'd in this,  
The honour purposed for you, the great honour  
The general intended you.

*Pet.* How?

*Jun.* And then I'll kill you,  
Because you shall die miserable. Know, sir,  
The regiment was given me, but till time  
Call'd you to do some worthy deed, might stop  
The people's ill thoughts of you for lord Penius,  
I mean his death. How soon this time's come to  
And hasted by Suetonius! "Go," says he, [you,  
"Junius and Decius, and go thou, Petillius,"  
(Distinctly, *thou, Petillius,*) "and draw up,  
To take stout Caratach:" "There's the deed pur-  
A deed to take off all faults, of all natures: [posed,  
"And *thou, Petillius,*" mark it! there's the ho-  
And that done, all made even. [near;

*Pet.* Stay!

*Jun.* No, I'll kill you.  
He knew thee absolute, and full in soldier,  
Daring beyond all dangers, found thee out,  
According to the boldness of thy spirit,  
A subject, such a subject—

*Pet.* Hark you, Junius!

I will live now.

*Jun.* By no means.—Woo'd thy worth,  
Held thee by the chin up, as thou sunk'st, and  
shewed thee

How Honour held her arms out. Come, make  
Since you will die an ass. [ready,

*Pet.* Thou wilt not kill me?

*Jun.* By Heaven, but I will, sir. I'll have no  
man dangerous  
Live to destroy me afterward. Besides, you have  
gotten

Honour enough; let young men rise now. Nay,  
I do perceive too by the general, (which is  
One main cause you shall die, howe'er he carry it)  
Such a strong doting on you, that I fear  
You shall command in chief; how are we paid then?  
Come, if you'll pray, dispatch it.

*Pet.* Is there no way?

*Jun.* Not any way to live.

*Pet.* I will do anything,  
Redeem myself at any price: Good Junius,  
Let me but die upon the rock, but offer  
My life up like a soldier!

*Jun.* You will seek then?

To outdo every man.

*Pet.* Believe it, Junius,

You shall go stroke by stroke with me.

*Jun.* You'll leave off too,

As you are noble, and a soldier,

For ever these mad fancies?

*Pet.* Dare you trust me?

By all that's good and honest—

*Jun.* There's your sword then;

And now, come on a new man: Virtue guide thee!

[Exeunt.

Enter CARATACH and HENGO, on the rock.

*Car.* Courage, my boy! I have found meat:

Look, Hengo,

Look where some blessed Briton, to preserve thee,  
Has hung a little food and drink: Cheer up, boy;  
Do not forsake me now!

*Hengo.* Oh, uncle, uncle,

I feel I cannot stay long; yet I'll fetch it,  
To keep your noble life. Uncle, I am heart-whole,  
And would live.

*Car.* Thou shalt, long I hope.

*Hengo.* But my head, uncle!

Methinks the rock goes round.

Enter MACER and JUDAS below, and stand apart.

*Macer.* MARK 'em well, Judas.

*Judas.* Peace, as you love your life!

*Hengo.* Do not you hear

The noise of bells?

*Car.* Of bells, boy? 'Tis thy fancy;

Alas, thy body's full of wind.

*Hengo.* Methinks, sir,  
They ring a strange sad knell, a preparation  
To some near funeral of state: Nay, weep not,  
Mine own sweet uncle! you will kill me sooner.

*Car.* Oh, my poor chicken!

*Hengo.* Fy, faint-hearted uncle!

Come, tie me in your belt, and let me down.

*Car.* I'll go myself, boy.

*Hengo.* No, as you love me, uncle!

I will not eat it, if I do not fetch it;

The danger only I desire; pray tie me!

*Car.* I will, and all my care hang o'er thee!

Come, child,

My valiant child! [Lets HENGO down by his belt.

*Hengo.* Let me down apace, uncle,  
And you shall see how like a daw I'll whip it  
From all their policies; for 'tis most certain  
A Roman train: And you must hold me sure too,  
You'll spoil all else. When I have brought it, uncle,  
We'll be as merry—

*Car.* Go, i' th' name of Heaven, boy!

*Hengo.* Quick, quick, uncle! I have it.—Oh!

[JUDAS shoots HENGO.

*Car.* What ail'st thou?

*Hengo.* Oh, my best uncle, I am slain!

*Car.* I see you,

[CARATACH kills JUDAS with a stone, and draws up  
HENGO.

And Heaven direct my hand!—Destruction

Go with thy coward soul!—How dost thou, boy?—

Oh, villain, pocky villain!

*Hengo.* Oh, uncle, uncle,

Oh, how it pricks me (am I preserved for this?)

Extremely pricks me!

*Car.* Coward, rascal coward!

Dogs eat thy flesh!

*Hengo.* Oh, I bleed hard; I faint too; out upon't,

How sick I am!—The lean rogue, uncle!

*Car.* Look, boy;

I have laid him sure enough.

*Hengo.* Have you knock'd his brains out?

*Car.* I warrant thee for stirring more: Cheer

up, child.

*Hengo.* Hold my sides hard; stop, stop; oh,  
wretched fortune,

Must we part thus? Still I grow sicker, uncle.

*Car.* Heaven look upon this noble child!

*Hengo.* I once hoped

I should have lived to have met these bloody  
Romans

At my sword's point, to have revenged my father,  
To have beaten 'em. Oh, hold me hard! But,

uncle—

*Car.* Thou shalt live still, I hope, boy. Shall I  
draw it?

*Hengo.* You draw away my soul then; I would  
live

A little longer, (spare me, Heavens!) but only  
To thank you for your tender love! Good uncle,  
Good noble uncle, weep not!

*Car.* Oh, my chicken,  
My dear boy, what shall I lose?

*Hengo.* Why, a child,  
That must have died however; had this 'scaped me,  
Fever or famine—I was born to die, sir.

*Car.* But thus unblown, my boy?

*Hengo.* I go the straighter  
My journey to the gods. Sure I shall know you  
When you come, uncle?

*Car.* Yes, boy.

*Hengo.* And I hope  
We shall enjoy together that great blessedness  
You told me of.

*Car.* Most certain, child.

*Hengo.* I grow cold;  
Mine eyes are going.

*Car.* Lift 'em up!

*Hengo.* Pray for me;  
And, noble uncle, when my bones are ashes,  
Think of your little nephew! Mercy!

*Car.* Mercy!

You blessed angels, take him!

*Hengo.* Kiss me! so.

Farewell, farewell!

[*Dies.*

*Car.* Farewell the hopes of Britain!  
Thou royal graft, farewell for ever!—Time and  
Death,

Ye have done your worst. Fortune, now see, now  
proudly

Pluck off thy veil, and view thy triumph: Look,  
Look what thou hast brought this land to.—Oh,  
fair flower,

How lovely yet thy ruins shew, how sweetly  
Even death embraces thee! The peace of Heaven,  
The fellowship of all great souls, be with thee!

*Enter PETILLIUS and JUNIUS, on the rock.*

Ha! Dare ye, Romans? Ye shall win me bravely.  
Thou'rt mine!

[*Fight.*

*Jun.* Not yet, sir.

*Car.* Breathe ye, ye poor Romans,  
And come up all, with all your ancient valours;  
Like a rough wind I'll shake your souls, and send  
'em——

*Enter SURNONIUS, and all the Roman Captains.*

*Suet.* Yield thee, bold Caratach! By all the gods,  
As I am soldier, as I envy thee,  
I'll use thee like thyself, the valiant Briton.

*Pet.* Brave soldier, yield, thou stock of arms  
and honour,  
Thou filler of the world with fame and glory!

*Jun.* Most worthy man, we'll woo thee, be thy  
prisoners.

*Suet.* Excellent Briton, do me but that honour,  
That more to me than conquests, that true happi-  
ness,

To be my friend!

*Car.* Oh, Romans, see what here is!  
Had this boy lived——

*Suet.* For fame's sake, for thy sword's sake,  
As thou desirest to build thy virtues greater!  
By all that's excellent in man, and honest——

*Car.* I do believe. Ye have had me a brave  
foe;

Make me a noble friend, and from your goodness,  
Give this boy honourable earth to lie in!

*Suet.* He shall have fitting funeral.

*Car.* I yield then;  
Not to your blows, but your brave courtesies.

*Pet.* Thus we conduct then to the arms of peace  
The wonder of the world!

*Suet.* Thus I embrace thee; [Flourish.

And let it be no flattery that I tell thee,  
Thou art the only soldier!

*Car.* How to thank ye,  
I must hereafter find upon your usage.  
I am for Rome?

*Suet.* You must.

*Car.* Then Rome shall know  
The man that makes her spring of glory grow.

*Suet.* Petillius, you have shewn much worth this  
day,

Redeem'd much error; you have my love again;  
Preserve it.—Junius, with you I make him  
Equal in the regiment.

*Jun.* The elder and the nobler;  
I will give place, sir.

*Suet.* You shew a friend's soul.  
March on, and through the camp, in every tongue,  
The virtues of great Caratach be sung! [Exeunt.

# THE KNIGHT OF THE BURNING PESTLE.

DEDICATION OF THE FIRST EDITION, 1613.

TO HIS MANY WAYS ENDEARED FRIEND  
MASTER ROBERT KEYSAR.

See.—This unfortunate child, who, in eight days, (as lately I have learned,) was begot and born, soon after was, by his parents, (perhaps, because he was so unlike his brethren,) exposed to the wide world, who, for want of judgment, or not understanding the privy mark of *irony* about it, (which showed it was no offspring of any vulgar brain,) utterly rejected it: so that, for want of acceptance, it was even ready to give up the ghost, and was in danger to have been smothered in perpetual oblivion, if you (out of your direct *antipathy* to ingratitude) had not been moved both to relieve and cherish it: wherein I must needs commend both your judgment, understanding, and singular love to good wit; You afterwards sent it to me, yet, being an infant and somewhat ragged, I have fostered it privately in my bosom these two years, and now, to show my love, return it to you, clad in good lasting clothes, which scarce memory will wear out, and able to speak for itself; and withal, as it telleth me, desirous to try his fortune in the world, where, if yet it be welcome, father, foster-father, nurse, and child, all have their desired end. If it be alighted or traduced, it begs his father will beget him a younger brother, who shall revenge his quarrel, and challenge the world either of fact and merely literal interpretation, or illiterate misprision. Perhaps it will be thought of the race of *Don Quixote*; we both may confidently swear it is his elder above a year; and, therefore, may (by virtue of his birthright) challenge the wall of him. I doubt not but they will meet in their adventures, and I hope the breaking of one staff will make them friends; and perhaps they will combine themselves, and travel through the world to seek their adventures. So I commend him to his good fortune, and myself to your love.

Your assured friend, W. B.

TO THE READERS OF THIS COMEDY.

[From the Second Edition, 1635.]

GENTLEMEN, the world is so nice in these our times, that for apparel there is no fashion; for music (which is a fine art, though now alighted) no instrument; for diet, none but the French kickshaws that are delicate; and for plays, no invention but that which now runneth an invective way, touching some particular persons, or else it is censured before it is thoroughly understood. This is all that I have to say, that the author had no intent to wrong any one in this comedy; but, as a merry passage, here and there interlaced it with delight, which he hopes will please all, and be hurtful to none.

PROLOGUE,

FROM THE SECOND EDITION.

WHERE the bee can suck no honey, she leaves her sting behind; and where the bear cannot find *origanum* to heal his grief, he blasteth all the other leaves with his breath. We fear it is like to fare so with us; that, seeing you cannot draw from our labours sweet content, you leave behind you a sour mislike, and with open reproach blame our good meaning, because you cannot reap the wonted mirth. Our intent was at this time to move inward delight, not outward bitterness; and to breed (if it might be) soft smiling, not loud laughing; knowing it, to the wise, to be a great pleasure to bear counsel mixed with wit, as to the foolish, to have sport mingled with rudeness. They were banished the theatre of Athens, and from Rome hissed, that brought parasites on the stage, with apish actions, or fools with uncivil habits, or courtiers with immodest words. We have endeavoured to be as far from unseemly speeches, to make your ears glow, as we hope you will be free from unkind reports, or mistaking the author's intention, who never aimed at any one particular in this play, to make our cheeks blush. And thus I leave it, and thee to thine own censure, to like or dislike.

—VAL.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SPEAKER OF THE PROLOGUE,  
 THE CITIZEN,  
 THE CITIZEN'S WIFE,  
 RALPH, his Apprentice,  
 VENTERWELS, a rich Merchant, Father of LUCE.  
 JASPER, his Apprentice.  
 MASTER HUMPHREY, a Friend to the Merchant.  
 OLD MASTER MERRYTHOUGHT, Father of JASPER and  
 MICHAEL.  
 MICHAEL, Second Son of Mistress MERRYTHOUGHT.  
 TIM, acting as Squire  
 GEORGE, acting as Dwarf } to RALPH.  
 Host.  
 Barber.

Tapster.  
 Three supposed Knights.  
 A Captain.  
 WILLIAM HANERTON.  
 GEORGE GREENGOOSE,  
 Sergeant.  
 Soldiers.  
 Boy, that danceth and singeth.  
 LUCE, the Merchant's Daughter, beloved of, and  
 loving JASPER.  
 MISTRESS MERRYTHOUGHT, JASPER's Mother.  
 Woman Captive.  
 POMPIONA, Princess of Moldavia.

SCENE,—LONDON, AND THE NEIGHBOURING COUNTRY, EXCEPTING ACT IV., SCENE II.,  
 WHERE IT IS IN MOLDAVIA.

## INDUCTION.

Enter Speaker of the Prologue. The Citizen, his Wife,  
 and RALPH, sitting below the stage among the Spectators.  
 Several Gentlemen sitting upon the Stage.

Prologue. *From all that's near the court, from  
 all that's great  
 Within the compass of the city-walls,  
 We now have brought our scene—*

Citizen leaps upon the Stage.

Cit. Hold your peace, Goodman boy!

Pro. What do you mean, sir?

Cit. That you have no good meaning: This seven  
 years there hath been plays at this house, I have  
 observed it, you have still girds at citizens; and  
 now you call your play, "The London Merchant."  
 Down with your title, boy, down with your title!

Pro. Are you a member of the noble city?

Cit. I am.

Pro. And a freeman?

Cit. Yea, and a grocer.

Pro. So, grocer; then, by your sweet favour,  
 we intend no abuse to the city.

Cit. No, sir? yes, sir; if you were not resolved  
 to play the Jacks, what need you study for new  
 subjects, purposely to abuse your betters? Why  
 could not you be contented, as well as others,  
 with the legend of Whittington, or the Life and  
 Death of Sir Thomas Gresham, with the building  
 of the Royal Exchange? or the story of Queen  
 Eleanor, with the rearing of London-Bridge upon  
 wool-sacks?

Pro. You seem to be an understanding man;  
 what would you have us do, sir?

Cit. Why, present something notably in honour  
 of the commons of the city.

Pro. Why, what do you say to the Life and  
 Death of fat Drake, or the Repairing of Fleet  
 Privies?

Cit. I do not like that; but I will have a citizen,  
 and he shall be of my own trade.

Pro. Oh, you should have told us your mind a  
 month since; our play is ready to begin now.

Cit. 'Tis all one for that; I will have a grocer,  
 and he shall do admirable things.

Pro. What will you have him do?

Cit. Marry, I will have him—

Wife. [*Below.*] Husband, husband!

Ralph. [*Below.*] Peace, mistress!

Wife. Hold thy peace, Ralph; I know what I  
 do, I warrant thee. Husband, husband!

Cit. What say'st thou, cony?

Wife. Let him kill a lion with a Pestle, hus-  
 band! let him kill a lion with a Pestle!

Cit. So he shall: I'll have him kill a lion with  
 a Pestle.

Wife. Husband! shall I come up, husband?

Cit. Ay, cony.—Ralph, help your mistress this  
 way.—Pray, gentlemen, make her a little room.  
 I pray you, sir, lend me your hand to help up my  
 wife: I thank you, sir; so!

[Wife comes upon the Stage.]

Wife. By your leave, gentlemen all! I'm some-  
 thing troublesome! I'm a stranger here; I was  
 ne'er at one of these plays, as they say, before;  
 but I should have seen Jane Shore once; and my  
 husband hath promised me any time this twelve-  
 month, to carry me to the Bold Beauchamps, but  
 in truth he did not. I pray you bear with me.

Cit. Boy, let my wife and I have a couple of  
 stools, and then begin; and let the grocer do rare  
 things.

[Stools are brought, and they sit down.]

Pro. But, sir, we have never a boy to play him:  
 Every one hath a part already.

Wife. Husband, husband, for God's sake, let  
 Ralph play him: Beshrew me, if I do not think he  
 will go beyond them all.

Cit. Well remember'd, wife.—Come up, Ralph!  
 I'll tell you, gentlemen; let them but lend him a  
 suit of reparable, and necessities, and, by gad, if  
 any of them all blow wind in the tail on him, I'll  
 be hanged.

[RALPH comes on the Stage.]

Wife. I pray you, youth, let him have a suit of  
 reparable! I'll be sworn, gentlemen, my husband  
 tells you true: He will act you sometimes at our  
 house, that all the neighbours cry out on him; he  
 will fetch you up a couraging part so in the garret,  
 that we are all as feared I warrant you, that we  
 quake again. We'll fear our children with him;  
 if they be never so unruly, do but cry, "Ralph  
 comes, Ralph comes," to them, and they'll be as

quiet as lambs.—Hold up thy head, Ralph; shew the gentleman what thou canst do; speak a huffing part; I warrant you the gentlemen will accept of it.

*Cit.* Do, Ralph, do.

*Ralph.* By Heaven, methinks, it were an easy leap

To pluck bright honour from the pale-faced moon,  
Or dive into the bottom of the sea,  
Where never fathom-line touch'd any ground,  
And pluck up drowned honour from the lake of hell.

*Cit.* How say you, gentlemen, is it not as I told you?

*Wife.* Nay, gentlemen, he hath played before, my husband says, Musidorus, before the wardens of our company.

*Cit.* Ay, and he should have played Jeronimo with a shoemaker for a wager.

*Prof.* He shall have a suit of apparel, if he will go in.

*Cit.* In, Ralph, in, Ralph! and set out the grocery in their kind, if thou lovest me.

*Wife.* I warrant our Ralph will look finely when he's dress'd.

*Prof.* But what will you have it call'd?

*Cit.* "The Grocer's Honour."

*Prof.* Methinks "The Knight of the Burning Pestle" were better.

*Wife.* I'll be sworn, husband, that's as good a name as can be.

*Cit.* Let it be so; begin, begin; my wife and I will sit down.

*Prof.* I pray you do.

*Cit.* What stately music have you? you have shaums?

*Prof.* Shaums? No.

*Cit.* No? I'm a thief if my mind did not give me so. Ralph plays a stately part, and he must needs have shaums: I'll be at the charge of them myself, rather than we'll be without them.

*Prof.* So you are like to be.

*Cit.* Why, and so I will be: There's two shillings; let's have the waits of Southwark! they are as rare fellows as any are in England, and that will fetch them all o'er the water, with a vengeance, as if they were mad.

*Prof.* You shall have them. Will you sit down then?

*Cit.* Ay.—Come, wife.

*Wife.* Sit you merry all, gentlemen; I'm bold to sit amongst you for my ease.

*Prof.* From all that's near the court, from all that's great

Within the compass of the city-walls,

We now have brought our scene: Fly far from hence

All private taxes, [all] immodest phrases,  
Whatever may but shew like vicious!

For wicked mirth never true pleasure brings,  
But honest minds are pleased with honest things.—

Thus much for what we do; but, for Ralph's part, you must answer for yourself.

*Cit.* Take you no care for Ralph; he'll discharge himself, I warrant you.

*Wife.* I'faith, gentlemen, I'll give my word for Ralph.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the House of VENTERWELS.

*Enter VENTERWELS and JASPER.*

*Vent.* Sirrah, I'll make you know you are my apprentice,

And whom my charitable love redeem'd  
Even from the fall of fortune; gave thee heat  
And growth, to be what now thou art, new-cast  
Adding the trust of all I have, at home, [thee;  
In foreign staples, or upon the sea,  
To thy direction; tied the good opinions  
Both of myself and friends to thy endeavours;  
So fair were thy beginnings: But with these,  
As I remember, you had never charge  
To love your master's daughter; and even then  
When I had found a wealthy husband for her;  
I take it, sir, you had not: But, however,  
I'll break the neck of that commission,  
And make you know you're but a merchant's  
factor.

*Jasp.* Sir, I do liberally confess I am yours,  
Bound both by love and duty to your service,  
In which my labour hath been all my profit;  
I have not lost in bargain, nor delighted  
To wear your honest gains upon my back;  
Nor have I given a pension to my blood,  
Or lavishly in play consumed your stock:  
These, and the miseries that do attend them,  
I dare with innocence proclaim are strangers

To all my temperate actions. For your daughter,  
If there be any love to my deservings  
Borne by her virtuous self, I cannot stop it;  
Nor am I able to refrain her wishes:  
She is private to herself, and best of knowledge  
Whom she will make so happy as to sigh for.  
Besides, I cannot think you mean to match her  
Unto a fellow of so lame a presence,  
One that hath little left of nature in him.

*Vent.* 'Tis very well, sir; I can tell your wisdom  
How all this shall be cured.

*Jasp.* Your care becomes you.

*Vent.* And thus it must be, sir: I here discharge you

My house and service; take your liberty;  
And when I want a son I'll send for you. [*Exit.*

*Jasp.* These be the fair rewards of them that  
Oh, you that live in freedom never prove [love.  
The travail of a mind led by desire!

*Enter LUCE.*

*Luce.* Why, how now, friend? struck with my  
father's thunder?

*Jasp.* Struck, and struck dead, unless the remedy  
Be full of speed and virtue; I am, now,  
What I expected long, no more your father's.

*Luce.* But mine?

*Jasp.* But yours, and only yours, I am;  
That's all I have to keep me from the statue.  
You dare be constant still?

*Luce.* Oh, fear me not !  
In this I dare be better than a woman.  
Nor shall his anger nor his offers move me,  
Were they both equal to a prince's power.

*Jasp.* You know my rival ?

*Luce.* Yes, and love him dearly ;  
Even as I love an ague, or foul weather :  
I pr'ythee, Jasper, fear him not !

*Jasp.* Oh, no ;

I do not mean to do him so much kindness.  
But to our own desires : You know the plot  
We both agreed on ?

*Luce.* Yes, and will perform  
My part exactly.

*Jasp.* I desire no more.  
Farewell, and keep my heart ; 'tis yours.

*Luce.* I take it ;  
He must do miracles, makes me forsake it.

[*Exeunt.*]

"*Cit.* Fy upon 'em, little infidels ! what a matter's here now ? Well, I'll be hang'd for a half-penny, if there be not some abomination knavery in this play. Well ; let 'em look to't ; Ralph must come, and if there be any tricks a-brewing—

"*Wife.* Let 'em brew and bake too, husband, a' God's name ; Ralph will find all out. I warrant you, an they were older than they are.—I pray, my pretty youth, is Ralph ready ?

"*Boy.* He will be presently.

"*Wife.* Now, I pray you, make my commendations unto him, and withal, carry him this stick of liquorice ; tell him his mistress sent it him ; and bid him bite a piece ; 'twill open his pipes the better, say."

[*Exit Boy.*]

*Enter VENTERWELS and Master HUMPHREY.*

*Vent.* Come, sir, she's yours ; upon my faith,  
she's yours ;

You have my hand : for other idle lets,  
Between your hopes and her, thus with a wind  
They are scattered, and no more. My wanton  
prentice,

That like a bladder blew himself with love,  
I have let out, and sent him to discover  
New masters yet unknown.

*Hum.* I thank you, sir,  
Indeed I thank you, sir ; and, ere I stir,  
It shall be known, however you do deem,  
I am of gentle blood, and gentle seem.

*Vent.* Oh, sir, I know it certain.

*Hum.* Sir, my friend,  
Although, as writers say, all things have end,  
And that we call a pudding hath his two,  
Oh, let it not seem strange, I pray to you,  
If in this bloody simile I put  
My love, more endless than frail things or gut.

"*Wife.* Husband, I pr'ythee, sweet lamb, tell  
me one thing ; but tell me truly.—Stay, youths, I  
beseech you, till I question my husband.

"*Cit.* What is it, mouse ?

"*Wife.* Sirrah, didst thou ever see a prettier  
child ? how it behaves itself, I warrant ye ! and  
speaks and looks, and perts up the head ! I pray  
you, brother, with your favour, were you never  
none of Master Moncaster's scholars ?

"*Cit.* Chicken, I pr'ythee heartily contain thy-  
self ; the childer are pretty childer ; but when  
Ralph comes, lamb—

"*Wife.* Ay, when Ralph comes, cony !—Well,  
my youth, you may proceed."

*Vent.* Well, sir ; you know my love, and rest, I  
hope,

Assured of my consent ; get but my daughter's,  
And wed her when you please. You must be bold,  
And clap in close unto her ; come, I know  
You have language good enough to win a wench.

"*Wife.* A whoreson tyrant ! 'hath been an old  
stringer in his days, I warrant him !"

*Hum.* I take your gentle offer, and withal  
Yield love again for love reciprocal.

*Vent.* What, Luce ! within there !

*Enter Luce.*

*Luce.* Call'd you, sir ?

*Vent.* I did ;  
Give entertainment to this gentleman ;  
And see you be not froward.—To her, sir !  
My presence will but be an eye-sore to you.

[*Exit.*]

*Hum.* Fair mistress Luce, how do you ? are you  
well ?

Give me your hand, and then I pray you tell  
How doth your little sister, and your brother ?  
And whether you love me or any other ?

*Luce.* Sir, these are quickly answered.

*Hum.* So they are,  
Where women are not cruel. But how far  
Is it now distant from the place we are in,  
Unto that blessed place, your father's warren ?

*Luce.* What makes you think of that, sir ?

*Hum.* Even that face ;  
For stealing rabbits whilome in that place,  
God Cupid, or the keeper, I know not whether,  
Unto my cost and charges brought you thither,  
And there began—

*Luce.* Your game, sir ?

*Hum.* Let no game,  
Or anything that tendeth to the same,  
Be ever more remember'd, thou fair killer,  
For whom I sate me down and brake my tiller.

"*Wife.* There's a kind gentleman, I warrant  
you ; when will you do as much for me, George ?"

*Luce.* Beshrew me, sir, I'm sorry for your  
losses ;

But, as the proverb says, 'I cannot cry ;'  
I would you had not seen me !

*Hum.* So would I,  
Unless you had more maw to do me good.

*Luce.* Why, cannot this strange passion be  
withstood ?

Send for a constable, and raise the town.

*Hum.* Oh, no, my valiant love will batter down  
Millions of constables, and put to flight  
Even that great watch of Midsummer-day at night.

*Luce.* Beshrew me, sir, 'twere good I yielded  
then ;

Weak women cannot hope, where valiant men  
Have no resistance.

*Hum.* Yield then ; I am full  
Of pity, though I say it, and can pull  
Out of my pocket thus a pair of gloves.  
Look, Lucy, look ; the dog's tooth, nor the dove's,  
Are not so white as these ; and sweet they be,  
And whipt about with silk, as you may see.  
If you desire the price, shoot from your eye  
A beam to this place, and you shall espy  
F S, which is to say, my sweetest honey,  
They cost me three and two-pence, or no money.

*Luce.* Well, sir, I take them kindly, and I thank  
[*you:*]

*Hum.* Nothing.

*Luce.* Why then, farewell!

*Hum.* Nor so, nor so; for, lady, I must tell,  
Before we part for what we met together;

God grant me time, and patience, and fair weather!

*Luce.* Speak, and declare your mind in terms  
so brief.

*Hum.* I shall; then first and foremost, for relief  
I call to you, if that you can afford it;  
I care not at what price, for on my word, it  
shall be repaid again, although it cost me  
More than I'll speak of now; for love hath toss'd  
In furious blanket like a tennis-ball, [me  
And now I rise aloft, and now I fall.

*Luce.* Alas, good gentleman, alas the day!

*Hum.* I thank you heartily; and, as I say,  
Thus do I still continue without rest,  
I'th' morning like a man, at night a beast,  
Roaring and bellowing mine own disquiet,  
That much I fear, forsaking of my diet  
Will bring me presently to that quandary,  
I shall bid all adieu.

*Luce.* Now, by St. Mary,  
That were great pity!

*Hum.* So it were, beshrew me;

Then ease me, lusty Luce, and pity shew me.

*Luce.* Why, sir, you know my will is nothing  
worth

Without my father's grant; get his consent,  
And then you may with [full] assurance try me.

*Hum.* The worshipful your sire will not deny me,  
For I have ask'd him, and he hath replied,  
'Sweet master Humphrey, Luce shall be thy bride.'

*Luce.* Sweet master Humphrey, then I am con-  
*Hum.* And so am I, in truth. [tent.

*Luce.* Yet take me with you;

There is another clause must be annex'd,  
And this it is: I swore, and will perform it,  
No man shall ever 'joy me as his wife,  
But he that stole me hence: If you dare venture,  
I'm yours (you need not fear; my father loves you)  
If not, farewell for ever!

*Hum.* Stay, nymph, stay!

I have a double gelding, colour'd bay,  
Sprung by his father from Barbarian kind;  
Another for myself, though somewhat blind,  
Yet true as trusty tree.

*Luce.* I'm satisfied;

And so I give my hand. Our course must lie  
Through Waltham-Forest, where I have a friend  
Will entertain us. So farewell, Sir Humphrey,  
And think upon your business! [Exit LUCE.

*Hum.* Though I die,  
I am resolved to venture life and limb,  
For one so young, so fair, so kind, so trim.  
[Exit HUMPHREY.

"*Wife.* By my faith and troth, George, and as  
I am virtuous, it is e'en the kindest young man  
that ever trod on shoe-leather. Well, go thy  
ways; if thou hast her not, 'tis not thy fault, faith.

"*Cit.* I pr'ythee, mouse, be patient! a' shall  
have her, or I'll make some of 'em smooke for't.

"*Wife.* That's my good lamb, George. Fy!  
this stinking tobacco kills men! 'would there were  
some in England! Now I pray, gentlemen, what  
good does this stinking tobacco do you? nothing,  
I warrant you; make chimnies a' your faces!"

## SCENE II.—A Grocer's Shop.

Enter RALPH, like a Grocer, with two Apprentices,  
reading Palmerin of England.

"*Wife.* Oh, husband, husband, now, now!  
there's Ralph, there's Ralph."

"*Cit.* Peace, fool! let Ralph alone.—Hark you,  
Ralph; do not strain yourself too much at the first,  
Peace! Begin, Ralph."

*Ralph.* (Reads.) Then Palmerin and Trineus, snatching  
their lances from their dwarfs, and clasping their helmets,  
gallop'd amain after the giant; and Palmerin having  
gotten a sight of him, came posting amain, saying, 'Stay,  
traitorous thief! for thou mayst not so carry away her,  
that is worth the greatest lord in the world;' and, with  
these words, gave him a blow on the shoulder, that he  
struck him besides his elephant. And Trineus coming  
to the knight that had Azebola behind him, set him soon  
besides his horse, with his neck broken in the fall; so that  
the princess getting out of the throng, between joy and  
grief, said, "All happy knight, the mirror of all such as  
follow arms, now may I be well assured of the love thou  
bestest me."

I wonder why the kings do not raise an army of  
fourteen or fifteen hundred thousand men, as big  
as the army that the prince of Portigo brought  
against Rosicler, and destroy these giants; they do  
much hurt to wandering damsels, that go in quest  
of their knights.

"*Wife.* Faith, husband, and Ralph says true;  
for they say the king of Portugal cannot sit at his  
meat, but the giants and the ettins will come and  
snatch it from him

"*Cit.* Hold thy tongue.—On, Ralph!"

*Ralph.* And certainly those knights are much to  
be commended, who, neglecting their possessions,  
wander with a squire and a dwarf through the  
desarts, to relieve poor ladies.

"*Wife.* Ay, by my faith are they, Ralph; let  
'em say what they will, they are indeed. Our  
knights neglect their possessions well enough, but  
they do not the rest."

*Ralph.* There are no such courteous and fair  
well-spoken knights in this age: They will call one  
the *son of a whore*, that Palmerin of England  
would have call'd *fair sir*; and one that Rosicler  
would have call'd *right beauteous damsel*, they will  
call *damn'd bitch*.

"*Wife.* I'll be sworn will they, Ralph; they  
have called me so an hundred times, about a scurvy  
pipe of tobacco."

*Ralph.* But what brave spirit could be content  
to sit in his shop, with a flappet of wood, and a  
blue apron before him, selling Methridatam and  
dragons' water to visited houses, that might pursue  
feats of arms, and, through his noble achievements,  
procure such a famous history to be written of his  
heroic prowess?

"*Cit.* Well said, Ralph; some more of those  
words, Ralph!

"*Wife.* They go finely, by my troth."

*Ralph.* Why should not I then pursue this  
course, both for the credit of myself and our com-  
pany? for amongst all the worthy books of  
atchievements, I do not call to mind that I yet  
read of a Grocer-Errant; I will be the said Knight  
—Have you heard of any that hath wandered un-  
furnished of his squire and dwarf? My elder pre-  
ntice Tim shall be my trusty squire, and Little George  
my dwarf. Hence, my blue apron! Yet, in remem-  
brance of my former trade, upon my shield shall be

pourtrayed a Burning Pestle, and I will be called the Knight of the Burning Pestle.

"*Wife.* Nay, I dare swear thou wilt not forget thy old trade; thou wert ever meek."

*Ralph.* Tim!

*Tim.* Anon.

*Ralph.* My beloved squire, and George my dwarf, I charge you that from henceforth you never call me by any other name, but the *Right courteous and valiant Knight of the Burning Pestle*; and that you never call any female by the name of a woman or wench, but *fair lady*, if she have her desires; if not, *distressed damsel*; that you call all forests and heaths, *deserts*, and all horses, *palfries*!

"*Wife.* This is very fine!—'Faith, do the gentlemen like Ralph, think you, husband?"

"*Cit.* Ay, I warrant thee; and the players would give all the shoes in their shop for him."

*Ralph.* My beloved squire Tim, stand out: Admit this were a desert, and over it a knight-errant pricking, and I should bid you enquire of his intents, what would you say?

*Tim.* 'Sir, my master sent me to know whither you are riding?'

*Ralph.* No! thus; 'Fair sir! the *Right courteous and valiant Knight of the Burning Pestle* commanded me to enquire upon what adventure you are bound, whether to relieve some distressed damsels, or otherwise.'

"*Cit.* Whoreson blockhead, cannot remember!"

"*Wife.* 'Faith, and Ralph told him on't before; all the gentlemen heard him; did he not, gentlemen? did not Ralph tell him on't?"

*George.* *Right courteous and valiant Knight of the Burning Pestle*, here is a distressed damsel, to have a halfpenny-worth of pepper.

"*Wife.* That's a good boy! see, the little boy can hit it: by my troth, it's a fine child."

*Ralph.* Relieve her with all courteous language. Now shut up shop; no more my 'prentice, but My trusty squire and dwarf. I must bespeak My shield, and arming Pestle.

"*Cit.* Go thy ways, Ralph! As I am a true man, thou art the best on 'em all.

"*Wife.* Ralph, Ralph!"

"*Ralph.* What say you, mistress?"

"*Wife.* I pr'ythee come again quickly, sweet Ralph.

"*Ralph.* Bye-and-bye."

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in MERRYTHOUGHT'S House.*

*Enter JASPER and MRS. MERRYTHOUGHT.*

*Mrs. Mer.* Give thee my blessing? No, I'll ne'er give thee my blessing; I'll see thee hang'd first; it shall ne'er be said I gave thee my blessing: Thou art thy father's own son, of the right blood of the Merrythoughts; I may curse the time that e'er I knew thy father; he hath spent all his own, and mine too, and when I tell him of it, he laughs and dances, and sings, and cries, 'A merry heart lives long-a.' And thou art a wastethrift, and art run away from thy master, that loved thee well, and art come to me; and I have laid up a little for my younger son Michael, and thou think'st to 'bezzle that, but thou shalt never be able to do it.

*Enter MICHAEL.*

Come hither, Michael; come, Michael; down on thy knees: Thou shalt have my blessing.

*Mich.* [*Kneels.*] I pray you, mother, pray to God to bless me!

*Mrs. Mer.* God bless thee! but Jasper shall never have my blessing; he shall be hanged first, shall he not, Michael? how sayst thou?

*Mich.* Yes, forsooth, mother, and grace of God.

*Mrs. Mer.* That's a good boy!

"*Wife.* 'Faith, it's a fine spoken child!"

*Jasp.* Mother, though you forget a parent's love, I must preserve the duty of a child.

I ran not from my master, nor return

To have your stock maintain my idleness.

"*Wife.* Ungracious child, I warrant thou! hark, how he chops logic with his mother: Thou hadst best tell her she lies; do, tell her she lies.

"*Cit.* If he were my son, I would hang him up by the heels, and flea him, and salt him, whoreson halter-sack!"

*Jasp.* My coming only is to beg your love,

Which I must ever, though I never gain it;

And, howsoever you esteem of me,

There is no drop of blood hid in these veins,

But I remember well belongs to you,

That brought me forth, and would be glad for you

To rip them all again, and let it out.

*Mrs. Mer.* 'Faith, I had sorrow enough for thee (God knows); but I'll hamper thee well enough.—Get thee in, thou vagabond, get thee in, and learn of thy brother Michael.

*Mer.* [*Singing within.*] Nose, nose, jolly red nose,

And who gave thee this jolly red nose!

*Mrs. Mer.* Hark, my husband! he's singing and hoiting; and I'm fain to carck and care, and all little enough.—Husband! Charles! Charles Merrythought!

*Enter Old MERRYTHOUGHT.*

*Mer.* [*Singing.*] Nutmegs and ginger, cinnamon, and

cloves;

And they gave me this jolly red nose.

*Mrs. Mer.* If you would consider your state, you would have little lust to sing, I wis.

*Mer.* It should never be considered, while it were an estate, if I thought it would spoil my singing.

*Mrs. Mer.* But how wilt thou do, Charles? thou art an old man, and thou canst not work, and thou hast not forty shillings left, and thou eatest good meat, and drinkest good drink, and laughest.

*Mer.* And will do.

*Mrs. Mer.* But how wilt thou come by it, Charles?

*Mer.* How? Why, how have I done hitherto these forty years? I never came into my dining-room, but, at eleven and six o'clock, I found excellent meat and drink o' th' table; my clothes were never worn out, but next morning a taylor brought me a new suit; and without question it will be so ever! Use makes perfectness; if all should fail, it is but a little straining myself extraordinary, and laugh myself to death.

"*Wife.* It's a foolish old man this; is not he, George?"

"*Cit.* Yes, cony—"

"*Wife.* Give me a penny i' th' purse while I live, George.

"*Cit.* Ay, by'r lady, cony, hold thee there!"

*Mrs. Mer.* Well, Charles; you promised to provide for Jasper, and I have laid up for Michael: I pray you pay Jasper his portion; he's come home, and he shall not consume Michael's stock; he says his master turned him away, but I promise you truly I think he ran away.

*Wife.* No, indeed, mistress Merrythought, though he be a notable gallowes, yet I'll assure you his master did turn him away, even in this place; 'twas, i'faith, within this half-hour, about his daughter; my husband was by.

*Cit.* Hang him, rogue! he served him well enough: Love his master's daughter? By my troth, cony, if there were a thousand boys, thou wouldest spoil them all, with taking their parts; let his mother alone with him.

*Wife.* Ay, George, but yet truth is truth."

*Mrs.* Where is Jasper? he's welcome, however. Call him in; he shall have his portion. Is he merry?

*Mrs. Mer.* Ay, foul chive him, he is too merry. Jasper! Michael!

*Enter JASPER and MICHAEL.*

*Mrs.* Welcome, Jasper! though thou runn'st away, welcome! God bless thee! 'Tis thy mother's mind thou shouldst receive thy portion; thou hast been abroad, and I hope hast learn'd experience enough to govern it; thou art of sufficient years; hold thy hand: One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine, there is ten shillings for thee; thrust thyself into the world with that, and take some settled course: If Fortune cross thee, thou hast a retiring place; come home to me; I have twenty shillings left. Be a good husband; that is, wear ordinary clothes, eat the best meat, and drink the best drink; be merry, and give to the poor, and, believe me, thou hast no end of thy goods.

*Jasp.* Long may you live free from all thought of ill,

And long have cause to be thus merry still!

But, father—

*Mrs.* No more words, Jasper; get thee gone!

Thou hast my blessing; thy father's spirit upon thee! Farewell, Jasper!

But yet, or ere you part (oh, cruel!)

Kiss me, kiss me, sweeting, mine own dear jewel!

So; now begone; no words!

[*Exit JASPER.*]

*Mrs. Mer.* So, Michael; now get thee gone too.

*Mich.* Yes, forsooth, mother; but I'll have my father's blessing first.

*Mrs. Mer.* No, Michael; 'tis no matter for his blessing; thou hast my blessing; be gone. I'll fetch my money and jewels, and follow thee. I'll stay no longer with him, I warrant thee.—Truly, Charles, I'll be gone too.

*Mrs.* What! you will not?

*Mrs. Mer.* Yes, indeed will I.

*Mrs.* [*Sings.*] Hey-ho, farewell, Nan!

I'll never trust wench more again, if I can.

*Mrs. Mer.* You shall not think (when all your own is gone) to spend that I have been scraping up for Michael.

*Mrs.* Farewell, good wife! I expect it not; all I have to do in this world, is to be merry; which I shall, if the ground be not taken from me; and if it be,

When earth and seas from me are left,

The skies aloft for me are left. [*Exeunt.*]

FINIS ACTUS PRIMI.

*Wife.* I'll be sworn he's a merry old gentleman, for all that. Hark, hark, husband, hark! fiddles, fiddles! [*Music.*] now surely they go finely. They say 'tis present death for these fiddlers to tune their rebecks before the great Turk's grace; is't not, George! [*Boy danceth.*] But look, look! here's a youth dances! now, good youth, do a turn o' th' toe. Sweetheart, i'faith I'll have Ralph come and do some of his gambols; he'll ride the wild-mare, gentlemen, 'twould do your hearts good to see him. I thank you, kind youth; pray bid Ralph come.

*Cit.* Peace, cony!—Sirrah, you scurvy boy, bid the players send Ralph; or, by God's wounds, an they do not, I'll tear some of their perriwigs beside their heads; this is all riff-raff."

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of VENTERWELS.*

*Enter VENTERWELS and Master HUMPHREY.*

*Vent.* And how, i'faith, how goes it now, son Humphrey?

*Hum.* Right worshipful, and my beloved friend And father dear, this matter's at an end.

*Vent.* 'Tis well; it should be so: I'm glad the is found so tractable. [*girl*]

*Hum.* Nay, she must whirl From hence, (and you must wink; for so, I say, The story tells) to-morrow before day.

*Wife.* George, dost thou think in thy conscience now 'twill be a match? tell me but what thou think'st, sweet rogue: Thou seest the poor gentleman (dear heart!) how it labours and throbs, I warrant you, to be at rest: I'll go move the father for't.

*Cit.* No, no; I pr'ythee sit still, honey-suckle;

thou'lt spoil all: If he deny him, I'll bring half-a-dozen good fellows myself, and in the shutting of an evening knock it up, and there's an end.

*Wife.* I'll buss thee for that, i'faith, boy! Well, George, well, you have been a wag in your days, I warrant you; but God forgive you, and I do with all my heart."

*Vent.* How was it, son? you told me that to-morrow

Before day-break, you must convey her hence.

*Hum.* I must, I must; and thus it is agreed:

Your daughter rides upon a brown-bay steed,

I on a sorrel, which I bought of Brian,

The honest host of the red roaring Lion,

In Waltham situate: Then if you may,

Consent in seemly sort; lest by delay,

The fatal sisters come, and do the office;

And then you'll sing another song.

*Vent.* Alas,

Why should you be thus full of grief to me,

That do as willing as yourself agree  
To anything, so it be good and fair?  
Then steal her when you will, if such a pleasure  
Content you both; I'll sleep and never see it,  
To make your joys more full. But tell me why  
You may not here perform your marriage?

"*Wife.* God's blessing o' thy soul, old man!  
i'faith, thou art loth to part true hearts. I see  
a' has her, George; and I'm as glad on't!—Well,  
go thy ways, Humphrey, for a fair-spoken man;  
I believe thou hast not thy fellow within the walls  
of London; an I should say the suburbs too, I  
should not lie. Why dost not rejoice with me,  
George?"

"*Cit.* If I could but see Ralph again, I were as  
merry as mine host, i'faith."

*Hum.* The cause you seem to ask, I thus declare:  
(Help me, oh, muses nine!) Your daughter sware  
A foolish oath, the more it was the pity;  
Yet no one but myself within this city  
Shall dare to say so, but a bold defiance  
Shall meet him, were he of the noble science.  
And yet she sware, and yet why did she swear?  
Truly I cannot tell, unless it were  
For her own ease; for sure sometimes an oath,  
Being sworn thereafter, is like cordial broth:  
And this it was she swore, never to marry,  
But such a one whose mighty arm could carry  
(As meaning me, for I am such a one)  
Her bodily away, through stick and stone,  
Till both of us arrive at her request,  
Some ten miles off, in the wild Waltham-Forrest.

*Vent.* If this be all, you shall not need to fear  
Any denial in your love; proceed;  
I'll neither follow, nor repent the deed.

*Hum.* Good night, twenty good nights, and  
twenty more,  
And twenty more good nights, that makes three-  
score! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—Night. Waltham Forest.

*Enter Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT and MICHAEL.*

*Mrs. Mer.* Come, Michael; art thou not weary,

*Mich.* No, forsooth, mother, not I. [*boy?*]

*Mrs. Mer.* Where be we now, child?

*Mich.* Indeed, forsooth, mother, I cannot tell,  
unless we be at Mile-End: Is not all the world  
Mile-End, mother?

*Mrs. Mer.* No, Michael, not all the world, boy;  
but I can assure thee, Michael, Mile-End is a  
godly matter: There has been a pitchfield, my  
child, between the naughty Spaniels and the Eng-  
lishmen; and the Spaniels ran away, Michael, and  
the Englishmen followed. My neighbour Coxstone  
was there, boy, and killed them all with a birding-  
piece.

*Mich.* Mother, forsooth!

*Mrs. Mer.* What says my white boy?

*Mich.* Shall not my father go with us too?

*Mrs. Mer.* No, Michael, let thy father go snick-  
up, he shall never come between a pair of sheets  
with me again, while he lives; let him stay at home  
and sing for his supper, boy.—Come, child, sit  
down, and I'll show my boy fine knacks, indeed:  
[*Takes out a Casket.*] Look here, Michael; here's  
a ring, and here's a brooch, and here's a bracelet,  
and here's two rings more, and here's money and  
gold, by th'eye, my boy!

*Mich.* Shall I have all this, mother?

*Mrs. Mer.* Ay, Michael, thou shalt have all,  
Michael.

"*Cit.* How lik'st thou this, wench?"

"*Wife.* I cannot tell; I would have Ralph,  
George; I'll see no more else, indeed—la; and I  
pray you let the youths understand so much by  
word of mouth; for I tell you truly, I'm afraid o'  
my boy. Come, come, George, let's be merry and  
wise; the child's a fatherless child, and say they  
should put him into a strait pair of gaskins, 'twere  
worse than knot-grass; he would never grow after  
it.

*Enter RALPH, TIM, and GEORGE.*

"*Cit.* Here's Ralph, here's Ralph.

"*Wife.* How do you, Ralph? you are welcome,  
Ralph, as I may say; it's a good boy! hold up  
thy head, and be not afraid; we are thy friends,  
Ralph. The gentlemen will praise thee, Ralph, if  
thou play'st thy part with audacity. Begin, Ralph,  
a' God's name!"

*Ralph.* My trusty Squire, unlace my helm; give  
me my hat.

Where are we, or what desert may this be?

*George.* Mirror of knighthood, this is, as I take  
it, the perilous Waltham-Down; in whose bottom  
stands the enchanted valley.

*Mrs. Mer.* Oh, Michael, we are betrayed, we  
are betrayed! here be giants! Fly, boy, fly, boy,  
fly!

[*Exit with MICHAEL, leaving the Casket.*]

*Ralph.* Lace on my helm again! What noise is  
A gentle lady, flying the embrace [*this?*]  
Of some uncourteous knight? I will relieve her.  
Go, Squire, and say, the Knight that wears this  
In honour of all ladies, swears revenge [*Pestle*]  
Upon that recreant coward that pursues her;  
Go, comfort her, and that same gentle squire  
That bears her company.

*Tim.* I go, brave Knight.

*Ralph.* My trusty dwarf and friend, reach me  
my shield;

And hold it while I swear: First, by my knight-  
Then by the soul of Amadis de Gaul, [*hood;*]  
My famous ancestor; then by my sword  
The beauteous Brionella girt about me;  
By this bright burning Pestle, of mine honour  
The living trophy; and by all respect  
Due to distressed damsels; here I vow  
Never to end the quest of this fair lady,  
And that forsaken squire, till by my valour  
I gain their liberty! [*Exit.*]

*George.* Heaven bless the Knight  
That thus relieves poor errant gentlewomen.

[*Exit.*]  
"*Wife.* Ay marry, Ralph, this has some savour  
in't; I would see the proudest of them all offer  
to carry his books after him. But, George, I will  
not have him go away so soon; I shall be sick if  
he go away, that I shall; call Ralph again, George,  
call Ralph again; I pry'thee, sweetheart, let him  
come fight before me, and let's ha' some drums,  
and some trumpets, and let him kill all that comes  
near him, an thou lov'st me, George!

"*Cit.* Peace a little, bird! he shall kill them  
all, an they were twenty more on 'em than there  
are."

*Enter JASPER.*

*Jasp.* Now, Fortune, (if thou be'st not only ill)  
Shew me thy better face, and bring about  
Thy desperate wheel, that I may climb at length,

And stand; this is our place of meeting,  
If love have any constancy. Oh, age,  
Where only wealthy men are counted happy!  
How shall I please thee, how deserve thy smiles,  
When I am only rich in misery?  
My father's blessing, and this little coin,  
Is my inheritance; a strong revenue!  
From earth thou art, and to the earth I give thee;  
There grow and multiply, whilst fresher air  
Breeds me a fresher fortune.—How! illusion!

[Spices the Casket.

What! hath the devil coin'd himself before me?  
'Tis metal good; it rings well; I am waking,  
And taking too, I hope. Now, God's dear blessing  
Upon his heart that left it here! 'tis mine;  
These pearls, I take it, were not left for swine.

[Exit.

"*Wife.* I do not like that this unthrifty youth  
should embezzle away the money; the poor gentle-  
woman his mother will have a heavy heart for  
it, God knows.

"*Cit.* And reason good, sweetheart.

"*Wife.* But let him go; I'll tell Ralph a tale  
in his ear, shall fetch him again with a wannion, I  
warrant him, if he be above ground; and besides,  
George, here are a number of sufficient gentlemen  
can witness, and myself, and yourself, and the  
musicians, if we be call'd in question. But here  
comes Ralph; George, thou shalt hear him speak,  
as 'he were an emperal."

Enter RALPH and GEORGE.

Ralph. Comes not Sir Squire again?

George. Right courteous knight,  
Your Squire doth come, and with him comes the  
lady.

Enter MRS. MERRYTHOUGHT, MICHAEL, and TIM.

Ralph. Fair! and the Squire of Damsels, as I  
Madam, if any service or devoir [take it!  
Of a poor Errant-Knight may right your wrongs,  
Command it; I am prest to give you succour;  
For to that holy end I bear my armour.

Mrs. Mer. Alas, sir, I am a poor gentlewoman,  
and I have lost my money in this forest.

Ralph. Desart, you would say, lady: and not  
lost

Whilst I have sword and lance. Dry up your tears,  
Which ill befit the beauty of that face,  
And tell the story, if I may request it,  
Of your disastrous fortune.

Mrs. Mer. Out, alas! I left a thousand pound,  
a thousand pound, e'en all the money I had laid  
up for this youth, upon the sight of your master-  
ship, you look'd so grim, and, as I may say it,  
saying your presence, more like a giant than a  
mortal man.

Ralph. I am as you are lady; so are they.  
All mortal. But why weeps this gentle squire?

Mrs. Mer. Has he not cause to weep, do you  
think, when he hath lost his inheritance?

Ralph. Young hope of valour, weep not; I am  
That will confound thy foe, and pay it dear [here  
Upon his onward head, that dares deny

Distressed squires and ladies equity.

I have but one horse, upon which shall ride  
This lady fair behind me, and before  
This courteous squire: Fortune will give us more  
Upon our next adventure. Fairly speed  
Beside us, Squire and Dwarf, to do us need!

[Exeunt.

"*Cit.* Did not I tell you, Nell, what your man  
would do? by the faith of my body, wench, for  
clean action and good delivery, they may all cast  
their caps at him.

"*Wife.* And so they may, i'faith; for I dare  
speak it boldly, the twelve companies of London  
cannot match him, timber for timber. Well,  
George, an he be not inveigled by some of these  
paltry players, I ha' much marvel; but, George,  
we ha' done our parts, if the boy have any grace to  
be thankful.

"*Cit.* Yes, I warrant thee, duckling."

Enter Master HUMPHREY and LUCE.

Hum. Good mistress Luce, however I in fault  
am

For your lame horse, you're welcome unto Wal-  
But which way now to go, or what to say, [tham;  
I know not truly, till it be broad day.

Luce. Oh, fear not, master Humphrey; I am  
For this place good enough. [guide

Hum. Then up and ride;

Or, if it please you, walk for your repose;  
Or sit, or, if you will, go pluck a rose:

Either of which shall be indifferent  
To your good friend and Humphrey, whose consent  
Is so entangled ever to your will,  
As the poor harmless horse is to the mill.

Luce. 'Faith, an' you say the word, we'll e'en  
And take a nap. [sit down,

Hum. 'Tis better in the town,  
Where we may nap together; for, believe me,  
To sleep without a snatch would nickle-grieve me.

Luce. You're merry, master Humphrey,

Hum. So I am,

And have been ever merry from my dam.

Luce. Your nurse had the less labour.

Hum. 'Faith, it may be,

Unless it were by chance I did bewray me.

Enter JASPER.

Jasp. Luce! dear friend Luce!

Luce. Here, Jasper.

Jasp. You are mine.

Hum. If it be so, my friend, you use me fine:  
What do you think I am?

Jasp. An arrant noddy.

Hum. A word of obloquy! Now, by God's body,  
I'll tell thy master; for I know thee well.

Jasp. Nay, an' you be so forward for to tell,  
Take that, and that; and tell him, sir, I gave it:

And say I paid you well. [Beats him.

Hum. Oh, sir, I have it,

And do confess the payment. Pray, be quiet!

Jasp. Go, get you to your night-cap and the diet,  
To cure your beaten bones.

Luce. Alas, poor Humphrey!  
Get thee some wholesome broth, with sage and  
A little oil of roses, and a feather [caunfry;  
To 'noint thy back withal.

Hum. When I came hither,  
'Would I had gone to Paris with John Dory!

Luce. Farewell, my pretty nump! I'm very sorry  
I cannot bear thee company.

Hum. Farewell!

The devil's dam was ne'er so bang'd in hell.

[Exeunt LUCE and JASPER.

"*Wife.* This young Jasper will prove me another  
things, a' my conscience, an' he may be suffered.  
George, dost not see, George, how a' swaggers,  
and flies at the very heads a' folks, as he were a

dragon? Well, if I do not do his lesson for wronging the poor gentleman, I am no true woman. His friends that brought him up might have been better occupied, I wis, than have taught him these fegaries: He's e'en in the high way to the gallows, God bless him!

"*Cit.* You're too bitter, cony; the young man may do well enough for all this.

"*Wife.* Come hither, master Humphrey; has he hurt you? now beshrew his fingers for't! Here, sweetheart, here's some green ginger for thee. Now beshrew my heart, but a' has pepper-nel in's head, as big as a pullet's egg! Alas, sweet lamb, how thy temples beat! Take the peace on him, sweetheart, take the peace on him.

*Enter Boy.*

"*Cit.* No, no; you talk like a foolish woman! I'll ha' Ralph fight with him, and swing him up well-favouredly.—Sirrah, Boy; come hither: Let Ralph come in and fight with Jasper.

"*Wife.* Ay, and beat him well; he's an unhappy boy.

"*Boy.* Sir, you must pardon us; the plot of our play lies contrary; and 'twill hazard the spoiling of our play.

"*Cit.* Plot me no plots! I'll ha' Ralph come out; I'll make your house too hot for you else.

"*Boy.* Why, sir, he shall; but if anything fall out of order, the gentlemen must pardon us.

"*Cit.* Go your ways, Goodman Boy! I'll hold him a penny, he shall have his belly-full of fighting now.—Ho! here comes Ralph! no more!"

*Enter RALPH, MRS. MERRYTHOUGHT, MICHAEL, TIM, and GEORGE.*

*Ralph.* What knight is that, squire? ask him if The passage, bound by love of lady fair, [he keep Or else but prickant.

*Hum.* Sir, I am no knight, But a poor gentleman, that this same night Had stolen from me, upon yonder green, My lovely wife, and suffer'd (to be seen Yet extant on my shoulders) such a greeting, That whilst I live, I shall think of that meeting.

"*Wife.* Ay, Ralph, he beat him unmercifully, Ralph; an' thou sparest him, Ralph, I would thou wert hang'd.

"*Cit.* No more, Wife, no more!"

*Ralph.* Where is the caitiff wretch hath done this deed?

Lady, your pardon! that I may proceed Upon the quest of this injurious knight. And thou, fair squire, repute me not the worse, In leaving the great venture of the purse, And the rich casket, till some better leisure.

*Enter JASPER and LUCE.*

*Hum.* Here comes the broker hath purloined my treasure.

*Ralph.* Go, squire, and tell him I am here, An errant knight at arms, to crave delivery Of that fair lady to her own knight's arms. If he deny, bid him take choice of ground, And so defy him.

*Tim.* From the Knight that bears The Golden Pestle, I defy thee, Knight! Unless thou make fair restitution Of that bright lady.

*Jasp.* Tell the knight that sent thee He is an ass; and I will keep the wench, And knock his head-piece.

*Ralph.* Knight, thou art but dead, If thou recall not thy uncourteous terms.

"*Wife.* Break his pate, Ralph; break his pate, Ralph, soundly!"

*Jasp.* Come, Knight; I'm ready for you.—Now your Pestle [Snatches away his Pestle.

Shall try what temper, sir, your mortar's of. With that he stood upright in his stirrups, and gave the knight of the calves-skin such a knock, that he forsook his horse, and down he fell; and then he leaped upon him, and plucking off his helmet— [Knocks him down.

*Hum.* Nay, an' my noble Knight bedown so soon, Though I can scarcely go, I needs must run.

[*Exit.*

"*Wife.* Run, Ralph, run, Ralph; run for thy life, boy; Jasper comes, Jasper comes!"

[*Exit RALPH taking up the Pestle.*

*Jasp.* Come, Luce, we must have other arms for you;

Humphrey, and Golden Pestle, both adieu!

[*Exeunt.*

"*Wife.* Sure the devil (God bless us!) is in this springald! Why, George, didst ever see such a fire-drake? I am afraid my boy's miscarried; if he be, though he were master Merrythought's son a thousand times, if there be any law in England, I'll make some of them smart for't.

"*Cit.* No, no; I have found out the matter, sweetheart; Jasper is enchanted; as sure as we are here, he is enchanted: he could no more have stood in Ralph's hands, than I can stand in my lord-mayor's. I'll have a ring to discover all enchantments, and Ralph shall beat him yet: Be no more vexed, for it shall be so.

### SCENE III.—Before the Bell Inn at Waltham.

*Enter RALPH, TIM, GEORGE, MRS. MERRYTHOUGHT, and MICHAEL.*

"*Wife.* Oh, husband, here's Ralph again! Stay, Ralph; let me speak with thee: How dost thou, Ralph? Art thou not shrewdly hurt? the foul great lungies laid unmercifully on thee; there's some sugar-candy for thee. Proceed; thou shalt have another bout with him.

"*Cit.* If Ralph had him at the fencing-school, if he did not make a puppy of him, and drive him up and down the school, he should ne'er come in my shop more."

*Mrs. Mer.* Truly, master Knight of the Burning Pestle, I am weary.

*Mich.* Indeed-ia, mother, and I am very hungry.

*Ralph.* Take comfort, gentle dame, and you, fair squire!

For in this desert there must needs be placed Many strong castles, held by courteous knights; And till I bring you safe to one of those I swear by this my order ne'er to leave you.

"*Wife.* Well said, Ralph! George, Ralph was ever comfortable, was he not?"

"*Cit.* Yes, duck.

"*Wife.* I shall ne'er forget him: When we had lost our child, (you know it was strayed almost, alone, to Puddle-Wharf, and the criers were abroad for it, and there it had drowned itself but for a sculler) Ralph was the most comfortablest to me! 'Peace, mistress,' says he, 'let it go! I'll get another as good.' Did he not, George, did he not say so?"

"*Cit.* Yes, indeed did he, mouse."

*George.* I would we had a mess of pottage, and a pot of drink, squire, and were going to-bed.

*Tim.* Why, we are at Waltham-town's end, and that's the Bell Inn.

*George.* Take courage, valiant knight, damsel, and squire!

I have discovered, not a stone's cast off,  
An ancient castle held by the old knight  
Of the most holy order of the Bell,  
Who gives to all knights-errant entertain:  
There plenty is of food, and all prepared  
By the white hands of his own lady dear.  
He hath three squires that welcome all his guests:  
The first, hight Chamberlain; who will see  
Our beds prepared, and bring us snowy sheets,  
Where never footman stretch'd his butter'd hams.  
The second, hight Tapstero; who will see  
Our pots full filled, and no froth therein.

The third, a gentle squire, Ostlero hight,  
Who will our palfries slick with wisps of straw,  
And in the manger put them oats enough,  
And never grease their teeth with candle-snuff.

"*Wife.* That same dwarf's a pretty boy, but the Squire's a groutnoie."

*Ralph.* Knock at the gates, my squire, with stately lance!

*Enter Tapstero.*

*Tap.* Who's there?—You're welcome, gentlemen! will you see a room?

*George.* Right courteous and valiant Knight of the Burning Pestle, this is the squire Tapstero.

*Ralph.* Fair squire Tapstero! I, a wandering Hight of the Burning Pestle, in the quest [Knight, Of this fair lady's casket and wrought purse, Losing myself in this vast wilderness, Am to this castle well by fortune brought; Where hearing of the goodly entertain Your knight of holy order of the Bell Gives to all damsels, and all errant-knights, I thought to knock, and now am bold to enter.

*Tap.* An't please you see a chamber, you are very welcome. *[Exit.*

"*Wife.* George, I would have something done, and I cannot tell what it is.

"*Cit.* What is it, Nell?

"*Wife.* Why, George, shall Ralph beat nobody again? Pr'ythee, sweetheart, let him!

"*Cit.* So he shall, Nell; and if I join with him, we'll knock them all.

SCENE IV.—LONDON. A Room in the House of VENTERWELS.

*Enter Master HUMPHREY and VENTERWELS.*

"*Wife.* Oh, George, here's master Humphrey again now, that lost mistress Luce; and mistress Luce's father. Master Humphrey will do somebody's errand, I warrant him."

*Hum.* Father, it's true in arms I ne'er shall clasp her;

For she is stol'n away by your man Jasper.

"*Wife.* I thought he would tell him."

*Vent.* Unhappy that I am, to lose my child!

Now I begin to think on Jasper's words,  
Who oft hath urged to me thy foolishness:

Why didst thou let her go? thou lovest her not,  
That wouldst bring home thy life, and not bring her.

*Hum.* Father, forgive me; shall I tell you true? Look on my shoulders, they are black and blue:

Whilst to and fro fair Luce and I were winding,  
He came and basted me with a hedge-binding.

*Vent.* Get men and horses straight! we will be there

Within this hour. You know the place again?

*Hum.* I know the place where he my loins did I'll get six horses, and to each a saddle. *[swaddle.*

*Vent.* Mean time, I will go talk with Jasper's father. *[Exit.*

"*Wife.* George, what wilt thou lay with me now, that master Humphrey has not mistress Luce yet? speak, George, what wilt thou lay with me?

"*Cit.* No, Nell; I warrant thee, Jasper is at Puckeridge with her by this.

"*Wife.* Nay, George, you must consider mistress Luce's feet are tender; and besides, 'tis dark; and I promise you truly, I do not see how he should get out of Waltham-Forest with her yet.

"*Cit.* Nay, cony, what wilt thou lay with me that Ralph has her not yet?

"*Wife.* I will not lay against Ralph, honey, because I have not spoken with him. But look, George; peace! here comes the merry old gentleman again."

SCENE V.—An Apartment in MERRYTHOUGHT'S House.

*Enter Old MERRYTHOUGHT.*

*Mer.* *[Sings.]* When it was grown to dark midnight,  
And all were fast asleep,  
In came Margaret's grimly ghost,  
And stood at William's feet.

I have money, and meat, and drink, before-hand,  
till to-morrow at noon; why should I be sad?  
Methinks I have half-a-dozen jovial spirits within me; *[Sings.]* "I am three merry men, and three merry men!"—To what end should any man be sad in this world? Give me a man that when he goes to hanging cries, "Trowl the black bow! to me!" and a woman that will sing a catch in her travail! I have seen a man come by my door with a serious face, in a black cloak, without a hat-band, carrying his head as if he look'd for pins in the street: I have look'd out of my window half-a-year after, and have spied that man's head upon London-bridge: 'tis vile; never trust a tailor that does not sing at his work! his mind is on nothing but filching.

"*Wife.* Mark this, George! 'tis worth noting; Godfrey, my tailor, you know, never sings; and he had fourteen yards to make this gown, and I'll be sworn, mistress Penistone the draper's wife had one made with twelve."

*Mer.* 'Tis mirth that fills the veins with blood,  
More than wine, or sleep, or food;  
Let each man keep his heart at ease,  
No man dies of that disease.  
He that would his body keep  
From diseases, must not weep;  
But whoever laughs and sings,  
Never he his body brings  
Into fevers, gouts, or rheumes;  
Or ling'ringly his lungs consumes;  
Or meets with aches in the bone,  
Or catarrhs, or griping stone:  
But contented lives for aye;  
The more he laughs, the more he may.

"Wife. Look, George; how say'st thou by this, George? Is't not a fine old man? Now, God's blessing a' thy sweet lips! when wilt thou be so merry, George? 'Faith, thou art the frowning'st little thing, when thou art angry, in a country.

"Cit. Peace, cony! thou shalt see him took down too, I warrant thee.

Enter VENTERWELS.

Here's Luce's father come now."

Mer. [Sings.] As you came from Walsingham,  
From the Holy Land.

There met you not with my true love  
By the way as you came?

Vent. Oh, master Merrythought, my daughter's gone!  
This mirth becomes you not; my daughter's gone!

Mer. Why, an' if she be, what care I?  
Or let her come, or go, or tarry.

Vent. Mock not my misery; it is your son  
(Whom I have made my own, when all forsook  
Has stol'n my only joy, my child, away. [him])

Mer. He set her on a milk-white steed,  
And himself upon a grey;  
He never turn'd his face again,  
But he bore her quite away.

Vent. Unworthy of the kindness I have shewn  
To thee, and thine; too late, I well perceive,  
Thou art consenting to my daughter's loss.

Mer. Your daughter? what a stir's here wi'  
your daughter? Let her go, think no more on her,  
but sing loud. If both my sons were on the gallows,  
I would sing,

Down, down, down; they fall  
Down, and arise they never shall.

Vent. Oh, might I [but] behold her once again,  
And she once more embrace her aged sire!

Mer. Fy, how scurvily this goes!  
"And she once more embrace her aged sire?"  
You'll make a dog on her, will ye? she cares much  
for her aged sire, I warrant you.

She cares not for her daddy, nor  
She cares not for her mammy, for  
She is, she is, she is,  
She is my lord of Lowgave's lassy.

Vent. For this thy scorn I will pursue that son  
Of thine to death.

Mer. Do; and when you ha' kill'd him,  
Give him flowers enow, Palmer, give him flowers enow!  
Give him red and white, and blue, green, and yellow.

Vent. I'll fetch my daughter—  
Mer. I'll hear no more o' your daughter; it  
spoil's my mirth.

Vent. I say, I'll fetch my daughter.

Mer. Was never man for lady's sake,  
Down, down,  
Tormented as I poor Sir Guy,  
De derry down,  
For Lucy's sake, that lady bright,  
Down, down,  
As ever men beheld with eye!  
De derry down.

Vent. I'll be revenged, by Heaven! [Exeunt.]

FINIS ACTUS SECUNDI. [Music.]

"Wife. How dost thou like this, George?"

"Cit. Why this is well, cony; but if Ralph  
were hot once, thou shouldst see more.

"Wife. The fiddlers go again, husband.

"Cit. Ay, Nell; but this is scurvy music. I  
gave the whoreson gallows-money, and I think he  
has not got me the waits of Southwark: If I hear  
'em not anon, I'll twinge him by the ears.—You  
musicians, play Baloo!

"Wife. No, good George, let's ha' Lachryme!

"Cit. Why this is it, cony.

"Wife. It's all the better, George. Now, sweet  
lamb, what story is that painted upon the cloth?  
the confutation of St. Paul?

"Cit. No, lamb; that's Ralph and Lucrece.

"Wife. Ralph and Lucrece? which Ralph? our  
Ralph?

"Cit. No, mouse; that was a Tartarian.

"Wife. A Tartarian? Well, I would the fid-  
dlers had done, that we might see our Ralph again!"

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—WALTHAM FOREST.

Enter JASPER and LUCE.

Jasp. Come, my dear deer! though we have  
lost our way,

We have not lost ourselves. Are you not weary  
With this night's wand'ring, broken from your  
And frighted with the terror that attends [rest?  
The darkness of this wild unpeopled place?

Luce. No, my best friend; I cannot either fear  
Or entertain a weary thought, whilst you  
(The end of all my full desires) stand by me:  
Let them that lose their hopes, and live to lan-  
Amongst the number of forsaken lovers, [guish  
Tell the long weary steps, and number time,  
Start at a shadow, and shrink up their blood,  
Whilst I (possessed with all content and quiet)  
Thus take my pretty love, and thus embrace him.

Jasp. You have caught me, Luce, so fast, that  
whilst I live

I shall become your faithful prisoner,  
And wear these chains for ever.—Come, sit down,  
And rest your body, too, too delicate  
For these disturbances.—So! will you sleep?  
Come, do not be more able than you are;  
I know you are not skilful in these watches,  
For women are no soldiers: Be not nice,  
But take it; sleep, I say.

Luce. I cannot sleep;  
Indeed I cannot, friend.

Jasp. Why then we'll sing,  
And try how that will work upon our senses.

Luce. I'll sing, or say, or anything but sleep.

Jasp. Come, little mermaid, rob me of my heart  
With that enchanting voice.

Luce. You mock me, Jasper.

SONG.

Jasp. Tell me, dearest, what is love?

Luce. 'Tis a lightning from above;

'Tis an arrow, 'tis a fire,  
'Tis a boy they call Desire.

'Tis a smile  
Doth beguile

*Jasp.* The poor hearts of men that prove,  
Tell me more, are women true?

*Luce.* Some love change, and so do you;

*Jasp.* Are they fair and never kind?

*Luce.* Yes, when men turn with the wind.

*Jasp.* Are they forward?

*Luce.* Ever toward

Those that love, to love anew.

*Jasp.* Dissemble it no more; I see the god  
Of heavy sleep lay on his heavy mace  
Upon your eye-lids.

*Luce.* I am very heavy. [Sleeps.]

*Jasp.* Sleep, sleep; and quiet rest crown thy  
sweet thoughts!

Keep from her fair blood [all] distempers, startings,  
Horrors, and fearful shapes! let all her dreams  
Be joys, and chaste delights, embraces, wishes,  
And such new pleasures as the ravish'd soul  
Gives to the senses!—So; my charms have took.  
Keep her, ye powers divine, whilst I contemplate  
Upon the wealth and beauty of her mind!  
She's only fair and constant, only kind.

And only to thee, Jasper. Oh, my joys!

Whither will you transport me? let not fulness

Of my poor buried hopes come up together,

And overcharge my spirits; I am weak!

Some say (however ill) the sea and women

Are govern'd by the moon; both ebb and flow,

Both full of changes; yet to them that know,

And truly judge, these but opinions are,

And heresies, to bring on pleasing war

Between our tempers, that without these were

Both void of after-love, and present fear;

Which are the best of Cupid. Oh, thou child

Bred from despair, I dare not entertain thee,

Having a love without the faults of women,

And greater in her perfect goods than men;

Which to make good, and please myself the  
stronger,

Though certainly I am certain of her love,

I'll try her, that the world and memory

May sing to after times her constancy.— [Draws.]

*Luce!* *Luce!* awake!

*Luce.* Why do you fright me, friend,

With those distemper'd looks? what makes your  
sword

Drawn in your hand? who hath offended you?—

I prythee, Jasper, sleep; thou'rt wild with watch-  
ing.

*Jasp.* Come, make your way to Heaven, and bid  
the world,

With all the villainies that stick upon it,

Farewell; you're for another life.

*Luce.* Oh, Jasper,

How have my tender years committed evil,

Especially against the man I love,

This to be cropp'd untimely?

*Jasp.* Foolish girl,

Canst thou imagine I could love his daughter

That flung me from my fortune into nothing?

Discharged me his service, shut the doors

Upon my poverty, and scorn'd my prayers,

Sending me, like a boat without a mast,

To sink or swim? Come; by this hand, you die!

I must have life and blood, to satisfy

Your father's wrongs.

*Wife.* Away, George, away! raise the watch

at Ludgate, and bring a mittimus from the justice  
for this desperate villain! Now I charge you, gen-  
tlemen, see the king's peace kept! Oh, my heart,  
what a varlet's this, to offer manslaughter upon  
the harmless gentlewoman!

*Cit.* I warrant thee, sweetheart, we'll have  
him hampered."

*Luce.* Oh, Jasper, be not cruel!

If thou wilt kill me, smile, and do it quickly,

And let not many deaths appear before me!

I am a woman made of fear and love,

A weak, weak woman; kill not with thy eyes!

They shoot me through and through. Strike! I

And, dying, still I love thee. [am ready;]

*Enter VENTERWEL, MASTER HUMPHRY, and Men.*

*Vent.* Whereabouts?

*Jasp.* No more of this; now to myself again.

*Hum.* There, there he stands, with sword, like  
martial knight,

Drawn in his hand; therefore beware the fight,

You that be wise; for, were I good Sir Bevis,

I would not stay his coming. By your leaves.

*Vent.* Sirrah, restore my daughter!

*Jasp.* Sirrah, no.

*Vent.* Upon him then!

[LUCE is torn from JASPER.]

*Wife.* So; down with him, down with him,  
down with him! cut him 't' th' leg, boys, cut him  
't' th' leg!"

*Vent.* Come your ways, minion! I'll provide a  
cage

For you, you're grown so tame. Horse her away!

*Hum.* Truly, I am glad your forces have the day.

[Exit all but JASPER.]

*Jasp.* They're gone, and I am hurt; my love is  
Never to get again. Oh, me unhappy! [lost,

Bleed, bleed and die.—I cannot. Oh, my folly,

Thou hast betrayed me! Hope, where art thou  
fled?

Tell me, if thou be'st any where remaining,

Shall I but see my love again? Oh, no!

She will not deign to look upon her butcher,

Nor is it fit she should; yet I must venture.

Oh, Chance, or Fortune, or what'er thou art,

That men adore for powerful, hear my cry,

And let me loving live, or losing die! [Exit.]

*Wife.* Is a' gone, George?

*Cit.* Ay, cony.

*Wife.* Marry, and let him go, sweetheart!

By the faith a' my body, a' has put me into such

a fright, that I tremble (as they say) as 'twere an

aspens-leaf: Look a' my little finger, George, how

it shakes! Now in truth every member of my body

is the worse for't.

*Cit.* Come, hug in mine arms, sweet mouse;

he shall not fright thee any more. Alas, mine own

dear heart, how it quivers!

#### SCENE II.—A Room in the Bell-Inn.

*Enter Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT, RALPH, MICHAEL, TIM,  
GEORGE, Host, and a Tapster.*

*Wife.* Oh, Ralph! how dost thou, Ralph?  
How hast thou slept to-night? has the knight  
used thee well?

*Cit.* Peace, Nell; let Ralph alone!"

*Tap.* Master, the reckoning is not paid.

*Ralph.* Right courteous Knight, who, for the  
order's sake

Which thou hast ta'en, hang'st out the holy Bell,  
As I this flaming Pestle bear about,  
We render thanks to your puissant self,  
Your beauteous lady, and your gentle squires,  
For thus refreshing of our wearied limbs,  
Stiffen'd with hard atchievements in wild desert.

*Tap.* Sir, there is twelve shillings to pay.

*Ralph.* Thou merry squire Tapstero, thanks to thee

For comforting our souls with double jug !  
And if adventurous Fortune prick thee forth,  
Thou jovial squire, to follow feats of arms,  
Take heed thou tender every lady's cause,  
Every true knight, and every damsel fair !  
But spill the blood of treacherous Saracens,  
And false enchanters, that with magic spells  
Have done to death full many a noble knight.

*Host.* Thou valiant Knight of the Burning Pestle, give ear to me ; there is twelve shillings to pay, and, as I am a true Knight, I will not bate a penny.

"*Wife.* George, I pray thee tell me, must Ralph pay twelve shillings now ?

"*Cit.* No, Nell, no ; nothing but the old Knight is merry with Ralph.

"*Wife.* Oh, is't nothing else ? Ralph will be as merry as he."

*Ralph.* Sir Knight, this mirth of yours becomes you well ;

But, to requite this liberal courtesy,  
If any of your squires will follow arms,  
He shall receive from my heroic hand,  
A knighthood, by the virtue of this Pestle.

*Host.* Fair Knight, I thank you for your noble offer ; therefore, gentle Knight, twelve shillings you must pay, or I must cap you.

"*Wife.* Look, George ! did not I tell thee as much ? the Knight of the Bell is in earnest. Ralph shall not be beholding to him : Give him his money, George, and let him go snick up.

"*Cit.* Cap Ralph ? No ; hold your hand, Sir Knight of the Bell ! There's your money ; have you anything to say to Ralph now ? Cap Ralph ?

"*Wife.* I would you should know it, Ralph has friends that will not suffer him to be capt for ten times so much, and ten times to the end of that. Now take thy course, Ralph !"

*Mrs. Mer.* Come, Michael ; thou and I will go home to thy father ; he hath enough left to keep us a day or two, and we'll set fellows abroad to cry our purse and our casket : Shall we, Michael ?

*Mich.* Ay, I pray, mother ; in truth my feet are full of chilblains with travelling.

"*Wife.* Faith, and those chilblains are a foul trouble. Mistress Merrythought, when your youth comes home, let him rub all the soles of his feet, and his heels, and his ancles, with a mouse-skin ; or, if none of your people can catch a mouse, when he goes to-bed, let him roll his feet in the warm embers, and I warrant you he shall be well ; and you may make him put his fingers between his toes, and smell to them ; its very sovereign for his head, if he be costive."

*Mrs. Mer.* Master Knight of the Burning Pestle, my son Michael and I bid you farewell : I thank your worship heartily for your kindness.

*Ralph.* Farewell, fair lady, and your tender squire !

If pricking through these desarts, I do hear  
Of any traiterous knight, who through his guile

Hath lit upon your casket and your purse,  
I will despoil him of them, and restore them.

*Mrs. Mer.* I thank your worship.

[*Exit with MICHAEL.*]

*Ralph.* Dwarf, bear my shield ; squire, elevate my lance ;

And now farewell, you Knight of holy Bell !

"*Cit.* Ay, ay, Ralph, all is paid."

*Ralph.* But yet, before I go, speak, worthy If aught you do of sad adventures know. [knight, Where errant-knight may through his prowess win Eternal fame, and free some gentle souls From endless bonds of steel and lingering pain.

*Host.* Sirrah, go to Nick the barber, and bid him prepare himself, as I told you before, quickly.

*Tap.* I am gone, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Host.* Sir Knight, this wilderness affordeth none But the great venture, where full many a knight Hath tried his prowess, and come off with shame ; And where I would not have you lose your life, Against no man, but furious fiend of hell.

*Ralph.* Speak on, Sir Knight ; tell what he is, and where :

For here I vow upon my blazing badge,  
Never to blaze a day in quietness ;  
But bread and water will I only eat,  
And the green herb and rock shall be my couch,  
Till I have quell'd that man, or beast, or fiend,  
That works such damage to all errant-knights.

*Host.* Not far from hence, near to a craggy cliff,  
At the north end of this distressed town,  
There doth stand a lowly house.

Ruggedly builded, and in it a cave  
In which an ugly giant now doth won,  
Ycleped Barbaroso ; in his hand  
He shakes a naked lance of purest steel,

With sleeves turn'd up ; and him before he wears  
A motley garment, to preserve his clothes  
From blood of those knights which he massacres,  
And ladies gent ; without his door doth hang  
A copper bason, on a prickant spear ;

At which no sooner gentle knights can knock  
But the shrill sound fierce Barbaroso hears,  
And rushing forth, brings in the errant-knight,  
And sets him down in an enchanted chair :

Then with an engine, which he hath prepared,  
With forty teeth, he claws his courtly crown,  
Next makes him wink, and underneath his chin  
He plants a brazen piece of mighty bord,

And knocks his bullets round about his cheeks ;  
Whilst with his fingers, and an instrument  
With which he snaps his hair off, he doth fill  
The wretch's ears with a most hideous noise.

Thus every knight-adventurer he doth trim,  
And now no creature dares encounter him.

*Ralph.* In God's name, I will fight with him :  
Kind sir,

Go but before me to this dismal cave  
Where this huge giant Barbaroso dwells,  
And, by that virtue that brave Rosicler  
That damned brood of ugly giants slew,  
And Palmerin Frannarco overthrew,

I doubt not but to curb this traitor foul,  
And to the devil send his guilty soul.

*Host.* Brave-sprighted Knight, thus far I will perform

This your request ; I'll bring you within sight  
Of this most loathsome place, inhabited  
By a more loathsome man ; but dare not stay,  
For this main force swoops all he sees away.

Ralph. Saint George! Set on; before march,  
squire and page! [Exit.

"Wife. George, dost think Ralph will confound  
the giant?"

"Cit. I hold my cap to a farthing he does:  
Why, Nell, I saw him wrestle with the great  
Dutchman, and hurl him.

"Wife. Faith, and that Dutchman was a goodly  
man, if all things were answerable to his bigness.  
And yet they say there was a Scotchman higher  
than he, and that they two and a knight met, and  
saw one another for nothing. But of all the sights  
that ever were in London, since I was married,  
methinks the little child that was so fair grown  
about the members was the prettiest; that and the  
hermaphrodite.

"Cit. Nay, by your leave, Nell, Ninivie was  
better.

"Wife. Ninivie? Oh, that was the story of  
Joan and the wall, was it not, George?"

"Cit. Yes, lamb.

SCENE III.—LONDON. *The Street before  
MERRYTHOUGHT'S House.*

Enter Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT.

"Wife. Look, George; here comes mistress  
Merrythought again! and I would have Ralph  
come and fight with the giant; I tell you true, I  
long to see't.

"Cit. Good mistress Merrythought, be gone, I  
pray you, for my sake! I pray you forbear a little;  
you shall have audience presently; I have a little  
business.

"Wife. Mistress Merrythought, if it please you  
to refrain your passion a little, till Ralph have dis-  
patched the giant out of the way, we shall think  
ourselves much bound to thank you: I thank you,  
good mistress Merrythought.

[Exit Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT.

Enter a Boy.

"Cit. Boy, come hither; send away Ralph and  
this whorson giant quickly.

"Boy. In good faith, sir, we cannot; you'll  
utterly spoil our play, and make it to be hissed;  
and it cost money; you will not suffer us to go on  
with our plot. I pray, gentlemen, rule him!

"Cit. Let him come now and dispatch this, and  
I'll trouble you no more.

"Boy. Will you give me your hand of that?"

"Wife. Give him thy hand, George, do; and  
I'll kiss him. I warrant thee the youth means  
plainly.

"Boy. I'll send him to you presently.

[Exit Boy.

"Wife. I thank you, little youth. Faith, the  
child hath a sweet breath, George; but I think it  
troubled with the worms; Carduus Benedictus  
and mare's milk were the only thing in the world  
for't.—Oh, Ralph's here, George! God send thee  
good luck, Ralph!"

SCENE IV.—*Before a Barber's Shop in  
Waltham.*

Enter RALPH, Host, TIM, and GEORGE.

Host. Puissant knight, yonder his mansion is.  
Lo, where the spear and copper bason are!  
Behold that string on which hangs many a tooth,

Drawn from the gentle jaw of wand'ring knights!  
I dare not stay to sound; he will appear. [Exit.

Ralph. Oh, faint not, heart! Susan, my lady  
dear,

The cobler's maid in Milk-street, for whose sake  
I take these arms, oh, let the thought of thee  
Carry thy knight through all adventurous deeds;  
And, in the honour of thy beauteous self,  
May I destroy this monster Barbaroso!—  
Knock, squire, upon the bason, till it break  
With the shrill strokes, or till the giant speak.

[TIM knocks upon the bason.

Enter Barber.

"Wife. Oh, George, the giant, the giant! Now,  
Ralph, for thy life!"

Bar. What fond unknowing wight is this, that  
So rudely knock at Barbaroso's cell, [dares  
Where no man comes, but leaves his fleece behind?

Ralph. I, traitorous caitiff, who am sent by Fate  
To punish all the sad enormities  
Thou hast committed against ladies gent,  
And errant-knights, traitor to God and men!  
Prepare thyself; this is the dismal hour  
Appointed for thee to give strict account  
Of all thy beastly treacherous villanous.

Bar. Fool-hardy knight, full soon thou shalt ay  
This fond reproach: Thy body will I bang;

[He takes down his pole.

And lo! upon that string thy teeth shall hang.  
Prepare thyself, for dead soon shalt thou be.

Ralph. Saint George for me! [They fight.

Bar. Gargantua for me!

"Wife. To him, Ralph, to him! hold up the  
giant; set out thy leg before, Ralph!

"Cit. Falsify a blow, Ralph, falsify a blow! the  
giant lies open on the left side.

"Wife. Bear't off, bear't off still: There, boy.—  
Oh, Ralph's almost down, Ralph's almost down!"

Ralph. Susan, inspire me! now have up again.

"Wife. Up, up, up, up, up! so, Ralph! down  
with him, down with him, Ralph!

"Cit. Fetch him o'er the hip, boy!

[RALPH knocks down the Barber.

"Wife. There, boy! kill, kill, kill, kill, kill,  
Ralph!

"Cit. No, Ralph; get all out of him first."

Ralph. Presumptuous man! see to what de-  
perate end

Thy treachery hath brought thee: The just gods,  
Who never prosper those that do despise them,  
For all the villainies which thou hast done  
To knights and ladies, now have paid thee home,  
By my stiff arm, a knight adventurous.

But say, vile wretch, before I send thy soul  
To sad Avernus, (whither it must go)

What captives holdst thou in thy sable cave?

Bar. Go in, and free them all; thou hast the day.

Ralph. Go, squire and dwarf, search in this  
dreadful cave,

And free the wretched prisoners from their bonds.

[Exit TIM and GEORGE.

Bar. I crave for mercy, as thou art a Knight,  
And scorn't to spill the blood of those that beg.

Ralph. Thou shew'd'st no mercy, nor shalt thou  
have any;

Prepare thyself, for thou shalt surely die.

Enter TIM leading one winking, with a Bason under his  
Chin, as prepared for shaving.

Tim. Behold, brave Knight, here is one prisoner,  
Whom this vile man hath used as you see.

"Wife. This is the first wise word I heard the squire speak."

Ralph. Speak what thou art, and how thou hast been used,

That I may give him condign punishment.

1 Knight. I am a Knight that took my journey post

Northward from London; and, in courteous wise, This giant trained me to his loathsome den, Under pretence of killing of the itch; And all my body with a powder strewed, That smarts and stings; and cut away my beard, And my curl'd locks, wherein were ribands tied; And with a water wash'd my tender eyes, (Whilst up and down about me still he skipt) Whose virtue is, that till my eyes be wiped With a dry cloth, for this my foul disgrace, I shall not dare to look a dog i' th' face.

"Wife. Alas, poor Knight! Relieve him, Ralph; relieve poor knights, whilst you live."

Ralph. My trusty Squire, convey him to the town,

Where he may find relief. Adieu, fair Knight!

[Exeunt Knight and Tim.]

Enter GEORGE, leading one with a Patch over his Nose.

George. Puissant Knight, o' th' Burning Pestle light,

See here another wretch, whom this foul beast Hath scotch'd and scored in this inhuman wise.

Ralph. Speak me thy name, and eke thy place of birth,

And what hath been thy usage in this cave.

2 Knight. I am a Knight, Sir Pockhole is my And by my birth I am a Londoner, [name, Free by my copy, but my ancestors Were Frenchmen all; and riding hard this way, Upon a trotting horse, my bones did ache; And I, faint Knight, to ease my weary limbs, Lit at this cave; when straight this furious fiend, With sharpest instrument of purest steel, Did cut the gristle of my nose away, And in the place this velvet plaister stands: Relieve me, gentle Knight, out of his hands!

"Wife. Good Ralph, relieve Sir Pockhole, and send him away; for in truth his breath stinks."

Ralph. Convey him straight after the other Sir Pockhole, fare you well! [Knight.—

2 Knight. Kind sir, good night!

[Exit with GEORGE.]

Man. [Within.] Deliver us! [Cries within.]

Woman. [Within.] Deliver us!

"Wife. Hark, George, what a woful cry there is! I think some woman lies in there."

Man. [Within.] Deliver us!

Woman. [Within.] Deliver us!

Ralph. What ghastly noise is this? speak, Barbaroso;

Or, by this blazing steel, thy head goes off!

Bar. Prisoners of mine, whom I in diet keep. Send lower down into the cave, And in a tub that's heated smoking hot, There they may find them, and deliver them.

Ralph. Run, Squire and Dwarf; deliver them with speed. [Exeunt TIM and GEORGE.]

"Wife. But will not Ralph kill this giant? Surely I am afraid, if he let him go he will do as much hurt as ever he did.

"Cit. Not so, mouse, neither, if he could convert him.

"Wife. Ay, George, if he could convert him;

but a giant is not so soon converted as one of us ordinary people. There's a pretty tale of a witch, that had the devil's mark about her, (God bless us!) that had a giant to her son, that was called Lob-lie-by-the-fire; didst never hear it, George?

Enter TIM, leading third Knight, with a glass of lotion in his hand, and GEORGE leading a Woman, with diet-bread and drink.

"Cit. Peace, Nell, here comes the prisoners."

George. Here be these pined wretches, manful Knight,

That for this six weeks have not seen a wight.

Ralph. Deliver what you are, and how you came To this sad cave, and what your usage was?

3 Knight. I am an Errant-Knight that followed arms

With spear and shield; and in my tender years I stricken was with Cupid's fiery shaft, And fell in love with this my lady dear, And stole her from her friends in Turnbull-street, And bore her up and down from town to town, Where we did eat and drink, and music hear; Till at the length at this unhappy town We did arrive, and coming to this cave, This beast us caught, and put us in a tub, Where we this two months sweat, and should have Another month, if you had not relieved us. [done

Woman. This bread and water hath our diet Together with a rib cut from a neck [been, Of burned mutton; hard hath been our fare! Release us from this ugly giant's snare!

3 Knight. This hath been all the food we have But only twice a-day, for novelty, [received; He gave a spoonful of this hearty broth To each of us, through this same slender quill.

[Pulls out a syringe.]

Ralph. From this infernal monster you shall go, That useth knights and gentle ladies so. Convey them hence.

[Exeunt third Knight and Woman.]

"Cit. Cony, I can tell thee the gentlemen like Ralph.

"Wife. Ay, George, I see it well enough. Gentlemen, I thank you all heartily for gracing my man Ralph; and I promise you, you shall see him oftener."

Bar. Mercy, great Knight! I do recant my ill, And henceforth never gentle blood will spill.

Ralph. I give thee mercy; but yet shalt thou Upon my Burning Pestle, to perform [swear Thy promise uttered.

Bar. I swear and kiss.

[Kisses the Pestle.]

Ralph. Depart then, and amend!— Come, Squire and Dwarf; the sun grows towards his set,

And we have many more adventures yet. [Exeunt.]

"Cit. Now Ralph is in this humour, I know he would ha' beaten all the boys in the house, if they had been set on him.

"Wife. Ay, George, but it is well as it is: I warrant you the gentlemen do consider what it is to overthrow a giant.

SCENE V.—The Street before MERRYTHOUGHT'S House.

Enter Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT and MICHAEL.

"But look, George; here comes mistress Merrythought, and her son Michael: Now you are welcome, mistress Merrythought; now Ralph has done, you may go on."

*Mrs. Mer.* Micke, my boy?

*Mich.* Ay, forsooth, mother!

*Mrs. Mer.* Be merry, Micke; we are at home now; where I warrant you, you shall find the house flung out of the windows. [*Singing above.*] Hark! hey dogs, hey! this is the old world i' faith with my husband: [If] I get in among them, I'll play them such a lesson, that they shall have little left to come scraping hither again!—Why, master Merrythought! husband! Charles Merrythought!

*Mer.* [*Singing at the window above.*]

If you will sing, and dance, and laugh,

And hollow, and laugh again!

And then cry, "There boys, there;" why then,

One, two, three, and four,

We shall be merry within this hour.

*Mrs. Mer.* Why, Charles! do you not know your own natural wife? I say, open the door, and turn me out those mangy companions: 'tis more than time that they were fellow and fellow-like with you: You are a gentleman, Charles, and an old man, and father of two children; and I myself, (though I say it) by my mother's side, niece to a worshipful gentleman, and a conductor; he has been three times in his majesty's service at Chester; and is now the fourth time, God bless him, and his charge, upon his journey.

*Mer.* [*Singing.*] Go from my window, love, go:

Go from my window, my dear:

The wind and the rain

Will drive you back again,

You cannot be lodged here.

Hark you, mistress Merrythought, you that walk upon adventures, and forsake your husband, because he sings with never a penny in his purse; what, shall I think myself the worse? 'Faith no, I'll be merry. [*Singing.*]

You come not here, here's none but lads of mettle, lives of a hundred years, and upwards, Care never drunk their bloods, nor want made them warble 'Hey-ho, my heart is heavy.'

*Mrs. Mer.* Why, master Merrythought, what am I, that you should laugh me to scorn thus abruptly? am I not your fellow-feeler, as we may say, in all our miseries? your comforter in health and sickness? have I not brought you children? are they not like you, Charles? Look upon thine own image, hard-hearted man! and yet for all this—

*Mer.* [*Singing.*] Begone, begone, my juggy, my puggy,

Begone, my love, my dear!

The weather is warm,

'Twill do thee no harm;

Thou canst not be lodged here.

Be merry, boys! some light music, and more wine!

[*Exit from above.*]

*Wife.* He's not in earnest, I hope, George, is he?

*Cit.* What if he be, sweetheart?

*Wife.* Marry, if he be, George, I'll make bold to tell him he's an ingrat old man, to use his bed-fellow so scurvily.

*Cit.* What! how does he use her, honey?

*Wife.* Marry come up, Sir Saucebox! I think you'll take his part, will you not? Lord, how hot you are grown! you are a fine man, an' you had a fine dog; it becomes you sweetly!

*Cit.* Nay, prythee, Nell, chide not; for as I am an honest man, and a true Christian grocer, I do not like his doings.

*Wife.* I cry you mercy then, George! you

know we are all frail, and full of infirmities.—D'ye hear, master Merrythought? may I crave a word with you?"

*Mer.* [*At the Window.*] Strike up, lively lads!

*Wife.* I had not thought in truth, master Merrythought, that a man of your age and discretion, as I may say, being a gentleman, and therefore known by your gentle conditions, could have used so little respect to the weakness of his wife: For your wife is your own flesh, the staff of your age, your yoke-fellow, with whose help [you draw through the mire of this transitory world; nay, she's your own rib. And again—"

*Mer.* [*Singing.*] I come not hither for thee to teach,

I have no pulpit for thee to preach,

I would thou hadst kiss'd me under the brooch.

As thou art a lady gay.

*Wife.* Marry, with a vengeance, I am heartily sorry for the poor gentlewoman! but if I were thy wife, i' faith, greybeard, i' faith—

*Cit.* I prythee, sweet honeysuckle, be content!

*Wife.* Give me such words, that am a gentlewoman born? hang him, hoary rascal! Get me some drink, George; I am almost molten with fretting: Now beshrew his knave's heart for it!"

[*Citizen exit.*]

*Mer.* Play me a light lavalto. Come, be frolic; fill the good fellows wine!

*Mrs. Mer.* Why, master Merrythought, are you disposed to make me wait here? You'll open, I hope; I'll fetch them that shall open else.

*Mer.* Good woman, if you will sing, I'll give you something; if not—

You are no love for me, Marg'ret,

I am no love for you.

Come aloft, boys, aloft! [*Exit from the Window.*]

*Mrs. Mer.* Now a churl's fart in your teeth, sir! Come, Micke, we'll not trouble him; a' shall not ding us i' th' teeth with his bread and his broth, that he shall not. Come, boy; I'll provide for thee, I warrant thee: We'll go to master Venterwels, the merchant: I'll get his letter to mine host of the Bell in Waltham; there I'll place thee with the tapster; will not that do well for thee, Micke? and let me alone for that old cuckoldly knave your father! I'll use him in his kind, I warrant you!

[*Exeunt.*]

FINIS ACTUS TERTII.

*Re-enter Citizen with Beer.*

*Wife.* Come, George; where's the beer?

*Cit.* Here, love!

*Wife.* This old fornicating fellow will not out of my mind yet. Gentlemen, I'll begin to you all; and I desire more of your acquaintance with all my heart. Fill the gentlemen some beer, George.

[*Boy danceth.*] Look, George, the little boy's come again! methinks he looks something like the Prince of Orange in his long stocking, if he had a little harness about his neck. George, I will have him dance Fading; Fading is a fine jig, I'll assure you, gentlemen. Begin, brother; now a' capers, sweetheart! now a turn a' th' toe, and then tumble! Cannot you tumble, youth?

*Boy.* No, indeed, forsooth.

*Wife.* Nor eat fire?

*Boy.* Neither.

*Wife.* Why then, I thank you heartily; there's twopence to buy you points withal."

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Street.**Enter JASPER and Boy.*

*Jasp.* There, boy ; deliver this : But do it well. Hast thou provided me four lusty fellows, Able to carry me ? and art thou perfect In all thy business ?

*Boy.* Sir, you need not fear ; I have my lesson here, and cannot miss it : The men are ready for you, and what else Pertains to this employment.

*Jasp.* There, my boy ; Take it, but buy no land.

*Boy.* 'Faith, sir, 'twere rare To see so young a purchaser. I fly, And on my wings carry your destiny. *[Exit.]*

*Jasp.* Go, and be happy ! Now, my latest hope, Forsake me not, but fling thy anchor out, And let it hold ! Stand fix'd, thou rolling stone, Till I enjoy my dearest ! Hear me, all You powers, that rule in men, celestial ! *[Exit.]*

*"Wife.* Go thy ways : thou art as crooked a sprig as ever grew in London ! I warrant him, he'll come to some naughty end or other ; for his looks say no less : Besides, his father (you know, George) is none of the best ; you heard him take me up like a flirt-gill, and sing bawdy songs upon me ; but i'faith, if I live, George—

*"Cit.* Let me alone, sweetheart ! I have a trick in my head shall lodge him in the Arches for one year, and make him sing *peccavi*, ere I leave him ; and yet he shall never know who hurt him neither.

*"Wife.* Do, my good George, do !

*"Cit.* What shall we have Ralph do now, Boy ?

*"Boy.* You shall have what you will, sir.

*"Cit.* Why, so, sir ? go and fetch me him then, and let the sophy of Persia come and christen him a child.

*"Boy.* Believe me, sir, that will not do so well ; 'tis stale ; it has been had before at the Red Bull.

*"Wife.* George, let Ralph travel over great hills, and let him be very weary, and come to the king of Cracovia's house, covered with [black] velvet, and there let the king's daughter stand in her window all in beaten gold, combing her golden locks with a comb of ivory ; and let her spy Ralph, and fall in love with him, and come down to him, and carry him into her father's house, and then let Ralph talk with her !

*"Cit.* Well said, Nell ; it shall be so : Boy, let's ha't done quickly.

*"Boy.* Sir, if you will imagine all this to be done already, you shall hear them talk together ; but we cannot present a house covered with black velvet, and a lady in beaten gold.

*"Cit.* Sir Boy, let's ha't as you can then.

*"Boy.* Besides, it will shew ill-favourably to have a grocer's 'prentice to court a king's daughter.

*"Cit.* Will it so, sir ? You are well read in histories ! I pray you, what was Sir Dagonet ? Was not he 'prentice to a grocer in London ? Read the play of the Four 'Prentices of London, where they toss their pikes so. I pray you fetch him in, sir, fetch him in !

*"Boy.* It shall be done.—It is not our fault, gentlemen. *[Exit.]*

*"Wife.* Now we shall see fine doings, I warrant thee, George.

SCENE II.—*A Hall in the King of MOLDAVIA'S Court.**Enter RALPH, TIM, GEORGE, and POMPIONA.*

"Oh, here they come ! How prettily the king of Cracovia's daughter is dressed !

*"Cit.* Ay, Nell, it is the fashion of that country, I warrant thee."

*Pomp.* Welcome, Sir Knight, unto my father's King of Moldavia ; unto me, Pompiona, [court, His daughter dear ! But sure you do not like Your entertainment, that will stay with us No longer but a night.

*Ralph.* Damsel right fair, I am on many sad adventures bound, That call me forth into the wilderness : Besides, my horse's back is something gall'd, Which will enforce me ride a sober pace. But many thanks, fair lady, be to you, For using errant-knight with courtesy !

*Pomp.* But say, brave Knight, what is your name and birth ?

*Ralph.* My name is Ralph, I am an Englishman, (As true as steel, a hearty Englishman) And 'prentice to a grocer in the Strand, By deed indent, of which I have one part : But Fortune calling me to follow arms, On me this holy order I did take Of Burning Pestle, which in all men's eyes I bear, confounding ladies' enemies.

*Pomp.* Oft have I heard of your brave countrymen,

And fertile soil, and store of wholesome food ; My father oft will tell me of a drink In England found, and Nipitato call'd, Which driveth all the sorrow from your hearts.

*Ralph.* Lady, 'tis true ; you need not lay your To better Nipitato than there is. *[Claps]*

*Pomp.* And of a wild-fowl he will often speak, Which powder'd beef and mustard called is : For there have been great wars 'twixt us and you ; But truly, Ralph, it was not long of me. Tell me then, Ralph, could you contented be To wear a lady's favour in your shield ?

*Ralph.* I am a knight of a religious order, And will not wear a favour of a lady That trusts in Antichrist, and false traditions.

*"Cit.* Well said, Ralph ! convert her, if thou canst."

*Ralph.* Besides, I have a lady of my own In merry England ; for whose virtuous sake I took these arms ; and Susan is her name, A cobbler's maid in Milk-street ; whom I vow Ne'er to forsake, whilst life and Pestle last.

*Pomp.* Happy that cobbler name, whoe'er she be,

That for her own, dear Ralph, hath gotten thee ! Unhappy I, that ne'er shall see the day To see thee more, that bear'st my heart away !

*Ralph.* Lady, farewell ! I needs must take my leave.

*Pomp.* Hard-hearted Ralph, that ladies dost deceive !

*"Cit.* Hark thee, Ralph ! there's money for thee : Give something in the king of Cracovia's house ; be not beholding to him."

*Ralph.* Lady, before I go, I must remember Your father's officers, who, truth to tell,

Have been about me very diligent :  
Hold up thy snowy hand, thou princely maid ;  
There's twelve-pence for your father's chamberlain ;  
And there's another shilling for his cook,  
For, by my troth, the goose was roasted well ;  
And twelve-pence for your father's horse-keeper,  
For 'nointing my horse-back, and for his butter  
There is another shilling ; to the maid [groat ;  
That wash'd my boot-hose, there's an English  
And two-pence to the boy that wiped my boots !  
And, last, fair lady, there is for yourself  
Three-pence, to buy you pins at Bumbo-fair !

*Pomp.* Full many thanks ; and I will keep them  
Till all the heads be off, for thy sake, Ralph. [safe  
*Ralph.* Advance, my Squire and Dwarf ! I cannot stay.

*Pomp.* Thou kill'st my heart in parting thus away. [Exit.

"*Wife.* I commend Ralph yet, that he will not stoop to a Cracovian ; there's proper women in London than any are there, I wis. But here comes master Humphrey and his love again ; now, George !"  
" *Cit.* Ay, cony, peace !"

SCENE III.—*The House of VENTERWELS.*

Enter VENTERWELS, Master HUMPHREY, LUCE, and Boy.

*Vent.* Go, get you up ! I will not be entreated !  
And, gossip mine, I'll keep you sure hereafter  
From gadding out again, with boys and unthrifts :  
Come, they are women's tears ; I know your  
Go, sirrah, lock her in, and keep the key [fashion.—  
Safe as you love your life. [Exit LUCE and Boy.

Now, my son Humphrey,  
You may both rest assured of my love  
In this, and reap your own desire.

*Hum.* I see this love you speak of, through your daughter,  
Although the hole be little ; and hereafter  
Will yield the like in all I may or can,  
Fitting a Christian and a gentleman.

*Vent.* I do believe you, my good son, and thank you ;

For 'twere an impudence to think you flatter'd.  
*Hum.* It were indeed ; but shall I tell you why ?  
I have been beaten twice about the lie.

*Vent.* Well, son, no more of compliment. My daughter

Is yours again ; appoint the time and take her :  
We'll have no stealing for it ; I myself  
And some few of our friends will see you married.

*Hum.* I would you would, i'faith ! for be it  
I ever was afraid to lie alone. [known,

*Vent.* Some three days hence then—  
*Hum.* Three days ? let me see !

'Tis somewhat of the most ; yet I agree,  
Because I mean against the appointed day  
To visit all my friends in new array.

Enter Servant.

*Serv.* Sir, there's a gentlewoman without would speak with your worship.

*Vent.* What is she ?  
*Serv.* Sir, I ask'd her not.

*Vent.* Bid her come in.

Enter Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT and MICHAEL.

*Mrs. Mer.* Peace be to your worship ! I come as a poor suitor to you, sir, in the behalf of this child.

*Vent.* Are you not wife to Merrythought ?

*Mrs. Mer.* Yes, truly : 'Would I had ne'er seen his eyes ! he has undone me and himself, and his children ; and there he lives at home, and sings and hoits, and revels among his drunken companions ! but, I warrant you, where to get a penny to put bread in his mouth he knows not : And therefore, if it like your worship, I would entreat your letter to the honest host of the Bell in Waltham, that I may place my child under the protection of his tapster, in some settled course of life.

*Vent.* I'm glad the Heavens have heard my prayers ! Thy husband,

When I was ripe in sorrows, laugh'd at me ;  
Thy son, like an unthankful wretch, I having  
Redeem'd him from his fall, and made him mine,  
To shew his love again, first stole my daughter,  
Then wrong'd this gentleman ; and, last of all,  
Gave me that grief had almost brought me down  
Unto my grave, had not a stronger hand  
Relieved my sorrows : Go, and weep as I did,  
And be unpitied ; for I here profess  
An everlasting hate to all thy name.

*Mrs. Mer.* Will you so, sir ? how say you by that ? Come, Micke ; let him keep his wind to cool his pottage ! We'll go to thy nurse's, Micke ; she knits silk stockings, boy, and we'll knit too, boy, and be beholding to none of them all.

[Exit, with MICHAEL.

Enter a Boy with a Letter.

*Boy.* Sir, I take it you are the master of this  
*Vent.* How then, Boy ? [house.

*Boy.* Then to yourself, sir, comes this letter.  
*Vent.* From whom, my pretty boy ?

*Boy.* From him that was your servant ; but no  
Shall that name ever be, for he is dead ! [more  
Grief of your purchased anger broke his heart :  
I saw him die, and from his hand received  
This paper, with a charge to bring it hither :  
Read it, and satisfy yourself in all.

*Vent.* [Reading.] Sir, that I have wrong'd your love I must confess ; in which I have purchased to myself, besides mine own undoing, the ill opinion of my friends. Let not your anger, good sir, outlive me, but suffer me to rest in peace with your forgiveness : Let my body (if a dying man may so much prevail with you) be brought to your daughter, that she may truly know my hot flames are now buried, and withal receive a testimony of the zeal I bore her virtue. Farewell for ever, and be ever happy ! JASPER.

God's hand is great in this ! I do forgive him ;  
Yet I am glad he's quiet, where I hope  
He will not bite again. Boy, bring the body,  
And let him have his will, if that be all.

*Boy.* 'Tis here without, sir.

*Vent.* So, sir ; if you please,  
You may conduct it in ; I do not fear it.

*Hum.* I'll be your usher, Boy ; for, though I say it,

He owed me something once, and well did pay it. [Exit.

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same House.*

Enter LUCE.

*Luca.* If there be any punishment inflicted  
Upon the miserable, more than yet I feel,  
Let it together seize me, and at once  
Press down my soul ! I cannot bear the pain  
Of these delaying tortures !—Thou that art

The end of all, and the sweet rest of all,  
Come, come, oh, Death! bring me to thy peace,  
And blot out all the memory I nourish  
Both of my father and my cruel friend!  
Oh, wretched maid, still living to be wretched,  
To be a say to Fortune in her changes,  
And grow to number times and woes together!  
How happy had I been, if, being born,  
My grave had been my cradle!

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* By your leave,  
Young mistress! Here's a boy hath brought a  
coffin;

What a' would say I know not; but your father  
Charged me to give you notice. Here they come!

*Enter two Men bearing a Coffin, and the Boy. JASPER  
laid out as a Corpse within it, covered with a cloth.*

*Luce.* For me I hope 'tis come, and 'tis most  
welcome.

*Boy.* Fair mistress, let me not add greater grief  
To that great store you have already. Jasper  
(That whilst he lived was yours, now dead,  
And here enclosed) commanded me to bring  
His body hither, and to crave a tear  
From those fair eyes, (though he deserved not pity,)  
To deck his funeral, for so he bid me  
Tell her for whom he died.

*Luce.* He shall have many.—  
Good friends, depart a little, whilst I take  
My leave of this dead man, that once I loved.

*[Exeunt Coffin-carriers and Boy.]*

Hold yet a little, life! and then I give thee  
To thy first heavenly being. Oh, my friend!  
Hast thou deceived me thus, and got before me?  
I shall not long be after. But, believe me,  
Thou wert too cruel, Jasper, 'gainst thyself,  
In punishing the fault I could have pardon'd,  
With so untimely death: Thou didst not wrong me,  
But ever wert most kind, most true, most loving;  
And I the most unkind, most false, most cruel!  
Didst thou but ask a tear? I'll give thee all,  
Even all my eyes can pour down, all my sighs,  
And all myself, before thou goest from me:  
These are but sparing rites; but if thy soul  
Be yet about this place, and can behold  
And see what I prepare to deck thee with,  
It shall go up, borne on the wings of peace,  
And satisfied: First will I sing thy dirge,  
Then kiss thy pale lips, and then die myself,  
And fill one coffin and one grave together.

SONG.

Come, you whose loves are dead,  
And whilst I sing,  
Weep, and wring  
Every hand; and every head  
Bind with cypress and sad yew;  
Ribbons black and candles blue,  
For him that was of men most true!  
Come with heavy moaning,  
And on his grave  
Let him have  
Sacrifice of sighs and groaning;  
Let him have fair flowers enow,  
White and purple, green and yellow,  
For him that was of men most true!

Thou sable cloth, sad cover of my joys,  
I lift thee up, and thus I meet with death.

*[She takes off the Cloth, and he rises out of the Coffin.]*

*Jasp.* And thus you meet the living.

*Luce.* Save me, Heaven!

*Jasp.* Nay, do not fly me, fair; I am no spirit:  
Look better on me; do you know me yet?

*Luce.* Oh, thou dear shadow of my friend!

*Jasp.* Dear substance,

I swear I am no shadow; feel my hand!  
It is the same it was; I am your Jasper,  
Your Jasper that's yet living, and yet loving!  
Pardon my rash attempt, my foolish proof  
I put in practice of your constancy:  
For sooner should my sword have drunk my blood,  
And set my soul at liberty, than drawn  
The least drop from that body; for which boldness  
Doom me to anything! if death, I take it,  
And willingly.

*Luce.* This death I'll give you for it!

*[Kisses him.]*

So; now I'm satisfied, you are no spirit,  
But my own truest, truest, truest friend!  
Why do you come thus to me?

*Jasp.* First, to see you;  
Then to convey you hence.

*Luce.* It cannot be;

For I am lock'd up here, and watch'd at all hours,  
That 'tis impossible for me to 'scape.

*Jasp.* Nothing more possible: Within this coffin  
Do you convey yourself; let me alone,  
I have the wits of twenty men about me;  
Only I crave the shelter of your closet  
A little, and then fear me not. Creep in,  
That they may presently convey you hence.  
Fear nothing, dearest love! I'll be your second;  
Lie close; so! all goes well yet.—Boy!

*[She goes into the Coffin, and he covers her with the Cloth.]*

*Re-enter Boy and Men.*

*Boy.* At hand, sir.

*Jasp.* Convey away the coffin, and be wary.

*Boy.* 'Tis done already.

*[The Men carry out the Coffin.]*

*Jasp.* Now must I go conjure.

*[Exit into a Closet.]*

*Enter VENTERWELS.*

*Vent.* Boy, Boy!

*Boy.* Your servant, sir.

*Vent.* Do me this kindness, Boy; (hold; here's  
a crown)

Before thou bury the body of this fellow,  
Carry it to his old merry father, and salute him  
From me, and bid him sing; he hath cause.

*Boy.* I will, sir.

*Vent.* And then bring me word what tune he is  
And have another crown; but do it truly. [in,  
I have fitted him a bargain, now, will vex him.

*Boy.* God bless your worship's health, sir!

*Vent.* Farewell, Boy!

*[Exeunt.]*

SCENE V.—A Room in MERRYTHOUGHT'S  
House.

*Enter Old MERRYTHOUGHT.*

"Wife. Ah, Old Merrythought, art thou there  
again? Let's hear some of thy songs."

*Mer.* [Singing.] Who can sing a merrier note,

Than he that cannot change a groat!

Not a denier left, and yet my heart leaps: I do  
wonder yet, as old as I am, that any man will follow  
a trade, or serve, that may sing and laugh, and  
walk the streets. My wife and both my sons are

I know not where ; I have nothing left, nor know  
I how to come by meat to supper ; yet am I merry  
still ; for I know I shall find it upon the table at  
six o'clock ; therefore, hang thought ! [Sings.

I would not be a serving-man  
To carry the cloak-bag still,  
Nor would I be a falconer  
The greedy hawks to fill ;  
But I would be in a good house,  
And have a good master too ;  
But I would eat and drink of the best,  
And no work would I do.

This it is that keeps life and soul together, mirth !  
This is the philosopher's stone that they write so  
much on, that keeps a man ever young !

*Enter a Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, they say they know all your money is  
gone, and they will trust you for no more drink.

*Mer.* Will they not ? let 'em chuse ! The best  
is, I have mirth at home, and need not send abroad  
for that ; let them keep their drink to themselves.

[Sings.

For Jillian of Berry she dwells on a hill,  
And she bath good beer and ale to sell,  
And of good fellows she thinks no ill,  
And thither will we go now, now, now,  
And thither will we go now.

And when you have made a little stay,  
You need not ask what is to pay,  
But kiss your hostess, and go your way,  
And thither will we go now, now, now,  
And thither will we go now.

*Enter another Boy.*

*2 Boy.* Sir, I can get no bread for supper.

*Mer.* Hang bread and supper ! let's preserve  
our mirth, and we shall never feel hunger, I'll  
warrant you. Let's have a catch : Boy, follow  
me ; come, sing this catch.

[They sing the following Catch.

Ho, ho, nobody at home,  
Meat, nor drink, nor money ha' we none ?  
Fill the pot, Eedy,  
Never more need I.

*Mer.* So, boys ; enough. Follow me : Let's  
change our place, and we shall laugh afresh.

[Exeunt.

*Wife.* Let him go, George ; a' shall not have  
any countenance from us, nor a good word from  
any i' th' company, if I may strike stroke in't.

*Cit.* No more a sha'not, love. But, Nell, I  
will have Ralph do a very notable matter now, to  
the eternal honour and glory of all grocers.—  
Sarah ; you there ! Boy ! Can none of you hear ?

*Boy.* Sir, your pleasure ?

*Cit.* Let Ralph come out on May-day in the  
morning, and speak upon a conduit, with all his  
scars about him, and his feathers, and his rings,  
and his knucks.

*Boy.* Why, sir, you do not think of our plot ;  
what will become of that then ?

*Cit.* Why, sir, I care not what become on't !  
I'll have him come out, or I'll fetch him out my-  
self ; I'll have something done in honour of the  
city. Besides, he hath been long enough upon  
adventures : Bring him out quickly ; or if I come  
in amongst you—

*Boy.* Well, sir, he shall come out ; but if our  
play miscarry, sir, you are like to pay for't.

[Exit.

*Cit.* Bring him away then !

*Wife.* This will be brave, i'faith ! George,  
shall not he dance the morris too, for the credit of  
the Strand ?

*Cit.* No, sweetheart, it will be too much for  
the boy. Oh, there he is, Nell ! he's reasonable  
well in reparal ; but he has not rings enough."

*Enter RALPH, dressed as a May-lord.*

*Ralph.* London, to thee I do present the merry  
month of May ;

Let each true subject be content to hear me what  
I say :

For from the top of Conduit-Head, as plainly may  
appear,  
I will both tell my name to you, and wherefore I  
came here.

My name is Ralph, by due descent, though not  
ignoble I,

Yet far inferior to the flock of gracious grocery :  
And by the common counsel of my fellows in the  
Strand,

With gilded staff, and crossed scarf, the May-lord  
here I stand.

Rejoice, oh, English hearts, rejoice, rejoice, oh,  
lovers dear ;

Rejoice, oh, city, town, and country, rejoice eke  
every shere !

For now the fragrant flowers do spring and sprout  
in seemly sort,

The little birds do sit and sing, the lambs do make  
fine sport ;

And now the burchin-tree doth bud, that makes  
the schoolboy cry,

The morris rings, while hobby-horse doth foot it  
featiously ;

The lords and ladies now abroad, for their disport  
and play,

Do kiss sometimes upon the grass, and sometimes  
in the hay.

Now butter with a leaf of sage is good to purge the  
blood,

Fly Venus and phlebotomy, for they are neither  
good !

Now little fish on tender stone begin to cast their  
bellies,

And sluggish snails, that erst were mew'd, do  
creep out of their shellies.

The rumbling rivers now do warm, for little boys  
to paddle ;

The sturdy steed now goes to grass, and up they  
hang his saddle.

The heavy bart, the bellowing buck, the rascal,  
and the pricket,

Are now among the yeoman's pease, and leave the  
fearful thicket.

And be like them, oh, you, I say, of this same  
noble town,

And lift aloft your velvet heads, and slipping off  
your gown,

With bells on legs, and napkins clean, unto your  
shoulders tied,

With scarfs and garters as you please, and " Hey  
for our town ! " cried.

March out and shew your willing minds, by twenty  
and by twenty,

To Hogsdon, or to Newington, where ale and cakes  
are plenty !

And let it ne'er be said for shame, that we the  
youths of London,

Lay thrumming of our caps at home, and left our custom undone.

Up then, I say, both young and old, both man and maid a-Maying,

With drums and guns that bounce aloud, and merry tabor playing!

Which to prolong, God save our king, and send his country peace,  
And root out treason from the land! and so, my friends, I cease. *[Exit.]*

FINIS ACTUS QUARTI.

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the House of VENTERWELS.

*Enter VENTERWELS.*

*Vent.* I will have no great store of company at the wedding; a couple of neighbours and their wives; and we will have a capon in stewed broth, with marrow, and a good piece of beef, stuck with rosemary.

*Enter JASPER, His Face mealed.*

*Jasp.* Forbear thy pains, fond man! it is too *[late.]*  
*Vent.* Heaven bless me! Jasper?

*Jasp.* Ay, I am his ghost,  
Whom thou hast injured for his constant love.

Fond worldly wretch! who dost not understand  
In death that true hearts cannot parted be.

First know, thy daughter is quite borne away  
On wings of angels, through the liquid air,

Too far out of thy reach, and never more  
Shalt thou behold her face: But she and I

Will in another world enjoy our loves;  
Where neither father's anger, poverty,

Nor any cross that troubles earthly men,  
Shall make us sever our united hearts.

And never shalt thou sit, or be alone  
In any place, but I will visit thee

With ghastly looks, and put into thy mind  
The great offences which thou didst to me.

When thou art at thy table with thy friends,  
Merry in heart, and filled with swelling wine,

I'll come in midst of all thy pride and mirth,  
Invisible to all men but thyself,

And whisper such a sad tale in thine ear,  
Shall make thee let the cup fall from thy hand,

And stand as mute and pale as death itself.

*Vent.* Forgive me, Jasper! Oh, what might I  
Tell me, to satisfy thy troubled ghost? *[do]*

*Jasp.* There is no means; too late thou think'st  
of this.

*Vent.* But tell me what were best for me to do?

*Jasp.* Repent thy deed, and satisfy my father,  
And beat fond Humphrey out of thy doors. *[Exit.]*

*Enter HUMPHREY.*

*"Wife.* Look, George; his very ghost would  
have folks beaten."

*Hum.* Father, my bride is gone, fair mistress  
Luce.

My soul's the fount of vengeance, mischief's sluice.

*Vent.* Hence, fool, out of my sight, with thy  
fond passion!

Thou hast undone me. *[Beats him.]*

*Hum.* Hold, my father dear!

For Luce thy daughter's sake, that had no peer.

*Vent.* Thy father, fool? There's some blows  
more; be gone!— *[Beats him again.]*

Jasper, I hope thy ghost be well appeased

To see thy will performed. Now will I go  
To satisfy thy father for thy wrongs. *[Exit.]*

*Hum.* What shall I do? I have been beaten  
twice,

And mistress Luce is gone! Help me, Deuce!

Since my true love is gone, I never more

Whilst I do live upon the sky will pore;

But in the dark will wear out my shoe-soles

In passion, in Saint Faith's church under Paul's. *[Exit.]*

*"Wife.* George, call Ralph hither; if you love  
me, call Ralph hither! I have the bravest thing for

him to do—George! pr'ythee, call him quickly.

*"Cit.* Ralph! why, Ralph, boy!

*Enter RALPH.*

*"Ralph.* Here, sir.

*"Cit.* Come hither, Ralph; come to thy mis-  
tress, boy.

*"Wife.* Ralph, I would have thee call all the  
youths together in battle-ray, with drums, and  
guns, and flags, and march to Mile-End in pomp-  
ous fashion, and there exhort your soldiers to be  
merry and wise, and to keep their beards from  
burning, Ralph; and then skirmish, and let your  
flags fly, and cry, "Kill, kill, kill!" My husband  
shall lend you his jerkin, Ralph, and there's a  
scarf; for the rest, the house shall furnish you, and  
we'll pay for't. Do it bravely, Ralph; and think  
before whom you perform, and what person you  
represent.

*"Ralph.* I warrant you, mistress; if I do it  
not, for the honour of the city, and the credit of  
my master, let me never hope for freedom!

*"Wife.* 'Tis wellspoken, i'faith! Go thy ways;  
thou art a spark indeed.

*"Cit.* Ralph, Ralph, double your files bravely,  
Ralph!

*"Ralph.* I warrant you, sir. *[Exit.]*

*"Cit.* Let him look narrowly to his service; I  
shall take him else. I was there myself a pike-  
man once, in the hottest of the day, wench; had  
my feather shot sheer away, the fringe of my pike  
burnt off with powder, my pate broken with a  
scouring-stick, and yet, I thank God, I am here!" *[Drums within.]*

*"Wife.* Hark, George, the drums!

*"Cit.* Ran, tan, tan, tan, tan, tan! Oh, wench,  
an' thou hadst but seen little Ned of Aldgate, drum  
Ned, how he made it roar again, and laid on like  
a tyrant, and then struck softly till the ward came  
up, and then thundered again, and together we go!  
sa, sa, sa, bounce, quoth the guns! "courage,  
my hearts," quoth the captains! "Saint George,"  
quoth the pike-men! and withal, here they lay,  
and there they lay! And yet for all this I am here,  
wench.

*"Wife.* Be thankful for it, George; for indeed  
'tis wonderful."

SCENE II.—*Mile-end.*

*Enter RALPH, WILLIAM HAMERTON, GEORGE GREENGOOSE, and Others of his Company, with Drums and Colours.*

*Ralph.* March fair, my hearts! lieutenant, beat the rear up. Ancient, let your colours fly; but have a great care of the butchers' hooks at White-chapel; they have been the death of many a fair ancient. Open your files, that I may take a view both of your persons and munition. Sergeant, call a muster.

*Serg.* A stand!—William Hamerton, pewterer!

*Ham.* Here, captain.

*Ralph.* A corslet and a Spanish pike! 'tis well: Can you shake it with a terror?

*Ham.* I hope so, captain.

*Ralph.* Charge upon me.—'Tis with the weakest: Put more strength, William Hamerton, more strength. As you were again. Proceed, Sergeant.

*Serg.* George Greengoose, poulterer!

*Green.* Here!

*Ralph.* Let me see your piece, neighbour Greengoose; when was she shot in?

*Green.* An't like you, master captain, I made a shot even now, partly to scour her, and partly for audacity.

*Ralph.* It should seem so certainly; for her breath is yet inflamed. Besides, there is a main fault in the touch-hole, it runs and stinketh: And I tell you moreover, and believe it, ten such touch-holes would breed the pox i' th' army. Get you a feather, neighbour, get you a feather, sweet oil, and paper, and your piece may do well enough yet. Where's your powder?

*Green.* Here.

*Ralph.* What, in a paper? as I am a soldier and a gentleman, it craves a martial-court! You ought to die for't. Where's your horn? Answer me to that.

*Green.* An't like you, sir, I was oblivious.

*Ralph.* It like me not you should be so; 'tis a shame for you, and a scandal to all our neighbours, being a man of worth and estimation, to leave your horn behind you: I am afraid 'twill breed example. But let me tell you, no more on't. Stand, till I view you all. What's become o' th' nose of your flask?

*1 Sold.* Indeed-la, captain, 'twas blown away with powder.

*Ralph.* Put on a new one at the city's charge. Where's the stone of this piece?

*2 Sold.* The drummer took it out to light tobacco.

*Ralph.* 'Tis a fault, my friend; put it in again. You want a nose, and you a stone; Sergeant, take a note on't, for I mean to stop it in the pay. Remove and march! [*They march.*] Soft and fair, gentlemen, soft and fair! Double your files; as you were! faces about! Now, you with the soddenn face, keep in there! Look to your match, sirrah, it will be in your fellow's flask anon. So; make a crescent now; advance your pikes; stand and give ear!—Gentlemen, countrymen, friends, and my fellow-soldiers, I have brought you this day from the shops of security, and the counters of content, to measure out in these furious fields, honour by the oil, and prowess by the pound. Let it not, oh, let it not, I say, be told hereafter, the noble issue of this city fainted; but bear yourselves in this fair action like men, valiant men, and free

men! Fear not the face of the enemy, nor the noise of the guns; for, believe me, brethren, the rude rumbling of a brewer's cart is far more terrible, of which you have a daily experience: Neither let the stink of powder offend you, since a more valiant stink is nightly with you. To a resolved mind, his home is everywhere:

I speak not this to take away

The hope of your return; for you shall see

(I do not doubt it) and that very shortly

Your loving wives again, and your sweet children,

Whose care doth bear you company in baskets.

Remember then whose cause you have in hand,

And, like a sort of true-born scavengers,

Scour me this famous realm of enemies.

I have no more to say but this: Stand to your

tacklings, lads, and shew to the world, you can as

well brandish a sword as shake an apron. Saint

George, and on, my hearts!

*All.* Saint George, Saint George! [*Exeunt*

*Wife.* 'Twas well done, Ralph! I'll send thee

a cold capon a-field, and a bottle of March beer;

and, it may be, come myself to see thee.

*Cit.* Nell, the boy hath deceived me much!

I did not think it had been in him. He has per-

formed such a matter, wench, that, if I live, next

year I'll have him captain of the gallifoist, or I'll

want my will."

SCENE III.—*A Room in Old MERRYTHOUGHT'S House.*

*Enter Old MERRYTHOUGHT.*

*Mer.* Yet, I thank God, I break not a wrinkle more than I had. Not a stoop, boys? Care, live with cats: I defy thee! My heart is as sound as an oak; and though I want drink to wet my whistle, I can sing, [*Sings.*

Come no more there, boys, come no more there;

For we shall never whilst we live come any more there.

*Enter a Boy, and two Men bringing in the Coffin, with Lucca in it.*

*Boy.* God save you, sir!

*Mer.* It's a brave boy. Canst thou sing?

*Boy.* Yes, sir, I can sing; but 'tis not so necessary at this time.

*Mer.* Sing we, and chaunt it.

Whilst love doth grant it.

*Boy.* Sir, sir, if you knew what I have brought you, you would have little list to sing.

*Mer.* Oh, the mimon round,

Full long I have thee sought,

And now I have thee found,

And what hast thou here brought?

*Boy.* A coffin, sir, and your dead son Jasper in it.

*Mer.* Dead? Why, farewell he!

Thou wast a bonny boy,

And I did love thee.

*Enter JASPER.*

*Jasp.* Then I pray you, sir, do so still.

*Mer.* Jasper's ghost? [*Sings.*

Thou art welcome from Stygian-lake so soon;

Declare to me what wondrous things in Pluto's court are done.

*Jasp.* By my troth, sir, I ne'er came there; 'tis too hot for me, sir.

*Mer.* A merry ghost, a very merry ghost !

[Sings.]

And where is your true love ? Oh, where is yours ?

*Jasp.* Marry, look you, sir ! [Opens the coffin.]

*Mer.* Ah, ha ! art thou good at that, i' faith ?

[Sings.]

With hey trickys terlerie-whiskin,

The world it runs on wheels.

When the young man's ——

Up goes the maiden's heels.

*Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT* and *MICHAEL* within.

*Mrs. Mer.* What, master Merrythought ! will you not let's in ! What do you think shall become of us ?

*Mer.* What voice is that that calleth at our door ?

*Mrs. Mer.* You know me well enough ; I am sure I have not been such a stranger to you.

*Mer.* [Sings.] And some they whistled, and some they sung,

Hey down, down !

And some did loudly say,

Ever as the lord Barnet's horn blew,

Away, Muggrave, away.

*Mrs. Mer.* You will not have us starve here, will you, master Merrythought ?

*Jasp.* Nay, good sir, be persuaded ; she's my mother :

If her offences have been great against you, Let your own love remember she is yours, And so forgive her.

*Luce.* Good master Merrythought, Let me entreat you ; I will not be denied.

*Mrs. Mer.* Why, master Merrythought, will you be a vex'd thing still ?

*Mer.* Woman, I take you to my love again ; but you shall sing before you enter ; therefore dispatch your song, and so come in.

*Mrs. Mer.* Well, you must have your will, when all's done :—Micke, what song canst thou sing, boy ?

*Mich.* I can sing none forsooth, but 'A Lady's Daughter of Paris,' properly, [Exit within.]

It was a lady's daughter, &c.

Enter *Mrs. MERRYTHOUGHT* and *MICHAEL*.

*Mer.* Come, you're welcome home again.

If such danger be in playing,

And jest must to earnest turn,

You shall go no more a-Maying——

*Vent.* [Within.] Are you within, sir ? master Merrythought !

*Jasp.* It is my master's voice ; good sir, go hold in talk whilst we convey ourselves into [him Some inward room. [Exit with *LUCE*.]

*Mer.* What are you ? are you merry ? You must be very merry, if you enter.

*Vent.* I am, sir.

*Mer.* Sing then.

*Vent.* Nay, good sir, open to me.

*Mer.* Sing, I say,

Or, by the merry heart, you come not in !

*Vent.* Well, sir, I'll sing.

[Sings.]

Fortune my foe, &c.

Enter *VENTERWELS*.

*Mer.* You're welcome, sir, you're welcome ! You see your entertainment ; pray you be merry.

*Vent.* Oh, master Merrythought, I'm come to Forgiveness for the wrongs I offer'd you, [ask you

And your most virtuous son ; they are infinite, Yet my contrition shall be more than they. I do confess my hardness broke his heart, For which just Heaven hath giv'n me punishment More than my age can carry ; his wandring spirit, Not yet at rest, pursues me every where, Crying, "I'll haunt thee for thy cruelty." My daughter she is gone, I know not how, Taken invisible, and whether living, Or in the grave, 'tis yet uncertain to me. Oh, master Merrythought, these are the weights Will sink me to my grave ! Forgive me, sir.

*Mer.* Why, sir, I do forgive you ; and be merry !

And if the wag in's lifetime play'd the knave, Can you forgive him too ?

*Vent.* With all my heart, sir.

*Mer.* Speak it again, and heartily.

*Vent.* I do, sir ;

Now, by my soul, I do.

*Mer.* [Sings.] With that came out his paramour ; She was as white as the lily flower. Hey trolly, trolly, lolly !

Enter *LUCE* and *JASPER*.

With that came out her own dear knight, He was as true as ever did fight, &c.

Sir, if you will forgive 'em, clap their hands together ; there's no more to be said i' th' matter.

*Vent.* I do, I do.

"*Cit.* I do not like this : Peace, boys ! Hear me, one of you ! every body's part is come to an end but Ralph's, and he's left out.

"*Boy.* 'Tis long of yourself, sir ; we have nothing to do with his part.

"*Cit.* Ralph, come away ! Make [an end] on him, as you have done of the rest, boys ; come !

"*Wife.* Now, good husband, let him come out and die.

"*Cit.* He shall, Nell.—Ralph, come away quickly, and die, boy.

"*Boy.* 'Twill be very unfit he should die, sir, upon no occasion ; and in a comedy too.

"*Cit.* Take you no care of that, Sir Boy ; is not his part at an end, think you, when he's dead ?—Come away, Ralph !"

Enter *RALPH*, with a forked Arrow through his Head.

*Ralph.* When I was mortal, this my costive Did lap up figs and raisins in the Strand ; [corps Where sitting, I espied a lovely dame, Whose master wrought with lingell and with awl, And underground he vamped many a boot : Straight did her love prick forth me, tender sprig, To follow feats of arms in warlike wise, Through Waltham-Desert ; where I did perform Many achievements, and did lay on ground Huge Barbaroso, that insulting giant, And all his captives soon set at liberty. Then honour prick'd me from my native soil Into Moldavia, where I gain'd the love Of Pompiona, his beloved daughter ; But yet proved constant to the black-thumb'd Susan, and scorn'd Pompiona's love ; [maid, Yet liberal I was, and gave her pins, And money for her father's officers.

I then returned home, and thrust myself In action, and by all men chosen was Lord of the May ; where I did flourish it, With scarfs and rings, and poesy in my hand. After this action I preferred was,

And chosen city-captain at Mile-End,  
With hat and feather, and with leading staff,  
And train'd my men, and brought them all off clear,  
Save one man that bewrayed him with the noise.

But all these things I Ralph did undertake,  
Only for my beloved Susan's sake.

Then coming home, and sitting in my shop  
With apron blue, Death came into my stall  
To cheapen *aguavilla*; but ere I  
Could take the bottle down, and fill a taste,  
Death caught a pound of pepper in his hand,  
And sprinkled all my face and body o'er,  
And in an instant vanished away.

*Cit.* 'Tis a pretty fiction, i'faith!"

*Ralph.* Then took I up my bow and shaft in  
hand,

And walked into Moorfields to cool myself;  
But there grim cruel Death met me again,  
And shot this forked arrow through my head;  
And now I faint; therefore be warn'd by me,  
My fellows every one, of forked heads!

Farewell, all you good boys in merry London!  
Ne'er shall we more upon Shrove-Tuesday meet,  
And pluck down houses of iniquity;

(My pain increaseth) I shall never more  
Hold open, whilst another pumps both legs,  
Nor daub a satten gown with rotten eggs;

Set up a stake, oh, never more I shall!  
I die! fly, fly, my soul, to Grocers' Hall!

Oh, oh, oh, &c.

*Wife.* Well said, Ralph! do your obeisance  
to the gentlemen, and go your ways. Well said,  
Ralph!"

[*Exit RALPH.*]

*Mer.* Methinks all men that bin ill and want

pectedly reconciled, should not depart without a  
song.

*Vent.* A good motion.

*Mer.* Strike up then!

#### SONG.

Better musle ne'er was known  
Than a quire of hearts in one.  
Let each other, that hath been  
Troubled with the gall or spleen,  
Learn of us to keep his brow  
Smooth and plain, as ours are now!  
Sing, though before the hour of dying;  
He shall rise, and then be crying,  
"Heyho, 'tis nought but mirth  
That keeps the body from the earth." [*Exeunt.*]

#### EPILOGUS.

*Cit.* Come, Neil, shall we go? the play's done.

*Wife.* Nay, by my faith, George, I have more  
manners than so; I'll speak to these gentlemen  
first.—I thank you all, gentlemen, for your patience  
and countenance to Ralph, a poor fatherless child!  
and if I might see you at my house, it should go  
hard but I would have a pottle of wine, and a pipe  
of tobacco for you; for truly I hope you do like  
the youth; but I would be glad to know the truth;  
I refer it to your own discretions, whether you will  
applaud him or no; for I will wink, and, whilst,  
you shall do what you will.—I thank you with all  
my heart. God give you good night!—Come,  
George!"

# THE DOUBLE MARRIAGE.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

FERRAND, *the libidinous Tyrant of Naples.*  
VIOLET, *a noble Gentleman, studious of his country's freedom.*  
BRISONET, } *Two honest Gentlemen, confederates*  
CAMILLO, } *with VIOLET.*  
RONVERE, *a Villain, Captain of the Guard.*  
VILLIO, *a Court Fool.*  
CASTRUCCIO, *a Court Parasite.*  
PANDULPHO, *a noble Gentleman, Father to VIOLET.*  
DUKE OF SESSE, *Enemy to FERRAND, proscribed, and turned Pirate.*  
ASCANIO, *Nephew to FERRAND.*  
LUCIO, *a Boy, Servant to VIOLET.*

Master.  
Gunner.  
Boatswain.  
Chirurgoon.  
Sailors.  
Doctor.  
Citizens.  
Guards, Soldiers, and Servants.

JULIANA, *the matchless Wife of VIOLET.*  
MARTIA, *Daughter of the Duke of SESSE, Second Wife to VIOLET.*  
Court-Ladies.

SCENE,—NAPLES, AND A SHIP AT SEA.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—NAPLES. *A Room in the House of VIOLET.*

*Enter VIOLET and LUCIO.*

*Vir.* Boy!

*Lucio.* Sir?

*Vir.* If my wife seek me, tell her that  
Designs of weight, too heavy for her knowledge,  
Exact my privacy.

*Lucio.* I shall, sir.

*Vir.* Do then;

And leave me to myself.

*Lucio.* 'Tis a raw morning,  
And, would you please to interpret that for duty  
Which you may construe boldness, I could wish  
(To arm yourself against it) you would use  
More of my service.

*Vir.* I have heat within here,  
A noble heat, good boy, to keep it off;  
I shall not freeze. Deliver my excuse,  
And you have done your part.

*Enter JULIANA.*

*Lucio.* That is prevented;

My lady follows you.

*Vir.* Since I must be cross'd then,  
Let her perform that office.

*Lucio.* I obey ye.

[*Exit.*

*Vir.* Pr'ythee to-bed: To be thus fond's more  
Than if I were neglected.

[*tedious*

*Jul.* 'Tis the fault then  
Of love and duty, which I would fall under,  
Rather than want that care which you may chal-  
As due to my obedience.

[*lence*

*Vir.* I confess

This tenderness argues a loving wife,  
And more deserves my heart's best thanks than  
Yet I must tell you, sweet, you do exceed [anger].  
In your affection, if you would engross me  
To your delights alone.

*Jul.* I am not jealous:

If my embraces have distasted you,  
(As I must grant you every way so worthy  
That 'tis not in weak woman to deserve you,  
Much less in miserable me, that want  
Those graces some more fortunate are stored with,)  
Seek any whom you please, and I will study,  
With my best service, to deserve those favours  
That shall yield you contentment.

*Vir.* You are mistaken.

*Jul.* No, I am patient, sir; and so good morrow!  
I will not be offensive.

*Vir.* Hear my reasons.

*Jul.* Though in your life a widow's bed receives  
me,

For your sake I must love it. May she prosper  
That shall succeed me in it, and your ardour  
Last longer to her!

*Vir.* By the love I bear,  
First to my country's peace, next to thyself,  
(To whom compared, my life I rate at nothing,)  
Stood here a lady that were the choice abstract  
Of all the beauties Nature ever fashion'd,  
Or Art gave ornament to, compared to thee,  
Thus as thou art, obedient and loving,  
I should contemn and loath her!

*Jul.* I do believe you.

How I am bless'd in my assured belief  
This is unfeign'd! And why this sadness then?

retirements,  
ts,  
pleasures stran-

any cause  
st thou be

The only weapons our poor sex can use,  
When we are injured ; and they may become us :  
But for men, that were born free, men of rank,  
(That would be register'd fathers of their country,  
And to have on their tombs, in golden letters,  
The noble style of " Tyrant-killers " written.)  
To weep like fools and women, and not like wise

and virgins, are too frequent ; never man  
Yet thank'd him for a pardon ; for religion,  
It is a thing he dreams not of.

*Jul.* I have heard  
(How true it is I know not) that he sold  
The bishoprick of Tarent to a Jew,  
For thirteen thousand ducats.

*Vir.* I was present,  
And saw the money paid. The day would leave me  
Ere I could number out his impious actions,  
Or what the miserable subject suffers :  
And can you entertain, in such a time,  
A thought of dalliance ? Tears, and sighs, and  
Would better now become you. [groans,

*Jul.* They indeed are

*Vir.* 'Tis plotted, love, and strongly ; and,  
believe it,  
For nothing else could do it, 'twas the thought  
How to proceed in this design, and end it,  
That made strange my embraces.

*Jul.* Curs'd be she  
That's so indulgent to her own delights,  
That, for their satisfaction, would give  
A stop to such a glorious enterprize !  
For me, I would not for the world, I had been  
Guilty of such a crime : Go on, and prosper !  
Go on, my dearest lord ! I love your honour  
Above my life ! nay, yours. My prayers go with  
you ;  
Which I will strengthen with my tears. The wrongs

Of this poor country edge your sword! oh, may it  
Pierce deep into this tyrant's heart! and then  
When you return, bath'd in his guilty blood,  
I'll wash you clean with fountains of true joy.  
But who are your assistants? though I am  
So covetous of your glory, that I could wish  
You had no sharer in it. *[Knocking.]*

*Vir.* Be not curious.

They come; however you command my bosom,  
To them I would not have you seen.

*Jul.* I am gone, sir.

Be confident; and may my resolution  
Be present with you! *[Exit.]*

*Vir.* Such a masculine spirit,  
With more than woman's virtues, were a dower  
To weigh down a king's fortune.

*Enter BRISONNET, CAMILLO, and RONVERE.*

*Bris.* Good day to you!

*Cam.* You are an early stirrer.

*Vir.* What new face

Bring you along?

*Ronv.* If I stand doubted, sir,

As by your looks I guess it, you much injure  
A man that loves, and truly loves, this country  
With as much zeal as you do; one that hates  
The prince by whom it suffers, and as deadly;  
One that dares step as far to gain my freedom,  
As any he that breathes: that wears a sword  
As sharp as any's.

*Cam.* Nay, no more comparisons.

*Ronv.* What you but whisper, I dare speak  
aloud,

Stood the king by; have means to put in act too,  
What you but coldly plot: If this deserve then  
Suspicion in the best, the boldest, wisest,  
Pursue your own intents; I'll follow mine;  
And if I not outstrip you——

*Bris.* Be assured, sir,

A confidence like this can never be  
Allied to treachery.

*Cam.* Who durst speak so much,  
But one that is, like us, a sufferer,  
And stands as we affected?

*Vir.* You are cozen'd,

And all undone! Every intelligencer  
Speaks treason with like licence. Is not this  
Ronvere, that hath for many years been train'd  
In Ferrand's school, a man in trust and favour,  
Rewarded too, and highly?

*Cam.* Grant all this,

The thought of what he was, being as he is now,  
A man disgraced, and with contempt thrown off,  
Will spur him to revenge, as swift as they  
That never were in favour.

*Vir.* Poor and childish!

*Bris.* His regiment is cast, that is most certain;  
And his command i' th' castle given away.

*Cam.* That on my knowledge.

*Vir.* Grosser still! What shepherd  
Would yield the poor remainder of his flock  
To a known wolf, though he put on the habit  
Of a most faithful dog, and bark like one,  
As this but only talks?

*Cam.* Yes, he has means too.

*Vir.* I know it to my grief, weak men, I know  
To make his peace, if there were any war *[it!]*  
Between him and his master, [by] betraying  
Our innocent lives.

*Ronv.* You are too suspicious,

And I have borne too much, beyond my temper:  
Take your own ways! I'll leave you.

*Vir.* You may stay now;  
You have enough, and all indeed you fish'd for.—  
But one word, gentlemen: Have you discover'd  
To him alone our plot?

*[Apart to BRISONNET and CAMILLO.]*

*Bris.* To him, and others

That are at his devotion.

*Vir.* Worse and worse!

For were he only conscious of our purpose,  
Though with the breach of hospitable laws,  
In my own house I'd silence him for ever:  
But what is past my help is past my care.  
I have a life to lose.

*Cam.* Have better hopes.

*Ronv.* And when you know, with what charge  
I have further'd

Your noble undertaking, you will swear me  
Another man; the guards I have corrupted,  
And of the choice of all our noblest youths,  
Attired like virgins, such as hermits would  
Welcome to their sad cells, prepared a masque,  
As done for the king's pleasure.

*Vir.* For his safety

I rather fear; and as a pageant to  
Usher our ruin.

*Ronv.* We, as torch-bearers,  
Will wait on these; but with such art and cunning  
I have convey'd sharp poniards in the wax,  
That we may pass, though search'd, through all his  
Without suspicion, and in all his glory *[guards]*  
Oppress him, and with safety.

*Cam.* 'Tis most strange——

*Vir.* To be effected.

*Ronv.* You are doubtful still.

*Bris.* But we resolved to follow him; and if you  
Desist now, Virolet, we'll say 'tis fear,  
Rather than providence.

*Cam.* And so we leave you. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter JULIANA.*

*Jul.* To your wise doubts, and to my better  
counsels.

Oh! pardon me, my lord, and trust me too;  
Let me not, like Cassandra, prophesy truths,  
And never be believed, before the mischief;  
I have heard all, know this Ronvere a villain,  
A villain that hath tempted me, and plotted  
This for your ruin, only to make way  
To his hopes in my embraces; at more leisure,  
I will acquaint you wherefore I conceal'd it  
To this last minute; if you stay, you are lost,  
And all prevention too late. I know,  
And 'tis to me known only, a dark cave  
Within this house, a part of my poor dower,  
Where you may lie conceal'd, as in the centre,  
Till this rough blast be o'er. Where there is air,  
More than to keep in life, Ferrand will find you;  
So curious his fears are.

*Vir.* 'Tis better fall

Than hide my head now, ('twas thine own advice.)  
My friends engaged too.

*Jul.* You stand further bound,  
Than to weak men that have betray'd themselves,  
Or to my counsel, though then just and loyal:  
Your fancy hath been good, but not your judgment  
In choice of such to side you. Will you leap  
From a steep tower, because a desperate fool  
Does it, and trusts the wind to save his hazard?

There's more expected from you ; all men's eyes  
Are fix'd on Virolet, to help, not hurt them :  
Make good their hopes and ours ! You have sworn  
often,

That you dare credit me, and allow'd me wise,  
Although a woman ; even kings in great actions  
Wait opportunity, and so must you, sir,  
Or lose your understanding.

*Fir.* Thou art constant ;  
I an uncertain fool, a most blind fool :  
Be thou my guide.

*Jul.* If I fail to direct you,  
For torment or reward, when I am wretched,  
May constancy forsake me !

*Fir.* I have my safety.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A State-Room in the Palace.*

*Enter CASTRUCCIO and VILLO.*

*Vil.* Why are you wrapt thus ?

*Cast.* Peace, thou art a fool.

*Vil.* But if I were a flatterer, like your worship,  
I should be wise, and rich too :

There are few else that prosper, bawds excepted,  
They hold an equal place there.

*Cast.* A shrewd knave !

But oh, the king, the happy king !

*Vil.* Why happy ?

In bearing a great burthen ?

*Cast.* What bears he,

That's borne on princes' shoulders ?

*Vil.* A crown's weight,

Which sits more heavy on his head, than the ore  
Slaves dig out of the mines, of which 'tis made.

*Cast.* Thou worthily art his fool, to think that  
heavy

That carries him i' th' air : The reverence due  
To that most sacred gold makes him adored,  
His footsteps kiss'd ; his smiles to raise a beggar  
To a lord's fortune ; and, when he but frowns,  
The city quakes—

*Vil.* Or the poor cuckolds in it,  
Coxcombs I should say. I am of a fool  
Grown a philosopher, to hear this parasite.

*Cast.* The delicates he is served with, see and  
envy—

*Vil.* I had rather have an onion with a stomach,  
Than these without one.

*Cast.* The celestial music,  
Such as the motion of the eternal spheres

[*Still music.*]

Yields Jove when he drinks nectar—

*Vil.* Here's a fine knave !

Yet hath too many fellows.

*Enter Court-Ladies, and pass over the Stage.*

*Cast.* Then the beauties,

That with variety of choice embraces

Renew his age—

*Vil.* Help him to crouch rather,

And the French cringe ; they are excellent surgeons  
that way.

*Cast.* Oh, majesty ! let others think of Heaven,  
While I contemplate thee.

*Vil.* This is not atheism,

But court observance.

[*Flourish.*]

*Cast.* Now the god appears,  
Usher'd with earthquakes.

*Vil.* Base idolatry !

*Enter FERRAND, Guard, Women, and Servants.*

*Fer.* These meats are poison'd ! hang the cooks !  
—No note more,

[*To the music.*]

On forfeit of your fingers ! do you envy me  
A minute's slumber ?—What are these ?

1 *Guard.* The ladies

Appointed by your majesty.

*Fer.* To the purpose !

For what appointed ?

1 *Guard.* For your grace's pleasure.

*Fer.* To suck away the little blood is left me,  
By my continual cares ! I am not apt now :  
Enjoy them first, taste of my diet once ;  
And, your turn served, for fifty crowns a-piece  
Their husbands may redeem them.

*Women.* Great sir, mercy !

*Fer.* I am deaf. Why stare you ? Is what we  
command

To be disputed ? Who's this ? Bring you the dead  
To upbraid me to my face ?

*Cast.* Hold, emperor !

[*Kneels.*]

Hold, mightiest of kings ! I am thy vassal,  
Thy foot-stool, that durst not presume to look  
On thy offended face.

*Fer.* Castruccio, rise.

*Cast.* Let not the lightning of thy eye consume  
me,

Nor hear that musical tongue in dreadful thunder,  
That speaks all mercy.

*Vil.* Here's no flattering rogue !

*Cast.* Ferrand, that is the father of his people,  
The glory of mankind—

*Fer.* No more, no word more !

And while I tell my troubles to myself,  
Be statues without motion or voice :  
Though to be flatter'd is an itch to greatness,  
It now offends me.

*Vil.* Here's the happy man !

But speak who dares.

*Fer.* When I was innocent,

I yet remember I could eat and sleep,  
Walk unafrighted ; but now, terrible  
To others, my guards cannot keep fear from me ;  
It still pursues me ; oh, my wounded conscience !  
The bed I would rest in is stuffed with thorns ;  
The ground's strew'd o'er with adders, and with  
aspicks,

Where'er I set my foot : But I am in,  
And what was got with cruelty, with blood  
Must be defended. Though this life's a hell,  
I fear a worse hereafter. Ha !

*Enter RONVERE and Guard.*

*Ronv.* My lord !

*Fer.* Welcome, Ronvere ! welcome, my golden  
plummet,

With which I sound mine enemies' depths and  
Hast thou discovered ?

[*angers !*]

*Ronv.* All as you could wish, sir,  
The plot, and the contrivers ; was made one  
Of the conspiracy.

*Fer.* Is Virolet in ?

*Ronv.* The head of all ; He only scented me ;  
And from his fear that I played false, is fled ;  
The rest I have in fetters.

*Fer.* Death and hell !

Next to my mortal foe, the pirate Sesse,  
I aimed at him ! He's virtuous, and wise,  
A lover of his freedom and his country's ;  
Dangerous to such as govern by the sword,

And so to me.—No track which way he went?  
No means to overtake him?

*Ronv.* There's some hope left:

But with a rough hand to be seiz'd upon.

*Fer.* What is't!

*Ronv.* If any know or where he is,  
Or which way he is fled, it is his wife:  
Her, with his father, I have apprehended,  
And brought among the rest.

*Fer.* 'Twas wisely ordered:

Go fetch them in, and let my executioners  
Appear in horror with the rack. *[Exit RONVERE.]*

*Vil.* I take it, signor,

This is no time for you to flatter,  
Or me to fool in.

*Cast.* Thou art wise in this:

Let's off; it is unsafe to be near Jove  
When he begins to thunder.

*Vil.* Good morality!

*[Exeunt VILLO and CASTRUCCIO.]*

*Fer.* I that have pierced into the hearts of men;  
Forced them to lay open with my looks  
Secrets, whose least discovery was death;  
Will rend, for what concerns my life, the fortress  
Of a weak woman's faith.

*Enter RONVERE, Guard and Executioners, with a rack;  
bringing in CAMILLO, BRISSONET, PANDULFO, and  
JULIANA fettered.*

*Cam.* Whate'er we suffer,  
The weight that loads a traitor's heart, sit ever  
Heavy on thine!

*Bris.* As we are caught by thee,  
Fall thou by others!

*Ronv.* Pish! poor fools, your curses  
Will never reach me.

*Jul.* Now, by my Violet's life,  
Father, this is a glorious stage of murder!  
Here are fine properties toge, and such spectators  
As will expect good action! To the life  
Let us perform our parts; and we shall live  
When these are rotten. 'Would we might begin  
once—

Are you the master of the company?

'Troth, you are tedious now.

*Fer.* She does deride me.

*Jul.* Thee and thy power! If one poor syllable  
Could win me an assurance of thy favour,  
I would not speak it; I desire to be  
The great example of thy cruelty,  
To what which on, know, Ferrand, I alone  
Can make discovery where my Violet is,  
Whose life I know thou aim'st at: But if tortures  
Compel me to't, may hope of Heaven forsake me!  
I dare thy worst.

*Fer.* Are we contemn'd?

*Jul.* Thou art,

Thou and thy ministers! My life is thine;  
But in the death the victory shall be mine.

*Pand.* We have such a mistress here to teach  
us courage,

That cowards might learn from her.

*Fer.* You are slow! *[She is put on the rack.]*

Begin the scene.—Thou miserable fool,  
For so I'll make thee—

*Jul.* 'Tis not in thy reach;

I am happy in my sufferings, thou most wretched.

*Fer.* So brave? I'll tame you yet.—Pluck  
harder, villains!—

Is she insensible? no sigh nor groan?  
Or is she dead?

*Jul.* No, tyrant! though I suffer  
More than a woman, beyond flesh and blood,  
'Tis in a cause so honourable, that I scorn,  
With any sign, that may express a sorrow,  
To shew I do repent.

*Fer.* Confess yet, and  
Thou shalt be safe.

*Jul.* 'Tis wrapt up in my soul,  
From whence thou canst not force it.

*Fer.* I will be

Ten days a-killing thee.

*Jul.* Be twenty thousand;

My glory lives the longer.

*Ronv.* 'Tis a miracle!

She tires the executioners, and me.

*Fer.* Unloose her; I am conquer'd.—I must  
take

Some other way.—Reach her my chair, in honour  
Of her invincible fortitude.

*Ronv.* Will you not

Dispatch the rest?

*Fer.* When I seem merciful, *[Apart to him.]*

Assure thyself, Ronvere, I am most cruel.—

Thou wonder of thy sex, and of this nation,

That hast changed my severity to mercy,  
Not to thyself alone, but to thy people,  
(In which I do include these men) my enemies!  
Unbind them.

*Pand.* This is strange!

*Fer.* For your intent

Against my life, which you dare not deny,  
I only ask one service.

*Cam.* Above hope!

*Fer.* There rides a pirate near, the Duke of  
Sease,

My enemy and this country's, that in bonds  
Holds my dear friend Ascanio: Free this friend,  
Or bring the pirate's head, besides your pardon,  
And honour of the action, your reward  
Is forty thousand ducats: And because  
I know that Violet is as bold as wise,  
Be he your general. As pledge of your faith,  
That you will undertake it, let this old man  
And this most constant matron stay with me,  
Of whom, as of myself, I will be careful.  
She shall direct you where her husband is.  
Make choice of any ship you think most useful;  
They are rigged for you.

*[Exeunt Guard, with JULIANA and PANDULFO.]*

*Bris.* We with joy accept it.

*Cam.* And will proclaim king Ferrand merciful.

*[Exeunt BRISSONET and CAMILLO.]*

*Ronv.* The mystery of this, my lord? or are you  
Changed in your nature?

*Fer.* I'll make thee private to it:

The lives of these weak men, and desperate  
woman,

Would no way have secured me, had I took  
them:

'Tis Violet I aim at; he has power,  
And knows to hurt. If they encounter Sesse,  
And he prove conqueror, I am assured  
They'll find no mercy; if that they prove victors,  
I shall recover, with my friend, his head  
I most desire of all men.

*Ronv.* Now I have it.

*Fer.* I'll make thee understand the drift of  
all;

So we stand sure, thus much for those that fall!

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*On board the Duke of Sesse's Ship at Sea.**Enter Boatswain and Gunner.*

*Boats.* Lay her before the wind; up with her canvas,

And let her work! the wind begins to whistle.

Clap all her streamers on, and let her dance,

As if she were the minion of the ocean!

Let her bestride the billows till they roar,

And curl their wanton heads! Ho, below there!

*Sailors.* [*Within.*] Ho, ho!

*Boats.* Lay her North-East, and thrust her mizen out;

The day grows fair and clear, and the wind courts Oh, for a lusty sail now, to give chase to! [*us.*]

*Gun.* A stubborn bark, that would but bear up to us,

And change a broadside bravely!

*Boats.* Where's the duke?

*Gun.* I have not seen him stir to-day.

*Boats.* Oh, gunner,

What bravery dwells in his age, and what valour!

And to his friends, what gentleness and bounty!

How long have we been inhabitants at sea here?

*Gun.* Some fourteen years.

*Boats.* By fourteen lives I swear then,

This element never nourish'd such a pirate,

So great, so fearless, and so fortunate,

So patient in his want, in act so valiant!

How many sail of well-mann'd ships before us,

As the bonito does the flying fish,

Have we pursued and scour'd, that, to out-strip us,

They have been fain to hang their very shirts on!

What galleys have we bang'd, and sunk, and taken,

Whose only fraughts were fire and stern defiance,

And nothing spoke but bullet in all these!

How like old Neptune have I seen our general

Standing i' th' poop, and tossing his steel trident,

Commanding both the sea and winds to serve him!

*Gun.* His daughter too (which is the honour, boatswain,

Of all her sex) that martial maid—

*Boats.* A brave weach?

*Gun.* How oftentimes, a fight being new begun,

Has she leap'd down, and took my linstock from me,

And crying, "Now fly right," fired all my chasers!

Then, like the image of the warlike goddess,

Her target braced upon her arm, her sword drawn,

And anger in her eyes, leap'd up again,

And bravely hail'd the bark; I have wonder'd,

boatswain,

That in a body made so delicate,

So soft for sweet embraces, so much fire,

And manly soul, not starting at a danger—

*Boats.* Her noble father got her in his fury,

And so she proves a soldier.

*Gun.* This too I wonder at,

Taking so many strangers as he does,

He uses them with that respect and coolness,

Not making prize, but only borrowing

What may supply his want; nor that for nothing;

But renders back what they may stand in need of,

And then parts lovingly: Where, if he take

His countryman, that should be nearest to him,

And stand most free from danger, he sure pays for't;

He drowns or hangs the men, ransacks the bark,  
Then gives her up a bonfire to his fortune.

*Boats.* The wrongs he has received from that dull country

(That's all I know) have purchased all his cruelty;

We fare the better. Cheerly, cheerly, boys!

The ship runs merrily; my captain's melancholy,

And nothing cures that in him but a sea-fight:

I hope to meet a sail, boy, and a right one.

*Gun.* That's my hope too; I am ready for the pastime.

*Boats.* I' th' meantime, let's bestow a song upon him,

To shake him from his dumps, and bid good-day  
Ho, in the hold! [to him.—

*Enter a Boy.*

*Boy.* Here, here.

*Boats.* To th' main-top, boy!

An thou ken'st a ship that dares defy us,

Here's gold.

*Boy.* I am gone. [*Exit.*]

*Boats.* Come, sirs, a quaint levit,

[*Trumpets sound a levit.*]

To waken our brave general! Then to our labour!

*Enter Duke of Sesse, and MARTIA, like an Amazon, on the quarter-deck.*

*Duke.* I thank you, loving mates, I thank you all!

There's to prolong your mirth; and good-morrow to you! [*Gives them money.*]

*Mart.* Take this from me; you're honest, valiant friends,

And such we must make much of. Not a sail

*Gun.* Not any within ken yet. [*stirring?*]

*Boats.* Without doubt, lady,

The wind standing so fair and full upon us,

We shall have sport anon.—But, noble general,

Why are you still so sad? You take our edge off;

You make us dull and spiritless.

*Duke.* I'll tell ye,

Because I will provoke ye to be fortunate;

For when you know my cause, 'twill double arm you:

This woman never knew it yet, my daughter;

Some discontents she has.

*Mart.* Pray, sir, go forward.

*Duke.* These fourteen years, I have stowed it here at sea,

Where the most curious thought could never find it.

*Boats.* Call up the master, and all the mates.

*Enter Master and Sailors.*

*Duke.* Good-morrow!

*Master.* Good-morrow to our general, a good And to that noble lady all good wishes! [*one!*]

*Mart.* I thank you, master.

*Duke.* Mark me! thus it is then;

Which I did never think to have discover'd,

Till full revenge had wooed me; but, to satisfy

My faithful friends, thus I cast off my burthen.

In that short time I was a courtier,

And followed that most hated of all princes,

Ferrand, the full example of all mischiefs,

(Compell'd to follow to my soul a stranger)

It was my chance one day to play at chess,

For some few crowns, with a minion of this king's,

A mean poor man, that only served his pleasures ;  
Removing of a rook, we grew to words,  
From this to hotter anger : To be short,  
I got a blow.

*Mart.* How, how, my noble father !

*Duke.* A blow, my girl ; which I had soon repaid,  
And sunk the slave for ever, had not odds  
Thrust in betwixt us. I went away disgraced—

*Mart.* For honour's sake, not so, sir !

*Duke.* For that time, wench ;  
But call'd upon him, like a gentleman,  
By many private friends ; knock'd at his valour,  
Court'd his honour hourly to repair me ;  
And though he were a thing my thoughts made  
slight on,

And only worth the fury of my footman,  
Still I pursued him nobly—

*Mart.* Did he escape you ?

My old brave father, could you sit down so coldly ?

*Duke.* Have patience, and know all.—Pursued  
him fairly,  
Till I was laugh'd at, scorn'd, my wrongs made  
May-games ;

By him unjustly wrong'd should be all justice ;  
The slave protected : Yet at length I found him,  
Found him, when he supposed all had been buried,  
And what I had received durst not be question'd ;  
And then he fell, under my sword he fell,  
For ever sunk ; his poor life, like the air  
Blown in an empty bubble, burst, and left him,  
No noble wind of memory to raise him.  
But then began my misery ! I fled,  
The king's frowns following, and my friends' des-  
pairs :

No hand that durst relieve ; my country fearful,  
Basely and weakly fearful of a tyrant,  
Which made his bad will worse, stood still and  
wonder'd,

Their virtues bed-rid in 'em. Then, my girl,  
A little one, I snatch'd thee from thy nurse,  
The model of thy father's miseries,  
And some small wealth was fit for present carriage,  
And got to sea, where I profess'd my anger,  
And will do, whilst that base ungrateful country,  
And that bad king, have blood or means to quench  
Now ye know all. [me.]

*Master.* We know all, and admire all :  
Go on, and do all still, and still be fortunate !

*Mart.* Had you done less, or lost this noble  
anger,

You had been worthy then men's empty pities,  
And not their wonders. Go on, and use your justice,  
And use it still with that fell violence,  
It first appear'd to you ! If you go less,  
Or take a doting mercy to protection,  
The honour of a father I disclaim in you,  
Call back all duty, and will be prouder of  
The infamous and base name of a whore,  
Than daughter to a great duke and a coward.

*Duke.* Mine own sweet *Martia*, no ; thou know'st  
It cannot, must not be. [my nature ;

*Mart.* I hope it shall not.

But why, sir, do you keep alive still young *Ascanio*,  
Prince of *Rossana*, king *Ferrand's* most beloved one,  
You took two months ago ?  
Why is he not flung overboard, or hang'd ?

*Duke.* I'll tell thee, girl :

It were a mercy in my nature now,  
So soon to break the thread of his afflictions ;  
I am not so far reconciled yet to him,

To let him die ; that were a benefit.  
Besides, I keep him as a bait and diet,  
To draw on more, and nearer to the king :  
I look each hour to hear of his armados ;  
And a hot welcome they shall have.

*Mart.* But hark you !

If you were over-swayed with odds—

*Duke.* I find you :

I would not yield ; no, girl ; no hope of yielding,  
Nor fling myself one hour into their mercies,  
And give the tyrant hope, to gain his kingdom.  
No ; I can sink, wench, and make shift to die ;  
A thousand doors are open, I shall hit one.  
I am no niggard of my life ; so it go nobly,  
All ways are equal, and all hours ; I care not.

*Mart.* Now you speak like my father !

*Master.* Noble general,

If by our means they inherit aught but bangs,  
The mercy of the main-yard light upon us ! No ;  
We can sink too, sir, and sink low enough,  
To pose their cruelties to follow us ;  
And he that thinks of life, if the world go that way,  
A thousand cowards suck his bones !

*Gun.* Let the worst come,

I can unbreech a cannon, and without much help  
Turn her into the keel ; and when she has split it,  
Every man knows his way, his own prayers,  
And so good night, I think !

*Master.* We have lived all with you,  
And will die with you, general.

*Duke.* I thank you, gentlemen.

*Boy.* [Above.] A sail, a sail !

*Master.* A cheerful sound !

*Boy.* A sail !

*Boats.* Of whence ? of whence, boy ?

*Boy.* A lusty sail !

*Mart.* Look right, and look again.

*Boy.* She plows the sea before her,  
And foams i' th' mouth.

*Boats.* Of whence ?

*Boy.* I ken not yet, sir.

*Duke.* Oh, may she prove of *Naples* !

*Master.* Prove the devil,  
We'll spit out fire as thick as she.

*Boy.* Hoy !

*Master.* Brave boy ?

*Boy.* Of *Naples*, *Naples* ; I think of *Naples*,  
- master ;

*Methinks* I see the arms.

*Master.* Up, up another,

And give more certain signs !

[Exit Sailor.]

*Duke.* All to your business !

And stand but right and true—

*Boats.* Hang him that halts now !

*Boy.* She has us in chase.

*Master.* We'll spare her our main-top-sail ;  
She shall not look us long, we are no starters.  
Down with the fore-sail too ! we'll spoom before  
her.

*Mart.* Gunner, good noble gunner, for my  
honour

Load me but these two minions in the chase there ;  
And load 'em right, that they may bid fair welcome,  
And be thine eye, and level, as thy heart is !

*Gun.* Madam, I'll scratch 'em out ; I'll piss 'em

*Sailor.* [Above.] Hoy !

[out else.]

*Duke.* Of whence now ?

*Sailor.* Of *Naples*, *Naples*, *Naples* !

I see her top-flag, how she quarters *Naples*.  
I hear her trumpets.

*Duke.* Down! She's welcome to us!  
 [Exeunt Master, Boatswain, Gunner, Sailors.  
 Every man to his charge! Man her i' th' bow well,  
 And place your rakers right. Daughter, be sparing.  
*Mart.* I swear I'll be above, sir, in the thickest,  
 And where most danger is I'll seek for honour.  
 They have begun! hark, how their trumpets call

us!  
 Hark, how the wide-mouth'd cannons sing amongst  
 us!  
 Hark, how they hail! out of our shells for shame,  
 sir!

*Duke.* Now fortune and my cause!  
*Mart.* Be bold and conquer!  
 [Exeunt.  
 [Charge, trumpets and shot within. A sea fight.

Enter Master and Boatswain.

*Master.* They'll board us once again; they are  
 tough and valiant.  
*Boats.* Twice we have blown 'em into th' air  
 like feathers,  
 And made 'em dance.

*Master.* Good boys! fight bravely, manly!  
 They come on yet; clap in her stern, and yoke 'em.

Enter Gunner.

*Gun.* You shall not need; I have provision for  
 Let 'em board once again; the next is ours. [em;  
 Stand bravely to your pikes; away, be valiant!  
 I have a second course of service for 'em,  
 Shall make the bowels of their bark ache, boy!  
 The duke fights like a dragon. Who dares be idle?  
 [Exeunt.—Charge, trumpets, pieces go off.

SCENE II.—Another part of the Ship.

Enter Master, Boatswain following.

*Master.* Down with 'em! stow 'em in!  
*Boats.* Cut their throats!  
 'Tis brotherhood to fling 'em into th' sea.  
 The duke is hurt, so is his lovely daughter  
 Martia. We have the day yet.

Enter Gunner.

*Gun.* Pox fire 'em!  
 They have smoked us; never such plumbs yet  
 flew.

*Boats.* They have rent the ship, and bored a  
 hundred holes;  
 She swims still lustily.

*Master.* She made a brave fight; and she shall  
 And make a braver yet. [be cured,

*Gun.* Bring us some cans up;  
 I am hot as fire.

Enter Boy with three cans.

*Boats.* I am sure I am none o' th' coolest.  
*Gun.* My cannons rung like bells. Here's to my  
 mistress!  
 The dainty sweet brass minion split their fore-mast;  
 She never fail'd.

*Master.* Ye did all well and truly,  
 Like faithful honest men.

*Boats.* But is she rich, master?  
 [Trumpet, flourish.

Enter DUKE, wounded, MARTIA, Sailors, and VIOLET  
 Prisoner.

*Master.* Rich for my captain's purpose, how-  
 ever,  
 And we are his.—How bravely now he shews,

Heated in blood and anger!—How do you, sir?  
 Not wounded mortally, I hope?

*Duke.* No, master;  
 But only wear the livery of fury.—  
 I am hurt, and deep. [Aside.

*Master.* My mistress too?  
*Mart.* A scratch, man;

My needle would ha' done as much.—Good sir,  
 Be provident and careful!

*Duke.* P'rythee, peace, girl:  
 This wound is not the first blood I have blush'd in.  
 Ye fought all like tall men; my thanks among ye,  
 That speaks not what my purse means, but my  
 tongue, soldiers.—

Now, sir, to you that sought me out, that found  
 me,

That found me what I am, the tyrant's tyrant;  
 You that were imp'd, the weak arm to his folly,  
 You are welcome to your death!

*Vir.* I do expect it;  
 And therefore need no compliment, but wait it.

*Duke.* Thou borest the face once of a noble gen-  
 Rank'd in the first file of the virtuous, [tleman,  
 By every hopeful spirit shew'd and pointed  
 Thy country's love; one that advanced her honour,  
 Not tainted with the base and servile uses  
 The tyrant ties men's souls to. Tell me, Violet,  
 If shame have not forsook thee, with thy credit—

*Vir.* No more of these racks! what I am, I am.  
 I hope not to go free with poor confessions;  
 Nor if I shew ill, will I seem a monster,  
 By making my mind prisoner! Do your worst:  
 When I came out to deal with you, I cast it.  
 Only those base infictions fit for slaves,  
 Because I am a gentleman—

*Duke.* Thou art none!  
 Thou wast while thou stood'st good; thou'rt now  
 a villain,  
 And agent for the devil!

*Vir.* That tongue lies!  
 Give me my sword again, and stand all arm'd;  
 I'll prove it on ye all, I am a gentleman,  
 A man as fair in honour—Rate your prisoners?  
 How poor and like a pedagogue it shews,  
 How far from nobleness! 'Tis fair, you may kill us;  
 But to defame your victory with foul language—

*Duke.* Go fling him overboard. I'll teach you,  
 sirrah—

*Vir.* You cannot teach me to die. I could kill  
 you now  
 With patience, in despising all your cruelties,  
 And make you choke with anger.

*Duke.* Away, I say!  
*Mart.* Stay, sir; he has given you such bold  
 language,

I am not reconciled to him yet; and therefore  
 He shall not have his wish observed so nearly,  
 To die when he please; I beseech you stay, sir.

*Duke.* Do with him what thou wilt.

*Mart.* Carry him to the bilboes,  
 And clap him fast there, with the prince.

*Vir.* Do, lady;  
 For any death you give I am bound to bless you.  
 [Exeunt VIOLET and Sailors.

*Mart.* Now to your cabin, sir, (pray lean upon  
 me)

And take your rest; the surgeons wait all for you.  
*Duke.* Thou mak'st me blush to see thee bear  
 thy fortunes.

Why, sure I have no hurt; I have not fought sure?

*Master.* You bleed apace, sir.

*Mart.* You grow cold too.

*Duke.* I must be rul'd. No leaning!

My deepest wounds scorn crutches.

*All.* A brave general. [*Flourish trumpets, cornets.*

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*On the Lower Deck of the Ship.*

*Enter two Sailors.*

1 *Sailor.* Will they not moor her?

2 *Sailor.* Not till we come to th' fort;

This is too weak a place for our defences.  
The carpenters are hard at work; she swims well,  
And may hold out another fight. The ship we took  
Burns there, to give us light.

1 *Sailor.* She made a brave fight.

2 *Sailor.* She put us all in fear.

1 *Sailor.* Beshrew my heart, did she.

Her men are gone to Candy; they are pepper'd,  
All but this prisoner.

2 *Sailor.* Sure he's a brave fellow.

1 *Sailor.* A stubborn knave, but we have pull'd  
his bravery.

[*VIROLET and ASCANO discovered in the bilboes.*

Look, how he looks now! Come, let's go serve his  
Which is but bread and water. [*diet,*

2 *Sailor.* He'll grow fat on't. [*Exeunt Sailors.*

*Asca.* I must confess I have endured much  
Even almost to the ruin of my spirit; [*misery,*  
But ten times more grows my affliction,  
To find my friend here.

*Vir.* Had we served our country,  
Or honesties, as we have served our follies,  
We had not been here now.

*Asc.* 'Tis too true, Virolet.

*Vir.* And yet my end in venturing for your safety  
Pointed at more than Ferrand's will, a base one!  
Some service for mine own, some for my nation,  
Some for my friend; but I am rightly paid,  
That durst adventure such a noble office,  
From the most treacherous command of mischief:  
You know him now.

*Asc.* And when I nearer knew him,  
Then when I waited, Heaven be witness with me,  
(And, if I lie, my mistress still load me!)  
With what tears I have woo'd him, with what  
prayers,

What weight of reasons I have laid, what dangers,  
(Then, when the people's curses flew like storms,  
And every tongue was whetted to defame him)  
To leave his doubts, his tyrannies, his slaughters,  
His fell oppressions! I know I was hated too.

*Vir.* And all mankind that knew him. These  
confessions

Do no good to the world, to Heaven they may:  
Let's study to die well; we have lived like cox-  
combs.

*Asc.* That my misfortune should lose you too!

*Vir.* Yes;

And not only me, but many more, and better;  
For my life, 'tis not this; or might I save yours,  
And some brave friends I have engaged, let me go!  
It were the meritorious death I wish for;  
But we must hang, or drown like whelps.

*Asc.* No remedy?

*Vir.* On my part, I expect none. I know the  
man,  
And know he has been nettled to the quick too;  
I know his nature.

*Asc.* A most cruel nature!

*Vir.* His wrongs have bred him up; I cannot  
blame him.

*Asc.* He has a daughter too, the greatest scorner,  
And most insulter upon misery—

*Vir.* For those, they are toys to laugh at, not  
to lead men.

A woman's mirth or anger, like a meteor,  
Glides and is gone; and leaves no crack behind it:  
Our miseries would seem like masters to us,  
And shake our manly spirits into fevers,  
If we respected those; the more they glory,  
And raise insulting trophies on our ruins,  
The more our virtues shine in patience.  
Sweet prince, the name of death was never  
terrible

To him that knew to live; nor the loud torrent  
Of all afflictions, singing as they swim,  
A gall of heart, but to a guilty conscience:  
Whilst we stand fair, though by a two-edged storm  
We find untimely falls, like early roses,  
Bent to the earth, we bear our native sweetness.

*Asc.* Good sir, go on.

*Vir.* When we are little children,  
And cry and fret for every toy comes cross us,  
How sweetly do we shew when sleep steals on us!  
When we grow great, but our affection greater,  
And struggle with this stubborn twin, born with us,  
And tug and pull, yet still we find a giant:  
Had we not then the privilege to sleep  
Our everlasting sleep, he would make us idiots.

The memory and monuments of good men  
Are more than lives; and though their tombs want  
tongues,

Yet have they eyes that daily sweat their losses,  
And such a tear from stone no time can value.

To die both young and good are Nature's curses,  
As the world says; ask Truth, they are bounteous  
blessings;

For then we reach at Heaven, in our full virtues,  
And fix ourselves new stars, crown'd with our  
goodness.

*Asc.* You have double arm'd me—Hark! what  
noise is this?

[*Strange music within, hautboys.*  
What horrid noise? Is the sea pleased to sing  
A hideous dirge to our deliverance?

*Vir.* Stand fast now.

[*Within strange cries, horrid noise, trumpets.*

*Asc.* I am fixed.

*Vir.* We fear ye not;

Let death appear in all shapes, we smile on him.

*Enter MARTIA.*

*Asc.* The lady now!

*Vir.* The face o' th' masque is alter'd.

*Asc.* What will she do?

*Vir.* Do what she can, I care not.

*Asc.* She looks on you, sir.

*Vir.* Rather she looks through me;

But yet she stirs me not.

*Mart.* Poor wretched slaves,

Why do you live? or, if you hope for mercy,  
Why do not ye howl out, and fill the hold  
With lamentations, cries, and base submissions,  
Worthy our scorn?

*Vir.* Madam, you are mistaken;

We are no slaves to you, but to blind Fortune;  
And if she had her eyes, and durst be certain,  
Certain our friend, I would not bow unto her;  
I would not cry, nor ask so base a mercy:

If you see anything in our appearance,  
Worthy your sex's softness and your own glory,  
Do it for that, and let that good reward it!  
We cannot beg.

*Mart.* I'll make you beg and bow too.

*Vir.* Madam, for what?

*Mart.* For life; and, when you hope it,  
Then will I laugh and triumph on your baseness.

*Asc.* Madam, 'tis true, there may be such a  
favour,

And we may ask it too, ask it with honour;  
And thank you for that favour, nobly thank you,  
Though it be death; but when we beg a base life,  
And beg it of your scorn—

*Vir.* You are cozen'd, woman;  
Your handsomeness may do much, but not this  
But for your glorious hate— [way;

*Mart.* Are ye so stubborn?

Death, I will make you bow!

*Vir.* It must be in your bed then;

There you may work me to humility.

*Mart.* Why, I can kill thee.

*Vir.* If you do it handsomely,

It may be I can thank you; else—

*Mart.* So glorious?

*Asc.* Her cruelty now works.

*Mart.* Yet woot thou?

*Vir.* No.

*Mart.* Wilt thou for life sake?

*Vir.* No; I know your subtily.

*Mart.* For honour sake?

*Vir.* I will not be a pageant;

My mind was ever firm, and so I'll lose it.

*Mart.* I'll starve thee to it!

*Vir.* I'll starve myself, and cross it.

*Mart.* I'll lay thee on such miseries—

*Vir.* I'll wear 'em,

And with that wantonness you do your bracelets.

*Mart.* I'll be a month a-killing thee.

*Vir.* Poor lady!

I'll be a month a-dying then: What's that?

There's many a calenture out-doing your cruelty.

*Mart.* How might I do in killing of his body,

To save his noble mind? Who waits there!

*Enter a Sailor with a rich cap and mantle.*

*Sailor.* Madam?

*Mart.* Unbolt this man, and leave those things  
behind you; [VINOLLET released.

And so away!—Now, put 'em on. [Exit Sailor.

*Vir.* To what end?

*Mart.* To my end, to my will.

*Vir.* I will. [Puts on the cap and mantle.

*Mart.* I thank you.

*Vir.* Nay, now you thank me, I'll do more;

I am a servant to your courtesy, [I'll tell you,

And so far will be woo'd; but if this triumph

Be only aim'd to make your mischief glorious,

Lady, you have put a richer shroud upon me,

Which my strong mind shall suffer in.

*Mart.* Come hither,

And all thy bravery put into thy carriage;

For I admire thee.

*Vir.* Whither will this woman?

*Asc.* Take heed, my friend!

*Mart.* Look as thou scorn'dst my cruelty;

I know thou dost.

*Vir.* I never fear'd nor flatter'd.

*Mart.* No; if thou hadst thou hadst died, and I  
had gloried.

I suffer now: and thou, which art my prisoner,  
Hast nobly won the free power to despise me.  
I love thee, and admire thee for thy nobleness;  
And, for thy manly sufferance, am thy servant.

*Vir.* Good lady, mock me not.

*Mart.* By Heaven, I love thee!

And, by the soul of love, am one piece with thee!  
Thy mind, thy mind, thy brave, thy manly mind,  
(That, like a rock, stands all the storms of fortune,  
And beats 'em roaring back, they cannot reach thee)  
That lovely mind I dote on, not the body:

That mind has robbed me of my liberty;

That mind has darken'd all my bravery,

And into poor despised things turn'd my angers.

Receive me to your love, sir, and instruct me;

Receive me to your bed, and marry me;

I'll wait upon you, bless the hour I knew you!

*Vir.* Is this a new way?

*Mart.* If you doubt my faith,  
First, take your liberty, (I'll make it perfect)  
Or anything within my power.

*Vir.* I love you:

But how to recompense your love with marriage?

Alas, I have a wife!

*Mart.* Dearer than I am?

That will adventure so much for your safety?

Forget her father's wrongs, quit her own honour,

Pull on her, for a stranger's sake, all curses?

*Vir.* Shall this prince have his freedom too?

I love is gone, all my friends perish. [else all

*Mart.* He shall.

*Vir.* What shall I do?

*Mart.* If thou despise my courtesy,

When I am dead for grief I am forsaken,

And no soft hand left to assuage your sorrows,

Too late, but too true, curse your own cruelties!

*Asc.* Be wise, if she be true! no thread is left  
else,

To guide us from this labyrinth of mischief;

Nor no way for our friends.

*Vir.* Thus then I take you;

I bind you to my life, my love!

*Mart.* I take you,

And with the like bond tie my heart your servant.

We are now almost at harbour; within this hour,

In the dead watch, I'll have the long-boat ready,

And when I give the word, be sure you enter.

I'll see ye furnish'd both immediately,

And like yourselves; some trusty man shall wait

you;

The watch I'll make my own; only my love

Requires a stronger vow, which I'll administer

Before we go.

*Vir.* I'll take it, to confirm you.

*Mart.* Go in; there are the keys, unlock his  
fetters,

And arm ye nobly both. I'll be with you presently;

And so, this loving kiss.

*Asc.* Be constant, lady. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—*The Cabin in the same.*

*Enter DUKE (by torch-light), Master and Surgeon with  
him.*

*Surg.* You grow so angry, sir, your wound  
goes backward.

*Duke.* I am angry at the time, (at none of you)

That sends but one poor subject for revenge:

I would have all the court, and all the villainy

Was ever practised under that foul Ferrand,  
Tyrant and all, to quench my wrath!

*Master.* Be patient;

Your grace may find occasion every hour  
(For certain they will seek you) to satisfy,  
And to the full, your anger.

*Duke.* 'Death, they dare not!  
They know that I command Death, feed his hunger,  
And when I let him loose—

*Surg.* You'll never heal, sir,  
If these extremes dwell in you; you are old,  
And burn your spirits out with this wild anger.

*Duke.* Thou liest! I am not old; I am as lusty  
And full of manly heat as them, or thou art—

*Master.* No more of that!

*Duke.* And dare seek out a danger,  
And hold him at the sword's point, when thou  
tremblest

And creep'st into thy box of salves to save thee.—  
Oh, master, I have had a dreadful dream to-night!  
Methought the ship was all on fire, and my loved  
daughter,

To save her life, leap'd into the sea; where sud-  
denly

A stranger snatch'd her up, and swam away with  
her.

*Master.* 'Twas but the heat o' th' fight, sir.

*Boats.* [*Within.*] Look out! what is that?

*Sailor.* [*Within.*] The long-boat, as I live!

*Boats.* [*Within.*] Ho, there, i' th' long-boat!  
ho!

*Sailor.* [*Within.*] She claps on all her oars.  
Hoy!

*Duke.* What noise is that?

*Master.* I hear, sir—

[*Exit.*]

*Boats.* The devil, or his dam. Hail her again,  
boys.

*Sailor.* The long-boat! ho, the long-boat!

*Duke.* Why the long-boat?

Where is the long-boat?

*Boats.* She's stolen off.

*Enter Master.*

*Duke.* Who stole her?

Oh, my prophetic soul!

*Master.* Your daughter's gone, sir,  
The prisoners, and six sailors: Rogues!

*Duke.* Mischief! six thousand plagues sail with  
They are in her yet; make out. [*em!*]

*Master.* We have no'er a boat.

*Enter Gunner.*

*Gun.* Who knew of this trick?

*Duke.* Weigh anchors, and away!

*Boats.* We ha' no wind, sir:

They'll beat us with their oars.

*Duke.* Then sink 'em, gunner!

Oh, sink 'em, sink 'em, sink 'em, claw 'em, gunner,  
As ever thou hast loved me!

*Gun.* I'll do reason;

But I'll be hang'd before I hurt the lady.

[*Aside. Exit.*]

*Duke.* Who knew of this?

[*Trumpets. A piece or two go off.*]

*Master.* We stand all clear.

*Duke.* What devil

Put this base trick into her tail? My daughter,  
And run away with rogues! I hope she's sunk,  
[*A piece or two go off.*]

Or torn to pieces with the shot. Rots find her!  
The leprosy of whore stick ever to her!  
Oh, she has ruin'd my revenge!

*Enter Gunner.*

*Gun.* She is gone, sir;  
I cannot reach her with my shot.

*Duke.* Rise, winds!

Blow till ye burst the air, and swell the seas,  
That they may sink the stars! Oh, dance her,  
dance her!

She's impudently wanton; dance her, dance her,  
Mount her upon your surges, cool her, cool her!  
She runs hot like a whore; cool her, cool her!  
Oh, now a shot to sink her!—Come, cut cables!  
I will away; and where she sets her foot,  
Although it be in Ferrand's court, I'll follow her;  
And such a father's vengeance shall she suffer—  
Dare any man stand by me?

*Master.* All, all.

*Boats.* All, sir.

*Gun.* And the same cup you taste—

*Duke.* Cut cables, then;

For I shall never sleep, nor know what peace is,  
Till I have pluck'd her heart out.

*All.* [*Within.*] Amain there! [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter FERRAND, RONVERS, CASTRUCCIO, VILLO, and  
Guard.*

*Ronv.* You are too gentle, sir. [*Flourish cornets.*]

*Fer.* You are too careless!

The creatures I have made no way regard me:  
Why should I give you names, titles of honour,  
Rob families to fill your private houses,  
For your advancement draw all curses on me,  
Wake tedious winter-nights to make them happy  
That for me break no slumber?

*Ronv.* What we can,  
We dare do.

*Fer.* Why is your sovereign's life then  
(In which you live, and in whose fall your honours,  
Your wealth, your pomp, your pride, and all must  
suffer)

No better guarded? Oh, my cruel stars,  
That mark'd me out a king, raising me on  
This pinnacle of greatness, only to be  
The nearer blasting!—

*Villio.* What think you now, Castruccio?

[*Apart to him.*]

Is not this a merry life?

*Cast.* Still thou art cozen'd:

It is a glorious royal discontentment!

How bravely it becomes him!—

*Fer.* To be made

The common butt, for every slave to shoot at;  
No peace, no rest I take, but their alarm  
Beat at my heart! Why do I live, or seek then  
To add a day more to these glorious troubles?  
Or to what end, when all I can arrive at,  
Is but the summing up of fears and sorrows?

What power has my command, when from my bosom

Ascanio, my most dear and loved Ascanio,  
Was snatch'd, 'spite of my will, 'spite of my suc-  
cour,

And by mine own proud slave retain'd most miser-  
able ?

And still that villain lives to nip my pleasures,  
It being not within my power to reach him.

*Ronv.* Time may restore all this : And would  
you hear

Whose counsel never fail'd you—

*Fer.* Tell me no more !

I faint beneath the burthen of my cares,  
And yield myself most wretched.

*Ronv.* On my knees [Kneels.]

I beg it, mighty sir, vouchsafe me hearing.

*Fer.* Speak, speak ; and I thus low, such is my  
Will bear what thou canst say.— [fortune.]

*Villio.* Look but on this ; [Apart to CASTRUCIO.]

Has not a man that has but means to keep

A hawk, a greyhound, and a hunting nag,

More pleasure than this king ?

*Cast.* A dull fool still !

Make me a king, and let me scratch with care,

And see who'll have the better ; give me rule,

Command, obedience, pleasure of a king,

And let the devil roar : The greatest corrosive

A king can have, is of more precious tickling,

And, handled to the height, more dear delight,

Than other men's whole lives, let 'em be safe too.

*Villio.* Think of the mutinous people.

*Cast.* Hang the people !

Give me the pleasure, let me do all, awe all,

Enjoy their wives and states at my discretion,

And peg 'em when I please, let the slaves mumble.

*Villio.* But say they should be vex'd, and rise  
against thee ?

*Cast.* Let 'em rise, let 'em rise ; give me the  
bridle here,

And see if they can crack my girths : Ah, Villio,

Under the sun there's nothing so voluptuous

As riding of this monster, till he founder.—

*Fer.* Who's that so loud ?

*Cast.* I am dumb.—Is not this rare ?

Kings' looks make Pythagoreans ; is not this

A happiness, Villio ?

*Villio.* Yes, to put to silence

A fawning sycophant.—

*Fer.* Thou speak'st truth in all : [To RONVERE.]

And mercy is a vice, when there needs rigour,

Which I with all severity will practise ;

And since, as subjects they pay not obedience,

They shall be forced as slaves : I will remove

Their means to hurt, and, with the means, my

Go you, the fatal executioners [fears.—

Of my commands, and in our name proclaim,

That from this hour I do forbid all meetings,

All private conferences in the city :

To feast a neighbour, shall be death ; to talk,

As they meet in the streets, to hold discourse

By writing, nay by signs. See this performed,

And I will call your cruelty, to those

That dare repine at this, to me true service.

1 *Guard.* This makes for us.

2 *Guard.* Ay, now we have employments ;  
If we grow not rich, 'twere fit we should be  
beggars.

*Fer.* Ronvere !

[Exit Guard.]

*Ronv.* My lord ?

[They speak apart.]

*Cast.* Thou enemy to majesty,  
What think'st thou of a king ?

*Villio.* As of a man

That hath power to do ill.

*Cast.* Of a thing rather

That does divide an empire with the gods.

Observe but with how little breath he shakes

A populous city, which would stand unmoved

Against a whirlwind.

*Villio.* Then you make him more

Than him that rules the winds.

*Cast.* For me, I do profess it,

Were I offer'd to be anything on earth,

I would be mighty Ferrand.

*Fer.* Ha ! who names me ?

Deliver thy thoughts, slave, thy thoughts, and

Or be no more ! [truly,

*Cast.* They rather will deserve

Your favour, than your fury. I admire

(As who does not, that is a loyal subject ?)

Your wisdom, power, your perfect happiness,

The most bless'd of mankind.

*Fer.* Didst thou but feel

The weighty sorrows that sit on a crown,

Though thou shouldst find one in the streets, Cas-  
truccio,

Thou wouldest not think it worth the taking up ;

But since thou art enamour'd of my fortune,

Thou shalt ere long taste of it.

*Cast.* But one day,

And then let me expire !

*Fer.* Go to my wardrobe,

And of the richest things I wear cull out

What thou think'st fit. Do you attend him, sirrah.

*Vil.* I warrant you I shall be at his elbow ;

The fool will never leave him.

*Cast.* Made for ever !

[Exit with VILLIO. A shout within.]

*Fer.* What shout is that ? Draw up our guards.

[Enter VIROLET, ASCANIO, and a Servant.]

*Ronv.* Those rather

Speak joy than danger.

*Vir.* Bring her to my house :

I would not have her seen here.

*Fer.* My Ascanio !

The most desired of all men, let me die

In these embraces ! How wert thou redeem'd ?

*Asc.* Sir, this is my preserver.

*Fer.* At more leisure

I will inquire the manner and the means :

I cannot spare so much time now from my

More strict embraces.—Violet, welcome too !

This service weighs down your intended treason.

You long have been mine enemy ; learn now

To be my friend, and loyal ; I ask no more,

And live as free as Ferrand.—Let him have

The forty thousand crowns I gladly promised

For my Ascanio's freedom ; and deliver

His father and his wife to him in safety.

Something hath pass'd which I am sorry for,

But 'twill not now be help'd.—Come, my Ascanio,

And reap the harvest of my winter-travels.

My best Ascanio, my most-loved Ascanio !

[Flourish trumpets. Exit FERRAND and ASCANIO.]

*Vir.* My lord, all former passages forgot,

I am become a suitor.

*Ronv.* To me, Violet ?

*Vir.* To you ; yet will not beg the courtesy,

But largely pay you for it.

*Ronv.* To the purpose.

*Vir.* The forty thousand crowns the king hath given me,  
I will bestow on you, if by your means  
I may have liberty for a divorce  
Between me and my wife.

*Rome.* Your Juliana?

That for you hath endured so much, so nobly?

*Vir.* The more my sorrow; but it must be so.

*Rome.* I will not hinder it.—Without a bribe,  
[*Aside.*

For mine own ends, I would have further'd this.—  
I will use all my power.

*Vir.* 'Tis all I ask.—

Oh, my curs'd fate, that ever man should hate  
Himself for being beloved! or be compell'd  
To cast away a jewel kings would buy,  
Though with the loss of crown and monarchy!

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter Duke of Sessa, Master, Boatswain, and Gunner, disguised.*

*Duke.* How do I look?

*Master.* You are so strangely alter'd,  
We scarce can know you; so young again, and  
From that you were, figure, or any favour, [utterly  
Your friends cannot discern you.

*Duke.* I have none,

None but my fair revenge, and let that know me!  
You are finely alter'd too.

*Boats.* To please your humour:

But we may pass without disguise; our living  
Was never in their element.

*Gun.* This Jew sure,

That alter'd you, is a mad knave.

*Duke.* Oh, a most excellent fellow!

*Gun.* How he has mew'd your head, has rubb'd  
the snow off,

And run your beard into a peak of twenty!

*Boats.* Stopt all the crannies in your face.

*Master.* Most rarely!

*Boats.* And now you look as plump, your eyes  
as sparkling,

As if you were to leap into a lady's saddle.

Has he not set your nose awry?

*Duke.* The better.

*Boats.* I think it be the better, but 'tis awry sure;  
North and by East, ay, there's the point it stands  
Now half a point to the Southward. [in;

*Duke.* I could laugh,

But that my business requires no mirth now:  
Thou art a merry fellow.

*Boats.* I would the Jew, sir,

Could steer my head right; for I have such a  
Ever since I went to sea first— [swimming in't,

*Master.* Take wine, and purge it.

*Boats.* I have had a thousand pills of sack, a  
A thousand pottle-pills. [thousand,

*Gun.* Take more.

*Boats.* Good doctor,

Your patient is easily persuaded.

*Master.* The next fair open weather methinks  
this Jew,

(If he were truly known to founder'd courtiers,  
And decay'd ladies, that have lost their fleeces,  
On every bush,) he might pick a pretty living.

*Boats.* The best of all our gallants now be glad  
of him;

For, if you mark their marches, they are tender,

Soft, soft, and tender; then but observe their bodies,  
And you shall find them cemented by a surgeon,  
Or some physician, for a year or two,  
And then to th' tub again, for a new pickle.  
This Jew might live a Gentile here.

*Enter two Citizens at opposite doors, saluting afar of.*

*Duke.* What are these?  
Stand close and mark.

*Boats.* These are no men; they are motions.

*Duke.* What sad and ruthless faces!

*Boats.* How they duck!

This senseless, silent courtesy, methinks,  
Shews like two Turks saluting one another,  
Upon two French porters' backs.

*Duke.* They are my countrymen,  
And this some forced infiction from the tyrant—  
What are you? Why is this? why move thus silent.  
As if you were wand'ring shadows? why so sad?  
Your tongues seal'd up? Are ye of several coo-  
You understand not one another? [tries.

*Gun.* That's an Englishman;  
He looks as though he had lost his dog.

*Duke.* Your habits

Shew you all Neapolitans; and your faces  
Deliver you oppressed things: Speak boldly!  
Do you groan and labour under this stiff yoke?

*Master.* They shake their heads and weep.

*Duke.* Oh, misery!

Give plenteous sorrows, and no tongues to shew  
This is a studied cruelty. [em:

1 *Cit.* Begone, sir,

(It seems you are a stranger) and save yourself.

2 *Cit.* You wonder here at us; as much we  
To hear you speak so openly and boldly, [wonder  
The king's command being published to the con-  
trary:

'Tis death here, above two to talk together;  
And that must be but common salutation neither,  
Short, and so part.

*Boats.* How should a man buy mustard,  
If he be forced to stay the making of it?

*Sold.* [Within.] Clear all the streets before the

1 *Cit.* Get off, sir, [king!

And shift as we must do. [Exeunt Citizens.

*Duke.* I'll see his glory. [Flourish.

*Master.* Stand fast now, and like men.

*Enter CASTRUCCIO, habited as King, with a Guard and  
Colours, and VILLIO.*

*Cast.* Begin the game, sir,  
And pluck me down the row of houses there!  
They hide the view o' th' hill; and sink those  
Their ships are foul, and stink. [merchants;

*Master.* This is a sweet youth!

*Cast.* All that are taken in assemblies,  
Their houses and their wives, their wealths, are  
forfeit,

Their lives at your devotion.—Villains, knives,  
I'll make you bow and shake! I'll make you kneel.  
How brave 'tis to be a king! [rogues!—

*Gun.* Here's fine tumbling!

*Cast.* No man shall sit i' th' temple near another.

*Boats.* Nor lie with his own wife.

*Cast.* All, upon pain  
Of present death, forget to write!

*Boats.* That's excellent;

Carriers and footposts will be arrant rebels.

*Cast.* No character, or stamp, that may deliver  
This man's intention to that man i' th' country.

*Gen.* Nay, an you cut off, "After my hearty commendations, Your friend and Oliver," no more!

*Cast.* No man smile, And wear a face of mirth! That fellow's cunning, And hides a double heart; he's your prize; smoke him.

*Enter VIOLET, RONVERE, ASCANIO, and MARTIA, passing over.*

*Duke.* What base abuse is this?—Ha! 'tis her face sure.

My prisoners with her too?—By heaven, wild Now is my time! [whore,

*Master.* Do what you will.

*Duke.* Stay, hold yet!

My country should be served first; let her go! We'll have an hour for her, to make her tremble. Now shew ourselves, and bless you with your valours.

*Guard.* Here's a whole plump of rogues. [Exit VIOLET, &c.

*Duke.* Now for your country!

*Cast.* Away with 'em, and hang 'em! know no I say no mercy! [mercy,

*Duke.* Be it so; upon 'em! [They seize CASTRUCCIO and VILLIO.

*Guard.* Treason, treason, treason!

*Boats.* Cut the slaves to gidgets!

*Gen.* Down with the bullbeefs!

*Duke.* Hold, hold, I command you! Gods, look here!

*Cast.* A miserable thing; I am no king, sir.

*Duke.* Sirrah, your fool's face has preserved your life.

Wear no more king's coats; you have 'scaped a *Boats.* Is't not the king? [scouring.

*Duke.* No, 'tis a prating rascal;

The puppy makes him mirth.

*Cast.* Yes, sir, I am

A puppy.

*Boats.* I beseech you let me hang him;

I'll do't in my belt straight.

*Cast.* As you are honourable!

It is enough you may hang me.

*Gen.* I'll hang a squib at's tail

That shall blow both his buttocks, like a petar.

*Cast.* Do any thing; but do not kill me, gentlemen.

*Enter Citizen.*

*Boats.* Let's flea him,

And have him fly-blown!

*Cit.* Away, and save your lives!

The king himself is coming on; If you say, You are lost for ever! Let not so much nobleness Wilfully perish.

*Duke.* How near?

*Cit.* He's here behind you.

*Duke.* We thank you. Vanish!

[Exit all but CASTRUCCIO, VILLIO, and Guards.

*Enter FERRAND and RONVERE. Flourish cornets.*

*Fer.* Double the guards, and take in men that dare!

These slaves are frighted. Where are the proud rebels?

To what protection fled? What villain leads 'em? Under our nose disturb our rest?

*Ronv.* We shall hear;

For such a search I have sent, to hunt the traitors.

*Fer.* Yet better men, I say! We stand too open.—

How now, Castruccio? How do you like our glory?

*Cast.* I must confess, 'twas somewhat more than my match, sir.

This open glory agrees not with my body; But if it were i' th' castle, or some strength,

Where I might have my swinge—

*Vil.* You have been swinged, brother;

How these delights have tickled you! You itch yet. Will you walk out again in pomp?

*Cast.* Good fool!

*Vil.* These rogues must be rebuked, they are too saucy,

These peremptory knaves. Will you walk out, sir, And take the remnant of your coronation?

The people stay to see it.

*Fer.* Do not vex him;

He has grief enough in's bones. You shall to th' citadel,

And like myself command: There use your plea— But take heed to your person. [sure;

*Vil.* The more danger,

Still the more honour, brother.

*Cast.* If I reign not then,

And like a king—And thou shalt know it, fool,

And thou shalt feel it, fool.

*Vil.* Fools still are free men:

I'll sue for a protection, 'till thy reign's out.

*Fer.* The people have abused the liberty

I late allowed; I now proclaim it straiter:

No men shall walk together, nor salute;

For they that do shall die.

*Ronv.* You hit the right, sir;

That liberty cut off, you are free from practice.

*Fer.* Renew my guards.

*Ronv.* I shall.

*Fer.* And keep strict watches.

One hour of joy I ask!

*Ronv.* You shall have many.

[Exit. Flourish cornets.

SCENE III.—A Room in VIOLET'S House.

*Enter PANDULFO and JULIANA, led by two of the Guards, as not yet fully recovered.*

*1 Guard.* You are now at liberty, in your own And here our charge takes end. [house, lady,

*Pand.* 'Tis now a custom,

We must even woo those men deserve worst of us; And so we thank your labours; there's to drink!

[Gives money.

For that and mischief are your occupations, And to mean well to no man your chiefest harvests.

*2 Guard.* You give liberally; we hope, sir, ere't

be long,

To be oftener acquainted with your bounty;

And so we leave you.

*Pand.* Do, for I dote not on ye.

*Jul.* But where's my husband? What should I

do here,

Or what share have I in this joy called liberty, Without his company? Why did you flatter me,

And tell me he was return'd, his service honour'd?

*1 Guard.* He is so, and stands high in the king's His friends redeem'd, and his own liberty, [favour,

From which yours is derived, confirm'd: his service To his own wish rewarded: So farewell, lady!

[Exit Guard.

*Pand.* Go persecute the good, and hunt, ye hell-hounds,  
Ye leeches of the time, suck till ye burst, slaves!—  
How does my girl?

*Jul.* Weak yet, but full of comfort.

*Pand.* Sit down and take some rest.

*Jul.* My heart's whole, father;  
That joys and leaps to hear my Violet,  
My dear, my life, has conquer'd his afflictions.

*Pand.* Those rude hands, and that bloody will  
that did this,

That durst upon thy tender body print  
These characters of cruelty, hear me, Heaven!—

*Jul.* Oh, sir, be sparing.

*Pand.* I'll speak it, though I burst;  
And though the air had ears, and served the tyrant,  
Out it should go. Oh, hear me, thou great justice!  
The miseries that wait upon their mischiefs,  
Let them be numberless! and no eye pity  
Them, when their souls are loaden, and in labour,  
And wounded through and through with guilt and horror,

As mine is now with grief! let men laugh at 'em!  
Then, when their monstrous sins, like earthquakes,  
shake 'em,

And those eyes, that forgot Heaven, would look  
upward,

(The bloody larums of the conscience beating)  
Let Mercy fly, and day, struck into darkness,  
Leave their blind souls, to hunt out their own  
horrors!

*Jul.* Enough, enough! we must forget, dear  
father;

For then we are glorious forms of Heaven, and live,  
When we can suffer, and as soon forgive.—

But where's my lord? Methinks I have seen this  
And have been in't before. [house,

*Pand.* Thine own house, jewel.

*Jul.* Mine, without him? or his, without my  
company?

I think it cannot be; it was not wont, father.

*Pand.* Some business with the king—Let it be  
good, Heaven!— [Aside.  
Retains him, sure.

*Enter Lucio.*

*Jul.* It must be good and noble;  
For all men, that he treats with, taste of virtue:  
His words and actions are his own, and Honour's,  
Not bought, nor compelled from him.

*Pand.* Here's the boy;  
He can confirm us more. How sad the child looks!  
Come hither, Lucio; how, and where's thy master?

*Jul.* Speak, gentle boy.

*Pand.* Is he return'd in safety?

*Jul.* If not, and that thou know'st is miserable,  
Our hopes and happiness declined for ever,  
Study a sorrow excellent as thy master,  
Then if thou canst live, leave us.

*Lucio.* Noble madam,  
My lord is safe return'd; safe to his friends and  
fortune,

Safe to his country, entertained with honour;  
Is here within the house.

*Jul.* Do not mock me!

*Lucio.* But such a melancholy hangs on his mind,  
And in his eyes inhabit such sad shadows!  
But what the cause is—

*Pand.* Go tell him, we are here, boy;  
There must be no cause now.

*Jul.* Hast thou forgot me?

*Lucio.* No, noblest lady.

*Jul.* Tell him I am here;

Tell him his wife is here; sound my name to him,  
And thou shalt see him start; speak "Juliana,"  
And, like the sun that labours through a tempest,  
How suddenly he will disperse his sadness!

*Pand.* Go, I command thee, instantly;

And charge him on his duty—

*Jul.* On his love, boy.

I would fain go to him.

*Pand.* Away, away; you are foolish.

*Jul.* Bear all my service, sweet boy—

*Pand.* Art thou here still?

*Jul.* And tell him what thou wilt, that shall be-  
come thee. [Exit Lucio.

*Pand.* I' th' house, and know we are here?

*Jul.* No, no, he did not;

I warrant you he did not: Could you think  
His love had less than wings, (had he but seen me)  
His strong affection any thing but fire,  
Consuming all weak lets and rubs before it.

Till he had met my flame, and made one body?

If ever Heaven's high blessings met in one man,

And there erected to their holy uses,

A sacred mind fit for their services,

Built all of polished honour, 'twas in this man:

Misdoubt him not.

*Pand.* I know he's truly noble;

But why this sadness, when the general cause

Requires a jubilee of joy?

*Jul.* I know not.

*Enter VIOLET and Boy.*

*Pand.* Pray Heaven you find it not!

*Jul.* I hope I shall not. [ness!—

Oh, here he comes, and with him all my happiness  
He stays and thinks; and we may be too unmanly;  
Pray give him leave. [They stand off.

*Pand.* I do not like this sadness.

*Vir.* Oh, hard condition of my misery!  
Unheard-of plagues! when to behold that woman,  
That chaste and virtuous woman, that preserved me,  
That pious wife, wedded to my afflictions,  
Must be more terrible than all my dangers!

Oh, Fortune, thou hast robb'd me of my making,

The noble building of a man demolish'd,

And flung me headlong on a sin so base

Man and mankind contemn; even beasts abhor it;

A sin more dull than drink, a shame beyond it;

So foul, and far from faith, I dare not name it,

But it will cry itself out loud, Ingratitude.—

Your blessing, sir!

*Pand.* You have it in abundance;

So is our joy to see you safe.

*Vir.* My dear one!

*Jul.* He has not forgot me yet: Oh, take me to

you, sir!

*Vir.* Must this be added to increase my misery,  
That she must weep for joy, and lose that good-  
My Juliana, even the best of women, [ness?

Of wives the perfectest! Let me speak this,

And with a modesty declare thy virtues,

Chaster than crystal on the Scythian cliffs,

The more the proud winds court, the more the purer

Sweeter in thy obedience than a sacrifice;

And in thy mind a saint, that even yet living,

Producest miracles; and women daily,

With crooked and lame souls, creep to thy goodness.

Which having touched at, they become examples.

The fortitude of all their sex is fable,  
 Compared to thine; and they that filled up glory,  
 And admiration in the age behind us,  
 Out of their celebrated urns are started,  
 To stare upon the greatness of thy spirit;  
 Wond'ring what new martyr Heaven has begot,  
 To fill the times with truth, and ease their stories:  
 Being all these, and excellent in beauty,  
 (For noble things dwell in the noblest buildings)  
 Thou hast undone thy husband, made him wretch—  
 A miserable man, my Juliana, [ed];  
 Thou hast made thy Violeto.

*Jul.* Now goodness keep me!

Oh, my dear lord—

*Pand.* She wrong you? what's the meaning?  
 Weep not, but speak, I charge you on obedience;  
 Your father charges you! She make you miserable?  
 That you yourself confess—

*Vir.* I do, that kills me;

And far less I have spoke her than her merit.

*Jul.* It is some sin of weakness, or of ignorance;  
 For sure my will—

*Vir.* No, tis a sin of excellence.

Forgive me, Heaven, that I profane thy blessings!  
 Sit still, I'll shew you all. [Exit.]

*Pand.* What means this madness?

(For sure there is no taste of right man in it,)

Grieves he our liberty, our preservation?

Or has the greatness of the deed he has done

Made him forget for whom, and how he did it,

And looking down upon us, scorn the benefit?

Well, Violeto, if thou be'st proud, or treacherous—

*Jul.* He cannot, sir, he cannot; he will shew  
 us,

And with that reason ground his words—

*Enter VIOLETO, MARTIA, RONVERE, and Lawyer.*

*Pand.* He comes.—

What masque is this? what admirable beauty?

Fry Heaven his heart be true!

*Jul.* A goodly woman!

*Vir.* Tell me, my dear, and tell me without  
 flattery;

As you are nobly honest, speak the truth!

What think you of this lady?

*Jul.* She is most excellent.

*Vir.* Might not this beauty, tell me that, (it's a  
 sweet one)

Without more setting-off, as now it is,

Thinking no greater mistress than mere Nature,

Stagger a constant heart?

*Pand.* She is full of wonder!

But yet, yet Violeto—

*Vir.* Pray by your leave, sir!

*Jul.* She would amaze—

*Vir.* Oh, would she so? I thank you.

Say, to this beauty, she have all additions,

Wealth, noble birth—

*Pand.* Oh, hold there!

*Vir.* All virtues,

A mind as full of candour as the truth is,

Ay, and a loving lady—

*Jul.* She must needs

(I am bound in conscience to confess) deserve  
 much.

*Vir.* Nay, say beyond all these, she be so pious,  
 That even on slaves condemn'd she shower her  
 benefits,

And melt their stubborn bolts with her soft pity;

What think you then?

*Pand.* For such a noble office,

At these years I should dote myself. Take heed,  
 boy!

*Jul.* If you be he that have received these bless-  
 And this the lady, love her, honour her! [sings,  
 You cannot do too much to shew your gratitude;  
 Your greatest service will shew off too slender.

*Vir.* This is the lady, lady of that bounty,  
 That wealth, that noble name, that all, I spoke  
 of;

The prince Ascanio, and myself, the slaves  
 Redeemed, brought home, still guarded by her  
 goodness;

And of our liberties you taste the sweetness.

Even you she has preserved too, lengthened your  
 lives.

*Jul.* And what reward do you propose? It must  
 be a main one.

If love will do't, we'll all so love her, serve her—

*Vir.* It must be my love.

*Jul.* Ha!

*Vir.* Mine, my only love,

My everlasting love.

*Pand.* How!

*Vir.* Pray, have patience!

The recompense she ask'd, and I have render'd,

Was to become her husband. Then I vow'd it,

And since I have made it good.

*Pand.* Thou durst not!

*Vir.* Done, sir.

*Jul.* Be what you please, this happiness yet stays  
 with me,

You have been mine. Oh, my unhappy fortune!

*Pand.* Nay, break and die!

*Jul.* It cannot yet: I must live,

Till I see this man blest in his new love;

And then—

*Pand.* What hast thou done? thou base one,  
 tell me!

Thou barren thing of honesty, and honour,  
 What hast thou wrought? Is not this she, (look  
 on her,

Look on her with the eyes of gratitude,  
 And wipe thy false tears off) is not this she,  
 That three times on the rack, to guard thy safety,

When thou stood'st lost, and naked to the tyrant;

Thy aged father here, that shames to know thee,

Engaged i' th' jaws of danger; was not this she,

That then gave up her body to the torture,

That tender body, that the wind sings through?

And three times, when her sinews, crack'd and  
 tortured,

The beauties of her body turn'd to ruins,

Even then, within her patient heart she locked  
 thee,

Then hid thee from the tyrant, then preserved  
 thee:

And canst thou be that slave—

*Mart.* This was but duty;

She did it for her husband, and she ought it;

She has had the pleasure of him many an hour;

And if one minute's pain cannot be suffered—

Mine was above all these, a nobler venture!

(I speak it boldly) for I lost a father,

She has one still; I left my friends, she has many;

Exposed my life and honour to a cruelty,

That if it had seiz'd on me—racks, and tortures?

Alas, they are triumphs to't! and had it hit,

For this man's love, it should have shew'd a  
 triumph.

Twice lost, I freed him ; Rossana lost before him,  
His fortunes with him, and his friends behind him :  
Twice was I rack'd myself for his deliverance,  
In honour first and name, which was a torture  
The hangman never heard of ; next at sea,  
In our escape, where the proud waves took pleasure  
To toss my little boat up like a bubble,  
Then like a meteor in the air he hung,  
Then catch'd and flung him in the depth of dark-  
ness ;

The cannon from my incensed father's ship  
Ringing our knell, and still as we peep'd upward  
Beating the raging surge, with fire and bullet,  
And I stood fixed for this man's sake, and scorn'd  
it :

Compare but this !

*Vir.* 'Tis too true. Oh, my fortune !  
That I must equally be bound to either !

*Jul.* You have the better and the nobler lady ;  
And now I am forced a lover of her goodness :  
And so far have you wrought for his deliverance  
That is my lord, so lovingly and nobly,  
That now methinks I stagger in my title.  
But how with honesty, (for I am poor, lady,  
In all my duteous service but your shadow,  
Yet would be just) how with fair fame and credit,  
I may go off—I would not be a strumpet—  
Oh, my dear sir, you know—

*Vir.* Oh, Truth, thou knowest too !

*Jul.* Nor have the world suspect I fell to  
mischief.

*Law.* Take you no care for that ; here's that  
has done it ;

A fair divorce ! 'tis honest too.

*Pand.* The devil !

Honest ? to put her off ?

*Law.* Most honest, sir ;

And in this point most strong.

*Pand.* The cause, the cause, sir !

*Law.* A just cause too—

*Pand.* As any is in Hell, lawyer !

*Law.* For barrenness ; she never brought him  
children.

*Pand.* Why art not thou divorced ? thou canst  
not get 'em ;  
Thy neighbours, thy rank neighbours—Oh, base  
juggling !

Is she not young ?

*Jul.* Women at more years, sir,  
Have met that blessing ; 'tis in Heaven's high  
power—

*Law.* You never can have any.

*Pand.* Why, quick lawyer ?

My philosophical lawyer ?

*Law.* The rack has spoil'd her ;

The distensions of those parts have stopp'd all  
fruitfulness.

*Pand.* Oh, I could curse !

*Jul.* And am I grown so miserable,  
That mine own piety must make me wretched ?  
No cause against me, but my love and duty ?  
Farewell, sir ! Like Obedience, thus I leave you.  
My long farewell !—I do not grudge ; I grieve, sir ;  
And if that be offensive, I can die ;  
And then you are fairly free.—Good lady, love him :  
You have a noble and an honest gentleman ;  
I ever found him so, the world has spoke him,

And let it be your part still to deserve him !  
Love him no less than I have done, and serve him,  
And Heaven shall bless you : You shall bless my  
ashes.

I give you up the house, the name of Wife,  
Honour, and all respect I borrow'd from him,  
And to my grave I turn. One farewell more !  
Nothing divide your loves, nor want of children,  
Which I shall pray against, and make you fruitful !  
Grow like two equal flames ! rise high and glorious,  
And in your honour'd age burn out together !  
To all I know, farewell !

*Ronv.* Be not so grieved, lady !

A nobler fortune—

*Jul.* Away, thou parasite !

Disturb not my sad thoughts. I hate thy great-  
ness ! [Exit.]

*Ronv.* I hate not you. I am glad she's off these  
hinges.

Come, let's pursue. [Exit RONVEX and LAWYER.]

*Pand.* If I had breath to curse thee,  
Or could my great heart utter—Farewell, villain !  
Thy house nor face again— [Exit.]

*Mart.* Let 'em all go ;

And now let us rejoice. Now freely take me,  
And now embrace me, Violet ! give the rites  
Of a brave husband to his love.

*Vir.* I'll take my leave too.

*Mart.* How ! take your leave too ?

*Vir.* The house is furnished for you ;

You are mistress, may command.

*Mart.* Will you to bed, sir ?

*Vir.* As soon to Hell ; to anything I hate most !  
You must excuse me ! I have kept my word :  
You are my wife, you now enjoy my fortune,  
Which I have done to recompence your bounty :  
But to yield up those chaste delights and pleasures,  
Which are not mine, but my first vow's—

*Mart.* You jest !

*Vir.* You will not find it so.—To give you those  
I have divorced, and lost with Juliana,  
And all fires of that nature.

*Mart.* Are you a husband ?

*Vir.* To question hers, and satisfy your flames,  
That held an equal beauty, equal bounty,  
Could Heaven forgive ? No, no, the strict for-  
bearance

Of all those joys, like a full sacrifice,  
I offer to the sufferings of my first love.  
Honour, and wealth, attendance, state, all duty,  
Shall wait upon your will, to make you happy ;  
But my afflicted mind, (you must give leave, lady)  
My weary trunk, must wander.

*Mart.* Not enjoy me ?

Go from me too ?

*Vir.* For ever thus I leave you :

And, howso'er I fare, live you still happy ! [Exit.]

*Mart.* Since I am scorned, I'll hate thee, scorn  
thy gifts too,

Thou miserable fool, thou fool to pity !  
And such a rude, demolished thing, I'll leave thee,  
In my revenge.—For, foolish love, farewell now,  
And anger, and the spittle of woman, enter !  
That all the world shall say, that read this story,  
My hate, and not my love, begot my glory ! [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*Before the Palace.*

*Enter Duke, Boatswain, Master, and Gunner, habited as Switzers.*

*Duke.* He that fears death, or tortures, let him leave me!

The stops that we have met with crown our conquest.

Common attempts are fit for common men ;  
The rare, the rarest spirits. Can we be daunted ?  
We that have smiled at sea at certain ruins,  
Which men on shore, but hazarded, would shake at ?  
We that have lived free, in despite of Fortune,  
Laughed at the out-stretched arm of tyranny,  
As still too short to reach us, shall we faint now ?  
No, my brave mates, I know your fiery temper,  
And that you can, and dare, as much as men.  
Calamity, that severs worldly friendships,  
Could ne'er divide us ; you are still the same,  
The constant followers of my banished fortunes,  
The instruments of my revenge, the hands  
By which I work, and fashion all my projects.

*Master.* And such we will be ever.

*Gun.* 'Slight, sir, cram me

Into a cannon's mouth, and shoot me at  
Proud Ferrand's head ; may only he fall with me,  
My life I rate at nothing.

*Boats.* Could I but get

Within my sword's length of him, and if then  
He 'scape me, may th' account of all his sins  
Be added unto mine !

*Master.* 'Tis not to die, sir,

But to die unrevenged, that staggers me :  
For were your ends served, and our country free,  
We would fall willing sacrifices.

*Duke.* To rise up

Most glorious martyrs.

*Boats.* But the reason why

We wear these shapes ?

*Duke.* Only to get access.

Like honest men, we never shall approach him,  
Such are his fears ; but thus attired like Switzers,  
And fashioning our language to our habits,  
(Bold, bloody, desperate) we may be admitted  
Among his guard. But if this fail, I'll try  
A thousand others, out-do Proteus  
In various shapes, but I will reach his heart,  
And seal my anger on't.

*Enter RONYERE and the Guard.*

*Master.* The lord Ronvere !

*Boats.* Shall we begin with him ?

*Duke.* He is not ripe yet,  
Nor fit to fall ; As you see me begin,  
With all care imitate.

*Gun.* We are instructed.

*Boats.* 'Would we were at it once !—

*Ronv.* Keep a strict watch,  
And let the guards be doubled : This last night  
The king had fearful dreams.

*Duke.* 'Tis a good omen  
To our attempts.

*Ronv.* What men are these ? What seek you ?

*Duke.* Employment.

*Ronv.* Of what nature ?

*Duke.* We are soldiers :

We have seen towns and churches set on fire,

The kennels running blood, coy virgins ravish'd,  
The altars ransack'd, and the holy relics,  
Yea, and the saints themselves, made lawful spoils  
Unto the conquerors ; but these good days are past,  
And we made beggars by this idle peace,  
For want of action. I am, sir, no stranger  
To the government of this state ; I know the king  
Needs men, that only do what he commands,  
And search no further : 'Tis the profession  
Of all our nation, to serve faithfully,  
Where they're best paid ; and if you entertain us,  
I do not know the thing you can command,  
Which we'll not put in act.

*Ronv.* A goodly personage !

*Master.* And if you have an enemy, or so,  
That you would have dispatch'd—

*Gun.* They are here can fit you.

*Boats.* Or if there be an itch, though to a man—

*Duke.* You shall tie

Our consciences in your purse-strings.

*Ronv.* Gentlemen,

I like your freedom. I am now in haste ;  
But wait for my return.—I like the rascals ;  
They may be useful.

*Duke.* We'll attend you, sir.

*Ronv.* Do, and be confident of entertainment :  
I hope you will deserve it.

*Duke.* Oh, no doubt, sir.—

[*Exeunt RONYERE and Guard.*]

Thus far we are prosperous : We'll be his guard,  
Till tyranny and pride find full reward. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the House of JULIANA.*

*Enter PANDULFO and JULIANA.*

*Pand.* My blessing ? No : a father's heavy curse'd  
Pursue and overtake him !

*Jul.* Gentle sir !

*Pand.* My name, and family, end in myself,  
Rather than live in him !

*Jul.* Dear sir, forbear !

A father's curses hit far off, and kill too ;  
And, like a murdering-piece, aim not at one,  
But all that stand within the dangerous level.  
Some bullet may return upon yourself too,  
Though against Nature, if you still go on  
In this unnatural course.

*Pand.* Thou art not made

Of that same stuff as other women are :  
Thy injuries would teach patience to blaspheme,  
Yet still thou art a dove.

*Jul.* I know not malice ;  
But, like an innocent, suffer.

*Pand.* More miraculous !

I'll have a woman chronicled, and for goodness,  
Which is the greatest wonder. Let me see,  
I have no son to inherit after me ;  
Him I disclaim.

What then ? I'll make thy virtues my sole heir :  
Thy story I'll have written, and in gold too,  
In prose and verse, and by the ablest doers.

A word or two of a kind step-father

I'll have put in ; good kings and queens shall buy it.  
And if the actions of ill great women,  
And of the modern times too, are remember'd,  
That have undone their husbands and their families,

What will our story do? It shall be so,  
And I will straight about it.

[Exit.

*Jul.* Such as love  
Goodness for glory, have it for reward;  
I love mine for itself. Let Innocence  
Be written on my tomb, though ne'er so humble,  
'Tis all I am ambitious of. But I  
Forget my vows.

*Enter Lucio.*

*Lucio.* [Entering.] 'Fore me, you are not  
modest,  
Nor is this court-like! Would you take it well,  
If she should rudely press into your closet,  
When from your several boxes you chuse paint,  
To make a this-day's face with?

*Jul.* What's the matter?*Lucio.* Pray know her pleasure first.*Jul.* To whom speak you, boy?

*Lucio.* Your ladyship's pardon.—That proud  
lady-thief,  
That stole away my lord from your embraces,  
(Wrinkles at two-and-twenty on her cheeks for't,  
Or mercury unallay'd make blisters on it!)  
Would force a visit.

*Jul.* And dare you deny her,  
Or any else that I call mine? No more!  
Attend her with all reverence and respect:  
The want in you of manners, my lord may  
Construe in me for malice. I will teach you  
How to esteem and love the beauty he dotes on.

*Enter MARTIA.*

Prepare a banquet.—Madam, thus my duty  
Stoops to the favour you vouchsafe your servant,  
In honouring her house.

*Mart.* Is this in scorn?

*Jul.* No, by the life of Virolet! (Give me leave  
To swear by him, as by a saint I worship,  
But am to know no further; my heart speaks that.)  
My servants have been rude, and this boy, doting  
Upon my sorrows, hath forgot his duty:  
In which, that you may think I have no share,  
Sirrah, upon your knees, desire her pardon.

*Lucio.* I dare not disobey you. [Kneels.

*Mart.* Pr'ythee, rise:  
My anger never looks so low.—I thank you,  
And will deserve it; if we may be private—  
I came to see and speak with you.

*Jul.* Be gone. [Exit Lucio.

Good madam, sit.  
*Mart.* I rob you of your place then.

*Jul.* You have deserved a better, in my bed,  
Make use of this too. Now your pleasure, lady.  
If in your breast there be a worthy pity,  
That brings you for my comfort, you do nobly;  
But if you come to triumph in your conquest,  
Or tread on my calamities, 'twill wrong  
Your other excellencies. Let it suffice,  
That you alone enjoy the best of men,  
And that I am forsaken.

*Mart.* He the best?  
The scum and shame of mankind!

*Jul.* Virolet,  
Lady?

*Mart.* Blest in him? I would my youth had  
Consuming fevers, bed-rid age, [chosen  
For my companions, rather than a thing,  
To lay whose baseness open would even poison  
The tongue that speaks it.

*Jul.* Certainly from you

At no part he deserves this: And I'll tell you,  
Durst I pretend but the least title to him,  
I should not hear this!

*Mart.* He's an impudent villain,  
Or a malicious wretch, to you ungrateful,  
To me beyond expression barbarous,  
I more than hate him! From you he deserves  
A death most horrid; from me, to die for ever,  
And know no end of torments.—Would you have  
comfort?

Would you wash off the stain that sticks upon you,  
In being refused? would you redeem your fame,  
Shipwreck'd in his base wrongs? If you desire  
this,

It is not to be done with slavish suffering,  
But by a noble anger, making way  
To a most brave revenge, we may call justice.  
Our injuries are equal; join with me then,  
And share the honour.

*Jul.* I scarce understand you;  
And know I shall be most unapt to learn  
To hate the man I still must love and honour.

*Mart.* This foolish dotage in soft-hearted women  
Makes proud men insolent; But, take your way;  
I'll run another course.

*Jul.* As you are noble,  
Deliver his offence.

*Mart.* He has denied  
The rites due to a wife.

*Jul.* Oh me most happy!

How largely am I paid for all my sufferings!  
Most honest Virolet, thou just performer  
Of all thy promises! I call to mind now,  
When I was happy in those joys you speak of,  
In a chaste bed, and warranted by law too,  
He oft would swear, that if he should survive me,  
(Which then I knew he wish'd not) never woman  
Should taste of his embraces; this one act  
Makes me again his debtor.

*Mart.* And was this  
The cause my youth and beauty were condemn'd?  
If I sit down here—well!

*Jul.* I dare thy worst!  
Plot what thou canst, my piety shall guard him  
Against thy malice. Leave my house, and quickly!  
Thou wilt infect these innocent walls. By Virtue,  
I will inform him of thy bloody purpose,  
And turn it on thine own accursed head;  
Believe't I will!

[Exit.

*Mart.* But 'tis not in thy power  
To hinder what I have decreed against him.  
I'll set myself to sale, and live a strumpet,  
Forget my birth, my father, and his honour,  
Rather than want an instrument to help me  
In my revenge.—The captain of the guard!

*Enter RONNE.*

Blest Opportunity courts me.  
*Ronne.* Sad and troubled?  
How brave her anger shews! How it sets off  
Her natural beauty! Under what happy star  
Was Virolet born, to be beloved and sought-to,  
By two incomparable women?—Noblest lady,  
I have heard your wrongs, and pity them; and if  
The service of my life could give me hope  
To gain your favour, I should be most proud  
To be commanded.

*Mart.* 'Tis in you, my lord,  
To make me your glad servant.

*Ronne.* Name the means.

*Mart.* 'Tis not preferment, jewels, gold, or  
He that desires to reap the harvest of [courtship]:  
My youth and beauty, must begin in blood,  
And right my wrongs.

*Rene.* I apprehend you, madam,  
And rest assured 'tis done: I am provided  
Of instruments to fit you. To the king  
I'll instantly present you; if I fail,  
He shall make good your aims. He's less than man,  
That, to achieve your favour, would not do  
Deeds fiends would fear to put their agents to.

[*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—A Room in VIOLET'S House.

*Enter VIOLET, reading.*

*Vir.* *Quod invitus facis, non est scelus.* 'Tis  
an axiom.

Now whether willingly I have departed  
With that I loved; with that, above her life  
Loved me again, crown'd me a happy husband;  
Was full of children, her afflictions,  
That I begot; that, when our age must perish,  
And all our painted frailties turn to ashes,  
Then shall they stand and propagate our honours.  
Whether this done, and taking to protection  
A new strange beauty, 'twas an useful one—  
How? to my lust? If it be so, I am sinful,  
And guilty of that crime I would fling from me.  
Was there not in it this fair course of virtue,  
This pious course, to save my friends, my country  
That even then had put on a mourning garment,  
And wept the desolation of her children,  
Her noblest children? Did not she thrust me on,  
And to my duty clapt the spur of honour?  
Was there a way, without this woman, left me  
To bring 'em off? the marrying of this woman?  
If not, why am I stung thus? why tormented?  
Or, had there been a wild desire join'd with it,  
How easily both these, and all their beauties,  
Might I have made mine own? Why am I touch'd  
Having perform'd the great redemption [thus,  
Both of my friends and family? fairly done it,  
Without base and lascivious ends? Oh, Heaven,  
Why am I still at war thus? why this mischief,  
That honesty and honour hath propounded,  
Ay, and absolved my tender will, and chid me,  
Nay, then unwillingly flung me on?

*Enter JULIANA and LUCIO.*

*Lucio.* He's here, madam;  
This is the melancholy walk he lives in,  
And chases ever to increase his sadness.

*Jul.* Stand by.

*Vir.* 'Tis she! How I shake now and tremble!  
The virtues of that mind are torments to me.

*Jul.* Sir, if my hated face shall stir your anger,  
Or this forbidden path I tread in vex you,  
My love and fair obedience left behind me,  
Your pardon ask'd I shall return and bless you.

*Vir.* Pray stay a little! I delight to see you.  
May not we yet, though Fortune have divided us,  
And set an envious stop between our pleasures,  
Look thus one at another? sigh and weep thus?  
And read in one another's eyes the legends,  
And wonders of our old loves? Be not fearful;  
Though you be now a saint, I may adore you!  
May I not take this hand, and on it sacrifice  
The sorrows of my heart! White seal of virtue!

*Jul.* My lord, you wrong your wedlock.

*Vir.* Were she here,  
And with her all-severe eyes to behold us,  
We might do this; I might name Juliana,  
And to the reverence of that name bow thus;  
I might sigh Juliana, she was mine once,  
But I too weak a guard for that great treasure;  
And whilst she has a name, believe me, lady,  
This broken heart shall never want a sorrow.

*Jul.* Forget her, sir; your honour now com-  
mands you;

You are another's, keep those griefs for her;  
She richly can reward 'em. I would have spoken  
with you.

*Vir.* What is your will? for nothing you can  
ask,

So full of goodness are your words and meanings,  
Must be denied: Speak boldly.

*Jul.* I thank you, sir. I come not  
To beg, or flatter, only to be believed;  
That I desire: For I shall tell a story,  
So far from seeming truth, yet a most true one;  
So horrible in nature, and so horrid;  
So beyond wickedness, that, when you hear it,  
It must appear the practice of another,  
The cast and malice of some one you have wrong'd  
much;

And me you may imagine, me accuse too,  
Unless you call to mind my daily sufferings,  
The infinite obedience I have borne you,  
That hates all name and nature of revenge,  
My love, that nothing but my death can sever,  
Rather than hers I speak of.

*Vir.* Juliana,  
To make a doubt of what you shall deliver,  
After my full experience of your virtues,  
Were to distrust a Providence; to think you can  
lie,

Or, being wrong'd, seek after foul reparings,  
To forge a creed against my faith.

*Jul.* I must do so, for it concerns your life,  
sir;

And if that word may stir you, hear, and prosper!  
I should be dumb else, were not you at stake here.

*Vir.* What new friend have I found, that dares  
This loaden trunk from his afflictions? [deliver  
What pitying hand, of all that feels my miseries,  
Brings such a benefit?

*Jul.* Be wise and manly;  
And with your honour fall, when Heaven shall  
Not by a hellish mischief. [call you,

*Vir.* Speak, my best one!—  
How weak and poor I am, now she is from me!

*Jul.* Your wife—

*Vir.* How's that?

*Jul.* Your wife—

*Vir.* Be tender of her;

I shall believe else—

*Jul.* I must be true. Your ear, sir!  
For 'tis so horrible, if the air catch it,  
Into a thousand plagues, a thousand monsters,  
It will disperse itself, and fright resistance.

*Vir.* She seek my life with you? make you her  
Another love? Oh, speak but truth! [agent?

*Jul.* Be patient;

Dear as I love you, else I leave you wretched.

*Vir.* Forward! 'Tis well; it shall be welcome  
to me!

I have lived too long, numbered too many days,  
Yet never found the benefit of living;

Now when I come to reap it with my service,  
And hunt for that my youth and honour aim at,  
The sun sets on my fortune, red and bloody,  
And everlasting night begins to close me :  
'Tis time to die.

*Enter MARTIA and RONVERE.*

*Jul.* She comes herself.

*Ronv.* Believe, lady,

(And on this angel-hand your servant seals it,)  
You shall be mistress of your whole desires,  
And what you shall command.

*Mart.* Ha, minion !

My precious dame, are you there ? Nay, go forward,  
Make your complaints, and pour out your feign'd pities,

Slave-like to him you serve ; I am the same still,  
And what I purpose, let the world take witness,  
Shall be so finish'd, and to such example,  
'Spite of your poor preventions—My dear gentleman !

My honourable man, are you there too ?  
You and your hot desire ? Your mercy, sir !  
I had forgot your greatness.

*Jul.* 'Tis not well, lady.

*Mart.* Lord, how I hate this fellow now ! how desperately

My stomach stands against him ! this base fellow,  
This gelded fool !

*Jul.* Did you never hear of modesty ?

*Mart.* Yes, when I heard of you, and so believed it ;—

Thou bloodless, brainless fool !

*Vir.* How !

*Mart.* Thou despised fool,

Thou only sign of man, how I contemn thee !  
Thou woven worthy in a piece of arras,  
Fit only to enjoy a wall ! thou beast

Beaten to use ! Have I preserved a beauty,  
A youth, a love, to have my wishes blasted ?  
My dotings, and the joys I came to offer,  
Must they be lost, and slighted by a dormouse ?

*Jul.* Use more respect, and, woman, 'twill become you ;

At least, less tongue.

*Mart.* I'll use all violence ;

Let him look for it !

*Jul.* Dare you stain those beauties,

Those heavenly stamps that raise men up to wonder,

With harsh and crooked motions ? Are you she,  
That over-did all ages with your honour,  
And in a little hour dare lose this triumph ?  
Is not this man your husband ?

*Mart.* He's my halter !

Which (having sued my pardon) I fling off thus,  
And with him all I brought him, but my anger ;  
Which I will nourish, to the desolation  
Not only of his folly, but his friends,  
And his whole name !

*Vir.* 'Tis well ! I have deserved it ;

And, if I were a woman, I would rail too.

*Mart.* Nature ne'er promised thee a thing so noble.

Take back your love, your vow ; I give it freely ;  
I poorly scorn it ; graze now where you please !  
That, that the dulness of thy soul neglected,  
Kings sue for now. And mark me, Violet !  
Thou image of a man, observe my words well !

At such a bloody rate I'll sell this beauty,  
This handsomeness thou scorn'st and fling'st away,  
Thy proud ungrateful life shall shake at ! Take  
your house ;  
The petty things you left me, give another ;  
And last, take home your trinket ! Fare you well,  
sir.

*Ronv.* You have spoke like yourself ; you're a brave lady !

[*Exeunt RONVERE and MARTIA.*]

*Jul.* Why do you smile, sir ?

*Vir.* Oh, my Juliana,

The happiness this woman's scorn has given me  
Makes me a man again ; proclaims itself,  
In such a general joy, through all my miseries,  
That now methinks—

*Jul.* Look to yourself, dear sir,  
And trifle not with danger that attends you ;  
Be joyful when you're free.

*Vir.* Did you not hear her ?

She gave me back my vow, my love, my freedom ;  
I am free, free as air ! And though to-morrow  
Her bloody will meet with my life, and sink it,  
And in her execution tear me piecemeal,  
Yet have I time once more to meet my wishes,  
Once more to embrace my best, my noblest, truest ;  
And time that's warranted.

*Jul.* Good sir, forbear it !

Though I confess, equal with your desires  
My wishes rise, as covetous of your love,  
And to as warm alarms spur my will too :  
Yet pardon me ; the seal o' th' church dividing us,  
And hanging like a threatening flame between us,  
We must not meet ; I dare not.

*Vir.* That poor disjointing,

That only strong necessity thrust on you,  
Not crime, nor studied cause of mine, how sweetly  
And nobly I will bind again and cherish !  
How I will recompence ! One dear embrace now,  
One free affection ! How I burn to meet it !  
Look now upon me.

*Jul.* I behold you willingly,  
And willingly would yield, but for my credit.  
The love you first had was preserved with honour,  
The last shall not cry *whore* ; you shall not purchase

From me a pleasure, (that have equally  
Loved your fair fame as you,) at such a rate  
Your Honesty and Virtue must be bankrupt.  
If I had loved your lust, and not your lustre,  
The glorious lustre of your matchless goodness,  
I would compel you now to bed.—Forgive me,  
Forgive me, sir ! How fondly still I love you !  
Yet nobly too : Make the way straight before me,  
And let but holy Hymen once more guide me,  
Under the axe, upon the rack again,  
Even in the bed of all afflictions,  
Where nothing sings our nuptials but dire sorrows.  
With all my youth and pleasure I'll embrace you,  
Make tyranny and death stand still affrighted,  
And at our meeting souls amaze our mischiefs :  
Till when, high Heaven defend you, and Peace  
guide you !

Be wise and manly, make your fate your own,  
By being master of a providence  
That may controul it.

*Vir.* Stay a little with me :

My thoughts have chid themselves. May I not  
kiss you ?

Upon my truth I am honest.

*Jul.* I believe you ;  
 But yet what that may raise in both our fancies,  
 What issues such warm parents breed—  
*Fir.* I obey you,  
 And take my leave as from the saint that keeps  
 me.  
 I will be right again, and once more happy  
 In thy unimitable love.  
*Jul.* I'll pray for you ;  
 And when you fall, I have not long to follow.

[*Exeunt.*]SCENE IV.—*A Court in the Palace.*

*Enter DUKE, MASTER, BOATSWAIN, and GUNNER, at one door ; MARTIA and RONVERE at another.*

*Duke.* Now we have got free credit with the captain—  
*Master.* Soft, soft ! he's here again. Is not that lady—  
 Or have I lost mine eyes ? a salt rheum seizes 'em ;  
 But I should know that face.  
*Boats.* Make him not madder !  
 Let him forget the woman ; steer a-larboard.  
*Master.* He will not kill her.  
*Boats.* Anything he meets ;  
 He's like a hornet now, he hums, and buzzes  
 Nothing but blood and horror.  
*Master.* I would save the lady ;  
 For such another lady—  
*Boats.* There's the point ;  
 And you know there want women of her mettle.  
*Master.* 'Tis true ; they bring such children  
 now, such demi-lances,  
 Their father's socks will make them christning  
 clothes.  
*Gun.* No more ! they view us.  
*Duke.* You shall play awhile,  
 And sun yourself in this felicity,  
 You shall, you glorious whore ! I know you still.  
 But I shall pick an hour when most securely—  
 I say no more.  
*Ronv.* Do you see those ? those are they  
 Shall act your will.—Come hither, my good fel-  
 lows !  
 You are now the king's.—Are they not goodly  
 fellows ?  
*Mart.* They have bone enough, if they have  
 stout heart to it.  
*Master.* Still the old wench !  
*Duke.* Pray, captain, let me ask you  
 What noble lady's that ? 'Tis a rude question ;  
 But I desire to know.  
*Ronv.* She's for the king, sir ;  
 Let that suffice for answer.  
*Duke.* Is she so, sir ? [Aside]  
 In good time may she curse it ! Must I  
 Breed hacknies for his grace ?  
*Ronv.* What would'st thou do  
 To merit such a lady's favour—  
*Duke.* Anything.  
*Ronv.* That can supply thy wants, and raise thy  
 fortunes ?  
*Duke.* Let her command, and see what I dare  
 execute :  
 I keep my conscience here. If any man

Oppose her will, and she would have him humbled,  
 Whole families between her and her wishes—

*Master.* We have seen bleeding throats, sir,  
 cities sack'd,  
 And infants stuck upon their pikes—

*Boats.* Houses on fire, and handsome mothers  
 weeping.

*Duke.* Which we have heap'd upon the pile like  
 sacrifices.

Churches and altars, priests, and all devotions,  
 Tumbled together into one rude chaos.

*Gun.* We know no fear, sir, but want of em-  
 ployment.

*Duke.* Nor other faith but what our purses  
 preach.

To gain our ends we can do anything,  
 And turn our souls into a thousand figures ;  
 But when we come to do—

*Mart.* I like these fellows.

*Ronv.* Be ready and wait here ! Within this  
 hour

I'll shew you to the king, and he shall like ye ;  
 And if you can devise some entertainment

To fill his mirth, such as your country uses,  
 Present it, and I'll see it graced.

After this comic scene we shall employ you ;  
 For one must die.

*Duke.* What is he, sir ? Speak boldly !  
 For we dare boldly do.

*Ronv.* This lady's husband ;  
 His name is Virolet.

*Duke.* We shall dispatch it.

[*Exeunt MARTIA and RONVERE.*]

Oh, damned, damned thing ! A base whore first,  
 And then a murderer ! I'll look to you.

*Boats.* Can she be grown so strange ?

*Duke.* She has an itch ;  
 I'll scratch you, my dear daughter, I'll so claw  
 you !

I'll curry your hot hide ! Married and honour'd ?  
 And turn those holy blessings into brothels ?

Your beauty into blood ? I'll hunt your hotness,  
 I'll hunt you like a train !

*Master.* We did all pity her.

*Duke.* Hang her ! She is not worth man's  
 memory ;

She's false and base, and let her fright all stories.—  
 Well, though thou be'st mine enemy, I'll right thee,  
 And right thee nobly.

*Boats.* 'Faith, sir, since she must go,  
 Let's spare as few as may be.

*Duke.* We'll take all,  
 And like a torrent sweep the slaves before us.

You dare endure the worst ?

*Master.* You know our hearts, sir ;  
 And they shall bleed the last, ere we start from  
 you.

*Gun.* We can but die ; and ere we come to that,  
 We shall pick out some few examples for us.

*Duke.* Then wait the first occasion ; and, like  
 Curtius,

I'll leap the gulph before you, fearless leap it ;  
 Then follow me like men ! And if our virtues

May buoy our country up, and set her shining  
 In her first state, our fair revenges taken,  
 We have our noble ends, or else our ashes.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace, with a Gallery.*

*Enter ASCANIO and MARTIA above.*

*Mart.* As you are noble, keep me from discovery,

And let me only run a stranger's fortune!  
For when the king shall find I am his daughter  
He ever holds most ominous, and hates most,  
With what eyes can he look, how entertain me,  
But with his fears and cruelties?

*Asc.* I have found you;

Suspect not! I am bound to what you like best:  
What you intend, I dare not be so curious  
To question now; and what you are lies hid here.

*Enter FERDAND and RONVERE above.*

The king comes. Make your fortune; I shall join in't.

*Ronv.* All things are ready, sir, to make you merry;

And such a king! you shall behold him now.

*Fer.* I long for't,

For I have need of mirth.

*Ronv.* The lady, sir!

*Fer.* Now, as I am a king, a sprightly beauty,  
A goodly sweet aspect! My thanks, Ronvere,  
My best thanks!—On your lips I seal your wishes;  
Be what you can imagine, mine, and happy.  
And now, sit down and smile. Come, my Ascanio,  
And let this monarch enter.

*Enter DUKE, Master, Boatswain, Gunner, and Sailors.*

*Ronv.* These are the Switzers,  
I told your grace of.

*Fer.* Goodly promising fellows,  
With faces to keep fools in awe! I like 'em.—  
Go guard the presence well, and do your duties;  
To-morrow I shall take a further view.

*Duke.* You shall, sir, [*Aside.*]  
Or I shall lose my will. How the whore's mounted!  
How she sits throned! Thou blazing muddy meteor,  
That fright'st the under world with lustful flashes,  
How I shall dash thy flames! Away; no word  
more!

[*Exit DUKE and his company. Flourish cornets.*]

*Enter CASTRUCCIO in royal robes, VILLIO, Doctor, and a Guard.*

*Fer.* Now, here he comes in glory. Be merry,  
masters!

A banquet too? [*Meat brought in.*]

*Ronv.* Oh, he must sit in state, sir!

*Asc.* How rarely he is usher'd! Can he think  
He is a king indeed? [*Now*]

*Ronv.* Mark but his countenance.

*Cast.* Let me have pleasures infinite, and to the  
height;  
And women in abundance, many women!

*Enter Ladies.*

I will disport my grace; stand there, and long for  
me!

What have ye brought me here? Is this a feast  
Fit for a prince? a mighty prince? Are these  
These preparations, ha? [*things,*]

*Doctor.* May it please your grace—

*Cast.* It does not please my grace! Where are  
the marchpanes,

The custards double-royal, and the subtilties?  
Why, what weak things are you to serve a prince  
thus?

Where be the delicates o' th' earth and air?  
The hidden secrets of the sea? Am I a plough-  
man,

You pop me up with porridge? Hang the cooks!

*Fer.* Oh, most kingly!

What a majestic anger!

*Cast.* Give me some wine.

*Asc.* He cools again now.

*Cast.* Fool, where are my players?

Let me have all in pomp! Let 'em play some love-  
matter,

To make the ladies itch! I'll be with you anon,  
ladies!

You black eyes, I'll be with you!—Give me some  
wine, I say;

And let me have a masque of cuckolds enter,  
Of mine own cuckolds;

And let them come in, peeping and rejoicing,  
Just as I kiss their wives, and somewhat glorying.

Some wine, I say! Then, for an excellent night-  
piece,

To shew my glory to my loves and minions,  
I will have some great castle burnt.

*Villio.* Hark you, brother!

If that be to please these ladies, ten to one  
The fire first takes upon your own; look to that!  
Then you may shew a night-piece.

*Cast.* Where's this wine?

Why, shall I choke? Do ye long all to be tortured?  
*Doctor.* Here, sir.

*Cast.* [*Tastes.*] Why, what is this? Why,

*Doctor.* Wine and water, sir. [*Doctor!*]

'Tis sovereign for your heat; you must endure it.  
*Villio.* Most excellent to cool your night-piece,  
sir.

*Doctor.* You are of a high and choleric com-  
And you must have allays. [*plexion,*]

*Cast.* Shall I have no sheer wine then?

*Doctor.* Not for a world: I tender your dear  
And he's no faithful subject— [*life, sir;*]

*Villio.* No, by no means:

Of this you may drink, and never hang nor quarter,  
Nor never whip the fool; this liquor's merciful.

*Cast.* I will sit down and eat then: Kings,  
when they are hungry,

May eat, I hope?

*Doctor.* Yes, but they eat discreetly.

*Cast.* Come, taste this dish, and cut me liberally;  
I like sauce well.

*Doctor.* Fy, 'tis too hot, sir;

Too deeply season'd with the spice; away with't!  
You must acquaint your stomach with those diets  
Are temperately nourishing.

[*The meat is taken away.*]

*Cast.* But pray stay, doctor,  
And let me have my meat again.

*Doctor.* By no means:

I have a charge concerns my life.

*Cast.* No meat neither?

Do kings never eat, doctor?

*Doctor.* Very little, sir,

And that too very choice.

*Villio.* Your king never sleeps, brother;

He must not sleep, his cares still keep him waking;

Now he that eats and drinks much is a dormouse ;  
The third part of a wafer is a week's diet.

*Cast.* Appoint me something then.

*Doctor.* There !

*Cast.* This I feel good,  
But it melts too suddenly ; yet—how ! that gone  
too ? [Taken away.]

Ye are not mad ! I charge you—

*Doctor.* For your health, sir ;  
A little quickens nature, much depresses.

*Cast.* Eat nothing, for my health ? that's a new  
diet.

Let me have something ! something has some  
savour !

Why, thou uncourtous doctor, shall I hang thee ?

*Doctor.* 'Tis better, sir, than I should let you  
My death were nothing. [surfeit :

*Villio.* To lose a king were terrible.

*Cast.* Nay, then I'll carve myself ; I'll stay no  
ceremonies.

This is a partridge-pie ; I am sure that's nourish-  
Or Galen is an ass. 'Tis rarely season'd ! [ing,  
Ha, doctor, have I hit right ? a mark, a mark there !

*Villio.* What ails thy grace ? [Taken away.]

*Cast.* Retrieve those partridges ;

Or, as I am a king—

*Doctor.* Pray, sir, be patient ;

They are flown too far.

*Villio.* These are breathed pies, an't please you,  
And your hawks are such buzzards—

*Cast.* A king, and have nothing,

Nor can have nothing ?

*Villio.* What think you of pudding ?

A pudding royal ?

*Cast.* To be royally starved !

Whip me this fool to death ! he is a blockhead.

*Villio.* Let 'em think they whip me, as we think  
you a king ;

'Twill be enough. [Servants remove the table.]

*Cast.* As for you, dainty doctor—The table  
taken away ?

All gone, all snatch'd away, and I unsatisfied,

Without my wits, being a king and hungry ?

Suffer but this thy treason ? I tell thee, doctor,

I tell it thee in earnest, and in anger,

I am damnably hungry, my very grace is hungry.

*Villio.* A hungry grace is fittest to no meal, sir.

*Doctor.* Some two hours hence you shall see  
more : But still, sir,

You must retain a strict and excellent diet.

*Villio.* It sharpens you, and makes your wit so  
Your very words will kill. [poignant,

*Doctor.* A bit of marmalade,

No bigger than a pease—

*Villio.* And that well butter'd,

The sir thrice purified, and three times spirited,

Becomes a king : Your rare conserve of nothing  
Breeds no offence.

*Cast.* Am I turn'd king camelion,

And keep my court i' th' air ?—

*Fer.* They vex him cruelly.

*As.* In two days more they'll starve him.

*Fer.* Now the women !

There's no food left but they.

*As.* They'll prove small nourishment ;

Yet he has another stomach, and a great one,  
I see by his eye.—

*Cast.* I'll have mine own power here,

Mine own authority : I need no tutor.

*Doctor.* this is no diet.

*Doctor.* It may be, sir.

*Villio.* By'r lady, it may turn to a dry diet ;

And how thy grace will ward that—

*Cast.* Stand off, doctor !

And talk to those that want faith.

*Fer.* Hot and mighty.

*As.* He will cool apace, no doubt.

*Cast.* Fair, plump, and red,

A forehead high, an eye revives the dead ;

A lip like ripest fruit, inviting still.

*Vil.* But oh, the rushy well, below the hill !

Take heed of that, for though it never fail !

Take heed, I say, for thereby hangs a tale.

*Cast.* I'll get ye all with child !

*Vil.* With one child, brother ?

So many men in a blue coat ?

*Cast.* Had I fed well, [all,

And drunk good store of wine, ye had been blest

Blest all with double births. Come, kiss me

greedily !

And think no more upon your foolish husbands ;

They are transitory things ; a king's flame meets  
you !

*Doct.* Vanish away ! [Exit Women.]

*Cast.* How ! they gone too ? My guard there !

Take me this devil doctor, and that fool there ;

And sow 'em in a sack ! Bring back the women,

The lovely women ! Drown these rogues, or hang

*As.* He is in earnest, sir. [em !

*Fer.* In serious earnest.

I must needs take him off.

*Enter DUKE, Master, Boatswain, Gunner, and Sailors.*

*Duke.* Now, now, be free !

Now liberty ! now, countrymen, shake from ye

The tyrant's yoke !

*All.* Liberty, liberty, liberty !

*Guard.* Treason, treason, treason !

*Fer.* We are betray'd ! Fly to the town, cry

treason,

And raise our faithful friends ! Oh, my Ascanio !

*As.* Make haste ! we have way enough.

*Guard.* Treason, treason !

[Exit FERRAND, ASCANIO, MARTIA, and GUARD.]

*Duke.* Spare none ! put all to th' sword !—A

vengeance shake thee !

Art thou turn'd king again ?

*Cast.* I am a rascal :

Spare me but this time, if ever I see king more,

Or once believe in king—

*Duke.* The ports are ours, [men !

The treasure and the port. Fight bravely, gentle-

Cry to the town, cry " Liberty and Honour ! "

[Exit Boatswain, crying Liberty and Freedom.]

Waken their persecuted souls ; cry loudly !

We'll share the wealth among ye.

*Cast.* Do you hear, captain ?

If ever you hear me name a king—

*Duke.* You shall not.

*Cast.* Or, though I live under one, obey him—

*Gun.* This rogue again ?

*Duke.* Away with him, good Gunner.

*Cast.* Why, look ye, sir ; I'll put you to no

I'll never eat. [charge ;

*Gun.* I'll take a course you shall not.

Come, no more words.

*Cast.* Say nothing when you kill me.

*Enter Boatswain.*

*Boats.* He's taken to the tower's strength.

*Duke.* Now stand sure, gentlemen !

We have him in a pen, he cannot 'scape us ;  
The rest o' th' castle's ours.

*Within.* " Liberty, liberty ! "

*Duke.* What, is the city up ?

*Boats.* They are up and glorious,  
And rolling like a storm they come ; their tents  
Ring nothing but " Liberty and Freedom ! "  
The women are in arms too.

*Duke.* Let 'em come all  
Honour and liberty !

*All.* Honour and liberty ! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*A Room in VIROLET'S House.*

*Enter JULIANA.*

*Jul.* This woman's threats, her eyes, even red  
with fury,  
Which, like prodigious meteors, foretold  
Assured destruction, are still before me.  
Besides, I know such natures unacquainted  
With any mean, or in their love, or hatred ;  
And she that dared all dangers to possess him,  
Will check at nothing, to revenge the loss  
Of what she held so dear. I first discover'd  
Her bloody purposes, which she made good,  
And openly profess'd 'em : That in me  
Was but a cold affection ; charity  
Commands so much to all ; for Virolet,  
Methinks, I should forget my sex's weakness,  
Rise up, and dare beyond a woman's strength ;  
Then do, not counsel. He is too secure ;  
And, in my judgment, 'twere a greater service  
To free him from a deadly enemy,  
Than to get him a friend. I undertook too  
To cross her plots ; opposed my piety  
Against her malice ; and shall virtue suffer ?  
No, Martia ; wert thou here equally arm'd,  
I have a cause, 'spite of thy masculine breeding,  
That would assure the victory. My angel  
Direct and help me !

*Enter VIROLET, habited like RONVERE. JULIANA stands apart.*

*Vir.* The state in combustion,  
Part of the citadel forced, the treasure seized on ;  
The guards, corrupted, arm themselves against  
Their late protected master ; Ferrand fled too,  
And with small strength, into the castle's tower,  
The only Aventure that now is left him ?  
And yet the undertakers, nay, performers,  
Of such a brave and glorious enterprise,  
Are yet unknown : They did proceed like men,  
I like a child ; and had I never trusted  
So deep a practice unto shallow fools,  
Besides my soul's peace in my Juliana,  
The honour of this action had been mine,  
In which, accursed, I now can claim no share.

*Jul.* Ronvere ; 'tis he ; a thing, next to the  
devil,

I most detest, and like him terrible ;  
Martia's right-hand ; the instrument, I fear too,  
That is to put her bloody will into act.  
Have I not will enough, and cause too mighty ?  
Weak women's fear, fly from me !

*Vir.* Sure this habit,  
This likeness to Ronvere, which I have studied,  
Either admits me safe to my design,  
Which I too cowardly have halted after,  
And suffer'd to be ravish'd from my glory,

Or sinks me and my miseries together ;  
Either concludes me happy.

*Jul.* He stands musing ;  
Some mischief is now hatching :  
In the full meditation of his wickedness,  
I'll sink his cursed soul. Guide my hand, Heaven,  
And to my tender arm give strength and fortune,  
That I may do a pious deed, all ages  
Shall bless my name for, all remembrance crown  
*Vir.* It shall be so. [*me!*

*Jul.* It shall not ! Take that token, [*Stabs him.*]  
And bear it to the lustful arms of Martia !  
Tell her, for Virolet's dear sake, I sent it.

*Vir.* Oh, I am happy ! let me see thee, that I  
May bless the hand that gave me liberty !  
Oh, courteous hand ! Nay, thou hast done most  
nobly,  
And Heaven has guided thee ; 'twas their great  
justice.

Oh, blessed wound, that I could come to kiss thee !  
How beautiful and sweet thou shew'st !

*Jul.* Oh !

*Vir.* Sigh not,  
Nor weep not, dear ! shed not those sovereign  
balsams

Into my blood, which must recover me ;  
Then I shall live, again to do a mischief  
Against the mightiness of love and virtue.  
Some base unhallow'd hand shall rob thy right of—  
Help me ; I faint. So.

*Jul.* Oh, unhappy wench !  
How has my zeal abused me ! You that guard  
virtue,

Were ye asleep ? or do ye laugh at innocence,  
You suffer'd this mistake ? Oh, my dear Virolet !  
An everlasting curse follow that form  
I struck thee in ! his name be ever blasted !  
For his accursed shadow has betray'd  
The sweetness of all youth, the nobleness,  
The honour, and the valour ; wither'd for ever  
The beauty, and the bravery of all mankind !  
Oh ! my dull devil's eyes !

*Vir.* I do forgive you ; [*Kisses her.*  
By this, and this, I do. I know you were cozzen'd ;  
The shadow of Ronvere I know you aim'd at,  
And not at me ; but 'twas most necessary  
I should be struck ; some hand above directed you ;  
For Juliana could not shew her justice,  
Without depriving high Heaven of his glory,  
On any subject fit for her, but Virolet.  
Forgive me too, and take my last breath, sweet one !  
This the new marriage of our souls together.  
Think of me, Juliana ; but not often,  
For fear my faults should burthen your affections.  
Pray for me, for I faint.

*Jul.* Oh, stay a little,  
A little, little, sir ! [*Offers to kill herself.*

*Vir.* Fy, Juliana !

*Jul.* Shall I out-live the virtue I have murder'd ?  
*Vir.* Hold, or thou hat'st at my peace ! Give me  
the dagger ;

On your obedience, and your love, deliver it !  
If you do thus, we shall not meet in Heaven, sweet ;  
No guilty blood comes there : Kill your intentions,  
And then you conquer. There, where I am going,  
Would you not meet me, dear ?

*Jul.* Yes.

*Vir.* And still love me ?

*Jul.* And still behold you.

*Vir.* Live then, till Heaven calls you :

Then, ripe and full of sweetness, you rise sainted;  
Then I, that went before you to prepare,  
Shall meet and welcome you, and daily court you,  
With hymns of holy love. God! I go out!  
Give me your hand. Farewell! in peace, farewell!  
Remember me! farewell! [Dies.]

*Jul.* Sleep you, sweet glasses!  
An everlasting slumber crown those crystals!  
All my delight, adieu! farewell, dear Violet,  
Dear, dear, most dear! Oh, I can weep no more;  
My body now is fire, and all-consuming.  
Here will I sit, forget the world and all things,  
And only wait what Heaven shall turn me to;  
For now methinks I should not live.

[She sits down.]  
*Enter PANDULPHO with a book*

*Pand.* Oh, my sweet daughter,  
The work is finish'd now I promised thee:  
Here are thy virtues shew'd, here register'd,  
And here shall live for ever.

*Jul.* Blot it, burn it!  
I have no virtue; hateful I am as hell is!

*Pand.* Is not this Violet?  
*Jul.* Ask no more questions!

Mistaking him, I kill'd him.

*Pand.* Oh, my son!  
Nature turns to my heart again. My dear son!  
Son of my age! wouldst thou go out so quickly?  
So poorly take thy leave, and never see me?  
Was this a kind stroke, daughter? Could you love  
him,

Honour his father, and so deadly strike him?  
Oh, wither'd timeless youth! are all thy promises,  
Thy goodly growth of honours, come to this?  
Do I halt still i' th' world, and trouble Nature,  
When her main pieces founder, and fail daily?

*Enter LUCIO and three Servants.*

*Lucio.* He does weep certain. What body's that  
Hov' do you, sir? [lies by him?]

*Pand.* Oh, look there, Lucio,  
Thy master, thy best master!

*Lucio.* Woe is me!  
They have kill'd him, slain him basely! Oh, my  
master!

*Pand.* Well, daughter, well! what heart you  
had to do this!

I know he did you wrong; but 'twas his fortune,  
And not his fault: For my sake, that have loved  
But I see now you scorn me too. [you—

*Lucio.* Oh, mistress!  
Can you sit there, and his cold body breathless?  
Basely upon the earth?

*Pand.* Let her alone, boy:  
She glories in his end.

*Lucio.* You shall not sit here,  
And suffer him you loved—Ha! good sir, come  
hither,

Come hither quickly! heave her up! Oh, Heaven,  
sir!

Oh, God, my heart! she's cold, cold, cold, and  
Stiff as a stake; she's dead! [stiff too.

*Pand.* She's gone; ne'er bend her:  
I know her heart, she could not want his company.

Blessing go with thy soul! sweet angels shadow it!  
Oh, that I were the third now! what a happiness!

But I must live to see you laid in earth both;  
Then build a chapel to your memories,  
Where all my wealth shall fashion out your stories;  
Then dig a little grave besides, and all's done.

How sweet she looks! her eyes are open smiling;  
I thought she had been alive. You are my charge,  
sir;

And amongst you I'll see his goods distributed.  
[To the Servants.]

Take up the bodies; mourn in heart, my friends;  
You have lost two noble succours. Follow me;  
And thou sad country, weep this misery!

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—*An open Place in the City before  
the Citadel.*

*Enter DUKE, Boatswain, Master, Gunner, Citizens, with  
Soldiers.*

*Duke.* Keep the ports strongly mann'd, and let  
But such as are known patriots. [none enter,

*All.* Liberty, liberty!

*Duke.* 'Tis a substantial thing, and not a word,  
You men of Naples; which, if once taken from us,  
All other blessings leave us; 'tis a jewel  
Worth purchasing at the dear rate of life,  
And so to be defended. Oh, remember  
What you have suffer'd, since you parted with it;  
And if again you wish not to be slaves,  
And properties to Ferrand's pride and lust,  
Take noble courage, and make perfect what  
Is happily begun.

1 *Cit.* Our great preserver!

You have enfranchis'd us from wretched bondage.

2 *Cit.* An't might be known, to whom we owe  
our freedom,

We to the death would follow him.

3 *Cit.* Make him king,

The tyrant once removed.

*Duke.* That's not my end;

'Twas not ambition that brought me hither,  
With these my faithful friends, nor hope of spoil.  
For when we did possess the tyrant's treasure,  
By force extorted from you, and employ'd  
To load you with most miserable thralldom,  
We did not make it ours; but with it purchased  
The help of these, to get you liberty,  
That for the same price kept you in subjection.  
Nor are we Switzers, worthy countrymen,  
But Neapolitans. Now eye me well;

[Throws off his disguise.]

And though the reverend emblems of mine age  
(My silver locks) are shorn, my beard cut off,  
Partaking yet of an adulterate colour;  
Though fourteen years you have not seen this face,  
You may remember it, and call to mind  
There was a Duke of Sesse, a much-wrong'd prince,  
Wrong'd by this tyrant Ferrand.

1 *Cit.* Now I know him.

2 *Cit.* 'Tis he. Long live the Duke of Sesse!

*Duke.* I thank you.

The injuries I received, I must confess,  
Made me forget the love I owed this country,  
For which, I hope, I have given satisfaction.  
In being the first that stirr'd to give it freedom;  
And with your loves and furtherance, will call back  
Long-banish'd Peace, and Plenty to this people.

2 *Cit.* Lead where you please, we'll follow.

1 *Cit.* Dare all dangers.

*Enter PANDULPHO, the bodies of VIOLET and JULIANA upon  
a hearse.*

*Duke.* What solemn funeral's this?

*Pand.* There rest a while,

And if't be possible there can be added  
Wings to your swift desire of just revenge,  
Hear (if my tears will give way to my words)  
In brief a most sad story.

*Duke.* Speak, what are they?  
I know thee well, Pandulpho.

*Pand.* My best lord!

As far as sorrow will give leave, most welcome!  
This Virolet was, and but a son of mine,  
I might say, the most hopeful of our gentry;  
And, though unfortunate, never ignoble:  
But I'll speak him no further. Look on this,  
This face, that in a savage would move pity,  
The wonder of her sex! and having said  
'Tis Juliana, Eloquence will want words  
To set out her deservings. This bless'd lady,  
That did endure the rack to save her husband,  
That husband, who, in being forced to leave her,  
Endured a thousand tortures; by what practice  
I know not, (but 'twas sure a cunning one)  
Are made, the last I hope, but sad examples,  
Of Ferrand's tyranny.—  
Convey the bodies hence!

*Duke.* Express your sorrow

In your revenge, not tears, my worthy soldiers!  
That fertile earth, that teem'd so many children  
To feed his cruelty, in her wounded womb  
Can hardly now receive 'em.

*Boats.* We are cold;

Cold walls shall not keep him from us!

*Gun.* Were he cover'd

With mountains, and room only for a bullet  
To be sent level at him, I would speed him.

*Master.* Let's scale this petty tower! At sea  
we are falcons,

And fly unto the main-top in a moment:  
What then can stop us here?

1 *Cit.* We'll tear him piece-meal!

2 *Cit.* Or eat a passage to him!

*Duke.* Let discretion

Direct your anger: That's a victory,  
Which is got with least loss; let us make ours  
such!

And therefore, friends, while we hold parley here,  
Raise your scalado on the other side;  
But, enter'd, wreak your sufferings.

1 *Cit.* In our wrongs,  
[*Exeunt Sailors and Soldiers.*]

There was no mean—

2 *Cit.* Nor in our full revenge

Will we know any.

*Duke.* Be appeas'd, good man! [To *PANDULPHO.*]  
No sorrow can redeem them from Death's prison;  
What his inevitable hand hath seized on,  
The world cannot recover. All the comfort  
That I can give to you, is to see vengeance  
Pour'd dreadfully upon the author's head,  
Of which their ashes may be sensible,  
That have fallen by him. [Sound a parley.]

*Enter FERRAND, MARTIA, ASCANIO, and RONVERE*  
*on the Ramparts of the Citadel.*

*Pand.* They appear.

*Fer.* 'Tis not that we esteem rebellious traitors  
Worthy an answer to their proudest summons,  
That we vouchsafe our presence, or to exchange  
One syllable with 'em; but to let such know,  
Though circled round with treason, all points bent  
As to their centre at my heart, 'tis free,  
Free from fear, villains; and in this weak tower  
Ferrand commands as absolute as when

He trod upon your necks, and as much scorns you.  
And when the sun of majesty shall break through  
The clouds of your rebellion, every beam,  
Instead of comfortable heat, shall send  
Consuming plagues among you, and you call  
That government which you term'd *tyrannous*,  
Hereafter, *gentile*.

*Duke.* Flatter not thyself

With these deluding hopes, thou cruel beast!  
Thou art i' th' toil, and the glad huntsman prood,  
By whom thou art taken, of his prey, than if  
(Like thee) he should command, and spoil his

*Fer.* What art thou? [forest.]

*Duke.* To thy horror, Duke of Sease.

*Fer.* The devil!

*Duke.* Reserved for thy damnation.

*Fer.* Why shakes my love?

*Mart.* Oh, I am lost for ever!

Mountains divide me from him! some kind hand  
Prevent our fearful meeting! or lead me  
To the steep rock, whose rugged brows are bent  
Upon the swelling main; there let me hide me:  
And as our bodies then shall be divided,  
May our souls never meet!

*Fer.* Whence grows this, sweetest?

*Mart.* There are a thousand furies in his looks;  
And in his deadly silence more loud horror,  
Than when in hell the tortured and tormentors  
Contend whose shrieks are greater. Wretched me!  
It is my father.

*Duke.* Yes, and I will own her, sir,  
Till my revenge. It is my daughter, Ferrand,  
My daughter thou hast whored.

*Fer.* I triumph in it!

To know she's thine, affords me more true pleasure  
Than the act gave me, when even at the height,  
I crack'd her virgin zone. Her shame dwell on  
thee,

And all thy family! May they never know  
A female issue, but a whore!—*Ascanio*,  
*Ronvere*, look cheerfully; be thou a man too,  
And learn of me to die! That we might fall,  
And in our ruins swallow up this kingdom,  
*Nay*, the whole world, and make a second chaos!  
And if from thence a new beginning rise,  
Be it recorded this did end with us,  
And from our dust hath embrion!

*Rono.* I lived with you,  
And will die with you; your example makes me  
Equally bold.

*Asc.* And I resolved to bear  
Whate'er my fate appoints me.

*Duke.* They are ours:

Now to the spoil!

*Boats.* Pity the lady; to all else be deaf.

*Within.* Kill, kill, kill!

[*Alarum, flourish trumpets, retreat.*]

*Re-enter DUKE, with FERRAND'S head; the Citizens, Master,*  
*Boatswain, Gunner, Soldiers bringing in ASCANIO*  
*and MARTIA.*

*Duke.* Cruel beginnings meet with cruel ends;  
And the best sacrifice to heaven for peace  
Is tyrant's blood, and those that stuck fast to him,  
Flesh'd instruments in his commands to mischief,  
With him dispatch'd.

*Boats.* They are all cut off.

*Duke.* 'Tis well.

*All.* Thanks to the Duke of Sease!

*Duke.* Pay that to Heaven,

And for a general joy give general thanks ;  
 For blessings ne'er descend from Heaven, but when  
 A grateful sacrifice ascends from men.  
 To your devotion ! leave me : There's a scene  
 Which I would act alone. Yet you may stay ;  
 For wanting just spectators, 'twill be nothing.  
 The rest forbear me !

*Cit.* Liberty, liberty, liberty !

*Mart.* I would I were as far beneath the centre,  
 As now I stand above it. How I tremble !  
 Thrice happy they that died ! I dying live  
 To stand the whirlwind of a father's fury.  
 Now it moves toward me.

*Duke.* Thou—I want a name  
 By which to style thee : All articulate sounds  
 That do express the mischief of vile woman,  
 That are, or have been, or shall be, are weak  
 To speak thee to the height. Witch ! Parricide !  
 For thou, in taking leave of modesty,  
 Hast kill'd thy father, and his honour lost ;  
 He's but a walking shadow to torment thee.  
 To leave and rob thy father, then set free  
 His foes, whose slavery he did prefer  
 Above all treasure, was a strong defeazance,  
 To cut off even the surest bonds of mercy ;  
 After all this, (having given up thyself,  
 Like to a sensual beast, a slave to lust)  
 To play the whore, and thou (high Heaven, it racks  
 To find out none to quench thy appetite [me !]  
 But the most cruel king, whom next to hell  
 Thy father hated, and whose black embraces  
 Thou shouldst have fled from, as the whips of  
 What canst thou look for ? [furies !

*Mart.* Death ! and 'tis not in you  
 To hurt me further. My old resolution,  
 Take now the place of fear ! In this I lived,  
 In this I'll die, your daughter.

*Enter PANDULFO, and the Bodies borne on the Hearse.*

*Pand.* Look but here !  
 You had, I know, a guilty hand in this ;  
 Repent it, lady.

*Mart.* Juliana dead ?  
 And Violet ?

*Pand.* By her unwilling hand.

*Mart.* Fates, you are equal !—What can now  
 fall on me,  
 That I will shrink at ? Now unmoved I dare  
 Look on your anger, and not bend a knee  
 To ask your pardon : Let your rage run higher  
 Than billows raised up by a violent tempest,  
 And be, as that is, deaf to all entreaties !  
 They are dead, and I prepared ; for in their fall  
 All my desires are summ'd up.

*Duke.* Impudent too ?

Die in it, wretch !

[Offers to kill her.

*Boats.* Stay, sir !

[Boatswain kills her.

*Duke.* How darest thou, villain,  
 Snatch from my sword the honour of my justice ?

*Boats.* I never did you better service, sir ;  
 Yet have been ever faithful. I confess  
 That she deserved to die ; but by whose hand ?  
 Not by a father's. Double all her guilt,  
 It could not make you innocent, had you done it :  
 In me 'tis murder, in you 'twere a crime  
 Heaven could not pardon. Witness that I love you !  
 And in that love I did it.

*Duke.* Thou art noble ;  
 I thank thee for't. The thought of her die with  
 her !

*Asc.* My turn is next ; since she could find no  
 mercy,  
 What am I to expect ?

*Cit.* With one voice, sir,  
 The citizens salute you with the style  
 Of King of Naples.

*Duke.* I must be excused ;  
 The burden is too heavy for my shoulders ;  
 Bestow it where 'tis due.—Stand forth, Ascanio !  
 It does belong to you ; live long and wear it !  
 And, warn'd by the example of your uncle,  
 Learn that you are to govern men, not beasts ;  
 And that it is a most improvident head,  
 That strives to hurt the limbs that do support it !  
 Give burial to the dead. For me, and mine,  
 We will again to sea, and never know  
 The place, which in my birth first gave me woe.

[Flourish of trumpets. *Exeunt.*

# THE KNIGHT OF MALTA.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

VALETTA, *the Grand-Master of Malta.*  
MIRANDA, *an Italian Gentleman, the KNIGHT OF MALTA.*  
ASTORIUS, }  
CASTRICOT, } *Two Knights of the Order.*  
MOUNTFERRAT, *a Knight of the Order, but a Villain.*  
PETER GOMERA, *a deserving Spanish Gentleman.*  
NORANDINE, *a valiant merry Dane, Commander-in-Chief of the Gallies of Malta.*  
COLONNA, *alias ANGELO, a Captive redeemed from the Gallies, and beloved of MIRANDA.*  
ROCCA, *Servant and instrument to MOUNTFERRAT.*  
Two Bishops.  
Soldiers.

Corporal.  
Prisoners.  
Two Marshals.  
Doctor and Surgeons.  
One of the Esquard.  
Servants.

ORIANA, *Sister to VALETTA, and Wife of GOMERA.*  
VALLEDA, *Attendant on ORIANA.*  
ZANTHIA, *alias ARDELLA, a Moor, Servant to ORIANA.*  
LUCINDA, *a beautiful Turkish Woman, contractet to ANGELO, Prisoner to MIRANDA.*  
Two Gentlewomen.

SCENE,—MALTA.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—VALETTA.

*A Room in MOUNTFERRAT'S House.*

*Enter MOUNTFERRAT.*

*Mountf.* Dares she despise me thus? me, that with spoil

And hazardous exploits, full sixteen years  
Have led (as hand-maids) Fortune, Victory,  
Whom the Maltezzi call my servitors?  
Tempests I have subdued, and fought them calm,  
Out-lighten'd lightning in my chivalry,  
Rid (tame as patience) billows that kick'd Heaven,  
Whistled enraged Boreas 'till his gusts  
Were grown so gentle, that he seem'd to sigh,  
Because he could not shew the air my keel;  
And yet I cannot conquer her bright eyes,  
Which, though they blaze, both comfort and invite;  
Neither by force, nor fraud, pass through her ear,  
Whose guard is only blushing innocence,  
To take the least possession of her heart.  
Did I attempt her with a thread-bare name,  
Un-napt with meritorious actions,  
She might with colour disallow my suit:  
But, by the honour of this Christian cross,  
(In blood of infidels so often dyed,  
Which mine own soul and sword hath fixed here,  
And neither favour nor birth's, privilege)  
Oriana shall confess, (although she be  
Valetta's sister, our grand-master here)  
The wages of scorn'd love is baneful hate,  
And, if I rule not her, I'll rule her fate.—

*Enter ROCCA.*

Rocca, my trusty servant, welcome!

*Rocca.* Sir,

I wish my news deserved it! Hapless I,  
That, being loved and trusted, fail to bring  
The loving answer that you do expect.

*Mountf.* Why speak'st thou from me? thy  
pleased eyes send forth  
Beams brighter than the star that ushers day;  
Thy smiles restore sick expectation.

*Rocca.* I bring you, sir, her smiles, not mine.

*Mountf.* Her smiles?

Why, they are presents for kings' eldest sons:  
Great Solyman, that wearies his hot eyes  
But to peruse his deck'd seraglio,  
When from the number of his concubines  
He chuseth one for that night, in his pride  
Of them, wives, wealth, is not so rich as I  
In this one smile, from Oriana sent.

*Rocca.* Sir, fare you well!

*Mountf.* Oh, Rocca! thou art wise,  
And wouldst not have the torrent of my joy  
Ruin me headlong! Aptly thou conceiv'st,  
If one reviving smile can raise me thus,  
What trances will the sweet words which thou  
Cast me into. I felt, my dearest friend, [bring'st  
(No more my servant) when I employ'd thee,  
That knew'st to love and speak as lovers should.  
And carry faithfully thy master's sighs,  
That it must work some heat in her cold heart;  
And all my labours now come fraughted home  
With ten-fold prize.

*Rocca.* Will you yet hear me?

*Mountf.* Yes:

But take heed, gentle Rocca, that thou dost  
Tenderly by degrees assault mine ears

With her consent, now to embrace my love ;  
For thou well know'st I have been so plunged, so  
torn

With her resolved rejection, and neglect,  
That to report her soft acceptance now  
Will stupify sense in me, if not kill.—  
Why shew'st thou this distemper ?

*Rocca.* Draw your sword,  
And when I with my breath have blasted you,  
Kill me with it :  
I bring you smiles of pity, not affection,  
For such she sent.

*Mountf.* Oh ! can she pity me ?  
Of all the paths lead to a woman's love,  
Pity's the straightest.

*Rocca.* Waken, sir, and know  
That her contempt (if you can name it so)  
Continues still ; she bids you throw your pearl  
Into strong streams, and hope to turn them so,  
Ere her to foul dishonour ; write your plaints  
In rocks of coral grown above the sea ;  
Them hope to soften to compassion,  
Or change their modest blush to love-sick pale,  
Ere work her to your impious requests.  
All your loose thoughts she chides you home again,  
But with such calm behaviour and mild looks,  
She gentlier denies than others grant,  
For just as others love, so doth she hate.  
She says, that by your order you are bound  
From marrying ever, and much marvels then  
You would thus violate her, and your own faith,  
That being the virgin you should now protect,  
Hilberto, she professes, she has conceal'd  
Your lustful batteries ; but the next, she vows,  
(In open hall, before the honour'd cross,  
And her great brother) she will quite disclose,  
Calling for justice, to your utter shame.

*Mountf.* Hence ! find the Blackamoor that waits  
upon her,  
Bring her unto me ; she doth love me yet,  
And I must her now, at least seem to do. —  
Cupid, thy brands that glow thus in my veins,  
I will with blood extinguish !—Art not gone ?

[Exit Rocca.]

Shall my desires, like beggars, wait at door,  
Whilst any other revel in her breast ?  
Sweat on, my spirits ! Know, thou trick'd-up toy,  
My love's a violent flood, where thou art fall'n ;  
Playing with which tide thou hadst been gently  
toss'd,  
But crossing it, thou art o'erwhelm'd and lost.

Enter ASTORIUS and CASTRIOT.

*Cast.* Monsieur, good day !

*Asto.* Good morrow, valiant knight !  
What are you for this great solemnity  
This morn intended ?

*Mountf.* What solemnity ?

*Asto.* The investing of the martial Spaniard,  
Peter Gomera, with our Christian badge.

*Cast.* And young Miranda, the Italian ;  
Both which, with wond'rous prowess and great  
luck,

Have dared and done for Malta such high feats,  
That not one fort in it but rings their names  
As loud as any man's.

*Mountf.* As any man's ?  
Why, we have fought for Malta.

*Asto.* Yes, Mountferrat,  
No bold knight ever past you ; but we wear

The dignity of Christians on our breasts,  
And have a long time triumph'd for our conquests :  
These conquer'd a long time, not triumph'd yet.

*Mountf.* Astorius, you're a most indulgent  
knight,

Detracting from yourself, to add to others.  
You know this title is the period  
To all our labours, the extremity  
Of that tall pyramid, where honour hangs ;  
Which we with sweat and agony have reach'd,  
And should not then so easily impart  
So bright a wreath to every cheap desert.

*Cast.* [Apart to ASTORIUS.] How is this French-  
man changed, Astorius !

Some sullen discontent possesses him,  
That makes him envy what he heretofore  
Did most ingeniously but emulate.

*Mountf.* Oh, furious desire, how like a whirl-  
wind

Thou hurriest me beyond mine honour's point !  
Out of my heart, base lust ! or heart, I vow  
Those flames that heat me thus, I'll burn thee in.

*Asto.* Do you observe him ?

*Mountf.* What news of the Dane ?

That valiant Captain Norandine ?

*Cast.* He fights still,  
In view o' th' town ; he plays the devil with 'em,  
And they, the Turks with him.

*Mountf.* They are well met then ;  
'Twere sin to sever 'em. Pish—woman—memory,  
'Would one of ye would leave me !

*Asto.* Six fresh galleys

I in St. Angelo from the promontory  
This morn descried, making a girdle for him ;  
But our great-master doth intend relief  
This present meeting. Will you walk along ?

*Mountf.* Hum—I have read, ladies enjoy'd have  
been

The gulphs of worthiest men, buried their names,  
Their former valour, bounty, beauty, virtue,  
And sent them stinking to untimely graves.  
I that cannot enjoy, by her disdain,  
Am like to prove as wretched. Woman then,  
Checking, or granting, is the grave of men.

*Asto.* He's saying of his prayers, sure.

*Cast.* Will you go, sir ?

*Mountf.* I cry you mercy ! I am so transported  
(Your pardon, noble brothers) with a business  
That doth concern all Malta, that I am  
(Anon you'll hear it) almost blind and deaf—  
Lust neither sees nor hears aught but itself.—

[Aside.]  
But I will follow instantly. [A cross is dropt.]  
Your cross.

*Asto.* Not mine.

*Cast.* Nor mine ; 'tis yours.

*Asto.* *Cast.* Good morrow, brother. [Exit.]

*Mountf.* White innocent sign, thou dost abhor  
to dwell

So near the dim thoughts of this troubled breast,  
And grace these graceless projects of my heart !  
Yet I must wear thee, to protect my crimes,  
If not for conscience, for hypocrisy ;  
Some churchmen so wear cassocks.

Enter ZANTHIA, alias ABDELLA.

Oh, my Zanthia,  
My pearl, that scorns a stain ! I much repent  
All my neglects ; let me, Ixion-like,  
Embrace my black cloud, since my Juno is

So wrathful, and averse : Thou art more soft  
And full of dalliance than the fairest flesh,  
And far more loving.

*Zant.* Ay, you say so, now ;

But, like a property, when I have served  
Your turns, you'll cast me off, or hang me up  
For a sign somewhere.

*Mountf.* May my life then forsake me,  
Or, from my expected bliss, be cast to hell !

*Zant.* My tongue, sir, cannot lip to meet you so,  
Nor my black cheek put on a feigned blush,  
To make me seem more modest than I am.  
This ground-work will not bear adulterate red,  
Nor artificial white, to cosen love.

These dark locks are not purchased, nor these teeth,  
For every night they are my bed-fellows ;  
No bath, no blanching water, smoothing oils,  
Doth mend me up ; and yet, Mountferrat, know,  
I am as full of pleasure in the touch  
As e'er a white-faced puppet of 'em all,  
Juicy, and firm ; unfledge them of their tires,  
Their wires, their partlets, pins, and perriwigs,  
And they appear like bald-cootes, in the nest :  
I can as blithely work in my love's bed,  
And deck thy fair neck with these jetty chains,  
Sing thee asleep, being wearied ; and refresh'd,  
With the same organ, steal sleep off again.

*Mountf.* Oh, my black swan, silkier than cyg-  
net's plush,

Sweeter than is the sweet of pomander,  
Breath'd like curled Zephyrus, cooling lemon-trees,  
Straight as young pines, or cedars in the grove !  
Quickly descend, lovers' best canopy,  
Still Night, for Zanthia doth enamour me  
Beyond all continence ! Perpetrate, dear wench,  
What thou hast promised, and I vow, by Heaven,  
Malta I'll leave : in it my honours here ;  
And in some other country, Zanthia make  
My wife, and my best fortune.

*Zant.* From this hope,

Here is an answer to that letter, which  
I lately show'd you, sent from Tripoly,  
By the great basha, which importunes her  
Love unto him, and treachery to the island ;  
Which will she undertake, by Mahomet  
The Turk there vows, on his blest Alcoran,  
Marriage unto her : This the Master knows,  
But is resolved of her integrity,  
As well he may, sweet lady ; yet, for love,  
For love of thee, Mountferrat, (oh ! what chains  
Of duty, or duty, can hold love ?)

I have this answer framed, so like her hand  
As if it had been moulded off, returning  
The basha's letter safe into her pocket.

What you will do with it, yourself best knows.  
Farewell ! keep my true heart, keep true your vows.

*Mountf.* 'Till I be dust, my Zanthia, be con-  
firm'd,

Sparrows, and doves, sit coupling 'twixt thy lips—  
[Exit ZANTHIA.]

It is not love, but strong libidinous will,  
That triumphs o'er me ; and to satiate that,  
What difference 'twixt this Moor, and her fair  
dame ?

Night makes their hues alike, their use is so ;  
Whose hand's so subtle he can colours name,  
If he do wink, and touch 'em ? Lust, being blind,  
Never in women did distinction find. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Room in the Grand-master's  
Palace.

Enter two Gentlewomen.

1 *Gent.* But i'faith dost thou think my lady was  
never in love ?

2 *Gent.* I rather think she was ever in love ; in  
perfect charity, I mean, with all the world.

1 *Gent.* A most Christian answer, I promise you.  
But I mean in love with a man.

2 *Gent.* With a man ? what else ? wouldst have  
her in love with a beast ?

1 *Gent.* You are somewhat quick ; but if she  
were, it were no precedent : did you never read of  
Europa the fair, that leapt a bull, that leapt the  
sea, that swam to land, and then leapt her ?

2 *Gent.* Oh, heavens ! a bull ?

1 *Gent.* Yes, a white bull.

2 *Gent.* Lord ! how could she sit him ? Where  
did she hold ?

1 *Gent.* Why, by the horn ; since which time,  
no woman almost is contented till she have a horn  
of her own to hold by.

2 *Gent.* Thou art very knavish.

1 *Gent.* And thou very foolish.—But, sirrah,  
why dost not thou marry ?

2 *Gent.* Because I would be no man's looking-  
glass.

1 *Gent.* As how ?

2 *Gent.* As thus ; there is no wife (if she be good  
and true, will honour and obey) but must reflect  
the true countenance of her husband upon him : if  
he look sad upon her, she must not look merrily  
upon him : if he look merrily, she must not sor-  
rowfully ; else she is a false glass, and fit for nothing  
but breaking : his anger must be her discontent,  
his pleasure her delight : if he weep, she must cry ;  
if he laugh, she must shew her teeth ; if he be  
sick, she must not be in health ; if he eat caudles,  
she must eat pottage ; she must have no proper  
passion of her own !—And is not this a tyranny ?

1 *Gent.* Yes, i' faith ! marriage may well be  
called a yoke ! wives then are but like superficial  
lines in geometry, that have no proper motion of  
their own, but as their bodies (their husbands)  
move. Yet I know some wives, that are never  
freely merry, nor truly pleased, but when they are  
farthest off their husbands.

2 *Gent.* That's because the moon governs 'em ;  
which hath most light, and shines brightest, the  
more remote it is from the sun ; and contrary, is  
more sullen, dim, and shews least splendour, when  
it is nearest.

1 *Gent.* But if I were to marry, I would marry  
a fair effeminate fool.

2 *Gent.* Why ?

1 *Gent.* Because I would lead the blind whither  
I list.

2 *Gent.* And I the wisest man I could get for  
money, because I had rather follow the clear-  
sighted :—Bless me from a husband that sails by  
his wife's compass !

1 *Gent.* Why ?

2 *Gent.* Why, 'tis ten to one but she breaks his  
head in her youth ; and, when she is old, she'll  
never leave till she has broke his back too !

1 *Gent.* But what scurvy knights have we here  
in Malta, that when they are dubb'd take their  
oath of allegiance to live poor, and chastely, ever  
after ?

2 *Gent.* 'Faith, many knights in other nations (I have heard) are as poor as ours; marry, where one of 'em has taken the oath of chastity, we want a new Columbus to find out.

*Enter ZANTHIA.*

*Zant.* Hist, wenches! my lady calls; she's entering the terrace to see the show.

1 *Gent.* Oh, black-pudding!

2 *Gent.* My little labour in vain! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Hall in the same, with a Gallery.*

*Enter above, ORIANA, ZANTHIA, and two Gentlewomen; beneath, VALETTA taking the Chair of State; MOUNTFERRAT, ASTORIUS, CASTRIOT, GOMERA, MIRANDA, Attendants of Knights, &c.*

*Mountf.* Are you there, lady?

*Ori.* Thou art a naughty man, Heaven mend thee!

*Fal.* Our great meeting, princely brothers, Ye holy soldiers of the Christian-Cross, Is to relieve our captain Norandine, Now fighting for Valetta with the Turk; A valiant gentleman, a noble Dane As e'er the country bred, endanger'd now By fresh supply of head-bound infidels. Much means, much blood this warlike Dane hath spent

To advance our flag above their horned moons, And oft hath brought in profitable conquest: We must not see him perish in our view. How far off fight they?

*Mir.* Sir, within a league.

*Fal.* 'Tis well. Our next occasion of conventing Are these two gentlemen, standing in your sight; (Ye noble props of Malta!) royally Descended are they both, valiant as War, Miranda, and Gomera: Full ten years They have served this island, perfected exploits Matchless, and infinite; they are honest, wise, Not empty of one ornament of man. Most eminent agents were they in that slaughter, That great marvellous slaughter of the Turks, Before St. Elme, where five-and-twenty thousand Fell, for five thousand of our Christians.

These ripe considerations moving us, Having had your allowance on their worths, How we would call 'em to our brotherhood! If any therefore can their manners tax, Their faith, their chastity, any part of life, Let 'em speak now.

*Asto.* None does.

*All.* None can, Great-master.

*Fal.* The dignity then dignify, by them,

As their reward. Tender Miranda first (Because he is to succour Norandine)

Our sacred robe of knighthood, our white cross, (The holy cognizance of him we serve.) The sword, the spurs.

*Mir.* Grave, and most honour'd Master, With humble duty, and my soul's best thanks To you, and all this famous conventicle, Let me with modesty refuse acceptance Of this high order! I, alas! am yet Unworthy, and incapable of such honour; That merit, which with favour you enlarge, Is far, far short of this proposed reward. Who takes upon him such a charge as this,

Must come with pure thoughts, and a gather'd That time nor all occasions ever may (mind, After disperse, or stain. Did this title here Of knighthood, ask no other ornaments Than other countries' glittering show, poor pride, A jingling spur, a feather, a white band, A frizzled hair, powder'd, perfumes, and lust, Drinking sweet wines, surfeits, and ignorance, Rashly and easily should I venture on't; But this requires another kind of man.

*Mountf.* A staid and mature judgment! speak on, sir.

*Mir.* May it please you then to allow me some To rectify myself for that high seat, [small time Or give my reasons to the contrary.

I' th' mean space, to dismiss me to the aid Of Norandine: My ships ride in the bay Ready to disembogue, tackled and mann'd Even to my wishes.

*Mountf.* His request Is fair and honest.

*Fal.* At your pleasure go.

*Mir.* I humbly take my leave of all: Of you, My noble friend Mountferrat! Gracious mistress— Oh, that auspicious smile doth arm your soldier! Who fights for those eyes, and this sacred cross, Can neither meet sad accident nor loss!

*Ori.* The mighty master of that livery, Conduct thee safely to these eyes again! [*Exit MIRANDA.*]

*Mountf.* Blows the wind that way?

*Fal.* Equally beloved, Equally meriting, Gomera, you Without excuse receive that dignity, Which our provincial chapter hath decreed you.

*Gom.* Great-master of Jerusalem's Hospital, From whence to Rhodes this best fraternity Was driven, but now among the Maltese stands, Long may it flourish, whilst Gomera serves it, But dares not enter further!

*All.* This is strange!

*Fal.* What do you object?

*Gom.* Nothing against it, but myself, fair knights; I may not wear this robe.

*Fal.* Express your reasons:

Doth any hid sin gore your conscience?

*Asto.* Are you unsteadfast in religion?

*Cast.* Or do you intend to forsake Malta now, And visit your own country, fruitful Spain?

*Gom.* Never, good sir.

*Fal.* Then explicate your thoughts.

*Gom.* This then: I should be perjur'd to receive Once in Malta, your next city here, [it. When I was younger, read I the decrees Touching this point, being ambitious then To approach it once. None but a gentleman Can be admitted—

*Fal.* That's no obstacle

In you.

*Gom.* I should be sorry that were it.— No married man—

*Mountf.* You never felt that yoke.

*Gom.* None that hath been contracted—

*Cast.* Were you ever?

*Gom.* Nor married, nor contracted.—None that Hath vow'd his love to any womankind, [ever Or finds that secret fire within his thoughts: Here I am cast; this article my heart Objects against the title of my fame; I am in love.—Laugh not! though Time hath set

Some wrinkles in this face, and these curl'd locks  
Will shortly dye into another hue,  
Yet, yet I am in love: (I'faith, you smile!)  
What age, what sex, or what profession,  
Divine or human; from the man that cries  
For alms in the highway, to him that sings  
At the high altar, and doth sacrifice,  
Can truly say he knows not what is love?

*Val.* 'Tis honestly professed. With whom,  
Name the lady, that with all advantage [Gomera?  
We may advance your suit.

*Gom.* But will you, sir?

*Val.* Now by our holy rock! were it our sister,  
Spaniard, I hold thee worthy; freely name her.

*Gom.* Be master of your word: It is she, sir,  
The matchless Oriana.

*Val.* Come down, lady.

You have made her blush: Let her consent, I will  
Make good my oath.

*Mountf.* [*Aside.*] Is't so?—Stay! I do love  
So tenderly, Gomera, your bright fame,  
As not to suffer your perdition.

*Gom.* What means Mountferrat?

*Mountf.* This whole Auberge hath—  
(A guard upon this lady! Wonder not!)

*Enter Guard.*

Ta'en public notice of the basha's love  
Of Tripoly unto her, and consented  
She should return this answer, (as he writ  
For her conversion, and betraying Malta)  
She should advise him betray Tripoly,  
And, turning Christian, he should marry her.

[*Showing a letter.*]

*All.* All this was so.

*Mountf.* How weakly does this court then  
Send vessels forth to sea, to guard the land,  
Taking such special care to save one bark,  
Or strive to add famed men unto our cloak,  
When they lurk in our bosoms would subvert  
This state and us, presuming on their blood,  
And partial indulgence to their sex?

*Val.* Who can this be?

*Mountf.* Your sister, great Valetta!  
Which thus I prove: Demand the Basha's letter.

*Ori.* 'Tis here; nor from this pocket hath been  
Nor answer'd, nor perused, by— [moved,

*Mountf.* Do not swear;

Cast not away your fair soul; to your treason  
Add not foul perjury!—Is this your hand?

*Ori.* 'Tis very like it.

*Mountf.* May it please the Master,  
Confer these letters, and then read her answer,  
Which I have intercepted. Pardon me,  
Reverend Valetta, that am made the means  
To punish this most beauteous treachery,  
Even in your sister, since in it I save  
Malta from ruin: I am bolder in't,  
Because it is so palpable, and withal  
Know our Great-master to this country firm  
As was the Roman Marcus, who spared not  
As dear a sister in the public cause.

*Val.* I am amazed! attend me.

[*Reads.*] Let your forces by the next even be ready; my  
brother feasts then; put in at St. Michael's; the ascent at  
that port is easiest; the keys of the castle you shall  
receive at my hands. That possessed, you are lord of  
Malta, and may soon destroy all by fire; than which I  
am hotter, till I embrace you. Farewell! Your wife,  
Oriana.

From this time let me never read again!

*Gentlero.* 'Tis certain, her hand.

*Val.* This letter too

So close kept by herself, could not be answer'd  
To every period thus, but by herself.

*Ori.* Sir, hear me!

*Val.* Peace! thou fair sweet bank of flowers,  
Under whose beauty scorpions lie, and kill!  
Wert thou akin to me in some new name  
Dearer than sister, mother, or all blood,  
I would not hear thee speak.—Bear her to prison!  
So gross is this, it needs no formal course.  
Prepare thyself; to-morrow thou shalt die.

*Ori.* I die a martyr then, and a poor maid,  
Almost, i'faith, as innocent as born!—  
Thou know'st thou art wicked, Frenchman; Hea-  
ven forgive thee! [*Exit*]

*All.* This scene is strangely turned.

*Val.* Yet can nature be [*Aside.*

So dead in me? I would my charge were off!

Mountferrat should perceive my sister had  
A brother, would not live to see her die  
Unfought for, since the statutes of our state  
Allow, in case of accusations,

A champion to defend a lady's truth.—

Peter Gomera, thou hast lost thy wife:

Death pleads a precontract.

*Gom.* I have lost my tongue,  
My sense, my heart, and every faculty!—

Mountferrat, go not up! With reverence

To our Great-master, and this consistory

(I have consider'd it, it cannot be)

Thou art a villain and a forger,

A blood-sucker of innocence, an hypocrite,

A most unworthy wearer of our cross;

To make which good, take, if thou darest, that  
gage, [*Throws down his gage.*]

And arm'd at all points like a gentleman,

Meet me to-morrow morning, where the master

And this fraternity shall design; where I

Will cram this slander back into thy throat,

And with my sword's point thrust it to thy heart,

The very nest where lust and slander breed.

(Pardon my passion!) I will tear those spurs

Off from thy heels, and stick 'em in thy front,

As a mark'd villain!

*Mountf.* [*Apart.*] This I look'd not for.—

Ten times more villain, I return my gage,

And crave the law of arms!

*Gom.* 'Tis that I crave!

*All.* It cannot be denied.

*Gom.* Do not I know,

With thousand gifts and importunacies,

Thou often hast solicited this lady?

(Contrary to thy oath of chastity!)

Who ne'er disclosing this thy hot-rein'd lust,

Yet tender to prevent a public scandal,

That Christendom might justly have imposed

Upon this holy institution,

Thou now hast drawn this practice 'gainst her life,

To quit her charity.

*Mountf.* Spaniard, thou liest!

*Asto.* No more, Gomera! thou art granted com-

And you, Mountferrat, must prepare against [*bat.*

To-morrow morning, in the valley here,

Adjoining to St. George's Port. A lady,

In case of life, 'gainst whom one witness comes,

May have her champion.

*Val.* And who hath most right,

With, or against our sister, speed in fight!

[*Flourish. Exeunt all but MOUNTFERRAT.*]

*Enter Rocca.*

*Mountf. Rocca, the first news of Miranda's service*

Let me have notice of.

*Rocca. You shall. The Moor Waits you without.*

*Mountf. Admit her.—Ha, ha, ha! Oh, how my fancies run at tilt! Gomera Loves Oriana; she, as I should guess, Affects Miranda; these are two dear friends, As firm, and full of fire, as steel and flint.— To make 'em so now, one against the other—*

*Enter ZANTHIA.*

Stay; let me like it better.—Zanthia, First tell me this; did Don Gomera use To give his visits to your mistress?

*Zant. Yes, And Miranda too, but severally.*

*Mountf. Which did she most apply to?*

*Zant. 'Faith, to neither:*

Yet infinitely I have heard her praise them both, And in that manner, that were both one man, I think she was in love with't.

*Mountf. Zanthia,*

Another letter you must frame for me Instantly, in your lady's character, To such a purpose as I'll tell thee straight. Go in, and stay me! Go, my tinder-box!

Cross lines I'll cross. *[Exit ZANTHIA.]*

So, so! my after-game I must play better: Woman, I will spread My vengeance over Malta, for thy sake! Spaniard, Italian, like my steel and stone, I'll knock ye thus together, wear ye out To light my dark deeds, whilst I seem precise, And wink, to save the sparkles from mine eyes.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The Harbour. A Sea-fight within, Alarm.*

*Enter NORANDINE wounded, MIRANDA, Soldiers, Gentlemen, and Sailors.*

*Mir. How is it, sir?*

*Nor. Pray set me down! I cool, And my wounds smart.*

*Mir. I hope yet,*

Though there be many, there's none dangerous.

*Nor. I know not, nor I care not much; I got 'em*

Like a too-forward fool; but I hope the surgeons Will take an order I shall not leave 'em so.

I make the rogues more work than all the island, And yet they give me the hardest words for my money.

*Mir. I am glad ye are so sprightly! Ye fought bravely,*

*(Go call the surgeons, soldiers!)* *[Exeunt Soldiers.]*

wondrous nobly; Upon my life, I have not seen such valour, Maintain'd so long, and to so large a ruin, The odds so strong against ye.

*Nor. I thank ye,*

And thank ye for your help, your timely succour! By th' mass, it came i' th' nick, sir, and well handled,

Stoutly, and strongly handled; we had duck'd else;

My Turk had turk'd me else: But he has well paid for't.

Why, what a sign for an almanack he has made me!

*Enter ASTORIUS.*

*Asto. I am glad to find you here, sir, of necessity I must have come aboard else. And, brave captain, We all joy much in your fair victory, And all the island speaks your valour nobly.*

Have you brought the Turk in that you took?

*Mir. He rides there.*

*Nor. If he were out again, the devil should bring him:*

He has truly circumcised me.

*Asto. I have a business* *[To MIRANDA.]*

Which much concerns you, presently concerns you;

But not this place nor people: Pray ye draw off, For 'tis of that weight to you— *[sir!]*

*Mir. I'll wait on you.—*

I must crave leave awhile; my care dwells with And I must wait myself— *[you,*

*Nor. Your servant, sir.*

*Mir. Believe I shall, and what my love can Keep your stout heart still—* *[minister—*

*Nor. That's my best physician!*

*Mir. And I shall keep your fame fair.*

*Nor. You are too noble.*

*[Exeunt MIRANDA and ASTORIUS.]*

A brave young fellow, of a matchless spirit! He brought me off like thunder, charged and boarded,

As if he had been shot to save mine honour: And when my fainting men, tired with their labour And lack of blood, gave to the Turk assurance The day was his; when I was cut in shreds thus, And not a corn of powder left to bless us; Then flew his sword in, then his cannon roar'd, And let fly blood and death, in storms amongst 'em. Then might I hear their sleepy prophet howl too; And all their silver crescents then I saw Like falling meteors spent, and set for ever Under the cross of Malta: Death so wanton I never look'd upon, so full of revel.—

*Enter Surgeon and Soldiers.*

I will not be dress'd yet.—Methought that fellow Was fit for no conversation, nor no Christian, That had not half his brains knock'd out, no soldier.

Oh, valiant young man, how I love thy virtue!

*I Sold. Pray you, sir, be dress'd! alas! you bleed apace yet.*

*Nor. 'Tis but the sweat of honour. Alas! thou milksop,*

Thou man of marchpane, canst thou fear to see A few light hurts, that blush they are no bigger? A few small scratches? Get ye a caudle, sirrah, *(Your finger aches)* and let the old wives watch Bring in the booty, and the prisoners: *[thee!]* By Heaven, I'll see 'em, and wipe 'em first, Before I have a drop of blood wiped from me! go. *Surg. You'll faint, sir.* *[Exeunt Soldiers.]*

*Nor.* No, you lie, sir, like an ass, sir!  
I have no such pig's heart in my belly.

*Surg.* By my life, captain,  
These hurts are not to be jested with.

*Nor.* If thou hadst 'em;  
They are my companions, fool, my family:  
I cannot eat nor sleep without their company.  
Dost take me for Saint Davy, that fell dead  
With seeing of his nose bleed?

*Enter Soldiers with booty.*

*Surg.* Here they come, sir:  
But 'would you would be dress'd!

*Nor.* Pox, dress thyself first!  
Thou faint'st at a great deal faster. What's all this?  
1 *Sold.* The money and the merchandize ye took,  
sir.

*Nor.* A goodly purchase! Is't for this we venture  
Our liberties and lives? What can all this do?  
Get me some dozen surfeits, some seven fresh  
whores,

And twenty pot-allies, and then I am virtuous.  
Lay the knights' part by, and that to pay the  
soldier:

This is mine own; I think I have deserved it.—  
Come; now look to me, and grope me like a cham-  
bermaid;

I'll neither start nor squeak.—What's that i' th'  
truss there?

2 *Sold.* 'Tis cloth of tissue, sir; and this is  
scarlet.

*Nor.* I shall look redder shortly then, I fear me,  
And as a captain ought, a great deal prouder.  
Can ye cure me of that crack, surgeon?

*Surg.* Yes, when your suit's at pawn, sir.

*Nor.* There's for your plaister.

A very learned surgeon!—What's in that pack  
1 *Sold.* 'Tis English cloth. [there?]

*Nor.* That's a good wear indeed,  
Both strong and rich; but it has a virtue,  
A twang of the own country, that spoils all;  
A man shall ne'er be sober in't. Where are the  
gentlemen

That ventured with me both their lives and for-  
tunes?

Come forward, my fair spirits! Norandine  
Forgets his worth, when he forgets your valours.  
You have lost an eye; I saw you face all hazards;  
You have one left yet, to chuse your mistress.  
You have your leg broke with a shot; yet, sitting,  
I saw you make the place good with your pike still.  
And your hand's gone; a good heart wants no  
instruments.

Share that amongst ye: There's an eye; an arm;  
And that will bear you up, when your legs cannot.—  
Oh, where's the honest sailor? that poor fellow,  
Indeed that bold brave fellow, that with his musquet  
Taught them new ways how to put their caps off,  
That stood the fire of all the fight, twice blown,  
And twice I gave him drown'd?—Welcome ashore,  
knave!

Give me thy hand, if they be not both lost.  
Faith, thou art welcome! my tough knave, wel-  
come!

Thou wilt not shrink i' th' washing.  
Hold, there's a piece of scarlet; get thee hand-  
And this to buy thee buttons. [some;

*Sailor.* Thank you, captain.  
Command my life at all hours.

*Nor.* Thou durst give it.—  
You have deserved too?

3 *Sold.* We have seen the fight, sir.

*Nor.* Yes; coil'd up in a cable, like salt eels,  
Or buried low i' th' ballast: Do you call that  
fighting?

Where be your wounds? your knocks? your want  
of limbs, rogues?

Art not thou he that ask'd the master-gunner  
Where thou might'st lie safest? and he strait  
answer'd,

Put thy head in that hole, new bored with a canon,  
For it was an hundred to one, another shot would  
not hit there?

Your wages you shall have; but for rewards  
Take your own ways, and get ye to the taverns;  
There, when ye are hot with wine, 'mongst your  
admirers,

Take ships, and towns, and castles at your plea-  
sures,

And make the Great Turk shake at your valours.—  
Bring in the prisoners.

*Enter LUCINDA and other Prisoners.*

Now, my brave Mussulmans,  
You that are lords o' th' sea, and scorn us Chris-  
tians,

Which of your many lives is worth this hurt here?  
Away to prison with 'em, see 'em safe!

You shall find we have gallies too, and slaves too.

1 *Sold.* What shall be done with this woman, sir?

*Nor.* Pox take her! [Surgeons dress him.]  
'Twas she that set me on to fight with these  
rogues!—

That ring-worm, rot it!—What can you do now,  
With all your paintings, and your pouncings, lady,  
To restore my blood again? you, and your Cupid,  
That have made a carbonado of me—Plague take  
you, [To the Surgeon.]

You are too deep, you rogue!—This is thy work,  
woman,

Thou lousy woman!—'Death, you go too deep  
still!—

The seeing of your simpering sweetness, you filly,  
You tit, you tomboy! what can one night's jing-  
ling,

Or two, or ten, "sweetheart," and "oh, my dear  
chicken,"

Scratching my head, or fumbling with my forehead,  
Do me good now? You have powder'd me for one  
year:

I am in souce, I thank you; thank your beauty,  
Your most sweet beauty! Pox upon those goggles!  
We cannot fight like honest men, for honour,  
And quietly kill one another as we ought,  
But in steps one of you; the devil's holiness  
And you must have a dance.—Away with her!  
She stinks to me now.

1 *Sold.* Shall I have her, captain?

2 *Sold.* Or I?

3 *Sold.* I'll marry her—

4 *Sold.* Good captain, I—

3 *Sold.* And make her a good Christian. Lay  
I know she's mine. [hands on her.]

2 *Sold.* I'll give my full share for her!  
Have ye no manners to thrust the woman so?

*Nor.* Share her among ye;  
And may she give ye as many hurts as I have,  
And twice as many aches!

*Luc.* Noble captain,

Be pleas'd to free me from these soldiers' wildness,  
Till I but speak two words. [Kneels.]

*Nor.* Now for your maidenhead!  
You have your book; proceed.

*Luc.* Victorious sir,  
'Tis seldom seen, in men so valiant,  
Minds so devoid of virtue; he that can conquer,  
Should ever know how to preserve his conquest;  
'Tis but a base theft else: Valour's a virtue,  
Crown of men's actions here; yours, as you make  
And can you put so rough a foil as violence, [it.  
As wronging of weak woman, to your triumph?

*Nor.* Let her alone!

*Luc.* I have lost my husband, sir;  
You feel not that; him that I love; you care not:  
When fortune falls on you thus, you may grieve  
My liberty I kneel not for; mine honour [too.  
(If ever virtuous honour touch'd your heart yet)  
Make dear and precious, sir. You had a mother—

*Nor.* The roguish thing speaks finely, neat. Who  
For he must be your guard. [took you?

*Luc.* I wish no better:  
A noble gentleman, and nobly used me.  
They call'd his name Miranda.

*Nor.* You are his then:  
You have lit upon a young man worth your service.  
I free you from all the rest, and from all violence;  
He that doth offer't, by my head, he hangs for't!—  
Go see her safe kept, till the noble gentleman  
Be ready to dispose her.—Thank your tongue,  
You have a good one, and preserve it good still!—  
Soldiers, come wait on me: I'll see ye paid all. [Exeunt.

## SCENE II.—A Street.

Enter MIRANDA and ASTORIUS.

*Asto.* I knew you loved her, virtuously you loved  
her,

Which made me make that haste: I knew you  
As all fair minds do goodness. [prized her,

*Mir.* Good Astorius,  
I must confess I do much honour her,  
And worthily I hope still.

*Asto.* 'Tis no doubt, sir;  
For on my life she is much wrong'd.

*Mir.* Very likely,  
And I as much torment'd I was absent.

*Asto.* You need not fear; Peter Gomera's noble,  
Of a tried faith and valour.

*Mir.* This I know too:  
But whilst I was not there, and whilst she suffer'd,  
Whilst virtue suffer'd, friend—Oh, how it loads  
me!

Whilst innocence and sweetness sunk together—  
How cold it sits here! If my arm had fought [for]  
her,

My youth, though naked, stood against all treasons,  
My sword here grasp'd, love on the edge, and  
honour,

And but a signal from her eye to seal it;  
If then she had been lost—I brag too late,  
And too much I decline the noble Peter.  
Yet some poor service I would do her sweetness:  
Alas, she needs it, my Astorius,  
The gentle lady needs it.

*Asto.* Noble spirit!

*Mir.* And what I can—Pr'ythee, bear with this  
weakness!

Often I do not use these women's weapons,  
But where true pity is—I am much troubled,  
And something have to do, I cannot form yet!

*Asto.* I'll take my leave, sir; I shall but disturb  
you.

*Mir.* An't please you, for a while; and pray to  
fortune  
To smile upon this lady.

*Asto.* All my help, sir. [Exit.]

*Mir.* Gomera's old and stiff, and he may lose  
her,

The winter of his years and wounds upon him;  
And yet he has done bravely hitherto:  
Mountferrat's fury in his heat of summer,  
The whistling of his sword like angry storms,  
Renting up life by th' roots: I have seen him scale  
As if a falcon had run up a train,  
Clashing his warlike pinions, his steel'd cuirass,  
And at his pitch innew the town below him.  
I must do something!

Enter COLONNA.

*Col.* Noble sir, for Heaven's sake,  
Take pity of a poor afflicted Christian,  
Redeem'd from one affliction to another!

*Mir.* Boldly you ask that; we are bound to  
From what affliction, sir? [give it.

*Col.* From cold and hunger,  
From nakedness and stripes.

*Mir.* A prisoner?

*Col.* A slave, sir, in the Turkish prize, new  
taken;

That, in the heat of fight, when your brave hand  
Brought the Dane succour, got my irons off,  
And put myself to mercy of the ocean.

*Mir.* And swam to land?

*Col.* I did, sir; Heaven was gracious!

But now a stranger, and my wants upon me,  
(Though willingly I would preserve this life, sir,  
With honesty and truth) I am not look'd on;  
The hand of pity, that should give for Heaven's  
sake,

And charitable hearts, are grown so cold, sir,  
Never rememb'ring what their fortunes may be.

*Mir.* Thou say'st too true. Of what profession  
art thou?

*Col.* I have been better train'd, and can serve  
Where trust is laid upon me. [truly,

*Mir.* A handsome fellow!

Hast thou e'er bore arms?

*Col.* I have trod full many a march, sir,  
And some hurts have to shew; before me too, sir.

*Mir.* Pity this thing should starve, or, forced  
for want,

Come to a worse end.—I know not what thou  
mayst be,

But if thou think'st it fit to be a servant,  
I'll be a master, and a good one to thee,

If you deserve, sir.

*Col.* Else I ask no favour.

*Mir.* Then, sir, to try your trust, because I like  
you,

Go to the Dane; of him receive a woman,  
A Turkish prisoner, for me receive her;  
I hear she is my prize: Look fairly to her,  
For I would have her know, though now my  
prisoner,

The Christians need no schoolmasters for honour.  
Take this to buy thee clothes; this ring, to help  
thee

Into the fellowship of my house ; you are a stranger,  
And my servants will not know you else ; there keep her,

And with all modesty preserve your service !

*Col.* A foul example find me else ! Heaven Of Captain Norandine ? [thank ye !]

*Mir.* The same.

*Col.* 'Tis done, sir :

And may Heaven's goodness ever dwell about you !

*Mir.* Wait there till I come home.

*Col.* I shall not fail, sir. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III. — *A Room in the House of MOUNTFERRAT.*

*Enter MOUNTFERRAT and ZANTHA.*

*Zan.* 'Tis strange it should be so, that your high mettle

Should check thus poorly, dully, most unmanly—

*Mountf.* Let me alone.

*Zan.* Thus leadenly—

*Mountf.* Fox take you !

*Zan.* At every childish fear, at every shadow !  
Are you Mountferrat, that have done such deeds ?  
Wrought through such bloody fields men shake to speak of ?

Can you go back ? is there a safety left yet,  
But fore-right ? is not ruin round about you ?  
Have you not still these arms, that sword, that heart whole ?

Is't not a man you fight with, and an old man,  
A man half-kill'd already ? am not I here ?  
As lovely in my black to entertain thee,  
As high and full of heat to meet thy pleasures—

*Mountf.* I'll be alone.

*Zan.* You shall : Farewell, sir !

And do it bravely ! never think of conscience ;  
There is none to a man resolved. Be happy. [Exit.]

*Enter MIRANDA, and stands apart.*

*Mountf.* No, most unhappy wretch, as thou hast made me,  
More devil than thyself, I am.

*Mir.* Alone,

And troubled too, I take it. How he starts !  
All is not handsome in thy heart, Mountferrat.—  
God speed you, sir ! I have been seeking of you :  
They say you are to fight to-day.

*Mountf.* What then ?

*Mir.* Nay, nothing, but good fortune to your sword, sir !

You have a cause requires it ; the island's safety,  
The order's, and your honour's.

*Mountf.* And do you make a question  
I will not fight it nobly ?

*Mir.* You dare fight ;

You have ; and with as great a confidence as justice,

I have seen you strike as home, and hit as deadly.

*Mountf.* Why are these questions then ?

*Mir.* I'll tell you quickly.

You have a lady in your cause, a fair one,  
A gentler never trod on ground, a nobler—

*Mountf.* Do you come on so fast ? I have it for you. [Aside.]

*Mir.* The sun ne'er saw a sweeter.

*Mountf.* These I grant you ;  
Nor dare I against beauty heave my hand up,

It were unmanly, sir, too much unmanly :  
But when these excellencies turn to ruin,  
To ruin of themselves, and those protect 'em ;  
When virtue's lost, lust and dishonour enter'd ;  
Loss of ourselves and souls basely projected—

*Mir.* Do you think 'tis so ?

*Mountf.* Too sure.

*Mir.* And can it be ?

Can it be thought, Mountferrat, so much sweetness,

So great a magazine of all things precious,  
A mind so heavenly made—Pr'ythee observe me.

*Mountf.* I thought so too : Now, by my holy order,

He that had told me, (till experience found it,  
Too bold a proof) this lady had been vicious—  
I wear no dull sword, sir, nor hate I virtue.

*Mir.* Against her brother ? to the man has bred  
Her blood and honour ? [her ?]

*Mountf.* Where ambitious Lust

Desires to be above the rule prescribed her,  
Takes hold, and wins, poor Chastity, cold Duty,  
Like fashions old forgot, she flings behind her,  
And puts on blood and mischief, death and ruin,  
To raise her new-built hopes, new faith to fasten her :  
*Ma foy*, she is as foul as Heaven is beautiful !

*Mir.* Thou liest, thou liest, Mountferrat, thou liest basely ;

Stare not, nor swell not with thy pride ! thou liest ;  
And this shall make it good.

*Mountf.* Out with your heat first !

You shall be fought withal.

*Mir.* By Heaven, that lady,

The virtue of that woman, were all the good deeds  
Of all thy families bound in one faggot,  
From Adam to this hour, but with one sparkle  
Would fire that whisp, and turn it to light ashes.

*Mountf.* Oh, pitiful young man, struck blind  
with beauty !

Shot with a woman's smile ! Poor, poor Miranda !  
Thou hopeful young man once, but now thou lost  
man,

Thou naked man of all that we call noble,  
How art thou cozen'd ! Didst thou know what  
I do,

And how far thy dear honour, (mark me, fool !)  
Which like a father I have kept from blasting,  
Thy tender honour, is abused—But fight first,  
And then, too late, thou shalt know all.

*Mir.* Thou liest still !

*Mountf.* Stay ! now I'll shew thee all, and then  
I'll kill thee :

I love thee so dear, time shall not disgrace thee.  
Read that ! [Gives him a letter.]

*Mir.* It is her hand, it is most certain.  
Good angels keep me ! that I should be her agent  
To betray Malta, and bring her to the basha !  
That on my tender love lay all her project !

Eyes never see again, melt out for sorrow !  
Did the devil do this ?

*Mountf.* No, but his dam did it,  
The virtuous lady that you love so dearly :  
Come, will you fight again ?

*Mir.* No ; pr'ythee kill me,  
For Heaven's sake, and for goodness' sake, dispatch  
me !

For the disgrace sake that I gave thee, kill me ?

*Mountf.* Why, are you guilty ?

*Mir.* I have lived, Mountferrat,  
To see dishonour swallow up all virtue,

And now would die. By Heaven's eternal bright-  
I am as clear as innocence! [Guess,

*Mountf.* I knew it,  
And therefore kept this letter from all knowledge,  
And this sword from anger; you had died else—  
And yet I lie, and basely lie. [Aside.

*Mir.* Oh, Virtue,  
Unspotted Virtue, whither art thou vanish'd?  
What hast thou left us to abuse our frailties,  
In shape of goodness?

*Mountf.* Come, take courage, man!  
I have forgiven and forgot your rashness,  
And hold you fair as light in all your actions;  
And by my troth I grieved your love. Take com-  
There be more women. [fort!

*Mir.* And more mischief in 'em!  
*Mountf.* The justice I shall do, to right these  
villainies,

Shall make you man again: I'll strike it sure, sir.  
Come, look up bravely; put this puling passion  
Out of your mind. One knock for thee, Miranda,  
And for the *boy* the grave Gomera gave thee,  
When she accepted thee her champion,  
And in thy absence, like a valiant gentleman;  
I yet remember it: "He is too young,  
Too *boyish*, and too tender, to adventure!"  
I'll give him one sound rap for that: I love thee;  
Thou art a brave young spark.

*Mir.* *Boy* did he call me?  
Gomera call me *boy*?

*Mountf.* It pleased his gravity,  
To think so of you then: They that do service,  
And honest service, such as thou and I do,  
Are either knaves or boys.

*Mir.* *Boy*, by Gomera?  
How look'd he when he said it? for Gomera  
Was ever wont to be a virtuous gentleman,  
Humane and sweet.

*Mountf.* Yes, when he will, he can be.  
But let it go; I would not breed dissentation;  
'Tis an unfriendly office. And had it been  
To any of a higher strain than you, sir,  
The well-known, well-approved, and loved Miranda,  
I had not thought on't: 'Twas happily his haste  
And zeal to her. [too,

*Mir.* A traitor and a *boy* too?  
Shame take me, if I suffer it!—Puff! farewell love!

*Mountf.* You know my business; I must leave  
My hour grows on apace. [you, sir;

*Mir.* I must not leave you,  
I dare not, nor I will not, till your goodness  
Have granted me one courtesy: You say you  
love me?

*Mountf.* I do, and dearly; ask, and let that  
Nothing concern mine honour— [courtesy

*Mir.* You must do it,  
Or you will never see me more.

*Mountf.* What is it?  
It shall be great that puts you off: Pray speak it.

*Mir.* Pray let me fight to-day, good, dear  
Let me, and bold Gomera— [Mountferrat!

*Mountf.* *Fy*, Miranda!  
Do you weigh my worth so little?

*Mir.* On my knees!  
As ever thou hadst true touch of a sorrow  
Thy friend conceived, as ever honour loved thee—

*Mountf.* Shall I turn recreant now?  
*Mir.* 'Tis not thy cause;

Thou hast no reputation wounded in it;  
Thine's but a general zeal: 'Death! I am tainted;

The dearest twin to life, my credit's murder'd,  
Baffled and *boy'd*.

*Mountf.* I am glad you have swallow'd it.— [Aside.

I must confess I pity you; and 'tis a justice,  
A great one too, you should revenge these injuries;  
I know it, and I know you fit and bold to do it,  
And man as much as man may: But, Miranda—  
Why do you kneel?

*Mir.* By Heaven, I'll grow to the ground here,  
And with my sword dig up my grave, and fall in't,  
Unless thou grant me—Dear Mountferrat! friend!  
Is anything in my power? to my life, sir!  
The honour shall be yours.

*Mountf.* I love you dearly;  
Yet so much I should tender—

*Mir.* I'll preserve all;  
By Heaven, I will, or all the sin fall with me!  
Pray let me.

*Mountf.* You have won; I'll once be coward  
To please you.

*Mir.* I kiss your hands, and thank you.

*Mountf.* Be tender of my credit, and fight  
*Mir.* Blow not the fire that flames. [bravely.

*Mountf.* I'll send mine armour;  
My man shall presently attend you with it,  
(For you must arm immediately; the hour calls)  
I know 'twill fit you right. Be sure, and secret,  
And last be fortunate! farewell!—You are fitted:  
[Aside.

I am glad the load's off me.  
*Mir.* My best Mountferrat! [Exit.

SCENE IV.—A Room in the House of  
NORANDINE.

Enter NORANDINE and Doctor.

*Nor.* Doctor, I'll see the combat, that's the  
truth on't;

If I had ne'er a leg, I would crawl to see it.

*Doctor.* You are most unfit, if I might counsel  
Your wounds so many, and the air— [you,

*Nor.* The halter!  
The air's as good an air, as fine an air—  
Wouldst thou have me live in an oven?

*Doctor.* Beside, the noise, sir;  
Which, to a tender body—

*Nor.* That's it, Doctor,  
My body must be cured withal; if you'll heal me  
quickly,

Boil a drum-head in my broth; I never prosper  
With knuckles o' veal, and birds in sorrel sops,  
Caudles and collises; they wash me away  
Like a horse had eaten grains: If thou wilt cure me,  
A pickled herring, and a pottle of sack, Doctor,  
And half a dozen trumpets!

*Doctor.* You are a strange gentleman—  
*Nor.* As e'er thou knew'st. Wilt thou give me  
another glisten,

That I may sit cleanly there like a French lady,  
When she goes to a masque at court? Where's thy  
hautboy?

*Doctor.* I am glad you are grown so merry.

Enter ASTORUS and CASTRIOT.

*Nor.* Welcome, gentlemen!  
*Asto.* We come to see you, sir; and glad we are  
To see you thus, thus forward to your health, sir.

*Nor.* I thank my Doctor here.

*Doctor.* Nay, thank yourself, sir;  
For, by my troth, I know not now he's cured!  
He ne'er observes any of our prescriptions.  
*Nor.* Give me my money again then, good sweet  
Doctor!

Wilt thou have twenty shillings a-day for vexing  
me?

*Doctor.* That shall not serve you, sir.

*Nor.* Then forty shall, sir,  
And that will make you speak well. Hark, the  
drums! [*Drums afar off: A low march.*]

*Cast.* They begin to beat to th' field. Oh, noble  
Dane,

Never was such a stake, I hope, of innocence,  
Play'd for in Malta, and in blood, before.

*Asto.* It makes us hang our heads all.

*Nor.* A bold villain!

If there be treason in it—Accuse poor ladies?  
And yet they may do mischief too. I'll be with ye:  
If she be innocent I shall find it quickly,  
And something then I'll say—

*Asto.* Come, lean on us, sir.

*Nor.* I thank ye, gentlemen! and, *domine* Doctor,  
Pray bring a little sneezing powder in your pocket,  
For fear I swoon when I see blood.

*Doctor.* You are pleasant. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*An open Field before the City; a  
Scaffold hung with Black in the Back-ground;  
Stairs leading up to it.*

*Enter two Marshals.*

1 *Marsh.* Are the combatants come in?

2 *Marsh.* Yes.

1 *Marsh.* Make the field clear there!

2 *Marsh.* That's done too.

1 *Marsh.* Then to the prisoner; the Grand-  
master's coming.

Let's see that all be ready there.

2 *Marsh.* Too ready.

How ceremonious our very ends are!  
Alas, sweet lady, if she be innocent,  
No doubt but justice will direct her champion.

[*Flourish.*]

Away! I hear 'em come.

1 *Marsh.* Pray Heaven she prosper!

*Enter VALETTA, NORANDINE, ASTORIUS, CASTRIOT, &c.*

*Val.* Give captain Norandine a chair.

*Nor.* I thank your lordship.

*Val.* Sit, sir, and take your ease; your hurts  
require it:

You come to see a woman's cause decided;  
(That's all the knowledge now, or name I have  
for her)

They say a false, a base, and treacherous woman,  
And partly proved too.

*Nor.* 'Pity it should be so;

And, if your lordship durst ask my opinion,  
Sure I should answer No, (so much I honour her)  
And answer it with my life too. But Gomera  
Is a brave gentleman; the other valiant,  
And if he be not good, dogs gnaw his flesh off!  
And one above 'em both will find the truth out;  
He never fails, sir.

*Val.* That's the hope rests with me.

*Nor.* How nature and his honour struggle in  
A sweet, clear, noble gentleman! [*him!*]

*Guard* [*within*]. Make room there!

*Enter ORIANA, Ladies, Executioner, ZASTHIA, and Guard.*

*Val.* Go up, and what you have to say, say  
there.

*Ori.* [*Goes up to the scaffold.*] Thus I ascend;  
nearer, I hope, to Heaven!

Nor do I fear to tread this dark black mansion,  
The image of my grave; each foot we move  
Goes to it still, each hour we leave behind us  
Knolls sadly toward it. My noble brother,  
(For yet mine innocence dares call you so)  
And you the friends to virtue, that come hither,  
The chorus to this tragic scene, behold me,  
Behold me with your justice, not with pity,  
(My cause was ne'er so poor to ask compassion)  
Behold me in this spotless white I wear,  
The emblem of my life, of all my actions;  
So ye shall find my story, though I perish.  
Behold me in my sex; I am no soldier;  
Tender and full of fears our blushing sex is,  
Unharden'd with relentless thoughts; unhatch  
With blood and bloody practice: Alas, we tremble  
But when an angry dream afflicts our fancies,  
Die with a tale well told. Had I been practised,  
And known the way of mischief, travell'd in it,  
And given my blood and honour up to reach it;  
Forgot religion, and the line I sprung on;  
Oh, Heaven! I had been fit then for thy justice,  
And then in black, as dark as hell, I had howl'd  
here.

Last, in your own opinions weigh mine inno-  
cence:

Amongst ye I was planted from an infant,  
(Would then, if Heaven had so been pleased, I  
had perish'd!)

Grew up, and goodly, ready to bear fruit,  
The honourable fruit of marriage:  
And am I blasted in my bud, with treason?  
Boldly and basely of my fair name ravih'd,  
And hither brought to find my rest in ruin?  
But he that knows all, he that rights all wrongs,  
And in his time restores, knows me!—I have  
spoken.

*Val.* If ye be innocent, Heaven will protect ye.  
And so I leave ye to his sword strikes for ye;  
Farewell!

*Ori.* Oh, that went deep! Farewell, dear brother,  
And howsoe'er my cause goes, see my body  
(Upon my knees I ask it) buried chastely;  
For yet, by holy truth, it never trespass'd.

*Asto.* Justice sit on your cause, and Heaven  
fight for ye!

*Nor.* Two of ye, gentlemen, do me but the  
honour

To lead me to her; good my lord, your leave too.

*Val.* You have it, sir.

*Nor.* Give me your fair hands fearless:

As white as this I see your innocence,  
As spotless, and as pure; be not afraid, lady!  
You are but here brought to your nobler fortune,  
To add unto your life immortal story:  
Virtue through hardest things arrives at happi-  
ness.

Shame follow that blunt sword that loses you!  
And he that strikes against you, I shall study  
A curse or two for him. Once more your fair  
hands!

I ne'er brought ill-luck yet; be fearless, happy.

*Ori.* I thank ye, noble captain.

*Nor.* So I leave ye.

*Val.* Call in the knights severally.

*Enter severally, GOMERA, and MIRANDA in the armour of MOUNTFERRAT.*

*Ori.* But two words to my champion ;  
And then to Heaven and him I give my cause up.  
*Val.* Speak quickly, and speak short.

*Ori.* I have not much, sir—  
Noble Gomera, from your own free virtue  
You have undertaken here a poor maid's honour,  
And with the hazard of your life ; and happily  
You may suspect the cause, though in your true  
worth

You will not shew it ; therefore take this testimony,  
(And, as I hope for happiness, a true one !)  
And may it steel your heart, and edge your good  
sword !

You fight for her, as spotless of these mischiefs  
As Heaven is of our sins, or Truth of errors ;  
And so defy that treacherous man, and prosper !

*Nor.* Blessing o' thy heart, lady !

*Val.* Give the signal to 'em.

*[Love alarms. They fight.]*

*Nor.* 'Tis bravely fought, Gomera, follow that  
blow—

Well struck again, boy !—look upon the lady,  
And gather spirit ! brave again ! lie close,  
Lie close, I say ! he fights aloft, and strongly ;  
Close for thy life !—A pox o' that fell buffet !  
Retire and gather breath ; ye have day enough,  
knights—

Look lovely on him, lady ! to't again, now !  
Stand, stand, Gomera, stand !—one blow for all  
now !

Gather thy strength together ; God bless the wo-  
man !

Why, where's thy noble heart ? Heaven bless the  
All. Oh, oh ! [lady !]

*Val.* She is gone, she is gone.

*Nor.* Now strike it. [MIRANDA falls.]

Hold, hold—he yields : Hold thy brave sword, he's  
conquer'd—

He's thine, Gomera. Now be joyful, lady !  
What could this thief have done, had his cause been  
He made my heart-strings tremble. [equal !]

*Val.* Off with his casque there ;

And, executioner, take you his head next.

*Zan.* Oh, cursed Fortune ! [Aside.]

*Gom.* Stay, I beseech you, sir ! and this one  
honour

Grant me, I have deserved it ; that this villain  
May live one day, to envy at my justice ;  
That he may pine and die, before the sword fall,  
Viewing the glory I have won, her goodness.

*Val.* He shall ; and you the harvest of your  
Shall reap, brave sir, abundantly. [valour]

*Gom.* I have saved her,  
Preserved her spotless worth from black destruc-  
(Her white name to eternity deliver'd) [tion ;]

Her youth and sweetness from a timeless ruin.  
Now, lord Valetta, if this bloody labour

May but deserve her favour—

*Mir.* Stay, and hear me first. [voice.]

*Val.* Off with his casque ! This is Miranda's  
*Nor.* 'Tis he indeed, or else mine eyes abuse

What makes he here thus ? [me:]

*Ori.* The young Miranda ?  
Is he mine enemy too ?

*Mir.* None has deserved her,  
If worth must carry it, and service seek her,  
But he that saved her honour.

*Gom.* That is I, Miranda.

*Mir.* No, no ; that's I, Gomera ; be not so for-  
ward !

In bargain for my love you cannot cozen me.

*Gom.* I fought it.

*Mir.* And I gave it, which is nobler.

Why, every gentleman would have done as much  
As you did : Fought it ? that's a poor desert, sir ;  
They are bound to that. But then to make that  
fight sure,

To do as I did, take all danger from it,  
Suffer that coldness that must call me now  
Into disgrace for ever, into pity—

*Gom.* I undertook first, to preserve from hazard.

*Mir.* And I made sure no hazard should come

*Gom.* 'Twas I defied Mountferrat. [near her.]

*Mir.* 'Twas I wrought him,  
(You had had a dark day else) 'twas I defied  
His conscience first, 'twas I that shook him there,  
Which is the brave defiance.

*Gom.* My life and honour

At stake I laid.

*Mir.* My care and truth lay by it,

Least that stake might be lost. I have deserved her,  
And none but I : The lady might have perish'd  
Had fell Mountferrat struck it, from whose malice,  
With cunning and bold confidence, I catch'd it ;  
And 'twas high time. And such a service, lady,  
For you and for your innocence—for who knows  
not

The all-devouring sword of fierce Mountferrat ?  
I shew'd you what I could do, had I been spiteful,  
Or master but of half the poison he bears :

(Hell take his heart for't!) and beshrew these  
hands, madam,

With all my heart, I wish a mischief on 'em !  
They made you once look sad : Such another fright

I would not put you in, to own the island :

Yet, pardon me ; 'twas but to shew a soldier,  
Which, when I had done, I ended your poor  
coward.

*Val.* Let some look out, for the base knight,  
Mountferrat—

*Zan.* I hope he's far enough, if his man be trusty.

[Aside.]

This was a strange misfortune ; I must not know it.

*Val.* That most deboshed knight. Come down,  
sweet sister,

My spotless sister now ! Pray thank these gentle-  
men ;

They have deserved both truly, nobly of you,  
Both excellently, dearly, both all the honour,  
All the respect and favour—

*Ori.* Both shall have it ;

And as my life their memories I'll nourish.

*Val.* Ye are both true knights, and both most  
worthy lovers ;

Here stands a lady ripen'd with your service,  
Young, fair, and (now I dare say) truly honourable ;

'Tis my will she shall marry, marry now,  
And one of you (she cannot take more nobly :)

Your deserts

Begot this will, and bred it. Both her beauty  
Cannot enjoy ; dare you make me your umpire ?

*Gom. Mir.* With all our souls.

*Val.* He must not then be angry

That loses her.

*Gom.* Oh, that were, sir, unworthy.

*Mir.* A little sorrow he may find.

*Val.* 'Tis manly.—

Gomera, you're a brave accomplish'd gentleman ;

A braver no where lives than is Miranda.  
In the white way of virtue, and true valour,  
You have been a pilgrim long; yet no man farther  
Has trod those thorny steps than young Miranda:  
You are gentle, he is gentleness itself; Experience  
Calls you her brother; this her hopeful heir.

*Nor.* The young man now, an't be thy will!

*Val.* Your hand, sir!

You undertook first, nobly undertook,  
This lady's cause; you made it good, and fought  
it;

You must be served first, take her and enjoy her!  
I give her to you: Kiss her! Are you pleased now?

*Gom.* My joy's so much I cannot speak.

*Val.* Nay, fairest sir,

You must not be displeased; you break your promise.

*Mir.* I never grieved at good; nor dare I now,  
Though something seem strange to me. [sir,

*Val.* I have provided

A better match for you, more full of beauty;  
I'll wed you to our order: There's a mistress  
Whose beauty ne'er decays (Time stands below  
her);

Whose honour, ermin-like, can never suffer  
Spot or black soil; whose eternal issue  
Fame brings up at her breasts, and leaves them  
sainted;

Her you shall marry.

*Mir.* I must humbly thank you.

*Val.* Saint Thomas' Fort, a charge of no small  
value,

I give you too, in present, to keep waking  
Your noble spirits; and, to breed you pious,  
I'll send you a probation-robe; wear that,  
Till you shall please to be our brother.—How now?

*Enter Astrucus.*

*Asto.* Mountferrat's fled, sir.

*Val.* Let him go a while,  
Till we have done these rites, and seen these  
coupled;

His mischief now lies open. Come, all friends  
now!

And so let's march to th' temple. Sound those  
instruments,

That were the signal to a day of blood!

Evil beginning hours may end in good. [*Flourish.*

*Nor.* Come, we'll have wenches, man, and all  
brave things.

Pox! let her go; we'll want no mistresses;  
Good swords, and good strong armours!

*Mir.* Those are best, captain.

*Nor.* And fight till queens be in love with us,  
and run after us.

I'll see you at the fort within these two days;

And let's be merry, pr'ythee!

*Mir.* By that time I shall.

*Nor.* Why, that's well said! I like a good heart  
truly. [Exeunt

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—*One of the City Gates.*

*Enter NORANDINE and Servant; Corporal and Soldiers  
above in the Guard-room.*

*Serv.* The day is not yet broke, sir.

*Nor.* 'Tis the cooler riding.

I must go see Miranda: Bring my horse  
Round to the south port; I'll out here at the beach,  
And meet you at the end o' th' sycamores:  
'Tis a sweet walk, and if the wind be stirring  
Serves like a fan to cool.

*Serv.* Which walk?

*Nor.* Why, that, sir,

Where the fine city-dames meet to make matches.

*Serv.* I know it. [*Exit.*

*Nor.* Speed ye then!—[*Singing above.*]—What  
mirth is this?

The watches are not yet discharged, I take it:  
These are brave careless rogues! I'll hear the  
song out,

And then I'll fit ye for't, merry companions!

#### SONG.

##### BY THE SOLDIERS.

1. Sit, soldiers, sit and sing, the round is clear,  
And cock-a-loodie-looe tells us the day is near.  
Each toss his can, until his throat be mellow,  
Drink, laugh, and sing; the soldier has no fellow!
2. To thee a full pot, my little lance-*prizado*,  
And when thou hast done, a pipe of *Trinidado*!  
Our glass of life runs wine, the vintner skinks it,  
Whilst with his wife the frolic soldier drinks it.
3. The drums beat, ensigns wave, and cannons thump it;  
Our game is ruffe, and the best heart doth trump it:  
Each toss his can, until his throat be mellow,  
Drink, laugh, and sing; the soldier has no fellow.

4. I'll pledge thee, my corporal, were it a flagon;  
After, watch fiercer than George did the dragon;  
What blood we lose i' th' town, we gain i' th' tuns;  
Furr'd gowns and flat caps give the wall to guns.  
Each toss his can, until his throat be mellow,  
Drink, laugh, and sing; the soldier has no fellow.

*Nor.* Here's notable order! now for a trick to  
Owgh, owgh! [tame ye!]

1 *Watch.* Hark, hark! what's that below us?

Who goes there?

*Nor.* Owgh, owgh, owgh! [corporal.

2 *Watch.* 'Tis a bear broke loose; pray call the

1 *Watch.* The Dutchman's huge fat sow.

2 *Watch.* I see her now,

And five fine pigs.

*Nor.* Owgh, owgh!

*Enter Corporal.*

*Corp.* Now, what's the matter?

1 *Watch.* Here's the great fat sow, corporal,  
The Dutchman's sow; and all the pigs, brave fat  
pigs:

You have been wishing long she would break loose.

*Nor.* Owgh, owgh!

*Corp.* 'Tis she indeed; there's a white pig now  
sucking:

Look, look! do you see it, sirs?

1 *Watch.* Yes, very well, sir.

*Corp.* A notable fat whoreson! Come, two of ye.  
Go down with me; we'll have a tickling breakfast.

2 *Watch.* Let's eat 'em at the Cross.

*Corp.* There's the best liquor.

*Nor.* I'll liquor some of ye, ye lazy rogues!  
Your minds are of nothing but eating and swilling.

What a sweet beast they have made of me! A sow?  
Hog upon hog! I hear 'em come.

*Enter Corporal below, and Watch.*

*Corp.* Go softly,  
And fall upon 'em finely, nimbly.  
*1 Watch.* Bless me!

*Corp.* Why, what's the matter?  
*1 Watch.* Oh, the devil! the devil,  
As high as a steeple!

*2 Watch.* There he goes, corporal!  
His feet are cloven too.

*Corp.* Stand, stand, I say!  
'Death, how I shake! Where be your muskets?

*1 Watch.* There's no good of them:  
Where be our prayers, mau?

*2 Watch.* Lord, how he stalks! Speak to him,  
corporal.

*Corp.* Why, what a devil art thou?  
*Nor.* Owgh, owgh!

*Corp.* A dumb devil?  
The worst devil that could come, a dumb devil!  
Give me a musket. He gathers in to me!  
I' th' name of—Speak! what art thou? Speak,  
Or I'll put a plumb in your belly. [devil,

*Nor.* Owgh, owgh, owgh!  
*Corp.* Fy, fy! in what a sweat I am! Lord  
bless me,

My musket's gone too! I am not able to stir it.  
*Nor.* Who goes there? Stand, speak!

*Corp.* Sure I am enchanted!  
Yet here's my halbert still. Nay, who goes  
there, sir?—

What, have I lost myself?—What are ye?  
*Nor.* The guard.

*Corp.* Why, what are we then? He's not half  
so long now,

Nor he has no tail at all. I shake still damnably.  
*Nor.* The word!

*Corp.* Have mercy on me! what word does he  
P'ythee, devil, if thou be'st the devil, [mean?  
Do not make an ass of me! for I remember yet,  
As well as I am here, I am the corporal;  
I'll lay my life on't, devil.

*Nor.* Thou art damn'd!  
*Corp.* That's all one; but am not I the corporal?  
I would give a thousand pound to be resolved now.

Had not I soldiers here?  
*Nor.* No, not a man;

Thou art debosh'd, and cozen'd.  
*Corp.* That may be,

It may be I am drunk.—Lord, where have I been?  
Is not this my halbert in my hand?

*Nor.* No, 'tis a May-pole.  
*Corp.* Why then, I know not who I am, nor  
nor whence I come. [what,

*Nor.* You are an arrant rascal!  
You corporal of a watch?

*Corp.* 'Tis the Dane's voice!  
You are no devil then?

*Nor.* No, nor no sow, sir.  
*Corp.* Of that I am right glad, sir: I was ne'er  
So frighted in my life, as I am a soldier.

*Nor.* Tall watchman!  
A guard for a goose! you sing away your centries:  
A careful company! Let me out o' th' port here,  
(I was a little merry with your worships)

And keep your guards strong, though the devil  
walk.

Hold, there's to bring ye into your wits again.

Go off no more to hunt pigs: such another trick,  
And you will hunt the gallows.

*Corp.* Pray, sir, pardon us!  
And, let the devil come next, I'll make him stand,  
Or make him stink.

*Nor.* Do, do your duty truly.  
Come, let me out, and come away. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in GOMERA'S House.

*Enter ZANTHIA with a Letter, and ROCCA.*

*Rocca.* No more rage.

*Zan.* Write thus to me? He hath fearfully and  
basely

Betray'd his own cause; yet, to free himself,  
He now ascribes the fault to me.

*Rocca.* I know not  
What he hath done; but what he now desires  
His letters have informed you.

*Zan.* Yes; he is  
Too well acquainted with the power he holds  
Over my mad affections!—I want time  
To write; but pray you tell him, if I were  
No better steel'd in my strong resolutions  
Than he hath shewn himself in his, or thought

There was a hell hereafter, or a Heaven  
But in enjoying him, I should stick here,  
And move no further. Bid him yet take comfort;

For something I will do the devil would quake at,  
But I'll untie this nuptial knot of love,  
And make way for his wishes. In the meantime

Let him lie close, (for he is strictly sought for)  
And practise to love her, that for his ends

Scorns fear and danger!  
*Rocca.* All this I will tell him. [Exit.

*Enter OBIANA and VELLEDA.*

*Zan.* Do so. Farewell!—My lady, with my  
So earnest in discourse! Whate'er it be, [fellow,  
I'll second it.

*Vel.* He is such a noble husband,  
In every circumstance so truly loving,  
That I might say, and without flattery, madam,  
The sun sees not a lady but yourself  
That can deserve him.

*Zan.* Of all men, I say,  
That dare (for 'tis a desperate adventure)

Wear on their free necks the sweet yoke of woman,  
(For they that do repine are no true husbands)

Give me a soldier!  
*Ori.* Why? are they more loving

Than other men?  
*Zan.* And love too with more judgment:

For, but observe, your courtier is more curious  
To set himself forth richly, than his lady;

His baths, perfumes, nay paintings too, more costly  
Than his frugality will allow to her;

His clothes as chargeable; and grant him but  
A thing without a beard, and he may pass

At all times for a woman, and with some  
Have better welcome: Now, your man of lands

For the most part is careful to manure them,  
But leaves his lady fallow; your great merchant

Breaks oftner for the debt he owes his wife,  
Than with his creditors: and that's the reason

She looks elsewhere for payment: Now, your sol-  
*Vel.* Ay, marry, do him right! [dier—

*Zan.* First, who has one  
Has a perpetual guard upon her honour;

For while he wears a sword, Slander herself  
Dares not bark at it; next, she sits at home  
Like a great queen, and sends him forth to fetch in  
Her tribute from all parts; which, being brought  
home,

He lays it at her feet, and seeks no further  
For his reward than what she may give freely,  
And with delight too, from her own exchequer,  
Which he finds ever open.

*Ori.* Be more modest!

*Zan.* Why, we may speak of that we are glad to  
taste of,

Among ourselves I mean.

*Ori.* Thou talk'st of nothing.

*Zan.* Of nothing, madam? You have found it  
something;

Or, with the raising up this pretty mount here,  
My lord hath dealt with spirits.

*Enter GOMERA with a Servant bringing in cloths.*

*Ori.* Two long hours absent?

*Gom.* Thy pardon, sweet! I have been looking  
on

The prize that was brought in by the brave Dane,  
The valiant Norandine, and have brought some-  
thing

That may be thou wilt like of; but one kiss,  
And then possess my purchase: There's a piece  
Of cloth of tissue, this of purple velvet,  
And (as they swear) of the right Tyrian dye,  
Which others here but weakly counterfeit:  
If they are worth thy use, wear them; if not,  
Bestow them on thy women.

*Zan.* Here's the husband!

*Gom.* While there is any trading on the sea,  
Thou shalt want nothing. 'Tis a soldier's glory,  
However he neglect himself, to keep  
His mistress in full lustre.

*Ori.* You exceed, sir.

*Gom.* Yet there was one part of the prize dis-  
posed of

Before I came, which I grieve that I miss'd of,  
Being almost assured, it would have been  
A welcome present.

*Ori.* Pray you say, what was it?

*Gom.* A Turkish captive, of incomparable beauty,  
And, without question, in her country noble;  
Which, as companion to thy faithful Moor,  
I would have given thee for thy slave.

*Ori.* But was she

Of such an exquisite form?

*Gom.* Most exquisite.

*Ori.* And well descended?

*Gom.* So the habit promised,  
In which she was taken.

*Ori.* Of what years?

*Gom.* 'Tis said  
A virgin of fourteen.

*Ori.* I pity her,

And wish she were mine, that I might have the  
To entertain her gently. [means

*Gom.* She's now Miranda's;

And, as I have heard, made it her suit to be so.

*Ori.* Miranda's? then her fate deserves not pity,  
But envy rather.

*Gom.* Envy, Oriana?

*Ori.* Yes, and their envy that live free.

*Gom.* How's this?

*Ori.* Why, she is fallen into the hands of one,  
So full of that which in men we style goodness,

That, in her being his slave, she's happier far  
Than if she were confirm'd the sultan's mistress.

*Gom.* Miranda is indeed a gentleman  
Of fair desert, and better hopes; but yet  
He hath his equals.

*Ori.* Where? I would go far,

As I am now, though much unfit for travels,

But to see one that without injury

Might be put in the scale, or parallel'd,

In anything that's noble, with Miranda.

His knowledge in all services of war,

And ready courage to put into act

That knowing judgment, as you are a soldier,

You best may speak of; nor can you deliver,

Nor I hear with delight, a better subject.

And Heaven did well, in such a lovely feature

To place so chaste a mind; for he is of

So sweet a carriage, such a winning nature,

And such a bold, yet well-disposed behaviour;

And, to all these, has such a charming tongue,

That, if he would serve under Love's fresh colours,

What monumental trophies might he raise

Of his free conquests, made in ladies' favours!

*Gom.* Yet you did resist him, when he was  
An earnest suitor to you?

*Ori.* Yes, I did;

And, if I were again sought to, I should;

But must ascribe it rather to the fate

That did appoint me yours, than any power

Which I can call mine own.

*Gom.* Even so?

*Zan.* Thanks, Fortune!

[*Aside.*

The plot I had to raise in him doubts of her  
Thou hast effected.

*Ori.* I could tell you too,

What cause I have to love him: with what reason

In thankfulness he may expect from me

All due observance: but I pass that, as

A benefit for which, in my behalf,

You are his debtor.

*Zan.* I perceive it takes,

By his changed looks.

*Ori.* He is not in the city,

Is he, my lord?

*Gom.* Who, lady?

*Ori.* Why, Miranda:

Having you here, can there be any else

Worth my enquiry?

*Gom.* This is somewhat more

[*Aside.*

Than love to virtue!

*Ori.* 'Faith, when he comes hither,

(As sometimes, without question, you shall meet

Invite him home. [him])

*Gom.* To what end?

*Ori.* To dine with us,

Or sup.

*Gom.* And then to take a hard bed with you;

Mean you not so?

*Ori.* If you could win him to it,

'Twould be the better. For his entertainment

Leave that to me; he shall find noble usage,

And from me a free welcome.

*Gom.* Have you never

Heard of a Roman lady, Oriana,

Remember'd as a precedent for matrons,

(Chaste ones, I pray you understand) whose hus-

Tax'd for his sour breath by his enemy, [band,

Condemn'd his wife for not acquainting him

With his infirmity?

*Ori.* 'Tis a common one:

Her answer was, having kiss'd none but him,  
She thought it was a general disease  
All men were subject to. But what infer you  
From that, my lord?

Gom. Why, that this virtuous lady  
Had all her thoughts so fix'd upon her lord,  
That she could find no spare time to sing praises  
Of any other; nor would she employ  
Her husband (though perhaps in debt to years  
As far as I am) for an instrument  
To bring home younger men, that might delight  
With their discourse, or— [her

Ori. What, my lord?

Gom. Their persons;  
Or, if I should speak plainer—

Ori. No, it needs not;

You have said enough to make my innocence know  
It is suspected.

Gom. You betray yourself  
To more than a suspicion: Could you else,  
To me, that live in nothing but love to you,  
Make such a gross discovery, that your lust  
Had sold that heart, I thought mine, to Miranda?  
Or rise to such a height in impudence,  
As to presume to work my yielding weakness  
To play, for your bad ends, to my disgrace,  
The wittol, or the pander?

Ori. Do not study

To print more wounds (for that were tyranny)  
Upon a heart that is pierced through already.

Gom. Thy heart? thou hast pierced through  
mine honour, false one,

The honour of my house! Fool that I was,  
To give it up to the deceiving trust  
Of wicked woman! For thy sake, vile creature,  
For all I have done well in, in my life,  
I have digg'd a grave, all buried in a wife;  
For thee I have defied my constant mistress,  
That never fail'd her servant, glorious War;  
For thee refused the fellowship of an order  
Which princes, through all dangers, have been  
To fetch as far as from Jerusalem: [proud  
And am I thus rewarded?

Fel. By all goodness,

You wrong my lady, and deserve her not,  
When you are at your best! Repent your rashness;  
Twill shew well in you.

Zes. Do, and ask her pardon.

Ori. No; I have lived too long to have my faith,  
My tried faith, call'd in question, and by him  
That should know true affection is too tender  
To suffer an unkind touch, without ruin.  
Study ingratitude, all, from my example!  
For to be thankful now is to be false.

But, be it so; let me die; I see you wish it!

Yet dead, for truth and pitie's sake, report  
What weapon you made choice of when you kill'd

Fel. She faints!

[me.

Zes. What have you done?

Ori. My last breath cannot

Be better spent, than to say I forgive you;

Nor is my death untimely, since with me

I take along what might have been hereafter

In scorn deliver'd for the doubtful issue

Of a suspected mother. [She swoons.

Fel. Oh, she's gone!

Zes. For ever gone!—Are you a man?

Gom. I grow here!

Zes. Open her mouth, and pour this cordial in  
it:

If any spark of life be unquench'd in her,  
This will recover her.

Fel. 'Tis all in vain!

She's stiff already. Live I, and she dead?

Gom. How like a murderer I stand!—Look up,  
And hear me curse myself, or but behold  
The vengeance I will take for't, Oriana,  
And then in peace forsake me! Jealousy,  
Thou loathsome vomit of the fiends below,  
What desperate hunger made me to receive thee  
Into my heart, and soul? I'll let thee forth,  
And so in death find ease! And does my fault  
then

Deserve no greater punishment? No; I'll live  
To keep thee for a fury to torment me,  
And make me know what hell is on the earth!  
All joys and hopes forsake me! all men's malice,  
And all the plagues they can inflict, I wish it,  
Fall thick upon me! let my tears be laugh'd at,  
And may mine enemies smile to hear me groan;  
And dead, may I be pitied of none!

[Exit, carrying out ORIANA.

SCENE III.—*St. Thomas's Fort. A Room in  
NORANDINE'S House.*

Enter COLONNA and LUCINDA.

Luc. Pray you, sir, why was the ordinance of the  
fort

Discharged so suddenly?

Col. 'Twas the governor's pleasure,  
In honour of the Dane; a custom used,  
To speak a soldier's welcome.

Luc. 'Tis a fit one.

But is my master here too?

Col. Three days since.

Luc. Might I demand without offence so much,  
Is't pride in him (however now a slave)  
That I am not admitted to his presence?

Col. His courtesy to you, and to mankind,  
May easily resolve you, he is free  
From that poor vice which only empty men  
Esteem a virtue.

Luc. What's the reason then,

As you imagine, sir?

Col. Why, I will tell you:

You are a woman of a tempting beauty,  
And he, however virtuous, as a man,  
Subject to human frailties; and how far  
They may prevail upon him, should he see you,  
He is not ignorant; and therefore chuses  
With care to avoid the cause that may produce  
Some strange effect, which will not well keep rank  
With the rare temperance which is admired  
In his life hitherto.

Luc. This much increases

My strong desire to see him.

Col. It should rather

Teach you to thank the prophet that you worship,  
That you are such a man's, who, though he may  
Do anything which youth and heat of blood  
Invites him to, yet dares not give way to them.  
Your entertainment's noble, and not like  
Your present fortune; and (if all those tears  
Which made grief lovely in you, in the relation  
Of the sad story that forced me to weep too,  
Your husband's hard fate, were not counterfeit)  
You should rejoice that you have means to pay  
A chaste life to his memory, and bring to him

Those sweets, which while he lived he could not  
But if you wantonly bestow them on [taste of :  
Another man, you offer violence  
To him, though dead ; and his grieved spirit will  
For your immodest looseness. [suffer

*Luc.* Why, I hope, sir,  
My willingness to look on him to whom  
I owe my life and service, is no proof  
Of any unchaste purpose.

*Col.* So I wish too !

And in the confidence it is not, lady,  
I dare the better tell you he will see you  
This night, in which by him I am commended  
To bring you to his chamber ; to what end  
I easily should guess, were I Lucinda :  
And therefore, though I can yield little reason  
(But in a general love to women's goodness)  
Why I should be so tender of your honour,  
I willingly would bestow some counsel of you ;  
And would you follow it ?

*Luc.* Let me first hear it,  
And then I can resolve you.

*Col.* My advice then

Is, that you would not (as most ladies use,  
When they prepare themselves for such encounters)  
Study to add, by artificial dressings,  
To native excellence ; yours, without help,  
But seen as it is now, would make a hermit  
Leave his death's head, and change his after-hopes  
Of endless comforts, for a few short minutes  
Of present pleasures ; to prevent which, lady,  
Practise to take away from your perfections,  
And to preserve your chastity unstain'd :  
The most deformed shape that you can put on,  
To cloud your body's fair gifts, or your mind's,  
(It being labour'd to so chaste an end)  
Will prove the fairest ornament.

*Luc.* To take from

The workmanship of Heaven is an offence  
As great as to endeavour to add to it ;  
Of which I'll not be guilty. Chastity,  
That lodges in deformity, appears rather  
A mulct imposed by Nature, than a blessing ;  
And 'tis commendable only when it conquers,  
Though ne'er so oft assaulted, in resistance :  
For me, I'll therefore so dispose myself,  
That if I hold out it shall be with honour ;  
Or if I yield, Miranda shall find something  
To make him love his victory. [Exit.

*Col.* With what cunning

This woman argues for her own damnation !  
Nor should I hold it for a miracle,  
Since they are all born sophisters, to maintain  
That lust is lawful, and the end and use  
Of their creation. 'Would I never had  
Hoped better of her, or could not believe,  
Though seen, the ruin I must ever grieve ! [Exit.

SCENE IV.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter MIRANDA, NORANDINE, Servants with lights.*

*Mir.* I'll see you in your chamber.

*Nor.* Pray you no further !

It is a ceremony I expect not :

I am no stranger here ; I know my lodging,  
And have slept soundly there, when the Turks'  
cannon

Play'd thick upon it : Oh, 'twas royal music !  
And to procure a sound sleep for a soldier,

Worth forty of your fiddles. As you love me,  
Press it no further !

*Mir.* You will overcome.—

Wait on him carefully.

*Nor.* I have took, since supper,  
A rouse or two too much, and, by the gods,  
It warms my blood.

*Mir.* You'll sleep the better for't.

*Nor.* Pox on't, I should, had but I a kind  
wench

To pull my boot-hose off, and warm my night-cap ;  
There's no charm like it. I love old Adam's way ;  
Give me a diligent Eve, to wait towards bed-time !  
Hang up your smooth-chin page ! And, now I  
Where is your Turkish prisoner ? [think on't,

*Mir.* In the castle ;

But yet I never saw her.

*Nor.* Fy upon you !

See her, for shame ! or, hark you ; if you would  
Perform the friend's part to me, the friend's part,  
It being a fashion of the last edition,  
Far from panderism, now send her to me.

You look strange on't ! No entertainment's perfect  
Without it, on my word, no livery like it !

I'll tell her he looks for it as duly

As for his fee. There's no suit got without it ;  
Gold is an ass to't.

*Mir.* Go to bed, to bed !

*Nor.* Well, if she come, I doubt not to convert  
her ;

If not, the sin lie on your head !—Good night !

[*Exit NORANDINE AND SERVANTS.*

*Enter COLONNA and LUCINDA.*

*Col.* There you shall find him, lady : You know  
what I have said,

And if you please you may make use.

*Luc.* No doubt, sir.

*Col.* From hence I shall hear all. [*He retires.*

*Mir.* Come hither, young one.—  
Beswear my heart, a handsome wench !—Come  
nearer.

A very handsome one !—Do not you grieve, sweet,  
You are a prisoner ?

*Luc.* The loss of liberty,  
No doubt, sir, is a heavy and sharp burden  
To them that feel it truly : But your servant,  
Your humble handmaid, never felt that rigour ;  
Thanks to that noble will ! No want, no hunger,  
(Companions still to slaves) no violence,

Nor any unbecoming act we start at,  
Have I yet met with : All content and goodness,  
Civility, and sweetness of behaviour,  
Dwell round about me ; therefore, worthy master,  
I cannot say I grieve my liberty.

*Mir.* Do not you fancy me too cold a soldier,

Too obstinate an enemy to youth,  
That had so fair a jewel in my cabinet,  
And in so long a time would ne'er look on it ?

*Col.* What can she say now ?

*Luc.* Sure, I desired to see you :  
And with a longing wish—

*Col.* There's all her virtue.

*Luc.* Pursued that full desire, to give you thanks,  
The only sacrifice I have left, and service, [sir,  
For all the virtuous care you have kept me safe with.

*Col.* She holds well yet.

*Mir.* The pretty fool speaks finely.—  
Come, sit down here.

*Luc.* Oh, sir, 'tis most unseemly.

*Mir.* I'll have it so; sit close. Now tell me truly,  
Did you e'er love yet?

*Luc.* My tears will answer that, sir.

*Mir.* And did you then love truly?

*Luc.* So I thought, sir.

*Mir.* Can you love me so?

*Col.* Now!

*Luc.* With all my duty;

I were unworthy of those favours else,

You daily shower upon me.

*Mir.* What think'st thou of me?

*Luc.* I think you are a truly worthy gentleman,

A pattern, and a pride, to the age you live in,  
Sweet as the commendations all men give you.

*Mir.* A pretty flattering rogue!—Dare you kiss  
that sweet man

You speak so sweetly of? Come.

*Col.* Farewell, virtue!

*Mir.* What hast thou got between thy lips?—  
Sure thou hast a spell there! [Kiss once more.—

*Luc.* More than e'er I knew, sir.

*Col.* All hopes go now!

*Mir.* I must tell you a thing in your ear; and  
you must hear me,

And hear me willingly, and grant me so too;

'Twill not be worth my asking else.

*Luc.* It must be

A very hard thing, sir, and from my power,

I shall deny your goodness.

*Mir.* 'Tis a good wench!

I must lie with you, lady.

*Luc.* 'Tis something strange;

For yet in all my life I knew no bed-fellow.

*Mir.* You'll quickly find that knowledge.

*Luc.* To what end, sir?

*Mir.* Art thou so innocent thou canst not guess

Did thy dreams ne'er direct thee? [at it!

*Luc.* 'Faith, none yet, sir.

*Mir.* I'll tell thee then: I would meet thy youth  
and pleasure;

Give thee my youth for that, (by Heaven, she fires  
me!)

And teach thy fair white arms, like wanton ivies,

A thousand new embraces.

*Luc.* Is that all, sir?

And say I should try, may not we lie quietly?

Upon my conscience, I could!

*Mir.* That's as we make it.

*Luc.* Grant that that likes you best, what would  
you do then?

*Mir.* What would I do? Certainly I am no baby,  
Nor brought up for a nun. Hark in thine ear!

*Luc.* Fy, fy, sir!

*Mir.* I would get a brave boy on thee,

A warlike boy.

*Luc.* Sure we shall get ill Christians.

*Mir.* We'll mend 'em in the breeding then.

*Luc.* Sweet master!

*Col.* Never belief in woman come near me  
more!

*Luc.* My best and noblest sir, if a poor virgin  
For yet, by Heaven, I am so) should chance so far

Seeing your excellence, and able sweetness)

To forget herself, and slip into your bosom,

Or to your bed, out of a doting on you,

(Take it the best way) have you that cruel heart,

That murdering mind, to—

*Mir.* Yes, by my troth, sweet, have I,

To lie with her.

*Luc.* And do you think it well done?

*Mir.* That's as she'll think when 'tis done.

Come to bed, wench!

For thou art so pretty, and so witty a companion,  
We must not part to-night.

*Luc.* 'Faith, let me go,

Sir, and think better on't.

*Mir.* I'faith thou shalt not!

I warrant thee, I'll think on't.

*Luc.* I've heard 'em say here,

You are a maid too.

*Mir.* I am sure I am, wench,

If that will please thee.

*Luc.* I have seen a wonder!

And would you lose that, for a little wantonness,

(Consider, my sweet master, like a man, now)

For a few honied kisses, slight embraces,

That glory of your youth? that crown of sweetness

Can you deliver? that unvalued treasure

Would you forsake, to seek your own dishonour?

What gone, no age recovers, nor repentance,

To a poor stranger?

*Col.* Hold there, again thou art perfect!

*Luc.* I know you do but try me.

*Mir.* And I know

I'll try you a great deal further. Pr'ythee, to bed!

I love thee, and so well—Come, kiss me once more!

Is a maidenhead ill bestow'd o' me?

*Luc.* What's this, sir? [Taking hold of his cross.

*Mir.* Why, 'tis the badge, my sweet, of that  
holy order

I shortly must receive, the Cross of Malta.

*Luc.* What virtue has it?

*Mir.* All that we call virtuous.

*Luc.* Who gave it first?

*Mir.* He that gave all, to save us.

*Luc.* Why then, 'tis holy too?

*Mir.* True sign of holiness;

The badge of all his soldiers that profess him.

*Luc.* The badge of all his soldiers that profess  
Can it save in dangers? [him?

*Mir.* Yes.

*Luc.* In troubles, comfort?

*Mir.* You say true, sweet.

*Luc.* In sickness, restore health?

*Mir.* All this it can do.

*Luc.* Preserve from evils that afflict our frailties?

*Mir.* [Aside.] I hope she will be Christian.—  
All these truly.

*Luc.* Why are you sick then, sick to death with  
lust?

In danger to be lost? no holy thought

In all that heart? Nothing but wand'ring frailties,

Wild as the wind, and blind as death or ignorance,

Inhabit there.

*Mir.* Forgive me Heaven! she says true.

*Luc.* Dare you profess that badge, prophane that  
goodness—

*Col.* Thou hast redeem'd thyself again, most  
rarely!

*Luc.* That holiness and truth you make me  
wonder at?

Blast all the bounty Heaven gives? that remem-  
brance—

*Col.* Oh, excellent woman!

*Luc.* Fling it from you quickly,

If you be thus resolved; I see a virtue

Appear in't like a sword, both edges flaming,

That will consume you, and your thoughts, to ashes.

Let them profess it that are pure, and noble,

Gentle, and just of thought, that build the Cross,

Not those that break it! By Heaven, if you touch me,  
Even in the act, I'll make that Cross, and curse you.

*Mir.* You shall not, fair: I did dissemble with you,

And but to try your faith I fashion'd all this.  
Yet something you provoked me. This fair Cross,  
By me (if he but please to help first gave it)  
Shall ne'er be worn upon a heart corrupted.

Go to your rest, my modest, honest servant,  
My fair and virtuous maid, and sleep secure there;  
For when you suffer, I forget this sign here.

*Col.* A man of men too! Oh, most perfect gentleman!

*Luc.* All sweet rest to you, sir! I am half a Christian,

The other half I'll pray for; then for you, sir.

*Mir.* This is the foulest play I'll shew. Good night, sweet! [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A Cave.

MOUNTFERRAT is discovered lying on the ground, with  
ROCCA.

*Mountf.* The sun's not set yet?

*Rocca.* No, sir.

*Mountf.* 'Would it were,  
Never to rise again to light the world!  
And yet to what vain purpose do I wish it,  
Since, though I were environ'd with thick mists,  
Black as Cymerian darkness, or my crimes,  
There is that here, upon which, as an anvil,  
Ten thousand hammers strike, and every spark,  
They force from it, to me's another sun  
To light me to my shame!

*Rocca.* Take hope and comfort.

*Mountf.* They are aids indeed, but yet as far from me

As I from being innocent. This cave, fashion'd  
By provident Nature in this solid rock,  
To be a den for beasts, alone receives me;  
And having proved an enemy to mankind,  
All human helps forsake me.

*Rocca.* I'll ne'er leave you;  
And wish you would call back that noble courage,  
That old invincible fortitude of yours,  
That used to shrink at nothing.

*Mountf.* Then it did not;  
But 'twas when I was honest! Then, in the height  
Of all my happiness, of all my glories,  
Of all delights that made life precious to me,  
I durst die, Rocca! Death itself then to me  
Was nothing terrible, because I knew  
The fame of a good knight would ever live  
Fresh on my memory: But since I fell  
From my integrity, and dismissed those guards,  
Those strong assurances of innocence,  
That constancy fled from me; and, what's worse,  
Now I am loathsome to myself, and life  
A burden to me; rack'd with sad remembrance  
Of what I have done, and my present horrors  
Unsuferable to me; tortured with despair  
That I shall ne'er find mercy; hell about me,  
Behind me, and before me; yet I dare not,  
Still fearing worse, put off my wretched being!

*Rocca.* To see this would deter a doubtful man  
From mischievous intents, much more the practice  
Of what is wicked.

*Enter ZANTHIA.*

Here's the Moor; look up, sir!  
Some ease may come from her.

*Mountf.* New trouble rather,  
And I expect it.

*Zan.* Who is this? Mountferrat?  
Rise up, for shame! and, like a river dried up

With a long drought, from me, your bounteous sea,  
Receive those tides of comfort that flow to you.  
If ever I look'd lovely; if desert

Could ever challenge welcome; if revenge,  
And unexpected wreak, were ever pleasing,  
Or could endear the giver of such blessings;  
All these I come adorn'd with, and, as due,  
Make challenge of those so-long-wish'd embraces,  
Which you, unkind, have hitherto denied me.

*Mountf.* Why, what have you done for me?

*Zan.* Made Gomera

As truly miserable, as you thought him happy:  
Could you wish more?

*Mountf.* As if his sickness could  
Recover me! The injuries I received  
Were Oriana's.

*Zan.* She has paid dear for them;  
She's dead.

*Mountf.* How!

*Zan.* Dead; my hate could reach no further.  
Taking advantage of her in a swoon,  
Under pretence to give a cordial to her,  
I poison'd her.—What stupid dulness is this?  
What you should entertain with sacrifice,  
Can you receive so coldly?

*Mountf.* Bloody deeds

Are grateful offerings, pleasing to the devil;  
And thou, in thy black shape, and blacker actions,  
Being hell's perfect character, art delighted  
To do what I, though infinitely wicked,  
Tremble to hear. Thou hast, in this, ta'en from me  
All means to make amends, with penitence,  
To her wrong'd virtues, and despoil'd me of  
The poor remainder of that hope was left me,  
For all I have already, or must suffer.

*Zan.* I did it for the best.

*Mountf.* For thy worst ends!

And be assured, but that I think to kill thee  
Would but prevent what thy despair must force  
To do unto thyself, and so to add to [thee  
Thy most assured damnation, thou wert dead now.  
But, get thee from my sight! and if lust of me  
Did ever fire thee (love I cannot call it)  
Leap down from those steep rocks, or take advan-  
Of the next tree to hang thyself, and then [tag  
I may laugh at it.

*Zan.* In the mean time, I must  
Be bold to do so much for you: Ha, ha!

*Mountf.* Why grinnest thou, devil?

*Zan.* That 'tis in my power  
To punish thy ingratitude. I made trial  
But how you stood affected, and since I know  
I am used only for a property,  
I can and will revenge it to the full:

For understand, in thy contempt of me,  
Those hopes of Oriana, which I could  
Have changed to certainties, are lost for ever.

*Mountf.* Why, lives she?

*Zan.* Yes: but never to Mountferrat,  
Although it is in me, with as much ease  
To give her freely up to thy possession,  
As to remove this rush; which yet despair of:  
For, by my much-wrong'd love, flattery, nor  
threats,

Tears, prayers, nor vows, shall ever win me to it:  
So, with my curse, I leave thee!

*Mountf.* Pr'ythee, stay!

Thou know'st I dote on thee, and yet thou art  
So peevish, and perverse, so apt to take  
Trifles unkindly from me—

*Zan.* To persuade me

To break my neck, to hang, then damn myself,  
With you are trifles!

*Mountf.* 'Twas my melancholy

That made me speak I know not what: Forgive!  
I will redeem my fault.

*Rocca.* Believe him, lady.

*Mountf.* A thousand times I will demand thy  
pardon,

And keep the reckoning on thy lips with kisses.

*Zan.* There's something else that would prevail  
more with me.

*Mountf.* Thou shalt have all thy wishes: Do  
but bless me

With means to satisfy my mad desires

For once in Oriana, and for ever

I am thine, only thine, my best Abdella!

*Zan.* Were I assured of this, and that you would,  
Having enjoy'd her—

*Mountf.* Anything I make choice of  
Thine own conditions.

*Zan.* Swear then, that perform'd,  
(To free me from all doubts and fears hereafter)  
To give me leave to kill her.

*Mountf.* That our safety  
Must of necessity urge us to.

*Zan.* Then know,

It was not poison, but a sleeping potion,  
Which she received; yet of sufficient strength  
So to bind up her senses, that no sign  
Of life appeared in her; and thus thought dead,  
In her best habit, as the custom is

(You know) in Malta, with all ceremonies  
She's buried in her family's monument,  
In the temple of St. John: I'll bring you thither,  
Thus, as you are disguised. Some six hours hence  
The potion will leave working.

*Rocca.* Let us haste then.

*Mountf.* Be my good angel; guide me!

*Zan.* But remember

You keep your oath.

*Mountf.* As I desire to prosper  
In what I undertake!

*Zan.* I ask no more.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—A Church.

Enter MIRANDA, NORANDINE, and COLONNA.

*Col.* Here, sir; I have got the key: I borrow'd it  
Of him that keeps the church; the door is open.

*Mir.* Look to the horses then, and please the  
After a few devotions, I'll retire. [follow.

Be not far off; there may be some use of you.

VOL. II.

Give me the light. Come, friend, a few good  
prayers

Were not bestow'd in vain now, even from you, sir:  
Men, that are bred in blood, have no way left 'em,  
No bath, no purge, no time to wear it out  
Or wash it off, but penitence and prayer.  
I am to take the order; and my youth  
Loaden, I must confess, with many follies,  
Circled and bound about with sins as many  
As in the house of memory live figures.  
My heart I'll open now, my faults confess,  
And rise a new man, Heaven, I hope, to a new  
life.

*Nor.* I have no great devotion, at this instant;  
But, for a prayer or two, I will not out, sir.

Hold up your finger when you have pray'd  
enough.

*Mir.* Go you to that end. [*Kneels.*]

*Nor.* I shall never pray alone, sure I have been  
so used to answer the clerk. 'Would I had a  
cushion, for I shall never make a good hermit,  
and kneel till my knees are horn; these stones  
are plaguy hard!—Where shall I begin now? for  
if I do not observe a method, I shall be out pre-  
sently.

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* What's that, sir? Did you hear?

*Mir.* Ha? to your prayers!

*Nor.* 'Twas hereabouts! It has put me clean  
awry, now;

I shall ne'er get in again! Ha! "by land,  
And water, all children and all women;"

Ay, there it was I left.

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* Never tell me, sir!

Here's something got amongst us.

*Mir.* I heard a groan,

A dismal one.

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* Here, 'tis here, sir, 'tis here, sir!

A devil in the wall!

*Mir.* 'Tis some illusion

To fright us from devotion.

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* Why, 'tis here;

The spirit of a Dutchman choak'd with butter,

Here's a new tomb, new trickments too.

*Mir.* For certain,

This has not been three days here.

*Nor.* And a tablet,

With rhymes upon't.

*Mir.* I pr'ythee read 'em, Norandine.

*Nor.* An epi—an epi—taph, I think 'tis; ay,  
'tis taph!

An epitaph upon the most excel—excel—lent—  
and—

*Mir.* Thou canst not read.

*Nor.* I have spoil'd mine eyes with gunpowder.

*Mir.* [*Reads.*] An epitaph upon the most  
virtuous and excellent lady,

The honour of chastity, Oriana.

*Nor.* The Grand-master's sister? how a devil  
came she here?

When slipt she out o' th' way? The stone's but  
half upon her.

*Mir.* It is a sudden change!—Certain the mis-  
chief

Mountferrat offer'd to her broke her heart-strings.

*Nor.* 'Would he were here! I would be the  
clerk myself,

And, by this little light, I would bury him alive  
Here's no lamenting now. [here.

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* There 'tis.

*Mir.* Sure from

The monument! The very stone groans for her.  
Oh, dear lady, blessing of women, virtue of thy  
sex;

How art thou set for ever, how stol'n from us!

Babbling and prating now converse with women.

*Nor.* Sir, it rises; it looks up;

[*She rises up from a tomb.*]

*Mir.* Heaven bless us!

*Nor.* It is in woman's clothes. It rises higher.

*Mir.* It looks about, and wonders: Sure she  
'Tis she, 'tis Oriana, 'tis that lady. [lives, sir!

*Nor.* Shall I go to her?

*Ori.* Where am I?

*Mir.* Stand still.

*Ori.* What place is this?

*Nor.* She is as live as I am.

*Ori.* What smell of earth, and rotten bones?  
Lord, whither am I carried? [what dark place?

*Nor.* How she stares,  
And sets her eyes upon him!

*Mir.* How is't, dear lady?

Do you know me?—how she shakes!

*Ori.* You are a man.

*Mir.* A man that honours you.

*Ori.* A cruel man;

Ye are all cruel! Are you in your grave too?  
For there's no trusting cruel man, above ground.

*Nor.* By'r lady, that goes hard!

*Mir.* To do you service,  
And to restore you to the joys you were in—

*Ori.* I was in joys indeed, and hope—

*Mir.* She sinks again!

Again she's gone, she's gone, gone as a shadow!  
She sinks for ever, friend!

*Nor.* She is cold now!

She is certainly departed: I must cry too.

*Mir.* The blessed angels guide thee! Put the  
stone to.

Beauty, thou art gone to dust, goodness to ashes!

*Nor.* Pray take it well; we must all have our  
hours, sir.

*Mir.* Ay, thus we are; and all our painted glory  
A bubble that a boy blows into the air,  
And there it breaks.

*Nor.* I am glad you saved her honour yet.

*Mir.* 'Would I had saved her life now too!  
Oh, Heaven,

For such a blessing, such a timely blessing!

Oh, friend, what dear content 'twould be, what  
To keep my name from worms! [story

*Ori.* Oh, oh!

*Nor.* She lives again!

'Twas but a trance.

*Mir.* Pray you call my man in presently.

Help with the stone first! Oh, she stirs again!

Oh, call my man! away!

*Nor.* I fly, I fly, sir!

[*Exit.*]

*Mir.* Upon my knees, oh, Heaven, oh, Heaven,  
I thank thee!

The living heat steals into every member.

*Enter COLONNA and NORANDINE.*

Come, help the coffin out softly, and suddenly!  
Where is the clerk?

*Col.* Drunk above; he is sure, sir.

*Mir.* Sirrah, you must be secret.

*Col.* As your soul, sir.

*Mir.* Softly, good friend! take her into your

*Nor.* Put in the crust again. [arms.

*Mir.* And bring her out there. When I am  
a-horseback,

My man and I will tenderly conduct her

Unto the fort; stay you, and watch what issue,

And what inquiry's for the body.

*Nor.* Well, sir?

*Mir.* And when you have done, come back to me.

*Nor.* I will.

*Mir.* Softly, oh, softly!

*Nor.* She grows warmer still, sir.

*Col.* What shall I do with the key?

*Mir.* Thou canst not stir now;

Leave it i' the door. Go, get the horses ready.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter ROCCA, MOUNTFERRAT, and ZANTHIA with a dark-  
lanthorn.*

*Rocca.* The door's already open, the key in it.

*Mountf.* What were those past by?

*Rocca.* Some scout of soldiers, I think.

*Mountf.* It may be well so, for I saw their  
They saw not us, I hope. [horses:

*Zan.* No, no, we were close;

Beside, they were far off.

*Mountf.* What time of night is't?

*Zan.* Much about twelve, I think.

*Rocca.* Let me go in first;

For, by the leaving open of the door here,  
There may be somebody in the church. Give me  
the lanthorn.

*Zan.* You'll love me now, I hope.

*Mountf.* Make that good to me  
Your promise is engaged for.

*Zan.* Why, she is there,  
Ready prepared; and much about this time  
Life will look up again.

*Rocca.* Come in; all's sure;  
Not a foot stirring, nor a tongue.

*Mountf.* Heaven bless me!  
I never enter'd, with such unholy thoughts,  
This place before.

*Zan.* You are a fearful fool!  
If men have appetites allowed 'em,  
And warm desires, are there not ends too for 'em?

*Mountf.* Whither shall we carry her?

*Rocca.* Why, to the bark, sir;  
I have provided one already waits us:  
The wind stands wond'rous fair too for our passage.

*Zan.* And there, when you have enjoy'd her,  
(for you have that liberty)

Let me alone to send her to feed fishes!

I'll no more sighs for her.

*Mountf.* Where is the monument?

Thou art sure she will awake about this time?

*Zan.* Most sure,

If she be not knockt o' th' head. Give me the lant-  
Here 'tis.—How is this? the stone off? [horn!

*Rocca.* Ay, and nothing  
Within the monument, that's worse; no body,  
I am sure of that, nor sign of any here,  
But an empty coffin.

*Mountf.* No lady?

*Rocca.* No, nor lord, sir;

This pie has been cut up before.

*Zan.* Either the devil

Must do these tricks—

*Mountf.* Or thou, damned one, worse!

Thou black swoln pitchy cloud of all my afflictions,  
Thou night-bag, gotten when the bright moon  
suffer'd,

Thou bell itself confined in flesh, what trick now?  
Tell me, and tell me quickly, what thy mischief  
Has done with her, and to what end, and whither  
Thou hast removed her body; or, by this holy place,  
This sword shall cut thee into thousand pieces,  
A thousand thousand, strew thee o'er the temple,  
A sacrifice to thy black sire, the devil!

*Rocca.* Tell him; you see he's angry.

*Zan.* Let him burst!

Neither his sword nor anger do I shake at;  
Nor will yield, to feed his poor suspicions,  
His idle jealousies, and mad-dogs' heats,  
One thought against myself. You have done a  
brave deed,

A manly, and a valiant piece of service,  
When you have kill'd me! reckon't amongst your  
battles!

I am sorry you are so poor, so weak a gentleman,  
Able to stand no fortune: I dispose of her?  
My mischief make her away? a likely project,  
I must play booty against myself! If anything  
I see the devil, and the devil's heir; [cross ye,  
All plagues, all mischiefs—

*Mountf.* Will you leave, and do yet?

*Zan.* I have done too much,

*Fr.* far too much, for such a thankless fellow!

If I be devil, you created me:

I never knew those arts, nor bloody practices,  
Plague o' your cunning heart, that mine of mis-  
Before your flatteries won 'em into me.— [chief!  
Here did I leave her, leave her with that certainty  
About this hour to wake again.

*Mountf.* Where is she?

This is the last demand.

*Zan.* Did I now know it,

And were I sure this were my latest minute,  
I would not tell thee: Strike, and then I'll curse  
thee.

*Rocca.* I see a light. Stand close, and leave  
We all miscarry else. [your angers!

*Enter GOMERA, and Page with a Torch.*

*Zan.* I am now careless.

*Mountf.* Peace, pr'ythee peace, sweet! peace!  
*Zan.* Stand close then. [all friends!

*Gom.* Wait there, boy, with the light, 'till I call  
to thee.—

In darkness was my soul and senses clouded  
When my fair jewel fell, the night of jealousy  
To all her blackness drawn about my judgment;  
No light was let into me, to distinguish  
Between my sudden anger and her honour:  
A blind sad pilgrimage shall be my penance;  
No comfort of the day will I look up at;  
Far darker than my jealous ignorance,  
Each place of my abode shall be; my prayers  
No ceremonious lights shall set off more;  
Bright arms, and all that carry lustre, life,  
Society, and solace, I forsake ye!  
And were it not once more to see her beauties,  
[For, in her bed of death, she must be sweet still]  
And on her cold sad lips seal my repentance,  
Thou child of Heaven, fair light, I could not miss  
thee.

*Mountf.* I know the tongue: 'Would I were  
out again!

I have done him too much wrong to look upon him.

*Zan.* There is no shifting now; boldness and  
confidence

Must carry it now away: He's but one neither,  
Naked as you are, of a strength far under.

*Mountf.* But he has a cause above me!

*Zan.* That's as you handle it.

*Rocca.* Peace! he may go again, and never see us.

*Gom.* I feel I weep apace; but where's the flood,  
The torrent of my tears, to drown my fault in?  
I would I could now, like a loaden cloud,  
Begotten in the moist south, drop to nothing!  
Give me the torch, boy.

*Rocca.* Now he must discover us.

*Zan.* He has already.—Never hide your head;  
Be bold and brave! If we must die, together—

*Gom.* Who's there? what friend to sorrow?—

The tomb wide open?

The stone off too? the body gone, by Heaven!  
Look to the door, boy! keep it fast!—Who are ye?  
What sacrilegious villains?—False Mountferrat,

The wolf to honour! has thy hellish hunger  
Brought thee to tear the body out o' th' tomb too?  
Has thy foul mind so far wrought on thee?—Ha!

Are you there too? Nay, then I spy a villainy  
I never dream'd of yet. Thou sinful usher,  
Bred from that rottenness, thou bawd to mischief,  
Do you blush through all your blackness? will not

*Zan.* I cannot speak. [that hide it?

*Gom.* You are well met, with your dam, sir.

Art thou a knight? did ever on that sword  
The Christian cause sit nobly? could that hand  
fight,

Guided by fame and fortune? that heart inflame  
With virtuous fires of valour! To fall off, [thee,  
Fall off so suddenly, and with such foulness,  
As the false angels did, from all their glory!

Thou art no knight! Honour thou never heardst of,  
Nor brave desires could ever build in that breast!

Treason, and tainted thoughts, are all the gods  
Thou worship'st, all the strength thou hast, and  
fortune!

Thou didst things out of fear, and false heart,  
villain,

Out of close traps and treacheries; they have  
*Mountf.* Thou ravest, old man. [rais'd thee.

*Gom.* Before thou get'st off from me,

Hadst thou the glory of thy first fights on thee,  
(Which thou hast basely lost) thy noblest fortunes,  
And in their greatest lutes, I would make thee,

Before we part, confess (nay, kneel, and do it,  
Nay, crying kneel, coldly, for mercy, crying)

Thou art the recreant'st rogue time ever nourish'd;  
Thou art a dog, I will make thee swear, a dog staved,  
A many cur dog! Do you creep behind the altar?  
Look how it sweats, to shelter such a rascal!

First, with thy venomous tooth infect her chaste  
life,

And then not dare to do? next, rob her rest,

Steal her dead body out o' th' grave—

*Mountf.* I have not.

*Gom.* Pr'ythee, come out; this is no place to  
Valiant Mountferrat, come! [quarrel in)

*Mountf.* I will not stir.

*Gom.* Thou hast thy sword about thee,  
That good sword that ne'er fail'd thee: Pr'ythee  
come!

We'll have but five strokes for it. On, on, boy!  
Here is one would fain be acquainted with thee,  
Would wond'rous fain cleave that calf's head of  
yours, sir;

Come, pr'ythee let's dispatch! the moon shines finely:

Pr'ythee, be kill'd by me! thou wilt be hang'd else; But, it may be, thou longest to be hang'd.

*Rocca.* Out with him, sir!  
You shall have my sword too; when he's dispatch'd We have the world before us. [once.]

*Gom.* Will thou walk, fellow?  
I never knew a rogue hang arse-ward so, And such a desperate knave too.

*Zan.* Pray go with him!  
Something I'll promise too.

*Mountf.* You would be kill'd then?  
No remedy, I see.

*Gom.* If thou darest do it?  
*Mountf.* Yes, now I dare. Lead out; I'll follow Under the mount I'll meet you. [low presently;

*Gom.* Go before me;  
I'll have you in a string too.

*Mountf.* As I am a gentleman, And by this holy place, I will not fail thee. Fear not, thou shalt be kill'd, take my word for it; I will not fail.

*Gom.* If thou scap'st, thou hast cats' luck. The mount?

*Mountf.* The same. Make haste, I am there before else.

*Gom.* Go, get ye home. Now if he 'scape, I am coward.

*Mountf.* Well, now I am resolved; and he shall find it. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.—*St. Thomas's Fort.*

*Enter MIRANDA, LUCINDA, and COLONNA.*

*Mir.* How is it with the lady?

*Luc.* Sir, as well

As it can be with one, who feeling knows now What is the curse the divine justice laid On the first sinful woman.

*Mir.* Is she in travail?

*Luc.* Yes, sir; and yet the troubles of her mind Afflict her more than what her body suffers; For, in the extremity of her pain, she cries out, "Why am I here? where is my lord Gomera?" Then sometimes names Miranda, and then sighs, As if to speak, what questionless she loves well, If heard, might do her injury.

*Col.* Heaven's sweet mercy  
Look gently on her!

*Mir.* Pr'ythee tell her, my prayers  
Are present with her; and, good wench, provide  
That she want nothing! What's thy name?

*Luc.* Lucinda.

*Mir.* Lucinda? there's a prosperous omen in it!  
Be a Lucia to her, and bring word  
That she is safe delivered of her burden,  
And thy reward's thy liberty.—[*Exit LUCINDA.*]

—Come, Colonna,

We will go see how the engineer has mounted  
The cannon the Great-master sent. Be careful  
To view the works, and learn the discipline  
That is used here! I am to leave the world;  
And for your service, which I have found faithful,  
The charge that's mine, if I have any power,  
Hereafter may concern you.

*Col.* I still find  
A noble master in you.

*Mir.* 'Tis but justice;  
Thou dost deserve it in thy care and duty. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE IV.—*Under the Ramparts.*

*Enter GOMERA, MOUNTFERRAT, ROCCA, and ZANTHIA.*

*Gom.* Here's even ground; I'll stir no foot before I have thy head. [yond it]

*Mountf.* Draw, Rocca!

*Gom.* Coward,  
Hath inward guilt robb'd thee as well of courage  
As honesty, that without odds thou darest not  
Answer a single enemy?

*Mountf.* All advantage  
That I can take, expect.

*Rocca.* We know you are valiant;  
Nor do we purpose to make further trial  
Of what you can do now, but to dispatch you.

*Mountf.* And therefore fight and pray together.

*Gom.* Villains,  
Whose baseness all disgraceful words made one  
Cannot express! so strong is the good cause  
That seconds me, that you shall feel, with horror  
To your proud hopes, what strength is in that arm,  
Though old, that holds a sword made sharp by  
justice.

*Zan.* You come then here to prate? [Fight.]

*Mountf.* Help, Rocca, now,  
Or I am lost for ever!—How comes this?

[*GOMERA disarms MOUNTFERRAT and ROCCA.*]

Are villainy and weakness twins?

*Rocca.* I am gone too.

*Gom.* You shall not 'scape me, wretches!

*Zan.* I must do it;

All will go wrong else. [*Draws a pistol and shoots him.*]

*Gom.* Treacherous, bloody woman,  
What hast thou done?

*Zan.* Done a poor woman's part,  
And in an instant, what these men so long  
Stood fooling for.

*Mountf.* This aid was unexpected;  
I kiss thee for't.

*Rocca.* His right arm's only shot,  
And that compell'd him to forsake his sword;  
He's else unwounded.

*Mountf.* Cut his throat!

*Zan.* Forbear!—

Yet do not hope 'tis with intent to save thee,  
But that thou may'st live to thy further torment,  
To see who triumphs over thee. Come, Mount-  
ferrat,

Here join thy foot to mine, and let our hearts  
Meet with our hands! The contract that is made  
And cemented with blood, as this of ours is,  
Is a more holy sanction, and much surer,  
Than all the superstitious ceremonies  
You Christians use.

*Enter NORANDINE.*

*Rocca.* Who's this?

*Mountf.* Betray'd again?

*Nor.* By the report it made, and by the wind,  
The pistol was discharged here.

*Gom.* Norandine,  
As ever thou loved'st at valour, or wear'st arms  
To punish baseness, shew it!

*Nor.* Oh, the devil!  
Gomera wounded, and my brache, Black Beauty,  
An actor in it?

*Zan.* If thou strikest, I'll shoot thee.

*Nor.* How! fright me with your pot-gun?—  
What art thou?

Good Heaven, the rogue, the traitor rogue, Mountferrat!

To swing the nest of you, is a sport unlook'd for. Hell's plagues consume you!

*Mountf.* As thou art a man, (I am wounded) give me time to answer thee!

*Gom.* Durst thou urge this? this hand can hold a sword yet.

*Nor.* Well done! to see this villain makes my hurts

Bleed fresh again; but had I not a bone whole, In such a cause I should do thus, thus, rascals!

[*Rushes against them.*]

*Enter Corporal and Watch.*

*Corp.* Disarm them, and shoot any that resists.  
*Gom.* Hold corporal! I am Gomera.

*Nor.* 'Tis well yet, that once in an age you can Remember what you watch for: I had thought, You had again been making out your parties For sucking pigs: 'Tis well. As you will answer The contrary with your lives, see these forth-  
*Corp.* That we shall do. [*coming!*]

[*They seize MOUNTFERRAT, ROCCA, and ZANTHIA.*]

*Nor.* You bleed apace.—Good soldiers, Go help him to a surgeon.

*Rocca.* [*To MOUNTFERRAT.*] Dare the worst, And suffer like yourself.

*Zan.* From me learn courage.

*Nor.* Now for Miranda! this news will be to As welcome as 'tis unexpected.—Corporal, [*him* There's something for thy care to-night. My horse there! [*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*An Apartment in the Fort.*

*Enter ORIANA and LUCINDA.*

*Ori.* How does my boy?

*Luc.* Oh, wond'rous lusty, madam; A little knight already: You shall live

To see him toss a Turk.

*Ori.* Gentle Lucinda, Much must I thank thee for thy care and service; And may I grow but strong to see Valetta, My husband, and my brother, thou shalt find I will not barely thank thee.

*Enter MIRANDA, NORANDINE, and COLONNA.*

*Mir.* Look, captain, we must ride away this morning!

The Auberge sits to-day, and the Great-master Writes plainly, I must or deliver in (The year expired) my probation-weed, Or take the cloak. You likewise, Norandine, For your full service, and your last assistance In false Mountferrat's apprehension, Are here commanded to associate me, My twin in this high honour.

*Nor.* I will none on't!—Do they think to bind me to live chaste, sober, and temperately, all days of my life? They may as soon tie an Englishman to live so!—I shall be a sweet Dane, a sweet captain, go up and down drinking small-beer, and swearing, 'Ods Neagues!—No; I'll live a squire at arms still; and do thou so too, an thou be'st wise. I have found the mystery now why the gentlemen wear but three bars of the cross, and the knights the whole one.

*Mir.* Why, captain?

*Nor.* Marry, sir, to put us in remembrance, we are but three-quarters crossed in our licence and pleasures; but the poor knights crossed altogether. The brothers at arms may yet meet with their sisters at arms, now and then, in brotherly love; but the poor knights cannot get a lady for love nor money: 'tis not so in other countries, I wis. Pray haste you! for I'll along, and see what will come on't. [*Exit.*]

*Mir.* Colonna, provide straight all necessaries For this remove, the litter for the lady, And let Lucinda bear her company! You shall attend on me.

*Col.* With all my duties. [*Exit.*]

*Mir.* How fare you, gracious mistress?

*Ori.* Oh, Miranda, You pleased to honour me with that fair title When I was free, and could dispose myself; But now, no smile, no word, no look, no touch, Can I impart to any, but as theft From my Gomera; and who dares accept Is an usurper.

*Mir.* Leave us. [*Exit LUCINDA.*] I have touch'd thee, [*Aside.*]

Thou fairer virtue, than thou art beautiful! Hold but this test, so rich an ore was never Tried by the hand of man, on the vast earth.— Sit, brightest Oriana! Is it sin Still to profess I love you, still to vow I shall do ever? Heaven my witness be, 'Tis not your eye, your cheek, your tongue, no part That superficially doth snare young men, Which has caught me! Read over in your thoughts The story that this man hath made of you, And think upon his merit.

*Ori.* Only thought Can comprehend it!

*Mir.* And can you be So cruel, thankless, to destroy his youth That saved your honour, gave you double life, Your own, and your fair infant's? that when Fortune

(The blind foe to all beauty, that is good) Banded you from one hazard to another, Was even Heaven's messenger, by Providence Call'd to the temple, to receive you there Into these arms, to give ease to your throes, As if't had thunder'd; take thy due, Miranda, For she was thine! Gomera's jealousy Struck death unto thy heart; to him be dead, And live to me, that gave thee second life! Let me but now enjoy thee! Oh, regard The torturing fires of my affections!

*Ori.* Oh, master them, Miranda, as I mine! Who follows his desires, such tyrants serves As will oppress him insupportably. My flames, Miranda, rise as high as thine, For I did love thee 'fore my marriage; Yet would I now consent, or could I think Thou wert in earnest, (which, by all the souls That have for chastity been sanctified, I cannot) in a moment I do know

Thou wouldst call fair Temperance up to rule thy blood.

Thy eye was ever chaste, thy countenance too, honest,

And all thy wooings was like maidens' talk.

Who yieldeth unto pleasures, and to lust,

Is a poor captive, that in golden fetters

And precious, as he thinks, but holding gyves,  
Frets out his life.

*Mir.* Find such another woman,  
And take her for his labour, any man!

*Ori.* I was not worthy of thee, at my best,  
(Heaven knew I was not; I had had thee else)  
Much less now, gentle sir. Miranda's deeds  
Have been as white as Oriana's fame,  
From the beginning to this point of time,  
And shall we now begin to stain both thus?  
Think on the legend which we two shall breed,  
Continuing as we are, for chastest dames  
And boldest soldiers to peruse and read,  
Ay, and read thorough, free from any act  
To cause the modest cast the book away,  
And the most honour'd captain fold it up.

*Mir.* Fairest, let go my hand! my pulse beats thick,

And my moved blood rides high in every vein!—  
Lord of thyself now, soldier, and ever!

I would not for Aleppo, this frail bark,  
This bark of flesh, no better steers-man had  
Than has Mountferrat's.—May you kiss me, lady?

*Ori.* No; though it be no essential injury,  
It is a circumstance due to my lord,  
To none else; and, my dearest friend, if hands  
Playing together kindle heat in you,  
What may the game at lips provoke unto?

*Mir.* Oh, what a tongue is here! Whilst she  
doth teach

My heart to hate my fond unlawful love,  
She talks me more in love, with love to her;  
My fires she quengeth with her arguments,  
But as she breathes 'em they blow fresher fires.—  
Sit further! now my flame cools. Husband! wife!  
There is some holy mystery in those names  
That sure the unmarried cannot understand.

*Ori.* Now thou art straight, and dost enamour  
So far beyond a carnal earthly love, [me  
My very soul dotes on thee, and my spirits  
Do embrace thine; my mind doth thy mind kiss;  
And in this pure conjunction we enjoy  
A heavenlier pleasure than if bodies met:  
This, this is perfect love! the other short,  
Yet languishing fruition. Every swain  
And sweating groom may clasp, but ours refined  
Two in ten ages cannot reach unto.  
Nor is our spiritual love a barren joy;  
For mark what blessed issue we'll beget,  
(Dearer than children to posterity)  
A great example to men's continence,  
And women's chastity; that is a child  
More fair and comfortable, than any heir!

*Mir.* If all wives were but such, Lust would  
One corner to inhabit; sin would be [not find  
So strange, remission superfluous.—  
But one petition, I have done.

*Ori.* What, sweet?

*Mir.* To call me lord, if the hard hand of death  
Seize on Gomera first.

*Ori.* Oh, much too worthy,  
How much you undervalue your own price,  
To give your unbought self for a poor woman,

That has been once sold, used, and lost her show!  
I am a garment worn, a vessel crack'd,  
A zone untied, a lily trod upon,

A fragrant flower crot by another's hand,  
My colour sullied, and my odour changed.  
If when I was new-blossom'd, I did fear  
Myself unworthy of Miranda's spring,  
Thus over-blown, and seeded, I am rather  
Fit to adorn his chimney than his bed.

*Mir.* Rise, miracle! save Malta with thy vir-  
tue!—

If words could make me proud, how has she spoke!  
[Appt.

Yet I will try her to the very block.—  
Hard-hearted and uncivil Oriana,  
Ingrateful payer of my industries,  
That with a soft painted hypocrisy  
Cozen'st and jeer'st at my perturbation,  
Expect a witty and a fell revenge!  
My comfort is, all men will think thee false:  
Beside, thy husband, having been thus long  
(On this occasion) in my fort, and power—

*Enter NORANDINE, COLONNA, and LUCINDA with a Child.*

I'll hear no more words!—Captain, let's away!

With all care see to her; and you, Lucinda,  
Attend her diligently: She is a wonder!

*Nor.* Have you found she was well delivered?  
What, had she a good midwife? is all well?

*Mir.* You are merry, Norandine.

*Luc.* Why weep you, lady?

*Ori.* Take the poor babe along.

*Col.* Madam, 'tis here.

*Ori.* Dissembling death, why didst thou let me  
live

To see this change, my greatest cause to grieve?  
[Exit.

## SCENE II.—VALETTA. *The Hall of the Order.*

*A Synnet. Enter ASTORIUS, CASPIROT, VALETTA, GOMERA, Knights; MOUNTFERRAT guarded by Corporal and Soldiers; ZANTHIA; a Gentleman with a clock, sword, and spurs.*

*Val.* A tender husband hast thou shew'd thyself,  
My dearest brother, and thy memory,  
After thy life, in brazen characters  
Shall monumentally be registered  
To ages consequent, till Time's running hand  
Beats back the world to undistinguish'd chaos,  
And on the top of that thy name shall stand  
Fresh, and without decay.

*Gom.* Oh, honour'd sir!

If hope of this, or any bliss to come,  
Could lift my load of grief off from my soul,  
Or expiate the trespass 'gainst my wife,  
That in one hour's suspicion I begat,  
I might be won to be a man again,  
And fare like other husbands, sleep and eat,  
Laugh, and forget my pleasing penitence;  
But 'till old Nature can make such a wife  
Again, I vow ne'er to resume the order  
And habits that to men are necessary;  
All breath I'll spend in sighs, all sound in groans,  
And know no company but my wasting moans.

*Asto.* This will be wilful murder on yourself,  
Nor like a Christian do you bear the chance  
Which the inscrutable will of Heaven admits.

*Gom.* What would you have my weakness do,  
Suffer'd itself thus to be practised on [that

By a damn'd hell-hound, and his agent dam,  
The impious midwife to abortive births,  
And cruel instrument to his decrees?  
By forgery they first assailed her life,  
Heaven playing with us yet in that, he wrought  
My dearest friend, the servant to her virtue,  
To combat me, against his mistress' truth.  
That yet effectless, this enchanting witch  
Bred baneful jealousy against my lady,  
My most immaculate lady, which seiz'd on her  
Almost to death. Oh, yet, not yet content,  
She in my hand put (to restore her life,  
As I imagined) what did execute  
Their devilish malice. Further, great with child  
Was this poor innocent: That too was lost;  
They doubled death upon her! Not staying there,  
They have done violence unto her tomb,  
Not granting rest unto her in the grave.  
I wish Miranda had enjoy'd my prize;  
For sure I am punish'd for usurping her.  
Oh, what a tiger is resisted lust!  
How it doth forage all!

*Mountf.* Part of this tale  
I grant you true; but 'twas not poison given her.

*Zan.* I would it had! we had been far enough,  
If we had been so wise; and had not now  
Stood curt'sing for your mercies here.

*Mountf.* Beside,  
What is become o' th' body we know not.

*Val.* Peace, impudents!  
And, dear Gomera, practise patience,  
As I myself must: By some means at last  
We shall dissolve this riddle.

*Gom.* Wherefore comes  
This villain in the festival array,  
As if he triumph'd for his treachery?

*Cast.* That is by our appointment: Give us  
You shall know why anon. [leave;

*Enter one of the Esguard.*

*Esg.* The gentlemen are come.

*Val.* Truce then awhile  
With our sad thoughts!—

*Enter MIRANDA, NORANDINE, and COLONNA.*

What, are ye both resolved?

*Nor.* Not I, my lord: Your downright captain  
still

I'll live, and serve you. Not that altogether  
I want compunction of conscience;  
I have enough to save me, and that's all:  
Bar me from drink, and drabs? even hang me too!  
You must even make your captains capons first!  
I have too much flesh for this spiritual knight-  
And therefore do desire forbearance, sir, [hood,  
Till I am older, or more mortified;  
I am too sound yet.

*Val.* What say you, Miranda?

*Mir.* With all pure zeal to Heaven, duty to you,  
I come to undergo it.

*Val.* Proceed to th' ceremony.

*Gom.* Before you match with this bright ho-  
nour'd title,

Admired Miranda, pardon that in thought  
I ever did transgress against your virtue;  
And may you find more joy with your new bride,  
Than poor Gomera e'er enjoy'd with his!  
(But 'twas mine own crime, and I suffer for't.)  
Long wear your dignity, and worthily,  
Whilst I obscurely in some corner vanish!

*Mir.* Have stronger thoughts, and better.—

First, I crave,

According to the order of the court,  
I may dispose my captives, and the fort,  
That with a clean and purified heart  
The fittier I may induce my robe.

*All.* 'Tis granted.

*Enter ORIANA veiled, Ladies, LUCINDA with a Child.*

*Mir.* Bring the captives!—To your charge  
And staid tuition, my most noble friend,  
I then commend this lady. Start not off;  
A fairer and a chaster never lived.  
By her own choice you are her guardian;  
For telling her I was to leave my fort,  
And to abandon quite all worldly cares,  
Her own request was, to Gomera's hands  
She might be given in custody, for she had heard  
He was a gentleman, wise, and temperate,  
Full of humanity to women-kind,  
And 'cause he had been married, knew the better  
How to entreat a lady.

*Val.* What countrywoman is she?

*Mir.* Born a Greek.

*Val.* Gomera, 'twill be barbarous to deny  
A lady, that unto your refuge flies,  
And seeks to shrowd her under Virtue's wing.

*Gom.* Excuse me, noble sir! Oh, think me not

So dull a devil, to forget the loss  
Of such a matchless wife as I possess'd,  
And ever to endure the sight of woman!  
Were she the abstract of her sex for form,  
The only warehouse of perfection,  
Were there no rose nor lily but her cheek,  
No music but her tongue, virtue but here,  
She must not rest near me. My vow is graven  
Here in my heart, irrevocably breathed;  
And when I break it—

*Asto.* This is rudeness, Spaniard;  
Unseasonably you play the Timonist,  
Put on a disposition is not yours,  
Which neither fits you, nor becomes you.

*Gom.* Sir—

*Cast.* We cannot force you, but we would per-  
suade.

*Gom.* Beseech you, sir, no more! I am resolved  
To forsake Malta, tread a pilgrimage  
To fair Jerusalem, for my lady's soul,  
And will not be diverted.

*Mir.* You must bear  
This child along with ye then.

*Gom.* What child?

*All.* How's this?

*Mir.* Nay, then, Gomera, thou art injurious!  
This child is thine, and this rejected lady  
Thou hast as often known as thine own wife;  
And this I'll make good on thee, with my sword.

*Gom.* Thou durst as well blaspheme!—If such  
a scandal—

(I crave the rights due to a gentleman)

*Woman, unveil!*

*Ori.* Will you refuse me yet?

[Unveiling.

*Gom.* My wife!

*Val.* My sister!

*Gom.* Somebody thank Heaven!  
I cannot speak.

*All.* All praise be ever given!

*Mountf.* This saves our lives. Yet 'would she  
had been dead!

[Apart.

The very sight of her afflicts me more  
Than fear of punishment, or my disgrace.

*Val.* How came you to the temple?

*Mir.* Sir, to do

My poor devotions, and to offer thanks  
For 'scaping a temptation near perform'd  
With this fair virgin.—I restore a wife  
Earth cannot parallel; and, busy Nature,  
If thou wilt still make women, but remember  
To work 'em by this sampler!—Take heed, sir,  
Henceforth you never doubt, sir.

*Gom.* When I do,

Death take me suddenly!

*Mir.* To increase your happiness,  
To your best wife take this addition.

[Shows him the child.

*Gom.* Alack, my poor knave!

*Val.* The confession

The Moor made, it seems, was truth.

*Nor.* Marry was it, sir; the only truth that  
ever issued out of hell, which her black jaws re-  
semble. A plague o' your bacon-face! you must  
be giving drinks with a vengeance! Ah, thou  
branded bitch!—Do you stare, goggles?—I hope  
to make winter-boots o' thy hide yet; she fears  
not damning! Hell-fire cannot parch her blacker  
than she is.—Do you grin, chimney-sweeper?

*Ori.* What is't Miranda?

*Mir.* That you would please Lucinda might  
attend you.

*Col.* That suit, sir, I consent not to.

[Throws off his disguise.

*Luo.* My husband?

My dearest Angelo?

*Nor.* More jiggam-bobs?—Is not this the fel-  
low that swam like a duck to the shore in our sea-  
service?

*Col.* The very same. Do not you know me now,  
sir?

My name is Angelo, though Colonna veil'd it,  
Your countryman and kinsman, born in Florence;  
Who from the neighbour-island here of Goza  
Was captive led, in that unfortunate day  
When the Turk bore with him three thousand souls.  
Since, in Constantinople have I lived,  
Where I beheld this Turkish damsel first.  
A tedious suitor was I for her love;  
And, pitying such a beauteous case should hide  
A soul prophaned with infidelity,  
I labour'd her conversion, with my love,  
And doubly won her: To fair faith her soul  
She first betrothed, and then her faith to me.  
But fearful there to consummate this contract,  
We fled, and in that flight were ta'en again  
By those same gallies 'fore Valetta fought:  
Since, in your service I attended here,  
Where, what I saw and heard hath joy'd me more  
Than all my past afflictions grieved before.

*Val.* Wonders crown wonders! Take thy wife.  
—Miranda,

Be henceforth call'd our Malta's better angel;  
And thou her evil, Mountferrat.

*Nor.* We'll call him Cacodemon, with his black  
gib there, his Succuba, his devil's seed, his spawn  
of Phlegethon, that, o' my conscience, was bred o'  
the spume of Cocytus.—Do you snarl, you black  
Gill? She looks like the picture of America.

*Val.* Why stay we now?

*Mir.* This last petition to the court;  
I may bequeath the keeping of my fort

To this my kinsman, toward the maintenance  
Of him and his fair virtuous wife: Discreet,  
Loyal, and valiant, I dare give him you.

*Val.* You must not ask in vain, sir.

*Col.* My best thanks

To you, my noble cousin, and my service  
To the whole court: May I deserve this bounty!

*Val.* Proceed to th' ceremony. One of our  
Degrade Mountferrat first! [Esquard

*Mountf.* I will not sue

For mercy; 'twere in vain: Fortune, thy worst!

[Music.

*A curtain is drawn. An altar discover'd, with tapers  
and a book on it. The two Bishops stand on each  
side of it; MOUNTFERRAT, as the song is singing, is  
led up the altar.*

See, see, the stain of honour, Virtue's foe,

Of virgins' fair flames the foul overthrow!

That broken hath his oath of chastity,

Dishonour'd much this holy dignity,

Off with his robe, expel him forth this place,

Whilst we rejoice, and sing at his disgrace!

*Val.* Since by thy actions thou hast made thyself  
Unworthy of that worthy sign thou wear'st,  
And of our sacred order, into which  
For former virtues we received thee first,  
According to our statutes, ordinances,  
For praise unto the good, a terror to  
The bad, and an example to all men;  
We here deprive thee of our habit, and  
Declare thee unworthy our society,  
From which we do expel thee, as a rotten,  
Corrupted, and contagious member.

*Esq.* Using th' authority the superior  
Hath given unto me, I untie this knot,  
And take from thee the pleasing yoke of Heaven:  
We take from off thy breast this holy cross,  
Which thou hast made thy burden, not thy prop;  
Thy spurs we spoil thee of, leaving thy heels  
Bare of thy honour, that have kick'd against  
Our order's precepts; next, we reave thy sword,  
And give thee armless to thy enemies,  
For being foe to goodness, and to God;  
Last, 'bout thy stiff neck we this halter hang,  
And leave thee to the mercy of the court.

*Val.* Invest Miranda.

#### SONG.

Fair child of Virtue, Honour's bloom,  
That here with burning zeal dost come,  
With joy to ask the white-cross cloak,  
And yield unto this pleasing yoke!  
That being young, vows chastity,  
And chusest wilful poverty;  
As this flame mounts, so mount thy zeal! thy glory  
Rise past the stars, and fix in Heaven thy story!

1 *Bishop.* What crave you, gentle sir?

*Mir.* Humble admittance

To be a brother of the holy hospital  
Of great Jerusalem.

2 *Bishop.* Breathe out your vow.

*Mir.* To Heaven, and all the bench of saints  
(Whose succour I implore to enable me) [above,  
I vow henceforth a chaste life; not to enjoy  
Anything proper to myself; obedience  
To my superiors, whom religion  
And Heaven shall give me; ever to defend  
The virtuous fame of ladies, and to oppugn  
Even unto death the Christian enemy:  
This do I vow to accomplish!

*Esg.* Who can tell,  
Has he made other vow, or promised marriage  
To any one, or is in servitude?

*All.* He's free from all these.

*1 Bishop.* Put on his spurs, and gird him with  
the sword,

The scourge of infidels, and types of speed.  
Buldest thy faith on this? [*Presenting the cross.*]

*Mir.* On him that died

On such a sacred figure, for our sins.

*2 Bishop.* Here then we fix it on thy left side,  
for

Thy increase of faith, Christian defence, and  
service

To th' poor; and thus near to thy heart we plant it,  
That thou mayst love it even with all thy heart;  
With thy right-hand protect, preserve it whole;  
For if thou fighting 'gainst Heaven's enemies  
Shalt fly away, abandoning the cross,  
The ensign of thy holy general,  
With shame thou justly shalt be robb'd of it,  
Chased from our company, and cut away  
As an infectious putrified limb.

*Mir.* I ask no favour.

*1 Bishop.* Then receive the yoke  
Of him that makes it sweet and light; in which  
Thy soul find her eternal rest.

[*Puts the cross on him.*]

*Val.* Most welcome!

*All.* Welcome, our noble brother!

*Val.* Break up the court.—Mountferrat, though  
your deeds,

Conspiring 'gainst the lives of innocents,  
Have forfeited your own, we will not stain  
Our white cross with your blood: Your doom is  
To marry this co-agent of your mischiefs: [then  
Which done, we banish you [to] the continent:  
If either, after three days, here be found,  
The hand of law lays hold upon your lives.

*Nor.* Away, French stallion! Now you have a  
Barbary mare of your own; go leap her, and en-  
gender young devillings!

*Val.* We will find something, noble Norandine,  
To quit your merit.—So, to civil feasts,  
According to our customs; and all pray  
The dew of grace bless our new knight to-day!

[*Exeunt.*]

# LOVE'S CURE; OR, THE MARTIAL MAID.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ASSISTANT, or GOVERNOR.  
 VITELLI, a young Gentleman, Enemy to ALVAREZ.  
 LAMORAL, a fighting Gallant, Friend to VITELLI.  
 ANASTRO, an honest Gentleman, Friend to VITELLI.  
 DON ALVAREZ, Enemy to VITELLI.  
 SYAVEDRA, Friend to ALVAREZ.  
 LUCIO, Son to ALVAREZ, a young Gentleman, in  
 Woman's Habit.  
 ALQUAHER, a sharking panderly Constable.  
 PACHICO, a Cobler.  
 MENDOLA, a Butcher, } of Worship.  
 METALDIE, a Smith,  
 PIORATO, a Swordsman.

LAZARILLO, PACHICO'S Angry Servant.  
 BORADILLA SPINDOLA ZANCHO, a Witty Knave,  
 Servant to EUGENIA, and Steward to ALVAREZ.  
 STEFRANO, Servant to EUGENIA.  
 Herald.  
 Officer.

EUGENIA, a virtuous Lady, Wife to DON ALVAREZ.  
 CLARA, Daughter to EUGENIA, the MARTIAL MAID,  
 valiant and chaste, enamour'd of VITELLI.  
 GENEVORA, Sister to VITELLI, in Love with LUCIO.  
 MALBODA, a Wanton Mistress of VITELLI.

## SCENE,—SEVIL.

## PROLOGUE,

### AT THE REVIVING OF THIS PLAY.

STATUES and pictures challenge price and fame,  
 If they can justly boast and prove they came  
 From Phidias or Apelles. None deny,  
 Poets and Painters hold a sympathy;  
 Yet their works may decay, and lose their grace,  
 Receiving blemish in their limbs or face;  
 When the mind's art has this pre-eminence,  
 She still retaineth her first excellence.  
 Then why should not this dear piece be esteem'd  
 Child to the richest fancies that e'er teen'd?

When not their meanest offspring that came forth,  
 But bore the image of their fathers' worth.  
 Beaumont's and Fletcher's, whose desert outweighs  
 The best applause, and their least sprig of bays  
 Is worthy Phœbus; and who comes to gather  
 Their fruits of wit, he shall not rob the treasure.  
 Nor can you ever surfeit of the plenty,  
 Nor can you call them rare, though they be dainty:  
 The more you take, the more you do them right;  
 And we will thank you for your own delight.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter VITELLI, LAMORAL, and ANASTRO.

Vitelli. Alvarez pardon'd?

Ana. And return'd.

Lam. I saw him land

At St. Lucar's; and such a general welcome  
 Fame, as harbinger to his brave actions,  
 Had with the easy people prepared for him,  
 As if by his command alone, and fortune,  
 Holland, with those Low Provinces that hold out  
 Against the arch-duke, were again compell'd  
 With their obedience to give up their lives  
 To be at his devotion.

Vit. You amaze me! [Sevil]  
 For though I have heard, that when he fled from

To save his life (then forfeited to law  
 For murdering Don Pedro my dear uncle)  
 His extremes wants enforced him to take pay  
 In th' army, sat down then before Ostend;  
 'Twas never yet reported, by whose favour  
 He durst presume to entertain a thought  
 Of coming home with pardon.

Ana. 'Tis our nature  
 Or not to hear, or not to give belief  
 To what we wish far from our enemies.

Lam. Sir, 'tis most certain, the infanta's letters,  
 Assisted by the arch-duke's, to King Philip,  
 Have not alone secured him from the rigour  
 Of our Castilian justice, but return'd him  
 A free man, and in grace.

Vit. By what cursed means

Could such a fugitive arise unto  
The knowledge of their highnesses? Much more,  
(Though known) to stand but in the least degree  
Of favour with them?

*Lam.* To give satisfaction

To your demand, (though to praise him I hate  
Can yield me small contentment) I will tell you,  
And truly; since, should I detract his worth,  
'Twould argue want of merit in myself.  
Briefly to pass his tedious pilgrimage  
For sixteen years, a banish'd guilty man,  
And to forget the storms, the affrights, the horrors,  
His constancy, not fortune overcame,  
I bring him, with his little son, grown man,  
(Though 'twas said here he took a daughter with  
To Ostend's bloody siege, that stage of war, [him]  
Wherein the flower of many nations acted,  
And the whole Christian world spectators were;  
There by his son (or were he by adoption  
Or Nature his) a brave scene was presented,  
Which I made choice to speak of, since from that  
The good success of Alvarez had beginning.

*Vit.* So I love virtue in an enemy,  
That I desire in the relation of  
This young man's glorious deed, you'd keep your-  
A friend to truth, and it. [self]

*Lam.* Such was my purpose.

The town being oft assaulted, but in vain,  
To dare the proud defendants to a sally,  
Weary of ease, Don Inigo Peralta,  
Son to the general of our Castile forces,  
All arm'd, advanced within shot of their walls,  
From whence the musqueteers play'd thick upon  
him;

Yet he, brave youth, as careless of the danger  
As careful of his honour, drew his sword,  
And waving it about his head, as if  
He dared one spirited like himself to trial,  
Of single valour, he made his retreat,  
With such a slow, and yet majestic pace,  
As if he still call'd loud, "Dare none come on?"  
When suddenly, from a postern of the town  
Two gallant horsemen issued, and o'ertook him,  
The army looking on, yet not a man  
That durst relieve the rash adventurer;  
Which Lucio, son to Alvarez, then seeing,  
As in the vant-guard he sat bravely mounted,  
(Or were it pity of the youth's misfortune,  
Care to preserve the honour of his country,  
Or bold desire to get himself a name)

He made his brave horse like a whirlwind bear  
Among the combatants; and in a moment [him]  
Discharged his petronel with such sure aim,  
That of the adverse party from his horse  
One tumbled dead; then wheeling round, and  
drawing

A falchion, swift as lightning he came on  
Upon the other, and with one strong blow,  
In view of the amazed town and camp,  
He struck him dead, and brought Peralta off  
With double honour to himself.

*Vit.* 'Twas brave!

But the success of this?

*Lam.* The camp received him

With acclamations of joy and welcome;  
And for addition to the fair reward,  
(Being a massy chain of gold given to him  
By young Peralta's father) he was brought  
To the infants's presence, kiss'd her hand,  
And from that lady, (greater in her goodness

Than her high birth) had this encouragement:  
"Go on, young man! Yet, not to feed thy valour  
With hope of recompense to come from me,  
For present satisfaction of what's past,  
Ask anything that's fit for me to give  
And thee to take, and be assured of it."

*Ana.* Excellent princess!

*Vit.* And stiled worthily

The heart-blood, nay, the soul of soldiers,  
But what was his request?

*Lam.* That the repeal

Of Alvarez makes plain: He humbly begg'd  
His father's pardon, and so movingly  
Told the sad story of your uncle's death,  
That the infants wept; and instantly  
Granting his suit, working the arch-duke to it,  
Their letters were directed to the king,  
With whom they so prevailed, that Alvarez  
Was freely pardon'd.

*Vit.* 'Tis not in the king

To make that good.

*Ana.* Not in the king? What subject  
Dares contradict his power?

*Vit.* In this I dare,

And will; and not call his prerogative

In question, nor presume to limit it.

I know he is the master of his laws,

And may forgive the forfeits made to them,

But not the injury done to my honour:

And since (forgetting my brave uncle's merits,  
And many services, under duke d'Alva)

He suffers him to fall, wresting from Justice  
The powerful sword, that would revenge his death,

I'll fill with this Astrea's empty hand,  
And in my just wreak make this arm the king's.

My deadly hate to Alvarez, and his house,

Which as I grew in years hath still increased,  
(As if it call'd on Time to make me man)

Slept while it had no object for my fury,  
But a weak woman, and her talk'd-of daughter;

But now, since there are quarries worth her flight,  
Both in the father and his hopeful son,

I'll boldly cast her off, and gorge her full  
With both their hearts: To further which, your

friendship,

And oaths! Will your assistance let your deeds

Make answer to me? Useless are all words,

Till you have writ performance with your swords.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Room in the House of ALVAREZ.

Enter BOBADILLA and LUCIO in woman's clothes.

*Lucio.* Go, fetch my work. This ruff was not  
well starch'd,

So tell the maid; 't has too much blue in it:  
And look you that the partridge and the pullen  
Have clean meat and fresh water, or my mother  
Is like to hear on't.

*Bob.* Oh, good St. Jaques, help me! Was there  
ever such a hermaphrodite heard of? Would any  
wench living, that should hear and see what I do,  
be wrought to believe, that the best of a man lies  
under this petticoat, and that a cod-piece were far  
fitter here than a pinn'd placket?

*Lucio.* You had best talk filthily, do; I have a  
tongue

To tell my mother, as well as ears to hear  
Your ribaldry.

*Bob.* Nay, you have ten women's tongues that

way, I am sure!—Why, my young master, or mistress, madam, don, or what you will, what the devil have you to do with pullen or partridge? or to sit pricking on a clout all day?—You have a better needle, I know, and might make better work, if you had grace to use it.

*Lucio.* Why, how dare you speak this before me, sirrah?

*Bob.* Nay, rather, why dare not you do what I speak? Pox, though my lady, your mother, for fear of Vitelli and his faction, hath brought you up like her daughter, and has kept you these twenty years (which is ever since you were born) a close prisoner within doors; yet since you are a man, and are as well provided as other men are, methinks you should have the same motions of the flesh as other cavaliers of us are inclined unto.

*Lucio.* Indeed, you have cause to love those wanton motions,

They having holpe you to an excellent whipping, For doing something (I but put you in mind of it) With th' Indian maid, the governor sent my mother From Mexico.

*Bob.* Why, I but taught her a Spanish trick in charity, and holpe the king to a subject, that may live to take Grave Maurice prisoner, and that was more good to the state, than a thousand such as you are ever like to do. And I will tell you, (in a fatherly care of the infant, I speak it) if he live (as, bless the babe, in passion I remember him!) to your years, shall he spend his time in pinning, painting, purling, and perfuming, as you do? No; he shall to the wars, use his Spanish pike, though with the danger of the lash, as his father has done; and when he is provoked, as I am now, draw his Toledo desperately, as—

*Lucio.* You will not kill me? Oh!

*Bob.* I knew this would silence him: How he hides his eyes!—If he were a wench now, as he seems, what an advantage had I, drawing two Tolledos when one can do this! But—Oh me, my lady! I must put up.—Young master, I did but jest. Oh, Custom, what hast thou made of him!

*Enter EUGENIA and STEPHANO.*

*Eug.* For bringing this, be still my friend; no A servant to me. [more]

*Bob.* What's the matter?

*Eug.* Here, Even here, where I am happy to receive Assurance of my Alvarez' return, I will kneel down; and may those holy thoughts That now possess me wholly, make this place A temple to me, where I may give thanks For this unhop'd-for blessing, Heaven's kind hand Hath pour'd upon me!

*Lucio.* Let my duty, madam, Presume, if you have cause of joy, to entreat I may share in it.

*Bob.* 'Tis well, he has forgot how I frighted him yet.

*Eug.* Thou shalt: But first kneel with me, Lucio, No more Posthumia now! thou hast a father, A father living to take off that name, Which my too-credulous fears, that he was dead, Bestow'd upon thee. Thou shalt see him, Lucio, And make him young again by seeing thee, Who only hadst a being in my womb When he went from me, Lucio. Oh, my joys So far transport me, that I must forget

The ornaments of matrons, modesty, And grave behaviour! But let all forgive me, If in th' expression of my soul's best comfort, Though old, I do a while forget mine age, And play the wanton in the entertainment Of those delights I have so long despaired of!

*Lucio.* Shall I then see my father?

*Eug.* This hour, Lucio;

Which reckon the beginning of thy life, I mean that life in which thou shalt appear To be such as I brought thee forth, a man. This womanish disguise, in which I have So long conceal'd thee, thou shalt now cast off, And change those qualities thou didst learn from me

For masculine virtues; for which seek no tutor, But let thy father's actions be thy precepts:— And for thee, Zanchò, now expect reward For thy true service.

*Bob.* Shall I?—You hear, fellow Stephano? learn to know me more respectfully!—How dost thou think I shall become the steward's chair? ha? will not these slender haunches shew well with a chain and a gold night-cap after supper, when I take the accounts?

*Eug.* Haste, and take down those blacks, with which my chamber

Hath, like the widow, her sad mistress, mourn'd, And hang up for it the rich Persian arras, Used on my wedding-night; for this to me Shall be a second marriage! Send for music, And will the cooks to use their best of cunning To please the palate.

*Bob.* Will your ladyship have a potatoe-pie? 'Tis a good stirring dish for an old lady after a long Lent.

*Eug.* Begone, I say! Why, sir, you can go faster?

*Bob.* I could, madam; but I am now to practise the steward's pace; that's the reward I look for. Every man must fashion his gait according to his calling: You, fellow Stephano, may walk faster to overtake preferment; so, usher me.

*Lucio.* Pray, madam, let the waistcoat I last wrought

Be made up for my father! I will have A cap, and boot-hose, suitable to it.

*Eug.* Of that

We'll think hereafter, Lucio; our thoughts now Must have no object but thy father's welcome; To which, thy help!

*Lucio.* With humble gladness, madam. [Exit.]

### SCENE III.—A Hall in the Same.

*Enter ALVAREZ and CLARA in man's attire.*

*Alv.* Where lost we Syavedra?

*Clara.* He was met,

Entering the city, by some gentlemen, Kinsmen, as he said, of his own, with whom For compliment-sake (for so I think he term'd it) He was compell'd to stay; though I much wonder A man that knows to do, and has done well In the head of his troop, when the bold foe charged home,

Can learn so suddenly to abuse his time In apish entertainment. For my part, (By all the glorious rewards of war) I had rather meet ten enemies in the field,

All sworn to fetch my head, than be brought on  
To change an hour's discourse with one of these  
Smooth city-fools, or tissue cavaliers,  
(The only gallants, as they wisely think)  
To get a jewel, or a wanton kiss  
From a court-lip, though painted.

*Alc.* My love Clara,

(For Lucio is a name thou must forget,  
With Lucio's bold behaviour) though thy breeding  
I' th' camp, may plead something in the excuse  
Of thy rough manners, custom having changed  
(Though not thy sex) the softness of thy nature,  
And Fortune, then a cruel step-dame to thee,  
Imposed upon thy tender sweetness burdens  
Of hunger, cold, wounds, want, such as would crack  
The sinews of a man, not born a soldier;  
Yet, now she smiles, and like a natural mother  
Looks gently on thee, Clara, entertain  
Her proffer'd bounties with a willing bosom:  
Thou shalt no more have need to use thy sword;  
Thy beauty (which even Belgia bath not alter'd)  
Shall be a stronger guard, to keep my Clara,  
Than that has been (though never used but nobly):  
And know thus much—

*Clara.* Sir, I know only that  
It stands not with my duty to gain—say you  
In anything: I must and will put on  
What fashion you think best, though I could wish  
I were what I appear.

*Alc.* Endeavour rather  
To be what you are, Clara; entering here,  
As you were born, a woman. [Music.]

*Enter EUGENIA, LUCIO, and SERVANTS.*

*Eug.* Let choice music,  
In the best voice that e'er touch'd human ear,  
(For joy hath tied my tongue up) speak your  
welcome!

*Alc.* My soul (for thou givest new life to my  
spirit) [Embraces her.]

Myriads of joy, though short in number of  
Thy virtues, fall on thee! Oh, my Eugenia,  
The assurance that I do embrace thee, makes  
My twenty years of sorrow but a dream;  
And by the nectar which I take from these  
I feel my age restored, and, like old Aeson,  
Grow young again.

*Eug.* My lord, long wish'd for, welcome!  
'Tis a sweet briefness! yet in that short word  
All pleasures which I may call mine begin,  
And may they long increase, before they find  
A second period! Let mine eyes now surfeit  
On this so-wish'd-for object, and my lips  
Yet modestly pay back the parting kiss  
You trusted with them, when you fled from Sevil,  
With little Clara, my sweet daughter! Lives she?  
Yet I could chide myself, having you here,  
For being so covetous of all joys at once,  
To inquire for her; you being alone, to me  
My Clara, Lucio, my lord, myself,  
Nay, more than all the world!

*Alc.* As you to me are.

*Eug.* Sit down and let me feed upon the story  
Of your past dangers, now you are here in safety!  
It will give relish, and fresh appetite  
To my delights, if such delights can cloy me.  
Yet do not, Alvarez! let me first yield you  
Account of my life in your absence, and  
Make you acquainted how I have preserved  
The jewel left lock'd up within my womb,

When you, in being forced to leave your country,  
Suffer'd a civil death.

*Alc.* Do, my Eugenia;  
'Tis that I most desire to hear.

*Eug.* Then know—

*Alc.* What noise is that?

[Within clashing of swords.]

*Syv.* [Within.] If you are noble enemies,  
Oppress me not with odds, but kill me fairly!

*Vit.* [Within.] Stand off! I am too many of  
myself.

[Enter BORADILLA.]

*Bob.* Murder, murder, murder! Your friend, my  
lord, Don Syavedra, is set upon in the streets, by  
your enemies, Vitelli and his faction: I am almost  
kill'd with looking on them. [sword,

*Alc.* I'll free him, or fall with him! Draw thy  
And follow me! [Exit.]

*Clara.* Fortune, I give thee thanks  
For this occasion once more to use it. [Exit.]

*Bob.* Nay, hold not me, madam! If I do any  
hurt, hang me.

*Luc.* Oh, I am dead with fear! Let's fly into  
Your closet, mother.

*Eug.* No hour of my life  
Secure of danger? Heaven be merciful,  
Or now at once dispatch me!

[Enter VITELLI, pursued by ALVAREZ and SYAVEDRA,  
CLARA beating off ANASTRO.]

*Clara.* Follow him!  
Leave me to keep these off.

*Alc.* Assault my friend,  
So near my house?

*Vit.* Nor in it will spare thee,  
Though 'twere a temple; and I'll make it one,  
I being the priest, and thou the sacrifice,  
I'll offer to my uncle.

*Alc.* Haste thou to him,  
And say I sent thee! [They fight.]

*Clara.* 'Twas put bravely by—  
And that; yet he comes on, and boldly; rare!  
I' th' wars, where emulation and example  
Join to encrease the courage, and make less  
The danger, valour, and true resolution  
Never appeared so lovely—brave again!  
Sure he is more than man; and if he fall,  
The best of virtue, fortitude, would die with him:  
And can I suffer it? forgive me, duty!  
So I love valour, as I will protect it  
Against my father, and redeem it, though  
'Tis forfeited by one I hate.

*Vit.* Come on!

All is not lost yet: you shall buy me dearer  
Before you have me; keep off.

*Clara.* Fear me not!

Thy worth has took me prisoner, and my sword  
For this time knows thee only for a friend,  
And to all else I turn the point of it.

*Syv.* Defend your father's enemy?

*Alc.* Art thou mad?

*Clara.* Are ye men rather! Shall that valour,  
Begot you lawful honour in the wars, [which]  
Prove now the parent of an infamous bastard,  
So foul, yet so long-lived, as murder will  
Be to your shames? Have each of you, alone,  
With your own dangers only, purchased glory  
From multitudes of enemies, not allowing  
Those nearest to you to have part in it,  
And do you now join, and lend mutual help  
Against a single opposite? Hath the Mercy

Of the great king but newly wash'd away  
The blood, that with the forfeit of your life  
Cleaved to your name and family, like an ulcer,  
In this again to set a deeper dye upon  
Your infamy? You'll say he is your foe,  
And by his rashness call'd on his own ruin;  
Remember yet, he was first wrong'd, and honour  
Spurr'd him to what he did; and next the place  
Where now he is, your house, which by the laws  
Of hospitable duty should protect him;  
Have you been twenty years a stranger to it,  
To make your entrance now in blood? or think  
you

Your countryman, a true-born Spaniard, will be  
An offering fit to please the genius of it?  
No; in this I'll presume to teach my father,  
And this first act of disobedience shall  
Confirm I am most dutiful.

*Alc.* I am pleased

*[Aside.]*

With what I dare not give allowance to.—  
Unnatural wretch, what wilt thou do?

*Clara.* Set free

A noble enemy: Come not on! by Heaven,  
You pass to him through me!—The way is open.  
Farewell! when next I meet you, do not look for  
A friend, but a vow'd foe; I see you worthy,  
And therefore now preserve you, for the honour  
Of my sword only.

*Vit.* Were this man a friend,

How would he win me, that, being my vow'd foe,  
Deserves so well! I thank you for my life;  
But how I shall deserve it, give me leave  
Hereafter to consider. *[Exit.]*

*Alc.* Quit thy fear;

All danger is blown over: I have letters  
To the governor, in the king's name, to secure us

From such attempts hereafter; yet we need not,  
That have such strong guards of our own, dread  
others;

And, to increase thy comfort, know, this young  
man,

Whom with such fervent earnestness you eye,  
Is not what he appears, but such a one  
As thou with joy wilt bless, thy daughter Clara.

*Eug.* A thousand blessings in that word!

*Alc.* The reason

Why I have bred her up thus, at more leisure  
I will impart unto you: Wonder not  
At what you have seen her do, it being the least  
Of many great and valiant undertakings  
She hath made good with honour.

*Eug.* I'll return

The joy I have in her, with one as great  
To you, my Alvarez: You, in a man,  
Have given to me a daughter; in a woman,  
I give to you a son: This was the pledge  
You left here with me, whom I have brought up  
Different from what he was, as you did Clara,  
And with the like success; as she appears,  
Alter'd by custom, more than woman, he,  
Transform'd by his soft life, is less than man.

*Alc.* Fortune in this gives ample satisfaction  
For all our sorrows past.

*Lucio.* My dearest sister!

*Clara.* Kind brother!

*Alc.* Now our mutual care must be  
Employ'd, to help wrong'd Nature to recover  
Her right in either of them, lost by custom:  
To you I give my Clara, and receive  
My Lucio to my charge; and we'll contend,  
With loving industry, who soonest can  
Turn this man woman, or this woman man.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

*Enter PACHICO and LAZARILLO.*

*Pach.* Boy, my cloak, and rapier! it fits not  
a gentleman of my rank to walk the streets in  
*querpo.*

*Las.* Nay you are a very rank gentleman, signor.  
I am very hungry; they tell me in Sevil here, I  
look like an eel with a man's head; and your  
neighbour the smith here hard by would have  
borrowed me the other day to have fish'd with me,  
because he had lost his angle-rod.

*Pach.* Oh, happy thou, Lazarillo, being the  
cause of other men's wits, as in thine own! Live  
lean and witty still: oppress not thy stomach too  
much: gross feeders, great sleepers; great sleepers,  
fat bodies; fat bodies, lean brains!—No, Lazarillo;  
I will make thee immortal, change thy humanity  
into deity, for I will teach thee to live upon  
nothing.

*Las.* 'Faith, signor, I am immortal then already,  
or very near it, for I do live upon little or nothing.  
Belike that's the reason the poets are said to be  
immortal; for some of them live upon their wits,  
which is indeed as good as little or nothing. But,  
good master, let me be mortal still, and let us go  
to supper.

*Pach.* Be abstinent; show not the corruption  
of thy generation: he that feeds shall die, there-  
fore, he that feeds not shall live.

*Las.* Ay, but how long shall he live? there's the  
question.

*Pach.* As long as he can without feeding. Didst  
thou read of the miraculous maid in Flanders—

*Las.* No, nor of any maid else; for the miracle  
of virginity now-a-days ceases, ere the virgin can  
read virginity.

*Pach.* She that lived three years without any  
other sustenance than the smell of a rose?

*Las.* I heard of her, signor; but they say her  
guts shrunk all into lutestrings, and her nether  
parts clinged together like a serpent's tail; so that  
though she continued a woman still above the girdle,  
beneath yet she was monster.

*Pach.* So are most women, believe it.

*Las.* Nay all women, signor, that can live only  
upon the smell of a rose.

*Pach.* No part of the history is fabulous.

*Las.* I think rather, no part of the fable is  
historical. But for all this, sir, my rebellious  
stomach will not let me be immortal: I will be as  
immortal as mortal hunger will suffer. Put me  
to a certain stint, sir! allow me but a red herring  
a-day!

*Pach.* *O, de Dios!* Wouldst thou be gluttonous in thy delicacies?

*Laz.* He that eats nothing but a red herring a-day shall ne'er be broiled for the devil's rasher: a pilcher, signor, a surdiny, an olive, that I may be a philosopher first, and immortal after.

*Pach.* Patience, Lazarillo! let contemplation be thy food awhile: I say unto thee, one pease was a soldier's provant a whole day at the destruction of Jerusalem.

*Laz.* Ay, an it were anywhere but at the destruction of a place, I'll be hang'd.

*Enter METALDI and MENDOZA.*

*Met.* Signor Pachieco Alasto, my most ingenious cobbler of Sevil, the *buenos noches* to your signory!

*Pach.* Signor Metaldi de Forgio! my most famous smith, and man of metal, I return your courtesy ten-fold, and do humble my bonnet beneath the shoe-sole of your congie. The like to you, signor Mendoza Pediculo de Vermini, my most exquisite hose-heeler!

*Laz.* Here's a greeting betwixt a cobbler, a smith, and a botcher! they all belong to the foot, which makes them stand so much upon their gentry.

*Mend.* Signor Lazarillo!

*Laz.* Ah, signor, *si!* Nay, we are all signors here in Spain, from the jakes-farmer to the grandee, or *adelantado*. This botcher looks as if he were dough-baked; a little butter now, and I could eat him like an oaten cake! his father's diet was new cheese and onions, when he got him: What a scallion-faced rascal 'tis!

*Met.* But why, signor Pachieco, do you stand so much on the priority and antiquity of your quality (as you call it) in comparison of ours?

*Mend.* Ay, your reason for that.

*Pach.* Why, thou iron-pated smith, and thou woollen-witted hose-heeler, hear what I will speak indifferently, and according to antient writers, of our three professions; and let the upright Lazarillo be both judge and moderator!

*Laz.* Still am I the most immortally hungry that may be!

*Pach.* Suppose thou wilt derive thy pedigree, like some of the old heroes, (as Hercules, Æneas, Achilles) lineally from the gods, making Saturn thy great-grandfather, and Vulcan thy father—Vulcan was a god—

*Laz.* He'll make Vulcan your godfather by-and-by.

*Pach.* Yet, I say, Saturn was a crabbed block-head, and Vulcan a limping horn-head; for Venus his wife was a strumpet, and Mars begat all her children: Therefore, however, thy original must of necessity spring from bastardy. Further, what can be a more deject spirit in man, than to lay his hands under every one's horses' feet, to do him service as thou dost?—For thee, I will be brief; thou dost botch, and not mend, thou art a hider of enormities, ris, scabs, chilblains, and kib'd heels; much prone thou art to sects, and heresies, disturbing state and government; for how canst thou be a sound member in the commonwealth, that art so subject to stitches in the ancles? blush and be silent then, oh, ye mechanics! compare no more with the politic cobbler! for cobblers in old time have prophesied; what may they do now then, that have every day waxed better and better? Have we not the length

of every man's foot? Are we not daily menders? Yea, and what menders? Not horse-menders—

*Laz.* Nor manners-menders.

*Pach.* But sole-menders: Oh, divine cobblers!—Do we not, like the wise man, spin our own threads, (or our wives for us?) Do we not, by our sowing the hide, reap the beef? Are not we of the gentle-craft, whilst both you are but craftsmen? You will say, you fear neither iron nor steel, and what you get is wrought out of the fire; I must answer you again though, all this is but forgery. You may likewise say, a man's a man, that has but a hose on his head: I must likewise answer, that man is a botcher that has a heel'd hose on his head. To conclude, there can be no comparison with the cobbler, who is all in all in the commonwealth, has his politic eye and ends on every man's steps that walks, and whose course shall be lasting to the world's end.

*Met.* I give place: the wit of man is wonderful! Thou hast hit the nail on the head, and I will give thee six pots for't, though I ne'er clench shoe again.

*Enter VITELLI and ALGUAZIER.*

*Pach.* Who's this? Oh, our Alguazier; as arrant a knave as e'er wore one head under two offices; he is one side Alguazier.

*Met.* The other side Serjeant.

*Mend.* That's both sides carrion, I am sure.

*Pach.* This is he apprehends whores in the way of justice, and lodges 'em in his own house, in the way of profit. He with him is the grand don Vitelli, 'twixt whom and Fernando Alvarez the mortal hatred is: he is indeed my don's bawd, and does at this present lodge a famous courtezan of his, lately come from Madrid.

*Vit.* Let her want nothing, signor, she can ask: What loss or injury you may sustain I will repair, and recompense your love: Only that fellow's coming I dislike, And did forewarn her of him. Bear her this, With my best love; at night I'll visit her.

[Gives money.]

*Alg.* I rest your lordship's servant!

*Vit.* Good even, signors!

Oh, Alvarez, thou hast brought a son with thee Both brightens and obscures our nation, Whose pure strong beams on us shoot like the sun's On baser fires. I would to heaven my blood Had never stain'd thy bold unfortunate hand, That with mine honour I might emulate, Not persecute such virtue! I will see him, Though with the hazard of my life; no rest In my contentious spirits can I find, Till I have gratified him in like kind. [Exit.]

*Alg.* I know ye not! what are ye? Hence, ye base bisognios!

*Pach.* Marry, Cazzo! Signor Alguazier, do you not know us?—Why, we are your honest neighbours, the cobbler, smith, and botcher, that have so often sat snoring cheek by joll with your signory, in rug at midnight.

*Laz.* Nay, good signor, be not angry; you must understand, a cat and such an officer see best in the dark.

*Met.* By this hand, I could find in my heart to shoe his head!

*Pach.* Why then we know you, signor! Thou mungril, begot at midnight, at the gaol-gate, by a

beadle on a catchpole's wife, are not you he that was whipt out of Toledo for perjury?

*Mend.* Next condemn'd to the gallees for pilfering, to the bull's pizzle?

*Met.* And after called to the inquisition for apostacy?

*Pach.* Are not you he that, rather than you durst go an industrious voyage, being press'd, to the islands, skulked till the fleet was gone, and then earned your rial a-day by squiring punks and punklings up and down the city?

*Las.* Are not you a Portuguese born, descended o' the Moors, and came hither into Sevil with your master, an arrant tailor, in your red bonnet, and your blue jacket lousy; though now your block-head be covered with the Spanish block, and your lashed shoulders with a velvet pee?

*Pach.* Are not you he that have been of thirty callings, yet ne'er a one lawful; that being a chandler first, professed sincerity, and would sell no man mustard to his beef on the sabbath, and yet sold hypocrisy all your life-time?

*Met.* Are not you he, that were since a surgeon to the stewes, and undertook to cure, what the church itself could not, strumpets? that rise to your office by being a great don's bawd?

*Las.* That commit men nightly, offenceless, for the gain of a groat a prisoner, which your beadle seems to put up, when you share three-pence?

*Mend.* Are not you he that is a kisser of men, in drunkenness, and a betrayer in sobriety?

*Alg. Diabolo!* They'll rail me into the gallees again.

*Pach.* Yes, signor, thou art even he we speak of all this while. Thou mayst, by thy place now, lay us by the heels, 'tis true; but take heed; be wiser, pluck not ruin on thine own head; for never was there such an anatomy, as we shall make thee then; be wise, therefore, Oh, thou child of the night! Be friends, and shake hands. Thou art a proper man, if thy beard were redder: remember thy worshipful function, a constable; though thou turnest day into night, and night into day, what of that?—Watch less, and pray more: gird thy bearskin (viz. thy rug-gown) to thy loins; take thy staff in thy hand, and go forth at mid-night: let not thy mittens abate the talons of thy authority, but gripe theft and whoredom, wheresoever thou meet'st 'em; bear 'em away like a tempest, and lodge 'em safely in thine own house.

*Las.* Would you have whores and thieves lodged in such a house?

*Pach.* They ever do so; I have found a thief or a whore there when the whole suburbs could not furnish me.

*Las.* But why do they lodge there?

*Pach.* That they may be safe and forth-coming; for in the morning usually, the thief is sent to the gaol, and the whore prostrates herself to the justice.

*Mend.* Admirable Pachieco!

*Met.* Thou cobler of Christendom!

*Alg. [Aside.]* There is no railing with these rogues: I will close with 'em, till I can cry quit-tance.—Why, signors, and my honest neighbours, will ye impute that as a neglect of my friends, which is an imperfection in me? I have been sand-blind from my infancy; to make you amends, you shall sup with me.

*Las.* Shall we sup with ye, sir? O' my

conscience, they have wrong'd the gentlemen extremely.

*Alg.* And after supper, I have a project to employ you in, shall make you drink and eat merrily this month. I am a little knavish; why, and do not I know all you to be knaves?

*Pach.* I grant you, we are all knaves, and will be your knaves; but oh, while you live, take heed of being a proud knave!

*Alg.* On then, pass; I will bear out my staff, and my staff shall bear out me.

*Las.* Oh, Lazarillo, thou art going to supper. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Room in ALVAREZ' House.  
Arms hanging on the Wall.

Enter LUCIO in man's attire, and BOBADILLA.

*Lucio.* Pray be not angry.

*Bob.* I am angry, and I will be angry. Diabolo! what should you do in the kitchen? Cannot the cooks lick their fingers without your overseeing; nor the maids make pottage, except your dog's head be in the pot? Don Lucio? Don Quot-Quana, don Spinster! wear a petticoat still, and put on your smock a' Monday; I will have a baby o' cloths made for it, like a great girl! Nay, if you will needs be starching of ruffs, and sowing of black-work, I will, of a mild and loving tutor, become a tyrant: your father has committed you to my charge, and I will make a man or a mouse on you.

*Lucio.* What would you have me do? This scurvy sword

So galls my thigh, I would 'twere burnt!—Fish look,

This cloak will ne'er keep on; these boots too hide-bound,

Make me walk stiff, as if my legs were frozen, And my spurs jingle like a morris-dancer: Lord, how my head aches with this roguish hat! This masculine attire is most uneasy, I am bound up in it; I had rather walk in folio again, loose, like a woman.

*Bob.* In foolio, had you not? Thou mock to Heaven, and Nature, and thy parents!

Thou tender leg of lamb! Oh, how he walks As if he had bepiss'd himself, and fleers!

Is this a gait for the young cavalier, Don Lucio, son and heir to Alvarez? Has it a corn? or does it walk on conscience, It treads so gingerly? Come on your ways! Suppose me now your father's foe, Vitelli, And spying you i' the street, thus I advance: I twist my beard, and then I draw my sword.

*Lucio.* Alas!

*Bob.* And thus accost thee: "Traitorous brat, How durst thou thus confront me? impious twig Of that old stock, dewed with my kinsman's gore. Draw! for I'll quarter thee in pieces four."

*Lucio.* Nay, pr'ythee, Bobadilla, leaving thy fooling,

Put up thy sword. I will not meddle with you. Ay, juggle me, I care not, I'll not draw; Pray be a quiet man.

*Bob.* Do ye hear! answer me, as you would do don Vitelli, or I'll be so bold as to lay the pom-mel of my sword over the hilts of your head!—"My name's Vitelli, and I'll have the wall."

*Lucio.* "Why then, I'll have the kennel: What a coil you keep? Signor, what happen'd 'twixt my sire and your Kinsman, was long before I saw the world; No fault of mine, nor will I justify My father's crimes: Forget, sir, and forgive, 'Tis Christianity. I pray put up your sword; I'll give you any satisfaction, That may become a gentleman. However, I hope you are bred to more humanity, Than to revenge my father's wrong on me. That crave your love and peace." Law-you-now, Zancho,

Would not this quiet him, were he ten Vitellis? *Bob.* Oh, craven-chicken of a cock o' th' game! Well, what remedy?—Did thy father see this, o' my conscience, he would cut off thy masculine gender, crop thine ears, beat out thine eyes, and set thee in one of the pear-trees for a scare-crow! as I am Vitelli, I am satisfied; but as I am Bobadilla Spindola Zancho, steward of the house, and thy father's servant, I could find in my heart to lop off the hinder part of thy face, or to beat all thy teeth into thy mouth! Oh, thou whey-blooded milksop, I'll wait upon thee no longer: thou shalt even wait upon me. Come your ways, sir; I shall take a little pains with you else.

*Enter CLARA, in female habit.*

*Clara.* Where art thou, brother Lucio?—Ran tan tan ta, ran tan ran tan tan, ta ran tan tan tan!—Oh, I shall no more see those golden days! These clothes will never fadge with me: A pox o' this filthy fardingale, this hip-hape!—Brother, why are women's haunches only limited, confined, hoop'd in as it were, with these same scurvy vardingales?

*Bob.* Because women's haunches only are most subject to display and fly out.

*Clara.* Bobadilla, rogue, ten ducats, I hit the prepuce of thy cod-piece!

*Lucio.* Hold, if you love my life, sister! I am not Zancho Bobadilla, I am your brother Lucio. What a fright you have put me in!

*Clara.* Brother? and wherefore thus?

*Lucio.* Why, master steward here, signor Zancho made me change: He does nothing but misuse me, and call me coward, and swears I shall wait upon him.

*Bob.* Well! I do no more than I have authority for.—'Would I were away though! [*Aside.*] For she's as much too mannish, as he too womanish: I dare not meddle with her; yet I must set a good face on it, if I had it.—I have like charge of you, madam: I am as well to mollify you as to qualify him. What have you to do with armors, and pistols, and javelins, and swords, and such tools? Remember, mistress, Nature hath given you a sheath only, to signify women are to put up men's weapons, not to draw them!—Look you now, is this a fit trot for a gentlewoman? You shall see the court-ladies move like goddesses, as if they trod air; they will swim you their measures, like whitening-mops, as if their feet were fins, and the hinges of their knees oil'd. Do they love to ride great horses as you do? no; they love to ride great asses sooner. 'Faith, I know not what to say to ye both: Custom hath turn'd Nature topsyturvy in you.

*Clara.* Nay, but master steward!

*Bob.* You cannot trot so fast, but he ambles as slowly.

*Clara.* Signor Spindle! will you hear me?

*Bob.* He that shall come to bestride your virginity had better be a-foot o'er the dragon.

*Clara.* Very well!

*Bob.* Did ever Spanish lady pace so?

*Clara.* Hold these a little!

[*Takes a truncheon from the wall.*]

*Lucio.* I'll not touch 'em, I.

*Clara.* First do I break your office o'er your pate,

You dog-skin-faced rogue, pileher, you Poor-John!

Which I will beat to stock-fish. [*Beats him.*]

*Lucio.* Sister!

*Bob.* Madam!

*Clara.* You cittern-head! who have you talk'd to, ha?

You nasty, stinking, and ill-countenanced cur!

*Bob.* By this hand I'll bang your brother for this, when I get him alone.

*Clara.* How! Kick him, Lucio! He shall kick you, Bob,

Spite o' thy nose; that's flat. Kick him, I say,

Or I will kick thy head off!

*Bob.* Softly, you had best! [*Lucio kicks him.*]

*Clara.* Now, thou lean, dried, and ominous-visaged knave,

Thou false and peremptory steward, pray!

For I will bang thee up in thine own chain!

*Lucio.* Good sister, do not choak him.

*Bob.* Murder! murder!

[*Exit.*]

*Clara.* Well! I shall meet with ye.—Lucio, who bought this?

'Tis a reasonable good one; but there hangs one, Spain's champion ne'er used truer; with this staff Old Alvarez has led up men so close, They could almost spit in the cannon's mouth; Whilst I with that, and this, well mounted, skirr'd A horse-troop through and through, like swift Desire,

And seen poor rogues retire, all gore, and gash'd Like bleeding shads.

*Lucio.* Bless us, sister Clara,

How desperately you talk! What do ye call This gun? a dag?

*Clara.* I'll give't thee; a French petronel.

You never saw my Barbary, the Infanta Bestow'd upon me, as yet, Lucio:

Walk down, and see it.

*Lucio.* What, into the stable?

Not I; the jades will kick: The poor groom there Was almost spoil'd the other day.

*Clara.* Fly on thee!

Thou wilt scarce be a man before thy mother.

*Lucio.* When will you be a woman?

*Clara.* 'Would I were none!

But Nature's privy seal assures me one.

*Enter ALVAREZ and BOBADILLA.*

*Alv.* Thou anger'st me! Can strong habitual custom

Work with such magic on the mind and manners, In spite of sex and Nature? Find out, sirrah, Some skilful fighter.

*Bob.* Yes, sir.

*Alv.* I will rectify

And redeem either's proper inclination, Or bray 'em in a mortar, and new-mold 'em.

*Bob.* Believe your eyes, sir; I tell you, we wash an Ethiop. [Exit.]

*Clara.* I strike it, for ten ducats.

*Alv.* How now, Clara,  
Your breeches on still? And your petticoat  
Not yet off, Lucio? art thou not gelt?  
Or did the cold Muscovite beget thee,  
That lay here lieger, in the last great frost?  
Art not thou, Clara, turn'd a man indeed  
Beneath the girdle? and a woman thou?  
I'll have you search'd; by Heaven, I strongly  
doubt!

We must have these things mended. Come, go in! [Exit.]

*Enter VITELLI and BORADILLA.*

*Bob.* With Lucio, say you? There he is for you.

*Vit.* And there is for thee. [Gives money.]

*Bob.* I thank you. You have now bought a little advice of me: If you chance to have conference with that lady there, be very civil, or look to your head! She has ten nails, and you have but two eyes: If any foolish hot motions should chance to rise in the horizon, under your equinoctial there, qualify it as well as you can, for I fear the elevation of your pole will not agree with the horoscope of her constitution: She is Bell and the Dragon, I assure you. [Exit.]

*Vit.* Are you the Lucio, sir, that saved Vitelli?  
*Lucio.* Not I, indeed, sir; I did never brabble: There walks that Lucio metamorphosed. [Exit.]

*Vit.* Do you mock me?

*Clara.* No, he does not: I am that Supposed Lucio that was, but Clara That is, and daughter unto Alvarez.

*Vit.* Amazement daunts me! 'Would my life So you were still my fair expositor! [were riddles,  
Protected by a lady from my death?  
Oh, I shall wear an everlasting blush  
Upon my cheek from this discovery!  
Oh, you, the fairest soldier I e'er saw,  
Each of whose eyes, like a bright beamy shield,  
Conquers without blows, the contentious—

*Clara.* Sir, guard yourself; you are in your And may be injured. [enemy's house,

*Vit.* 'Tis impossible:

Foe, nor oppressing odds, dares prove Vitelli,  
If Clara side him, and will call him friend.  
I would the difference of our bloods were such  
As might with any shift be wiped away!  
Or 'would to Heaven yourself were all your name;  
That, having lost blood by you, I might hope  
To raise blood from you! But my black-wing'd  
Hovers aversely over that fond hope; [fate]  
And he whose tongue thus gratifies the daughter  
And sister of his enemy, wears a sword  
To rip the father and the brother up:  
Thus you, that saved this wretched life of mine,  
Have saved it to the ruin of your friends.  
That my affections should promiscuously  
Dart love and hate at once, both worthily!  
Pray let me kiss your hand!

*Clara.* You are treacherous,  
And come to do me mischief.

*Vit.* Speak on still;

Your words are falsier, fair, than my intents,  
And each sweet accent far more treacherous; for  
Though you speak ill of me, you speak so well  
I do desire to hear you.

*Clara.* Pray be gone;  
Or, kill me if you please.

*Vit.* Oh, neither can I:

For, to be gone were to destroy my life;  
And to kill you were to destroy my soul.  
I am in love, yet must not be in love!  
I'll get away apace. Yet, valiant lady,  
Such gratitude to honour I do owe,  
And such obedience to your memory,  
That if you will bestow something, that I  
May wear about me, it shall bind all wrath,  
My most inveterate wrath, from all attempts,  
Till you and I meet next.

*Clara.* A favour, sir?

Why, I'll give you good counsel.

*Vit.* That already

You have bestow'd; a ribbon, or a glove—

*Clara.* Nay, those are tokens for a waiting-maid  
To trim the butler with.

*Vit.* Your feather—

*Clara.* Fy!

The wenches give them to the serving-men.

*Vit.* That little ring—

*Clara.* 'Twill hold you but by th' finger;  
And I would have you faster.

*Vit.* Anything

That I may wear, and but remember you.

*Clara.* This smile; my good opinion; or myself!  
But that, it seems, you like not.

*Vit.* Yes; so well,

When any smiles, I will remember yours;  
Your good opinion shall in weight poize me  
Against a thousand ill; lastly, yourself  
My curious eye now figures in my heart,  
Where I will wear you till the table break.  
So, whitest angels guard you!

*Clara.* Stay, sir; I

Have fitly thought to give, what you as fitly  
May not disdain to wear.

*Vit.* What's that?

*Clara.* This sword.—

I never heard a man speak till this hour: [Aside.]  
His words are golden chains, and now I fear  
The lioness hath met a tamer here:  
Fy, how his tongue chimes!—What was I saying?  
Oh, this favour I bequeath you, which I tie  
In a love-knot, fast, ne'er to hurt my friends;  
Yet be it fortunate 'gainst all your foes  
(For I have neither friend, nor foe, but yours)  
As e'er it was to me! I have kept it long,  
And value it, next my virginity.—  
But, good, return it; for I now remember  
I vow'd, who purchased it should have me too.

*Vit.* 'Would that were possible! but, alas, 'tis  
not:

Yet this assure yourself, most honoured Clara,  
I'll not infringe an article of breath  
My vow hath offer'd to you; nor from this part  
Whilst it hath edge, or point, or I a heart. [Exit.]

*Clara.* Oh, leave me living!—What new exer-  
Is crept into my breast, that blancheth clean [cise]  
My former nature? I begin to find  
I am a woman, and must learn to fight  
A softer sweeter battle than with swords.  
I am sick methinks; but the disease I feel  
Pleaseth and punisheth. I warrant, love  
Is very like this, that folks talk of so;  
I skill not what it is, yet sure even here,  
Even in my heart, I sensibly perceive  
It glows, and riseth like a glimmering flame,  
But know not yet the essence on't, nor name.

[Exit.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the ALGUAZIER'S House.*

*Enter MALRODA and ALGUAZIER.*

*Malr.* He must not? nor he shall not? who shall let him?

*You*, politic Diego, with your face of wisdom!  
*Don Blirt!* The pox upon your aphorisms,  
 Your grave and sage ale-physiognomy!  
 Do not I know thee for the Alguazier,  
 Whose dunghill all the parish scavengers  
 Could never rid? Thou comedy to men,  
 Whose serious folly is a butt for all  
 To shoot their wits at; whilst thou hast not wit,  
 Nor heart, to answer, or be angry!

*Alg.* Lady!

*Malr.* Peace, peace, you rotten rogue, supported by  
 A staff of rottener office! Dare you check  
 Any's accesses that I will allow?  
*Piorato* is my friend, and visits me  
 In lawful sort, to espouse me as his wife;  
 And who will cross, or shall, our interviews?  
 You know me, sirrah, for no chambermaid,  
 That cast her belly and her waistcoat lately.  
 Thou think'st thy constableness is much! not so;  
 I am ten offices to thee: Ay, thy house,  
 Thy house and office is maintained by me.

*Alg.* My house-of-office is maintain'd i' th' garden!

Go to! I know you; and I have contrived,  
 (You're a delinquent) but I have contrived  
 A poison, though not in the third degree:  
 I can say, black's your eye, though it be grey;  
 I have connived at this your friend, and you;  
 But what is got by this connivency?  
 I like his feature well; a proper man,  
 Of good discourse, fine conversation,  
 Valiant, and a great carrier of the business,  
 Sweet-breasted as the nightingale or thrush!  
 Yet I must tell you, you forget yourself;  
 My lord Vitelli's love, and maintenance,  
 Deserves no other Jack i' th' box, but he.  
 What though he gather'd first the golden fruit,  
 And blew your pigs-coat up into a blister,  
 When you did wait at court upon his mother;  
 Has he not well provided for the bairn?  
 Beside, what profit reap I by the other?  
 If you will have me serve your pleasure, lady,  
 Your pleasure must accommodate my service;  
 As good be virtuous and poor, as not  
 Thrive by my knavery; all the world would be  
 Good, prosper'd goodness like to villainy.  
 I am the king's vicegerent by my place;  
 His right lieutenant in mine own precinct.

*Malr.* Thou art a right rascal in all men's precincts!

Yet now, my pair of twins, of fool and knave,  
 Look, we are friends; there's gold for thee: Admit  
 Whom I will have, and keep it from my don,  
 And I will make thee richer than thou art wise:  
 Thou shalt be my bawd, and my officer;  
 Thy children shall eat still, my good night-owl,  
 And thy old wife sell andirons to the court,  
 Be countenanced by the dons, and wear a hood,  
 Nay, keep my garden-house; I'll call her mother,  
 Thee father, my good poisonous red-hair'd devil,  
 And gold shall daily be thy sacrifice,

Wrought from a fertile island of mine own,  
 Which I will offer like an Indian queen.

*Alg.* And I will be thy devil, thou my flesh,  
 With which I'll catch the world.

*Malr.* Fill some tobacco,  
 And bring it in. If *Piorato* come  
 Before my don, admit him; if my don  
 Before my love, conduct him, my dear devil!

*[Exit.*

*Alg.* I will, my dear flesh.—First come, first served: Well said!

Oh, equal Heaven, how wisely thou disposest  
 Thy several gifts! One's born a great rich fool,  
 For the subordinate knave to work upon;  
 Another's poor with wit's addition,  
 Which, well or ill used, builds a living up,  
 And that too from the sire oft descends;  
 Only fair virtue, by traduction  
 Never succeeds, and seldom meets success:  
 What have I then to do with't? My free will,  
 Left me by Heaven, makes me or good or ill.  
 Now since vice gets more in this vicious world  
 Than piety, and my stars' confluence  
 Enforce my disposition to affect  
 Gain, and the name of rich, let who will practise  
 War, and grow that way great; religious,  
 And that way good! My chief felicity  
 Is wealth, the nurse of sensuality:  
 And he that mainly labours to be rich,  
 Must scratch great scabs, and claw a strumpet's  
 itch.

*[Exit.*

SCENE II.—*A Street before the same.*

*Enter PIORATO and BOBADILLA.*

*Pio.* To say, sir, I will wait upon your lord,  
 Were not to understand myself.

*Bob.* To say, sir,  
 You will do anything but wait upon him,  
 Were not to understand my lord.

*Pio.* I'll meet him  
 Some half-hour hence, and doubt not but to render  
 His son a man again: The cure is easy;  
 I have done divers.

*Bob.* Women do you mean, sir?

*Pio.* Cures I do mean, sir. Be there but one  
 Of fire remaining in him unextinct, [spark  
 With my discourse I'll blow it to a flame,  
 And with my practice into action.

I have had one so full of childish fear,  
 And womanish-hearted, sent to my advice.  
 He durst not draw a knife to cut his meat.

*Bob.* And how, sir, did you help him?

*Pio.* Sir, I kept him  
 Seven days in a dark room by candle-light,  
 A plenteous table spread, with all good meats,  
 Before his eyes, a case of keen broad knives  
 Upon the board, and he so watch'd he might not  
 Touch the least modicum, unless he cut it;  
 And thus I brought him first to draw a knife.

*Bob.* Good!

*Pio.* Then for ten days did I diet him  
 Only with burnt pork, sir, and gammons of bacon;  
 A pill of caviary now and then,  
 Which breeds cholera adust, you know—

*Bob.* 'Tis true.

*Pio.* And to purge phlegmatic humour, and cold crudities,  
In all that time he drank me *aqua-fortis*,  
And nothing else but—

*Bob.* *Aqua-vita*, signor;  
For *aqua-fortis* poisons.

*Pio.* *Aqua-fortis*,  
I say again: What's one man's poison, signor,  
Is another's meat or drink.

*Bob.* Your patience, sir!  
By your good patience, he had a huge cold stomach.

*Pio.* I fired it, and gave him then three sweats  
In the artillery-yard, three drilling days;  
And now he'll shoot a gun, and draw a sword,  
And fight, with any man in Christendom.

*Bob.* A receipt for a coward! I'll be bold, sir,  
To write your good prescription.

*Pio.* Sir, hereafter  
You shall, and underneath it put *probatum*.—  
Is your chain right?

*Bob.* It is both right and just, sir;  
For, though I am a steward, I did get it  
With no man's wrong.

*Pio.* You are witty.

*Bob.* So, so.  
Could you not cure one, sir, of being too rash,  
And over-daring? (there now's my disease)  
Fool-hardy, as they say? for that in sooth  
I am.

*Pio.* Most easily.

*Bob.* How?

*Pio.* To make you drunk, sir,  
With small beer once a-day, and beat you twice,  
Till you be bruised all over; if that help not,  
Knock out your brains.

*Bob.* This is strong physic, signor,  
And never will agree with my weak body;  
I find the medicine worse than the malady,  
And therefore will remain fool-hardy still.  
You'll come, sir?

*Pio.* As I am a gentleman.

*Bob.* A man o' th' sword should never break  
his word.

*Pio.* I'll overtake you: I have only, sir,  
A complimentary visitation  
To offer to a mistress lodged here by.

*Bob.* A gentlewoman?

*Pio.* Yes, sir.

*Bob.* Fair and comely?

*Pio.* Oh, sir, the paragon, the nonpareil  
Of Sevil, the most wealthy mine of Spain,  
For beauty and perfection.

*Bob.* Say you so?

Might not a man entreat a courtesy,  
To walk along with you, signor, to peruse  
This dainty mine, though not to dig in't, signor?  
Hauh—I hope you'll not deny me, being a  
stranger;

Though I am steward, I am flesh and blood,  
And frail as other men.

*Pio.* Sir, blow your nose!  
I dare not, for the world: No; she is kept  
By a great don, Vitelli.

*Bob.* How!

*Pio.* 'Tis true.

*Bob.* See, things will veer about! This don  
Am I to seek now, to deliver letters [Vitelli  
From my young mistress Clara; and, I tell you,  
Under the rose, (because you are a stranger  
And my especial friend) I doubt there is

A little foolish love betwixt the parties,  
Unknown unto my lord.

*Pio.* Happy discovery! [Aside.

My fruit begins to ripen.—Hark you, sir!  
I would not wish you now to give those letters;  
But home, and ope this to madonna Clara,  
Which when I come I'll justify, and relate  
More amply and particularly.

*Bob.* I approve

Your counsel, and will practise it. *Beso las  
manos!*

Here's two chawes chew'd! When Wisdom is  
employ'd,

'Tis ever thus.—Your more acquaintance, signor!  
I say not better, lest you think I thought not  
Yours good enough. [Exit

*Pio.* Your servant, excellent steward!

'Would all the dons in Spain had no more brains!

Enter ALGUAZIER.

Here comes the Alguazier: *Dieu vous garde*.  
Is my cuz stirring yet? [monsieur!

*Alg.* Your cuz, good cousin?

A whore is like a fool, a-kin to all  
The gallants in the town. Your cuz, good signor,  
Is gone abroad, sir, with her other cousin,  
My lord Vitelli; since when there hath been  
Some dozen cousins here to enquire for her.

*Pio.* She's greatly allied, sir.

*Alg.* Marry is she, sir;

Come of a lusty kindred! The truth is,  
I must connive no more; no more admittance  
Must I consent to: My good lord has threaten'd  
And you must pardon— [me.

*Pio.* Out upon thee, man!

Turn honest in thine age? one foot i' th' grave?  
Thou shalt not wrong thyself so for a million.  
Look, thou three-headed Cerberus (for wit  
I mean), here is one sop, and two, and three;  
For every chop a bit! [Gives money.

*Alg.* Ay, marry, sir!—

Well, the poor heart loves you but too well.  
We have been talking on you, 'faith, this hour,  
Where, what I said—Go to! she loves your valour;  
Oh, and your music most abominably!  
She is within, sir, and alone.—What mean you?

[PIORATO changes sides

*Pio.* That is your sergeant's side, I take it, sir;  
Now I endure your constable's much better;  
There is less danger in't; for one, you know,  
Is a tame harmless monster in the light.  
The sergeant, salvage both by day and night.

*Alg.* I'll call her to you for that.

*Pio.* No, I'll charm her.

*Alg.* She's come.

*Pio.* My spirit!

Enter MALBRODA.

*Malr.* Oh, my sweet!  
Leap hearts to lips, and in our kisses meet!

SONG.

*Pio.* Turn, turn, thy beauteous face away,  
How pale and sickly looks the day,  
In emulation of thy brighter beams!  
Oh, envious Light, fly, fly, begone,  
Come, Night, and please two breasts as one;  
When what Love does, we will repeat in dreams.  
Yet, thine eyes open, who can Day hence fright?  
Let but their lids fall, and it will be Night!

*Alg.* Well, I will leave you to your fortitude,  
And you to temperance. Ah, ye pretty pair!

"Twere sin to sunder you. Lovers being alone  
Make one of two, and day and night all one.

But fall not out, I charge you, keep the peace;  
You know my place else. [Exit.]

*Malr.* No, you will not marry;  
You are a courtier, and can sing, my love,  
And want no mistresses; but yet I care not,  
I'll love you still, and when I am dead for you,  
Then you'll believe my truth.

*Pio.* You kill me, fair!  
It is my lesson that you speak. Have I  
In any circumstance deserved this doubt?  
I am not like you false and perjured don,  
That here maintains you, and has vow'd his faith;  
And yet attempts in way of marriage  
A lady not far off.

*Malr.* How's that?

*Pio.* 'Tis so:

And therefore, mistress, now the time is come  
You may demand his promise; and I swear  
To marry you with speed.

*Malr.* And with that gold  
Which don Vitelli gives, you'll walk some voyage,  
And leave me to my trade; and laugh and brag,  
How you o'er-reach'd a whore, and gull'd a lord.

*Pio.* You anger me extremely! Fare you well!  
What should I say to be believed? Expose me  
To any hazard; or, like jealous Juno,  
The incensed step-mother of Hercules,  
Design me labours most impossible,  
I'll do 'em, or die in 'em; so at last  
You will believe me.

*Malr.* Come; we are friends; I do!  
I am thin; walk in. My lord has sent me outsidcs,  
But thou shalt have 'em; and the colours are too sad.

*Pio.* 'Faith, mistress, I want clothes indeed.

*Malr.* I have

Some gold too, for my servant.

*Pio.* And I have

A better metal for my mistress. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—A Room in the same.

Enter VITELLI and ALQUAZIER, at several Doors.

*Alg.* [Aside.] Undone!—Wit, now or never  
help me!—My master?  
He'll cut my throat!—I am a dead constable!  
And he'll not be hang'd neither; there's the grief.—  
The party, sir, is here—

*Vit.* What?

*Alg.* He was here;

(I cry your lordship mercy!) but I rattled him;  
I told him here was no companions  
For such debosh'd, and poor condition'd fellows;  
I hid him venture not so desperately

The cropping of his ears, slitting his nose,  
Or being gelt—

*Vit.* 'Twas well done.

*Alg.* Please your honour,  
I told him there were stewes; and then at last  
Swore three or four great oaths she was removed,  
Which I did think I might, in conscience,  
Being for your lordship.

*Vit.* What became of him?

*Alg.* 'Faith, sir, he went away with a flea in's  
Like a poor cur, clapping his trindle tail [ear,  
Betwixt his legs.—A chi ha, a chi ha, a chi ha!  
—Now, luck!

Enter MALRODA and PIORATO.

*Malr.* 'Tis he; do as I told thee; bless thee,  
Oh, my dear lord. [signor!—

*Vit.* Malroda? what, alone?

*Malr.* She never is alone, that is accompanied  
With noble thoughts, my lord; and mine are such,  
Being only of your lordship.

*Vit.* Pretty lass!

*Malr.* Oh, my good lord, my picture's done;  
but 'faith,

It is not like. Nay, this way, sir! the light  
Strikes best upon it here.

[Shows a picture, behind which PIORATO steals out.]

*Pio.* Excellent wench! [Exit.]

*Alg.* I am glad the danger's o'er. [Exit.]

*Vit.* 'Tis wond'rous like,  
But that Art cannot counterfeit what Nature  
Could make but once.

*Malr.* All's clear; another tune [Aside].  
You must hear from me now.—Vitelli, thou art  
A most perfidious and a perjured man,  
As ever did usurp nobility!

*Vit.* What mean'st thou, Mal?

*Malr.* Leave your betraying smiles,  
And change the tunes of your enticing tongue  
To penitential prayers; for I am great  
In labour, even with anger; big with child  
Of woman's rage, bigger than when my womb  
Was pregnant with thee! Go, seducer, fly  
Out of the world; let me the last wretch be  
Dishonour'd by thee! Touch me not; I loath  
My very heart, because thou lay'st there long.  
A woman's well help'd up, that's confident  
In e'er a glittering outside of you all!

'Would I had honestly been match'd to some  
Poor country swain, ere known the vanity  
Of court! peace then had been my portion,  
Nor had been cozen'd by an hour's pomp.  
To be a whore unto my dying day! [have!

*Vit.* Oh, the uncomfortable ways such women  
Their different speech and meaning, no assurance  
In what they say or do: Dissemblers  
Even in their prayers, as if the weeping Greek  
That flatter'd Troy a-fire, had been their Adam;  
Liars, as if their mother had been made  
Only of all the falsehood of the man,  
Disposed into that rib! Do I know this,

And more, nay, all that can concern this sex,  
With the true end of my creation?  
Can I with rational discourse sometimes  
Advance my spirit into Heaven, before  
'T has shook hands with my body, and yet blindly  
Suffer my filthy flesh to master it,

With sight of such fair frail beguiling objects?  
When I am absent, easily I resolve  
Ne'er more to entertain those strong desires  
That triumph o'er me, even to actual sin;

Yet when I meet again those sorcerer's eyes,  
Their beams my hardest resolutions thaw,  
As if that cakes of ice and July met;  
And her sighs, powerful as the violent north,  
Like a light feather twirl me round about,  
And leave me in mine own low state again.—  
What ail'st thou? Pr'ythee, weep not! Oh, those  
tears,

If they were true, and rightly spent, would raise  
A flow'ry spring i' th' midst of January!  
Celestial ministers with crystal cups  
Would stoop to save 'em for immortal drink!  
But from this passion—Why all this?

*Mafr.* Do you ask ?

You are marrying ! having made me unfit  
For any man, you leave me fit for all :  
Porters must be my burdens now, to live ;  
And fitting me yourself for carts and beads,  
You leave me to 'em : And who, of all the world,  
But the virago, your great arch-foe's daughter ?  
But on ! I care not this poor rush ! 'Twill breed  
An excellent comedy ; ha ! ha ! It makes me  
laugh ;

I cannot chuse. The best is, some report  
It is a match for fear, not love, o' your side.

*Vit.* Why, how the devil knows she that I saw  
[*Aside.*

This lady ? are all whores pieced with some witch ?  
I will be merry.—'Faith, 'tis true, sweetheart,  
I am to marry—

*Mafr.* Are you ? You base lord !  
By Heaven, I'll pistol thee.

*Vit.* A roaring whore !—

Take heed ! there's a correction-house hard by.  
You ha' learn'd this o' your swordman, that I  
warn'd you of,

Your fencers and your drunkards. But whereas  
You upbraid me with oaths, why, I must tell you  
I ne'er promised you marriage, nor have vow'd,  
But said I love you, long as you remain'd  
The woman I expected, or you swore :  
And how you have fail'd of that, sweetheart, you  
know.

You fain would shew your power ; but, fare you  
I'll keep no more faith with an infidel. [well !

*Mafr.* Nor I my bosom for a Turk. Do ye hear ?  
Go ! and the devil take me, if ever  
I see you more ! I was too true.

*Vit.* Come ; pish !

That devil take the falsest of us two !

*Mafr.* Amen !

*Vit.* You're an ill clerk, and curse yourself :  
Madness transports you. I confess, I drew you  
Unto my will ; but you must know that must not  
Make me dote on the habit of my sin :  
I will, to settle you to your content,  
Be master of my word. And yet he lied,  
That told you I was marrying but in thought :  
But will you slave me to your tyranny  
So cruelly, I shall not dare to look  
Or speak to other women ? make me not  
Your smock's monopoly. Come, let's be friends !  
Look, here's a jewel for thee : I will come  
At night, and—

*Mafr.* What ? I'faith you shall not, sir.

*Vit.* I'faith and troth, and verily, but I will.

*Mafr.* Half drunk, to make a noise, and rail ?

*Vit.* No, no ;

Sober, and dieted for the nonce. I am thine !  
I have won the day.

*Mafr.* The night, though, shall be mine.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*A Room in ALVAREZ' House.*

*Enter CLARA and BOBADILLA.*

*Clara.* What said he, sirrah ?

*Bob.* Little, or nothing. 'Faith, I saw him not,  
Nor will not : He doth love a strumpet, mistress,  
Nay, keeps her spitefully, under the constable's  
It shall be justified by the gentleman, [nose :  
Your brother's master, that is now within  
A-practising. There are your letters ! Come,

You shall not cast yourself away while I live ;  
Nor will I venture my right-worshipful place  
In such a business. Here's your mother (down !)  
And he that loves you ; another 'gates follow—  
I wish if you had any grace—

*Clara.* Well, rogue ! [Sits and works.

*Bob.* I'll in,

To see don Lucio manage : He will make  
A pretty piece of flesh, I promise you ;  
He does already handle his weapon finely. [*Exit.*

*Enter EUGENIA and STAVEDRA.*

*Eug.* She knows your love, sir, and the full  
allowance

Her father and myself approve it with ;  
And I must tell you, I much hope it hath  
Wrought some impression, by her alteration :  
She sighs, and says *forsooth*, and cries *heigh-ho !*  
She'll take ill words o' th' steward, and the ser-  
Yet answer affably, and modestly ; [wants,  
Things, sir, not usual with her. There she is ;  
Change some few words.

*Syav.* Madam, I am bound to you.—

How now, fair mistress ? working ?

*Clara.* Yes, forsooth ;

Learning to live another day.

*Syav.* That needs not.

*Clara.* No, forsooth ? by my truly, but it does ;  
We know not what we may come to.

*Eug.* 'Tis strange !

*Syav.* Come, I ha' begg'd leave for you to play.

*Clara.* Forsooth,

'Tis ill for a fair lady-to be idle.

*Syav.* She had better be well busied, I know  
that.

Turtle, methinks you mourn ; shall I sit by you ?

*Clara.* If you be weary, sir, you had best be  
gone ;

I work not a true stitch, now you're my mate.

*Syav.* If I be so, I must do more than side you.

*Clara.* Even what you will, but tread me.

*Syav.* Shall we bill ?

*Clara.* Oh, no, forsooth.

*Syav.* Being so fair, my Clara,

Why do you delight in black-work ?

*Clara.* Oh, white sir,

The fairest ladies like the blackest men :

I ever loved the colour ; all black things

Are least subject to change.

*Syav.* Why, I do love

A black thing too ; and the most beauteous faces  
Have o'fneat of them ; as the blackest eyes,  
Jet-arched brows, such hair. I'll kiss your hand.

*Clara.* 'Twill hinder me my work, sir ; and my  
mother

Will chide me if I do not do my task.

*Syav.* Your mother, nor your father, shall chide.  
—You

Might have a prettier task, would you be ruled,  
And look with open eyes.

*Clara.* I stare upon you,

And broadly see you ; a wond'rous proper man !

Yet 'twere a greater task for me to love you,

Than I shall ever work, sir, in seven year.

Plague o' this stitching ! I had rather feel  
Two, than sow one.—This rogue has given me a

stitch [Aside

Clean cross my heart.—Good faith, sir, I shall  
prick you !

*Syav.* In gooder faith, I would prick you again

*Clara.* Now you grow troublesome! Pish, the man's foolish!

*Syav.* Pray wear these trifles.

*Clara.* Neither you, nor trifles: You are a trifle; wear yourself, sir, out, And here no more trifle the time away.

*Syav.* Come, you're deceived in me; I will not wake,

Nor fast, nor die for you.

*Clara.* Goose, be not you deceived! I cannot like, nor love, nor live with you, Nor fast, nor watch, nor pray for you.

*Eug.* Her old fit!

*Syav.* [*Aside.*] Sure this is not the way.—Nay, I will break

Your melancholy—

*Clara.* I shall break your pate then.

Away, you sanguine scabbard!

*Eug.* Out upon thee!

Thou'lt break my heart, I am sure.

*Syav.* She's not yet tame.

*Enter ALVAREZ; PIORATO and LUCIO, fencing, and BORADILLA.*

*Alv.* On, sir! put home! or I shall goad you here

With this old fox of mine, that will bite better.

Oh, the brave age is gone! In my young days

A chevalier would stock a needle's point

Three times together: Strait it th' hams!

Or shall I give you new garters?

*Bob.* 'Faith, old master,

There's little hope; the linen sure was dank

He was begot in, he's so faint and cold!

Even send him to Toledo, there to study;

For he will never fadge with these Toledos.

Bear ye up your point there, pick his teeth! Oh, base!

*Pio.* Fy! you are the most untoward scholar!—Bear

Your body gracefully; what a posture's there!

You lie too open-breasted.

*Lucio.* Oh!

*Pio.* You would

Never make a good statesman.

*Lucio.* Pray, no more!

I hope to breathe in peace, and therefore need not

The practice of these dangerous qualities:

I do not mean to live by't, for I trust

You'll leave me better able.

*Alv.* Not a button!

*Eugenia,* let's go get us a new heir.

*Eug.* Ay, by my troth, your daughter's as untoward.

*Alv.* I will break thee bone by bone, and bake thee, ere

I will ha' such a wooden son to inherit.—

Take him a good knock; see how that will work.

*Pio.* Now for your life, signor!

*Lucio.* Oh, alas, I am kill'd!

My eye is out! Look, father! Zancho!

I'll play the fool no more thus, that I will not.

*Clara.* 'Heart, ne'er a rogue in Spain shall wrong my brother,

Whilst I can hold a sword. [*Thrusts at PIORATO.*]

*Pio.* Hold, madam, madam!

*Alv.* Clara!

*Eug.* Daughter!

*Bob.* Mistress!

*Pio.* *Bradamanie!*

Hold, hold, I pray.

*Alv.* The devil's in her, o' the other side sure!—There's gold for you.—They have changed what-ye-call't's.

Will no cure help? Well, I have one experiment, And if that fail, I'll hang him; then there's an end on't.

Come you along with me! and you, sir!

*Bob.* Now are you going to drowning.

[*Exit ALVAREZ, EUGENIA, LUCIO, and BORADILLA.*]

*Syav.* I'll even along with ye; she's too great a lady

For me, and would prove more than my match.

[*Exit.*]

*Clara.* You are he spoke of Vitelli to the steward?

*Pio.* Yes; and, I thank you, you have beat me for't.

*Clara.* But are you sure you do not wrong him?

*Pio.* Sure?

So sure, that, if you please venture yourself, I'll shew you him and his cockatrice together, And you shall hear 'em talk.

*Clara.* Will you? By Heaven, sir,

You shall endear me ever; and I ask

You mercy!

*Pio.* You were somewhat boisterous.

*Clara.* There's gold to make ye amends; and for this pains,

I'll gratify you further. I'll but mask me,

And walk along with ye. 'Faith, let's make a night on't!

[*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—NIGHT. *A Street.*

*Enter ALGUAZIER, PACHICO, MENDOZA, METALDI, and LAZARILLO.*

*Alg.* Come on, my brave water-spaniels! you that hunt ducks in the night, and hide more knavery under your gowns than your betters! Observe my precepts, and edify by my doctrine. At yond corner will I set you: If drunkards molest the street, and fall to brabbling, knock you down the malefactors, and take you up their cloaks and hats, and bring them to me; they are lawful prisoners, and must be ransom'd ere they receive liberty. What else you are to execute upon occasion, you sufficiently know, and therefore I abbreviate my lecture.

*Met.* We are wise enough, and warm enough.

*Mend.* Vice this night shall be apprehended!

*Pach.* The terror of rug-gowns shall be known, and our bills discharge us of after-reckonings.

*Laz.* I will do anything, so I may eat!

*Pach.* Lazarillo, we will spend no more; now we are grown worse, we will live better; let us follow our calling faithfully.

*Alg.* Away then! the commonwealth is our mistress; and who would serve a common mistress, but to gain by her?

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Street.*

Enter VITELLI, LAMORAL, GENEVORA, ANASTRO, and two Pages with Lights.

Lam. I pray you see the masque, my lord.

Ana. 'Tis early night yet.

Gen. Oh, if it be so late, take me along ; I would not give advantage to ill tongues To tax my being here, without your presence To be my warrant.

Vit. You might spare this, sister, Knowing with whom I leave you ; one that is, By your allowance, and his choice, your servant, And, may my counsel and persuasion work it, Your husband speedily.—For your entertainment My thanks ! I will not rob you of the means To do your mistress some acceptable service, In waiting on her to my house.

Gen. My lord—

Vit. As you respect me, without further trouble Retire, and taste those pleasures prepared for you, And leave me to my own ways.

Lam. When you please, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*A Room in the ALGUAZIER'S House with a Gallery.*

Enter MALRODA and ALGUAZIER.

Malr. You'll leave my chamber ?

Alg. Let us but bill once, My dove, my sparrow, and I, with my office, Will be thy slaves for ever.

Malr. Are you so hot ?

Alg. But taste the difference of a man in place : You'll find that, when authority pricks him forward,

Your don, nor yet your Diego, comes not near him, To do a lady right ! No men pay dearer For their stolen sweets than we ; three minutes' Affords to any sinner a protection [trading For three years after ; think on that. I burn ! But one drop of your bounty—

Malr. Hence, you rogue !

Am I fit for you ? is't not grace sufficient To have your staff a bolt to bar the door Where a don enters, but that you'll presume To be his taster ?

Alg. Is no more respect Due to this rod of justice ?

Malr. Do you dispute ?

Good doctor of the dungeon, not a word more ! Pox ! if you do, my lord Vitelli knows it.

Alg. Why, I am big enough to answer him, Or any man.

Malr. 'Tis well !

Vit. [Within.] Malroda !

Alg. How ?

Malr. You know the voice ; and now crouch like a cur Ta'en worrying sheep : I now could have you gelded

For a bawd rampant ; but, on this submission, For once I spare you.

Alg. [Aside.] I will be revenged !—

Enter VITELLI.

My honourable lord.

Vit. There's for thy care.

Alg. I am mad, stark mad ! Proud Pagan ! scorn her host ? [Aside.

I would I were but valiant enough to kick her ! I would wish no manhood else.

Malr. What's that ?

Alg. I am gone. [Exit.

Enter PIORATO and CLARA, above.

Pio. You see I have kept my word.

Clara. But in this object Hardly deserved my thanks.

Pio. Is there aught else You will command me ?

Clara. Only your sword, Which I must have. Nay, willingly ! I yet know To force it, and to use it.

Pio. 'Tis yours, lady.

Clara. I ask no other guard.

Pio. If so, I leave you.

And now, if that the constable keep his word, A poorer man may chance to gull a lord. [Exit.

Malr. By this good kiss, you shall not.

Vit. By this kiss,

I must, and will, Malroda ! What, do you make A stranger of me ?

Malr. I'll be so to you, And you shall find it.

Vit. These are your old arts, To endear the game you know I come to hunt for ; Which I have borne too coldly.

Malr. Do so still !

For if I heat you, hang me !

Vit. If you do not,

I know who'll starve for't. Why, thou shame of women,

Whose folly or whose impudence is greater Is doubtful to determine ! This to me, That know thee for a whore ?

Malr. And made me one ; Remember that !

Vit. Why, should I but grow wise, And tie that bounty up, which nor discretion Nor honour can give way to, thou wouldst be A bawd ere twenty ; and, within a month, A barefoot, lousy, and diseased whore, And shift thy lodgings oftner than a rogue That's whipt from post to post.

Malr. Fish ! all our college Know you can rail well in this kind.

Clara. For me He never spake so well !

Vit. I have maintain'd thee The envy of great fortunes ; made thee shine As if thy name were glorious ; stuck thee full Of jewels, as the firmament of stars ; And in it made thee so remarkable, That it grew questionable whether Virtue poor, Or Vice so set forth as it is in thee, Were even by Modesty's self to be preferr'd : And am I thus repaid ?

Malr. You are still my debtor ! Can this, though true, be weigh'd with my lost honour,

Much less my faith ? I have lived private to you, And but for you had ne'er known what lust was, Nor what the sorrow for't.

*Vit.* 'Tis false !

*Malr.* 'Tis true !

But how return'd by you ? thy whole life being  
But one continued act of lust, and shipwreck  
Of women's chastities.

*Vit.* But that I know

That she that dares be damn'd dares anything,  
I should admire thy tempting me ; but presume  
not

On the power you think you hold o'er my affections ;  
It will deceive you ! Yield, and presently,  
Or by the inflamed blood, which thou must quench,  
I'll make a forcible entry.

*Malr.* Touch me not !

You know I have a throat : By Heaven, if you do,  
I will cry out a rape, or sheathe this here,  
Ere I'll be kept, and used for julp-water,  
To allay the heat which luscious meats and wine,  
And not desire, hath raised.

*Vit.* A desperate devil ! *[Aside.*

My blood commands my reason : I must take  
Some milder way.

*Malr.* I hope, dear don, I fit you : *[Aside.*

The night is mine, although the day was yours !  
You are not fasting now. This speeding trick  
(Which I would as a principle leave to all  
That make their maintenance out of their own  
Indies,

As I do now) my good old mother taught me :  
"Daughter," quoth she, "contest not with your  
lover,

His stomach being empty ; let wine heat him,  
And then you may command him :"' 'Tis a sure  
His looks shew he is coming. *[one !*

*Vit.* Come, this needs not,

Especially to me : You know how dear  
I ever have esteem'd you—

*Clara.* Lost again !

*Vit.* That any sigh of yours hath power to  
My strongest resolution ; and one tear *[change*  
Sufficient to command a pardon from me,  
For any wrong from you, which all mankind  
Should kneel in vain for.

*Malr.* Pray you pardon those

That need your favour, or desire it.

*Vit.* Pr'ythee

Be better temper'd : I'll pay, as a forfeit  
For my rash anger, this purse fill'd with gold.  
Thou shalt have servants, gowns, attires ; what  
not ?

Only continue mine.

*Malr.* 'Twas this I fish'd for. *[Aside.*

*Vit.* Look on me, and receive it.

*Malr.* Well, you know

My gentle nature, and take pride to abuse it.  
You see a trifle pleases me : We are friends ;  
This kiss, and this, confirms it.

*Clara.* With my ruin !

*Malr.* I'll have this diamond, and this pearl.

*Vit.* They are yours.

*Malr.* But will you not, when you have what  
you came for,

Take them from me to-morrow ? 'Tis a fashion  
Your lords of late have used.

*Vit.* But I'll not follow.

*Clara.* That any man at such a rate as this  
Should pay for his repentance !

*Vit.* Shall we to-bed now ?

*Malr.* Instantly, sweet. Yet, now I think on't  
better,

There's something first that in a word or two  
I must acquaint you with.

*Clara.* Can I cry aim  
To this, against myself ? I'll break this match,  
Or make it stronger with my blood ! *[Descends.*

*Enter* ALQUAZIER, PIORATO, PACHICO, METALDI, MENDOZA,  
LAZARILLO, &c. and stand apart.

*Alg.* I am yours !

A don's not privileged here more than yourself :  
Win her, and wear her.

*Pio.* Have you a priest ready ?

*Alg.* I have him for thee, lad.—And when I have  
Married this scornful whore to this poor gallant,  
She will make suit to me : There is a trick  
To bring a high-priced wench upon her knees.  
For you, my fine neat harpies, stretch your talons,  
And prove yourselves true night-birds.

*Pach.* Take my word

For me and all the rest.

*Las.* If there be meat  
Or any banquet stirring, you shall see  
How I'll bestow myself.

*Alg.* When they are drawn,  
Rush in upon 'em ; all's fair prize you light on.  
I must away : Your officer may give way  
To the knavery of his watch, but must not see it.  
You all know where to find me. *[Exit.*

*Met.* There look for us.

*Vit.* Who's that ?

*Malr.* My Piorato ? Welcome, welcome !  
'Faith, had you not come when you did, my lord  
Had done I know not what to me.

*Vit.* I am gull'd !

First cheated of my jewels, and then laugh'd at !  
—Sirrah, what make you here ?

*Pio.* A business brings me,  
More lawful than your own.

*Vit.* How's that, you slave ?

*Malr.* He's such, that would continue her a  
Whom he would make a wife of ! *[whore,*

*Vit.* I'll tread upon *[Draws.*  
The face you dote on, strumpet !

*Enter* CLARA.

*Pach.* Keep the peace there ! *[They rush forward.*

*Vit.* A plot upon my life too ?

*Met.* Down with him !

*Clara.* Shew your old valour, and learn from a  
One eagle has a world of odds against *[woman !*  
A flight of daws, as these are. *[She beats them off.*

*Pio.* Get you off ;

I'll follow instantly.

*Pach.* Run for more help there !

*[Exit all but VITELLI and CLARA.*

*Vit.* Loss of my gold, and jewels, and the wench  
Afflicts me not so much as the having Clara *[too,*  
The witness of my weakness.

*Clara.* He turns from me !

And yet I may urge merit ; since his life  
Is made my second gift.

*Vit.* May I ne'er prosper  
If I know how to thank her !

*Clara.* Sir, your pardon  
For pressing thus, beyond a virgin's bounds,  
Upon your privacies ; and let my being  
Like to a man, as you are, be the excuse  
Of my soliciting that from you, which shall not  
Be granted on my part, although desired  
By any other. Sir, you understand me ;  
And 'twould shew nobly in you to prevent

From me a further boldness, which I must Proceed in, if you prove not merciful, Though with my loss of blushes and good name.

*Vit.* Madam, I know your will, and would be If it were possible I could affect [thankful, The daughter of an enemy.

*Clara.* That fair false one, Whom with fond dotage you have long pursued, Had such a father; she to whom you pay Dearer for your dishonour, than all titles Ambitious men hunt for are worth.

*Vit.* 'Tis truth.

*Clara.* Yet, with her, as a friend, you still ex- Health for diseases, and, to your disgrace, [change Nourish the rivals to your present pleasures, At your own charge; used as a property To give a safe protection to her lust, Yet share in nothing but the shame of it.

*Vit.* Grant all this so, to take you for a wife Were greater hazard; for should I offend you (As 'tis not easy still to please a woman) You're of so great a spirit, that I must learn To wear your petticoat, for you will have My breeches from me.

*Clara.* Rather from this hour I here abjure all actions of a man, And will esteem it happiness from you To suffer like a woman. Love, true love, Hath made a search within me, and expell'd All but my natural softness, and made perfect That which my parents' care could not begin. I will shew strength in nothing, but my duty And glad desire to please you, and in that Grow every day more able.

*Vit.* Could this be, [Aside.

What a brave race might I beget! I find A kind of yielding; and no reason why I should hold longer out; She's young and fair, And chaste, for sure; but with her leave, the devil Durst not attempt her.—Madam, though you have A soldier's arm, your lips appear as if They were a lady's.

*Clara.* They dare, sir, from you Endure the trial.

*Vit.* [Kisses her.] Ha! once more, I pray you!— The best I ever tasted; and 'tis said I have proved many. 'Tis not safe, I fear, To ask the rest now. Well, I will leave whoring, And luck herein send me with her!—Worthiest I'll wait upon you home, and by the way [lady, (If e'er I marry, as I'll not forswear it) Tell you, you are my wife.

*Clara.* Which if you do, From me, all mankind women learn to woo! [Exeunt.

### SCENE III.—NIGHT. A Street.

Enter ALSUAGIER, PACHICO, METALDI, MENDOZA, and LAZANILLO.

*Alg.* A cloak? Good purchase! And rich hang- We'll share ten pistols a-man. [ers? well!

*Laz.* Yet still

I am monstrous hungry! Could you not deduct So much out of the gross sum, as would purchase Eight loins of veal, and some two dozen of capons?

*Pach.* Oh, strange proportion for five!

*Laz.* For five? I have

A legion in my stomach, that have kept Perpetual fast these ten years: For the capons,

They are to me but as so many black-birds. May I but eat once, and be satisfied, Let the fates call me, when my ship is fraught, And I shall hang in peace.

*Alg.* Steal well to-night

And thou shalt feed to-morrow. So! now you are Yourselves again, I'll raise another watch To free you from suspicion: Set on any You meet with boldly; I'll not be far off, To assist you, and protect you. [Exit.

*Met.* Oh, brave officer!

*Pach.* 'Would every ward had one but so well given, And we would watch, for rug, in gowns of velvet!

Enter ALVARES, LUCIO, and BOBADILLA.

*Mend.* Stand close; a prize!

*Met.* Sattin, and gold lace, lads!

*Alv.* Why dost thou hang upon me?

*Lucio.* 'Tis so dark

I dare not see my way; for Heaven sake, father, Let us go home!

*Bob.* No, even here we'll leave you.—

Let's run away from him, my lord.

*Lucio.* Oh, 'las!

*Alv.* Thou hast made me mad, and I will beat thee dead,

Then bray thee in a mortar, and new-mould thee, But I will alter thee.

*Bob.* 'Twill never be:

He has been three days practising to drink, Yet still he sips like to a waiting-woman, And looks as he were murdering of a fart Among wild Irish swaggerers.

*Lucio.* I have still

Your good word, Zancho. Father—

*Alv.* Milk-sop, coward!

No house of mine receives thee; I disclaim thee; Thy mother on her knees shall not entreat me Hereafter to acknowledge thee!

*Lucio.* Pray you speak for me!

*Bob.* I would, but now I cannot with mine honour.

*Alv.* There's only one course left, that may redeem thee,

Which is, to strike the next man that you meet; And if we chance to light upon a woman, Take her away, and use her like a man, Or I will cut thy hamstrings.

*Pach.* This makes for us.

*Alv.* What dost thou do now?

*Lucio.* Sir, I am saying my prayers;

For being to undertake what you would have me, I know I cannot live.

Enter LAMORAL, GENKFORA, ANASTRO, and Pages with Lights.

*Lam.* Madam, I fear

You'll wish you had used your coach; your brother's Is yet far off. [house

*Gen.* The better, sir; this walk Will help digestion after your great supper, Of which I have fed largely.

*Alv.* To your task!

Or else you know what follows.

*Lucio.* I am dying:

Now, Lord have mercy on me!—By your favour, Sir, I must strike you.

*Lam.* For what cause?

*Lucio.* I know not.

And I must likewise talk with that young lady,  
An hour in private.

*Lam.* What you must, is doubtful;  
But I am certain, sir, I must beat you.

[*Strikes him.*]

*Lucio.* Help, help!

*Alc.* Not strike again?

*Lam.* How! Alvarez?

*Ana.* This for my lord Vitelli's love!

[*Strikes ALVAREZ down.*]

*Pach.* Break out;  
And, like true thieves, make prey on either side,  
But seem to help the stronger.

*Bob.* Oh, my lord!

They have beat him on his knees.

*Lucio.* Though I want courage,  
I yet have a son's duty in me, and  
Compassion of a father's danger; that,  
That wholly now possesses me. [*Rushes on them.*]

*Alc.* Lucio,

This is beyond my hope.

*Met.* So! Lazarillo,  
Take up all, boy! Well done!

*Pach.* And now steal off  
Closely and cunningly.

*Ana.* How! have I found you?—

Why gentlemen, are you mad, to make yourselves  
A prey to rogues?

*Lam.* 'Would we were off!

*Bob.* Thieves, thieves!

*Lam.* Defer our own contention, and down with  
them. [*They rush on the thieves.*]

*Lucio.* I'll make you sure!

*Bob.* Now he plays the devil.

*Gen.* This place is not for me. [*Exit.*]

*Lucio.* I'll follow her.

Half of my penance is past o'er. [*Exit.*]

*Enter ALGUAZIER, with other Watches; and Assistant,  
who stands apart.*

*Alg.* What noise,

What tumult's there? Keep the king's peace, I  
*Pach.* I am glad he's come yet. [*Charge you.*]

*Alc.* Oh, you keep good guard  
Upon the city, when men of our rank  
Are set upon in the streets.

*Lam.* The assistant  
Shall hear of it, be assured.

*Ana.* And if he be  
That careful governor he is reported,  
You will smart for it.

*Alg.* Patience, good signors!  
Let me survey the rascals. Oh, I know them,  
And thank you for them: They are pilfering rogues  
Of Andalusia, that have perused  
All prisons in Castile. I dare not trust  
The dungeon with them; no, I'll have them home  
To my own house.

*Pach.* We had rather go to prison.

*Alg.* Had you so, dog-bolts? Yes, I know you  
had!

You there would use your cunning fingers on  
The simple locks, you would; but I'll prevent you.

*Lam.* My mistress lost? good night! [*Exit.*]

*Bob.* Your son's gone too;  
What should become of him?

*Alc.* Come of him what will,  
Now he dares fight, I care not: I'll to bed.  
Look to your prisoners, Alguazier.

[*Exit with BORADILLO.*]

*Alg.* All's cleared.

Droop not for one disaster: let us hug,  
And triumph in our knaveries.

*Assist.* This confirms  
What was reported of him.

*Met.* 'Twas done bravely!

*Alg.* I must a little glory in the means  
We officers have to play the knaves, and safely:  
How we break through the toils pitch'd by the law,  
Yet hang up them that are far less delinquents!  
A simple shopkeeper's carted for a bawd,  
For lodging, though unwittingly, a smock-gamster;  
Where, with rewards, and credit, I have kept  
Malroda in my house, as in a cloister,  
Without taint or suspicion.

*Pach.* But suppose  
The governor should know it?

*Alg.* He? Good gentleman,  
Let him perplex himself with prying into  
The measures in the market, and the abuses  
The day stands guilty of: The pillage of  
The night is only mine, mine own fee-simple,  
Which you shall hold from me, tenants at will,  
And pay no rent for't.

*Pach.* Admirable landlord!

*Alg.* Now we'll go search the taverns, commit  
such

As we find drinking, and be drunk ourselves  
With what we take from them. These silly wretches,  
Whom I for form-sake only have brought hither,  
Shall watch without, and guard us.

*Assist.* And we will [*Comes forward.*]  
See you safe lodged, most worthy Alguazier,  
With all of you, his comrades.

*Met.* 'Tis the governor.

*Alg.* We are betray'd.

*Assist.* My guard there!—

*Enter Guard.*

Bind them fast.

How men in high place and estimations wrong'd  
Are in their lives and estimations wrong'd  
By their subordinate ministers! yet such  
They cannot but employ; wrong'd Justice finding  
Scarce one true servant in ten officers.—  
To expostulate with you, were but to delay  
Your crimes' due punishment, which shall fall upon  
So speedily, and severely, that it shall [you  
Fright others by the example; and confirm,  
However corrupt officers may disgrace  
Themselves, 'tis not in them to wrong their place.—  
Bring them away.

*Alg.* We'll suffer nobly yet,  
And like to Spanish gallants.

*Pach.* And we'll hang so.

*Lam.* I have no stomach to't; but I'll endeavour.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another Street.*

*Enter LUCIO and GENOVEVA.*

*Gen.* Nay, you are rude! pray you forbear! you  
More than the breeding of a gentleman [offer now  
Can give you warrant for.

*Lucio.* 'Tis but to kiss you;  
And think not I'll receive that for a favour  
Which was enjoin'd me for a penance, lady.

*Gen.* You have met a gentle confessor; and, for  
once,

(So then you will rest satisfied) I vouchsafe it.

*Lucio.* Rest satisfied with a kiss? Why, can a man  
Desire more from a woman? is there any  
Pleasure beyond it? may I never live  
If I know what it is!

*Gen.* Sweet innocence!

*Lucio.* [*Kisses her.*] What strange new motions  
do I feel!—My veins

Burn with an unknown fire; in every part  
I suffer alteration; I am poison'd,  
Yet languish with desire again to taste it,  
So sweetly it works on me.

*Gen.* I ne'er saw  
A lovely man, till now.

*Lucio.* How can this be?

She is a woman, as my mother is,  
And her I have kissed often, and brought off  
My lips unscorch'd: Yours are more lovely, lady,  
And so should be less hurtful. Pray you vouchsafe  
Your hand, to quench the heat ta'en from your lip!  
Perhaps that may restore me.

*Gen.* Willingly.

*Lucio.* The flame increases! If to touch you  
burn thus,  
What would more strict embraces do? I know not:  
And yet, methinks, to die so were to ascend  
To Heaven, through Paradise.

*Gen.* I am wounded too;  
Though modesty forbids that I should speak  
What ignorance makes him bold in.—Why do you  
fix

Your eyes so strongly on me?

*Lucio.* Pray you stand still!

There's nothing else that's worth the looking on:  
I could adore you, lady.

*Gen.* Can you love me?

*Lucio.* To wait on you in your chamber, and  
but touch

What you, by wearing it, have made divine,  
Were such a happiness!—I am resolved,

I'll sell my liberty to you for this glove,  
And write myself your slave.

*Enter LAMORAL.*

*Gen.* On easier terms

Receive it, as a friend.

[*Gives him her glove.*]

*Lam.* How! giving favour?

I'll have it, with his heart.

[*Seizes the glove, and puts it in his hat.*]

*Gen.* What will you do?

*Lucio.* As you are merciful, take my life rather!

[*Kneels to LAMORAL.*]

*Gen.* Will you depart with it so?

*Lucio.* Does that grieve you?

*Gen.* I know not; but even now you appeared  
valiant.

*Lucio.* 'Twas to preserve my father; in his cause  
I could be so again.

*Gen.* Not in your own?

Kneel to thy rival, and thine enemy?

Away, unworthy creature! I begin

To hate myself, for giving entrance to

A good opinion of thee. For thy torment,

If my poor beauty be of any power,

Mayst thou dote on it desperately! but never

Presume to hope for grace, till thou recover

And wear the favour that was ravish'd from thee.

*Lam.* He wears my head too then.

*Gen.* Poor fool, farewell!

*Lucio.* My womanish soul, which hitherto hath  
govern'd

This coward flesh, I feel departing from me;

And in me, by her beauty, is inspired

A new and masculine one, instructing me

What's fit to do or suffer. Powerful Love!

That hast with loud, and yet a pleasing thunder

Roused sleeping manhood in me, thy new creature.

Perfect thy work; so that I may make known,

Nature (though long kept back) will have her own!

[*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

*Enter LAMORAL and LUCIO.*

*Lam.* Can it be possible that in six short hours,  
The subject still the same, so many habits  
Should be removed? or this new Lucio (he  
That yesternight was baffled and disgraced,  
And thank'd the man that did it; that then kneel'd  
And blubber'd like a woman) should now dare  
On terms of honour seek reparation,  
For what he then appeared not capable of?

*Lucio.* Such miracles, men that dare do injuries  
Live to their shames to see, for punishment  
And scourge to their proud follies.

*Lam.* Pr'ythee leave me;  
Had I my page or footman here to flesh thee,  
I durst the better hear thee.

*Lucio.* This scorn needs not:  
And offer such no more!

*Lam.* Why, say I should,  
You'll not be angry?

*Lucio.* Indeed, I think I shall!  
Would you vouchsafe to shew yourself a captain,  
And lead a little further, to some place  
That's less frequented—

*Lam.* He looks pale.

*Lucio.* If not,  
Make use of this.

*Lam.* There's anger in his eyes too;  
His gesture, voice, behaviour, all new fashion'd.  
Well, if it does endure in act the trial  
Of what in show it promises to make good,  
Ulysses' Cyclops, Ió's transformation,  
Eurydice fetch'd from hell, with all the rest  
Of Ovid's fables, I'll put in my creed;  
And, for proof all incredible things may be,  
Write down that Lucio, the coward Lucio,  
The womanish Lucio, fought.

*Lucio.* And Lamoral,  
The still employ'd great duellist Lamoral,  
Took his life from him.

*Lam.* 'Twill not come to that, sure!  
Methinks the only drawing of my sword  
Should fright that confidence.

*Lucio.* It confirms it rather:  
To make which good, know you stand now opposed  
By one that is your rival; one that wishes  
Your name and title greater, to raise his;  
The wrong you did less pardonable than it is,

But your strength to defend it more than ever  
It was when Justice friended it ; the lady  
For whom we now contend, Genevora,  
Of more desert, (if such incomparable beauty  
Could suffer an addition ; ) your love  
To Don Vetelli multiplied, and your hate  
Against my father and his house increased ;  
And lastly, that the glove which you there wear,  
To my dishonour ! ( which I must force from you )  
Were dearer to you than your life.

*Lam.* You'll find  
It is, and so I'll guard it.

*Lucio.* All these meet then,  
With the black infamy to be foil'd by one  
That's not allow'd a man, to help your valour ;  
That, falling by your hand, I may or die  
Or win in this one single opposition  
My mistress, and such honour as I may  
Enrich my father's arms with !

*Lam.* 'Tis said nobly ;  
My life with them are at the stake.

*Lucio.* At all then !  
[*Fight. Lucio disarms Lamoral.*  
*Lam.* She is yours ! this, and my life too, follow  
your fortune : [Gives up the glove.

And give not only back that part the loser  
Scorns to accept of !

*Lucio.* What's that ?

*Lam.* My poor life ;  
Which do not leave me as a further torment,  
Having despoil'd me of my sword, mine honour,  
Hope of my lady's grace, fame, and all else  
That made it worth the keeping.

*Lucio.* I take back  
No more from you than what you forced from me,  
And with a worse title. Yet think not  
That I'll dispute this, as made insolent  
By my success, but as one equal with you,  
If so you will accept me. That new courage  
(Or call it fortune if you please) that is  
Conferred upon me by the only sight  
Of fair Genevora, was not bestow'd on me  
To bloody purposes ; nor did her command  
Deprive me of the happiness to see her,  
But till I did redeem her favour from you ;  
Which only I rejoice in, and share with you  
In all you suffer else.

*Lam.* This courtesy  
Wounds deeper than your sword can, or mine own :  
Pray you make use of either, and dispatch me !

*Lucio.* The barbarous Turk is satisfied with  
spoil ;

And shall I, being possessed of what I came for,  
Prove the more infidel ?

*Lam.* You were better be so  
Than publish my disgrace, as 'tis the custom,  
And which I must expect.

*Lucio.* Judge better of me :  
I have no tongue to trumpet mine own praise  
To your dishonour ; 'tis a bastard courage  
That seeks a name out that way, no true-born  
one.

Pray you be comforted ! for, by all goodness,  
But to her virtuous self (the best part of it)  
I never will discover on what terms  
I came by these : Which yet I take not from you,  
But leave you, in exchange of them, mine own,  
With the desire of being a friend ; which if  
You will not grant me, but on further trial  
Of manhood in me, seek me when you please,

(And though I might refuse it with mine honour)  
Win them again, and wear them. So, good-morrow !  
[Gives him his own hat, and exits.

*Lam.* I ne'er knew what true valour was till  
now ;  
And have gain'd more by this disgrace, than all  
The honours I have won : They made me proud,  
Presumptuous of my fortune, a mere beast,  
Fashion'd by them, only to dare and do,  
Yielding no reasons for my wilful actions  
But what I stuck on my sword's point, presuming  
It was the best revenue. How unequal  
Wrongs well maintained make us to others, which  
Ending with shame, teach us to know ourselves !  
I will think more on't.

Enter VITELLI.

*Vit.* Lamoral !

*Lam.* My lord ?

*Vit.* I came to seek you.

*Lam.* And unwillingly  
You ne'er found me till now ! Your pleasure, sir ?  
*Vit.* That which will please thee, friend ! Thy  
vow'd love to me

Shall now be put in action ; means are offer'd  
To use thy good sword for me, that which still  
Thou wear'st as if it were a part of thee.  
Where is't ?

*Lam.* 'Tis changed for one more fortunate :  
Pray you enquire not how.

*Vit.* Why I ne'er thought  
That there was magic in it, but ascribe  
The fortune of it to the arm.

*Lam.* Which is  
Grown weaker too. I am not (in a word)  
Worthy your friendship : I am one new vanquish'd,  
Yet shame to tell by whom !

*Vit.* But I'll tell thee  
'Gainst whom thou art to fight, and there redeem  
Thy honour lost, if there be any such.  
The king, by my long suit, at length is pleased  
That Alvarez and myself, with either's second,  
Shall end the difference between our houses,  
Which he accepts of : I make choice of thee ;  
And, where you speak of a disgrace, the means  
To blot it out, by such a public trial  
Of thy approved valour, will revive  
Thy ancient courage. If you embrace it, do ;  
If not, I'll seek some other.

*Lam.* As I am,  
You may command me.

*Vit.* Spoke like that true friend,  
That loves not only for his private end ! [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—Another Street.

Enter GENEVORA with a Letter, and BORADILLA.

*Gen.* This from madonna Clara ?

*Bob.* Yes, an't please you.

*Gen.* Alvarez' daughter ?

*Bob.* The same, lady.

*Gen.* She

That saved my brother's life ?

*Bob.* You are still i' th' right :

She will'd me wait your walking forth, and, know-  
How necessary a discreet wise man [ing  
Was, in a business of such weight, she pleased  
To think on me. It may be, in my face  
Your ladyship, not acquainted with my wisdom,

Finds no such matter ; what I am, I am ;  
Thought's free, and think you what you please.

*Gen.* 'Tis strange——

*Bob.* That I should be wise, madam ?

*Gen.* No, thou art so.

There's for thy pains ; and pr'ythee tell thy lady  
I will not fail to meet her : I'll receive  
Thy thanks and duty in thy present absence.  
Farewell, farewell, I say ! Now thou art wise.

[*Exit BOBADILLA.*]

She writes here, she hath something to impart  
That may concern my brother's life : I know not ;  
But general fame does give her out so worthy,  
That I dare not suspect her ; yet wish Lucio  
Were master of her mind : But, fy upon't !  
Why do I think on him ?

*Enter Lucio.*

See, I am punish'd for't,  
In his unlook'd-for presence : Now I must  
Endure another tedious piece of courtship,  
Would make one forswear courtesies.

*Lucio.* Gracious madam, [Kneels.]  
The sorrow paid, for your just anger towards me,  
Arising from my weakness, I presume  
To press into your presence, and despair not  
An easy pardon.

*Gen.* He speaks sense : Oh, strange !

*Lucio.* And yet believe, that no desires of mine,  
Though all are too strong in me, had the power,  
For their delight, to force me to infringe  
What you commanded ; it being in your part  
To lessen your great rigour when you please,  
And mine to suffer with an humble patience  
What you'll impose upon it.

*Gen.* Courtly too !

*Lucio.* Yet hath the poor and contemn'd Lucio,  
madam,  
(Made able only by his hope to serve you)  
Recover'd what with violence, not justice,  
Was taken from him ; and here at your feet,  
With these, he could have laid the conquer'd head  
Of Lamoral ('tis all I say of him)  
For rudely touching that, which, as a relic,  
I ever would have worshipp'd, since 'twas yours.

[Lays the hat and glove at her feet.]

*Gen.* Valiant, and everything a lady could  
Wish in her servant !

*Lucio.* All that's good in me,  
That heavenly Love, the opposite to base lust,  
Which would have all men worthy, hath created ;  
Which being by your beams of beauty form'd,  
Cherish as your own creature !

*Gen.* I am gone

[*Aside.*]

Too far now to dissemble.—Rise, or sure  
I must kneel with you too : Let this one kiss  
Speak the rest for me ! 'tis too much I do,  
And yet, if Chastity would, I could wish more.

*Lucio.* In overjoying me, you are grown sad !  
What is it, madam ? by Heaven,  
There's nothing that's within my nerves (and yet,  
Favour'd by you, I should as much as man)  
But when you please, now, or on all occasions  
You can think of hereafter, but you may  
Dispose of at your pleasure.

*Gen.* If you break

That oath again, you lose me : Yet so well  
I love you, I shall never put you to't ;  
And yet, forget it not. Rest satisfied  
With that you have received now ! there are eyes

May be upon us ; till the difference  
Between our friends are ended, I would not  
Be seen so private with you.

*Lucio.* I obey you.

*Gen.* But let me hear oft from you, and remem-  
ber

I am Vitelli's sister !

*Lucio.* What's that, madam ?

*Gen.* Nay, nothing. Fare you well ! who feels  
Love's fire,  
Would ever ask to have means to desire. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Court in the Castle of Saint Jago ; with a Scaffolding in the back-ground.*

*Enter above, Assistant, SYAVEDRA, ANASTRO, Herald, Attendants, and Spectators.*

*Assist.* Are they come in ?

*Herald.* Yes.

*Assist.* Read the proclamation,  
That all the people here assembled may  
Have satisfaction, what the king's dear love,  
In care of the republic, hath ordain'd.—  
Attend with silence.—Read aloud.

*Herald.* [Reads.] Forasmuch as our high and mighty  
master, Philip, the potent and most catholic king of Spain,  
hath not only in his own royal person been long and often  
solicited, and grieved, with the deadly and incurable  
hatred sprung up betwixt the two ancient and most  
honourably-descended houses of these his two dearly and  
equally-beloved subjects, Don Ferdinando de Alvarez, and  
Don Pedro de Vitelli (all which in vain his majesty hath  
often endeavoured to reconcile and qualify : But that also,  
through the debates, quarrels, and outrages daily arising,  
falling, and flowing from these great heads, his public civil  
government is seditiously and barbarously molested and  
wounded, and many of his chief gentry, (no less tender to  
his royal majesty, than the very branches of his own sacred  
blood) spoiled, lost, and submerged, in the impious inno-  
dation and torrent of their still-growing malice ; it hath  
therefore pleased his sacred majesty, out of his infinite  
affection to preserve his commonwealth, and general peace,  
from farther violation, (as a sweet and heartily-loving  
father of his people,) and on the earnest petitions of these  
arch-enemies, to order and ordain, that they be ready, each  
with his well-chosen and beloved friend, armed at all  
points like gentlemen, in the castle of Saint Jago, on this  
present Monday morning, betwixt eight and nine of the  
clock, where (before the combatants be allowed to com-  
mence this granted duel) this to be read aloud for the  
public satisfaction of his majesty's well-beloved subjects.  
Save the king ! [Drums within.]

*Syav.* Hark, how their drums speak their insa-  
tiate thirst

Of blood, and stop their ears 'gainst pious peace.  
Who, gently whispering, implores their friendship !

*Assist.* Kings nor authority can master Fate :  
Admit 'em then ; and blood extinguish hate !

*Enter severally, ALVAREZ and LUCIO, VITELLI and LAMORAL.*

*Syav.* Stay ! yet be pleased to think, and let not  
daring

(Wherein men now-a-days exceed even beasts,  
And think themselves not men else) so transport  
you

Beyond the bounds of Christianity !  
Lord Alvarez, Vitelli, gentlemen,  
No town in Spain, from our metropolis  
Unto the rudest hovel, but is great  
With your assured valours' daily proofs :

Oh, will you then, for a superfluous fame,  
A sound of honour, which, in these times, all  
Like heretics profess (with obstinacy,  
But most erroneously) venture your souls?  
It is a hard task, through a sea of blood  
To sail, and land at Heaven.

*Vit.* I hope not,  
If Justice be my pilot. But, my lord,  
You know if argument, or time, or love,  
Could reconcile, long since we had shook hands:  
I dare protest, your breath cools not a vein  
In any one of us; but blows the fire,  
Which nought but blood reciprocal can quench.

*Alv.* Vitelli, thou say'st bravely, and say'st right;  
And I will kill thee for't, I love thee so.

*Vit.* Ha, ha! Old man, upon thy death I'll build  
A story with this arm, for thy old wife  
To tell thy daughter Clara seven years hence,  
As she sits weeping by a winter-fire,  
How such a time Vitelli slew her husband  
With the same sword his daughter favour'd him,  
And lives, and wears it yet.—Come, Lamoral,  
Redeem thyself!

*Lam.* Lucio, Genevora  
Shall on this sword receive thy bleeding heart,  
For my presented hat, laid at her feet.

*Lucio.* Thou talk'st well, Lamoral! but 'tis thy  
That I will carry to her to thy hat.— [head  
Fy, father! I do cool too much.

*Alv.* Oh, boy! thy father's true son!—  
Beat drums! And so, good-morrow to your lord-  
ship! [Drums.

*Enter above, EUGENIA, CLARA, and GENEVORA.*

*Syav.* Brave resolutions!

*Ana.* Brave, and Spanish, right!

*Gen.* Lucio!

*Clara.* Vitelli!

*Eug.* Alvarez!

*Alv.* How the devil

Got these cats into th' gutter? my puss too?

*Eug.* Hear us!

*Gen.* We must be heard!

*Clara.* We will be heard!

Vitelli, look; see Clara on her knees,  
Imploping thy compassion!—Heaven, how sternly  
They dart their emulous eyes, as if each scorn'd  
To be behind the other in a look!

Mother, Death needs no sword here! Oh, my  
sister,

(Fate fain would have it so) persuade, entreat!

A lady's tears are silent orators,  
Or should be so at least, to move beyond  
The honest-tongued rhetorician;

Why will you fight? Why does an uncle's death,  
Twenty year old, exceed your love to me,  
But twenty days? whose forc'd cause, and fair  
manner

You could not understand, only have heard.  
Custom, that wrought so cunningly on Nature  
In me, that I forgot my sex, and knew not  
Whether my body female were or male,  
You did unweave, and had the power to charm  
A new creation in me, made me fear  
To think on those deeds I did perpetrate.

How little power though you allow to me,  
That cannot with my sighs, my tears, my prayers,  
Move you from your own loss, if you should gain!

*Vit.* I must forget you, Clara: Till I have  
Redeem'd my uncle's blood, that brands my face

Like a pestiferous carbuncle, I am blind  
To what you do, deaf to your cries, and marble  
To all impulsive exorations.

When on this point I have perch'd thy father's soul,  
I'll tender thee this bloody reeking hand,  
Drawn forth the bowels of that murderer;  
If thou canst love me then, I'll marry thee,  
And, for thy father lost, get thee a son;  
On no condition else!

*Assist.* Most barbarous!

*Syav.* Savage!

*Ana.* Irreligious!

*Gen.* Oh, Lucio,

Be thou more merciful; just thou bear'st fewer years,  
Art lately wean'd from soft effeminacy;  
A maiden's manners, and a maiden's heart  
Are neighbours still to thee: Be then more mild;  
Proceed not to this combat! Be'st thou desperate  
Of thine own life? Yet, dearest, pity mine!  
Thy valour's not thine own; I gave it thee;  
These eyes begot it, this tongue bred it up,  
This breast would lodge it: Do not use my gifts  
To mine own ruin! I have made thee rich;  
Be not so thankless, to undo me for't!

*Lucio.* Mistress, you know I do not wear a vein  
I would not rip for you, to do you service:  
Life's but a word, a shadow, a melting dream,  
Compared to essential and eternal honour.  
Why, would you have me value it beyond  
Your brother? If I first cast down my sword,  
May all my body here be made one wound,  
And yet my soul not find Heaven through it!

*Alv.* You would be catterwauling too; but peace!  
Go, get you home, and provide dinner for  
Your son, and me; we'll be exceeding merry.—  
Oh, Lucio, I will have thee cock of all  
The proud Vitellis that do live in Spain!  
Fy, we shall take cold! Hunch! By Heaven, I am  
hoarse

Already.

*Lam.* How your sister whets my spleen!  
I could eat Lucio now.

*Gen.* Vitelli! brother!

Even for your father's soul, your uncle's blood,  
As you do love my life; but last, and most,  
As you respect your own honour and fame,  
Throw down your sword! he is most valiant  
That herein yields first.

*Vit.* Peace, you fool!

*Clara.* Why, Lucio,  
Do thou begin: 'Tis no disparagement;  
He's elder, and thy better, and thy valour  
Is in his infancy.

*Gen.* Or pay it me,  
To whom thou ow'st it. Oh, that constant Time  
Would but go back a week; then, Lucio,  
Thou wouldst not dare to fight!

*Eug.* Lucio, thy mother,  
Thy mother begs it! throw thy sword down first.

*Alv.* I'll throw his head down after then.

*Gen.* Lamoral,  
You have often swore you would be commanded  
by me.

*Lam.* Never to this; your spite and scorn,  
Genevora,  
Has lost all power in me!

*Gen.* Your hearing for six words!

*Assist.* *Syav.* *Ana.* Strange obstinacy!

*Alv.* *Vit.* *Lucio.* *Lam.* We'll stay no longer.

*Clara.* Then, by thy oath, Vitelli,

Thy dreadful oath, thou wouldst return that sword  
When I should ask it, give it to me now ;  
This instant I require it !

*Gen.* By thy vow,  
As dreadful, Lucio, to obey my will  
In any one thing I would watch to challenge,  
I charge thee not to strike a stroke ! Now, he  
Of our two brothers that loves perjury  
Best, and dares first be damn'd, infringe his vow !

*Syv.* Excellent ladies !  
*Vit.* Fish, you tyrannize.  
*Lucio.* We did equivocate.  
*Alv.* On !

*Clara.* Then, Lucio,  
So well I love my husband, (for he is so,  
Wanting but ceremony) that I pray  
His vengeful sword may fall upon thy head  
Successfully, for falsehood to his sister.

*Gen.* I likewise pray, Vitelli, Lucio's sword  
(Who equally is my husband as thou hers)  
May find thy false heart, that durst gage thy faith,  
And durst not keep it !

*Assist.* Are you men, or stone ?  
*Alv.* Men, and we'll prove it with our swords.  
*Eug.* Your hearing for six words, and we have  
done ;

Zancho, come forth !—We'll fight our challenge  
too :  
Now speak your resolutions.

*Enter BOBADILLA, with two Swords and a Pistol.*

*Gen.* These they are ;  
The first blow given betwixt you sheaths these  
swords

In one another's bosoms.  
*Eug.* And, rogue, look  
You at that instant do discharge that pistol  
Into my breast : If you start back, or quake,  
I'll stick you like a pig.

*Alv.* By Heaven ! Hold ! you are mad.  
*Gen.* This we [have] said ; and, by our hope of  
bliss,

This we will do ! Speak your intents.  
*Clara. Gen.* Strike !

*Eug.* Shoot !  
*Alv. Vit. Lucio, Lam.* Hold, hold ! all friends !  
*Assist.* Come down. [*Exeunt above.*]

*Alv.* These devilish women  
Can make men friends and enemies when they list !  
*Syv.* A gallant undertaking, and a happy !  
Why, this is noble in you ; and will be  
A welcome present to our master Philip,  
Than the return from his Indies.

*Enter below, CLARA, GENEVORA, EUGENIA, and  
BOBADILLA.*

*Clara.* Father, your blessing !  
*Alv.* Take her : If ye bring not  
Betwixt you boys that will find out new worlds,  
And win 'em too, I'm a false prophet.

*Vit.* Brother,  
There is a sister. Long-divided streams  
Mix now at length, by fate.

*Bob.* I am not regarded ! I was the careful  
steward that provided these instruments of peace ;  
I put the longest weapon in your sister's hand, my  
lord, because she was the shortest lady ; for likely  
the shortest ladies love the longest men. And,  
for mine own part, I could have discharged it :  
my pistol is no ordinary pistol ; it has two ram-

ming bullets ; but, thought I, why should I shoot  
my two bullets into my old lady ? If they had  
gone, I would not have stay'd long after ; I would  
even have died too bravely, i'faith, like a Roman  
steward ; hung myself in mine own chain, and  
there had been a story of Bobadilla Spindola Zan-  
cho for after-ages to lament. Hum ! I perceive, I  
am not only not regarded, but also not rewarded.

*Alv.* Pr'ythee, peace !  
Shalt have a new chain, next St. Jaques' day,  
Or this new gilt.

*Bob.* I am satisfied ; let Virtue have her due.  
And yet I am melancholy upon this atonement ;  
pray Heaven the state rue it not ! I would my  
lord Vitelli's steward and I could meet ; they  
should find it should cost 'em a little more to  
make us friends. Well, I will forswear wine and  
women for a year ; and then I will be drunk to-  
morrow, and run a-whoring like a dog with a  
broken bottle at's tail ; then will I repent next  
day, and forswear 'em again more vehemently :  
be forsworn next day again, and repeat my re-  
pentance : for thus a melancholy gentleman doth  
and ought to live.

*Assist.* Nay, you shall dine with me ; and after-  
ward  
I'll with you to the king. But first, I will  
Dispatch the castle's business, that this day  
May be complete. Bring forth the malefactors !

*Enter ALGUAZIER, PACHISCO, METALDI, MENDOZA, LAM-  
NILLO, PIORATO, MALRODA, and Guard.*

You, Alguazier, the ring-leader of these  
Poor fellows, are degraded from your office ;  
You must restore all stolen goods you received,  
And watch a twelvemonth without any pay :  
This, if you fail of, (all your goods confiscate)  
You are to be whipt, and sent into the gallees.

*Alg.* I like all, but restoring ; that catholic doc-  
trine

I do dislike. Learn, all ye officers,  
By this to live uprightly—if you can ! [*Exit.*]

*Assist.* You cobler, to translate your manners  
new,  
Are doom'd to th' cloisters of the Mendicants,  
With this your brother botcher there, for nothing  
To cobble, and heel hose for the poor friars,  
Till they allow your penance for sufficient,  
And your amendment ; then you shall be freed,  
And may set up again.

*Pach.* Mendoza, come :  
Our souls have trod awry in all men's sight ;  
We'll under-lay 'em, till they go upright.

[*Exeunt PACHISCO and MENDOZA.*]  
*Assist.* Smith, in those shackles you, for your  
hard heart,

Must lie by th' heels a year.  
*Met.* I have shod your horse, my lord. [*Exit.*]  
*Assist.* Away ! For you, my hungry white-  
loafed face,

You must to th' gallees, where you shall be sure  
To have no more bits, than you shall have blows.

*Laz.* Well ; though I herrings want, I shall  
have rows. [*Exit.*]  
*Assist.* Signor, you have prevented us, and  
punish'd

Yourself severelier than we would have done :  
You have married a whore ; may she prove honest !  
*Pio.* 'Tis better, my lord, than to marry  
An honest woman, that may prove a whore.

*Vit.* 'Tis a handsome wench, an thou canst keep  
her tame.

I'll send you what I promised.

*Pio.* Joy to your lordships!

*Alv.* Here may all ladies learn, to make of  
foes

The perfect'st friends; and not the perfect'st foes  
Of dearest friends, as some do now-a-days!

*Vit.* Behold the power of Love! So Nature  
lost

By custom irrecoverably, past the hope  
Of friends' restoring, Love hath here retrieved  
To her own habit; made her blush to see  
Her so-long-monstrous metamorphoses:

May strange affairs never have worse success!

[*Exeunt.*]

#### EPILOGUE.

OUR author fears there are some rebel hearts,  
Whose dullness doth oppose Love's piercing darts:  
Such will be apt to say there wanted wit,  
The language low, very few scenes are writ  
With spirit and life; such odd things as these  
He cares not for, nor ever means to please:  
For if yourselves, a mistress, or Love's friends,  
Are liked with this smooth play, he hath his ends.

# WOMEN PLEASED.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF SIENNA, *Suitor to BELVIDERE.*  
SILVIO, *a Gentleman of Quality, Servant to BELVIDERE.*  
CLAUDIO, *SILVIO'S Friend, Brother to ISABELLA, but disguised to her under the name of RUGIO.*  
BARTELLO, *Captain of the Citadel, Uncle to SILVIO.*  
LOPEZ, *a sordid Usurer, the jealous Husband of ISABELLA.*  
PENURIO, *a hungry Servant to LOPEZ.*  
SOTO, *a merry Servant to CLAUDIO.*  
Lords of Florence.  
Lords of Sienna.  
Counsellors.  
Courtiers.

*A Farmer, Father to SOTO.*  
Captain.  
Soldiers of the Guard.  
*A Clerk.*  
BOMBY, *an Enemy to Wakes and May-Poles.*  
Morris-Dancers, Masquers.

DUCHESS OF FLORENCE.  
BELVIDERE, *a virtuous Princess, Daughter to the Duchess, in Love with SILVIO.*  
RODOPE, *Wife to BARTELLO.*  
ISABELLA, *Wife to LOPEZ.*  
JAQUENET, *Servant to ISABELLA.*  
Two Gentlewomen.

SCENE,—FLORENCE, AND THE ADJACENT COUNTRY.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—FLORENCE.—*Night.—Before the Citadel.*

*Enter BARTELLO and SILVIO.*

*Silvio.* 'Tis true, she is a right good princess, and a just one,

And Florence, when she sets, has lost a planet.

*Bart.* My mistress? I tell thee, gentle nephew, There is not such another friend to goodness, To downright dealing, to faith, and true heart, Within the Christian confines. Before she bless'd us,

Justice was a cheesemonger, a mere cheesemonger,

Weigh'd nothing to the world but mites and maggots,

And a main stink; law, like a horse-courser, Her rules and precepts hung with gauds and ribbands,

And pamper'd up to cozen him that bought her, When she herself was hackney, lame, and founder'd.

*Sil.* But the sweet lady Belvidere, the bright one—

*Bart.* Ay, there's a face indeed! Oh, my dear nephew,

Could a young fellow of thy fiery mettle Freeze, and that lady in his arms?

*Sil.* I think not.

*Bart.* Thou hast a parlous judgment! But let that pass:

She is as truly virtuous, fair, and poble, As her great mother's good: and that's not ordinary.

*Sil.* But why (so many princes, and so great ones, Being suitors) should the duchess deny to match her?

*Bart.* She is a jewel, man, hangs in her bosom; Her only child: With her eyes she sees all things, Discourses with her tongue; and pluck her from her

(So dotingly the old one loves her young one) You pluck her heart out too: Besides, of late days, The duke of Milan, who could never win her By love, nor treaty, laid a close train for her In her own private walks, some forty horse-men, So to surprise her, which we found, and dealt with: And sent 'em running home to the duke their mas- Like dogs with bottles at their tails. [ter,

*Sil.* Since that, I heard, sir, She has sent her to your citadel to secure her My cousin Rodope, your wife, attending her.

*Bart.* You hear a truth; and all convenient Are there proportion'd for her. [pleasures

*Sil.* I would fain, sir, Like one, that owes a duteous service to her, Sometimes, so please you—

*Bart.* Gentle cousin, pardon me! I must not, nor you must not dare to offer:

The last edict lies on his life pursues it. Your friend, sir, to command abroad, to love you, To lend you anything I have, to wait upon you; But, in the citadel where I stand charged, Not a bit upon a march: No service, sir, No, good sir, by no means! I kiss your hands, sir. [Exit

*Sil.* To your keeping only? none else to look upon her?

None but Bartello worthy her attendance? No faith but his to serve her? Oh, Belvidere, Thou saint to whom my youth is sacrificed, Thou point to which my life turns, and my fortune!

Art thou lock'd from me now? from all my comforts,

Art thou snatch'd violently? Thou hear'st me not;  
Nor canst thou see, fair soul, thy servant's mournings;

Yet let thy gentle heart feel what is absence,  
The great divorce of minds so truly loving,  
So long, and nursed in one affection,  
Even from our infant eyes suck'd in, and nourish'd  
—Oh! let it feel but that, and there stand constant,  
And I am blest. My dear aunt Rodope,  
That is her governess, did love me dearly;  
There's one hope yet to see her: When he is absent,

It may be ventur'd, and she may work it closely.  
I know the lady's will goes equal with me,  
And so the danger of the edict avoided:  
Let me think more! for I must try all hazards.

*Enter CLAUDIO and SOTO, with a Rope Ladder.*

*Soto.* Will you go yonder, sir?

*Clau.* Yes, marry will I, sir.

*Soto.* And by this ladder?

*Clau.* By that ladder, coxcomb.

*Soto.* Have you any more necks at home when this is broken?

For this will crack with the best friend he has, sir.  
Or, can you pitch of all four, like an ape now?  
Let me see you tumble.

*Clau.* You are very pleasant, sir.

*Soto.* No, truly, sir; I should be loth to see you  
Come fluttering down like a young rook, cry *squab*,  
And take you up with your brains beaten into your  
buttocks.

*Clau.* Hold your peace, ass!—Who's this  
Silvio? [*stands musing here?*]

*Sil.* Who calls me?

*Clau.* One most glad to see you, sir.

*Sil.* My dearest Claudio? What makes you  
thus private,  
And with a preparation of this nature?

*Soto.* We have leave to play, and are going to  
climb birds' nests.

*Sil.* Pr'ythee what is it, friend? Why start you  
from me?

Is your old mistress grown so coy and cruel,  
She must be scaled? It seems you are loth to tell  
me.

Since twenty years' continuance of our friendship  
May not be worth the weight of such a secret,  
'Twill be but rude to ask again, 'Save you! [*Going.*]

*Clau.* Nay, stay, dear Silvio! if you love me,  
take it;

For, till you know it, never woman labour'd  
As I do now.

*Sil.* I'll do my best to ease it.

*Clau.* You have heard, the lady Belvidere—

*Sil.* What heard, sir?

*Clau.* Heard, to the citadel, upon some fears,  
She is confined.

*Sil.* Why dreams he on this beauty?— [*Aside.*]  
'Tis true, I have heard it.

*Clau.* And that no access,  
No blessing from those eyes, but with much hazard,  
Even hazard of a life—

*Sil.* He dares not love her!— [*Aside.*]  
I have heard that too: But whither points your  
purpose?

*Clau.* Oh, Silvio, let me speak that none may  
hear me,

None but thy truth! I have loved this lady long,  
Long given away my life to her devotion,  
Long dwell'd upon that beauty to my ruin.

*Sil.* Does she know this?

*Clau.* No; there begins my misery!  
Ixion-like, I have only yet clasp'd clouds,  
And fed upon poor empty dreams that starve me.

*Sil.* And what do you mean to do now?

*Clau.* Though I die for't,  
Though all the tortures in the world hung on me,  
Arm'd with imperious Love, I stand prepared now  
With this to reach her chamber; there to see her,  
And tell her boldly with what truth I love her.

*Sil.* 'Twill not be easily done, sir—

*Clau.* Oh, my Silvio,  
The hardest things are sweetest in possession.  
*Sil.* Nor will shew much discretion.

*Clau.* Love is blind, man;  
And he that looks for reason there, far blinder.

*Sil.* Have you consider'd ripely?

*Clau.* All that may fall,  
And arm'd against that all.

*Sil.* Her honour too?

What she may suffer in this rash adventure?  
The beauty of her name?

*Clau.* I'll do it closely,

And only at her window, with that caution—

*Sil.* Are there no guards?

*Clau.* Corruption chokes their service.

*Sil.* Or do you hold her bred so light a woman,  
To hold commerce with strange tongues?

*Clau.* Why, this service,  
This only hazard of my life, must tell her,  
Though she were Vesta's self, I must deserve her.

*Sil.* I would not have you go; pray let it sink  
here,

And think a nobler way to raise your service,  
A safer and a wiser!

*Clau.* 'Tis too late, sir.

*Sil.* Then I must say, you shall not go.

*Clau.* I shall not?

*Sil.* You shall not go: That part bred with you,  
friendship,

Bids me say boldly so, and you observe me.

*Clau.* You stretch that tie too far.

*Sil.* I'll stretch it farther:  
The honour that I bear that spotless virtue  
You foully seek to taint, unnobly covet,

Bids me command you stay; if not, thus force you!  
[*Draws.*]

*Soto.* This will be worse than climbing.

*Clau.* Why do you draw, sir?

*Sil.* To kill thee, if thy base will be thy master.

*Clau.* I ever was your friend.

*Sil.* Whilst thou wert honest,

And not a night-thief of another's honour:  
I never call'd a fool my friend, a madman,  
That durst expose his fame to all opinions,  
His life to dishonest dangers; I never loved him,  
Durst know his name, that sought a virgin's ruin;  
Nor ever took I pleasure in acquaintance,  
With men, that give as loose reins to their fancies  
As the wild ocean to his raging fluxes:  
A noble soul I twin with, and my love  
Follows his life dares master his affections.  
Will you give off, or fight?

*Clau.* I will not fight with you;

The sacred name of friend ties up that anger:  
Rather I'll study—

*Sil.* Do, to be a friend still.

*Clau.* If this way, I shall never hold.

*Sil.* I'll watch you:

And, if I catch you false, by Heaven you die for't,  
All love forgot!

*Clau.* When I fear that, I am fit for't. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the House of LOPEZ.*

*LOPEZ* at a Table with Jewels and Money upon it; an Egg  
roasting by a Candle.

*Lopez.* Whilst prodigal young gaudy fools are  
banqueting,  
And launching out their states to catch the giddy,  
Thus do I study to preserve my fortune,  
And hatch with care at home the wealth that  
saints me.

Here's rubies of Bengala, rich, rich, glorious;  
These diamonds of Ormus, bought for little,  
Here vented at the price of princes' ransoms;  
How bright they shine, like constellations!  
The South-sea's treasure here, pearl, fair and orient,  
Able to equal Cleopatra's banquet;  
Here chains of lesser stones for ladies' lustres,  
Ingots of gold, rings, brooches, bars of silver,  
These are my studies to set off in sale well,  
And not in sensual surfeits to consume 'em.—  
How roasts mine egg? he heats apace; I'll turn  
him.—

*Penurio!* where, you knave, do you wait? *Penurio,*  
You lazy knave!

*Enter PENURIO.*

*Pen.* Did you call, sir?

*Lopez.* Where's your mistress?

What vanity holds her from her attendance?

*Pen.* The very sight of this egg has made him  
cockish; [*Aside.*]

What would a dozen butter'd do?—She is within,  
sir.

*Lopez.* Within, sir? at what thrift, you knave?  
what getting?

*Pen.* Getting a good stomach, sir, an she knew  
where to get meat to't;

She's praying heartily upon her knees, sir,  
That Heaven would send her a good bearing  
dinner.

*Lopez.* Nothing but gluttony and surfeit thought  
on,

Health flung behind! had she not yesternight,  
sirrah,

Two sprats to supper, and the oil allowable?  
Was she not sick with eating? Hadst not thou  
(Thou most ungrateful knave, that nothing satisfies)  
The water that I boil'd my other egg in,  
To make thee hearty broth?

*Pen.* 'Tis true, I had, sir;

But I might as soon make the philosopher's stone  
on't:

You gave it me in water, and, but for manners'  
sake,

I could give it you again in wind, it was so hearty.  
I shall turn pigging-conduit shortly.—My mistress  
comes, sir.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Lopez.* Welcome, my dove!

*Isab.* Pray you keep your welcome to you,  
Unless it carries more than words to please me.  
Is this the joy to be a wife? to bring with me,  
Besides the nobleness of blood I spring from,

A full and able portion to maintain me?  
Is this the happiness of youth and beauty,  
The great content of being made a mistress,  
To live a slave subject to wants and hungers,  
To jealousies for every eye that wanders,  
Unmanly jealousy?

*Lopez.* Good Isabella—

*Isab.* Too good for you! Do you think to furnish  
me,

Or keep me like an alms-woman in such raiment,  
Such poor unhandsome weeds? am I old, or ugly?  
I never was bred thus; and if your misery  
Will suffer wilful blindness to abuse me,  
My patience shall be no bawd to mine own ruin.

*Pen.* Tickle him, mistress; to him!

[*Apart to her.*]

*Isab.* Had you love in you,

Or any part of man—

*Pen.* Follow that, mistress!

*Isab.* Or had humanity but ever known you,  
You would shame to use a woman of my way thus,  
So poor, and basely! You are strangely jealous of  
if I should give you cause— [me:]

*Lopez.* How, Isabella?

*Isab.* As do not venture this way to provoke

*Pen.* Excellent well, mistress! [me—]

*Lopez.* How's this, Isabella?

*Isab.* 'Twill stir a saint, and I am but a woman,  
And by that tenure may—

*Lopez.* By no means, chicken!

You know I love you. *Fy,* take no example  
By those young gadding dames, (you are noted  
virtuous)

That stick their husbands' wealth in trifles on 'em,  
And point 'em but the way to their own miseries.  
I am not jealous. Kiss me. 'Faith, I am not.  
And for your diet, 'tis to keep you healthful  
(Surfeits destroy more than the sword) that I am  
careful

Your meat should be both neat and cleanly handled;  
See, sweet, I am cook myself, and mine own cater.

*Pen.* A pox of that cook cannot lick his fingers!

*Lopez.* I'll add another dish; you shall have  
milk to't;

'Tis nourishing and good.

*Pen.* With butter in't, sir?

*Lopez.* This knave would breed a famine in a  
kingdom!— [*Apart.*]

And clothes that shall content you; you must be  
wise then,

And live sequester'd to yourself and me,  
Not wand'ring after every toy comes cross you,  
Nor struck with every spleen.—What's the knave  
doing? *Penurio!*

*Pen.* Hunting, sir, for a second course of flies  
They are rare new sallads. [here:]

*Lopez.* For certain, Isabella,  
This ravening fellow has a wolf in's belly.

Untemperate knave, will nothing quench thy ap-  
petite?

I saw him eat two apples, which is monstrous.

*Pen.* If you had given me those, 't had been  
more monstrous.

*Lopez.* 'Tis a main miracle to feed this villain.—  
Come, Isabella, let us in to supper,  
And think the Roman dainties at our table!

'Tis all but thought. [*Exeunt.*]

*Pen.* 'Would all my thoughts would do it!  
The devil should think of purchasing that egg-  
shell,

To victual out a witch for the Burmoothees :  
 'Tis treason to any good stomach living now  
 To hear a tedious grace said, and no meat to't,  
 I have a radish yet, but that's but transitory. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—*Before the Citadel.*—Night.

*Enter Soto, with a ladder.*

*Soto.* Can any living man, unless a rascal  
 That neither knows himself, nor a fashion'd gentleman,

Take me for a worse man than my master now ?  
 I am naturally proud in these clothes : But if pride  
 now

Should catch a fall in what I am attempting !  
 'Tis but a proverb sound, and a neck broken,  
 That's the worst can come on't ; a gentleman's  
 gone then,

A gentleman o' th' first house, there's the end on't !  
 My master lies most pitifully complaining,  
 Wringing and kicking up to th' ears in love yonder,  
 And such a lamentable noise he keeps, it kills me :  
 I have got his clothes, and if I can get to her,  
 By book or crook here, such a song I'll sing her—  
 I think I shall be hang'd ; but that's no matter !  
 What's a hanging among friends ? I am valiant  
 As an elephant. I have considered what [now  
 To say to. Let me see now ! this is the place ;  
 'Tis plaguy high ! Stay ; at that lower window  
 Let me aim finely now, like a good gunner,  
 It may prove but a whipping.

*Enter SILVIO.*

*Sil.* I saw somebody  
 Pass by me now, and, though 'twere dark, me-  
 thought yet

I knew the clothes.—Ha ! let me not be cozen'd !  
 The ladder too, ready to fling it ? Monstrous !  
 'Tis he, 'tis Claudio ! most voluptuous villain,  
 Scandal to woman's credit ! Love, I forget thee—  
 [*Draws a pistol.*]

*Soto.* What will he do, i' th' name of Heaven ?  
 What's that there ?

*Sil.* And all the friendship that I bore thee,  
 bury here—

*Soto.* What has he in's hand ? I hope but a  
 cudgel.

*Sil.* Thy faults forgive, oh, Heaven ! Farewell,  
 thou traitor ! [*Fires.*]

*Soto.* I am slain, I am slain ! [*Falls.*]

*Sil.* He's down, and dead, dead certain,  
 (It was too rash, too full of spleen) stark dead :  
 This is no place now to repent in ; only,  
 'Would I had given this hand that shot the pistol  
 I had miss'd thee, and thou wert once more  
 Claudio ! [*Exit.*]

*Enter CLAUDIO.*

*Clau.* Why should I love thus foolishly ? thus  
 desperately ?

And give away my heart where no hope's left me ?  
 Why should not the true counsel of a friend re-  
 strain me ?

The devil's mouth I run into, affright me ?  
 The honour of the lady, charm my wildness ?  
 I have no power, no being of myself,  
 No reason strong enough now left within me  
 To bind my will. Oh, Love, thou god, or devil,  
 Or what thou art, that plays the tyrant in me—

*Soto.* Oh !

*Clau.* What's that cry ?

*Soto.* A surgeon, a surgeon,  
 Twenty good surgeons !

*Clau.* 'Tis not far from me ;  
 Some murder, o' my life !

*Soto.* Will you let me die here ?  
 No drink come, nor no surgeon ?

*Clau.* 'Tis my man, sure,  
 His voice, and here he lies.—How is it with thee ?

*Soto.* I am slain, sir, I am slain.

*Clau.* Slain ? Who has slain thee ?

*Soto.* Kill'd, kill'd, out-right kill'd !

*Clau.* Where's thy hurt ?

*Soto.* I know not ;

But I am sure I am kill'd.

*Clau.* Canst thou sit up,  
 That I may find the hurt out ?

*Soto.* I can sit up ;

But, ne'ertheless, I am slain.

*Clau.* 'Tis not o' this side ?

*Soto.* No, sir, I think it be not.

*Clau.* Nor o' this side.

Was it done with a sword ?

*Soto.* A gun, a gun, sweet master.

*Clau.* The devil a bullet has been here ; thou  
 art well, man.

*Soto.* No, sure, I am kill'd.

*Clau.* Let me see thy thighs and belly :  
 As whole as a fish, for anything I see yet ;  
 Thou bleed'st at no where.

*Soto.* I think I do not bleed, sir,  
 But yet, I am afraid I am slain.

*Clau.* Stand up, fool !

Thou hast as much hurt as my nail. Who shot  
 A pottle, or a pint ? [*thee ?*]

*Soto.* Signor Silvio shot me,  
 In these clothes, taking me for you, and stealing  
 The ladder in my hand here, which I stole from  
 you,

Thinking to have gone to the lady myself, and  
 have spoke for you.

*Clau.* If he had hit you home, he had served  
 you right, sirrah,

You saucy rogue !—How poor my intent shews to  
 How naked now, and foolish ! [*me,*]

*Soto.* Are you sure he has not hit me ?  
 It gave a monstrous bounce.

*Clau.* You rose o' your right side,  
 And said your prayers too, you had been paid else ;  
 But what need'st thou a bullet, when thy fear kills  
 thee ?

Sirrah, keep your own counsel for all this ; you'll  
 be hang'd else,  
 If it be known.

*Soto.* If it be by my means, let me ;  
 I am glad I am not kill'd, and far more gladder  
 My gentleman-like humour's out ; I feel 'tis dan-  
 gerous,

And to be a gentleman is to be kill'd twice a-week.

*Clau.* Keep yourself close i' th' country for a  
 while, sirrah !

There's money : Walk to your friends.

*Soto.* They have no pistols,  
 Nor are no gentlemen, that is my comfort. [*Exit.*]

*Clau.* I will retire too, and live private (for this  
 Silvio,

Inflamed with nobleness, will be my death else ;)  
 And, if I can, forget this love that loads me,  
 At least the danger.—And, now I think on't better,  
 I have some conclusions else invite me to it. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Before the Citadel.*

*Enter RODRIG and SILVIO, at several Doors.*

Rod. Nephew!

Sil. My dear aunt!

Rod. Would you go by thus slyly,  
And never see me? not once send in to me,  
Your loving aunt? she that, above all those  
I call my kindred, honour'd you, and placed you  
Nearest my heart?

Sil. I thank you, worthy aunt;

But such at this time are my occasions—

Rod. You shall not go yet; by my faith, you  
shall not!

I will not be denied. Why look you sad, nephew?

Sil. I am seldom other.—Oh, this blood sits  
As I walk'd this way late last night, [heavy!—  
In meditation of some things concern'd me—

Rod. What, nephew?

Sil. Why, methought I heard a piece, lady,  
A piece shot off, much about this place too,  
(But could not judge the cause, nor what it boded)  
Under the castle-wall.

Rod. We heard it too;

And the watch pursued it presently, but found  
Not any track. [nothing,

Sil. I am right glad to hear it!—  
The ruffians surely that command the night [Aside.  
Have found him, stript him, and into the river  
Convey'd the body.

Rod. You look still sadder, nephew.

Is anything within these walls to comfort you?  
Speak, and be master of it.

Sil. You're a right courtier;  
A great professor, but a poor performer.

Rod. Do you doubt my faith? You never found  
me that way,  
(I dare well speak it boldly) but a true friend.

Sil. Continue then.

Rod. Try me, and see who falters.

Sil. I will, and presently: 'Tis in your power  
To make me the most bound man to your courtesy.

Rod. Let me know how, and if I fail—

Sil. 'Tis thus then:

Get me access to the Lady Belvidere,  
But for a minute, but to see her; your husband  
now

Is safe at court; I left him full employ'd there.

Rod. You have ask'd the thing without my  
power to grant you,

The law lies on the danger: if I loved you not,  
I would bid you go, and there be found, and die  
for't.

Sil. I knew your love, and where there shew'd a  
danger

How far you durst step for me! Give me a true  
That, where occasion is to do a benefit, [friend,  
Aims at the end, and not the rubs before it.

I was a fool to ask you this! a more fool  
To think a woman had so much noble nature  
To entertain a secret of this burthen:

You had best to tell the duchess I persuaded you,  
That's a fine course, and one will win you credit;  
Forget the name of cousin, blot my blood out,  
And, so you raise yourself, let me grow shorter!  
A woman-friend? He that believes that weakness,  
Steers in a stormy night without a compass.

Rod. What is't I durst not do might not im-  
peach you?

Sil. Why, this you dare not do, you dare not  
Rod. 'Tis a main hazard. [think of!

Sil. If it were not so,

I would not come to you to seek a favour.

Rod. You will lose yourself.

Sil. The loss ends with myself then.

Rod. You will but see her?

Sil. Only look upon her.

Rod. Not stay?

Sil. Prescribe your time.

Rod. Not traffic with her,

In any close dishonourable actions?

Sil. Stand you yourself by.

Rod. I will venture for you:

Because you shall be sure I am a touch'd friend,  
I'll bring her to you. Come, walk; you know the  
garden,

And take this key to open the little postern;  
There stand no guards.

Sil. I shall soon find it, aunt. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*At the Gate of the Citadel.*

*Enter two Soldiers.*

1 Sold. Is the captain come home?

2 Sold. No; who commands the guard to-night?

1 Sold. I think Petruccio.

2 Sold. What's the word?

1 Sold. None knows yet.

2 Sold. I would this lady were married out o'  
th' way once,

Or out of our custodies! I wish they would take  
in more companies,

For I am sure we feel her in our duties shrewdly.

1 Sold. 'Tis not her fault, I warrant you; she's  
ready for't;

And that's the plague; when they grow ripe for  
They must be slipt like hawks. [marriage,

2 Sold. Give me a mean wench!

No state-doubt lies on her, she is always ready.

1 Sold. Come to the guard; 'tis late, and sure

Cannot be long away. [the captain

2 Sold. I have watch'd these three nights;

To-morrow they may keep me tame for nothing. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*The Garden of the same.*

*Enter SILVIO; then BELVIDERE, and RODRIG with a Light.*

Sil. This is the place, I think. What light is  
The lady and my cousin! [that there?

Bel. Is this the garden?

Rod. Yes, madam.

Sil. Oh, my bleas'd mistress,  
Saint of my soul!

Bel. Speak softly!—Take me to you!

Oh, Silvio, I am thine, thine ever, Silvio!

[They embrace.

Rod. Is this your promise, sir?—Lady, your  
honour!

I am undone if this be seen, disgraced,  
Fallen under all discredit!

Bel. Do you love still?

Dear, do you keep your old faith?

*Sil.* Ever, lady ;  
And, when that fails me, all that's good forsake me !  
*Rod.* Do not you shame ?—Madam, I must not suffer this,

I will not suffer it ! Men call you virtuous :  
What do you mean, to lose yourself thus ?—*Silvio*,  
I charge thee get away, charge you retire you ;  
I'll call the watch else.

*Sil.* Call all the world to see us !  
We live in one another's happiness,  
And so will die.

*Bel.* Here will I hang for ever !  
*Rod.* As you respect me, as hereafter, madam,  
You would enjoy his love—Nothing prevail with you ?

I'll try my strength then : Get thee gone, thou villain,  
[*Struggles with him.*]

Thou promise-breaker !

*Sil.* I am tied ; I cannot.

*Rod.* I'll ring the bell then !

*Sil.* Ring it to death, I am fix'd here.

*Enter BARTOLLO and two Soldiers with Lights.*

*Bart.* I saw a light over the garden wall,  
Hard by the ladies' chamber : Here's some  
As I live, I saw it twice. [knavery !]

*Rod.* The guard, the guard there !

I must not suffer this, it is too mischievous.

*Bart.* Light up the torch ! I fear'd this. Ha !  
How got he in ? [young *Silvio* ?]

*1 Sold.* The devil brought him in sure ;  
He came not by us.

*Bart.* My wife between 'em bustling ?  
Guard, pull him off !

*Rod.* Now, now, ye feel the misery.

*Bart.* You, madam, at an hour so far undecent ?  
Death o' my soul ! This is a foul fault in you !  
Your mother's care abused too !—Lights to her  
I am sorry to see this. [chamber !—]

*Bel.* Farewell, my *Silvio*,  
And let no danger sink thee !

*Sil.* Nor death, lady.  
[*Exeunt BELVIDERE and RODOLFO.*]

*Bart.* Are you so hot ? I shall prepare you  
physic

Will purge you finely, neatly ; you are too fiery :  
Think of your prayers, sir, an you have not forgot  
'em !

Can you fly i' th' air, or creep you in at key-holes ?  
I have a gin will catch you, though you conjured.—  
Take him to guard to-night, to strong and sure  
guard ;

I'll back to th' duchess presently.—No less sport  
serve you,

Than th' heir to a dukedom ? Play at push-pin  
there, sir ?

It was well aim'd ; but, plagus upon't, you shot  
And that will lose your game. [short,]

*Sil.* I know the loss then. [Exit.

#### SCENE IV.—A Street.

*Enter CLAUDIO like a Merchant.*

*Clau.* Now, in this habit, may I safely see  
How my incensed friend carries my murder ;  
Who little I imagined had been wrought  
To such a height of rage : And much I grieve now  
Mine own blind passion had so master'd me  
I could not see his love ; for sure he loves her,

And on a nobler ground than I pretended.  
It must be so, it is so.—

*Enter PENURIO.*

What, *Penurio*,  
My shotten friend, what wind blew you ?

*Pen.* 'Faith, 'tis true,  
Any strong wind will blow me like a feather :  
I am all air, nothing of earth within me,  
Nor have not had this month, but that good  
dinner

Your worship gave me yesterday ; that stays by  
me,

And gives me ballast, else the sun would draw me.

*Clau.* But does my mistress speak still of me ?

*Pen.* Yes, sir,

And in her sleep, that makes my master mad too,  
And turn and fart for anger.

*Clau.* Art sure she saw me ?

*Pen.* She saw you at a window.

*Clau.* 'Tis most true,

In such a place I saw a gentlewoman,  
A young, sweet, handsome woman—

*Pen.* That's she, that's she, sir.

*Clau.* And well she view'd me : I view'd her—

*Pen.* Still she, sir.

*Clau.* At last she blush'd, and then look'd off.

*Pen.* That blush, sir,

If you can read it truly—

*Clau.* But didst thou tell her,  
Or didst thou fool me thou knew'st such a one ?

*Pen.* I told her, and I told her such a sweet  
tale—

*Clau.* But did she hear thee ?

*Pen.* With a thousand ears, sir,

And swallow'd what I said as greedily  
As great-bellied women do cherries, stones and  
all, sir.

*Clau.* Methinks she should not love thy master ?

*Pen.* Hang him, pilcher !

There's nothing loves him ; his own cat cannot  
endure him.

She had better lie with a bear ; for he's so hairy,  
That a tame warren of fleas frisk round about him.

*Clau.* And wilt thou work still ?

*Pen.* Like a miner for you.

*Clau.* And get access ?

*Pen.* Or conjure you together ;

'Tis her desire to meet : She is poison'd with  
him,

And, till she take a sweet fresh air—that's you,  
sir—

*Clau.* There's money for thee ; thou art a  
precious varlet !

Be fat, be fat, and blow thy master backward.

*Pen.* Blow you my mistress, sir, as flat as a  
flounder,

Then blow her up again, as butchers blow their  
veals :

If she die upon the same,  
Bury her, bury her, in God's name !

*Clau.* Thou art a merry knave ! By this hand,  
I'll feed thee,

Till thou crack'st at both ends, if thou darest do  
Thou shalt eat no fantastical porridge [this !]

Nor lick the dish where oil was yesterday,  
Dust, and dead flies to-day ; capons, fat capons—

*Pen.* Oh, hearty sound !

*Clau.* Cramm'd full of itching oysters—

*Pen.* Will you have the duchess ?

*Clau.* And lobsters big as gauntlets ;  
Thou shalt despise base beef—  
*Pen.* I do despise it !  
And now, methinks, I feel a tart come sliding—  
*Clau.* Leaping into thy mouth ; but first deal  
*Pen.* When will you come ? [faithfully.  
*Clau.* To-morrow.  
*Pen.* I'll attend you ;  
For then my master will be out in business.  
*Clau.* What news abroad ?  
*Pen.* 'Mass, as I was coming to you,  
I heard that Signor Silvio, a good gentleman,  
(Many a good meal I have eaten with him)—  
*Clau.* What of him ?  
*Pen.* Was this day to be arraign'd before the  
But why, I could not hear. [duchess ;  
*Clau.* Silvio arraign'd ?—  
Go, get you gone, and think of me.  
*Pen.* I fly, sir. [Exit.  
*Clau.* Arraign'd ? for what ? for my supposed  
death ? No,  
That cannot be, sure ; there's no rumour of it.  
Be it what it will, I will be there and see it,  
And, if my help will bring him off, he has it. [Exit.

SCENE V.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

Enter DUCHESS, LORDS, SILVIO (prisoner,) BELVIDERE,  
BARTELLO, RODOPH, Clerk, Counsellors, and Attendants.

*Duch.* Read the edict last made ; keep silence,  
there !

*Clerk.* [Reading.] " If any man, of what con-  
dition soever, and a subject, after the publishing  
of this edict, shall, without special licence from the  
Great Duchess, attempt, or buy, offer, or make an  
attempt to solicit, the love of the Princess Belvi-  
dere, the person so offending shall forfeit his life."

*Coun.* The reason why—My royal mistress here,  
In her last treaty with Sienna's duke,  
Promised her beauteous daughter there in marriage ;  
The Duke of Milan, rival in this fortune,  
Unnobly sought by practice to betray her ;  
Which found, and cross'd, the citadel received her,  
There to secure her mother's word ; the last cause,  
So many gentlemen of late enamour'd  
On this most beauteous princess, and not brooking  
One more than another, to deserve a favour,  
Blood has been spilt, many brave spirits lost,  
And more, unless she had been kept close from  
their violence,  
Had like to have follow'd : Therefore, for due  
prevention  
Of all such hazards and un noble actions,  
This last edict was publish'd ; which thou, Silvio,  
Like a false man, a bad man, and a traitor,  
Hast rent a-pieces, and contemn'd ; for which cause  
Thou stand'st a guilty man here now.

Enter CLAUDIO.

*Clerk.* Speak, Silvio !  
What canst thou say to avoid the hand of justice ?  
*Sil.* Nothing, but I confess, submit, and lay my  
head to't.

*Bel.* Have ye no eyes, my lords, no understand-  
The gentleman will cast himself away, [ings,  
Cast himself wilfully ! Are you, or you, guilty ?  
No more is he, no more taint sticks upon him :  
I drew him thither, 'twas my way betray'd him ;  
I got the entrance kept, I entertain'd him,  
I hid the danger from him, forc'd him to me :

Poor gentle soul, he's in no part transgressing :  
I wrote unto him—

*Sil.* Do not wrong that honour,  
Cast not upon that pureness these aspersions !  
By Heaven, it was my love, my violence ;  
My life must answer it : I broke in to her,  
Tempted the law, solicited unjustly— [cause !

*Bel.* As there is truth in Heaven, I was the first  
How could this man have come to me, left naked,  
Without my counsel and provision ?  
What hour could he find out to pass the watches,  
But I must make it sure first ? Reverend judges,  
Be not abused, nor let an innocent life lie  
Upon your shaking conscience ! I did it ;  
My love the main wheel that set him a-going ;  
His motion but compell'd it.

*Sil.* Can ye believe this,  
And know with what a modesty and whiteness  
Her life was ever rank'd ? Can ye believe this,  
And see me here before ye, young and wilful ?  
Apt to what danger Love dares thrust me on,  
And, where Law stops my way, apt to contemn it !  
If I were bashful, old, or dull, and sleepy  
In love's alarms, a woman might awake me ;  
Direct, and clew me out the way to happiness ;  
But I, like fire, kindled with that bright beauty,  
Catch hold of all occasions, and run through 'em.

*Bel.* I charge ye, as your honest souls will  
answer it—

*Sil.* I charge ye, as ye are the friends to Virtue,  
That has no pattern living but this lady—

*Bel.* Let not his blood—

*Sil.* Let not her wilfulness  
(For then you act a scene hell will rejoice at)—

*Bel.* He's clear.

*Sil.* She is as white in this as infants.

*Clau.* The god of love protect your cause, and  
Two nobler pieces of affection [help ye !  
These eyes ne'er look'd on ; if such goodness perish,  
Let never true hearts meet again, but break ! [Exit.

1 *Lord.* A strange example of strong love, a  
rare one !

2 *Lord.* Madam, we know not what to say, to  
think on.

*Duch.* I must confess it strikes me tender too,  
Searches my mother's heart. You found 'em there ?

*Bart.* Yes, certain, madam.

*Duch.* And so link'd together ?

*Bart.* As they had been one piece of alabaster.

*Duch.* Nothing dishonourable ?

*Sil.* So let my soul have happiness,  
As that thought yet durst never seek this bosom !  
*Duch.* What shall I do ? He has broke my law,  
abused me ;

Fain would I know the truth :—Either confess it,  
And let me understand the main offender,  
Or both shall feel the torture.

*Sil.* Are you a mother,  
The mother of so sweet a rose as this is,  
So pure a flower, and dare you lose that nature ?  
Dare you take to yourself so great a wickedness,  
(Oh, holy Heaven !) of thinking what may ruin  
This goodly building ? this temple, where the gods  
dwell ?

Give me a thousand tortures,—I deserve 'em,  
And shew me death in all the shapes imagined—

*Bel.* No death but I will answer it, meet it,  
seek it ;

No torture but I'll laugh upon't, and kiss it.

1 *Lord*. This is no way.

2 *Lord*. They say no more, for certain,  
Than their strong hearts will suffer.

*Duch*. I have bethought me :

No, lords, although I have a child offending,  
Nature does not forget she is a child still :  
Till now, I never look'd on love imperious.—  
I have bethought me of a way to break you,  
To separate, though not your loves, your bodies :  
*Silvio*, attend ! I'll be your judge myself now.  
The sentence of your death (because my daughter  
Will bear an equal part in your afflictions)  
I take away, and pardon : This remains then,  
An easy and a gentle punishment,  
And this shall be fulfill'd : Because unnobly  
You have sought the love and marriage of a princess,  
The absolute and sole heir of this dukedom,  
By that means, as we must imagine strongly,  
To plant yourself into this rule hereafter,  
We here pronounce you a man banish'd from us.  
*Sil*. For ever banish'd, lady ?

*Duch*. Yet more mercy !

But for a year, and then again in this place  
To make your full appearance. Yet more pity !  
If in that time you can absolve a question,  
Writ down within this scroll, absolve it rightly,  
This lady is your wife, and shall live with you ;  
If not, you lose your head. [*Gives him a paper.*]

*Sil*. I take this honour,

And humbly kiss these royal hands.

*Duch*. Receive it.—

*Bartelo*, to your old guard take the princess.

And so, the court break up !

*Sil*. Farewell to all,

And to that spotless heart my endless service !

[*Exit.*]

1 *Lord*. What will this prove ?

2 *Lord*. I'll tell you a year hence, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Room in the House of LOPEZ.*

*Enter PENURIO, ISABELLA, and CLAUDIO.*

*Pen*. Are you pleas'd now ? Have I not wrought  
Now *à ben fatto*, signor ? [*this wonder ?*]

*Clau*. Rarely, *Penurio*.

*Pen*. Close, close then, and work, wax !

*Clau*. I am studying for thee

A dinner, that shall victual thee for ten year.

*Pen*. Do you hear, mistress ?

You know what a dunder-whelp my master is,  
(I need not preach to you) how unfit and wanting  
To give a woman satisfaction ; how  
He stinks and snores ; a bull's a better bedfellow ;  
And, for his love, never let that deceive you.

*Isab*. Nay, sure he loves me not,

*Pen*. If he could coin you,

Or turn you into metal, much might be then ;

He loves not anything but what is traffic :

I have heard him swear he would sell you to the

*Isab*. The Turk ? [*grand signor.*]

*Pen*. The very Turk, and how they would use

*Isab*. I'll fit him for't : The Turk ? [*you—*]

*Pen*. I know the price too :

Now you have time to pay him, pay him home,  
mistress,

Pay him o' th' pate, clout him for all his courtesies :  
Here's one that dances in your eyes, young, delicate,  
To work this vengeance ; if you let it slip now,  
There is no pitying of you. Od's precious, mistress,

Were I his wife, I would so maul his mazard—

'Tis charity, mere charity, pure charity !

Are you the first ? Has it not been from Eve's time,

Women would have their safe revenges this way ?

And good and gracious women, excellent women ?

Is't not a handsome gentleman, a sweet gentleman ?

View him from head to foot, a complete gentleman ?

When can you hope the like again ? I leave you,

And my revenge too, with you : I know my office ;

I'll not be far off. Be not long a-fumbling !

When danger shall appear, I'll give the 'larm.

[*Exit.*]

*Isab*. You are welcome, sir ! and 'would it were  
my fortune

To afford a gentleman of your fair seeming

A freer entertainment than this house has :

You partly know, sir—

*Clau*. Know, and pity, lady,

Such sweetness in the bud should be so blasted :

Dare you make me your servant ?

*Isab*. Dare you make, sir,

That service worthy of a woman's favour

By constancy and goodness ?

*Clau*. Here I swear to you,

By the unvalued love I bear this beauty,

(And kiss the book too) never to be recreant ;

To honour you, to truly love and serve you,

My youth to wait upon you, what my wealth has—

*Isab*. Oh, make me not so poor to sell affection !

Those bought loves, sir, wear faster than the  
monies.—

A handsome gentleman !

[*Apart.*]

*Clau*. A most delicate sweet one !

Let my truth purchase then !

*Isab*. I should first try it ;

But you may happily—

*Clau*. You shall not doubt me—

I hope she loves me.—When I prove false, shame  
Will you believe a little ? [*take me !*]

*Isab*. I fear, too much, sir.

*Clau*. And will you love a little ?

*Isab*. That should be your part.

*Clau*. Thus I begin then, thus and thus.

[*Kisses her.*]

*Isab*. A good beginning,

We have a proverb says, makes a good ending.

*Clau*. Say you so ? 'tis well inferr'd.

*Isab*. Good sir, your patience !

Methinks I have ventured now, like a weak bark,

Upon a broken billow, that will swallow me,

Upon a rough sea of suspicions,

Stuck round with jealous rocks.

*Pen*. [*Within.*] A-hem, a-hem there !

*Isab*. This is my man ! my fears too soon have  
found me.

*Enter PENURIO.*

Now, what's the news ?

*Pen*. A pox of yond old rigel,

The captain, the old captain !

*Isab*. What old captain ?

*Pen*. Captain Courageous yonder, of the castle,

Captain, Don Diego, old Bartello.

*Isab*. Where is he ?

*Pen*. He's coming in :

'Twould vex the devil that such an old potgun as  
this,

That can make no sport, should hinder them that  
can do't.

*Isab*. I would not have him see the gentleman  
For all the world ; my credit were undone then.

*Pen.* Shall I fling a piss-pot on's head as he comes in,  
And take him into th' kitchen, there to dry him?

*Isab.* That will not do. And he's so humorous  
He will come in. [too,

*Clau.* What is he?

*Isab.* One much troubles me.

*Pen.* And can do nothing, cannot eat.

*Isab.* Your sight now,  
Out of a drivelling dotage he bears to me,  
May make him tell my husband, and undo me.

*Clau.* What would you have me do?

*Isab.* But for a while, sir,  
Step here behind this hanging; presently  
I'll answer him, and then—

*Clau.* I will obey you. [Retires behind the arras.

*Enter BARTELLO.*

*Bart.* Where's my rich jeweller? I have stones  
*Pen.* He is abroad, and sure, sir. [to set.

*Bart.* There's for your service!—

[Gives him money. Exit PENURIO.  
Where's the fair lady? All alone, sweet beauty?

*Isab.* She's never much alone, sir, that's acquainted

With such companions as good honest thoughts  
are.

*Bart.* I'll sit down by thee, and I'll kiss thy  
hand too,

And in thine ear swear, by my life, I love thee.

*Isab.* You are a merry captain.

*Bart.* And a mad one, lady.

By th' mass, thou hast goodly eyes, excellent eyes,  
wench!

Ye twinkling rogues! look what thy captain brings  
Thou must needs love me, love me heartily, [thee!  
Hug me, and love me, hug me close.

*Isab.* Fey, captain!

*Bart.* Nay, I have strength, and I can strain  
you, sirrah,

And vault into my seat as nimbly, little one,  
As any of your smooth-chinn'd boys in Florence.  
I must needs commit a little folly with you;  
I'll not be long; a bridling cast, and away, wench!  
The hob-nail thy husband's as fitly out o' th' way  
now—

*Isab.* Do you think he keeps a bawdy-house?

*Bart.* That's all one.

*Isab.* Or did you e'er see that lightness in my  
carriage,

That you might promise to yourself—

*Bart.* Away, fool!

A good turn's a good turn; I'm an honest fellow.

*Isab.* You have a handsome wife, a virtuous  
gentlewoman—

*Bart.* They are not for this time o' th' year.

*Isab.* A lady,

That ever bore that great respect to you,  
That noble constancy—

*Bart.* That's more than I know.

*Enter Maid and PENURIO.*

*Maid.* Oh, mistress, you're undone! my mas-  
*Pen.* Coming hard by here. [ter's coming.

*Bart.* Plague consume the rascal!

Shall I make petty-patties of him?

*Isab.* Now what love, sir?

Fear of your coming made him jealous first;  
Your finding here will make him mad and despe-  
rate;

And what in that wild mood he will execute—

*Bart.* I can think of nothing; I have no wit  
left me;

Certain my head's a mustard-pot!

*Isab.* I have thought, sir;

And, if you please to put in execution

What I conceive—

*Bart.* I'll do it; tell it quickly.

*Isab.* Draw your sword quickly, and go down  
enraged,

As if you had pursued some foe up hither,  
And grumble to yourself extremely, terribly,  
But not a word to him; and so pass by him.

*Bart.* I'll do it perfectly.

*Enter LOPEZ.*

*Isab.* Stand you still, good sir.

*Bart.* Rascal, slave, villain! take a house so  
poorly,

After thou hast wrong'd a gentleman, a soldier?  
Base poltroon boy! you will forsake your nest,  
sirrah?

*Lopez.* The matter, good sweet captain?

*Bart.* Run-away rogue!

And take a house to cover thy base cowardice?  
I'll whip you, I'll so scourge you— [Exit.

*Lopez.* Mercy upon me,

What's all this matter, wife?

*Isab.* Did you meet the madman?

*Lopez.* I never saw the captain so provoked yet.

*Isab.* Oh, he's a devil sure, a most bloody devil!  
He follow'd a young gentleman, his sword drawn.  
With such a fury—how I shake to think on't!  
And foin'd, and slash'd at him, and swore he'd  
kill him;

Drove him up hither, follow'd him still bloodily,  
And, if I had not hid him, sure had slain him.  
A merciless old man! [CLAUDIO appears.

*Clau.* Most virtuous lady,

Even as the giver of my life, I thank you!

*Lopez.* This fellow must not stay here, he's too  
handsome.—

He is gone, sir, and you may pass now with all  
security;

I'll be your guide myself, and such a way

I'll lead you, none shall cross, nor none shall know  
you.—

The doors left open, sirrah? I'll starve you for this  
trick!

I'll make thee fast o' Sundays: And for you, lady,  
I'll have your lodgings farther off, and closer;

I'll have no street-lights to you!—Will you go,  
sir?

*Clau.* I thank you, sir!—The devil take this  
fortune!—

And, once more, all my service to your goodness!  
[Exit LOPEZ and CLAUDIO.

*Pen.* Now could I eat my very arms for mad-  
ness!

Cross'd in the nick o' th' matter? Vengeance  
take it,

And that old cavalier that spoil'd our cock-fight!  
I'll lay the next plot surer.

*Isab.* I am glad, and sorry:

Glad that I got so fairly off suspicion;

Sorry, I lost my new-loved friend.

*Pen.* Not lost, mistress;

I'll conjure once again to raise that spirit.

In, and look soberly upon the matter!

We'll ring him one peal more; and if that fall,

The devil take the clappers, bells, and all!

[Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter DUCHESS, Lords, and RODOPE.*

*Duch.* Now, Rodope, how do you find my daughter?

*Rod.* Madam, I find her now what you would have her,

What the state wishes her; I urged her fault to her,

Open'd her eyes, and made her see the mischief  
She was running with a headlong will into;  
Made her start at her folly, shake and tremble  
At the mere memory of such an ignorance.  
She now contemns his love, hates his remembrance,  
Cannot endure to hear the name of Silvio;  
His person spits at—

*Duch.* I am glad to hear this.

*Rod.* And humbly now to your will, your care, madam,

Bends her affections, bows her best obedience;  
Sienna's Duke with new eyes now she looks on,  
And with a princely love, fit for his person,  
Returns that happiness and joy he look'd for;  
The general good of both the neighbour dukedoms,  
Not any private end, or rash affection,  
She aims at now. Hearing the Duke arrived too,  
(To whom she owes all honour and all service)  
She charged me kneel thus at your grace's feet,  
And not to rise without a general pardon. [*Kneels.*]

*Duch.* She has it, and my love again, my old love;

And with more tenderness I meet this penitence,  
Than if she ne'er had started from her honour.  
I thank you, Rodope, am bound to thank you,  
And daily to remember this great service,  
This honest faithful service! Go in peace,  
And by this ring, deliver'd to Bartello,  
Let her enjoy our favour, and her liberty;  
And presently to this place, with all honour,  
See her conducted.

*Rod.* Your grace has made me happy. [*Exit.*]

*Enter a Lord.*

*Lord.* Sienna's noble Duke craves his admittance.

*Duch.* Go, wait upon his grace!—

*Enter DUKE OF SIENNA, with Attendants.*

Fair sir, you are welcome.

Welcome to her ever admired your virtues!  
And now, methinks, my court looks truly noble.  
You have taken too much pains, sir.

*Duke.* Royal lady,  
To wait upon your grace is but my service.

*Duch.* Keep that, sir, for the saint you have vow'd it to.

*Duke.* I keep a life for her. Since your grace  
To jump so happily into the matter, [*pleases*]  
I come indeed to claim your royal promise,  
The beauteous Belvidere in marriage:  
I come to tender her my youth, my fortune,  
My everlasting love.

*Duch.* You are like to win, sir—

*Enter BELVIDERE, BARTELLO, RODOPE, and Attendants.*

All is forgot, forgiven too. No sadness,  
My good child! you have the same heart still here.  
The Duke of Sienna, child! Pray, use him nobly.

*Duke.* An angel beauty!

*Bel.* Your grace is fairly welcome!  
And what in modesty a blushing maid may  
Wish to a gentleman of your great goodness—  
But wishes are too poor a pay for princes.

*Duke.* You have made me richer than all states  
and titles!

One kiss of this white hand's above all honours:  
My faith, dear lady, and my fruitful service,  
My dutious zeal—

*Bel.* Your grace is a great master,  
And speak too powerfully to be resisted.  
Once more, you are welcome, sir; to me you are  
welcome,

To her that honours you! I could say more, sir:  
But in another's tongue 'twere better spoken.

*Duke.* As wise as fair! you have made your  
servant happy.—

I never saw so rich a mine of sweetness!

*Duch.* Will your grace please, after your painful  
journey,

To take some rest?—Are the Duke's lodgings

*Lord.* All, madam. [*ready?*]

*Duch.* Then wait upon his grace, all!—And to-  
morrow, sir,

We'll shew you in what high esteem we hold you:  
Till then, a fair repose!

*Duke.* My fairest service!

[*Exeunt DUKE and Attendants.*]

*Duch.* You have so honour'd me, my dearest  
daughter,

So truly pleased me in this entertainment,  
I mean your loving carriage to Sienna,  
That both for ever I forget all trespasses,  
And to secure you next of my full favour,  
Ask what you will within my power to grant you,  
Ask freely; and if I forget my promise—  
Ask confidently!

*Bel.* You are too royal to me;  
To me that have so foolishly transgress'd you,  
So like a girl, so far forgot my virtue,  
Which now appears as base and ugly to me,  
As did his dream, that thought he was in Paradise,  
Awaked and saw the devil. How was I wander'd!  
With what eyes could I look upon that poor, that  
coarse thing,

That wretched thing, call'd Silvio! that, now,  
despised thing!

And lose an object of that graceful sweetness,  
That god-like presence, as Sienna is!  
Darkness and cheerful day had not such difference.  
But I must ever bless your care, your wisdom,  
That led me from this labyrinth of folly:  
How had I sunk else! what example given!

*Duch.* Pr'ythee, no more; and as thou art my  
best one,

Ask something that may equal such a goodness!

*Bel.* Why did you let him go so slightly from you,  
More like a man in triumph, than condemn'd?  
Why did you make his penance but a question,  
A riddle, every idle wit unlocks?

*Duch.* 'Tis not so,  
Nor do not fear it so; he will not find it:  
I have given that (unless myself discover it)  
Will cost his head.

*Bel.* 'Tis subject to construction?

*Duch.* That it is too.

*Bel.* It may be then absolved,

And then are we both scorn'd and laugh'd at,  
madam :

Beside the promise you have tied upon it,  
Which you must never keep—

*Duch.* I never mean it.

*Bel.* For Heaven sake, let me know it ! 'tis my  
suit to you,

The boon you would have me ask : Let me but  
see it,

That, if there be a way to make't so strong  
No wit nor powerful reason can run through it  
For my disgrace, I may beg of Heaven to grant it.

*Duch.* Fear not ! it has been put to sharper  
judgments

Than e'er he shall arrive at : My dear father,  
That was as fiery in his understanding  
And ready in his wit as any living,  
Had it two years, and studied it, yet lost it :  
This night you are my bedfellow ; there, daughter,  
Into your bosom I'll commit this secret,  
And there we'll both take counsel.

*Bel.* I shall find

Some trick, I hope, too strong yet for his mind.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter PENURIO.*

*Pen.* Methinks I am batten'd well of late,  
grown lusty,  
Fat, high, and kicking, thanks to the bounteous  
Rugio !

And, now, methinks, I scorn these poor repasts,  
Cheese-parings, and the stinking tongues of pil-  
chers :

But why should I remember these ? they are odious,  
They are odious in mine eyes ; the full fat dish now,  
The bearing dish, is that I reverence,  
The dish an able serving-man sweats under,  
And bends i' th' hams, as if the house hung on him,  
That dish is the dish ; hang your bladder banquets,  
Of half a dozen of turnips and two mushrooms !  
These, when'they breed their best, hatch but two  
belches :

The state of a fat turkey, the decorum  
He marches in with, all the train and circum-  
stance ;

'Tis such a matter, such a glorious matter !  
And then his sauce with oranges and onions,  
And he display'd in all parts ! for such a dish now,  
And at my need, I would betray my father,  
And, for a roasted conger, all my country.

*Enter BARTELO.*

*Bart.* What, my friend Lean-gut ! how does thy  
bouteous mistress ?

And where's your master, sirrah ? where's that  
horn-pipe ?

*Pen.* My mistress, sir, does as a poor wrong'd  
gentlewoman  
(Too much, Heaven knows, oppress'd with injuries)  
May do, and live.

*Bart.* Is the old fool still jealous ?

*Pen.* As old fools are and will be, still the same,  
sir.

*Bart.* He must have cause, he must have cause.

*Pen.* 'Tis true, sir ;

And 'would he had with all my heart !

*Bart.* He shall have.

*Pen.* For then he had salt to his saffron porridge.

*Bart.* Why

Do not I see thee sometime ? why, thou starved  
rascal ?

Why do not you come to me, you precious bow-  
case ?

I keep good meat at home, good store.

*Pen.* Yes, sir ;

I will not fail you all next week.

*Bart.* Thou art welcome :

I have a secret I would fain impart to thee ;  
But thou'rt so thin, the wind will blow it from thee,  
Or men will read it through thee.

*Pen.* Wrapt up in beef, sir,

In good gross beef, let all the world look on me !  
The English have that trick to keep intelligence.

*Bart.* A witty knave ! First, there's to tie your  
tongue up. [*Gives money.*]

*Pen.* Dumb as a dog, sir.

*Bart.* Next, hark in your ear, sirrah !

*Pen.* Well, very well, excellent well ! 'Tis done,  
sir ; [*Whispers.*]

Say no more to me.

*Bart.* Say, and hold.

*Pen.* 'Tis done, sir.

*Bart.* As thou lov'st butter'd eggs, swear.

*Pen.* Let me kiss the book first :

But here's my hand, brave captain.

*Bart.* Look you hold, sirrah. [*Exit.*]

*Pen.* Oh, the most precious vanity of this  
world !

When such dry neats' tongues must be soak'd and  
larded

With young fat supple wenches ? Oh, the devil,  
What can he do ? he cannot suck an egg off,  
But his back's loose i' th' hilts : Go thy ways,  
captain !

Well may thy warlike name work miracles ;  
But if e'er thy founder'd courser win match more,  
Or stand right but one train—

*Enter three Gentlemen.*

1 *Gent.* Now, Signor Shadow,  
What art thou thinking of ? how to rob thy  
master ?

*Pen.* Of his good deeds ? The thief that under-  
takes that

Must have a hook will poze all hell to hammer.  
Have you dined, gentlemen, or do you purpose ?

2 *Gent.* Dined, two long hours ago.

*Pen.* Pray ye take me with ye.

3 *Gent.* To supper, dost thou mean ?

*Pen.* To anything

That has the smell of meat in't. Tell me true,  
gentlemen ;

Are not you three now going to be sinful ?  
To jeopard a joint, or so ? I have found your faces,  
And see *whore* written in your eyes.

1 *Gent.* A parlous rascal !

Thou art much upon the matter.

*Pen.* Have a care, gentlemen !

'Tis a sore age, very sore age, lewd age ;  
And women now are like old knights' adventures,  
Full of enchanted flames, and dangerous.

2 *Gent.* Where the most danger is, there's th'  
most honour.

*Pen.* I grant ye, honour most consists in suffer-  
ance ;

And by that rule you three should be most ho-  
nourable.

3 *Gent.* A subtle rogue! But canst thou tell,  
Where we may light upon— [Penurio,

*Pen.* A learned surgeon?

3 *Gent.* Pox take ye, fool! I mean good whole-  
some wenches.

*Pen.* 'Faith, wholesome women will but spoil  
ye too,

For you are so used to snap-haunces.—But take  
my counsel;

Take fat old women, fat, and five and fifty;

The Dog-days are come in.

2 *Gent.* Take fat old women?

*Pen.* The fatter and the older, still the better!

You do not know the pleasure of an old dame,  
A fat old dame; you do not know the knack on't:  
They're like our country grots, as cool as Christmas,  
And sure i' th' keels.

1 *Gent.* Hang him, starved fool, he mocks us!

3 *Gent.* Penurio, thou know'st all the handsome  
wenches:

What shall I give thee for a merchant's wife now?

*Pen.* I take no money, gentlemen; that's base!  
I trade in meat: A merchant's wife will cost ye—

A glorious capon, a great shoulder of mutton,

And a tart as big as a conjurer's circle.

3 *Gent.* That's cheap enough

1 *Gent.* And what a haberdasher's?

*Pen.* Worse meat will serve for her; a great  
goose-pie—

(But you must send it out o' th' country to me,  
It will not do else) with a piece of bacon,

And, if you can, a pot of butter with it.

2 *Gent.* Now do I aim at horse-flesh: What a  
parson's?

*Pen.* A tithe-pig has no fellow, if I fetch her;

If she be Puritan, plumb-porridge does it,

And a fat loin of veal, well sauced and roasted.

2 *Gent.* We'll meet one night, and thou shalt  
have all these,

O' that condition we may have the wenches.—

A dainty rascal!

*Pen.* When your stomachs serve ye,

(For mine is ever ready) I'll supply ye.

1 *Gent.* Farewell! and there's to fill thy paunch.  
[*They give money.*]

*Pen.* Brave gentleman—

2 *Gent.* Hold, sirrah! there.

*Pen.* Any young wench i' th' town, sir—

3 *Gent.* It shall go round. [*Exeunt Gentlemen.*]

*Pen.* Most honourable gentlemen!—

All these are courtiers; but they are mere cox-  
And only for a wench their purses open; [combs,

Nor have they so much judgment left to chuse her.  
If e'er they call upon me, I'll so fit 'em—

I have a pack of wry-mouth'd mackrel ladies,

Stink like a standing ditch, and those dear damselfs!

But I forgot my business; I thank you, monsieurs!

I have a thousand whimsies in my brains now.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in the Palace. A  
Banquet set out.*

*Enter DUCHESSES, Duke of SIENNA, Lords, and Attendants.*

*Duch.* Your grace shall now perceive how much  
we honour you,

And in what dear regard we hold your friendship,  
Will you sit, sir, and grace this homely banquet?

*Duke.* Madam, to your poor friend you are too  
magnificent.

*Duch.* To the Duke's health, and all the joys I  
wish him! [*They drink.*]

Let no man miss this cup. Have we no music?

*Duke.* Your noble favours still you heap upon  
me!

But where's my virtuous mistress? Such a feast,  
And not her sparkling beauty here to bless it?  
Methinks, it should not be; it shews not fully.

*Duch.* Young ladies, sir, are long and curious  
In putting on their trims, forget how day goes,  
And then 'tis their good-morrow when they are  
ready.—

Go some and call her, and wait upon her hither;  
Tell her the Duke and I desire her company.—

I warrant you a hundred dressings now  
She has survey'd; this and that fashion look'd on,  
For ruffs and gowns; cast this away, these jewels  
Suited to these, and these knots: O' my life, sir,  
She fears your curious eye will soon discover else.—  
Why stand ye still? why gape ye on one another?  
Did I not bid ye go, and tell my daughter?  
Are you nail'd here? Nor stir, nor speak? Who  
And who are you? [Am I?]

1 *Lord.* Pardon me, gracious lady!

The fear to tell you that, you would not hear of,  
Makes us all dumb: The princess is gone, madam.

*Duch.* Gone? whither gone? Some wiser fellow  
answer me!

2 *Lord.* We sought the court all over; and, be-  
lieve, lady,

No news of where she is, nor how conveyed hence.

*Duch.* It cannot be, it must not be!

1 *Lord.* 'Tis true, madam;

No room in all the court, but we search'd through it.  
Her women found her want first, and they cried  
to us.

*Duch.* -Gone? stol'n away? I am abused, dis-  
honour'd.

*Duke.* 'Tis I that am abused, 'tis I dishonour'd!  
Is this your welcome? this your favour to me?

To foist a trick upon me? this trick too,

To cheat me of my love? Am I not worthy?

Or, since I was your guest, am I grown odious?

*Duch.* Your grace mistakes me; as I have a  
life, sir—

*Duke.* And I another, I will never bear this,  
Never endure this dor!

*Duch.* But hear me patiently!

*Duke.* Give me my love!

*Duch.* As soon as care can find her;

And all care shall be used.

*Duke.* And all my care too,

To be revenged: I smell the trick; 'tis too rank;  
Fy, how it smells o' th' mother!

*Duch.* You wrong me, Duke.

*Duke.* For this disgrace, ten thousand Florentines  
Shall pay their dearest bloods, and dying curse you!  
And so I turn away, your mortal enemy! [*Exit.*]

*Duch.* Since you're so high and hot, sir, you  
have half arm'd us.—

Be careful of the town, of all the castles,

And see supplies of soldiers everywhere,

And musters for the field when he invites us.

For he shall know, 'tis not high words can fright us.

My daughter gone? Has she so finely cozen'd me?

This is for Silvio's sake, sure; oh, cunning false  
one!

—Publish a proclamation through the dukedom,  
That whosoe'er can bring to th' court young  
Silvio,

Alive or dead, beside our thanks and favour,  
Shall have two thousand ducats for his labour!  
See it dispatch'd and sent in haste.—Oh, base one!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Bed-Room in the House of*  
*LOPEZ.*

*Enter ISABELLA, and PENURIO with a Light.*

*Isab.* Wast thou with Rugio?

*Pen.* Yes, marry was I, closely.

*Isab.* And does he still remember his poor mis-  
Does he desire to see me? [*tress?*]

*Pen.* Yes, and presently;

Puts off all business else; lives in that memory;  
And will be here according to directions.

*Isab.* But where's thy master?

*Pen.* Where a coxcomb should be;

Waiting at court with his jewels:

Safe for this night, I warrant you.

*Isab.* I am bound to thee.

*Pen.* I would you were, as close as I could tie  
you.

*Isab.* Thou art my best, my truest friend—

*Pen.* I labour,

I moil and toil for you; I am your hackney.

*Isab.* If ever I be able—

*Pen.* Steal the great cheese, mistress,  
Was sent him out o' th' country.

*Isab.* Anything—

*Pen.* That's meat; 'tis lawful, mistress. Where's  
He got at court? [*the castle-custard,*]

*Isab.* He has lock'd it in his study.

*Pen.* Get a warrant

To search for counterfeit gold.

*Isab.* Give me thy candle;

I'll find a time to be thy careful cater.

*Pen.* And many a time I'll find to be his cook,  
And dress his calf's head to the sweetest sauce,  
mistress!

*Isab.* To bed, Penurio! go, the rest is my  
I'll keep the watch out. [*charge!*]

*Pen.* Now if you spare him—

*Isab.* Peace, fool!—

I hope my Rugio will not fail; 'twould vex me.  
Now to my string! so; sure he cannot miss now;  
And this end to my finger. I'll lie down,  
For on a sudden I am wond'rous heavy;  
'Tis very late too; if he come and find this,  
And pull it, though it be with easy motion,  
I shall soon waken, and as soon be with him.

[*She ties a String to her Finger, lays down, and falls*  
*asleep.*]

*Enter LOPEZ.*

*Lopez.* Thou secret friend, how am I bound to  
love thee!

And how to hug thee for thy private service!  
Thou art the star all my suspicions sail by,  
The fixed point my wronged honour turns to:  
By thee I shall know all, find all the subtillities  
Of devilish women, that torment me daily:  
Thou art my conjurer, my spell, my spirit!—  
All's hush'd and still, no sound of any stirring,  
No tread of living thing! The light is in still;  
And there's my wife; how prettily the fool lies,  
How sweet and handsomely; and in her clothes  
too!

Waiting for me, upon my life! her fondness  
Would not admit her rest till I came to her:  
Oh, careful fool, why am I angry with thee?

Why do I think thou hat'st thy loving husband?  
I am an ass, an over-doting coxcomb;  
And this sweet soul the mirror of perfection.  
How admirable fair and delicate!  
And how it stirs me! I'll sing thy sweets a re-  
But will not waken thee. [*quiem,*]

SONG.

Oh, fair sweet face, oh, eyes celestial bright,  
Twin stars in Heaven, that now adorn the night;  
Oh, fruitful lips, where cherries ever grow;  
And damask cheeks, where all sweet beauties blow;  
Oh thou from head to foot divinely fair!  
Cupid's most cunning net's made of that hair;  
And, as he weaves himself for curious eyes,  
"Oh me, oh me, I'm caught myself," he cries:  
Sweet rest about thee, sweet and golden sleep.  
Soft peaceful thoughts, your hourly watches keep,  
Whilst I in wonder sing this sacrifice,  
To beauty sacred, and those angel eyes!

Now will I steal a kiss, a dear kiss from her,  
And suck the rosy breath of this bright beauty.—  
What a devil's this? tied to her finger too?  
A string, a damned string, to give intelligence!  
Oh, my loved key, how truly hast thou served me!  
I'll follow this:—Soft, soft! to th' door it goes,  
And through to th' other side! a damned string  
I am abused, topt, cuckolded, fool'd, jaded, [*'tis!*]  
Ridden to death, to madness!—Stay; this helps  
Stay, stay! and now invention help me! [*not;*]  
I'll sit down by her, take this from her easily,  
And thus upon mine own.—Dog, I shall catch you;  
With all your cunning, sir, I shall light on you.—  
I felt it pull, sure; yes, but wond'rous softly;  
'Tis there again, and harder now: Have at you!  
Now an thou 'scap'at, the devil's thy ghostly father!

[*Exit.*]

*Isab.* [*Awaking.*] Sure 'twas my husband's  
voice! The string is gone too;  
He has found the trick on't! I am undone, be-  
And, if he meet my friend, he perishes; [*tray'd,*]  
What fortune follows me, what spiteful fortune!  
Hoa, Jaquetan!

*Enter JAQUENET.*

*Jaq.* Here, mistress; do you call me?

*Isab.* Didst thou hear no noise?

*Jaq.* I hear my master mad yonder,  
And swears, and chafes—

*Isab.* Dar'st thou do one thing for me?

One thing concerns mine honour? all is lost else.

*Jaq.* Name what you will.

*Isab.* It can bring but a beating,

Which I will recompense so largely—

*Jaq.* Name it.

*Isab.* Sit here as if thou wert asleep.

*Jaq.* Is that all?

*Isab.* When he comes in, whate'er he do unto  
thee,

(The worst will be but beating) speak not a word,  
Not one word, as thou lov'st me.

*Jaq.* I'll run through it.

*Isab.* I'll carry away the candle.

[*Exit.*]

*Jaq.* And I the blows, mistress.

[*Lies down.*]

*Enter LOPEZ.*

*Lopez.* Have you put your light out? I shall  
stumble to you,  
You whore, you cunning whore! I shall catch  
your rogue too:  
He has light legs, else I had so ferret-claw'd him!  
Oh, have I found you? Do you play at dog-sleep  
still, whore?

Do you think that can protect you? Yes, I'll kill thee;

But first I'll bring thy friends to view thy villainies, Thy whorish villainies: And first I'll beat thee, Beat thee to pin-dust, thou salt whore, thou varlet, Scratch out thine eyes: I'll spoil your tempting visage!—

[Beats her.]

Are you so patient? I'll put my nails in deeper. Is it good whoring? whoring, ye base rascal? Is it good tempting men with strings to ride you? So! I will fetch your kindred, and your friends, whore;

And such a justice I will act upon thee— [Exit.]

Enter ISABELLA.

Isab. What, is he gone?

Jaq. The devil go with him, mistress; He has harrow'd me; plough'd land was ne'er so harrow'd:

I had the most ado to save mine eyes.

Isab. He has paid thee;

But I'll heal all again with good gold, Jaquenet. He has damned nails.

Jaq. They are tenpenny nails, I think, mistress; I'll undertake he shall strike 'em through an inch board.

Isab. Go up and wash thyself; take my poma- And now let me alone to end the tragedy. [tum;

Jaq. You had best beware.

Isab. I shall deal stoutly with him;

Reach me my book, and see the door made fast, wench;

And so, good night!—Now to the matter politic! [Exit JAQUENET. LOPEZ knocks within.]

Lopez. [Within.] You shall see what she is, what a sweet jewel.

Isab. Who's there? what madman knocks? is this an hour,

And in mine husband's absence?

Lopez. [Within.] Will you open?

You know my voice, you whore! I am that husband—

Do you mark her subtilty? But I have paid her; I have so ferk'd her face—Here's the blood, gentlemen;

Ecce signum! I have spoil'd her goatish beauty; Observe her how she looks now, how she's painted! Oh, 'tis the most wicked 'st whore, and the most treacherous—

Enter LOPEZ, BARTELO, Gentlemen and two Gentlewomen.

Gent. Here walks my cousin, full of meditation, Arm'd with religious thoughts.

Bart. Is this the monster?

1 Gentlew. Is this the subject of that rage you talk'd of,

That naughty woman you had pull'd a-pieces?

Bart. Here's no such thing.

1 Gentlew. How have you wrong'd this beauty! Are not you mad, my friend? What time o' th' moon is't?

Have not you maggots in your brains?

Lopez. 'Tis she, sure!

Gent. Where's the scratch'd face you spoke of, the torn garments,

And all the hair pluck'd off her head?

Bart. Believe me,

'Twere better far you had lost your pair of pebbles, Than she the least adornment of that sweetness.

Lopez. Is not this blood?

1 Gentlew. This is a monstrous folly, A base abuse!

Isab. Thus he does ever use me, And sticks me up a wonder, not a woman: Nothing I do, but subject to suspicion; Nothing I can do, able to content him.

Bart. Lopez, you must not use this.

2 Gentlew. 'Twere not amiss, sir,

To give ye sauce to your meat; and suddenly—

1 Gentlew. You that dare wrong a woman of her goodness,

Thou have a wife? thou have a bear tied to thee, To scratch thy jealous itch! Were all o' my mind,

I mean all women, we would soon disburthen you Of that that breeds these fits, these dog-flaws in A sow-gelder should trim you. [ye;

Bart. A rare cure, lady,

And one as fit for him as a thief for a halter!—

You see this youth; will you not cry him quit-tance? [Apart to ISABELLA.]

Body o' me, I would pine, but I would pepper him. I'll come anon.—He, hang him, poor pompillion! How like a wench bepist he looks!—I'll come, lady—

Lopez, the law must teach you what a wife is, A good, a virtuous wife—

Isab. I'll ne'er live with him!

I crave your loves all to make known my cause, That so a fair divorce may pass between us: I am weary of my life; in danger hourly.

Bart. You see how rude you are—I will not miss you— [Apart to her.]

Unbearable rude—I'll pay him soundly—

You should be whipt in Bedlam—I'll reward him—

2 Gentlew. Whipping's too good.

Lopez. I think I am alive still,

And in my wits!

Bart. I'll put a trick upon him—

And get his goods confiscate; you shall have 'em. I will not fail at nine— [Apart to her.]

Lopez. I think I am here too;

And once I would have sworn I had taken her nap—I think my name is Lopez. [ping;

Gent. Fy, for shame, sir!

You see you have abused her, foully wrong'd her, Hung scandalous and coarse opinions on her, Which now you find but children of suspicion: Ask her forgiveness, shew a penitence!

She is my kinswoman; and what she suffers

Under so base and beastly jealousies,

I will redress, else I'll seek satisfaction.

Bart. Why, every boy i' th' town will piss upon

Lopez. I am sorry for't— [thee.]

1 Gentlew. Down o' your marrow-bones!

Lopez. Even sorry from my heart: Forgive me, sweet wife! [Kneels.]

Here I confess most freely I have wrong'd you; As freely here I beg a pardon of you!

From this hour no debate, no cross suspicion—

Isab. To shew you, sir, I understand a wife's part, Thus I assure my love, and seal your pardon.

[Kisses him.]

2 Gentlew. 'Tis well done: Now to bed, and there confirm it!

Gent. And so good night!

Bart. Aware relapses, Lopez.

[Exeunt.]

Lopez. Now, Isabella, tell me truth, and suddenly,

And do not juggle with me, nor dissemble,

(For as I have a life, you die then ! I am not mad, Nor does the devil work upon my weakness) Tell me the trick of this, and tell me freely.

*Isab.* Will then that satisfy you ?

*Lopes.* If you deal ingenuously.

*Isab.* I'll tell you all, and tell you true and freely.

Bartello was the end of all this jealousy ; His often visitations brought by you, first Bred all these fits, and these suspicions ; I knew your false key, and accordingly I framed my plot, to have you take him finely, Too poor a penance for the wrong his wife bears, His worthy virtuous wife ! I felt it sensibly When you took off the string, and was much pleased in't,

Because I wish'd his importunate dotage paid well ; And, had you staid two minutes more, you had

*Lopes.* This sounds like truth. [had him.

*Isab.* Because this shall be certain,

Next time he comes (as long he cannot tarry)

Yourself shall see, and bear, his lewd temptations.

*Lopes.* Till then I am satisfied : And if this prove true,

Henceforward mistress of yourself I give you,

And I to serve you. For my lusty captain,

I'll make him dance, and make him think the devil

Claws at his breech, and yet I will not hurt him.

Come now to bed ; and prove but constant this I'll prove the man you ever wish'd. [way,

*Isab.* You have blest me. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Country Village.*

*Enter SILVIO.*

*Sil.* What labour and what travel have I run through,

And through what cities to absolve this riddle !

Diviners, dreamers, schoolmen, deep magicians,

All have I tried ; and all give several meanings,

And from all hope of any future happiness :

To this place am I come at length, the country ;

The people simple, plain, and harmless witty,

Whose honest labours Heaven rewards with plenty

Of corn, wine, oil, which they again, as thankful,

To their new crops new pastimes celebrate,

And crown their joyful harvests with new voices.

By a rich farmer here I am entertain'd,

And rank'd among the number of his servants,

Not guessing what I am, but what he would have

me.

Here may be so much wit (though much I fear it)

To undo this knotty question ; and 'would to

Heaven

My fortunes had been hatch'd with theirs, as in-

nocent,

And never known a pitch above their plainness !

*Enter Soto, dressed as a Morris-dancer, with a Proclamation, from a House.*

*Soto.* That it is, that it is—what's this word now ?

This is a plaguy word ! that it is—*r, e, a*, that it is, *reason*.

By your leave, Master Soto, by your leave, you are too quick, sir ;

There's a strange parlous *T* before the *reason*,

A very tall *T*, which makes the word *high-treason*.

*Sil.* What treason's that ? does this fellow understand himself ?

*Soto.* Pitch will infect ; I'll meddle no more with this geer.—

What a devil ails this fellow ? this foolish fellow ?

Being admitted to be one of us too,

That are the masters of the sports proceeding,

Thus to appear before me too, unmorris'd ?

—Do you know me, friend ?

*Sil.* You are my master's son, sir.

*Soto.* And do you know what sports are now in season ?

*Sil.* I hear there are some a-foot.

*Soto.* Where are your bells, then ?

Your rings, your ribbands, friend ? and your clean napkins ? [here

Your nosegay in your hat, pinn'd up ? Am not I

My father's eldest son ? and at this time, sir,

I would have you know it, though you be ten times his servant,

A better man than my father far, lord of this harvest, sir ;

And shall a man of my place want attendance ?

*Sil.* 'Twas want of knowledge, sir, not duty, bred this ;

I would have made suit else for your lordship's service.

*Soto.* In some sort I am satisfied now ; mend your manners !

But thou art a melancholy fellow, vengeance melancholy,

And that may breed an insurrection amongst us :

Go to ! I'll lay the best part of two pots now

Thou art in love, and I can guess with whom too ;

I saw the wench that twirled and twinkled at thee,

The other day ; the wench that's new come hither,

The young smug wench.

*Sil.* You know more than I feel, sir.

*Soto.* Go to ! I'll be thy friend, I'll speak a good word for thee,

And thou shalt have my lordship's countenance to her.

May be I have had a snap myself ; may be ay, We lords are allow'd a little more. [may be no ;

*Sil.* 'Tis fit, sir ;

I humbly thank you ; you are too, too tender of

But what, sir, I beseech you, was that paper [sc.

Your lordship was so studiously employ'd in,

When you came out a-doors ?

*Soto.* Thou mean'st this paper ?

*Sil.* That, sir, I think.

*Soto.* Why, 'tis a proclamation,

A notable piece of villainy, as ever thou heard'st

By mine honour, 'tis. [in thy life ;

*Sil.* How, sir, or what concerns it ?

*Soto.* It comes you from the duchess, a plaguy wise woman,

To apprehend the body of one Silvio,

(As arrant a rascal as ever piss'd against post)

And this same Silvio, or this foresaid rascal,

To bring before her, live or dead ; for which good service

The man that brings him has two thousand ducats :  
Is not this notable matter now ?

*Sil.* 'Tis so indeed.—

This proclamation bears my bane about it !

[*Aside.*]

Can no rest find me, no private place secure me,  
But still my miseries like blood-hounds haunt me ?  
Unfortunate young man, which way now guides  
thee,

Guides thee from death ? the country's laid round  
for thee.

Oh, Claudio, now I feel thy blood upon me ;  
Now it speaks loudly here, I am sure, against me ;  
Time now has found it out, and Truth proclaim'd it,  
And Justice now cries out, I must die for it.

*Soto.* Hast thou read it ?

*Sil.* Yes.

*Soto.* And dost thou know that Silvio ?

*Sil.* I never saw him, sir.

*Soto.* I have, and know him too.

I know him as well as I know thee, and better ;  
And, if I light upon him, for a trick he play'd me  
once,

A certain kind of dog-trick, I'll so fiddle him !  
Two thousand ducats ? I'll so pepper him !  
And with that money I'll turn gentleman,  
Worth a brown baker's dozen of such Silvios.

*Sil.* There is no staying here ; this rogue will  
know me,

And for the money's sake betray me too :

I must bethink me suddenly and safely.

*Enter BOMBY as Hobby-horse, and other Morris-dancers.*

*Soto.* Mine own dear lady, have at thy honey-  
comb !

Now, for the honour of our town, boys, trace  
sweetly ! [Cry within of, Arm, arm !]

What a vengeance ails this whobub ? pox refuse  
'em !

Cannot they let us dance in our defence here ?

*Enter FARMER and CAPTAIN.*

*Capt.* Arm, honest friends, arm suddenly and  
bravely,

And with your ancient resolutions follow me !  
Look how the beacons shew like comets ; your  
poor neighbours

Run maddingly affrighted through the villages ;

Sienna's duke is up, burns all before him,  
And with his sword makes thousand mothers  
childless.

*Soto.* What's this to our morris-dancers ?

*Sil.* This may serve my turn.

*Soto.* There's ne'er a duke in Christendom but  
loves a May-game.

*Capt.* At a horse you were always cess'd ; put  
your son on him,

And arm him well ! i' th' states name, I command  
you :

And they that dare go voluntary shall receive  
reward.

*Soto.* I dare go no way, sir. This is strange,  
Master Captain,

You cannot be content to spoil our sport here,  
(Which I do not think your worship's able to  
answer)

But you must set us together by the ears, with I  
know not who too ?

We are for the bodily part o' th' dance.

*Capt.* Arm him suddenly !

(This is no time to fool) I shall return you else

VOL. II.

A rebel to the general state, and duchess ;

And how you'll answer then—

*Farmer.* I have no more sons, sir ;

This is my only boy ; I beseech you, Master  
Captain—

*Soto.* I am a rank coward too, to say the truth,  
I never had good luck at buffets neither. [sir ;

*Farmer.* Here's vorty shillings, spare the child.

*Capt.* I cannot.

*Soto.* Are you a man ? will you cast away a  
May-lord ?

Shall all the wenches in the country curse you ?

*Sil.* An't please you, captain, I'll supply his  
person ;

( 'Tis pity their old custom should be frighted )

Let me have horse, and good arms, I'll serve  
willingly,

And, if I shrink a foot of ground, hell take me !

*Capt.* A promising aspect, face full of courage.

I'll take this man, and thank you too—

*Farmer.* There's for thee ;

'Tis in a clout, but good old gold.

*Sil.* I thank you, sir.

*Farmer.* Go, saddle my forehorse, put his feather  
on too,

(He'll prounce it bravely, friend ; he fears no  
colours)

And take the armour down, and see him dizen'd.

*Soto.* Farewell ! and if thou carriest thyself well  
in this matter—

I say no more but this, there must be more May-  
And I know who are fit. [lords,

*Sil.* Dance you ; I'll fight, sir.

*Capt.* Away, away !

*Sil.* Farewell ! I am for the captain. [*Exeunt.*]

*Farmer.* Now to this matter again, my honest  
fellows !

For, if this go not forward, I foresee, friends,  
This war will fright our neighbours out o' th'  
villages :

Cheer up your hearts ! we shall hear better news,  
boys.

*Bomby.* Surely I'll dance no more, 'tis most  
ridiculous :

I find my wife's instructions now mere verities,  
My learned wife's ; she often hath pronounced to  
me

My safety : " Bomby, defy these sports ; thou art  
damn'd else."

This beast of Babylon I will never back again,  
His pace is sure prophane, and his lewd *wi-hees*,  
The songs of Hymyn and Gymyn in the wilderness.

*Farmer.* Fy, neighbour Bomby, in your fits again,  
Your zeal-sweats. This is not careful, neighbour ;  
The hobby-horse is a seemly hobby-horse—

*Soto.* And as pretty a beast on's inches, though  
I say it—

*Bomby.* The beast is an unseemly and a lewd  
beast,

And got at Rome by the Pope's coach-horses ;  
His mother was the mare of Ignorance.

*Soto.* Cobler, thou liest, an thou wert a thousand  
coblers !

His mother was an honest mare, and a mare of  
good credit ;

I know the mare, and, if need be, can bring wit-  
And, in the way of honesty I tell thee, [nees ;

Scorn'd any coach-horse the pope had ; thou art  
foolish,

And thy blind zeal makes thee abuse the beast.

*Bomby.* I do defy thee, and thy foot-cloth too ;  
And tell thee to thy face, this profane riding,  
(I feel it in my conscience, and I dare speak it)  
This unmodified ambling hath brought a scourge  
This hobby-horse Sincerity we lived in, [upon us ;  
War, and the Sword of Slaughter : I renounce it,  
And put the beast off, thus, the beast polluted.

[Throws down the hobby-horse.

And now no more shall Hope-on-high Bomby  
Follow the painted pipes of worldly pleasures,  
And, with the wicked, dance the devil's measures.  
Away, thou pamper'd jade of vanity,  
Stand at the livery of lewd delights now,  
And eat the provender of prick-ear'd folly !  
My dance shall be to the pipe of persecution.

*Farmer.* Will you dance no more, neighbour ?

*Bomby.* Surely, no :

Carry the beast to his crib ; I have renounced him,  
And all his works.

*Soto.* Shall the hobby-horse be forgot then ?  
The hopeful hobby-horse, shall he lie founder'd ?  
If thou dost this, thou art but a cast-away cobbler.  
My anger's up ; think wisely, and think quickly,  
And look upon the *quondam* beast of pleasure !  
If thou dost this (mark me, thou serious sower,  
Thou bench-whistler, of the old tribe of toe-  
pieces !)

If thou dost this, there shall be no more shoe-  
mending ;

Every man shall have a special care of his own soal,  
And in his pocket carry his two confessors,  
His lingel, and his nawl. If thou dost this——

*Farmer.* He'll dance again, for certain.

*Bomby.* I cry out on't !

'Twas the fore-running sin brought in those tilt-  
staves

They brandish 'gainst the church, the devil calls  
May-poles.

*Soto.* Take up your horse again, and girth him  
to ye,

And girth him handsomely, good neighbour Bomby !

*Bomby.* I spit at him !

*Soto.* Spit in the horse's face, cobbler ?

Thou out-of-tune psalm-singing slave ! Spit in his  
visnomy ?

*Bomby.* I spit again ; and thus I rise against  
him,

Against this beast, that signified destruction,  
Fore-shew'd i' th' falls of monarchies.

*Soto.* I' th' face of him ?

Spit such another spit, by this hand, cobbler,  
I'll make ye set a new piece o' your nose there.  
Take't up, I say, and dance without more bidding,  
And dance as you were wont ; you have been excel-  
lent,

And art still, but for this new nicety,  
And your wife's learned lectures : Take up the  
hobby-horse !

Come, 'tis a thing thou hast loved with all thy  
heart, Bomby,

And wouldst do still, but for the round-breech'd  
brothers :

You were not thus i' th' morning. Take't up, I  
say ;

Do not delay, but do't ! You know I am officer ;  
And I know 'tis unfit all these good fellows  
Should wait the cooling of your zealous porridge.  
Chuse whether you will dance, or have me execute :  
I'll clap your neck i' th' stocks, and there I'll make  
ye

Dance a whole day, and dance with these at night  
too.

You mend old shoes well, mend your old manners  
better ;

And suddenly see you leave off this sincereness,  
This new hot batch, borrow'd from some brown  
baker,

Some learned brother, or I'll so bait you for't—  
Take it quickly up.

*Bomby.* I take my persecution,

[Takes up the hobby-horse.

And thus I am forced, a bye-word to my brethren.

*Soto.* Strike up, strike up, strike merrily !

*Farmer.* To it roundly. [A Morris-dance.

Now to the harvest-feast ; then sport again, boys !  
[Exit.

## SCENE II.—Open Country.

Enter SILVIO armed.

*Sil.* What shall I do ? Live thus unknown, and  
base still,

Or thrust myself into the head o' th' battle ?

And there, like that I am, a gentleman,  
And one that never fear'd the face of Danger.  
(So in her angry eyes she carried Honour)

Fight nobly, and (to end my cares) die nobly ?

SONG. [Within.]

Silvio, go on, and raise thy noble mind  
To noble ends ; fling coarse base thoughts behind !

Silvio, thou son of ever-living fame,

Now aim at virtue, and a noble name.

Silvio, consider, honour is not won,

Nor virtue reach'd, till some brave thing be done.

Thy country calls thee now, she burns and bleeds,

Now raise thyself, young man, to noble deeds !

Into the battle, Silvio ! there seek forth

Danger, and blood ; by them stands sacred Worth.

*Sil.* What heavenly voice is this that follows me ?

This is the second time 't has waited on me,

Since I was arm'd, and ready for the battle :

It names me often, steels my heart with courage,

And in a thousand sweet notes comforts me.

Enter BELVIDERE, deformed as an old Woman.

What beldam's this ? How old she is, and ugly !

Why does she follow me ?

*Bel.* Be not dismay'd son ;

I wait upon thee for thy good and honour :

'Twas I that now sung to thee, stirr'd thy mind up.

And raised thy spirits to the pitch of nobleness.

*Sil.* Though she be old, and of a crooked carcase,  
Her voice is like the harmony of angels.

*Bel.* Thou art my darling ; all my love dwells  
on thee,

The son of Virtue ! therefore I attend thee.

Inquire not what I am ; I come to serve thee ;

For if thou be'st inquisitive, thou hast lost me.

A thousand long miles hence my dwelling is,  
Deep in a cave, where, but mine own, no foot  
treads ;

There, by mine art, I found what danger, Silvio,

And deep distress of heart, thou wert grown into ;

A thousand leagues I have cut through empty air,

Far swifter than the sailing rack that gallops

Upon the wings of angry winds, to seek thee.

Sometimes o'er a swelling tide,

On a dolphin's back I ride ;

Sometimes pass the earth below,

And through the unmoved centre go ;

Sometimes in a flame of fire,  
Like a meteor I aspire;  
Sometimes in mine own shape, thus,  
When I help the virtuous:  
Men of honourable minds,  
Command my art in all his kinds:  
Pursue the noble thought of war;  
From thy guard I'll not be far.  
Get thee worship on thy foe;  
Lasting fame is gotten so.  
Single Sienna's Duke alone;  
Hear thy friends, thy country groan,  
And with thy manly arm strike sure;  
Then thou hast wrought thine own free cure.

*Sil.* Some sybil sware, some soul Heaven loves,  
and favours,

And lends her their free powers to work their wonders!

How she incites my courage!

*Bel.* Silvio,

I knew thee many days ago;  
Foresaw thy love to Belvidere,  
The duchess' daughter, and her heir;  
Knew she loved thee, and know what past,  
When you were found i' th' castle fast  
In one another's arms; foresaw  
The taking of you, and the law;  
And so thy innocence I loved,  
The deepest of my skill I proved:  
Be ruled by me; for, to this hour,  
I have dwelt about thee with my power.

*Sil.* I will, and in the course of all observe thee;  
For thou art sure an angel good sent to me.

*Bel.* Get thee gone then to the fight!

Longer stay but robs thy right:

When thou grow'st weary, I'll be near;

Then think on beauteous Belvidere!

For every precious thought of her

Will lend thine honour a new spur.

When all is done, meet here at night;

Go, and be happy in the fight!

[*Exit.*]

*Sil.* I certainly believe I shall do nobly;

And that I'll bravely reach at too, or die. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—FLORENCE. *A Room in the House of LOPEZ.*

*Enter CLAUDIO with a Wallet, and PENURIO.*

*Clau.* Is she so loving still?

*Pen.* She is mad with love,

As mad as ever unworm'd dog was, signor;  
And does so weep, and curse, for your prevention,  
Your crosses in your love—it frets me too;  
I am fall'n away to nothing, to a spindle,  
Grown a mere man of mat, no soul within me:  
Fox o' my master! Sir, will that content you?

*Clau.* This rogue but cozens me, and she neglects me;

[*Aside.*]

Upon my life, there are some other gamesters,  
Nearer the wind than I, and that prevents me.—  
Is there no other holds acquaintance with her?  
(Pr'ythee be true, be honest; do not mock me;  
Thou know'st her heart) no former interest  
She has vow'd a favour to, and cannot handsomely  
Go off, but by regaining such a friendship?  
There are a thousand handsome men, young,  
wealthy,

That will not stick at any rate, nor danger,  
To gain so sweet a prize; nor can I blame her,

If, where she finds a comfort, she deal cunningly:  
I am a stranger yet.

*Pen.* You are all she looks for;  
And, if there be any other, she neglects all,  
And all for you: I would you saw how grievously  
And with what hourly lamentations—

*Clau.* I know thou flatter'st me; tell me but truth—

Look here, look well; the best meat in the duke-  
The rarest, and the choicest of all diets! [dom,  
This will I give thee, but to satisfy me,  
(That is, not to dissemble) this rare lobster,  
This pheasant of the sea, this dish for princes,  
And all this thou shalt enjoy, eat all thyself;  
Have good Greek wine, or anything belongs to't,  
A wench, if it desire one.

*Pen.* All this, signor?

*Clau.* All, and a greater far than this—

*Pen.* A greater?

*Clau.* If thou deserve by telling truth.

*Pen.* A wench too?

*Clau.* Or anything; but if you play the knave  
now,

The cozening knave, besides the loss of this,  
(In which thou hast parted with a paradise)  
I ne'er will give thee meat more, not a morsel;  
No smell of meat, by my means, shall come near  
Nor name of anything that's nourishing; [thee,  
But to thy old part, Tantalus, again  
Thou shalt return, and there snap at a shadow!

*Pen.* Upon this point, had I intended treason,  
Or anything might call my life in question,  
Follow'd with all the tortures time could think on,  
(Give me but time to eat this lovely lobster,  
This alderman o' th' sea, and give me wine to him)  
I would reveal all; and if that all were too little,  
More than I knew. Bartello holds in with her,  
The captain of the citadel; but you need not fear  
him,

His tongue's the stiffest weapon that he carries.  
He's old and out of use: There are some other,  
Men young enough, handsome, and bold enough,  
Could they come to make their game once; but  
they want, sir,

They want the *unde quare*, they're laid by then.  
You only are the man shall knock the nail in—

*Enter BARTELO.*

*Bart.* How now, Penurio?

*Pen.* Your worship's fairly met, sir.—

You shall hear further from me: Steal aside, sir.

*Clau.* Remember your master for those chains.

[*Exit.*]

*Pen.* They are ready, sir.

*Bart.* What young thing's this? By his habit  
he's a merchant;

I fear he trades my way too.—You dried dog-fish,  
What bait was that?

*Pen.* Who, sir? the thing went hence now?

A notable young whelp—

*Bart.* To what end, sirrah?

*Pen.* Came to buy chains and rings, is to be  
married;

An ass, a coxcomb! has nothing in his house, sir.  
I warrant, you think he came to see my mistress?

*Bart.* I doubt it shrewdly.

*Pen.* Away, away, 'tis foolish!

He has not the face to look upon a gentlewoman;  
A poor skimm'd thing! his mother's maids are  
fain, sir,

To teach him how to kiss ; and, against he's married,

To shew him on which side the stirrop stands.

*Bart.* That is a fine youth.

*Pen.* Thou wouldst hang thyself, [Aside.

That thou hadst half his power, thou empty pot-

*Bart.* Am I come fit, Penurio ? [gun.

*Pen.* As fit as a fiddle ;

My master's now abroad about his business.

*Bart.* When thou camest to me home to-day, I half suspected

My wife was jealous, that she whisper'd to thee.

*Pen.* You deserve well the whilst.—There's no such matter ;

She talk'd about some toys my master must bring You must not know of. [to her,

*Bart.* I'll take no note, Penurio.

*Pen.* No, nor you shall not, till you have it soundly. [Aside.

This is the bravest *capitano pompo* !

But I shall pump you anon, sir.

*Enter ISABELLA.*

*Isab.* Oh, my Bartello !

*Bart.* You pretty rogue, you little rogue, you sweet rogue !—

Away, Penurio ; go and walk i' th' Horse-Fair.

*Isab.* You do not love me.

*Bart.* Thou liest, thou little rascal !—

There, sirrah ; to your centry ! [Gives money.

*Pen.* How the colt itches !

I'll help you to a curry-comb shall claw you. [Exit.

*Isab.* And how much dost thou love me ?

*Bart.* Let's go in quickly ;

I'll tell thee presently, I'll measure it to thee.

*Isab.* No busses first ? Sit o' my knee, my brave boy,

My valiant boy ! Do not look so fiercely on me ; Thou wilt fright me with thy face. Come, buss

Smile in my face, you mad thing ! [again, chick !

*Bart.* I am mad indeed, wench ;

'Precious ! I am all o' fire.

*Isab.* I'll warm thee better.

*Bart.* I'll warm thee too, or I'll blow out my bellows :

Ha, you sweet rogue, you loving rogue, a boy A soldier I will get, shall prove a fellow. [now,

*Enter JAQUENET and PENURIO.*

*Jaq.* Mistress, look to yourself ; my master's coming !

*Bart.* The devil come and go with him !

*Pen.* The devil's come indeed ; he brings your

*Isab.* We are undone, undone then ! [wife, sir.

*Bart.* My wife with him ?

Why, this is a dismal day.

*Pen.* They are hard by too, sir.

*Bart.* I must not, dare not see her.

*Isab.* Nor my husband,

For twenty thousand pound.

*Bart.* That I were a cat now,

Or anything could run into a bench-hole !

Saint Anthony's fire upon the rogue has brought her !

Where shall I be ?—Just in the nick o' th' matter !

When I had her at my mercy !—Think, for Heaven's sake !

My wife ? All the wild furies hell has—

*Pen.* Up the chimney !

*Bart.* They'll smoke me out there presently.

*Isab.* There, there, it must be there, We are all undone else ; it must be up the chimney.

*Bart.* Give me a ladder.

*Isab.* You must use your art, sir ;

Alas, we have no ladders.

*Bart.* Pox o' thy husband !

Does he never mend his house ?

*Pen.* No, nor himself neither.

Up nimbly, sir, up nimbly !

*Bart.* Thou know'st I am fat,

Thou merciless lean rogue.

*Pen.* Will you be kill'd ?

For if he take you—

*Bart.* Lend me thy shoulder.

[Creeps up the chimney.

*Pen.* Soft, sir !

You'll tread my shoulder-bones into my sides else.

Have you fast hold o' th' bars ?

*Bart.* A vengeance bar 'em !

*Isab.* Patience, good captain, patience ; quickly, quickly !

*Bart.* Do you think I am made of smoke ?

*Pen.* Now he talks of smoke,

What if my master should call for fire ?

*Bart.* Will you martyr me ?

*Isab.* He must needs have it.

*Bart.* Will you make me bacon ?

*Isab.* We'll do the best we can.—Are all things

*Pen.* All, all ; I have 'em all. [ready ?

*Isab.* Go let 'em in then. [Exit PENURIO.

Not a word now on your life !

*Bart.* I hang like a meteor.

*Enter LOPEZ and RODRIGUEZ.*

*Lopez.* You are welcome, lady.

*Rod.* You are too, too courteous ;

But I shall make amends. Fair Isabella—

*Isab.* Welcome, my worthy friend, most kindly welcome !

*Rod.* I hear on't, and I'll fit him for his foolery.

*Lopez.* Some sweet-meats, wife ; some sweet-meats presently !

*Bart.* Oh, my sour sauce !

*Lopez.* Away quick, Isabella. [Exit ISABELLA.

Did you hear him ?

*Rod.* Yes, yes, perfectly ; proceed, sir.

*Lopez.* Speak loud enough.—Dare you at length but pity me ?

*Rod.* 'Faith, sir, you have used so many reasons And those so powerfully— [to me,

*Lopez.* Keep this kiss for me.

*Bart.* And do I stand and hear this ?

*Rod.* This for me, sir.

This is some comfort now : Alas, my husband—

But why do I think of so poor a fellow,

So wretched, so debosh'd ?

*Bart.* That's I : I am bound to hear it.

*Rod.* I dare not lie with him, he is so rank a whore-master—

*Lopez.* And that's a dangerous point.

*Rod.* Upon my conscience, sir,

He would stick a thousand base diseases on me.

*Bart.* And now must I say nothing !

*Lopez.* I am sound, lady.

*Rod.* That's it that makes me love you.

*Lopez.* Let's kiss again then !

*Rod.* Do, do !

*Bart.* Do ? the devil

And the grand pox do with you !

*Lopez.* Do you hear him ? well—

*Enter PENURIO and ISABELLA.*

Now, what's the news with you?

*Pen.* The sound of war, sir,  
Comes still along: The duke will charge the city;  
We have lost, they say.

*Lopez.* What shall become of me, then,  
And my poor wealth?

*Bart.* Even hang'd, I hope.

*Rod.* Remove your jewels presently and what  
You have of wealth, into the citadel;  
There all's secure.

*Lopez.* I humbly thank you, lady.—  
Penurio, get me some can climb the chimney,  
For there my jewels are, my best, my richest;  
I hid 'em, fearing such a blow.

*Pen.* Most happily

I have two boys that used to sweep fouled chimnies;  
Truly I brought 'em, sir, to mock your worship,  
For the great fires you keep, and the full diet.

*Lopez.* I forgive thee, knave. Where are they?

*Pen.* Here, sir, here.

*Enter two Boys.*

Monsieur Black, will your small worship mount?

*1 Boy.* Madam, è be com to creep up into your  
chimney, and make you

Cleane as any lady in de world: Ma litla, litla  
frera, and è.

Chanta, frere, chanta. [*Boy sings.*]

*Pen.* Come, monsieur, mountè, mountè! mount,  
Monsieur Mustard-pot! [*Boy sings.*]

*1 Boy.* Monsieur, è have dis for vostra barba,  
ple ta vou, monsieur.

*Pen.* Mountè, monsieur, mountè; dere be some  
fine tings—

*1 Boy.* Me will creep like de ferret, monsieur.

[*Creeps up.*]

*Pen.* Dere in de chimney.

[*The Boy above singing.*]

*1 Boy.* Here be de sheilde due shanson, madam.

[*Boy goes in behind the arras.*]

*Pen.* There's a bird's nest; I would have you  
climb it, monsieur:

Up, my fine singing monsieur. That's a fine

*Lopez.* Watch him, he do not steal. [*monsieur!*]

*Pen.* I warrant you, sir.

*Lopez.* These boys are knavish.

*Pen.* I'll look to him tithly.

*Boy.* [*Within.*] Madam, here be de rat, de rat,  
madam!

*Enter BARTELLO, with the Boy singing on his shoulder.*

*Lopez.* Lord! what comes here?

A walking apparition?

*Isab.* Saint Christopher!

*Rod.* Mercy o' me, what is it?

How like my husband it looks!

*Bart.* Get you down, devil;

I'll break your neck else. Was ever man thus  
chinnied?

*Lopez.* Go, pay the boys well; see them satisfied.

*Pen.* Come, Monsieur Devils; come, my black-  
!l butter you o' both sides, [*berries!*]

*Boy.* Adieu, madame! adieu, madame!

[*Exit PENURIO and Boys.*]

*Isab.* Nay, even look, sir, Are you cool'd now,  
captain?

*Bart.* I am cuckolded, and fool'd to boot too!

Fool'd fearfully, fool'd shamefully.

*Lopez.* You are welcome, sir.

I am glad I have anything within these doors, sir,  
To make you merry. You love my wife, I thank  
You have shew'd your love. [*you;*]

*Bart.* Wife, am I this? this odd matter,  
This monstrous thing?

*Rod.* You ought, but yet you are not:  
I have been bold with you, sir, but yet not basely;  
As I have faith, I have not.

*Lopez.* Sir, believe it.

'Twas all meant but to make you feel your tres-  
pass:

We knew your hour, and all this fashion'd for it.

*Bart.* Were you o' th' plot too?

*Isab.* Yes, by my troth, sweet captain.

*Bart.* You will forgive me, wife?

*Rod.* You will deserve it?

*Bart.* Put that to th' venture.

*Rod.* Thus am I friends again then;

And, as you ne'er had gone astray, thus kiss you.

*Bart.* And I'll kiss you; and you, too, ask  
forgiveness.

Kiss my wife, Lopez: 'tis but in jest, remember.

And now, all friends together to my castle,

Where we'll all dine, and there discourse these  
stories;

And let him be chimney-swept, in's lust that glories!  
[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Country.*

*Enter SILVIO and BELVIDERE severally.*

*Sil.* Hail, reverend dame! Heaven wait upon  
thy studies!

*Bel.* You are well met, son. What, is the battle  
*Sil.* Mother, 'tis done. [*ended?*]

*Bel.* How has thy honour prosper'd?

*Sil.* The duchess has the day; Sienna's prisoner;  
Arm'd with thy powerful art, this arm dismounted  
him,

Received him then on foot, and in fair valour  
Forced him mine own: This jewel I took from him,  
(It hung upon his casque) the victor's triumph;  
And to the duchess now a prisoner

I have rendered him! come off again unknown,  
mother.

*Bel.* 'Tis well done: Let me see the jewel, son!

'Tis a rich one, curious set,

Fit a prince's burgonet.

This rich token late was sent

By the duchess, with intent

The marriage next day to begin.

Dost thou know what's hid within?

[*Opens the jewel.*]

Wipe thine eyes, and then come near;

See the beauteous Belvidere!

Now behold it.

*Sil.* Oh, my saint!

*Bel.* Wear it nobly; do not faint.

*Sil.* How blest am I in this rich spoil, this pic-  
For ever will I keep it here, here, mother, [*ture!*]  
For ever honour it: How oft, how chastely  
Have I embraced the life of this, and kiss'd it!

*Bel.* The day draws on that thou must home  
return,

And make thy answer to the duchess' question;  
I know it troubles thee: for if thou fail in't—

*Sil.* Oh, I must die!

*Bel.* Fear not, fear not; I'll be nigh!

Cast thy trouble on my back!

Art nor cunning shall not lack,

To preserve thee, still to keep  
 What thy envious foemen seek.  
 Go boldly home, and let thy mind  
 No distrustful crosses find !  
 All shall happen for the best ;  
 Souls walk through sorrows that are blest.  
*Sil.* Then I go confident.  
*Bel.* But, first, my son,  
 A thankful service must be done :  
 The good old woman for her pain,  
 When every thing stands fair again,  
 Must ask a poor boon, and that granting,  
 There's nothing to thy journey wanting.  
*Sel.* Except the trial of my soul to mischief,

And, as I am a knight, and love mine honour,  
 I grant it, whatsoever—  
*Bel.* Thy pure soul  
 Shall never sink for me, nor howl.  
*Sil.* Then anything.  
*Bel.* When I shall ask, remember !  
*Sil.* If I forget, Heaven's goodness forget  
 me !  
*Bel.* On thy journey then awhile !  
 To the next cross-way and stile  
 I'll conduct thee ; keep thee true,  
 To thy mistress and thy vow,  
 And, let all their envies fall !  
 I'll be with thee, and quench all. [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—FLORENCE. *A Room in the Palace.**Enter DUCHESS, Duke of SIENNA prisoner, and Lords.*

*Duke.* Lady, the stubborn war's more mild than  
 you are.

That allows ransom, and, the prisoner taken—

*Duch.* We must not be too hasty : Remember,  
 The wrong and violence you have offer'd us ; [sir,  
 Burnt up our frontier towns, made prey before you  
 Both of our beasts and corn ; slain our dear subjects ;  
 Open'd the fountain eyes of thousand widows,  
 That daily fling their curses on your fury :  
 What ordinary satisfaction can salve this ?  
 What hasty-thought-on ransom give a remedy ?  
 You must excuse us yet ; we'll take more counsel :  
 In the mean time, not as a prisoner,  
 But as a noble prince, we entertain you.

*Duke.* I am at your mercy, lady ; 'tis my fortune,  
 My stubborn fate ! the day is yours, you have me ;  
 The valour of one single man has cross'd me,  
 Cross'd me and all my hope ; for when the battles  
 Were at the hottest game of all their furies,  
 (And conquest ready then to crown me victor)  
 One single man broke in, one sword, one virtue,  
 (And by his great example thousands follow'd)  
 Oh, how I shame to think on't ! how it shakes me !  
 Nor could our strongest head then stop his fury,  
 But, like a tempest, bore the field before him,  
 Till he arrived at me ; with me he buckled ;  
 A while I held him play ; at length his violence  
 Beat me from my saddle, then on foot pursued me,  
 There triumph'd once again, then took me prisoner :  
 When I was gone, a fear possess'd my people.

*Duch.* One single arm, in a just cause, Heaven  
 prospers.—

Is not this stranger-knight as yet discover'd,  
 That we may give his virtue a due honour ?

*Lord.* Not yet, that we hear, madam ; but to  
 that purpose

Two days ago we publish'd proclamations.

*Enter SOTO with a Trumpet, and SILVIO.*

*Soto.* Oh, dainty Duchess, here I bring that  
 knight

Before thy fragrant face, that warlike wight,  
 He that Sienna's duke, and all his louts,  
 Beat (as the proverb seemly says) to clouts ;  
 He that unhorsed the man of fame to boot,  
 And bootless taught his grace to walk a-foot ;  
 He that your writings, pack'd to every pillar,  
 Promised promotion to, and store of siller ;

That very man I set before thy grace,  
 And once again pronounce, this man it was.

*Duch.* A pretty foolish squire ! what must the  
 knight be ?

*Duke.* Some juggler, or some madman.

*Sil.* I was not so,

When thy faint troops in flocks I beat before me ;  
 When, through the thickest of thy warlike horse,  
 I shot myself even to thy standard, Duke,  
 And there found thee, there singled thee, there  
 shew'd thee

The temper of my sword. 'Tis true, thou stood'st  
 And, like a noble soldier, bidst me welcome ; [me,  
 And this I'll say, more honour in that arm  
 I found and tried, than all thy army carried ;  
 What follows, thy imprisonment can tell thee.

*Duke.* His fair relation carries truth and virtue ;  
 And by those arms I see, (for such were his,  
 So old, so rusty) this may be he that forced me.

*Sil.* Do you know this jewel ? from your casque  
 I rent it,

Even as I closed, and forced you from your saddle :  
 Do you now remember me ?

*Duke.* This is the valour,

Madam ; for certain he ; it must be he ;

That day I wore this jewel : You remember it ?

*Duch.* Yes, very well : Not long before, I sent it.

*Duke.* That day I lost this jewel, in fight I lost it ;  
 I felt his strokes, and felt him take it from me ;  
 I wore it in my casque. Take it again, sir ;  
 You won it nobly, 'tis the prize of honour.

*Soto.* My father and myself are made for ever !

*Duch.* Kneel down, brave sir. Thus, my knight  
 first I raise you ;—

Gird on a sword—next, general of my army ;—

Give him a staff—last, one in counsel near me.

Now, make us happy with your sight.—How !

Silvio ? [SILVIO discovers himself.

Have I on thee bestow'd this love, this honour ?

The reasons thou hast wrought set off with favours ?

Unarm him presently !—Oh, thou foul traitor,

Traitor to me, mine honour, and my country,

Thou kindler of these wars— [They seize him.

*Sil.* Mistake not, madam !

*Duch.* Away with him to prison,

See him safe kept.—The law shall shortly, sirrah,

Find fitter titles for you than I gave you.

*Soto.* This is the youth that kill'd me ; I'll be  
 quit with him.

What a blind rogue was I, I could never know him !

An't please your grace, I claim the benefit

Of the proclamation that proclaim'd him traitor ;  
I brought him in.

*Duch.* Thou shalt have thy reward for't.  
*Solo.* Let him be hang'd or drown'd then.

*Duch.* Away with him !

*Sil.* Madam, I crave your promise first ; you are  
You have pass'd your princely word. [tied to it,

*Duch.* Prove it, and take it.

*Sil.* This is the day appointed,  
Appointed by your grace, for my appearance,  
To answer to the question.

*Duch.* I remember it.

*Sil.* I claim it then.

*Duch.* If you perform it not,  
The penalty you claim too.

*Sil.* I not repent it.  
If I absolve the words—

*Duch.* Your life is free then,  
You have drawn a speedy course above my wishes,  
To my revenge : Be sure you hit it right,  
Or I'll be sure you shall not 'scape the danger.

*Sil.* My rest is up now, madam.

*Duch.* Then play it cunningly.

*Sil.* Now, where's the hag ? where now are all  
her promises

She would be with me, strengthen me, inform me ?  
My death will now be double death, ridiculous.  
She was wont still to be near, to feel my miseries,  
And with her art—I see her no where now !  
What have I undertaken ? Now she fails me ;  
No comfort now I find ; how my soul staggers !  
Till this hour never fear nor doubt possess'd me :  
She cannot come, she will not come, she has  
fool'd me ;

Sure she's the devil, has drawn me on to ruin,  
And now to death bequeaths me in my danger !

*Duke.* He stands distracted, and his colour  
changes.

*Duch.* I have given him that will make his blood  
Shortly his life. [forsake him,

*Duke.* His hands and contemplation  
Have motion still ; the rest is earth already.

*Duch.* Come, will you speak, or pray ? Your  
time grows out, sir.—

How every where he looks ! He's at last cast.

*Enter BELVIDERE, disguised, who secretly gives him a  
Paper, and exit.*

*Duke.* His colour comes again fresh.

*Duch.* 'Tis a flash, sir,  
Before the flame burns out.—Can you yet answer ?

*Sil.* Yes, madam, now I can.

*Duch.* I fear you'll fail in't.

*Sil.* And do not think my silence a presage,  
Or omen to my end ; you shall not find it ;  
I am bred a soldier, not an orator.

Madam, peruse this scroll ; let that speak for me,  
And, as you are royal, wrong not the construction !

*Duch.* By Heaven, you shall have fair play !

*Sil.* I shall look for't. [Reads.

## QUESTION.

Tell me what is that only thing,  
For which all women long ;  
Yet having what they most desire,  
To have it does them wrong ?

## ANSWER.

'Tis not to be chaste, nor fair,  
(Such gifts malice may impair)  
Richly trimm'd, to walk or ride,  
Or to wanton unespied ;

To preserve an honest name,  
And so to give it up to fame ;  
These are toys. In good or ill,  
They desire to have their will :  
Yet, when they have it, they abuse it,  
For they know not how to use it.

*Duch.* You have answer'd right, and gain'd your  
life ; I give it.

*Sil.* Oh, happy hag !—But, my most gracious  
madam,

Your promise tied a nobler favour to me.

*Duch.* 'Tis true ; my daughter too.

*Sil.* I hope you'll keep it.

*Duch.* 'Tis not in my power now ; she is long  
since wander'd,

Stol'n from the court and me ; and what I have not  
I cannot give. No man can tell me of her,  
Nor no search find her out ; and if not Silvio,  
Which strongly I believe—

*Sil.* Mock me not, lady !  
For, as I am a servant to her virtue,  
Since my first hour of exile, I ne'er saw her !

*Lord.* That she is gone, 'tis too, too true, and  
Our last hope was in you. [lamentable :

*Sil.* What do I hear then,  
And wherefore have I life bestow'd and honour ?  
To what end do I walk, for men to wonder at,  
And fight, and fool ! Pray you take your honours  
from me,

(My sorrows are not fit companions for 'em)  
And, when you please, my life.—Art thou gone,  
mistress ?

And wander'd at Heaven knows where ? This vow  
I make thee,  
That till I find thee out, and see those fair eyes,  
Those eyes that shed their lights and life into me,  
Never to know a friend, to seek a kindred,  
To rest where pleasure dwells, and painted glory ;  
But through the world, the wide world, thus to  
wander,

The wretched world, alone, no comfort with me ;  
But the mere meditations of thy goodness !  
Honour and greatness, thus adieu !

*Enter BELVIDERE, disguised as before.*

*Bel.* Stay, Silvio !

And, lady, sit again ! I come for justice.

*Sil.* What would she now ?

*Bel.* To claim thy promise, Silvio ;  
The boon thou swor'st to give me.

*Duke.* What may this be ?

A woman or a devil ?

*Duch.* 'Tis a witch, sure ;

And by her means he came to untwist this riddle.

*Sil.* That I am bound to her for my life, mine  
honour,

And many other thousand ways for comfort,  
I here confess ; confess a promise too,  
That what she would ask me to requite these  
favours,

Within the endeavour of my life to grant,  
I would ; and here I stand, my word's full master.

*Bel.* I wish no more !—Great lady, witness  
with me ;

The boon I crave for all my service to thee,  
Is now to be thy wife, to grant me marriage.

*Sil.* How ! for to marry thee ? Ask again,  
woman ;—

Thou wiltful woman, ask again !

*Bel.* No more, sir.

*Sil.* Ask land, and life !

*Bel.* I ask thee, for a husband.

*Solo.* Marry her, and beat her into gunpowder ; She would make rare crackers.

*Sil.* Ask a better fortune ;  
Thou art too old to marry ; I a soldier,  
And always married to my sword.

*Bel.* Thy word, fool !  
Break that, and I'll break all thy fortunes yet !

*Duch.* He shall not ;  
I am witness to his faith, and I'll compel it.

*Duke.* 'Tis fit you hold your word, sir.

*Sil.* Oh, most wretched !

*Duch.* This was a fortune now beyond my wishes ;

For now my daughter's free, if e'er I find her.

*Duke.* But not from me.

*Duch.* You are sharer in this happiness.

Myself will wait upon this marriage,  
And do the old woman all the honour possible.

*Duke.* I'll lead the knight ; and what there  
wants in dalliance,  
We'll take it out in drink.

*Sil.* Oh, wretched Silvio ! [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Room in the House of LOPEZ.

*Enter LOPEZ and ISABELLA.*

*Lopez.* Hast thou sent for him ?

*Isab.* Yes.

*Lopez.* A young man, say'st thou ?

*Isab.* Yes, very young, and very amorous.

*Lopez.* And handsome ?

*Isab.* As the town affords.

*Lopez.* And dar'st thou

Be so far good, and mistress of thine honour,  
To slight these ?

*Isab.* For my husband's sake, to curse 'em :  
And, since you have made me mistress of my  
fortune,

Never to point at any joy, but husband.  
I could have cozen'd you ; but so much I love you,  
And now so much I weigh the estimation  
Of an unspotted wife—

*Lopez.* I dare believe thee ;  
And never more shall doubt torment my spirit.

*Enter PENURIO, drunk.*

*Isab.* How now, Penurio ?

*Pen.* The thing is coming, mistress.

*Lopez.* I'll take my standing.

*Pen.* Do, and I'll take mine.

*Isab.* Where didst thou leave him ?

*Pen.* I left him in a cellar,  
Where he has paid me tightly, paid me home,  
mistress ;

We had an hundred and fifty healths to you, sweet  
mistress,

And threescore and ten damnations to my master.

Mistress, shall I speak a foolish word to you ?

*Isab.* What's that, Penurio ?—

The fellow's drunk.

*Pen.* I would fain know your body.

*Isab.* How's that ? how's that, pr'ythee ?

*Pen.* I would know it carnally ;

I would conglutinate.

*Isab.* The reason, sirrah ?

*Pen.* Lobster, sweet mistress, lobster !

*Isab.* Thy master hears.

*Pen.* Lobster, sweet master, lobster !

*Isab.* Thou'rt the most precious rogue.

*Enter CLAUDIO.*

*Pen.* Most precious lobster !

*Isab.* Do you see who's here ? Go sleep, you  
drunken rascal !

*Pen.* Remember you refuse me, arm'd in lobster ! [Exit.

*Isab.* Oh, my lost Rugio ! welcome, welcome,  
welcome !

A thousand welcomes here I'll seal.

*Clau.* Pray you stay, lady :

Do you love me ever at this rate ? or is the fit now,  
By reason of some wrong done by your husband,  
More fervent on you ?

*Isab.* Can I chuse but love thee ?

Thou art my martyr ; thou hast suffered for me,  
My sweet, sweet Rugio !

*Clau.* Do you do this seriously ?

'Tis true, I would be entertain'd thus.

*Isab.* These are nothing,  
No kisses, no embraces, no endearments,  
To those—

*Clau.* Do what you will.

*Isab.* Those that shall follow,  
Those I will crown our love withal. Why sigh you ?  
Why look you sad, my dear one ?

*Clau.* Nay, 'faith, nothing ;  
But methinks so sweet a beauty as yours shews  
to me,

And such an innocence as you may make it,  
Should hold a longer siege.

*Isab.* Ha ! you speak truth, sir.

*Clau.* I would not have it so.

*Isab.* And now methinks,  
Now I consider truly what becomes me,  
I have been cozen'd, fearfully abused,  
My reason blinded—

*Clau.* Nay, I did but jest with you.

*Isab.* I'll take you at your word, and thank you  
for't, sir ;

And now, I see no sweetness in that person,  
Nothing to stir me to abuse a husband,  
To ruin my fair fame—

*Clau.* Good Isabella !

*Isab.* No handsome man, no anything to dote  
on ;

No face, no tongue to catch me ? poor at all points,  
And I an ass !

*Clau.* Why do you wrong me, lady ?

If I were thus, and had no youth upon me ;

My service of so mean a way to win you ;

(Which you yourself are conscious must deserve  
you,

If you had thrice the beauty you possess, must  
reach you)

If in my tongue your fame lay wreck'd, and ruin'd  
With every cup I drink ; if in opinion

I were a lost, defamed man—But this is common,  
Where we love most, where most we stake our

fortunes,  
There least and basest we're rewarded ! Fare you  
well !

Know now, I hate you too as much, contemn you,  
And weigh my credit at as high a value—

*Isab.* May be I did but jest.

*Clau.* You are a woman ;

And now I see your wants, and mine own follies,  
And task myself with indiscretion,

For doting on a face so poor !

*Isab.* Say you so, sir ? [Aside.

I must not lose my end.—I did but jest with you,

Only fool'd thus to try your faith : My Rugio,  
Do you think I could forget ?

*Clau.* Nay, 'tis no matter.

*Isab.* Is't possible I should forsake a constancy,  
So strong, so good, so sweet ?

*Clau.* A subtle woman !

*Isab.* You shall forgive me ; 'twas a trick to try  
And, were I sure you loved me—— [you :

*Clau.* Do you doubt now ?

*Isab.* I do not doubt ; but he that would profess  
this,

And bear that full affection you make show of,  
Should do——

*Clau.* What should I do ?

*Isab.* I cannot shew you.

*Clau.* [Apart.] I'll try thee, damned'st devil !—  
Hark ye, lady !

No man shall dare do more, no service top me ;  
I'll marry you.

*Isab.* How, sir ?

*Clau.* Your husband's sentenced,

And he shall die——

*Isab.* Die ?

*Clau.* Die for ever to you ;

The danger is mine own.

*Isab.* Die, did you tell me ?

*Clau.* He shall die ; I have cast the way.

*Isab.* Oh, foul man,

Malicious, bloody man !

*Enter Lopez.*

*Lopez.* When shall he die, sir ?

By whom, and how ?

*Clau.* Hast thou betray'd me, woman ?

*Isab.* Base man, thou wouldst have ruin'd me,  
my name too,

And, like a toad, poison'd my virtuous memory !  
Further than all this, dost thou see this friend here,  
This only friend ?—Shame take thy lust and thee,  
And shake thy soul !—His life, the life I love thus,  
My life in him, my only life, thou aim'st at !

*Clau.* Am I catch'd thus ?

*Lopez.* The law shall catch you better.

*Isab.* You make a trade of betraying women's  
honours,

And think it noble in you to be lustful !

Report of me hereafter——

*Clau.* Fool'd thus finely ?

*Lopez.* I must entreat you walk, sir, to the jus-  
Where, if he'll bid you kill me—— [tice ;

*Clau.* Pray stay a while, sir ;

I must use a player's shift—[Throws off his dis-  
guise.]—Do you know me now, lady ?

*Lopez.* Your brother Claudio, sure !

*Isab.* Oh me, 'tis he, sir !—

Oh, my best brother !

*Clau.* My best sister now too !

I have tried you, found you so : and now I love  
Love you so truly, nobly—— [you,

*Lopez.* Sir, I thank you ;

You have made me a most happy man.

*Clau.* Thank her, sir ;

And from this hour preserve that happiness ;

Be no more fool'd with jealousy !

*Lopez.* I have lost it ;

And take me now, new-born again, new-natured !

*Isab.* I do ; and to that promise tie this faith,  
Never to have a false thought tempt my virtue.

*Lopez.* Enough, enough ! I must desire your  
presence ;

My cousin Rodope has sent in all haste for us :  
I am sure you will be welcome.

*Clau.* I'll wait on you.

*Lopez.* What the project is——

*Isab.* We shall know when we are there, sir.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter DUCHESS, SIENNA, Lords, and SILVIO.*

*Duch.* Joy to you, Silvio, and your young fair  
bride !

You have stol'n a day upon us ; you cannot woo,  
sir !

*Sil.* The joys of hell hang over me ; Oh, mis-  
chief !

To what a fortune has the devil driven me !  
Am I reserved for this ?

*Duke.* Beshrew me, sir,

But you have gotten you a right fair bedfellow ;  
Let you alone to chuse !

*Sil.* I beseech your grace——

'Tis misery enough to have met the devil,  
Not men's reproaches too.

*Duke.* How old is she ?

*Duch.* A very girl ; her eye delivers it.

*Duke.* Her teeth are scarce come yet.

*Lord.* What goodly children

Will they two have now ! She is rarely made to  
What a sweet-timber'd body ! [breed on ;

*Duch.* Knotty i' th' back ;

But will hold out the stronger. What a nose !

*Duke.* Ay, marry, such a nose, so rarely mounted !  
Upon my conscience, 'twas the part he doted on.

*Duch.* And that fine little eye to it, like an ele-  
phant's !

*Lord.* Yes, if her feet were round, and her ears

*Duke.* For any thing we know—— [sachels—

*Sil.* Have ye no mercy ?

No pity in your bloods, to use a wretch thus ?

You princes, in whose hearts the best compassions,  
Nearest to those in Heaven, should find fit places,  
Why do you mock at misery ? fling scorns and  
baseness

Upon his broken back, that sinks with sorrows ?  
Heaven may reward you too ; and an hour come,  
When all your great designs shall shew ridiculous,  
And your hearts pinch'd like mine——

*Duch.* Fy, sir ! so angry

Upon your wedding-day ? go smug yourself ;

The maid will come anon. What music's this ?

[Music in divers places.]

*Duke.* I warrant you some noble preparation.

*Duch.* Let's take our places then.

*Sil.* More of these devil's dumps ?

Must I be ever haunted with these witchcrafts ?

*Enter two Presenters ; then a Masquerade of several  
shapes, and dances ; among the Masquers BARTOLLO,  
LOPEZ, CLAUDIO, ISABELLA, RODOPE, SOTO, PENURIO,  
and JAQUENET.*

1 *Pre.* Room, room for merry spirits, room !

Hither on command we come ;  
From the good old beldam sent,  
Cares and sorrows to prevent.

2 *Pre.* Look up, Silvio, smile, and sing !

After winter comes a spring.

1 *Pre.* Fear not, faint fool, what may follow ;

Eyes, that now are sunk and hollow,

By her art may quick return ;

To their flames again, and burn.

2 *Pre.* Art commands all youth and blood ;  
Strength and beauty it makes good.

1 *Pre.* Fear not then, despair not, sing,  
Round about as we do spring ;  
Cares and sorrows cast away !  
This is the old wife's holiday.

[Dance here, then enter BELVIDERE in her proper figure,  
and disperses the masquers.

*Duch.* Who's this ?

*Duke.* The shape of Belvidere !

*Bel.* Now, Silvio,

How dost thou like me now ?

*Sil.* Thus I kneel to thee.

*Bel.* Stand up, and come no nearer ; mark me,  
well too :

For if thou troublest me, I vanish instantly :

Now chuse wisely, or chuse never,  
One thou must enjoy for ever !  
Dost thou love me thus ?

*Sil.* Most dearly.

*Bel.* Take heed, fool ! it concerns thee nearly.

If thou wilt have me young and bright,  
Pleasing to thine eye and sight,  
Courtly, and admired of all,  
Take heed, lest thy fame do fall !

I shall then be full of scorn,  
Wanton, proud, (beware the horn !)  
Hating what I loved before,

Flattery apt to fall before,  
All consuming, nothing getting ;  
Thus thy fair name comes to setting !  
But if old, and free from these,  
Thou shalt chuse me, I shall please ;  
I shall then maintain thee still,  
With my virtue and my skill,  
Still increase and build thy name ;  
Chuse now, Silvio, here I am.

*Sil.* I know not what to say, which way to turn  
Into thy sovereign will I put my answer. [me ;

*Bel.* I thank you, sir, and my will thus rewards  
you ;

Take your old love, your best, your dearest, Silvio !  
No more spells now, nor further shapes to alter me ;  
I am thy Belvidere indeed.—Dear mother,  
There is no altering this, Heaven's hand is with it ;  
And now you ought to give me ; he has fairly won

*Sil.* But why that hag ? [me.

*Bel.* In that shape most secure still,  
I follow'd all your fortunes, served, and counsell'd  
you.

I met you at the farmer's first, a country wench ;  
Where, fearing to be known, I took that habit,  
And, to make you laughing-sport at this mad mar-  
riage,

By secret aid of my friend Rodope,  
We got this masque.

*Sil.* And I am sure I have you ?

*Bel.* For ever now, for ever.

*Duch.* You see it must be ;

The wheel of Destiny hath turn'd it round so.

*Duke.* It must, it is ; and curs'd be he that  
breaks it !

*Duch.* I'll put a choice to you, sir : You are my  
prisoner—

*Duke.* I am so, and I must be so, till it please  
you—

*Duch.* Chuse one of these ; either to pay a ran-  
som

At what rate I shall set it, (which shall be high  
enough)

And so return a free-man, and a bachelor ;

Or give me leave to give you a fit wife,  
In honour every way your grace's equal,  
And so your ransom's paid.

*Duke.* You say most nobly !

Silvio's example's mine ; pray chuse you for me.

*Duch.* I thank you, sir ! I have got the mast'ry  
too :

And here I give your grace a husband's freedom.

Give me your hand, my husband !

*Duke.* You much honour me ;

And I shall ever serve you for this favour.

*Bart.* Come, Lopez, let us give our wives the  
breeches too !

For they will have 'em.

*Lopez.* Whilst they rule with virtue,

I'll give 'em skin and all.

*Isab.* We'll scratch it off else.

*Sil.* [Turning to CLAUDIO.] I am glad you live ;  
more glad you live to honour ;

And from this hour a stronger love dwell with us !  
Pray you take your man again.

*Clau.* He knows my house, sir.

*Duch.* 'Tis sin to keep you longer from your  
loves :

We'll lead the way. And you, young men, that  
know not

How to preserve a wife, and keep her fair,

Give 'em their sovereign wills, and pleas'd they  
are.

[Exeunt.]

# THE WOMAN'S PRIZE;

OR

## THE TAMER TAMED.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

MOROSO, an old rich doating Citizen, suitor to LIVIA.  
SOPROCLESE, } two Gentlemen, friends to PETRUCHIO.  
TRANIO, }  
PETRUCHIO, an Italian Gentleman, husband to MARIA.  
ROWLAND, a young Gentleman, in love with LIVIA.  
PETRONIUS, Father to MARIA and LIVIA.  
JAQUES, } two witty Servants to PETRUCHIO.  
PEDRO, }  
Doctor.

Apothecary.  
Watchmen.  
Porters.

MARIA, a chaste witty Lady, } the two masculine Daugh-  
LIVIA, Mistress to ROWLAND, } ters of PETRONIUS.  
BIANCA, their Cousin, and Commander-in-chief.  
City Wives, } who come to the relief of the Ladies, of  
Country Wives, } which two were drunk.  
Maids.

SCENE,— LONDON.

### PROLOGUE.

LADIES, to you, in whose defence and right  
Fletcher's brave muse prepared herself to fight  
A battle without blood, ('twas well fought too ;  
The victory's yours, though got with much ado,)  
We do present this Comedy ; in which  
A rivulet of pure wit flows, strong and rich  
In fancy, language, and all parts that may  
Add grace and ornament to a merry play :  
Which this may prove ! Yet not to go too far  
In promises from this our female war,

We do entreat the angry men would not  
Expect the mazes of a subtle plot,  
Set speeches, high expressions, and, what's worse  
In a true Comedy, politic discourse.  
The end we aim at, is to make you sport ;  
Yet neither gall the city nor the court.  
Hear, and observe his comic strain, and when  
Ye are sick of melancholy, see't again.  
'Tis no dear physic, since 'twill quit the cost,  
Or his intentions, with our pains, are lost.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—A Hall in the House of PETRUCHIO.

Enter MOROSO, SOPROCLESE, and TRANIO, with Rosemary,  
as from a wedding.

Mor. God give 'em joy !

Tra. Amen !

Soph. Amen, say I too !

The pudding's now i' the proof. Alas, poor wench,  
Through what a mine of patience must thou work,  
Ere thou know'st good hour more !

Tra. 'Tis too true : Certain,  
Methinks her father has dealt harshly with her,  
Exceeding harshly, and not like a father,  
To match her to this dragon : I protest  
I pity the poor gentlewoman.

Mor. Methinks now,  
He's not so terrible as people think him.

Soph. [To TRANIO.] This old thief flatters, out  
of mere devotion,

To please the father for his second daughter.

Tra. But shall he have her ?

Soph. Yes, when I have Rome ;

And yet the father's for him.

Mor. I'll assure you,

I hold him a good man.

Soph. Yes, sure, a wealthy ;

But whether a good woman's man is doubtful.

Tra. 'Would 'twere no worse !

Mor. What though his other wife,  
Out of her most abundant soberness,  
Out of her daily hue and cries upon him,  
(For sure she was a rebel) turn'd his temper,  
And forced him blow as high as she ; does't  
follow

He must retain that long-since-buried tempest,  
To this soft maid ?

*Soph.* I fear it.

*Tra.* So do I too ;  
And so far, that if God had made me woman,  
And his wife that must be—

*Mor.* What would you do, sir ?

*Tra.* I would learn to eat coals with an angry cat,  
And spit fire at him ; I would, to prevent him,  
Do all the ramping roaring tricks, a whore  
Being drunk, and tumbling ripe, would tremble at :  
There is no safety else, nor moral wisdom,  
To be a wife, and his.

*Soph.* So I should think too.

*Tra.* For yet the bare remembrance of his first  
wife

(I tell you on my knowledge, and a truth too)  
Will make him start in's sleep, and very often  
Cry out for cudgels, colestaves, any thing ;  
Hiding his breeches, out of fear her ghost  
Should walk, and wear 'em yet. Since his first  
He is no more the still Petruccio, [marriage,  
Than I am Babylon.

*Soph.* He's a good fellow,  
And on my word I love him ; but to think  
A fit match for this tender soul—

*Tra.* His very frown, if she but say her prayers  
Louder than men talk treason, makes him tinder ;  
The motion of a dial, when he's testy,  
Is the same trouble to him as a water-work ;  
She must do nothing of herself, not eat,  
Drink, say, " Sir, how do you ? " make her ready,  
Unless he bid her. [unready,

*Soph.* He will bury her,  
Ten pounds to twenty shillings, within these three

*Tra.* I'll be your half. [weeks.

*Enter JAQUES, with a pot of wine.*

*Mor.* He loves her most extremely,  
And so long 'twill be honey-moon.—Now, Jaques !  
You are a busy man, I am sure.

*Jaques.* Yes, certain ;  
This old sport must have eggs,—

*Soph.* Not yet this ten days.

*Jaques.* Sweet gentlemen, with muskadel.

*Tra.* That's right, sir.

*Mor.* This fellow broods his master.—Speed you,

*Soph.* We shall be for you presently. [Jaques !

*Jaques.* Your worships  
Shall have it rich and neat ; and, o' my conscience,  
As welcome as our Lady-day. Oh, my old sir,  
When shall we see your worship run at ring ?  
That hour, a standing were worth money.

*Mor.* So, sir !

*Jaques.* Upon my little honesty, your mistress,  
If I have any speculation,  
Must think this single thrumming of a fiddle,  
Without a bow, but even poor sport.

*Mor.* You're merry.

*Jaques.* 'Would I were wise too ! So, God bless  
your worship ! [Exit.

*Tra.* The fellow tells you true.

*Soph.* When is the day, man ?  
Come, come ; you'll steal a marriage.

*Mor.* Nay, believe me :  
But when her father pleases, I am ready,  
And all my friends shall know it.

*Tra.* Why not now ?

One charge had served for both.

*Mor.* There's reason in't.

*Soph.* Call'd Rowland.

*Mor.* Will you walk ?

They'll think we are lost : Come, gentlemen ! [Exit.

*Tra.* You have wiped him now.

*Soph.* So will he ne'er the wench, I hope.

*Tra.* I wish it. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the same.*

*Enter ROWLAND and LIVIA.*

*Rowl.* Now, Livia, if you'll go away to-night,  
If your affections be not made of words—

*Livia.* I love you, and you know how dearly,  
Rowland :

(Is there none near us ?) My affections ever  
Have been your servants ; with what superstition  
I have ever sainted you—

*Rowl.* Why, then take this way.

*Livia.* 'Twill be a childish, and a less prosperous  
course

Than his that knows not care ; why should we do  
Our honest and our hearty love such wrong,  
To over-run our fortunes ?

*Rowl.* Then you flatter !

*Livia.* Alas ! you know I cannot.

*Rowl.* What hope's left else

But flying, to enjoy ye ?

*Livia.* None, so far.

For let it be admitted, we have time,  
And all things now in other expectation,  
My father's bent against us ; what but ruin,  
Can such a bye-way bring us ? If your fears  
Would let you look with my eyes, I would shew you,  
And certain, how our staying here would win us  
A course, though somewhat longer, yet far surer.

*Rowl.* And then Moroso has ye.

*Livia.* No such matter :  
For hold this certain ; begging, stealing, whoring,  
Selling (which is a sin unpardonable)  
Of counterfeit cods, or musty English crocus,  
Switches, or stones for th' tooth-ach, sooner finds  
Than that drawn fox Moroso. [me,

*Rowl.* But his money ;  
If wealth may win you—

*Livia.* If a hog may be  
High-priest among the Jews ! His money, Rowland ?  
Oh, Love forgive me ! What faith hast thou !

Why, can his money kiss me—

*Rowl.* Yes.

*Livia.* Behind,  
Laced out upon a petticoat.—Or grasp me,  
While I cry, oh, good thank you ! (O my troth,  
Thou makest me merry with thy fear !) or lie with  
me

As you may do ? Alas, what fools you men are !  
His mouldy money ? Half a dozen riders,  
That cannot sit, but stamp fast to their saddles ?  
No, Rowland, no man shall make use of me ;  
My beauty was born free, and free I'll give it  
To him that loves, not buys me. You yet doubt

*Rowl.* I cannot say I doubt you. [me ?

*Livia.* Go thy ways ;  
Thou art the prettiest puling piece of passion—  
I' faith, I will not fall thee.

*Rowl.* I had rather—

*Livia.* Pr'ythee, believe me ! If I do not carry it,  
For both our goods—

*Rowl.* But—

*Livia.* What but ?

*Rowl.* I would tell you.

*Livia.* I know all you can tell me : All's but this ;  
You would have me, and lie with me : is't not so ?

*Rowl.* Yes.

*Livia.* Why, you shall ; will that content you ?

*Rowl.* I am very loth to go. [Go.]

*Enter BIANCA and MARIA conversing in the back-ground.*

*Livia.* Now, o' my conscience,  
Thou art an honest fellow ! Here's my sister !  
Go, pr'ythee go ! this kiss, and credit me,  
Ere I am three nights older, I am for thee :  
You shall hear what I do. Farewell !

*Rowl.* Farewell ! [Exit.]

*Livia.* Alas, poor fool, how it looks !  
It would even hang itself, should I but cross it.  
For pure love to the matter, I must hatch it.

*Bianca.* Nay, never look for merry hour, Maria,  
If now you make it not : Let not your blushes,  
Your modesty, and tenderness of spirit,  
Make you continual anvil to his anger !  
Believe me, since his first wife set him going,  
Nothing can bind his rage : Take your own council ;  
You shall not say that I persuaded you.  
But if you suffer him—

*Maria.* Stay ! shall I do it ?

*Bianca.* Have you a stomach to't ?

*Maria.* I never shew'd it.

*Bianca.* 'Twill shew the rarer and the stronger  
But do not say I urged you. [in you.]

*Maria.* I am perfect.

Like Curtius, to redeem my country, have I leap'd  
Into this gulph of marriage ; and I'll do it.  
Farewell, all poorer thoughts, but spite and anger,  
Till I have wrought a miracle !—Now, cousin,  
I am no more the gentle, tame Maria :  
Mistake me not ; I have a new soul in me,  
Made of a north-wind, nothing but tempest ;  
And, like a tempest, shall it make all ruins,  
Till I have run my will out !

*Bianca.* This is brave now,

If you continue it : But, your own will lead you !

*Maria.* Adieu, all tenderness ! I dare continue.  
Maids that are made of fears, and modest blushes,  
View me, and love example !

*Bianca.* Here's your sister.

*Maria.* Here's the brave old man's love—

*Bianca.* That loves the young man.

*Maria.* Ay, and hold thee there, wench ! What  
a grief of heart is't,

When Paphos' revels should up-rouse old Night,  
To sweat against a cork, to lie and tell  
The clock o' th' lungs, to rise sport-starved !

*Livia.* Dear sister,

Where have you been, you talk thus ?

*Maria.* Why at church, wench ;

Where I am tied to talk thus : I'm a wife now.

*Livia.* It seems so, and a modest !

*Maria.* You're an ass !

When thou art married once, thy modesty  
Will never buy thee pins.

*Livia.* 'Bless me !

*Maria.* From what ?

*Bianca.* From such a tame fool as our cousin

*Livia.* You are not mad ? [Livia !]

*Maria.* Yes, wench, and so must you be,  
Or none of our acquaintance, (mark me, Livia,)  
Or indeed fit for our sex. 'Tis bed-time :  
Pardon me, yellow Hymen, that I mean  
Thine offerings to protract, or to keep fasting  
My valiant bridegroom !

*Livia.* Whither will this woman ?

*Bianca.* You may perceive her end.

*Livia.* Or rather fear it.

*Maria.* Dare you be partner in't ?

*Livia.* Leave it, Maria !

(I fear I have mark'd too much) for goodness  
leave it !

Devest you with obedient hands ; to bed !

*Maria.* To bed ? No, Livia ; there are comets  
Prodigious over that yet ; there's a fellow [hang  
Must yet, before I know that heat—(ne'er start,  
Be made a man, for yet he is a monster ; [wench,)  
Here must his head be, Livia.

*Livia.* Never hope it :

'Tis as easy with a sieve to scoop the ocean, as  
To tame Petruchio.

*Maria.* Stay !—Lucina, hear me !  
Never unlock the treasure of my womb,  
For human fruit to make it capable ;  
Nor never with thy secret hand make brief  
A mother's labour to me ; if I do  
Give way unto my married husband's will,  
Or be a wife in anything but hopes,  
Till I have made him easy as a child,  
And tame as fear ! He shall not win a smile,  
Or a pleased look, from this austerity,  
Though it would pull another jointure from him,  
And make him ev'ry day another man.

And when I kiss him, till I have my will,  
May I be barren of delights, and know  
Only what pleasures are in dreams and guesses !

*Livia.* A strange exordium !

*Bianca.* All the several wrongs  
Done by imperious husbands to their wives  
These thousand years and upwards, strengthen  
Thou hast a brave cause. [thee !]

*Maria.* And I'll do it bravely,  
Or may I knit my life out ever after !

*Livia.* In what part of the world got she this  
Yet pray, Maria, look before you, truly ! [spirit ?  
Besides the disobedience of a wife,  
(Which you will find a heavy imputation,  
Which yet I cannot think your own) it shews  
So distant from your sweetness—

*Maria.* 'Tis, I swear.

*Livia.* Weigh but the person, and the hopes you  
To work this desperate cure ! [have

*Maria.* A weaker subject  
Would shame the end I aim at. Disobedience ?  
You talk too tamely : by the faith I have  
In mine own noble will, that childish woman  
That lives a prisoner to her husband's pleasure,  
Has lost her making, and becomes a beast,  
Created for his use, not fellowship !

*Livia.* His first wife said as much.

*Maria.* She was a fool,  
And took a scurvy course : Let her be named  
'Mongst those that wish for things, but dare not  
I have a new dance for him. [do 'em ;

*Livia.* Are you of this faith ?

*Bianca.* Yes, truly ; and will die in't.

*Livia.* Why then, let's all wear breeches !

*Maria.* Now thou comest near the nature of a  
woman :

Hang these tame-hearted eyasses, that no sooner  
See the lure out, and hear their husband's holla,  
But cry like kites upon 'em : The free haggard  
(Which is that woman that hath wing, and knows  
it,  
Spirit and plume) will make an hundred checks,

To shew her freedom, sail in every air,  
And look out every pleasure, not regarding  
Lure nor quarry till her pitch command  
What she desires ; making her founder'd keeper  
Be glad to fling out trains, and golden ones,  
To take her down again.

*Livia.* You're learned, sister ;  
Yet I say still, take heed !

*Maria.* A witty saying !  
I'll tell thee, *Livia* ; had this fellow tired  
As many wives as horses under him,  
With spurring of their patience ; had he got  
A patent, with an office to reclaim us,  
Confirm'd by parliament ; had he all the malice  
And subtily of devils, or of us,  
Or anything that's worse than both——

*Livia.* Hey, hey, boys ! this is excellent !

*Maria.* Or could he  
Cast his wives new again, like bells, to make 'em  
Sound to his will ; or had the fearful name  
Of the first breaker of wild women ; yet,  
Yet would I undertake this man, thus single ;  
And, spite of all the freedom he has reach'd to,  
Turn him and bend him as I list, and mould him  
Into a babe again, that aged women,  
Wanting both teeth and spleen, may master him.

*Bianca.* Thou wilt be chronicled.

*Maria.* That's all I aim at.

*Livia.* I must confess I do with all my heart  
Hate an imperious husband, and in time  
Might be so wrought upon——

*Bianca.* To make him cuckold ?

*Maria.* If he deserve it.

*Livia.* Then I'll leave ye, ladies.

*Bianca.* Thou hast not so much noble anger in  
thee.

*Maria.* Go sleep, go sleep ! What we intend to  
do

Lies not for such starved souls as thou hast, *Livia.*

*Livia.* Good night ! The bridegroom will be  
with you presently.

*Maria.* That's more than you know.

*Livia.* If you work upon him

As you have promised, you may give example,  
Which no doubt will be follow'd.

*Maria.* So !

*Bianca.* Good night !

We'll trouble you no further.

*Maria.* If you intend no good, pray do no harm !

*Livia.* None, but pray for you ! *[Exit.]*

*Bianca.* Cheer, wench !

*Maria.* Now, *Bianca,*

Those wits we have, let's wind them to the height !  
My rest is up, wench, and I pull for that  
Will make me ever famous. They that lay  
Foundations are half-builders, all men say.

*Enter JAQUES.*

*Jaques.* My master, forsooth——

*Maria.* Oh, how does thy master ?  
Pr'ythee commend me to him.

*Jaques.* How is this ?——

My master stays, forsooth——

*Maria.* Why, let him stay !

Who hinders him, forsooth ?

*Jaques.* The revel's ended now,——  
To visit you.

*Maria.* I am not sick.

*Jaques.* I mean  
To see his chamber, forsooth.

*Maria.* Am I his groom ?

Where lay he last night, forsooth ?

*Jaques.* In the low matted parlour.

*Maria.* There lies his way, by the long gallery.

*Jaques.* I mean your chamber. You are very  
merry, mistress.

*Maria.* 'Tis a good sign I am sound-hearted,  
*Jaques.*

But, if you'll know where I lie, follow me ;  
And what thou seest, deliver to thy master.

*Bianca.* Do, gentle *Jaques.* *[Exit.]*

*Jaques.* Ha ! is the wind in that door ?

By'r lady, we shall have foul weather then !

I do not like the shuffling of these women ;  
They are mad beasts, when they knock their heads  
together :

I have observed them all this day, their whispers  
One in another's ear ; their signs and pinches,  
And breaking often into violent laughers,  
As if the end they purposed were their own.  
Call you this weddings ? Sure this is a knavery,  
A very trick, and dainty knavery ;  
Marvellous finely carried, that's the comfort.  
What would these women do in ways of honour,  
That are such masters this way ? Well, my sir  
Has been as good at finding out these toys,  
As any living ; if he lose it now,  
At his own peril be it ! I must follow. *[Exit.]*

SCENE III.—*A Court before the House of  
PETRUCHIO.*

*Enter Servants with lights, PETRUCHIO, PETRONIUS,  
MOROSO, TRANIO, and SOPHOCLES.*

*Petru.* You that are married, gentlemen, have  
For a round wager now ! *[at ye.]*

*Soph.* Of this night's stage ?

*Petru.* Yes.

*Soph.* I am your first man : A pair of gloves  
Of twenty shillings.

*Petru.* Done ! Who takes me up next ?

I am for all bets.

*Mor.* Well, lusty *Lawrence,* were but my night  
now,

Old as I am, I would make you clap on spurs,  
But I would reach you, and bring you to your trot  
I would, gallants. *[too ;]*

*Petru.* Well said, Good-will ; but where's the  
staff, boy, ha ?

Old father Time, your hour-glass is empty.

*Tra.* A good tough train would break thee all to  
pieces ;

Thou hast not breath enough to say thy prayers.

*Petron.* See how these boys despise us !——Will  
This pride will have a fall. *[you to bed, son ?]*

*Petru.* Upon your daughter ;  
But I shall rise again, if there be truth  
In eggs, and butter'd parsnips.

*Petron.* Will you to bed, son, and leave talking ?  
To-morrow morning we shall have you look,  
For all your great words, like *St. George* at King-  
ston,

Running a foot-back from the furious dragon,  
That with her angry tail belabours him  
For being lazy.

*Tra.* His courage quench'd, and so far quench'd——

*Petru.* 'Tis well, sir.

What then ?

*Soph.* Fly, fly, quoth then the fearful dwarf ;  
*Here is no place for living man.*

*Petru.* Well, my masters,  
If I do sink under my business, as I find  
'Tis very possible, I am not the first  
That has miscarried so; that is my comfort;  
What may be done without impeach or waste,  
I can and will do.

*Enter JAQUES.*

How now! Is my fair bride a-bed?

*Jaques.* No truly, sir.

*Petron.* Not a-bed yet? Body o' me, we'll up  
And rifle her! Here's a coil with a maidenhead!  
'Tis not entailed, is it?

*Petru.* If it be,  
I'll try all the law i' th' land, but I'll cut it off.  
Let's up, let's up; come!

*Jaques.* That you cannot neither.

*Petru.* Why?

*Jaques.* Unless

You will drop thro' the chimney like a daw,  
Or force a breach i' th' windows; you may untile  
The house, 'tis possible.

*Petru.* What dost thou mean?

*Jaques.* A moral, sir; the ballad will express it:

The wind and the rain  
Has turn'd you back again,  
And you cannot be lodged there.

The truth is, all the doors are barricaded;  
Not a cat-hole, but holds a murderer in't:  
She's victual'd for this month.

*Petru.* Art not thou drunk?

*Soph.* He's drunk, he's drunk! Come, come;

*Jaques.* Yes, yes, [let's up.

I am drunk! Ye may go up, ye may, gentlemen;  
But take heed to your heads: I say no more.

*Soph.* I'll try that. [Exit.

*Petron.* How dost thou say? the door fast lock'd,  
fellow?

*Jaques.* Yes, truly, sir, 'tis lock'd, and guarded  
too;

And two as desperate tongues planted behind it,  
As e'er yet batter'd: They stand upon their hon-  
ours,

And will not give up without strange composition,  
I will assure you; marching away with  
Their pieces cook'd, and bullets in their mouths,  
Will not satisfy them.

*Petru.* How's this? how's this?

*They are?* Is there another with her?

*Jaques.* Yes, marry is there, and an engineer.

*Mor.* Who's that, for Heaven's sake?

*Jaques.* Colonel Bianca; she commands the  
works;

Spinola's but a ditcher to her. There's a half-  
moon!

I'm but a poor man, but if you'll give me leave,  
I'll venture a year's wages, draw all your force  
before it,

And mount your ablest piece of battery,  
You shall not enter it these three nights yet.

*Enter SOPHOCLES.*

*Petru.* I should laugh at that, good Jaques.

*Soph.* Beat back again!

She's fortified for ever.

*Jaques.* Am I drunk now, sir?

*Soph.* He that dares most, go up now, and be  
I have 'scaped a pretty scouring. [cool'd.

*Petru.* What, are they mad? have we another  
They do not talk, I hope? [bedlam?

*Soph.* Oh, terribly,  
Extremely fearful; the noise at London Bridge  
Is nothing near her.

*Petru.* How got she tongue?

*Soph.* As you got tail; she was born to't.

*Petru.* Lock'd out a-doors, and on my wedding-  
Nay, an I suffer this, I may go graze. [night?  
Come, gentlemen, I'll batter. Are these virtues?

*Soph.* Do, and be beaten off with shame, as I  
was:

I went up, came to th' door, knock'd, nobody  
answer'd;

Knock'd louder, yet heard nothing; would have  
By force; when suddenly a water-work [broke in  
Flew from the window with such violence,  
That, had I not duck'd quickly like a friar,  
*Cætera quis nescit?*

The chamber's nothing but a mere Ostend;  
In every window pewter cannons mounted,  
You'll quickly find with what they are charged, sir.

*Petru.* Why then, tantara for us!

*Soph.* And all the lower works lined sure with  
small shot,  
Long tongues with firelocks, that at twelve-score  
blank

Hit to the heart. Now, an ye dare go up—

*Enter MARIA and BIANCO above.*

*Mor.* The window opens! Beat a parley first.  
I am so much amazed, my very hair stands.

*Petron.* Why, how now, daughter? What,  
intrench'd?

*Maria.* A little guarded for my safety, sir.

*Petru.* For your safety, sweetheart? Why, who  
I come not to use violence. [offends you?

*Maria.* I think

You cannot, sir; I am better fortified.

*Petru.* I know your end; you would fain reprieve  
A night, or two. [your maidenhead

*Maria.* Yes, or ten, or twenty,  
Or say an hundred; or, indeed, till I list lie with  
you.

*Soph.* That's a shrewd saying! From this pre-  
I never will believe a silent woman; [sent hour  
When they break out they are bonfires.

*Petron.* Till you list lie with him? Why, who  
are you, madam?

*Bianca.* That trim gentleman's wife, sir.

*Petru.* 'Cry you mercy! do you command too?

*Maria.* Yes, marry does she, and in chief.

*Bianca.* I do command, and you shall go with-  
(I mean your wife,) for this night. [out

*Maria.* And for the next too, wench; and so

*Petron.* Thou wilt not, wilt 'a? [as't follows.

*Maria.* Yes, indeed, dear father;

And till he seal to what I shall set down,  
For anything I know, for ever.

*Soph.* Indeed these are bugs-words.

*Tranio.* You hear, sir, she can talk, God be

*Petru.* I would I heard it not, sir! [thanked!

*Soph.* I find that all the pity bestow'd upon this  
Makes but an anagram of an ill wife, [woman  
For she was never virtuous.

*Petru.* You'll let me in, I hope, for all this

*Maria.* Hope still, sir. [jesting?

*Petron.* You will come down, I am sure.

*Maria.* I am sure I will not.

*Petron.* I'll fetch you then.

*Bianca.* The power of the whole county can-  
not, sir,

Unless we please to yield ; which yet I think  
We shall not : Charge when you please, you shall  
Hear quickly from us.

*Mor.* Heaven bless me from

A chicken of thy hatching ! Is this wiving ?

*Petru.* Pr'ythee, Maria, tell me what's the  
reason,

And do it freely, you deal thus strangely with me ?

You were not forced to marry : your consent

Went equally with mine, if not before it :

I hope you do not doubt I want that mettle

A man should have, to keep a woman waking ;

I would be sorry to be such a saint yet :

My person, as it is not excellent,

So 'tis not old, nor lame, nor weak with physic,

But well enough to please an honest woman,

That keeps her house, and loves her husband.

*Maria.* 'Tis so.

*Petru.* My means and my conditions are no  
shamers

Of him that owes 'em, (all the world knows that,)

And my friends no relies on my fortunes.

*Maria.* All this I believe, and none of all these  
parcels

I dare except against ; nay more, so far

I am from making these the ends I aim at,

These idle outward things, these women's fears,

That were I yet unmarried, free to chuse

Through all the tribes of man, I would take Pe-  
truchio

In's shirt, with one ten groats to pay the priest,

Before the best man living, or the ablest

That e'er leap'd out of Lancashire : and they are  
right ones.

*Petron.* Why do you play the fool then, and  
stand prating

Out of the window, like a broken miller ?

*Petru.* If you will have me credit you, Maria,

Come down, and let your love confirm it.

*Maria.* Stay

There, sir ; that bargain's yet to make.

*Bianca.* Play sure, wench !

The pack's in thine own hand.

*Soph.* Let me die lousy,

If these two wenches be not brewing knavery

To stock a kingdom !

*Petru.* Why, this is a riddle ;

" I love you, and I love you not."

*Maria.* It is so ;

And till your own experience do unty it,

This distance I must keep.

*Petru.* If you talk more,

I am angry, very angry !

*Maria.* I am glad on't, and I will talk.

*Petru.* Pr'ythee, peace !

Let me not think thou'rt mad. I tell thee, woman,

If thou goest forward, I am still Petruchio.

*Maria.* And I am worse, a woman that can fear

Neither Petruchio Furious, nor his fame,

Nor anything that tends to our allegiance :

There's a short method for you : now you know me.

*Petru.* If you can carry 't so, 'tis very well.

*Bianca.* No, you shall carry it, sir.

*Petru.* Peace, gentle low-bell !

*Petron.* Use no more words, but come down

I charge thee, by the duty of a child ! [instantly ;

*Petru.* Pr'ythee come, Maria ! I forgive all.

*Maria.* Stay there ! That duty, that you charge

(If you consider truly what you say,) [me by,

Is now another man's ; you gave't away

I' th' church, if you remember, to my husband ;  
So all you can exact now, is no more  
But only a due reverence to your person,  
Which thus I pay : Your blessing, and I am gone  
To bed for this night.

*Petron.* This is monstrous !

That blessing that St. Dunstan gave the devil,

If I were near thee, I would give thee, whore ;

Pull thee down by th' nose !

*Bianca.* Saints should not rave, sir :

A little rhubarb now were excellent.

*Petru.* Then, by that duty you owe to me,

Open the door, and be obedient ! [Maria,

I am quiet yet.

*Maria.* I do confess that duty :

Make your best on't.

*Petru.* Why, give me leave, I will.

*Bianca.* Sir, there's no learning

An old stiff jade to trot ; you know the moral.

*Maria.* Yet, as I take it, sir, I owe no more

Than you owe back again.

*Petru.* You will not article ?

All I owe, presently—let me but up—I'll pay.

*Maria.* You are too hot, and such prove jades  
at length.

You do confess a duty, or respect to me from you  
again,

That's very near, or full the same with mine ?

*Petru.* Yes.

*Maria.* Then, by that duty, or respect, or what

You please to have it, go to bed and leave me,

And trouble me no longer with your fooling ;

For know, I am not for you.

*Petru.* Well, what remedy ? [To his Friends.

*Petron.* A fine smart cudgel.—Oh, that I were  
near thee !

*Bianca.* If you had teeth now, what a case  
were we in !

*Mor.* These are the most authentic rebels, next  
Tyrone, I ever read of.

*Maria.* A week hence, or a fortnight, as you  
bear you,

And as I find my will observed, I may,

With intercession of some friends, be brought

May be to kiss you ; and so quarterly

To pay a little rent by composition.

You understand me ?

*Soph.* Thou, boy, thou !

*Petru.* Well.

There are more maids than Maudlin ; that's my  
comfort.

*Maria.* Yes ; and more men than Michael.

*Petru.* I must not

To bed with this stomach, and no meat, lady.

*Maria.* Feed where you will, so it be sound and  
wholesome ;

Else, live at livery, for I'll none with you.

*Bianca.* You had best back one o' th' dairy

maids ; they'll carry :

But take heed to your girths, you'll get a bruise  
else.

*Petru.* Now, if thou wouldst come down, and  
tender me

All the delights due to a marriage-bed ;

Study such kisses as would melt a man ;

And turn thyself into a thousand figures,

To add new flames unto me ; I would stand

Thus heavy, thus regardless, thus despising

Thee, and thy best allurings : All the beauty

That's laid upon your bodies, mark me well,

(For without doubt your minds are miserable, You have no masks for them,) all this rare beauty, Lay but the painter and the silk-worm by, The doctor with his diets, and the tailor, And you appear like flea'd cats; not so handsome.

*Maria.* And we appear, like her that sent us hither,

That only excellent and beauteous Nature, Truly ourselves, for men to wonder at, But too divine to handle: We are gold, In our own natures pure; but when we suffer The husband's stamp upon us, then allays, And base ones, of you men, are mingled with us, And make us blush like copper!

*Petru.* Then, and never Till then, are women to be spoken of; For till that time you have no souls, I take it. Good night!—Come, gentlemen! I'll fast for this night;

But, by this hand—Well, I shall come up yet?

*Maria.* No.

*Petru.* There will I watch thee like a wither'd jury;

Thou shalt neither have meat, fire, nor candle, Nor anything that's easy. Do you rebel so soon? Yet take mercy.

*Bianca.* Put up your pipes; to bed, sir! I'll A month's siege will not shake us. [assure you  
*Mor.* Well said, colonel!

*Maria.* To bed, to bed, Petruccio! Good night, gentlemen!

You'll make my father sick with sitting up. Here you shall find us any time these ten days, Unless we may march off with our contentment.

*Petru.* I'll hang first!

*Maria.* And I'll quarter, if I do not!

I'll make you know, and fear a wife, Petruccio; There my cause lies.

You have been famous for a woman-tamer, And bear the fear'd name of a brave wife-breaker: A woman now shall take those honours off, and tame you.

Nay, never look so big! she shall, believe me, And I am she. What think ye?—Good night to ye shall find centinels— [all.

*Bianca.* If ye dare sally. [Exit above.

*Petron.* The devil's in 'em, even the very devil, The down-right devil!

*Petru.* I'll devil 'em; by these ten bones, I will!

I'll bring it to th' old proverb, 'No sport, no pie.' Pox! taken down i' th' top of all my speed?

This is fine dancing! Gentlemen, stick to me: You see our freehold's touch'd; and, by this light, We will beleaguer 'em, and either starve 'em out, Or make 'em recreant.

*Petron.* I'll see all passages stopt, but those about 'em.

If the good women of the town dare succour 'em, We shall have wars indeed.

*Soph.* I'll stand perdue upon 'em.

*Mor.* My regiment shall lie before.

*Jaques.* I think so;

'Tis grown too old to stand.

*Petru.* Let's in, and each provide his tackle! We'll fire 'em out, or make 'em take their pardons (Hear what I say) on their bare knees.

Am I Petruccio, fear'd, and spoken of, And on my wedding-night am I thus jaded?

[Exit.

## SCENE IV.—A Hall in the same.

Enter ROWLAND and PEDRO, at several doors.

*Rowl.* Now, Pedro?

*Pedro.* Very busy, Master Rowland.

*Rowl.* What haste, man?

*Pedro.* I beseech you pardon me, I am not mine own man.

*Rowl.* Thou art not mad?

*Pedro.* No; but, believe me, as hasty—

*Rowl.* The cause, good Pedro?

*Pedro.* There be a thousand, sir. You are not

*Rowl.* Not yet. [married?

*Pedro.* Keep yourself quiet then.

*Rowl.* Why?

*Pedro.* You'll find a fiddle That never will be tuned else: From all women— [Exit.

*Rowl.* What ails the fellow, tro?—Jaques?

Enter JAQUES.

*Jaques.* Your friend, sir; But very full of business.

*Rowl.* Nothing but business?

Pr'y'thee the reason! is there any dying?

*Jaques.* I would there were, sir!

*Rowl.* But thy business?

*Jaques.* I'll tell you in a word: I am sent to An imposition upon souse and puddings, [lay

Pasties, and penny custards, that the women May not relieve you rebels. Fare you well, sir!

*Rowl.* How does my mistress?

*Jaques.* Like a resty jade; She's spoil'd for riding. [Exit.

*Rowl.* What a devil ail they?

Custards, and penny pasties, foohs and fiddles! What's this to th' purpose?—Ooh, well met.

Enter SOPHOCLES.

*Soph.* Now, Rowland! I cannot stay to talk long.

*Rowl.* What's the matter?

Here's stirring, but to what end? Whither go you?

*Soph.* To view the works.

*Rowl.* What works?

*Soph.* The women's trenches.

*Rowl.* Trenches? Are such to see?

*Soph.* I do not jest, sir.

*Rowl.* I cannot understand you.

*Soph.* Do not you hear

In what a state of quarrel the new bride Stands with her husband?

*Rowl.* Let him stand with her, And there's an end.

*Soph.* It should be; but, by'r lady, She holds him out at pike's end, and defies him, And now is fortified. Such a regiment of rutters Never defied men braver: I am sent To view their preparation.

*Rowl.* This is news, Stranger than armies in the air. You saw not My gentle mistress?

*Soph.* Yes, and meditating Upon some secret business; when she had found it, She leap'd for joy, and laugh'd, and straight retired To ahun Moroso.

*Rowl.* This may be for me.

*Soph.* Will you along?

*Rowl.* No.

*Soph.* Farewell. [Exit.

*Rowl.* Farewell, sir!—  
What should her musing mean, and what her joy  
in't  
If not for my advantage? Stay you! may not  
That bob-tail jade Moroso, with his gold,  
His gew-gaudes, and the hope she has to send him  
Quickly to dust, excite this?

*Enter LIVIA at one door, and Moroso at another,  
hearkening.*

Here she comes;  
And yonder walks the stallion to discover!  
Yet I'll salute her.—Save you, beauteous mistress!  
*Livia.* The fox is kennell'd for me.—Save you,  
*Rowl.* Why do you look so strange? [sir!  
*Livia.* I use to look, sir,  
Without examination.  
*Mor.* Twenty spur-ryals for that word!  
*Rowl.* Belike then  
The object discontents you?  
*Livia.* Yes, it does.  
*Rowl.* Is't come to this? You know me, do you  
not?  
*Livia.* Yes, as I may know many, by repent-  
*Rowl.* Why do you break your faith? [ance.  
*Livia.* I'll tell you that too:  
You are under age, and no band holds upon you.  
*Mor.* Excellent wench!  
*Livia.* Sue out your understanding,  
And get more hair to cover your bare knuckle!

(For boys were made for nothing but dry kisses)  
And, if you can, more manners!  
*Mor.* Better still!  
*Livia.* And then, if I want Spanish gloves, or  
stockings,  
A ten-pound waistcoat, or a nag to hunt on,  
It may be I shall grace you to accept 'em.  
*Rowl.* Farewell! and when I credit women more,  
May I to Smithfield, and there buy a jade  
(And know him to be so) that breaks my neck!  
*Livia.* Because I have known you, I'll be thus  
kind to you:  
Farewell, and be a man! and I'll provide you,  
Because I see you're desperate, some staid cham-  
bermaid,  
That may relieve your youth with wholesome doc-  
trine.  
*Mor.* She's mine from all the world!—Ha,  
*Livia.* Ha, chicken! [wench!  
[Gives him a box on the ear, and crit.  
*Mor.* How's this? I do not love these favours.  
—Save you!  
*Rowl.* The devil take thee!  
[Wrings him by the nose.  
*Mor.* Oh!  
*Rowl.* There's a love-token for you! thank me  
now!  
*Mor.* I'll think on some of ye; and, if I live,  
My nose alone shall not be play'd withal. [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Room in the House of PETRONIUS.

*Enter PETRONIUS and MOROSO.*

*Petron.* A box o' th' ear, do you say?  
*Mor.* Yes, sure, a sound one;  
Beside my nose blown to my hand. If Cupid  
Shoot arrows of that weight, I'll swear devoutly,  
He has sued his livery, and is no more a boy.  
*Petron.* You gave her some ill language?  
*Mor.* Not a word.  
*Petron.* Or might be you were fumbling!  
*Mor.* 'Would I had, sir!  
I had been aforehand then; but, to be baffled,  
And have no feeling of the cause—  
*Petron.* Be patient;  
I have a medicine clapp'd to her back will cure her.  
*Mor.* No, sure 't must be afore, sir.  
*Petron.* O' my conscience,  
When I got these two wenches (who till now  
Ne'er shew'd their riding) I was drunk with bas-  
Whose nature is to form things like itself, [tard,  
Heady and monstrous. Did she slight him too?  
*Mor.* That's all my comfort! A mere hobby-  
horse  
She made child Rowland: 'Sfoot, she would not  
know him,  
Not give him a free look, not reckon him  
Among her thoughts; which I held more than  
wonder,  
I having seen her within these three days kiss him,  
With such an appetite as though she would eat  
him.  
*Petron.* There is some trick in this. How did  
he take it?  
*Mor.* Ready to cry, he ran away.

*Petron.* I fear her:  
And yet I tell you, ever to my anger  
She is as tame as innocency. It may be  
This blow was but a favour.  
*Mor.* I'll be sworn  
'Twas well tied on then.  
*Petron.* Go to! pray forget it:  
I have bespoke a priest, and within these two  
hours  
I'll have you married; will that please you?  
*Mor.* Yes.  
*Petron.* I'll see it done myself, and give the lad  
Such a sound exhortation for this knavery,  
I'll warrant you, shall make her smell this month  
*Mor.* Nay, good sir, be not violent. [on't  
*Petron.* Neither—  
*Mor.* It may be  
Out of her earnest love there grew a longing  
(As you know women have such toys) in kindness  
To give me a box o' th' ear, or so.  
*Petron.* It may be.  
*Mor.* I reckon for the best still. This night  
I shall enjoy her? [the.  
*Petron.* You shall handsel her.  
*Mor.* Old as I am, I'll give her one blow for'  
Shall make her groan this twelvemonth.  
*Petron.* Where's your jointure?  
*Mor.* I have a jointure for her.  
*Petron.* Have your counsel  
Perused it yet?  
*Mor.* No counsel but the night, and your sweet  
Shall e'er peruse that jointure. [daughte  
*Petron.* Very well, sir.  
*Mor.* I'll no demurrers on't, nor no rejoinders  
The other's ready seal'd.

*Petron.* Come then, let's comfort  
My son Petruccio : He's like little children  
That lose their baubles, crying ripe.

*Mor.* Pray tell me,  
Is this stern woman still upon the flaunt  
Of bold defiance ?

*Petron.* Still, and still she shall be,  
Till she be starved out : You shall see such justice,  
That women shall be glad, after this tempest,  
To tie their husbands' shoes, and walk their horses.

*Mor.* That were a merry world !—Do you hear  
the rumour ?

They say the women are in insurrection,  
And mean to make a—

*Petron.* They'll sooner  
Draw upon walls as we do. Let 'em, let 'em !  
We'll ship 'em out in cuck-stools ; there they'll  
As brave Columbus did, till they discover [sail  
The happy islands of obedience.

We stay too long ; come !

*Mor.* Now, St. George be with us ! [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*The Court before the House of  
PETRUCHIO.*

*Enter LIVIA alone.*

*Livia.* Now, if I can but get in handsomely,  
Father, I shall deceive you ; and this night,  
For all your private plotting, I'll no wedlock :  
I have shifted sail, and find my sister's safety  
A sure retirement. Pray to Heaven that Rowland  
Do not believe too far what I said to him !  
For you old foxcase forced me ; that's my fear.  
Stay, let me see ! this quarter fierce Petruccio  
Keeps with his myrmidons : I must be sudden ;  
If he seize on me, I can look for nothing  
But martial-law ; to this place have I 'scaped him.  
Above there !

*Enter MARIA and BIANCA above.*

*Maria.* Qui va là ?

*Livia.* A friend.

*Bianca.* Who are you ?

*Livia.* Look out and know !

*Maria.* Alas, poor wench, who sent thee ?  
What weak fool made thy tongue his orator ?  
I know you come to parley.

*Livia.* You're deceived.

Urged by the goodness of your cause, I come  
To do as you do.

*Maria.* You're too weak, too foolish,  
To cheat us with your smoothness : Do not we know  
Thou hast been kept up tame ?

*Livia.* Believe me !

*Maria.* No ; pr'ythee, good Livia,  
Utter thy eloquence somewhere else.

*Bianca.* Good cousin,

Put up your pipes ; we are not for your palate :  
Alas ! we know who sent you.

*Livia.* O' my word—

*Bianca.* Stay there ; you must not think your  
word,

Or by your maidenhead, or such Sunday oaths,  
Sworn after even-song, can inveigle us  
To loose our hand-fast : Did their wisdoms think  
That sent you hither, we would be so foolish  
To entertain our gentle sister Sinon,  
And give her credit, while the wooden jade  
Petruccio stole upon us ? No, good sister !  
Go home, and tell the merry Greeks that sent you,

Ilium shall burn, and I, as did Æneas,  
Will on my back, 'spite of the myrmidons,  
Carry this warlike lady, and through seas  
Unknown, and unbeliev'd, seek out a land,  
Where, like a race of noble Amazons,  
We'll root ourselves, and to our endless glory  
Live, and despise base men !

*Livia.* I'll second you.

*Bianca.* How long have you been thus ?

*Livia.* That's all one, cousin ;  
I stand for freedom now.

*Bianca.* Take heed of lying !

For, by this light, if we do credit you,  
And find you tripping, his infiction  
That killed the prince of Orange, will we sport  
To what we purpose.

*Livia.* Let me feel the heaviest !

*Maria.* Swear by thy sweetheart Rowland, (for  
by your maidenhead

I fear 'twill be too late to swear) you mean  
Nothing but fair and safe, and honourable  
To us, and to yourself.

*Livia.* I swear !

*Bianca.* Stay yet !

Swear as you hate Moroso, (that's the surest)  
And as you have a certain fear to find him  
Worse than a poor dried Jack ; full of more aches  
Than Autumn has ; more knavery, and usury,  
And foolery, and brokery, than Dog's-Ditch ;  
As you do constantly believe he's nothing  
But an old empty bag with a grey beard,  
And that beard such a bob-tail, that it looks  
Worse than a mare's tail eaten off with flies ;  
As you acknowledge, that young handsome wench  
That lies by such a Bilboa blade, that bends  
With ev'ry pass he makes, to th' hilts, most mise-  
A dry-nurse to his coughs, a fewerer [rable,  
To such a nasty fellow, a robbed thing  
Of all delights youth looks for ; and, to end,  
One cast away on coarse beef, born to brash  
That everlasting cassock that has worn  
As many servants out, as the North-East passage  
Has consumed sailors : If you swear this, and truly,  
Without the reservation of a gown,  
Or any meritorious petticoat,  
'Tis like we shall believe you.

*Livia.* I do swear it.

*Maria.* Stay yet a little ! Came this wholesome  
motion

(Deal truly, sister) from your own opinion,  
Or some suggestion of the foe ?

*Livia.* Ne'er fear me !

For, by that little faith I have in husbands,  
And the great zeal I bear your cause, I come  
Full of that liberty you stand for, sister !

*Maria.* If we believe, and you prove recreant,

Livia,

Think what a main you give the noble cause  
We now stand up for ! Think what women shall,  
An hundred years hence, speak thee, when  
examples

Are look'd for, and so great ones, whose relations,  
Spoke, as we do 'em, wench, shall make new cus-  
toms !

*Bianca.* If you be false, repent, go home, and  
And to the serious women of the city [pray,  
Confess yourself ; bring not a sin so heinous  
To load thy soul to this place. Mark me, Livia ;  
If thou be'st double, and betray'st our honours,  
And we fail in our purpose, get thee where

There is no women living, nor no hope  
There ever shall be!

*Maria.* If a mother's daughter,  
That ever heard the name of stubborn husband,  
Find thee, and know thy sin——

*Bianca.* Nay if old age,  
One that has worn away the name of woman,  
And no more left to know her by but railing,  
No teeth, nor eyes, nor legs, but wooden ones,  
Come but i' the windward of thee, for sure she'll  
smell thee,

Thou'lt be so rank; she'll ride thee like a night-  
mare,

And say her prayers backward to undo thee;  
She'll curse thy meat and drink, and, when thou  
marriest,

Clap a sound spell for ever on thy pleasures.

*Maria.* Children of five year old, like little  
fairies,

Will pinch thee into motley; all that ever  
Shall live and hear of thee, I mean all women,  
Will (like so many furies) shake their keys,  
And toss their flaming distaffs o'er their heads,  
Crying, revenge! Take heed; 'tis hideous,  
Oh, 'tis a fearful office! If thou hadst  
(Though thou be'st perfect now) when thou camest  
A false imagination, get thee gone, [hither  
And, as my learned cousin said, repent!  
This place is sought by soundness.

*Livia.* So I seek it,  
Or let met me be a most despised example!

*Maria.* I do believe thee; be thou worthy of it!  
You come not empty?

*Livia.* No, here's cakes and cold meat,  
And tripe of proof; behold here's wine and beer!  
Be sudden, I shall be surprised else.

*Maria.* Meet at the low parlour-door; there lies  
a close way;

What fond obedience you have living in you,  
Or duty to a man, before you enter  
Fling it away; 'twill but defile our offerings.

*Bianca.* Be wary as you come.

*Livia.* I warrant you. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Street.

Enter Three Maids.

- 1 *Maid.* How goes your business, girls?
- 2 *Maid.* A-foot, and fair.
- 3 *Maid.* If fortune favour us. Away to your  
strength!

The country forces are arrived. Be gone!  
We are discover'd else.

- 1 *Maid.* Arm, and be valiant!
- 2 *Maid.* Think of our cause!
- 3 *Maid.* Our justice!
- 1 *Maid.* 'Tis sufficient. [Exit.

### SCENE IV.—Another Street.

Enter ROWLAND and TRANIO, severally.

*Tra.* Now, Rowland?

*Rowl.* How do you?

*Tra.* How dost thou, man?

Thou look'st ill.

*Rowl.* Yes. Pray can you tell me, Tranio,  
Who knew the devil first?

*Tra.* A woman.

*Rowl.* So.

Were they not well acquainted?

*Tra.* May be so,

For they had certain dialogues together.

*Rowl.* He sold her fruit, I take it?

*Tra.* Yes, and cheese

That choak'd all mankind after.

*Rowl.* Canst thou tell me

Whether that woman ever had a faith,  
After she had eaten?

*Tra.* That is a school-question.

*Rowl.* No, 'tis no question; for believe me,  
Tranio,

That cold fruit, after eating, bred nought in her  
But windy promises, and cholick vows,  
That broke out both ways. Thou hast heard, I am  
Of Esculapius, a far-famed surgeon, [sure,  
One that could set together quarter'd traitors,  
And make 'em honest men.

*Tra.* How dost thou, Rowland?

*Rowl.* Let him but take (if he dare do a care  
Shall get him fame indeed) a faithless woman,  
(There will be credit for him that will speak him)  
A broken woman, Tranio, a base woman,  
And if he can cure such a wreck of honour,  
Let him come here and practise!

*Tra.* Now, for honour's sake,  
Why, what ail'st thou, Rowland?

*Rowl.* I am ridden, Tranio,  
And spur-gall'd to the life of patience,—  
Heaven keep my wits together!—by a thing

Our worst thoughts are too noble for, a woman.

*Tra.* Your mistress has a little frown'd, it may

*Rowl.* She was my mistress. [be?

*Tra.* Is she not?

*Rowl.* No, Tranio:

She has done me such disgrace, so spitefully,  
So like a woman bent to my undoing,  
That henceforth a good horse shall be my mistress,  
A good sword, or a book. And if you see her,  
Tell her, I do beseech you, even for love's sake—

*Tra.* I will, Rowland.

*Rowl.* She may sooner count the good  
I have thought her, our old love and our friendship,  
Shed one true tear, mean one hour constantly,  
Be old and honest, married and a maid,  
Than make me see her more, or more believe her:  
And now I have met a messenger, farewell, sir! [Exit.

*Tra.* Alas, poor Rowland! I will do it for thee.  
This is that dog Moroso; but I hope  
To see him cold i' th' mouth first, ere he enjoy her.  
I'll watch this young man; desperate thoughts  
may seize him,

And, if my purse or counsel can, I'll ease him. [Exit.

### SCENE V.—A Room in the House of PETRUCHIO.

Enter PETRUCHIO, PETRONIUS, MOROSO, and SOPHOCLES.

*Petru.* For, look you, gentlemen, say that I  
grant her,

Out of my free and liberal love, a pardon,  
Which you and all men else know, she deserves not,  
(*Teneatis, amici*) can all the world leave laughing?

*Petron.* I think not.

*Petru.* No, by Heaven, they cannot!  
For pray consider, have you ever read,  
Or heard of, or can any man imagine,

So stiff a Tom-boy, of so set a malice,  
And such a brazen resolution,  
As this young crab-tree? and then answer me!  
And mark but this too, friends, without a cause,  
Not a foul word come cross her, not a fear  
She justly can take hold on; and d'ye think  
I must sleep out my anger, and endure it,  
Sow pillows to her ease, and lull her mischief?  
Give me a spindle first! No, no, my masters,  
Were she as fair as Nell-a-Greece, and housewife  
As good as the wise sailor's wife, and young still,  
Never above fifteen, and these tricks to it,  
She should ride the wild-mare once a-week, she  
should,

Believe me, friends, she should! I would tabor her,  
'Till all the legions that are crept into her,  
Flew out with fire i' th' tails.

*Soph.* Methinks you err now;  
For to me seems, a little sufferance  
Were a far surer cure.

*Petru.* Yes, I can suffer,  
Where I see promises of peace and amendment,  
*Mor.* Give her a few conditions.

*Petru.* I'll be hang'd first!

*Petron.* Give her a crab-tree cudgel!

*Petru.* So I will;  
And after it a flock-bed for her bones,  
And hard eggs, till they brace her like a drum,  
She shall be pamper'd with;  
She shall not know a stool in ten months, gentle-  
*Soph.* This must not be. [men.

*Enter JAQUES.*

*Jaques.* Arm, arm! out with your weapons!  
For all the women in the kingdom's on ye;  
They swarm like wasps, and nothing can destroy  
'em,

But stopping of their hive, and smothering of 'em.

*Enter PEDRO.*

*Pedro.* Stand to your guard, sir! all the devils  
extant

Are broke upon us like a cloud of thunder;  
There are more women marching hitherward,  
In rescue of my mistress, than e'er turn'd tail  
At Starbridge-fair, and I believe as fiery.

*Jaques.* The forlorn-hope's led by a tanner's wife,  
(I know her by her hide) a desp'rate woman;  
She flead her husband in her youth, and made  
Reins of his hide to ride the parish. Take 'em all  
together,

They are a genealogy of jennets, gotten  
And born thoo', by the boisterous breath of hus-  
bands;

They serve sure, and are swift to catch occasion  
(I mean their foes or husbands) by the forelocks,  
And there they hang like favours: cry they can,  
But more for noble spite than fear; and crying  
Like the old giants that were foes to Heaven,  
They heave ye stool on stool, and fling main  
pot-lids

Like massy rocks, dart ladles, tossing irons,  
And tongs like thunderbolts, till overlaid,  
They fall beneath the weight; yet still aspiring  
At those imperious codsheads, that would tame  
'em.

There's ne'er a one of these, the worst and weakest,  
(Choose where you will) but dare attempt the  
Against the sovereign peace of Puritans, [raising,  
A May-pole and a morris, maugre mainly  
Their zeal, and dudgeon-daggers; and yet more,

Dares plant a stand of batt'ring ale against 'em,  
And drink 'em out o' th' parish.

*Soph.* Lo you, fierce  
Petruccio! this comes of your impatience.

*Pedro.* There's one brought in the bears, against  
the canons

Of the town, made it good, and fought 'em.

*Jaques.* Another, to hereverlasting fame, erected  
Two ale-houses of ease, the quarter sessions  
Running against her roundly; in which business  
Two of the disannullers lost their night-caps;  
A third stood excommunicate by th' cudgel;  
The constable, to her eternal glory,  
Drunk hard, and was converted, and she victor.

*Pedro.* Then are they victualled with pies and  
puddings,

(The trappings of good stomachs) noble ale  
(The true defender,) sausages, and smoked ones,  
If need be, such as serve for pikes; and pork  
(Better the Jews ne'er hated) here and there  
A bottle of metheglin, a stout Briton  
That will stand to 'em;

What else they want, they war for.

*Petru.* Come to council!

*Soph.* Now you must grant conditions, or the  
kingdom

Will have no other talk but this.

*Petron.* Away then,  
And let's advise the best!

*Soph.* Why do you tremble?

*Mor.* Have I lived thus long to be knockt o' th'  
head

With half a washing beetle? Pray be wise, sir.

*Petru.* Come; something I'll do; but what it  
is, I know not.

*Soph.* To council then, and let's avoid their  
follies!

Guard all the doors, or we shall not have a cloak  
left. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—*The Court before the House.*

*Enter PETRONIUS, PETRUCHIO, MOROSO, SOPHOCLES, and  
TRANIO.*

*Petron.* I am indifferent, though, I must confess,  
I had rather see her carted.

*Tra.* No more of that, sir.

*Soph.* Are ye resolved to give her fair conditions?  
'Twill be the safest way.

*Petru.* I am distracted!

'Would I had run my head into a halter  
When I first woo'd her! if I offer peace,  
She'll urge her own conditions; that's the devil.

*Soph.* Why, say she do?

*Petru.* Say, I am made an ass then!  
I know her aim: May I with reputation,  
(Answer me this) with safety of mine honour,  
After the mighty manage of my first wife,  
Which was indeed a fury to this filly,  
After my twelve strong labours to reclaim her,  
Which would have made Don Hercules horn-mad,  
And hid him in his hide, suffer this Cicely,  
Ere she have warm'd my sheets, ere grappled with  
me,

This pink, this painted foist, this cockle-boast,  
To hang her fights out, and defy me, friends,  
A well-known man of war? If this be equal,  
And I may suffer, say, and I have done.

*Petron.* I do not think you may.

*Tra.* You'll make it worse, sir.

*Soph.* Pray hear me, good Petruccio. But even you were contented to give all conditions, [now, To try how far she would carry: 'Tis a folly (And you will find it so) to clap the curb on, Ere you be sure it proves a natural wildness, And not a forced. Give her conditions; For, on my life, this trick is put into her——

*Petron.* I should believe so too.

*Soph.* And not her own.

*Tra.* You'll find it so.

*Soph.* Then, if she flounder with you, Clap spurs on; and in this you'll deal with tem- Avoid the hurry of the world—— [perance,

*Tra.* And lose——

*Mor.* No honour on my life, sir.

*Petru.* I will do it. [Music above.

*Petron.* It seems they are very merry.

*Enter Jaques.*

*Petru.* Why, God hold it!

*Mor.* Now, Jaques?

*Jaques.* They are i' th' flaunt, sir.

*Soph.* Yes, we hear 'em.

*Jaques.* They have got a stick of fiddles, and they firk it

In wond'rous ways: The two grand capitanoes (They brought the auxiliary regiments) Dance with their coats tuck'd up to their bare breeches,

And bid the kingdom kias 'em; that's the burden. They have got metheglin, and audacious ale, And talk like tyrants.

*Petron.* How know'st thou?

*Jaques.* I peep'd in At a loose lansket.

*Tra.* Hark!

*Petron.* A song! Pray silence.

SONG.

A health for all this day,  
To the woman that bears the sway,  
And wear the breeches;  
Let it come, let it come.

Let this health be a seal,  
For the good of the common-weal,  
The woman shall wear the breeches!

Let's drink then and laugh it,  
And merrily, merrily quaff it,  
And tippie, and tippie a round:

Here's to thy fool,  
And to my fool;  
Come, to all fools,

Though it cost us, wench, many a pound.

*Mor.* They look out.

[All the Women appear above, Citizens, and Country Women.

*Petru.* Good even, ladies!

*Maria.* Good you good even, sir!

*Petru.* How have you slept to-night?

*Maria.* Exceeding well, sir.

*Petru.* Did you not wish me with you?

*Maria.* No, believe me, I never thought upon you.

*Coun.* Is that he?

*Bianca.* Yes.

*Coun.* Sir!

*Soph.* She has drank hard: Mark her hood.

*Coun.* You are——

*Soph.* Learnedly drunk, I'll hang else. Let her utter.

*Coun.* And I must tell you *viva voce*, friend, A very foolish fellow.

*Tra.* There's an ale-figure.

*Petru.* I thank you, Susan Brotes.

*Cit.* Forward, sister.

*Coun.* You have espoused here a hearty woman, A comely, and courageous——

*Petru.* Well, I have so.

*Coun.* And, to the comfort of distressed damsels, Women out-worn in wedlock, and such vessels, This woman has defied you.

*Petru.* It should seem so.

*Coun.* And why?

*Petru.* Yes, can you tell?

*Coun.* For thirteen causes.

*Petru.* Pray, by your patience, mistress——

*Cit.* Forward, sister!

*Petru.* Do you mean to treat of all these?

*Cit.* Who shall let her?

*Petron.* Do you hear, velvet-hood? we come To hear your doctrine. [not now

*Coun.* For the first, I take it, It doth divide itself into seven branches.

*Petru.* Hark you, good Maria, Have you got a catechiser here?

*Tra.* Good zeal!

*Soph.* Good three-piled predication, will you And hear the cause we come for? [peace,

*Coun.* Yes, bob-tails, We know the cause you come for; here's the cause:—— [Pointing to MARIA.

But never hope to carry her, never dream Or flatter your opinions with a thought Of base repentance in her.

*Cit.* Give me sack!

By this, and next, strong ale——

*Coun.* Swear forward, sister!

*Cit.* By all that's cordial, in this place we'll bury

Our bones, fames, tongues, our triumphs, and then That ever yet was chronicled of woman, [all But this brave wench, this excellent despiser, This bane of dull obedience, shall inherit Her liberal will, and march off with conditions Noble and worth herself.

*Coun.* She shall, Tom Tilers, And brave ones too. My hood shall make a hearse- And I'll lie under it like Joan o'Gaunt, [cloth, Ere I go less; my distaff stuck up by me, For the eternal trophy of my conquests, And loud Fame at my head with two main bottles Shall fill to all the world, the glorious fall Of old Don Gillian.

*Cit.* Yet a little further.

We have taken arms in rescue of this lady, Most just and noble: If ye beat us off, Without conditions, and we recant, Use us as we deserve; and first degrade us Of all our ancient chambering, next that The symbols of our secrecy, silk stockings Hew off our heels; our petticoats of arms Tear off our bodies, and our bodkins break Over our coward heads.

*Coun.* And ever after, To make the tainture most notorious, At all our crests (*videlicet*, our plackets) Let laces hang, and we return again Unto our former titles, dairy-maids!

*Petru.* No more wars! Puissant ladies, shew And freely I accept 'em. [conditions,

*Maria.* Call in Livia; She's in the treaty too.

*Enter LIVIA above.*

*Mor.* How! Livia?

*Maria.* Hear you that, sir?

There's the conditions for you; pray peruse 'em.  
*[Throws down a paper.]*

*Petron.* Yes, there she is: It had been no right rebellion,

Had she held off. What think you, man?

*Mor.* Nay, nothing:

I have enough o' th' prospect. O' my conscience, The world's end and the goodness of a woman Will come together.

*Petron.* Are you there, sweet lady?

*Livia.* 'Cry you mercy, sir! I saw you not: Your blessing!

*Petron.* Yes, when I bless a jade that stumbles How are the articles? *[with me.]*

*Livia.* This is for you, sir;

And I shall think upon't.

*[Throws a paper to MOROSO.]*

*Mor.* You have used me finely!

*Livia.* There is no other use of thee now extant, But to be hung up, cassock, cap, and all, For some strange monster at Apothecaries.

*Petron.* I hear you, whore!

*Livia.* I must be his then, sir;

For need will then compel me.

*Cit.* Blessing on thee!

*Livia.* He will undo me in mere pans of coals, To make him lusty.

*Petron.* There is no talking to 'em.—

How are they, sir?

*Petron.* As I expected: Liberty and clothes,  
*[Reads.]*

When, and in what way she will; continual monies, Company, and all the house at her dispose; No tongue to say, *why is this*: or, *whither will it?* New coaches, and some buildings, she appoints here;

Hangings, and hunting-horses; and for plate And jewels, for her private use, I take it, Two thousand pound in present; then for music And women to read French—

*Petron.* This must not be.

*Petru.* And at the latter end a clause put in,

That Livia shall by no man be importuned, This whole month yet, to marry.

*Petron.* This is monstrous!

*Petru.* This shall be done; I'll humour her awhile:

If nothing but repentance and undoing Can win her love, I'll make a shift for one.

*Soph.* When you are once a-bed, all these conditions under your own seal. *[ditions]*

*Maria.* Do you like 'em?

*Petru.* Yes;

And, by that faith I gave you 'fore the priest, I'll ratify 'em.

*Coun.* Stay! what pledges?

*Maria.* No, I'll take that oath.

But have a care you keep it!

*Cit.* 'Tis not now

As when Andrea lived.

*Coun.* If you do juggle,

Or alter but a letter of these articles

We have set down, the self-same persecution—

*Maria.* Mistrust him not.

*Petru.* By all my honesty—

*Maria.* Enough; I yield.

*Petron.* What's this inserted here?

*Soph.* That the two valiant women that command here

Shall have a supper made 'em, and a large one, And liberal entertainment without grudging, And pay for all their soldiers.

*Petru.* That shall be too;

And if a tun of wine will serve to pay 'em,

They shall have justice. I ordain ye all

Paymasters, gentlemen.

*Tra.* Then we shall have sport, boys!

*Maria.* We'll meet you in the parlour.

*Petru.* Ne'er look sad, sir;

For I will do it.

*Soph.* There's no danger in't.

*Petru.* For Livia's article, you shall observe it; I have tied myself.

*Petron.* I will.

*Petru.* Along then!—Now

Either I break, or this stiff plant must bow.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

*Enter TRANIO and ROWLAND.*

*Tra.* Come, you shall take my counsel.

*Rowl.* I shall hang first!

I'll no more love, that's certain; 'tis a bane, Next that they poison rats with, the most mortal. No, I thank Heaven, I have got my sleep again, And now begin to write sense; I can walk ye A long hour in my chamber like a man, And think of something that may better me, Some serious point of learning or my state: No more *ah-me's*, and *misereri's*, Tranio, Come near my brain. I'll tell thee; had the devil But any essence in him of a man, And could be brought to love, and love a woman, 'Twould make his head ache worse than his horns do, And firk him with a fire he never felt yet,

Would make him dance. I tell thee; there is nothing

(It may be thy case, Tranio, therefore hear me)

Under the sun (reckon the mass of follies Crept into th' world with man) so desperate, So mad, so senseless, poor and base, so wretched, Roguy, and scurvy—

*Tra.* Whither wilt thou, Rowland?

*Rowl.* As 'tis to be in love.

*Tra.* And why, for Virtue's sake?

*Rowl.* And why, for Virtue's sake! Dost thou

*Tra.* No, by my troth. *[not conceive me?]*

*Rowl.* Pray then, and heartily,

For fear thou fall into't. I'll tell thee why too, For I have hope to save thee: When thou lovest, And first beginn'st to worship the gilt calf, *Imprimis*, thou hast lost thy gentry, And, like a 'prentice, flung away thy freedom; Forthwith thou art a slave.

*Tra.* That's a new doctrine.

*Rowl.* Next, thou'rt no more man.

*Tra.* What then?

*Rowl.* A frippery;

Nothing but braided hair, and penny ribband,  
Glove, garter, ring, rose, or at best a swabber;  
If thou canst love so near to keep thy making,  
Yet thou wilt lose thy language.

*Tra.* Why?

*Rowl.* Oh, Tranio!

Those things in love ne'er talk as we do.

*Tra.* No?

*Rowl.* No, without doubt; they sigh, and shake  
And sometimes whistle dolefully. [the head,

*Tra.* No tongue?

*Rowl.* Yes, Tranio, but no truth in't, nor no  
reason:

And when they cant (for 'tis a kind of canting)  
You shall hear, if you reach to understand 'em,  
(Which you must be a fool first, or you cannot,)  
Such gibb'rish; such, *believe me—I protest, sweet—*  
*And, oh, dear Heavens, in which such constellations*  
*Reign at the births of lovers—This is too well!*  
*And, deign me, lady, deign me, I beseech you.*  
*Your poor unworthy lump—*and then she licks him.

*Tra.* A pox on't, this is nothing!

*Rowl.* Thou hast hit it!

Then talks she ten times worse, and wries, and  
wriggles,

As though she had the itch (and so it may be).

*Tra.* Why thou art grown a strange discoverer.

*Rowl.* Of mine own follies, Tranio.

*Tra.* Wilt thou, Rowland,

Certain ne'er love again?

*Rowl.* I think so, certain;

And, if I be not dead-drunk, I shall keep it.

*Tra.* Tell me but this; what dost thou think of  
women?

*Rowl.* Why, as I think of fiddles; they delight  
Till their strings break. [me,

*Tra.* What strings?

*Rowl.* Their modesties,  
Faiths, vows, and maidenheads; for they are like  
They have but four strings to 'em. [kits,

*Tra.* What wilt thou

Give me for ten pounds now, when thou next  
And the same woman still? [lovest,

*Rowl.* Give me the money;

A hundred, and my bond for't.

*Tra.* But pray hear me;

I'll work all means I can to reconcile ye?

*Rowl.* Do, do; give me the money.

*Tra.* There!

*Rowl.* Work, Tranio.

*Tra.* You shall go sometimes where she is.

*Rowl.* Yes, straight.

This is the first good I e'er got by woman.

*Tra.* You would think it strange now, if another  
As good as hers, say better— [beauty

*Rowl.* Well?

*Tra.* (Conceive me,  
This is no point o' th' wager.)

*Rowl.* That's all one.

*Tra.* Love you as much, or more, than she now  
hates you.

*Rowl.* 'Tis a good hearing! Let 'em love: Ten  
pound more,

I never love that woman.

*Tra.* There it is;

And so an hundred, if you lose.

*Rowl.* 'Tis done!

Have you another to put in?

*Tra.* No, no, sir.

*Rowl.* I'm very sorry. Now will I erect  
A new game, and go hate for th' bell; I'm sure  
I am in excellent case to win.

*Tra.* I must have leave

To tell you, and tell truth too, what she is,  
And how she suffers for you.

*Rowl.* Ten pound more,  
I ne'er believe you.

*Tra.* No, sir; I am stinted.

*Rowl.* Well, take your best way then.

*Tra.* Let's walk. I am glad

Your sullen fever's off.

*Rowl.* 'Shalt see me, Tranio,  
A monstrous merry man now. Let's to the wed-  
And, as we go, tell me the general hurry [ding;]  
Of these mad wenches, and their works.

*Tra.* I will.

*Rowl.* And do thy worst.

*Tra.* Something I'll do—

*Rowl.* Do, Tranio. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Room in the House of  
PETRUCHIO.

Enter PEDRO and JAKUES.

*Pedro.* A pair of stocks bestride 'em! are they  
gone?

*Jakues.* Yes, they are gone; and all the pans i'  
th' town

Beating before 'em. What strange admonitions  
They gave my master, and how fearfully  
They threaten'd, if he broke 'em!

*Pedro.* O' my conscience,  
He has found his full match now.

*Jakues.* That I believe too.

*Pedro.* How did she entertain him?

*Jakues.* She look'd on him—

*Pedro.* But scurvily.

*Jakues.* With no great affection  
That I saw: And I heard some say he kiss'd her,  
But 'twas upon a treaty; and some copies  
Say, but her cheek.

*Pedro.* Jakues, what wouldst thou give  
For such a wife now?

*Jakues.* Full as many prayers

As the most zealous Puritan conceives  
Out of the meditation of fat veal,  
Or birds of prey, cramm'd capons, against players,  
And to as good a tune too; but against her,  
"That Heaven would bless me from her!" Mark  
it, Pedro;

If this house be not turn'd within this fortnight  
With the foundation upward, I'll be carted.

My comfort is yet, that those Amorites  
That came to back her cause, those heathen whores,  
Had their hoods hallowed with sack.

*Pedro.* How devilish drunk they were!

*Jakues.* And how they tumbled, Pedro! Didst  
The country cavaliero? [thou mark

*Pedro.* Out upon her,  
How she turn'd down the bragget!

*Jakues.* Ay, that sunk her.

*Pedro.* That drink was well put to her: What a  
somersalt,  
When the chair fell, she fetch'd with her heels  
upward!

*Jaques.* And what a piece of landskip she discover'd!

*Pedro.* Didst mark her when her hood fell in the posset?

*Jaques.* Yes, and there rid, like a Dutch hoy. When she had got her ballast— [The tumbrel,

*Pedro.* That I saw too.

*Jaques.* How fain she would have drawn on Sophocles

To come aboard, and how she simper'd it—

*Pedro.* I warrant her, she has been a worthy striker.

*Jaques.* I' th' heat of summer, there had been

*Pedro.* Hang her! [some hope on't.

*Jaques.* She offer'd him a Harry-groat, and belch'd out,

Her stomach being blown with ale, such courtship, Upon my life, has given him twenty stools since. Believe my calculation, these old women, When they are tipped, and a little heated, Are like new wheels; they'll roar you all the town Till they be greased. [o'er

*Pedro.* The city cinque-pace,

Dame Toast-and-Butter, had the bob too.

*Jaques.* Yes:

But she was sullen drunk, and giv'n to filching;

I see her offer at a spoon.—My master!

I do not like his look; I fear he has fasted,

For all this preparation: Let's steal by him.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter PETRUCHIO and SOPHOCLES.*

*Soph.* Not let you touch her all this night?

*Pedro.* Not touch her.

*Soph.* Where was your courage?

*Pedro.* Where was her obedience?

Never poor man was shamed so; never basely

That keeps a stud of whores was used so rascally.

*Soph.* Pray you tell me one thing truly; do you love her?

*Pedro.* I would I did not; upon that condition I pass'd thee half my land.

*Soph.* It may be then,

Her modesty required a little violence:

Some women love to struggle.

*Pedro.* She had it,

And so much that I sweat for't, so I did;

But to no end; I wash'd an Ethiop.

She swore my force might weary her, but win her

I never could, nor should, till she consented;

And I might take her body prisoner,

But for her mind or appetite—

*Soph.* 'Tis strange!

This woman is the first I ever read of,

Refused a warranted occasion,

And standing on so fair terms.

*Pedro.* I shall quit her.

*Soph.* Used you no more art?

*Pedro.* Yes; I swore to her,

And by no little ones, if presently,

Without more disputation on the matter,

She grew not nearer to me, and dispatch'd me

Out of the pain I was, (for I was nettled,)

And willingly, and eagerly, and sweetly,

I would to her chamber-maid, and in her hearing

Begin her such a hunts-up—

*Soph.* Then she started?

*Pedro.* No more than I do now: Marry, she answer'd,

If I were so disposed, she could not help it;

But there was one call'd Jaques, a poor butler,

One that might well content a single woman.

*Soph.* And he should tilt her?

*Pedro.* To that sense. And last, She bade me yet these six nights look for nothing, Nor strive to purchase it, but fair good-night, And so good-morrow, and a kiss or two To close my stomach; for her vow had seal'd it, And she would keep it constant.

*Soph.* Stay you, stay you!

Was she thus when you woo'd her?

*Pedro.* Nothing, Sophocles, More keenly eager: I was oft afraid She had been light and easy, she would shower Her kisses so upon me.

*Soph.* Then I fear

Another spoke's i' th' wheel.

*Pedro.* Now thou hast found me!

There gnaws my devil, Sophocles. Oh, Patience, Preserve me! that I make her not example By some unworthy way; as flaying her, Boiling, or making verjuice, drying her—

*Soph.* I hear her.

*Pedro.* Mark her then, and see the heir

Of spite and prodigality! She has studied

A way to beggar us both, and by this hand

She shall be, if I live, a doxy.

[*MARIA appears at the door, with a Servant and Woman.*

*Soph.* Fy, sir!

*Maria.* I do not like that dressing; 'tis too poor:

Let me have six gold laces, broad and massy,

And betwixt every lace a rich embroidery;

Line the gown through with plush perfumed, and

All the sleeves down with pearl! [purfle

*Pedro.* What think you, Sophocles?

In what point stands my state now?

*Maria.* For those hangings,

Let 'em be carried where I gave appointment,

They are too base for my use; and bespeak

New pieces, of the civil wars of France:

Let 'em be large and lively, and all silk-work,

The borders gold.

*Soph.* Ay, marry, sir, this cuts it.

*Maria.* That fourteen yards of sattin give my

I do not like the colour, 'tis too civil; [woman;

There's too much silk i' th' lace too. Tell the

Dutchman,

That brought the mares, he must with all speed

send me

Another suit of horses; and, by all means,

Ten cast of hawks for th' river: I much care not

What price they bear, so they be sound, and flying;

For the next winter I am sure for the country,

And mean to take my pleasure. Where's the

horseman?

*Pedro.* She means to ride a great-horse.

*Soph.* With a side-saddle?

*Pedro.* Yes; and she'll run a-tilt within this

twelvemonth.

*Maria.* To-morrow I'll begin to learn: But pray,

Have a great care he be an easy doer; [sir,

'Twill spoil a scholar else.

*Soph.* An easy doer!

Did you hear that?

*Pedro.* Yes; I shall meet her morals

Ere it be long, I fear not.

*Maria.* [*Entering.*] Oh, good morrow!

*Soph.* Good morrow, lady! How is't now?

*Maria.* 'Faith, sickly;

This house stands in an ill air—

*Pedro.* Yet more charges?

*Maria.* Subject to rots and rheums; out on't!  
But a tiled fog. [ 'tis nothing

*Petru.* What think you of the Lodge then?

*Maria.* I like the seat, but 'tis too little.—  
Sophocles,

Let me have thy opinion; thou hast judgment.

*Petru.* 'Tis very well!

*Maria.* What if I pluck it down,  
And build a square upon it, with two courts  
Still rising from the entrance?

*Petru.* And i' th' midst  
A college for young scolds.

*Maria.* And to the southward  
Take in a garden of some twenty acres,  
And cast it of the Italian fashion, hanging?

*Petru.* An you could cast yourself so too—Pray,  
Will not this cost much money? [lady,

*Maria.* Some five thousand;  
Say six. I'll have it battled too—

*Petru.* And gilt?—*Maria,*  
This is a fearful course you take! Pray think on't:  
You are a woman now, a wife, and his  
That must in honesty and justice look for  
Some due obedience from you.

*Maria.* That bare word  
Shall cost you many a pound more. Build upon't!  
Tell me of due obedience? What's a husband?  
What are we married for? to carry sumpters?  
Are we not one piece with you, and as worthy  
Our own intentions as you yours?

*Petru.* Pray hear me!

*Maria.* Take two small drops of water, equal  
weigh'd,  
Tell me which is the heaviest, and which ought  
First to descend in duty?

*Petru.* You mistake me;  
I urge not service from you, nor obedience  
In way of duty, but of love and credit:  
All I expect is but a noble care  
Of what I have brought you, and of what I am,  
And what our name may be.

*Maria.* That's in my making.

*Petru.* 'Tis true, it is so.

*Maria.* Yes, it is, Petrachio;  
For there was never man without our moulding,  
Without our stamp upon him, and our justice,  
Left anything, three ages after him,  
Good, and his own.

*Soph.* Good lady, understand him.

*Maria.* I do too much, sweet Sophocles: He's  
Of a most spiteful self-condition, [one  
Never at peace with anything but age,  
That has no teeth left to return his anger:  
A bravery dwells in his blood yet, of abusing  
His first good wife; he's sooner fire than powder,  
And sooner mischief.

*Petru.* If I be so sudden,  
Do not you fear me?

*Maria.* No, nor yet care for you;  
And, if it may be lawful, I defy you!

*Petru.* Does this become you now?

*Maria.* It shall become me.

*Petru.* Thou disobedient, weak, vain-glorious  
woman,  
Were I but half so wilful as thou spiteful,  
I should now drag thee to thy duty.

*Maria.* Drag me?

*Petru.* But I am friends again; take all your  
pleasure!

*Maria.* Now you perceive him, Sophocles.

*Petru.* I love thee

Above thy vanity, thou faithless creature!

*Maria.* [To SOPHOCLES.] 'Would I had been so  
happy, when I married,

But to have met an honest man like thee,  
(For I am sure thou art good, I know thou art  
A handsome hurtless man, a loving man, [honest]  
Though never a penny with him, and those eyes,  
That face, and that true heart!—Wear this for my  
sake, [Gives him a ring.

And when thou think'st upon me, pity me;  
I'm cast away! [Exit.

*Soph.* Why, how now, man?

*Petru.* Pray leave me;

And follow your advices.

*Soph.* The man's jealous.

*Petru.* I shall find a time, ere it be long, to ask  
One or two foolish questions. [you

*Soph.* I shall answer

As well as I am able, when you call me.—

If she mean true, 'tis but a little killing,

And if I do not venture, it's—

Farewell, sir! [Exit.

*Petru.* Pray, farewell!—Is there no keeping  
A wife to one man's use? no wintering  
These cattle without straying? 'Tis hard dealing,  
Very hard dealing, gentlemen, strange dealing!  
Now, in the name of madness, what star reign'd,  
What dog-star, bull, or bear-star, when I married  
This second wife, this whirlwind that takes all  
Within her compass? Was I not well warn'd,  
(I thought I had, and I believe I know it,)

And beaten to repentance, in the days  
Of my first doting? had I not wife enough  
To turn my love too? did I want vexation,  
Or any special care to kill my heart?

Had I not every morning a rare breakfast,  
Mix'd with a learned lecture of ill language,  
Louder than Tom o' Lincoln? and at dinner,

A diet of the same dish? Was there evening  
That e'er past over us, without *thou knave,*

Or *thou whore,* for digestion? had I ever

A pull at this same poor sport men run mad for,

But like a cur I was fain to shew my teeth first,

And almost worry her? And did Heaven forgive

And take this serpent from me, and am I [me,

Keeping tame devils now again? My heart aches!

Something I must do speedily: I'll die,

If I can handsomely, for that's the way

To make a rascal of her. I am sick,

And I'll go very near it, but I'll perish. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Room in the House of PETRONIUS.

Enter LIVIA, BIANCA, TRANTO, and ROWLAND.

*Livia.* Then I must be content, sir, with my  
*Rowl.* And I with mine. [fortune.

*Livia.* I did not think a look,

Or a poor word or two, could have displeasant

Such a fix'd constancy, and for your end too.

*Rowl.* Come, come, I know your courses! There's  
your gawgaws,

Your rings, and bracelets, and the purse you gave

The money's spent in entertaining you [me:

At plays, and cherry-gardens.

*Livia.* There's your chain too.

But, if you'll give me leave, I'll wear the hair still;

I would yet remember you.

*Bianca.* Give him his love, wench ;  
The young man has employment for't.

*Tra.* Fy, Rowland !

*Rowl.* You cannot fy me out a hundred pound  
With this poor plot.—Yet, let me ne'er see day  
more,

If something do not struggle strangely in me !

*Bianca.* Young man, let me talk with you.

*Rowl.* Well, young woman ?

*Bianca.* This was your mistress once.

*Rowl.* Yes.

*Bianca.* Are you honest ?

I see you are young and handsome.

*Rowl.* I am honest.

*Bianca.* Why, that's well said. And there's no  
doubt your judgment

Is good enough, and strong enough, to tell you  
Who are your foes, and friends : Why did you  
leave her ?

*Rowl.* She made a puppy of me.

*Bianca.* Be that granted :

She must do so sometimes, and oftentimes ;  
Love were too serious else.

*Rowl.* A witty woman !

*Bianca.* Had you loved me——

*Rowl.* I would I had !

*Bianca.* And dearly,

And I had loved you so—You may love worse, sir ;  
But that is not material.

*Rowl.* I shall lose !

*Bianca.* Some time or other, for variety,  
I should have call'd you fool, or boy, or bid you  
Play with the pages ; but have loved you still,  
Out of all question, and extremely too :

You are a man made to be loved.

*Rowl.* This woman

Either abuses me, or loves me deadly.

*Bianca.* I'll tell you one thing ; if I were to  
choose

A husband to mine own mind, I should think  
One of your mother's making would content me ;  
For o' my conscience she makes good ones.

*Rowl.* Lady,

I'll leave you to your commendations.—

I am in again, the devil take their tongues !

*Bianca.* You shall not go.

*Rowl.* I will. Yet thus far, Livia ;

Your sorrow may induce me to forgive you,

But never love again.—If I stay longer,

I have lost two hundred pound. [Apart.

*Livia.* Good sir, but thus much——

*Tra.* Turn, if thou be'st a man.

*Livia.* But one kiss of you ;

One parting kiss, and I am gone too.

*Rowl.* Come ;

I shall kiss fifty pound away at this clap,

We'll have one more, and then farewell.

*Livia.* Farewell !

*Bianca.* Well, go thy ways ! thou bear'st a  
kind heart with thee.

*Tra.* He has made a stand.

*Bianca.* A noble, brave young fellow,  
Worthy a wench indeed !

*Rowl.* I will—I will not. [Exit.

*Tra.* He's gone ; but shot again. Play you but  
your part,

And I will keep my promise ; forty angels

In fair gold, lady (wipe your eyes ! ) he's yours,  
If I have any wit.

*Livia.* I'll pay the forfeit.

*Bianca.* Come then ; let's see your sister, how  
she fares now,  
After her skirmish ; and be sure Moroso  
Be kept in good hand : Then all's perfect, Livia.  
[Exit.

SCENE IV.—A Hall in the House of  
PETRUCHIO.

Enter JAQUES and PEDRO.

*Pedro.* Oh, Jaques, Jaques, what becomes of  
Oh, my sweet master ! [us ?

*Jaques.* Run for a physician.

And a whole peck of 'pothecaries, Pedro.

*He will die, didle, didle, die,* if they come not

Quickly ; and bring all people that are skilful

In lungs and livers ; raise the neighbours,

And all the *aquavita*-bottles extant ;

And, oh, the parson, Pedro, oh, the parson !

A little of his comfort, ne'er so little—

Twenty to one you find him at the Bush ;

There's the best ale.

*Pedro.* I fly !

[Exit.

Enter MARIA and SERVANTS.

*Maria.* Out with the trunks, ho !

Why are you idle ? Sirrah, up to th' chamber,

And take the hangings down, and see the linen

Pack'd up, and sent away within this half-hour.

What, are the carts come yet ? Some honest body

Help down the chests of plate, and some the

Alas, we are undone else ! [wardrobe ;

*Jaques.* Pray, forsooth,

And I beseech you, tell me, is he dead yet ?

*Maria.* No, but he's drawing on. Out with

*Jaques.* Then I'll go see him. [the armour !

*Maria.* Thou art undone then, fellow ;

No man that has been near him come near me !

Enter SOPHOCLES and PETRONIUS.

*Soph.* Why, how now, lady ? what means this ?

*Petron.* Now, daughter !

How does my son ?

*Maria.* Save all you can, for Heaven sake !

Enter LIVIA, BIANCA, and TRANIO.

*Livia.* Be of good comfort, sister.

*Maria.* Oh, my casket !

*Petron.* How does thy husband, woman ?

*Maria.* Get you gone,

If you mean to save your lives : The sickness—

*Petron.* Stand further off, I pr'ythee !

*Maria.* Is i' th' house, sir. My husband has it

Alas, he is infected ; and raves extremely : [now :

Give me some counsel, friends.

*Bianca.* Why, lock the doors up,

And send him in a woman to attend him.

*Maria.* I have bespoken two women, and the

city

Hath sent a watch by this time : Meat nor money

He shall not want, nor prayers.

*Petron.* How long is't

Since it first took him ?

*Maria.* But within this three hours.

Enter WATCH.

I am frighted from my wits !—Oh, here's the

watch.

Pray do your office ; lock the doors up, friends :

And patience be his angel !

*Tra.* This comes unlook'd for.

*Maria.* I'll to the Lodge: Some that are kind,  
and love me,  
I know will visit me.

*Petru.* [*Within.*] Do you hear, my masters?  
Ho, you that lock the doors up!

*Petron.* 'Tis his voice.

*Tra.* Hold, and let's hear him.

*Petru.* Will ye starve me here?

Am I a traitor, or an heretic?

Or am I grown infectious?

*Petron.* Pray, sir, pray!

*Petru.* I am as well as you are, goodman puppy.

*Maria.* Pray have patience!

You shall want nothing, sir.

*Petru.* I want a cudgel,

And thee, thou wickedness!

*Petron.* He speaks well enough.

*Maria.* He had ever a strong heart, sir.

*Petru.* Will ye hear me? First, be pleased

To think I know ye all, and can distinguish

Every man's several voice: You that spoke first,

I know my father-in-law; the other, Tranio;

And I heard Sophocles; the last, pray mark me,

Is my damn'd wife Maria.

If any man misdoubt me for infected,

There is mine arm, let any man look on't!

[*Thrusts his arm out of a window.*]

*Enter Doctor and Apothecary.*

*Doctor.* Save ye, gentlemen!

*Petron.* Oh, welcome, doctor!

You come in happy time. Pray, your opinion!

What think you of his pulse?

*Doctor.* It beats with busiest, [*Feels his pulse.*]

And shews a general inflammation,

Which is the symptom of a pestilent fever.

Take twenty ounces from him.

*Petru.* Take a fool!

Take an ounce from mine arm, and doctor Deuzace,

I'll make a close-stool of your velvet costard!—

Pox, gentlemen, do you make a May-game on me?

I tell ye once again, I am as sound,

As well, as wholesome, and as sensible,

As any of ye all. Let me out quickly,

Or, as I am a man, I'll beat the walls down,

And the first thing I light upon shall pay for't.

[*Exeunt Doctor and Apothecary.*]

*Petron.* Nay, we'll go with you, doctor.

*Maria.* 'Tis the safest.

I saw the tokens, sir.

*Petron.* Then there's but one way.

*Petru.* Will it please you open?

*Tra.* His fit grows stronger still.

*Maria.* Let's save ourselves, sir:

He's past all worldly cure.

*Petron.* Friends, do your office!

And what he wants, if money, love, or labour,

Or any way, may win it, let him have it.

Farewell, and pray, my honest friends. [*Exeunt.*]

*Petru.* Why, rascals!

Friends! gentlemen! thou beastly wife! Jaques!

None hear me? Who's at the door there?

1 *Watch.* Think, I pray, sir,

Whither you are going, and prepare yourself.

2 *Watch.* These idle thoughts disturb you: The

good gentlewoman,

Your wife, has taken care you shall want nothing.

*Petru.* Shall I come out in quiet? Answer me!

Or shall I charge a fowling-piece, and make

Mine own way? two of ye I cannot miss,  
If I miss three. Ye come here to assault me!

I am as excellent well, I thank Heaven for't,  
And have as good a stomach at this instant—

2 *Watch.* That's an ill sign!

1 *Watch.* He draws on; he's a dead man!

*Petru.* And sleep as soundly—Will you look  
upon me?

1 *Watch.* Do you want pen and ink? While you  
have sense, sir,

Settle your state.

*Petru.* Sirs, I am well as you are,

Or any rascal living.

2 *Watch.* 'Would you were, sir!

*Petru.* Look to yourselves, and, if you love  
your lives,

Open the door, and fly me! for I shoot else;

By Heaven, I'll shoot, and presently, chain-bullets;

And under four I will not kill.

1 *Watch.* Let's quit him!

It may be 'tis a trick. He's dangerous.

2 *Watch.* The devil take the hindmost, I cry!

[*Exeunt Watch running.*]

*Petru.* Have among ye!

The door shall open too; I'll have a fair shoot.

[*Bursts the door open, and enters with a fowling-piece.*]

Are ye all gone?—Tricks in my old days! crackers

Put now upon me? And by Lady Green-sleeves?

Am I grown so tame after all my triumphs?

But that I should be thought mad, if I rail'd,

As much as they deserve, against these women,

I would now rip up, from the primitive cuckold,

All their arch-villainies, and all their doubles;

Which are more than a hunted hare e'er thought on.

When a man has the fairest and the sweetest

Of all their sex, and as he thinks the noblest,

What has he then? and I'll speak modestly;

He has a quartern-ague, that shall shake

All his estate to nothing, never cured,

Nor never dying: he has a ship to venture

His fame and credit in, which if he man not

With more continual labour than a galley,

To make her tith, either she grows a tumbrel,

Not worth the cloth she wears, or springs more  
leaks

Than all the fame of his posterity

Can ever stop again. Out on 'em, hedge-hogs!

He that shall touch 'em has a thousand thorns

Runs through his fingers: If I were unmarried,

I would do any thing below repentance,

Any base dunghill slavery; be a hangman,

Ere I would be a husband. Oh, the thousand,

Thousand, ten thousand ways they have to kill us!

Some fall with too much stringing of the fiddles,

And those are fools; some, that they are not suffer'd,

And those are maudlin-lovers; some, like scorpions,

They poison with their tails, and those are martyrs;

Some die with doing good, those benefactors,

And leave 'em land to leap away; some few,

For those are rarest, they are said to kill

With kindness and fair usage; but what they are

My catalogue discovers not, only 'tis thought

They're buried in old walls, with their heels up-  
ward.

I could rail twenty days together now!

I'll seek 'em out; and if I have not reason,

And very sensible, why this was done,

I'll go a-birding yet, and some shall smart for't!

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of*  
PETRONIUS.*Enter MOROSO and PETRONIUS.*

*Mor.* That I do love her is without all question,  
And most extremely, dearly, most exactly!  
And that I would even now, this present Monday,  
Before all others, maids, wives, women, widows,  
Of what degree, or calling, marry her,  
As certain too; but to be made a whim-wham,  
A jib-crack, and a gentleman o' th' first house,  
For all my kindness to her—

*Petron.* How you take it!  
Thou get a wench? thou get a dozen night-caps!  
Wouldst have her come and lick thee like a calf,  
And blow thy nose, and buss thee?

*Mor.* Not so, neither.

*Petron.* What wouldst thou have her do?

*Mor.* Do as she should do;

Put on a clean smock, and to church, and marry,  
And then to bed a' God's name! This is fair play,  
And keeps the king's peace. Let her leave her bobs  
(I have had too many of them) and her quillets,  
She is as nimble that way as an eel;  
But in the way she ought, to me especially,  
A sow of lead is swifter.

*Petron.* Quote your griefs down.

*Mor.* Give fair quarter: I am old and crazy,  
And subject to much fumbling, I confess it;  
Yet something I would have that's warm, to hatch  
But understand me, I would have it so, [me:  
I buy not more repentance in the bargain  
Than the ware's worth I have. If you allow me  
Worthy your son-in-law and your allowance,  
Do it a way of credit, let me shew so;  
And not be troubled in my visitations  
With blows, and bitterness, and downright railings,  
As if we were to couple like two cats,  
With clawing and loud clamour.

*Petron.* Thou fond man,  
Hast thou forgot the ballad, "Crabbed Age?"  
Can May and January match together,  
And never a storm between 'em? Say she abuse  
Put case she do! [thee,

*Mor.* Well?

*Petron.* Nay, believe she does.

*Mor.* I do believe she does.

*Petron.* And devilishly:  
Art thou a whit the worse?

*Mor.* That's not the matter;  
I know, being old, 'tis fit I am abused;  
I know 'tis handsome, and I know moreover  
I am to love her for't.

*Petron.* Now you come to me.

*Mor.* Nay, more than this; I find too, and find  
certain,  
What gold I have, pearl, bracelets, rings, or ouches,  
Or what she can desire, gowns, petticoats,  
Waistcoats, embroider'd stockings, scarfs, cawls,  
feathers,

Hats, five-pound garters, muffs, masks, ruffs, and  
I am to give her for't. [ribbands,

*Petron.* 'Tis right, you are so.

*Mor.* But when I have done all this, and think  
Is't requisite another bore my nostrils? [it duty,  
Riddle me that!

*Petron.* Go, get you gone, and dream

She's thine within these two days, for she is so.  
The boy's beside the saddle! Get warm broths,  
And feed apace! think not of worldly business,  
It cools the blood; leave off your tricks, they are  
hateful,

And mere forerunners of the ancient measures;  
Contrive your beard o' th' top cut, like Verdugo's,  
It shews you would be wise; and burn your night-  
It looks like half a winding sheet, and urges [cap,  
From a young wench nothing but cold repentance;  
You may eat onions, so you'll not be lavish.

*Mor.* I am glad of that.

*Petron.* They purge the blood and quicken;  
But after 'em, conceive me, sweep your mouth,  
And where there wants a tooth, stick in a clove.

*Mor.* Shall I hope once again? say it!

*Petron.* You shall, sir;

And you shall have your hope.

*Mor.* Why, there's a match then!

*Enter BIANCA and TRANIO.*

*Bianca.* You shall not find me wanting; get you  
gone!

Here's the old man; he'll think you are plotting  
else

Something against his new son. [Exit TRANIO.

*Mor.* Fare you well, sir!

[Exit.

*Bianca.* An' ev'ry buck had his doe,  
And ev'ry cuckold a bell at his toe;  
Oh, what sport should we have then, boys, then,  
Oh, what sport should we have then!

*Petron.* This is the spirit that inspires 'em all.

*Bianca.* Give you good even!

*Petron.* A word with you, sweet lady!

*Bianca.* I am very hasty, sir.

*Petron.* So you were ever.

*Bianca.* Well, what's your will?

*Petron.* Was not your skilful hand  
In this last stratagem? Were not your mischiefs  
Eking the matter on?

*Bianca.* In his shutting up?

Is that it?

*Petron.* Yes.

*Bianca.* I'll tell you.

*Petron.* Do.

*Bianca.* And truly.

Good old man, I do grieve exceeding much,  
I fear too much.

*Petron.* I am sorry for your heaviness.

Belike you can repent then?

*Bianca.* There you are wide too:

Not that the thing was done (conceive me rightly)  
Does any way molest me.

*Petron.* What then, lady?

*Bianca.* But that I was not in it, there's my  
sorrow,

There; now you understand me! for I'll tell you,  
It was so sound a piece, and so well carried,  
And if you mark the way, so handsomely,  
Of such a height, and excellence, and art,

I have not known a braver; for, conceive me,  
When the gross fool her husband would be sick—

*Petron.* Pray stay!

*Bianca.* Nay, good, your patience!—And no  
Then stopt your daughter in— [sense for't,

*Petron.* By your appointment?

*Bianca.* I would it had, on that condition

I had but one half-smock, I like it so well!—  
And, like an excellent cunning woman, cured me  
One madness with another; which was rare,  
And to our weak beliefs, a wonder.

*Petron.* Hang you!

For surely, if your husband look not to you,  
I know what will.

*Bianca.* I humbly thank your worship!  
And so I take my leave.

*Petron.* You have a hand I hear too—

*Bianca.* I have two, sir.

*Petron.* In my young daughter's business.

*Bianca.* You will find there

A fitter hand than mine, to reach her frets,  
And play down-diddle to her.

*Petron.* I shall watch you.

*Bianca.* Do.

*Petron.* And I shall have justica.

*Bianca.* Where?

*Petron.* That's all one;

I shall be with you at a turn henceforward.

*Bianca.* Get you a posset too; and so good even,  
sir! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the House of  
PETRUCHIO.*

*Enter PETRUCHIO, JAQUES, and PEDRO.*

*Jaques.* And, as I told your worship, all the  
hangings,  
Brass, pewter, plate, even to the very looking-  
glasses.

*Pedro.* And that, that hung for our defence, the  
armour,

And the March-beer was going too: Oh, *Jaques*,  
What a sad sight was that!

*Jaques.* Even the two rundlets,  
The two that was our hope, of muskadel,  
Better ne'er tongue tript over, these two cannons,  
To batter brawn withal at Christmas, sir,  
Even those two lovely twins, the enemy  
Had almost cut off clean.

*Petru.* Go trim the house up,  
And put the things in order as they were!  
[*Exeunt PEDRO and JAQUES.*]

I shall find time for all this!—Could I find her  
But constant any way, I had done my business:  
Were she a whore directly, or a scold,  
An unthrift, or a woman made to hate me,  
I had my wish, and knew which way to reign her;  
But while she shews all these, and all their losses,  
A kind of linsey-wolsey, mingled mischief  
Not to be guess'd at, and whether true or borrow'd  
Not certain neither—What a hap had I,  
And what a tidy fortune, when my fate  
Flung me upon this bear-whelp! Here she comes.

*Enter MARIA.*

Now, if she have a colour, (for the fault is  
A cleanly one) upon my conscience  
I shall forgive her yet, and find a something  
Certain I married for, her wit: I'll mark her.

*Maria.* Not let his wife come near him in his  
sickness?

Not come to comfort him? she that all laws  
Of Heaven, and nations, have ordain'd his second,  
Is she refused? and two old paradoxes,  
Pieces of five and fifty, without faith,  
Clapt in upon him? Has a little pet,

That all young wives must follow necessary,  
Having their maidenheads—

*Petru.* This is an axiom  
I never heard before.

*Maria.* Or say rebellion,  
If we durst be so foul, (which two fair words,  
Alas, win us from in an hour, an instant,  
We are so easy) make him so forgetful  
Both of his reason, honesty, and credit,  
As to deny his wife a visitation?

His wife, that, though she was a little foolish,  
Loved him, oh, Heaven, forgive her for't! nay  
doted,

Nay, had run mad, had she not married him?

*Petru.* Though I do know this falser than the  
I cannot choose but love it. [*devil,*]

*Maria.* What do I know

But those that came to keep him, might have  
kill'd him?

In what a case had I been then! I dare not  
Believe him such a base debosh'd companion,  
That one refusal of a tender maid  
Would make him feign this sickness out of need,  
And take a keeper to him of fourscore  
To play at billiards; and one that mew'd content  
And all her teeth together. Not come near him?

*Petru.* This woman would have made a most  
She can prevaricate on any thing; [rare Jesuit;  
There was not to be thought a way to save her,  
In all imagination, beside this.

*Maria.* His unkind dealing, which was worst  
of all,

In sending, who knows whither, all the plate,  
And all the household-stuff, had I not cross'd it,  
By a great providence, and my friends' assistance,  
Which he will one day thank me for—Alas,  
I could have watch'd as well as they, have served  
In any use, better, and willing: [*him*]  
The law commands me to do it, Love commands  
And my own duty charges me. [*me,*]

*Petru.* Heaven bless me!  
And, now I have said my prayers, I'll go to her.—  
Are you a wife for any man?

*Maria.* For you, sir,  
If I were worse, I were better: That you are well,  
At least that you appear so, I thank Heaven,  
Long may it hold! and that you are here, I am  
glad too:

But that you have abused me wretchedly,  
And such a way that shames the name of husband,  
Such a malicious mangy way, so mingled—  
Never look strangely on me; I dare tell you—  
With breach of honesty, care, kindness, manners—

*Petru.* Holla! you kick too fast.

*Maria.* Was I a stranger?  
Or had I vow'd perdition to your person?  
Am I not married to you? Tell me that!

*Petru.* I would I could not tell you!

*Maria.* Is my presence,  
The stock I come of, which is worshipful,—  
If I should say right worshipful I lied not,  
My grandsire was a knight—

*Petru.* O' the shire?

*Maria.* A soldier,  
Which none of all thy family e'er heard of,  
But one conductor of thy name, a grasier  
That ran away with pay!—Or am I grown,  
Because I have been a little peevish to you,  
Only to try your temper, such a dog-leech,  
I could not be admitted to your presence?

*Petru.* If I endure this, hang me !  
*Maria.* And two death's heads,  
 Two Harry-groats that had their faces worn,  
 Almost their names away too—

*Petru.* Now hear me !  
 For I will stay no longer.

*Maria.* This you shall !  
 However you shall think to flatter me  
 For this offence, (which no submission  
 Can ever mediate for, you'll find it so)  
 Whatever you shall do by intercession,  
 What you can offer, what your land can purchase,  
 What all your friends or families can win,  
 Shall be but this, not to forswear your knowledge,  
 But ever to forbear it. Now your will, sir !

*Petru.* Thou art the subtlest woman I think  
 living,

I am sure the lowdest ! Now be still, and mark me !  
 Were I but any way addicted to the devil,  
 I should now think I had met a play-fellow  
 To profit by, and that way the most learned  
 That ever taught to murmur. Tell me, thou,  
 Thou most poor, paltry, spiteful whore—Do you  
 I'll make you roar, before I leave. [cry ?

*Maria.* Your pleasure !

*Petru.* Was it not sin enough, thou fruiterer,  
 Full of the fall thou eat'st, thou devil's broker,  
 Thou seminary of all sedition,  
 Thou sword of vengeance with a thread hung o'er  
 Was it not sin enough, and wickedness [us,  
 In full abundance, was it not vexation  
 At all points, *cap-a-piè*—Nay, I shall pinch you !—  
 Thus like a rotten rascal to abuse  
 The name of Heaven, the tie of marriage,  
 The honour of thy friends, the expectation  
 Of all that thought thee virtuous, with rebellion,  
 Childish and base rebellion ? but, continuing  
 After forgiveness too, and worse, your mischief ?  
 And against him, setting the hope of Heaven by,  
 And the dear reservation of his honour,  
 Nothing above-ground could have won to hate  
 Well, go thy ways ! [thee ?

*Maria.* Yes.

*Petru.* You shall hear me out first :  
 What punishment mayest thou deserve, thou thing,  
 Thou idle thing of nothing, thou pull'd primrose,  
 That two hours after art a weed, and wither'd,  
 For this last flourish on me ? Am I one  
 Selected out of all the husbands living,  
 To be so ridden by a tit of ten-pence ?  
 Am I so blind, and bed-rid ? I was mad,  
 And had the plague, and no man must come near  
 me !

I must be shut up, and my substance 'bezzled,  
 And an old woman watch me !

*Maria.* Well, sir, well ;  
 You may well glory in't.

*Petru.* And when it comes to opening, 'tis my  
 plot,

I must undo myself, forsooth ! Dost hear me ?  
 If I should beat thee now, as much may be,  
 Dost thou not well deserve it ? O' thy conscience,  
 Dost thou not cry, *Come beat me ?*

*Maria.* I defy you ! [stroke,  
 And, my last loving tears, farewell ! The first  
 The very first you give me, if you dare strike,  
 (Try me, and you shall find it so) for ever,  
 Never to be recall'd, (I know you love me,  
 Mad till you have enjoy'd me,) I do turn  
 Utterly from you ; and what man I meet first,

That has but spirit to deserve a favour,  
 Let him bear any shape, the worse the better,  
 Shall kill you, and enjoy me. What I have said  
 About your foolish sickness, ere you have me  
 As you would have me, you shall swear is certain,  
 And challenge any man that dares deny it ;  
 And in all companies approve my actions.  
 And so, farewell for this time ! [Exit.

*Petru.* Grief go with thee !  
 If there be any witchcrafts, herbs, or potions,  
 Saying my prayers backward, fiends, or fairies,  
 That can again unlove me, I am made. [Exit.

SCENE III.—*A Room in the House of* BIANCA.

*Enter* BIANCA and TRONIO.

*Tra.* Mistress, you must do't.  
*Bianca.* Are the writings ready  
 I told you of ?

*Tra.* Yes, they are ready ;  
 But to what use I know not.

*Bianca.* You are an ass,  
 You must have all things construed.

*Tra.* Yes, and pierced too,  
 Or I find little pleasure.

*Bianca.* Now you are knavish ;  
 Go to ! Fetch Rowland hither presently ;  
 Your twenty pound lies bleeding else ; she's married  
 Within these twelve hours, if we cross it not.  
 And see the papers of one size !

*Tra.* I have you,

*Bianca.* And for disposing of 'em—  
*Tra.* If I fail you,  
 Now I have found the way, use martial law,  
 And cut my head off with a hand-saw !

*Bianca.* Well, sir !  
 Petronius and Moroso I'll see sent for.  
 About your business ; go !

*Tra.* I am gone. [Exit.

*Bianca.* Ho, Livia !

*Enter* LIVIA.

*Livia.* Who's that ?

*Bianca.* A friend of yours. Lord, how you look  
 As if you had lost a carrack ! [now,

*Livia.* Oh, Bianca !  
 I am the most undone, unhappy woman—

*Bianca.* Be quiet, wench ! thou shalt be done,  
 and done,  
 And done, and double done, or all shall split for't.  
 No more of these minced passions ! they are  
 mangy,

And ease thee of nothing, but a little wind :  
 An apple will do more. Thou fear'st Moroso ?

*Livia.* Even as I fear the gallows.

*Bianca.* Keep thee there still !

And you love Rowland ? say.

*Livia.* If I say not,

I am sure I lie.

*Bianca.* What wouldst thou give that woman,  
 In spite of all his anger, and thy fear,  
 And all thy father's policy, that could  
 Clap ye within these two nights quietly  
 Into a bed together.

*Livia.* How ?

*Bianca.* Why, fairly,  
 At half-sword, man and wife :—Now the red blood  
 Ay, marry, now the matter's changed. [comes !

*Livia.* Bianca,  
 Methinks you should not mock me.

*Bianca.* Mock a pudding !  
I speak good honest English, and good meaning.  
*Livia.* I should not be ungrateful to that woman.

*Bianca.* I know thou wouldst not : Follow but my counsel,  
And if thou hast him not, despite of fortune,  
Let me never know a good night more ! You must be very sick o' th' instant.

*Livia.* Well, what follows ?

*Bianca.* And in that sickness send for all your friends,

Your father and your fever, old Moroso ;  
And Rowland shall be there too.

*Livia.* What of these ?

*Bianca.* Do you not twitter yet ? Of this shall follow

That which shall make thy heart leap, and thy lips  
Venture as many kisses as the merchants  
Do dollars to the East-Indies : You shall know all ;  
But first walk in and practise ; pray be sick.

*Livia.* I do believe you, and I am sick.

*Bianca.* Do.

To bed then ; come !—I'll send away your servants  
Post for your fool, and father : And, good Fortune,  
As we mean honesty, now strike an up-shot !

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Street.*

Enter *TRANIO* and *ROWLAND.*

*Tra.* Nay, on my conscience, I have lost my money ;  
But that's all one : I'll never more persuade you ;  
I see you are resolute, and I commend you.

*Rowl.* But did she send for me ?

*Tra.* You dare believe me ?

*Rowl.* I cannot tell ; you have your ways for  
Allow'd you, *Tranio*, as well as I [profit  
Have to avoid 'em fear.

*Tra.* No, on my word, sir,  
I deal directly with you.

Enter *Servant* hastily.

*Rowl.* How now, fellow ?  
Whither post you so fast ?

*Serv.* Oh, sir, my master !  
Pray did you see my master ?

*Rowl.* Why your master ?

*Serv.* Sir, his jewel—

*Rowl.* With the gilded button ?

*Serv.* My pretty mistress *Livia*—

*Rowl.* What of her ?

*Serv.* Is fallen sick o' the sudden—

*Rowl.* How, o' th' sullens ?

*Serv.* O' th' sudden, sir, I say ; very sick.

*Rowl.* It seems she hath got the tooth-ache with  
raw apples.

*Serv.* It seems you have got the head-ache :  
Fare you well, sir !

You did not see my master ?

*Rowl.* Who told you so ?

*Tra.* No, no ; he did not see him.

*Rowl.* Farewell, blue-bottle.— [*Exit* *Servant.*]  
What should her sickness be ?

*Tra.* For you, it may be.

*Rowl.* Yes, when my brains are out, I may believe it ;

Never before, I am sure. Yet I may see her ;  
'Twill be a point of honesty.

*Tra.* It will so.

*Rowl.* It may be not too ; you would fain be  
fingering

This old sin-offering of two hundred, *Tranio* :  
How daintily and cunningly you drive me  
Up like a deer to th' toil ! yet I may leap it ;  
And what's the woodman then ?

*Tra.* A loser by you.

Speak, will you go or not ? To me 'tis equal.

*Rowl.* Come, what goes less ?

*Tra.* Nay, not a penny, *Rowland.*

*Rowl.* Shall I have liberty of conscience,  
Which, by interpretation, is ten kisses ?

Hang me, if I affect her ; yet, it may be.

This whoreson manners will require a struggling,  
Of two and twenty, or, by'r Lady, thirty.

*Tra.* By'r Lady, I'll require my wager then.

For if you kiss so often, and no kindness,

I have lost my speculation :—I'll allow you—

*Rowl.* Speak like a gamester now.

*Tra.* It may be two.

*Rowl.* Under a dozen, *Tranio*, there's no setting :  
You shall have forty shillings, wink at small faults.

Say I take twenty, come, by all that's honest,  
I do it but to vex her.

*Tra.* I'll no by-blows.

If you can love her, do ; if you can hate her,

Or any else that loves you—

*Rowl.* Pr'ythee, *Tranio* !

*Tra.* Why, farewell, twenty pound ! 'twill not  
You have my resolution. [*undo me ;*]

*Rowl.* And your money :

Which, since you are so stubborn, if I forfeit,

Make me a Jack o' Lent, and break my shins

For untagg'd points and counters ! I'll go with  
you ;

But if thou gett'st a penny by the bargain—

A parting kiss is lawful ?

*Tra.* I allow it.

*Rowl.* Knock out my brains with apples. Yet,  
a bargain ?

*Tra.* I tell you, I'll no bargains ; win and wear

*Rowl.* Thou art the strangest fellow ! [*it.*]

*Tra.* That's all one.

*Rowl.* Along then ! Twenty pound more, if thou  
I give her not a good word ! [*darest.*]

*Tra.* Not a penny. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Room in the House of*  
*PETRUCHIO.*

Enter *PETRUCHIO*, *JAQUES*, and *PEDRO.*

*Petru.* Pr'ythee, entreat her come ; I will not  
trouble her

Above a word or two. [*Exit* *PEDRO.*]

Ere I endure

This life, and with a woman, and a vow'd one

To all the mischiefs she can lay upon me,

I'll go to plough again, and eat leek-porridge !

(Begging's a pleasure to't, not to be number'd.)

No, there be other countries, *Jaques*, for me,

And other people ; yea, and other women :

If I have need, "here's money," "there's your  
ware."

Which is fair dealing ; and the sun, they say,

Shines as warm there as here ; and till I have lost

Either myself or her—I care not whether,

Nor which first—

*Jaques.* Will your worship hear me ?

*Petru.* And utterly outworn the memory  
Of such a curse as this, none of my nation  
Shall ever know me more.

*Jaques.* Out, alas, sir,  
What a strange way do you run!

*Petru.* Any way,  
So I out-run this rascal.

*Jaques.* Methinks now,  
If your good worship could but have the patience—  
*Petru.* The patience? why the patience?

*Jaques.* Why, I'll tell you;  
Could you but have the patience—

*Petru.* Well, the patience.

*Jaques.* To laugh at all she does, or, when she  
rails,

To have a drum beaten o' the top o' th' house,  
To give the neighbours warning of her larum,  
As I do when my wife rebels—

*Petru.* Thy wife?  
Thy wife's a pigeon to her, a mere slumber;  
The dead of night's not stiller—

*Jaques.* Nor an iron-mill.  
*Petru.* But thy wife is certain—

*Jaques.* That's false doctrine;  
You never read of a certain woman.

*Petru.* Thou know'st her way.  
*Jaques.* I should do, I am sure;

I have ridden it night and day, this twenty year.  
*Petru.* But mine is such a drench of balderdash,  
Such a strange carded cunningness, the rainbow,  
When she hangs bent in Heaven, sheds not her  
colours

Quicker, and more, than this deceitful woman  
Weaves in her dyes of wickedness.

*Enter PEDRO.*

What says she?

*Pedro.* Nay, not a word, sir; but she pointed  
to me,

As though she meant to follow. Pray, sir, bear it  
Even as you may: I need not teach your worship  
The best men have their crosses, we are all mor-

*Petru.* What ails the fellow? [tal—  
*Pedro.* And no doubt she may, sir—

*Petru.* What may she? or what does she? or  
what is she?

Speak and be hang'd!

*Pedro.* She's mad, sir.

*Petru.* Heaven continue it!

*Pedro.* Amen, if't be his pleasure.

*Petru.* How mad is she?

*Pedro.* As mad as heart can wish, sir: She has  
dress'd herself

(Saving your worship's reverence) just i' th' cut  
Of one of those that multiply i' th' suburbs  
For single money, and as dirtily:  
If any speak to her, first she whistles,  
And then begins her compass with her fingers,  
And points to what she would have.

*Petru.* What new way's this?

*Pedro.* There came in master Sophocles—

*Petru.* And what

Did master Sophocles, when he came in?

Get my trunks ready, sirrah! I'll be gone straight.

*Pedro.* He's here to tell you.—

She's horn mad, Jaques.

*Enter SOPHOCLES.*

*Soph.* Call you this a woman?

*Petru.* Yes, sir, she is a woman.

*Soph.* Sir, I doubt it.

*Petru.* I had thought you had made experience.

*Soph.* Yes, I did so,  
And almost with my life.

*Petru.* You rid too fast, sir.

*Soph.* Pray, be not mistaken: By this hand,  
Your wife's as chaste and honest as a virgin,  
For anything I know! 'Tis true, she gave me  
A ring—

*Petru.* For rutting.

*Soph.* You are much deceived still:  
Believe me, I ne'er kiss'd her since; and now  
Coming in visitation like a friend,  
(I think she's mad, sir) suddenly she started,  
And snatch'd the ring away, and drew her knife  
To what intent I know not. [out,

*Petru.* Is this certain?

*Soph.* As I am here, sir.

*Petru.* I believe you honest;  
And pray continue so.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Soph.* She comes.

*Petru.* Now, damsel,  
What will your beauty do, if I forsake you?

[*She makes signs.*

Do you deal by signs and tokens? As I guess then,  
You'll walk abroad this summer, and catch cap-  
tains;

Or hire a piece of holy ground i' th' suburbs,  
And keep a nest of nuns?

*Soph.* Oh, do not stir her!  
You see in what a case she is.

*Petru.* She's dogged,  
And in a beastly case, I am sure.—I'll make her,  
If she have any tongue, yet tattler.—Sophocles,  
Pr'ythee observe this woman seriously,  
And eye her well; and when thou hast done, but  
tell me

(For thou hast understanding) in what case  
My sense was, when I chose this thing.

*Soph.* I'll tell you,  
I have seen a sweeter—

*Petru.* An hundred times, cry oysters.  
There's a poor beggar-wench about Black-Friars,  
Runs on her breech, may be an empress to her.

*Soph.* Nay, now you are too bitter.

*Petru.* Never a whit, sir.—

I'll tell thee, woman, for now I have day to see  
thee,

And all my wits about me, and I speak  
Not out of passion neither (leave your mumping;  
I know you are well enough).—Now would I give

[*Apart.*

A million but to vex her!—When I chose thee  
To make a bedfellow, I took more trouble  
Than twenty terms can come to; such a cause,  
Of such a title and so everlasting,  
That Adam's genealogy may be ended  
Ere any law find thee: I took a leprosy,  
Nay worse, the plague, nay worse yet, a pos-  
session,

And had the devil with thee, if not more;  
And yet worse, was a beast, and like a beast  
Had my reward, a jade to fling my fortunes:  
For who that had but reason to distinguish  
The light from darkness, wine from water, hunger  
From full satiety, and fox from fern-bush,  
That would have married thee?

*Soph.* She's not so ill.

*Petru.* She's worse than I dare think of; she's  
so lewd

No court is strong enough to bear her cause ;  
She hath neither manners, honesty, behaviour,  
Wifehood, nor womanhood ; nor any mortal  
Can force me think she had a mother : No,  
I do believe her stedfastly, and know her,  
To be a woman-wolf by transmigration :  
Her first form was a ferret's under-ground ;  
She kills the memories of men.—Not yet ?

*Soph.* Do you think she's sensible of this ?

*Petru.* I care not !

Be what she will, the pleasure I take in her,  
Thus I blow off ; the care I took to love her,  
Like this point, I unty, and thus I loose it ;  
The husband I am to her, thus I sever :  
My vanity, farewell ! Yet, for you have been  
So near me, as to bear the name of wife,  
My unquench'd charity shall tell you thus much,  
Though you deserve it well, you shall not beg :  
What I ordain'd your jointure, honestly  
You shall have settled on you, and half my house ;  
The other half shall be employ'd in prayers,  
(That meritorious charge I'll be at also)  
Yet to confirm you christian ; your apparel,  
And what belongs to build up such a folly,  
Keep, I beseech you, it infects our uses :  
And now I am for travel.

*Maria.* Now I love you ;

And now I see you are a man, I'll talk to you ;  
And I forget your bitterness.

*Soph.* How now, man ?

*Petru.* Oh, Pliny, if thou wilt be ever famous,  
Make but this woman all thy wonders !

*Maria.* Sure, sir,

You have hit upon a happy course, a blessed,  
And what will make you virtuous.

*Petru.* She'll ship me.

*Maria.* A way of understanding I long wish'd  
for ;

And now 'tis come, take heed you fly not back,  
sir !

Methinks you look a new man to me now,  
A man of excellence ; and now I see  
Some great design set in you. You may think now  
(And so may most that know me) 'twere my part  
Weakly to weep your loss, and to resist you ;  
Nay, hang about your neck, and, like a dotard,  
Urge my strong tie upon you : But I love you,  
And all the world shall know it, beyond woman ;  
And more prefer the honour of your country,  
Which chiefly you are born for, and may perfect  
The uses you may make of other nations,  
The ripening of your knowledge, conversation,  
The full ability and strength of judgment,  
Than any private love, or wanton kisses.  
Go, worthy man, and bring home understanding.

*Soph.* This was an excellent woman to breed  
schoolmen.

*Maria.* For if the merchant through unknown  
seas plough

To get his wealth, then, dear sir, what must you  
To gather wisdom ? Go, and go alone,  
Only your noble mind for your companion ;  
And if a woman may win credit with you,  
Go far, too far you cannot, still the farther  
The more experience finds you : And go sparing ;  
One meal a-week will serve you, and one suit,  
Through all your travels ; for you'll find it certain,  
The poorer and the baser you appear,  
The more you look through still.

*Petru.* Dost hear her ?

*Soph.* Yes.

*Petru.* What would this woman do, if she were  
Upon a new religion ? [suffer'd

*Soph.* Make us Pagans.

I wonder that she writes not.

*Maria.* Then when time,  
And fulness of occasion, have new-made you,  
And squared you from a sot into a signor,  
Or nearer, from a jade into a courser ;  
Come home an aged man, as did Ulysses,  
And I, your glad Penelope—

*Petru.* That must have

As many lovers as I languages :

And what she does with one i' th' day, i' th' night  
Undo it with another.

*Maria.* Much that way, sir ;  
For in your absence it must be my honour,  
That, that must make me spoken of hereafter,  
To have temptations, and not little ones,  
Daily and hourly offer'd me, and strongly,  
Almost believed against me, to set off  
The faith and loyalty of her that loves you.

*Petru.* What should I do ?

*Soph.* Why, by my soul, I would travel ;  
Did not you mean so ?

*Petru.* Alas, no ; nothing less, man ;  
I did it but to try, sir. She's the devil !

And now I find it, (for she drives me) I must  
go.—

Are my trunks down there, and my horses ready ?

*Maria.* Sir, for your house, and, if you please  
to trust me

With that you leave behind—

*Petru.* Bring down the money !

*Maria.* As I am able, and to my poor fortunes,  
I'll govern as a widow. I shall long  
To hear of your well-doing, and your profit ;  
And when I hear not from you once a quarter,  
I'll wish you in the Indies, or Cataya,  
Those are the climes must make you.

*Petru.* How's the wind ?—  
She'll wish me out o' th' world anon !

*Maria.* For France

'Tis very fair : Get you aboard to-night, sir,  
And lose no time ; you know the tide stays no  
I have cold meats ready for you. [man.

*Petru.* Fare thee well !

Thou hast fool'd me out o' th' kingdom with a  
vengeance !

And thou canst fool me in again.

*Maria.* Not I, sir ;

I love you better ; take your time, and pleasure.  
I'll see you horsed.

*Petru.* I think thou would'st see me hang'd too,  
Were I but half as willing.

*Maria.* Anything

That you think well of, I dare look upon.

*Petru.* You'll bear me to the land's end,  
Sophocles ?

And other of my friends, I hope.

*Maria.* Ne'er doubt, sir ;

You cannot want companions for your good.  
I am sure you'll kiss me ere I go ; I have business,  
And stay long here I must not.

*Petru.* Get thee going !

For if thou tarriest but another dialogue,  
I'll kick thee to thy chamber.

*Maria.* Fare you well, sir !

And bear yourself, I do beseech you once more,  
Since you have undertaken doing wisely,

Manly and worthily; 'tis for my credit.  
 And for those flying fames here of your follies,  
 Your gambols, and ill-breeding of your youth,  
 For which I understand you take this travel,  
 (Nothing should make me leave you else) I'll deal  
 So like a wife that loves your reputation,  
 And the most large addition of your credit,  
 That those shall die. If you want limon-waters,  
 Or any thing to take the edge o' th' sea off,  
 Pray speak, and be provided.

*Petru.* Now the devil,  
 That was your first good master, shower his bless-  
 Upon ye all! into whose custody— [ing]

*Maria.* I do commit your reformation;  
 And so I leave you to your *stilo novo*. [Exit.]

*Petru.* I will go!—Yet I will not!—Once more,  
 I'll put her to the test. [Sophocles,

*Soph.* You had better go.

*Petru.* I will go then!—Let's seek my father  
 And all my friends to see me fair aboard: [out,  
 Then, women, if there be a storm at sea  
 Worse than your tongues can make, and waves  
 more broken

Than your dissembling faiths are, let me feel  
 Nothing but tempests, till they crack my keel!

[Exit.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of PETRONIUS.*  
*A Table set out with ink and paper.*

*Enter PETRONIUS and BIANCA.*

*Bianca.* Now whether I deserve that blame you  
 Let all the world discern, sir. [gave me,

*Petron.* If this motion,  
 I mean this fair repentance of my daughter,  
 Spring from your good persuasion, as it seems so,  
 I must confess I have spoke too boldly of you,  
 And I repent.

*Bianca.* The first touch was her own,  
 Taken no doubt from disobeying you;  
 The second I put to her, when I told her  
 How good and gentle yet, with free contrition,  
 Again you might be purchased: Loving woman!  
 She heard me, and, I thank her, thought me  
 worthy

Observing in this point. Yet all my counsel  
 And comfort in this case could not so heal her,  
 But that grief got his share too, and she sicken'd.

*Petron.* I am sorry she's so ill; yet glad her  
 Has got so good a ground. [sickness]

*Enter MOROSO.*

*Bianca.* Here comes Moroso.

*Petron.* Oh, you are very welcome;  
 Now you shall know your happiness.

*Mor.* I am glad on't.

What makes this lady here?

*Bianca.* A dish for you, sir,  
 You'll thank me for hereafter.

*Petron.* True, Moroso:

Go, get you in, and see your mistress.

*Bianca.* She is sick, sir;  
 But you may kiss her whole.

*Mor.* How?

*Bianca.* Comfort her.

*Mor.* Why am I sent for, sir?

*Petron.* Will you in and see?

*Bianca.* May be she needs confession.

*Mor.* By Saint Mary,  
 She shall have absolution then and penance;  
 But not above her carriage.

*Petron.* Get you in, fool! [Exit MOROSO.]

*Bianca.* Here comes the other too.

*Enter ROWLAND and TRANIO.*

*Petron.* Now, Tranio!—  
 Good even to you too! and you are welcome.

*Rowl.* Thank you.

*Petron.* I have a certain daughter—

*Rowl.* 'Would you had, sir!

*Petron.* No doubt you know her well.

*Rowl.* Nor never shall, sir:

She is a woman; and the ways unto her  
 Are like the finding of a certain path  
 After a deep-fall'n snow.

*Petron.* Well, that's by th' bye still.  
 This daughter that I tell you of is fall'n  
 A little crop-sick, with the dangerous surfeit  
 She took of your affection.

*Rowl.* Mine, sir?

*Petron.* Yes, sir:

Or rather, as it seems, repenting. And there  
 She lies within, debating on it.

*Rowl.* Well, sir?

*Petron.* I think 'twere well you would see her.

*Rowl.* If you please, sir;

I am not squeamish of my visitation.

*Petron.* But this I'll tell you, she is alter'd  
 You'll find her now another Livia. [much;

*Rowl.* I have enough o' th' old, sir.

*Petron.* No more fool,  
 To look gay babies in your eyes, young Rowland,  
 And hang about your pretty neck—

*Rowl.* I am glad on't,

And thank my fates I have 'scaped such execution.

*Petron.* And buss you till you blush again.

*Rowl.* That's hard, sir;

She must kiss shamefully ere I blush at it;  
 I never was so boyish. Well, what follows?

*Petron.* She's mine now, as I please to settle  
 her,

At my command, and where I please to plant her:  
 Only she would take a kind farewell of you,  
 And give you back a wand'ring vow or two,  
 You left in pawn; and two or three slight oaths  
 She lent you too, she looks for.

*Rowl.* She shall have 'em,  
 With all my heart, sir; and, if you like it better,  
 A free release in writing.

*Petron.* That's the matter;

And you from her shall have another, Rowland,  
 And then turn tail to tail, and peace be with you!

*Rowl.* So be't.—Your twenty pound sweats,  
 Tranio.

*Tra.* 'Twill undo me, Rowland; do your

*Rowl.* Come, shall we see her, sir? [worst!

*Bianca.* What'er she says

You must bear manly, Rowland; for her sickness  
 Has made her somewhat teatish.

*Rowl.* Let her talk  
'Till her tongue ache, I care not. By this hand,  
Thou hast a handsome face, wench, and a body  
Daintily mounted!—Now do I feel an hundred  
Running directly from me, as I piss'd it.

*LIVIA brought in on a bed; MOROSO by her.*

*Bianca.* Pray draw her softly! the least hurry,  
Puts her to much impatience. [sir,

*Petron.* How is't, daughter?

*Livia.* Oh, very sick, very sick; yet somewhat  
Better, I hope, a little lightsomer,  
Because this good man has forgiven me.

Pray set me higher: Oh, my head!

*Bianca.* Well done, wench!

*Livia.* Father, and all good people that shall  
I have abused this man perniciously; [hear me,  
Was never old man humbled so: I have scorn'd  
him,

And call'd him nasty names; I have spit at him,  
Flung candles' ends in his beard, and call'd him  
Harrow,

That must be drawn to all he does; contemn'd  
him,

For methought then he was a beastly fellow,—

Oh, God, my side!—a very beastly fellow;  
And gave it out his cassock was a barge-cloth,  
Pawn'd to his predecessor by a sculler,  
The man yet living; I gave him purging comfits  
At a great christning once,

That spoil'd his camblet breeches; and one night  
I strew'd the stairs with pease, as he pass'd down;  
And the good gentleman, (woe worth me for't!)  
Even with his reverend head, this head of wisdom,  
Told two and twenty stairs, good and true,  
Miss'd not a step, and, as we say, *verbatim*  
Fell to the bottom, broke his casting bottle,  
Lost a fair toad-stone of some eighteen shillings,  
Jumbled his joints together, had two stools,  
And was translated. All this villainy  
Did I: I, Livia: I alone, untaught.

*Mor.* And I, unask'd, forgive it.

*Livia.* Where's Bianca?

*Bianca.* Here, cousin.

*Livia.* Give me drink.

*Bianca.* There.

*Livia.* Who's that?

*Mor.* Rowland.

*Livia.* Oh, my dissembler, you and I must part.  
Come nearer, sir.

*Rowl.* I am sorry for your sickness.

*Livia.* Be sorry for yourself, sir: You have  
wrong'd me;

But I forgive you.—Are the papers ready?

*Bianca.* I have 'em here:—Will't please you

*Petron.* Yes. [view 'em?

*Livia.* Shew 'em the young man too; I know  
he's willing

To shift his sails too; 'tis for his more advance-  
ment:

Alas, we might have beggar'd one another;  
We are young both, and a world of children  
Might have been left behind to curse our follies;  
We had been undone, Bianca, had we married,  
Undone for ever. I confess I loved him  
(I care not who shall know it) most entirely;  
And once, upon my conscience, he loved me:  
But farewell that! we must be wiser, cousin;  
Love must not leave us to the world. Have you

*Rowl.* Yes, and am ready to subscribe. [done?

*Livia.* Pray stay then.

Give me the papers, (and let me peruse them,)  
And so much time as may afford a tear  
At our last parting.

*Bianca.* Pray retire, and leave her;  
I'll call ye presently.

*Petron.* Come, gentlemen;  
The shower must fall.

*Rowl.* 'Would I had never seen her! [Exit.

*Bianca.* Thou hast done bravely, wench.

*Livia.* Pray Heaven, it prove so!

*Bianca.* There are the other papers: When  
they come,

Begin you first, and let the rest subscribe  
Hard by your side; give 'em as little light  
As drapers do their wares.

*Livia.* Didst mark Moroso,  
In what an agony he was? and how he cried most  
When I abused him most?

*Bianca.* That was but reason.

*Livia.* Oh, what a stinking thief is this!  
Though I was but to counterfeit, he made me  
Directly sick indeed; Thames-street to him  
Is a mere pomander.

*Bianca.* Let him be hang'd!

*Livia.* Amen!

*Bianca.* And lie you still;  
And once more to your business!

*Livia.* Call 'em in.—  
Now, if there be a power that pities lovers,  
Help now, and hear my prayers!

*Enter PETRONIUS, ROWLAND, TRANIO, and MOROSO.*

*Petron.* Is she ready?

*Bianca.* She has done her lamentations: Pray  
go to her.

*Livia.* Rowland, come near me; and, before  
you seal,

Give me your hand: Take it again; now kiss me!  
This is the last acquaintance we must have!  
I wish you ever happy! There's the paper.

*Rowl.* Pray stay a little!

*Petron.* Let me never live more,  
But I do begin to pity this young fellow;  
How heartily he weeps!

*Bianca.* There's pen and ink, sir.

*Livia.* Even here, I pray you: 'Tis a little  
How near you have been to me. [emblem

*Rowl.* [Signs.] There.

*Bianca.* Your hands too,  
As witnesses.

*Petron.* By any means; to the book, son.

*Mor.* With all my heart. [Signs.

*Bianca.* You must deliver it.

*Rowl.* There, Livia; and a better love light on  
I can no more. [thee!

*Bianca.* To this you must be witness too.

*Petron.* We will. [They sign.

*Bianca.* Do you deliver it now.

*Livia.* Pray set me up.  
There, Rowland, all thy old love back; and may  
A new to come exceed mine, and be happy!  
I must no more.

*Rowl.* Farewell!

*Livia.* A long farewell! [Exit ROWLAND.

*Bianca.* Leave her by any means, till this wild  
passion

Be off her head. Draw all the curtains close.  
A day hence you may see her; 'twill be better:  
She's now for little company.

*Petron.* Pray tend her.

I must to horse straight; you must needs along too,  
To see my son aboard: Were but his wife  
As fit for pity as this wench, I were happy.

*Bianca.* Time must do that too. Fare ye well!  
To-morrow

You shall receive a wife to quit your sorrow,  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in PETRUCHIO'S House.*

*Enter JAQUES, PEDRO, and Porters, with a chest and hampers.*

*Jaques.* Bring 'em away, sirs!

*Pedro.* Must the great trunks go too?

*Jaques.* Yes, and the hampers. Nay, be speedy,  
He'll be at sea before us else. [masters!]

*Pedro.* Oh, Jaques!

What a most blessed turn hast thou—

*Jaques.* I hope so.

*Pedro.* To have the sea between thee and this  
woman!

Nothing can drown her tongue but a storm.

*Jaques.* By your leave,

We'll get us up to Paris with all speed;  
For, on my soul, as far as Amiens

She'll carry blank. Away to Lyon-key,  
And ship 'em presently! we'll follow ye.

*Pedro.* Now could I wish her in that trunk.

*Jaques.* God shield, man!

I had rather have a bear in't.

*Pedro.* Yes, I'll tell you:

For in the passage, if a tempest take you,  
As many do, and you lie beating for it,  
Then, if it pleased the fates, I would have the  
Out of a powerful providence, to cry, [master,  
"Lighten the ship of all hands, or we perish;"]  
Then this for one, as best spared, should by all  
Over-board presently. [means]

*Jaques.* O' that condition,

So we were certain to be rid of her,  
I would wish her with us. But, believe me, Pedro,  
She would spoil the fishing on this coast for ever;  
For none would keep her company but dog-fish,  
As curriah as herself, or porpoises,  
Made to all fatal uses: The two Fish-Streets,  
Were she but once arrived among the whittings,  
Would sing a woful *misereri*, Pedro,  
And mourn in Poor-John, till her memory  
Were cast o' shore again, with a strong sea-breach;  
She would make god Neptune, and his fire-fork,  
And all his demi-gods and goddeases,  
As weary of the Flemish channel, Pedro,  
As ever boy was of the school; 'tis certain,  
If she but meet him fair, and were well anger'd,  
She would break his god-head.

*Pedro.* Oh, her tongue, her tongue!

*Jaques.* Rather her many tongues!

*Pedro.* Or rather strange tongues!

*Jaques.* Her lying tongue!

*Pedro.* Her liping tongue!

*Jaques.* Her long tongue!

*Pedro.* Her lawless tongue!

*Jaques.* Her loud tongue!

*Pedro.* And her liquorish—

*Jaques.* Many other tongues, and many stranger  
tongues

Than ever Babel had to tell his ruins,  
Were women raised withal; but never a true one.

*Enter SOPHOCLES.*

*Soph.* Home with your stuff again! the jour-  
ney's ended.

*Jaques.* What does your worship mean?

*Soph.* Your master—Oh, Petruccio! Oh, poor

*Pedro.* Oh, Jaques, Jaques! [fellows!]

*Soph.* Oh, your master's dead,  
His body coming back! His wife, his devil,  
The grief of her—

*Jaques.* Has kill'd him?

*Soph.* Kill'd him, kill'd him!

*Pedro.* Is there no law to hang her?

*Soph.* Get ye in,

And let her know her misery: I dare not,  
For fear impatience seize me, see her mood;  
I must away again. Bid her for wife-hood,  
For honesty, if she have any in her,  
Even to avoid the shame that follows her,  
Cry if she can. Your weeping cannot mend it.  
The body will be here within this hour, (so tell  
her,)

And all his friends to curse her. Farewell, fellows!  
[*Exit.*]

*Pedro.* Oh, Jaques, Jaques!

*Jaques.* Oh, my worthy master!

*Pedro.* Oh, my most beastly mistress! Hang her—

*Jaques.* Split her—

*Pedro.* Drown her directly—

*Jaques.* Starve her—

*Pedro.* Stink upon her—

*Jaques.* Stone her to death! May all she eat be  
'Till she run kicking-mad for men! [eggs,

*Pedro.* And he,

That man that gives her remedy, pray Heaven  
He may even *ipso facto* lose his longings!

*Jaques.* Let's go discharge ourselves; and he  
that serves her,

Or speaks a good word of her from this hour,  
A Sedgey curse light on him; which is, Pedro,  
"The fiend ride through him booted and spurr'd,  
with a scythe at his back!" [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Enter ROWLAND with a deed, and TRANIO stealing behind  
him.*

*Rowl.* What a dull ass was I to let her go thus!  
Upon my life, she loves me still. Well, paper,  
Thou only monument of what I have had,  
Thou all the love now left me, and now lost,  
Let me yet kiss her hand, yet take my leave  
Of what I must leave ever. Farewell, Livia!  
Oh, bitter words, I'll read you once again,  
And then for ever study to forget ye.— [Reads.]

How's this? let me look better on't! A contract?  
By Heaven, a contract, seal'd and ratified,  
Her father's hand set to it, and Moroso's!  
I do not dream sure! Let me read again;  
The same still; 'tis a contract!

*Tra.* 'Tis so, Rowland;

And, by the virtue of the same, you pay me  
An hundred pound to-morrow.

*Rowl.* Art sure, Tranio,

We are both alive now?

*Tra.* Wonder not; you have lost.

*Rowl.* If this be true, I grant it.

*Tra.* 'Tis most certain!

There's a ring for you too; you know it?

*Rowl.* Yes.

*Tra.* When shall I have my money ?

*Rowl.* Stay you, stay you !

When shall I marry her ?

*Tra.* To-night.

*Rowl.* Take heed now

You do not trifle with me : If you do,  
You'll find more payment than your money comes  
Come, swear, (I know I am a man, and find [to :  
I may deceive myself, ) swear faithfully,  
Swear me directly, am I Rowland ?

*Tra.* Yes.

*Rowl.* Am I awake ?

*Tra.* You are.

*Rowl.* Am I in health ?

*Tra.* As far as I conceive.

*Rowl.* Was I with Livia ?

*Tra.* You were, and had this contract.

*Rowl.* And shall I enjoy her ?

*Tra.* Yes, if you dare.

*Rowl.* Swear to all these.

*Tra.* I will.

*Rowl.* As thou art honest ; as thou hast a  
conscience,

As that may wring thee if thou liest ; all these

To be no vision, but a truth, and serious !

*Tra.* Then, by my honesty, and faith, and  
All this is certain. [conscience,

*Rowl.* Let's remove our places.

Swear it again.

*Tra.* By Heaven, it is true.

*Rowl.* I have lost then, and Heaven knows I  
am glad on't.

Let's go ; and tell me all, and tell me how,

For yet I am a pagan in it.

*Tra.* I have a priest too ;

And all shall come as even as two testers.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*An Apartment in PETRUCHIO'S  
House.*

*Enter PETRONIUS, SOPHOCLES, MOROSO, and PETRUCHIO  
borne in a coffin.*

*Petron.* Set down the body, and one call her out !

*Enter MARIA in black, weeping, and JACQUES.*

You are welcome to the last cast of your fortunes !  
There lies your husband ; there, your loving  
husband ;

There he that was Petruchio, too good for you !  
Your stubborn and unworthy way has killed him,  
Ere he could reach the sea : If you can weep,  
Now you have cause, begin, and after death  
Do something yet to the world, to think you ho-  
So many tears had saved him, shed in time ; [nest.  
And as they are (so a good mind go with 'em)  
Yet they may move compassion.

*Maria.* Pray ye all hear me.

And judge me as I am, not as you covet,  
For that would make me yet more miserable :  
'Tis true, I have cause to grieve, and mighty cause ;  
And truly and unfeignedly I weep it.

*Soph.* I see there's some good nature yet left  
in her.

*Maria.* But what's the cause ? Mistake me not ;  
not this man,

As he is dead, I weep for ; Heaven defend it !  
I never was so childish : But his life,  
His poor, unmanly, wretched, foolish life,  
Is that my full eyes pity ; there's my mourning.

*Petron.* Dost thou not shame ?

*Maria.* I do, and even to water,  
To think what this man was ; to think how simple,  
How far below a man, how far from reason,  
From common understanding, and all gentry,  
While he was living here, he walked amongst us.  
He had a happy turn, he died ! I'll tell ye,  
These are the wants I weep for, not his person ;  
The memory of this man, had he lived  
But two years longer, had begot more follies,  
Than wealthy Autumn flies. But let him rest,  
He was a fool, and farewell he ! not pitied,  
I mean in way of life, or action,  
By any understanding man that's honest,  
But only in his posterity, which I,  
Out of the fear his ruins might out-live him  
In some bad issue, like a careful woman,  
Like one indeed born only to preserve him,  
Denied him means to raise.

*Petru.* [Rising.] Unbutton me !  
By Heaven, I die indeed else !—Oh, Maria,  
Oh, my unhappiness, my misery !

*Petron.* Go to him, whore ! By Heaven, if he  
perish,

I'll see thee hang'd myself !

*Petru.* Why, why, Maria—

*Maria.* I have done my worst, and have my  
end : Forgive me !

From this hour make me what you please : I have  
tamed you,

And am now vow'd your servant. Look not  
strangely,

Nor fear what I say to you. Dare you kiss me ?

Thus I begin my new love. [*They kiss.*

*Petru.* Once again !

*Maria.* With all my heart.

*Petru.* Once again, Maria !—

Oh, gentlemen, I know not where I am.

*Soph.* Get ye to bed then ; there you'll quickly  
know, sir.

*Petru.* Never no more your old tricks ?

*Maria.* Never, sir.

*Petru.* You shall not need ; for, as I have a faith,  
No cause shall give occasion.

*Maria.* As I am honest,

And as I am a maid yet, all my life  
From this hour, since you make so free profession,  
I dedicate in service to your pleasure.

*Soph.* Ay, marry, this goes roundly off !

*Petru.* Go, Jaques,

Get all the best meat may be bought for money,

And let the hogaheads blood : I am born again !

Well, little England, when I see a husband

Of any other nation, stern or jealous,

I'll wish him but a woman of thy breeding ;

And if he have not butter to his bread

Till his teeth bleed, I'll never trust my travel.

*Enter ROWLAND, LIVIA, BIANCA, and TRANIO.*

*Petron.* What have we here ?

*Rowl.* Another morris, sir,

That you must pipe to.

*Tra.* A poor married couple

Desire an offering, sir.

*Bianca.* Never frown at it ;

You cannot mend it now : There's your own hand,

And yours, Moroso, to confirm the bargain.

*Petron.* My hand ?

*Mor.* Or mine ?

*Bianca.* You'll find it so.

*Petron.* A trick,  
By Heaven, a trick !  
*Bianca.* Yes, sir, we trick'd you.  
*Livia.* Father——  
*Petron.* Hast thou lain with him ? Speak !  
*Livia.* Yes, truly, sir.  
*Petron.* And hast thou done the deed, boy ?  
*Rowl.* I have done, sir,  
That that will serve the turn, I think.  
*Petru.* A match then !  
I'll be the maker-up of this.—*Moroso,*  
There's now no remedy, you see : Be willing ;  
For be, or be not, he must have the wench.  
*Mor.* Since I am over-reach'd, let's in to dinner ;  
And, if I can, I'll drink't away.  
*Tra.* That's well said !

*Petron.* Well, sirrah, you have play'd a trick :  
Look to't,  
And let me be a grandsire within this twelvemonth,  
Or, by this hand, I'll curtail half your fortunes !  
*Rowl.* There shall not want my labour, sir.  
Your money  
Here's one has undertaken.  
*Tra.* Well, I'll trust her ;  
And glad I have so good a pawn.  
*Rowl.* I'll watch you.  
*Petru.* Let's in, and drink of all hands, and be  
jovial !  
I have my colt again, and now she carries :  
And, gentlemen, whoever marries next,  
Let him be sure he keep him to his text.

[*Exeunt.*]

## EPILOGUE.

THE Tamer's Tamed ; but so, as nor the men  
Can find one just cause to complain of, when  
They fitly do consider, in their lives  
They should not reign as tyrants o'er their wives :  
Nor can the women, from this precedent,  
Insult, or triumph ; it being aptly meant,  
To teach both sexes due equality,  
And, as they stand bound, to love mutually.  
If this effect, arising from a cause  
Well laid and grounded, may deserve applause,  
We something more than hope, our honest ends  
Will keep the men, and women too, our friends.

# THE ISLAND PRINCESS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

KING OF TIDORE,  
KING OF BAKAM,  
PRINCE OF SYANA,  
ARMUSIA, } *Suitors to*  
RUY DIAS, } *QUISARA.*  
          } *Portuguese.*  
GOVERNOR OF TERNATA, *an Ill Man,*  
PINIERO, *Nephew to RUY DIAS, a merry Captain.*  
SOZA, } *Companions to ARMUSIA and his*  
EMANUEL, } *valiant Followers.*  
CHRISTOPHERO, } *Soldiers and Friends to PINIERO.*  
PEDRO, }  
Keeper.

Moors.  
Guard.  
Captain.  
Citizens and Townsmen.

QUISARA, *the ISLAND PRINCESS, Sister to the King of TIDORE.*  
QUISANA, *Aunt to the Princess.*  
PANURA, *Waiting-Woman to the Princess QUISARA.*  
Citizens' Wives.

SCENE,—TIDORE, EXCEPTING DURING THE GREATER PART OF THE SECOND ACT, WHEN IT IS TERNATA.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—TIDORE. *The Ramparts of the Portuguese Fort. A bell rings.*

*Enter PINIERO, CHRISTOPHERO, and PEDRO.*

*Piniero.* Open the ports, and see the watch reliev'd,

And let the guards be careful of their business,  
Their vigilant eyes fix'd on these islanders !  
They are false and desperate people ; when they  
The least occasion open to encouragement, [find  
Cruel and crafty souls. Believe me, gentlemen,  
Their late attempt, which is too fresh amongst us,  
In which, against all arms and honesty,  
The Governor of Ternata made surprise  
Of our confederate, the king of Tidore,  
(As for his recreation he was rowing  
Between both lands) bids us be wise and circum-  
spect.

*Chris.* It was a mischief suddenly imagined,  
And as soon done : That governor's a fierce knave,  
Unfaithful as he's fierce too ; there's no trusting.  
But I wonder much, how such poor and base plea-  
As tugging at an oar, or skill in steerage, [sures  
Should become princes.

*Pin.* Base breedings love base pleasure :  
They take as much delight in a baratto,  
(A little scurvy boat) to row her tithly,  
And have the art to turn and wind her nimbly,  
Think it as noble too, (though it be slavish,  
And a dull labour that declines a gentleman)  
As we Portugals, or the Spaniards, do in riding,  
In managing a great horse, (which is princely)  
The French in courtship, or the dancing English  
In carrying a fair presence.

*Pedro.* He was strangely taken ;

But where no faith is, there's no trust ; he has paid for't.

His sister yet, the fair and great Quisara,  
Has shew'd a noble mind, and much love in't  
To her afflicted brother ; and the nobler  
Still it appears, and seasons of more tenderness,  
Because his ruin styles her absolute,  
And his imprisonment adds to her profit.  
Feeling all this, which makes all men admire her,  
The warm beams of this fortune that fall on her,  
Yet has she made divers and noble treaties,  
And propositions for her brother's freedom,  
If wealth or honour—

*Pin.* Peace, peace ! you are fool'd, sir :  
Things' of these natures have strange outsides,  
*Pedro,*

And cunning shadows, set 'em far from us ;  
Draw 'em but near, they are gross, and they abuse  
us :

They that observe her close shall find her nature,  
Which, I doubt mainly, will not prove so excellent.  
She is a princess, and she must be fair,  
That's the prerogative of being royal ;  
Let her want eyes and nose, she must be beautiful,  
And she must know it too, and the use of it,  
And people must believe it, they are damn'd else :  
Why, all the neighbouring princes are mad for her.

*Chris.* Is she not fair then ?

*Pin.* But her hopes are fairer.

And there's a haughty master, the King of Bakam,  
That lofty sir, that speaks far more and louder,  
In his own commendations, than a cannon ;  
He is stricken dumb with her.

*Pedro.* Beshrew me, she is a sweet one !

*Pin.* And there's that hopeful man of Syana,

That sprightly fellow, he that's wise and temperate,  
He is a lover too.

*Chris.* 'Would I were worth her looking!  
For, by my life, I hold her a complete one:  
The very sun, I think, affects her sweetness,  
And dares not, as he does to all else, dye it  
Into his tawny livery.

*Pin.* She dares not see him,  
But keeps herself at distance from his kisses,  
And wears her complexion in a case: Let him but  
like it  
A week, or two, or three, she would look like a  
lion.

But the main sport on't is, or rather wonder,  
The Governor of Ternata, her mortal enemy,  
He that has catch'd her brother-king, is struck  
And is arrived under safe conduct also, [too,  
And hostages of worth deliver'd for him;  
And he brought a letter from his prisoner,  
(Whether compell'd, or willingly deliver'd)  
From the poor king; or what else dare be in't—

*Chris.* So it be honourable, anything, 'tis all  
For I dare think she'll do the best. [one;

*Pin.* 'Tis certain  
He has admittance, and solicits hourly.

Now if he have the trick—

*Pedro.* What trick?

*Pin.* The true one,  
To take her too: If he be but skill'd in bat-fowl—  
And lime his bush right— [ing,

*Chris.* I'll be hang'd when that hits:  
For 'tis not a compell'd or forced affection  
That must take her: I guess her stout and virtu-  
ous.—

But where's your uncle, sir, our valiant captain,  
The brave Ruy Dias, all this while?

*Pin.* Ay, marry,  
He is amongst 'em too.

*Pedro.* A lover?

*Pin.* Nay,  
I know not that; but sure he stands in favour,  
Or would stand stiffly; he's no Portugal else.

*Chris.* The voice says, in good favour; in the  
list too

Of the privy wooers. How cunningly of late  
(I have observed him) and how privately  
He has stolen at all hours from us, and how readily  
He has feign'd a business to bid the fort farewell  
For five or six days, or a month together!  
Sure there is something—

*Pin.* Yes, yes, there is a thing in't,  
A thing would make the best on's all dance after it,  
A dainty thing! Lord, how this uncle of mine  
Has read to me, and rated me for wenching,  
And told me in what desperate case 'twould leave  
And how 'twould stew my bones— [me,

*Pedro.* You cared not for it.

*Pin.* I'faith, not much; I ventured on still  
easily,

And took my chance; danger's a soldier's honour.  
But that this man, this herb of grace, Ruy Dias,  
This father of our faculties, should slip thus!  
(For sure he is a-ferreting) that he  
That would drink nothing, to depress the spirit,  
But milk and water, eat nothing but thin air,  
To make his blood obedient; that his youth,  
In spite of all his temperance, should tickle,  
And have a love-mange on him—

*Chris.* 'Tis in him, sir, [too.  
But honourable courtship, and becomes his rank

*Pin.* In me it were abominable lechery, or  
would be;  
For when our thoughts are on't, and miss their  
We must hit something. [level,

*Pedro.* Well, he's a noble gentleman;  
And, if he be a suitor, may he speed in't!

*Pin.* Let him alone; our family ne'er fail'd yet.

*Chris.* Our mad lieutenant still, merry Piniero!  
Thus would he do, if the surgeon were searching  
of him.

*Pedro.* Especially if a warm wench had shot  
him.

*Pin.* But hark, Christophero; come hither,  
*Pedro;*

When saw you our brave countryman, Armusia,  
He that's arrived here lately, and his gallants?  
A goodly fellow, and a brave companion  
Methinks he is, and no doubt truly valiant;  
For he that dares come hither dares fight anywhere.

*Chris.* I saw him not of late. A sober gentleman  
I am sure he is; and no doubt bravely sprung,  
And promises much nobleness.

*Pin.* I love him,  
And by my troth would fain be inward with him,  
Pray let's go seek him.

*Pedro.* We'll attend you, sir.

*Pin.* By that time, we shall hear the burst of  
business. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the House of  
QUISANA.*

*Enter RUY DIAS, QUISARA, QUISANA, and PANURA.*

*Quisar.* Aunt, I much thank you for your  
courtesy,

And the fair liberty you still allow me,  
Both of your house and service. Though I be  
A princess, and by that prerogative stand free  
From the poor malice of opinion,  
And no ways bound to render up my actions,  
Because no power above me can examine me;  
Yet, my dear brother being still a prisoner,  
And many wandering eyes upon my ways,  
Being left alone a sea-mark, it behoves me  
To use a little caution, and be circumspect.

*Quisan.* You are wise and noble, lady.

*Quisar.* Often, aunt,  
I resort hither, and privately to see you,  
It may be to converse with some I favour:  
I would not have it known as oft, nor construed;  
It stands not with my care.

*Quisan.* You speak most fairly;  
For even our pure devotions are examined.

*Quisar.* So mad are men's minds now.

*Ruy.* Or rather monstrous;  
They are thick dreams bred in fogs, that know no  
fairness.

*Quisan.* Madam, the house is yours, I am yours,  
(pray, use me)

And at your service all I have lies prostrate;  
My care shall ever be to yield you honour,  
And, when your fame falls here, 'tis my fault,  
lady.

A poor and simple banquet I have provided,  
Which if you please to honour with your presence—

*Quisar.* I thank you, aunt! I shall be with you  
A few words with this gentleman! [instantly.

*Quisan.* I'll leave you;  
And, when you please retire, I'll wait upon you.

[Exeunt QUISARA and PANURA.

*Quisar.* Why, how now, captain? What, afraid to speak to me?

A man of arms, and daunted with a lady?  
Commanders have the power to parle with princes.

*Ruy.* Madam, the favours you have still shower'd on me,

(Which are so high above my means of merit,  
So infinite, that nought can value 'em  
But their own goodness; no eyes look up to 'em  
But those that are of equal light and lustre)  
Strike me thus mute! You are my royal mistress,  
And all my services, that aim at honour,

Take life from you, the saint of my devotions.  
Pardon my wish! it is a fair ambition,

And well becomes the man that honours you:  
I would I were of worth, of something near you,  
Of such a royal piece! a king I would be,  
A mighty king that might command affection,  
And bring a youth upon me might bewitch you,  
And you a sweet-soul'd Christian.

*Quisar.* Now you talk, sir!  
You Portugals, though you be rugged soldiers,  
Yet, when you list to flatter, you are plain courtiers.  
And could you wish me Christian, brave Ruy Dias?

*Ruy.* At all the danger of my life, great lady,  
At all my hopes, at all—

*Quisar.* Pray you stay a little;  
To what end runs your wish?

*Ruy.* Oh, glorious lady,  
That I might—But I dare not speak.

*Quisar.* I dare then;  
That you might hope to marry me: Nay, blush  
An honourable end needs no excuse. [not;  
And would you love me then?

*Ruy.* My soul not dearer! [me that way,  
*Quisar.* Do some brave thing that may entice  
Something of such a meritorious goodness,

Of such an unmatch'd nobleness, that I may know  
You have a power beyond ours that preserves you.  
'Tis not the person, nor the royal title,

Nor wealth, nor glory, that I look upon;  
That inward man I love that's lined with virtue,  
That well-deserving soul works out a favour,  
I have many princes suitors, many great ones,  
Yet above these I love you; you are valiant,  
An active man, able to build a fortune;  
I do not say I dote, nor mean to marry;  
Only the hope is, something may be done  
That may compel my faith, and ask my freedom,  
And leave opinion fair.

*Ruy.* Command, dear lady!  
And let the danger be as deep as hell,  
As direful to attempt—

*Quisar.* You are too sudden;  
I must be ruled by you: Find out a fortune,  
Wisely and handsomely; examine Time,  
And court Occasion that she may be ready;  
A thousand uses for your forward spirit  
You may find daily; be sure you take a good one!  
A brave and worthy one, that may advance you!  
Forced smiles reward poor dangers: You're a  
soldier,

(I would not talk so else) and I love a soldier,  
And that that speaks him true and great, his valour:  
Yet for all these, which are but women's follies,  
You may do what you please; I shall still know  
And though you wear no sword— [you,

*Ruy.* Excellent lady!  
When I grow so cold, and disgrace my nation,  
That from their hardy nurses suck adventures,

'Twere fit I wore a tombstone. You have read to  
The story of your favour: If I mistake it, [me  
Or grow a truant in the study of it,  
A great correction, lady—

*Quisar.* Let's to th' banquet,  
And have some merrier talk, and then to court,  
Where I give audience to my general suitors!  
Pray Heaven my woman's wit hold! There, brave  
captain,

You may perchance meet something that may  
startle you:

I'll say no more: Come, be not sad! I love you.  
[Exit.

SCENE III.—A Hall in the Royal Castle.

Enter PINIERO, ARMUSIA, SOZA, CHRISTOPHERO, and  
EMANUEL.

*Pin.* You are welcome, gentlemen, most worthy  
welcome!

And know, there's nothing in our power may serve  
But you may freely challenge. [ye,

*Arm.* Sir, we thank you,  
And rest your servants too.

*Pin.* Ye are worthy Portugals;  
You shew the bravery of your minds and spirits,  
The nature of our country too, that brings forth  
Stirring unwearied souls to seek adventures,  
Minds never satisfied with search of honour:  
Where time is, and the sun gives light, brave coun-  
trymen,

Our names are known; new worlds disclose their  
riches,

Their beauties and their prides, to our embraces,  
And we the first of nations find these wonders.

*Arm.* These noble thoughts, sir, have enticed us  
forward,

And minds unapt for ease, to see these miracles,  
In which we find report a poor relater:  
We are arrived among the blessed islands,  
Where every wind that rises blows perfumes,  
And every breath of air is like an incense;  
The treasure of the sun dwells here; each tree,  
As if it envied the old Paradise,  
Strives to bring forth immortal fruit; the spices  
Renewing nature, though not deifying;  
And when that falls by time, scorning the earth,  
The sullen earth, should taint or suck their beauties,  
But as we dreamed, for ever so preserve us:  
Nothing we see, but breeds an admiration;  
The very rivers, as we float along,  
Throw up their pearls, and curl their heads to  
court us;

The bowels of the earth swell with the births  
Of thousand unknown gems, and thousand riches;  
Nothing that bears a life, but brings a treasure.  
The people they shew brave too, civil-manner'd,  
Proportion'd like the masters of great minds;  
The women, which I wonder at—

*Pin.* You speak well.

*Arm.* Of delicate aspects, fair, clearly beautiful,  
And, to that admiration, sweet and courteous.

*Pin.* And is not that a good thing? Brave Ar-  
You never saw the court before? [musia,

*Arm.* No, certain;  
But that I see a wonder too, all excellent,  
The government exact—

*Chris.* You shall see anon  
That that will make you start indeed! such beau-  
Such riches, and such form— [ties,

*Sosa.* We are fire already ;  
The wealthy magazine of Nature sure  
Inhabits here.

*Enter BAKAM, SYANA, and Governor of Ternata.*

*Arm.* These sure are all islanders.

*Pin.* Yes, and great princes too, and lusty lovers.

*Arm.* They are goodly persons. What might he  
That bears so proud a state? [be, signor,

*Pin.* King of Bakam,  
A fellow that farts terror.

*Eman.* He looks highly ;  
Sure he was begot o' th' top of a steeple.

*Chris.* It may well be ;  
For you shall hear him ring anon.

*Pin.* That is Syana,  
And a brave-temper'd fellow, and more valiant.

*Sosa.* What rugged face is that ?

*Pin.* That's the great governor,  
The man surpris'd our friend ; I told you of him.

*Arm.* He has dangerous eyes.

*Pin.* A perilous thief, and subtle !

*Chris.* And, to that subtilty, a heart of iron.

*Pin.* Yet the young lady makes it melt.

*Arm.* They start all,  
And thunder in the eyes.—

*Bakam.* Away, ye poor ones !  
Am I in competition with such bubbles ?

My virtue and my name rank'd with such trifles ?

*Syana.* You speak loud.

*Bakam.* Young man, I will speak louder !

Can any man but I deserve her favour,

You petty princes ?

*Pin.* He will put 'em all in's pocket.

[Princes fly at one another.

*Syana.* Thou proud mad thing, be not so full of  
So full of vanity ! [glory,

*Bakam.* How ! I contemn thee,

And that fort-keeping fellow !—

*Pin.* How the dog looks,

The bandog governor !—

*Gov.* Ha ! Why ?

*Bakam.* Away, thing,

And keep your rank with those that fit your 'roy-  
Call out the princess. [alty !

*Gov.* Dost thou know me, bladder,

Thou insolent imposthume ?

*Bakam.* I despise thee.

*Gov.* Art thou acquainted with my nature, baby ?

With my revenge for injuries ? Darest thou hold

So far behind thy file, I cannot reach thee ? [me

What canst thou merit ?

*Bakam.* Merit ? I am above it ;

I am equal with all honours, all achievements,

And what is great and worthy ; the best doer

I keep at my command ; Fortune's my servant :

'Tis in my power now to despise such wretches,

To look upon ye slightly, and neglect ye ;

And, but she deigns at some hours to remember ye,

And people have bestow'd some titles on ye,

I should forget your names.

*Syana.* Mercy of me !

What a blown fool has self-affection

Made of this fellow ! Did not the queen your  
mother

Long for bellows and bagpipes when she was great  
She brought forth such a windy birth ? [with you,

*Gov.* 'Tis ten to one

She ate a drum, and was deliver'd of a larum ;

Or else he was swaddled in an old sail when he was  
young.

*Syana.* He swells too mainly with his medita-  
tions :—

'Faith, talk a little handsomer, ride softly  
That we may be able to hold way with you ! We  
are princes ;

But those are but poor things to you : Talk wiser !

'Twill well become your mightiness : Talk less,

That men may think you can do more !

*Gov.* Talk truth,

That men may think you are honest, and believe  
you !

Or talk yourself asleep, for I am weary of you.

*Bakam.* Why, I can talk and do—

*Gov.* That would do excellent.

*Bakam.* And tell you, only I deserve the princess,

And make good *only I*, if you dare, you, sir ;

Or you, Syana's prince !

*Pin.* Here's a storm toward ;

Methinks it sings already. To him, governor !

*Gov.* Here lies my prof. [Draw.

*Syana.* And mine.

*Gov.* I'll be short with you ;

For these long arguments I was never good at.

*Pin.* How white the boaster looks !

*Enter RUY DIAS, QUIBARA, QUISANA, and PANURA.*

*Arm.* I see he lacks faith.

*Ruy.* For shame, forbear, great princes ; rule

your angers !

You violate the freedom of this place,

The state and royalty—

*Gov.* He's well contented,

It seems ; and so I have done.

*Arm.* Is this she, signor ?

*Pin.* This is the princess, sir.

*Arm.* She is sweet and goodly,

An admirable form ; they have cause to juggle.

*Quisar.* Ye wrong me and my court, ye forward  
princes !

Comes your love wrapt in violence to seek us ?

Is it fit, though you be great, my presence should be

Stained and polluted with your bloody rages ?

My privacies affrighted with your swords ?

He that loves me, loves my command : Be tem-  
per'd,

Or be no more what ye profess, my servants !

*Bakam, Syana, and Gov.* We are calm as peace.

*Arm.* What command she carries !

And what a sparkling majesty flies from her !

*Quisar.* Is it ye love to do ? Ye shall find danger,

And danger that shall start your resolutions :

But not this way. 'Tis not contention

Who loves me to my face best, or who can flatter  
most,

Can carry me : He that deserves my favour,

And will enjoy what I bring, love and majesty,

Must win me with his worth, must travail for me,

Must put his hasty rage off, and put on

A well-confirmed, temperate, and true valour.

*Bakam, Syana, and Gov.* But shew the way.

*Quisar.* And will ; and then shew you

A will to tread the way, I'll say ye are worthy.

*Pin.* What task now will she turn 'em to ? These  
hot youths

I fear will find a cooling card : I read in her eyes,  
Something that has some swinge must fly amongst

By this hand, I love her a little now ! [em :

*Quisar.* 'Tis not unknown to you

I had a royal brother, now miserable,

And prisoner to that man ; if I were ambitious,

Gaped for that glory was ne'er born with me,  
 There he should lie, his miseries upon him;  
 If I were covetous, and my heart set  
 On riches, and those base effects that follow  
 On pleasures uncontroul'd, or safe revenges,  
 There he should die, his death would give me all  
 For then stood I up absolute to do all: [these;  
 Yet all these flattering shows of dignity,  
 These golden dreams of greatness, cannot force  
 To forget nature and my fair affection: [me]  
 Therefore, that man that would be known my lover  
 Must be known his redeemer, and must bring him,  
 Either alive or dead, to my embraces,  
 (For even his bones I scorn shall feel such slavery)  
 Or seek another mistress. 'Twill be hard  
 To do this, wond'rous hard, a great adventure,  
 Fit for a spirit of an equal greatness!  
 But, being done, the reward is worthy of it.

*Chris.* How they stand gaping all!

*Quisar.* Ruy Dias cold? [Apart to him.  
 Not fly like fire into it? May be, you doubt me:  
 He that shall do this is my husband, prince,  
 By the bright Heavens, he is! by whose justice  
 I openly proclaim it: If I lie,  
 Or seek to set you on with subtily,  
 Let that meet with me, and reward my falsehood!  
 No stirring yet? No start into a bravery?

*Ruy.* Madam, it may be; but being a main danger,

Your Grace must give me leave to look about me,  
 And take a little time: The cause will ask it;  
 Great acts require great counsels.

*Quisar.* Take your pleasure!—

I fear the Portugal.

[Aside.

*Bakam.* I'll raise an army  
 That shall bring back his island, fort and all,  
 And fix it here.

*Gov.* How long will this be doing?  
 You should have begun in your grandfather's days.

*Syana.* What may be,  
 And what my power can promise, noblest lady—  
 My will I am sure stands fair.

*Quisar.* Fair be your fortune!

Few promises are best, and fair performance.

*Gov.* These cannot do; their power and arts are weak ones.

'Tis in my will; I have this king your brother,  
 He is my prisoner; I accept your proffer,  
 And bless the fair occasion that atchieved him:  
 I love you, and I honour you, But speak,  
 Whether alive or dead he shall be render'd,  
 And see how readily, how in an instant,  
 Quick as your wishes, lady—

*Quisar.* No; I scorn you,  
 You and your courtesy! I hate your love, sir:  
 And ere I would so basely win his liberty,  
 I would study to forget he was my brother.  
 By force he was taken; he, that shall enjoy me,  
 Shall fetch him back by force, or never know me.

*Pin.* As I live, a rare wench!

*Arm.* She has a noble spirit.

*Gov.* By force?

*Quisar.* Yes, sir, by force, and make you glad  
 To let him go. [too

*Gov.* How! You may look nobler on me,  
 And think me no such boy: By force he must not;  
 For your love much may be.

*Quisar.* Put up your passion,  
 And pack you home! I say, by force, and suddenly;  
 He lies there till he rots else! Although I love him

Most tenderly and dearly, as a brother,  
 And out of these respects would joy to see him,  
 Yet, to receive him as thy courtesy,  
 With all the honour thou couldst add unto him,  
 From his hands that most hates him, I had rather  
 (Though no condition were propounded for him)  
 See him far sunk i' th' earth, and there forget him!

*Pin.* Your hopes are gelt, good governor.

*Arm.* A rare woman!

*Gov.* Lady,

I'll pull this pride, I'll quench this bravery,  
 And turn your glorious scorn to tears and howlings;  
 I will, proud princess! This neglect of me  
 Shall make thy brother-king most miserable,  
 Shall turn him into curses 'gainst thy cruelty:  
 For where before I used him like a king,  
 And did those royal offices unto him,  
 Now he shall lie a sad lump in a dungeon,  
 Loaden with chains and fetters; cold and hunger,  
 Darkness, and ling'ring death, for his companions.  
 And let me see who dare attempt his rescue,  
 What desperate fool! Look toward it! Farewell,  
 And when thou know'st him thus, lament thy  
 follies!

Nay, I will make thee kneel to take my offer:  
 Once more farewell, and put thy trust in puppets!

[Exit.

*Quisar.* If none dare undertake't, I'll live a mourner.

*Bakam.* You cannot want.

*Syana.* You must not.

*Ruy.* 'Tis most dangerous,  
 And wise men would proceed with care and counsel;

Yet some way 'would I knew! Walk with me, gentlemen.—

[Exeunt all but ARMUSIA, SOZA, and EMANUEL.

*Arm.* How do you like her spirit?

*Soza.* 'Tis a clear one,

Clogg'd with no dirty stuff; she is all pure honour.

*Eman.* The bravest wench I ever look'd upon.

And of the strongest parts! She is most fair;

Yet her mind such a mirror—

*Arm.* What an action

Would this be to put forward on, what a glory,

And what an everlasting wealth to end it!

Methinks my soul is strangely raised.

*Soza.* To step into it,

Just while they think; and, ere they have determined,

To bring the king off!

*Arm.* Things have been done as dangerous.

*Eman.* And prosper'd best, when they were least consider'd.

*Arm.* Bless me, my hopes! and you, my friends, assist me!

None but our companions—

*Soza.* You deal wisely,

And, if we shrink, the name of slaves die with us!

*Eman.* Stay not for second thoughts.

*Arm.* I am determined:

And, though I lose, it shall be sung, I was valiant.

And my brave offer shall be turned to story.

Worthy the princess' tongue. A boat! that's all

That's unprovided; and habits like to merchants!

The rest we'll counsel as we go.

*Soza.* Away then!

Fortune looks fair on those make haste to win her.

[Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—TERNATA. *The Castle of the Governor. A Dungeon, with a Gallery in the Background.*

*Enter Keeper and two or three Moors.*

*Keeper.* I have kept many a man, and many a Yet, I confess, I never saw before [great one, A man of such a sufferance: He lies now Where I would not lay my dog, (for sure 'twould kill him)

Where neither light or comfort can come near him, Nor air, nor earth that's wholesome. It grieves me To see a mighty king, with all his glory, Sunk o' th' sudden to the bottom of a dungeon. Whither should we descend, that are poor rascals, If we had our deserts?

*1 Moor.* 'Tis a strange wonder!  
Load him with irons, oppress him with contempts, (Which are the governor's commands) give him nothing,

Or so little, to sustain life, 'tis next nothing, They stir not him; he smiles upon his miseries, And bears 'em with such strength as if his nature Had been nursed up and foster'd with calamities.

*2 Moor.* He gives no ill words, curses, nor re-pines not, Blames nothing, hopes in nothing, we can hear of; And, in the midst of all these frights, fears nothing.

*Keeper.* I'll be sworn He fears not; for even when I shake for him, (As many times my pity will compel me) When other souls, that bear not half his burden, Shrink in their powers, and burst with their op-Then will he sing, woo his afflictions, [pressions, And court 'em in sad airs, as if he would wed 'em.

*1 Moor.* That's more than we have heard yet; we are only Appointed for his guard, but not so near him: If we could hear that wonder—

*Keeper.* Many times I fear the governor should come to know it; For his voice so affects me, so delights me, That, when I find his hour, I have music ready, And it stirs me infinitely. Be but still and private, And you may chance to hear.

[*King appears, loaden with chains, his head and arms only, above.*

*2 Moor.* We will not stir, sir. This is a sudden change; but who dares blame it?  
*Keeper.* Now hark and melt! for I am sure I shall.

Stand silent! What stubborn weight of chains—

*1 Moor.* Yet he looks temperately.  
*2 Moor.* His eyes not sunk, and his complexion firm still,

No wildness, no distemper'd touch upon him: How constantly he smiles, and how undaunted! With what a majesty he heaves his head up!

[*Musick.*

*Keeper.* Now mark! I know he will sing; do not disturb him.—

[*Gives him his allowance.*

Your allowance from the governor! 'Would it were more, sir,

Or in my power to make it handsomer!

*King.* Do not transgress thy charge! I take his bounty.—

And, Fortune, whilst I bear a mind contented, Not leaven'd with the glory I am fall'n from, Nor hang upon vain hopes that may corrupt me, Thou art my slave, and I appear above thee.

*Enter Governor.*

*Keeper.* The governor himself!

*Gov.* What, at your banquet?

And in such state, and with such change of service?

*King.* Nature's no glutton, sir; a little serves her.

*Gov.* This diet's wholesome then?

*King.* I beg no better.

*Gov.* A calm contented mind!—Give him less next;

These full meals will oppress his health; his grace Is of a tender and pure constitution; And such repletions—

*King.* Mock, mock! it moves not me, sir; Thy mirths, as do thy mischiefs, fly behind me.

*Gov.* You carry it handsomely. But tell me, Patience,

Do not you curse the brave and royal lady, Your gracious sister? do not you damn her pity, Damn twenty times a-day, and damn it seriously? Do not you swear aloud too, cry and kick?

The very soul sweat in thee with the agony Of her contempt of me? Couldst not thou eat her For being so injurious to thy fortune, Thy fair and happy fortune? Couldst not thou wish her

A bastard, or a whore Fame might proclaim her, Black ugly Fame, or that thou hadst had no sister? Spitting the general name out, and the nature, Blaspheming Heaven for making such a mischief, For giving power to pride, and will to woman?

*King.* No, tyrant, no! I bless and love her for it:

And, though her scorn of thee had laid up for me As many plagues as the corrupted air breeds, As many mischiefs as the hours have minutes, As many forms of death as Doubt can figure; Yet I should love her more still, and more honour her.

All thou canst lay upon me cannot bend me; No, not the stroke of death, that I despise too; For if fear could possess me, thou hadst won me: As little from this hour I prize thy flatteries, And less than those thy prayers, though thou wouldst kneel to me!

And if she be not mistress of this nature, She's none of mine, no kin, and I contemn her.

*Gov.* Are you so valiant, sir?

*King.* Yes, and so fortunate;

For he, that holds my constancy, still conquers. Hadst thou preserved me as a noble enemy, And, as at first, made my restraint seem to me But only as the shadow of captivity, I had still spoke thee noble, still declared thee A valiant, great, and worthy man, still loved thee, And still prefer'd thy fair love to my sister; But to compel this from me with a misery, A most inhuman and unhandsome slavery—

*Gov.* You will relent, for all this talk, I fear not, And put your wits a-work again.

*King.* You are cozen'd:

Or, if I were so weak to be wrought to it,

So fearful to give way to so much poverty,  
How I should curse her heart, if she consented !  
Gov. You shall write, and entreat, or—

King. Do thy utmost,  
And, e'en in all thy tortures, I'll laugh at thee.  
I'll think thee no more valiant, but a villain ;  
Nothing thou hast done brave, but like a thief,  
Atchieved by craft, and kept by cruelty ;  
Nothing thou canst deserve, thou art dishonest ;  
Nor no way live to build a name, thou art bar-  
barous.

Gov. Down with him low enough, there let him  
murmur !

And see his diet be so light and little,  
He grow not thus high-hearted on't !—I'll cool you,  
And make you cry for mercy, and be ready  
To work my ends, and willingly : And your sister  
taken down,

Your scornful, cruel sister, shall repent too,  
And sue to me for grace.—Give him no liberty,  
But let his bands be doubled, his ease lessen'd,  
Nothing his heart desires, but vex and torture  
him !

Let him not sleep ; nothing that's dear to Nature  
Let him enjoy ; yet take heed that he die not ;  
Keep him as near death, and as willing to em-  
brace it,

But see he arrive not at it ! I will humble him,  
And her stout heart that stands on such defiance :  
And let me see her champions that dare venture,  
Her high and mighty woosers ! Keep your guards  
And, as you love your lives, be diligent, [close,  
And what I charge observe !

All. We shall be dutiful.

Gov. I'll pull your courage, King, and all your  
bravery ! [Exit. The King retires.

1 Moor. Most certain he's resolved, nothing  
can stir him ;

For, if he had but any part about him  
Gave way to fear or hope, he durst not talk thus,  
And do thus stoutly too : As willingly,  
And quietly he sunk down to his sorrows,  
As some men to their sleeps.

Keeper. Yes, and sleeps with 'em,  
(So little he regards them, there's the wonder)  
And often soundly sleeps. 'Would I durst pity  
him,

Or 'would 'twere in my will—But we are servants,  
And tied unto command.

2 Moor. I wish him better,  
But much I fear he has found his tomb already.  
We must observe our guards.

1 Moor. He cannot last long ;  
And when he's dead he's free.

Keeper. That's the most cruelty,  
That we must keep him living.

2 Moor. That's as he please ;  
For that man that resolves needs no physician.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*The same. A Street in the chief  
Town.*

Enter ARMURIA, SOZA, EMANUEL, and a Guide, disguised  
as Merchants, armed underneath.

Arm. Our prosperous passage was an omen to  
A lucky and fair omen. [us,

Eman. and Soza. We believe it.

Arm. The sea and wind strove who should most  
befriend us ;

And as they favour'd our design, and loved us,  
So lead us forth—Where lies the boat that brought  
us ?

Soza. Safe lodged within the reeds, close by the  
castle,

That no eye can suspect, nor thought come near it.  
Eman. But where have you been, brave sir ?

Arm. I have broke the ice, boys,  
I have begun the game ; fair Fortune guide it !  
Suspectless have I travell'd all the town through,  
And in this merchant's shape won much acquaint-  
ance,  
Survey'd each strength and place that may befriend  
us,

View'd all his magazines, got perfect knowledge  
Of where the prison is, and what power guards it.  
Soza. These will be strong attempts.

Arm. Courage is strong :  
What we began with policy, my dear friends,  
Let's end with manly force ! There's no retiring,  
Unless it be with shame.

Eman. Shame his that hopes it. [us,

Arm. Better a few, and clearer fame will follow  
However, lose or win, and speak our memories,  
Than if we led out armies : Things done thus,  
And of this noble weight, will style us worthies.

Soza. Direct, and we have done ; bring us to  
execute,

And if we flinch, or fail—

Arm. I am sure ye dare not :  
Then further know, and let no ear be near us  
That may be false—

Eman. Speak boldly on ; we are honest,  
Our lives and fortunes yours.

Arm. Hard by the place then  
Where all his treasure lies, his arms, his women,  
Close by the prison too where he keeps the king,  
I have hired a lodging, as a trading merchant ;  
A cellar to that too, to stow my wares in,  
The very wall of which joins to his storehouse.

Soza. What of all this ?

Arm. Ye are dull, if ye apprehend not.  
Into that cellar, elected friends, I have convey'd,  
And unsuspected too, that that will do it,  
That that will make all shake, and smoke too.

Eman. Ha !

Arm. My thoughts have not been idle, nor my  
practice :

The fire I brought here with me shall do some-  
thing.

Shall burst into material flames, and bright ones,  
That all the island shall stand wond'ring at it,  
As if they had been stricken with a comet.  
Powder is ready, and enough, to work it ;  
The match is left a-fire, all, all hush'd, and lock'd  
close,

No man suspecting what I am, but merchant.  
An hour hence, my brave friends, look for the  
fury,

The fire to light us to our honour'd purpose ;  
For by that time 'twill take !

Soza. What are our duties ?

Arm. When all are full of fear or fright, the  
governor

Out of his wits to see the flames so imperious,  
Ready to turn to ashes all he worships,  
And all the people there to stop these ruins,  
No man regarding any private office,  
Then fly we to the prison suddenly !  
Here's one has found the way, and dares direct us.

*Eman.* Then to our swords and good hearts! I long for it.

*Arm.* Certain we shall not find much opposition; But what is, must be forced.

*Sosa.* 'Tis bravely cast, sir; And surely too, I hope.

*Arm.* If the fire fail not, And powder hold his nature. Some must pre- Upon the first cry of the amazed people, [sently, (For nothing will be mark'd then but the misery)] Be ready with the boat upon an instant; And then all's right and fair.

*Eman.* Bless us, dear Fortune!

*Arm.* Let us be worthy of it in our courage, And Fortune must befriend us. Come, all sever; But keep still within sight: When the flame rises, Let's meet, and either do or die!

*Sosa.* So be it! [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*The same. Before the Castle of the Governor.*

*Enter Governor and Captain.*

*Gov.* No, captain, for those troops, we need 'em not,

The town is strong enough to stand their furies: I would see them come, and offer to do something. They are high in words.

*Capt.* 'Tis safer, sir, than doing.

*Gov.* Dost think they dare attempt?

*Capt.* May be by treaty,

But sure by force they will not prove so forward.

*Gov.* No, 'faith, I warrant thee, they know me well enough,

And know they have no child in hand to play with.

They know my nature too; I have bit some of 'em, And to the bones; they have reason to remember It makes me laugh to think how glorious [me.] The fools are in their promises, and how pregnant Their wits and powers are to bring things to pass. Am I not grown lean with loss of sleep, and care To prevent these threatenings, captain?

*Capt.* You look well, sir:

Upon my conscience, you are not like to sicken Upon any such conceit.

*Gov.* I hope I shall not.—

Well, 'would I had this wench! for I must have her,

She must be mine: And there's another charge, captain;

What betwixt love and brawling, I get nothing; All goes in maintenance—Hark! What was that,

[*The train takes, an explosion within,*

That noise there? It went with a violence.

*Capt.* Some old wall belike, sir,

That had no neighbour-help to hold it up, Is fallen suddenly.

*Gov.* I must discard these rascals,

That are not able to maintain their buildings;

They blur the beauty of the town.

*Within.* Fire, fire!

*Gov.* I hear another tune, good captain!

It comes on fresher still; 'tis loud and fearful.

Look up into the town; how bright the air shews! Upon my life, some sudden fire! The bell too?

[*Exit Captain. Bell rings.*

I hear the noise more clear.

*Enter Citizen.*

*Cit.* Fire, fire!

*Gov.* Where? where?

*Cit.* Suddenly taken in a merchant's house, sir. Fearful and high it blazes. Help, good people!

[*Exit.*

*Gov.* Pox o' their paper-houses! how they smother!

They light like candles! How the roar still rises!

*Re-enter Captain.*

*Capt.* Your magazine's a-fire, sir; help, help suddenly!

The castle too is in danger, in much danger:

All will be lost! Get the people presently, And all that are your guard! and all help, all hands, sir!

Your wealth, your strength, is burnt else, the The castle now begins to flame. [town perish'd.]

*Gov.* My soul shakes!

*Capt.* A merchant's house next joining? Shame light on him!

That ever such a neighbour, such a villain—

*Enter other Citizens.*

*Gov.* Raise all the garrison and bring 'em up, And beat the people forward!—Oh! I have lost all In one house, all my hopes. Good worthy citizens, Follow me all, and all your powers give to me!

I will reward you all.—Oh, cursed fortune! The flame's more violent!—Arise still! help, help, citizens!

Freedom and wealth to him that helps! Follow, oh, follow!

Fling wine, or anything; I'll see it recompensed. Buckets, more buckets! Fire, fire, fire! [Exeunt.]

*Enter ARMUBA, and his Company.*

*Arm.* Let it flame on! a comely light it gives up To our discovery. [Cries within.]

*Sosa.* Hark, [fairly!]

What a merry cry these hounds make! Forward We are not seen i' th' mist, we are not noted.

Away, away! Now if we lose our fortune— [Exeunt.]

*Enter Captain and Citizens.*

*Capt.* Up, soldiers, up, and deal like men!

*Cit.* More water, more water! all is consumed else.

*Capt.* All's gone, unless you undertake it straight; your wealth too,

That must preserve, and pay your labour bravely. Up, up, away! [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—*The same. The Dungeon in the Castle of the Governor.*

*Enter ARMUBA and his Company, breaking open a door.*

*Arm.* So, thou art open. Keep the way clear behind still!

Now for the place!

*Sold.* 'Tis here, sir.

*Arm.* Sure this is it.

Force ope the door! [The King discovered.]

A miserable creature!

Yet, by his manly face—

*King.* Why stare ye on me?

You cannot put on faces to affright me;

In death I am a king still, and contemn ye.

Where is that governor? Methinks his manhood

Should be well pleased to see my tragedy,

And come to bathe his stern eyes in my sorrows:

I dare him to the fight ; bring his scorns with him,  
And all his rugged threats. Here's a throat, sol-  
Come, see who can strike deepest ! [diers :

*Eman.* Break the chain there.

*King.* What does this mean ?

*Arm.* Come, talk of no more governors !

He has other business, sir. Put your legs forward,  
And gather up your courage, like a man !

We'll carry off your head else. We are friends,  
And come to give your sorrows ease.

*Sosa.* On bravely !

Delays may lose again.

*Enter Guard.*

*Arm.* The guard.

*Sosa.* Upon 'em !

*Arm.* Make speedy and sure work.

*Eman.* They fly. [Fight. The Guard fly.

*Arm.* Up with him,

And to the boat. Stand fast ! Now be speedy !

When this heat's past, we'll sing our history.

Away, like thoughts ! sudden as desires, friends !

Now, sacred Chance, be ours !

*Sosa.* Pray when we have done, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*The same. A Street.*

*Enter three or four Citizens, severally.*

1 *Cit.* What, is the fire allay'd ?

2 *Cit.* 'Tis out, 'tis out.

Or past the worst. I never did so stoutly,

I'll assure you, neighbours, since I was a man :

I have been burnt at both ends like a squib ;

I lived two hours i' th' fire. 'Twas a hideous  
matter ;

But when men of understanding come about it,

Men that judge of things—My wife gave me over,

And took her leave a hundred times ; I bore up

And toss'd the buckets, boys ! [still,

3 *Cit.* We are all mere martins. [hurry,—

1 *Cit.* I heard a voice at latter end o' th'

Or else I dream'd I heard it—that said *treason*.

2 *Cit.* 'Tis like enough.

It might cry *murder* too ; for there was many

Without a joint : But what is that to us ?

Let's home and fright our wives ! for we look like  
devils.

*Enter three Women.*

3 *Cit.* Here come some of 'em to fright us.

1 *Wom.* Mine's alive, neighbour.—O, sweet  
honey husband !

1 *Cit.* Thou liest ! I stink abominably : An  
thou hadst [ends,

Been in my place, thou wouldst have stunk at both

Get me some drink, give me whole tuns of drink,

Whole cisterns ! for I have four dozen of fine fire-  
brands

In my belly : I have more smoke in my mouth  
Would blote a hundred herrings. [than

2 *Wom.* Art thou come safe again ?

3 *Wom.* I pray what became of my man ? Is he  
well ?

2 *Cit.* At heart's ease in a well ; is very well,  
neighbour :

We left him drinking of a new dozen of buckets.

Thy husband's happy, he was thorough roasted,

And now he's basting of himself at all points :

The clerk and he are cooling their pericraniums.—

Body o' me, neighbours, there's fire in my cod-piece.

1 *Wom.* Bless my husband !

2 *Cit.* Blow it out, wife ! Blow, blow, the gable  
end o' the store-house !

*Women.* Some water, water, water !

3 *Cit.* Peace ! 'tis but a sparkle ;

Raise not the tower again ; 'twill be a great hin-  
derance.

I'm glad 'tis out ; an't had ta'en in my bay-loft—

What frights are these ? marry, Heaven bless thy  
modicum !

3 *Wom.* But is 'a drown'd outright ? pray put  
Out of fear, neighbour. [me

2 *Cit.* Thou wouldst have it so :

But after a hundred fires more, he'll live to see

For brewing musty liquor. [these burnt

1 *Cit.* Come, let's go, neighbour !

2 *Cit.* For I would very fain turn down this  
liquor.

Come, come ; I fry like a burnt marrow-bone.

Women, get you afore, and draw upon us !

Run, wenches, run, and let your taps run with ye ;

Run as the fire were in your tails, cry ale, ale !

*Women.* Away, let's nourish the poor wretches !

2 *Cit.* We'll rally up the rest of the burnt regim-  
ment. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—*The same. Before the Castle of the Governor.*

*Enter Governor, Captain, Soldiers, and Guard.*

*Gov.* The fire's quench'd, captain, but the mis-  
chief hangs still :

The king's redeem'd and gone too ! A trick, a  
damn'd one !

Oh, I am overtaken poorly, tamely !

*Capt.* Where were the guard that waited upon  
the prison ?

*Sold.* Most of 'em slain ; yet some 'scaped, sir,  
and they deliver,

They saw a little boat ready to receive him,  
And those redeem'd him, making such haste and

fighting,

Fighting beyond the force of men—

*Gov.* I am lost, captain,

And all the world will laugh at this, and scorn me

Count me a heavy sleepy fool, a coward,

A coward past recovery, a confirm'd coward,

One without carriage, or common sense !

*Sold.* He's gone, sir,

And put to sea amain, past our recovery,

Not a boat ready to pursue ; If there were any,

The people stand amazed so at their valour,

And the sudden fright of fire, none knows to exe-  
cute.

*Gov.* Oh, I could tear my limbs, and knock my  
boys' brains

'Gainst every post I meet ! Fool'd with a fire ?

*Capt.* It was a crafty trick.

*Gov.* No, I was lazy,

Confident, sluggish lazy : Had I but met 'em,

And changed a dozen blows, I had forgiven 'em.

By both these hands held up, and by that bright-  
ness

That gilds the world with light, by all our wor-  
The hidden ebbs and flows of the blue ocean, [ships,

I will not rest ; no mirth shall dwell upon me,

Wine touch my mouth, nor any thing refresh me,

Till I be wholly quit of this dishonour !

Make ready my barratos instantly,

And what I shall intend—

*Capt.* We are your servants. [Exeunt.

SCENE VII.—TIDORE. *An open Place before the Royal Castle.*

*Enter QUIBARA and RUY DIAS.*

*Quisara.* Never tell me! you never cared to win me;

Never, for my sake, to attempt a deed  
Might draw me to a thought you sought my favour:  
If not for love of me, for love of arms, sir,  
For that cause you profess, for love of honour,  
Of which you style yourself the mighty master,  
You might have stept out nobly, and made an offer;  
As if you had intended something excellent,  
Put on a forward face—

*Ruy.* Dear lady, hold me—

*Quisara.* I hold you, as I find you, a faint ser-

*Ruy.* By heaven, I dare do— [vant.

*Quisara.* In a lady's chamber,

I dare believe you; there's no mortal danger:  
Give me the man that dares do, to deserve that!  
I thought you Portugals had been rare wonders,  
Men of those haughty courages and credits  
That all things were confined within your promises;  
The lords of Fate and Fortune I believed you;  
But well I see I am deceived, Ruy Dias,  
And blame, too late, my much belief!

*Ruy.* I am ashamed, lady,

I was so dull, so stupid to your offer:  
Now you have once more school'd me, I am right,  
And something shall be thought on suddenly,  
And put in act as soon, some preparation—  
*Quisara.* And give it out?

*Ruy.* Yes, lady, and so great too;

In which, the noise of all my countrymen—

*Quisara.* Those will do well, for they are all approved ones;

And, though he be restored alive—

*Ruy.* I have you.

*Quisara.* For then we are both servants.

*Ruy.* I conceive you;

Good madam, give me leave to turn my fancies.

*Quisara.* Do, and make all things fit, and then I'll visit you. [Exit.

*Ruy.* Myself, my cousin, and the garrison,  
The neighbours of the out-isles of our nation,  
Syana's strength, (for I can humour him.)  
And proud Bakamus, I shall deceive his glory—

What ringing sound of joy is this? whence comes  
May be the princes are in sport. [it?

*Enter PINIERO and CHRISTOPHERO.*

*Pin.* Where are you?

*Ruy.* Now, Piniero, what's the haste you seek

*Pin.* Do you know this sign, sir? [me?

*Ruy.* Ha!

*Pin.* Do you know this emblem?

Your nose is bored.

*Ruy.* Bored? what is that!

*Pin.* You are topt, sir:

The king's come home again, the king!

*Ruy.* The devil!

*Pin.* Nay, sure he came a' God's name home;

He's return'd, sir.

*Chris.* And all this joy you hear—

*Ruy.* Who durst attempt him?

The princes are all here.

*Chris.* They are worthy princes,  
They are special princes all! they love by ounces.  
Believe it, sir, 'tis done, and done most bravely

And easily. What fortune have you lost, sir!  
What justice have you now unto this lady?

*Pin.* How stands your claim? That e'er man should be fool'd so,

When he should do and prosper! stand protesting,  
Kissing the hand, and farting for a favour,  
When he should be about his business sweating!  
She bid you go, and picked you out a purpose,  
To make yourself a fortune by, a lady,  
A lady, and a lusty one, a lovely,  
That now you may go look; she pointed you,  
Knowing you were a man of worth and merit,  
And bid you fly: You have made a fair flight on't;  
You have caught a goose.

*Ruy.* How dare you thus molest me?

[A shout within.

It cannot be!

*Chris.* Hark how the general joy rings!

*Pin.* Have you your hearing left? is not that drunk too?

For, if you had been sober, you had been wise sure.

*Ruy.* Done? who dares do?

*Pin.* It seems an honest fellow,  
That has ended his market before you be up.

*Chris.* The shame on't, he's a stranger too.

*Pin.* 'Tis no shame;

He took her at her word and tied the bargain,  
Dealt like a man indeed, stood not demurring,  
But clapt close to the cause, as he will do to the lady:

He is a fellow of that speed and handsomeness,  
He will get her with child too, ere you shall come to know him.

Is it not brave, a gentleman scarce landed,  
Scarce eating of the air here, not acquainted,  
No circumstance of love depending on him,  
Nor no command to shew him, must start forth,  
At the first sight too—

*Ruy.* I am undone!

*Pin.* Like an oyster.—

She neither taking view, nor value of him,  
Unto such deeds as these?—Pox o' these,  
These wise delayings! they make men cowards.  
You are undone, as a man would undo an egg,  
A hundred shames about you!

*Enter QUIBARA, PANURA, and Train.*

*Quisara.* Can it be possible?

A stranger that I have not known, not seen yet,  
A man I never graced? Oh, captain, captain,  
What shall I do? I am betray'd by fortune;  
It cannot be, it must not be.

*Pin.* It is, lady;

And, by my faith, a handsome gentleman!

'Tis his poor scholar's prize.

*Quisara.* Must I be given

Unto a man I never saw, ne'er spoke with,

I know not of what nation?

*Pin.* He's a Portugal,

And of as good a pitch—He will be given to you,  
For he's given much to handsome flesh. [lady,

*Quisara.* Oh, Ruy Dias,

This was your sloth, your sloth, your sloth, Ruy Dias!

*Pin.* Your love-sloth, uncle; do you find it now?

You should have done at first, and faithfully,  
And then the other had laid ready for you.—

[A shout within.

Madam, the general joy comes.

*Quisara.* We must meet it;

But with what comfort?

*Enter Citizens carrying boughs, Boys singing after them; then the KING, ARMUSIA, SOZA, EMANUEL; the PRINCESS and Train following.*

*Quisar.* Oh, my dear brother, what a joy runs through me,  
[*Kneels.*]

To see you safe again, yourself, and mighty!  
What a blest day is this!

*King.* Rise up, fair sister!

I am not welcome till you have embraced me.

*Ruy.* A general gladness, sir, flies through the city,

And mirth possesses all to see your grace arrived,  
Thus happily arrived again, and fairly.

'Twas a brave venture, whose'er put for it,  
A high and noble one, worthy much honour;  
And had it fail'd, we had not fail'd, great sir,  
And in short time too, to have forced the governor,  
In spite of all his threats—

*King.* I thank ye, gentlemen.

*Ruy.* And all his subtilties, to set you free,  
With all his heart and will too.

*King.* I know ye love me.

*Pin.* This had been good, with something done before it,

Something set off to beautify it;  
Now it sounds empty, like a barber's bason.  
Pox, there's no metal in't, no noble marrow!

*Bakam.* I have an army, sir, (but that the governor,

The foolish fellow, was a little provident,  
And wise in letting slip no time; 'became him too)

That would have scour'd him else, and all his confines;

That would have rung him such a peal—

*Pin.* Yes, backward,

To make dogs howl. I know thee to a farthing;  
Thy army's good for hawks; there's nothing but sheep's hearts in it.

*Syana.* I have done nothing, sir: therefore I think it

Convenient I say little what I purposed,  
And what my love intended.

*King.* I like your modesty.

And, thank ye, royal friends! I know it grieved ye

To know my misery: But this man, princes,  
I must thank heartily, indeed, and truly,  
For this man saw me in it, and redeem'd me:  
He look'd upon me sinking, and then caught me.  
This, sister, this, this all man, this all valour,  
This pious man—

*Ruy.* My countenance, it shames me!

One scarce arrived, not harden'd yet, not read  
In dangers and great deeds, sea-sick, not season'd—  
Oh, I have boy'd myself! [*Apart.*]

*King.* This noble bulwark,

This lance and honour of our age and kingdom,  
This that I never can reward, nor hope  
To be once worthy of the name of friend to  
This, this man from the bowels of my sorrows  
Has new-begot my name, and once more made me!

Oh, sister, if there may be thanks for this,  
Or any thing near recompense invented—

*Arm.* You are too noble, sir; there is reward,  
Above my action too by millions:

A recompense so rich and glorious,  
I durst not dream it mine, but that 'twas promised;  
But that it was propounded, sworn and sealed

Before the face of Heaven, I durst not hope it;  
For nothing in the life of man or merit  
(It is so truly great) can else embrace it.

*King.* Oh, speak it, speak it; bless mine ears  
to hear it!

Make me a happy man, to know it may be!  
For still methinks I am a prisoner,  
And feel no liberty before I find it.

*Arm.* Then know, it is your sister; she is mine,  
sir;

I claim her by her own word, and her honour.  
It was her open promise to that man  
That durst redeem you: Beauty set me on,  
And fortune crowns me fair, if she receive me.

*King.* Receive you, sir?—Why, sister! ha! so  
backward?

Stand as you knew me not? nor what he has ven-  
tured?

My dearest sister!

*Arm.* Good sir, pardon me!

There is a blushing modesty becomes her,  
That holds her back: Women are nice to woo,  
sir.

I would not have her forced; give her fair liberty!  
For things compell'd and frighted, of soft natures,  
Turn into fears, and fly from their own wishes.

*King.* Look on him, my Quisara: Such another,  
(Oh, all ye powers!) so excellent in nature,  
In honour so abundant—

*Quisar.* I confess, sir;

Confess my word is past too; he has purchased:  
Yet, good sir, give me leave to think, but time  
To be acquainted with his worth and person;  
To make me fit to know it: We are both strangers,  
And how we should believe so suddenly,  
Or come to fasten our affections—  
Alas, Love has his compliments.

*King.* Be sudden

And certain in your way; no woman's doubles,  
Nor coy delays! you are his, and so assure it,  
Or cast from me and my remembrance ever.

Respect your word! I know you will. Come,  
sister,

Let's see what welcome you can give a prisoner,  
And what fair looks a friend.—Oh, my most noble  
Princes, no discontents, but all be lusty!

He that frowns this day is an open enemy.—

Thus in my arms, my dear!

*Arm.* You make me blush, sir.

*King.* And now lead on, our whole court crown'd  
with pleasure!—

*Ruy.* Madam, despair not; something shall be  
done yet, [*Aside to her.*]

And suddenly, and wisely.

*Quisar.* Oh, Ruy Dias!

[*Exeunt all but PINISHO, SOZA, and CHRISTOPHERO.*]

*Pin.* Well, he's a brave fellow, and he has de-  
served her richly.

And you have had your hands full I dare swear,  
gentlemen.

*Soza.* We have done something, sir, if it hit  
right.

*Chris.* The woman has no eyes else, nor no  
honesty;

So much I think.

*Pin.* Come, let's go bounce amongst 'em,  
To the king's health, and my brave country-  
man's!

My uncle looks as though he were sick o' th' worms,  
friends. [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*The same. A Room in the Royal Castle.*

*Enter PINIERO.*

*Pin.* My uncle haunts me up and down, looks melancholy,  
Wond'rous proof-melancholy; sometimes swears,  
Then whistles, starts, cries, and groans as if he had  
the bots,

(*As, to say truth, I think he has little better*)  
And would fain speak; bids me good-morrow at  
midnight,  
And good-night when 'tis noon: He has something  
hovers

About his brains, that would fain find an issue,  
But cannot out, or dares not. Still he follows.

*Enter RUY DIAS.*

How he looks still, and how he beats about,  
Like an old dog at a dead scent!—Ay, marry,  
There was a sigh would set a ship a-sailing!  
These winds of love and honour blow at all ends.  
Now speak, an't be thy will.—Good-morrow, uncle!

*Ruy.* Good-morrow, sir!

*Pin.* This is a new salute! [*Aside.*]

Sure he has forgot me; this is pur-blind Cupid!

*Roy.* My nephew?

*Pin.* Yes, sir, if I be not changed.

*Ruy.* I would fain speak with you.

*Pin.* I would fain have you, sir;

For to that end I stay.

*Ruy.* You know I love you,  
And I have loved you long, my dear Piniero,  
Bred and supplied you—

*Pin.* Whither walks this preamble? [*Aside.*]

*Ruy.* You may remember, though I am but  
your uncle,

I sure had a father's care, a father's tenderness—

*Pin.* Sure he would rap me into something now  
suddenly, [*Aside.*]

He doubts my nature in, (for mine is honest)

He winds about me so.

*Ruy.* A father's diligence.

My private benefits I have forgot, sir,

But those you might lay claim to as my follower;

Yet some men would remember—

*Pin.* I do daily.

*Ruy.* The place which I have put you in, which  
is no weak one:

Next to myself you stand in all employments,

Your counsels, cares, assignments with me equal;

So is my study still to plant your person:

These are small testimonies I have not forgot you,

Nor would not be forgotten.

*Pin.* Sure you cannot.

*Ruy.* Oh, Piniero—

*Pin.* Sir, what hangs upon you?

What heavy weight oppresses you? You have lost

(I must confess, in those that understand you)

Some little of your credit; but time will cure that;

The best may slip sometimes.

*Ruy.* Oh, my best nephew—

*Pin.* It may be, you fear her too, (that disturbs  
you)

That she may fall herself, or be forced from you.

*Ruy.* She is ever true, but I undone for ever!

Oh, that Armusia, that new thing, that stranger,

That flag stuck up to rob me of mine honour,  
That murd'ring chain-shot at me from my country,  
That goodly plague, that I must court to kill me!

*Pin.* Now it comes flowing from him! I fear'd  
this, [*Aside.*]

Knew, he that durst be idle durst be ill too.—

Has he not done a brave thing?

*Ruy.* I must confess it, nephew, must allow it:  
But that brave thing has undone me, has sunk me,  
Has trod me, like a name in sand, to nothing,  
Hangs betwixt hope and me, and threatens my  
ruin;

And, if he rise and blaze, farewell my fortune!

And when that's set, where's thy advancement,  
cousin?—

That were a friend, that were a noble kinsman,  
That would consider these; that man were grateful;  
And he that durst do something here, durst love  
me.

*Pin.* You say true; 'tis worth consideration;  
Your reasons are of weight: And, mark me, uncle,  
(For I'll be sudden, and to th' purpose with you)  
Say this Armusia then were taken off,

(As it may be easily done) how stands the woman?

*Ruy.* She is mine for ever;

For she contemns his deed and him.

*Pin.* Pox on him!

[*Aside.*]

Or, if the single pox be not sufficient,  
The hogs', the dogs', and devils' pox possess him!  
'Faith, this Armusia stumbles me; 'tis a brave  
And if he could be spared, uncle— [fellow;

*Ruy.* I must perish:

Had he set up at any rest but this,

Done anything but what concern'd my credit,

The everlasting losing of my worth—

*Pin.* I understand you now, who set you on too;

[*Aside.*]

I had a reasonable good opinion of the devil  
Till this hour; and I see he is a knave indeed,  
An arrant, stinking knave, for now I smell him.—

I'll see what may be done then; you shall know

You have a kinsman—but no villain, uncle, [*Aside.*]

Nor no betrayer of fair Fame, I scorn it;

I love and honour Virtue.—I must have

Access unto the lady, to know her mind too:

A good word from her mouth, you know, may stir

A lady's look at setting on— [me!

*Ruy.* You say well!

Here, cousin, here's a letter ready for you,

And you shall see how nobly she'll receive you.

And with what care direct.

*Pin.* Farewell then, uncle!

After I have talk'd with her, I am your servant—

To make you honest, if I can, else hate you.—

[*Aside.*]

Pray you no more compliments! my head is busy.

[*Exit RUY DIAS.*]

Heaven bless me,

What a malicious soul does this man carry!

And to what scurvy things this love converts us,

What stinking things; and how sweetly they  
become us!

Murder's a moral virtue with these lovers,

A special piece of divinity, I take it.

I may be mad, or violently drunk,

Which is a whelp of that litter; or I may be  
covetous,

And learn to murder men's estates, that's base too ;  
Or proud, but that's a paradise to this ;  
Or envious, and sit eating of myself  
At others' fortunes ; I may lie, and damnably,  
Beyond the patience of an honest hearer ;  
Cozen, cut purses, sit i' th' stocks for apples :  
But when I am a lover, Lord have mercy !  
These are poor pelting sins, or rather plagues :  
Love and Ambition draw the devil's coach.

*Enter QUISANA and PANURA.*

How now ! who are these ! Oh, my great lady's  
followers,  
Her riddle-founders, and her fortune-tellers,  
Her readers of her love-lectures, her inflamers.  
These doors I must pass through : I hope they are  
wide.—

Good-day to your beauties ! — How they take it to  
'em ! *[Aside.]*

As if they were fair indeed !

*Quisan.* Good-morrow to you, sir !

*Pin.* That's the old hen, the brood-bird ; how  
she bustles ! *[Aside.]*

How like an inventory of lechery she looks !

Many a good piece of iniquity  
Has past her hands, I warrant her.—I beseech you,  
Is the fair princess stirring ?

*Pan.* Yes, marry is she, sir,  
But somewhat private : Have you a business with  
her ?

*Pin.* Yes, forsooth have I, and a serious busi-

*Pan.* May not we know ? *[ness.]*

*Pin.* Yes, when you can keep counsel.

*Pan.* How prettily he looks ! he's a soldier sure,  
His rudeness sits so handsomely upon him.

*Quisan.* A good blunt gentleman !

*Pin.* Yes, marry am I :

Yet for a push or two at sharp, an't please you—

*Pan.* My honest friend, you know not who you  
This is the princess' aunt. *[speak to ;]*

*Pin.* I like her the better ;

An she were her mother, lady, or her grandmother,  
I am not so bashful, but I can buckle with her.

*Pan.* Of what size is your business ?

*Pin.* Of the long sixteens,  
And will make way, I warrant you.

*Pan.* How fine he talks !

*Pin.* Nay, in troth I talk but coarsely, lady ;  
But I hold it comfortable for the understanding.—  
How fain they would draw me into ribaldry ! *[Aside.]*

These wenches that live easily, live high,  
And love these broad discourses, as they love  
These dry delights serve for preparatives. *[possets ;]*

*Pan.* Why do you look so on me ?

*Pin.* I am guessing,  
By the cast of your face, what the property of your  
place should be ;

For I presume you turn a key, sweet beauty ;  
And you another, gravity, under the princess :  
And, by my soul, I warrant you, good places,  
Comely commodious seats !

*Quisan.* Pr'ythee let him talk still,  
For methinks he talks handsomely !

*Pin.* And truly,

As near as my understanding shall enable me.  
You look as if you kept my lady's secrets—  
Nay, do not laugh ! for I mean honestly—  
How these young things tattle, when they get a toy  
by th' end ! *[Aside.]*

And how their hearts go pit-a-pat, and look for't !  
Would it not dance too, if it had a fiddle ?—  
Your gravity, I guess, to take the petitions,  
And hear the ling'ring suits in love disposed,  
Their sighs and sorrows in their proper place ;  
You keep the Ay-me office.

*Quisan.* Pr'ythee suffer him,  
For, as I live, he is a pretty fellow !  
I love to hear sometimes what men think of us ;  
And thus deliver'd freely, tis no malice—  
Proceed, good honest man !

*Pin.* I will, good madam.

According to men's states and dignities,  
Monies and moveables, you rate their dreams,  
And cast the nativity of their desires.  
If he reward well, all he thinks is prosperous ;  
And if he promise place his dreams are oracles :  
Your antient practique art too in these discoveries,  
Who loves at such a length, who a span further,  
And who draws home, yields you no little profit :  
For these you milk by circumstance.

*Quisan.* You are cunning.

*Pin.* And as they oil you, and advance your  
spindle,

So you draw out the lines of love. Your doors too,  
The doors of Destiny, that men must pass through :  
These are fair places !

*Pan.* He knows all.

*Pin.* Your trap-doors,

To pop fools in it, that have no providence ;  
Your little wickets, to work wise men, like wires,  
through at,

And draw their states and bodies into cobwebs ;  
Your postern-doors, to catch those that are cau-  
telous,

And would not have the world's eye find their kus-  
veries ;

Your doors of danger (some men hate a pleasure,  
Unless that may be full of fears) ; your hope-doors.  
And those are fine commodities, where fools pay  
For every new encouragement a new custom :  
You have your doors of honour, and of pleasure ;  
But those are for great princes, glorious vanities,  
That travel to be famous through diseases.  
There be the doors of poverty and death too,  
But these you do the best you can to dam up,  
For then your gain goes out.

*Quisan.* This is a rare lecture !

*Pin.* Read to them that understand.

*Pan.* Beshrew me,

I dare not venture on you ; you cut too keen, sir.  
*Quisan.* We thank you, sir, for your good mirth ;  
You are a good companion.

*Enter QUISARA.*

Here comes the princess now : attend your business.

*Quisar.* Is there no remedy, no hopes can help  
No wit to set me free ?—Who's there, ho ? *[me ?]*

*Quisan.* Troubled ?  
Her looks are almost wild : What ails the princess ?  
I know nothing she wants.

*Quisar.* Who's that there with you ?—

Oh, Signor Piniero, you are most welcome !  
How does your noble uncle ?

*Pin.* Sad as you are, madam :

But he commends his service, and this letter.

*Quisar.* Go off ; attend within.—Fair sir, I  
thank you :

Pray be no stranger, for indeed you are welcome ;  
For your own virtues, welcome.

*Quisar.* We are mistaken ;  
This is some brave fellow sure.

*Pan.* I am sure he's a bold fellow ;  
But, if she hold him so, we must believe it.  
*[Exeunt QUISSA and PANURA.]*

*Quisar.* Do you know of this, fair sir ?  
*Pin.* I guess it, madam,  
And whither it intends : I had not brought it else.  
*Quisar.* It is a business of no common reckon-  
ing.

*Pin.* The handsomer for him that goes about it ;  
Slight actions are rewarded with slight thanks ;  
Give me a matter of some weight to wade in !

*Quisar.* And can you love your uncle so directly,  
So seriously, and so full, to undertake this ?  
Can there be such a faith ?

*Pin.* Dare you say *ay* to it,  
And set me on ? 'Tis no matter for my uncle,  
Or what I owe to him, dare you but wish it.

*Quisar.* I would fain—  
*Pin.* Have it done ? Say but so, lady.  
*Quisar.* Conceive it so.

*Pin.* I will ; 'tis that I am bound to :  
Your will that must command me, and your plea-  
sure,

The fair aspects of those eyes that must direct me.  
I am no uncle's agent ; I am mine own, lady ;  
I scorn my able youth should plow for others,  
Or my ambition serve for pay : I aim,  
Although I never hit, as high as any man,  
And the reward I reach at shall be equal,  
And what love spurs me on to : This desire  
Makes me forget an honest man, a brave man,  
A valiant and a virtuous man, my countryman,  
*Armusia*, the delight of all, the minion,  
His love of you, dotting upon your beauty,  
The admiration of your excellence.  
Make me but servant to the poorest smile,  
Or the least grace you have bestow'd on others,  
And see how suddenly I'll work your safety,  
And set your thoughts at peace ! I am no flatterer,  
To promise infinitely, and out-dream dangers ;  
To lie a-bed, and swear men into fevers,  
Like some of your trim suitors ; when I promise,  
The light is not more constant to the world  
Than I am to my word.—She turns, for millions !

*[Aside.]*

*Quisar.* I have not seen a braver confirm'd  
courage.

*Pin.* For a ton of crowns she turns ! she is a  
woman ;

And, much I fear, a worse than I expected.—  
You are the object, lady, you are the eye  
In which all excellence appears, all wonder,  
From which all hearts take fire, all hands their  
valour ;

And when he stands disputing, when you bid him,  
Or but thinks of his estate, father, mother,  
Friends, wife, and children, he's a fool, and I scorn  
him ;

An't be but to make clean his sword, a coward.  
Men have forgot their fealty to beauty !  
Had I the place in your affections,  
My most unworthy uncle is fit to fall from,  
Lived in those blessed eyes, and read the stories  
Of everlasting pleasures figured there,  
I would find out your commands before you  
thought 'em,  
And bring 'em to you done, ere you dreamt of 'em.

*Quisar.* I admire his boldness !

*Pin.* This, or anything ;  
Your brother's death, mine uncle's, any man's,  
No state that stands secure, if you frown on it.  
Look on my youth, (I bring no blastings to you)  
The first flower of my strength, my faith.

*Quisar.* No more, sir !  
I am too willing to believe : rest satisfied,  
If you dare do for me, I shall be thankful.  
You are a handsome gentleman, a fair one ;  
My servant, if you please : I seal it thus, sir.

*[Kisses him.]*

No more, till you deserve more.

*[Exit.]*

*Pin.* I am rewarded.—  
This woman's cunning, but she's bloody too ;  
Although she pulls her talons in, she's mischievous ;  
Form'd like the face of Heaven, clear, and trans-  
parent.

I must pretend still, bear 'em both in hopes,  
For fear some bloody slave thrust in indeed,  
Fashion'd and flesh'd to what they wish. Well,  
uncle,

What will become of this, and what dishonour  
Follow this fatal shaft, if shot, let Time tell !  
I can but only fear, and strive to cross it. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter ARMUSIA, EMANUEL, and SOZA.*

*Eman.* Why are you thus sad ? What can grieve  
or vex you,

That have the pleasures of the world, the profits,  
The honour and the loves at your disposal ?  
Why should a man that wants nothing want his  
quiet ?

*Arm.* I want what beggars are above me in,  
content :

I want the grace I have merited, the favour,  
The due respect.

*Soza.* Does not the king allow it ?

*Arm.* Yes, and all honours else, all I can ask,  
That he has power to give ; but from his sister,  
The scornful cruelty, (forgive me, Beauty,  
That I transgress) from her that should look on me,  
That should a little smile upon my service,  
And foster my deserts for her own faith's sake ;  
That should at least acknowledge me, speak to  
me—

*Soza.* And you go whining up and down for  
this, sir ?

Lamenting and disputing of your grievances ?  
Sighing and sobbing, like a sullen school-boy,  
And cursing good-wife Fortune for this favour ?

*Arm.* What would you have me do ?

*Soza.* Do what you should do,  
What a man would do in this case, a wise man,  
An understanding man that knows a woman,  
Knows her and all her tricks, her scorns, and all  
her trifles :

Go to her, and take her in your arms, and shake  
Take her and toss her like a bar ! *[her :*

*Eman.* But be sure you pitch her upon a fea-  
ther-bed,

Shake her between a pair of sheets, sir ; there shake  
These sullen fits out of her, spare her not there !  
There you may break her will, and bruise no bone,

*Soza.* Go to her— *[sir.]*

*Eman.* That's the way.  
*Soza.* And tell her, and boldly,

And do not mince the matter, nor mock yourself,

With being too indulgent to her pride ;  
Let her hear roundly from you, what you are,  
And what you have deserved, and what she must be.

*Eman.* And be not put off, like a common fellow,  
With 'The princess would be private;' [low,  
Or, that she has taken physic, and admits none :  
I would talk to her any where.

*Arm.* It makes me smile !

*Eman.* Now you look handsomely :  
Had I a wench to win, I would so flutter her !  
They love a man that crushes 'em to verjuice ;  
A woman held at hard meat is your spaniel.

*Sosa.* Pray take our counsel, sir.

*Arm.* I shall do something ;  
But not your way ; it shews too boisterous ;  
For my affections are as fair and gentle  
As her they serve.

*Enter KING.*

*Sosa.* The king !

*King.* Why, how now, friend ?  
Why do you rob me of the company  
I love so dearly, sir ? I have been seeking you ;  
For when I want you, I want all my pleasure.  
Why sad, thus sad still, man ? I will not have it ;  
I must not see the face I love thus shadow'd.

*Eman.* An't please your grace, methinks it ill  
becomes him ;  
A soldier should be jovial, high and lusty.

*King.* He shall be so : Come, come, I know  
your reason ;  
It shall be none to cross you ; you shall have her :  
Take my word, ('tis a king's word) you shall have  
her,

She shall be yours or nothing. Pray be merry !

*Arm.* Your grace has given me cause : I shall  
And ever your poor servant. [be, sir,

*King.* Me myself, sir,  
My better self.—I shall find time and suddenly,  
To gratify your loves too, gentlemen,  
And make you know how much I stand bound to  
you.

Nay, 'tis not worth your thanks ; no further com-  
Will you go with me, friend ? [pliment!—

*Arm.* I beseech your grace,  
Spare me an hour or two, I shall wait on you,  
Some little private business with myself, sir,  
For such a time.

*King.* I'll hinder no devotion,  
For I know you are regular.—I'll take you, gen-  
tlemen,  
Because he shall have nothing to disturb him.—  
I shall look for you, friend. [*Exeunt all but ARMUSIA.*

*Enter PANURA.*

*Arm.* I dare not fail, sir.—  
What shall I do to make her know my misery ?  
To make her sensible ?—This is her woman ;  
I have a toy come to me suddenly ;  
It may work for the best ; she can but scorn me,  
And lower than I am I cannot tumble ;  
I'll try, what'er my fate be.—Good even, fair  
one !

*Pan.* 'Tis the brave stranger.—A good night to  
you, sir !—

Now, by my lady's hand, a goodly gentleman !  
How happy shall she be in such a husband !  
'Would I were so provided too !

*Arm.* Good pretty one,  
Shall I keep you company for an hour or two !

I want employment for this evening :  
I am an honest man.

*Pan.* I dare believe you ;  
Or, if you were not, sir, that's no great matter ;  
We take men's promises. Would you stay with  
me, sir ?

*Arm.* So it please you ; pray let's be better ac-  
quainted ;

I know you are the princess' gentlewoman,  
And wait upon her near—

*Pan.* 'Tis like I do so.

*Arm.* And may befriend a man, do him fair  
If he have business your way— [courtesies

*Pan.* I understand you.

*Arm.* So kind an office, that you may bind a  
gentleman,

Hereafter to be yours, and your way too ;  
And you may bless the hour you did this benefit :  
Sweet handsome faces should have courteous minds  
And ready faculties.

*Pan.* Tell me your business ;  
Yet if, I think, it be to her, yourself, sir,  
(For I know what you are, and what we hold you,  
And in what grace you stand) without a second,  
(For that but darkens you) would do it better :  
The princess must be pleased with your accesses ;  
I'm sure I should.

*Arm.* I want a courtier's boldness,  
And am yet but a stranger : I would fain speak  
with her.

*Pan.* 'Tis very late, and upon her hour of sleep  
sir.

*Arm.* Pray you wear this, and believe my mean-  
ing civil, [*Gives her a jewel*

My business of that fair respect and carriage.  
This for our more acquaintance ! [*Kisses her*

*Pan.* How close he kisses ! and how sensible  
The passings of his lips are ! I must do it,  
An I were to be hang'd now, and I will do it :  
He may do as much for me ; that's all I aim at :  
And come what will on't, life or death, I'll do it,  
For ten such kisses more, an'twere high-treason.

*Arm.* I would be private with her.

*Pan.* So you shall ;

'Tis not worth thanks else. You must dispatch  
*Arm.* Suddenly. [*quick*

*Pan.* And I must leave you in my chamber, sir  
Where you must lock yourself that none may see  
you :

'Tis close to hers. You cannot miss the entrance  
When she comes down to bed.

*Arm.* I understand you,  
And once more thank you, lady.

*Pan.* Thank me but thus.

*Arm.* If I fail thee—

*Pan.* Come close then ! [*Exeunt*

SCENE III.—*A Bed-chamber in the same.*

*Enter QUIBARA and QUIBARA.*

*Quisbar.* 'Tis late ! good aunt, to bed ! I am e'er  
My woman will not be long away. [*unready*

*Quisbar.* I would have you  
A little merrier first : Let me sit by you,  
And read or discourse something that you fancy :  
Or take my instrument.

*Quisbar.* No, no, I thank you ;  
I shall sleep without these. I wrong your age  
aunt,

To make you wait thus ; pray let me intreat you !  
To-morrow I will see you ; I know you are sleepy,  
And rest will be a welcome guest : You shall not,  
Indeed you shall not stay. Oh, here's my woman !

*Enter PANURA.*

Good night, good night ! and good rest, aunt,  
attend you !

*Quisar.* Sleep dwell upon your eyes, and fair  
dreams court you ! *[Exit.]*

*Quisar.* Come, where have you been, wench ?  
I slept but ill last night. *[Make me unready ;*

*Pan.* You'll sleep the better  
I hope to-night, madam.

*Quisar.* A little rest contents me ;  
Thou lovest thy bed, Panura.

*Pan.* I am not in love, lady,  
Nor seldom dream of devils ; I sleep soundly.

*Quisar.* I'll swear thou dost ; thy husband would  
If thou wert married, wench. *[not take't so well,*

*Pan.* Let him take, madam,  
The way to waken me ! I am no dormouse :

Husbands have larum-bells, if they but ring once.  
*Quisar.* Thou art a merry wench.

*Pan.* I shall live the longer.

*Quisar.* Pr'ythee fetch my book !

*Pan.* I am glad of that. *[Aside.]*

*Quisar.* I'll read a while before I sleep.

*Pan.* I will, madam.

*Quisar.* And if Ruy Dias meet you, and be  
He may come in. *[importunate,*

*Pan.* I have a better fare for you.— *[Aside.]*  
Now least in sight play I. *[Exit.]*

*Enter ARMUSIA softly, and locks the door.*

*Quisar.* Why should I love him ?  
Why should I dote upon a man deserves not,  
Nor has no will to work it ?—Who's there, wench ?  
What are you ? or whence come you ?

*Arm.* You may know me :

I bring not such amazement, noble lady.

*Quisar.* Who let you in ?

*Arm.* My restless love, that serves you.

*Quisar.* This is an impudence I have not heard of,  
A rudeness that becomes a thief or ruffian ;  
Nor shall my brother's love protect this boldness,  
You build so strongly on : My rooms are sanc-  
tuaries,

And with that reverence, they that seek my favours,  
And humble fears, shall render their approaches.

*Arm.* Mine are no less.

*Quisar.* I am mistress of myself, sir,  
And will be so : I will not be thus visited,  
These fears and dangers thrust into my privacy.  
Stand further off ! I'll cry out else.

*Arm.* Oh, dear lady !

*Quisar.* I see dishonour in your eyes.

*Arm.* There is none :

By all that beauty, they are innocent !  
Pray you tremble not ! you have no cause.

*Quisar.* I'll die first,

Before you have your will, be torn in pieces.  
The little strength I have left me to resist you,  
The gods will give me more, before I am forced  
To that I hate, or suffer—

*Arm.* You wrong my duty.

*Quisar.* So base a violation of my liberty !  
I know you are bent unnobly ; I'll take to me  
The spirit of a man, borrow his boldness,  
And force my woman's fears into a madness,  
And ere you arrive at what you aim at—

*Arm.* Lady, *[Kneels.]*  
If there be in you any woman's pity,  
And if your fears have not proclaim'd memonstrous,  
Look on me and believe me ! Is this violence ?  
Is it, to fall thus prostrate to your beauty,  
A ruffian's boldness ? is humility a rudeness ?  
The griefs and sorrows that grow here, an impu-  
dence ?

These forcings, and these fears I bring along with  
These impudent abuses offer'd you ? *[me,*

And thus high has your brother's favour blown me.  
Alas, dear lady of my life, I came not  
With any purpose rough or desperate,  
With any thought that was not smooth and gentle  
As your fair hand, with any doubt or danger ;  
Far be it from my heart to fright your quiet !  
A heavy curse light on it, when I intend it !

*Quisar.* Now I dare hear you.

*Arm.* If I had been mischievous,  
As then I must be mad, or were a monster,  
If any such base thought had harbour'd here,  
Or violence that became not man,  
You have a thousand bulwarks to assure you.  
The holy powers bear shields to defend chastity ;  
Your honour and your virtues are such armours,  
Your clear thoughts such defences. If you mis-  
doubt still, *[Offers his sword.]*

And yet retain a fear I am not honest,  
Come with impure thoughts to this place,  
Take this, and sheathe it here ; be your own safety ;  
Be wise, and rid your fears, and let me perish !  
How willing shall I sleep to satisfy you !

*Quisar.* No ; I believe now, you speak worthily :  
What came you then for ?

*Arm.* To complain me, beauty ;  
But modestly.

*Quisar.* Of what ?

*Arm.* Of your fierce cruelty ;  
*(For though I die, I will not blame the doer)*  
Humbly to tell your grace you had forgot me ;  
A little to have touch'd at, not accused,  
*(For that I dare not do)* your scorns : Pray pardon  
And be not angry that I use the liberty *[me,*  
To urge that word ! A little to have shew'd you  
What I have been, and what done to deserve you ;  
If any thing that love commands may reach you,  
To have remember'd you, *(but I'm unworthy,*  
And to that misery falls all my fortunes)  
To have told you, and by my life you may believe  
That I am honest, and will only marry *[me,*  
You or your memory : Pray be not angry !

*Quisar.* I thank you, sir ; and let me tell you  
seriously,

You have taken now the right way to befriend you,  
And to beget a fair and clear opinion.

Yet, to try your obedience—

*Arm.* I stand ready, lady,  
Without presuming to ask any thing.

*Quisar.* Or at this time to hope for further fa-  
vor to remember services or smiles ; *[vour ;*  
Dangers you have past through, and rewards due to  
Loves or despairs ; but, leaving all to me, *[em ;*  
Quit this place presently.

*Arm.* I shall obey you.

*Enter RUY DIAS.*

*Ruy.* Ha !

*Arm.* Who's this ? What art thou ?

*Ruy.* A gentleman.

*Arm.* Thou art no more, I am sure.—Oh, 'tis  
How high he looks, and harsh ! *[Ruy Dias :*

*Ruy.* Is there not door enough,  
You take such elbow-room?

*Arm.* If I take it, I'll carry it.

*Ruy.* Does this become you, princess?

*Arm.* The captain's jealous,  
Jealous of that he never durst deserve yet.  
Go freely, go! I'll give thee leave.

*Ruy.* Your leave, sir?

*Arm.* Yes, my leave, sir. I'll not be troubled  
neither,  
Nor shall my heart ache, or my head be jealous,  
Nor strange suspicious thoughts reign in my  
memory;

Go on, and do thy worst, I'll smile at thee.—  
I kiss your fair hand first; then, farewell, captain!

[*Exit.*]

*Quisar.* What a pure soul inherits here! what  
innocence!

Sure I was blind when I first loved this fellow,  
And long to live in that fog still: How he blusters!

*Ruy.* Am I your property? or those your flatteries  
The banquets that you bid me to, the trust  
I build my goodly hopes on?

*Quisar.* Be more temperate!

*Ruy.* Are these the shows of your respect and  
favour?

What did he here, what language had he with you?  
Did you invite him? could you stay no longer?  
Is he so gracious in your eye?

*Quisar.* You are too forward.

*Ruy.* Why at these private hours?

*Quisar.* You are too saucy,

Too impudent, to task me with those errors,  
Do you know what I am, sir? and my prerogative?  
Though you be a thing I have call'd by th' name  
of friend,

I never taught you to dispose my liberty:  
How durst you touch mine honour? blot my  
meanings?

And name an action, and of mine, but noble?  
Thou poor unworthy thing, how have I graced  
thee!

How have I nourished thee and raised thee hourly!  
Are these the gratuities you bring, Ruy Dias?  
The thanks? the services? I am fairly paid!  
Was't not enough I saw thou wert a coward,  
And shadowed thee? no noble sparkle in thee?  
Daily provoked thee, and still found thee coward?  
Raised noble causes for thee, strangers started at;  
Yet still, still, still a coward, ever coward!  
And, with those taints, dost thou upbraid my  
virtues?

*Ruy.* I was to blame, lady.

*Quisar.* So blindly bold

To touch at my behaviour? Durst thou but look  
Amis at my allowance?—If thou hadst  
Been a brave fellow, thou hadst had some licence,  
Some liberty; I might have then allow'd thee,  
For thy good face, some scope to have argued with  
me;

But being nothing but a sound, a shape,  
The mere sign of a soldier, of a lover  
The dregs and drabby part, disgrace and jealousy,  
I scorn thee, and contemn thee!

*Ruy.* Dearest lady,

If I have been too free—

*Quisar.* Thou hast been too foolish;  
And go on still; I'll study to forget thee.  
I would I could! and yet I pity thee.

[*Exit.*]

*Ruy.* I am not worth it; if I were, that's misery!  
The next door is but death; I must aim at it.

[*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—*Another Apartment in the Royal Castle.*

*Enter King, and Governor disguised like a Moorish Priest.*

*King.* So far and truly you have discover'd to me  
The former currents of my life and fortune,  
That I am bound to acknowledge you most holy,  
And certainly to credit your predictions  
Of what are yet to come.

*Gov.* I am no liar.—

'Tis strange I should, and live so near a neighbour:  
But these are not my ends.

*King.* Pray you sit, good father!—

Certain a reverend man, and most religious.

*Gov.* Ay, that belief's well now; and let me  
work then, [Aside.]

I'll make you curse religion ere I leave you.—  
I have lived a long time, son, a mew'd-up man,  
Sequester'd by the special hand of Heaven  
From the world's vanities, bid farewell to follies,  
And shook hands with all heats of youth and  
pleasures.

As in a dream, these twenty years I have slum-  
Many a cold moon have I, in meditation [bered];  
And searching out the hidden wills of Heaven,  
Lain shaking under; many a burning sun  
Has seared my body, and boiled up my blood,  
Feebled my knees, and stamp'd a meagreass

Upon my figure, all to find out knowledge;  
Which I have now attained to, thanks to Heaven,  
All for my country's good too: And many a vision,  
Many a mystic vision have I seen, son,  
And many a sight from Heaven, which has been  
terrible,

Wherein the goods and evils of these islands  
Were lively shadowed; many a charge I have had  
Still as the time grew ripe to reveal these, [too,  
To travel and discover; Now I am come, son,  
The hour is now appointed, my tongue is touch'd,  
And now I speak.

*King.* Do, holy man! I'll hear you.

*Gov.* Beware these Portugals, I say beware 'em!  
These smooth-faced strangers, have an eye upon  
'em!

The cause is now the gods'! hear, and believe,  
king!

*King.* I do hear; but, before I give rash credit.  
Or hang too light on belief, which is a sin, father,  
Know I have found 'em gentle, faithful, valiant,  
And am in my particular bound to 'em,  
I mean to some, for my most strange deliverance.

*Gov.* Oh, son, the future aims of men, (observe  
Above their present actions, and their glory, [me])  
Are to be look'd at: The stars shew many turnings,  
If you could see, mark but, with my eyes, pupil.  
These men came hither, as my vision tells me,

Poor, weather-beaten, almost lost, starved, feeble,  
Their vessels like themselves, most miserable ;  
Made a long suit for traffic, and for comfort,  
To vent their children's toys, cure their diseases :  
They had their suit, they landed, and to th' rato  
Grew rich and powerful, suck'd the fat and freedom

Of this most blessed isle, taught her to tremble,  
Witness the castle here, the citadel,  
They have clapt upon the neck of your Tidore,  
(This happy town, till that she knew these strangers)  
To check her when she's jolly.

*King.* They have so indeed, father.

*Gov.* Take heed, take heed ! I find your fair  
delivery,

(Though you be pleased to glorify that fortune,  
And think these strangers gods, take heed, I say !)  
I find it but a handsome preparation,  
A fair-faced prologue to a further mischief :  
Mark but the end, good king, the pin he shoots at !  
That was the man deliver'd you, the mirror :  
Your sister is his due : What's she ? your heir, sir.  
And what is he a-kin then to the kingdom ?  
But heirs are not ambitious ; who then suffers ?  
What reverence shall the gods have ? and what  
justice

The miserable people ? what shall they do ?

*King.* He points at truth directly.

*Gov.* Think of these, son !

The person nor the manner, I mislike not  
Of your preserver, nor the whole man together,  
Were he but season'd in the faith we are,  
In our devotions learn'd.

*King.* You say right, father.

*Gov.* To change our workshops now, and our  
religion !

To be traitor to our gods !

*King.* You have well advised me,

And I will seriously consider, father.  
I' th' mean time, you shall have your fair access  
Unto my sister, advise her to your purpose,  
And let me still know how the gods determine.

*Gov.* I will.—But my main end is to advise  
[Aside.]

The destruction of you all, a general ruin ;  
And then I am revenged, let the gods whistle !  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter RUY DIAS and PINIERO.*

*Ruy.* Indeed, I am right glad you were not  
greedy,

And sudden in performing what I will'd you,  
Upon the person of Armusia ;  
I was afraid, for I well knew your valour,  
And love to me—

*Pin.* 'Twas not a fair thing, uncle ;  
It shew'd not handsome, carried no man in it.

*Ruy.* I must confess 'twas ill, and I abhor it ;  
Only this good has risen from this evil,  
I have tried your honesty, and find [it] proof,  
A constancy that will not be corrupted,  
And I much honour it.

*Pin.* This bell sounds better.

*Ruy.* My anger now, and that disgrace I have  
suffer'd,  
Shall be more manly vented, and wiped off,  
And my sick honour cured the right and straight  
way :

My sword's in my hand now, nephew, my cause  
And man to man, one valour to another, [upon it,  
My hope to his—

*Pin.* Why, this is like Ruy Dias !  
This carries something of some substance in it,  
Some mettle and some man ; this sounds a gentle-  
man ;

And now methinks you utter what becomes you :  
To kill men scurvily, 'tis such a dog-trick,  
Such a rat-catcher's occupation—

*Ruy.* It is no better.

But, Piniero, now—

*Pin.* Now you do bravely.

*Ruy.* The difference of our states flung by, for-  
The full opinion I have won in service, [gotten,  
And such respects that may not shew us equal,  
Laid handsomely aside, only our fortunes,  
And single manhoods—

*Pin.* In a service, sir,  
Of this most noble nature, all I am,  
If I had ten lives more, those and my fortunes  
Are ready for you. I had thought you had  
Forsworn fighting, or banish'd those brave thoughts  
Were wont to wait upon you ; I am glad  
To see 'em call'd home again.

*Ruy.* They are, nephew,  
And thou shalt see what fire they carry in them :  
Here : you guess what this means ?

[Shows a challenge.]

*Pin.* Yes, very well, sir. A portion of scripture  
That puzzles many an interpreter.

*Ruy.* As soon as you can find him—

*Pin.* That will not be long, uncle ;  
And, o' my conscience, he'll be ready as quickly.

*Ruy.* I make no doubt, good nephew. Carry  
it so,

If you can possible, that we may fight—

*Pin.* Nay, you shall fight, assure yourself.

*Ruy.* Pray you hear me !—

In some such place where it may be possible  
The princess may behold us.

*Pin.* I conceive you :  
Upon the sand behind the castle, sir ;  
A place remote enough, and there be windows  
Out of her lodgings too, or I'm mistaken.

*Ruy.* You are i' th' right ; if you can work that  
handsomely—

*Pin.* Let me alone ! and pray be you prepared  
Some three hours hence.

*Ruy.* I will not fail.

*Pin.* Get you home ;  
And if you have any things to dispose of,  
Or a few light prayers  
That may befriend you, run 'em over quickly !  
I warrant, I'll bring him on.

*Ruy.* Farewell, nephew !  
And when we meet again— [Exit.]

*Pin.* Ay, ay, fight handsomely :  
Take a good draught or two of wine to settle you ;  
'Tis an excellent armour for an ill conscience,  
uncle.—

I am glad to see this man's conversion ;  
I was afraid fair honour had been bed-rid,  
Or beaten out o' th' island, soldiers, and good  
ones,  
Intended such base courses. He will fight now,  
And, I believe too, bravely ; I have seen him  
Curry a fellow's carcase handsomely ;  
And i' th' head of a troop, stand as if he had been  
rooted there,

Dealing large doles of death.—What a rascal was I,  
I did not see his will drawn !

*Enter QUIBARA.*

What does she here ?

If there be any mischief towards, a woman makes  
Now what new business is for me ? [one still :—

*Quisar.* I was sending for you,  
But since we are met so fair, you have saved that  
I must entreat you, sir— [labour :

*Pin.* Any thing, madam ;  
Your wills are my commands.

*Quisar.* You are nobly courteous.  
Upon my better thoughts, Signor Piniero,  
And my more peaceable considerations,  
(Which now I find the richer ornaments)  
I would desire you to attempt no farther  
Against the person of the noble stranger,  
(In truth, I am ashamed of my share in it)  
Nor be incited further by your uncle :  
I see it will sit ill upon your person.  
I have consider'd, and it will shew ugly,  
Carried at best, a most unheard-of cruelty :  
Good sir, desist !

*Pin.* You speak now like a woman,  
And wond'rous well this tenderness becomes you :  
But this you must remember, your command  
Was laid on with a kiss ; and seriously  
It must be taken off the same way, madam,  
Or I stand bound still.

*Quisar.* That shall not endanger you : [Kisses him.

Look you, fair sir, thus I take off that duty.

*Pin.* By th' mass, 'twas soft and sweet ! Some  
bloods would bound now,  
And run a-tilt. Do not you think, bright beauty,  
You have done me, in this kiss, a mighty favour,  
And that I stand bound, by virtue of this honour,  
To do whatever you command me ?

*Quisar.* I think, sir,  
From me these are unusual courtesies,  
And ought to be respected so : There are some,  
And men of no mean rank, would hold themselves  
Not poorly bless'd to taste of such a bounty.

*Pin.* I know there are, that would do many  
unjust things

For such a kiss, (and yet I hold this modest)  
All villainies, body and soul dispense with ;  
For such a provocation, kill their kindred,  
Demolish the fair credits of their parents ;  
Those kisses I am not acquainted with : most  
certain, madam,  
Th' appurtenance of this kiss would not provoke  
To do a mischief ; 'tis the devil's own dance [me  
To be kiss'd into cruelty.

*Quisar.* I am glad you make that use, sir.  
*Pin.* I am gladder

That you made me believe you were cruel ;  
For, by this hand, I know I am so honest,  
However I deceived you, ('twas high time too ;  
Some common slave might have been set upon it  
That willingly I would not kill a dog [else)  
That could but fetch and carry, for a woman ;  
She must be a good woman made me kick him,  
And that will be hard to find : To kill a man ?  
If you will give me leave to get another,  
Or any she that play'd the best game at it,  
\* \* \*

And, 'fore a woman's anger, prefer her fancy.

*Quisar.* I take it in you well.

*Pin.* I thank you, lady ;  
And I shall study to confirm it.

*Quisar.* Do, sir :  
For this time, and this present cause, I allow it.  
[Exit PRINCESS.

*Enter Governor, disguised as before, QUIBARA, and  
PANURA.*

Most holy sir !

*Gov.* Bless you, my royal daughter !  
And, in you, bless this island, Heaven !

*Quisar.* Good aunt,  
What think you of this man ?

*Quisan.* Sure he's a wise man,  
And a religious : He tells us things have happen'd  
So many years ago, almost forgotten,  
As readily as if they were done this hour.

*Quisar.* Does he not meet with your sharp  
*Pan.* He tells me, madam, [tongue ?  
Marriage and mouldy cheese will make me tamer.

*Gov.* A stubborn keeper, and worse fare,  
An open stable, and cold care,  
Will tame a jade, may be your share.

*Pan.* By'r lady, a sharp prophet ! When this  
proves good,

I'll bequeath you a skin to make you a hood.

*Gov.* Lady, I would talk with you.

*Quisar.* Do, reverend sir !

*Gov.* And for your good, for that that must con-  
And give ear wisely to me ! [cern you ;

*Quisar.* I shall, father.

*Gov.* You are a princess of that excellence,  
Sweetness, and grace, that angel-like fair feature,  
(Nay, do not blush, I do not flatter you,  
Nor do I dote in telling this) I am amazed, lady,  
And as I think the gods bestow'd these on you,  
The gods that love you—

*Quisar.* I confess their bounty.

*Gov.* Apply it then to their use, to their honour,  
To them, and to their service give this sweetness !  
They have an instant great use of your goodness ;  
You are a saint esteem'd here for your beauty,  
And many a longing heart—

*Quisar.* I seek no fealty ;

Nor will I blemish that Heaven has seal'd on me  
I know my worth. Indeed the Portugals  
I have at those commands, and their last services,  
Nay even their lives, so much I think my hand-  
That what I shall enjoin— [someness,

*Gov.* Use it discreetly !

(For I perceive you understand me rightly)  
For here the gods regard your help, and suddenly :  
The Portugals, like sharp thorns (mark me, lady)  
Stick in our sides ; like razors, wound religion ;  
Draw deep, they wound, till the life-blood flows ;  
Our gods they spurn at, and their worshipers scorn.  
A mighty hand they bear upon our government :  
These are the men your miracle must work on,  
Your heavenly form, either to root them out,  
(Which, as you may endeavour, will be easy :—  
Remember whose great cause you have to execute !)  
To nip their memory, that may not spring more,  
Or fairly bring 'em home to our devotions ;  
Which will be blessed, and for which you santed.—  
But cannot be ; an they go, let me bustle ! [Aside.

*Quisar.* Go up with me,

Where we'll converse more privately :  
I'll shew you shortly how I hold their temper  
And in what chain their souls.

*Gov.* Keep fast that hold still !

And either bring that chain, and those bound in it,

And link it to our gods and their fair worships,  
Or, daughter, pinch their hearts a-pieces with it.  
I'll wait upon your grace.

*Quisar.* Come, reverence father!—  
Wait you below.

[*Exeunt QUISARA and Governor.*]

*Pan.* If this prophet were a young thing,  
I should suspect him now, he cleaves so close to  
her;

These holy coats are long, and hide iniquities,  
*Quisar.* Away, away, fool! a poor wretch!

*Pan.* These poor ones,  
Warm but their stomachs once—

*Quisar.* Come in; thou art foolish. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Sea-beach behind the Royal  
Castle.*

*Enter ARMUSIA, EMANUEL, and PINIERO.*

*Arm.* I am sorry, sir, my fortune is so stubborn,  
To court my sword against my countryman:  
I love my nation well; and where I find  
A Portugal of noble name and virtue,  
I am his humble servant. Signor Piniero,  
Your person, nor your uncle's, am I angry with;  
You are both fair gentlemen in my opinion,  
And, I protest, I had rather use my sword  
In your defences than against your safeties:  
'Tis, methinks, a strange dearth of enemies,  
When we seek foes among ourselves.

*Eman.* You are injured,  
And you must make the best on't now, and re-  
dies—

*Arm.* You see I am ready in the place, and  
To his desire that called me. [*armed*]

*Pin.* You speak honestly,  
And I could wish you had met on terms more  
But it cannot now be so. [*friendly;*]

*Enter RUY DIAS.*

*Eman.* Turn, sir, and see!

*Pin.* I have kept my word with you, uncle:  
The gentleman is ready.

*Governor and QUISARA appear at a Window.*

*Arm.* You are welcome.

*Ruy.* Bid those fools welcome that affect your  
courtesy!

I come not to use compliment. You have wrong'd  
me;  
And you shall feel, proud man, ere I part from  
you,

Th' effects of that: If Fortune do not fool me,  
Thy life is mine, and no hope shall redeem thee.

*Arm.* That's a proud word; more than your  
faith can justify.—

*Quisar.* Sure they will fight!

*Ruy.* She is there; I am happy.

*Gov.* Let 'em alone! let 'em kill one another!—  
These are the main posts; if they fall, the build-  
ings [*Aside.*]

Will tumble quickly.

*Quisar.* How temperate Armusia!

*Gov.* No more; be quiet yet.

*Arm.* I am not bloody,

Nor do not feel such mortal malice in me;  
But since we cannot both enjoy the princess,  
I am resolved to fight.

*Ruy.* Fight home, Armusia!  
For, if thou faint'st or fall'st—

*Arm.* Do you make all vantages!

*Ruy.* All ways, unto thy life; I will not spare  
Nor look not for thy mercy. [*thee,*]

*Arm.* I am arm'd then.

*Ruy.* Stand still, I charge you, nephew, as you  
honour me!

*Arm.* And, good Emanuel, stir not.

*Pin.* Ye speak fitly;

For we had not stood idle else.—

*Gov.* I am sorry for't.

*Eman.* But since you will have it so—

*Ruy.* Come, sir!

*Arm.* I wait you. [*They fight.*]

*Pin.* Ay, marry, this looks handsomely!

This is warm work!

*Gov.* Both fall, an't be thy will! [*Ruy DIAS falls.*]

*Pin.* My uncle dead!

*Eman.* Stand still, or my sword's in— [*Draws,*]

*Arm.* Now, brave Ruy Dias,

Now where's your confidence? Your prayers,  
Your own spite has condemn'd you. [*quickly!*]

*Quisar.* Hold, Armusia!

*Arm.* Most happy lady!

*Quisar.* Hold, and let him rise;

Spare him for me!

*Arm.* A long life may he enjoy, lady!

*Gov.* What ha' you done? 'Tis better they had  
all perish'd.

*Quisar.* Peace, father! I work for the best.—  
Be in the garden an hour hence. [*Armusia,*

*Exeunt QUISARA and Governor from the window.*]

*Arm.* I shall, madam.

*Pin.* Now, as I live, a gentleman at all inches!  
So brave a mingled temper saw I never.

*Arm.* Why are you sad, sir? How would this  
have grieved you,

If you had fall'n under a profess'd enemy?

Under one had taken vantage of your shame too?

Pray you be at peace! I am so far from wronging

Or glorying in the pride of such a victory, [*you,*

That I desire to serve you: pray look cheerfully!

*Pin.* Do you hear this, sir? This love, sir?

Do you see this gentleman,

How he courts you? Why do you hold your  
head down?

'Tis no high treason, I take it, to be equall'd;

To have a slip i' th' field, no sin that's mortal:

Come, come; thank Fortune and your friend!

*Arm.* It may be

You think my tongue may prove your enemy,

And though restrain'd, sometimes, out of a bravery,

May take a license to disable you:

Believe me, sir, so much I hate that liberty,

That in a stranger's tongue 'twill prove an injury;

And I shall right you in't.

*Pin.* Can you have more, uncle?

*Ruy.* Sir, you have beat me both ways; yet so  
nobly,

That I shall ever love the hand that did it:

Fortune may make me worthy of some title

That may be near your friend.

*Arm.* Sir, I must leave you,

But with so hearty love—And pray be confident,

I carry nothing from this place shall wrong you.

[*Exeunt ARMUSIA and EMANUEL.*]

*Pin.* Come, come; you are right again, sir:

Love your honour,

And love your friend; take heed of bloody pur-  
poses,

And unjust ends! good Heaven is angry with 'em;

Make your fair virtues and your fame your mis-  
And let these trinkets go ! [tress,  
*Ruy.* You teach well, nephew :  
Now to be honourable even with this gentleman,  
Shall be my business, and my ends his. [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—*A Room in the Royal Castle.*

*Enter Governor and KING.*

*Gov.* Sir, sir ! You must do something suddenly,  
To stop his pride, so great and high he is shot up ;  
Upon his person too, your state is sunk else :  
You must not stand now upon terms of gratitude,  
And let a simple tenderness besot you.  
I'll bring you suddenly where you shall see him,  
Attempting your brave sister privately ;  
Mark but his high behaviour then.

*King.* I will, father.

*Gov.* And with scorn ; I fear, contempt too.

*King.* I hope not.

*Gov.* I will not name a lust ; it may be that also.  
A little force must be applied upon him,  
Now, now applied, a little force to humble him :  
These sweet entreaties do but make him wanton.

*King.* Take heed you wrong him not !

*Gov.* Take heed to your safety !

I but forewarn you, king ; if you mistrust me,  
Or think I come unseem—

*King.* No, I'll go with you. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*The Garden before the same.*

*Enter ARMUSIA and QUISSARA.*

*Arm.* Madam, you see there's nothing I can  
Either in my obedience, or my service, [reach at,  
That may deserve your love, or win a liking,  
But a poor thought, but I pursue it seriously,  
Take pleasure in your wills, even in your anger,  
Which other men would grudge at, and grow  
I study new humility to please you, [stormy :  
And take a kind of joy in my afflictions ;  
Because they come from you, I love my sorrows.  
Pray, madam, but consider—

*Quissar.* Yes, I do, sir ;

And to that honest end I drew you hither.

I know you have deserved as much as man can,

And know it is a justice to requite you :

I know you love.

*Arm.* If ever love was mortal,

And dwell in man : And for that love command  
(So strong I find it, and so true, here, lady) [me,  
Something of such a greatness too, allow me,  
Those things I have done already may seem foils to :  
'Tis equity, that man aspires to Heaven  
Should win it by his worth, and not sleep to it.

*Enter Governor and KING apart.*

*Gov.* Now stand close, king, and hear ; and, as  
you find him,

Believe me right, or let religion suffer !

*Quissar.* I dare believe your worth, without ad-  
ditions ;

But since you are so liberal of your love, sir,  
And would be farther tried, I do intend it,  
Because you shall not, or you would not win me  
At such an easy rate—

*Arm.* I am prepared still,  
And if I shrink—

*Quissar.* I know you are no coward :

This is the utmost trial of your constancy ;  
And if you stand fast now, I am yours, your wife,  
sir.

You hold there's nothing dear, that may achieve  
Doubted, or dangerous. [me,

*Arm.* There's nothing, nothing :

Let me but know, that I may straight fly to it !

*Quissar.* I'll tell you then : Change your religion,  
And be of one belief with me !

*Arm.* How !

*Quissar.* Mark !

Worship our gods, renounce that faith you are  
( 'Tis easily done ; I'll teach you suddenly ) [bred in,  
And humbly on your knees—

*Arm.* Ha ! I'll be hanged first.

*Quissar.* Offer as we do.

*Arm.* To the devil, lady ?

Offer to him I hate ? I know the devil !

To dogs and cats ? you make offer to them ;

To every bird that flies, and every worm !—

How terribly I shake !—Is this the venture,

The trial that you talk'd of ?—Where have I been,

And how forgot myself, how lost my memory ?

When did I pray, or look up steadfastly,

Had any goodness in my heart to guide me,

That I should give this vantage to mine enemy,

The enemy to my peace ? Forsoke my faith !

*Quissar.* Come, come, I know you love me.

*Arm.* Love you this way ?

This most destroying way ? Sure you but jest, lady.

*Quissar.* My love and life are one way.

*Arm.* Love alone then !

And mine another way : I'll love diseases first,

Dote on a villain that would cut my throat,

Woo all afflictions of all sorts, kiss Cruelty.

Have mercy, Heaven ! How have I been wand'ring,

Wand'ring the way of lust, and left my Maker !

How have I slept like cork upon a water,

And had no feeling of the storm that toas'd me !

Trod the blind paths of Death, forsook assurance,

Eternity of blessedness, for a woman !

For a young handsome face, hazard my being ?

*Quissar.* Are not our powers eternal, so their  
comforts ?

As great and full of hopes as yours ?

*Arm.* They are puppets—

*Gov.* Now mark him, sir, and but observe him  
nearly !

*Arm.* Their comforts like themselves, cold,  
senseless outsidings ;

You make 'em sick, as we are, peevish, mad,

Subject to age : And how can they cure us,

That are not able to refine themselves ?

*Quissar.* The sun and moon we worship, (those  
are heavenly)

And their bright influences we believe.

*Arm.* Away, fool !

I adore the Maker of that sun and moon,

That gives those bodies light and influence,

That pointed out their paths, and taught their  
motions ;

They are not so great as we, they are our servants.  
Placed there to teach us time, to give us knowledge

Of when, and how, the swellings of the main are,

And their returns again ; they are but our stewards

To make the earth fat, with their influence,

That she may bring forth her increase, and feed us.

Shall I fall from this faith to please a woman ?

For her embraces bring my soul to ruin ?

I look'd you should have said, "Make me a Christian!

Work that great cure;" for 'tis a great one, woman; That labour truly to perform, that venture, The crown of all great trial, and the fairest; I look'd you should have wept and kneel'd to beg it, Washed off your mist of ignorance, with waters Pure and repentant, from those eyes; I looked You should have brought me your chief god ye worship,

He that you offer human blood and life to, And made a sacrifice of him to Memory, Beat down his altars, ruined his false temples.

Gov. Now you may see!

Quisar. Take heed; you go too far, sir.— And yet I love to hear him: I must have you, [Aside.

And to that end I let you storm a little.— I know there must be some strife in your bosom To cool and quiet you, ere you can come back; I know old friends cannot part suddenly; There will be some let still: Yet I must have you, Have you of my faith too, and so enjoy you.

Arm. Now I condemn you! and I hate myself For looking on that face lasciviously! And it looks ugly now methinks.

Quisar. How, Portugal?

Arm. It looks like Death itself, to which 'twould lead me:

Your eyes resemble pale Despair, (they fright me!) And in their rounds a thousand horrid ruins Methinks I see; and in your tongue hear fearfully The hideous murmurs of weak souls have suffer'd. Get from me! I despise you. And know, woman, That for all this trap you have laid to catch my life in,

To catch my immortal soul, I hate and curse you, Contemn your deities, spurn at their powers, And where I meet your maumet gods, I'll swing 'em

Thus o'er my head, and kick 'em into puddles; Nay, I will out of vengeance search your temples, And, with those hearts that serve my god, demolish Your shambles of wild worships.

Gov. Now, now you hear, sir!

Arm. I will have my faith, since you are so crafty, The glorious Cross, although I love your brother; Let him frown too, I will have my devotion, And let your whole state storm!

King. Enter, and take him!—

[They come forward with guards, who seize ARMUSIA.

I am sorry, friend, that I am forced to do this.

Gov. Be sure ye bind him fast.

Quisar. But use him nobly.

King. Had it to me been done, I had forgiven it, And still preserved you fair; but to our gods, sir—

Quisar. Methinks I hate 'em now.

King. To our religion,

To these to be thus stubborn, thus rebellious, To threaten them—

Arm. Use all your violence:

I ask no mercy, nor repent my words; I spit at your beat powers; I serve one Will give me strength to scourge your gods—

Gov. Away with him!

Arm. To grind 'em into base dust, and disperse That never more their bloody memories— [Em,

Gov. Clap him close up!

King. Good friend, be cooler!

Arm. Never;

Your painted sister I despise too—

King. Softly!

Arm. And all her devilish arts I laugh and scorn Mock her blind purposes. [at,

King. You must be temperate.—

Offer him no violence, I command you strictly.

Gov. Now thou art up, I shall have time to speak too. [Aside.

Quisar. Oh, how I love this man, how truly honour him! [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.—The Fort of the Portuguese.

Enter CHRISTOPHERO and PEDRO at one door, EMANUEL and SOZA at another.

Chris. Do you know the news, gentlemen?

Eman. 'Would we knew as well, sir,

How to prevent it!

Soza. Is this the love they bear us, For our late benefit? Taken so maliciously, And clapped up close? is that the thanks they render?

Chris. It must not be put up thus, smothered slightly;

'Tis such a base unnatural wrong—

Pedro. I know, They may think to do wonders, aim at all, And to blow us with a vengeance out o' th' islands; But if we be ourselves, honest and resolute, And continue but masters of our ancient courages, Stick close, and give no vantage to their villainies.—

Soza. Nay, if we faint or fall a-pieces now, We are fools, and worthy to be mark'd for misery. Begin to strike at him, they are all bound to; To cancel his deserts? What must we look for, If they can carry this?

Eman. I'll carry coals then.

I have but one life, and one fortune, gentlemen, But I'll so husband it to vex these rascals, These barbarous slaves—

Chris. Shall we go charge 'em presently?

Soza. No, that will be too weak, and too fool-hardy;

We must have grounds that promise safety, friends, And sure offence; we lose our angers else, And, worse than that, venture our lives too lightly.

Enter PINIRO with his sword drawn.

Pin. Did you see mine uncle? Plague o' these barbarians!

How the rogues stick in my teeth! I know ye are angry:

So I am too, monstrous angry, gentlemen;

I am angry, that I choke again.

You hear Armusia's up, honest Armusia, Clapp'd up in prison, friends, the brave Armusia? Here are fine boys!

Eman. We hope he shall not stay there.

Pin. Stay? no, he must not stay, no talk of staying,

These are no times to stay. Are not these rascals? Speak, I beseech ye speak, are they not rogues? Think some abominable names—are they not devils?

But the devil's a great deal too good for 'em—fusty villains!

*Chris.* They are a kind of hounds.

*Pin.* Hounds were their fathers; Old blear-eyed bob-tailed hounds.—Lord, where's my uncle?

*Sosa.* What shall be done, sir?

*Pin.* Done?

*Sosa.* Yes, to relieve him?

If it be not sudden, they may take his life too.

*Pin.* They dare as soon take fire and swallow it, Take stakes and thrust into their tails for glisters. His life? why, 'tis a thing worth all the islands, And they know will be rated at that value: His very imprisonment will make the town stink, And shake and stink! I have physic in my hand for 'em, Shall give the goblins such a purge—

*Enter RUY DIAS.*

*Pedro.* Your uncle!

*Ruy.* I hear strange news, and have been seeking you: They say Armusia's prisoner. [ing you:

*Pin.* 'Tis most certain.

*Ruy.* Upon what cause?

*Pin.* He has deserved too much, sir; The old heathen policy has lit upon him, And paid him home.

*Ruy.* A most unnable dealing!

*Pin.* You are the next, if you can carry it tamely. He has deserved of all.

*Ruy.* I must confess it;

Of me so nobly too!

*Pin.* I am glad to hear it:

You have a time now to make good your confession, (Your faith will shew but cold else, and for fashion,)

Now to redeem all, now to thank his courtesy, Now to make those believe, that held you back—And an ill instrument, you are a gentleman, [ward An honest man, and you dare love your nation, Dare stick to Virtue, though she be opprest, And, for her own fair sake, step to her rescue: If you live ages, sir, and lose this hour, Not now redeem and vindicate your honour, Your life will be a murmur, and no man in't.

*Ruy.* I thank you, nephew.—Come along with me, gentlemen!

We will make 'em dancing sport immediately: We are masters of the fort yet; we shall see What that can do.

*Pin.* Let it but spit fire finely, And play their turrets, and their painted palaces, A frisking round or two, that they may trip it, And caper in the air!

*Ruy.* Come; we'll do something Shall make 'em look about; we'll send 'em plums, If they be not too hard for their teeth.

*Pin.* And fine potatoes Roasted in gunpowder: Such a banquet, sir, We will prepare their unmannerly stomachs—

*Ruy.* They shall see There is no safe retreat in villainy. Come, be high-hearted all!

*All.* We are all on fire, sir.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Royal Castle.*

*Enter KING, and Governor disguised as before.*

*King.* I am ungrateful, and a wretch, (persuade me not!)

Forgetful of the mercy he shewed me, The timely noble pity. Why should I See him fast bound and fettered, whose true

Whose manhood, and whose mighty hand, set me free?

Why should it come from me? why I command this?

Shall not all tongues and truths call me unthankful?

*Gov.* Had the offence been thrown on you, 'tis certain

It had been in your power, and your discretion, To have turned it into mercy, and forgiven it, And then it had shewed a virtuous point of gratitude,

Timely, and nobly taken; but since the cause Concerns the honour of our gods, and their title, And so transcends your power, and your compassion,

(A little your own safety, if you saw it too, If your too-fond indulgence did not dazzle you) It cannot now admit a private pity;

'Tis in their wills, their mercies, or revenges, And these revolts in you shew mere rebellious.

*King.* They are mild and pitiful—

*Gov.* To those repent.

*King.* Their nature's soft and tender—

*Gov.* To true hearts,

That feel compunction for their trespasses: This man defies 'em still, threatens destruction And demolition of their arms and worship, Spits at their powers: Take heed you be not found, sir,

And marked a favourer of their dishonour! They use no common justice.

*King.* What shall I do

To deserve of this man?

*Gov.* If you more bemoan him,

Or mitigate your power to preserve him, I'll curse you from the gods, call up their vengeance,

And fling it on your land and you: I have charge for't—

I hope to wrack you all.

[*Aside.*

*Enter QUIBARA with her hands bound, QUIBARA and PANURA.*

*King.* What ails my sister?

Why is she bound? why looks she so distractedly? Who dares do this?

*Quisara.* We did it, (pardon, sir!)

And for her preservation: She is grown wild, And, raving on the stranger's love and honour, Sometimes crying out, "Help, help, they will torture him,

They will take his life, they will murder him If we had not prevented violently [presently!" Had laid hands on her own life.

*Gov.* These are tokens

The gods' displeasure is gone out: Be quick, And, ere it fall, do something to appease 'em! You know the sacrifice.—I am glad it works thus.

[*Aside.*

*Quisar.* How low and base thou look'st now,  
that wert noble!

No figure of a king, methinks, shews on you,  
No face of majesty: Foul swarth ingratitude  
Has taken off thy sweetness; base forgetfulness  
Of mighty benefactors, has turn'd thee devil!  
Thou hast persecuted goodness, innocence,  
And laid a hard and violent hand on Virtue,  
On that fair Virtue that should teach and guide us;  
Thou hast wrong'd thine own preserver, whose  
least merit,

Poised with thy main estate, thou canst not satisfy;  
Nay, put thy life in too, 'twill be too light still.

What hast thou done?

*Gov.* Go for him presently,  
And once more we'll try if we can win him fairly;  
If not, let nothing she says hinder you, or stir you!  
She speaks distractedly: Do that the gods com-  
mand you.—

Do you know what you say, lady?

*Quisar.* I could curse thee too!  
Religion and severity has steel'd thee,  
Has turn'd thy heart to stone; thou hast made  
the gods hard too,

Against their sweet and patient natures, cruel.

None of ye feel what bravery ye tread on!

What innocence, what beauty,—

*King.* Pray, be patient!

*Quisar.* What honourable things ye cast behind  
What monuments of man! [ye!

*Enter ARMUSIA and Guard.*

*King.* Once more, Armusia,  
Because I love you tenderly and dearly,  
And would be glad to win you mine, I wish you,  
Even from my heart I wish and woo you—

*Arm.* What, sir?

Take heed how you persuade me falsely! then you  
hate me;

Take heed how you entrap me!

*King.* I advise you,  
And tenderly and truly I advise you,  
Both for your soul's health, and your safety—

*Arm.* Stay!

And name my soul no more! she is too precious,  
Too glorious for your flatteries, too secure too.

*Gov.* Consider the reward, sir, and the honour  
That is prepared, the glory you shall grow to.

*Arm.* They are not to be consider'd in these  
cases,

Not to be named; when souls are questioned,  
They are vain and flying vapours. Touch my life,  
'Tis ready for you; put it to what test

It shall please you, I am patient; but for the rest,  
You may remove rocks with your little fingers,  
Or blow a mountain out o' th' way with bellows,  
As soon as stir my faith: Use no more arguments.

*Gov.* We must use tortures then.

*Arm.* Your worst and painfullest

I am joyful to accept.

*Gov.* You must the sharpest,  
For such has been your hate against our deities,  
Deliver'd openly, your threats and scornings;  
And either your repentance must be mighty,  
Which is your free conversion to our customs,  
Or equal punishment, which is your life, sir.

*Arm.* I am glad I have it for you; take it, priest,  
And all the miseries that shall attend it!

Let the gods glut themselves with Christian blood;  
It will be ask'd again, and so far follow'd,

So far revenged, and with such holy justice,  
Your gods of gold shall melt and sink before it;  
Your altars and your temples shake to nothing;  
And you false worshippers, blind fools of ceremony,  
Shall seek for holes to hide your heads and fears in,  
For seas to swallow you from this destruction,  
Darkness to dwell about you, and conceal you,  
Your mothers' wombs again—

*Gov.* Make the fires ready,  
And bring the several tortures out!

*Quisar.* Stand fast, sir,  
And fear 'em not! You that have stept so nobly  
Into this pious trial, start not now;  
Keep on your way; a virgin will assist you,  
A virgin won by your fair constancy,  
And, glorying that she is won so, will die by you!  
I have touch'd you every way, tried you most  
honest,  
Perfect, and good, chaste, blushing-chaste, and  
temperate,  
Valiant, without vain-glory, modest, staid,  
No rage or light affection ruling in you;  
Indeed, the perfect school of worth I find you,  
The temple of true honour.

*Arm.* Whither will she be—

What do you infer by this fair argument, lady?

*Quisar.* Your faith and your religion must be  
like you;

They, that can shew you these, must be pure  
mirrors:

When the streams flow clear and fair, what are the  
fountains?

I do embrace your faith, sir, and your fortune:  
Go on! I will assist you; I feel a sparkle here,  
A lively spark that kindles my affection,  
And tells me it will rise to flames of glory.  
Let 'em put on their angers! suffer nobly;  
Shew me the way, and when I faint, instruct me;  
And if I follow not—

*Arm.* Oh, blessed lady,  
Since thou art won, let me begin my triumph!—  
Come, clap your terrors on!

*Quisar.* All your fell tortures!  
For there is nothing he shall suffer, brother,  
I swear by my new faith, (which is most sacred,  
And I will keep it so) but I will follow in,  
And follow to a scruple of affliction,  
In spite of all your gods, without prevention.

*Gov.* 'Death! she amazes me.

*King.* What shall be done now?

*Gov.* They must die both,  
And suddenly: they will corrupt all else.—  
This woman makes me weary of my mischief;

[*Aside.*  
She shakes me, and she staggers me.—Go in, sir;  
I'll see the execution.

*King.* Not so sudden;  
If they go, all my friends and sisters perish.

*Gov.* 'Would I were safe at home again! [*Aside.*

*Enter Messenger.*

*Mess.* Arm, arm, sir!  
Seek for defence; the castle plays and thunders,  
The town rocks, and the houses fly i' th' air,  
The people die for fear. Captain Ruy Dias  
Has made an oath he will not leave a stone here,  
No, not the memory here has stood a city,  
Unless Armusia be deliver'd fairly.

*King.* I have my fears: What can our gods do  
now for us?

*Gov.* Be patient! But keep him still. He is a cure, sir,  
Against both rage and cannon. Go and fortify;  
Call in the princes, make the palace sure,  
And let 'em know you are a king; look nobly,  
And take your courage to you!—Keep close the prisoner,  
And under command; we are betray'd else.  
*Arm.* How joyfully I go!  
*Quisar.* Take my heart with thee.  
*Gov.* I hold a wolf by the ear; Now, Fortune, free me!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Street. Firing of Cannon.**Enter four Townsmen.*

*1 Towns.* Heaven bless us, what a thundering's here? what fire-spitting?  
We cannot drink, but our cans are maul'd amongst us.  
*2 Towns.* I would they would maul our scores too! Shame o' their guns,  
I thought they had been bird-pots, or great candle-cases;  
How devilishly they bounce, and how the bullets Borrow a piece of a house here, there another,  
And mend those up again with another parish!  
Here flies a powd'ring tub, the meat ready roasted,  
And there a barrel pissing vinegar;  
And they two, over-taking the top of a high steeple,  
Newly sliced off for sallad—  
*3 Towns.* A vengeance fire 'em!  
*2 Towns.* Nay, they fire fast enough; you need not help 'em.  
*4 Towns.* Are these the Portugal bulls? How loud they bellow!  
*2 Towns.* Their horns are plaguy strong; they push down palaces;  
They toss our little habitations,  
Like whelps, like grindle-tails, with their heels upward;  
All the windows i' th' town dance a new trenchmore:  
'Tis like to prove a blessed age for glasiars!  
I met a hand, and a letter in't, in great haste,  
And by-and-by a single leg running after it,  
As if the arm had forgot part of his errand;  
Heads fly like foot-balls every where.  
*1 Towns.* What shall we do?  
*2 Towns.* I care not; my shop's cancell'd,  
And all the pots and earthen pans in't vanish'd:  
There was a single bullet and they together by the ears,  
You would have thought Tom Tumbler had been there,  
And all his troops of devils.  
*3 Towns.* Let's to the King,  
And get this gentleman deliver'd handsomely!  
By this hand, there's no walking above ground else.  
*2 Towns.* By this leg (let me swear nimbly by it,  
For I know not how long I shall owe it) if I were Out of the town once, if I came in again  
To fetch my breakfast, I will give 'em leave  
To cram me with a Portugal pudding. Come,  
Let us do anything to appease this thunder!  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Portuguese Fort.**Enter PINERO and PANORA.*

*Pin.* Art sure it was that blind priest?  
*Pan.* Yes, most certain.  
He has provoked all this. The king is merciful,  
And wond'rous loving; but he fires him on still,  
And, when he cools, enrages him; I know it;  
Threatens new vengeance, and the gods' fierce justice,  
When he but looks with fair eyes on Armusia;  
Will lend him no time to relent. My royal mistress,  
She has entertain'd a Christian hope.  
*Pin.* Speak truly!  
*Pan.* Nay, 'tis most true; but, lord, how he lies at her,  
And threatens her, and flatters her, and damns her!  
And, I fear, if not speedily prevented,  
If she continue stout, both shall be executed.  
*Pin.* I'll kiss thee for this news! Nay, more,  
*Panora;*  
If thou wilt give me leave, I'll get thee with  
The best way to convert thee. [Christian,  
*Pan.* Make me believe so.  
*Pin.* I will, i' faith. But which way camest thou hither?  
The palace is close guarded, and baricadoed.  
*Pan.* I came through a private vault, which few  
It rises in a temple not far hence, [there know of;  
Close by the castle here.  
*Pin.* How? to what end?  
*Pan.* A good one:  
To give you knowledge of my new-born mistress,  
And in what doubt Armusia stands:  
Think any present means or hope to stop 'em  
From their fell ends. The princes are come in too,  
And they are harden'd also.  
*Pin.* The damn'd priest—  
*Pan.* Sure he's a cruel man! Methinks religion  
Should teach more temperate lessons.  
*Pin.* He the firebrand?  
He dare to touch at such fair lives as theirs are?  
Well, prophet, I shall prophesy, I shall catch you,  
When all your prophecies will not redeem you.—  
Wilt thou do one thing bravely?  
*Pan.* Any good I am able.  
*Pin.* And, by thine own white hand, I'll swear  
thou art virtuous,  
And a brave vintch. Durst thou but guide me  
presently  
Through the same vault thou camest, into the  
palace,  
And those I shall appoint, such as I think fit?  
*Pan.* Yes, I will do it, and suddenly and truly.  
*Pin.* I would fain behold this prophet.  
*Pan.* Now I have you,  
And shall bring you where you shall behold him,  
Alone too, and unfurnish'd of defences;  
That shall be my care: But you must not betray  
me.  
*Pin.* Dost thou think we are so base, such slaves?  
*Pan.* I do not: [rogue?  
And you shall see how fairly I'll work for you.  
*Pin.* I must needs steal that priest, steal him,  
and hang him.  
*Pan.* Do anything to remove his mischief:  
*Pin.* Come, pr'ythee, love! [strangle him!  
*Pan.* You'll offer me no foul play?  
The vault is dark.

*Pin.* 'Twas well remember'd.

*Pan.* And you may—

But I hold you honest.

*Pin.* Honest enough, I warrant thee.

*Pan.* I am but a poor weak wench! and what with the place,

And your persuasions, sir—but I hope you will not—

You know we are often cozened.

*Pin.* If thou dost fear me,

Why dost thou put me in mind?

*Pan.* To let you know, sir,

Though it be in your power, and things fitting to let a true gentleman— [it,

*Pin.* I know what he'll do:

Come, and remember me, and I'll answer thee,

I'll answer thee to the full; we'll call at the castle,

And then, my good guide, do thy will! 'shalt find me

A very tractable man.

*Pan.* I hope I shall, sir. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*Before the Royal Castle.*

*Enter BAKAM, SYANA, and Soldiers.*

*Bakam.* Let my men guard the gates!

*Syana.* And mine the temple,

For fear the honour of our gods should suffer:

And on your lives be watchful!

*Bakam.* And be valiant;

And let's see, if these Portugals dare enter,

What their high hearts dare do! Let's see how readily

The great Ruy Dias will redeem his countryman!

He speaks proud words, and threatens.

*Syana.* He's approved, sir,

And will put fair for what he promises.

I could wish friendlier terms; yet for our liberties

And for our gods, we are bound in our best service,

Even in the hazard of our lives—

*Enter the KING on a Balcony.*

*King.* Come up, princes,

And give your counsels, and your helps: the fort still

Plays fearfully upon us, beats our buildings,

And turns our people wild with fears.

*Bakam.* Send for

The prisoner, and give us leave to argue.

[Exeunt BAKAM and SYANA.

*Enter RUY DIAS, EMANUEL, CHRISTOPHERO, and PEDRO, with Soldiers.*

*Ruy.* Come on nobly,

And let the fort play still! we are strong enough

To look upon 'em, and return at pleasure:

It may be on our view they will return him.

*Chris.* We will return 'em such thanks else, shall make 'em

Scratch where it itches not.

*Eman.* How the people stare!

And some cry, some pray, some curse heartily;

But it is the king—

*Enter SYANA, BAKAM, QUISARA; ARMUSIA, chained, with Soldiers, above.*

*Ruy.* I cannot blame their wisdoms;

They are all above. Armusia chain'd and bound too?

Oh, these are thankful squires!

VOL. II.

*Bakam.* Hear us, Ruy Dias,

Be wise and hear us, and give speedy answer!

Command thy cannon presently to cease,

No more to trouble the afflicted people,

Or suddenly Armusia's head goes off,

As suddenly as said.

*Eman.* Stay, sir, be moderate!

*Arm.* Do nothing that's dishonourable, Ruy Dias!

Let not the fear of me master thy valour!

Pursue 'em still; they are base malicious people.

*King.* Friend, be not desperate!

*Arm.* I scorn your courtesies!—

Strike when you dare, a fair aim guide the gunner,

And may he let fly still with Fortune! Friend,

Do me the honour of a soldier's funerals,

The last fair Christian rite; see me i' th' ground,

And let the palace burn first, then the temples,

And on their scorn'd gods erect my monument!

Touch not the princess, as you are a soldier!

*Quisar.* Which way you go, sir, I must follow necessary:

One life, and one death!

*King.* Will you take a truce yet?

*Enter below PINIERO, SOZA, and Soldiers, with the Governor.*

*Pin.* No, no; go on! Look here; your god, your prophet!

*King.* How came he taken?

*Pin.* I conjured for him, king:

I am a sure cur at an old blind prophet.

I'll hunt you such a false knave admirably!

A terrier I: I earth'd him, and then snap him.

*Soza.* Saving the reverence of your grace, we

Even out of the next chamber to you. [stole him;

*Pin.* Come, come; begin, king!

Begin this bloody matter when you dare!

And yet I scorn my sword should touch the rascal:

I'll tear him thus before you.—Ha! what art thou?

[Pulls his beard and hair off.

*King.* How's this? art thou a prophet?

*Ruy.* Come down, princes!

*King.* We are abus'd!—Oh, my most dear Armusia!

Off with his chains:—And now, my noble sister,

Rejoice with me; I know you are pleas'd as I am.

[Exeunt from the balcony.

*Pin.* This is a precious prophet! Why, don

Governor,

What make you here? how long have you taken orders?

*Ruy.* Why, what a wretch art thou to work this mischief!

To assume this holy shape to ruin Honour, Honour and Chastity!

*Enter, below, KING, and the others.*

*Gov.* I had paid you all, But Fortune play'd the slut. Come, give me my doom.

*King.* I cannot speak for wonder.

*Gov.* 'Nay, 'tis I, sir;

And here I stay your sentence.

*King.* Take her, friend!

(You have half persuaded me to be a Christian)

And with her all the joys, and all the blessings!

Why, what dream have we dwelt in?

*Ruy.* All peace to ye,

And all the happiness of heart dwell with ye!

Children as sweet and noble as their parents—

*Pin.* And kings at least !

*Arm.* Good sir, forget my rashness ;  
And noble princes, for I was once angry,  
And out of that, might utter some distemper,  
Think not it is my nature.

*Syana.* Your joy is ours, sir ;  
And nothing we find in you but most noble.

*King.* To prison with this dog ! there let him  
howl,

And, if he can repent, sigh out his villainies !  
His island we shall seize into our hands :  
His father and himself have both usurp'd it,  
And kept it by oppression : The town and castle,  
In which I lay myself most miserable,  
'Till my most honourable friend redeem'd me,  
Signor Piniero, I bestow on you ;

The rest of next command upon these gentlemen ;  
Upon ye all, my love.

*Arm.* Oh, brave Ruy Dias,  
You have started now beyond me : I must thank  
you,

And thank you for my life, my wife, and honour.

*Ruy.* I am glad I had her for you, sir.

*King.* Come, princes ;  
Come, friends and lovers all ; come, noble gen-  
tlemen ;

No more guns now, nor hates, but joys and tri-  
umphs !

An universal gladness fly about us !

And know, however subtle men dare cast

And promise wrack, the gods give peace at last.

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

# THE NOBLE GENTLEMAN.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Monsieur Mount-Marine, the Noble Gentleman, but none of the wisest.  
Jaques, an old Servant to Marine's Family.  
Clerimont, a Gull, Cousin to Marine.  
Gentleman, Servant to Marine's Wife.  
Longueville, } Two Courtiers that plot to abuse  
Brauffort, } Marine.  
Shattillon, a Lord, mad for Love.  
Doctor.  
Page.

Gentlemen.  
Anthony, Clerimont's Servant.  
Servants.

Lady, Wife to Marine, a witty Wanton.  
Wife to Clerimont, a simple Country Gentlewoman.  
Shattillon's Mistress, a virtuous Virgin.  
Maria, Servant to Marine's Wife.

SCENE,—PARIS.

## PROLOGUE,

AT A REVIVAL.

Wit is become an antic, and puts on  
As many shapes of variation,  
To court the time's applause, as the times dare  
Change several fashions : Nothing is thought rare  
Which is not new, and follow'd ; yet we know  
That what was worn some twenty years ago

Comes into grace again : And we pursue  
That custom, by presenting to your view  
A play in fashion then, not doubting now  
But 'twill appear the same, if you allow  
Worth to their noble memory, whose name,  
Beyond all power of death, lives in their fame.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—A Room in the House of Marine.

*Enter Marine and Jaques.*

*Mar.* What happiness waits on the life at court,  
What dear content, greatness, delight, and ease !  
What ever-springing hopes, what tides of honour,  
That raise their fortunes to the height of wishes !  
What can be more in man, what more in nature,  
Than to be great and fear'd ? A courtier,  
A noble courtier ! 'Tis a name that draws  
Wonder and duty from all eyes and knees.

*Jaques.* And so your worship's land within the walls,

Where you shall have it all enclosed, and sure.

*Mar.* Peace, knave ! dull creature, bred of sweat and smoke,

These mysteries are far above thy faith :  
But thou shalt see—

*Jaques.* And then I shall believe,  
Your fair revenues, turn'd into fair suits ;  
I shall believe your tenants bruised and rent,  
Under the weight of coaches ; all your state [places  
Drawn through the streets in triumph ; suits for

Plied with a mine of gold, and being got  
Fed with a great stream. I shall believe all this.

*Mar.* You shall believe, and know me glorious—

*Enter Clerimont.*

Cousin, good day and health !

*Cler.* The same to you, sir ;

And more, without my wishes, could you know  
What calm content dwells in a private house—

Yet look into yourself ; retire ! This place  
Of promises, and protestations, fits  
Minds only bent to ruin : You should know this ;  
You have their language perfect ; you have tutors,  
I do not doubt, sufficient : But beware !

*Mar.* You are merry, cousin.

*Cler.* Yet your patience ;

You shall learn that too, but not like itself,  
Where it is held a virtue. Tell me, sir,

Have you cast up your state, rated your land,  
And find it able to endure the change

Of time and fashion ? Is it always harvest ?

Always vintage ? Have you ships at sea,  
To bring you gold and stone from rich Peru,

Monthly returning treasure? Doth the king  
Open his large exchequer to your hands,  
And bid you be a great man? Can your wife  
Coin off her beauty? or the week allow  
Suits to each day, and know no ebb in honour?  
If these be possible, and can hold out,  
Then be a courtier still, and still be wasting.

*Mar.* Cousin, pray give me leave!

*Cler.* I have done.

*Mar.* I could requite your gall, and in a strain  
As bitter, and as full of rhubarb, preach  
Against your country life; but 'tis below me,  
And only subject to my pity! Know,  
The eminent court, to them that can be wise,  
And fasten on her blessings, is a sun  
That draws men up from coarse and earthly being,  
(I mean these men of merit that have power  
And reason to make good her benefits)  
Learns them a manly boldness, gives their tongues  
Sweetness of language, makes them apt to please,  
Files off all rudeness and uncivil 'haviour,  
Shews them as neat in carriage as in clothes.  
Cousin, have you ever seen the court?

*Cler.* No, sir;

Nor am I yet in travail with that longing.

*Mar.* Oh, the state

And greatness of that place, where men are found  
Only to give the first creation glory!  
Those are the models of the ancient world,  
Left like the Roman statues to stir up  
Our following hopes; the place itself puts on  
The brow of majesty, and flings her lustre  
Like the air newly lighten'd; form, and order,  
Are only there themselves, unforced, and sound,  
As they were first created to this place.

*Cler.* You nobly came, but will go from thence  
base!

*Mar.* 'Twas very pretty, and a good conceit;  
You have a wit, good cousin: I do joy in't;  
Keep it for court. But to myself again!  
When I have view'd these pieces, turn'd these eyes,  
And, with some taste of superstition,  
Look'd on the wealth of Nature, the fair dames,  
Beauties, that light the court, and make it shew  
Like a fair Heaven in a frosty night,  
And 'mongst these mine, not poorest—'Tis for  
tongues  
Of blessed poets, such as Orpheus was,  
To give their worth and praises! Oh, dear cousin,  
Let her have a wife, and fair; bring her hither,  
You her not live to be the mistress of  
A farmer's heir, and be confined ever  
To a serge, far coarser than my horse-cloth!  
Let her have velvets, tiffines, jewels, pearls,  
A coach, an usher, and her two lacquies;  
And I will send my wife to give her rules,  
And read the rudiments of court to her.

*Cler.* Sir, I had rather send her to Virginia,  
To help to propagate the English nation.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Mar.* Sirrah, how slept your mistress, and what  
Are to pay service? [visitants]

*Serv.* Sir, as I came out,  
Two counts were newly enter'd.

*Mar.* This is greatness;  
But few such servants wait a country beauty.

*Cler.* They are the more to thank their modesty:  
God keep my wife, and all my issue female,  
From such uprisings!

*Enter Doctor.*

*Mar.* What, my learned doctor!  
You will be welcome: Give her health and youth,  
And I will give you gold.— [Exit Doctor.]  
Cousin, how savours this? Is it not sweet,  
And very great? tastes it not of nobleness?

*Cler.* 'Faith, sir, my palate is too dull and lazy;  
I cannot taste it; 'tis not for my relish:  
But be so still! since your own misery  
Must first reclaim you; to which I leave you, sir.  
If you will yet be happy, leave the humour,  
And base subjection to your wife; be wise,  
And let her know with speed you are her husband!  
I shall be glad to hear it. My horse is sent for.

*Mar.* Even such another country thing as this  
Was I; such a piece of dirt, so heavy,  
So provident to heap up ignorance,  
And be an ass; such musty clothes wore I,  
So old and thread-bare: I do yet remember  
Divers young gallants, lighting at my gate  
To see my honour'd wife, have offer'd pence,  
And bid me walk their horses. Such a slave  
Was I in show then; but my eyes are open'd.—

*Enter Lady.*

Many sweet morrows to my worthy wife!

*Lady.* 'Tis well, and aptly given; as much for  
you!

But to my present business, which is money.

*Mar.* Lady, I have none left.

*Lady.* I hope you dare not say so, nor imagine  
So base and low a thought: "I have none left?"  
Are these words fitting for a man of worth,  
And one of your full credit? Do you know  
The place you live in? me? and what I labour  
For you, and your advancement?

*Mar.* Yes, my dearest.

*Lady.* And do you pop me off with this slight  
answer,

"In troth I have none left?" In troth, you must  
have!

Nay, stare not; 'tis most true: Send speedily  
To all that love you, let your people fly  
Like thunder through the city, and not return  
Under five thousand crowns. Try all, take all;  
Let not a wealthy merchant be untempted,  
Or any one that hath the name of money;  
Take up at any use; give band, or land,  
Or mighty statutes, able by their strength  
To tie up Samson were he now alive.  
There must be money gotten; for, be persuaded,  
If we fall now, or be but seen to shrink  
Under our fair beginnings, 'tis our ruin,  
And then good night to all but our disgrace!  
Farewell, the hope of coming happiness,  
And all the aims we level'd at so long!  
Are you not moved at this? No sense of want,  
Towards yourself yet breeding?

Be old, and common, jaded to the eyes  
Of grooms, and pages, chambermaids, and guarders;  
And when you have done, put your poor house in  
order,

And hang yourself! for such must be the end  
Of him that willingly forsakes his hopes,  
And hath a joy to tumble to his ruin.

All that I say is certain; if you fail,  
Do not impute me with it; I am clear.

*Mar.* Now Heaven forbid I should do wrong  
to you,

My dearest wife, and madam ! Yet give leave  
To your poor creature to unfold himself ;  
You know my debts are many more than means,  
My hands not taken in, my friends at home  
Drawn dry with these expences, my poor tenants  
More full of want than we ; then what new course  
Can I beget to raise those crowns by ? Speak,  
And I shall execute.

*Lady.* Pray tell me true ;  
Have you not land in the country ?

*Mar.* Pardon me !

I had forgot it.

*Lady.* Sir, you must remember it ;  
There is no remedy : This land must be  
In Paris ere to-morrow night.

*Mar.* It shall.

Let me consider : Some three hundred acres  
Will serve the turn.

*Lady.* 'Twill furnish at all points.  
Now you speak like yourself, and know, like him  
That means to be a man ; suspect no less,  
For the return will give you five for one :  
You shall be great to-morrow ; I have said it.  
Farewell ; and see this business be a-foot  
With expedition ! [Exit.]

*Mar.* Health, all joy, and honour,  
Wait on my lovely wife !—What, Jaques, Jaques !

*Enter JAQUES.*

*Jaques.* Sir, did you call ?

*Mar.* I did so. Hie thee, Jaques,  
Down to the Bank, and there to some good merchant  
(Conceive me well, good Jaques, and be private)  
Offer three hundred acres of my land :  
Say it is choice and fertile ; ask upon it  
Five thousand crowns : This is the business  
I must employ thee in ; be wise and speedy !

*Jaques.* Sir, do not do this.

*Mar.* Knave, I must have money.

*Jaques.* If you have money thus, your knave  
must tell you,

You will not have a foot of land left : Be more  
wary,

And more friend to yourself ! This honest land,  
Your worship has discarded, has been true,  
And done you loyal service.

*Mar.* Gentle Jaques,

You have a merry wit ; employ it well  
About the business you have now in hand.  
When you come back, enquire me in the presence ;  
If not i' th' Tennis-court, or at my house. [Exit.]

*Jaques.* If this vein hold, I know where to en-  
quire you.

Five thousand crowns ? This, with good husbandry,  
May hold a month out ; then five thousand more,  
And more land a-bleeding for't ; as many more,  
And more land laid aside ! God, and St. Dennis,  
Keep honest-minded young men bachelors !  
'Tis strange, my master should be yet so young  
A puppy, that he cannot see his fall,  
And got so near the sun. I'll to his cousin,  
And once more tell him of it ; if he fail,  
Then to my mortgage, next unto my sale ! [Exit.]

We shall have best access unto my mistress,  
To tender your devotions. [Exit.]

*Long.* Be it so.

Now to our first discourse !

*Beau.* I pry'thee, peace !

Thou canst not be so bad, or make me know  
Such things are living ! Do not give thyself  
So common and so idle, so open vile,  
So great a wronger of thy worth, so low !  
I cannot, nor I must not credit thee.

*Long.* Now, by this light, I am a whoremaster ;  
An open and an excellent whoremaster ;  
And take a special glory that I am so !  
I thank my stars I am a whoremaster ;  
And such a one as dare be known and seen,  
And pointed at to be a noble wencher.

*Beau.* Do not let all ears hear this : Hark you,  
I am myself a whoremaster ; I am, [sir !]  
Believe it, sir ; (in private be it spoken)  
I love a whore directly : Most men are  
Wenchers, and have professed the science ; few  
That look upon ye now, but whoremasters, [men  
Or have a full desire to be so.

*Long.* This is noble !

*Beau.* It is without all question, being private,  
And held as needful as intelligence ;  
But, being once discover'd, blown abroad,  
And known to common senses, 'tis no more  
Than geometrical rules in carpenters,  
That only know some measure of an art,  
But are not grounded. Be no more deceived !

I have a conscience to reclaim you, sir.—  
Mistake me not ! I do not bid you leave  
Your whore, or less to love her ; Heaven forbid it,  
I should be such a villain to my friend,  
Or so unnatural ! 'twas ne'er harbour'd here !—  
Learn to be secret first ; then strike your deer !

*Long.* Your fair instructions, monsieur, I shall  
learn.

*Beau.* And you shall have them ; I desire your

*Long.* They are your servants. [ears.]

*Beau.* You must not love—

*Long.* How, sir !

*Beau.* I mean a lady ; there is danger :  
She hath an usher and a waiting-gentlewoman,  
A page, a coachman ; these are fee'd, and fee'd,  
And yet for all that will be prating.

*Long.* So !

*Beau.* You understand me, sir ; they will  
discover't,

And there's a loss of credit ; table-talk  
Will be the end of this, or worse than that :  
Will this be worthy of a gentleman ?

*Long.* Proceed, good sir !

*Beau.* Next, leave your city dame ;  
The best of that tribe are most merely coy,  
Or most extremely foolish ; both which vices  
Are no great stirrers-up, unless in husbands  
That owe this cattle ; fearing her that's coy  
To be but seeming, her that's fool too forward.

*Long.* This is the rarest fellow, and the soundest,  
I mean in knowledge, that e'er wore a codpiece ;  
He has found out that will pass all Italy,  
All France and England, (to their shames I speak,  
And to the griefs of all their gentlemen)  
The noble theory of luxury.

*Beau.* Your patience,

And I will lay before your eyes a course  
That I myself found out ; 'tis excellent,  
Easy, and full of freedom.

SCENE II.—*A Hall in the same.*

*Enter LONGUEVILLE, BRAUFORT, and Gentleman.*

*Gent.* Gentlemen, hold on discourse a while ;  
I shall return with knowledge how and where

*Long.* Oh, good sir,  
You rack me, till I know it.

*Beau.* This it is :  
When your desire is up, your blood well heated,  
And apt for sweet encounter, chuse the night,  
And with the night your wench ; the streets have  
store ;

There seize upon her, get her to your chamber,  
Give her a cardcue, 'tis royal payment ;  
When ye are dull, dismiss her ; no man knows,  
Nor she herself, who hath encounter'd her.

*Long.* Oh, but their faces !

*Beau.* Never talk of faces !

The night allows her equal with a duchess :  
Imagination doth all ; think her fair,  
And great, clapt in velvet, she is so.  
Sir, I have tried those, and do find it certain,  
It never fails me : 'Tis but twelve nights since  
My last experience.

*Long.* Oh, my miching varlet, [Apart.  
I'll fit you, as I live !—

'Tis excellent ; I'll be your scholar, sir.

*Enter Lady and Gentleman.*

*Lady.* You are fairly welcome both ! 'Troth,  
gentlemen,

You have been strangers ; I could chide you for't,  
And task you with unkindness. What's the news ?  
The town was never empty of some novelty :  
Servant, what's your intelligence ?

*Gent.* 'Faith, nothing :

I have not heard of any worth relating.

*Beau.* Nor I, sweet lady.

*Long.* Then give me attention :

Monsieur Shattillion's mad.

*Lady.* Mad ?

*Long.* Mad as May-butter ;

And, which is more, mad for a wench.

*Lady.* 'Tis strange,  
And full of pity.

*Long.* All that comes near him  
He thinks are come of purpose to betray him ;  
Being full of strange conceit, the wench he loved  
Stood very near the crown.

*Lady.* Alas, good monsieur !

A' was a proper man, and fair demean'd ;

A person worthy of a better temper.

*Long.* He is strong opinion'd, that the wench he  
loved

Remains close prisoner by the king's command,  
Fearing her title : When the poor grieved gentle-  
woman

Follows him much lamenting, and much loving,  
In hope to make him well, he knows her not,  
Nor any else that comes to visit him.

*Lady.* Let's walk in, gentlemen, and there dis-  
course

His further miseries ! You shall stay dinner ;  
In truth, you must obey.

*All.* We are your servants ! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter CLERIMONT.*

*Cler.* There's no good to be done, no cure to be  
wrought

Upon my desperate kinsman : I'll to horse,  
And leave him to the fool's whip, misery.  
I shall recover twenty miles this night ;  
My horse stands ready ; I'll away with speed.

*Enter SHATTILLION.*

*Shat.* Sir, may I crave your name ?

*Cler.* Yes, sir, you may :  
My name is Clerimont.

*Shat.* 'Tis well. Your faction ?  
What party knit you with ?

*Cler.* I know no parties,  
Nor no factions, sir.

*Shat.* Then wear this cross of white :  
And where you see the like, they are my friends ;  
Observe them well ; the time is dangerous.

*Cler.* Sir, keep your cross ; I'll wear none.—  
Sure this fellow [Aside.

Is much beside himself, grown mad.

*Shat.* A word, sir !

You can pick nothing out of this ; this cross  
Is nothing but a cross, a very cross,  
Plain, without spell, or witchcraft ; search it !  
You may suspect, and well, there's poison in't,  
Powder, or wildfire ; but 'tis nothing so.

*Cler.* I do believe you, sir ; 'tis a plain cross.

*Shat.* Then do your worst, I care not ! Tell the  
king,

Let him know all this, as I am sure he shall ;  
When you have spit your venom, then will I  
Stand up a faithful and a loyal subject.  
And so, God save his Grace ! This is no treason.

*Cler.* He is March mad : Farewell, monsieur ! [Exit.

*Shat.* Farewell !

I shall be here attending.—'Tis my life  
They aim at ; there's no way to save it. Well,  
Let 'em spread all their nets, they shall not draw  
me

Into any open treason : I can see,  
And can beware ; I have my wits about me,  
I thank Heaven for it !

*Enter SHATTILLION'S LOVE.*

*Love.* There he goes,  
That was the fairest hope the French court bred,  
The worthiest and the sweetest-temper'd spirit,  
The truest, and the valiantest, the best of judgment,  
Till most unhappy I severed those virtues,  
And turn'd his wit wild with a coy denial ;  
Which Heaven forgive me ! And be pleased, oh,  
Heaven,

To give again his senses, that my love  
May strike off all my follies !

*Shat.* Lady !

*Love.* I, sir ?

*Shat.* Your will with me, sweet lady ?

*Love.* Sir, I come—

*Shat.* From the dread sovereign king ; I know  
it, lady :

He is a gracious prince ; long may he live !  
Pertain you to his chamber ?

*Love.* No, indeed, sir ;

That place is not for women. Do you know me ?  
*Shat.* Yes, I do know you.

*Love.* What's my name ? Pray you speak.

*Shat.* That's all one ; I do know you and your  
business ;

You are discover'd, lady ! I am wary ;  
It stands upon my life. Pray excuse me !  
The best man of this kingdom sent you hither,  
To dive into me : Have I touch'd you ? ha ?

*Love.* You are deceived, sir ; I come from your  
Love,

That sends you fair commendments, and many kisses.

*Shat.* Alas, poor soul, how does she? is she  
Keeps she her bed still? [living?]

*Love.* Still, sir, she is living;  
And well, and shall do so.

*Shat.* Are you in council?

*Love.* No, sir, nor any of my sex.

*Shat.* Why, so!

If you had been in council, you would know  
Her time to be but slender; she must die.

*Love.* I do believe it, sir.

*Shat.* And suddenly;  
She stands too near a fortune.

*Love.* Sir?

*Shat.* 'Tis so;

There is no jesting with a prince's title.  
'Would we had both been born of common parents,  
And lived a private and retired life  
In homely cottage! we had then enjoy'd  
Our loves, and our embraces: these are things  
That cannot tend to treason.

*Love.* I am wretched!

*Shat.* Oh,

I pray as often for the king as any,  
And with as true a heart, for his continuance;  
And do moreover pray his heirs may live,  
And their fair issues; then, as I am bound,  
For all the states and commons: If these prayers  
Be any ways ambitious, I submit,  
And lay my head down; let 'em take it off!  
You may inform against me, but withal  
Remember my obedience to the crown,  
And service to the state.

*Love.* Good sir, I love you.

*Shat.* Then love the gracious king, and say with  
[Heaven save his Grace!] [me,

*Love.* Heaven save his Grace!

*Shat.* This is strange,

A woman should be sent to undermine me,  
And buz love into me to try my spirit;  
Offer me kisses, and enticing follies,  
To make me open and betray myself:  
It was a subtle and a dangerous plot,  
And very soundly follow'd!—Farewell, lady!  
Let me have equal hearing, and relate  
I am an honest man. Heaven save the king!

[Exit.

*Love.* I'll never leave him, till, by art or prayer,  
I have restored his senses: If I make  
Him perfect man again, he's mine; till when,  
I here abjure all loves of other men!

[Exit.

SCENE IV.—*Another Street.*

Enter CLEMMONT and JAQUES.

*Jaques.* Nay, good sir, be persuaded! Go but  
And tell him he's undone; say nothing else, [back,  
And you shall see how things will work upon't.

*Cler.* Not so, good Jaques! I am held an ass,  
A country fool, good to converse with dirt,  
And eat coarse bread, wear the worst wool, know  
nothing

But the highway to Paris: And wouldst thou have  
me bring

These stains and imperfections to the rising view  
Of the right worshipful thy worthy master?

They must be bright, and shine, their clothes soft  
And the Tyrian purple, [velvet

[Smell] like the Arabian gums, hung like the sun,  
Their golden beams on all sides; such as these  
May come and know thy master, I am base,  
And dare not speak unto him, he's above me.

*Jaques.* If ever you did love him, or his state,  
His name, his issue, or yourself, go back!

'Twill be an honest and a noble part,  
Worthy a kinsman; save three hundred acres  
From present execution; they have had sentence,  
And cannot be reprieved; be merciful!

*Cler.* Have I not urged already all the reasons  
I had, to draw him from his will? his ruin?  
But all in vain! no counsel will prevail:  
He has fix'd himself; there's no removing, Jaques;  
'Twill prove but breath and labour spent in vain.  
I'll to my horse: Farewell!

*Jaques.* For God's sake, sir,  
As ever you have hope of joy, turn back!

I'll be your slave for ever, do but go;  
And I will lay such fair directions to you,  
That, if he be not doting on his fall,  
He shall recover sight, and see his danger.  
And you shall tell him of his wife's abuses,  
(I fear, too foul against him!) how she plots  
With our young monsieurs, to milk dry her hus-  
band,

And lay it on their backs: The next her pride;  
Then what his debts are, and how infinite  
The curses of his tenants; this will work;  
I'll pawn my life and head, he cries, "Away!  
I'll to my house in the country."

*Cler.* Come, I'll go,  
And once more try him: If he yield not, so;  
The next that tries him shall be want and woe.

[Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of MARINE.*

Enter MARINE *solus.*

*Mar.* Jaques!

*Jaques.* [Within.] Sir?

*Mar.* Rise, Jaques! 'tis grown day.

The country life is best; where quietly,  
Free from the clamour of the troubled court,  
We may enjoy our own green shadow'd walks,  
And keep a moderate diet without art.  
Why did I leave my house, and bring my wife  
To know the manner of this subtle place?  
I would, when first the lust to fame and honour

Possess'd me, I had met with any evil  
But that! Had I been tied to stay at home,  
And earn the bread for the whole family  
With my own hand, happy had I been!

Enter JAQUES.

*Jaques.* Sir, this is from your wonted course at  
home:

When did you there keep such inordinate hours?  
Go to bed late, start thrice, and call on me?  
'Would you were from this place! Our country  
sleeps,  
Although they were but of that moderate length

That might maintain us in our daily work,  
Yet were they sound and sweet.

*Mar.* Ay, Jaques; there  
We dream'd not of our wives; we lay together,  
And need not. Now at length my cousin's  
words,

So truly meant, mix'd with thy timely prayers  
So often urged, to keep me at my home,  
Condemn me quite.

*Jaques.* 'Twas not your father's course:  
He lived and died in Orleans where he had  
His vines as fruitful as experience  
(Which is the art of husbandry) could make;  
He had his presses for 'em, and his wines  
Were held the best, and out-sold other men's;  
His corn and cattle served the neighbour-towns  
With plentiful provision, yet his thrift  
Could miss one beast amongst the herd; he ruled  
More where he lived, than ever you will here.

*Mar.* 'Tis true: Why should my wife then,  
'gainst my good,

Persuade me to continue in this course?

*Jaques.* Why did you bring her hither? At the  
first,

Before you warmed her blood with new delights,  
Our country sports could have contented her;  
When you first married her, a puppet-play  
Pleased her as well as now the filting doth.  
She thought herself brave in a bugle-chain,  
Where orient pearl will scarce content her now.

*Mar.* Sure, Jaques, she sees something for my  
More than I do; she oft will talk to me [good

Of offices, and that she shortly hopes,  
By her acquaintance with the friends she hath,  
To get a place shall many times outweigh  
Our great expenses; and if this be so—

*Jaques.* Think better of her words; she doth  
deceive you,

And only for her vain and sensual ends  
Persuade you thus. Let me be set to dwell  
For ever naked in the barest soil,  
So you will dwell from hence!

*Mar.* I see my folly:  
Pack up my stuff! I will away this morn.  
Haste, haste!

*Jaques.* Ay, now I see your father's honours  
Tripling upon you, and the many prayers,  
The country spent for him, (which almost now  
Began to turn to curses) turning back,  
And falling like a timely shower upon you.

*Mar.* Go, call up my wife!

*Jaques.* But shall she not prevail,  
And sway you, as she oft hath done before?

*Mar.* I will not hear her, but rail on her,  
Till I be ten miles off.

*Joques.* If you be forty,  
'Twill not be worse, sir.

*Mar.* Call her up!

*Jaques.* I will, sir. [Exit

*Mar.* Why, what an ass was I, that such a thing  
As a wife is could rule me! Know not I  
That woman was created for the man?  
That her desires, nay, all her thoughts, should be,  
As his are? Is my sense restored at length?  
Now she shall know, that which she should desire,  
She hath a husband that can govern her,  
If her desires lead against my will.

Enter Lady.

Are you come?

*Lady.* What sad unwonted course

Makes you raise me so soon, that went to bed  
So late last night?

*Mar.* Oh, you shall go to bed  
Sooner hereafter, and be raised again  
At thrifty hours: In summer-time we'll walk  
An hour after our supper, and to bed;  
In winter you shall have a set at cards,  
And set your maids to work.

*Lady.* What do you mean?

*Mar.* I will no more of your new tricks, your  
honours,

Your offices, and all your large preferments,  
(Which still you beat into my ears) hang o'er me;  
I'll leave behind for others the great sway  
Which I shall bear at court; my living here,  
With countenance of your honour'd friends,  
I'll be content to lose: For you speak this  
Only that you may still continue here  
In wanton ease, and draw me to consume  
In clothes and other things idle for show,  
That which my father got with honest thrift.

*Lady.* Why, who hath been with you, sir, that  
Thus out of frame? [you talk

*Mar.* You make a fool of me!

You provide one to bid me forth to supper, [other  
And make me promise; then must some one or  
Invite you forth: If you have borne yourself  
Loosely to any gentleman in my sight,  
At home, you ask me how I like the carriage;  
Whether it were not rarely for my good,  
And open'd not a way to my preferment?  
Come, I perceive all; talk not! we'll away.

*Lady.* Why, sir, you'll stay till the next  
Be past? [triumph-day

*Mar.* Ay, you have kept me here triumphing  
This seven years; and I have ridden through the  
streets,

And bought embroider'd hose and foot-cloths too,  
To shew a subject's zeal! I rode before  
In this most gorgeous habit, and saluted  
All the acquaintance [that] I could espy  
From any window: These were ways, you told me,  
To raise me: I see all! Make you ready straight,  
And in that gown which you first came to town in,  
Your safe-guard, cloak, and your hood suitable,  
Thus on a double gelding shall you amble,  
And my man Jaques shall be set before you.

*Lady.* But will you go?

*Mar.* I will.

*Lady.* And shall I too?

*Mar.* And you shall too.

*Lady.* But shall I, by this light?

*Mar.* Why, by this light, you shall!

*Lady.* Then by this light,

You have no care of your estate and mine.  
Have we been seven years venturing in a ship,  
And now upon return, with a fair wind,  
And a calm sea, full fraught with our own wishes,  
Laden with wealth and honour to the brim,  
And shall we fly away, and not receive it?  
Have we been tilling, sowing, labouring,  
With pain and charge, a long and tedious winter,  
And when we see the corn above the ground,  
Youthful as is the morn, and the full ear,  
That promises to stuff our spacious garners,  
Shall we then let it rot, and never reap it?

*Mar.* Wife, talk no more! Your rhetoric comes  
I am inflexible: And how dare you [too late;  
Adventure to direct my course of life?  
Was not the husband made to rule the wife?

*Lady.* 'Tis true; but where the man doth miss his way,

It is the woman's part to set him right :  
So, fathers have a power to guide their sons  
In all their courses; yet you oft have seen  
Poor little children, that have both their eyes,  
Lead their blind fathers.

*Mar.* She has a plaguy wit! — [*Aside.*]  
I say, you are but a little piece of man.

*Lady.* But such a piece, as, being ta'en away,  
Man cannot last : The fairest and tallest ship,  
That ever sail'd, is by a little piece  
Of the same wood steer'd right, and turn'd about.

*Mar.* 'Tis true she says; her answers stand  
with reason.

*Lady.* But, sir, your cousin put this in your  
Who is an enemy to your preferment, [head,  
Because I should not take place of his wife :  
Come, by this kiss, thou shalt not go, sweetheart.

*Mar.* Come, by this kiss, I will go, sweetheart.  
On with your riding-stuff! I know your tricks ;  
And if preferment fall ere you be ready, ]  
'Tis welcome ; else, adieu, the city-life!

*Lady.* Well, sir, I will obey.

*Mar.* About it then.

*Lady.* To please your humour, I would dress  
myself

In the most loathsome habit you could name,  
Or travel any whither o'er the world,  
If you command me : It shall ne'er be said,  
The frailty of a woman, whose weak mind  
Is often set on loose delights, and shows,  
Hath drawn her husband to consume his state,  
In the vain hope of that which never fell.

*Mar.* About it then! Women are pleasant  
creatures,

When once a man begins to know himself.

*Lady.* But hark you, sir; because I will be sure  
You shall have no excuse, no word to say  
In your defence hereafter; (when you see  
What honours were prepared for you and me,  
Which you thus willingly have throwa away)  
I tell you, I did look for present honour  
This morning for you, which I know had come :  
But if they do not come ere I am ready  
(Which I will be the sooner, lest they should)  
When I am once set in a country life,  
Not all the power of earth shall alter me;  
Not all your prayers or threats shall make me  
The least word to my honourable friends, [speak  
To do you any grace!

*Mar.* I will not wish it.

*Lady.* And never more hope to be honourable!  
*Mar.* My hopes are lower.

*Lady.* As I live, you shall not!

You shall be so far from the name of noble,  
That you shall never see a lord again ;  
You shall not see a masque, or barriers,  
Or tilting, or a solemn christening,  
Or a great marriage, or new fire-works,  
Or any bravery; but you shall live  
At home, bespotted with your own loved dirt,  
In scurvy clothes, as you were wont to do ;  
And, to content you, I will live so too.

*Mar.* 'Tis all I wish, Make haste; the day  
draws on ;

It shall be my care to see your stuff pack'd up.

[*Exit.*]

*Lady.* It shall be my care to gull you! You  
shall stay ;

And, more than so, entreat me humbly too :  
You shall have honours presently.—*Maria!*

*Enter MARIA.*

*Maria.* Madam!

*Lady.* Bring hither pen, ink, and paper.

*Maria.* 'Tis here.

*Lady.* Your master will not stay,  
Unless preferment come within an hour.

*Maria.* Let him command one of the city gates,  
In time of mutiny; or, you may provide him  
To be one of the council for invading  
Some savage country, to plant Christian faith.

*Lady.* No, no; I have it for him. Call my page!  
[*Writes. Exit MARIA.*]

Now, my dear husband, there it is will fit you :  
And when the world shall see what I have done,  
Let it not move the spleen of any wife,  
To make an ass of her beloved husband,  
Without good ground : If they will but be drawn  
To reason by you, do not gull them ;  
But if they grow conceited of themselves,  
And be fine gentlemen, have no mercy,  
Publish them to the world! 'twill do them good  
When they shall see their follies understood.

*Enter Page.*

Go bear these letters to my servant,  
And bid him make haste. I will dress myself  
In all the journey-clothes I used before,  
Not to ride, but to make the laughter more. [*Exit.*]

*Enter MARINE and JAKUES, with spurs, and apparel.*

*Mar.* Is all pack'd up?

*Jakes.* All, all, sir; there is no tumbler  
Runs through his hoop with more dexterity,  
Than I about this business : 'Tis a day  
That I have long long'd to see——

*Mar.* Come; where's my spurs?

*Jakes.* Here, sir.—And now 'tis come——

*Mar.* Ay, Jakes, now,  
I thank my fates, I can command my wife.

*Jakes.* I am glad to see it, sir.

*Mar.* I do not love always  
To be made a puppy, Jakes.

*Jakes.* But yet methinks your worship does not  
Right like a country gentleman. [look

*Mar.* I will ;

Give me my t'other hat.

*Jakes.* Here.

*Mar.* So; my jerkin!

*Jakes.* Yes, sir.

*Mar.* On with it, Jakes; thou and I  
Will live so finely in the country, Jakes,  
And have such pleasant walks into the woods  
A-mornings, and then bring home riding-rods,  
And walking-staves——

*Jakes.* And I will bear them, sir :  
And scourge-sticks for the children.

*Mar.* So thou shalt ;

And thou shalt do all, oversee my work-folks,  
And at the week's end pay them all their wages.

*Jakes.* I will, sir, so your worship give me  
money.

*Mar.* Thou shalt receive all too. Give me my  
*Jakes.* They are ready, sir. [drawers.

*Mar.* And I will make thy mistress,  
My wife, look to her laundry, and her dairy,  
That we may have our linen clean on Sunday.

*Jakes.* And holidays.

*Mar.* Ay; and, ere

We walk about the grounds, provide our breakfast,  
Or she shall smoke; I'll have her a good huswife:  
She shall not make a voyage to her sisters,  
But she shall live at home,  
And feed her pullen fat, and see her maids  
In bed before her, and lock all the doors.

*Jaques.* Why, that will be a life for kings and queens!

*Mar.* Give me my scarf with the great button

*Jaques.* 'Tis done, sir. [quickly.]

*Mar.* Now my mittens!

*Jaques.* Here they are, sir.

*Mar.* 'Tis well; now my great dagger!

*Jaques.* There.

*Mar.* Why, so! thus it should be; now my riding-rod!

*Jaques.* There's nothing wanting, sir.

*Mar.* Another, man, to stick under my girdle.

*Jaques.* There it is.

*Mar.* All is well.

*Jaques.* Why now, methinks, your worship looks like to yourself, a man of means and credit:

So did your grave and famous ancestors

Ride up and down to fairs, and cheapen cattle.

*Mar.* Go, hasten your mistress, sirrah!

*Jaques.* It shall be done. [Exit.]

*Enter Gentleman and Page.*

*Gent.* Who's that? who's that, boy?

*Page.* I think it be my master.

*Gent.* Who? he that walks in grey, whisking his

*Page.* Yes, sir, 'tis he. [riding-rod?]

*Gent.* 'Tis he indeed; he is prepared

For his new journey. When I wink upon you,

Run out and tell the gentleman 'tis time.—

Monsieur, good day!

*Mar.* Monsieur,

Your mistress is within, but yet not ready.

*Gent.* My business is with you, sir: 'Tis reported,

I know not whether by some enemy

Maliciously, that envies your great hopes,

And would be ready to sow discontents

Betwixt his majesty and you, or truly,

(Which on my faith I would be sorry for)

That you intend to leave the court in haste.

*Mar.* 'Faith, sir, within this half-hour.—*Jaques!*

*Jaques.* [Within.] Sir!

*Mar.* Is my wife ready?

*Jaques.* Presently.

*Gent.* But, sir,

I needs must tell you, as I am your friend,

You should have ta'en your journey privater,

For 'tis already blazed about the court.

*Mar.* Why sir, I hope it is no treason, is it?

*Gent.* 'Tis true, sir; but 'tis grown the common talk;

There's no discourse else held; and in the presence

All the nobility and gentry

Have nothing in their mouths but only this,

"Monsieur Marine, that noble gentleman,

Is now departing hence;" every man's face

Looks ghastly on his fellows; such a sadness

(Before this day) I ne'er beheld in court;

Men's hearts begin to fail them when they hear it,

In expectation of the great event

That needs must follow it: Pray Heaven it be good!

*Mar.* Why, I had rather all their hearts should

Than I stay here until my purse fail me. [fail,

*Gent.* But yet you are a subject; and beware,

(I charge you by the love I bear to you)

How you do venture rashly on a course  
To make your sovereign jealous of your deeds!  
For princes' jealousies, where they love most,  
Are easily found, but they be hardly lost.

*Mar.* Come, these are tricks; I smell 'em; I will go.

*Gent.* Have I not still profess'd myself your friend?

*Mar.* Yes, but you never shew'd it to me yet.

*Gent.* But now I will, because I see you wise;

And give you thus much light into a business

That came to me but now: Be resolute,

Stand stiffly to it that you will depart,

And presently;—

*Mar.* Why, so I mean to do.

*Gent.* And, by this light, you may be what you

Will you be secret, sir? [will!]

*Mar.* Why? what's the matter?

*Gent.* The king does fear you.

*Mar.* How?

*Gent.* And is now in counsel.

*Mar.* About me?

*Gent.* About you; an you be wise,

You'll find he is in counsel about you.

His counsellors have told him all the truth.

*Mar.* What truth?

*Gent.* Why, that which he now knows too well.

*Mar.* What is't?

*Gent.* That you have followed him seven years

With a great train; and, though he have not grac'd

you,

Yet you have dived into the hearts of thousands,

With liberality and noble carriage;

And if you should depart home unprefer'd,

All discontented and seditious spirits

Would flock to you, and thrust you into action:

With whose help, and your tenants', who doth not

(If you were so disposed) how great a part [know

Of this yet-fertile peaceful realm of France

You might make desolate? But when the king

Heard this—

*Mar.* What said he?

*Gent.* Nothing; but shook

As never Christian prince did shake before;

And, to be short, you may be what you will.

But be not ambitious, sir; sit down

With moderate honours, lest you make yourself

More fear'd.

*Mar.* I know, sir, what I have to do

In mine own business.

*Enter LONGUEVILLE.*

*Long.* Where's monsieur Mount-Marine?

*Gent.* Why, there he stands; will ye aught with him?

*Long.* Yes.—Good day, monsieur Marine!

*Mar.* Good day to you!

*Long.* His majesty doth commend himself

Most kindly to you, sir, and bath, by me,

Sent you this favour: Kneel down; rise a knight!

*Mar.* I thank his majesty!

*Long.* And he doth further

Request you not to leave the court so soon;

For though your former merits have been slighted,

After this time there shall no office fall

Worthy your spirit, (as he doth confess

There's none so great) but you shall surely have it.

*Gent.* Do you hear? If you yield yet, you are an ass.

*Mar.* I'll shew my service to his majesty

In greater things than these: but for this small one

I must entreat his highness to excuse me.

*Long.* I'll bear your knightly words unto the king,

And bring his princely answer back again. [*Exit.*]

*Gent.* Well said! Be resolute a while; I know there is a tide of honours coming on; I warrant you!

*Enter BEAUFORT.*

*Beau.* Where is this new-made knight?

*Mar.* Here, sir.

*Beau.* Let me enfold you in my arms, then call you lord! the king will have it so: who doth entreat your lordship to remember His message sent to you by Longueville.

*Gent.* If you be dirty, and dare not mount aloft, you may yield now; I know what I would do.

*Mar.* Peace! I will fit him.—Tell his majesty I am a subject, and I do confess

I serve a gracious prince, that thus hath heap'd honours on me without desert; but yet as for the message, business urgeth me, I must begone, and he must pardon me, were he ten thousand kings and emperors.

*Beau.* I'll tell him so.

*Gent.* Why, this was like yourself!

*Beau.* As he hath wrought him, 'tis the finest fellow

[*Aside.*]

That e'er was Christmas-lord! he carries it so truly to the life, as though he were one of the plot to gull himself.

[*Exit.*]

*Gent.* Why, so!

You sent the wisest and the shrewdest answer unto the king, I swear, my honour'd friend, that ever any subject sent his liege.

*Mar.* Nay, now I know I have him on the hip, I'll follow it.

*Enter LONGUEVILLE.*

*Long.* My honourable lord!

Give me your noble hand, right courteous peer, and from henceforth be a courtly earl; the king so wills, and subjects must obey: only he doth desire you to consider of his request.

*Gent.* Why, faith, you are well, my lord; yield to him.

*Mar.* Yield? Why, 'twas my plot—

*Gent.* Nay,

'Twas your wife's plot.

*Mar.* To get preferment by it.

And thinks he now to pop me in the mouth but with an earldom? I'll be one step higher.

*Gent.* It is the finest lord! I am afraid anon he will stand upon't to share the kingdom with him.

[*Aside.*]

*Enter BEAUFORT.*

*Beau.* Where's this courtly earl?

His majesty commends his love unto you, and will you but now grant to his request, he bids you be a duke, and chuse of whence.

*Gent.* Why, if you yield not now, you are undone; what can you wish to have more, but the kingdom?

*Mar.* So please his majesty, I would be duke of Burgundy, because I like the place.

*Beau.* I know the king is pleased.

*Mar.* Then will I stay, and kiss his highness' hand.

*Beau.* His majesty

Will be a glad man when he hears it.

*Long.* But how shall we keep this from the world's ear,

[*Aside to the Gentleman.*]

That some one tell him not, he is no duke?

*Gent.* We'll think of that anon.—Why, gentle—is this a gracious habit for a duke?

[*men*]

Each gentle body set a finger to, to pluck the clouds (of these his riding weeds) from off the orient sun, off his best clothes; I'll pluck one boot and spur off.

*Long.* I another.

*Beau.* I'll pluck his jerkin off.

*Gent.* Sit down, my lord.—

Both his spurs off at once, good Longueville! And, Beaufort, take that scarf off; and that hat doth not become his largely-sprouting forehead. Now set your gracious foot to this of mine; one pluck will do it; so! Off with the other!

*Long.* Lo, thus your servant Longueville doth the trophy of your former gentry off.— [pluck Off with his jerkin, Beaufort!]

*Gent.* Didst thou never see

A nimble-footed tailor stand so in his stockings, whilst some friend help'd to pluck his jerkin off, to dance a jig?

*Enter JAQUES.*

*Long.* Here's his man Jaques come, booted and ready still.

*Jaques.* My mistress stays.—

Why, how now, sir? What do your worship mean, to pluck your grave and thrifty habit off?

*Mar.* My slippers, Jaques!

*Long.* Oh, thou mighty duke! pardon this man, that thus hath trespassed in ignorance.

*Mar.* I pardon him.

*Long.* His grace's slippers, Jaques!

*Jaques.* Why, what's the matter?

*Long.* Footman, he's a duke:

The king hath raised him above all his land.

*Jaques.* I'll to his cousin presently, and tell him so;

Oh, what a dunghill country rogue was I! [*Exit.*]

*Enter Lady in plain apparel.*

*Gent.* See, see my mistress!

*Long.* Let's observe their greeting.

*Lady.* Unto your will, as every good wife ought, I have turn'd all my thoughts, and now am ready.

*Mar.* Oh, wife, I am not worthy to kiss

The least of all thy toes, much less thy thumb, which yet I would be bold with! All thy counsel hath been to me angelical; but mine to thee hath been most dirty, like my mind.

Dear duchess, I must stay.

*Lady.* What! are you mad,

To make me dress, and undress, turn and wind me, because you find me pliant? Said I not the whole world should not alter me, if once I were resolved? and now you call me duchess: why, what's the matter?

*Mar.* Lo, a knight doth kneel—

*Lady.* A knight?

*Mar.* A lord—

*Lady.* A fool!

*Mar.* I say doth kneel

An earl, a duke.

*Long.* In drawers.

*Beau.* Without shoes.

*Lady.* Sure you are lunatic.  
*Genl.* No, honour'd duchess;  
 If you dare but believe your servant's truth,  
 I know he is a duke.  
*Long.* God save his Grace!  
*Lady.* I ask your Grace's pardon!  
*Mar.* Then I rise:

And here, in token that all strife shall end  
 'Twixt thee and me, I let my drawers fall,  
 And to thy hands I do deliver them;  
 Which signifies, that in all acts and speeches,  
 From this time forth, my wife shall wear the  
 breeches.

*Genl.* An honourable composition! [Exit.

## ACT III.

## SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter CLERIMONT and JAUQUES.

*Cler.* Shall I believe thee, Jaques?  
*Jaques.* Sir, you may.  
*Cler.* Didst thou not dream?  
*Jaques.* I did not.  
*Cler.* Nor imagine?  
*Jaques.* Neither of both: I saw him great and  
 mighty;  
 I saw the monsieurs bow, and heard them cry,  
 "Good health and fortune to my lord the duke!"  
*Cler.* A duke? art sure, a duke?  
*Jaques.* I am sure, a duke;  
 'And so sure, as I know myself for Jaques.  
*Cler.* Yet the sun may dazzle! Jaques, was it  
 not  
 Some lean commander of an angry block-house,  
 To keep the Flemish eel-boats from invasion?  
 Or some bold baron able to dispend  
 His fifty pounds a-year, and meet the foe  
 Upon the king's command, in gilded canvas,  
 And do his deeds of worth? or was it not  
 Some place of gain, as clerk to the great band  
 Of marrowbones, that people call the Switzers?  
 Men made of beef and sarcenet?  
*Jaques.* Is a duke,  
 His chamber hung with nobles like a presence.  
*Cler.* I am something wavering in my faith:  
 'Would you would settle me, and swear it is so!  
 Is he a duke indeed?  
*Jaques.* I swear he is.  
*Cler.* I am satisfied. He is my kinsman, Jaques,  
 And I his poor unworthy cousin.  
*Jaques.* True, sir.  
*Cler.* I might have been a duke too; I had  
 means,  
 A wife as fair as his, and as wise as his,  
 And could have brook'd the court as well as his,  
 And laid about her for her husband's honour:  
 Oh, Jaques, had I ever dreamt of this,  
 I had prevented him.  
*Jaques.* 'Faith, sir, it came  
 Above our expectation: We were wise  
 Only in seeking to undo this honour,  
 Which shew'd our dunghill breeding and our dirt.  
*Cler.* But tell me, Jaques,  
 Why could we not perceive? what dull devil  
 Wrought us to cross this noble course, persuading  
 'Twould be his overthrow? For me, a courtier  
 Is he that knows all, Jaques, and does all:  
 'Tis as his noble grace hath often said,  
 And very wisely, Jaques, we are fools,  
 And understand just nothing.  
*Jaques.* Ay, as we were,  
 I confess it; but, rising with our great master,  
 We shall be call'd to knowledge with our places:

('Tis nothing to be wise, not thus much there)  
 [Snaps his fingers.

There is not the least of the billet-dealers,  
 Nor any of the pastry, or the kitchen,  
 But have it in measure delicate.

*Cler.* Methinks this greatness of the duke's my  
 cousin's

(I ask your mercy, Jaques! that near name  
 Is too familiar for me) should give promise  
 Of some great benefits to his attendants.

*Jaques.* I have a suit myself; and it is sure,  
 Or I mistake my ends much.

*Cler.* What is't, Jaques?

May I not crave the place?

*Jaques.* Yes, sir, you shall;

'Tis to be but his grace's secretary,  
 Which is my little all, and my ambition,  
 Till my known worth shall take me by the hand  
 And set me higher. How the fates may do  
 In this poor thread of life, is yet uncertain:  
 I was not born, I take it, for a trencher,  
 Nor to espouse my mistress' dairy-maid.

*Cler.* I am resolved my wife shall up to court;  
 (I'll furnish her) that is a speeding course,  
 And cannot chuse but breed a mighty fortune.  
 What a fine youth was I, to let him start,  
 And get the rise before me! I'll dispatch,  
 And put myself in monies.

*Jaques.* 'Mass, 'tis true!

And, now you talk of money, sir, my business  
 For taking [up] those crowns must be dispatch'd:  
 This little plot i' th' country lies most fit  
 To do his grace such serviceable uses.  
 I must about it.

*Cler.* Yet before you go,  
 Give me your hand, and bear my humble service  
 To the great duke your master, and his duchess,  
 And live yourself in favour! Say, my wife  
 Shall there attend them shortly; so farewell!

*Jaques.* I'll see you mounted, sir.

*Cler.* It may not be!

Your place is far above it; spare yourself,  
 And know I am your servant. Fare you well!

*Jaques.* Sir, I shall rest to be commanded by  
 you.— [Exit CLERIMONT.

This place of secretary will not content me;  
 I must be more and greater. Let me see!  
 To be a baron is no such great matter,  
 As people take it: For, say I were a count,  
 I am still an under person to this duke,  
 (Which methinks sounds but harshly); but a duke!  
 Oh, I am strangely taken! 'tis a duke,  
 Or nothing; I'll advise upon't, and see  
 What may done by wit and industry. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*Before MARINE's House.*

*Enter Lady, LONGUEVILLE, BEAUFORT, and Gentleman.*

*Lady.* It must be carried closely, with a care  
That no man speak unto him, or come near him,  
Without our private knowledge, or be made  
Aforehand to our practice. My good husband,  
I shall entreat you now to stay a while,  
And prove a noble coxcomb. Gentlemen,  
Your counsel and advice about this carriage!

*Gent.* Alas, good man, I do begin to mourn  
His dire massacre: What a persecution  
Is pouring down upon him! Sure he is sinful.

*Long.* Let him be kept in's chamber, under show  
Of state and dignity, and no man suffer'd  
To see his noble face, or have access,  
But we that are conspirators!

*Beau.* Or else,  
Down with him into th' country amongst his  
tenants!

There he may live far longer in his greatness,  
And play the fool in pomp amongst his fellows.

*Lady.* No, he shall play the fool i' th' city, and  
I will not lose the greatness of this jest, [stay;  
(That shall be given to my wit) for the whole re-  
venues.

*Gent.* Then thus; we'll have a guard about his  
person,

That no man come too near him, and ourselves  
Always in company; have him into the city  
To see his face swell; whilst, in divers corners,  
Some of our own appointing shall be ready  
To cry, "Heaven bless your grace, long live your  
grace!"

*Lady.* Servant, your counsel is excellent good,  
And shall be follow'd; 'twill be rarely strange  
To see him stated thus, as though he went  
A-shroving through the city, or intended  
To set up some new stake: I shall not hold  
From open laughter, when I hear him cry,  
"Come hither, my sweet duchess; let me kiss  
Thy gracious lips!" for this will be his phrases.  
I fear me nothing, but his legs will break  
Under his mighty weight of such a greatness.

*Beau.* Now methinks, dearest lady, you are  
too cruel;

His very heart will freeze in knowing this.

*Lady.* No, no; the man was never of such  
deepness,

To make conceit his master: Sir, I'll assure you  
He will out-live twenty such pageants.  
Were he but my cousin, or my brother,  
And such a desperate killer of his fortune,  
In this belief he should die, though it cost me  
A thousand crowns a-day to hold it up;  
Or, were I not known his wife, and so to have  
An equal feeling of this ill he suffers,  
He should be thus till all the boys i' the town  
Made suit to wear his badges in their hats,  
And walk before his grace with sticks and nose-gays.  
We married women hold—

*Gent.* 'Tis well; no more!

The duke is entering: Set your faces right,  
And bow like country prologues. Here he comes.  
—Make room afore! the duke is entering.

*Enter MARINE.*

*Long.* The choicest fortunes wait upon our  
duke!

*Gent.* And give him all content and happiness!

*Beau.* Let his great name live to the end of  
time!

*Mar.* We thank you, and are pleased to give  
you notice

We shall at fitter times wait on your loves;  
Till when, be near us.

*Long.* 'Tis a valiant purge, [Aside.  
And works extremely; 't has delivered him  
Of all right worshipful and gentle humours,  
And left his belly full of nobleness.

*Mar.* It pleased the king my master,  
For sundry virtues not unknown to him,  
And the all-seeing state, to lend his hand,  
And raise me to this eminence; how this  
May seem to other men, or stir the minds  
Of such as are my fellow-peers, I know not;  
I would desire their loves in just designs.

*Lady.* Now, by my faith, he does well, very well:  
[Apart to the Gentleman.

Beshrew my heart, I have not seen a better,  
Of a raw fellow, that before this day  
Never rehearsed his state: 'Tis marvellous well:

*Gent.* Is he not duke indeed? see how he looks,  
As if his spirit were a last or two

Above his veins, and stretch'd his noble hide!

*Long.* He's high braced, like a drum; pray God  
he break not!

*Beau.* Why, let him break; there's but a calf's-

*Long.* May't please your grace [skin lost.  
To see the city? 'twill be to the minds

And much contentment of the doubtful people.

*Mar.* I am determin'd so: Till my return,  
I leave my honour'd duchess to her chamber.  
Be careful of your health! I pray you be so.

*Gent.* Your grace shall suffer us, your humble  
To give attendance, fit so great a person, [servants,  
Upon your body?

*Mar.* I am pleas'd so.—

*Long.* [Aside.] Away, good Beaufort; raise a  
guard sufficient

To keep him from the reach of tongues; be quick!

And, do you hear? remember how the streets

Must be disposed for cries and salutations.—

Your grace determines not to see the king?

*Mar.* Not yet; I shall be ready ten days hence

To kiss his highness' hand, and give him thanks,

As it is fit I should, for his great bounty.

Set forward, gentlemen!

*Room.* Room for the duke there!

[*Exit MARINE, LONGUEVILLE, &c.*

*Lady.* 'Tis fit he should have room to shew his  
mightiness,

He swells so with his poison!—'Tis better to

Reclaim you thus, than make a sheep's-head of you;

It had been but your due; but I have mercy, sir,

And mean to reclaim you by a directer course.

That woman is not worthy of a soul,

That has the sovereign power to rule her husband,

And gives her title up; so long provided

As there be fair play, and his state not wrong'd.

*Enter SHATTILLION.*

*Shat.* I would be glad to know whence this new  
duke springs,

The people buzz abroad; or by what title

He received his dignity: 'Tis very strange

There should be such close juggling in the state!

But I am tied to silence; yet a day

May come, and soon, to perfect all these doubts.

*Lady.* It is the mad Shattillion: By my soul,

I suffer much for this poor gentleman !  
I will speak to him ; may be he yet knows me.—  
Monsieur Shattillon !

*Shat.* Can you give me reason,  
From whence this great duke sprang that walks

*Lady.* Even from the king himself. [abroad ?  
*Shat.* As you are a woman,  
I think you may be cover'd : Yet your prayer  
Would do no harm, good woman.

*Lady.* God preserve him !

*Shat.* I say *amen*, and so say all good subjects !

*Enter SHATTILLON'S Love.*

*Love.* Lady, as ever you have loved, or shall,  
As you have hope of Heaven, lend your hand  
And wit, to draw this poor distracted man  
Under your roof, from the broad eyes of people,  
And wonder of the streets.

*Lady.* With all my heart :  
My feeling of his grief and loss is much.

*Love.* Sir, now you are come so near the prison,  
will you

Go in, and visit your fair Love ? Poor soul !  
She would be glad to see you.

*Shat.* This same duke  
Is but apocryphal ; there's no creation  
That can stand, where titles are not right.

*Love.* 'Tis true, sir.

*Shat.* This is another draft upon my life !  
Let me examine well the words I spake :  
The words I spake were, that this noble duke is  
Not o' th' true making ; 'tis to me most certain.

*Lady.* You are as right, sir, as you went by line.  
*Shat.* And to the grief of many thousands more—

*Lady.* If there be any such, God comfort them !

*Shat.* Whose mouths may open when the time  
shall please,

I am betray'd ! Commend me to the king,  
And tell him I am aound, and crave but justice.  
You shall not need to have your guard upon me,  
Which I am sure are placed for my attachment.  
Lead on ! I am obedient to my bonds.

*Love.* Good sir, be not displeas'd with us ! We  
are  
But servants to his highness' will, to make that  
good.

*Shat.* I do forgive you, even with my heart.  
Shall I entreat a favour ?

*Lady.* Anything.

*Shat.* To see my Love, before that fatal stroke,  
And publish to the world my Christian death,  
And true obedience to the crown of France.

*Love.* I hope it shall not need, sir ; for there's  
mercy,  
As well as justice, in his royal heart. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter three Gentlemen and Others.*

1 *Gent.* Every man take his corner ! Here am I,  
You there, and you in that place ; so I be perfect ;  
Have a great care your cries be loud, and faces  
Full of dejected fear and humbleness.  
He comes.

*Enter JAQUES.*

*Jaques.* Fy, how these streets are charged and  
swell'd

With these same rascally people ! Give more room,  
Or I shall have occasion to distribute

A martial alms amongst you : As I am a gentle-  
I have not seen such rude disorder ! They [man,  
Follow him like a prize. There's no true gaper  
Like to your citizen ! he will be sure  
The bears shall not pass by his door in peace,  
But he and all his family will follow.—

*Enter MARINE, LONGUEVILLE, and BRAUFORT.*

Room there afore ; sound ! Give room, and keep  
your places,

And you may see enough ; keep your places !

*Long.* These people are too far unmanner'd, thus  
To stop your grace's way with multitudes.

*Mar.* Rebuke them not, good monsieur : 'Tis  
their loves,

Which I will answer, if it please my stars  
To spare me life and health.

2 *Gent.* Bless your grace !

*Mar.* And you, with all my heart.

1 *Gent.* Now Heaven preserve your happy days !

*Mar.* I thank you too.

3 *Gent.* Now Heaven save your grace !

*Mar.* I thank you all.

*Beau.* On there before !

*Mar.* Stand, gentlemen !

Stay yet a while ; for I am minded to impart  
My love to these good people, and my friends,  
Whose love and prayers for my greatness  
Are equal in abundance. Note me well,  
And with my words my heart ; for as the tree—

*Long.* Your grace had best beware ; 'twill be  
Your greatness with the people. [inform'

*Mar.* I had more,

My honest and ingenuous people ; but  
The weight of business hath prevented me ;  
I am call'd from you : But this tree I spake of  
Shall bring forth fruit, I hope, to your content.  
And so, I share my bowels amongst you all.

*All.* A noble duke ! a very noble duke !

*Enter Fourth Gentleman.*

*Gent.* Afore there, gentlemen !

4 *Gent.* You are fairly met, good monsieur  
Mount-Marine !

*Gent.* Be advis'd ! the time is altered.

4 *Gent.* Is he not the same man he was afore ?

*Mar.* Still the same man to you, sir.

*Long.* You have received mighty grace ; b

4 *Gent.* Let me not die in ignorance. [thankful

*Long.* You shall not :

Then know, the king, out of his love, hath pleas'd  
To style him duke of Burgundy.

4 *Gent.* Oh, great duke, [Kneel

Thus low I plead for pardon, and desire

To be enroll'd amongst your poorest slaves.

*Mar.* Sir, you have mercy, and withal my hand  
From henceforth let me call you one of mine.

*Gent.* Make room afore there, and dismiss th'  
people !

*Mar.* Every man to his house in peace and quiet  
*People.* Now Heaven preserve the duke ! Heave  
bless the duke ! [Exit

### SCENE IV.—A Room in MARINE'S House.

*Enter Lady, with a letter in her hand.*

*Lady.* This letter came this morning from my  
cousin :

"To the great lady, high and mighty duchess  
Of Burgundy, be these deliver'd."

Oh, for a stronger lace to keep my breath,  
That I may laugh the nine days, till the wonder  
Fall to an ebb! the high and mighty duchess?  
The high and mighty? God, what a style is this!  
Methinks it goes like a Duchy lope-man:  
A ladder of a hundred rounds will fail  
To reach the top on't. Well, my gentle cousin,  
I know, by these contents, your itch of honour:  
You must to th' court you say, and very shortly:  
You shall be welcome; and if your wife have wit,  
I'll put her in a thriving course; if not,  
Her own sin on her own head! not a blot  
Shall stain my reputation, only this;  
I must for health's sake sometimes make an ass  
Of the tame moil my husband; 'twill do him good,  
And give him fresher brains, me fresher blood.  
Now for the noble duke! I hear him coming.

*Enter MARINE, LONGUEVILLE, BEAUFORT, and Gentlemen.*

Your grace is well return'd.

*Mar.* As well as may be;  
Never in younger health, never more able:  
I mean to be your bed-fellow this night;  
Let me have good encounter.

*Beau.* Bless me, Heaven,  
What a hot meat this greatness is!

*Long.* It may be so;  
For I'll be sworn he hath not got a snap  
This two months on my knowledge, or her woman  
Is damn'd for swearing it.

*Mar.* I thank you, gentlemen, for your attendance,

And also your great pains! Pray know my lodgings  
Better and oftner; do so, gentlemen!  
Now, by my honour, as I am a prince,  
I speak sincerely, know my lodgings better,  
And be not strangers! I shall see your service  
And your deservings, when you least expect—

*All.* We humbly thank your grace for this great  
*Mar. Jaques!* [favour.]

*Jaques.* Your Grace?  
*Mar.* Be ready for the country,  
And let my tenants know the king's great love;  
Say I would see them, but the weight at court  
Lies heavy on my shoulders; let them know  
I do expect their duties in attendance  
'Gainst the next feast; wait for my coming.  
Go take up post-horse, and be full of speed.

[*Exit JAQUES.*]  
*Lady.* I would desire your grace—

*Mar.* You shall desire,  
And have your full desire: Sweet duchess, speak!

*Lady.* To have some conference with a gentle-  
That seems not altogether void of reason: [man  
He talks of titles, and things near the crown;  
And knowing none so fit as your good grace  
To give the difference in such points of state—

*Mar.* What is he?  
If he be noble, or have any part  
That's worthy our converse, we do accept him.

*Lady.* I can assure your grace his strain is noble;  
But he is very subtle.

*Mar.* Let him be so!  
Let him have all the brains, I shall demonstrate  
How this most Christian crown of France can bear  
No other show of title than the king's.  
I will go in and meditate for half an hour,  
And then be ready for him presently;  
I will convert him quickly, or confound him.

*Gent.* Is mad Shattillion here?

*Lady.* Is here, and his lady.  
I pry'three, servant, fetch him hither.

*Gent.* Why,  
What do you mean to put him to?

*Lady.* To chat  
With the mad lad my husband; 'twill be brave  
To hear them speak, babble, stare, and prate!

*Beau.* But what shall be the end of all this,  
lady?

*Enter SHATTILLION and LOVA.*

*Lady.* Leave that to me. Now for the grand  
dispute!

For see, here comes Shattillion: As I live,  
Methinks all France should bear part of his griefs.  
*Long.* I'll fetch my lord the duke.

*Shat.* Where am I now?  
Or whither will you lead me? to my death?  
I crave my privilege!

I must not die, but by just course of law.  
*Gent.* His majesty hath sent by me your pardon;  
He meant not you should die, but would entreat  
To lay the full state of your title open, [you  
Unto a grave and noble gentleman,

*Enter MARINE and LONGUEVILLE.*

The duke of Burgundy, who here doth come;  
Who, either by his wisdom will confute you,  
Or else inform and satisfy the king.

*Beau.* May't please your grace, this is the gentle-  
man.

*Mar.* Is this he that chops logic with my liege?  
*Shat.* Do ye mock me? You are great, the time  
will come

When you shall be as much contemn'd as I.  
Where are the ancient compliments of France,  
That upstarts brave the princes of the blood?

*Mar.* Your title, sir, in short!  
*Shat.* He must, sir, be  
A better statesman than yourself, that can  
Trip me in any thing; I will not speak  
Before these witnesses.

*Mar.* Depart the room;  
For none shall stay, no, not my dearest duchess,  
*Lady.* [*Aside.*] We'll stand behind the arras,  
and hear all.

[*Exeunt all but MARINE and SHATTILLION.*]

*Mar.* In that chair take your place; I in this:  
Discourse your title now.

*Shat.* Sir, you shall know,  
My Love's true title, mine by marriage;  
Setting aside the first race of French kings,  
Which will not here concern us, as Pharamond,  
With Clodius, Meroveus, and Chilperick,  
And to come down unto the second race,  
Which we will likewise slip—

*Mar.* But take me with you!  
*Shat.* I pray you give me leave! Of Martel  
The father of king Pepin, who was sire [Charles,  
To Charles, the great and famous Charlemain;  
And to come to the third race of French kings,  
Which will not be greatly pertinent in this cause  
Betwixt the king and me, of which you know  
Hugh Capet was the first;  
Next his son Robert, Henry then, and Philip,  
With Lewis, and his son a Lewis too,  
And of that name the seventh; but all this  
Springs from a female, as it shall appear—

*Mar.* Now give me leave! I grant you this  
your title,

At the first sight, carries some show of truth ;  
But if ye weigh it well, ye shall find light.  
Is not his majesty possess'd in peace,  
And justice executed in his name ?  
And can you think the most Christian king  
Would do this, if he saw not reason for it ?

*Shat.* But had not the tenth Lewis a sole daugh-

*Mar.* I cannot tell. [ter ?

*Shat.* But answer me directly.

*Mar.* It is a most seditious question.

*Shat.* Is this your justice ?

*Mar.* I stand for my king.

*Shat.* Was ever heir-apparent thus abused !

I'll have your head for this !

*Mar.* Why, do your worst !

*Shat.* Will no one stir to apprehend this traitor ?

A guard about my person ! Will none come ?

Must my own royal hands perform the deed ?

Then thus I do arrest you. [Seizes him.

*Mar.* Treason ! help !

Enter *Lady, LONGUEVILLE, BEAUFORT, and Gentleman.*

*Lady.* Help, help, my lord and husband !

*Mar.* Help the duke !

*Long.* Forbear his grace's person !

*Shat.* Forbear you

To touch him that your heir apparent weds !

But, by this hand, I will have all your heads. [Exit.

*Gent.* How doth your grace ?

*Mar.* Why, well.

*Gent.* How do you find his title ?

*Mar.* 'Tis a dangerous one,

As can come by a female.

*Gent.* Ay, 'tis true ;

But the law Salique cuts him off from all.

*Long.* I do beseech your grace how stands his title ?

*Mar.* Pho ! nothing ! the law Salique cuts him off from all.

*Lady.* My gracious husband, you must now prepare,

In all your grace's pomp to entertain

Your cousin, who is now a convertite,

And follows here ; this night he will be here.

*Mar.* Be ready all in haste ! I do intend

To shew before my cousin's wond'ring face,

The greatness of my pomp, and of my place.

[Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter *CLERIMONT, his Wife, and ANTHONY.*

*Cler.* Sirrah, is all things carried to the tailor ?  
The measure and the fashion of the gown,  
With the best trim ?

*Anth.* Yes, sir, and 'twill be ready  
Within this two days.

*Cler.* For myself I care not ;  
I have a suit or two of ancient velvet,  
Which, with some small correcting and addition,  
May steal into the presence.

*Wife.* 'Would my gown  
Were ready ! husband, I will lay my life  
To make you something ere to-morrow night.

*Cler.* It must not be  
Before we see the duke, and have advice,  
How to behave ourselves. Let's in the while,  
And keep ourselves from knowledge, till time shall  
call us ! [Exit.

### SCENE II.—A Room in MARINE'S House.

Enter *LONGUEVILLE and BEAUFORT.*

*Long.* I much admire the fierce masculine spirit  
Of this dread Amazon.

*Beau.* This following night  
I'll have a wench in solace.

*Long.* Sir, I hear you,  
And will be with you, if I live ; no more !

Enter *MARIA.*

*Maria.* My lady would entreat your presence,  
gentlemen.

*Beau.* We will obey your lady ; she is worthy.

*Long.* You light o' love, a word or two.

*Maria.* Your will, sir ?

*Long.* Hark in your ear !  
Wilt thou be married ? Speak, wilt thou marry ?

*Maria.* Married ? to whom, sir ?

*Long.* To a proper fellow,  
Landed, and able-bodied ?

*Maria.* Why do you flout me, sir ?

*Long.* I swear I do not ;

I love thee for thy lady's sake : Be free !

*Maria.* If I could meet such matches as you  
speak of,

I were a very child to lose my time, sir.

*Long.* What sayest thou to monsieur Beaufort.

*Maria.* Sir,

I say he is a proper gentleman, and far  
Above my means to look at.

*Long.* Dost thou like him ?

*Maria.* Yes, sir, and ever did.

*Long.* He is thine own.

*Maria.* You are too great in promises.

*Long.* Be ruled,

And follow my advice, he shall be thine.

*Maria.* 'Would you would make it good, sir

*Long.* Do but thus :

Get thee a cushion underneath thy clothes,  
And leave the rest to me.

*Maria.* I'll be your scholar ;

I cannot lose much by the venture, sure.

*Long.* Thou wilt lose a pretty maidenhead, my  
rogue,

Or I am much o' th' bow hand. You'll remember,  
If all this take effect, who did it for you,

And what I may deserve for such a kindness ?

*Maria.* Yours, sir. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Street. Night.

Enter *JAQUES and BRATTILLION severally.*

*Jaques.* Save you, sir !

*Shat.* Save the king !

*Jaques.* I pray you, sir, which is the nearest  
way—

*Shat.* Save the king ! This is the nearest way.

*Jaques.* Which is the nearest way to the post-house?  
*Shat.* God save the king and his post-house!  
*Jaques.* I pray, sir, direct me to the house.  
*Shat.* Heaven save the king! You cannot catch me, sir.  
*Jaques.* I do not understand you, sir.  
*Shat.* You do not?  
 I say, you cannot catch me, sir.  
*Jaques.* Not catch you, sir?  
*Shat.* No, sir; nor can the king, With all his stratagems, and his forced tricks, (Although he put his nobles in disguise, Never so oft, to sift into my words) By course of law, lay hold upon my life.  
*Jaques.* It is a business that my lord the duke Is by the king employ'd in, and he thinks I am acquainted with it. [*Aside.*]  
*Shat.* I shall not need To rip the cause up, from the first, to you; But if his majesty had suffer'd me To marry her, though she be, after him, The right heir-general to the crown of France, I would not have convey'd her into Spain, As it was thought, nor would I e'er have join'd With the reform'd churches, to make them Stand for my cause.  
*Jaques.* I do not think you would.  
*Shat.* I thank you, sir. And since I see you are A favourer of virtues kept in bondage, Tell directly to my sovereign king, (For so I will acknowledge him for ever) How you have found my staid affections Settled for peace, and for the present state.  
*Jaques.* Why, sir—  
*Shat.* And, good sir, tell him further this; That notwithstanding all suggestions brought To him against me, and all his suspicious (Which are innumerable) of my treasons, If he will warrant me but public trial, I'll freely yield myself into his hands: Can he have more than this?  
*Jaques.* No, by my troth.  
*Shat.* I would his majesty would hear but reason As well as you!  
*Jaques.* But, sir, you do mistake me, For I ne'er saw the king In all my life but once: Therefore, good sir, May it please you to shew me which is the post-house?  
*Shat.* I cry you mercy, sir! then you're my  
*Jaques.* Yes, sir. [*friend?*]  
*Shat.* And such men are very rare with me!  
 The post-house is hard by. Farewell!  
*Jaques.* I thank you, sir! I must ride hard to- And it is dark already. [*night,*  
*Shat.* I am cruel, To send this man directly to his death, That is my friend, and I might easily save him: He shall not die.—Come back, my friend, come  
*Jaques.* What is your will? [*back!*]  
*Shat.* Do you not know?  
*Jaques.* Not I.  
*Shat.* And do you gather nothing by my face?  
*Jaques.* No, sir.  
*Shat.* Virtue is ever innocent. Lay not the fault on me; I grieve for you, And wish that all my tears might win your safety.  
*Jaques.* Why, sir?  
*Shat.* Alas, good friend, you are undone,

The more ill fortune mine, to be the means Of your sad overthrow: You know not me?  
*Jaques.* No, truly, sir.  
*Shat.* 'Would you had never seen me! I am a man pursued by the whole state, And sure some one hath seen me talk with you.  
*Jaques.* Yes, divers, sir.  
*Shat.* Why then, your head is gone.  
*Jaques.* I'll out of town.  
*Shat.* 'Would it were soon enough! Stay, if you love your life: or else you are taken.  
*Jaques.* What shall I do?  
*Shat.* I'll venture deeply for him, Rather than cast away an innocent:— Take courage, friend! I will preserve thy life, With hazard of mine own.  
*Jaques.* I thank you, sir.  
*Shat.* This night thou shalt be lodged within my doors, Which shall be all lock'd fast; and in the morn I'll so provide, you shall have free access To the sea-side, and so be shipt away, Ere any know it.  
*Jaques.* Good sir, suddenly! I am afraid to die.  
*Shat.* Then follow me. [*Exeunt into a house.*]

*Enter SHATTILLION'S Love.*

*Love.* This way he went, and there's the house: His better angel hath directed him [*I hope* To leave the wand'ring streets. Poor gentleman! 'Would I were able with as free a heart To set his soul right, as I am to grieve The ruin of his fame, which God forgive me!— [*Knocks at the door.* SHATTILLION appears at a window. Sir, if you be within, I pray, sir, speak to me.  
*Shat.* I am within, and will be: What are you?  
*Love.* A friend.  
*Shat.* No, sir; you must pardon me; I am acquainted with none such.—Be speedy, [*To JAQUES within.* Friend; there is no other remedy.  
*Love.* A word, sir! I say, I am your friend.  
*Shat.* You cannot 'scape by any other means; Be not fearful.—God save the king! What's your  
*Love.* To speak with you. [*business, sir?*]  
*Shat.* Speak out then.  
*Love.* Shall I not come up?  
*Shat.* Thou shalt not.—Fly, if thou be'st thine own friend; There lies the suit, and all the furniture Belonging to the head: On with it, friend!  
*Love.* Sir, do you hear?  
*Shat.* I do: God bless the king!— It was a habit I had laid aside For my own person, if the state had forced me.  
*Love.* Good sir, unlock your door!  
*Shat.* Be full of speed!  
 I see some twenty musqueteers in ambush.— Whate'er thou art, know I am here, and will be. Seest thou this bloody sword that cries revenge?— Shake not, my friend; through millions of these I'll be thy guard, and set thee safe aboard. [*foes* *Love.* Dare you not trust me, sir?  
*Shat.* My good sword before me, And my allegiance to the king, I tell thee, Captain, (for so I guess thee by thy arms, And the loose flanks of halberdiers about thee) Thou art too weak and foolish to attempt me.—

If you be ready, follow me ; and, hark you,  
Upon your life speak to no living wight,  
Except myself !

*Love.* Monsieur Shattillion !

*Shat.* Thou shalt not call again ! Thus with  
my sword,

And the strong faith I bear unto the king,  
(Whom God preserve !) I will descend my chamber,  
And cut thy throat ; I swear, I'll out thy throat.—  
Steal after me, and live. *[Exit.]*

*Love.* I will not stay  
The fury of a man so far distracted. *[Exit.]*

*Enter SHATTILLION with his Sword drawn.*

*Shat.* Where is the officer that dares not enter,  
To entrap the life of my distressed friend ?  
Ay, have you hid yourself ? you must be found !  
What do ye fear ? is not authority  
On your side ? Nay, I know the king's command  
Will be your warrant ; why then fear you ? Speak !  
What strange designs are these ! Shattillion,  
Be resolute, and bear thyself upright,  
Though the whole world despise thee. Soft !  
methinks

I heard a rushing which was like the shake  
Of a discover'd officer ; I'll search  
The whole street over but I'll find thee out. *[Exit.]*

*Enter JAQUES, in Woman's Apparel, from the House.*

*Jaques.* How my joints do shake ! Where had  
I been

But for this worthy gentleman, that hath  
Some touch of my infortunes ? 'Would I were  
Safe under hatches once, for Callicut !  
Farewell the pomp of court ! I never more  
Can hope to be a duke, or anything ;  
I never more shall see the glorious face  
Of my fair-spreading lord that loved me well.

*Enter SHATTILLION.*

*Shat.* Fly you so fast ? I had a sight of you,  
But would not follow you, I was too wise ;  
You shall not lead me with a cunning trick,  
Where you may catch me. Poor Shattillion !  
Hath the king's anger left thee ne'er a friend ?  
No, all men's loves move by the breath of kings.

*Jaques.* It is the gentleman that saved my life.—  
Sir !

*Shat.* Bless Shattillion ! Another plot ?

*Jaques.* No, sir, 'tis I.

*Shat.* Why, who are you ?

*Jaques.* Your friend whom you preserved.

*Shat.* Whom I preserved ?

My friend ? I have no woman friend but one,  
Who is too close in prison to be here.  
Come near ; let me look on you.

*Jaques.* It is I.

*Shat.* You should not be a woman by your stature.

*Jaques.* I am none, sir.

*Shat.* I know it ; then keep off.—

Strange men and times ! How I am still preserved !  
Here they have sent a yeoman of the guard  
Disguised in woman's clothes, to work on me,  
To make love to me, and to trap my words,  
And so ensnare my life.—I know you, sir ;  
Stand back, upon your peril !—Can this be  
In Christian commonweals ? From this time forth  
I'll cut off all the means to work on me :  
I'll ne'er stir from my house, and keep my doors  
Lock'd day and night, and cheapen meat and drink

At the next shops by signs out of my window,  
And, having bought it, draw it up in my garters.

*Jaques.* Sir, will you help me ?

*Shat.* Do not follow me !

I'll take a course to live, despite of men.

*[Exit into the house.]*

*Jaques.* He dares not venture for me : Wretched  
Jaques !

Thou art undone for ever and for ever,  
Never to rise again. What shall I do ?

*Enter BEAUFORT.*

Where shall I hide me ? Here is one to take me :  
I must stand close, and not speak for my life.

*Beau.* This is the time of night, and this the  
haunt,

In which I use to catch my waistcoateers :

It is not very dark ; no, I shall spy 'em.

I have walk'd out in such a pitchy night,

I could not see my fingers this far off.

And yet have brought home venison by the smell ;  
I hope they have not left their old walk. *[Sees*

*JAQUES.]* Ah !

Have I espied you sitting ? By this light,  
To me there's no such fine sight in the world,  
As a white apron betwixt twelve and one :  
See how it glisters ! Do you think to 'scape ?  
So ! now I have you fast : Come, and do not strive :  
It takes away the edge of appetite :  
Come, I'll be liberal every way. Take heed  
You make no noise, for waking of the watch ! *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV.—*A Hall in MARINE'S House, with  
a Throne in the Back-ground.*

*Enter CLERIMONT and Wife.*

*Cler.* Now the blessing of some happy guide,  
To bring us to the duke ! and we are ready.

*Enter LONGUEVILLE and Gentleman from the House.*

Come forward ! See, the door is opened ;  
And two of his gentlemen ! I'll speak to them ;  
And mark how I behave myself !—God save ye !  
For less I cannot wish to men of sort,  
And of your seeming : Are you of the duke's ?

*Long.* We are, sir, and your servants ; your  
salutes

We give you back again with many thanks.

*Cler.* When did you hear such words before,  
wife ? Peace !

Do you not dare to answer yet.—Is't fit  
So mean a gentleman as myself should crave  
The presence of the great duke, your master ?

*Genl.* Sir, you may.

*Long.* Shall we desire your name, and business.  
And we will presently inform him of you. *[sir ?]*

*Cler.* My name is Clerimont.

*Genl.* You're his grace's kinsman,  
Or I am much mistaken.

*Cler.* You are right ;

Some of his noble blood runs through these veins,  
Though far unworthy of his grace's knowledge.

*Long.* Sir, we must all be yours : His grace's  
kinsman,

And we so much forgetful ? 'Twas a rudeness,  
And must attend your pardon : Thus I crave it :  
First to this beautiful lady, whom I take

*[Kisses her.]*

To be your wife, sir ; next your mercy !

*Cler.* You have it, sir.—I do not like this kissing;

If lies so open to a world of wishes. [*Aside.*]

*Gent.* This is the merry fellow; this is he That must be noble too!

*Long.* And so he shall,  
If all the art I have can make him noble:  
I'll dub him with a knighthood, if his wife  
Will be but forward, and join issue;  
I like her above excellent.

*Gent.* Will't please you  
To walk a turn or two, whilst to the duke  
We make your coming known?

*Cler.* I shall attend, sir.

[*Exeunt Gentleman and LONGUEVILLE.*]

*Wife.* These gentlemen are very proper men,  
And kiss the best that e'er I tasted.—  
For goodness sake, husband, let us never more  
Come near the country, whatsoe'er betide us!  
I am in malice with the memory  
Of that same stinking dunghill.

*Cler.* Why, now you are my chicken and my dear;

Love where I love, hate where I hate? Now  
You shall have twenty gowns, and twenty chains.  
See! the door's opening.

*Groom.* Room afore there! the duke is ent'ring.

*Enter MARINE, and seats himself on the Throne, Lady, LONGUEVILLE, Gentleman, and MARIA.*

*Cler.* It is the duke, even he himself: Be merry!  
This is the golden age the poet speaks on.

*Wife.* I pray it be not brazen'd by their faces;  
And yet methinks they are the neatest pieces  
For shape and cutting that e'er I beheld.

*Cler.* Most gracious duke, my poor spouse and myself

[*They kneel.*]

Do kiss your mighty foot; and next to that,  
The great hand of your duchess; ever wishing  
Your honours ever springing, and your years—

*Mar.* Cousin!

*Cler.* Your grace's vassal, far unworthy  
The nearness of your blood.

*Mar.* Correct me not;

I know the word I speak, and know the person.  
Though I be something higher than the place  
Where common men have motion; and, descend-  
ing

Down with my eye, their forms are lessen'd to me;  
Yet from this pitch can I behold my own,  
(From millions of those men that have no mark)  
And in my fearful stoop can make them stand,  
When others feel my souse, and perish. Cousin,  
Be comforted! you are very welcome! So  
Is your fair wife! the charge of whom I give  
To my own dearest and best beloved.

Tell me; have you resolved yourself for court,  
And utterly renounced the slavish country,  
With all the cares thereof?

*Cler.* I have, sir.

*Mar.* Have you

Dismiss'd your eating household, sold your hang-  
ing of Nebuchadnezzar, (for such they were, [*in*])  
As I remember) with the furnitures  
Belonging to your beds and chambers?

*Cler.* Ay, sir.

*Mar.* Have you most carefully ta'en off the lead  
From your roof, weak with age, and so prevented  
The ruin of your house, and clapt him in  
A summer suit of thatch, to keep him cool?

*Cler.* All this I have performed.

*Mar.* [*Descends.*] Then lend me all your hands:  
I will embrace my cousin,  
Who is an understanding gentleman;  
And with a zeal mighty as is my name,  
Once more I bid you welcome to the court.  
My state again!

[*Resumes his seat under the canopy.*]

*Lady.* As I was telling you, your husband  
must be

No more commander; look to that! be several  
At meat and lodging; let him have board wages,  
And diet 'mongst his men i' th' town: for pleasure,  
If he be given to it, let him have it;  
Else as your own fancy shall direct you. Cousin,  
You see this mighty man here; he was an ass  
When he came first to town; indeed he was  
Just such another coxcomb as your husband,  
God bless the mark, and every good man's child!  
This must not stir you, cousin.

*Wife.* Heaven forbid!—

*Long.* Sweet Maria, provide the cushion ready

*Maria.* It shall be done.— [*for it.*]

*Mar.* Receive all your advices from ourself;  
Be once a-day with us: And so, farewell  
For this time, my fair cousin!—Gentlemen,  
Conduct him to his lodging.

*Lady.* Farewell,

And think upon my words!

*Wife.* I shall observe them.

[*Exeunt MARINE and Lady.*]

*Cler.* Health, and the king's continual love,  
attend you!

*Gent.* Oh, for a private place to ease my lungs!  
Heaven give me patience! such a pair of jades  
Were never better ridden to this hour.

Pray Heaven they hold out to the journey's end!

*Long.* Twitch him aside, good monsieur, whilst  
I break

Upon the body of his strength, his wife:

I have a constant promise she's my own.

*Gent.* Ply her to windward!—Monsieur, you  
have taken

The most compendious way to raise yourself,  
That could have been deliver'd by a counsel.

*Cler.* I have some certain aims, sir. But my  
wife—

*Gent.* Your wife! you must not let that trouble  
you.

*Cler.* 'Twill, sir, to see her in a stranger's arms.

*Gent.* What mean you?

Let her alone! be wise; stir not a foot;

For if you do, all your hopes are buried;

I swear you are a lost man if you stir.

*Cler.* I thank you, sir; I will be more advised.

*Gent.* But what great office do you level at?

*Cler.* Sir, they are kissing!

*Gent.* Let them kiss,

And much good may't do their hearts! they must  
And kiss, and double kiss, and kiss again, [*kiss,*]  
Or you may kiss the post for any rising:  
Had your noble kinsman ever mounted

To these high spheres of honour, now he moves in,  
But for the kisses of his wife?

*Cler.* I know not.

*Gent.* Then I do: Credit me, he had been lost,  
A fellow of no mark, and no repute,  
Had not his wife kiss'd soon, and very sweetly:  
She was an excellent woman, and dispatch'd him  
To his full being, in a moment, sir.

[*Exeunt LONGUEVILLE and Wife.*]

*Cler.* But yet, methinks he should not take her,  
Into a private room. [sir,

*Gent.* Now stand and flourish!  
You're a made man for ever. I do envy you!  
If you stand, your fortune's up;  
You are the happiest man, but your great cousin,  
This day in court. Well, I will marry, surely,  
And not let every man out-run me thus.  
'Tis time to be mine own friend; I'll not live  
In town here, and direct the readiest way  
To other men, and be a slave myself!

*Cler.* Nay, good sir, be not moved; I am your  
servant,  
And will not be ungrateful for this knowledge.

*Gent.* Will you be walking home?

*Cler.* I would desire  
To have my wife along.

*Gent.* You are too raw:  
Be gone, and take no notice where you left her;  
Let her return at leisure! If she stay  
A month, 'twill be the better: Understand me;  
This gentleman can do it.

*Cler.* I will, sir:  
And, Wife, remember me; a duke, a duke, Wife!

*Gent.* Aboard her, Longueville! she's thine own.  
To me,

The fooling of this fool is venery. [Exit.

SCENE V.—A Room in BEAUFORT'S House.

Enter BEAUFORT, and JACQUES in Female Apparel.

*Beau.* Come, pr'ythee, come! have I not  
crowns? Behold,  
And follow me! here! not a word! go in;  
Grope by the walls, and you shall find a bed;  
Lie down there; see, see! A turn or two, to give  
My blood some heat, and I am presently  
For action. Darkness, by thy leave, I come.  
[Exit into a House.

Enter MARIA.

*Maria.* I am perfect in my lesson: Be my  
speed,  
Thou god of marriage! This is the door, I'll  
knock. [Knocks.

*Beau.* [Within.] Who's there? I cannot come

*Maria.* Monsieur Beaufort! [yet.

*Beau.* Stay till I light a candle. Who are you?

*Maria.* Sir, a poor gentlewoman.

Enter BEAUFORT.

*Beau.* Oh, come in:  
I'll find a time for you too.—Be not loud.

*Maria.* Sir, you have found that time already;  
Shame on my soul therefore!

*Beau.* Why, what's the matter?

*Maria.* Do you not see, sir? is your light so  
dim?

*Beau.* Do you not wait on the lady Mount Ma-  
*Maria.* I do, sir; but my love on you. [rins?

*Beau.* Poor soul!

How cam'st thou by this big belly?

*Maria.* By yourself.

*Beau.* By Heaven, I never touch'd your body.

*Maria.* Yes!

Unswear that oath again! I'll tell you all:  
These two years I have loved you; but the means  
How to enjoy you I did never know,

Till Twelfth-night last; when, hearing of your  
To take up venches private in the night, [game  
I apprehended straight this course to make  
Myself as one of them, and wait your coming:  
I did so, and enjoy'd you, and now this child  
That now is quick within me—Hide my shame,  
And marry me, or else I must be forced—

*Long.* [Within.] Monsieur Beaufort, monsieur  
Beaufort!

*Beau.* Who's that calls?

*Long.* Are you a-bed?

*Beau.* No, sir.—The hangings!

Enter LONGUEVILLE.

*Long.* Nay, monsieur, I'll forbid that; we'll have  
fair play.

Lend me your candle! Are you taken, Beaufort?  
A lecher of your practice, and close carriage,  
To be discover'd thus? I am ashamed  
So great a master in his art should fail,  
And stagger in his grounds.

*Beau.* You are wide;

This woman and myself are man and wife,  
And have been so this half year.

Where are you now? Have I been discover'd?

You cannot break so easily on me, sir;

I am too wary to be open'd by you.

*Long.* But these are but illusions, to give colour  
To your most mystic lechery! But, sir,  
The belly hath betray'd you; all must out.

*Beau.* Good Longueville, believe me, on my  
I am her husband. [faith,

*Long.* On my faith, I cannot,

Unless I saw your hands fast, and your hearts.

*Beau.* Why, Longueville, when did I give that  
to your ears

That was not truth? By all the world, she's mine.  
She is my wife! And, to confirm you better,

I give myself again: Here, take my hand,

And I yours! we are once more married;

Will this content you?

*Long.* Yes, I'm believing; and God give you  
joy!

*Beau.* My loving wife, I will not wrong thee:

Since I am thine, and only loved of thee,

From this hour, I vow myself a new man.

Be not jealous; for though I had a purpose

To have spent an hour or two in solace otherwise.

(And was provided for it) yet my love

Shall put a better temper to my blood.—

Come out, thou woman of unwholesome life!

Be sorry for thy sins, and learn to mend!

Enter JACQUES.

Nay, never hide your face; you shall be seen.

*Long.* Jacques? why, Jacques! art thou that  
Jacques,

The very staff and right-hand of our duke?

Speak, thou bearded Venus.

*Jacques.* I am he,

By miracle preserved to be that Jacques.

Within this two hours, gentlemen, poor Jacques

Was but as corse in grave: A man of wisdom,

That, of my conscience, if he had his right

Should have a pretty state—But that's all one—

That noble gentleman did save this life;

I keep it for him; 'tis his own.

*Long.* Oh, Bacchus!

Is all the world drunk?—Come! we'll to the duke.  
And give thanks for this delivery. [Exit.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Hall in MARINE's House.**Enter MARINE and JAUQUES.*

*Mar.* Not gone unto my tenants, to relate  
My grace, and honour, and the mightiness  
Of my new name, which would have struck a terror  
Through their coarse doublets to their very hearts?

*Jauques.* Alas, great lord and master, I could  
With safety of my life return again [scarce  
Unto your grace's house: And, but for one  
That had some mercy, I had sure been hang'd.

*Mar.* My house?

*Jauques.* Yes, sir, this house; your house i' th'  
town.

*Mar.* Jauques, we are displeas'd; hath it no name?

*Jauques.* What name?

*Mar.* Dull rogue! what, hath the king bestow'd  
So many honours, open'd all his springs,  
And shower'd his graces down upon my head,  
And has my house no name? no title yet?  
Burgundy-house, you ass!

*Jauques.* Your grace's mercy!

And when I was come off, and had recover'd  
Burgundy-house, I durst not yet be seen,  
But lay all night, for fear of pursuivants,  
In Burgundy privy-house.

*Mar.* Oh, sir, 'tis well;

Can you remember now? But, Jauques, know,  
Since thy intended journey is so crost,  
I will go down myself this morning.

*Jauques.* Sir?

*Mar.* Have I not said this morning?

*Jauques.* But consider,

That nothing is prepared yet for your journey;  
Your grace's teams not here to draw your clothes,  
And not a carrier yet in town to send by.

*Mar.* I say, once more, go about it.

You're a wise man! you would have me linger time,  
Till I have worn these clothes out. Will you go?  
[*Exit JAUQUES.*]

Make you ready, wife!

*Enter LADY.*

*Lady.* I am so, mighty duke.

*Mar.* Nay, for the country.

*Lady.* How, for the country?

*Mar.* Yes; I am resolved

To see my tenants in this bravery,  
Make them a sumptuous feast, with a slight show  
Of Dives and Lazarus, and a squib or two,  
And so return.

*Lady.* Why, sir, you are not mad?

*Mar.* How many dukes have you known mad?  
I pray speak.

*Lady.* You are the first, sir, and I hope the last:  
But you are stark horn-mad.

*Mar.* Forbear, good wife!

*Lady.* As I have faith, you are mad! Your  
horns

Have been too heavy for you, and have broke  
Your skull in pieces, if you be in earnest.

*Mar.* Well, you shall know my skull and wits  
are whole,

Ere I have done; and yet I am in earnest.

*Lady.* Why, do you think I'll go?

*Mar.* I know you shall.

*Lady.* I shall? By what authority shall I?

*Mar.* I am your husband.

*Lady.* True; I confess it:

And, by that name, the world hath given you  
A power to sway me: But, sir, you shall know  
There is a greater bond that ties me here,  
Allegiance to the king: Has he not heap'd  
Those honours on you to no other end,  
But to stay you here? and shall I have a hand  
In the offending such a gracious prince?  
Besides, our own undoings lies upon't.  
Were there no other cause, I do not see,  
Why you should go, if I should say you should not.

*Mar.* Do you think so?

*Lady.* Yes, faith.

*Mar.* Now, good wife,  
Make me understand that point.

*Lady.* Why, that you shall:

Did I not bring you hither?

*Mar.* Yes.

*Lady.* And were

Not all these honours wrought out of the fire  
By me?

*Mar.* By you?

*Lady.* By me? how strange you make it!  
When you came first, did you not walk the town  
In a long cloak, half-compass? an old hat  
Lined with vellure, and on it, for a band,  
A skein of crimson crewel?

*Mar.* I confess it.

*Lady.* And took base courses?

*Mar.* Base?

*Lady.* Base, by this light!

Extreme base, and scurvy, monstrous base!

*Mar.* What were these courses, wife?

*Lady.* Why, you shall know:

Did you not, thus attired, trot up and down,  
Plotting for vile and lousy offices,  
And agreed with the serjeant of the bears,  
To buy his place? Deny this, if you can.

*Mar.* Why, it is true.

*Lady.* And was not that monstrous base?

*Mar.* Be advised, wife; a bear's a princely beast.

*Lady.* A bear?

*Mar.* Yes, wife; and one side venison.

*Lady.* You are more than one side fool; I'm  
sure of that.

*Mar.* But since you have vex'd me, wife, know  
you shall go;

Or you shall never have penny from me.

*Lady.* Nay, I have done: And though I know  
'twill be

Your overthrow, I'll not forsake you now.

*Mar.* Be ready then. [Exit.]

*Lady.* I will.

*Enter BEAUFORT, LONGUEVILLE, Gentleman, and MARIA.*

*Long.* [Entering.] What, are you married,

*Beau.* Ay, as fast [Beaufort?

As words, and hearts, and hands, and priest can  
make us.

*Lady.* Oh, gentlemen, we are undone!

*Long.* For what?

*Lady.* This gentleman, the lord of Lorne, my  
husband,

Will be gone down to shew his play-fellows  
Where he is gay.

*Beau.* What, down into the country?

*Lady.* Yes, 'faith. Was ever fool but he so cross?

I would as fain be gracious to him,  
As he could wish me; but he will not let me:  
Speak faithfully, will he deserve my mercy?

*Long.* According to his merits, he should wear  
A guarded coat, and a great wooden dagger.

*Lady.* If there be any woman, that doth know  
The duties 'twixt a husband and his wife,  
Will speak but one word for him, he shall 'scape:  
Is not that reasonable? But there's none.  
Be ready therefore to pursue the plot  
We had against a pinch; for he must stay.

*Long.* Wait you here for him, whilst I go,  
And make the king acquainted with your sport,  
For fear he be incensed for your attempting  
Places of so great honour. [Exit.]

*Lady.* Go; be speedy!

*Enter MARINE, CLERIMONT, Wife, JACQUES, ANTHONY,  
MARIA, and GROOM.*

*Mar.* Come; let me see how all things are dis-  
posed of.

*Jacques.* One cart will serve for all your furniture,  
With room enough behind to ease the footman,  
A cap-case for your linen and your plate,  
With a strange lock that opens with Amen.  
For my young lord, because of easy portage,  
A quiver of your grace's, lined with cunny,  
Made to be hang'd about the nurse's neck,  
Thus, with a scarf or towel—

*Mar.* Very good!

*Jacques.* Nay,  
'Tis well; but had you stay'd another week,  
I would have had you furnish'd in such pomp  
As never duke of Burgundy was furnish'd:  
You should have had a sumpter, though 't had cost  
me

The laying out myself, where now you are fain  
To hire a ripier's mare, and buy new dossers;  
But I have got them painted with your arms,  
With a fair Darnex carpet of my own  
Laid cross for the more state.

*Mar.* Jacques, I thank you:  
Your carpet shall be brush'd, and sent you home.  
What, are you ready, wife!

*Lady.* An hour ago.

*Mar.* I cannot chuse but kiss thy royal lips,  
Dear duchess mine, thou art so good a woman.

*Beau.* You would say so, if you knew all, good-  
man Duckling! [Aside.]

*Cler.* This was the happiest fortune could befall  
me! [Aside.]

Now, in his absence, will I follow close  
Mine own preferment; and I hope, ere long,  
To make my mean and humble name so strong  
As my great cousin's; when the world shall know  
I bear too hot a spirit to live low.  
The next spring will I down, my wife and house-  
hold;

I'll have my ushers, and my four lacquies,  
Six spare caroches too; But mum, no more!  
What I intend to do, I'll keep in store.

*Mar.* *Montez, montez!* Jacques, be our quarry!

*Groom.* To horse there, gentlemen, and fall in!

*Mar.* Come, honour'd duchess! [couples!]

*Enter LONGUEVILLE.*

*Long.* Stand, thou proud man!

*Mar.* Thieves, Jacques! raise the people!

*Long.* No; raise no people! 'Tis the king's  
command

Which bids thee once more stand, thou haughty  
man!

Thou art a monster; for thou art ungrateful,  
And, like a fellow of a rebel nature,  
Hast flung from his embraces: And, for  
His honours given thee, hast not return'd  
So much as thanks; and, to oppose his will,  
Resolved to leave the court, and set the realm  
A-fire, in discontent and open action:  
Therefore he bids thee stand, thou proud man,  
Whilst, with the whisking of my sword about,  
I take thy honours off: This first sad whisk  
Takes off thy dukedom; thou art but an earl.

*Mar.* You are mistaken, Longueville.

*Long.* Oh, 'would I were! This second whisk  
divides

Thy earldom from thee; thou art yet a baron.

*Mar.* No more whisks if you love me, Longue-  
ville!

*Long.* Two whisks are past, and two are yet  
behind,

Yet all must come: But not to linger time,  
With these two whisks I end: Now Mount-Marine,  
For thou art now no more, so says the king;  
And I have done his highness' will with grief.

*Mar.* Degraded from my honours?

*Long.* 'Tis too certain.

*Mar.* I am no traitor sure, that I know of.  
Speak, Jacques, hast thou ever heard me utter word  
Tending to treason, or to bring in the enemy?

*Jacques.* Alas, sir, I know nothing;  
Why should your worship bring me in to hang me?  
God's my judge, gentlemen, I never meddled,  
But with the brushing of his clothes, or fetching  
In water in a morning for his hands.

*Cler.* Are these the honours of this place?—

Anthony,  
Help me to take her gown off! Quickly,  
Or I'll so swing you for't—

*Wife.* Why, husband! Sir!

*Cler.* I will not lose a penny by this town.

*Long.* Why, what do you mean, sir? have her  
to her lodging,

And there undress her; I will wait upon her.

*Cler.* Indeed you shall not; your month's out,  
I take it.—

Get you out before me, wife.—  
Cousin, farewell! I told you long ago,  
That pride begins with pleasure, ends with woe.

[Exit with his Wife.]

*Beau.* Go thy way, Sentences! 'twill be thy  
fortune

To live and die a cuckold, and churchwarden.

*Lady.* Oh, my poor husband! what a heavy  
Is fallen upon him! [fortune]

*Beau.* Methinks 'tis strange,  
That, Heaven forewarning great men of their falls  
With such plain tokens, they should not avoid  
'em:

For the last night, betwixt eleven and twelve,  
Two great and hideous blazing stars were seen  
To fight a long hour by the clock, the one  
Dress'd like a duke, the other like a king;  
Till at the last the crowned star o'ercame.

*Genl.* Why do you stand so dead, monsieur  
Marine?

*Mar.* So Cæsar fell, when in the capitol  
They gave his body two-and-thirty wounds.  
Be warned, all ye peers; and, by my fall,  
Hereafter learn to let your wives rule all!

*Genl.* Monsieur Marine, pray let me speak with you :

Sir, I must wave you to conceal this party ;  
It stands upon my utter overthrow.  
Seem not discontented, nor do not stir a foot,  
For, if you do, you and your hope—  
I swear you are a lost man, if you stir !  
And have an eye to Beaufort, he will tempt you.

*Beau.* Come, come ; for shame go down ;  
Were I Marine, by Heaven I would go down ;  
And being there, I would rattle him such an answer  
Should make him smoke.

*Mar.* Good monsieur Beaufort, peace !  
Leave these rebellious words ;  
Or, by the honours which I once enjoy'd,  
And yet may swear by, I will tell the king  
Of your proceedings ! I am satisfied.

*Lady.* You talk'd of going down  
When 'twas not fit ; but now let's see your spirit !  
A thousand and a thousand will expect it.

*Mar.* Why, wife, are you mad ?

*Lady.* No, nor drunk ; but I'd have you know  
Your own strength.

*Mar.* You talk like a foolish woman, wife ;  
I tell you I will stay ! Yet I have  
A crotchet troubles me.

*Long.* More crotchets yet ?

*Mar.* Follow me, Jaques ! I must have thy  
counsel.—

I will return again ; stay you there, wife !

[*Exit, with JAQUES.*]

*Long.* I fear this loss of honour  
Will give him some few stools.

*Lady.* No, no ; he is resolved,  
He will not stir a foot, I'll lay my life.

*Beau.* Ay, but he's discontented ; how shall we  
Resolve that, and make him stay with comfort ?

*Lady.* 'Faith, Beaufort, we must even let Nature  
work ;

For he's the sweetest-temper'd man for that  
As one can wish ; for let men but go about to fool  
him,

And he'll have his finger as deep in't as the best.  
But see where he comes frowning ;  
Bless us all !

[*Enter MARINE.*]

*Mar.* Off with your hats ! for here doth come  
The high and mighty duke of Burgundy.  
Whatever you may think, I have thought, and  
thought,

And thought upon it ; and I find it plain,  
The king cannot take back what he has given,  
Unless I forfeit it by course of law.

Not all the water in the river Seine,  
Can wash the blood out of these princely veins.

*Lady.* God-a-mercy, husband, thou art the best  
To work out a thing at a pinch in France !

*Mar.* I will ascend my state again. [*Ascends  
the throne.*] Duchess,

Take your place ; and let our champion enter.

*Long.* Has he his champion ? that is excellent !

*Mar.* And let loud music sound before his  
entrance !

Sound trumpet ! [*A Flourish.*]

[*Enter JAQUES in Armour, one carrying a Scutcheon before  
him, and a two-handed Sword.*]

*Lady.* How well our champion doth demean  
himself,

As if he had been made for such an action !

Methinks his sturdy truncheon he doth wield,  
Like Mars approaching to a bloody field.

*Mar.* I think there is no man so desperate  
To dare encounter with our champion.  
But trust me, Jaques, thou hast pleased us well !  
Once more, our warlike music ; then proceed !

[*A Flourish.*]

[*Enter SHATTILLION.*]

*Shat.* What wond'rous age is this ? what close  
proceedings ?

I hear the clang of trumpets in this house ;  
To what intent do not our statesmen search ?  
Oh, no ; they look not into simple truth,  
For I am true, and they regard not me.  
A man in armour too ? God save the king !  
The world will end ; there's nought but treachery.

*Jaques.* I, Jaques, servant to the high and mighty  
Godfrey, duke of Burgundy, do come hither to  
prove by natural strength, and activity of my body,  
without the help of sorcery, enchantment, or ne-  
gromancy, that the said Godfrey, late of Mount-  
Marine, and now of Burgundy, hath perfect right  
thereto, notwithstanding the king's command to the  
contrary, and no other person whatsoever : And in  
token that I will be ready to make good the same,  
I throw down my gage, which is my honour. Pro-  
nounced the 37th of February *stilo novo*. God save  
the duke !

*Shat.* Of all the plots the king hath laid for me  
This was the shrewdest ; 'tis my life they seek,  
And they shall have it : If I should refuse  
To accept the challenge in the king's behalf,  
They have some cause to take away my life ;  
And if I do accept it, who can tell  
But I may fall by doubtful chance of war ?  
'Twas shrewd ; but I must take the least of evils.—  
I take thy gauntlet up, thou treacherous man,

[*Comes forward.*]

That stands in armed coat against the king,  
Whom God preserve ! and with my single sword  
Will justify whatever he commands.—  
I'll watch him for catching of my words.

*Mar.* Jaques, go on ! defend our princely title.

*Shat.* Why shrink'st thou back ? Thou hast an  
evil cause.

Come forward, man ! I have a rock about me ;  
I fight for my true liege.

*Mar.* Go forward, Jaques !

*Jaques.* I do beseech your grace to pardon me ;  
I will not fight with him : With any else  
I'll shew my resolution speedily.

*Shat.* Come, do thy worst ; for the king shall  
All is not true that is reported of me. [*See*]

*Jaques.* I may not fight with him, by law of  
arms.

*Mar.* What, shall my title fall ? Wilt thou not  
fight ?

*Jaques.* Never with him that once hath saved  
my life.

*Shat.* Dar'st thou not fight ? Behold then, I do  
Strong with the zeal I bear my sovereign, [*go,*  
And seize upon that haughty man himself.  
Descend the steps (that thou hast thus usurp'd  
Against the king and state) down to the ground !

[*Seizes MARINE, and throws him to the ground.*]

And if thou utter but a syllable  
To cross the king's intent, thou art but dead :  
There lie upon the earth, and pine, and die !—  
Did ever any man wade through such storms  
To save his life, as poor Shattillion ?

*Long.* I fear this challenge hath spoil'd all.

*Lady.* Ne'er fear it;

He'll work it out again.—Servant,  
See where Shattillion's Love, poor lady, comes.

*Enter Love.*

*Mar.* Jaques!

*Jaques.* Lie still, sir, if you love your life,  
I'll whistle when he's gone.

*Love.* Oh, gentlemen, I charge you by the love  
Which you bear to women, take some pity  
On this distressed man! help to restore  
That precious jewel to him he hath lost.

*Beau.* Lady, whatever power doth lie in us,  
By art, or prayer, or danger, we are yours.

*Love.* A strange conceit hath wrought this  
malady;

Conceits again must bring him to himself:  
My strict denial to his will wrought this;  
And if you could but draw his wilder thoughts  
To know me, he would sure recover sense.

*Long.* That charge I'll undertake.

*Mar.* Look, Jaques, look!

For God's sake, let me rise! This greatness is  
A jade, I cannot sit it.

*Jaques.* His sword is up,  
And yet he watches you.

*Mar.* I'll down again!

Pray for thy master, Jaques.

*Shat.* Now the king

May see all the suggestions are not true,  
He hath received against my loyalty:  
When all men else refuse, I fight his battles,  
And thrust my body into danger's mouth:  
I am become his champion, and this sword  
Has taught his enemies to know themselves:  
Oh, that he would no more be jealous of me!

*Long.* Monsieur Shattillion, the king assures  
That, for this valiant loyal act of yours, [you  
He hath forgot all jealousies and fears,  
And never more will tempt you into danger.

*Shat.* But how shall I believe this? what new  
Of reconciliation will he shew me? [taken  
Let him release my poor Love from her torment,  
From her hard fare, and strict imprisonment.

*Long.* He hath done this, to win your after-love:  
And see, your lady sent you from the king  
By these two gentlemen; be thankful for her.

*Shat.* She lives, she lives! I know her by the  
power  
Shoots from her eyes. [Kneels.

*Love.* Rise, dear Shattillion!

*Shat.* I know my duty: Next unto my king,  
I am to kneel to you.

*Love.* I'll have you rise;

Fetch me a chair; sit down, Shattillion!

*Shat.* I am commanded! And, 'faith, tell me,  
mistress,

What usage have you had? Pray be plain!

*Love.* Oh, my most loved Shattillion, plain  
enough;

But now I am free, thanks to my God and king!

*Long.* His eyes grow very heavy. Not a word,  
That his weak senses may come sweetly home!

*Shat.* The king is honourable.

[He falls into a slumber.

*Mar.* When do you whistle, Jaques?

*Jaques.* By and by.

*Long.* Come hither, monsieur, canst thou laugh  
a little?

*Gent.* Yes, sir.

*Long.* So thou shalt then.—Beaufort, how dost  
*Beau.* Why, well. [thou?

*Long.* I am glad on't, and how does thy wife?  
*Beau.* Why, you may see her, sir; she stands  
behind you.

*Long.* By th' mass, she's there indeed; but  
*Beau.* Belly? [where's her belly?

*Long.* Her great belly, man: What hast thou  
sent thee?

*Gent.* A boy, I'll lay my life, it tumbled so.

*Beau.* Catch'd, by this light!

*Long.* I'll be a gossip, Beaufort.

*Gent.* And I.

*Long.* I have an odd apostle-spoon.

*Beau.* 'Sfoot, catch'd?

*Lady.* Why, what's the matter, gentlemen?

*Long.* He's married to your woman.

[MARIA kneels.

*Lady.* And I not know it?

*Gent.* 'Twas a venial sin.

*Beau.* Gall, gall, gall!

*Lady.* Forgive her, monsieur Beaufort; 'twas  
her love.

*Beau.* You may rise, if you please; I must  
endure it.

*Long.* See how my great lord lies upon the  
ground,

And dares not stir yet!

[JAQUES awakes.

*Mar.* Jaques, Jaques! is the king's champion

*Jaques.* No, but he's asleep. [gone yet?

*Mar.* Is he asleep, art sure?

*Jaques.* I am sure he is; I hear him snore.

*Mar.* Then by your favours, gentlemen, I rise;  
And know I am a duke still.

*Jaques.* And I am his champion.

*Lady.* Hold thee there, and all France cannot  
mend thee!

*Mar.* I am a prince, as great within my thoughts  
As when the whole state did adorn my person:  
What trial can be made to try a prince?

I will oppose this noble corps of mine  
To any danger that may end the doubt.

*Lady.* Great duke, and husband, there is but  
To satisfy the world of our true right; [one way  
And it is dangerous.

*Mar.* What may it be?

Were it to bring the Great Turk bound in chains  
Through France in triumph, or to couple up  
The Sophy and great Prester-John together,  
I would attempt it! Duchess, tell the course.

*Lady.* There is a strong opinion through the  
And no doubt grounded on experience, [world,  
That lions will not touch a lawful prince:  
If you be confident then of your right,  
Amongst the lions bear your naked body;  
And if you come off clear, and never wince,  
The world will say you are a perfect prince.

*Mar.* I thank you, duchess, for your kind  
advice;

But now we don't affect those ravenous beasts.

*Long.* A lion is a beast to try a king;  
But for the trial of such a state like this  
Pliny reports a mastiff dog will serve.

*Mar.* We will not deal with dogs at all, but men.

*Gent.* You shall not need to deal with them at  
all.

Hark you, sir! the king doth know you are a duke.

*Mar.* No! does he?

*Gent.* Yes, and is content you shall be; but  
with this caution,

That none know it but yourself; for, if you do,  
He'll take't away by act of parliament.

*Mar.* Here is my hand; and whilst I live or  
breathe,

No living wight shall know I am a duke.

*Gent.* Mark me directly, sir; your wife may  
know it.

*Mar.* May not Jaques?

*Gent.* Yes, he may.

*Mar.* May not my country cousin?

*Gent.* By no means, sir, if you love your life  
and state.

*Mar.* Well then, know all, I am no duke.

*Gent.* No, I'll swear it.

*Long.* See! he wakes.

*Shat.* Where am I? or where have I been all  
this while?

Sleep hath not sat so sound upon mine eyes,

But I remember well that face:

Oh, thou too cruel, leave at length to scorn

Him that but looking on thy beauty dies;

Either receive me, or put out my eyes!

*Love.* Dearest Shattillion, see upon my knees  
[*Kneels.*]

I offer up my love; forget my wrongs.

*Shat.* Art thou mine own?

*Love.* By Heaven, I am.

*Shat.* Then all the world is mine.

*Love.* I have stranger things to tell thee, my  
dearest love.

*Shat.* Tell nothing, but that thou art mine own:  
I do not care to know where I have been,  
Or how I have lived, or any thing,  
But that thou art my own.

*Beau.* Well, wife; though 'twere a trick that  
made us wed,

We'll make ourselves merry soon in bed.

*Mar.* Know all, I am no duke.

*Lady.* What say you?

*Mar.* Jaques!

[*Aside to him.*]

*Jaques.* Sir?

*Mar.* I am a duke.

*Both.* Are you?

*Mar.* Yes, 'faith, yes, 'faith;

But it must only run amongst ourselves.

And, Jaques, thou shalt be my secretary still.

*Lady.* Kind gentlemen, lead in Shattillion,

For he must needs be weak and sickly yet.

Now all my labours have a perfect end,

As I could wish: Let all young sprightly wives,

That have dull foolish coxcombs to their husbands,

Learn by me their duties, what to do,

Which is, to make 'em fools, and please 'em too!

[*Exeunt.*]

### EPILOGUE,

#### AT A REVIVAL.

THE monuments of virtue, and desert,  
Appear more goodly, when the gloss of art  
Is eaten off by time, than when at first  
They were set up, not censured at the worst.  
We have done our best, for your contents, to fit,  
With new pains, this old monument of wit.

# THE COXCOMB.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ANTONIO, *the Coxcomb Gentleman.*  
MERCURY, *Fellow-Traveller with ANTONIO.*  
RICARDO, *a young Gentleman in love with VIOLA.*  
UBERTO, } *Three merry Gentlemen, Friends to*  
PEDRO, } *RICARDO.*  
SILVIO, }  
VALERIO, *a Country Gentleman.*  
CURIO, *Kinsman to ANTONIO.*  
*Justice, a shallow one.*  
ANDRUGIO, *Father to VIOLA.*  
ALEXANDER, *Servant to MERCURY'S Mother.*  
MARK, *the Justice's Clerk.*  
ROWLAND, *Servant to ANDRUGIO.*

Tinker.  
Constable.  
Watch.  
Drawer.  
Musicians.

MARIA, *Wife to ANTONIO.*  
VIOLA, *Daughter to ANDRUGIO.*  
*A Country Woman, Mother to MERCURY.*  
NAN, } *Milk-Maids.*  
MADGE, }  
DOROTHY, *the Tinker's Trull.*

SCENE,—LONDON, AND THE COUNTRY.

## PROLOGUE,

AT A REVIVAL.

THIS comedy, long forgot, by some thought dead,  
By us preserved, once more doth raise her head,  
And to your noble censures does present  
Her outward form, and inward ornament.  
Nor let this smell of arrogance, since 'tis known,  
The makers that confess'd it for their own,  
Were this way skilful, and without the crime  
Of flatteries, I may say did please the time.  
The work itself too, when it first came forth,  
In the opinion of men of worth,  
Was well received and favour'd, though some rude  
And harsh among the ignorant multitude,

(That relish gross food better than a dish  
That's cook'd with care, and served in to the  
wish  
Of curious palates) wanting wit and strength  
Truly to judge, condemn'd it for the length;  
That fault's reform'd; and now 'tis to be tried  
Before such judges, 'twill not be denied  
A free and noble hearing; nor fear I  
But 'twill deserve to have free liberty,  
And give you cause (and with content) to say,  
Their care was good that did revive this play.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—LONDON. *Before the House of ANTONIO.*

*Enter RICARDO and VIOLA.*

*Ric.* Let us make use of this stolen privacy  
And not lose time in protestation, mistress!  
For 'twere in me a kind of breach of faith,  
To say again I love you.

*Viola.* Sweet, speak softly;  
For though the venture of your love to me  
Meets with a willing and a full return,  
Should it arrive unto my father's knowledge,  
This were our last discourse.

*Ric.* How shall he know it?

*Viola.* His watching cares are such, for my advancement,

That every where his eye is fix'd upon me:  
This night, that does afford us some small freedom,  
At the request and much entreaty of  
The mistress of the house, was hardly given me:  
For I am never suffer'd to stir out,  
But he hath spies upon me: Yet, I know not,  
You have so won upon me, that could I think  
You would love faithfully, (though to entertain  
Another thought of you would be my death)  
I should adventure on his utmost anger.

*Ric.* Why, do you think I can be false?

*Viola.* No, faith!

You have an honest face; but, if you should—  
*Ric.* Let all the stored vengeance of Heaven's  
justice— [ended,

*Viola.* No more! I do believe you. The dance

Which this free woman's guests have vow'd to have  
Ere they depart, I will make home, and store me  
With all the jewels, chains, and gold are trusted  
Unto my custody; and at the next corner  
To my father's house, before one, at the farthest,  
Be ready to receive me!

*Ric.* I desire

No bond beyond your promise. Let's go in!  
To talk thus much before the door may breed  
Suspicion.

*Enter MERCURY and ANTONIO.*

*Viola.* Here are company too.

*Ric.* Away!

Those powers that prosper true and honest loves  
Will bless our undertakings.

*Viola.* 'Tis my wish, sir.

*[Exit RICARDO and VIOLA.]*

*Merc.* Nay, sir, excuse me! I have drawn you  
Too much expense already in my travel, [to  
And you have been too forward in your love,  
To make my wants your own; allow me manners!  
Which you must grant I want, should I increase  
The bond in which your courtesies have tied me,  
By still consuming of you: Give me leave  
To take mine own ways now, and I shall often,  
With willingness, come to visit you, and then  
thank you.

*Ant.* By this hand, I could be angry! What do  
you think me?

Must we, that have so long time been as one,  
Seen cities, countries, kingdoms, and their wonders,  
Been bed-fellows, and in our various journey  
Mix'd all our observations, part (as if  
We were two carriers at two several ways,  
And as the fore-horse guides, cry God be with you)  
Without or compliment, or ceremony?  
In travellers that know Transalpine garbs,  
Though our designs are ne'er so serious, friend,  
It were a capital crime; it must not be;  
Nay, what is more, you shall not. You, ere long,  
Shall see my house, and find what I call mine  
Is wholly at your service.

*Merc.* 'Tis this tires me!—

Sir, I were easily woo'd, if nothing else  
But my will lay 't the choice; but 'tis not so:  
My friends and kindred, that have part of me,  
And such on whom my chiefest hopes depend,  
Justly expect the tender of my love  
After my travel; then mine own honesty  
Tells me 'tis poor, having indifferent means  
To keep me in my quality and rank,  
At my return, to tire another's bounty,  
And let mine own grow lusty: Pardon me!

*Ant.* I will not, cannot; to conclude, I dare not:  
Can any thing conferred upon my friend  
Be burthensome to me? For this excuse,  
Had I no reason else, you should not leave me;  
By a traveller's faith, you should not! I have said!  
And then, you know my humour, there's no con-  
tending.

*Merc.* Is there no way to 'scape this inunda-  
tion? *[Apart.]*

I shall be drown'd with folly, if I go;  
And after nine days, men may take me up  
With my gall broken.

*Ant.* Are you yet resolved?

*Merc.* 'Would you would spare me!

*Ant.* By this light, I cannot,  
By all that may be sworn by!

*Merc.* Patience help me, *[Apart.]*  
And Heaven grant his folly be not catching!  
If it be, the town's undone: I now would give  
A reasonable sum of gold to any sheriff  
That would but lay an execution on me,  
And free me from his company. While he was  
abroad,

His want of wit and language kept him dumb;  
But Balaam's ass will speak now, without spurring.

*Ant.* Speak, have I won you?

*Merc.* You're not to be resisted.

*Enter Servant and Musicians.*

*Serv.* Be ready, I entreat you! The dance done,  
Besides a liberal reward, I have  
A bottle of sherry in my power shall beget  
New crotchets in your heads.

*Musician.* Tush, fear not us!

We'll do our parts.

*Serv.* Go in.

*Ant.* I know this fellow.—

Belong you to the house?

*Serv.* I serve the mistress.

*Ant.* Pretty and short! Pray you, sir, then in-  
form her

Two gentlemen are covetous to be honour'd  
With her fair presence.

*Serv.* She shall know so much.

This is a merry night with us, and forbids not

Welcome to any that looks like a man:

I'll guide you the way.

*Ant.* Nay, follow! I have a trick in't. *[Exit.]*

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the same.*

*Enter UBERTO, SILVIO, RICARDO, MARIA, PEDRO, PORTIA,  
VIOLA, with others; Musicians.*

*Uberto.* Come, where is this masque? Fairest,  
for our cheer,

Our thanks and service; may you long survive  
To joy in many of these nights!

*Maria.* I thank you!

*Uberto.* We must have music too; or else you  
But half a welcome. *[give us]*

*Maria.* Pray you, sir, excuse me!

*Silvio.* By no means, lady.

*Uberto.* We'll crown your liberal feast  
With some delightful strain, fitting your love  
And this good company.

*Maria.* Since you enforce it,  
I will not plead the excuse of want of skill,  
Or be or nice or curious: Every year  
I celebrate my marriage-night, and will  
Till I see my absent husband.

*Uberto.* 'Tis fit freedom.

*Silvio.* Ricardo, thou art dull.

*Enter Servant.*

*Ric.* I shall be lighter  
When I have had a heat.

*Maria.* Now, sir, the news?

*Serv.* Mistress,  
There are two gentlemen—

*Maria.* Where?

*Serv.* Complimenting  
Who should first enter.

*Maria.* What are they?

*Serv.* Heaven knows!

But for their strangeness—have you never seen  
A cat wash her face?

*Uberto.* Yes.

*Serv.* Just such a stir they keep :  
If you make but haste, you may see 'em yet  
Before they enter. [A dance.]

*Maria.* Let 'em be what they will,  
We'll give them fair entertain, and gentle welcome.

*Enter ANTONIO and MERCURY, at the door.*

*Ant.* It shall be so.

*Merc.* Then let it be your pleasure.

*Ant.* Let's stand aside, and you shall see us have  
Fine sport anon.

*Merc.* A fair society ;

Do you know these gentlewomen ?

*Ant.* Yes.

*Merc.* What are they ?

*Ant.* The second is a neighbour's daughter ;  
her name's Viola.

There is my kinsman's wife ; Portia her name,  
And a friend too.

*Merc.* Let her.

What's she that leads the dance ?

1 *Serv.* A gentlewoman.

*Merc.* I see that.

1 *Serv.* Indeed ?

*Merc.* What ?

1 *Serv.* A gentlewoman.

*Merc.* Udafoot ! Good sir, what's she that leads

2 *Serv.* My mistress. [the dance ?]

*Merc.* What else ?

2 *Serv.* My mistress, sir.

*Merc.* Your mistress ? A pox on you,  
What a fry of fools are here ! I see 'tis treason  
To understand in this house : If Nature were not  
Better to them than they can be to themselves,  
They would scant hit their mouths. My mistress ?  
Is there any one with so much wit in's head,  
That can tell me at the first sight what gentle-  
That is that leads the dance ? [woman]

*Ant.* 'Tis my wife.

*Merc.* Hum !

*Ant.* How dost thou like her ?

*Merc.* Well ;

A pretty gentlewoman !

*Ant.* Pr'ythee be quiet.

*Merc.* I would I could !

Let never any hereafter that's a man,  
That has affections in him and free passions,  
Receive the least tie from such a fool as this is,  
That holds so sweet a wife !  
'Tis lamentable to consider truly  
What right he robs himself of, and what wrong  
He doth the youth of such a gentlewoman,  
That knows her beauty is no longer hers  
Than men will please to make it so, and use it,  
Neither of which lies freely in a husband.

Oh, what have I done, what have I done ? Cox-  
If I had never seen, or never tasted, [comb !]  
The goodness of this kix, I had been a made man ;  
But now to make him cuckold is a sin  
Against all forgiveness, worse than any murder :

I have a wolf by th' ears, and am bitten both ways !

*Ant.* How now, friend ? what are you think-  
ing of ?

*Merc.* Nothing concerning you : I must be gone.

*Ant.* Pardon me, I will have no going, sir.

*Merc.* Then, good sir, give me leave to go to  
I am very weary and ill-temper'd. [bed :

*Ant.* You shall presently ; the dance is done.—

1 *Serv.* Mistress, these are the gentlemen.

*Maria.* My husband ? Welcome home, dear sir !

*Merc.* She's fair still ;

Oh, that I were a knave, or durst be one,  
For thy sake, Coxcomb ! He that invented ho-  
Udid me. [rusty]

*Ant.* I thought you had not known me  
You are merry ; 'tis well thought. And how is't  
These worthy gentlemen ? [with

*Uberto and Silvio.* We are glad to see  
You here again.

*Ant.* Oh, gentlemen, what ha' you lost ?  
But get you into travels ; there you may learn—  
I cannot say what hidden virtues.

*Merc.* Hidden from you I am sure. [Aside.]  
My blood boils like a furnace ! She's a fair one.

*Ant.* Pray entertain this gentleman with all the  
Fitting my most especial friend. [courtesy]

*Maria.* What this poor house may yield, to  
make you welcome,

Dear sir, command, without more compliment.

*Merc.* I thank you !—She is wise, and speaks  
well too : [Aside.]

Oh, what a blessing is gone by me, never  
To be recover'd ! Well, 'twas an old shame  
The devil laid up for me, and now he has hit me  
If there be any ways to be dishonest, [home.]  
And save myself yet—No, it must not be !  
Why should I be a fool too ?—Yet those eyes  
Would tempt another Adam ! How they call to me,  
And tell me—'Sfoot, they shall not tell me any  
Sir, will you walk in ? [thing !]

*Ant.* How is't, signior ?

*Merc.* Crazy a little.

*Maria.* What all you, sir ? What's in my power,  
Make use of, sir. [pray

*Merc.* 'Tis that must do me good ! [Aside.]  
She does not mock me, sure !—An't please you,  
My disease is only weariness. [nothing ;

*Uberto.* Come, gentlemen !  
We will not keep you from your beds too long.

*Ric.* I ha' some business, and 'tis late, and you  
Far from your lodging.

*Silvio.* Well.

[*Exeunt all but ANTONIO, MARIA, and MERCURY.*

*Ant.* Come, my dear Mercury !  
I'll bring you to your chamber ; and then I am

For you, Maria : Thou art a new wife to me now,  
And thou shalt find it ere I sleep.

*Merc.* And I [Aside.]

An old ass to myself ! mine own rod whips me !—  
Good sir, no more of this ; 'tis tedious !  
You are the best guide in your own house ; go, sir.

[*Exeunt ANTONIO and MARIA.*  
This fool and his fair wife have made me frantic ;  
From two such physics for the soul, deliver me !  
[Exit.]

### SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter RICARDO, UBERTO, PEDRO, and SILVIO.*

*Uberto.* Well, you must have this wench, then ?

*Ric.* I hope so ;

I am much o' the bow-hand else.

*Pedro.* 'Would I were hang'd,

'Tis a good loving little fool, that dares venture  
Herself upon a coast she never knew yet !

But these women ! when they are once thirteen,  
God speed the plough !

*Silvio.* 'Faith, they will venture further for their  
Than a merchant, [leading

And through as many storms, but they'll be  
fraughted;  
They are made like carracks, only strength and  
stowage.

*Ric.* Come, come, you talk, you talk!

*Silvio.* We do so. But,  
Tell me, Ricardo, wo't thou marry her?

*Ric.* Marry her? why, what should I do with  
her?

*Pedro.* Pox, I thought we should have had all  
shares in her,

Like lawful prize.

*Ric.* No, by my faith, sir; you shall pardon me:  
I launch'd her at my own charge, without partners,  
And so I'll keep her.

*Uberto.* What's the hour?

*Ric.* Twelve.

*Uberto.* What shall we do the while? 'Tis yet  
scarce eleven.

*Silvio.* There is no standing here; is not this the

*Ric.* Yes. [place!]

*Pedro.* And to go back

Unto her father's house may breed suspicion:  
Let's slip into a tavern for an hour;  
'Tis very cold.

*Uberto.* Content; there's one hard by.

A quart of burnt sack will recover us:  
I am as cold as Christmas. This stealing flesh  
I' th' frosty weather may be sweet i' th' eating,  
But sure the woodmen have no great catch on't.  
Shall's go?

*Ric.* Thou art the strangest lover of a tavern!  
What shall we do there now? Lose the hour and  
ourselves too?

*Uberto.* Lose a pudding!

What doest thou talk o' th' hour? will one quart  
muzzle us?

Have we not ears to hear, and tongues to ask  
The drawers, but we must stand here like bawds  
To watch the minutes?

*Silvio.* Pr'ythes content thyself!

We shall scout here, as though we went a-haying,  
And have some mangy 'prentice, that cannot sleep  
For scratching, overhear us. Come, will you go,  
When your love-fury is a little frozen, [sirs?  
You'll come to us.

*Ric.* Will you drink but one quart then?

*Pedro.* No more, i' faith.

*Silvio.* Content!

*Ric.* Why then, have with you!

But let's be very watchful.

*Uberto.* As watchful as the bellman. Come;  
I'll lead,

Because I hate good manners; they are too tedious.  
[Exit.

#### SCENE IV.—Another Street.

Enter VIOLA from a house, with a key and a little casket.

*Viola.* The night is terrible, and I enclosed  
With that my virtue and myself hate most,  
Darkness; yet must I fear, that which I wish,  
Some company; and every step I take  
Sounds louder in my fearful ears to-night,  
Than ever did the shrill and sacred bell  
That rang me to my prayers. The house will rise  
When I unlock the door! Were it by day,  
I am bold enough, but then a thousand eyes  
Warn me from going. Might not God have made  
A time for envious prying folk to sleep,

Whilst lovers met, and yet the sun have shone?  
Yet I was bold enough to steal this key  
Out of my father's chamber; and dare yet  
Venture upon mine enemy, the night,  
Arm'd only with my love, to meet my friend,  
Alas, how valiant, and how frayed at once  
Love makes a virgin! I will throw this key  
Back through a window: I have wealth enough  
In jewels with me, if I hold his love  
I steal 'em for. Farewell, my place of birth!  
I never make account to look on thee again;  
And if there be, as I have heard men say,  
These household gods, I do beseech them look  
To this my charge; bless it from thieves and fire,  
And keep, till happily my love I win,  
Me from thy door, and hold my father in! [Exit.

#### SCENE V.—A Room in a Tavern.

Enter RICARDO, PEDRO, UBERTO, SILVIO, and Drawer  
with a candle.

*Ric.* No more, for God sake! How is the night,  
*Drawer.* 'Faith, sir, 'tis very late. [boy?

*Uberto.* 'Faith, sir, you lie! is this your Jack  
i' th' clock-house?

Will you strike, sir? Gi'e's some more sack, you  
varlet.

*Ric.* Nay, if you love me, good Uberto, go!  
I am monstrous hot with wine.

*Uberto.* Quench it again with love!  
Gentlemen, I will drink one health more, and then,  
If my legs say me not shamefully nay,  
I will go with you. Give me a singular quart!

*Drawer.* Of what wine, sir?

*Uberto.* Of sack, you that speak confusion at  
the bar!

Of sack I say; and every one his quart.

What a devil, let's be merry!

*Drawer.* You shall, sir. [Exit.

*Pedro.* We will, sir; and a dried tongue.

*Silvio.* And an olive, boy, and a whole bunch  
of fiddlers!—

My head swims plaguily; 'uds precious, I shall be  
claw'd.

Enter Drawer with four quarts of wine.

*Ric.* Pray go! I can drink no more; think on  
'Tis midnight, gentlemen. [your promise;

*Uberto.* Oh, that it were dumb midnight now!

Not a word more, every man on's knees,  
And betake himself to his saint: Here's to your  
All this, and then away. [wench, signior!

*Ric.* I cannot drink it.

*Pedro.* 'Tis a toy, a toy; away wi't!

*Uberto.* Now dare I

Speak anything to any body living!

Come, where's the fault? Off with it.

*Ric.* I have broke

My wind. Call you this sack? I wonder who  
made it:

He was a sure workman, for 'tis plaguy strong  
Is it gone round? [work.

*Uberto.* 'Tis at the last. Out of my way, good  
Is the moon up yet? [boy!

*Drawer.* Yes, sir.

*Uberto.* Where is she, boy?

*Drawer.* There, sir.

*Uberto.* We shall have rain and thunder, boy.

*Drawer.* When, sir?

*Uberto.* I cannot tell; but sure we shall, boy.

*Drawer.* The gentleman is wine-wise.

*Uberto.* Drawer!

*Drawer.* Here, sir.

*Uberto.* Can you procure?

*Drawer.* What, sir?

*Uberto.* A whore, or two, or three, as need shall serve, boy?

*Silvio.* Ay, a good whore were worth money, boy.

*Drawer.* I protest, sir, we are altogether unprovided.

*Ric.* The more's the pity, boy; can you not 'vise us where, my child?

*Drawer.* Neither, in troth, sir.

*Pedro.* Why, where were you brought up, boy? No inking of a whore? no aim, my boy?

*Uberto.* It cannot sink in my head now that thou shouldst marry;

Why shouldst thou marry, tell me?

*Ric.* I marry? I'll be hang'd first.

Some more wine, boy!

*Silvio.* Is she not a whore translated?

An she be, let's repair to her!

*Ric.* I cannot tell; she may be an offender: But, Signior Silvio, I shall scratch your head; Indeed I shall.

*Silvio.* Judge me, I do

But jest with thee: What an she were inverted, With her heels upward like a traitor's coat, What care I?

*Uberto.* Ay, hang her! shall we fall out for her?

*Ric.* I am a little angry. But these wenches! Did you not talk of wenches?

*Silvio.* Boy, lend me your candle!

*Drawer.* Why, sir?

*Silvio.* To set fire to your rotten ceiling:

You'll keep no whores, rogue, no good members!

*Drawer.* Whores, sir?

*Silvio.* Ay, whores, sir; do you think we come With your hogsheads? [to lie

*Ric.* I must beat the watch;

I have long'd for it any time this three weeks.

*Silvio.* We'll beat the town too, an thou wilt; we are proof, boy!

Shall we kill any body?

*Ric.* No; but we'll hurt 'em dangerously.

*Uberto.* Silvio, now must I kill one; I cannot avoid it.—

Boy, easily afore there with your candle!

Where's your mistress?

*Drawer.* A-bed, sir.

*Silvio.* With whom?

*Drawer.* With my master.

*Uberto.* You lie, boy! she's better brought up than to lie

With her husband; has he not cast his head yet?

Next year he will be a velvet-headed cuckold.

*Drawer.* You are a merry gentleman. There, sir; take hold! [Exit.

SCENE VI.—A Street.

Enter VIOLA.

*Viola.* This is the place! I have out-told the clock

For haste; he is not here. Ricardo!—No! Now, every power that loves and is beloved, Keep me from shame to-night! for all you know Each thought of mine is innocent and pure,

As flesh and blood can hold. I cannot back; I threw the key within, and, ere I raise My father up to see his daughter's shame, I'll set me down, and tell the Northern wind That it is gentler than the curling West, If it will blow me dead! But he will come.— I' faith, 'tis cold.—If he deceive me thus, A woman will not easily trust a man. Hark! what's that?

*Silvio.* [Within.] Thou'rt over long at thy pot, Tom, Tom:

Thou'rt over long at the pot, Tom.

[Singing.]

*Viola.* Bless me! Who's that?

*Pedro.* [Within.] Whoo!

*Uberto.* [Within.] There, boys!

*Viola.* Darkness, be thou my cover! I must fly; To thee I haste for help.—They have a light:

Enter RICARDO, PEDRO, UBERTO, SILVIO, and Drawer with a torch.

Wind, if thou lovest a virgin, blow it out!

And I will never shut a window more,

To keep thee from me.

*Ric.* Boy!

*Drawer.* Sir?

*Ric.* Why, boy!

*Drawer.* What say you, sir?

*Ric.* Why, boy, art thou drunk, boy?

*Drawer.* What would you, sir?

*Ric.* Why, very good; where are we?

*Uberto.* Ay, that's the point.

*Drawer.* Why, sir, you will be at your lodging

*Ric.* I'll go to no lodging, boy. [presently.]

*Drawer.* Whither will you go then, sir?

*Ric.* I'll go no farther.

*Drawer.* For God's sake, sir, do not stay here

*Ric.* No more I will not: [all night]

Boy, lay me down, and roll me to a whore.

*Uberto.* And me.

*Pedro.* There spoke an——

*Silvio.* [Singing.] Then set your foot to my foot, and up tails all!

*Viola.* That is Ricardo: What a noise they make!

It is ill done of 'em.—Here, sirs! Ricardo!

*Ric.* What's that, boy?

*Drawer.* 'Tis a wench, sir: Pray, gentlemen, come away!

*Viola.* Oh, my dear love! how dost thou?

*Ric.* 'Faith, sweetheart,

Even as thou seest.

*Pedro.* Where's thy wench?

*Uberto.* Where's this bed-worm?

*Viola.* Speak softly, for the love of Heaven!

*Drawer.* Mistress, get you gone, and do not entice the gentlemen,

Now you see they're drunk, or I'll call the watch, And lay you fast enough.

*Viola.* Alas, what are you?

[place?]

Or what do you mean?—Sweet love, where's the

*Ric.* Marry, sweet love, e'en here: Lie down;

I'll fesse you.

[Seizes her.]

*Viola.* Good God! What mean you?

*Pedro.* I will have the wench.

*Uberto.* If you can get her.

*Silvio.* No, I'll lie with

The wench to-night, and she shall be yours to-

*Pedro.* Let go the wench!

[morrow.]

*Silvio.* Let you go the wench!

*Viola.* Oh, gentlemen, as you had mothers——

*Uberto.* They had no mothers; they are the sons  
*Ric.* Let that be maintain'd! [of bitches.  
*Silvio.* Marry then—  
*Viola.* Oh, bless me, Heaven!  
*Uberto.* How many is there on's?  
*Ric.* About five.  
*Uberto.* Why then, let's fight three to three.  
*Silvio.* Content. [Draw and fall down.  
*Drawer.* The watch! the watch! the watch!  
 Where are you? [Exit.  
*Ric.* Where are these cowards?  
*Pedro.* There's the whore.  
*Viola.* I never saw a drunken man before;  
 But these I think are so.  
*Silvio.* Oh!  
*Pedro.* I miss'd you narrowly there.  
*Viola.* My state is such, I know not how to think  
 A prayer fit for me; only I could move,  
 That never maiden more might be in love! [Exit.  
 Enter *Drawer, Constable, and Watch.*  
*Watch.* Where are they, boy?  
*Drawer.* Make no such haste, sir; they are  
 no runners.  
*Uberto.* I am hurt, but that's all one;  
 I shall light upon some of ye. *Pedro,*  
 Thou art a tall gentleman; let me kiss thee!  
*Watch.* My friend—  
*Uberto.* Your friend? you lie!  
*Ric.* Stand further off!  
 The watch? you are full of fleas.

*Const.* Gentlemen,  
 Either be quiet, or we must make ye quiet.  
*Ric.* Nay, good Master Constable, be not so  
 rigorous!  
*Uberto.* Master Constable, lend me thy hand of  
*Const.* That I will, sir. [justice!  
*Uberto.* Fy, Master Constable! what gollis you  
 have! Is Justice  
 So blind you cannot see to wash your hands?  
 I cry you mercy, sir; your gloves are on.  
*Drawer.* Now you are up, sir, will you go to  
 bed?  
*Pedro.* I'll truckle here, boy; give me another  
 pillow.  
*Drawer.* Will you stand up, and let me lay it  
*Pedro.* Yes. [on then?  
*Drawer.* There; hold him, two of ye. Now  
 Be going, Master Constable. [they are up,  
*Ric.* And this way, and that way, Tom. [Singing.  
*Uberto.* And here away, and there away, Tom.  
*Silvio.* This is the right way, the other's the wrong.  
*Pedro.* Th' other's the wrong.  
*Omnes.* Thou'rt over long at the pot, Tom, Tom.  
*Ric.* Lead valiantly, sweet constable! whoop!  
 ha, boys!  
*Const.* This wine hunts in their heads.  
*Ric.* Give me the bill, for I will be the serjeant.  
*Const.* Look to him, sirs!  
*Ric.* Keep your ranks, you rascals, keep your  
 ranks! [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*A Hall in ANTONIO'S House, with  
 a Gallery.*

Enter *MERCURY.*

*Merc.* I cannot sleep for thinking of this ass's  
 wife!  
 I'll be gone presently: there's no staying here,  
 With this devil about me.—Ho! This is the house  
 of sleep.  
 Ho! again there!—'Sfoot, the darkness, and this  
 Will make me lunatic. Ho! [love together  
 Enter a *Servingman above, unready.*  
*Serv.* Who calls there?  
*Merc.* Pray take the pains to rise and light a  
*Serv.* Presently. [candle.  
*Merc.* Was ever man but I in such a stocks?  
 Well, this shall be a warning to me, and  
 A fair one too, how I betray myself  
 To such a dunce, by way of benefit.

Enter *Servingman.*

*Serv.* Did you call?  
*Merc.* Yes: Pray do me the kindness, sir, to  
 let me out,  
 And not inquire why, for I must needs be gone.  
*Serv.* Not to-night, I hope, sir.  
*Merc.* Good sir, to-night;  
 I would not have troubled you else; pray let it be  
*Serv.* Alas, sir, my master will be offended. [so!  
*Merc.* That I have business? no, I warrant you.  
*Serv.* Good sir, take your rest.  
*Merc.* Pray, my good friend,  
 Let me appoint my own rest.

*Serv.* Yes, sir.  
*Merc.* Then shew me the way out; I'll consider  
*Serv.* Good Lord, sir— [you.  
*Merc.* If I had not  
 An excellent-temper'd patience, now should I break  
 This fellow's head, and make him understand  
 'Twere necessary; the only plague  
 Of this house is th' unhandsome love of servants,  
 That never do their duty in the right place,  
 But when they muster before dinner,  
 And sweep the table with a wooden dagger,  
 And then they are troublesome too, to all men's  
 shoulders.—  
 The woodcock's a flesh'd again; now I shall have  
 A new stir.

Enter *ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Why, how now, friend? what do you up  
 so late?  
 Are you well? do you want anything? Pray speak.  
*Merc.* Only the cause I rise for.  
*Ant.* What knaves are these!  
 What do you want?—Why, sirrah!  
*Merc.* Nothing i' th' world,  
 But the keys to let me out of doors: I must be  
 Be not against it, for you cannot stay me. [gone:  
*Ant.* Be gone at this time? that were a merry  
 jest.  
*Merc.* If there be any mirth in't, make you use  
 But I must go. [on't,  
*Ant.* Why, for love's sake?  
*Merc.* 'Twill benefit  
 Your understanding nothing to know the cause.  
 Pray go to bed; I'll trouble your man only.

*Ant.* Nay, sir, you have raised more than has reason

To curse you, an you knew all : my wife's up, And coming down too.

*Merc.* Alas, it will be

A trouble : Pray go up to her, and let me Disturb no more ; it is unmannerly.

*Enter MARIA, as out of bed.*

*Ant.* She's here already.—

Sweetheart, how say you by this gentleman ? He would away at midnight.

*Maria.* That I am sure he will not.

*Merc.* Indeed I must.

*Maria.* Good sir,

Let not your homely entertainment press you To leave your bed at midnight ! If you want What my house, or our town, may afford you, Make it your own fault if you call not for it. Pray go to bed again ! let me compel you : I am sure you have no power to deny a woman. The air is piercing ; And, to a body beaten with long travel, 'Twill prove an ill physician.

*Merc.* If she speak longer I shall be a knave,

*[Aside.*

As rank as e'er sweat for it.—Sir, if you will send Your wife up presently, I'll either stay With you (d'ye mark me ?) or deliver you So just a cause, that you yourself shall thrust Me out of doors, both suddenly and willingly.

*Ant.* I would fain hear that, 'faith !—Pray thee go up, sweetheart !

I have half persuaded him ; besides, he hath Some private business with me.

*Maria.* Good night, sir !

And what content you would have, I wish with you.

*[Exit.*

*Merc.* Could any man that had a back ask more ? Oh, me ! oh, me !

*Ant.* Now deal directly with me ;

Why should you go ?

*Merc.* If you be wise, do not inquire the cause ; 'Twill trouble you.

*Ant.* Why ? prythee, why ?

*Merc.* 'Faith,

I would not have you know it ; let me go !

'Twill be far better for you. *[Knocking.*

*Ant.* Who is that,

That knocks there ? is't not at the street-door ?

*Serv.* Yes, sir.

*Ant.* Who's there ? cannot you speak ?

*Viola.* *[Within.]* A poor Distressed maid ; for God's sake, let me in !

*Merc.* Let her in, and me out together ; 'tis but one labour :

'Tis pity she should stand i' th' street. It seems She knows you.

*Ant.* There she shall stand, for me : You are This is a common custom of the rogues ignorant ; That lie about the loose parts of the city.

*Merc.* As how ?

*Ant.* To knock at doors in dead time of night, And use some feigned voice to raise compassion ; And when the doors are open, in they rush, And cut the throats of all, and take the booty : We cannot be too careful.

*Viola.* *[Within.]* As ever you had pity, let me I am undone else. *[in !]*

*Ant.* Who are you ?

*Viola.* My name is Viola, a gentlewoman That ill chance hath distress'd ; you know my father.

*Merc.* Alas of God ! we'll let her in ; 'tis one Of the gentlewomen were here in the evening ; I know her by her name : Poor soul ! she's cold, I warrant her ; let her have my warm bed, And I will take her fortune : Come, pray come !

*Ant.* It is not Viola, that's certain ; She went home to her father's, I am sure.

*Viola.* Will not you be so good to let me in ?

*Ant.* I'll be so good to have you whipt away, If you stay a little longer—She is gone, I warrant her. Now let me know your cause, For I will hear it, and not repent the knowing.

*Merc.* Since you are so importunate, I'll tell you :

I love your wife extremely.

*Ant.* Very well.

*Merc.* And so well that I dare not stay.

*Ant.* Why ?

*Merc.* For wronging you : I know I am flesh and blood,

And you have done me friendships infinite, and often,

That must require me honest, and a true man ; And I will be so, or I'll break my heart.

*Ant.* Why, you may stay for all this, methinks.

*Merc.* No ; though I would be good, I am no Nor is it safe to try me : I deal plainly. *[saint,*

*Ant.* Come, I dare try you ; do the best you can.

*Merc.* You shall not,

When I am right again, I'll come and see you ; Till when, I'll use all countries, and all means, But I will lose this folly ; 'tis a devil !

*Ant.* Is there no way to stay you ?

*Merc.* No ; unless

You will have me such a villain to you, as all men Shall spit at me.

*Ant.* Does she know you love her ?

*Merc.* No ; I hope not : That were recompence Fit for a rogue to render her.

*Ant.* If ever any had a faithful friend, *[Aside.*

I am that man, and I may glory in it !

This is he, that *ipse*, he, that passes

All Christendom for goodness.

He shall not overgo me in his friendship ;

'Twere recreant and base, and I'll be hang'd first ;

I am resolved.—Go thy ways ; a wife

Shall never part us : I have considered,

And I find her nothing to such a friend as thou art.

I'll speak a bold word : take your time and woo her,

(You have overcome me clearly)

And do what's fitting with her—you conceive me.

I am glad at heart you love her, by this light !

Ne'er stare upon me, for I will not fly from't !

If you had spoken sooner, sure you had been served :

Sir, you're not every man. Now to your task !

I give you free leave ; and the sin is mine,

If there be any in it.

*Merc.* He will be hang'd *[Aside.*

Before he makes this good : He cannot be So innocent a Coxcomb ; he can tell ten, sure !—

If I had never known you, as I have done,

I might be one, as others, perhaps sooner ;

But now it is impossible, there's too much good

Between us.

*Ant.* Well, thou art e'en the best man—

I can say no more, I am so overjoy'd !

You must stay this night, and in the morning go  
As early as you please; I have a toy for you.

*Merc.* I thought this pill would make you sick.

*Ant.* But where you mean to be I must have  
notice,

And it must be hard by, too: Do you mark me?

*Merc.* Why, what's the matter?

*Ant.* There is a thing in hand.

*Merc.* Why, what thing?

*Ant.* A sound one, if it take right, and you be  
not

*Peevish.* We two will be (you would little think it)  
As famous for our friendship —

*Merc.* How?

*Ant.* If God please,

As ever Damon was, and Pythias;

Or Pylades, and Orestes; or any two

That ever were: Do you conceive me yet?

*Merc.* No, by my troth, sir!—He will not help  
me up, sure? [*Aside.*]

*Ant.* You shall anon; and, for our names, I  
think

They shall live after us, and be remember'd  
While there is a story, or I lose my aim.

*Merc.* What a vengeance ails he! How do you?

*Ant.* Yes, 'faith,

We two will be such friends as the world shall ring

*Merc.* And why is all this? [*of.*]

*Ant.* You shall enjoy my wife.

*Merc.* Away, away!

*Ant.* The wonder must begin.

So I have cast it, ('twill be scurvy else)

You shall not stir a foot in't: Pray be quiet

Till I have made it perfect.

*Merc.* What shall a man do with this wretched  
fellow? [*Aside.*]

There is no mercy to be used towards him;

He is not capable of any pity;

He will, in spite of course, be a cuckold;

And who can help it?—Must it begin so, needs,  
Think again. [*air?*]

*Ant.* Yes, marry must it;

And I myself will woo this woman for you:

Do you perceive it now? ha?

*Merc.* Yes; now I have a little sight i' th'  
matter.—

Oh, that thy head should be so monstrous, [*Aside.*]

That all thy servants' hats may hang upon't!—

But, do you mean to do this?

*Ant.* Yes, certain; I will woo her, and for you.

Strive not against it; 'tis the overthrow

Of the best plot that ever was then.

*Merc.* Nay,

I will assure you, sir, I'll do no harm;—

You have too much about you of your own. [*Aside.*]

*Ant.* Have you thought of a place yet?

*Merc.* A place?

*Ant.* Ay, a place where you will bide:

Pr'ythee, no more of this modesty; 'tis foolish!

An we were not determined to be

Absolute friends indeed, 'twere tolerable.

*Merc.* I have thought, and you shall hear from  
me.

*Ant.* Why, this will gain me everlasting glory!

I have the better of him, that's my comfort!

Good night! [*Exit.*]

*Merc.* Good night!—

Well, go thy ways! thou art the tidiest wittol

This day I think above ground;

And yet thy end, for all this, must be motley. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*A Field on the Outskirts of the City.*

*Enter Tinker and Donorshv.*

*Tinker.* 'Tis bitter cold. A plague upon these  
rogues,

How wary they are grown! not a door open now,

But double-barred; not a window,

But up with a case of wood, like a spice-box;

And their locks unpickable! the very smiths

That were half venturers, drink penitent single ale:

This is the iron age the ballad sings of.

Well, I shall meet with some of your loose linen  
yet;

Good fellows must not starve; here's he shall  
shew

You God A'mighty's dog-bolts, if this hold.

*Dor.* 'Faith, thou art but too merciful, that's  
thy fault;

Thou art as sweet a thief, that sin excepted,

As ever suffer'd; that is a proud word,

And I'll maintain it.

*Tinker.* Come, pr'ythee let's shog off,

And bowze an hour or two; there's ale will make

A cat speak at the Harrow: We shall get nothing  
now,

Without we batter; 'tis grown too near morning;

The rogues sleep sober and are watchful.

*Dor.* We want a boy extremely for this function,

Kept under for a year, with milk and knot-grass.

In my time I have seen a boy do wonders:

Robin the red tinker had a boy,

('Rest his soul, he suffer'd this time four years

For two spoons, and a pewter candlestick)

That sweet man had a boy, as I am cursten'd  
whore,

Would have run through a cat-hole; he would  
have bouted

Such a piece of linen in an evening—

*Tinker.* Well, we will have a boy. Pr'ythee  
I am vengeance cold, I tell thee. [*let's go!*]

*Dor.* I'll be hang'd

Before I stir without some purchase! By these  
ten bones,

I will turn she-ape, and untile a house,

But I will have it! It may be I have

A humour to be hang'd, I cannot tell.

*Tinker.* Peace, you flea'd whore! thou hast a  
mouth like a blood-hound.—

*Enter VIOLA.*

Here comes a night-shade.

*Dor.* A gentlewoman-whore;

By this darkness, I'll case her to the skin.

*Tinker.* Peace, I say!

*Viola.* What fear have I endured this dismal  
night!

And what disgrace, if I were seen and known!

In which this darkness only is my friend,

That only has undone me. A thousand curses

Light on my easy, foolish, childish love,

That durst so lightly lay a confidence

Upon a man, so many being false!

My weariness, and weeping, makes me sleepy;

I must lie down.

*Tinker.* What's this? a prayer, or

A homily, or a ballad of good counsel?

She has a gown, I am sure.

*Dor.* Knock out her brains!

And then she'll never bite.

*Tinker.* Yes, I will knock her,  
But not yet.—You! woman!

*Viola.* For God's sake, what are you?

*Tinker.* One of the grooms of your wardrobe.

Come, uncase,

Uncase!—By'r lady, a good kersey!

[*Pulls off her mantle.*]

*Viola.* Pray do not hurt me, sir.

*Dor.* Let's have no pity;

For if you do, here's that shall cut your whistle.

*Viola.* Alas, what would you have? I am as  
miserable

As you can make me any way.

*Dor.* That shall be tried.

*Viola.* Here, take my gown, if that will do you  
pleasure.

*Tinker.* Yes, marry will't.—Look in the pockets,  
There may be birds. [*Doll;*]

*Dor.* They are flown, a pox go with them!

I'll have this hat, and this ruff too; I like it:

Now will I flourish like a lady, brave,

I'faith, boy.

*Viola.* You are so gentle people, to my seeming,  
That by my truth I could live with you!

*Tinker.* Could you so?

A pretty young round wench, well blooded; I  
Am for her.

*Dor.* But by this, I am not; cool

Your codpiece, rogue! or I will clap a spell upon't,  
Shall take your edge off with a very vengeance.

*Tinker.* Peace, horse-flesh, peace!—I'll cast off  
my Amazon;

She has walk'd too long, and is indeed notorious,  
She'll fight and scold, and drink like one of the

*Dor.* Uds precious, [*worthies.*]

You young contagious whore, must you be 'ticing?  
And, is your flesh so rank, sir, that two may live  
upon't?

I am glad to hear your curtal's grown so lusty;

He was dry-founder'd t'other day; weehee,

My pamper'd jade of Asia!

*Viola.* Good woman, do not hurt me! I am sorry  
That I have given any cause of anger.

*Dor.* Either bind her quickly, and come away,  
or by

This steel I'll tell, though I truss for company!

Now could I eat her broil'd, or any way,  
Without vinegar: I must have her nose!

[*Draws a knife.*]

*Viola.* By anything you love best, good sir!  
good woman!

*Tinker.* Why her nose, Dorothy?

*Dor.* If I have it not,

And presently, and warm, I lose that I go withal.

*Tinker.* 'Would the devil had that thou goest  
withal,

And thee together! for sure he got thy whelps,

If thou hast any; he's thy dear dad. Whore,

Put up your cut-purse! an I take my switch up,

'Twill be a black time with you else; sheathe  
your bung, whore!

*Dor.* Will you bind her?

We shall stand here prating, and be hang'd both.

*Tinker.* Come, I must bind you: Not a word;  
no crying! [*They bind her to a tree.*]

*Viola.* Do what you will, indeed I will not cry.

*Tinker.* Hurt her not: If thou dost, by ale and  
I'll clout thy old bald brain-pan with a piece [beer,  
Of brass, you bitch incarnate.

[*Exeunt Tinker and Dorothy.*]

*Viola.* Oh, God, to what am I reserved! that  
knew not,

Through all my childish hours and actions,  
More sin than poor imagination,  
And too much loving of a faithless man,  
For which I am paid; and so, that not the day  
That now is rising to protect the harmless,  
And give the innocent a sanctuary  
From thieves and spoilers, can deliver me  
From shame, at least suspicion!

*Enter VALERIO.*

*Val.* [*Entering.*] Sirrah, lead down  
The horses easily! I'll walk a-foot  
Till I be down the hill. 'Tis very early;  
I shall reach home betimes. How now? who's  
there?

*Viola.* Night, that was ever friend to lovers, yet  
Has raised some weary soul, that hates his bed,  
To come and see me blush, and then laugh at me.

*Val.* He had a rude heart that did this.

*Viola.* Gentle sir,

If you have that which honest men call pity,  
And be as far from evil as you shew,  
Help a poor maid, that this night by bad fortune  
Has been thus used by robbers.

*Val.* A pox upon his heart that would not help  
thee!

This thief was half a lawyer, by his bands.—  
How long have you been tied here?

*Viola.* Alas, this hour,

And with cold and fear am almost perished.

*Val.* Where were the watch the while? Good  
sober gentlemen!

They were, like careful members of the city,  
Drawing in diligent ale, and singing catches,  
While Master Constable contrived the toasts.  
These fellows should be more severely punish'd  
Than wand'ring gipsies, that every statute whips;  
For if they had every one two eyes a-piece more,  
Three pots would put them out.

*Viola.* I cannot tell;

I found no Christian to give me succour.

*Val.* When they take a thief, I'll take Ostend  
again: The whoresons

Drink opium in their ale, and then they sleep

Like tops; as for their bills, they only serve

To reach down bacon to make rashers on.

Now let me know whom I have done this courtesy

That I may thank my early rising for it. [*to,*]

*Viola.* Sir, all I am, you see.

*Val.* You have a name I am sure, and a kind-  
dred,

A father, friend, or something that must own you—  
She's a handsome young wench: What rogues

were these, to rob her! [*Aside.*]

*Viola.* Sir, you see all I dare reveal; and, as

You are a gentleman, press me no further!

For there begins a grief, whose bitterness

Will break a stronger heart than I have in me;

And 'twill but make you heavy with the hearing:

For your own goodness sake, desire it not!

*Val.* If you would not have me inquire that,

How do you live then?

*Viola.* How I have lived, is still

One question which must not be resolved:

How I desire to live, is in your liking;

So worthy an opinion I have of you.

*Val.* Is in my liking? How, I pray thee? tell  
me!

I'faith, I'll do you any good lies in my power,—  
She has an eye would raise a bed-rid man! [*Aside.*  
Come, leave your fear, and tell me; that's a good

*Viola.* Sir, I would serve— [*wench!*]

*Val.* Who wouldst thou serve? Do not weep,  
And tell me.

*Viola.* 'Faith, sir, even some good woman;  
And such a wife, if you be married,  
I do imagine yours.

*Val.* Alas! thou art young and tender;  
Let me see thy hand! this was ne'er made to wash,  
Or wind up water, beat clothes, or rub a floor.—  
By this light, for one use, that shall be nameless,  
[*Aside.*

'Tis the best wanton hand that e'er I look'd on!  
*Viola.* Dare you accept me, sir? my heart is  
Among your virtuous charitable deeds, [honest:  
This will not be the least.

*Val.* Thou canst in a chamber?

*Viola.* In a chamber, sir?

*Val.* I mean, wait there upon a gentlewoman.—  
How quick she is! I like that mainly too; [*Aside.*  
I'll have her, though I keep her with main strength,  
Like a besieged town; for I know I shall have  
The enemy afore me within a week.

*Viola.* Sir, I can sew too, and make pretty laces,  
Dress a head handsome, teach young gentlewomen;  
For in all these I have a little knowledge.

*Val.* 'Tis well;—no doubt I shall increase that  
knowledge. [*Aside.*  
I like her better still; how she provokes me!—  
Pretty young maid, you shall serve a good gentle-  
woman,

Though I say it, that will not be unwilling  
You should please me, nor I forgetful if you do.

*Viola.* I am the happier.

*Val.* My man shall make some shift to carry you  
Behind him: Can you ride well?

*Viola.* But I'll hold fast,  
For catching of a fall.

*Val.* That's the next way  
To pull another on you.—I'll work her as I go:  
[*Aside.*

I know she's wax! Now, now, at this time could I  
Beget a worthy on this wench.

*Viola.* Sir, for this gentleness, may Heaven  
requite you tenfold!

*Val.* 'Tis a good wench! however others use  
thee,

Be sure I'll be a loving master to thee. Come!  
[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE III.—Before ANTONIO'S House.

*Enter ANTONIO, like an Irish Footman, with a Letter.*

*Ant.* I hope I am wild enough for being known!  
I have writ a letter here, and in it have abused  
myself

Most bitterly, yet, all my fear is, not enough,  
For that must do it, that must lay it on:  
I'll win her out o' th' flint; 'twill be more famous.  
Now for my language!

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Now, sir; who would you speak with?

*Ant.* Where be thy mastres, man? I would  
I have a letter. [spake with her:]

*Serv.* Cannot I deliver it?

*Ant.* No, by my trot and fait, canst thou not,  
man.

*Serv.* Well, sir, I'll call her to you; pray shake  
your ears  
Without a little. [*Exit.*

*Ant.* Cran a cree, do it quickly!  
This rebel tongue sticks in my teeth worse  
Than a tough hen: Sure it was ne'er known at  
Babel;

For they sold no apples, and this was made for  
certain  
At the first planting of orchards, 'tis so crabbed.

*Enter MARIA and Servant.*

*Maria.* What's he would speak with me?

*Serv.* A Kilkenny ring;  
There he stands, madam.

*Maria.* What would you have with me, friend?

*Ant.* He has a letter for other women; wilt  
*Maria.* From whence? [thou read it?]

*Ant.* De crosse Creest, from my master!

*Maria.* Who is your master?

*Ant.* I pray do you look.

*Maria.* Do you know this fellow?

*Serv.* No,

Madam, not I, more than an Irish footman.  
Stand further, friend; I do not like your rope-  
runners.

What stallion rogues are these, to wear such dow-  
The very cotton may commit adultery. [sets!]

*Maria.* I cannot find whose hand this should  
be; I'll read:

“To the beauteous wife of Don Antonio.”

Sure this is some blind scribe! Well! now what  
follows? [*Reads.*

*Ant.* Pray God it take! I have given her that  
[*Aside.*

Will stir her conscience; how it works with her!  
Hope, if it be thy will, let the flesh have it!

*Maria.* This is the most abhorred, intolerable  
knavery,

That e'er slave entertain'd! Sure there is more

Than thine own head in

This villainy; it goes like practised mischief.

Disabled in his body? Oh, good God!

As I live, he lies fearfully, and basely.

Ha! I should know that jewel; 'tis my husband!—  
Come hither, sirrah; are you an Irishman?

*Ant.* Sweet woman, a-cree, I am an Irishman.

*Maria.* Now I know't perfectly: Is this your  
trick, sir? [*Aside.*

I'll trick you for it!—How long have you served  
This gentleman?

*Ant.* Please thee, a little day,  
O, my MacDermond put me to my mastree.—

'Tis done, I know. [*Aside.*

*Maria.* By my faith, he speaks as well [*Aside.*

As if he had been lousy for the language

A year or two. Well, sir, you had better

Have kept in your own shape, as I will use you.

What have I done that should deserve this trial?

I never made him cuckold, to my knowledge.—

Sirrah, come hither!

*Ant.* Now will she send some jewel, or some  
letter;

I know her mind as well! I shall be famous.

*Maria.* Take this Irish bawd here—

*Ant.* How!

*Maria.* And kick him till his breeches

And breech be of one colour, a bright blue both!

*Ant.* I may be well swinged thus, for I dare not  
Reveal myself: I hope she does not mean it.

[*Servant kicks him.*

Oh, hone! oh, hone! eh, St. Patrick! oh, a-cree!  
Oh, sweet woman!

*Maria.* Now turn him,  
And kick him o' t'other side! that's well.

*Ant.* Oh, good waiting-man! I beseech thee,  
Good waiting-man!—A pox fire your legs!

*Maria.* You rogue,  
You enemy to all, but little breeches,  
How darest thou come to me with such a letter?

*Ant.* Pr'ythee pity the poor Irishman!—All  
this makes for me: [Aside.]

If I win her yet, I am still more glorious.

*Maria.* Now could I weep at what I have done;  
[Apart.]

But I'll harden my heart again.—Go, shut him up  
Till my husband comes home. Yet thus much ere  
you go,

Sirrah Thatch'd-Head! wouldst not thou be whipt,  
and think it justice?

Well, *aquavitas* barrel, I will bounce you.

*Ant.* I pray do; I beseech you, be not angry!

*Maria.* Oh, you hobby-headed rascal, I'll have  
you flead,

And trossers made of thy skin to tumble in.

Go, away with him! let him see no sun,

Till my husband come home.—Sir, I

Shall meet with you for your knavery,

I fear it not.

*Ant.* Wilt thou not let me go?—

I do not like this.

*Maria.* Away with him!

*Serv.* Come, I'll lead you in by your jack-a-  
lent hair.

Go quietly, or I'll make your crupper crack!

*Maria.* And, do you hear me, sirrah? when you  
Make my coach ready.

*Serv.* Yes, forsooth.

*Maria.* Lock him up safe enough.—

I'll to this gentleman, and know the reason

Of all this business, for I do suspect it;

If he have laid this plot, I'll ring him such a peal

Shall make his ears deaf for a month at least.

[Exit.]

SCENE IV.—*A Street.*

*Enter RICARDO.*

*Ric.* Am I not mad? Can this weak-temper'd  
head,

That will be mad with drink, endure the wrong

That I have done a virgin, and my love?

Be mad, for so thou ought'st, or I will beat

The walls and trees down with thee, and will let

Either thy memory out, or madness in!

But sure I never loved fair Viola,

I never loved my father, nor my mother,

Or anything but drink! Had I had love,

Nay, had I known so much charity

As would have saved an infant from the fire,

I had been naked, raving in the street,

With half a face, gashing myself with knives,

Two hours ere this time.

*Enter PEDRO, SILVIO, and UBERTO.*

*Pedro.* Good-morrow, sir!

*Ric.* Good-morrow, gentlemen!

Shall we go drink again? I have my wits.

*Pedro.* So have I, but they are unsettled ones:  
'Would I had some porridge!

*Ric.* The tavern-boy was here this morning  
with me,

And told me that there was a gentlewoman,  
Which he took for a whore, that hung on me,  
For whom we quarrell'd, and I know not what.

*Pedro.* I'faith, nor I.

*Uberto.* I have a glimmering  
Of some such thing.

*Ric.* Was it you, Silvio,  
That made me drink so much? 'twas you or Pedro.

*Pedro.* I know not who.

*Silvio.* We were all apt enough.

*Ric.* But I will lay the fault on none but me,  
That I would be so entreated!—Come, Silvio,

Shall we go drink again? Come, gentlemen,

Why do you stay? Let's never leave off now,

Whilst we have wine and throats! I'll practise it,  
Till I have made it my best quality;

For what is best for me to do but that? [named,  
For God's sake, come and drink! When I am

Men shall make answer, "Which Ricardo mean  
The excellent drinker?" I will have it so. [you?

Will you go drink?

*Silvio.* We drunk too much too lately.

*Ric.* Why, there is then the less behind to drink:  
Let's end it all! dispatch that, we'll send abroad,

And purchase all the wine the world can yield,  
And then drink it off; then take the fruits o' th'

earth,

Distil the juice from them, and drink that off;

We'll catch the rain before it fall to ground,

And drink off that, that never more may grow;

We'll set our mouths to springs, and drink them

And all this while we'll never think of those [of];

That love us best, more than we did last night.

We will not give unto the poor a drop

Of all this drink: but, when we see them weep,

We'll run to them, and drink their tears off too:

We'll never leave whilst there is heat or moisture

In this large globe; but suck it cold and dry,

Till we have made it elemental earth,

Merely by drinking.

*Pedro.* Is it flattery

To tell you, you are mad?

*Ric.* If it be false,

There's no such way to bind me to a man:

He that will have me lay my goods and lands,

My life down for him, need no more but say,

"Ricardo, thou art mad!" and then all these

Are at his service; then he pleases me,

And makes me think that I had virtue in me,

That I had love and tenderness of heart;

That, though I have committed such a fault

As never creature did, yet running mad,

As honest men should do for such a crime,

I have express'd some worth, though it be late:

But I, alas, have none of these in me,

But keep my wits still like a frozen man,

That had no fire within him.

*Silvio.* Nay, good Ricardo,

Leave this wild talk, and send a letter to her!

I will deliver it.

*Ric.* 'Tis to no purpose;

Perhaps she's lost last night; or, [if] she [is]

Got home again, she's now so strictly look'd to

The wind can scarce come to her: Or, admit

She were herself, if she would hear from me,

From me unworthy, that have used her thus,

She were so foolish that she were no more

To be beloved.

*Enter ANDRUGO, and Servant with a night-gown.*

*Serv.* Sir, we have found this night-gown she  
*Andr.* Where? [took with her.]

*Ric.* Where? where? speak quickly!

*Serv.* Searching in the suburbs,  
We found a Tinker and his whore that had  
It in a tap-house, whom we apprehended,  
And they confess'd they stole it from her.

*Ric.* And murder'd her? [*Grasps his sword.*]

*Silvio.* What ail you, man?

*Ric.* Why, all this doth not make  
Me mad.

*Silvio.* It does; you would not offer this else.

Good Pedro, look to his sword!  
[*PEDRO takes his sword.*]

*Serv.* They do deny

The killing of her, but swore they left her  
Tied to a tree, in the fields next those suburbs  
That are without our lady's gate, near day,  
And by the road, so that some passenger  
Must needs untie her quickly.

*Andr.* The will of Heaven be done! Sir, I will  
only

Intreat you this,—that as you were the greatest  
Occasion of her loss, that you'll be pleased  
To urge your friends, and be yourself earnest in

The search of her: If she be found, she is yours,  
If she please. I myself only [will] see these people  
Better examined, and after, follow  
Some way in search. God keep you, gentlemen!  
[*Exit.*]

*Silvio.* Alas, good man!

*Ric.* What think ye now of me? I think this  
lump

Is nothing but a piece of phlegm congeal'd,  
Without a soul; for where there's so much spirit  
As would but warm a flea, those faults of mine  
Would make it glow and flame in this dull heart,  
And run like molten gold through every sin,  
Till it could burst these walls and fly away.—  
Shall I entreat you all to take your horses,  
And search this innocent?

*Pedro.* With all our hearts.

*Ric.* Do not divide yourselves, till you come  
there

Where they say she was tied: I'll follow too,  
But never to return till she be found.

Give me my sword, good Pedro! I will do

No harm, believe me, with it; I am now

Far better temper'd: If I were not so,

I have enow besides. God keep you all,

And send us good success!  
[*Exeunt.*]

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—MERCURY'S Lodging.

*Enter MERCURY and Servant.*

*Merc.* Who is it? can you tell?

*Serv.* By my troth, sir,  
I know not; but it is a gentewoman.

*Merc.* A gentewoman? I'll lay my life, you  
puppy

Has sent his wife to me: If he have, fling up the  
bed.

*Serv.* Here she is, sir.

*Enter MARIA.*

*Maria.* I am glad I found you, sir. There, take  
your letter, [Gives him a letter.]

And keep it till you have another friend to wrong!  
'Tis too malicious false to make me sin;

You have provoked me to be that I love not,  
A talker, and you shall hear me.

Why should you dare to imagine me

So light a housewife, that, from four hours'  
knowledge,

You might presume to offer to my credit

This rude and ruffian trial? I am sure

I never courted you, nor gave you tokens,

That might concern assurance: You are a fool!

*Merc.* I cannot blame you, now I see this letter.

Though you be angry, yet with me you must not,

Unless you'll make me guilty of a wrong

My worst affections hate.

*Maria.* Did not you send it?

*Merc.* No, upon my faith;

Which is more, I understand it not: the hand  
Is as far from my knowledge as the malice.

*Maria.* This is strange!

*Merc.* It is so,

And had been stranger, and indeed more hateful,

Had I, that have received such courtesies,

And owe so many thanks, done this base office.

*Maria.* Your name is at it.

*Merc.* Yes, but not my nature;

And I shall hate my name worse than the manner,  
For this base broking. You are wise and virtuous,  
Remove this fault from me;

For, on the love I bear to truth and goodness,

This letter dare not name me for the author.

*Maria.* Now I perceive my husband's knavery!

[*Apart.*]

If my man can but find where he has been,

I will go with this gentleman, whatsoever

Comes on't; and, as I mean to carry it,

Both he and all the world shall think it fit,

And thank me for it.

*Merc.* I must confess I loved you at first;

Howe'er this made me leave your house unman-  
nerly,

That might provoke me to do something ill,

Both to your honour and my faith, and not to write

This letter, which I hold so truly wicked,

That I will not think on't.

*Maria.* I do believe you, and since I see you  
are free,

My words were not meant to you: But this is not  
The half of my affliction.

*Merc.* 'Tis pity

You should know more vexation; may I inquire?

*Maria.* 'Faith, sir, I fear I have lost my hus-  
band.

*Merc.* Your husband? it cannot be.—I pity her:

How she is vex'd!  
[*Aside.*]

*Enter Servant.*

*Maria.* How now? what news? Nay, speak,  
For we must know.

*Serv.* 'Faith, I have found at length,

By chance, where he has been.

*Maria.* Where?

*Serv.* In a blind out-house in the suburbs :  
Pray God all be well with him !

*Maria.* Why ?

*Serv.* There are his clothes ; but what's become  
I cannot yet inquire. [of him,

*Maria.* [*Aside.*] I am glad of this.—

Sure they have murder'd him ! What shall I do ?

*Merc.* Be not so grieved, before you know the  
truth !

You have time enough to weep. This is the sud-  
den'st mischief—

Did you not bring an officer to search there,  
Where you say you found his clothes ?

*Serv.* Yes ; and we search'd it, and charged the  
fellow with him ;

But he, like a rogue, [a] stubborn rogue, made  
answer,

He knew not where he was ; he had been there,

But where he was now he could not tell :

I tell you true, I fear him.

*Maria.* Are all my hopes and longings to enjoy  
After this three years' travel, come to this ? [him,

*Serv.* It is the rankest house in all the city,  
The most cursed rogy bawdy-house ! Hell fire it !

*Merc.* This is the worst I heard yet. Will you  
go home ?

I'll bear you company, and give you  
The best help I may : This being here will wrong  
you.

*Maria.* As you are a gentleman, and as you  
Your dead friend, let me not go home ! [loved  
That will but heap one sorrow on another.

*Merc.* Why, propose any thing, and I'll per-  
I am at my wit's end too. [form't :

*Serv.* So am I. Oh, my dear master !

*Merc.* Peace, you great fool !

*Maria.* Then, good sir, carry me to some retired  
Far from the sight of this unhappy city ; [place,  
Whither you will indeed, so it be far enough !

*Merc.* If I might counsel you, I think 'twere  
better

To go home, and try what may be done yet ;

He may be at home afore you ; who can tell ?

*Maria.* Oh, no ; I know he's dead, I know he's  
murder'd !

Tell me not of going home ! you murder me too.

*Merc.* Well, since it pleases you to have it so,

I will no more persuade you to go home ;

I'll be your guide in the country, as your grief

Doth command me. I have a mother, dwelling  
from

This place some twenty miles : The house, though  
homely,

Yet able to shew something like a welcome ;

Thither I'll see you safe with all your sorrows.

*Maria.* With all the speed that may be thought  
upon !

I have a coach here ready : good sir, quickly !—

I'll fit you, my fine husband ! [*Aside.*

*Merc.* It shall be so : [*Aside.*

If this fellow be dead, I see no band

Of any other man to tie me from my will ;

And I will follow her with such careful service,

That she shall either be my love, or wife.—

Will you walk in ?

*Maria.* I thank you, sir ; but one word with my  
And I am ready.—Keep the Irish fellow [man,  
Safe, as you love your life, for he, I fear,  
Has a deep hand in this ; then search again,  
And get out warrants for that naughty man

That keeps the bad house, that he may answer it !  
If you find the body, give it due burial.

Farewell ! You shall hear from me. Keep all safe !  
*Serv.* Oh, my sweet master ! [*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—A Hall in ANTONIO'S House.

ANTONIO, knocking within.

*Ant.* Man-a-cree,

The devil take thee, wilt thou kill me here ?

I pr'ythee now let me go seek my master ;

I shall be very cheel ease.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Do you hear man-a-cree ?

I'll cree your coxcomb, an you keep not still ;

Down, you rogue !

*Ant.* Good sweet-faced sarving-man,

Let me out, I beseech de, and by my trot

I will give dy worship two shillings in good argot,

To buy dy worship pippins.

*Serv.* This rogue thinks

All the worth of man consists in pippins : By this

I'll beat rebellion out of you for ever ! [light,

*Ant.* Wilt thou not hear me, man ?

Is fet ! I'll give thee all I have about me.

*Serv.* I thank you, sir ; so I may have picking

*Ant.* Here is five shillings, man. [work,

*Serv.* Here is a cudgel,

A very good one !

*Enter two Servants.*

2 *Serv.* How now ? what's the matter ?

Where is the Irishman ?

1 *Serv.* There, a wyth take him !

He makes more noise alone there, than ten lawyers

Can do with double [fees,] and a scurvy case.

2 *Serv.* Let him out ! I must talk with him.

ANTONIO is let out.

*Ant.* Wilt thou give me

Some drink, oh, hone ? I am very dry, man.

2 *Serv.* You shall have that shall quench your

thirst, my friend.

*Ant.* Wat dost thou mean, man ?

2 *Serv.* Even a good tough halter.

*Ant.* A halter ? oh, hone !

2 *Serv.* Sirrah,

You are a mischievous rogue, that's the truth.

*Ant.* No, fet I am not.

1 *Serv.* Shall I knock out his brains ? I have  
kill'd dogs

Have been worth three of him for all uses.

2 *Serv.* Sirrah, the truth on't is,

You must with me to a justice. Oh, Roger,  
Roger !

1 *Serv.* Why, what's the matter, William ?

2 *Serv.* Heavy news, Roger,

Heavy news ; God comfort us !

1 *Serv.* What is't, man ?

*Ant.* What's the matter now ?—

I am even weary of this way : 'Would I were out  
on't ! [*Aside.*

2 *Serv.* My master sure

Is murder'd, Roger, and this cursed rogue,

I fear, has had a hand in't.

*Ant.* No, fet, not !

1 *Serv.* Stand away !

I'll kick it out of him : Come, sirrah, mount ;

I'll make you dance, youascal ! kill my master ?

If thy breech were cannon-proof,  
Having this good cause on my side, I would en-  
Hold fair, Shamrock ! [counter it ;

*Ant.* Why, how now, sirs !  
[*Throws off his disguise.*

You will not murder me, indeed ?

*2 Serv.* Bless us, Roger !

*Ant.* Nay, I am no spirit.

*2 Serv.* How do you, sir ?

This is my very master.

*Ant.* Why, well enough yet ;

But you have a heavy foot of your own. Where's  
my wife ?

*1 Serv.* Alas, poor sorrowful gentlewoman,  
She thinks you are dead, and has given o'er house-  
*Ant.* Whither is she gone, then ? [keeping.

*1 Serv.* Into the country with the gentleman,  
your friend, sir,

To see if she can wear her sorrows out there ;

She weeps and takes on too—

*Ant.* This falls out pat ; [Aside.

I shall be everlasting for a name !—

Do you hear ? upon your lives and faiths to me,

Not one word I am living !

But let the same report pass along,

That I am murder'd still.—I am made for ever !  
[Aside.

*1 Serv.* Why, sir ?

*Ant.* I have a cause, sir ; that's enough for you.  
Well, if I be not famous, I am wrong'd much :

[Aside.

For any thing I know, I will not trouble him  
This week at least ; no, let them take their way  
One of another !

*1 Serv.* Sir, will you be still an Irishman ?

*Ant.* Yes, a while.

*2 Serv.* But your worship will be beaten no

*Ant.* No, I thank you, William. [more ?

*1 Serv.* In truth, sir, if it must be so,

I'll do it better than a stranger.

*Ant.* Go ; you are knaves both !

But I forgive you.—I am almost mad [Aside.

With the apprehension of what I shall be.—

Not a word, I charge you ! [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*The Country. An open Field.*

*Enter VALERIO and VIOLA.*

*Val.* Come, pretty soul, we now are near our  
home,

And whilst our horses are walk'd down the hill,

Let thou and I walk here over this close !

The footway is more pleasant. 'Tis a time,

My pretty one, not to be wett away,

For every living thing is full of love ;

Art not thou so too, ha ?

*Viola.* Nay, there are living things

Empty of love, or I had not been here ;

But, for myself, alas, I have too much.

*Val.* It cannot be,

That so much beauty, so much youth and grace,

Should have too much of love.

*Viola.* Pray what is love ?

For I am full of that I do not know.

*Val.* Why, love, fair maid, is an extreme desire

That's not to be examined, but fulfill'd ;

To ask the reason why thou art in love,

Or what might be the noblest end in love,

Would overthrow that kindly-rising warmth

That many times slides gently o'er the heart ;  
'Twould make thee grave and staid, thy thoughts  
would be

Like a thrice-married widow, full of ends,  
And void of all compassion ; and to fright thee  
From such inquiry, whereas thou art now  
Living in ignorance, mild, fresh, and sweet,  
And but sixteen, the knowing what love is  
Would make thee six-and-forty.

*Viola.* 'Would it would make me nothing !—I  
have heard

Scholars affirm, the world's upheld by love,

But I believe women maintain all this ;

For there's no love in men.

*Val.* Yes, in some men.

*Viola.* I know them not.

*Val.* Why, there is love in me.

*Viola.* There's charity I am sure towards me.

*Val.* And love,

Which I will now express : My pretty maid,  
I dare not bring thee home ; my wife is foul,  
And therefore envious ; she is very old,  
And therefore jealous ; thou art fair and young,  
A subject fit for her unlucky vices  
To work upon ; she never will endure thee.

*Viola.* She may endure,

If she be aught but devil, all the friendship

That I will hold with you. Can she endure

I should be thankful to you ? may I pray

For you and her ? will she be brought to think

That all the honest industry I have

Deserves brown bread ? If this may be endured,

She'll pick a quarrel with a sleeping child,

Ere she fall out with me.

*Val.* But, trust me, she does hate all handsome-  
ness.

*Viola.* How fell you in love with such a creature ?

*Val.* I never loved her.

*Viola.* And yet married her ?

*Val.* She was a rich one.

*Viola.* And you swore, I warrant you,

She was a fair one then too ?

*Val.* Or, believe me,

I think I had not had her.

*Viola.* Are you men

All such ? 'Would you would wall us in a place,

Where all we women that are innocent

Might live together !

*Val.* Do not weep at this :

Although I dare not, for some weighty reason,

Displease my wife, yet I'll forget not thee.

*Viola.* What will you do with me ?

*Val.* Thou shalt be placed

At my man's house, and have such food and rai-  
ment

As can be bought with money : These white hands

Shall never learn to work, but they shall play,

As thou sayst they were wont, teaching the strings

To move in order, or what else thou wilt.

*Viola.* I thank you, sir ; but pray you clothe  
me poorly,

And let my labour get me means to live !

*Val.* But, fair one, you I know do so much hate

A foul ingratitude, you will not look

I should do this for nothing.

*Viola.* I will work

As much out as I can, and take as little ; and

That you shall have as duly paid to you

As ever servant did.

*Val.* But give me now

A trial of it, [that] I may believe!  
We are alone; shew me how thou wilt kiss  
And hug me hard, when I have stolen away  
From my too-clamorous wife that watches me,  
To spend a blessed hour or two with thee!

*Viola.* Is this the love you mean? You would have that

Is not in me to give; you would have lust.

*Val.* Not to dissemble, or to mince the word,  
'Tis lust I wish indeed.

*Viola.* And, by my troth,  
I have it not! For Heaven's sake, use me kindly,  
Though I be good, and shew perhaps a monster,  
As this world goes!

*Val.* I do but speak to thee;  
Thy answers are thy own; I compel none:  
But if thou refuse this motion,  
Thou art not then for me. Alas, good soul!  
What profit can thy work bring me?

*Viola.* But I fear: I pray go! for lust, they say,  
will grow

Outrageous, being denied. I give you thanks  
For all your courtesies, and there's a jewel  
That's worth the taking, that I did preserve  
Safe from the robbers. Pray you leave me here  
Just as you found me, a poor innocent,  
And Heaven will bless you for it!

*Val.* Pretty maid,  
I am no robber, nor no ravisher.  
I pray thee keep thy jewel. I have done  
No wrong to thee. Though thou be'st virtuous,  
And in extremity, I do not know  
That I am bound to keep thee.

*Viola.* No, sir;  
For God's sake, if you know an honest man  
In all these countries, give me some directions  
To find him out!

*Val.* More honest than myself,  
Good sooth, I do not know: I would have lain  
With thee, with thy consent; and who would not  
In all these parts, is past my memory.  
I am sorry for thee. Farewell, gentle maid:  
God keep thee safe! [Exit.]

*Viola.* I thank you, sir; and you!  
Woman, they say, was only made of man:  
Methinks 'tis strange they should be so unlike!  
It may be, all the best was cut away  
To make the woman, and the naught was left  
Behind with him.—I'll sit me down and weep!  
All things have cast me from 'em but the earth:  
The evening comes, and every little flower  
Droops now, as well as I.

*Enter NAN and MADGE, with milk-pails.*

*Nan.* Good Madge,  
Let's rest a little; by my troth,  
I am weary. This new pail is a plaguy heavy one;  
'Would Tom were hang'd for chusing it!  
'Tis the untoward'st fool in a country.

*Madge.* With all my heart, and I thank you  
too, Nan.

*Viola.* What true contented happiness dwells  
here,  
More than in cities! 'Would to God my father  
Had lived like one of these, and bred me up  
To milk, and do as they do! Methinks 'tis  
A life that I would choose, if I were now  
To tell my time again, above a prince's.— [milk,  
Maids, for charity, give a poor wench one draught of  
That weariness and hunger have nigh famish'd!

*Nan.* If I had but one cow's milk in all the  
world,  
You should have some on't: There; drink more!  
the cheese

Shall pay for it. Alas, poor heart, she's dry.

*Madge.* Do you dwell hereabouts?

*Viola.* No; 'would I did!

*Nan.* Madge, if she do not look like my cousin  
Sue  
O' th' Moor-lane, as one thing can look like  
another!

*Madge.* Nay; Sue has a hazel eye, I know Sue  
well:

And, by your leave, not so trim a body neither;  
This is a feat-bodied thing I tell you.

*Nan.* She laces close,

By the mass, I warrant you; and so does Sue too.

*Viola.* I thank you for your gentleness, fair  
maids.

*Nan.* Drink again, pray thee!

*Viola.* I am satisfied; and Heaven reward thee  
Yet thus far I'll compel you, to accept [for't!  
These trifles, toys only that express my thanks,  
For greater worth I am sure they have not in them.  
Indeed you shall; I found them as I came.

*Nan.* Madge! look you here, Madge!

*Madge.* Nay, I have as fine a one as you; mine is  
All gold, and painted, and a precious stone in't:  
I warrant it cost a crown, wench.

*Nan.* But mine

Is the most sumptuous one that e'er I saw.

*Viola.* One favour you must do me more,  
For you are well acquainted here.

*Nan.* Indeed we'll do you any kindness, sister.

*Viola.* Only to send me to some honest place,  
Where I may find a service.

*Nan.* Uds me, our Dorothy went away but last  
week,

And I know my mistress wants a maid, and why  
May she not be placed there? This is a likely  
wench,

I tell you truly, and a good wench, I warrant her.

*Madge.* And 'tis a hard case, if we that have  
served

Four years a-piece, cannot bring in one servant;  
We will prefer her.—Hark you, sister! Pray what's

*Viola.* Melvia. [your name?]

*Nan.* A feat name, i'faith! And can you milk  
a cow?

And make a merry-bush? That's nothing.

*Viola.* I shall learn quickly.

*Nan.* And dress a house with flowers? and  
serve a pig?

(This you must do, for we deal in the dairy)

And make a bed or two?

*Viola.* I hope I shall.

*Nan.* But be sure to keep the men out; they  
will mar

All that you make else, I know that by myself;  
For I have been so touz'd among 'em in my days!  
Come, you shall e'en home with us,  
And be our fellow; our house is so honest,  
And we serve a very good woman, and a gentle-  
woman!

And we live as merrily, and dance o' good days  
After even-song. Our wake shall be on Sunday:  
Do you know what a wake is? We have mighty  
And such a coil, 'twould bless ye! [cheer them,  
You must not be so bashful, you'll spoil all.

*Madge.* Let's home, for God's sake!

My mistress thinks by this time we are lost.  
Come, we'll have a care of you, I warrant you :  
But you must tell my mistress where you were  
born,  
And everything that belongs to you, and the stran-  
ger things  
You can devise, for she loves those extremely ;  
'Tis no matter whether they be true or no,

She's not so scrupulous. You must be our sister,  
And love us best, and tell us everything ;  
And, when cold weather comes, we'll lie together :  
Will you do this ?

*Viola.* Yes.

*Nan.* Then home again, o' God's name ! Can  
you go apace ?

*Viola.* I warrant you.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Country.*

*Enter PEDRO and SILVIO, severally.*

*Pedro.* How now ? any good news yet ?

*Silvio.* 'Faith, not any yet.

*Pedro.* This comes o' tipping : 'Would 'twere  
treason, an' t' please God,

To drink more than three draughts at a meal.

*Silvio.* When did you see Ricardo ?

*Pedro.* I cross'd him twice to-day.

*Silvio.* You have heard of

A young wench that was seen last night ?

*Pedro.* Yes.

*Silvio.* Has Ricardo heard of this ?

*Pedro.* Yes ; and I think he's ridden after.

Farewell ! I'll have another round.

*Silvio.* If you hear anything,

Pray spare no horse-flesh ; I will do the like.

*Pedro.* Do.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the House of VALERIO.*

*Enter RICARDO and VALERIO.*

*Ric.* Sir, I did think 'twas you, by all descrip-

*Val.* 'Tis so ;

[*tions.*]

I took her up indeed, the manner how  
You have heard already, and what she had about  
her,

(As jewels, gold, and other trifling things)  
And what my end was, which because she slighted,  
I left her there i' th' fields.

*Ric.* Left in the fields ? Could any but a rogue,  
That had despised humanity and goodness,  
God, law, and credit, and had set himself  
To lose his noblest part, and be a beast,  
Have left so innocent unmatch'd a virtue  
To the rude mercy of a wilderness ?

*Val.* Sir, if you come to rail, pray quit my house !  
I do not use to have such language given  
Within my doors to me. For your patience,  
You may go seek her with more patience ;  
She's tame enough, I warrant you.

*Ric.* Pray forgive me,  
(I do confess my much forgetfulness)  
And weigh my words no farther, I beseech you,  
Than a mere madness ! for such a grief has seized  
So strong and deadly, as a punishment, [me,  
And a just one, too,  
That 'tis a greater wonder I am living,  
Than anything I utter. Yet, let me tell you  
Thus much ; it was a fault for leaving her  
So in the fields.

*Val.* Sir, I will think so now ;  
And, credit me, you have so wrought me with  
Your grief, that I do both forgive and pity you :

And if you'll please to take a bed this night here,  
To-morrow I will bring you where I left her.

*Ric.* I thank you, no ! Shall I be so unworthy  
To think upon a bed, or ease, or comfort,  
And have my heart stray from me, God knows  
Cold and forsaken, destitute of friends, [where,  
And all good comforts else, unless some tree,  
Whose speechless charity must better ours,  
With which the bitter east winds made their sport  
And sung through hourly, hath invited her  
To keep off half a day ? Shall she be thus,  
And I draw in soft slumbers ? God forbid !  
No, night and bitter coldness, I provoke thee,  
And all the dews that hang upon thy locks,  
Showers, hails, snows, frosts, and two-edged winds  
that prime

The maiden blossoms ; I provoke you all,  
And dare expose this body to your sharpness,  
Till I be made a land-mark !

*Val.* Will you then stay and eat with me ?

*Ric.* You are angry with me, I know you're  
angry ;

You would not bid me eat else. My poor mistress,  
For aught I know, thou art famish'd ; for what else  
Can the fields yield thee, and the stubborn season,  
That yet holds in the fruit ?—Good gentle sir,  
Think not ill manners in me for denying  
Your offer'd meat ! for sure I cannot eat  
While I do think she wants. Well, I'm a rascal,  
A villain, slave, that oniy was begotten  
To murder women, and of them the best.

*Val.* This is a strange affliction ! If you will  
Accept no greater courtesy, yet drink, sir.

*Ric.* Now I am sure you hate me : An you knew  
What kind of man I am—as indeed 'tis fit  
That every man should know me, to avoid me,—  
If you have peace within you, sir, or goodness,  
Name that abhorred word *drink* no more unto me !  
You had safer strike me.

I pray you do not, if you love me, do not !

*Val.* Sir, I mean no ill by't.

*Ric.* It may be so ;

Nor let me see none, sir, if you love Heaven !  
You know not what offence it is unto me ;  
Nor, good now, do not ask me why : And I warn  
You once again, let no man else speak of it !  
I fear your servants will be prating to me.

*Val.* Why, sir, what ail you ?

*Ric.* I hate drink, there's the end on't ;  
And that man that drinks with meat is damn'd,  
Without an age of prayers and repentance ;  
And there's a hazard too : Good sir, no more !  
If you will do me a free courtesy,

That I shall know for one, go take your horse,  
And bring me to the place where you left her.

*Val.* Since you are so importunate, I will :

But I will wish, sir, you had stay'd to-night ;  
Upon my credit, you shall see no drink.

*Ric.* Be gone ! the hearing of it makes me giddy :  
Sir, will you be entreated to forbear it ?  
I shall be mad else.

*Val.* I pray no more of that ! I am quiet ;  
I'll but walk in, and away straight.

*Ric.* Now I thank you !  
But what you do, do in a twinkling, sir !

*Val.* As soon as may be. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*A Room in the House of  
MERCURY'S Mother.*

Enter MOTHER, VIOLA, MAN, and MADGE.

*Mother.* Is this the wench ? You have brought  
me some catch, I warrant.

How daringly she looks upon the matter !

*Madge.* Yes, forsooth, this is the maiden.

*Mother.* Come hither ! Would you serve ?

*Viola.* If it shall please you to accept my service ;  
I hope I shall do something that shall like you,  
Though it be but truth, and often praying for you.

*Mother.* You are very curious of your hand me-  
thinks,

You preserve it so with gloves : Let me see it !—  
Ay, marry, here's a hand of marchpane, wenches !  
This pretty palm never knew sorrow yet :  
How soft it is, I warrant you, and supple !  
O' my word, this is fitter for a pocket,  
To fitch withal, than to work : I fear me, little one,  
You are no better than you should be ; go to !

*Viola.* My conscience yet is but one witness to  
me,

And that, Heaven knows, is of mine innocence :  
'Tis true, I must confess with shame enough,  
The time that I have led yet never taught me  
What 'twas to break a sleep, or to be weary.

*Mother.* You can say well ;

If you be mine, wench, you must do well too,  
For words are but slow workers : Yet, so much  
I have of you, that I will take you, so [hope  
You will be diligent, and do your duty.  
How now ?

Enter ALEXANDER.

*Alex.* There is a messenger come from your son,  
That brings you word he is returned from travel,  
And will be here this night.

*Mother.* Now joy upon thee for it ! thou art ever  
A bringer of good tidings ; there, drink that !

[Gives him money.]

In troth thou hast much contented me. My son ?  
Lord, how thou hast pleased me ! shall I see my  
son

Yet ere I die ? Take care my house be handsome,  
And the new stools set out, and boughs and rushes,  
And flowers for the window, and the Turkey carpet,  
And the great parcel salt, Nan, with the cructs !  
And pr'ythee, Alexander, go to the cook,  
And bid him spare for nothing, my son's come  
Who's come with him ? [home !

*Alex.* I hear of none yet, but a gentlewoman.

*Mother.* A gentlewoman ? what gentlewoman ?

*Alex.* I know not ; but such a one there is, he  
says.

*Mother.* Pray God he have not cast away him-  
self

Upon some snout-fair piece ! I do not like it.

*Alex.* No, sure my master has more discretion.

*Mother.* Well, be it how it will, he shall be  
welcome.

Sirs, to your tasks, and shew this little novice  
How to bestir herself ! I'll sort out things.

[Exit.]

*Madge.* We will, forsooth : I can tell you, my  
A stirring woman. [mistress is

*Nan.* Lord, how she'll talk sometimes !  
'Tis the maddest cricket—

*Viola.* Methinks she talks well,  
And shews a great deal of good housewifery.  
Pray let me deck the chambers, shall I ?

*Nan.* Yes,  
You shall ; but do not scorn to be advised, sister,  
For there belongs more to that than you're aware  
of :

Why would you venture so fondly upon the  
strowings ?

There's mighty matters in them, I'll assure you,  
And in the spreading of a bough-pot ; you may  
If you were ten years elder, if you take not [miss,  
A special care before you.

*Viola.* I will learn willingly, if that be all.

*Nan.* Sirrah, where is't they say my young  
master hath been ?

*Madge.* 'Faith, I know not ; beyond the sea,  
Where they are born without noses.

*Nan.* Jesse, bless us ! without noses ?  
How do they do for handkerchiefs ?

*Madge.* So Richard says :

And, sirrah, their feet stand in their foreheads.

*Nan.* That's fine, by my troth !

These men have pestilent running heads then.  
Do they speak as we do ?

*Madge.* No, they never speak.

*Nan.* Are they cursen'd ?

*Madge.* No, they call them infidels :  
I know not what they are.

*Nan.* Sirrah, we shall have

Fine courting now my young master is come home.  
Were you never courted, sister ?

*Viola.* Alas, I know it not.

*Madge.* What is that courting, sirrah ?

*Nan.* I can tell,

For I was once courted in the matted chamber :  
You know the party, Madge ; 'faith, he courted

*Madge.* Pray thee what is't ? [finely !

*Nan.* 'Faith, nothing, but he was somewhat  
figent with me ;

*Faith,* 'tis fine sport, this courting.

*Alex.* [Within.] Where be the maids there ?

*Madge.* We shall be hang'd anon ! Away, good  
wenches !

And have a care you dight things handsomely ;  
I will look over you. [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—*Another in the same.*

Enter MERCURY and MARIA.

*Merc.* If your sorrow

Will give you so far leave, pray think yourself

Most welcome to this place, for so upon

My life you are ; and for your own fair sake,

Take truce awhile with these immoderate moun-  
dings !

*Maria.* I thank you, sir ; I shall do what I may  
Pray lead me to a chamber.

Enter MOTHER and ALEXANDER.

*Merc.* Presently.—

Before your blessing, mother, I entreat you

To know this gentlewoman, and bid her welcome;  
The virtuous wife of him that was myself  
In all my travels! [*Kneels.*]

*Mother.* Indeed she is most welcome; so are  
you, son.

Now, all my blessing on thee, thou hast made me  
Younger by twenty years than I was yesterday!  
Will you walk in? What ails this gentlewoman?  
Alas, I fear she is not well: Good gentlewoman!

*Merc.* You fear right.

*Mother.* She has fasted over long;

You shall have supper presently o' th' board.

*Merc.* She will not eat, I can assure you, mother.  
For God's sake, let your maid conduct her up  
Into some fair becoming chamber, fit for  
A woman of her being, and as soon as may be!  
I know she's very ill, and would have rest.

*Mother.* There is one ready for her, the blue  
chamber.

*Merc.* 'Tis well: I'll lead you to your chamber-  
door,

And there I'll leave you to your own quiet, mistress.

*Maria.* I thank you, sir! Good rest to every  
You'll see me once again to-night, I hope. [*one!*]

*Merc.* When you shall please, I'll wait upon  
you, lady.

*Mother.* Where are these maids? Attend upon  
the gentlewoman,

And see she want no good thing in the house!

Good night with all my heart, forsooth!—Good  
Lord, [*Exit MARIA.*]

How you are grown! Is he not, Alexander?

*Alex.* Yes, truly; he's shot up finely, God be  
thanked!

*Merc.* An ill weed, mother, will do so.

*Alex.* You say true, sir; an ill weed grows a-  
pace.

*Merc.* Alexander the sharp, you take me very  
quickly.

*Mother.* Nay, I can tell you, Alexander will do  
Do you read Madcap still? [*it.*]

*Merc.* Sometimes, forsooth.

*Mother.* But 'faith, son, what countries have  
you travell'd?

*Merc.* Why, many, mother, as they lay before  
me;

France, Spain, Italy, and Germany,

And other provinces, that I am sure

You are not better'd by, when you hear of them.

*Mother.* And can you these tongues perfectly?

*Merc.* Of some

A little, mother.

*Mother.* Pray, spout some French, son.

*Merc.* You understand it not; and to your ears  
'Twill go like an unshod cart upon the stones,  
Only a rough unhandsome sound.

*Mother.* 'Faith, I would fain hear some French.

*Alex.* Good sir, speak some French to my  
mistress.

*Merc.* At your entreaty Alexander, I will.

Who shall I speak to?

*Alex.* If your worship

Will do me the favour, sir, to me.

*Merc.* *Monsieur poltron,*

*Cocu, couillon, baisez mon cá!*

*Alex.* *Oui, monsieur.*

*Mother.* Ha, ha, ha! this is fine, indeed!

God's blessing on thy heart, son! By my troth,  
Thou art grown a proper gentleman! *Cullen* and  
*pullen,*

Good God, what sawcy words they use beyond the  
Ha, ha, ha! [*seas!*]

*Alex.* Did not you swear right?

*Merc.* Yes, good Alexander,  
If you had done so too. But, good mother,  
I am very hungry, and have rid far to-day,  
And am fasting.

*Mother.* You shall have your supper presently,  
my sweet son.

*Merc.* As soon as you please; which, once ended,  
I'll go and visit you sick gentlewoman.

*Mother.* Come then! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*A Hall in the same.*

*Enter ANTONIO, like a post, with a letter.*

*Ant.* I have ridden like a fury, to make up this  
And I will do it bravely ere I leave it. [*work;*]  
This is the house, I am sure.

*Enter ALEXANDER.*

*Alex.* Who would you speak with, sir?

*Ant.* Marry, sir, I would speak with  
A gentlewoman came this night late here from the  
I have some letters of importance to her. [*city:*]  
I am a post, sir, and would be despatch'd  
In haste.

*Alex.* Sir, cannot I deliver 'em?  
For, the truth is, she's ill, and in her chamber.

*Ant.* Pray pardon me; I must needs speak with  
My business is so weighty. [*her,*]

*Alex.* I'll tell her so,

And bring you present word.

*Ant.* Pray do so, and I'll attend her.

[*Exit ALEXANDER.*]

Pray God, the grief of my imagined death  
Spoil not what I intend! I hope it will not.

*Re-enter ALEXANDER.*

*Alex.* Though she be very ill, and desires no  
trouble,

Yet, if your business be so urgent, you may  
Come up and speak with her.

*Ant.* I thank you, sir; I follow you. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE VI.—*A Bed-Chamber in the same.*

*Enter MARIA.*

*Maria.* What should this fellow be, i' th' name  
o' Heaven,  
That comes with such post business? Sure my  
husband hath  
Reveal'd himself, and in this haste sent after me.

*Enter ANTONIO.*

Are you the post, my friend?

*Ant.* Yes, forsooth, mistress.

*Maria.* What good news hast thou brought me,  
gentle post?

For I have woe and grief too much already.

*Ant.* I would you had less, mistress, I could  
wish it.—

Behrew my heart, she moves me cruelly! [*Aside.*]

*Maria.* Have I found you once more, juggler?  
[*Aside.*]

Well, jewel, thou hast only virtue in thee,  
Of all I read of yet: What ears has this ass  
To betray him with!—Well, what's your business  
then?

*Ant.* I have brought a letter from your servant,  
In haste. [mistress,  
*Maria.* Pray give it me; I hope the best still.  
*Ant.* This is the upshot, and I know I have hit it!  
[*Aside.*

Well, if the spirits of the dead do walk,  
I shall hear more of this an hundred years hence.

*Maria.* [Reading.] "By any means, you must  
have special care;

For now this city is possess'd for certain,  
My master is made away;  
Which, for aught I know, is a truth indeed.  
Good mistress, leave your grief, and see your dan-  
And let that wise and noble gentleman [ger,  
With whom you are, be your right hand in all  
things!"

*Ant.* Now do I know I have the better on't!  
[*Aside.*

By the languishing of her eye at this near instant,  
It is still simming in her blood, in coining  
Somewhat to turn Mercury, I know it.

*Maria.* He is my husband, and 'tis reasonable  
[*Aside.*

He should command in all things: Since he will be  
An ass against the hair, at his own peril  
Be it!—In the morn you shall have a packet,  
Till when, I must entreat you, stay; you shall not  
lose by it.

*Ant.* I do not doubt it, mistress:  
I'll leave you to your rest, and wait your pleasure.

*Maria.* Do; and seek out the gentleman o' th'  
house!

Bid him come to me presently.  
*Ant.* Who? Master Mercury?

*Maria.* Do you know him, post?  
*Ant.* Only by sight, forsooth: Now I remember

Your servant willed me to let you know  
He is the only man you and your fortunes  
Are now to rest upon.

*Maria.* Pr'ythee no more; I know all this  
already.

*Ant.* I'll take my leave now.—I am made for  
ever!

*Maria.* Good night!— [Exit ANTONIO.  
I am provided for you, my fine youth. [Exit.

SCENE VII.—*A Room in the same.*

Enter *Mother*, beating *VIOLA*, and *ALEXANDER* with a  
broken glass.

*Mother.* I'll make thee have more care.

*Viola.* Good mistress, pardon me!

*Mother.* Thou'lt ne'er be good, I warrant thee!  
Can your fine fingers hold no faster?

*Viola.* Indeed,  
It was against my will.

*Mother.* Alexander,  
Let's see the glass! As I'm true kirsone woman,  
It is one of the crystal glasses my cousin sent me!  
And the baggage hath broke it where it cannot be  
mended.

*Alexander.* can Humphry mend this, think you?

*Alex.* No, truly, this will ne'er be mended.

*Viola.* Truly,  
I meant but to wash it for the gentlewoman  
That's sick above, and, shaking out the water,  
Knock'd it against the pail side.

*Mother.* Did you so?  
Be sure I'll stop it! 'twill make a good gap in  
Your quarter's wages, I can tell you.

*Viola.* I pray forgive me,  
And let me have no wages this first quarter.  
*Mother.* Go, whimling, and fetch two or three  
grating loaves

Out of the kitchen, to make gingerbread of.  
'Tis such an untoward thing! [Exit *VIOLA*.

*Alex.* She's somewhat simple,  
Indeed; she knew not what a kimmel was;  
She wants good nurture mightily.

*Mother.* My son tells me, Alexander,  
That this young widow means to sojourn here;  
She offers largely for her board, I may  
Offer her good cheer. Pr'ythee make a step  
I' th' morning down to the parsonage for some  
pigeons!— [Noise within.

What, are you mad there? what noise is that?  
Are you at bowls within? Why do you whine?

Enter *VIOLA*, weeping.

*Viola.* I have done another fault; I beseech you,  
Sweet mistress, forgive me!

*Mother.* What's the matter?  
*Viola.* As I was reaching for the bread that lay  
Upon the shelf, I have thrown down the minced  
meat,

That should have made the pies to-morrow.  
*Mother.* Get thee

Out of my house, thou filthy destroying harlot thou!  
I'll not keep thee an hour longer.

*Viola.* Good mistress, beat me rather for my  
fault,

As much as it deserves! I do not know  
Whither to go.

*Mother.* No, I warrant thee; out of my doors!  
*Viola.* Indeed I'll mend.—I pray speak you for  
me!

*Alex.* If thou hadst hurl'd down anything but  
the pie meat,

I would have spoke for thee; but I cannot find in  
my heart now.

*Mother.* Art thou here yet? I think I must  
have

An officer to thrust thee out of my doors, must I?  
*Viola.* Why, you may stop this in my wages too;

For God's sake, do! I'll find myself this year,  
And let me stay.

*Mother.* Thou't spoil ten times as much.  
I'll cudgel thee out my doors.

*Viola.* I am assured you are more merciful,  
Than thus to beat me and discharge me too.

*Mother.* Dost thou dispute with me?—Alexander,  
carry

The prating hilding forth.  
*Viola.* Good mistress, hear me! I have here a  
jewel [Kneels.

My mother left me, and 'tis something worth:  
Receive it; and when all my faults together

Come to the worth of that, then turn me forth;  
Till then, I pray you keep me.

*Mother.* What jiggumbob have we here?  
Pray God, you have not pilfer'd this somewhere.

Thou art such a puling thing! Wipe your eyes,  
And rise; go your ways.—Alexander,

Bid the cook mince some more meat.—Come,  
And get you to bed quickly, that you may

Up betime i' th' morning a milking,  
Or you and I shall fall out worse yet.

[Exit *Mother* and *ALEXANDER*.

*Viola.* She has hurt my arm: I am afraid she is  
A very angry woman; but bless him, Heaven,

That did me the most wrong! I am afraid  
Antonio's wife should see me; she will know me.

*Mother.* [*Within.*] Melvia!

*Viola.* I am coming; she's not angry again, I hope! [*Exit.*]

SCENE VIII.—*A Bed-room in the same.*

*Enter MERCURY.*

*Merc.* Now what am I the better for enjoying  
This woman that I loved so? All I find,  
That I before imagined to be happy,  
Now I have done it, turns to nothing else  
But a poor, pitied, and a base repentance.  
Udsfoot, I am monstrous angry with myself!  
Why should a man, that has discourse and reason,  
And knows how near he loses all in these things,  
Covet to have his wishes satisfied?  
Which, when they are, are nothing but the shame.  
I do begin to loath this woman strangely,  
And I think justly too, that durst adventure  
Flinging away her modesty, to take  
A stranger to her bed, (her husband's body  
Being scarce cold i' th' earth) for her content.  
It was no more to take my senses with,  
Than if I had an idle dream in sleep;  
Yet I have made her promises, which grieves me,  
And I must keep 'em too.—I think she hunts me!  
The devil cannot keep these women off,  
When they are flesh'd once.

*Enter MARIA, in night attire.*

*Maria.* To bed, for God's sake, sir!  
Why do you stay here? Some are up i' th' house;  
I heard the wife. Good dear sweetheart, to bed.

*Merc.* Why, I am going! Why do you follow me?

You would not have it known, I hope. Pray get  
you  
Back to your chamber! the door's hard by. For  
me,

Let me alone; I warrant you!—This it is [*Aside.*  
To thresh well; I have got a customer!—  
Will you go to bed?

*Maria.* Will you?

*Merc.* Yes, I am going.

*Maria.* Then remember your promise you made  
to marry me.

*Merc.* I will; but it was your fault that it came  
To this pinch now, that it must need remembrance:  
For, out of honesty, I offer'd you  
To marry you first; why did you slack that offer?

*Maria.* Alas, I told you th' inconvenience of it,  
And what wrong it would appear to the world  
If I had married you in such post haste  
After his death: Beside, the foolish people  
Would have been bold to have thought we had lain  
Together in his time, and like enough  
Imagined we two had murder'd him.

*Merc.* I love her tongue yet! If I were a saint,  
A gilded saint, and such a thing as this  
Should prate thus wittily and feelingly  
Unto my holiness, I cannot tell,  
But I fear shrewdly I should do something  
That would quite scratch me out o' th' calendar;  
And if I stay longer talking with her, though I  
At what I have done already, yet I shall [am mad  
Forget myself again: I feel the devil  
Ready to hold my stirrup.—Pray, to bed!  
Good night!

*Maria.* This kiss! good night, sweet love,  
And peace go with thee!—[*Exit MERCURY.*] Thou  
hast proved thyself

The honestest man that ever was enticed  
To that sweet sin, as people please to call it,  
Of lying with another's wife; and I,  
I think, the honestest woman, without blushing,  
That e'er lay with another man. I sent my husband  
Into a cellar, post, fearing, and justly,  
He should have known him; which I did not pur-  
Till I had had my end. [*pose*

Well, now this plot is perfect, let him brag on't.

[*Exit.*]

ACT V.

SCENE I.—*The House of the Justice.*

*Enter Justice and CURIO, with a paper.*

*Just.* By'r lady, sir, you have rid hard, that  
you have.

*Curio.* They that have business must do so, I  
take it.

*Just.* You say true. When set you out, my  
friend?

*Curio.* About ten o'clock; and I have rid all  
night.

*Just.* By the mass, you are tough indeed. I  
have seen the day  
I would have rid too with the proudest of them,  
And fling dirt in their faces, and I have done't with  
This foolish body, sir, many a time:  
But what can last always? 'Tis done, 'tis done  
now, sir!

Age, care, and office, bring us to our foot-cloths,  
The more the pity!

*Curio.* I believe that, sir;  
But will it please you to read the business?

*Just.* My friend, I can read, and I can tell you  
when.

*Curio.* 'Would I could too, sir! for my haste  
requires it.

*Just.* Whence comes it, do you say?

*Curio.* Sir, from the city.

*Just.* Oh, from the city; 'tis a reverend place—

*Curio.* An his justice be as short as his memory,  
[*Aside.*]

A dudgeon-dagger will serve him to mow down  
sin withall:

What clod-pole commissioner is this!

*Just.* And, by my faith, govern'd by worthy  
Discreet and upright. [*members,*

*Curio.* Sir, they are beholding to you;  
You have given some of them a commendation  
They were not worthy of this twenty years.

*Just.* Go to, go to! you have a merry meaning;  
I have found you, sir; i' faith, you are a wag;  
Away, fy!—Now I'll read your letter.

*Curio.* Pray do, sir.—What a misery it is  
To have an urgent business wait the justice

Of such an old tuff-taffata, that knows not,  
Nor can be brought to understand more sense  
Than how to restore suppressed alehouses,  
And have his man compound small trespasses  
For ten groats!

*Just.* Sir, it seems here  
Your business is of deeper circumstance  
Than I conceived it for.—What do you mean, sir?

*Curio.* 'Tis for mine own ease, I'll assure your  
worship.

*Just.* It shall not be, i'faith, friend.—Here I  
have it.

That one Antonio, a gentleman—  
I take it so; yes, it is so—a gentleman,  
Is lately thought to have been made away;  
And, by my faith, upon a parlous ground too,  
If you consider. Well, there's knavery in't;  
I see that without spectacles.

*Curio.* Sure this fellow deals in revelation, he's  
so hidden: *[Aside.]*

Go thy ways! thou wilt stick a bench, spit as  
formally,  
And shew thy agot and hatch'd chain as well  
As the best of them.

*Just.* And now I have consider'd, I believe it.

*Curio.* What, sir?

*Just.* That he was murder'd.

*Curio.* Did you know him?

*Just.* No.

*Curio.* Nor how it is supposed?

*Just.* No; nor I care not twopence, those are  
toys;

And yet I verily believe he was murder'd,  
As sure as I believe thou art a man.  
I never fail'd in these things yet. 'Ware a man  
That's beaten to these matters; experience  
Is a certain conceal'd thing that fails not.  
Pray let me ask you one thing; why do you come  
to me?

*Curio.* Because the letter is addressed to you,  
Being the nearest justice.

*Just.* The nearest? is that all?

*Curio.* I think it be, sir;—  
I would be loth you should be the wisest. *[Aside.]*

*Just.* Well, sir, as 'tis, I will endeavour in it:  
Yet, if it had come to me by name, I know not,  
But I think it had been as soon dispatch'd  
As by another, and with as round a wisdom,  
Ay, and as happily; but that's all one:  
I have borne this place this thirty years, and  
upwards,

And with sufficient credit, and they may,  
When they please, know me better. To the  
Well!

*Curio.* Sir, 'tis not my fault, for had I known  
You sooner— *[nearest?]*

*Just.* I thank you, sir; I know it.

*Curio.* I'll be sworn *[Aside.]*  
You should have play'd, for any business now.

*Just.* And further, they have specified unto me,  
His wife's sorely suspected in this matter,  
As a main cause.

*Curio.* I think she be, sir, for  
No other cause can be yet found.

*Just.* And one Mercury, a traveller, with whom  
They say directly she is run away,  
And, as they think, this way.

*Curio.* I knew all this before.

*Just.* Well, sir, this Mercury I know, and his  
breeding;

A neighbour's child hard by: You have been  
In coming hither. *[happy, sir,*

*Curio.* Then you know where  
To have him, sir?

*Just.* I do, sir; he dwells near me.

*Curio.* I doubt your worship dwells near a  
knave then.

*Just.* I think so; pray put on! But 'tis a  
wonder

To see how graceless people are now given,  
And how base virtue is accounted with them,  
That should be all in all, as says a wise man!  
I tell you, sir, and 'tis true, that there have been  
Such murders, and of late days, as 'twould make  
Your very heart bleed in you; and some of them,  
As I shall be enabled, I will tell you.  
It fell out of late days—

*Curio.* It may be so,

But will it please you to proceed in this?

*Just.* An honest weaver, and as good a work-  
As e'er shot shuttle, and as close— *[man]*  
But every man must die—this honest weaver,  
Being a little mellow in his ale—

That was the evidence, *verbatim*, sir—  
God bless the mark, sprung his neck just in this  
place:

Well, Jarvis, thou hadst wrongs, and, if I live,  
Some of the best shall sweat for't! Then a  
wenoh—

*Curio.* But, sir, you have forgot my business.

*Just.* A sober pretty maid, about seventeen  
They say, certainly, howsoe'er 'tis shuffled,  
She burst herself, and fondly, if it be so,  
With furrmety at a churching; but I think  
The devil had another agent in't;  
Either of which, if I can catch, shall stretch for't.

*Curio.* This is a mad justice, that will hang the  
devil!— *[Aside.]*

But I would you would be short in this, before  
That other notice can be given.

*Just.* Sir,

I will do discreetly what is fitting.—What,  
Antonio!

*Serv.* *[Within.]* Your worship!

*Just.* Put on your best coat,  
And let your fellow Mark go to the constable,  
And bid him aid me with all the speed he can,  
And all the power; and provide pen and ink  
To take their confessions, and my long sword!  
I cannot tell what danger we may meet with.  
You'll go with us?

*Curio.* Yes; what else?

I came to that end to accuse both parties.

*Just.* May I crave what you are?

*Curio.* 'Faith, sir, one

That to be known would not profit you more  
Than a near kinsman of the dead Antonio's.

*Just.* 'Tis well. I am sorry for my neighbour,  
truly,

That he had no more grace; 'twill kill his mother:  
She is a good old woman. Will you walk in?  
I will but put my cloak on, and my chain off,  
And a clean band, and have my shoes black'd  
over,

And shift my jerkin, and we'll to our business;  
And you shall see how I can bould these matters.

*Curio.* As soon as't please you, sir. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*A Field.**Enter VALERIO and RICARDO.*

*Val.* This is the place; here did I leave the  
Alone last night, drying her tender eyes, [maid  
Uncertain what to do, and yet desirous  
To have me gone.

*Ric.* How rude are all we men,  
That take the name of civil to ourselves!  
If she had set her foot upon an earth  
Where people live that we call barbarous,  
Though they had had no house to bring her to,  
They would have spoil'd the glory that the spring  
Has deck'd the trees in, and with willing hands  
Have torn their branches down; and every man  
Would have become a builder for her sake.—  
What time left you her here?

*Val.* I left her when the sun had so much to set,  
As he is now got from his place of rise.

*Ric.* So near the night, she could not wander  
—Fair Viola! [far.

*Val.* It is in vain to call; she sought a house,  
Without all question.

*Ric.* Peace!—Fair Viola!  
Fair Viola!—Who would have left her here  
On such a ground? If you had meant to lose her,  
You might have found there were no echoes here  
To take her name, and carry it about,  
When her true lover came to mourn for her,  
Till all the neighbouring vallies and the hills  
Resounded Viola; and such a place  
You should have chose! You pity us  
Because the dew a little wets our feet;  
(Unworthy far to seek her, in the wet!)  
And what becomes of her? where wander'd she,  
With two showers raining on her, from her eyes  
Continually, abundantly, from which  
There's neither tree nor house to shelter her?—  
Will you go with me to travel?

*Val.* Whither?

*Ric.* Over all the world.

*Val.* No, by my faith; I'll make a shorter  
When I do travel. [Journey

*Ric.* But there is no hope  
To gain my end in any shorter way.

*Val.* Why, what's your end?

*Ric.* It is to search the earth,  
Till we have found two in the shapes of men,  
As wicked as ourselves.

*Val.* Twere not so hard  
To find out those.

*Ric.* Why, if we find them out,  
It were the better; for what brave villainy  
Might we four do!—We would not keep together;  
For every one has treachery enough  
For twenty countries: One should trouble Asia;  
Another should sow strife in Africa;  
But you should play the knave at home in Europe;  
And for America, let me alone.

*Val.* Sir, I am honest  
Than you know how to be, and can no more  
Be wrong'd, but I shall find myself a right.

*Ric.* If you had any spark of honesty,  
You would not think that *honester than I*  
Were a praise enough to serve your turn:  
If men were commonly so bad as I,  
Thieves would be put in calendars for saints;  
And bones of murderers would work miracles.  
I am a kind of knave, of knave so much

There is betwixt me, and the vilest else—  
But the next place of all to mine is yours.

*Enter VIOLA, NAN, and MADGE, with pairs.*

*Val.* That last is she; 'tis she!

*Ric.* Let us away;  
We shall infect her! let her have the wind,  
And we will kneel down here.

*Viola.* Wenches, away!  
For here are men.

*Val.* Fair maid, I pray you stay.

[Takes hold of VIOLA.

*Viola.* Alas! again?

*Ric.* Why do you lay hold on her?  
I pray heartily, let her go.

*Val.* With all my heart; I do not mean to hurt  
her.

*Ric.* But stand away then! for the purest bodies  
Will soonest take infection; stand away!  
But for infecting her myself, by Heaven,  
I would come there, and beat thee further off.

*Viola.* I know that voice and face.

*Val.* You are finely mad!  
God b'w'ye, sir! Now you are here together,  
I'll leave you so; God send you good luck, both!  
When you are soberer you'll give me thanks. [Exit.

*Madge.* Wilt thou go milk? Come.

*Nan.* Why dost not come?

*Madge.* She nods, she's asleep.

*Nan.* What, wert up so early? [RICARDO kneels.

*Madge.* I think you man's mad to kneel there.

Nay, come, come away.—

Uds body, Nan, help! she looks black i' th' face;  
She's in a swoon. [VIOLA faints.

*Nan.* An you be a man, come hither,  
And help a woman!

*Ric.* Come thither? You are a fool.

*Nan.* And you a knave and a beast, that you  
are.

*Ric.* Come hither? 'twas my being now so near  
That made her swoon; and you are wicked people,  
Or you would do so too: My venom eyes  
Strike innocence dead at such a distance;  
Here I will kneel, for this is out of distance.

*Nan.* Thou art a prating ass! there's no good-  
ness in thee,

I warrant.—How dost thou? [VIOLA recovers.

*Viola.* Why, well.

*Madge.* Art thou able to go?

*Viola.* No; pray go you and milk: If I be able  
To come, I'll follow you; if not, I'll sit here  
Till you come back.

*Nan.* I am loth to leave thee here with you  
wild fool.

*Viola.* I know him well; I warrant thee he will  
not hurt me.

*Madge.* Come then, Nan. [Exit Madge.

*Ric.* How do you? Be not fearful, for I hold  
My hands before my mouth, and speak, and so  
My breath can never blast you.

*Viola.* 'Twas enough  
To use me ill, though you had never sought me  
To mock me too: Why kneel you so far off?  
Were not that gesture better used in prayer?  
Had I dealt so with you, I should not sleep,  
'Till God and you had both forgiven me.

*Ric.* I do not mock; nor lives there such a vil-  
That can do anything contemptible [lain  
To you: But I do kneel, because it is

An action very fit and reverent,  
In presence of so pure a creature ;  
And so far off, as fearful to offend  
One too much wrong'd already.

*Viola.* You confess you did the fault, yet scorn  
So far as hither, to ask pardon for't; [to come  
Which I could willingly afford to come  
To you to grant. Good sir, if you have  
A better love, may you be bless'd together !  
She shall not wish you better than I will.—  
I but offend you ! There are all the jewels

[Throws down a casket.

I stole ; and all the love I ever had  
I leave behind with you ; I'll carry none  
To give another : May the next maid you try  
Love you no worse, nor be no worse than I !  
*Ric.* Do not leave me yet, for all my fault !  
Search out the next things to impossible,  
And put me on them ; when they are effected,  
I may with better modesty receive  
Forgiveness from you.

*Viola.* I will set no penance,  
To gain the great forgiveness you desire,  
But to come hither, and take me and it ;  
Or else, I'll come and beg, so you will grant  
That you will be content to be forgiven !

*Ric.* [Rises.] Nay, I will come, since you will  
have it so,

And, since you please to pardon me, I hope  
Free from infection. Here I am by you,  
A careless man, a breaker of my faith,  
A loathsome drunkard ; and in that wild fury,  
A hunter after whores ! I do beseech you  
To pardon all these faults, and take me up  
An honest, sober, and a faithful man !

*Viola.* For God's sake urge your faults no more,  
but mend !

All the forgiveness I can make you, is,  
To love you ; which I will do, and desire  
Nothing but love again ; which if I have not,  
Yet I will love you still.

*Ric.* Oh, women ! that some one of you will take  
An everlasting pen into your hands,  
And grave in paper (which the writ shall make  
More lasting than the marble monuments)  
Your matchless virtues to posterities ;  
Which the defective race of envious man  
Strives to conceal !

*Viola.* Methinks I would not now, for anything,  
But you had miss'd me : I have made a story  
Will serve to waste many a winter's fire,  
When we are old : I'll tell my daughters then  
The miseries their mother had in love  
And say, " My girls, be wiser ! " yet I would not  
Have had more wit myself. Take up those jewels,  
For I think I hear my fellows coming.

*Enter MADGE and NAN with their pails.*

*Madge.* How dost thou now ?

*Viola.* Why, very well, I thank you. It is late ;  
Shall I haste home ?

*Nan.* I pr'ythee ! we shall be shent soundly.

*Madge.* Why does that railing man go with us ?  
*Viola.* I pr'ythee, speak well of him : On my  
He is an honest man ! [word,

*Nan.* There was never any so  
On his complexion. A gentleman ?  
I'd be ashamed to have such a foul mouth.

[Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*A Room in the House of  
MERCURY'S Mother.*

*Enter Mother, ALEXANDER, ANDRUGIO, and ROWLAND.*

*Mother.* How now, Alexander ? What gentle-  
man is this ?

*Alex.* Indeed, forsooth, I know not ;  
I found him at the market, full of woe,  
Crying a lost daughter, and telling all  
Her tokens to the people ; and, what you wot ?  
By all subscription in the world, it should be  
Our new maid Melvia : (one would little think it !)  
Therefore I was bold to tell him of her, mistress.

*Mother, Melvia ?* it cannot be, fool ! Alas, you  
She is a poor wench, and I took her in [know  
Upon mere charity.

*Andr.* So seem'd my daughter when she went  
As she had made herself. [away,

*Mother.* What stature was your child of, sir ?  
*Andr.* Not high, and of a brown complexion,  
Her hair auburn, a round face, which some friends,  
That flatter'd me, would say 'twould be a good one.

*Alex.* This is still Melvia, mistress ; that's the  
truth on't !

*Mother.* It may be so, I'll promise you.

*Alex.* Well, go thy ways, the flower of our  
town !

For a hand and a foot I shall ne'er see thy fellow.

*Mother.* But had she not such toys as bracelets,  
rings, and jewels ?

*Andr.* She was something bold indeed, to take  
That night she left me. [such things

*Mother.* Then belike she run away ?

*Andr.* Though she be one I love, I dare not lie ;  
She did indeed.

*Mother.* What think you of this jewel ?

*Andr.* Yes, this was one of them, and this was  
mine ;

You have made me a new man ! I thank you for it.

*Mother.* Nay,  
An she be given to filching, there's your jewel ;  
I am clear on't. But, by your leave, sir, you  
Shall answer me for what is lost since she  
Came hither ; I can tell you there lie things  
Scattering in every place about the house.

*Alex.* As I am virtuous, I have the lyingest  
Old gentlewoman to my mistress, and the most  
malicious—

The devil a good word will she give a servant ;  
That's her old rule ! and, God be thanked, they  
will

Give her as few ; there is perfect love on both  
sides.

It yearns my heart to hear the wench misconstrued ;  
A careful soul she is, I'll be sworn for her ;  
And when she's gone, let them say what they will,  
They may cast their caps at such another.

*Andr.* What you have lost by her, with all my  
heart

I'll see you double paid for ; you have saved,  
With your kind pity, two that must not live,  
Unless it be to thank you. Take this jewel ;  
This strikes off none of her offences, mistress.  
'Would I might see her !

*Mother.* Alexander, run,  
And bid her make haste home ; she's at the milk-  
ing close :

But tell her not by any means who's here ;  
I know she'll be too fearful.

*Alex.* Well, we'll have

A posset yet at parting, that's my comfort;  
And one round, or else I'll lose my will. [Exit.

*Andr.* You shall find Silvio, Uberto, and Pedro,  
Enquiring for the wench at the next town:  
Tell them she's found, and where I am,  
And, with the favour of this gentlewoman,  
Desire them to come hither.

*Mother.* I pray do; they shall be all welcome.  
[Exit ROWLAND.

Enter Justice, Curio, and MARK.

*Just.* By your leave, forsooth! you shall see me  
find

The parties by a sleight.

*Mother.* Who's that? Master Justice?  
How do you, sir?

*Just.* Why, very well, and busy.  
Where's your son?

*Mother.* He's within, sir.

*Just.* Hum; and how does  
The young woman my cousin, that came down  
with him?

*Mother.* She's above; as a woman in her case  
may be.

*Just.* You have confess'd it?  
Then, sirrah, call in the officers! she's no cousin  
of mine;

A mere trick to discover all!

*Mother.* To discover? what?

Enter MARK and Officers.

*Just.* You shall know that anon: I think I have  
over-reach'd you!—Oh, welcome! Enter the  
house, and by virtue of my warrant, which you  
have there, seize upon the bodily persons of those  
whose names are there written; to wit, one Mer-  
cury, and the wife of one Antonio.

*Mother.* For what?

*Just.* Away, I say!  
This gentleman shall certify you for what.

[Exit Curio.

*Mother.* He can accuse my son of nothing;  
He came from travel but within these two days.

*Just.* There hangs a tale.

*Mother.* I should be sorry this should  
fall out at any time, but especially now.—  
Sir, will you favour me so much as to let me know  
Of what you accuse him?

*Curio.* Upon suspicion of murder.

*Mother.* Murder? I defy thee!

*Curio.* I pray God he may  
prove himself innocent.  
*Just.* Fy, say not so!  
You shew yourself to be no good commonwealth's  
man,

For the more are hang'd the better 'tis for the  
commonwealth.

*Mother.* By this rule you were best hang your-  
self.

*Just.* I forgive your honest mirth ever.—

Enter MARK and Officers, with MERCURY and MARIA.

Oh, welcome, welcome, Mark!  
Your pen, ink, and paper, to take their examina-  
tions.

*Merc.* Why do you pull me so? I'll go alone.

*Just.* Let them stand,  
Let them stand quietly, whilst they're examined.

*Maria.* What will you examine us of?

*Just.* Of Antonio's murder.

VOL. 11.

*Merc.* Why he was my friend.

*Maria.* He was my husband.

*Just.* The more shame for you both!—Mark,  
your pen and ink.

*Mother.* Pray God all be well! I never knew  
Any of these travellers come to good.—I beseech  
you, sir, [Kneels.

Be favourable to my son.

*Just.* Gentlewoman,  
Hold you content; I would it were come to that!

*Merc.* For God's sake, mother,  
Why kneel you to such a pig-bribed fellow?  
He has surfeited of geeae, and they have put him  
Into a fit of justice: Let him do his worst!

*Just.* Is your paper ready?

*Mark.* I am ready, sir.

Enter ANTONIO, as a Post, and stands apart.

*Just.* Accuse them, sir; I command thee to lay  
down accusations against these persons, in behalf  
of the state: And first look upon the parties to  
be accused, and deliver your name.

*Curio.* My name is Curio; my murder'd kins-  
man,

If he were living now, I should not know him,  
It is so long since we saw one another.

*Ant.* My cousin Curio?

*Curio.* But thus much (from the mouths  
Of his servants and others, whose examinations I  
have

In writing about me) I can accuse them of:  
This Mercury, the last night but this last,  
Lay in Antonio's house, and in the night  
He rose, raising Antonio, where privately  
They were in talk an hour, to what end I know  
not;

But of likelihood, finding Antonio's house  
Not a fit place to murder him in, he suffer'd him  
To go to bed again; but in the morning early  
He train'd him I think forth; after which time  
He never saw his home. His clothes were found  
Near the place where Mercury was, and the people  
At first denied they saw him; but at last  
They made a frivolous tale, that there he shifted  
himself

Into a footman's habit: But, in short,  
The next hour this woman went to Mercury,  
And in her coach they posted hither. True accusa-  
tions

I have no more, and I will make none.

*Just.* No more?

We need no more.—Sirrah, be drawing  
Their mittimus, before we hear their answer.—  
What say you, sir? are you guilty of this murder?

*Merc.* No, sir.

*Just.* Whether you are or no, confess;

It will be better for you.

*Merc.* If I were

Guilty, your rhetoric could not fetch it forth.  
But though I am innocent, I confess, that if  
I were a stander-by, these circumstances urged,  
Which are true, would make me doubtless believe  
The accused parties to be guilty.

*Just.* Write down,

That he being a stander-by (for so you see he is)  
Doth doubtlessly believe the accused parties,  
Which is himself, to be guilty.

*Merc.* I say no such thing.

*Just.* Write it down, I say; we'll try that.

*Merc.* I care not what you write.—

Pray God you did not kill him for my love !

[*Apert.*

Though I am free from this, we both deserve—

*Maria.* Govern your tongue, I pray you ! all is well ;

My husband lives, I know it, and I see him.

*Just.* They whisper ! sever them quickly, I say, officers.

Why do you let them prompt one another ?—  
Gentlewoman,

What say you to this ? Are not you guilty ?

*Maria.* No, as I hope for mercy.

*Just.* But are not

Those circumstances true, that this gentleman  
Hath so shortly and methodically deliver'd ?

*Maria.* They are ; and what you do with me I care not,

Since he is dead in whom was all my care.

You knew him not ?

*Just.* No, and 't had been better

For you too, an you had never known him.

*Maria.* Why then, you did not know the world's chief joy :

His face so manly, as it had been made  
To fright the world ; yet he so sweetly-temper'd,  
That he would make himself a natural fool,  
To do a noble kindness for a friend.  
He was a man whose name I'll not out-live  
Longer than Heaven, whose will must be obey'd,  
Will have me do.

*Ant.* And I will quit thy kindness. [*Aside.*

*Just.* Before me, she has made the tears  
Stand in mine eyes ; but I must be austere.—  
Gentlewoman, you must confess this murder.

*Maria.* I cannot, sir ; I did it not. But I desire  
To see those examinations which this gentleman  
Acknowledges to have about him, for  
But late last night I received letters from  
The city ; yet I heard of no confession then.

*Just.* You shall see them time enough, I warrant you.

But letters you say you had ; where are those letters ?

*Maria.* Sir, they are gone.

*Just.* Gone ? whither are they gone ?

How have you disposed of 'em ?

*Maria.* Why, sir,

They are for women's matters, and so I use 'em.

*Just.* Who writ 'em ?

*Maria.* A man of mine.

*Just.* Who brought 'em ?

*Maria.* A post.

*Just.* A post ? there was some great haste sure :  
Ah, ha !

Where is that post ?

*Maria.* Sir, there he stands.

*Just.* Does he so ?

Bring hither that post : I am afraid that post  
Will prove a knave.—Come hither, post ! What,  
What can you say concerning the murder of An-

*Ant.* What's that to you ? [*tonio ?*

*Just.* Oh, post, you have no answer ready, have you ?

I'll have one from you.

*Ant.* You shall have no more from me than you have.

You examine an honest gentleman and gentlewoman here !

'Tis pity such fools as you should be i' th' commission.

*Just.* Say you so, post ?—Take away that post !  
whip him,  
And bring him again quickly.—I'll hamper you, post.

*Merc.* 'Tis Antonio ; I know him now as well—  
What an irregular fool is this !

*Ant.* Whip me ? hold off !

*Maria.* Oh, good sir, whip him ! By his murmuring

He should know something of my husband's death,  
That may quit me : For God's sake, fetch it out !

*Just.* Whip him, I say !

[*ANTONIO throws off his disguise.*

*Ant.* Who is't that dares whip me now ?

*Maria.* Oh, my loved husband !

*Merc.* My most worthy friend !

Where have you been so long ?

*Ant.* I cannot speak for joy !

*Just.* Why, what's the matter now ? and shall  
Then have her course ? [*not law*

*Andr.* It shall have no other course

Than it has, I think.

*Just.* It shall have other course

Before I go, or I'll beat my brains : And I say  
It was not honestly done of him to discover  
Himself before the parties accused were executed,  
That law might have had her course ; for then  
The kingdom flourishes.

*Ant.* But such a wife as thou had never any man ;

And such a friend as he, believe me, wife,  
Shall never be ! Good wife, love my friend ;  
Friend, love my wife. Hark, friend !

*Just.* Mark,

If we can have nothing to do, you shall swear  
The peace of somebody.

*Mark.* Yes, sir.

*Ant.* By my troth,

I am sorry my wife is so obstinate :  
'Sooth, if I could yet do thee any good,  
I would, i' faith I would.

*Merc.* I thank you, sir ;

I have lost that passion.

*Ant.* Cousin Curio,

You and I must be better acquainted.

*Curio.* It is my wish, sir.

*Ant.* I should not have known you neither, 'tis so long

Since we saw each other ; we were but children then :

But you have shew'd yourself an honest man to me.

*Curio.* I would be ever so.

*Enter RICARDO and VIOLA.*

*Mother.* Look you ! who's there ?

*Andr.* Say nothing to me ; for thy peace is made.

*Ric.* Sir, I can nothing say,

But that you are her father ; you can both

Not only pardon, when you have a wrong,  
But love where you have received most injury.

*Just.* I think I shall hear of no hanging this year !

There's a tinker and a whore yet, the crier said,  
That robb'd her, and are in prison ; I hope  
They shall be hang'd.

*Andr.* No, truly, sir, they have broke prison.

*Just.* 'Tis no matter ; then the jailor shall be hang'd.

*Andr.* You are deceived in that too, sir ; 'twas known

To be against his will, and he hath got  
His pardon ; I think, for nothing ;  
But if't doth cost him anything, I'll pay it.

*Just.* Mark, up with your papers ; away !

*Merc.* Oh,  
You shall stay dinner ; I have a couple of brawling  
neighbours,  
That I'll assure you will not agree,  
And you shall have the hearing of their matter.

*Just.* With all my heart.

*Merc.* Go, gentlemen, go in.

*Ric.* Oh, Viola, that no succeeding age  
Might lose the memory of what thou wert !  
But such an overawayed sex is yours,  
That all the virtuous actions you can do  
Are but as men will call them : And I swear,  
'Tis my belief, that women want but ways  
To praise their deeds, but men want deeds to praise.

[*Exeunt.*]

#### EPILOGUE.

'Tis ended ; but my hopes and fears begin :  
Nor can it be imputed as a sin  
In me to wish it favour. If this night  
To the judicious it hath given delight,  
I have my ends : And may such, for their grace  
Vouchsafed to this, find theirs in every place !

# THE SEA-VOYAGE.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALBERT, a French Pirate, in Love with AMINTA.  
TIBALT DU PONT, a merry Gentleman, Friend to ALBERT.

Master of the Ship, an honest merry Man.

LAMURE, an Usuring Merchant.

FRANVILLE, a vain-glorious Gallant.

MORILLAT, a shallow-brained Gentleman.

Boatswain, an honest Man.

SEBASTIAN, a noble Gentleman of Portugal, Husband to ROSELLIA.

NICUSA, Nephew to SEBASTIAN; both cast upon a Desert Island.

RAYMOND, Brother to AMINTA.

Surgeon.

Sailors.

AMINTA, Mistress to ALBERT, a noble French Virgin.

ROSELLIA, Governess of the Amazonian Portuguese.

CLARINDA, Daughter to ROSELLIA, in Love with

ALBERT.

HIPPOLITA, } Three Ladies, Members of the Female  
CROCALE, } Commonwealth.  
JULETTA, }

SCENE,—FIRST AT SEA, THEN IN A DESERT ISLAND, AND THE ISLE OF THE AMAZONS.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*On board a Ship at Sea. A Tempest, Thunder and Lightning.*

*Enter Master and Two Sailors.*

*Mast.* Lay her aloof, the sea grows dangerous :  
How it spits against the clouds, how it capers,  
And how the fiery element frights it back !  
There be devils dancing in the air I think.

I saw a dolphin hang i' th' horns o' th' moon,  
Shot from a wave. Hey day, hey day, how she  
kicks and yerks !

Down with the main-mast ! lay her at hull !  
Furl up all her linens, and let her ride it out !

1 *Sail.* She'll never brook it, Master ;  
She's so deep laden that she'll bulge.

*Mast.* Hang her !  
Can she not buffet with a storm a little ?  
How it tosses her ! she reels like a drunkard.

2 *Sail.* We have discover'd the land, sir ; pray  
let's make in !

She is so drunk else, she may chance  
To cast up all her lading.

1 *Sail.* Stand in, stand in !  
We are all lost else, lost and perish'd.

*Mast.* Steer her a-starboard there !

2 *Sail.* Bear in with all the sail we can ! See,  
Master,

See what a clap of thunder there is !  
What a face of heaven ! how dreadfully it looks !

*Mast.* Thou rascal, thou fearful rogue, thou  
hast been praying ;

I see't in thy face ; thou hast been mumbling,  
When we are split, you slave ! is this a time  
To discourage our friends with your cold orisons ?

Call up the Boatswain. How it storms ! holla !

*Enter Boatswain.*

*Boats.* What shall we do, Master ? Cast over  
She will not swim an hour else. [all her lading ?

*Enter ALBERT, FRANVILLE, LAMURE, TIBALT DU PONT,  
and MORILLAT.*

*Mast.* The storm is loud ;  
We cannot hear one another. What's the coast ?  
*Boats.* We know not yet ; shall we make in ?

*Alb.* What comfort, sailors ?  
I never saw, since I have known the sea,  
(Which has been these twenty years) so rude a  
In what state are we ? [tempest.

*Mast.* Dangerous enough, captain ;  
We have sprung five leaks, and no little ones ;—  
Still rage !—besides, her ribs are open,  
Her rudder almost spent : Prepare yourselves,  
And have good courages ! Death comes but once :  
And let him come in all his frights !

*Alb.* Is't not possible  
To make in to the land ? 'Tis here before us.  
*Mor.* Here hard by, sir.

*Mast.* Death's nearer, gentlemen.  
Yet do not cry ; let's die like men.

*Tib.* Shall's hoise the boat out,  
And go all at one cast ? The more the merrier.

*Enter AMINTA.*

*Mast.* You are too hasty, monsieur ; do you long  
To be i' th' fish-market before your time ?—  
Hold her up there !

*Amin.* Oh, miserable fortune !  
Nothing but horror sounding in mine ears ;  
No minute to promise to my frightened soul !

*Tib.* Peace, woman !  
We ha' storms enough already ; no more howling.

*Amin.* Gentle master!

*Mast.* Clap this woman under hatches.

*Alb.* Pr'ythee speak mildly to her.

*Amin.* Can no help—

*Mast.* None, that I know.

*Amin.* No promise from your goodness—

*Mast.* Am I a god? For Heaven's sake, stow this woman.

*Tib.* Go, take your gilt prayer-book, and to your business;

Wink and die. There's an old haddock stays for you.

*Amin.* Must I die here in all the frights, the terrors,

The thousand several shapes Death triumphs in? No friend to counsel me?

*Alb.* Have peace, sweet mistress.

*Amin.* No kindred's tears upon me? Oh, my No gentle hand to close mine eyes? [country!]

*Alb.* Be comforted;

Heaven has the same power still, and the same

*Amin.* Oh, that wave will devour me. [mercy.]

*Mast.* Carry her down, captain,

Or, by these hands, I'll give no more direction,

Let the ship sink or swim! We ha' ne'er better luck

When we ha' such stowage as these trinkets with us,

These sweet sin-breeders: How can Heaven smile

When such a burden of iniquity [on us,

Lies tumbling, like a potion, in our ship's belly? [Exit.]

*Tib.* Away with her; and, if she have a prayer

That's fit for such an hour, let her say't quickly,

And seriously. [Exit.]

*Alb.* Come; I see it clear, lady;

Come in, and take some comfort. I'll stay with you.

*Amin.* Where should I stay? To what end

should I hope?

Am I not circled round with misery?

Confusions in their full heights dwell about me!

Oh, monsieur Albert, how am I bound to curse you,

(If curses could redeem me) how to hate you!

You forced me from my quiet, from my friends,

Even from their arms that were as dear to me

As daylight is, or comfort to the wretched;

You forced my friends, [some] from their peaceful

rest,

Some your relentless sword gave their last groans;

(Would I had there been number'd!) and to Fortune's

Never-satisfied afflictions you turn'd my brother,

And those few friends I had left, like desperate

creatures,

To their own fears and the world's stubborn pities.

Oh, merciless!

*Alb.* Sweet mistress!

*Amin.* And whether they are wandered to avoid

you,

Or whether dead, and no kind earth to cover 'em,—

Was this a lover's part? But Heaven has found

you,

And in his loudest voice, his voice of thunder,

And in the mutiny of his deep wonders,

He tells you now, you weep too late.

*Alb.* Let these tears

Tell how I honour you! You know, dear lady,

Since you were mine, how truly I have loved you,

How sanctimoniously observed your honour:

Not one lascivious word, not one touch, lady,

No, not a hope that might not render me

The unpolluted servant of your chastity.

For you I put to sea, to seek your brother,

(Your captain, yet your slave,) that his redemption,

If he be living where the sun has circuit,

May expiate your rigour, and my rashness.

*Amin.* The storm grows greater, what shall we

*Alb.* Let's in, [do?]

And ask Heaven's mercy; my strong mind yet

presages,

Through all these dangers, we shall see a day yet

Shall crown your pious hopes, and my fair wishes.

[Exit with AMINTA.]

Enter MASTER, TIBALT, LANURE, MORILLAT, FRANVILLE, Boatswain, and Sailors, stinging over chests.

*Mast.* It must all overboard.

*Boats.* It clears to seaward, Master.

*Mast.* Fling o'er the lading there, and let us

lighten her,

(All the meat and the cakes; we are all gone else!)

That we may find her leaks, and hold her up;

Yet save some little biscuit for the lady,

Till we come to the land.

*Lam.* Must my goods over too?

Why, honest Master, here lies all my money,

The money I ha' rack'd by usury,

To buy new lands and lordships in new countries,

'Cause I was banish'd from mine own: I ha' been

This twenty years a-raising it.

*Tib.* Out with it:

The devils are got together by the ears, who shall

And here they quarrel in the clouds. [have it;]

*Lam.* I am undone, sir.

*Tib.* And be undone; 'tis better than we perish.

*Lam.* Oh, save one chest of plate!

*Tib.* Away with it lustily, sailors!

It was some pawn that he has got unjustly;

Down with it low enough, and let crabs breed in't!

*Mast.* Over with the trunks too.

Enter ALBERT.

*Alb.* Take mine, and spare not.

*Mast.* We must over with all. [sold.]

*Fran.* Will you throw away my lordship that I

Put it into clothes and necessaries, to go to sea with?

*Tib.* Over with it! I love to see a lordship sink:

Sir, you left no wood upon't, to buoy it up;

You might ha' saved it else.

*Fran.* I am undone

For ever.

*Alb.* Why, we are all undone;

Would you be only happy?

*Lam.* Sir, you may lose too.

*Tib.* Thou liest! I ha' nothing but my skin,

And my clothes; my sword here, and myself;

Two crowns in my pocket; two pair of cards,

And three false dice: I can swim like a fish, rascal;

Nothing to hinder me.

*Boats.* In with her of all hands!

*Mast.* Come, gentlemen; come, captain; ye must

help all;

My life now for the land! 'Tis high and rocky,

And full of perils.

*Alb.* However, let's attempt it.

*Mast.* Then cheer lustily, my hearts! [Exit.]

SCENE II.—*The Shore of a Desert Island.*

Enter SEBASTIAN AND NICURA.

*Seb.* Yes, 'tis a ship, I see it now; a tall ship!

She has wrought lustily for her deliverance.

Heaven's mercy, what a wretched day has here

been!

*Nic.* To still and quiet minds that knew no misery,  
It may seem wretched, but with us 'tis ordinary ;  
Heaven has no storm in store, nor earth no terror,  
That can seem new to us.

*Seb.* 'Tis true, Nicusa :  
If Fortune were determined to be wanton,  
And would wipe out the stories of men's miseries,  
Yet we two living, we could cross her purpose ;  
For 'tis impossible she should cure us,  
We are so excellent in our afflictions :  
It would be more than glory to her blindness,  
And style her power beyond her pride, to quit us.

*Nic.* Do they live still ?

*Seb.* Yes, and make to harbour.

*Nic.* Most miserable men ! I grieve their fortunes.

*Seb.* How happy had they been, had the sea cover'd 'em !  
They leap from one calamity to another ;  
Had they been drown'd, they had ended all their sorrows.— [Shout within.

What shouts of joy they make !

*Nic.* Alas, poor wretches !

Had they but once experience of this island,  
They would turn their tunes to wailings.

*Seb.* Nay, to curses,  
That ever they set foot on such calamities :  
Here is nothing but rocks and barrenness,  
Hunger and cold, to eat ; here's no vineyards  
To cheer the heart of man, no crystal rivers,  
After his labour, to refresh his body,  
If he be feeble ; nothing to restore him,  
But heavenly hopes : Nature, that made those remedies,

Dares not come here, nor look on our distresses,  
For fear she turn wild, like the place, and barren.

*Nic.* Oh uncle, yet a little memory of what we were !

'Twill be a little comfort in our calamities :  
When we were seated in our blessed homes,  
How happy in our kindreds, in our families,  
In all our fortunes.—

*Seb.* Curse on those French pirates  
That displanted us ! That flung us from that hap-  
We found there, constrained us to sea, [piness  
To save our lives, honours, and our riches,  
With all we had, our kinsmen and our jewels,  
In hope to find some place free from such robbers !  
Where a mighty storm severed our barks, that where  
My wife, my daughter, and my noble ladies  
That went with her, virgins and loving souls,  
To 'scape those pirates.—

*Nic.* They are living yet ; such goodness cannot perish.

*Seb.* But never to me, cousin ; never to me again.  
What bears their flag-staves ?

*Nic.* The arms of France sure ;  
Nay, do not start ! we cannot be more miserable ;  
Death is a cordial now, come when it will.

*Seb.* They get to shore again ; they'll fly as fast  
When once they find the place. What's that which swims there ?

*Nic.* A strong young man, sir, with a handsome  
Hanging about his neck. [woman

*Seb.* That shews some honour ;  
May thy brave charity, whate'er thou art,  
Be spoken in a place that may renown thee,  
And not die here !

*Nic.* The boat, it seems, turn'd over,

So forced [them] to their shifts ; yet all are landed.  
They are pirates, on my life.

*Seb.* They will not rob us ;  
For none will take our misery for riches.  
Come, cousin, let's descend, and try their pities !  
If we get off, a little hope walks with us ;  
If not, we shall but load this wretched island  
With the same shadows still, that must grow shorter. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—*Another part of the Same, with  
Rocks in the Back-ground.*

Enter ALBERT, supporting AMINTA, TIBALT, MORILLAT,  
LANURE, MASTER, FRANVILLE, SURGEON, and Sailors.

*Tib.* Wet come ashore, my mates ! we are safe  
arrived yet.

*Mastr.* Thanks to Heaven's goodness, no man  
lost ;  
The ship rides fair too, and her leaks in good  
plight.

*Alb.* The weather's turn'd more courteous.—  
How does my dear ?

Alas, how weak she is, and wet !

*Amin.* I am glad yet, I 'scaped with life ;  
Which certain, noble captain, next to Heaven's  
goodness,

I must thank you for ; and, which is more,  
Acknowledge your dear tenderness, your firm love.  
To your unworthy mistress ; and recant too  
(Indeed I must) those harsh opinions,  
Those cruel, unkind thoughts, I heap'd upon you :  
Further than that, I must forget your injuries,  
So far I am tied and fetter'd to your service ;  
Believe me, I will learn to love.

*Alb.* I thank you, madam ;  
And it shall be my practice to serve.—  
What cheer, companions ?

*Tib.* No great cheer, sir ; a piece of souse'd  
biscuit,

And half an hard egg ; for the sea has taken order,  
Being young and strong, we shall not surfeit, cap-  
For mine own part, I'll dance till I am dry : [taint  
Come, surgeon, out with your glyster-pipe,  
And strike a galliard.

*Alb.* What a brave day again !

And what fair weather, after so foul a storm !  
*Lam.* Ay, an't pleased the master, he might ha'  
This weather, and ha' saved our goods. [seen

*Alb.* Never think on 'em, we have our lives and  
healths.

*Lam.* I must think on 'em, and think 'twas most  
Done to undo me. [maliciously

*Fran.* And me too ; I lost all :  
I ha'n't another shirt to put upon me,  
Nor clothes, but these poor rags ; I had fifteen  
Fair suits, the worst was cut upon taffaty.

*Tib.* I am glad you ha' lost : Give me thy hand !  
Is thy skin whole ? art thou not puri'd with scabs ?  
No ancient monuments of madam Venus ? [tailor  
Thou hast a suit then will pose the cunning'st  
That will never turn fashion, nor forsake thee,  
Till thy executors, the worms, uncase thee ;  
They take off glorious suits, Franville ! thou art  
happy

Thou art deliver'd of 'em ; here are no brokers,  
No alchemists to turn 'em into metal ;  
Nor leather'd captains,  
With ladies to adore 'em ! Wilt thou see  
A dog-fish rise in one of thy brave doublets,

And tumble like a tub to make thee merry ?  
Or an old haddock rise with thy hatch'd sword  
Thou paid'st a hundred crowns for ?  
A mermaid in a mantle of your worship's ?  
Or a dolphin in your double ruff ?

*Fran.* Ye are merry ;  
But if I take it thus, if I be foisted  
And jeer'd out of my goods—

*Lam.* Nor I, I vow thee.  
Nor master nor mate—I see your cunning.

*Alb.* Oh, be not angry, gentlemen.  
*Mor.* Yes, sir, we have reason :  
And some friends I can make.

*Mast.* What I did, gentlemen,  
Was for the general safety : If ye aim  
At me, I am not so tame—

*Tib.* Pray take my counsel ;  
Gallants, fight not till the surgeon be well !  
He's damnable sea-sick, and may spoil all ;  
Besides, he has lost his fiddlestick, and the best  
Box of boar's-grease. Why do you make such faces,  
And hand your swords ?

*Alb.* Who would ye fight with, gentlemen ?  
Who has done ye wrong ? for shame, be better  
temper'd.

No sooner come to give thanks for our safeties,  
But we must raise new civil broils amongst us,  
Inflame those angry powers, to shower new ven-  
geance on us ?

What can we expect for these unmanly murmurs,  
These strong temptations of their holy pities,  
But plagues in another kind, a fuller, so dreadful  
That the singing storms are slumbers to it ?

*Tib.* Be men,  
And rule your minds ! if you will needs fight, gen-  
tlemen,

And think to raise new riches by your valours,  
Have at ye ! I have little else to do now ;  
I have said my prayers. You say you have lost,  
And make your loss your quarrel,  
And grumble at my captain here, and the master,  
Two worthy persons, indeed too worthy for such  
Thou Galloon gallant, and Mammon you [rascals,  
That build on golden mountains ! thou money-mag-  
got !

Come, all draw your swords ! Ye say ye are mise-  
*Alb.* Nay, hold, good Tibalt ! [rable.

*Tib.* Captain, let me correct 'em ;—  
I'll make ye ten times worse !—I will not leave 'em—  
For look ye, fighting's as nourishing to me as eat-  
ing was born quarrelling. [ing ;

*Mast.* Pray, sir !  
*Tib.* I will not leave 'em skins to cover 'em.—  
Do ye grumble when ye are well, ye rogues ?

*Mast.* Noble Du Pont !  
*Tib.* Ye have clothes now, and ye prate.  
*Amin.* Pray, gentlemen, for my sake be at peace !  
Let it become me to make all friends !

*Fran.* You have stopt our angers, lady.  
*Alb.* This shews noble.  
*Tib.* 'Tis well ; 'tis very well ! There's half a  
biscuit ;

Break it amongst ye all, and thank my bounty.  
This is clothes and plate too ; come, no more quar-  
relling !

*Enter SEBASTIAN and NICUSA.*

*Amin.* But ha ! what things are these ? Are they  
human creatures ?

*Tib.* I have heard of sea-calves.

*Alb.* They are no shadows sure, they have legs  
and arms.

*Tib.* They hang but lightly on though.

*Amin.* How they look !

Are they men's faces ?

*Tib.* They have horse-tails growing to 'em,  
Goodly long manes.

*Amin.* Alas, what sunk eyes they have !  
How they are crept in, as if they had been frighted !  
Sure they are wretched men.

*Tib.* Where are their wardrobes ?  
Look ye, Franville, here are a couple of courtiers !

*Amin.* They kneel : Alas, poor souls !

*Alb.* What are ye ? speak !  
Are ye alive ? or wand'ring shadows,  
That find no peace on earth, till ye reveal  
Some hidden secret ?

*Seb.* We are men as you are,  
Only our miseries make us seem monsters.  
If ever pity dwelt in noble hearts—

*Alb.* We understand 'em too ! Pray mark 'em,  
gentlemen.

*Seb.* Or that Heaven's pleas'd with human  
charity ;

If ever ye have heard the name of friendship,  
Or suffered in yourselves the least afflictions,  
Have gentle fathers that have bred ye tenderly,  
And mothers that have wept for your misfortunes ;  
Have mercy on our miseries !

*Alb.* Stand up, wretches :  
Speak boldly, and have release.

*Nic.* If ye be Christians,  
And by that blessed name bound to relieve us,  
Convey us from this island !

*Alb.* Speak ! what are ye ?

*Seb.* As you are, gentle born ; to tell ye more,  
Were but to number up our own calamities,  
And turn your eyes wild with perpetual weepings.  
These many years, in this most wretched island  
We two have lived, the scorn and game of Fortune ;  
Bless yourselves from it, noble gentlemen !  
The greatest plagues that human nature suffers  
Are seated here, wildness and wants innumerable !

*Alb.* How came ye hither ?

*Nic.* In a ship, as you do,  
And (as you might have been, had not Heaven  
preserved ye

For some more noble use) wreckt desperately ;  
Our men and all consumed, but we too,  
That still live, and spin out  
The thin and ragged threads of our misfortunes.

*Alb.* Is there no meat above ?

*Seb.* Nor meat nor quiet :

No summer here, to promise anything ;  
Nor autumn, to make full the reapers' hands :  
The earth, obdurate to the tears of Heaven,  
Lets nothing shoot but poison'd weeds.  
No rivers, nor no pleasant groves, no beasts :  
All that were made for man's use, fly this desert ;  
No airy fowl dares make his flight over it,  
It is so ominous.

Serpents, and ugly things, the shames of Nature,  
Roots of malignant tastes, foul standing waters :  
Sometimes we find a fulsome sea-root,  
And that's a delicate ; a rat sometimes,  
And that we hunt like princes in their pleasure ;  
And when we take a toad, we make a banquet.

*Amin.* For Heaven's sake, let's aboard !

*Alb.* Do ye know no further ?

*Nic.* Yes ;

We have sometimes seen the shadow of a place  
Inhabited, and heard the noise of hunters,  
And have attempted to find it : So far as a river,  
Deep, slow, and dangerous, fenced with high rocks,  
We have gone ; but, not able to achieve that  
Return'd to our old miseries. [hazard,

If this sad story may deserve your pities—  
*Alb.* Ye shall aboard with us ; we will relieve  
your miseries.

*Seb.* Nor will we be unthankful for this benefit ;  
No, gentlemen, we'll pay for our deliverance :  
Look, ye that plough the seas for wealth and pleasures,

That out-run day and night with your ambitions,  
Look on those heaps ! they seem hard ragged quar-  
Remove, and view 'em fully. [cries ;

*Mast.* Oh, Heaven, they are gold and jewels !

*Seb.* Be not too hasty ! Here lies another heap.

*Mor.* And here another,

All perfect gold !

*Alb.* Stand further off ! You must not  
Be your own carvers.

*Lam.* We have shares, and deep ones.

*Fran.* Yes, sir, we will maintain't : Ho, fellow-  
sailors !

*Lam.* Stand all to your freedoms ! I'll have all

*Fran.* And I this. [this.

*Tib.* You shall be hang'd first.

*Lam.* My losses shall be made good.

*Fran.* So shall mine, or with my sword I'll do it.—  
All that will share with us, assist us !

*Tib.* Captain, let's set in !

*Alb.* This money will undo us, undo us all.

*Seb.* This gold was the overthrow of my happi-  
I had command too, when I landed here, [ness ;  
And led young, high, and noble spirits under me :  
This cursed gold enticing 'em, they set upon their  
captain,

On me that own'd this wealth, and this poor gen-  
tleman ;

Gave us no few wounds, forced us from our own,  
And then their civil swords, who should be owners,  
And who lords over all, turn'd against their own  
lives ;

First, in their rage consumed the ship,  
(That poor part of the ship that 'scaped the first  
wreck)

Next, their lives by heaps : Oh, be you wise and  
careful !

*Lam.* We'll ha' more : Sirrah, come shew it !

*Fran.* Or ten times worse afflictions than thou  
speak'st of—

*Alb.* Nay, an ye will be dogs—

[Draws and beats 'em.

*Tib.* Let me come, captain !

This golden age must have an iron ending.

Have at the bunch ! [He beats 'em off, and exit.

*Amin.* Oh, Albert ! oh, gentlemen ! oh, friends !

[Exit.

*Seb.* Come, noble nephew ! if we stay here we  
die :

Here rides their ship yet ; all are gone to the spoil ;  
Let's make a quick use !

*Nic.* Away, dear uncle !

*Seb.* This gold was our overthrow.

*Nic.* It may now be our happiness. [Exit.

Enter TIBALT pursuing and beating the rest.

*Tib.* You shall have gold ! yes, I will cram it  
in t'ye ;

You shall be your own carvers ? yes, I'll carve ye.

*Mor.* I am sore : I pray hear reason !

*Tib.* I'll hear none :

Covetous base minds have no reason.

I am hurt myself ; but, whilst I have a leg left,

I will so haunt your gilded souls—How do ye,  
captain ?

You bleed apace ; curse on the causers on't !

You do not faint ?

*Alb.* No, no ; I am not so happy.

*Tib.* Do ye howl ? nay, ye deserve it :

Base greedy rogues ! Come, shall we make an end  
of 'em ?

*Alb.* They are our countrymen ; for Heaven's  
sake, spare 'em.

Alas, they are hurt enough, and they relent now.

*Amin.* [Above.] Oh, captain, captain !

*Alb.* Whose voice is that ?

*Tib.* The lady's.

*Amin.* Look, captain, look ! you are undone :  
Poor captain !

We are all undone, all, all ! We are all miserable !  
Mad wilful men, ye are undone : Your ship, your

*Alb.* What of her ? [ship !

*Amin.* She's under sail, and floating ;

See, where she flies ! See, to your shames, you  
wretches,

These poor starved things that shew'd you gold !

[LAMURE and FRANVILLE go up to see the ship.

*1 Sail.* They have cut the cables,

And got her out ; the tide too has befriended 'em.

*Mast.* Where are the sailors that kept her ?

*Boats.* Here, here in the mutiny, to take up  
money,

And left no creature ; left the boat ashore too :

This gold, this damn'd enticing gold !

*2 Sail.* How the wind drives her,

As if it vied to force her from our furies !

*Lam.* Come back, good old men !

*Fran.* Good honest men, come back !

*Tib.* The wind's against ye ; speak louder !

*Lam.* Ye shall have all your gold again. They  
see us.

*Tib.* Hold up your hands, and kneel, and bow !  
They'll have compassion on ye ? [ye blockheads !

Yes, yes, 'tis very likely ; ye have deserved it.  
Do ye look like dogs now ? Are your mighty

Abated ? [courages

*Alb.* I bleed apace, Tibalt.

*Tib.* Retire, sir ;

And make the best use of our miseries !

They but begin now.

Enter AMINTA.

*Amin.* Are ye alive still ?

*Alb.* Yes, sweet.

*Tib.* Help him off, lady, [thing

And wrap him warm in your arms : Here is some-  
That's comfortable ; off with him handsomely !

I'll come to ye straight, but vex these rascals a  
little.

[Exit ALBERT and AMINTA.

*Fran.* Oh, I am hungry, and hurt, and I am  
weary.

*Tib.* Here is a pestle of a portugee, sir !

'Tis excellent meat with sour sauce !

And here's two chains ; suppose 'em sausages ;

Then there wants mustard ; but the fearful surgeon  
Will supply ye presently.

*Lam.* Oh, for that surgeon ! I shall die else.

*Tib.* 'Faith, there he lies in the same pickle too.

*Sur.* My selves and all my instruments are lost ;

And I am hurt and starv'd : Good sir, seek for  
Some herbs !

*Tib.* Here's herb-graceless ; will that serve ?  
Gentlemen, will ye go to supper ?

*All.* Where is the meat ?

*Tib.* Where is the meat ? What a veal voice is  
there !

*Fran.* Would we had it, sir, or anything else.

*Tib.* I would now cut your throat, you dog, but  
that

I wo' not do you such a courtesy,  
To take you from the benefit of starving.

Oh, what a comfort will your worship have  
Some three days hence! Ye things beneath pity !  
Famine shall be your harbinger:  
You mu't not look for down-beds here, nor hang-  
Though I could wish ye strong ones ; [ings ;  
Yet there be many lightsome cool star-chambers,  
Open to every sweet air, I'll assure ye,  
Ready provided for ye, and so I'll leave ye.  
Your first course is serv'd, expect the second.

[*Exit.*

*Fran.* A vengeance on these jewels !

*Lam.* Oh, this cursed gold ! [ *Exeunt.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—*Another part of the same.*

*Enter ALBERT and AMINTA.*

*Alb.* Alas, dear soul, you faint.

*Amin.* You speak the language  
Which I should use to you. Heaven knows my  
Is not for what I suffer in myself, [weakness  
But to imagine what you endure,  
And to what fate your cruel stars reserve you.

*Alb.* Do not add to my afflictions by  
Your tender pities ! Sure we have changed sexes ;  
You bear calamity with a fortitude  
Would become a man ; I, like a weak girl, suffer.

*Amin.* Oh, but your wounds,  
How fearfully they gape ! And every one  
To me is a sepulchre : If I loved truly,  
(Wise men affirm, that true love can do wonders,)  
These bathed in my warm tears would soon be  
cured,

And leave no orifice behind. Pray give me leave  
To play the surgeon, and bind 'em up ;  
The raw air rankles 'em.

*Alb.* Sweet, we want means.

*Amin.* Love can supply all wants.

*Alb.* What have ye done, sweet ?—  
Oh, sacrilege to beauty ! there's no hair  
Of these pure locks, by which the greatest king  
Would not be gladly bound, and love his fetters.

*Amin.* Oh, Albert, I offer  
This sacrifice of service to the altar  
Of your staid temperance, and still adore it :  
When with a violent hand you made me yours,  
I curs'd the doer ; but, now I consider  
How long I was in your power, and with what  
honour

You entertain'd me, (it being seldom seen,  
That youth, and heat of blood, could e'er prescribe  
Laws to itself ;) your goodness is the Lethe  
In which I drown your injuries, and now live  
Truly to serve ye : How do you, sir ? Receive you  
The least ease from my service ? If you do,  
I'm largely recompenced.

*Alb.* You good angels,  
That are engaged, when man's ability fails,  
To reward goodness, look upon this lady !  
Though hunger gripes my croaking entrails,  
Yet, when I kiss these rubies, methinks  
I'm at a banquet, a refreshing banquet.  
Speak, my bless'd one ; art not hungry ?

*Amin.* Indeed I could eat, to bear you company.

*Alb.* Blush, unkind Nature,  
If thou hast power or being ! To hear

Thyself, and by such innocence, accused,  
Must print a thousand kinds of shames upon  
Thy various face : Canst thou supply a drunkard,  
And with a prodigal hand reach choice of wines,  
Till he cast up thy blessings ? Or a glutton,  
That robs the elements to sooth his palate,  
And only eats to beget appetite,  
Not to be satisfied ? And suffer here  
A virgin, which the saints would make their guest,  
To pine for hunger ? [*Horns within.*] Ha ! if my  
sense

Deceive me not, these notes take being from  
The breath of men. Confirm me, my Aminta !  
Again ! This way the gentle wind conveys it to us.  
Hear you nothing ?

*Amin.* Yes ; it seems free hunters' music.

[*Horns again.*

*Alb.* Still 'tis louder ; and I remember the  
Portugals  
Inform'd us, they had often heard such sounds,  
But ne'er could touch the shore from whence it  
came.

Follow me, my Aminta ! My good genius,  
Shew me the way ! Still, still we are directed ;  
When we gain the top of this near rising hill,  
We shall know further.

[*Exeunt, and enter above on the hill.*

*Alb.* Courteous Zephyrus,  
On his dewy wings, carries perfumes to cheer us :  
The air clears too ;  
And now we may discern another island,  
And questionless, the seat of fortunate men :  
Oh, that we could arrive there !

*Amin.* No, Albert ;  
It is not to be hoped : This envious torrent  
Is cruelly interposed ; we have no vessel  
That may transport us, nor hath Nature given  
Us wings to fly.

*Alb.* Better try all hazards,  
Than perish here remediless ; I feel  
New vigour in me, and a spirit that dares  
More than a man, to serve my fair Aminta :  
These arms shall be my oars, with which I'll swim,  
And my zeal to save thy innocent self, like wings,  
Shall bear me up above the brackish waves.

*Amin.* Will ye then leave me ? Till now I ne'er  
was wretched.

*Alb.* My best Aminta, I swear by goodness,  
'Tis nor hope, nor fear, of myself, that invites me  
To this extreme ; 'tis to supply thy wants :  
And, believe me,  
Though pleasure met me in most ravishing forms,

And happiness courted me to entertain her,  
I would nor eat nor sleep, till I return'd  
And crown'd thee with my fortunes.

*Amin.* Oh, but your absence—

*Alb.* Suppose it but a dream, and, as you may,  
Endeavour to take rest! And when that sleep  
Deceives your hunger with imagined food,  
Think you have sent me for discovery  
Of some most fortunate continent, yet unknown,  
Which you are to be queen of!—  
And now ye powers, that e'er heard lovers' prayers,  
Or cherish'd pure affection, look on him  
That is your votary; and make it known,  
Against all stops, you can defend your own.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Island of the Amazons. The Sea-shore.*

*Enter HIPPOLITA, CROCALE, and JULETTA, armed with bows and quivers.*

*Hip.* How did we lose Clarinda?

*Croc.* When we believed the stag was spent,  
And would take soil, the sight of the Black Lake,  
Which we supposed he chose for his last refuge,  
Frighted him more than we that did pursue him.

*Jul.* That's usual; for death itself is not so  
To any beast of chase. [terrible]

*Hip.* Since we lived here,  
We ne'er could force one to it.

*Croc.* 'Tis so dreadful,  
Birds that with their pinions cleave the air  
Dare not fly o'er it. When the stag turn'd head,  
And we, even tired with labour,  
Clarinda, as if she were made of air  
And fire, and had no part of earth in her,  
Eagerly pursued him;

Nor need we fear her safety, this place yields  
Not fawns nor satyrs, or more lustful men;  
Here we live secure,

And have among ourselves a commonwealth,  
Which in ourselves begun, with us must end.

*Jul.* Ay, there's the misery.

*Croc.* But being alone,  
Allow me freedom too to speak my thoughts!  
The strictness of our governess, that forbids us,  
On pain of death, the sight and use of men,  
Is more than tyranny: For herself, she's past  
Those youthful heats, and feels not the want  
Of that which young maids long for: And her  
daughter

The fair Clarinda, though in few years improved  
In height and large proportion, came here so  
young,

That, scarce remembering that she had a father,  
She never dreams of man; and should she see one,  
In my opinion, a' would appear  
A strange beast to her.

*Jul.* 'Tis not so with us.

*Hip.* For my part, I confess it, I was not made  
This single life: nor do I love hunting so, [for  
But that I had rather be the chace myself.

*Croc.* By Venus (out upon me! I should have  
By Diana,) I am of thy mind too, wench; [sworn  
And though I have ta'en an oath, not alone  
To detest, but never to think of man,  
Every hour something tells me I am forsworn;  
For, I confess, imagination helps me  
Sometimes, and that's all's left for us to feed on;  
We might starve else; for if I have any pleasure

In this life, but when I sleep, I am a Pagan.  
Then, from the courtier to the country clown,  
I have strange visions—

*Jul.* Visions, Crocale?

*Croc.* Yes, and fine visions too;  
And visions I hope in dreams are harmless,  
And not forbid by our canons. The last night  
(Troth, 'tis a foolish one, but I must tell it)  
As I lay in my cabin, betwixt sleeping and waking—

*Hip.* Upon your back?

*Croc.* How should a young maid lie, fool,  
When she would be intranced?

*Hip.* We are instructed;

Forward, I pr'ythee.

*Croc.* Methought a sweet young man,  
In years some twenty, with a downy chin,  
Promising a future beard, and yet no red one,  
Stole slyly in his cabin all unbraced,  
Took me in his arms, and kiss'd me twenty times;  
Yet still I slept.

*Jul.* Fy! thy lips run over, Crocale.

But to the rest!

*Croc.* Lord, what a man is this,  
Thought I, to do this to a maid! Yet then  
For my life I could not wake. The youth,  
A little daunted, with a trembling hand  
Heaved up the clothes.

*Hip.* Yet still you slept?

*Croc.* I'faith, I did.

And when, methoughts, he was warm by my side,  
Thinking to catch him, I stretch'd out both mine  
And when I felt him not, I shrieked out, [arms;  
And waked for anger.

*Hip.* 'Twas a pretty dream.

*Croc.* Ay, if it had been a true one.

[*ALARM is cast upon the shore by a watch.*]

*Jul.* But stay!

What's here cast on the shore?

*Hip.* It is a man:

Shall I shoot him?

*Croc.* No, no, 'tis a handsome beast,  
Would we had more o' the breed; stand close,  
And let's hear if he can speak. [wenches,

*Alb.* Do I yet live?

Sure it is air I breathe! What place is this?  
Sure something more than human keeps residence  
For I have past the Stygian gulph, [here,  
And touch upon the blessed shore: 'Tis so;  
This is the Elysian shade; these, happy spirits.  
That here enjoy all pleasures!

*Hip.* He makes towards us.

*Jul.* Stand, or I'll shoot!

*Croc.* Hold! he makes no resistance.

*Alb.* Be not offended, goddesses, that I fall  
Thus prostrate at your feet! or if not such,  
But nymphs of Dian's train, that range these  
groves,

Which you forbid to men; vouchsafe to know  
I am a man, a wicked sinful man;  
And yet not sold

So far to impudence, as to presume  
To press upon your privacies, or provoke  
Your heavenly angers; 'tis not for myself  
I beg thus poorly, for I'm already wounded,  
Wounded to death, and faint; my last breath is for  
A virgin, comes as near yourselves in all  
Perfection, as what is mortal may  
Resemble things divine. Oh, pity her,  
And let your charity free her from that desert,  
If heavenly charity can reach to hell;

For sure that place comes near it! and where'er  
My ghost shall find abode, eternally  
I shall pour blessings on ye! [*He falls into a trance.*]

*Hip.* By my life,  
I cannot hurt him!

*Croc.* Though I lose my head for't,  
Nor I: I must pity him, and will.

*Enter CLARINDA.*

*Jul.* But stay!  
*Clarinda!*

*Clar.* What new game have you found here! Ha!  
What beast is this lies wallowing in his gore?

*Croc.* Keep off!

*Clar.* Wherefore, I pray? I never turn'd  
From a fell lioness robb'd of her whelps,  
And shall I fear dead carrion?

*Jul.* O but—

*Clar.* But, what is't?

*Hip.* It is infectious.

*Clar.* Has it not a name?

*Croc.* Yes;

But such a name, from which, as from the devil,  
Your mother commands us fly.

*Clar.* Is it a man?

*Croc.* It is.

*Clar.* What a brave shape it has in death!

How excellent would it appear, had it life!

Why should it be infectious? I have heard

My mother say, I had a father;

And was not he a man?

*Croc.* Questionless, madam.

*Clar.* Your fathers too were men?

*Jul.* Without doubt, lady.

*Clar.* And without such it is impossible

We could have been.

*Hip.* A sin against nature to deny it.

*Clar.* Nor can you or I have any hope to be a  
Without the help of men? [*mother,*

*Croc.* Impossible!

*Clar.* Which of you then, most barbarous, that  
You from a man had being, and owe to it [*knew*  
The name of parent, durst presume to kill  
The likeness of that thing by which you are?

Whose arrows made these wounds? speak, or, by  
Without distinction I'll let fly at ye all! [*Dian,*

*Jul.* Not mine.

*Hip.* Nor mine.

*Croc.* 'Tis strange to see her moved thus.

Restrain your fury, madam! had we kill'd him,  
We had but perform'd your mother's command.

*Clar.* But if she command unjust and cruel  
We are not to obey it. [*things,*

*Croc.* We are innocent:

Some storm did cast him shipwreck'd on the shore,  
As you see wounded: Nor durst we be surgeons  
To such your mother doth appoint for death.

*Clar.* Weak excuse! where's pity?

Where's soft compassion? Cruel and ungrateful,

Did Providence offer to your charity

But one poor subject to express it on,

And in't to shew our wants too; and could you

So carelessly neglect it?

*Hip.* For aught I know,

He's living yet; and you may tempt your mother  
By giving him succour.

*Clar.* Ha! come near, I charge ye.

So! bend his body softly; rub his temples;

Nay, that shall be my office: How the red steals  
Into his pale lips! Run and fetch the simples

With which my mother heal'd my arm, when last  
I was wounded by the boar.

*Croc.* Do; but remember

Her to come after you, that she may behold

Her daughter's charity. [*Exit HIPPOLITA.*]

*Clar.* Now he breathes!

The air passing through the Arabian groves

Yields not so sweet an odour: Pr'ythee taste it;

Taste it, good Crocale! yet I envy thee

So great a blessing. 'Tis not sin to touch

These rubies, is it?

*Jul.* Not, I think.

*Clar.* Or thus to live, camellion-like? I could  
Resign my essence to live ever thus.

*Enter HIPPOLITA.*

O welcome! Raise him up gently. Some soft hand

Bound up these wounds! A woman's hair? What fury,

For which my ignorance does not know a name,

Is crept into my bosom? But I forget

My pious work. Now if this juice hath power,

Let it appear! His eye-lids ope! Prodigious!

Two suns break from these orbs.

*Alb.* Ha! where am I? what new vision's this?

To what goddess do I owe this second life?

Sure thou art more than mortal!

And any sacrifice of thanks or duty

In poor and wretched man to pay, comes short

Of your immortal bounty: But to shew

I am not unthankful, thus in humility

I kiss the happy ground you have made sacred,

By bearing of your weight.

*Clar.* No goddess, friend,

But made of that same brittle mould as you are;

One, too, acquainted with calamities,

And from that apt to pity. Charity ever

Finds in the act reward, and needs no trumpet

In the receiver. Oh, forbear this duty!

I have a hand to meet with yours, and lips

To bid yours welcome.

*Croc.* I see that, by instinct,

Though a young maid hath never seen a man,

Touches have titillations, and inform her.

*Enter ROSELLIA.*

But here's our governess: Now I expect a storm.

*Ros.* Child of my flesh, and not of my fair un-

Unhand this monster! [*spotted mind,*

*Clar.* Monster, mother?

*Ros.* Yes;

And every word he speaks, a syren's note,

To drown the careless hearer. Have I not taught

The falsehood and the perjuries of men, [*these*

On whom, but for a woman to shew pity,

Is to be cruel to herself? The sovereignty

Proud and imperious men usurp upon us,

We confer on ourselves, and love those fetters

We fasten to our freedoms. Have we, Clarinda,

Since thy father's wreck, sought liberty,

To lose it uncompell'd? Did Fortune guide,

Or rather Destiny, our bark (to which

We could appoint no port) to this blest place,

Inhabited heretofore by warlike women,

That kept men in subjection? Did we then,

By their example, after we had lost

All we could love in man, here plant ourselves,

With execrable oaths never to look

On man, but as a monster? and wilt thou

Be the first precedent to infringe those vows

We made to Heaven?

*Clar.* Hear me, and hear me with justice!

And as you are delighted in the name  
Of mother, hear a daughter that would be like you!  
Should all women use this obstinate abstinence  
You would force upon us, in a few years  
The whole world would be peopled only with beasts.

*Hip.* We must and will have men.

*Croc.* Ay, or we'll shake off all obedience.

*Ros.* Are ye mad? can no persuasion alter ye?  
Suppose you had my suffrage to your suit,  
Can this shipwreck'd wretch supply ye all?

*Alb.* Hear me, great lady!

I have fellows in my misery! Not far hence,  
Divided only by this hellish river,  
There live a company of wretched men,  
Such as your charity may make your slaves;  
Imagine all the miseries mankind  
May suffer under, and they groan beneath 'em.

*Clar.* But are they like to you?

*Jul.* Speak they your language?

*Croc.* Are they able, lusty men?

*Alb.* They were, good ladies;

And in their May of youth, of gentle blood,  
And such as may deserve ye: Now cold and hunger  
Have lessen'd their perfection; but, restored  
To what they were, I doubt not they'll appear  
Worthy your favours.

*Jul.* This is a blessing  
We durst not hope for.

*Clar.* Dear mother, be not obdurate!

*Ros.* Hear then my resolution, and labour not  
To add to what I'll grant! for 'twill be fruitless.  
You shall appear as good angels to these wretched  
men;

In a small boat we will pass over to 'em,  
And bring 'em comfort: if you like their persons,

And they approve of yours, for we'll force nothing—  
And since we want ceremonies,  
Each one shall chuse a husband, and enjoy  
His company a month; but that expired,  
You shall no more come near 'em: If you prove  
fruitful,

The males ye shall return to them, the females  
We will reserve ourselves. This is the utmost  
Ye shall ever obtain.—As ye think fit,  
Ye may dismiss this stranger, and prepare  
To-morrow for the journey. [Exit

*Clar.* Come, sir, will you walk?

We'll shew you our pleasant bowers, and some-  
thing you  
Shall find to cheer your heart.

*Alb.* Excellent lady,

Though 'twill appear a wonder one near starved  
Should refuse rest and meat, I must not take  
Your noble offer: I left in yonder desert  
A virgin almost pined.

*Clar.* She's not your wife?

*Alb.* No, lady, but my sister:—'Tis now dan-  
gerous [Aside

To speak truth.—To her I deeply vow'd  
Not to taste food, or rest, if Fortune brought it  
me,

Till I bless'd her with my return: Now if  
You please to afford me an easy passage to her,  
And some meat for her recovery,  
I shall live your slave; and thankfully she shall  
Ever acknowledge her life at your service.

*Clar.* You plead so well, I can deny you nothing;  
I myself will see you furnished,  
And with the next sun visit and relieve thee.

*Alb.* You are all goodness! [Exeunt

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—*The Desert Island.*

*Enter severally, LAMURE, FRANVILLE, and MORILLAT.*

*Lam.* Oh! what a tempest have I in my  
stomach!

How my empty guts cry out! my wounds ache;  
'Would they would bleed again, that I might get  
Something to quench my thirst!

*Fran.* O Lamure, the happiness my dogs had  
When I kept house at home! they had a store-  
house,

A store house of most blessed bones and crusts;  
Happy crusts! Oh, how sharp hunger pinches me!

[Exit.

*Mor.* O my importunate belly! I have nothing  
To satisfy thee: I have sought, as far  
As my weak legs would carry me,  
Yet can find nothing; neither meat nor water,  
Nor anything that's nourishing. My belly  
Is grown together like an empty satchel.

*Re-enter FRANVILLE with a handful of mud.*

*Lam.* How now? what news?

*Mor.* Hast any meat yet?

*Fran.* Not a bit that I can see;  
Here be goodly quarries, but they be cruel hard  
To gnaw: I ha' got some mud, (we'll eat it with  
spoons)  
Very good thick mud; but it stinks damnably:

There's old rotten trunks of trees too, but not a leaf  
Nor blossom in all the island.

*Lam.* How it looks!

*Mor.* It stinks too.

*Lam.* It may be poison.

*Fran.* Let it be anything,  
So I can get it down: Why, man,  
Poison's a princely dish!

*Mor.* Hast thou no biscuit?  
No crumbs left in thy pocket? here's my doublet,  
Give me but three small crumbs.

*Fran.* Not for three kingdoms,  
If I were master of 'em. Oh, Lamure,  
But one poor joint of mutton we ha' scorn'd, man!

*Lam.* Thou speak'st of Paradise.

*Fran.* Or but the snuffs of those healths we have  
At midnight flang away. [Jewly

*Mor.* Ah, but to lick the glasses!

*Enter Surgeon.*

*Fran.* Here comes the surgeon: What hast  
Smile, smile, and comfort us. [thou discover'd?

*Sur.* I am expiring,  
Smile they that can! I can find nothing, gentlemen;  
Here's nothing can be meat, without a miracle.  
Oh, that I had my boxes and my lints now,  
My stupes, my tents, and those sweet helps of  
What dainty dishes could I make of 'em. [nature,  
*Mor.* Hast ne'er an old suppository?

*Sur.* Oh, would I had, sir!

*Lam.* Or but the paper where such a cordial,  
Potion, or pills hath been entomb'd?

*Fran.* Or the blest bladder where a cooling-glistener—

*Mor.* Hast thou no scar-cloths left? nor any old poultice?

*Fran.* We care not to what it hath been ministered.

*Sur.* Sure I have none of these dainties, gentlemen.

*Fran.* Where's the great wen thou cutt'st from Hugh the sailor's shoulder?

That would serve now for a most princely banquet.

*Sur.* Ay, if we had it, gentlemen:

I flung it overboard, slave that I was!

*Lam.* A most unprovident villain!

*Sur.* If I had anything that were but supple now!

I could make sallads of your shoes, gentlemen,  
And rare ones! anything unctuous.

*Mor.* Ay, and then we might fry the soals i' th' The soals would make a second dish. [sun;

*Lam.* Or souse 'em in salt water;

An inner soal well soused—

*Enter AMINTA.*

*Fran.* Here comes the woman;  
It may be she has meat, and may relieve us:  
Let us withdraw, and mark, and then be ready!  
She'll hide her store else, and so cozen us.

[*They go apart.*]

*Amin.* How weary and how hungry am I,  
How feeble and how faint is all my body!  
Mine eyes, like spent lamps glowing out, grow  
Mysight forsaking me; and all my spirits, [heavy,  
As if they heard my passing-bell go for me,  
Pull in their powers, and give me up to destiny.  
Oh, for a little water! a little, little meat,  
A little to relieve me ere I perish!  
I had whole floods of tears awhile that nourished me,

But they are all consumed for thee, dear Albert;  
For thee they are spent, for thou art dead;  
Merciless Fate hath swallow'd thee!—Oh! I  
Grow heavy; sleep is a salve for misery:  
Heaven look on me, and either take my life,  
Or make me once more happy. [*She falls asleep.*

*Lam.* She's fast asleep already.  
Why should she have this blessing, and we wake  
Wake to our wants? [still,

*Mor.* This thing hath been our overthrow,  
And all these biting mischiefs that fall on us  
Are come through her means.

*Fran.* True; we were bound, ye all know,  
For happy places, and most fertile islands,  
Where we had constant promises of all things:  
She turn'd the captain's mind, and must have him  
In search, I know not of who, nor to what end; [go  
Of such a fool her brother, and such a coxcomb  
Her kinsman, and we must put in every where;  
She has put us in now, i' faith!

*Lam.* Why should we  
Consume thus, and starve, have nothing to relieve  
And she live there that bred all our miseries, [us,  
Unroasted or unsod?

*Mor.* I have read in stories—

*Lam.* Of such restoring meats we have examples,  
Thousand examples, and allow'd for excellent:  
Women that have eat their children, men

Their slaves, nay their brothers; but these are  
nothing;  
Husbands devoured their wives, (they are their  
chattels,)

And of a schoolmaster, that in a time of famine  
Powder'd up all his scholars.

*Mor.* She's young and tidy;  
In my conscience she'll eat delicately;  
Just like young pork, a little lean. Your opinion,  
surgeon?

*Sur.* I think she may be made good meat; but  
We shall want salt. [look,

*Fran.* Tush, she needs no powdering.

*Sur.* I grant you;

But to suck out the humorous parts, by all means,  
Let's kill her in a chafe; she'll eat the sweeter.

*Lam.* Let's kill her any way, and kill her  
quickly,

That we might be at our meat.

*Sur.* How if the captain—

*Mor.* Talk not of him, he's dead, and the rest  
Wake her, surgeon, and cut her throat, [famish'd.  
And then divide her, every man his share.

*Fran.* She wakes herself.

*Amin.* Holy and good things keep me!

What cruel dreams have I had! Who are these?  
Oh they are my friends!—For Heaven's sake, gentle-  
Give me some food to save my life, if ye [men,  
Have aught to spare! A little to relieve me.

I may bless ye! For, weak and wretched, ready to  
perish,

Even now I die.

*Mor.* You'll save a labour then;  
You bred these miseries, and you shall pay for't.  
We have no meat, nor where to have we know not,  
Nor how to pull ourselves from these afflictions;  
We are starv'd too, famish'd, all our hopes de-  
luded;

Yet ere we die thus, we'll have one dainty meal.

*Amin.* Shall I be with ye, gentlemen?

*Lam.* Yes, marry shall ye, in our bellies, lady!  
We love you well—

*Amin.* What said you, sir?

*Lam.* Marry, we'll eat your ladyship.

*Fran.* You that have buried us in this base  
island,

We'll bury you in a more noble monument.

*Sur.* Will you say your prayers, that I may per-  
form, lady?

We are wond'rous sharp-set.—Come, gentlemen;  
Who are for the hinder parts?

*Mor.* I.

*Fran.* I.

*Lam.* And I.

*Sur.* Be patient;

They will not fall to every man's share.

*Amin.* Oh hear me;

Hear me, ye barbarous men!

*Mor.* Be short and pithy;

Our stomachs cannot stay a long discourse.

*Sur.* And be not fearful, for I'll kill you daintily.

*Amin.* Are ye not Christians?

*Lam.* Why, do not Christians eat, woman?

*Enter TYBALT, Master, and Sailors.*

*Amin.* Eat one another? 'Tis most impious.

*Sur.* Come, come!

*Amin.* Oh, help, help, help.

*Tib.* The lady's voice!—

Stand off, slaves! what do you intend, villains?

I have strength enough left me, if you abuse  
This soul, to—

*Mast.* They would have ravish'd her, upon my  
Speak:—how was it, lady? [life!

*Amin.* Forgive 'em, 'twas their hungers.

*Tib.* Ha! their hungers?

*Mast.* They would have eaten her.

*Tib.* Oh damn'd villains!—  
Speak; is it true?

*Sur.* I confess an appetite.

*Tib.* An appetite? I'll fit ye for an appetite!  
Are ye so sharp-set, that her flesh must serve you?  
Murder's a main good service with your worshaps.  
Since ye would be such devils, why did you not  
Begin with one another handsomely,  
And spare the woman to beget more food on?

*Amin.* Good sir—

*Tib.* You shall grow mummy, rascals;  
I'll make ye fall to your brawns, and your but-  
And worry one another like keen bandogs. [tocks,

*Amin.* Good sir, be merciful.

*Tib.* You shall know what it is to be damn'd  
cannibals.

*Enter ALBERT, with food.*

*Amin.* Oh, my best friend!

*Alb.* Alas, poor heart! Here,  
Here is some meat and sovereign drink to ease you.  
Sit down, gentle sweet!

*Amin.* I am bless'd to see you.

*Tib.* Stir not within forty foot of this food;  
If you do, dogs—

*Alb.* Oh, captain, captain, captain!

*Alb.* Ye shall have meat, all of you.

*Tib.* Captain, hear me first: Hark! 'tis so  
inhuman,  
I would not ha' the air corrupted with it.

[*Whispers.*

*Alb.* Oh barbarous men! Sit down, Du Pont!  
good master,  
And honest sailors.

*Tib.* But stand you off, and wait  
Upon our charity; (I'll wait on you else!)  
And touch nothing but what is stung to ye,

As if you were dogs; if you do,  
I'll cut your fingers, friends; I'll spoil your carv-  
*Amin.* There, wretches, there! [ing!

*Tib.* Eat your meat handsomely now,  
And give Heaven thanks.

*Alb.* There is more bread.

*Tib.* See,  
They snarl like dogs! Eat quietly, you rascals,  
Eat quietly.

*Alb.* There's drink too.

*Tib.* Come, come,  
I'll fill you each your cups; ye shall not surfeit.

*Amin.* And what have you discover'd?

*Alb.* Sweet, a paradise,  
A paradise inhabited with angels,  
Such as you are; their pities make 'em angels;  
They gave me these viands, and supplied me with  
These precious drinks.

*Amin.* Shall not we see 'em?

*Alb.* Yes, they will see you:  
Out of their charities, having heard our story,  
They will come, and comfort us, come presently;  
We shall no more know wants nor miseries.

*Amin.* Are they all women?

*Alb.* All, and all in love with us.

*Amin.* How!

*Alb.* Do not mistake; in love with our misfor-  
They will cherish and relieve our men. [tunes;

*Tib.* Do you shrug now,  
And pull up your noses? You smell comfort.  
See, they stretch out their legs like dottrels,  
Each like a new Saint Dennis!

*Alb.* Dear mistress,  
When you would name me, and the women here,  
Call me your brother; you I'll call my sister:  
And pray observe this all.—Why do you change  
colour, sweet?

*Amin.* Eating too much meat.

*Alb.* Sauced with jealousy:  
Fy, fy, dear saint! i'faith, you are to blame;  
Are you not here? here fixed in my heart?

[*Horns sounded.*

*All.* Hark, hark!

*Enter ROSILLIA, CLARINDA, CROCALE, HIPPOLITA, and  
JULIETTA.*

*Alb.* They are come! Stand ready, and look nobly  
And with all humble reverence receive 'em!  
Our lives depend upon their gentle pities,  
And death waits on their anger.

*Mor.* Sure they are fairies.

*Tib.* Be thy devils, devils of flesh and blood,  
After so long a Lent, and tedious voyage,  
To me they are angels.

*Fran.* Oh, for some eringoes!

*Lam.* Potatoes, or cantharides!

*Tib.* Peace, ye rogues,  
That buy abilities of your 'pothecaries!  
Had I but took the diet of green cheese  
And onions for a month, I could do wonders.

*Ros.* Are these the jewels you run mad for?  
What can

You see in one of these, to whom you would  
Vouchsafe a gentle touch? Can nothing persuade  
you

To love yourselves, and place your happiness  
In cold and chaste embraces of each other?

*Jud.* This is from the purpose.

*Hip.* We had your grant  
To have them as they were.

*Clar.* It is a beauteous creature;  
And to myself I do appear deform'd,  
When I consider her: And yet she is  
The stranger's sister; why then should I fear?  
She cannot prove my rival.

*Ros.* When you repent  
That you refused my counsel, may it add  
To your afflictions, that you were forewarn'd,  
Yet leap'd into the gulph of your misfortunes!  
But have your wishes.

*Mast.* Now she makes to us.

*Amin.* I am instructed: But take heed, Albert,  
You prove not false!

*Alb.* You are your own assurance,  
And so acquainted with your own perfections,  
That weak doubts cannot reach you; therefore fear

*Ros.* That you are poor and miserable men [not!  
My eyes inform me; that, without our succours,  
Hope cannot flatter you to dream of safety,  
The present plight you are in can resolve you;  
That to be merciful is to draw near  
The heavenly essence; whether you will be  
Thankful I do not question; nor demand  
What country bred you, what [your] names, what  
To us it is sufficient we relieve [manners;  
Such as have shapes of men, and I command you,  
As we are not ambitious to know

Further of you, that on pain of death  
You presume not to inquire what we are,  
Or whence derived !

*Alb.* In all things we obey you,  
And thankfully we ever shall confess  
Ourselves your creatures.

*Ros.* You speak as becomes you.  
First then, and willingly, deliver up  
Those weapons we could force from you.

*Alb.* We lay 'em down most gladly at your feet.

*Tib.* I have had many a combat with a tall  
But never was disarm'd before. [wench ;

*Ros.* And now, hear comfort :  
Your wants shall be supplied ; and though it be  
A debt women may challenge, to be sued to,  
Especially from such they may command,  
We give up to you that power ; and therefore  
Freely each make his choice.

*Fran.* Then here I fix.

*Mor.* Nay, she is mine : I eyed her first.

*Lam.* This mine !

*Tib.* Stay,

Good rascals ! you are too forward, Sir Gallant,  
You are not giving order to a tailor  
For the fashion of a new suit ;  
Nor are you in your warehouse, master merchant ;  
Stand back, and give your betters leave, your  
betters ;

And grumble not ! if you do, as I love meat  
I will so swing the salt-itch out of you—  
Captain, master, and the rest of us,  
That are brothers, and good fellows, we have been  
Too late by the ears, and yet smart for our follies :  
To end therefore all future emulation,  
If you please to trust to my election,  
You shall say I am not partial to myself ;  
I doubt not give content to all.

*All.* Agreed, agreed !

*Tib.* Then, but observe how learned and dis-  
I will proceed ; and, as a skilful doctor [creetly  
In all the quirks belonging to the game,  
Read over your complexions ! For you, captain,  
Being first in place, and therefore first to be served,  
I give my judgment thus : For your aspect,  
You are much inclined to melancholy, and that  
Tells me the sullen Saturn had predominance  
At your nativity ! a malignant planet :  
And if not qualified by a sweet conjunction  
Of a soft and ruddy wench, born under Venus,  
It may prove fatal ; therefore to your arms  
I give this rose-check'd virgin.

*Clar.* To my wish !

Till now I ne'er was happy.

*Amin.* Nor I accursed.

*Tib.* Master,

You are old, yet love the game, (that I perceive  
too.)

And if not well spurr'd up, you may prove rusty ;  
Therefore to help you here's a Bradamanta,  
Or I am cozen'd in my calculation.

*Croc.* A poor old man allotted to my share !

*Tib.* Thou wouldst have two, nay, I think  
twenty ;

But fear not, wench ; though he be old he's tough :  
Look on his making ; he'll not fail, I warrant thee.

*Ros.* A merry fellow !

And were not man a creature I detest,  
I could endure his company.

*Tib.* Here's a fair herd

Of does before me ; and now for a barren one !

For, though I like the sport, I do not love  
To father children. Like the Grand Signior,  
Thus I walk in my seraglio,  
And view 'em as I pass ; then draw I forth  
My handkerchief, and having made my choice,  
I thus bestow it.

*Ros.* On me ?

*Tib.* On you : And now

My choice is made, to it, you hungry rascals !

*Alb.* Excellent !

*Amin.* As I love goodness,

It makes me smile i' th' height of all my fears.

*Clar.* What a strong contention you may behold  
Between my mother's mirth and anger !

*Tib.* Nay, no coyness ! be mistress of your word !  
I must and will enjoy you.

*Ros.* Be advised, fool :

Alas, I am old ! how canst thou hope content  
From one that's fifty ?

*Tib.* Never talk of it ;

I have known good ones at threescore and upwards ;  
Besides, the weather's hot,

And men that have experience, fear fevers :

A temperate diet is the only physic. Nor julips,  
Nor guaiacums, prunellos, camphire pills,

Nor good water, come not near your old woman ;  
Youthful stomachs are still craving, though there be  
Nothing left to stop their mouths with ; and believe

I am no frequent giver of those bounties.— [me  
Laugh on, laugh on, good gentlemen ; do !

I shall make holiday and sleep, when you

Dig in the mines till your hearts ache.

*Ros.* A mad fellow !

Well, sir, I'll give you hearing, and, as I like  
Your wooing and discourse—but I must tell you,

sir,

That rich widows look for great sums in present,  
Or assurances of ample jointures.

*Tib.* That to me is easy,

For instantly I'll do it. Hear me, comrades !

*Alb.* What say'st thou, Tibalt ?

*Tib.* Why, that to woo a wench with empty  
hands

Is no good heraldry ; therefore let's to the gold,

And share it equally ; 'twill speak for us

More than a thousand compliments or cringes,  
Ditties stolen from Petrarch, or discourse

From Ovid : Besides, 'twill beget us respect ;

And if ever Fortune friend us with a bark,

Largely supply us with all provision.

*Alb.* Well advised, defer it not.

*Tib.* Are ye all contented ?

*All.* We are.

*Tib.* Let's away then,

Straight we'll return, and you shall see our riches.

[*Exeunt all but the Women.*]

*Ros.* Since I knew what wonder and amazement  
I ne'er was so transported. [was,

*Clar.* Why weep you, gentle maid ?

There is no danger here to such as you ;

Banish fear, for with us I dare promise

You shall meet all courteous entertainment.

*Croc.* We esteem ourselves most happy in you.

*Hip.* And bless

Fortune that brought you hither.

*Clar.* Hark in your ear !

I love you as a friend already ; ere long

You shall call me by a nearer name : I wish

Your brother well ; I know you apprehend me.

*Amin.* Ay, to my grief I do.

[*Aside.*]

Alas, good ladies, there is nothing left me  
But thanks, to pay you with.  
*Clar.* That's more than yet  
You stand engaged for.

*Enter ALBERT, TIBALT, and the rest with treasure.*

*Ros.* So soon return'd?

*Alb.* Here; see the idol of the lapidary!

*Tib.* These pearls, for which the slavish negro  
To the bottom of the sea! [dives

*Lam.* To get which the industrious merchant  
At either pole! [touches

*Fran.* The never-failing purchase:  
Of lordships and of honours!

*Mor.* The world's mistress,  
That can give everything to the possessors!

*Mast.* For which the sailors scorn tempestuous  
And spit defiance in the sea! [winds,

*Tib.* Speak, lady;

Look we not lovely now?

*Ros.* Yes, yes: Oh my stars!  
Be now for ever blessed, that have brought  
To my revenge these robbers!—Take your arrows,  
And nail these monsters to the earth!

*Alb.* What mean you, lady?

In what have we offended?

*Ros.* Oh, my daughter!  
And you companions with me in all fortunes,  
Look on these caskets, and these jewels!  
These were our own, when first we put to sea  
With good Sebastian; and these the pirates  
That not alone deprived him of this treasure,  
But also took his life.

*Croc.* Part of my present  
I will remember was mine own.

*Hip.* And these were mine.

*Jul.* Sure I have worn this jewel.

*Ros.* Wherefore do you stay then,  
And not perform my command?

*Alb.* Oh, Heaven!

What cruel fate pursues us!

*Tib.* I am well enough served,  
That must be offering jointures, jewels,  
And precious stones, more than I brought with me.

*Ros.* Why shoot you not?

*Clar.* Hear me, dear mother;  
And when the greatest cruelty is justice,  
Do not shew mercy: Death to these starved  
wretches

Is a reward, not punishment; let 'em live  
To undergo the full weight of your displeasure.  
And that they may have sense to feel the torments  
They have deserved, allow 'em some small pittance.  
To linger out their tortures.

*Ros.* 'Tis well counsel'd.

*Alb.* And we will follow't.

*Alb.* Hear us speak.

*Ros.* Peace, dogs!—  
Bind 'em fast! When fury hath given way to  
I will determine of their sufferings, [reason.  
Which shall be horrid. Vengeance, though slow-  
paced,

At length o'ertakes the guilty; and the wrath  
Of the incensed Powers will fall most sure  
On wicked men, when they are most secure.

[Exeunt.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—*The same Island.*

*Enter RAYMOND, SEBASTIAN, NICURA, and Sailors.*

1 *Sail.* Here's nothing, sir, but poverty and  
hunger;

No promise of inhabitation; neither track  
Of beast, nor foot of man! We have search'd all  
This rocky desert, yet cannot discover  
Any assurance here is, or hath been such men.

2 *Sail.* Not a relic of anything they wore,  
Nor mark left by 'em, either to find relief,  
Or to warn others from the like misfortune.  
Believe it, these fellows are both false, and to get  
A little succour in their misery,  
Have framed this cunning tale.

*Raym.* The ship, I know, is French, and own'd  
If not by Albert, my arch-enemy. [by pirates,  
You told me too there was a woman with 'em,  
A young and handsome woman.

*Seb.* There was so, sir.

*Raym.* And such and such young gallants.

*Nic.* We told you true, sir,  
That they had no means to quit this island—

*Raym.* And that  
Amidst their mutiny, to save your lives,  
You got their ship?

*Seb.* All is most certain, sir.

*Raym.* Where are they then? Where are these  
men

Or woman? We are landed where your faiths  
Did assure us we could not miss their sights.

For this news we took ye to our mercy.  
Relieved ye, when the furious sea, and Famine  
Strove, which should first devour ye; clothed  
And cherish'd ye; used ye as those ye say ye are.  
Fair gentlemen. Now keep your words, and shew us  
This company your own free pities spoke of,  
These men ye left in misery; the woman!  
Men of those noble breedings ye pretend to  
Should scorn to lie, or get their food with falsehood;  
Come, direct us.

*Seb.* Alas, sir, they are gone;  
But by what means, or providence, we know not.

2 *Sail.* Was not the captain  
A fellow of a fiery, yet brave nature,  
A middle stature, and of brown complexion?

*Nic.* He was, sir.

*Raym.* 'Twas Albert,  
And my poor wretched sister!

1 *Sail.* 'Twas he certain;  
I ha' been at sea with him, many times at sea.

*Raym.* Come, shew us these men;  
Shew us presently, and do not dally with us!

*Seb.* We left 'em here, (what should we say,  
sir?) here, in this place.

2 *Sail.* The earth cannot swallow 'em; they  
No wings, they cannot fly, sure. [have

*Raym.* You told us too  
Of heaps of treasure, and of sums conceal'd,  
That set their hearts a-fire; we see no such thing,  
No such sign: What can ye say to purge ye?  
What have ye done with these men?

*Nic.* We, sir?

*Raym.* You, sir;

For certain I believe ye saw such people.

*Seb.* By all that's good, by all that's pure and  
By all that's holy— [honest,

*Raym.* I dare not credit ye;

Ye have so abused my hope, that now I hate ye.

*I Sail.* Let's put 'em in their ragged clothes  
again,

Captain, for certain they are knaves; let's e'en

Deliver 'em to their old fruitful farm;

Here let 'em walk the island!

*Seb.* If ye do so,

We shall curse your mercies.

*Nic.* Rather put us to sea again.

*Raym.* Not so;

Yet this I'll do, because ye say ye are Christians,  
Though I hardly credit it. Bring in the boat,  
And all aboard again, but these two wretches!  
Yet leave 'em four days' meat. If in that time  
(For I will search all nooks of this strange island)  
I can discover any track of these men,  
Alive or dead, I'll bear ye off, and honour ye;  
If not, ye have found your graves: So, farewell!

[*Exeunt.*  
*Nic.* That goodness dwells above, and knows us  
innocent,

Comfort our lives, and at his pleasure quit us!

*Seb.* Come, cousin, come! Old Time will end  
our story;

But no time (if we end well) ends our glory!

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*The Island of the Amazons. Before  
the Cabin of Clarinda.*

*Enter ROSELLIA, CLARINDA, CROCALE, HIPPOLITA, and  
JULETTA.*

*Ros.* Use 'em with all the austerity that may be;  
They are our slaves! Turn all those pities,  
Those tender reluctations that should become your  
To stern anger; and when ye look upon 'em, [sex,  
Look with those eyes that wept those bitter sorrows,  
Those cruelties ye suffer'd by their rapines!  
Some five days hence that blessed hour comes,  
Most happy once to me, that knit this hand  
To my dear husband's,

And both our hearts in mutual bands. That hour

*Clar.* What of that hour? [ladies—

*Ros.* Why, on that hour, daughter,  
And in the height of all our celebrations,  
Our dear remembrances of that dear man,  
And those that suffer'd with him, our fair kinsmen,  
Their lives shall fall a sacrifice to Vengeance,  
Their lives that ruin'd his; 'tis a full justice.

I will look glorious in their bloods;  
And the most noble spirit of Sebastian,  
That perish'd by the pride of these French pirates,  
Shall smile in Heaven, and bless the hand that  
Look strictly all unto your prisoners; [kill'd 'em.  
For he that makes a 'scape beyond my vengeance,  
Or entertains a hope by your fair usage—  
Take heed, I say! she that deceives my trust—  
Again take heed! her life—and that's but light  
Neither; her life in all the tortures  
My spirit can put on—

*All.* We shall be careful.

*Ros.* Do so.

[*Exit.*

*Clar.* You are angry, mother, and you are old  
too,

[*Aside.*

Forgetting what men are; but we shall temper you—  
How fare your prisoners, ladies? in what forms  
Do they appear in their afflictions?

*Jul.* Mine fare but poorly; for so I am com-  
'Tis none of their fault. [manded;

*Clar.* Of what sort are they?

*Jul.* They say they are gentlemen, but they shew

*Clar.* How do they suffer? [mungsrels.

*Jul.* 'Faith, like boys;

They are fearful in all fortunes; when I smile,  
They kneel, and beg to have that face continued,  
And, like poor slaves, adore the ground I go on;  
When I frown, they hang their most dejected heads  
Like fearful sheep-hounds: Shew 'em a crust of  
bread,

They'll saint me presently; and skip like apes  
For a sup of wine. I'll whip 'em like hacknies,  
Saddle 'em, ride 'em, do what I will with 'em.

*Clar.* Tush, these are poor things. Have they  
names like Christians? [Morillat;

*Jul.* Very fair names; Franville, Lamure, and  
And brag of great kindreds too. They offer very  
handsomely,

But that I am a fool, and dare not venture.

They are sound too, i' my conscience,

Or very near upon it.

*Clar.* Py! away, fool!

*Jul.* They tell me, if they might be brought  
before you,

They would reveal things of strange consequence.

*Clar.* Their base poor fears!

*Jul.* Ay, that makes me hate 'em too;

For if they were but manly to their sufferance,

Sure I should strain a point or two.

*Clar.* An hour hence I will take a view of 'em,  
And hear their business. Are your men thus too?

*Croc.* Mine? no, gentle madam; mine were not  
In such base moulds: Afflictions, tortures, [cast  
Are names and natures of delight to my men;  
All sorts of cruelties they meet like pleasures.  
I have but two, the one they call Du Pont,  
Tibalt Du Pont; the other the Ship-Master.

*Clar.* Have they not lives and fears?

*Croc.* Lives they have, madam;

But those lives never link'd to such companions  
As fears or doubts.

*Clar.* Use 'em nobly;

And where you find fit subjects for your pities,

Let it become ye to be courteous.

My mother will not always be thus rigorous.

*Hip.* Mine are sailors, madam; but they sleep  
soundly,

And seldom trouble me, unless it be when  
They dream sometimes of fights and tempests;  
Then they roar and whistle for cans of wine,  
And down they fling me; and in that rage,  
(For they are violent fellows) they play such freaks!—  
If they have meat, they thank me; if none,  
They heartily desire to be hang'd quickly;  
And this is all they care.

*Clar.* Look to 'em diligently,

And where your pities tell ye they may deserve,  
Give comfort.

*All.* We will.

*Enter AMINTA.*

[*Exeunt.*

*Clar.* Come hither, be not frighted!  
Think not ye steal this liberty, for we give it.

Your tender innocence assures me, virgin,  
You had no share in those wrongs these men did  
I find ye are not harden'd in such mischiefs. [us;

Your brother was misled sure,  
Fouly misled.

*Amin.* How much I fear these pities!

*Clar.* Certain he was, so much I pity him;  
And for your sake, whose eyes plead for him; nay,  
For his own sake——

*Amin.* Ha!

*Clar.* For I see about him,  
(Women have subtle eyes, and look narrowly)  
Or I am much abused; many fair promises;  
Nay, beyond those too, many shadow'd virtues.

*Amin.* I think he is good.

*Clar.* I assure myself he will be;  
And out of that assurance take this comfort,  
(For I perceive your fear hath much dejected you)  
I love your brother——

*Amin.* Madam?

*Clar.* Nay, do not take it for a dreamt-of favour,  
That comforts in the sleep, and awake vanishes:  
Indeed I love him.

*Amin.* Do you indeed?

*Clar.* You doubt still, because you fear his safety!  
Indeed he is the sweetest man I e'er saw;  
I think the best. Ye may hear without blushes,  
And give me thanks, if you please, for my courtesy.

*Amin.* Madam, I ever must:—Yet, witness  
Heaven, [Aside.

They are hard pull'd from me.—Believe me, madam,  
So many imperfections I could find—  
(Forgive me, grace, for lying!) and such wants—  
('Tis to an honest use)—such poverties,  
Both in his main proportion, and his mind too—  
There are a hundred handsomer—(I lie lowly)—  
Your noble usage, madam, hath so bound me to  
That I must tell you—— [you

*Clar.* Come, tell your worst.

*Amin.* He is no husband for you:  
I think you mean in that fair way.

*Clar.* You have hit it.

*Amin.* I am sure [Aside.  
You have hit my heart.—You will find him dan-  
gerous, madam,

As fickle as the flying air, proud, jealous,  
Soon glutted in your sweets, and soon forgetful.  
I could say more; and tell you I have a brother,  
Another brother, that so far excels this,  
Both in the ornaments of man, and making—

*Clar.* If you were not his sister, I should doubt  
you mainly,

Doubt you for his love, you deal so cunningly.  
Do not abuse me; I have trusted you  
With more than life, with my first love; be careful  
Of me!

*Amin.* In what use, madam?

*Clar.* In this, lady:  
Speak to him for me; you have power upon him;  
Tell him I love him, tell him I dote on him;  
It will become your tongue.

*Amin.* Become my grave! [Aside.  
Oh, Fortune, Oh, cursed Fortune!

*Clar.* Tell him his liberty,  
And all those with him, all our wealth and jewels—  
Good sister, for I'll call you so—

*Amin.* I shall, lady—  
Even die, I hope. [Aside.

*Clar.* Here's meat and wine, (pray take it)  
And there he lies: Give him what liberty you  
please,  
But still conceal'd; what pleasure you shall  
please, sister!

He shall ne'er want again. Nay, see an you'll take  
Why do you study this? [it!

*Amin.* To avoid mischiefs;  
If they should happen——

*Clar.* Go, and be happy for me. [Exit.

*Amin.* Oh, blind Fortune!  
Yet happy thus far, I shall live to see him.  
In what strange desolation lives he here now?  
Sure this curtain will reveal.

*Enter ALBERT, from the Cabin.*

*Alb.* Who's that? ha!  
Some gentle hand, I hope, to bring me comfort;  
Or, if it be my death, 'tis sweetly shadow'd.

*Amin.* Have you forgot me, sir?

*Alb.* My Aminta!

*Amin.* She, sir,  
That walks here up and down an empty shadow;  
One, that for some few hours  
But wanders here, carrying her own sad coffin,  
Seeking some desert place to lodge her griefs in.

*Alb.* Sweet sorrow, welcome! welcome, noble  
How got you this fair liberty to see me? [grief:  
For sorrows in your shape are strangers to me.

*Amin.* I come to counsel you.

*Alb.* You are still more welcome;  
For good friends in afflictions give good counsels.  
Pray then proceed.

*Amin.* Pray eat first; you shew faint:

Here's wine to refresh you too.

*Alb.* I thank you, dear.

*Amin.* Drink again!

*Alb.* Here's to our loves!—How! turn and weep!  
Pray pledge it! This happiness we have yet left,  
Our hearts are free—Not pledge it? why?  
Although beneath the axe, this health were holy.  
Why do you weep thus?

*Amin.* I come to woo you.

*Alb.* To woo me, sweet? I am woo'd and was  
already;

You know I am yours. This pretty way becomes  
you!  
But you would deceive my sorrows; that's your  
intent.

*Amin.* I would I could! I should not weep, but  
Do ye like your meat and wine? [smile.

*Alb.* Like it?

*Amin.* Do you like your liberty?

*Alb.* All these I well may like.

*Amin.* Then pray like her that sent 'em. Do  
And most unequal'd beauty? [you like wealth,  
*Alb.* Peace! indeed

You'll make me angry.

*Amin.* 'Would I were dead that ask it!

Then you might freely like, and I forgive you.

*Alb.* What like? and who? Add not more misery  
To a man that's fruitful in afflictions!

Who is't you would have me like? who sent these  
comforts?

*Amin.* I must tell.

*Alb.* Be bold!

*Amin.* But be you temperate!

If you be bold, I die. The young fair virgin—  
(Sorrow hath made me old.) Oh, hearken,  
And wisely hark—the governess's daughter,  
That star that strikes this island full of wonder,  
That blooming sweetness——

*Alb.* What of her?

*Amin.* She sent it;

And with it—it must be out!—She dotes on you.  
And must enjoy you; else no joy must find you.

*Alb.* And have you the patience to deliver this?

*Amin.* A sister may say much, and modestly.

*Alb.* A sister?

*Amin.* Yes, that name undid you,  
Undid us both: Had you named wife, she had fear'd  
you,

And fear'd the sin she follow'd; she had shunn'd,  
Her virgin modesty had not touch'd at you: [yea,  
But thinking you were free hath kindled a fire,  
I fear will hardly be extinguished.

*Alb.* Indeed I play'd the fool.

*Amin.* O my best sir, take heed,  
Take heed of lies! Truth, though it trouble some  
minds,  
Some wicked minds, that are both dark and dan-  
gerous,

Yet it preserves itself, comes off pure, innocent,  
And, like the sun, though never so eclipsed,  
Must break in glory. Oh, sir, lie no more!

*Alb.* You have read me a fair lecture,  
And put a spell upon my tongue for feigning.  
But how will you counsel now?

*Amin.* You must study to forget me.

*Alb.* How!

*Amin.* Be patient!  
Be wise and patient, it concerns you highly.  
Can you lay by our loves? But why should I  
doubt it?

You are a man, and men may shift affections;  
'Tis held no sin. To come to the point;  
You must lose me; many and mighty reasons—

*Alb.* Hear me, Aminta!

Have you a man that loves you too? that feeds you?  
That sends you liberty? has this great governess  
A noble son too, young, and apt to catch you?  
Am I, because I am in bonds, and miserable,  
My health decay'd, my youth and strength half-  
blasted,

My fortune like my waning self, for this despised?  
Am I for this forsaken? A new love chosen,  
And my affections, like my fortunes, wanderers?  
Take heed of lying, you that chid me for it,  
And shew'd how deep a sin it was, and dangerous,  
Take heed yourself! You swore you loved me dearly,  
No few nor little oaths you swore, Aminta;  
Those seal'd with no small faith, I then assured  
Oh, seek no new ways to cozen truth! [myself;  
*Amin.* I do not: By love itself, I love thee,  
And ever must, nor can all deaths dissolve it!

*Alb.* Why do you urge me thus then?

*Amin.* For your safety;

To preserve your life.

*Alb.* My life, I do confess, is hers; she gives it,  
And let her take it back! I yield it.  
My love's entirely thine, none shall touch at it;  
None, my Aminta, none.

*Amin.* You have made me happy;  
And now I know you are mine, Fortune, I scorn  
Go to your rest, and I'll sit by you: Whilst [thee!  
I have time I'll be your mate, and comfort you;  
For only I am trusted. You shall want  
Nothing, not a liberty that I can steal you.

*Alb.* May we not celebrate our loves, Aminta?  
And where our wishes cannot meet—

*Amin.* You are wanton;  
But with cold kisses I'll allay that fever.  
(Look for no more) and that in private too!  
Believe me, I shall blush else. But, let's consider;  
We are both lost else.

*Alb.* Let's in, and prevent fate. [Exeunt.

## SCENE III.—Before the Hut of CROCALE.

Enter CROCALE, JULETTA, TIBALT, and Master.

*Tib.* You do well to air us, ladies, we shall be  
What are your wise wills now? [musty else.

*Croc.* You are very crank still.

*Tib.* As crank as a holy friar fed with hail-  
But do ye bring us out to bait, like bulls? [stones.

*Mast.* Or are you weary of the charge ye are at?  
Turn us abroad again; let us jog, ladies;  
We are gross, and coarse, unfit for your sweet  
pleasures.

*Tib.* Knock off our shoes and turn's to grass.

*Croc.* You are determined

Still to be stubborn then? it well becomes you.

*Tib.* An humour, lady, that contents a prisoner:  
A sullen fit sometimes serves for a second course.

*Jul.* Ye may as well be kind,  
And gain our favours; gain meat and drink, and  
To rest your bones. [lodging

*Tib.* My bones have borne me thus long,  
And had their share of pains and recreations;  
If they fail now, they are no fair companions.

*Croc.* Are you thus harsh to all our sex?

*Mast.* We cannot

Be merry without a fiddler: Pray strike up  
Your tabors, ladies.

*Croc.* The fools despise us.

*Jul.* We know

You are very hungry now.

*Tib.* Yes; 'tis very wholesome, ladies;  
For we that have gross bodies, must be careful.  
Have ye no piercing air to stir our stomachs?  
We are beholden to ye for our ordinary.

*Jul.* Why, slaves, 'tis in our power to hang ye.

*Mast.* Very likely:

'Tis in our powers then to be hang'd, and scorn ye.  
Hanging's as sweet to us, as dreaming to you.

*Croc.* Come, be more courteous.

*Jul.* Do, and then ye shall  
Be pleased, and have all necessaries.

*Tib.* Give me

Some ratsbane then.

*Croc.* And why ratsbane, monsieur?

*Tib.* We live like vermin here, and eat up  
your cheese,  
Your mouldy cheese, that none but rats would  
bite at;

Therefore 'tis just that ratsbane should reward us.  
We are unprofitable, and our ploughs are broken;  
There is no hope of harvest this year, ladies.

*Jul.* Ye shall have all content.

*Mast.* Ay, and we'll serve your uses.

I had rather serve hogs, there's more delight in't;  
Your greedy appetites are never satisfied;  
Just like hungry camels, sleeping or waking  
You chew the cud still.

*Croc.* By this hand we'll starve ye.

*Mast.* 'Tis a noble courtesy: I had as lief ye  
Should famish me, as founder me; to be  
Jaded to death, is only fit for a hackney.

Here be certain tarts of tar about me,  
And parcels of potargo in my jerkin;  
As long as these last—

*Jul.* Which will not last ever.

*Tib.* Then we'll eat one another like good  
fellows.

A shoulder of his for a haunch of mine!

*Jul.* 'Tis excellent.

*Tib.* 'Twill be, as we'll dress it, ladies.

*Croc.* Why sure ye are not men?

*Mast.* Ye had best come search us;  
A seaman is seldom without a salt eel.

*Tib.* I am bad enough,  
And in my nature a notorious wench;  
And yet ye make me blush at your immodesty.  
Tell me, good Master, didst ever see such things?

*Mast.* I could like 'em, though they were lowly given,

If they could say no; but, fy on 'em!  
They gape like oysters.

*Tib.* Well, ye may hang, or starve us,  
But your commanding impudence shall never  
Fear us. Had ye by blushing signs, soft cunning,  
Crept into us, and shew'd us your necessities;  
We had met your purposes, supplied your wants.  
We are no saints, ladies:

I love a good wench as I love my life,  
And with my life I will maintain my love;  
But such a sordid impudence I'll spit at.  
Let's to our dens again! Come, noble Master!  
You know our minds, ladies: This is the faith  
In which we'll die. [*Exeunt TIBALT and Master.*]

*Croc.* I do admire 'em.

*Jul.* They  
Are noble fellows, and they shall not want  
For this.

*Croc.* But see, Clarinda comes. Farewell!  
I'll to my charge. [*Exit.*]

*Enter CLARINDA.*

*Clar.* Bring out those prisoners now, and let me  
And hear their business. [*see 'em,*]

*Jul.* I will, madam. [*Exit.*]

*Clar.* I hope she hath prevail'd upon her brother.  
She has a sweet tongue, and can describe the  
happiness

My love is ready to fling on him.  
And sure he must be glad, and certain wonder,  
And bless the hour that brought him to this island.  
I long to hear the full joy that he labours with.

*Enter JULETTA, MORILLAT, FRANVILLE, and LAMURE, and  
kneel to CLARINDA.*

*Mor.* Bless thy divine beauty!

*Fran.* Mirror of sweetness!

*Lam.* Ever-springing brightness!

*Clar.* Nay, stand up, gentlemen; and leave your  
flatteries.

*Mor.* She calls us gentlemen! Sure we shall have  
some meat now!

*Clar.* I am a mortal creature; worship Heaven,  
And give these attributes to their divinities.  
Methinks you look but thin.

*Mor.* Oh, we are starved,  
Immortal beauty!

*Lam.* We are all poor starved knaves.

*Fran.* Neither liberty nor meat, lady.

*Mor.* We were handsome men, and gentlemen,  
and sweet men,  
And were once gracious in the eyes of beauties;  
But now we look like rogues, like poor starved  
rogues.

*Clar.* What would ye do, if ye were to die now?

*Fran.* Alas, we were prepared. If you will hang  
Let's have a good meal or two to die with, [*us,*]  
To put us in heart!

*Mor.* Or if you'll drown us,  
Let us be drunk first, that we may die merrily,  
And bless the founders!

*Clar.* Ye shall not die so hastily.

What dare ye do to deserve my favour?

*Lam.* Put us to any service.

*Fran.* Any bondage,  
Let us but live!

*Mor.* We'll get a world of children;  
For we know ye are heinously provided that way:  
And you shall beat us when we offend you,  
Beat us abundantly, and take our meat from us.

*Clar.* These are weak abject things, that shew ye  
poor ones.

What's the great service ye so oft have threaten'd,  
If ye might see me, and win my favour?

*Jul.* That business of discovery?

*Mor.* Oh, I'll tell ye, lady.

*Lam.* And so will I.

*Fran.* And I. Pray let me speak first!

*Mor.* Good, no confusion!  
We are before a lady that knows manners:  
And, by the next meat I shall eat, 'tis certain,  
This little gentlewoman that was taken with us—

*Clar.* Your captain's sister? she you mean?

*Mor.* Ay, ay;

She is the business that we would open to you.  
You are cozen'd in her.

*Clar.* How! what is't you would open?

*Fran.* She is no sister.

*Mor.* Good sirs, how quick you are!

She is no sister, madam.

*Fran.* She is his—

*Mor.* Peace, I say!

*Clar.* What is she?

*Mor.* 'Faith, sweet lady,  
She's, as a man would say, his—

*Clar.* What?

*Lam.* His mistress.

*Mor.* Or, as some new translators read, his—

*Clar.* Oh me!

*Mor.* And why he should delude you thus,  
Unless he meant some villainy—These ten weeks  
He has had her at sea, for his own proper appetite.

*Lam.* His cabin-mate, I'll assure you.

*Clar.* No sister, say ye?

*Mor.* No more than I am brother to your beauty.  
I know not why he should juggle thus.

*Clar.* Do not lie to me!

*Mor.* If ye find me lie, lady, hang me empty!

*Clar.* How am I fool'd? Away with 'em, Julietta.  
And feed 'em:—

But, hark ye, with such food as they have given me.  
New misery!

*Fran.* Nor meat nor thanks for all this?

*Clar.* Make 'em more wretched.

Oh, I could burst! curse and kill now,  
Kill anything I meet!—Julietta, follow me,  
And call the rest along.

*Jul.* We follow, madam. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Before CLARINDA's Cabin.*

*Enter ALBERT and AMINTA.*

*Amin.* I must be gone now, else she may suspect  
me.

How shall I answer her?

*Alb.* Tell her directly.

*Amin.* That were too sudden, too imprudent:  
Fires of this nature must be put out cunningly;  
They will waste all come near 'em else. Farewell.  
Once more!

*Alb.* Farewell, and keep my love entire !  
Nay, kiss me once again ! Methinks we should not part.

*Amin.* Oh, be wise, sir !

*Alb.* Nay, one kiss more !

*Amin.* Indeed you are wanton ;  
We may be taken too.

*Enter CLARINDA, JULETTA, CROCALE, and HIPPOLITA.*

*Clar.* Out, thou base woman !

By Heaven, I'll shoot 'em both !

*Croc.* Nay, stay, brave lady, hold !

A sudden death cuts off a nobler vengeance.

*Clar.* Am I made bawd to your lascivious meetings ?

Are ye grown so wise in sin ? Shut up that villain ;  
And, sirrah, now expect my utmost anger.

Let him there starve !

*Alb.* I mock at your mischiefs ! *[Exit.*

*Clar.* Tie that false witch unto that tree ; there let  
The savage beasts gnaw off her sweetness, and  
snakes

Embrace her beauties ; tie her, and watch that none  
Believe her. *[She is tied to a tree.*

*Hip.* We could wish you better fortune, lady ;

But dare not help you.

*Amin.* Be your own friends ; I thank ye !

*[Exeunt all but AMINTA.*

Now, only my last audit, and my greatest !

Oh, Heaven, be kind unto me ;  
And, if it be thy will, preserve——

*Enter RAYMOND.*

*Raym.* Who's this ?

Sure 'tis a woman. I have trod this place,  
And found much footing ; now I know 'tis peopled.  
Ha ! let me see ! it is her face ! Oh, Heaven !  
Turn this way, maid !

*Amin.* Oh, Raymond, oh, brother !

*Raym.* Her tongue too ! 'tis my sister. What  
Nay, kiss me first ; oh, joy ! *[rude hand—*

*Amin.* Fly, fly, dear brother !  
You are lost else.

*Enter JULETTA, CROCALE, and CLARINDA.*

*Jul.* A man, a man, a new man !

*Raym.* What are these ?

*Croc.* An enemy, an enemy !

*Clar.* Dispatch him ;

Take him off ; shoot him straight !

*Raym.* I dare not use my sword, ladies,  
Against such comely faces.

*Amin.* Oh, brother, brother !

*Clar.* Away with 'em, and in dark prisons bind  
'em !—

One word replied, ye die both.—Now, brave mother,  
Follow thy noble anger, and I'll help thee !

*[Exeunt.*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Another part of the same Island.

*Enter ROSELLIA, CLARINDA, CROCALE, JULETTA, and  
HIPPOLITA.*

*Ros.* I am deaf to all your entreaties ; she that  
moves me

For pity or compassion to these pirates,  
Digs up her father's, or her brother's tomb,  
And spurns about their ashes.—Couldst thou re-  
member

What a father thou hadst once, 'twould steel thy  
'Gainst foolish pity : By his memory, *[heart*

And the remembrance of his dear embraces,  
I am taught, that in a noble cause revenge is noble :

And they shall fall the sacrifices, to appease  
His wand'ring ghost and my incensed fury.

*Clar.* The new-come prisoner too ?

*Ros.* He too :—Yet, that we may learn  
Whether they are the same, or near allied  
To those that forced me to this cruel course,  
Better their poor allowance, and permit 'em

To meet together, and confer,  
Within the distance of your ear. Perhaps

They may discover something that may kill  
Despair in me, and be a means to save 'em  
From certain ruin.

*Croc.* That shall be my charge.

*Ros.* Yet, to prevent

All hope of rescue, (for this new-come captain  
Hath both a ship and men not far off from us,  
Though ignorant to find the only port  
That can yield entrance to our happy island)

Guard the place strongly ; and, ere the next sun  
Ends his diurnal progress, I will be

Happy in my revenge, or set 'em free. *[Exeunt.*

### SCENE II.—The inside of CROCALE'S Cabin.

*Enter CROCALE, JULETTA, and HIPPOLITA. A Table  
furnished.*

*Croc.* So, serve it plentifully, and lose not time  
To inquire the cause ; there is a main design  
That hangs upon this bounty. See the table  
Furnish'd with wine too ; that discovers secrets  
Which tortures cannot open : Open the doors too  
O' th' several prisons, and give all free entrance  
Into this room ! Undiscover'd I can here mark all.

*[Exeunt JULETTA and HIPPOLITA ; CROCALE conceals  
herself on one side of the Stage.*

*Enter TIRALT and Master.*

Here's captain Careless, and the tough Ship-  
Master ;

The slaves are nosed like vultures : How wild they  
*Tib.* Ha ! *[look !*

The mystery of this some good hobgoblin  
Rise and reveal !

*Mast.* I am amazed at it ;

Nor can I sound the intent.

*Tib.* Is not this bread ?

Substantial bread, not painted ?

*Mast.* But take heed !

You may be poison'd.

*Tib.* I am sure I am famish'd ;

And famine, as the wise man says, gripes the guts  
As much as any mineral. This may be treacle

Sent to preserve me after a long fast ;

Or be it viper's spittle, I'll run the hazard.

*Mast.* We are past all fear ; I'll take part with  
*Tib.* Do : *[you.*

And now, i' faith, how do you feel yourself ? *[They eat.*  
I find great ease in't. What's here ? wine, an't be

Thy will! strong lusty wine! [*Drinks.*] Well, fools  
Of mithridate, cordials, and elixirs; [may talk  
But from my youth this was my only physic.

Here's a colour!  
What lady's cheek, though cerused o'er, comes  
near it?

It sparkles too, hangs out diamonds: oh, my  
sweetheart,

How I will hug thee! again, and again!  
They are poor drunkards, and not worth thy favours,  
That number thy moist kisses in these crystals.

*Mast.* But, monsieur,  
Here are suckets, and sweet dishes.

*Tib.* Tush! boy's meat!  
I am past it; Here is strong food, fit for men,  
Nectar, old lad!—Mistress of merry hearts,  
Once more I am bold with you.

*Mast.* Take heed, man!  
Too much will breed distemper.

*Tib.* Hast thou lived at sea  
The most part of thy life, where to be sober,  
While we have wine aboard, is capital treason,  
And dost thou preach sobriety?

*Mast.* Pr'ythee, forbear;  
We may offend in it; we know not for whom  
It was provided.

*Tib.* I am sure for me;  
Therefore *footra!* when I am full, let 'em hang  
I care not! [me;

*Mast.* This has been his temper ever.—  
See, provoking dishes; candied eringoes, and pota-

*Tib.* I'll not touch 'em; I will drink; [toes!  
But not a bit on a march; I'll be an eunuch rather.

*Enter ALBERT, AMINTA, and RAYMOND, on one side;  
LAMURE, MORILLAT, and FRANVILLE, on the other.*

*Mast.* Who are these?  
*Tib.* Marry, who you will;  
I keep my text here.

*Alb.* Raymond?  
*Raym.* Albert?

*Tib.* Away! I'll be drunk alone;  
Keep off, rogues, or I'll belch ye into air;  
Not a drop here!

*Amin.* Dear brother, put not in your eyes  
such anger!

Those looks, poison'd with fury, shot at him,  
Reflect on me. Oh, brother, look milder, or  
The crystal of his temperance will turn  
Them on yourself.

*Alb.* Sir, I have sought you long  
To find your pardon; you have plough'd the  
ocean,

To wreak your vengeance on me, for the rape  
Of this fair virgin. Now our fortune guides us  
To meet on such hard terms, that we need rather  
A mutual pity of our present state,  
Than to expostulate of breaches past,  
Which cannot be made up. And though it be  
Far from your power to force me to confess  
That I have done you wrong, or such submission  
Failing to make my peace, to vent your anger,  
You being yourself slaved, as I to others;  
Yet for your sister's sake, her blessed sake,  
In part of recompence of what she has suffer'd  
For my rash folly, the contagion  
Of my black actions catching hold upon  
Her purer innocence, I crave your mercy;  
And wish, however several motives kept us  
From being friends while we had hope to live,

Let death, which we expect, and cannot fly from,  
End all contention!

*Tib.* Drink upon it;  
'Tis a good motion! ratify it in wine,  
And 'tis authentional!

*Raym.* When I consider  
The ground of our long difference, and look on  
Our not-to-be-avoided miseries,  
It doth beget in me, I know not how,  
A soft religious tenderness; which tells me,  
Though we have many faults to answer for  
Upon our own account, our father's crimes  
Are in us punish'd. Oh, Albert, the course  
They took to leave us rich was not honest;  
Nor can that friendship last, which Virtue joins not.  
When first they forced the industrious Portugals  
From their plantations in the Happy Islands—

*Croc.* This is that I watch for. [*Apart.*

*Raym.* And did omit no tyranny which men,  
Inured to spoil and mischief, could inflict  
On the griev'd sufferers; when by lawless rapine  
They reap'd the harvest which their labours  
sow'd;

And not content to force 'em from their dwelling,  
But laid for 'em at sea, to ravish from 'em  
The last remainder of their wealth; then, then,  
After a long pursuit, each doubting other,  
As guilty of the Portugals' escape,  
They did begin to quarrel, like ill men:  
(Forgive me, piety, that I call 'em so!)  
No longer love or correspondence holds,  
Than it is cemented with prey or profit:  
Then did they turn those swords they oft had  
bloodied

With innocent gore, upon their wretched selves,  
And paid the forfeit of their cruelty  
Shewn to Sebastian and his colony,  
By being fatal enemies to each other.  
Thence grew Aminta's rape, and my desire  
To be revenged. And now observe the issue!  
As they for spoil forgot compassion  
To women, (who should ever be exempted  
From the extremities of a lawful war)  
We now, young able men, are fallen into  
The hands of women; that, against the soft  
Tenderness familiar to their sex,  
Will shew no mercy.

*Enter CROCALE.*

*Croc.* None, unless you shew us  
Our long-lost husbands.  
We are those Portugals you talk'd of.

*Raym.* Stay!  
I met upon the sea in a tall ship  
Two Portugals, famish'd almost to death.

*Tib.* Our ship, by this wine,  
And those the rogues that stole her,  
Left us to famish in the Barren Islands!  
*Raym.* Some such tale they told me;  
And something of a woman, which I find  
To be my sister.

*Croc.* Where are these men?

*Raym.* I left 'em,  
Supposing they had deluded me  
With forged tales, in the island, where they said  
They had lived many years, the wretched owners  
Of a huge mass of treasure.

*Alb.* The same men,  
And that the fatal muck we quarrell'd for.  
*Croc.* They were Portugals, you say?

*Raym.* So they profess'd.

*Croc.* They may prove such men as may save your lives :

And so much I am taken with fair hope,  
That I will hazard life to be resolved on't.  
How came you hither ?

*Raym.* My ship lies by the river's mouth,  
That can convey ye to these wretched men  
Which you desire to see.

*Croc.* Back to your prisons,  
And pray for the success ! If they be those  
Which I desire to find, you are safe ; if not,  
Prepare to die to-morrow ! for the world  
Cannot redeem ye.

*Alb.* However, we are arm'd  
For either fortune.

[*Exeunt all but TIBALT and CROCALE.*]

*Tib.* What must become of me now,  
That I am not dismiss'd ?

*Croc.* Oh, sir, I purpose  
To have your company.

*Tib.* Take heed, wicked woman !  
I am apt to mischief now.

*Croc.* You cannot  
Be so unkind, to her that gives you liberty.

*Tib.* No,  
I shall be too kind, that's the devil on't !  
I have had store of good wine ; and when I am  
Joan is a lady to me, and I shall lay [drunk,  
About me, like a lord. I feel strange motions !  
Avoid me, temptation !

*Croc.* Come, sir, I'll help you in. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE III.—*The Desert Island.*

*Enter SEBASTIAN and NICUSA.*

*Nic.* What may that be  
That moves upon the lake ?

*Seb.* Still it draws nearer ;  
And now I plainly can discern it :  
It is the French ship.

*Nic.* In it a woman,  
Who seems to invite us to her.

*Seb.* Still she calls  
With signs of love to hasten to her :  
So lovely hope doth still appear,  
I feel nor age, nor weakness.

*Nic.* Though it bring death,  
To us 'tis comfort, and deserves a meeting :  
Or else Fortune tired with what we have suffered,  
And in it overcome, as it may be,  
Now sets a period to our misery. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—*The Island of the Amazons. An Altar prepared. Horrid Music.*

*Enter severally, RAYMOND, ALBERT, and AMINTA.*

*Raym.* What dreadful sounds are these ?  
*Amin.* Infernal music,  
Fit for a bloody feast.

*Alb.* It seems prepared  
To kill our courages, ere they divorce  
Our souls and bodies.

*Raym.* But they that fearless fall,  
Deprive them of their triumph.

*An Altar prepared. Enter ROSSELLA, CLARINDA, JULETTA,  
HIPPOLITA, &c.*

*Amin.* See the furies,  
In their full trim of cruelty !

*Ros.* 'Tis the last

Duty that I can pay to my dead lord.  
Set out the altar ! I myself will be  
The priest, and boldly do those horrid rites  
You shake to think on. Lead these captains nearer ;  
For they shall have the honour to fall first  
To my Sebastian's ashes. And now, wretches,  
As I am taught already, that you are,  
And lately by your free confession,  
French pirates, and the sons of those I hate  
Even equal with the devil ; hear, with horror,  
What 'tis invites me to this cruel course,  
And what you are to suffer ! No Amazons we,  
But women of Portugal, that must have from you  
Sebastian and Nicusa : We are they  
That groan'd beneath your fathers' wrongs ! We  
Those wretched women

[are  
Their injuries pursued and overtook,  
And from the sad remembrance of our losses  
We are taught to be cruel. When we were forced  
From that sweet air we breathed in, by their rapine,  
And sought a place of being, as the seas  
And winds conspired with their ill purposes,  
To load us with afflictions, in a storm  
That fell upon us, the two ships that brought us,  
To seek new fortunes in an unknown world,  
Were severed ; the one bore all the able men,  
Our treasure and our jewels ; in the other  
We women were embark'd, and fell upon,  
After long tossing in the troubled main,  
This pleasant island ; but in few months,  
The men that did conduct us hither died :  
We long before had given our husbands lost.  
Rememb'ring what we had suffer'd by the French,  
We took a solemn oath ne'er to admit  
The curs'd society of men. Necessity  
Taught us those arts, not usual to our sex ;  
And the fertile earth yielding abundance to us,  
We did resolve, thus shaped like Amazons  
To end our lives : But when you arrived here,  
And brought as presents to us our own jewels,  
Those which were borne in the other ship—  
How can ye hope to 'scape our vengeance ?

*Amin.* It boots not then to swear our inno-  
cence ?

*Alb.* Or that we never forced it from the  
owners ?

*Raym.* Or that there are a remnant of that wreck,  
And not far off ?

*Ros.* All you affirm, I know,  
Is but to win time ; therefore prepare your throats ;  
The world shall not redeem ye ! And, that your cries  
May find no entrance to our ears, to move  
Pity in any, bid loud music sound  
Their fatal knells ! If ye have prayers, use 'em  
Quickly, to any power will own ye.—

*Enter CROCALE, SEBASTIAN, NICUSA, and TIBALT.*

But ha ! who are these ? what spectacles of mis-  
fortune ?

Why are their looks so full of joy and wonder ?

*Croc.* Oh, lay by

These instruments of death, and welcome to  
Your arms what you durst never hope to embrace !  
This is Sebastian : this Nicusa, madam ;  
Preserved by miracle.—Look up, dear sir,  
And know your own Rosella ! be not lost  
In wonder and amazement ; or if nature  
Can, by instinct, instruct you what it is,  
To be bless'd with the name of father, freely  
Enjoy it in this fair virgin !

*Seb.* Though my miseries,  
And many years of wants I have endured,  
May well deprive me of the memory  
Of all joys past; yet, looking on this building,  
This ruin'd building of a heavenly form  
In my Rosellia, I must remember  
I am Sebastian.

*Ros.* Oh, my joys!

*Seb.* And here,  
I see a perfect model of thyself,  
As thou wert when thy choice first made thee  
mine!

These cheeks and fronts, though wrinkled now  
with time,

Which art cannot restore, had equal pureness  
Of natural white and red, and as much ravishing:  
Which, by fair order and succession,  
I see descend on her; and may thy virtues  
Wind into her form, and make her a perfect dower,  
No part of thy sweet goodness wanting to her!  
I will not now, Rosellia, ask thy fortunes,  
Nor trouble thee with hearing mine;  
Those shall hereafter serve to make glad hours  
In their relation. All past wrongs forgot,—  
I'm glad to see you, gentlemen; but most,  
That it is in my power to save your lives;

You saved ours, when we were near starved at sea,  
And I despair not—for, if she be mine,  
Rosellia can deny Sebastian nothing.

*Ros.* She does give up  
Herself, her power and joys, and all, to you,  
To be discharged of 'em as too burdensome;  
Welcome in any shape!

*Seb.* Sir, in your looks I read [To RAYMOND.  
Your suit of my Clarinda; she is yours.  
And, lady, if it be in me to confirm  
Your hopes in this brave gentleman, presume  
I am your servant.

*Alb.* We thank you, sir.

*Amin.* Oh, happy hour!

*Alb.* Oh, my dear Aminta,  
Now all our fears are ended.

*Tib.* Here I fix; she is mettle,  
Steel to the back, and will cut my leaden dagger,  
If not used with discretion.

*Croc.* You are still no changeling.

*Seb.* Nay, all look cheerfully; for none shall be  
Denied their lawful wishes. When a while  
We have here refresh'd ourselves, we will return  
To our several homes: And well that Voyage ends,  
That makes of deadly enemies, faithful friends!

[Exeunt.]

# WIT AT SEVERAL WEAPONS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

SIR PERFIDIOUS OLDSCRAFT, an old Knight, a great admirer of Wit.

WITTYPATE OLDSCRAFT, his Father's own Son.

SIR GREGORY FOP, a witless Lord of Land.

CUNNINGHAM, a discreet Gentleman, Sir GREGORY'S Comrade and supplanter.

SIR RUINOUS GENTRY, a decay'd Knight, } Two sharking Companions.

PRISCIAN, a poor Scholar,

POMPEY DOODLE, a Clown, Sir GREGORY'S Man, a piece of puff-paste, like his Master.

MASTER CREDULOUS, Nephew to Sir PERFIDIOUS, a shallow-brained Scholar.

Niece to Sir PERFIDIOUS, a rich and witty Heir.

LADY RUINOUS, Wife to Sir RUINOUS.

GUARDIANESS to Sir PERFIDIOUS his Niece, an old dotting Crone.

MIRABELL, the Guardianess's Niece.

## SCENE,— LONDON.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in OLDSCRAFT'S House.

Enter SIR PERFIDIOUS OLDSCRAFT and WITTYPATE.

Witty. Sir, I'm no boy; I'm deep in one and The second year's approaching. [twenty;

Oldc. A fine time for

A youth to live by his wits then, I should think, And yet to see how urgent thou art too!

Witty. Wits, sir?

Oldc. Ay, wits, sir; if it be so strange to thee, I'm sorry I spent that time to get a fool, I might have employ'd my pains a great deal better: Thou know'st all that I have I ha' got by my wits. And yet to see how urgent thou art too!

It grieves me thou art so degenerate To trouble me for means; I never offer'd it My parents from a school-boy; past nineteen once, (See that these times are grown to,) before twenty I rush'd into the world, which is indeed much like The art of swimming, he that will attain to't Must fall plump, and duck himself at first, And that will make him hardy and adventurous; And not stand putting in one foot, and shiver, And then draw t'other after, like a quake-buttock; Well he may make a padler i' the world, From hand to mouth, but never a brave swimmer, Borne up by th' chin, as I bore up myself, With my strong industry that never fail'd me; For he, that lies borne up with patrimonies, Looks like a long great ass that swims with bladders:

Come but one prick of adverse fortune to him, He sinks, because he never tried to swim, When Wit plays with the billows that choak'd him.

Witty. Why, is it not a fashion for a father, sir, Out of his yearly thousands to allow His only son a competent brace of hundreds, Or such a toy?

Oldc. Yes; if he mean to spoil him, Or mar his wits, he may, but never I. This is my humour, sir, which you'll find constant; I love wit so well, because I lived by't, that I'll Give no man power out of my means to hurt it, And that's a kind of gratitude to my raiser, Which great ones oft forget. I admire much This age's dullness! When I scarce writ man, The first degree that e'er I took in thriving, I lay intelligencer close for wenching, Could give this lord, or knight, a true certificate Of all the maidenheads extant; how many lay 'Mongst chambermaids, how many 'mongst Exchange wenches,

(Though never many there, I must confess, They have a trick to utter ware so fast;) I knew which lady had a mind to fall, Which gentlewoman new divorc'd, which tradesman breaking, The price of every sinner to a hair, And where to raise each price; which were the termers

That would give velvet petticoats, tissue gowns, Which pieces, angels, suppers, and half-crowns: I knew how to match, and make my market; Could give intelligence where the pox lay leger, And then to see the lechers shift a point 'Twas sport and profit too; how they would shun Their adored mistress' chambers, and run fearfully, Like rats from burning houses! so brought I My clients o' the game still safe together, And noble gamesters loved me, and I felt it. Give me a man that lives by his wits, say I, And's never left a groat! there's the true gallant. When I grew somewhat pury, I grew then In men's opinions too, and confidences; They put things call'd executorships upon me, The charge of orphans, little senseless creatures,

Whom in their childhoods I bound forth to felt-makers,

To make 'em lose, and work away their gentry,  
Disguise their tender natures with hard custom,  
So wrought 'em out in time; there I rose ungently.  
Nor do I fear to discourse this unto thee;  
I'm arm'd at all points against treachery,  
I hold my humour firm; if I can see thee thrive by  
Thy wits while I live, I shall have the more courage  
To trust thee with my lands when I die; if not,  
The next best wit I can hear of, carries 'em:  
For since in my time and knowledge so many rich  
children

Of the city conclude in beggary, I'd rather  
Make a wise stranger my executor  
Than a foolish son my heir, and have my lands  
call'd after

My wit than after my name; and that's my nature.

*Witty.* 'Tis a strange harsh one! Must I still  
shift then?—

I come, brave cheats! once to my trade again!  
And I'll ply't harder now than e'er I did for't.—  
You'll part with nothing then, sir?

*Oldc.* Not a jot, sir.

*Witty.* If I should ask your blessing ere I go,  
I think you would not give't me. [sir,

*Oldc.* Let me but hear thou livest by thy wits  
once,

Thou shalt have anything; thou'rt none of mine  
Then why should I take care for thee? [else!

*Witty.* Thank your bounty! [Exit.

*Oldc.* So wealth love me, and long life, I beseech  
As I do love the man that lives by his wits, [it,  
He comes so near my nature! I'm grown old now,  
And even arrived at my last cheat, I fear me;  
But 'twill make shift to bury me, by day-light too,  
And discharge all my legacies, 'tis so wealthy,  
And never trouble any interest money.  
I've yet a niece to wed, over whose steps  
I have placed a trusty watchful Guardianess,  
For fear some poor earl steal her ('t has been  
threaten'd)

To redeem mortgaged land, but he shall miss on't;  
To prevent which, I have sought out a match for her,  
Pop of Pop-Hall he writes himself, (I take it,  
The ancient'st Pop in England,) with whom I'm  
privately

Compounded for the third part of her portion,  
And she seems pleased; so two parts rest with me.

*Enter SIR GREGORY POP and CUNNINGHAM.*

He's come.—Sir Gregory, welcome! What's he, sir?

*Greg.* Young Cunningham, a Norfolk gentleman,  
One that has lived upon the Fops, my kindred,  
Ever since my remembrance. He's a wit indeed,  
And we all strive to have him; nay, 'tis certain  
Some of our name has gone to law for him.  
Now 'tis my turn to keep him; and indeed  
He's plaguy chargeable, as all your wits are:  
But I will give him over when I list;  
I ha' used wits so before.

*Oldc.* I hope when you're married, sir,  
You'll shake him off.

*Greg.* Why, what do you take me to be,  
Old father-i'-law that shall be? Do you think  
I'll have any of the wits hang upon me after I'm  
married once?

None of my kindred ever had before me.  
But where's this niece? Is it a fashion in London  
To marry a woman and never see her?

*Oldc.* Excuse the niceness, sir! that care's your  
friend;

Perhaps, had she been seen, you had never seen  
her:

There's many a spent thing, call'd *An't like your  
honour,*

That lies in wait for her: At first snap she's a  
countess,

Drawn with six mares through Fleet-street, and a  
coachman,

Sitting barchaded to their Flanders buttocks.—  
This whets him on. [Aside.

*Greg.* Pray let's clap up the business, sir!  
I long to see her. Are you sure you have her?  
Is she not there already? Hark, oh, hark!

*Oldc.* How now? what's that, sir?

*Greg.* Every caroch goes by,  
Goes even to th' heart of me.

*Oldc.* I'll have that doubt eased, sir,  
Instantly eased, Sir Gregory: And, now I think  
on't,

A toy comes i' my mind, seeing your friend there;  
We'll have a little sport, give you but way to't,  
And put a trick upon her: I love wit precious!  
You shall not be seen yet; we'll stole your friend  
first,

If't please but him to stand for th' anti-masque.

*Greg.* Puh, he shall stand for anything (why  
his supper

Lies i' my breeches here;) I'll make him fast else.

*Oldc.* Then comes you forth more unexpectedly,  
The masque itself, a thousand a-year jointure:  
The cloud, your friend, will be then drawn away,  
And only you the beauty of the play.

*Greg.* For red and black, I'll put down all your  
fullers;

Let but your niece bring white, and we have three  
colours. [Exit GAMBOOR.

*Oldc.* I'm given to understand you are a wit, sir.  
*Cunn.* I'm one that fortune shews small favour  
to, sir.

*Oldc.* Why, there you conclude it, whether you  
will or no, sir.

To tell you truth, I'm taken with a wit.  
*Cunn.* Fowlers catch woodcocks so; let not  
them know so much!

*Oldc.* A pestilence mazard! a duke Humphrey  
spark, [Aside.

He had rather lose his dinner than his jest!  
I say, I love a wit the best of all things.

*Cunn.* Always except yourself.  
*Oldc.* He has given't me twice now

All with a breath, I thank him! But that I love a  
I should be heartily angry. [wit,

*Enter Niece and Guardianess.*

Cuda, my Niece!

You know the business with her?

*Cunn.* With a woman?  
'Tis even the very same it was, I'm sure,  
Five thousand years ago, no fool can miss it.

*Oldc.* This is the gentleman I promised, Niece,  
To present to your affection.

*Cunn.* 'Ware that arrow!  
*Oldc.* Deliver me the truth now of your liking.

*Cunn.* I'm spoil'd already; that such poor lean  
game

Should be found out as I am!

*Oldc.* Go, set to her, sir.—Ha, ha, ha!

*Cunn.* How noble is this virtue in you, lady!

Your eye may seem to commit a thousand slaughter  
On your dull servants, which, truly tasted, [ters  
Conclude all in comforts.

*Oldc.* Puh!

*Niece.* It rather shews what a true worth can  
Such as yours is. [make,

*Oldc.* And that's not worth a groat.—  
How like you him, Niece?

*Niece.* It shall appear how well, sir:  
I humbly thank you for him.

*Oldc.* Ha, ha! good gullery! he does it well, i'faith.  
'Light, as if he meant to purchase Lip-land there:  
Hold, hold! bear off, I say!

'Slid, your part hangs too long.

*Cunn.* My joys are mockeries.

*Niece.* You have both express'd a worthy care  
and love, sir:

Had mine own eye been set at liberty  
To make a public choice, (believe my truth, sir,)  
It could not ha' done better for my heart  
Than your good providence has.

*Oldc.* You will say so then!

Alas, sweet Niece, all this is but the scabbard;  
Now I draw forth the weapon.

*Niece.* How!

*Oldc.* Sir Gregory!  
Approach, thou lad of thousands!

*Enter SIR GREGORY.*

*Greg.* Who calls me?

*Niece.* What motion's this? the model of Ni-  
nivah?

*Oldc.* Accost her daintily now, let me advise thee!

*Greg.* I was advised to bestow dainty cost on you.

*Niece.* You were ill-advised; back, and take  
better counsel!

You may have good for an angel: The least cost  
You can bestow upon a woman, sir,  
Trebles ten counsellors' fees; in lady-ware,  
You're over head and ears, ere you be aware.  
'Faith, keep a bachelor still, and go to bowls, sir,  
Follow your mistress there, and prick and save, sir!  
For other mistresses will make you a slave, sir!

*Greg.* So, so! I have my lerrepopo already?

*Oldc.* Why, how now, Niece! this is the man,  
I tell you!

*Niece.* He? hang him! Sir, I know you do but  
This is the man you would say. [mock;

*Oldc.* The devil rides, I think!

*Cunn.* I must use cunning here. [Aside.

*Oldc.* Make me not mad! use him with all  
This is the man, I swear. [respect!

*Niece.* 'Would you could persuade me to that!  
Alas, you cannot go beyond me, uncle:  
You carry a jest well, I must confess,  
For a man of your years; but—

*Oldc.* I'm wrought beside myself!

*Cunn.* [To the Guardianess.] I ne'er beheld  
comeliness till this minute.

*Guard.* Oh, good sweet sir, pray offer not these  
To an old gentlewoman! [words

*Niece.* Sir!

*Cunn.* Away, fifteen!

Here's fifty-one exceeds thee.

*Niece.* What's the business?

*Cunn.* Give me these motherly creatures!  
Come, ne'er smother it;

I know you are a teeming woman yet.

*Guard.* Troth, a young gentleman might do  
much, I think, sir.

*Cunn.* Go to then.

*Guard.* And I should play my part, or I were

*Niece.* Can you so soon neglect me? [ingrateful.

*Cunn.* Hence! I'm busy.

[Whispers with the Guardianess.

*Oldc.* This cross point came in luckily.—Impu-  
dent baggage,

Hang from the gentleman! art thou not ashamed  
To be a widow's hindrance?

*Cunn.* Are you angry, sir? [desire

*Oldc.* You're welcome! pray court on: I shall  
Your honest wive acquaintance.—Vex me not,

After my care and pains to find a match for thee,  
Lest I confine thy life to some out-chamber,

Where thou shalt waste the sweetness of thy youth,  
Like a consuming light in her own socket,

And not allow'd a male-creature about thee!

A very monkey, thy necessity

Shall prize at a thousand pound; a chimney-  
At fifteen hundred. [sweeper

*Niece.* But are you serious, uncle?

*Oldc.* Serious.

*Niece.* Pray let me look upon the gentleman  
With more heed? then I did but hum him over,

In haste, 'good faith, as lawyers chancery sheets.—  
Beshrew my blood, a tolerable man,

Now I distinctly read him!

*Greg.* Hum, hum, hum!

*Niece.* Say he be black, he's of a very good  
pitch;

Well-ankled, two good confident calves, they look  
As if they would not shrink at the ninth child;

The redness in the face—why, that's in fashion,  
Most of your high bloods have it; [a] sign of

greatness, marry;

'Tis to be taken down too with May-butter:

I'll send to my lady Spend-tail for her medicine.

*Greg.* Lum te dum, dum, dum, de dum! [Hums.

*Niece.* He's qualified too, believe me.

*Greg.* Lum te dum, de dum, de dum!

*Niece.* Where was my judgment?

*Greg.* Lum te dum, dum, dum, te dum, te dum!

*Niece.* Perfection's cover'd mess.

*Greg.* Lum te dum, te dum, te dum!

*Niece.* [Aside.] It smokes apparently.—Pardon,  
The error of my sex! [sweet sir,

*Oldc.* Why, well said, Niece!

Upon submission, you must pardon her now, sir.

*Greg.* I'll do't by course: Do you think I am  
an ass, knight?

Here's first my hand; now it goes to the seal-office.  
[Kisses her.

*Oldc.* Formally finish'd!—How goes this suit  
forward?

*Cunn.* I'm taking measure of the widow's mind,  
I hope to fit her heart. [sir;

*Guard.* Who would have dreamt

Of a young morsel now? Things come in minutes!

*Greg.* Trust him not, widow; he's a younger  
brother,

He'll swear and lie; believe me, he's worth nothing.

*Guard.* He brings more content to a woman  
with that nothing,

Than he that brings his thousands without any-  
thing;

We have precedents for that amongst great ladies.

*Oldc.* Come, come! no language now shall be  
in fashion

But your love-phrase, the bell to procreation.

[Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter* SIR RUINOUS GENTRY, WITTYPATE, and PRISCIAN, *disguised.*

*Witty.* Pox, there's nothing puts me besides my wits, but this fourth, this lay illiterate share; there's no conscience in't.

*Ruin.* Sir, it has ever been so where I have practised, and must be still where I am. Nor has it been undeserved at the year's end, and shuffle the almanack together, vacations and term-times, one with another; though I say't, my wife is a woman of a good spirit; then it is no lay-share.

*Pris.* 'Faith, for this five year, *ego possum probare*, I have had a hungry penurious share with 'em, and she has had as much as I always.

*Witty.* Present, or not present?

*Pris.* *Residens aut non residens, per fidem!*

*Witty.* And what precedent's this for me! because your *hic et hæc, turpis* and *qui mihi discipulus* brains (that never got anything but by accident and uncertainty) did allow it, therefore I must, that have grounded conclusions of wit, hereditary rules from my father, to get by?

*Ruin.* Sir, be compendious; either take or refuse: I will bate no token of my wife's share; make even the last reckonings, and either so unite, or here divide company.

*Pris.* A good resolution *profeculo!* let every man beg his own way, and happy man be his dole!

*Witty.* Well, here's your double share and single brains, *Pol, adipol*, here's toward; a *castor ecuator* for you! I will endure it a fortnight longer, but by these just five ends—

*Pris.* Take heed! five's odd; put both hands together, or severally they are all odd unjust ends.

*Witty.* *Medius fidius*, hold your tongue! I depose you from half a share presently else: I will make you a parteciple, and decline you; now you understand me! Be you a quiet conjunction amongst the undeclined; you and your Latin ends shall go shift, *solus cum solo*, together else; and then if ever they get ends of gold and silver, enough to serve that gerundine dam of yours, that without *do* will end in *di* and *maw* instantly—

*Enter* OLDCRAFT and Sir GREGORY.

*Ruin.* Enough, enough! Here comes company! we lose five shares in wrangling about one.

*Witty.* My father? Put on, Priscian! he has Latin fragments too; but I fear him not! I'll case my face with a little more hair, and relieve.

[*Pulls his hair over his face, and stands apart.*]

*Oldc.* Tush, nephew! I'll call you so, for if there No other obstacles than those you speak of, [be They are but powder charges without pellets; You may safely front 'em, and warrant your own danger.

*Greg.* No other that I can perceive, i'faith, sir: for I put her to't, and felt her as far as I could: and the strongest repulse was, she said, she would have a little soldier in me, that, if need were, I should defend her reputation.

*Oldc.* And surely, sir, that is a principle Amongst your principal ladies: They require Valour either in a friend or a husband.

*Greg.* And I allow their requests i'faith, as well as any woman's heart can desire: If I knew where to get valour, I would as willingly entertain it as any man that blows.

*Oldc.* Breathes, breathes, sir; that's the sweeter phrase.

*Greg.* Blows for a soldier, i'faith, sir! and I'm in practice that way.

*Oldc.* For a soldier I grant it.

*Greg.* 'Slid! I'll swallow some bullets, and good round ones too, but I'll have a little soldier in me.

*Ruin.* Will you on and beg, or steal and be hanged? [*Aside to his Comrades.*]

*Greg.* And some scholar she would have me besides.

*Oldc.* Tush, that shall be no bar; it is a quality in a gentleman, but of the least question.

*Pris.* *Salvete, domini benignissimi, munificentissimi!*

*Oldc.* *Salvete dicis ad nos? jubeo te salvere!* Nay, sir, we have Latin, and other metal in us too, sir.—You shall see me talk with this fellow now.

*Greg.* I could find in my heart to talk with him too, if I could understand him.

*Pris.* *Charissimi, doctissimique, domini, ex abundantia charitatis vestra estote propitii in me juvenem miserum, pauperem, et omni consolatione exulem!*

*Oldc.* A pretty scholar, by my faith, sir! but I'll to him again.

*Greg.* Does he beg or steal in this language, can you tell, sir? He may take away my good name from me, and I ne'er the wiser.

*Oldc.* He begs, he begs, sir.

*Pris.* *Ecoe, ecoe, in oculis lachrymarum flumen! in ore fames sitisque; ignis in vultu, pudor et impudentia; in omni parte necessitas et indigentia.*

*Oldc.* *Audi tu bonus socius; tu es scholasticus, sic intelligo, ego faciam argumentum.*—Mark now, sir, now I fetch him up!

*Greg.* I have been fetched up a hundred times for this; yet I could never learn half so much.

*Oldc.* *Audi, et responde; hoc est argumentum: nomen est nomen—ergo, quod est tibi nomen? Responde nunc, responde argumentum meum.*—Have I not put him to't, sir?

*Greg.* Yes, sir, I think so.

*Witty.* Step in! the rascal is put out of his penned speech, and he can go no further.

[*Apart to Sir RUISORS.*]

*Oldc.* *Cur non respondes?*

*Pris.* *O domine, tanta mea est miseria—*

*Witty.* So he's almost in again.

*Pris.* *Ut nocte mecum pernoctat egestas, lux quotidie pauperes habet.*

*Oldc.* *Sed quod est tibi nomen? et quis dedisti responde argumentum.*

*Pris.* Hem, hem!

*Witty.* He's dry; he hems: On quickly!

*Ruin.* Courteous gentlemen, if the brow of a military face may not be offensive to your generous eye-balls, let his wounds speak better than his words, for some branch or small sprig of charity to be planted upon this poor barren soil of a soldier.

*Oldc.* How now! what, arms and arts both go a-begging?

*Ruin.* Such is the post-progress of cold charity now-a-days, who (for heat to her frigid limbs) passes in so swift a motion, that two at the least had need be to stay her.

*Greg.* Sir, let's reward 'em. I pray you; and be gone! If any quarrel should arise amongst us.

I am able to answer neither of them ; his iron and steel tongue is as hard as t'other's Latin one.

*Oldc.* Stay, stay, sir ! I will talk a little with him first : let me alone with both ! I will try whether they live by their wits or no ; for such a man I love.—And, what, you both beg together then ?

*Pris.* *Conjunctis manibus, profecto, domine.*

*Ruin.* With equal fortunes, equal distribution ; there's not the breadth of a sword's point uneven in our division.

*Greg.* What two qualities are here cast away upon two poor fellows ! If a man had 'em that could maintain 'em, what a double man were that ! if these two fellows might be bought and sodden, and boiled to a jelly, and eaten fasting every morning, I do not think but a man should find strange things in his stomach.

*Oldc.* Come, sir, join your charity with mine, and we'll make up a couple of pence betwix us.

*Greg.* If a man could have a pennyworth for his penny, I would bestow more money with 'em.

*Witty.* [*Comes forward.*] Save you, gentlemen ! How now ?—What, are you encountered here ? What fellows are these ?

*Oldc.* 'Faith, sir, here's Mars and Mercury ; a pair of poor planets, it seems, that Jupiter has turned out to live by their wits, and we are e'en about a little spark of charity to kindle 'em a new fire.

*Witty.* Stay, pray you stay, sir ! You may abuse your charity, nay, make that goodness in you no better than a vice : so many deceivers walk in these shadows now-a-days, that certainly your bounties were better spilt, than reserved to so lewd and vicious uses.—Which is he that professes the soldier ?

*Ruin.* He that professes his own profession, sir, and the dangerous life he hath led in it this pair of half-score years.

*Witty.* In what services have you been, sir ?

*Ruin.* The first that fleshed me a soldier, sir, was that great battle at Alcazar, in Barbary, where the noble English Stukeley fell, and where that royal Portugal Sebastian ended his untimely days.

*Witty.* Are you sure Sebastian died there ?

*Ruin.* 'Faith, sir, there was some other rumour hoped amongst us, that he, wounded, escaped, and touched on his native shore again ; where, finding his country at home more distressed by the invasion of the Spaniard, than his loss abroad, forsook it, still supporting a miserable and unfortunate life, which where he ended is yet uncertain.

*Witty.* By my faith, sir, he speaks the nearest fame of truth in this.

*Ruin.* Since, sir, I served in France, the Low Countries, lastly, at that memorable skirmish at Newport, where the forward and bold Scot there spent his life so freely, that from every single heart that there fell, came home, from his resolution, a double honour to his country.

*Witty.* This should be no counterfeit, sir.

*Oldc.* I do not think he is, sir.

*Witty.* But, sir, methinks you do not shew the marks of a soldier : Could you so freely 'scape, that you brought home no scars to be your chronicle ?

*Ruin.* Sir, I have wounds, and many ; but in those parts where nature and humanity bids me shame to publish.

*Witty.* A good soldier cannot want those badges.

*Greg.* Now am not I of your mind in that ; for I hold him the best soldier that 'scapes best : always at a mock-fencing I give him the best that has the fewest knocks.

*Witty.* Nay, I'll have a bout with your scholar, too.—To ask you why you should be poor, yet richly learned, were no question, at least you can easily answer it ; but whether you have learning enough to deserve to be poor or no (since poverty is commonly the meed of learning) is yet to be tried : you have the languages ? I mean the chief, as the Hebrew, Syriac, Greek, Latin, &c.

*Pris.* *Aliquantulum ; non totaliter, domine.*

*Oldc.* The Latin I have sufficiently tried him in, and I promise you, sir, he is very well grounded.

*Witty.* I will prove him in some of the rest.—

*Tois mios fatheros iste cockscomboy ?*

*Pris.* *Kay yonkeron nigilton oy fouleroi asinisy.*

*Witty.* *Cheateron ton bilon ?*

*Pris.* *Tous pollous strikevous angelo to peeso.*

*Witty.* Certainly, sir, a very excellent scholar in the Greek.

*Oldc.* I do note a wond'rous readiness in him.

*Greg.* I do wonder how the Trojans could hold out ten years' siege, as 'tis reported, against the Greeks : if Achilles spoke but this tongue, I do not think but he might have shaken down the walls in a sevennight, and never troubled the wooden horse.

*Witty.* I will try him so far as I can in the Syriac. *Kircrom bragmen, shag a dou ma dell mathou.*

*Pris.* *Hashagath rabgabash shobos onoriadka.*

*Witty.* *Colpack rubasca, gnawerthem shig shag.*

*Pris.* *Napshamothem ribshe longomosh lashemech nagothi.*

*Witty.* Gentlemen, I have done ! any man, that can, go further ! I confess myself at a nonplus.

*Greg.* 'Faith, not I, sir ; I was at my farthest in my natural language ; I was never double-tongued, I thank my hard fortune.

*Witty.* Well, gentlemen, 'tis pity, (walk further off a little, my friends) I say, 'tis pity such fellows, so endowed, so qualified with the gifts of nature and arts, yet should have such a scarcity of Fortune's benefits : we must blame our iron-hearted age for it.

*Oldc.* 'Tis pity indeed ; and our pity shall speak a little for 'em : Come, sir ! here's my groat.

*Witty.* A groat, sir ?—oh fy ! give nothing rather ! 'Twere better you railed on 'em for begging, and so quit yourself : I am a poor gentleman, that have little but my wits to live on—

*Oldc.* Troth, and I love you the better, sir.

*Witty.* Yet I'll begin a better example than so :—Here, fellows, there's between you ; take purse and all ; and I would it were heavier for your sakes ! there's a pair of angels to guide you to your lodgings, a poor gentleman's good will !

*Pris.* *Gratias, maximas gratias, benignissime domine !*

*Oldc.* This is an ill example for us, sir : I would this bountiful gentleman had not come this way to-day.

*Greg.* Pox, we must not shame ourselves now, sir ! I'll give as much as that gentleman, though I never be soldier or scholar while I live :—here, friends ; there's a piece, that, if he were divided,

would make a pair of angels for me too, in the love I bear to the sword and the tongues.

*Oldc.* My largess shall be equal too, and much good do you.—This bounty is a little abatement of my wit though, I feel that.

*Ruin.* May soldiers ever defend such charities!

*Pris.* And scholars pray for their encrease!

*Oldc.* Fare you well!—Sir, these fellows may pray for you; you have made the scholar's commons exceed to-day. And, a word with you, sir! You said you lived by your wits; if you use this bounty, you'll beggar your wits, believe it.

*Witty.* Oh, sir, I hope to encrease 'em by it; this seed never wants his harvest. Fare you well, sir! [Exit.]

*Greg.* I think a man were as good meet with a reasonable thief, as an unreasonable beggar sometimes. I could find in my heart to beg half mine back again: Can you change my piece, my friends?

*Pris.* *Tempora mutantur, et nos mutamur in illis.*

*Greg.* My gold is turned into Latin.

*Re-enter WITTYPATE.*

*Witty.* Look you, good fellows; here's one round shilling more that lay concealed.

*Oldc.* Sir, away! we shall be drawn further into damage else.

*Greg.* A pox of the fool! he live by his wits? If his wits leave him any money but what he begs or steals, very shortly, I'll be hanged for him.

[Exit with OLDCRAFT.]

*Ruin.* This breakfast parcel was well fetched off, i'faith!

*Witty.* Tush! a bye-blow for mirth; we must have better purchase: We want a fourth for another project that I have ripened.

*Ruin.* My wife; she shares, and can deserve it.

*Witty.* She can change her shape, and be masculine?

*Ruin.* 'Tis one of the freest conditions: She fears not the crack of a pistol; she dares say "stand!" to a grazier.

*Pris.* *Probatum fuit, profecto, domine.*

*Witty.* Good! then you, Sir Bacchus Apollo, shall be dispatched with her share, and some counters, to meet us to-morrow, at a certain place and time appointed, in the masculine gender: my father has a nephew, and I an own cousin, coming up from the university, whom he loves most indulgently; easy master Credulous Oldcraft, (for you know what your mere academic is.) Your carrier never misses his hour: He must not be robbed, because he has but little to lose; but he must join with us in a device that I have, that shall rob my father of a hundred pieces, and thank me to be rid on't: for there's the ambition of my wit, to live upon his professed wit, that has turned me out to live by my wits.

*Pris.* *Cum hirundinis alis tibi regratulor.*

*Witty.* A male habit, a bag of an hundred weight, though it be counters, for my alchemy shall turn 'em into gold of my father's; the hour, the place, the action shall be at large set down: And, father, you shall know, that I put my portion to use, that you have given me to live by;

And to confirm yourself in me renate, I hope you'll find my wit's legitimate! [Exeunt.]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the House of Sir RUINOUS.

*Enter Lady RUINOUS and Servant.*

*Serv.* Nay, lady!

*L. Ruin.* Put me not in mind on't, pr'ythee! You cannot do a greater wrong to women; For in our wants, 'tis the most chief affliction To have that name remembered; 'tis a title That misery mocks us by, and the world's malice! Scorn and Contempt have not wherewith to work On humble callings; they are safe, and lie Level with Pity still, and pale Distress Is no great stranger to 'em; but when Fortune Looks with a stormy face on our conditions, We find Affliction work, and Envy pastime, And our worst enemy then, that most abuses us, Is that we are called by, "Lady." Oh, my spirit, Will nothing make thee humble? I am well methinks,

And can live quiet with my fate sometimes, Until I look into the world again: Then I begin to rave at my stars' bitterness, To see how many muckhills placed above me; Peasants and droyls, caroches full of dunghills, Whose very birth stinks in a generous nostril, Glistening by night like glow-worms through the high-streets,

Hurried by torch-light in the footmen's hands, That shew like running fire-drakes through the city, And I put to my shifts and wits to live,

(Nay, sometimes danger too) on foot, on horseback, And earn my supper manfully ere I get it: Many a meal I have purchased at that rate, Fed with a wound upon me, stamped at midnight.

*Enter PRISCIAN.*

Ha! what are you?

*Pris.* [Pulls off his beard.] Now you may tell yourself,

Lady!

*L. Ruin.* Oh, master Priscian, what's the project? For you ne'er come without one.

*Pris.* First, your husband, Sir Ruinous Gentry, greets you with best wishes, And here has sent you your full share by me In five cheats and two robberies.

*L. Ruin.* And what comes it to?

*Pris.* Near upon thirteen pound.

*L. Ruin.* A goodly share!

'Twill put a lady scarce in Philip and cheyney, With three small bugle laces, like a chambermaid: Here's precious lifting!

*Pris.* 'Las, you must consider, lady, 'Tis but young term; attornies ha' small doings yet;

Then highway lawyers, they must needs ha' little: We have had no great good luck, to speak troth, beauty, Since your stout ladyship parted from us at Highgate;

But there's a fair hope now for a present hundred.  
Here's man's apparel! your horse stands at door.

*L. Ruin.* And what's the virtuous plot now?

*Pris.* Marry, lady,

You, like a brave young gallant, must be robb'd.

*L. Ruin.* I robb'd?

*Pris.* Nay then—

*L. Ruin.* Well, well, go on! Let's hear, sir.

*Pris.* Here's a scaled bag of a hundred; which indeed

Are counters all; only some sixteen groats  
Of white money i' th' mouth on't.

*L. Ruin.* So! what saddle have I?

*Pris.* Monsieur Laroon's the Frenchman's.

*L. Ruin.* That again?

You know so well it is not for my stride!

How oft have I complained on't?

*Pris.* You may have Jockey's then, the little  
You must dispatch. [Scotch one.

*L. Ruin.* I'll soon be ready, sir, [Exit PRISCIAN.  
Before you ha' shifted saddles.—Many women  
Have their wealth flow to 'em; I was made, I see,  
To help my fortune, not my fortune me. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Room in OLD CRAFT'S House.

Enter CUNNINGHAM.

*Cunn.* My ways are goblin-led, and the night-elf  
Still draws me from my home; yet I follow:  
Sure 'tis not altogether fabulous,  
Such hags do get dominion of our tongues;  
So soon as we speak, the enchantment binds.  
I have dissembled such a trouble on me,  
As my best wits can hardly clear again:  
Piping through this old reed, the Guardianess,  
With purpose that my harmony shall reach  
And please the lady's ear; she stops below,  
And echoes back my love unto my lips,  
Persuaded by most violent arguments  
Of self-love in herself, I am so self-fool,  
To dote upon her hundred-wrinkled face.  
I could beggar her to accept the gifts  
She would throw upon me; it were charity;  
But for pity's sake I will be a niggard,  
And undo her, refusing to take from her.  
I'm haunted again! if it take not now,  
I'll break the spell.

Enter GUARDIANESS.

*Guard.* Sweet Cunningham, welcome!  
What, a whole day absent? Birds that build nests  
Have care to keep 'em.

*Cunn.* That's granted;  
But not continually to sit upon 'em,  
'Less in the youngling season: else, they desire  
To fly abroad, and recreate their labours;  
Then they return with fresher appetite  
To work again.

*Guard.* Well, well, you have built a nest  
That will stand all storms; you need not mistrust  
A weather-wreck: And, one day, it may be  
The youngling season too; then, I hope,  
You'll ne'er fly out of sight.

*Cunn.* There will be pains, [Aside.  
I see, to shake this bur off!—And, sweetest,  
Prythee how fares thy charge? has my good friend,  
Sir Gregory, the countenance of a lover?

*Guard.* No, by my troth, not in my mind; me-  
thinks,  
(Setting his worship aside) he looks like a fool.

*Cunn.* Nay, i'faith, ne'er divide his worship  
from him

For that small matter! fool and worship are  
No such strangers now-a-days. But my meaning is,  
Has he thy lady's countenance of love?  
Looks she like a welcome on him? plainly,  
Have they as good hope of one another,  
As, Cupid bless us, we have?

*Guard.* 'Troth, I know not;  
I can perceive no forwardness in my charge.  
But I protest I wish the knight  
Better, for your sake, bird.

*Cunn.* Why, thanks, sweet bird!  
And with my heart I wish that he had as strong  
And likely hope of her, as thou hast of me.

*Guard.* Well, he is like to speed never the worse  
For that good wish. And I will tell you, bird,  
(For secrets are not to be kept betwixt us two)  
My charge thinks well of you.

*Cunn.* Of me? for what?

*Guard.* For my sake; I mean so: I have heard  
her

A hundred times say, since her uncle gave her  
The first bob about you, that she'd do somewhat  
For my sake, if things went well together:  
We have spoke of doors and bolts, and things, and  
things—

Go to! I'll [not] tell you all; but you'll find some  
Advancement, for my sake, I do believe.

*Cunn.* 'Faith, be not sparing; tell me!

*Guard.* By my lady,  
You shall pardon me for that! it were a shame  
If men should hear all that women speak behind  
Their backs sometimes.

*Cunn.* You must give me leave yet  
At least to give her thanks.

*Guard.* Nor that neither;  
She must not take a notice of my blabbing.  
It is sufficient you shall give me thanks: for  
'Tis for my sake, if she be bountiful:  
She loves me, and loves you too for my sake.

*Cunn.* How shall I, knowing this, but be ingrate,  
Not to repay her with my dearest duty.

*Guard.* Ay, but you must not know it; if you  
All that I open to you, you'll shame us both: [tell  
Afar off, you may kiss your hand, blush, or so,  
But I'll allow no nearer conference.

*Cunn.* Whoop! you'll be jealous, I perceive now.  
*Guard.* Jealous?

Why, there is no true love without it, bird?  
I must be jealous of thee: But for her,  
(Were it within my duty to my master)  
I durst trust her with the strongest tempter,  
And I dare swear her now as pure a virgin  
As e'er was welcomed to a marriage-bed:  
If thoughts may be untainted, hers are so.

*Cunn.* And where's the cause of your fear then?

*Guard.* Well, well;  
When things are past, and the wedding torches  
Lighted at matches, to kindle better fire,  
Then I'll tell you more.

*Cunn.* Come, come, I see further,  
That if we were married, you'd be jealous.

*Guard.* I protest, I should a little, but not of  
It is the married woman, (if you mark it) [her:  
And not the maid, that longs; the appetite  
Follows the first taste; when we have relished,  
We wish cloying; the taste once pleased before,  
Then our desire is whetted on to more.  
But I reveal too much to you, i'faith, bird.

*Cunn.* Not a whit, 'faith, bird, betwixt you and I;  
I am beholding for bettering of my knowledge.

*Guard.* Nay,  
You shall know more of me, if you'll be ruled;  
But make not things common.

*Cunn.* Ud' so, your lady!  
*Guard.* Ay, 'tis no matter; she'll like well of  
Our familiarity is her content. [this;

*Enter Niece and Pompey.*

*Niece.* This present from Sir Gregory?  
*Pompey.* From my master, the worshipful, right  
Sir Gregory Fop.

*Niece.* A ruff? And what might be his high  
In sending of a ruff? [conceit

*Pompey.* I think he had two conceits in it, for-  
sooth, to high, to low; ruff high, because as the  
ruff does embrace your neck all day, so does he  
desire to throw his knightly arms—

*Niece.* But then I leave him off a-nights.  
*Pompey.* Why, then he is ruff low, a ruffian; a  
bold adventurous errant to do any rough service  
for his lady.

*Niece.* A witty and unhappy conceit!—Does he  
mean [Toward CUNNINGHAM.

As he seems to say unto that reverence?  
He does woo her, sure!

*Pompey.* To tell you truth, lady, his conceit was  
far better than I have blazed it yet.

*Niece.* Do you think so, sir?  
*Pompey.* Nay, I know it, forsooth; for it was  
two days ere he compassed it, to find a fitting pre-  
sent for your ladyship: He was sending once a  
very fine puppy to you.

*Niece.* And that he would have brought himself.  
*Pompey.* So he would indeed; but then he  
altered his device, and sent this ruff, requesting  
withal, that whensoever it is foul, you (with your  
own hands) would bestow the starching of it.

*Niece.* Else she woos him: Now his eyes shoot  
this way.— [Toward CUNNINGHAM.

And what was the reason for that, sir?  
*Pompey.* There lies his main conceit, lady;  
"For, says he, in so doing, she cannot chuse but  
in the starching to clap it often between her hands,  
and so she gives a great liking and applause to my  
present; whereas, if I should send a puppy, she  
ever calls it to her with *hist, hiss, hiss*, which is a  
fearful disgrace:" He drew the device from a play  
at the Bull, t'other day.

*Niece.* Ay, marry, sir, this was a rich conceit  
indeed.

*Pompey.* And far-fetch'd, therefore good for you,  
lady.—

*Guard.* How now? which way look you, bird?  
*Cunn.* At the fool, bird;  
Shall I not look at the fool?

*Guard.* At the fool,  
And I here? what need that? pray look this way.

*Niece.* I'll fit him aptly! Either I'll awake  
[Aside.

His wits (if he have any) or force him to appear  
(As yet I cannot think him) without any.—

Sirrah, tell me one thing true,  
That I shall ask you now: Was this device  
Your master's own? I doubt his wit in it;  
He is not so ingenious.

*Pompey.* His own, I assure you, madam.  
*Niece.* Nay, you must not lie.

*Pompey.* Not with a lady? I'd rather lie with  
you than lie with my master, by your leave, in  
such a case as this.—

*Guard.* Yet again your eye?  
*Cunn.* The fool makes mirth, i'faith;  
I would hear some.

*Guard.* Come, you shall hear none but me.  
*Niece.* Come hither, friend; nay, come nearer  
me!

Did thy master send thee to me? He may be wise.  
But did not shew it much in that; men sometimes  
May wrong themselves unawares, when they least  
think on't.

Was Vulcan ever so unwise to send Mars  
To be his spokesman, when he went a-wooing?  
Send thee? Hey ho! a pretty rolling eye!

*Pompey.* I can turn up the white and the black  
too, an need be, forsooth.

*Niece.* Why, here's an amorous nose!  
*Pompey.* You see the worst of my nose, forsooth.

*Niece.* A cheek!  
How I could pat it now in dalliance!  
A pair of lips! Oh, that we were uneyed!  
I could suck sugar from 'em! what a beard's here!  
When will the knight thy master have such a  
stamp  
Of manhood on his face? Nay, do not blush.

*Pompey.* 'Tis nothing but my flesh and blood  
that rises so.—  
*Cunn.* 'Death, she courts the fool!  
*Guard.* Away, away! 'tis sport; do not mind it.  
*Niece.* Give me thy hand: come, be familiar!  
Ay, here's a promising palm! what a soft  
Handful of pleasure's here! Here's down com-  
pared  
With flocks and quilted straw; thy knight's fin-  
Are lean matrice-rubbers to these feathers: [gers  
I pr'ythee let me lean my cheek upon't!  
What a soft pillow's here!  
*Pompey.* Hum, umh, hu, hum!  
*Niece.* Why, there's a courage in that lively  
passion!  
Measure thee all over, there is not a limb  
But has his full proportion: It is my voice,  
There's no compare betwixt the knight and thee;  
The goodlier man by half! at once, now I  
See thee all over.

*Pompey.* If you had seen me swim t'other day  
on my back, you would have said you had seen  
There was two chambermaids that saw me, and my  
legs by chance were tangled in the flags, and when  
they saw how I was hang'd, they cried out, "Oh,  
help the man for fear he be drown'd!"  
*Niece.* They could not do less in pity. Come.  
We'll walk together. [thine arm!  
*Cunn.* Blindness of love and women! why, she  
Upon the fool. [dotes  
*Guard.* What's that to you? mind her not.  
*Cunn.* Away, you bur!  
*Guard.* How's that?  
*Cunn.* Hang off, flesh-hook! fasten thine itchy  
clasp  
On some dry toad-stool, that will kindle with thee.  
And burn together.  
*Guard.* Oh, abominable!  
Why, do you not love me?  
*Cunn.* No; never did!  
I took thee down a little way to enforce  
A vomit from my offended stomach; now  
Thou art up again, I loath thee filthily.

*Guard.* Oh, villain!

*Cunn.* Why, dost thou not see a sight  
Would make a man abjure the sight of women?

*Niece.* Ha, ha, ha! he's vex'd! ha, ha, ha!

*Pompey.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Niece.* Why dost thou laugh?

*Pompey.* Because thou laughest; nothing else,  
if faith.

*Cunn.* She has but mock'd my folly! else she  
finds not

The bosom of my purpose: Some other way  
Must make me know. I'll try her; and may chance  
quit

The fine dexterity of her lady-wit. *[Exit.]*

*Niece.* Yes, in troth, I laugh'd to think of thy  
master now,

What he would think if he knew this!

*Pompey.* By my troth, I laugh at him too.  
'Faith, sirrah, he's but a fool, to say the truth,  
though I say't that should not say't.

*Niece.* Yes, thou shouldst say truth, and I be-  
lieve thee.

Well, for this time we'll part: You perceive some-  
thing;

Our tongues betray our hearts, there is our weak-  
But pray be silent! *[ness;]*

*Pompey.* As mouse in cheese, or goose in hay,  
if faith.

*Niece.* Look, we are cut off! there's my hand  
where my lips would be.

*Pompey.* I'll wink, and think 'em thy lips.  
Farewell! *[Exit.]*

*Niece.* Now, Guardianess, I need not ask where  
you have been.

*Guard.* Oh, lady, never was woman so abused!

*Re-enter POMPEY.*

*Pompey.* Dost thou hear, lady sweetheart? I  
had forgot to tell thee; if you will, I will come  
back in the evening.

*Niece.* By no means; come not till I send for  
you.

*Pompey.* If there be any need, you may think of  
things when I am gone. I may be conveyed into  
your chamber; I'll lie under the bed while mid-  
night, or so; or you shall put me up in one of  
your little boxes! I can creep in at a small hole.

*Niece.* These are things I dare not venture: I  
charge you,

On my love, never come till I send for you.

*Pompey.* *Verbum insipienti!* 'Tis enough to  
the wise. Nor I think it is not fit the knight should  
know any thing yet.

*Niece.* By no means! pray you go now; we are  
suspected.

*Pompey.* For the things that are past, let us use  
our secrets.

*Niece.* Now I will make a firm trial of your love;  
As you love me, not a word more at this time,  
Not a syllable; 'tis the seal of love; take heed!

*Pompey.* Hum, hum, hum, hum!

*[Exit humming "Loth to depart."]*

*Niece.* So, this pleasant trouble's gone. Now,  
Guardianess!

What! your eyes easing your heart? the cause,  
woman?

*Guard.* The cause is false man, madam! oh,  
I have been gull'd in a shining carbuncle, [lady!  
A very glow-worm, that I thought had fire in't,  
And 'tis as cold as ice.

vol. 11.

*Niece.* And justly served;  
Wouldst thou once think that such an erring spring  
Would dote upon thine autumn?

*Guard.* Oh, had you heard

Him but protest—

*Niece.* I would not have believed him.

Thou might'st have perceived how I mock'd thy  
folly,

In wanton imitation with the fool.

Go, weep the sin of thy credulity,  
Not of thy loss! for it was never thine,  
And it is gain to miss it. Wert thou so dull?  
Nay, yet thou'rt stupid and incapable.

Why, thou wert but the bait to fish with, not  
The prey; the stale to catch another bird with.

*Guard.* Indeed he call'd me bird.

*Niece.* Yet thou perceiv'st not;  
It is your niece he loves; wouldst thou be made  
A stalking jade? 'tis she, examine it.—

I'll hurry all awry, and tread my path *[Apart.]*

Over unbeaten ground, go level to the mark,  
But by circular bouts: Rare things are pleasing;  
And rare's but seldom in the simple sense,  
But has her emphasis with eminence. *[Exit.]*

*Guard.* My niece? she the rival of my abuse?  
My flesh and blood wrong me? I'll aunt her for't!

*Enter MIRABEL.*

Oh, Opportunity, thou bless'dest me!—

Now, gentlewoman! are you parted so soon?

Where is your friend, I pray? your Cunningham?

*Mir.* What say you, aunt?

*Guard.* Come, come, your Cunningham!

I am not blind with age yet, nor deaf.

*Mir.* *[Aside.]* Dumb I am sure you're not.—

What ail you, aunt?

Are you not well?

*Guard.* No, nor sick; nor mad, nor in my wits;  
nor sleeping,

Nor waking; nor nothing, nor anything:

I know not what I am, nor what I am not!

*Mir.* Mercy cover us! what do you mean, aunt?

*Guard.* I mean to be revenged.

*Mir.* On whom?

*Guard.* On thee, baggage!

*Mir.* Revenge should follow injury,  
Which never reach'd so far as thought in me  
Towards you, aunt.

*Guard.* Your cunning, minion,  
Nor your Cunningham, can either blind me!  
The gentle beggar loves you.

*Mir.* Beseech you,

Let me stay your error! I begin to hear,  
And shake off my amazement: If you think  
That ever any passage treating love

Hath been betwixt us yet commenced; any  
Silent eye-glance that might but sparkle fire,  
So much as brother and sister might meet with;  
The lip-salute, so much as strangers might  
Take a farewell with; the commix'd hands;  
Nay, but the least thought of the least of these,  
In troth you wrong your bosom; by that truth  
Which I think yet you durst be bail for in me  
If it were offer'd you, I am as free  
As all this protestation.

*Guard.* May I believe this?

*Mir.* If ever you'll believe truth. Why, I  
thought

He had spoke love to you; and if his heart  
Prompted his tongue, sure I did hear so much.

\*

*Guard.* Oh, falsest man! Ixion's plague fell on me!

Never by woman, such a masculine cloud,  
So airy and so subtle, was embraced.

*Mir.* By no cause in me, by my life, dear aunt.

*Guard.* I believe you: Then help me in my revenge,

And you shall do't, or lose my love for ever:  
I'll have him quitted at his equal weapon.  
Thou art young, follow him, bait his desires  
With all the engines of a woman's wit,  
Stretch modesty even to the highest pitch;  
He cannot freeze at such a flaming beauty;  
And when thou hast him by the amorous gills,  
Think on my vengeance, choak up his desires,  
Then let his banquetings be Tantalism.  
Let thy disdain spurn the dissembler out!  
Oh, I should climb the stars, and sit above,  
To see him burn to ashes in his love!

*Mir.* This will be a strange task, aunt, and an Unwilling labour; yet, in your injunction, I am a servant to't.

*Guard.* Thou'lt undertake't?

*Mir.* Yes; let the success commend itself hereafter!

*Guard.* Effect it, girl, my substance is thy store;

Nothing but want of will makes woman poor.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Enter Sir GREGORY and POMPEY.*

*Greg.* Why, Pompey, thou art not stark mad, art thou? Wilt thou not tell me how my lady does?

*Pompey.* Your lady?

*Greg.* Did she receive the thing that I sent her kindly, or no?

*Pompey.* The thing that you sent her, knight, by the thing that you sent, was, for the thing's sake that was sent to carry the thing that you sent, very kindly received. First, there is your indenture; (now go seek you a servant!) secondly, you are a knight; thirdly and lastly, I am mine own man; and, fourthly, fare you well!

*Greg.* Why, Pompey! Pr'ythee let me speak with thee! I'll lay my life some hare has crost him.

*Pompey.* Knight, if you be a knight, so keep you: As for the lady, who shall say that she is not a fair lady? a sweet lady, an honest and virtuous lady? I will say he is a base fellow, a blab of his tongue, and I will make him eat these fingers' ends.

*Greg.* Why, here's nobody says so, Pompey.

*Pompey.* Whatsoever things have past between the lady and the other party, whom I will not name at this time, I say she is virtuous and honest, and I will maintain it, as long as I can maintain myself with bread and water.

*Greg.* Why, I know nobody thinks otherwise.

*Pompey.* Any man that does but think it in my hearing, I will make him think on't while he has a thought in his bosom! Shall we say that kindnesses from ladies are common? or that favours and protestations are things of no moment betwixt parties and parties? I say still, whatsoever has been betwixt the lady and the party, which I will not name, that she is honest, and shall be honest,

whatsoever she does by day or by night, by light or by darkness, with cut and long tail.

*Greg.* Why, I say she is honest.

*Pompey.* Is she honest? In what sense do you say she is honest, knight?

*Greg.* If I could not find in my heart to throw my dagger at thy head, hilts and all, I'm an ass, and no gentleman!

*Pompey.* Throw your dagger at me? do not, knight! I give you fair warning, 'tis but cast away if you do; for you shall have no other words of me: The lady is an honest lady, whatsoever reports may go of sports and toys, and thoughts, and words, and deeds, betwixt her and the party which I will not name. This I give you to understand, that another man may have as good an eye, as amorous a nose, as fair a 'stamp beard, and be as proper a man, as a knight (I name no parties): a servingman may be as good as a sir, a Pompey as a Gregory, a Doodle as a Pop: So, servingman Pompey Doodle may be respected as well with ladies (though I name no parties) as Sir Gregory Pop. So, farewell!

[*Exit.*]

*Greg.* If the fellow be not out of his wits, then will I never have any more wit while I live! either the sight of the lady has gaster'd him, or else he's drunk; or else he walks in his sleep, or else he's a fool, or a knave, or both; one of the three I'm sure 'tis. Yet, now I think on't, she has not used me so kindly as her uncle promised me she should: But that's all one; he says I shall have her, and I dare take his word for the best horse I have, and that's a weightier thing than a lady, I'm sure on't.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE IV.—*On the Outskirts of the City.*

*Enter Lady RUINOUS (as a Man) WITTYPATE, SIR RUINOUS, PRISCIAN, and Master CRIDULOUS, binding and rebinding her, and in scarfs. CRIDULOUS finds the Bag.*

*L. Ruin.* Nay, I am your own; 'tis in your pleasure

How you will deal with me: Yet I would entreat. You will not make that which is bad enough Worse than it need be, by a second ill, When it can render you no second profit! If it be coin you seek, you have your prey, All my store I vow (and it weighs a hundred); My life, or any hurt you give my body, Can enrich you no more.

*Witty.* You may pursue.

*L. Ruin.* As I am a gentleman, I never will!

*Witty.* Only we'll bind you to quiet behaviour Till you call out for bail, and on the other Side of the hedge leave you: But keep the peace Till we be out of hearing! for by that We shall be out of danger: If we come back, We come with a mischief!

*L. Ruin.* You need not fear me.

*Pris.* Come, we'll bestow you then.

[*Exeunt RUINOUS, PRISCIAN, and Lady RUINOUS.*]

*Witty.* Why, la you, sir, is not this a swifter revenue

Than *Sic probos, ergos, et igiturs*, can bring in? Why, is not this one of your syllogisms In Barbara, *Omne utile est honestum*?

*Cred.* Well, sir, a little more of this acquaintance Will make me know you fully: I protest You have (at first sight) made me conscious Of such a deed my dreams ne'er prompted. Yet

I could almost have wish'd rather ye had robb'd  
Me of my cloak, (for my purse, 'tis a scholar's,)  
Than to have made me a robber.  
I had rather have answer'd three difficult questions  
Than this one, as easy as yet it seems.

*Witty.* Tush! you shall never come to further  
answer for't.

Can you confess your penurious uncle,  
In his full face of love, to be so strict  
A niggard to your commons, that you are fain  
To size your belly out with shoulder fees,  
With rumps and kidnies, and cues of single beer,  
And yet make dainty to feed more daintily,  
At this easjer rate? Fy, Master Credulous!  
I blush for you.

*Cred.* This is a truth undeniable.

*Witty.* Why, go to then! I hope I know your  
uncle;

How does he use his son, nearer than you?

*Cred.* 'Faith, like his jade, upon the bare com-  
mons

Turn'd out to pick his living as he can get it:  
He would have been glad to have shared in such  
A purchase, and thank'd his good fortune too.

*Enter RUINOUS and PRISCIAN.*

But mum, no more!—Is all safe, bullies?

*Ruin.* Secure;

The gentleman thinks him most happy in his loss,  
With his life and limbs safe, and redoubles  
His first vow, as he is a gentleman,  
Never to pursue us.

*Witty.* Well; away then!

Disperse! you with Master Credulous, who still  
Shall bear the purchase; Priscian and I  
Will take some other course: You know our  
meeting

At the Three Cups in St. Giles'; with this proviso,  
(For 'tis a law with us) that nothing be opened  
Till all be present: The loser says a hundred,  
And it can weigh no less.

*Ruin.* Come, sir, we'll be your guide.

*Cred.* My honesty, which till now was never  
All shall be close till our meeting! [forfeited,  
[Exit with RUINOUS.

*Witty.* Tush, I believe it;—and then all shall  
Where is the thief that's robb'd? [out.

*Enter Lady RUINOUS.*

*L. Ruin.* Here, master Oldcraft.  
All follows now.

*Witty.* 'Twas neatly done, wench. Now to  
turn that bag

Of counterfeits to current pieces, *et actum est!*

*L. Ruin.* You are the chemist; we'll blow the  
If you can mingle the ingredients. [fire still,

*Witty.* I will not miss a cause, a quantity, a  
You know the place. [dram.

*Pria.* I have told her that, sir.

*Witty.* Good! Turn Ruinous to be a constable,  
(I'm sure we want not beards of all sorts, from  
The worshipful magistrate to the under-watchman)  
Because we must have no danger of life,  
But a cleanly cheat; attach Credulous:  
The cause is plain, the theft found about him;  
Then fall I in, in his own cousin's shape,  
By mere accident, where, finding him distress'd,  
I with some difficulty must fetch him off,  
With promise that his uncle shall shut up all,  
With double restitution: Master constable  
Ruinous his mouth shall be stopt;  
You, Mistress Rob-thief, shall have your share of  
What we can gull my father of. Is't plain enough?

*L. Ruin.* As plain a cozenage as can be, 'faith.

*Witty.* Father, I come again, and again! When  
Past too, father, one will beget another. [this is  
I'd be loth to leave your posterity barren:  
You were best to come to composition, father:  
Two hundred pieces yearly allow me yet,  
It will be cheaper, father, than my wit;  
For I will cheat none but you, dear father.

[Exit.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—Before OLD CRAFT'S House.

*Enter OLD CRAFT and GREGORY.*

*Oldc.* Why, now you take the course, Sir Greg-  
ory Fop:

I could enforce her, an I list; but love  
That's gently won is a man's own for ever.  
Have you prepared good music?

*Greg.* As fine a noise, uncle,  
As heart can wish.

*Oldc.* Why, that's done like a suitor!

They must be woo'd an hundred several ways,  
Before you obtain the right way in a woman:  
'Tis an odd creature, full of creeks and windings,  
The serpent has not more; for she has all his,  
And then her own beside came in by her mother.

*Greg.* A fearful portion for a man to venture  
on!

*Oldc.* But the way found once by the wits of  
There is no creature lies so tame again. [men,

*Greg.* I promise you, not a house-rabbit, sir.

*Oldc.* No sucker on 'em all.

*Greg.* What a thing's that?

They are pretty fools, I warrant, when they're  
As a man can lay his lips to. [tame,

*Oldc.* How were you bred, sir?

Did you never make a fool of a tenant's daughter?

*Greg.* Never, i'faith; they ha' made some fools  
for me,

And brought 'em many a time under their aprons.

*Oldc.* They could not shew you the way plain-  
lier, I think,

To make a fool again.

*Greg.* There's fools enough, sir,

'Less they were wiser.

*Oldc.* This is wond'rous rare!

Come you to London with a maidenhead, knight?

A gentleman of your rank ride with a cloak-bag?

Never an hostess by the way to leave it with?

Nor tapster's sister? nor head-ostler's wife?

What, nobody?

*Greg.* Well mock'd, old wit-monger!

I keep it for your Niece.

*Oldc.* Do not say so, for shame! she'll laugh at  
thee:

A wife ne'er looks for't; 'tis a bachelor's penny;

He may give't to a beggar-wench, i' th' progress  
time,

And ne'er be call'd to account for't. [Exit.

Greg. 'Would I had known so much!  
I could ha' stopt a beggar's mouth by the way,  
That rail'd upon me 'cause I'd give her nothing.

Enter Page and Fiddler's Boy.

What, are they come?

Page. And placed directly, sir,  
Under her window.

Greg. What may I call you, gentleman?

Boy. A poor servant to the viol; I'm the voice,

Greg. In good time, Master Voice! [sir.

Boy. Indeed, good time does get the mastery.

Greg. What countryman, Master Voice?

Boy. Sir, born at Ely; we all set up in *ela*,  
But our house commonly breaks in Rutlandshire.

Greg. A shrewd place by my faith! it may well  
break your voice;

It breaks many a man's back. Come, set to your  
business. [Music.

SONG

BY THE BOY.

Pain would I wake you, sweet, but fear  
I should invite you to worse cheer;  
In your dreams you cannot fare  
Meaner than music; no compare!  
None of your slumbers are compiled  
Under the pleasure makes a child;  
Your day-delights, so well compact,  
That what you think turns all to act:  
I'd wish my life no better play,  
Your dream by night, your thought by day.  
Wake, gently wake,  
Part softly from your dreams!  
The morning flies,  
To your fair eyes,  
To take her special beams.

Greg. I hear her up. Here, Master Voice,  
Pay you the instruments; save what you can,  
To keep you when you're crack'd. [Exit Boy.

Enter Niece at a window.

Niece. Who should this be,  
That I'm so much beholding to for sweetness?  
Pray Heaven, it happens right!

Greg. Good morrow, mistress!

Niece. An ill day, and a thousand, come upon  
thee!

Greg. 'Light! that's six hundred more than any  
almanack has!

Niece. Comes it from thee? it is the mangiest  
That ever woman heard. [music

Greg. Nay, say not so, lady!  
There's not an itch about 'em.

Niece. I could curse  
My attentive powers, for giving entrance to't!  
There is no boldness like the impudence  
That's lock'd in a fool's blood! How durst you  
do this?

In conscience I abused you as sufficiently  
As woman could a man; insatiate coxcomb!  
The mocks and spiteful language I have given thee  
Would o' my life ha' served ten reasonable men,  
And rise contented too, and left enough for their  
friends.

Thou glutton at abuses, never satisfied?  
I am persuaded thou devour'st more flouts  
Than all thy body's worth; and still a-hungred;

A mischief of that maw! pr'ythee seek elsewhere;  
In troth I am weary of abusing thee:  
Get thee a fresh mistress, thou'lt make work  
enough.

I do not think there's scorn enough in town  
To serve thy turn; take the court-ladies in,  
And all their women to 'em, that exceed 'em!

Greg. Is this in earnest, lady?

Niece. Oh, unsatiable!

Dost thou count all this but an earnest yet?  
I'd thought I'd paid thee all the whole sum! trust  
Thou'lt beggar my derision utterly; [me,  
If thou stay'st longer, I shall want a laugh:  
If I knew where to borrow a contempt  
Would hold thee tack, stay and be hang'd thou  
should'st then:

But thou'st no conscience, now to extort hate  
from me,

When one has spent all she can make upon thee:  
Must I begin to pay thee hire again,  
After I have rid thee twice? 'faith, 'tis unrea-  
sonable!

Greg. Say you so? I'll know that presently. [Exit.

Niece. Now he runs  
To fetch my uncle to this musty bargain;  
But I have better ware always at hand,  
And lay by this still, when he comes to cheapen.

Enter CUNNINGHAM.

Cunn. I met the music now; yet cannot learn  
What entertainment he received from her.

Niece. There's somebody set already; I must  
Well, well, Sir Gregory! [to't, I see.—

Cunn. Ha! Sir Gregory!

Niece. Where'er you come, you may well boast  
your conquest.

Cunn. She's lost, i' faith! enough! has Fortune  
then

Remember'd her great boy? she seldom fails 'em.  
Niece. He was the unlikeliest man at first me-  
thought,

To have my love; we never met but wrangled.  
Cunn. A pox upon that wrangling, say I still!  
I never knew it fail yet, where'er it came;  
It never comes, but, like a storm of hail,  
'Tis sure to bring fine weather at the tail on't;  
There's not one match 'mongst twenty made with-  
out it;

It fights i' th' tongue, but's sure to agree i' th'  
haunches.

Niece. That man that should ha' told me, when  
time was,

I should ha' had him, had been laugh'd at pite-  
But see how things will change! [ously!

Cunn. Here's a heart feels it!

Oh, the deceitful promises of love!  
What trust should a man put i' th' lip of woman?  
She kiss'd me with that strength, as if she had  
meant

To ha' set the fair print of her soul upon me.

Niece. I would ha' sworn 'twould ne'er ha'  
been a match once.

Cunn. I'll hear no more; I'm mad to hear so  
much!

Why should I aim my thoughts at better fortunes  
Than younger brothers have? that's a maid with  
nothing,

Or some old soap-boiler's widow, without teeth:  
There waits my fortune for me; seek no further! [Exit.

*Enter Oldcraft and Sir Gregory.*

*Oldc.* You tell me things, Sir Gregory, that cannot be.

She will not, nor she dare not.

*Greg.* 'Would I were whipt then!

*Niece.* I'll make as little show of love, Sir Gregory,

As ever woman did; you shall not know

You have my heart a good while.

*Oldc.* Heard you that?

*Niece.* Man will insult so soon; 'tis his condition;

'Tis good to keep him off as long as we can:

I've much ado, I swear; and love i' th' end

Will have his course: Let maids do what they can, They are but frail things till they end in man.

*Oldc.* What say you to this, sir?

*Greg.* This is somewhat handsome.

*Niece.* And by that little wrangling that I feign'd,

Now I shall try how constant his love is,

Although't went sore against my heart to chide

*Greg.* Alas, poor gentlewoman! [him.]

*Oldc.* Now you're sure of truth;

You hear her own thoughts speak.

*Greg.* They speak indeed.

*Oldc.* Go, you're a brainless cox, a toy, a Fop;

I'll go no further than your name, Sir Gregory,

I'll right myself there. Were you from this place,

You should perceive I'm heartily angry with you!

Offer to sow strife 'twixt my niece and I?—

Good morrow, niece, good morrow!

*Niece.* Many fair ones to you, sir!

*Oldc.* Go! you're a coxcomb.—How dost,

niece, this morning?—

An idle shallow fool!—Slep'dst thou well, girl?—

Fortune may very well provide thee lordships,

For honesty has left thee little manners.

*Greg.* How am I bang'd o' both sides!

*Oldc.* Abuse kindness?—

Wilt take the air to-day, niece?

*Niece.* When you please, sir.

There stands the heir behind you I must take—

Which I'd as lieve take as take him, I swear.

[*Apart.*]

*Oldc.* La' you! do you hear't continued to your

teeth now?

A pox of all such Gregories? what a hand

Have I with you! [*Niece lets fall her scarf.*]

*Greg.* No more! i' feck, I ha' done, sir.—

Lady, your scarf's fallen down.

*Niece.* 'Tis but your luck, sir,

And does presage the mistress must fall shortly;

You may wear it, an you please.

*Oldc.* There's a trick for you!

You're pariously beloved; you should complain!

*Greg.* Yes, when I complain, sir,

Then do your worst; there I'll deceive you, sir.

*Oldc.* You are a dolt, and so I leave you, sir.

[*Exit.*]

*Greg.* Ah, sirrah, mistress, were you caught,

i' faith?

We overheard you all; "I must not know

I have your heart;" take heed o' that, I pray!

I knew some scarf would come.

*Niece.* [*Aside.*] He's quite gone, sure!—

Ah, you base coxcomb, couldst thou come again,

And so abused as thou wast?

*Greg.* How!

*Niece.* It would ha' killed

A sensible man; he would ha' gone to his chamber  
And broke his heart, by this time.

*Greg.* Thank you heartily!

*Niece.* Or fix'd a naked rapier in a wall,  
Like him that earn'd his knighthood ere he had it,  
And then refused, upon't ran up to th' hilts.

*Greg.* Yes, let him run for me! I was never  
brought up to't,

I never profess'd running i' my life.

*Niece.* What art thou made on, thou tough vil-  
lainous vermin?

Will nothing destroy thee?

*Greg.* Yes, yes, assure yourself

Unkind words may do much.

*Niece.* Why, dost thou want 'em?

I've e'en consumed my spleen to help thee to 'em:

Tell me what sort of words they be would speed  
I'll see what I can do yet. [thee,

*Greg.* I'm much beholding to you.

You're willing to bestow huge pains upon me.

*Niece.* I should account nothing too much to  
rid thee.

*Greg.* I wonder you'd not offer to destroy me,  
All the while your uncle was here.

*Niece.* Why, there thou

Betray'st thy house; we of the Oldcrafts were  
Born to more wit than so.

*Greg.* I wear your favour here.

*Niece.* 'Would it might rot thy arm off! If thou  
knew'st

With what contempt thou hast it, what heart's  
bitterness,

How many cunning curses came along with't,

Thou'dst quake to handle it.

*Greg.* A pox, take't again then!

Who'd be thus plagued of all hands?

*Niece.* No, wear't still;

But long, I hope, thou shalt not; 'tis but cast

Upon thee purposely to serve another,

That has more right to't; as in some countries  
they convey

Their treasure upon asses to their friends:

If mine be but so wise and apprehensive

As my opinion gives him to my heart,

It stays not long on thy desertless arm.

I'll make thee, ere I ha' done, not dare to wear

Any thing of mine, although I give't thee freely.

Kiss it you may, and make what show you can,

But sure you carry't to a worthy man!

And so good-morrow to you!

[*Exit.*]

*Greg.* Hu hum, ha hum!

I ha'n't the spirit now to dash my brains out,

Nor the audacity to kill myself,

But I could cry my heart out; that's as good,

For so't be out, no matter which way't comes.

If I can die with a flipper, or depart

At hot-cockles, what is that to any man?

If there be so much death, that serves my turn

there.

Every one knows the state of his own body;

No carrion kills a kite, but then again

There's cheese will choke a daw. Time I were

dead i' faith,

If I knew which way, without hurt or danger.

I am a maiden-knight, and cannot look

Upon a naked weapon with any modesty,

Else 'twould go hard with me; and to complain

To Sir Perfidious the old knight again,

Were to be more abused: Perhaps he would beat

me well,

But ne'er believe me,  
And few men die o' beating; that were lost too.

*Enter CUNNINGHAM.*

Oh, here's my friend! I'll make my moan to him.

*Cunn.* I cannot tear her memory from my heart,  
That treads mine down! Was ever man so fool'd  
That profess'd wit?

*Greg.* Oh, Cunningham!

*Cunn.* Sir Gregory!

The choice, the victor, the town's happy man!

*Greg.* 'Snigs, what dost mean? come I to thee  
And dost abuse me too? [for comfort,

*Cunn.* Abuse you? how, sir?

With justifying your fortune and your joys?

*Greg.* Pray hold your hand, sir! I've been  
bobb'd enough:

You come with a new way now, strike me merrily;  
But when a man's sore beaten o' both sides already,  
Then the least tap in jest goes to the guts on him.  
Wilt ha' the truth? I'm made the rankest ass  
That e'er was born to lordships!

*Cunn.* What? no, sir!

*Greg.* I had not thought my body could a'  
yielded

All those foul scurvy names that she has call'd me;  
I wonder whence she fetch'd 'em.

*Cunn.* Is this credible?

*Greg.* She pinn'd this scarf upon me, afore her  
uncle;

But, his back turn'd, she curs'd me so for wearing  
on't,

The very brawn of mine arm has ach'd ever since;  
Yet in a manner forced me to wear't still,  
But hoped I should not long: If good luck serve,  
I should meet one that has more wit and worth  
Should take it from me; 'twas but lent to me,  
And sent to him for a token.

*Cunn.* I conceit it! I know the man  
That lies in wait for't: Part with't, by all means,  
In any case! you are way-laid about it.

*Greg.* How, sir! way-laid?

*Cunn.* Pox of a scarf, say I!

I prize my friend's life 'bove a million of 'em:  
You shall be ruled, sir; I know more than you.

*Greg.* If you know more than I, let me be rid  
on't!

'Las, 'tis not for my wearing; so she told me.

*Cunn.* No, no, give me't; the knave shall miss  
And you shall live. [his purpose,

*Greg.* I would as long as I could, sir.

*Cunn.* No more replies! you shall; I'll prevent  
Pompey shall march without it. [this:

*Greg.* What, is't he?

My man that was?

*Cunn.* Call him your deadly enemy!

You give him too fair a name, you deal too nobly;  
He bears a bloody mind, a cruel foe, sir;  
I care not if he heard me.

*Greg.* But, do you hear, sir?

Can it sound with reason she should affect him?

*Cunn.* Do you talk of reason? I ne'er thought  
to have heard

Such a word come from you: Reason in love?

Would you give that no doctor could e'er give?

Has not a deputy married his cook-maid?

An alderman's widow, one that was her turn-  
broach?

Nay, has not a great lady brought her stable  
Into her chamber? lay with her horse-keeper?

*Greg.* Did ever love play such jade's tricks, sir?

*Cunn.* Oh, thousands, thousands.

Beware a sturdy clown, e'er while you live, sir:  
'Tis like a housewifery in most shires about us:  
You shall ha' farmers' widows wed thin gentlemen  
Much like yourself, but put 'em to no stress;  
What work can they do, with small trap-stick legs?  
They keep clowns to stop gaps and drive in pegs,  
A drudgery fit for hinds. E'en back again, sir!  
You're safest at returning.

*Greg.* Think you so, sir?

*Cunn.* But how came this clown to be call'd  
Pompey first?

*Greg.* Fish! one goodman Cæsar, a pump-maker,  
kersen'd him;  
Pompey he writes himself, but his right name's  
Pumpey,

And stunk too when I had him; now he's crank.

*Cunn.* I'm glad I know so much to quell his  
pride, sir.

Walk you still that way; I'll make use of this  
To resolve all my doubts, and place this favour  
On some new mistress, only for a try;  
And if it meet my thoughts, I'll swear 'tis I.

[Exit  
*Greg.* Is Pompey grown so malapert, so framp'd?  
The only cutter about ladies' honours,  
And his blade soonest out?

*Enter OLDGRAFT.*

*Oldo.* Now, what's the news, sir?

*Greg.* [*Aside.*] I dare not say but good:—Oh,  
excellent good, sir!

*Oldo.* I hope now you're resolved she loves you,  
knight?

*Greg.* Cuds me, what else, sir? that's not to do  
now.

*Oldo.* You would not think how desperately you  
anger'd me,

When you belied her goodness: Oh, you ver'd me  
Even to a palsey.

*Greg.* What a thing was that, sir!

*Enter Niece.*

*Niece.* 'Tis that 'tis, [*Aside.*  
As I have hope of sweetness, the scarf's gone!  
Worthy wise friend, I dote upon thy cunning:  
We two shall be well match'd: our issue male sure  
Will be born counsellors. Is't possible?  
Thou shalt have another token out of hand for't;  
Nay, since the way's found, pity thou shouldst  
want, i' faith.—

Oh, my best joy and dearest!

*Oldo.* Well said, Niece!

So violent 'fore your uncle? What will you do  
In secret then!

*Greg.* Marry, call me slave and rascal.

*Niece.* Your scarf—the scarf I gave you—

*Oldo.* 'Mass, that's true, Niece!

I ne'er thought upon that:—The scarf she gave  
you, sir!

What, dumb? no answer from you? the scarf!

*Greg.* I was way-laid about it, my life threat-  
ened;

Life's life, scarf's but a scarf, and so I parted  
from't.

*Niece.* Unfortunate woman! my first favour  
too?

*Oldo.* Will you be still an ass? no reconciliation  
'Twixt you and Wit? Are you so far fallen out,  
You'll never come together? I tell you true,

I'm very lously ashamed on you ;  
That's the worst shame that can be.—  
Thus baiting on him, now his heart's hook'd in,  
[*Aside.*  
I'll make him, ere I ha' done, take her with  
nothing.  
I love a man that lives by his wits, a'-life !—  
Nay, leave, sweet Niece ; 'tis but a scarf ; let  
it go !  
*Niece.* The going of it never grieves me, sir ;  
It is the manner, the manner—  
*Greg.* Oh, dissembling marmaset ! If I durst  
speak,  
Or could be believed when I speak, what a tale  
Could I tell, to make hair stand upright now !  
*Niece.* Nay, sir, at your request, you shall per-  
ceive, uncle,  
With what renewing love I forgive this :—  
Here's a fair diamond, sir ; I'll try how long  
You can keep that.  
*Greg.* Not very long ; you know't too,  
Like a cunning witch as you are !  
*Niece.* You're best let him ha' that too.

*Greg.* So I were, I think ; there were no living  
else,  
I thank you, as you have handled the matter.  
*Oldc.* Why, this is musical now, and Tuesday  
next  
Shall tune your instruments ; that's the day set.  
*Niece.* A match, good uncle !  
*Oldc.* Sir, you hear me too ?  
*Greg.* Oh, very well ; I'm for you.  
*Niece.* Whate'er you hear, you know my mind !  
[*Exeunt* OLD CRAFT and NIECE.  
*Greg.* Ay, a pox on't, too well ! If I do not  
wonder how we two shall come together, I'm a  
bear-whelp. He talks of Tuesday next, as famili-  
arly as if we loved one another ; but 'tis as un-  
likely to me, as 'twas seven year before I saw her.  
I shall try his cunning ; it may be, he has a way  
was never yet thought on, and it had need to be  
such a one ; for all that I can think on will never  
do't. I look to have this diamond taken from me  
very speedily ; therefore I'll take it off o' my  
finger, for, if it be seen, I shall be way-laid for  
that too. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A Room in OLD CRAFT'S House.

[*Enter* OLD CRAFT and WITTYFACE.

*Oldc.* Oh, torture, torture ! Thou carry'st a sting  
i' thy tail !  
Thou never brought'st good news i' thy life yet ;  
And that's an ill quality, leave it when thou wilt.  
*Witty.* Why, you receive a blessing the wrong  
way, sir.  
Call you not this good news, to save at once, sir,  
Your credit and your kinsman's life together ?  
Would it not vex your peace, and gall your worth,  
To have one of your name hang'd ?  
*Oldc.* Peace ; no such words, boy !  
*Witty.* Be thankful for the blessings of preven-  
*Oldc.* Let me see ! [tion then.  
There was none hang'd out of our house since  
Brute ;  
I ha' search'd both Stow and Hollinshed.  
*Witty.* Oh, sir !  
*Oldc.* I'll see what Polychronicon says anon  
too.  
*Witty.* 'Twas a miraculous fortune that I heard  
on't !  
*Oldc.* I would thou'dat never heard on't !  
*Witty.* That's true too,  
So it had ne'er been done. To see the luck on't !  
He was even brought to justice Aurum's threshold ;  
There had down forth a mittimus straight for New-  
gate !  
And note the fortune too ! Sessions a Thursday,  
Jury call'd out a Friday, judgment a Saturday,  
Dungeon a Sunday, Tyburn a Monday :  
Misery's quotidian ague, when't begins once,  
Every day pulls him, till he pull his last.  
*Oldc.* No more, I say ! 'tis an ill theme. Where  
left you him ?  
*Witty.* He's in the constable's hands below i'  
th' hall, sir,  
Poor gentleman, and his accuser with him.  
*Oldc.* What's he ?

*Witty.* A judge's son, 'tis thought ; so much the  
worse too ;  
He'll hang his enemy and't shall cost him nothing ;  
That's a great privilege.  
*Oldc.* Within there !

[*Enter* a Servant.

*Serv.* Sir ?

*Oldc.* Call up the folks i' th' hall.—I had such  
hope on him,  
For a scholar too, a thing thou ne'er wast fit for ;  
Therefore erected all my joys in him,  
Got a Welch benefice in reversion for him,  
Dean of Cardigan ; he has his grace already,  
He can marry and bury,  
Yet ne'er a hair on's face, like a French vicar ;  
And does he bring such fruits to town with him ?  
A thief at his first lighting ?—Oh, good den to  
you !

[*Enter* CREDULOUS, SIR RUINOUS (as a Constable,) and Lady  
RUINOUS (as a Man).

*Witty.* Nay, sweet sir ! you're so vex'd now,  
you will grieve him,  
And hurt yourself.

*Oldc.* Away ! Ill hear no counsel.—  
Come you but once in seven year to your uncle,  
And at that time must you be brought home too ?  
And by a constable ?

*Witty.* Oh, speak low, sir ;  
Remember your own credit ! You profess  
You love a man o' wit ; begin at home, sir ;  
Express it i' yourself.

*L. Ruin.* Nay, master constable,  
Shew yourself a wise man, 'gainst your nature too.  
*Ruin.* Sir, no dish-porridge, we have  
As good men as ye. [brought home

*Oldc.* Out ! a North-Britain constable ? that  
tongue

Will publish all, it speaks so broad already.—  
Are you the gentleman ?

*L. Ruin.* The unfortunate one, sir,

That fell into the power of merciless thieves,  
Whereof this fellow, (whom I'd call your kinsman  
As little as I could, for the fair reverence  
I owe to fame and years,) was the prime villain.

*Oldo.* A wicked prime!

*Witty.* Nay, not so loud, sweet father!

*L. Ruin.* The rest are fled, but I shall meet  
with 'em:

Hang one of 'em I will certain, (I ha' sworn it)

And 'twas my luck to light upon this first.

*Oldo.* A Cambridge man for this? these your  
degrees, sir?

Nine years at university for this fellowship?

*Witty.* Take your voice lower, dear sir!

*Oldo.* What's your loss, sir?

*L. Ruin.* That which offends me to repeat; the  
money's whole, sir,

'Tis in the constable's hands there, a seal'd hun-  
But I will not receive't. [dred;

*Oldo.* No? not the money, sir,

Having confess'd 'tis all?

*L. Ruin.* 'Tis all the money, sir,

But 'tis not all I lost; for when they bound me,

They took a diamond hung at my shirt-string,

Which fear of life made me forget to hide;

It being the sparkling witness of a contract

'Twixt a great lawyer's daughter and myself.

*Witty.* I told you what he was.—What does the  
Concern my cousin, sir? [diamond

*L. Ruin.* No more did the money;

But he shall answer all now.

*Witty.* There's your conscience!

It shews from whence you sprung.

*L. Ruin.* Sprung? I had leap'd a thief,

Had I leap'd some of your alliance.

*Witty.* Slave!

*L. Ruin.* You prevent me still.

*Oldo.* 'Slid, son, are you mad?

*L. Ruin.* Come, come, I'll take a legal course.

*Oldo.* Will you undo us all?—What's your de-  
mand, sir?

Now we're in's danger too!

*L. Ruin.* A hundred mark, sir;

I will not bate a doit.

*Witty.* A hundred rascals!

*L. Ruin.* Sir, find 'em out in your own blood,  
and take 'em.

*Witty.* Go, take your course; follow the law,  
and spare not.

*Oldo.* Does fury make you drunk? Know you  
what you say?

*Witty.* A hundred dogs-dungs! do your worst.

*Oldo.* You do, I'm sure: who is loud now?

*Witty.* What, his own asking?

*Oldo.* Not in such a case?

*Witty.* You shall have but threescore pound,  
'spite a' your teeth;

I'll see you hang'd first!

*Oldo.* And what's seven pound more, man,  
That all this coil's about?—Stay!—I say he shall  
ha't.

*Witty.* It is your own, you may do what you  
please with it;

Pardon my zeal! I would ha' saved you money.

Give him all his own asking?

*Oldo.* What's that to you, sir?

Be sparing of your own! Teach me to pinch

In such a case as this? Go, go; live by your wits,

*Witty.* I practise all I can. [go!

*Oldo.* Follow you me, sir;

And, master constable, come from the knave,  
And be a witness of a full recompense.

*Witty.* Pray stop the constable's mouth, what-

*Oldo.* Yet again? [e'er you do, sir.

As if I meant not to do that myself,

Without your counsel?—As for you, precious kins-  
man,

Your first year's fruits in Wales shall go to rack  
for this!

You lie not in my house: I'll pack you out,  
And pay for your lodging rather.

[*Exeunt OLD-CRAFT, RUINOS, and Lady RUINOS.*

*Witty.* Oh, fy, cousin!

These are ill courses; you a scholar too!

*Cred.* I was drawn into't most unfortunately,

By filthy debosh'd company.

*Witty.* Ay, ay, ay;

'Tis even the spoil of all our youth in England.

What were they? gentlemen?

*Cred.* 'Faith, so like, some of 'em,

They were even the worse again.

*Witty.* Hum!

*Cred.* Great tobacco-whiffers;

They would go near to rob with a pipe in their

*Witty.* What! no? [mouths.

*Cred.* 'Faith, leave it, cousin, because my rascals  
use it.

*Witty.* So they do meat and drink; must worthy  
gentlemen

Refrain their food for that? an honest man

May eat of the same pig some parson dines with,

A lawyer and a fool feed of one woodcock,

Yet one ne'er the simpler, t'other ne'er the wiser;

'Tis not meat, drink, or smoke, dish, cup, or pipe,

Co-operates to the making of a knave;

'Tis the condition makes a slave a slave:

There's London philosophy for you! I tell you,  
cousin,

You cannot be too cautelous, nice, or dainty,

In your society here, especially

When you come raw from the university,

Before the world has harden'd you a little;

For as a butter'd loaf is a scholar's breakfast there,

So a poach'd scholar is a cheater's dinner here:

I ha' known seven of 'em supp'd up at a meal.

*Cred.* Why a poach'd scholar?

*Witty.* 'Cause he pours himself forth,

And all his secrets, at the first acquaintance;

Never so crafty to be eaten i' th' shell,

But is out-stripp'd of all he has at first,

And goes down glib: he's swallow'd with sharp wit,

'Stead of wine vinegar.

*Cred.* I shall think, cousin,

O' your poach'd scholar, while I live.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Master Credulous,

Your uncle wills you to forbear the house:

You must with me; I'm charged to see you placed

In some new lodging about Thieving-Lane.

What the conceit is I know not; but he commands  
you

To be seen here no more, till you hear further.

*Cred.* Here's a strange welcome, sir!

*Witty.* This is the world, cousin,

When a man's fame's once poison'd! Fare thee

well, lad! [*Exeunt CREDULOUS and Servant.*

This is the happiest cheat I e'er claim'd share in;

It has a two-fold fortune, gets me coin,

And puts him out of grace that stood between me;

My father's Cambridge jewel, much suspected  
To be his heir; now there's a bar in's hopes.

*Enter RUINOUS with a Purse, and Lady RUINOUS.*

*Ruin.* It thinks; make haste!

*L. Ruin.* The Goat at Smithfield-Pens. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter CUNNINGHAM.*

*Witty.* Zo, zo, sufficient!—Master Cunningham?  
I never have ill luck when I meet a wit.

*Cunn.* A wit's better to meet than to follow  
then,

For I ha' none so good I can commend yet;  
But commonly men unfortunate to themselves,  
Are luckiest to their friends; and so may I be.

*Witty.* I run o'er so much worth, going but in  
haste from you,

All my deliberate friendship cannot equal.

*Cunn.* 'Tis but to shew, that you can place  
sometimes

Your modesty a-top of all your virtues.—

[*Exit WITTYPATE.*]

This gentleman may pleasure me yet again.

*Enter MIRABELL.*

I am so haunted with this broad-brimm'd hat  
Of the last progress block, with the young hat-  
band,

Made for a sucking devil of two years old,  
I know not where to turn myself.

*Mir.* Sir!

*Cunn.* More torture?

*Mir.* 'Tis rumour'd that you love me.

*Cunn.* O' my troth, gentewoman,

Rumour's as false a knave as ever piss'd then;

Pray tell him so from me! I cannot feign

With a sweet gentewoman, I must deal down-  
right.

*Mir.* I heard, though you dissembled with my  
aunt, sir;

And that makes me more confident.

*Cunn.* There's no falsehood,

But pays us our own some way!—I confess

I feign'd with her, ('twas for a weightier purpose)

But not with thee, I swear.

*Mir.* Nor I with you then,

Although my aunt enjoin'd me to dissemble,

To right her spleen: I love you faithfully.

*Cunn.* 'Light, this is worse than 'twas.

*Mir.* I find such worth in you,

I cannot, nay, I dare not, dally with you,

For fear the flame consume me.

*Cunn.* Here's fresh trouble!

This drives me to my conscience; for 'tis foul

To injure one that deals directly with me.

*Mir.* I crave but such a truth from your love, sir,

As mine brings you, and that's proportionable.

*Cunn.* A good geometrician, 'shrew my heart!

Why, are you out o' your wits, pretty plump gen-  
tlewoman,

You talk so desperately? 'tis a great happiness

Love has made one on a wiser than another,

We should be both cast away else:

Yet I love gratitude; I must requite you,

I shall be sick else: But to give you me—

A thing you must not take, if you mean to live,

For a' my troth I hardly can myself;

No wise physician will prescribe me for you.

Alas, your state is weak; you had need of cordials,

Some rich electuary, made of a son and heir,

An elder brother, in a callis, whole;

It must be some wealthy Gregory, boil'd to a jelly,  
That must restore you to the state of new gowns,  
French ruffs, and mutable head-tires.

*Mir.* But, where is he, sir?

One that's so rich will ne'er wed me with nothing.

*Cunn.* Then see thy conscience, and thy wit  
together!

Wouldst thou have me then, that have nothing  
neither?

What say you to Pop Gregory the First yonder?

Will you acknowledge your time amply recom-  
pensed,

Full satisfaction upon love's record,

Without any more suit, if I combine you?

*Mir.* Yes, by this honest kiss.

*Cunn.* You're a wise client,

To pay your fee before-hand; but all do so:

You know the worst already, that's the best too.

*Mir.* I know he is a fool.

*Cunn.* You're shrewdly hurt then!

This is your comfort; your great, wisest women

Pick their first husband still out of that house,

And some will have 'em to chuse, if they bury  
twenty.

*Mir.* I'm of their minds, that like him for a first  
husband

To run youth's race with him, 'tis very pleasant;

But when I'm old, I'd always wish a wiser.

*Cunn.* You may have me by that time. For  
this first business,

Rest upon my performance!

*Mir.* With all thankfulness.

*Cunn.* I have a project you must aid me in  
too.

*Mir.* You bind me to all lawful action, sir.

*Cunn.* Pray wear this scarf about you.

*Mir.* I conjecture now—

*Cunn.* There's a court principle for't, one office  
must help another;

As for example, for your cast o' manchets out o'  
th' pantry,

I will allow you a goose out of the kitchen.

*Mir.* 'Tis very sociably done, sir: Farewell,  
Performance!

I shall be hold to call you so.

[*Exit.*]

*Cunn.* Do, sweet Confidence!

*Enter Sir GREGORY.*

If I can match my two broad-brimm'd hats—

'Tis he! I know the maggot by his head;

Now shall I learn news of him.—My precious  
chief!

*Greg.* I have been seeking for you i' th'  
bowling-green,

Enquired at Nettleton's and Anthony's ordinary;

'T has vex'd me to the heart! Look, I've a  
diamond here,

And it cannot find a master.

*Cunn.* No? that's hard, i' faith.

*Greg.* It does belong to somebody: A pox  
on him,

I would he had it; 'does but trouble me;

And she that sent it is so waspish too,

There's no returning to her till't be gone.

*Cunn.* Oh, ho! Ah, sirrah, are you come?

*Greg.* What's that, friend?

*Cunn.* Do you note that corner sparkle?

*Greg.* Which? which? which, sir?

*Cunn.* At the west end o' th' collet.

*Greg.* Oh, I see't now.

*Cunn.* 'Tis an apparent mark : This is the stone, sir,  
That so much blood is threaten'd to be shed for.

*Greg.* I pray—

*Cunn.* A tun at least.

*Greg.* They must not find it i' me then ; they  
Go where 'tis to be had. [must

*Cunn.* 'Tis well it came to my hands first,  
Sir Gregory ;

I know where this must go.

*Greg.* Am I discharged on't ?

*Cunn.* My life for yours now ! [Draws.

*Greg.* What now ?

*Cunn.* 'Tis discretion, sir ;

I'll stand upon my guard all the while I ha't.

*Greg.* 'Troth thou tak'st too much danger on  
To preserve me alive. [these still,

*Cunn.* 'Tis a friend's duty, sir.

Nay, by a toy that I have late thought upon,  
I'll undertake to get your mistress for you.

*Greg.* Thou wilt not ? wilt ?

*Cunn.* Contract her by a trick, sir,  
When she least thinks on't.

*Greg.* There's the right way to't ;

For if she think on't once, she'll never do't.

*Cunn.* She does abuse you still then ?

*Greg.* A pox ! damnably,

Every time worse than other ; yet her uncle  
Thinks the day holds 'a Tuesday : Say it did, sir,  
She's so familiarly used to call me *rascal*,  
She'll quite forget to wed me by my own name ;  
And then that marriage cannot hold in law, you

*Cunn.* Will you leave all to me ? [know.

*Greg.* Who should I leave it to ?

*Cunn.* 'Tis our luck to love nieces ; I love a

*Greg.* I would you did, i' faith ! [niece too.

*Cunn.* But mine's a kind wretch.

*Greg.* Ay, marry, sir ? I would mine were so

*Cunn.* No *rascal* comes in her mouth. [too !

*Greg.* 'Troth, and mine

Has little else in her's.

*Cunn.* Mine sends me tokens,

All the world knows not on.

*Greg.* Mine gives me tokens too,

Very fine tokens ; but I dare not wear 'em.

*Cunn.* Mine's kind in secret.

*Greg.* And there mine's a hell-cat.

*Cunn.* We have a day set too.

*Greg.* 'Slid, so have we, man ;

But there's no sign of ever coming together.

*Cunn.* I'll tell thee who it is ; the old woman's

*Greg.* Is't she ? [niece.

*Cunn.* I would your luck had been no worse for  
mildness ;

But mum ; no more words on't to your lady !

*Greg.* Foh !

*Cunn.* No blabbing, as you love me.

*Greg.* None of our blood

Were ever babblers.

*Cunn.* Pr'ythee convey this letter to her ;

But at any hand let not your mistress see't !

*Greg.* Yet again, sir ?

*Cunn.* There is a jewel in't !

The very art would make her dote upon't.

*Greg.* Say you so ?

And she shall see't for that trick only.

*Cunn.* Remember but your mistress, and all's  
well.

*Greg.* Nay, if I do not, hang me ! [Exit.

*Cunn.* I believe you.—

This is the only way to return a token :  
I know he will do't now, 'cause he's charged to't  
contrary.

He's the nearest kin to a woman, of a thing  
Made without substance, that a man can find again.  
Some petticoat begot him, I'll be whipt else,  
Engendering with an old pair of panned hose,  
Lying in some hot chamber o'er the kitchen ;  
Very steam bred him.

He never grew where *rem in re e'er* came ;

The generation of a hundred such

Cannot make a man stand in a white sheet,

For 'tis no act in law ; nor can a constable

Pick out a bawdy business for Bridewell in't.

A lamentable case !

He's got with a man's urine, like a mandrake.—

*Enter POMPEY (as a Gallant.)*

How now ? ha ? what prodigious bravery's this ?

A most preposterous gallant ! the doublet sits

As if it mock'd the breeches.

*Pompey.* Save you, sir !

*Cunn.* He has put his tongue in the fine suit of

*Pompey.* How does the party ? [words too :

*Cunn.* Takes me for a scrivener.—

Which of the parties ?

*Pompey.* Hum ! Simplicity betide thee !—

I would fain hear o' th' party ; I would be loth to

Further with her ; honour is not a thing [go

To be dallied withal, no more is reputation,

No, nor fame, I take it ; I must not have her

wrong'd

When I'm abroad ; my party is not to be compell'd

With any party in an oblique way ;

'Tis very dangerous to deal with women ;

May prove a lady too, but shall be nameless ;

I'll bite my tongue out, ere it prove a traitor.

*Cunn.* Upon my life, I know her !

*Pompey.* Not by me ;

Know what you can, talk a whole day with me.

You're ne'er the wiser ; she comes not from these

*Cunn.* The old knight's niece. [lips.

*Pompey.* 'Slid, he has got her ! Pox of his heart  
that told him !— [Aside.

Can nothing be kept secret ? Let me entreat you  
To use her name as little as you can, though.

*Cunn.* 'Twill be small pleasure, sir, to use her  
name.

*Pompey.* I had intelligence in my solemn walks,

'Twixt Paddington and Pancridge, of a scarf

Sent for a token, and a jewel follow'd ;

But I acknowledge not the receipt of any :

Howe'er 'tis carried, believe me, sir,

Upon my reputation, I received none !

*Cunn.* What, neither scarf nor jewel ?

*Pompey.* 'Twould be seen

Somewhere about me, you may well think that ;

I have an arm for a scarf, as others have,

An ear to hang a jewel too, and that's more

Than some men have, my betters a great deal.

I must have restitution, where'er it lights.

*Cunn.* And reason good.

*Pompey.* For all these tokens, sir,

Pass i' my name.

*Cunn.* It cannot otherwise be.

*Pompey.* Sent to a worthy friend !

*Cunn.* Ay, that's to thee.

*Pompey.* I'm wrong'd under that title.

*Cunn.* I dare swear thou art ;

'Tis nothing but Sir Gregory's circumvention,

His envious spite; when thou'rt at Paddington,  
He sends the gifts at Pancridge.

*Pompey.* Ah, false knight!

False both to honour, and the law of arms.

*Cunn.* What wilt thou say if I be revenged for  
Thou sit as witness? [thee,

*Pompey.* I should laugh in state then.

*Cunn.* I'll fob him; here's my hand.

*Pompey.* I shall be as glad as any man alive to  
see him well fobb'd, sir. But, now you talk of  
fobbing, I wonder the lady sends not for me ac-  
cording to promise: I ha' kept out o' town these  
two days, o' purpose to be sent for: I am almost  
starved with walking.

*Cunn.* Walking gets men a stomach.

*Pompey.* 'Tis most true, sir; I may speak it by  
experience, for I ha' got a stomach six times, and  
lost it again, as often as a traveller from Chelsea  
shall lose the sight of Paul's, and get it again.

*Cunn.* Go to her, man.

*Pompey.* Not for a million! Enfringe my oath?  
There's a toy call'd a vow has past between us, a  
poor trifle, sir! Pray do me the part and office of  
a gentleman: If you chance to meet a footman by  
the way, in orange-tawny ribbands, running before  
an empty coach, with a buzzard i' th' poop on't,  
direct him and his horses toward the New-River,  
by Islington; there they shall have me looking  
upon the pipes, and whistling. [Exit.

*Cunn.* A very good note! This love makes us  
all monkeys.

But to my work: Scarf first? and now a diamond?  
These should be sure signs of her affection's truth;  
Yet I'll go forward with my surer proof. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter NIECE and GREGORY.*

*Niece.* Is't possible?

*Greg.* Nay, here's his letter too;  
There's a fine jewel in't, therefore I brought it to  
you.

*Niece.* You tedious mongril! Is it not enough  
To grace thee, to receive this from thy hand,  
A thing which makes me almost sick to do,  
But you must talk to?

*Greg.* I ha' done.

*Niece.* Fall back!

Yet backer, backer yet! You unmannerly puppy,  
Do you not see I'm going about to read it?

*Greg.* Nay, these are golden days! now I stay  
by't;

She was wont not to endure me in her sight at all;  
The world mends, I see that.

*Niece.* What an ambiguous superscription's  
'To the best of nieces.' [here!

Why, that title may be mine, and more than her's:  
Sure I much wrong the neatness of his art!  
'Tis certain sent to me; and to requite  
My cunning in the carriage of my tokens,  
Used the same fop for his.

*Greg.* She nodded now to me; 'twill come in  
time.

*Niece.* What's here? An entire ruby, cut into  
a heart?

And this the word, *Istud amoris opus?*

*Greg.* Yes, yes;

I have heard him say, that Love is the best stone-  
cutter.

*Niece.* Why, thou saucy issue of some travelling  
sow-gelder,

What makes love in thy mouth? Is it a thing  
That ever will concern thee? I do wonder  
How thou dar'st think on't! Hast thou ever hope  
To come i' the same room where lovers are,  
And 'scape unbrain'd with one of their velvet  
slippers?

*Greg.* Love-tricks break out I see: An you talk  
of slippers once,  
It is not far off to bed-time.

*Niece.* Is it possible thou canst laugh yet?  
I would ha' undertook to ha' kill'd a spider  
With less venom far than I have spit at thee.

*Greg.* You must conceive,  
A knight's another manner o' piece of flesh.

*Niece.* Back, owl's face!

*Oldc.* [Within.] Do, do.

*Niece.* [Apart.] 'Tis my uncle's voice, that—  
Why keep you so far off, Sir Gregory?

Are you afraid, sir, to come near your mistress?

*Greg.* Is the proud heart come down? I look'd  
for this still.

*Niece.* [Apart.] He comes not this way yet—  
Away, you dog-whelp!

Would you offer to come near me, though I said so?  
I'll make you understand my mind in time!  
You're running greedily, like a hound to his break-  
fast,

That chops in head and all to beguile his fellows;  
I'm to be eaten, sir, with grace and leisure,  
Behaviour and discourse, things that ne'er trouble  
After I have pelted you sufficiently, [you:  
I trow you'll learn more manners.

*Greg.* I am wond'ring still  
When we two shall come together. Tuesday's at  
hand,  
But I'm as far off as I was at first, I swear.

*Enter Guardiansess.*

*Guard.* Now, Cunningham, I'll be revenged at  
large.—

Lady, what was but all this while suspicion,  
Is truth full blown now; my niece wears your scarf.

*Niece.* Ha!

*Guard.* Do but follow me, I'll place you in-  
stantly

Where you shall see her courted by Cunningham.  
*Niece.* I go with greediness! We long for things  
That break our hearts sometimes; there's Pleasure's  
misery. [Exeunt Niece and Guardiansess.

*Greg.* Where are those gad-flies going? to some  
junker now.

That same old humble-bee toles the young one  
forth

To sweetmeats after kind: Let 'em look to't  
The thing you wot on be not miss'd or gone!  
I bring a maidenhead, and I look for one. [Exit.

SCENE III.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter CUNNINGHAM, (seemingly in discourse with a mask'd  
Gentlewoman, which is a puppet, in a broad hat, and  
scarf) and Niece at another door.*

*Cunn.* Yes, yes.

*Niece.* Too manifest now; the scarf and all!

*Cunn.* It cannot be; you're such a fearful soul.

*Niece.* I'll give her cause of fear ere I part from  
her!

*Cunn.* Will you say so? Is't not your aunt's desire too?

*Niece.* What a dissembling crone's that? She'll forswear't now.

*Cunn.* I see my project takes; yonder's the grace on't. [*Aside.*]

*Niece.* Who would put confidence in wit again?

I'm plagued for my ambition, to desire

A wise man for a husband! and I see

Fate will not have us go beyond our stint:

We are allow'd but one dish, and that's woodcock.

It keeps up wit to make us friends and servants of;

And thinks anything's good enough to make us husbands.

Oh, that whore's hat o' thine, o' th' riding block,

A shade for lecherous kisses!—

*Cunn.* Make you doubt on't?

Is not my love of force?

*Niece.* Yes; me it forces [*Comes forward.*]

To tear that sorcerous strumpet from thy embraces.

*Cunn.* Lady?

*Niece.* Oh, thou hast wrong'd the exquisitest

*Cunn.* What mean you, lady? [*love—*]

*Niece.* Mine; you'll answer for't!

*Cunn.* Alas, what seek you?

*Niece.* Sir, mine own, with loss.

*Cunn.* You shall—

*Niece.* I never made so hard a bargain.

*Cunn.* Sweet lady!

*Niece.* Unjust man, let my wrath reach her,  
As you owe Virtue duty! [*CUNNINGHAM falls on purpose.*] Your cause trips you.—

Now, minion, you shall feel what love's rage is,  
Before you taste the pleasure.—Smile you, false sir?

*Cunn.* How can I chuse, to see what pains you take,

Upon a thing will never thank you for't?

*Niece.* How?

*Cunn.* See what things you women be, lady!

When clothes are taken for the best part of you.

This was to shew you, when you think I love you not,

How you're deceived still; there the moral lies:

'Twas a trap set to catch you, and the only bait

To take a lady nibbling is fine clothes:

Now I dare boldly thank you for your love;

I'm pretty well resolved in't by this fit,

For a jealous age always ushers it.

*Niece.* Now blessings still maintain this wit of thine!

And I've an excellent fortune coming in thee:

Bring nothing else, I charge thee.

*Cunn.* Not a groat, I warrant you.

*Niece.* Thou shalt be worthily welcome, take my faith for't;

Next opportunity shall make us.

*Cunn.* The old gentlewoman has fool'd her revenge sweetly.

*Niece.* 'Las, 'tis her part; she knows her place so well yonder!

Always when women jump upon threescore,

Love shoves 'em from the chamber to the door.

*Cunn.* Thou art a precious she-wit! [*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A mean Room in the House of Sir RUINOUS.*

*Enter CUNNINGHAM, (at one door,) WITTYPATE, RUINOUS, Lady RUINOUS, and PRINCIAN (at the other).*

*Cunn.* Friend, met in the harvest of our designs!  
Not a thought but's busy.

*Witty.* I knew it, man;

And that made me provide these needful reapers,

Hooks, rakers, gleaners: We will sing it home

With a melodious hornpipe. This is the bond;

That as we further in your great affair,

You'll suffer us to glean, pick up for crumbs,

And, if we snatch a handful from the sheaf,

You will not look a churl on's.

*Cunn.* Friend, we'll share

The sheaves of gold; only the love acre

Shall be peculiar.

*Witty.* Much good do you, sir.

Away! you know your way, and your stay; get you

The music ready, while we prepare the dancers.

*Ruin.* We are a consort of ourselves.

*Pris.* And can strike up lustily.

*Witty.* You must bring Sir Pop.

*Cunn.* That's perfect enough.

*Ruin.* Bring all the fops you can, the more the better fare;

So the proverb runs backwards.

[*Exeunt RUINOUS and PRINCIAN.*]

*L. Ruin.* I'll bring the ladies. [*Exit.*]

*Witty.* Do so first, and then the fops will follow.

I must to my father; he must make one. [*Exit.*]

*Enter two Servants, with a Banquet.*

*Cunn.* While I dispatch a business with the knight,

And I go with you.—Well said! I thank you!

This small banquet will furnish our few guests

With taste and state enough. One reach my gown;

The action craves it, rather than the weather.

*1 Serv.* There is one stays to speak with you, sir.

*Cunn.* What is he?

*1 Serv.* 'Faith, I know not what, sir; a fool, I think,

That some broker's shop has made half a gentle-

'Has the name of a worthy too. [*man:*]

*Cunn.* Pompey? is't not?

*1 Serv.* That's he, sir.

*Cunn.* Alas, poor fellow, pr'ythee enter him,

He will need too. He shall serve for a witness.

*Enter second Servant, with a Gown.*

Oh, gramercy! If my friend Sir Gregory comes,  
(You know him) entertain him kindly.

*Enter POMPEY.*

Oh, Master Pompey!

How is't, man?

*Pompey.* 'Snails, I'm almost starved with love,

and cold, and one thing or other. Has not my

lady sent for me yet?

*Cunn.* Not that I hear: Sure some

Unfriendly messenger's employ'd betwixt you.

*Pompey.* I was ne'er so cold in my life: In my

conscience, I have been seven miles in length, along

the New-River; I have seen a hundred stick-

bags; I do not think but there's gudgeons too:  
'Twill ne'er be a true water.

*Cunn.* Why think you so?

*Pompey.* I warrant you I told a thousand miller's thumbs in it. I'll make a little bold with your sweetmeats.

*Cunn.* And welcome, Pompey!

*Pompey.* 'Tis a strange thing I have no taste in anything.

*Cunn.* Oh, that's love; that distastes anything but itself.

*Pompey.* 'Tis worse than cheese in that point. May not a man break his word with a lady? I could find in my heart and my hose too.

*Cunn.* By no means, sir; that breaks all the laws of love.

*Pompey.* Well, I'll ne'er pass my word without my deed, to lady, while I live, again. I would fain recover my taste.

*Cunn.* Well, I have news to tell you.

*Pompey.* Good news, sir?

*Cunn.* Happy news! I help you away with a rival, your master's bestow'd—

*Pompey.* Where, for this plumb's sake—

*Cunn.* Nay, listen me.

*Pompey.* I warrant you, sir; I have two ears to one mouth: I hear more than I eat; I'd ne'er row by Queen-Hithe while I lived else.

*Cunn.* I have a wife for him, and thou shalt witness the contract.

*Pompey.* The old one, I hope; 'tis not the lady? *Cunn.* Choke him first! 'Tis one which thou shalt see; see him, see him deceived, see the deceit, only the injunction is, you shall smile with modesty.

*Pompey.* I'll simper, i'faith, as cold as I am yet. The old one, I hope! [Retires.]

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Sir, here's Sir Gregory.

*Cunn.* Udso, shelter, shelter! If you be seen, all's ravell'd out again: Stand there private, and you will find the very opportunity to call you forth, and place you at the table.

*Enter GAZOOV.*

You are welcome, sir! this banquet will serve, when it is crown'd with such a dainty as you expect, and must have.

*Greg.* Tush, these sweetmeats are but sauce to that. Well, if there be any honesty, or true word in a dream, she's mine own, nay, and changed extremely, not the same woman.

*Cunn.* Who? not the lady?

*Greg.* No, not to me; the edge of her tongue is taken off, gives me very good words; turn'd upside down to me; and we live as quietly as two tortoises: If she hold on, as she began in my dream—

*Cunn.* Nay, if love send forth such predictions, you are bound to believe 'em. [Soft Music.] There's the watch-word of her coming; to your practised part now! If you hit it, *Æquus Cupido nobis.*

[They both sit down, and cover themselves with the gown.]

*Greg.* I'll warrant you, sir, I will give arms to your gentry: Look you forward to your business, I am an eye behind you; place her in that chair, and let me alone to grope her out!

[Hides himself in the gown.]

*Enter MIRABEL.*

*Cunn.* Silence!—Lady, your sweet presence illustrates

This homely roof, and as coarse entertainment; But where affections are both host and guest, They cannot meet unkindly. Please you sit! Your something long stay made me unmannerly, To place before you (know him!) this friend here; (He is my guest) and more especially, That this our meeting might not be too single, Without a witness to't.

*Mir.* I came not unresolved, sir: And when our hands are clasped in that firm faith Which I expect from you, Fame shall be bold To speak the loudest on it. Oh, you grasp me Somewhat too hard, friend!

*Cunn.* That's Love's eager will; I'll touch it gentlier. [Kisses her hand.]

*Mir.* That's too low in you, 'Less it be doubly recompensed in me.

[Kisses his hand.]

*Pompey.* Puh! I must stop my mouth; I shall be choak'd else.

*Cunn.* Come, we'll not play and trifle with de- We met to join these hands, and willingly [lays; I cannot leave it till confirmation.

*Mir.* One word first! how does your friend, Kind Sir Gregory?

*Cunn.* Why do you mention him? you love him not.

*Mir.* I shall love you the less if you say so, sir: In troth, I love him; but 'tis you deceive him, This flattering hand of yours does rob him now, Now you steal his right from him; and I know I shall have hate for it, his hate extremely.

*Cunn.* Why, I thought you had not come so weakly arm'd:

Upon my life, the knight will love you for't, Exceedingly love you, for ever love you.

*Mir.* Ay, you'll persuade me so.

*Cunn.* Why, he's my friend, And wishes me a fortune equal with him, I know and dare speak it for him.

*Mir.* Oh, this hand betrays him! You might remember him in some court'sy yet at least.

*Cunn.* I thank your help in it; here's to his health, [Drinks.] Where'er he be!

*Mir.* I'll pledge it, Were it against my health.

*Pompey.* Oh, oh! my heart hops after twelve mile a-day, upon a good return! Now could I walk three hundred mile a-foot, and laugh forwards and backwards.

*Mir.* You'll take the knight's health, sir?

*Pompey.* Yes, yes, forsooth. Oh, my sides! Such a banquet once a-week, would make me grow fat in a fortnight.

*Cunn.* Well; now to close our meeting, with the close [Sir GAZOOV puts forth his hand.] Of mutual hands and hearts, thus I begin: Here in Heaven's eye, and all Love's sacred powers,

(Which in my prayers stand propitious,) I knit this holy hand fast, and with this hand The heart that owes this hand, ever binding By force of this initiating contract Both heart and hand in love, faith, loyalty, Estate, or what to them belongs, in all

The dues, rights, and honours, of a faithful husband :

And this firm vow, henceforth till death to stand Irrevocable, seal'd both with heart and hand !

*Mir.* Which thus I second : But, oh, Sir Gregory !

*Cunn.* Again ? this interposition's ill, believe me.

*Mir.* Here, in Heaven's eye, and all Love's sacred powers,

I knit this holy hand fast, and with this hand The heart that owes this hand, ever binding Both heart and hand in love, honour, loyalty, Estate, or what to them belongs, in all The dues, rights, and duties, of a true faithful wife ; And this firm vow, henceforth till death to stand Irrevocable, seal'd both with heart and hand !

*Greg.* A full agreement on both parts.

*Cunn.* Ay, here's witness of that.

*Greg.* Nay, I have over-reach'd you, lady ; and that's much, *[Discovers himself.*

For any knight in England to over-reach a lady.

*Mir.* I rejoice in my deceit ; I am a lady Now, I thank you, sir.

*Pompey.* Good morrow, Lady Pop !

*Greg.* 'Snails, I am gull'd ! made a worshipful ass ! this is not my lady.

*Cunn.* But it is, sir ; and true as your dream told you,

That your lady was become another woman.

*Greg.* I'll have another lady, sir, if there were no more ladies

In London ; blindman-buff is an unlawful game.

*Cunn.* Come, down on your knees first, and thank your stars.

*Greg.* A fire of my stars ! I may thank you, I think.

*Cunn.* So you may pray for me, and honour me, That have preserved you from a lasting torment, For a perpetual comfort. Did you call me friend—

*Greg.* I pray pardon me for that ; I did miscall you, I confess.

*Cunn.* And should I, receiving such a thankful name,

Abuse it in the act ? Should I see my friend Baffled, disgraced, without any reverence To your title, to be call'd *slave, rascal* ? nay, Cursed to your face, fool'd, scorned, beaten down With a woman's peevish hate, yet I should stand And suffer you to be lost, cast away ?

I would have seen you buried quick first, Your spurs of knighthood to have wanted rowels, And to be hack'd from your heels ! *Slave, rascal* ? Hear this tongue.

*Mir.* My dearest love, sweet knight, my lord, my husband !

*Cunn.* So ! this is not *slave* and *rascal* then.

*Mir.* What shall your eye command, but shall In all the duties of a loyal wife ? *[be done,*

*Cunn.* Good, good !

Are not curses fitter for you ? were't not better Your head were broke with the handle of a fan, Or your nose bored with a silver bodkin ?

*Mir.* Why, I will be a servant in your lady.

*Cunn.* 'Fox, but you shall not ! she's too good for you !

This contract shall be a nullity ; I'll break it off, And see you better bestow'd.

*Greg.* 'Slid, but you shall not, sir ! she's mine own, and I am hers, and we are one another's lawfully, and let me see him that will take her away

by the civil law ! If you be my friend, keep you so ; if you have done me a good turn, do not hit me i' th' teeth with't ! that's not the part of a friend.

*Cunn.* If you be content—

*Greg.* Content ? I was never in better content in my life : I'll not change her for both the Exchanges, New or the Old.—Come, kiss me boldly !

*Pompey.* 'Give you joy, sir !

*Greg.* Oh, sir, I thank you as much as though I did ! You are beloved of ladies ; you see we are glad of under-women.

*Pompey.* Ladies ? Let not ladies be disgraced !

You're, as it were,

A married man, and have a family ;

And, for the party's sake that was unnamed Before, being peas-cod time, I am appeased ; Yet I would wish you make a ruler of your tongue.

*Cunn.* Nay, no dissension here ! I must bar that.

And this, friend, I entreat you, and be advised ;

Let this private contract be yet conceal'd, And still support a seeming face of love Unto the lady ! mark how it avails you, And quits all her scorns : Her uncle is now hot In pursuit of the match, and will enforce her, Bend her proud stomach, that she shall proffer Herself to you, which, when you have floated, And laugh'd your fill at, you shall scorn her off, With all your disgraces trebled upon her ; For there the pride of all her heart will bow, When you shall foot her from you, not she you.

*Greg.* Good, i'faith ! I'll continue it. I'd fain laugh at the old fellow too, for he has abused me as scurvily as his niece.—My knighthood's upon the spur ! we'll go to bed, and then to church as fast as we can. *[Exit GREGORY and MIRABELL.*

*Pompey.* I do wonder I do not hear of the lady yet.

*Cunn.* The good minute may come sooner than you are aware of ; I do not think but 'twill ere night yet, as near as 'tis.

*Pompey.* Well, I will go walk by the New-River, in that meditation ; I am o'er shoes, I'm sure, upon the dry bank. — This gullery of my master will keep me company this two hours too : If love were not an enemy to laughter, I should drive away the time well enough. You know my walk, sir ; if she sends, I shall be found angling, for I will try what I can catch for luck sake ; I will fish fair for't.

Oh, knight, that thou shouldst be gull'd so, (ha, ha !)

It does me good at heart,

But oh, lady, thou takest down my merry part. *[Exit.*

*Enter WITTYPATR.*

*Witty.* Friend !

*Cunn.* Here, friend.

*Witty.* All is a-foot, and will go smooth away : The woman has conquer'd the women, they are gone,

Which I have already complain'd to my father, Suggesting that Sir Gregory is fall'n off From his charge, for neglects and ill usage, And that he is most violently bent On Gentry's wife (whom I have call'd a widow) And that without most sudden prevention He will be married to her.

*Cunn.* 'Foot, all this is wrong !

This wings his pursuit, and will be before me :  
I am lost for ever !

*Witty.* No; stay! you shall not go  
But with my father : On my wit let it lie ;  
You shall appear a friendly assistant,  
To help in all affairs, and in execution  
Help yourself only.

*Cunn.* 'Would my belief  
Were strong in this assurance !

*Witty.* You shall credit it,  
And my wit shall be your slave, if it deceive you—

*Enter Oldcrafft.*

My father !

*Oldc.* Oh, sir, you are well met ! Where's the  
knight,

Your friend ?

*Cunn.* Sir, I think your son has told you.

*Witty.* Shall I stand to tell't again ? I tell you  
he loves,

But not my kinswoman ; her base usage, and  
Your slack performance, which he accuses most  
Indeed, has turn'd the knight's heart upside down.

*Oldc.* I'll curb her for't : Can he be but re-  
cover'd,

He shall have her, and she shall be dutiful,  
And love him as a wife too.

*Witty.* With that condition, sir,  
I dare recall him were he enter'd the church,  
So much interest of love I assure in him.

*Oldc.* Sir, it shall be no loss to you if you do.

*Witty.* Ay, but these are words still ; will not  
the deeds be wanting

At the recovery, if it should be again ?

*Oldc.* Why, here, fool, I am provided ! five  
hundred

In earnest of the thousands in the dower ;  
But were they married once,  
I'd cut him short enough, that's my agreement.

*Witty.* Ay, now I perceive some purpose in  
you, father.

*Oldc.* But wherefore is she then stol'n out of  
doors

To him ?

*Witty.* To him ? Oh, fy upon your error !  
She has another object, believe it, sir.

*Oldc.* I never could perceive it.

*Cunn.* I did, sir ; and to her shame I should  
speak it,

To my own sorrow I saw it, dalliance,  
Nay, dotage, with a very clown, a fool.

*Oldc.* Wit and wantonness ; nothing else, no-  
thing else :

She love a fool ? she'll sooner make a fool  
Of a wise man.

*Cunn.* Ay, my friend complains so ;  
Sir Gregory says flatly, she makes a fool of him,  
And these bold circumstances are approved :  
Favours have been sent by him, yet he, ignorant  
Whither to carry 'em, they have been understood,  
And taken from him : Certain, sir, there is  
An unsuspected fellow lies conceal'd,  
What, or where'er he is ; these slight neglects  
Could not be of a knight else.

*Oldc.* Well, sir, you have promised (if we re-  
cover him

Unmarried) to save all these old bruises ?

*Cunn.* I'll do my best, sir.

*Oldc.* I shall thank you costly, sir, and kindly  
too.

*Witty.* Will you talk away the time here, sir,  
and come  
Behind all your purposes ?

*Oldc.* Away, good sir !

*Witty.* Then stay a little, good sir, for my  
advice.

Why, father, are you broke ? your wit beggar'd ?  
Or are you at your wits' end ? or out of love with  
wit ?

No trick of wit to surprise those designs,  
But with open hue and cry,  
For all the world to talk on ? This is strange !  
You were not wont to slubber a project so.

*Oldc.* Can you help at a pinch now ? shew your-  
self

My son ? Go to ! I leave this to your wit,  
Because I'll make a proof on't.

*Witty.* 'Tis thus then ;

I have had late intelligence, they are now  
Buxom as Bacchus' froes, revelling, dancing,  
Telling the music's numbers with their feet,  
Awaiting the meeting of premonish'd friends,  
That is questionless, little dreading you ;  
Now, sir, with a dextrous trick indeed, sudden  
And sufficient, were well, to enter on 'em  
As something like the abstract of a masque ;  
What though few persons ? if best for our purpose,  
That commends the project.

*Oldc.* This takes up time.

*Witty.* Not at all ; I can presently furnish  
With loose disguises that shall fit that scene.

*Oldc.* Why, what wants then ?

*Witty.* Nothing but charge of music ;  
That must be paid, you know.

*Oldc.* That shall be my charge : I will pay the  
music,

Whate'er it cost.

*Witty.* And that shall be all your charge.  
Now on ! I like it ; there'll be wit in't, father.

[*Exeunt Oldcrafft and Witty.*]

*Cunn.* I will neither distrust his wit nor friend-  
ship ;

Yet if his master-brain should be o'erthrown,  
My resolution now shall seize mine own. [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter Niece, Lady RUINOUS, Guardianess, Sir RUINOUS,  
and PRISCIAN, (with instruments) masqued.*

*L. Ruin.* Nay, let's have music ; let that sweet  
breath at least

Give us her airy welcome ! 'twill be the best  
I fear this ruin'd receptacle will yield ;  
But that most freely.

*Niece.* My welcome follows me,  
Else I am ill come hither : You assure me  
Still Master Cunningham will be here, and that it  
was

His kind entreaty that wish'd me meet him.

*L. Ruin.* Else let me be that shame unto my  
ser,

That all belief may fly 'em.

*Niece.* Continue still

The knight's name unto my Guardianess ;  
She expects no other.

*L. Ruin.* He will, he will ; assure you,  
Lady, Sir Gregory will be here, and suddenly ;  
This music fore-ran him ; Is't not so, consorts ?

*Ruin.* Yes, lady ;

He stays on some device to bring along ;  
Such a labour he was busy in, some witty device.

*Niece.* 'Twill be long ere he comes then, for  
wit's a great labour to him.

*Guard.* Well, well, you'll agree better one day.

*Niece.* Scarce two, I think.

*Guard.* Such a mock-beggar suit of clothes as  
led me

Into the fool's pair o' dice, with deuce ace,  
He that would make me mistress Cun, Cun, Cun-  
nie,

He's quite out of my mind, but I shall ne'er  
Forget him while I have a hole in my head :  
Such a one I think would please you better,  
Though he did abuse you.

*Ruin.* Fy ! speak well of him now,  
Your Niece has quitted him.

*Guard.* I hope she has,  
Else she loses me for ever. But, for Sir Gregory,  
'Would he were come ; I shall ill answer this  
Unto your uncle else.

*Niece.* You know 'tis his pleasure  
I should keep him company.

*Guard.* Ay, and should be your own,  
If you did well too. Lord, I do wonder  
At the niceness of your ladies now-a-days,  
They must have husbands with so much wit for-  
sooth—

Worship and wealth were both wont to be  
In better request, I'm sure : I cannot tell, but they  
Get ne'er the wiser children that I see.

*L. Ruin.* La, la, la, sol ! this music breathes in  
vain,

Methinks 'tis dull to let it move alone ;  
Let's have a female motion ; 'tis in private,  
And we'll grace it ourselves, however it deserves.

*Niece.* What say you, Guardianship ?

*Guard.* 'Las, I'm weary with the walk,  
My jaunting days are done.

*L. Ruin.* Come, come, we'll fetch her in by  
course, or else

She shall pay the music.

*Guard.* Nay, I'll have a little for my money  
then. [*They dance, a cornet is winded.*]

*L. Ruin.* Hark ! upon my life, the knight ! it  
is your friend ;

This was the warning-piece of his approach.

*Enter Oldcraft, Wittypate, and Cunningham, masqued,  
and take them to dance.*

Ha ! no words but mum ! Well, then we shall need  
No counsel-keeping.

*Nieces.* Cunningham ?

*Cunn.* Yes ; fear nothing.

*Niece.* Fear ? why do you tell me of it ?

*Cunn.* Your uncle's here.

*Niece.* Ay, me !

Peace !

*Oldc.* We have caught 'em.

*Witty.* Thank my wit, father.

*Guard.* Which is the knight, think you ?

*Niece.* I know not ; he will be found when he  
speaks ;

No masque can disguise his tongue.

*Witty.* Are you charged ?

*Oldc.* Are you awake ?

*Witty.* I'm answer'd in a question.

*Cunn.* Next change we meet, we loose our hands  
no more.

*Niece.* Are you prepared to tie 'em ?

*Cunn.* Yes.—You must go with me.

*Guard.* Whither, sir ? Not from my charge, be-  
lieve me.

*Cunn.* She goes along.

*Niece.* Will you venture, and my uncle here ?

*Cunn.* His stay's prepared for.

*Guard.* 'Tis the knight sure ; I will follow.

[*Exit CUNNINGHAM, Niece, and Guardians.*]

*Oldc.* How now ? the music tired before us ?

*L. Ruin.* Yes, sir ; we must be paid now.

*Witty.* Oh, that's my charge, father.

*Oldc.* But stay ! where are our wanton ladies  
gone ?

Son, where are they ?

*Witty.* Only changed the room in a change ;  
that's all, sure.

*Oldc.* I'll make 'em all sure else, and then re-  
turn to you.

*L. Ruin.* You must pay for your music first, sir.

*Oldc.* Must ?

Are there *musty* fiddlers ? are beggars chusers now ?  
Ha ? Why, Wittypate ! son ! where am I ?

*Witty.* You were dancing e'en now, in good  
measure, sir :

Is your health miscarried since ? what ail you, sir ?

*Oldc.* 'Death, I may be gril'd to my face !

What are you ? [Where's my Niece ?]

*L. Ruin.* None of your Niece, sir.

*Oldc.* How now ?

Have you loud instruments too ? I will hear  
No more, I thank you. What have I done, too,  
To bring these fears about me ? Son, where am I ?

*Witty.* Not where you should be, sir ; you  
should be paying

For your music, and you are in a maze.

*Oldc.* Oh, is it so ? Put up, put up, I pray  
Here's a crown for you. [you ;]

*L. Ruin.* Fish, a crown ?

*L. Ruin. Pris.* Ha, ha, ha ! a crown ?

*Oldc.* Which way do you laugh ? I have seen  
Has made a consort laugh heartily. [a crown]

*Witty.* Father,

To tell you truth, these are no ordinary  
Musicians ; they expect a bounty above  
Their punctual desert.

*Oldc.* A pox on your punks and their deserts  
Am I not cheated, all this while, think you ? [too !]  
Is not your pate in this ?

*Witty.* If you be cheated,

You are not to be indicted for your own goods ;  
Here you trifle time, to market your bounty,  
And make it base, when it must needs be free,  
For aught I can perceive.

*Oldc.* Will you know the lowest price, sir ?

*Witty.* That I will, sir, with all my heart.

[*Talks apart to them.*]

*Oldc.* Unless

I was discover'd, and they now fled home  
Again for fear, I am absolutely beguiled ;  
That's the best can be hoped for.

*Witty.* 'Faith, 'tis somewhat too dear yet, gen-  
tlemen.

*L. Ruin.* There's not a denier to be bated, sir.

*Oldc.* Now, sir, how dear is it ?

*Witty.* Bate but the other ten pound.

*Pris.* Not a bawbee, sir.

*Oldc.* How ! bate ten pound ? What is the  
whole sum then ?

*Witty.* Faith, sir, a hundred pound ; with much  
ado,

I got fifty bated; and, faith, father, to say truth,  
'Tis reasonable for men of their fashion.

*Oldc.* La, la, la, down! a hundred pound! la,  
la, la,

You are a consort of thieves, are you not?

*Witty.* No; musicians, sir; I told you before.

*Oldc.* Fiddle fiddle!

Is't not a robbery? a plain robbery?

*Witty.* No,

No, no, by no means, father; you have received  
For your money, nay, and that you cannot give  
back:

'Tis somewhat dear, I confess; but who can help  
it?

If they had been agreed with beforehand—

'Twas ill forgotten.

*Oldc.* And how many shares have you in this?  
I see

My force! case up your instruments. I yield;  
As robb'd and taken from me, I deliver it. [here I  
[Gives the money.]

*Witty.* No, sir, you have perform'd your pro-  
mise now,

Which was, to pay the charge of music, that's  
all.

*Oldc.* I have heard no music, I have received  
none, sir,

There's none to be found in me, nor about me.

*Witty.* Why, sir, here's witness 'gainst you, you  
have danced,

And he that dances acknowledges a receipt  
Of music.

*Oldc.* I deny that, sir: Look you! I can dance  
without

Music; do you see, sir? And I can sing without  
it too,

You are a consort of thieves! Do you hear what  
I do?

*Witty.* Pray take you heed, sir, if you do move  
The music again, it may cost you as much more!

*Oldc.* Hold, hold! I'll depart quietly.

I need not bid you farewell, I think now,  
So long as that hundred pound lasts with you.

[Going.]

*Enter Guardianess.*

Ha, ha! am I snapt i'faith?

*Guard.* Oh, Sir Perfidious—

*Oldc.* Ay, ay; some howling another while!

Music's too damnable dear.

*Guard.* Oh, sir! My heart-strings are broke!  
If I can but live to tell you the tale, I care not!

Your Niece, my charge, is—

*Oldc.* What? is she sick?

*Guard.* No, no, sir, she's lustily well married.

*Oldc.* To whom?

*Guard.* Oh, to that cunning dissembler, Cun-  
ningham.

*Oldc.* I'll hang the priest first! What was  
he?

*Guard.* Your kinsman, sir, that has the Welch  
benefice.

*Oldc.* I saved him from the gallows to that end?  
Good! Is there any more?

*Guard.* And Sir Gregory is married too.

*Oldc.* To my Niece too, I hope, and then I may  
hang her.

*Guard.* No, sir; to my niece, thank Cupid!  
And that's all that's likely to recover me; she's  
Lady Pop now, and I am one of her aunts, I thank  
my promotion.

VOL. II.

*Enter CREDULOUS, CUNNINGHAM, Niece, GREGORY, and  
MIRABEL.*

*Cred.* I have performed your behest, sir.

*Oldc.* What have you perform'd, sir?

*Witty.* 'Faith, sir, I must excuse my cousin in  
this act,

If you can excuse yourself for making him

A priest; there's the most difficult answer.

I put this practice on him, as from your desire:

A truth, a truth, father.

*Cred.* I protest, sir, he tells you truth;

He moved me to't in your name.

*Oldc.* I protest, sir,

He told you a lie in my name! and were you

So easy, master Credulous, to believe him?

*Cred.* If a man should not believe his cousin,  
sir,

Whom should he believe?

*Oldc.* Good e'en to you,

Good master cousin Cunningham! and your fair  
bride,

My cousin Cunningham too! And how do you,

Sir Gregory, with your fair lady?

*Greg.* A little better than you would have had  
me, I thank you, sir! The days of *puppy*, and  
*slave*, and *rascal*, are pretty well blown over now;  
I know crabs from verjuice, I have tried both:  
An thou'dt give me thy niece for nothing, I'd not  
have her.

*Cunn.* I think so, Sir Gregory; for my sake  
you would not.

*Greg.* I would thou hadst 'scaped her too! and  
then she had died of the green-sickness. Know  
this, that I did marry in spite, and I will kiss my  
lady in spite, and love her in spite, and beget  
children of her in spite, and when I die, they shall  
have my lands in spite! This was my resolution,  
and now 'tis out.

*Niece.* How spiteful are you now, Sir Gregory!  
Why, look you, I can love my dearest husband,  
With all the honours, duties, sweet embraces,  
That can be thrown upon a loving man.

*Greg.* Fox on't, this is afore your uncle's face:  
but behind his back, in private, you'll shew him  
another tale!

*Cunn.* You see, sir, now, the irrecoverable state  
of all these things before you. Come out of your  
muse! They have been but wit-weapons; you  
were wont to love the play.

*Oldc.* Let me alone in my muse, a little, sir!  
I will wake to you anon.

*Enter POMPEY.*

*Cunn.* Udo, your friend Pompey! How will  
you answer him?

*Niece.* Very well; if you'll but second it, and  
help me.

*Pompey.* I do hear strange stories: Are ladies  
things obnoxious?

*Niece.* Oh, the dissembling falsest wretch is  
come!

*Cunn.* How now, lady?

*Niece.* Let me come to him! And instead of  
love

Let me have revenge!

*Witty.* Pray you now,

Will you first examine whether he be

Guilty or no.

*Niece.* He cannot be excused!—

How many messengers, thou perjured man,

a a

Hast thou return'd with vows and oaths, that thou  
Wouldst follow, and ne'er till this unhappy hour  
Could I set eye of thee, since thy false eye  
Drew my heart to it? Oh, I could tear thee now,  
Instead of soft embraces! Pray give me leave—

*Witty.* 'Faith, this was ill done of you, sir, if  
you promised otherwise.

*Pompey.* By this hand, never any messenger  
came at me, since the first time I came into her  
company! That a man should be wronged thus!

*Niece.* Did not I send thee scarfs and diamonds?  
And thou return'dst me letters, one with a false  
heart in't.

*Witty.* Oh, fy! to receive favours, return false-  
hoods,

And hold a lady in hand—

*Pompey.* Will you believe me, sir? If ever I  
received diamonds, or scarf, or sent any letter to  
her, 'would this sword might ne'er go through me!

*Witty.* Some bad messengers have gone between  
you then.

*Niece.* Take him from my sight! if I shall see  
to-morrow—

*Witty.* Pray you forbear the place! this discon-  
tent

May impair her health much.

*Pompey.* 'Foot, if a man had been in any fault,  
'twould ne'er have grieved him: Sir, if you'll be-  
lieve—

*Witty.* Nay, nay, protest no more; I do believe  
you:

But you see how the lady is wrong'd by't;  
She has cast away herself, 'tis to be fear'd,  
Against her uncle's will, nay, any consent,  
But out of a mere neglect, and spite to herself,  
Married suddenly without any advice.

*Pompey.* Why, who can help it? if she be cast  
away, she may thank herself: She might have  
gone further and fared worse. I could do no more  
than I could do: 'Twas her own pleasure to com-  
mand me, that I should not come till I was sent  
for; I had been with her every minute of an hour  
else.

*Witty.* Truly I believe you.

*Pompey.* Night and day she might have com-  
manded me, and that she knew well enough: I  
said as much to her between her and I; yet I pro-  
test, she's as honest a lady for my part; that I'd  
say, if she would see me hang'd. If she be cast  
away, I cannot help it; she might have stayed to  
have spoke with a man.

*Witty.* Well, 'twas a hard miss on both parts.

*Pompey.* So 'twas; I was within one of her, for  
all this cross luck; I was sure I was between the  
knight and home.

*Niece.* Not gone yet? Oh, my heart! none re-  
gard my health?

*Witty.* Good sir, forbear her sight awhile! You  
hear

How ill she brooks it.

*Pompey.* Foolish woman, to overthrow her for-  
tunes so! I shall think the worse of a lady's wit  
while I live for't. I could almost cry for anger!  
If she should miscarry now, 'twould touch my  
conscience a little; and who knows what love and  
conceit may do? what would people say as I go  
along? 'There goes he that the lady died for love  
on:' I am sure to hear on't i' th' streets; I shall  
weep beforehand. Foolish woman! I do grieve  
more for thee now, than I did love thee before.

Well, go thy ways! Wouldst thou spare thy hus-  
band's head, and break thine own heart, if thou  
hadst any wit? I would some other had been the  
cause of thy undoing; I shall be twitted i' th'  
teeth with it, I'm sure of that: Foolish lady!

[Exit.

*Niece.* So, so, this trouble's well shook off.

Uncle, how do you? There's a dowry due, sir.

*Cunn.* We have agreed it, sweetest, and find  
your uncle

Fully recover'd, kind to both of us.

*Witty.* To all the rest, I hope.

*Oldo.* Never to thee, nor thee, easy cousin Cre-  
Was your wit so raw? [dulous:

*Cred.* 'Faith, yours, sir, so long season'd,  
Has been faulty too, and very much to blame,  
Speaking it with reverence, uncle.

*Greg.* Yes, 'faith, sir, you have paid as dear for  
your time as any man here.

*Witty.* Ay, sir, and I'll reckon it to him. *Im-  
primis.* The first preface-cheat of a pair of pieces  
to the beggars; you remember that; I was the  
example to your bounty there, I spake Greek and  
Syriac, sir; you understand me now. Next, the  
robbery put upon your indulgent cousin; which  
indeed was no robbery, no constable, no justice,  
no thief, but all cheaters; there was a hundred  
mark, mark you that. Lastly, this memorable  
hundred pounds' worth of music; this was both  
cheats and wit too. And for the assistance of  
this gentleman to my cousin (for which I am to  
have a fee,) that was a little practice of my wit,  
too, father. Will you come to composition yet,  
father?

*Cunn.* Yes, 'faith, sir, do! Two hundred a-year  
will be easier than so much weekly: I do not think  
he's barren, if he should be put to't again.

*Oldo.* Why, this was the day I look'd for! Thou  
shalt have't;

And the next cheat makes it up three hundred—  
Live thou upon thy ten-pound vicarage;  
Thou get'st not a penny more; here's thy full hire  
now.

*Cred.* I thank you, sir.

*Witty.* Why, there was the sum of all my wit,  
father,

To shove him out of your favour, which I fear'd  
Would have disinherited me.

*Oldo.* Most certain it had,  
Had not thy wit recover'd it. Is there any here  
That had a hand with thee?

*Witty.* Yes, all these, sir.

*Oldo.* Nephew, part a hundred pound amongst  
'em;

I'll repay it. Wealth love me as I love wit, when  
I die,

I'll build an alms-house for decayed wits!

*Greg.* I'll entertain one in my lifetime; Scholar,  
you shall be my chaplain; I have the gift of twenty  
benefices, simple as I am here.

*Pris.* Thanks, my great patron!

*Cunn.* Sir, your gentry and your name shall  
both be raised as high as my fortunes can reach  
'em, for your friend's sake.

*Witty.* Something  
Will be in my present power, the future more;  
You shall share with me.

*Ruin.* and *L. Ruin.* Thanks, worthy gentlemen.

*Niece.* Sir, I would beg one thing of you.

*Greg.* You can beg nothing of me.

*Witty.* Oh, sir! if she begs, there's your power over her.

*Greg.* She has begg'd me for a fool already, but 'tis no matter.

I have begg'd her for a lady, that she might have That's one for another. [been ;

*Witty.* Nay, but if she beg—

*Greg.* Let her beg again then.

*Niece.* That your man Pompey's coat

May come over his ears back again; I would not He should be lost for my sake.

*Greg.* Well, 'tis granted, For mine own sake.

*Mir.* I'll entreat it, sir.

*Greg.* Why then, 'tis granted for your sake.

*Oldc.* Come, come,

Down with all weapons now! 'tis music time,

So it be purchased at an easy rate:

Some have received the knocks, some given the hits,

And all concludes in love; there's happy wits!

[*Exeunt.*

### EPILOGUE

#### AT THE REVIVING OF THIS PLAY.

WE need not tell you, gallants, that this night  
The wits have jump'd, or that the scenes hit right.  
'Twould be but labour lost for to excuse  
What Fletcher had to do in: His brisk muse  
Was so mercurial, that if he but writ  
An act or two, the whole play rose up wit.  
We'll not appeal unto those gentlemen,  
Judge by their clothes, if they sit right, nor when  
The ladies smile, and with their fans delight  
To whisk a clinch aside, then all goes right:  
'Twas well received before, and we dare say,  
You now are welcome to no vulgar play.

# THE FAIR MAID OF THE INN.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF FLORENCE.

ALBERTO, *Admiral of Florence.*

BAPTISTA, *a brave Sea Commander, ancient Friend to ALBERTO.*

CESARIO, *a young Gentleman of a fiery nature, Son to ALBERTO.*

MENTIVOLE, *Son to BAPTISTA, Lover of CLARISSA.*

PROSPERO, *a noble Friend to BAPTISTA.*

HOT, *the supposed Father of BIANCA.*

FORBOSCO, *a cheating Mountebank.*

Clown, *the Mountebank's Man, and Setter.*

Dancer,

Tailor,

Muleteer,

Pedant,

Clerk,

Coxcomb,

} *Six Fools and Knaves, who pretend Love to BIANCA.*

Secretary to the Duke.

Two Magistrates of Florence.

Physician, Surgeon, Bishop, Three Gentlemen, Sailors, Boys.

MARIANA, *Wife to ALBERTO, a virtuous Lady.*

CLARISSA, *MARIANA'S Daughter, in Love with MENTIVOLE.*

JULIANA, *Niece to the Duke of GENOA, BAPTISTA'S Second Wife.*

BIANCA, *the FAIR MAID OF THE INN, beloved of CESARIO, and Daughter to BAPTISTA and JULIANA.*

HOTNESS, *the supposed Mother of BIANCA.*

SCENE,—FLORENCE.

## PROLOGUE.

PLAYS have their fates, not as in their true sense  
They're understood, but as the influence  
Of idle custom madly works upon  
The dross of many-tongued Opinion.  
A worthy story, howsoever writ,  
For language, modest mirth, conceit, or wit,  
Meets oftentimes with the sweet commendation  
Of "Hang't! 'tis scurvy!" when for approbation  
A jig shall be clapt at, and every rhyme  
Praised and applauded by a clamorous chime.

Let Ignorance and Laughter dwell together!  
They are beneath the muses' pity: Hither  
Come nobler judgments, and to those the strain  
Of our invention is not bent in vain:  
The Fair Maid of the Inn to you commends  
Her hopes and welcomes; and withal intends  
In th' entertains to which she doth invite ye,  
All things to please, and some things to delight  
ye.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the House of ALBERTO.*

*Enter CESARIO and CLARISSA.*

*Ces.* Interpret not, Clarissa, my true zeal  
In giving you counsel to transcend the bounds  
That should confine a brother! 'tis your honour  
And peace of mind (which, honour lost, will leave  
you)

I labour to preserve: And though you yet are  
Pure and untainted, and resolved to be so,  
Having a father's eye, and mother's care,  
In all your ways to keep you fair and upright,  
In which respects my best advices must  
Appear superfluous; yet since love, dear sister,  
Will sometimes tender things unnecessary,  
Misconstrue not my purpose!

*Clar.* Sir, I dare not;  
But still receive it as a large addition  
To the much that I already stand engaged for.  
Yet, pardon me though I profess, upon  
A true examination of myself,  
Even to my private thoughts, I cannot find  
(Having such strong supporters to uphold me)  
On what slight ground the least doubt can be  
To render me suspected I can fall [raised,  
Or from my fame or virtue.

*Ces.* Far be it from me  
To nourish such a thought! and yet excuse me.  
As you would do a lapidary whose whole fortune  
Depend upon the safety of one jewel,  
If he think no case precious enough  
To keep it in full lustre, nor no locks,

Though lending strength to iron doors, sufficient  
To guard it, and secure him! You to me are  
A gem of more esteem, and prized higher,  
Than usurers do their muck, or great men title;  
And any flaw (which Heaven avert!) in you,  
(Whose reputation, like a diamond  
Cut newly from the rock, women with envy,  
And men with covetous desires, look up at)  
By prying eyes discover'd, in a moment  
Would render what the braveries of Florence,  
For want of counterpoise, forbear to cheapen,  
Of little or no value.

*Clar.* I see, brother,  
The mark you shoot at, and much thank your love:  
But for my virgin jewel, which is brought  
In comparison with your diamond, rest assured  
It shall not fall in such a workman's hands,  
Whose ignorance or malice shall have power  
To cast one cloud upon it, but still keep  
Her native splendour.

*Ces.* 'Tis well; I commend you;  
And study your advancement with that care  
As I would do a sister's, whom I love  
With more than common ardour.

*Clar.* That from me  
I hope's return'd to you.

*Ces.* I do confess it.  
Yet let me tell you, (but still with that love  
I wish to increase between us) that you are  
Observed, against the gravity long maintain'd  
In Italy (where to see a maid unmask'd  
Is held a blemish,) to be over frequent  
In giving or receiving visits.

*Clar.* How?

*Ces.* Whereas the custom's here to woo by pic-  
ture,

And never see the substance. You are fair,  
And beauty draws temptations on, you know it:  
I would not live to see a willing grant  
From you, to one unworthy of your birth,  
Feature or fortune; yet there have been ladies  
Of rank, proportion, and of means beyond you,  
That have proved this no miracle.

*Clar.* One unworthy?  
Why, pray you, gentle brother, who are they  
That I vouchsafe these bounties to? I hope,  
In your strict criticism of me and my manners,  
That you will not deny they are your equals.

*Ces.* Angry?

*Clar.* I have reason! But, in cold blood, tell me,  
Had we not one father?

*Ces.* Yes, and mother too.

*Clar.* And he a soldier?

*Ces.* True.

*Clar.* If I then borrow  
A little of the boldness of his temper,  
Imparting it to such as may deserve it,  
(Howe'er indulgent to yourselves, you brothers  
Allow no part of freedom to your sisters)  
I hope 'twill not pass for a crime in me,  
To grant access and speech to noble suitors,  
And you escape for innocent, that descend  
To a thing so far beneath you? Are you touch'd?  
Why, did you think that you had Gyges' ring?  
Or the herb that gives invisibility?  
Or that Bianca's name had ne'er been mention'd?  
The Fair Maid of the grand Osteria, brother?

*Ces.* No more!

*Clar.* A little, brother. Your night-walks,  
And offer'd presents, which coy she contemn'd;

Your combats in disguises with your rivals,  
Brave muleteers, scullions perfumed with grease,  
And such as cry meat for cats, must be remember'd:  
And all this pother for a common trull!  
A tempting sign, and curiously set forth,  
To draw in riotous guests! a thing exposed  
To every ruffian's rude assault! and subject,  
For a poor salary, to a rich man's lust,  
Though made up of diseases!

*Ces.* Will you end yet?

*Clar.* And this a mistress for Alberto's son?  
One that I should call sister?

*Ces.* Part not with

Your modesty in this violent heat! The truth is,  
(For you shall be my confessor) I love her;  
But virtuously: Report, that gives her out  
Only for fair, and adds not she is chaste,  
Detracts much from her; for indeed she is,  
Though of a low condition, composed  
Of all those graces dames of highest birth,  
Though rich in Nature's bounties, should be proud  
But leave her! and to you, my nearest care, [of.  
My dearest, best Clarissa! Do not think  
(For then you wrong me) I wish you should live  
A barren virgin life: I rather aim at  
A noble husband, that may make you mother  
Of many children; one that, when I know him  
Worth your embraces, I may serve, and sue to:  
And therefore scorn not to acquaint me with  
That man, that happy man, you please to favour!

*Clar.* I ever purpos'd it; for I will like  
With your allowance.

*Ces.* As a pawn of this,  
Receive this ring; but, ere you part with it  
On any terms, be certain of your choice,  
And make it known to me!

*Clar.* You have my hand for't.

*Ces.* Which, were it not my sister's, I should  
With too much heat. [kiss

*Enter ALBERTO, BAPTISTA, MARIANA, MENTIVOLE, and  
Servants with Lights.*

*Clar.* My father and his guests, sir!

*Alb.* Oh, my old friend, my tried friend, my  
Baptista!

These days of rest and feasting suit not with  
Our tougher natures; those were golden ones,  
Which were enjoy'd at sea! that's our true  
mother;

The land's to us a step-dame: There we sought  
Honour and wealth through dangers; yet those  
dangers

Delighted more than their rewards, though great  
ones,

And worth the undertakers: Here we study  
The kitchen arts, to sharpen appetite,  
Dull'd with abundance; and dispute with Heaven  
If that the least puff of the rough north wind  
Blast our time's burden, rendering to our palates  
The charming juice less pleasing; whereas there,  
If we had biscuit, powder'd flesh, fresh water,  
We thought them Persian delicacies; and, for  
music,

If a strong gale but made the main-yard crack,  
We danced to the loud minstrel.

*Bapt.* And fear'd less

(So far we were in love with noble action)  
A tempest than a calm.

*Alb.* 'Tis true, Baptista:

There, there, from mutual aids lent to each other,

And virtuous emulation to exceed  
In manly daring, the true school of friendship,  
We learnt those principles which confirmed us  
Never to be forgot. [friends]

*Bapt.* Never, I hope.

*Alb.* We were married there: For bells, the  
roaring cannon

Aloud proclaim'd it lawful, and a prize  
Then newly ta'en, and equally divided,  
Served as a dowry to you, then styled my wife;  
And did enable me to be a husband  
Fit to encounter so much wealth, though got  
With blood and horror.

*Mar.* If so got, 'tis fit, sir,  
Now you possess it, that you should enjoy it  
In peace and quiet: I, your son, and daughter,  
That reap the harvest of your winter's labour,  
Though debtors for it, yet have often trembled,  
When, in way of discourse, you have related  
How you came by it.

*Alb.* Trembled? How the softness  
Of your sex may excuse you, I'll not argue;  
But to the world, howe'er I hold thee noble,  
I should proclaim this boy some coward's bastard,  
And not the image of Alberto's youth,  
If, when some wish'd occasion calls him forth  
To a brave trial, one weak artery  
Of his should shew a fever, though grim death  
Put on a thousand dreadful shapes to fright him,  
The elements, the sea, and all the winds  
We number on our compass, then conspiring  
To make the scene more ghastly! I must have thee,  
Sirrah, I must, if once you grapple with  
An enemy's ship, to board her, though you see  
The desperate gunner ready to give fire,  
And blow the deck up; or, like Cæsar's soldier,  
Thy hands like his cut off, hang by the teeth,  
And die undaunted.

*Mar.* I even die to hear you!  
My son, my loved Cesario, run such hazards?  
Bless'd saints forbid it! You have done enough  
Already for one family, that rude way.  
I'll keep him safe at home, and train him up  
A complete courtier: May I live to see him,  
By sweet discourse and gracious demeanour,  
Win and bring home a fair wife, and a rich,  
'Tis all I rest ambitious of.

*Alb.* A wife?

As if there were a course to purchase one  
Prevailing more than honourable action!  
Or any intercessors move so far,  
To take a mistress of a noble spirit,  
As the true fame of glorious victories,  
Achieved by sweat and blood! Oh, the brave  
Of warlike Genoa! they had eyes to see [dames]  
The inward man, and only from his worth,  
Courage, and conquests, the blind archer knew  
To head his shafts, or light his quenched torch;  
They were proof against them else: no carpet-  
knight,

That spent his youth in groves or pleasant bowers,  
Or, stretching on a couch his lazy limbs,  
Sung to his lute such soft and melting notes  
As Ovid nor Anacreon ever knew,  
Could work on them; nor once bewitch'd their  
sense,

Though he came so perfumed as he had robb'd  
Sabæa or Arabia of their wealth,  
And stored it in one suit. I still remember,  
And still remember it with joy, Baptista,

When from the rescue of the Genoa fleet,  
Almost surprised by the Venetian gallees,  
Thou didst return, and wert received in triumph,  
How lovely in thy honour'd wounds and scars  
Thou didst appear; what worlds of amorous glances  
The beauties of the city, where they stood,  
Fix'd like so many of the fairest stars,  
Shot from their windows at thee! How it fired  
Their bloods to see the enemies' captive streamers  
Borne through the streets! nor could chaste  
Juliana,

The duke's fair niece, though guarded with her  
greatness,

Resist this gallant charge, but, laying by  
Disparity of fortune from the object,  
Yielded herself thy prisoner.

*Bapt.* Pray you choose  
Some other theme.

*Mar.* Can there be one more pleasing?

*Bapt.* That triumph drew on me a greater  
torture,

And 'tis in the remembrance little less,  
Than ever captive suffer'd.

*Mar.* How! To gain  
The favour of so great a lady?

*Bapt.* Yes,  
Since it proved fatal: To have been happy, madam,  
Adds to calamity; and the heavy loss  
Of her I durst not hope for, once enjoy'd,  
Turns what you think a blessing to a curse,  
Which grief would have forgotten.

*Alb.* I am sorry  
I touch'd upon it.

*Mar.* I burn rather, sir,  
With a desire to hear the story of  
Your loves; and shall receive it as a favour,  
Which you may grant.

*Bapt.* You must not be denied;  
Yet with all brevity I must report it.  
'Tis true, fair Juliana, Genoa's pride,  
Enamour'd of my actions, like my person;  
Nor could I but with joy meet her affection,  
Since it was lawful; for, my first wife dead,  
We were closely married, and for some few months  
Tasted the fruits of 't: But malicious Fate,  
Envyng our too-much happiness, wrought upon  
A faithless servant, privy to our plot,  
And cabinet counsellor to Juliana,  
Who, either for hope, or reward, or fear,  
Discovered us to the incensed duke,  
Whose rage made her close prisoner, and pro-  
nounced

On me perpetual banishment. Some three years  
I wander'd on the seas, since entertain'd  
By the Great Duke of Florence; but what fate  
Attended her, or Prospero my friend,  
That stay'd at Genoa to expect the issue,  
Is yet uncertain.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Alb.* From the duke?

*Bapt.* He's welcome,  
To end my forced relation.

*Alb.* Signor Baptista,  
The Great Duke's will commands your present ear.

*Gent.* It points indeed at both of you.

*Bapt.* I wait it.

*Alb.* In, Mariana; to your rest!

*Bapt.* Nay, leave us;  
We must be private.

*Mar.* Stay not long, Cesario.

[*Exeunt all but CESARIO and MENTIVOLE.*]

*Ment.* So! these old men vanish'd, 'tis allow'd  
That we may speak; and howsoe'er they take  
Delight in the discourse of former dangers,  
It cannot hinder us to treat a little  
Of present pleasures.

*Ces.* Which, if well enjoy'd,  
Will not alone continue, but increase,  
In us their friendship.

*Ment.* How shall we spend the night?  
To snore it out, like drunken Dutchmen, would  
Sort ill with us Italians: We are made  
Of other metal, fiery, quick, and active.  
Shall we take our fortune? and, while our cold  
fathers  
(In whom long since their youthful heats were  
dead)

Talk much of Mars, serve under Venus' ensigns,  
And seek a mistress?

*Ces.* That's a game, dear friend,  
That does admit no rival in chase of it;  
And either to be undertook alone,  
Or not to be attempted.

*Ment.* I'll not press you.  
What other sports to entertain the time with  
The following morning?

*Ces.* Any that may become us.

*Ment.* Is the Neapolitan horse the viceroys sent  
In a fit plight to run? [you]

*Ces.* So my groom tells me.  
I can boast little of my horsemanship;  
Yet, upon his assurance, I dare wager  
A thousand crowns 'gainst any horse in Florence,  
For an eight-mile course.

*Ment.* I would not win of you,  
In respect you are impatient of loss;  
Else I durst match him with my Barbary  
For twice the sum.

*Ces.* You do well to excuse it,  
Being certain to be beaten.

*Ment.* Tush! you know  
The contrary.

*Ces.* To end the controversy,  
Put it to trial; by my life, I'll meet you  
With the next rising sun.

*Enter CLARISSA.*

*Ment.* A match!—But here  
Appears a Cynthia, that scorns to borrow  
A beam of light from the great eye of Heaven,  
She being herself all brightness: How I envy  
Those amorous smiles, those kisses, but sure  
Which she vouchsafes her brother! [chaste ones,

*Clar.* You are wanton:  
Pray you think me not Bianca: leave, I pray you!  
My mother will not sleep before she see you;  
And since you know her tenderness, nay, fondness,  
In every circumstance that concerns your safety,  
You are not equal to her.

*Ces.* I must leave you;  
But will not fail to meet you.

*Ment.* Soft sleeps to you!

*Mar.* [Within.] Cesario!

*Clar.* You are call'd again.

*Ces.* Some sons  
Complain of too much rigour in their mothers:  
I of too much indulgence. You will follow?

*Clar.* You are her first care; therefore lead the  
way!

[*Exit CESARIO.*]

*Ment.* She stays; blest opportunity! she stays  
As; she invited conference! she was ever  
Noble and free; but thus to tempt my frailty,  
Argues a yielding in her; or, contempt  
Of all that I dare offer. Stand I now  
Consulting? No; I'll put it home.

*Clar.* Who waits there?

More lights!

*Ment.* You need them not; they are as useless  
As at noon-day: Can there be darkness where  
Nature, then wisely liberal, vouchsafed  
To lend two suns?

*Clar.* Hyperboles!

*Ment.* No; truths,  
Truths, beauteous virgin; so my love-sick heart  
Assures me, and my understanding tells me  
I must approach them wisely: Should I rashly  
Press near their scorching beams, they would con-  
sume me;

And, on the contrary, should your disdain  
Keep me at too much distance, and I want  
Their comfortable heat, the frost of death  
Would seize on all my faculties.

*Clar.* Pray you pause, sir!  
This vehemency of discourse must else needs tire  
you?

These gay words take not me; 'tis simple faith,  
Honest integrity, and lawful flames,  
I am delighted with.

*Ment.* Such I bring with me;

And therefore, lady—

*Clar.* But that you took me off  
Ere I came to a period, I had added  
A long experience must be required  
Both of his faith and trust, with whom a virgin  
Trafficks for what is dearest in this life,  
Her liberty and honour. I confess  
I oft have view'd you with an eye of favour;  
And, with your generous parts, the many tenders  
Of doing me all fair offices, have won  
A good opinion from me—

*Ment.* Oh, speak ever!

I never heard such music.

*Clar.* A plain tune, sir,  
But 'tis a hearty one. When I perceive,  
By evident proofs, your aims are truly noble,  
And that you bring the engines of fair love,  
Not of foul lust, to shake and undermine  
My maiden fortress, I may then make good  
What now I dare not promise.

*Ment.* You already,  
In taking notice of my poor deservings,  
Have been magnificent, and 'twill appear  
A frontless impudence to ask beyond this:  
Yet qualify, though not excuse, my error,  
Though now I am ambitious to desire  
A confirmation of it!

*Clar.* So it wrong not

My modesty to grant it.

*Ment.* 'Tis far from me;

I only am a suitor you would grace me  
With some toy, but made rich in that you wore it,  
To warrant to the world that I usurp not,  
When I presume to style myself your servant!  
A ribbon from your shoe.

*Clar.* You are too humble;  
I'll think upon't, and something of more value  
Shall witness how I prize you. It grows late;  
I'll bring you to the door.

*Ment.* You still more bind me.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter DUKE, ALBERTO, BAPTISTA, Magistrates, and Attendants.*

*Duke.* You find, by this assured intelligence, The preparation of the Turk against us. We have met him oft and beat him; now to fear him

Would argue want of courage; and I hold it A safer policy for us and our signories, To charge him in his passage o'er the sea, Than to expect him here.

*Alb.* May it please your highness, Since you vouchsafe to think me worthy of This great employment, if I may deliver My judgment freely, 'tis not flattery Though I say my opinion waits on you; Nor would I give my suffrage and consent To what you have proposed, but that I know it Worth the great speaker, though that the denial Call'd on your heavy anger. For myself I do profess thus much, if a blunt soldier May borrow so much from the oil'd-tongued courtier,

(That echoes whatsoe'er the prince allows of) All that my long experience hath taught me, That have spent three parts of my life at sea, (Let it not taste of arrogance that I say it) Could not have added reasons of more weight To fortify your affections, than such As your grace out of observation merely Already have propounded.

*Bapt.* With the honour To give the daring enemy an affront In being the first opposer, it will teach Your soldiers boldness, and strike fear in them That durst attempt you.

*1 Magis.* Victuals and ammunition, And money too, the sinews of the war, Are stored up in the magazine.

*2 Magis.* And the galleys New rigg'd and train'd up, and at two days' warn-  
Fit for the service. [ing]

*Duke.* We commend your care; Nor will we e'er be wanting in our counsels, As we doubt not your action. You, Baptista, Shall stay with us; that merchant is not wise, That ventures his whole fortunes in one bottom. Alberto, be our admiral! spare your thanks; 'Tis merit in you that invites this honour; Preserve it such! Ere long you shall hear more. Things rashly undertaken end as ill; But great acts thrive when reason guides the will. [Exit.]

SCENE III.—*An open Place before the City.*

*Enter three Gentlemen.*

*1 Gent.* No question, 'twas not well done in Cesario

To cross the horse of young Mentivole In the midst of this course.

*2 Gent.* That was not all; The switching him dull'd him.

*3 Gent.* 'Would that both the jades Had broke their necks, when they first started! 'Slight,

We stand here prating; give them leave to whisper, And, when they have cut one another's throats, Make in to part 'em!

*2 Gent.* There is no such hazard; Their fathers' friendship and their love forbid it: See where they come!

*Enter MENTIVOLE and CESARIO.*

*1 Gent.* With fury in their looks.

*Ment.* You have the wager; with what foul I'll not dispute. [play got]

*Ces.* Foul play?

*Ment.* I cannot speak it In a fairer language; and if some respects Familiar to myself chain'd not my tongue, I should say—no more!—I should—but I'll sit down

With this disgrace; howe'er, press me no further! For, if once more provoked, you'll understand I dare no more suffer an injury, Than I dare do one.

*Ces.* Why, sir, are you injured In that I take my right, which I would force, Should you detain it?

*Ment.* Put it to judgment!

*Ces.* No;

My will in this shall carry it.

*Ment.* Your will?

Nay, farewell softness then!

*3 Gent.* This I foresaw.

[They suddenly draw and fight.]

*2 Gent.* Hold, hold!

*Ces.* I am hurt.

*2 Gent.* Shift for yourself; 'tis death.

*Ment.* As you respect me, bear him off with If he miscarry, since he did the wrong, [care.] I'll stand the shock of't.

*2 Gent.* Gently! he will faint else—

*Ment.* And speedily, I beseech you!

[Exit Gentlemen with CESARIO.]

*My rage over,*

That pour'd upon my reason clouds of error, I see my folly, and at what dear loss I have exchanged a real innocence To gain a mere fantastical report, Transported only by vain popular wind, To be a daring, vain, fool-hardy man. But, could I satisfy myself within here, How should I bear my father's frowns?

*Enter BAPTISTA.*

They meet me;

My guilt conjures him hither.

*Bapt.* Sirrah!

*Ment.* Sir.

*Bapt.* I have met the trophies of your ruffian sword:

Was there no other anvil to make trial How far thou durst be wicked, but the bosom Of him, which, under the adulterate name Of friendship, thou hast murder'd?

*Ment.* Murder'd, sir?

My dreams abhor so base a fact: True valour, Employ'd to keep my reputation fair, From the austere judge, can never merit To be branded with that title. You begot me A man, no coward: And but call your youth To memory! when injured, you could never Boast of the ass's fortitude, slave-like patience; And you might justly doubt I were your son, If I should entertain it. If Cesario Recover, as I hope his wound's not mortal, A second trial of what I dare do In a just cause, shall give strong witness for me

I am the true heir to Baptista's courage,  
As to his other fortunes.

*Bapt.* Boy, to neither,  
But on this strict condition, which entreaties  
From saints, nay angels, shall not make me alter.  
A friendship so began, and so continued  
Between me and Alberto my best friend,  
Your brawls shall not dissolve : It is my will,  
And as I am thy father I command thee,  
That instantly, on any terms, how poor  
Soe'er it skills not, thou desire his pardon,  
And bring assurance to me he has sign'd it,

Or by my father's soul I'll never know thee,  
But as a stranger to my blood : Perform it,  
And suddenly, without reply ! I have said it.  
*Ment.* And in it given a heavier sentence on  
me  
Than the most cruel death : You are my father,  
And your will to be served, and not disputed  
By me, that am your son : But I'll obey,  
And though my heart-strings crack for't, make it  
known,  
When you command, my faculties are your own.  
*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Room in the House of ALBERTO.

*Enter ALBERTO, Physician, and a Surgeon.*

*Phys.* Have patience, noble sir ! your son  
Will recover, without question. *[Cesario]*

*Surg.* A slight wound ;  
Though't pierced his body, it hath miss'd the  
vitals.

*Phys.* My life for't, he shall take the air again  
Within these ten days !

*Alb.* Oh, but from a friend !

To receive this bloody measure from a friend !  
If that a man should meet a violent death,  
In a place where he had taken sanctuary,  
Would it not grieve him ? Such all Florence held  
Their friendship ; and 'tis that which multiplies  
The injury.

*Phys.* Have patience, worthy signor !

*Alb.* I do protest, as I am man and soldier,  
If I had buried him in a wave at sea,  
*(Lost in some honourable action)*  
I would not to the saltness of his grave  
Have added the least tear : But these quarrels,  
Bred out of game and wine ! I had as lief  
He should have died of a surfeit.

*Enter MARIANA and CLARISSA.*

*Mar.* Oh, what comfort ?  
How is it with our son, sir ?

*Alb.* His work-masters  
Bear me in hand here, *(as my lawyer does)*  
When I have a crack'd title, or bad suit in law  
All shall go well.

*Mar.* I pray you, gentlemen,  
What think you of his wound ?

*Phys.* 'Tis but a scratch ;  
Nothing to danger.

*Clar.* But he received it from a friend ;  
And the unkindness ta'en at that may kill him.

*Mar.* Let me see him.

*Phys.* By no means ; he slumbers.

*Mar.* Then I cannot believe you when you tell  
There is hope of him. *[me]*

*Alb.* Yet many ladies  
Do give more faith to their physician  
Than to their confessor.

*Clar.* Oh, my poor lost brother !  
And friend, more dear than brother !

*Alb.* More loud instruments  
To disturb his slumbers ? Go, go, take caroch !  
And, as you love me, you and the girl retire  
To our summer-house i' th' country : I'll be with  
Within these two days. *[you]*

*Mar.* I am yours in all things,  
Though with much sorrow to leave him.  
*[Exeunt MARIANA and CLARISSA.]*

*Alb.* I pray you, gentlemen,  
With best observance tend your patient :  
The loss of my heir-male lies now a-bleeding ;  
And think what payment his recovery  
Shall shower upon you.

*[Exeunt Physician and Surgeon.]*

*Enter MENTIVOLE.*

Of all men breathing,

Wherefore do you arrive here ? are you mad ?  
My injury begins to bleed afresh  
At sight of you. Why, this affront of yours  
I receive more malicious than the other.  
Your hurt was only danger to my son ;  
But your sight to me is death ? Why come you  
hither ?

Do you come to view the wounds which you have  
And glory in them ? *[made,*

*Ment.* Rather, worthy sir,  
To pour oil into them.

*Alb.* I am a soldier, sir,  
Least part of a courtier ; and understand  
By your smooth oil, your present flattery—

*Ment.* Sir, for my father's sake, acknowledge  
To be born a gentleman, no slave ; I ever *[me]*  
Held flatterers of that breed : Do not misconstrue,  
In your distaste of me, the true intent  
Of my coming hither, for I do protest  
I do not come to tell you I am sorry  
For your son's hurt.

*Alb.* Not sorry ?

*Ment.* No, not sorry :  
I have to the lowest ebb lost all my fury,  
But I must not lose my honesty. 'Twas he  
Gave heat unto the injury, which return'd,  
Like a petar ill lighted, into th' bosom  
Of him gave fire to't : Yet, I hope his hurt  
Is not so dangerous but he may recover ;  
When, if it please him call me to account  
For the loss of so much blood, I shall be ready  
To do him noble reason.

*Alb.* You are arm'd  
Methinks with wond'rous confidence.

*Ment.* Oh, with the best, sir ;  
For I bring penitence and satisfaction.

*Alb.* Satisfaction ? Why, I heard you say but  
You were not sorry for his wounds. *[now,*

*Ment.* Nor am I ;  
The satisfaction which I bring, sir, is to you.  
You are a gentleman ne'er injured me ;

One ever loved my father, the right way,  
And most approved of noble amity;  
Yet I have run my sword quite through your  
heart,

And slightly hurt your son; for't may be fear'd,  
A grief ta'en at these years, for your son's loss,  
May hazard yours: And therefore I am sent  
By him that has most interest in your sorrow,  
Who having chid me almost to the ruin  
Of a disinheritance, for violating  
So continued and so sacred a friendship  
Of fifty winters' standing; such a friendship,  
That ever did continue like the spring,  
Ne'er saw the fall o' th' leaf; by him I am sent  
To say the wrong I have done, sir, is to you,  
And that I have quite lost him for a father,  
Until I find your pardon. Nay, there follows  
A weightier deprivation: His estate  
I could with a less number of sighs part with;  
Fortune might attend my youth and my deservings  
In any climate; but a father's blessing,  
To settle and confirm that fortune, no where  
But only here. Your pardon! give me that;  
And when you have done, kill me; for 'tis that  
Takes from me the effect of excommunication,  
A father's heavy curse.

*Alb.* Nay, may that curse  
Light on himself, for sending thee in this minute,  
When I am grown as deaf to all compassion  
As the cruellest sea-fight, or most horrid tempest!  
That I had drowned i' th' sea a thousand ducats,  
Thou hadst not made this visit! Rash young man,  
Thou takest me in an ill planet, and hast cause  
To curse thy father; for I do protest,  
If I had met thee in any part o' th' world,  
But under my own roof, I would have kill'd thee.—  
Within there!—

*Enter Physician, Surgeon, and Servants.*

Look you! Here's a triumph sent for  
The death of your young master.

*Serv.* Shall we kill him?

*Alb.* No;

I'll not be so unhospitable.—But, sir,  
By my life, I vow to take assurance from you,  
That right hand never more shall strike my son.

*Ment.* That will be easily protested.

*Alb.* Not easily,

When it must be exacted, and a bloody seal to't.—  
Bind him, and cut off his right hand presently:  
Fair words shall never satisfy foul deeds.  
Chop his hand off!

*Ment.* You cannot be so unrighteous  
To your own honour.

*Phys.* Oh, sir, collect yourself,  
And recall your bloody purpose!

*Alb.* My intents

Of this nature do ever come to action.

*Surg.* Then I

Must fetch another stickler. [*Erit.*]

*Alb.* Yet I do grieve at heart;

And I do curse thy father heartily,  
That's the cause of my dishonour, sending thee  
In such an hour, when I am apt for mischief,  
Apt as a Dutchman after a sea-fight,  
When his enemy kneels afore him.—Come, dis-  
patch!

*Phys.* Entreat him, noble sir.

*Ment.* You shall excuse me;  
Whatsoever he dares do, that I dare suffer.

*Enter CESARIO and Surgeon.*

*Ces.* Oh, sir, for honour's sake, stay your foot  
For if you do proceed thus cruelly, [*purpose;*]  
There is no question, in the wound you give him,  
I shall bleed to death for't!

*Alb.* Thou art not of my temper;  
What I purpose, cannot be alter'd.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* Sir, the duke  
With all speed expects you: You must instantly  
Ship all your followers, and to sea.

*Alb.* My blessing  
Stay with thee upon this condition,  
Take away his use of fighting; as thou hopest  
To be accounted for my son, perform it! [*Erit.*]

*Ces.* You hear what I'm enjoin'd to.

*Ment.* Pray thee, take it!  
Only this ring, this best-esteemed jewel,  
I will not give 't to th' hangman chops it off;  
It is too dear a relic: I'll remove it  
Nearer my heart.

*Ces.* Ha! that ring's my sister's; [*Apart.*]  
The ring I enjoin'd her never part withal  
Without my knowledge.—Come, sir, we are  
friends.

Pardon my father's heat and melancholy;  
Two violent fevers which he caught at sea,  
And cannot yet shake off: Only one promise  
I must enjoin you to, and seriously;  
Hereafter you shall never draw a sword  
To the prejudice of my life.

*Ment.* By my best hopes,  
I shall not!

*Ces.* I pray deliver me your sword  
On that condition.

*Ment.* I shall, sir: May it hereafter  
Ever fight on your part!

*Ces.* Noble sir, I thank you:  
But, for performance of your vow, I entreat  
Some gage from you.

*Ment.* Any, sir.

*Ces.* Deliver me that ring.

*Ment.* Ha! this ring? indeed this jewel binds  
If you knew the virtue of it, never more [*sc.*]  
To draw my sword against you.

*Ces.* Therefore I  
Will have it.

*Ment.* You may not.

*Ces.* Come, you must: [*Takes the ring.*]  
I that by violence could take your hand,  
Can enforce this from you. This is a token, sir,  
That we may prove friends hereafter. Fare you well!

*Phys.* Why did you seize his sword, sir?

*Ces.* To perform

What my father bade me; I have for the present  
Ta'en away his use of fighting.

*Phys.* Better so,

Than take that which your father meant!

[*Exeunt all but MASTROVOLA.*]  
*Ment.* Was ever the like usage? Oh, that ring,  
Dearer than life! whether is honour fled?  
Cesario, thou'rt unmanly in each part,  
To seize my sword first, and then split my heart. [*Erit.*]

SCENE II.—A Room in the Inn.

*Enter Host and Clown.*

*Host.* Thy master, that lodges here in my Osteria, is a rare man of art; they say he's a witch.

*Clown.* A witch? nay, he's one step of the ladder to preferment higher; he is a conjurer.

*Host.* Is that his higher title?

*Clown.* Yes, I assure you; for a conjurer is the devil's master, and commands him; whereas a witch is the devil's prentice, and obeys him.

*Host.* Bound prentice to the devil?

*Clown.* Bound and enroll'd I assure you, he cannot start; and therefore I would never wish any gentleman to turn witch.

*Host.* Why, man?

*Clown.* Oh, he loses his gentility by it; the devil in this case cannot help him; he must go to the herald for new arms, believe it.

*Host.* As I am true innkeeper, yet a gentleman born, I'll ne'er turn witch for that trick! And thou hast been a great traveller?

*Clown.* No, indeed, not I, sir.

*Host.* Come, you are modest.

*Clown.* No, I am not modest; for I told you a lie, that you might the better understand I have been a traveller.

*Host.* So, sir! They say your master's a great physician too?

*Clown.* He was no fool told you that, I assure you.

*Host.* And you have been in England? But they say ladies in England take a great deal of physic.

*Clown.* Both ways, on my reputation.

*Host.* So 'tis to be understood: But they say ladies there take physic for fashion.

*Clown.* Yes, sir, and many times die to keep fashion.

*Host.* How! Die to keep fashion?

*Clown.* Yes; I have known a lady sick of the small-pox, only to keep her face from pit-holes, take cold, strike them in again, kick up the heels, and vanish.

*Host.* There was a kicking up the heels with a witness!

*Clown.* No, sir; I confess a good face has many times been the motive to the kicking up of the heels with a witness, but this was not.

*Enter Hostess and BIANCA.*

*Host.* Here come my wife and daughter.

*Clown.* You have a pretty commodity of this night-worm.

*Host.* Why, man?

*Clown.* She is a pretty lure to draw custom to your ordinary.

*Host.* Dost think I keep her to that purpose?

*Clown.* When a dove-house is empty, there is cumin-seed used to purloin from the rest of the neighbours; in England you have several adamant to draw in spurs and rapiers; one keeps silk-worms in a gallery; a milliner has choice of monnies and paraketoes; another shews bawdy East Indian pictures, worse than ever were Aretine's; a goldsmith keeps his wife wedged into his shop like a mermaid, nothing of her to be seen (that's woman) but her upper part.

*Host.* Nothing but her upper part?

*Clown.* Nothing but her upper bodice, and he lives at the more heart's ease.

*Host.* What's the reason?

*Clown.* Because her nether part can give no temptation. By your leave, sir, I'll tend my master, and instantly be with you for a cup of cherrily this hot weather.

[*Exit.*]

*Host.* A nimble-pated rascal!—Come hither, daughter;

When was Cesario here?

*Bian.* Sir, not this fortnight.

*Host.* I do not like his visits; commonly He comes by owl-light; both the time and manner Suspicious; I do not like it. [is

*Bian.* Sir, the gentleman

Is every way so noble, that you need not Question his intent of coming: Though you did, Pray, sir, preserve that good opinion of me, That, though the custom of the place I was born in Makes me familiar to every guest, I shall in all things keep myself a stranger To the vices they bring with them.

*Hostess.* Right, my daughter! She has the right strain of her mother.

*Host.* Of her mother?

An I would speak, I know from whence she took it. When I was as young, I was as honest.

*Hostess.* Leave your prating, and study to be drunk, and abuse your guests over and over!

*Enter FOROBOSCO and Clown.*

*Host.* Peace, wife; my honourable guest!

*For.* My endear'd landlord, and the rest of the compliments o' the house!

*Host.* Breakfast is ready, sir; it waits only the tide of your stomach.

*Clown.* And mine gapes for't, like a stale oyster.

*Host.* Ere you go to bed, fail not of that I pray.

[*Exeunt all but FOROBOSCO and Clown.*]

*For.* We will instantly be with you.—Now we are all fellows: Nine o'clock, and no clients come yet? Sure thou dost not set up bills enough.

*Clown.* I have set up bills in abundance.

*For.* What bills?

*Clown.* Marry, for curing of all diseases, recovery of stolen goods, and a thousand such impossibilities.

*For.* The place is unlucky.

*Clown.* No, certain 'tis scarcity of money; do not you hear the lawyers complain of it? Men have as much malice as e'er they had to wrangle, but they have no money.—Whither should this money be travell'd?

*For.* To the devil, I think.

*Clown.* 'Tis with his cofferer I am certain, that's the usurer.

*For.* Our cheating does not prosper so well as it was wont to do.

*Clown.* No, sure. Why, in England we could cozen 'em as familiarly, as if we had travell'd with a brief, or a lottery.

*For.* In the Low-Countries we did pretty well.

*Clown.* So, so, as long as we kept the mop-headed butter-boxes sober; marry, when they were drunk, then they grew buzzards: You should have them reel their heads together, and deliberate! Your Dutchman, indeed, when he is foxed, is like a fox; for when he's sunk in drink, quite earth to a man's thinking, 'tis full exchange-time with him, then he's subtlest. But your Switzer, 'twas nothing to cheat him.

*For.* Nothing.

*Clown.* No, nor conscience to be made of it; for since nature aforehand cozen'd him of his wit, 'twas the less sin for us to cozen him of his money.

*For.* But these Italians are most nimble-pated; we must have some new trick for them. I protest, but that our Hostess's daughter is a sweet lass, and

draws great resort to th' house, we were as good draw teeth a-horseback.

*Clown.* I told 'em in the market-place you could conjure, and nobody would believe me; but, ere long, I will make 'em believe you can conjure with such a figuary!

*For.* What language shall's conjure in? High-Dutch, I think, that's full in the mouth.

*Clown.* No, no, Spanish; that roars best, and will appear more dreadful.

*For.* Pr'ythee tell me thy conceit thou hast to glug them.

*Clown.* No, no, I' will not stale it; but, my dear jew's-trump, for thou art but my instrument, I am the plotter, and when we have cozen'd 'em most tightly, thou shalt steal away the innkeeper's daughter, I'll provide myself of another moveable; and we will most purely retire ourselves to Geneva.

*For.* Thou art the compass I sail by. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE III.—*A Street.*

*Enter BAPTISTA and MENTIVOLE.*

*Bapt.* Was ever expectation of so noble A requital answered with such contumely! A wild Numidian, that had suck'd a tigress, Would not have been so barbarous: Did he threat To cut thy hand off?

*Ment.* Yes, sir; and his slaves Were ready to perform't.

*Bapt.* What hinder'd it?

*Ment.* Only his son's entreaty.

*Bapt.* Noble youth!

I wish thou wert not of his blood; thy pity Gives me a hope thou art not.

*Ment.* You mistake, sir; The injury that follow'd from the son Was worse than the father's: He did first disarm, And took from me a jewel, which I prize Above my hand or life.

*Bapt.* Take thy sword from thee? He stole it like a thief rather; he could not I' th' field deprive thee of it.

*Ment.* He took it from me, And sent me forth so thin, and so unmade-up, As if I had been a foot-boy.

*Bapt.* Oh, my fury!

I must now ask thee forgiveness, that my rashness, Bred out of too much friendship, did expose thee To so imminent a danger; which I vow I will revènge on the whole family.

All the calamities of my whole life, My banishment from Genoa, my wife's loss, Compared to this indignity, is nothing; Their family shall repair't; it shall be to them Like a plague, when the dog-star reigns most hot! An Italian's revenge may pause, but is ne'er forgot. *[Exit.]*

*Ment.* I would I had conceal'd this from my father,

For my interest in Clarissa! My care now Must be to untangle this division, That our most equal flames may be united: And from these various and perturbed streams, Rise, like a sweet morn, after terrible dreams. *[Exit.]*

SCENE IV.—*A Room in the House of ALBERTO.*

*Enter CLARISSA and CERRIJO.*

*Clar.* Brother, I am happy in your recovery.

*Ces.* And I, sister, Am ever best pleas'd in your happiness. But I miss a toy should be on your finger.

*Clar.* My ring!

This morning when I wash'd, I put it off; 'Tis in my window.

*Ces.* Where's your looking-glass?

*Clar.* Here, sir.

*Ces.* 'Tis a fair one.

*Clar.* 'Tis pure crystal.

*Ces.* Can a diamond cut in crystal? Let me see; I'll grave my name in't.

*Clar.* Oh, you'll spoil my glass.

*Ces.* Would you not have your brother in your eye?

I had thought he had been planted in your heart. Look you; the diamond cuts quaintly; you are Your crystal is too brittle. *[Cozen'd.]*

*Clar.* 'Tis the ring *[Aside.]*

I gave unto Mentivole! sure, the same! — You put me to amazement, sir, and horror: How came you by that ring?

*Ces.* Does the blood rise?

*Clar.* Pray, sir, resolve me, (oh, for pity do) And take from me a trembling at the heart, That else will kill me! for I too much fear Nothing but death could ravish it from his hand That wore it.

*Ces.* Was it given to Mentivole On that condition?

*Clar.* Tell me of his health first, And then I'll tell you anything.

*Ces.* By my life, he's well;

In better health than I am.

*Clar.* Then, it was, sir.

*Ces.* Then shall I ever hate thee, oh, thou false! Hast thou a faith to give unto a friend, *[one:]* And break it to a brother? Did I not, By all the ties of blood, importune thee Never to part with it without my knowledge? Thou might'st have given it to a mulletteer, And made a contract with him in a stable, At as cheap a price of my vengeance! Never more Shall a woman's trust beguile me: You are all Like relics; you may well be look'd upon, But come a man to th' handling of you once, You fall in pieces!

*Clar.* Dear sir, I have no way Look'd either beneath reason, or myself, In my election; There's parity in our blood, And in our fortunes; ancient amity Betwixt our parents; to which wants nothing, but The fruit of blessed marriage between us, To add to their posterities. Nor does now Any impeachment rise, except the sad And unexpected quarrel, which divided So noble and so excellent a friendship, Which, as I ne'er had magic to foresee, So I could not prevent.

*Ces.* Well, you must give me leave To have a hand in your disposing; I shall, In the absence of my father, be your guardian; His suit must pass through my office. Mentivole? He has too much of my blood already; he has, And he gets no more of't.—Wherefore weep you, mother?

Enter MARIANA and a Sailor.

Mar. 'Tis occasion'd by a sorrow  
Wherein you have a child's part, and the mainest;  
Your father's dead.

Ces. Dead?

Mar. There is one can relate the rest.

Sailor. I can, sir; your father's drown'd,  
Most unfortunately drown'd.

Ces. How? in a tempest?

Sailor. No, sir, in a calm,  
Calm as this evening: The gunner, being drunk,  
Forgot to fasten the ordnance to their ports,  
When came a sudden gust, which tumbled them  
All to the starboard side, o'erturn'd the ship,  
And sunk her in a moment; some six men  
That were upon the deck were saved; the rest  
Perish'd with your father.

Clar. Oh, my dearest father!

Ces. I pray thee, leave us. [Exit Sailor.]

Mar. I have a sorrow of another nature  
Equal to the former.

Ces. And most commonly  
They come together.

Mar. The family of the Baptists  
Are grown to faction, and upon distaste

Of the injury late offer'd in my house,  
Have vow'd a most severe and fell revenge  
'Gainst all our family, but especially  
'Gainst you, my dear Cesario.

Ces. Let them threat;

I am prepared to oppose them.

Mar. And is your loss then  
Of so easy an estimation? What comfort  
Have I but in your life? and your late danger  
Presents before me what I am to suffer,  
Should you miscarry: Therefore I'll advise you,  
When the funeral is over, you would travel;  
Both to prevent their fury, and wear out  
The injury.

Ces. No, mother, I will not travel—  
So in my absence he may marry my sister— [Aside.]  
I will not travel, certain. [Exit.]

Mar. Oh, my Cesario,  
Whom I respect and love 'bove my own life,  
Indeed with a kind of dotage! he shall never  
Go forth o' doors, but the contrary faction will  
Endanger his life; and then am I most wretched!  
I am thinking of a strange prevention,  
Which I shall witness with a bleeding eye;  
Fondness sometimes is worse than cruelty. [Exit.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the Inn.

Enter Host, Hostess, and BIANCA.

Host. Haunted, my house is haunted with goblins!  
I shall be frighted out of my wits, and set up  
a sign only to invite carriers and foot-posts, scare-  
crows to keep off the cavalry, and gentry of the  
best rank. I will nail up my doors, and wall up  
my girl, wife, like an anchoress, or she will be  
ravished before our faces by rascals and cacafu-  
goes, wife, cacafugoes!

Hostess. These are your incomes! Remember  
your own proverb, The savour of every gain smelt  
sweet: Thank nobody but yourself for this trouble!

Host. No galling, dear spouse, no galling! every  
day's new vexation abates me two inches in the  
waist; terrible penance for an host!—Girl, girl,  
which of all this gallimaufry of man's flesh ap-  
pears tolerable to thy choice? speak shortly, and  
speak truly! I must and will know, must and will!  
hear you that?

Bian. Sir, be not jealous of my care and duty!  
I am so far from entertaining thoughts  
Of liberty, that much more excellent objects  
Than any of such coarse contents as these are,  
Could not betray mine eye to force my heart  
Conceive a wish of any dearer happiness  
Than your direction warrants. I am yours, sir.

Hostess. What thinks the man now? Is not this  
strange at thirteen?

Host. Very good words; there's a tang in 'em,  
and a sweet one; 'tis music, wife; and now I come  
t'ye. Let us a little examine the several conditions  
of our paraphrastic suitors! The first a trav-  
elling tailor, who, by the mystery of his needle  
and thimble, hath survey'd the fashions of the  
French and English; this Signor Gingerbread,  
stitch'd up in the shreds of a gaudy outside, sows  
linings with his cross-legg'd compliment, like an

ape doing tricks over a staff, cringes, and crouches,  
and kisses his fore-finger.

Hostess. Out upon him!

Host. A second, a lavoltetere, a saltatory, a  
dancer with a kit at his bum; one that, by teach-  
ing great madonnas to foot it, has miraculously  
purchased a ribanded waistcoat, and four clean pair  
of socks; a fellow that skips as he walks, and in-  
stead of sensible discourse, vents the curious con-  
ceit of some new tune stolen from a masque, or a  
bawdy ditty, elevated for the pole arctick of a  
lady's chamber; in that file stands another of your  
inamoratoes.

Hostess. Hang him and his fiddle together! he  
never fiddles any child of ours.

Host. The third, a mongrel, got by a Switzer  
on an Italian; this puppy, being left well estated,  
comes to Florence, that the world may take notice  
how impossible it is for experience to alter the  
course of nature; a fool, wife! and, indeed, a  
clown turn'd gallant seldom or never proves other  
than a gallant fool; this toy prates to little pur-  
pose other than—*What's o'clock? Shall's go  
drink? D'ye forsooth? and Thank ye heartily.*  
I fear no art in him to catch thee; and yet we  
must be tormented with this buzzard amongst the  
rest.

Hostess. 'Tis your own folly; forbid him the  
house.

Host. The fourth, a mule-driver, a stubborn  
and a harsh knave; the fifth, a schoolmaster, a  
very amorous pedant, run almost mad with study  
of sonnets, and compliments out of old play-ends;  
the last, an advocate's clerk, that speaks pure fus-  
tian in law-terms: Excellent courtiers all, and all  
as neat as a magnifico's post new painted, at his  
entrance to an office! Thou shalt have none of  
'em. Laugh at 'em, do! I say, thou shalt have  
none of 'em.

*Bian.* Still your command to me shall stand a law.

*Host.* Now they throng like so many horse-courses at a fair, in clusters about the man of art, for love-powders, ingredients, potions, counsels, postures, compliments, philters, the devil and the—How now? tumults, batteries, noise?

[*Clown cries within.*]

*For.* [*Within.*] Ha, get from my sight!

*Enter FOROSOSCO, and Clown with his Head bloody.*

*Clown.* Murder me, do; pound me to mummy, do! see what will come on't.

*For.* Dog, leave thy snarling, or I'll cut thy tongue out!

Thou unlick'd bear, darest thou yet stand my fury,  
My generous rage? yet? By the sulphurous damps  
That feed the hungry and incessant darkness,  
Which curls around the grim Alastor's back,  
Mutter again, and with one powerful word,  
I'll call an host up from the Stygian lakes,  
Shall waft thee to the Acherontic fens;  
Where, choak'd with mists as black as thy impos-  
Thou shalt live still a-dying!

*Clown.* Conjure me to the devil, an you can! I live in hell upon earth already: An you had any mercy, you would not practise upon a kind heart thus.

*Host.* You have drawn blood from him, signor; is his offence unpardonable?

*For.* A lump of ignorance, (pray speak not for him)

A drowsy grossness! In all Christian kingdoms,  
The mention of my art, my name, and practice,  
Merit, and glory, hath begot at once  
Delight and wonder.—I'll not be entreated;  
Spare intercession for him!—Oh, thou scorn  
Of learning, shame of duty, must thy sloth  
Draw my just fame in question? I discharge  
Thee from my service; see me no more hence-  
forth!

*Clown.* Discharge me? Is that my year's wages? I'll not be so answered.

*For.* Not, camel? sirrah, I am liberal to thee, Thou hast thy life; be gone!

*Clown.* Vengeance, sweet vengeance!

*For.* Do ye mumble?

*Clown.* I'll be revenged, monstrously, suddenly, and insatiably: My bulk begins to swell.

*For.* *Homotolenton, Pragmatophoros, Heliosty-corax!*

*Clown.* Call up your spirits! I defy 'em! Well, I'll have law for my broken pate, (twelve ounces of pure blood, troy-weight) in despite of thee my master, and thy master the grand devil himself: *Vindicta, vindicta!* [*Exit.*]

*Host.* Signor, you are exceeding moved.

*Hostess.* Mercy upon us, what terrible words thou talk'st!

*For.* A slave, a cur!—But be not you affrighted, Young virgin! 'twere an injury to sweetness, Should any rough sound draw from your cheeks The precious tincture which makes Nature proud Of her own workmanship.

*Host.* Wife, mark; mark that, wife!

*Bian.* Shake then your anger off, sir.

*For.* You command it,

Fair one. Mine Host and Hostess, with your leaves, I have a motion jointly to you all.

*Hostess.* An honest one, I hope.

*Host.* Well put in, wife!

*For.* A very necessary one: The mess And half of suitors, that attend to usher Their love's sir-reverence to your daughter, wait With one consent, which can best please her eye In offering at a dance: I have provided Music; and 'twill be something, I dare promise. Worthy your laughter. Shall they have admit-  
tance?

*Host.* By any means; for I am persuaded the manner will be so ridiculous, that it will confirm the assurance of their miserable fooleries: But no longer trouble with 'em here, than they are in these May-games!

*For.* So I am resolved.

*Hostess.* Nor any wise word of senseless love!

*For.* Not any; I have charm'd them. Did you see how they prepared themselves, how they stroke up their foretops, how they jostle for the looking-glass to set their faces by it, (see, they muster!) you would look for some most impossible antic.

*Enter Tailor, Dancer, Muletter, Schoolmaster, Clerk, Coxcomb; all with several Papers, and present them to FOROSOSCO.*

*Host.* So, so, so! here flutter the nest of hornets, the hotch-potch of rascality: Now, now, now, now! The dunghill of corruption hath yawn'd forth the burden of abomination. I am vex'd, vex'd to the soul; will rid my house of this unchristen'd fry, and never open my doors again.

*For.* Some other time; I'll give no answer now. But have preferred your suits; here shew your cunning.

First, every one in order do his honour  
To the fair mark you shoot at; courtly, courtly,  
Convey your several loves in lively measure:  
Come, let us take our seats. Some sprightly  
music!

*Host.* Dance all and part; 'tis a very necessary farewell. [*Musi.*]

*They all make ridiculous congees to BIANCA, rank themselves, and dance in several postures; during the dance, enter CESARIO, and stands off.*

*Host.* Well done, my lusty bloods, preciously well done! One lusty rouse of wine, and take leave on all sides!

*Ces.* Thanks for your revels, gentlemen! accept This gold, and drink as freely as you danced.

*Host.* My noble Lord Cesario? Clear the rooms.

*For.* Away; attend your answers. [*Sirs: [Exit FOROSOSCO and Suitors.*]

*Ces.* With your favour, Rolando, I would change a word or two With your fair daughter.

*Host.* At your lordship's pleasure.—Come, wife, no muttering! Have a care, girl!—My love, service, and duty to your good lordship!

[*Exit Host and Hostess.*]

*Ces.* My often visits, sweet Bianca, cannot But constantly inform thy judgment wherein Thy happiness consists: For to steal minutes From great employments, to converse with beauty, Lodged in so mean a fortune; to lay by Consideration of the unequal distance Between my blood and thine; to shun occasions Of courtship with the ladies of the time, Noble and fair, only for love to thee; Must of necessity invite a tenderness, [woman's, As low as Nature could have stamp'd a bond-

To entertain quick motions of rare gratitude  
For my uncommon favours.

*Bian.* 'Deed, my lord,  
As far as my simplicity can lead me,  
I freely thank your courtesies.

*Ces.* To thank them  
Is to reward them, pretty one.

*Bian.* Then teach me  
How I may give them back again: In truth  
I never yet received a pair of gloves,  
A trifling ring, from any that expected  
An equal satisfaction, but as willingly  
I parted with the gift unto the owner,  
As he bestow'd it.

*Ces.* But I pour before thee  
Such plenties, as it lies not in the ability  
Of thy whole kindred to return proportionable,  
One for a thousand.

*Bian.* You, my lord, conclude  
For my instruction: To engage a debt  
Beyond a possibility of payment,  
I ever thought a sin; and therefore justly,  
Without conceit of scorn, or curious rudeness,  
I must refuse your bounty.

*Ces.* Canst thou love?

*Bian.* Love! is there such a word in any lan-  
guage

That carries honest sense?

*Ces.* Never dwelt ignorance [*Aside.*]  
In so sweet-shaped a building!—Love, Bianca,  
Is that firm knot which ties two hearts in one:  
Shall ours be tied so?

*Bian.* Use a plainer word,  
My lord; instead of *ties*, say *marries* hearts;  
Then I may understand.

*Ces.* Their hearts are married,  
Whose interchange of pleasures and embraces,  
Soft kisses, and the privacies of sweets,  
Keeps constant league together; when temptation  
Of great men's oaths and gifts shall urge contempt,  
Rather than batter resolution: Novelty  
Of sights, or taste of new delights in wantonness,  
Breeds surfeit more than appetite in any  
Reserved to noble vows: My excellent maid,  
Live thou but true to me, and my contents,  
Mine only, that no partner may partake  
The treasure of those sweets thy youth yet glories  
And I will raise thy lowness to abundance [in,  
Of all varieties; and more triumph  
In such a mistress, than great princes doting  
On truth-betraying wives.

*Bian.* Thus to yield up then  
The cottage of my virtue, to be swallow'd  
By some hard-neighbouring landlord, such as you  
Is in effect to love? A lord so vicious? [are,  
Oh, where shall Innocence find some poor dwell-  
Free from Temptation's tyranny? [ing,

*Ces.* Nay, pry'thee!

*Bian.* Gay clothes, high feeding, easy beds of  
lust,

Change of unseemly sights, with base discourse,  
Draw curses on your palaces: For my part,  
This I will be confirm'd in; I will eat  
The bread of labour, know no other rest  
Than what is earn'd from honest pains, ere once  
more

Lend ear to your vile toils! Sir, 'would you were  
As noble in desires, as I could be  
In knowing virtue! Pray do not afflict  
A poor soul thus.

*Enter a Gentleman.*

*Ces.* I swear——To me? [*BIANCA goes off.*]

*Gent.* The duke, my lord, demands your speedy  
presence,

For answering aggressances late urged  
Against you by your mother.

*Ces.* By my mother?

*Gent.* The court is near on sitting.

*Ces.* I wait on it, sir. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*DUKE, Magistrates, Secretary, and BAPTISTA discovered sitting. MENTIVOLE standing by, with Attendants.*

*Duke.* What waste of blood, what tumults,  
what divisions,  
What outrages, what uproars in a state,  
Factions, though issuing from mean springs at  
first,

Have (not restrain'd) flow'd to, the sad example  
At Rome, between the Ursins and Colonnas,  
Nay, here at home, in Florence, 'twixt the Neri  
And the Bianchi, can too mainly witness.  
I sit not at the helm, my lords, of sovereignty,  
Deputed pilot for the commonwealth,  
To sleep whilst others steer, as their wild fancies  
Shall counsel, by the compass of disorders.

Baptista, this short preface is directed  
Chiefly to you: The petty brawls and quarrels  
Late urged betwixt the Alberti and your family,  
Must (yes and shall) like tender unknit joints,  
Fasten again together of themselves;  
Or, like an angry surgeon, we will use  
The roughness of our justice, to cut off  
The stubborn rancour of the limbs offending!

*Bapt.* Most gracious Florence——

*Duke.* Our command was signified,  
That neither of the followers of each party  
Should appear here with weapons.

*Bapt.* 'Tis obey'd, sir,  
On my side.

*Duke.* We must leave the general cause  
Of state employments, to give ear to brawls  
Of some particular grudges; politic government  
For tutor'd princes! But no more! henceforth  
Our frown shall check presumption, not our cle-  
mency.

*Enter MARIANA and CLARISSA at one Door, CESARIO at  
the other.*

*Mar.* All blessings due to impartial princes  
Crown Florence with eternity of happiness!

[*They kneel.*]

*Ces.* If double prayers can double blessings,  
great sir,

Mine join for your prosperity with my mother's.

*Duke.* Rise both! Now briefly, lady, without  
circumstance,

Deliver those aggressances, which lately  
Your importunity possess'd our counsel  
Were fit for audience, wherein you petition'd  
You might be heard without an advocate,  
Which boon you find is granted.

*Mar.* Though divided

I stand between the laws of truth and modesty,  
Yet let my griefs have vent! yet the clearness  
Of strange necessity requires obedience  
To nature and your mercy! In my weeds  
Of mourning, emblems of too dear misfortunes,

Badges of griefs, and widowhood, the burden  
Of my charged soul must be laid down before you ;  
Wherein, if strict opinion cancel shame,  
My frailty is my plea.—Stand forth, young man,  
And hear a story that will strike all reason  
Into amazement !

*Ces.* I attend.

*Mar.* Alberto,  
(Peace dwell upon his ashes ! still the husband  
Of my remembrance and unchanging vows)  
Has, by his death, left to his heir possession  
Of fair revenue, which this young man claims  
As his inheritance. I urged him gently,  
Friendly, and privately, to grant a partage  
Of this estate to her who owns it all,  
This his supposed sister.

*Bapt.* How ! supposed ?

*Ces.* Pray, madam, recollect yourself.

*Mar.* The relish

Of a strange truth begins to work like physic  
Already : I have bitterness to mingle  
With these preparatives, so deadly loathsome  
It will quite choak digestion ; shortly hear it :  
*Cesario*, (for I dare not rob unjustly  
The poor soul of his name) this, this *Cesario*,  
Neither for father had Alberto, me  
For mother, nor Clarissa for his sister.

*Clar.* Mother, oh, mother !

*Ment.* I am in a dream sure !

*Duke.* No interruptions !—Lady, on.

*Mar.* Mistake not,

Great Duke of Tuscany, or the beginning  
Or process of this novelty : My husband,  
The now deceased Alberto, from his youth  
Inured to an impatience and roughness  
Of disposition, when not many months  
After our marriage were worn out, repined  
At the unfruitful barrenness of youth,  
Which, as he pleased to term it, cut our hopes off  
From blessing of some issue : To prevent it,  
I grew ambitious of no fairer honour  
Than to preserve his love ; and as occasions  
Still call'd him from me, studied in his absence  
How I might frame his welcome home with comfort.  
At last I feign'd myself with child ; the message  
Of freedom, or relief, to one half starved  
In prison, is not utter'd with such greediness  
Of expectation and delight, as this was  
To my much-affected lord : His care, his goodness  
(Pardon me, that I use the word) exceeded  
All former fears. The hour of my deliverance,  
As I pretended, drawing near, I fashion'd  
My birth rites at a country garden house,  
Where then my falconer's wife was brought a-bed  
Of this *Cesario* : Him I own'd for mine,  
Presented him unto a joyful father—

*Duke.* Can you prove this true ?

*Mar.* Proofs I have most evident.

But oh, the curse of my impatience ! shortly,  
Ere three new moons had spent their borrow'd  
lights,

I grew with child indeed ; so just is Heaven !  
The issue of which burden was this daughter.  
Judge now, most gracious prince, my lords, and  
you,

What combats then, and since, I have endured,  
Between a mother's piety, and weakness  
Of a soul-trembling wife ! To have reveal'd  
This secret to Alberto, had been danger  
Of ruin to my fame, besides the conflict

Of his distractions ; now to have suppress'd it,  
Were to defeat my child, my only child,  
Of her most lawful honours, and inheritance.—  
*Cesario*, thou'rt a man still ; education  
Hath moulded thee a gentleman ; continue so !  
Let not this fall from greatness sink thee lower  
Than worthy thoughts may warrant ! yet disclaim  
All interest in Alberto's blood ; thou hast not  
One drop of his or mine.

*Duke.* Produce your witness !

*Mar.* The falconer's wife his mother, and such  
women

As waited then upon me, sworn to the privacy  
Of this great secret.

*Duke.* Give them all their oaths.

*Ces.* Oh, let me crave forbearance, gracious sir !  
Vouchsafe me hearing !

*Duke.* Speak, *Cesario*.

*Ces.* Thus long

I have stood silent, and with no unwillingness  
Attended the relation of my fall  
From a fair expectation : What I fear'd  
(Since the first syllable this lady utter'd  
Of my not being hers) benevolent fates  
Have eased me of : For to be basely born,  
If not base-born, detracts not from the bounty  
Of Nature's freedom, or an honest birth.  
Nobility claimed by the right of blood  
Shews chiefly, that our ancestors deserved  
What we inherit ; but that man whose actions  
Purchase a real merit to himself,  
And ranks him in the file of Praise and Honour,  
Creates his own advancement : Let me want  
The fuel which best feeds the fires of greatness,  
Lordly possessions ! yet shall still my gratitude,  
By some attempts, of mention not unworthy,  
Endeavour to return a fit acquittance  
To that large debt I owe your favours, madam,  
And great Alberto's memory and goodness,  
Oh, that I could so gently shake off passion  
For the loss of that great brave man, as I can  
shake off

Remembrance of what once I was reputed !  
I have not much to say ; this princely presence  
Needs not too strictly to examine further  
The truth of this acknowledgment : A mother  
Dares never disavow her only son ;  
And any woman must come short of piety,  
That can or disinherit her own issue,  
Or fears the voice of rumour for a stranger.—  
Madam, you have confess'd my father was  
A servant to your lord and you : By interest  
Of being his son, I cannot but claim justly  
The honour of continuing still my service  
To you and yours ; which granted, I beg leave  
I may for this time be dismiss'd.

*Duke.* Bold spirit !

*Bapt.* I love thee now with pity.

*Duke.* Go not yet !—

A sudden tempest that might shake a rock,  
Yet he stands firm against it ; much it moves me !—  
He not Alberto's son, and she a widow ?  
And she a widow ? Lords, your ear !

*All.* Your pleasure ?

*Duke.* So, lady ; what you have avouch'd is

*Mar.* Truth only, gracious sir.

*Duke.* Hear then our sentence :  
Since from his cradle you have fed and foster'd  
*Cesario* as your son, and trained him up  
To hopes of greatness, which now in a moment

You utterly again have ruin'd, this way  
We with our counsel are resolved; you, being  
A widow, shall accept him for a husband.

*Mar.* Husband to me, sir?

*Duke.* 'Tis in us to raise him  
To honours; and his virtues will deserve 'em.

*Mar.* But, sir, 'tis in no prince, nor his pre-  
rogative,

To force a woman's choice against her heart.

*Duke.* True; if then you appeal to higher  
justice,

Our doom includes this clause upon refusal :

Out of your lord's revenues shall Cesario  
Assure to any, whom he takes for wife,  
The inheritance of three parts; the less remainder  
Is dowry large enough to marry a daughter;  
And we, by our prerogative, which you question,  
Will publicly adopt him into the name  
Of your deceased Alberto, that the memory  
Of so approved a peer may live in him  
That can preserve his memory: 'Less you find out  
Some other means, which may as amply satisfy  
His wrong, our sentence stands irrevocable.—  
What think you, lords?

*All.* The Duke is just and honourable.

*Bapt.* Let me embrace Cesario! henceforth ever  
I vow a constant friendship.

*Ment.* I remit

All former difference.

*Ces.* I am too poor

In words to thank this justice.—Madam, always  
My studies shall be love to you, and duty.

*Duke.* Replies we admit none. Cesario, wait  
on us!

[*Exeunt all but MENTIVOLE, BAPTISTA, MARIANA, and  
CLARISSA.*]

*Bapt.* Mentivole!

*Ment.* My lord.

*Bapt.* Look on Clarissa;

She's noble, rich, young, fair.

*Ment.* My lord, and virtuous.

*Bapt.* Mentivole, and virtuous.—Madam!

*Mar.* Tyranny

Of justice! I shall live report's derision  
That am compell'd to exchange a graceful widow-  
For a continual martyrdom in marriage, [hood  
With one so much beneath me.

*Bapt.* I'll plead for ye

Boldly and constantly, let your daughter only  
Admit my son her servant: At next visit,  
Madam, I'll be a messenger of comfort.—

Mentivole, be confident and earnest! [*Exit.*]

*Mar.* Married again? to him too? better it had  
been

The young man should have still retain'd the  
Of old Alberto's son, than I the shame [honours  
Of making him successor of his bed :  
I was to blame.

*Ment.* Indeed, without offence,  
Madam, I think you were.

*Clar.* You urge it fairly,  
And like a worthy friend.

*Mar.* Can you say anything  
In commendation of a mushroom, withered  
As soon as started up?

*Ment.* You scorn an innocent  
Of noble growth; for whilst your husband lived  
I have heard you boast, Cesario in all actions  
Gave matter of report, of imitation,  
Wonder, and envy; let not discontinuance  
Of some few days estrange a sweet opinion  
Of virtue, chiefly when in such extremity!  
Your pity, not contempt, will argue goodness.

*Mar.* Oh, sir!

*Clar.* If you would use a thriving courtship,  
You cannot utter a more powerful language,  
That I shall listen to with greater greediness,  
Than the argument you prosecute: This speaks  
A man complete and excellent. [you

*Ment.* I speak not;

They are his own deserts.

*Mar.* Good sir, forbear!

I am now fully sensible of running  
Into a violent lethargy, whose deadliness  
Locks up all reason; I shall neverhenceforth  
Remember my past happiness!

*Ment.* These clouds

May be dispersed.

*Mar.* I fear continual night  
Will overshadow me! Yet, poor youth, his trespass  
Lies in his fortune, not the cruelty  
Of the duke's sentence.

*Clar.* I dare think it does.

*Mar.* If all fail, I will learn then to conquer  
Adversity with sufferance.

*Ment.* You resolve nobly.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—A Room in ALBERTO'S House.

*Enter CESARIO and a Servant.*

*Ces.* Let any friend have entrance.

*Serv.* Sir, he shall.

*Ces.* Any, I except none.

*Serv.* We know your mind, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Ces.* Pleasures admit no bounds. I am pitch'd  
so high,

To such a growth of full prosperities,  
That to conceal my fortunes were an injury  
To gratefulness, and those more liberal favours  
By whom my glories prosper. He that flows  
In gracious and swoln tides of best abundance,  
Yet will be ignorant of his own fortunes,  
Deserves to live contemn'd, and die forgotten :

VOL. II.

The harvest of my hopes is now already  
Ripen'd and gather'd; I can fatten youth  
With choice of plenty, and supplies of comforts;  
My fate springs in my own hand, and I'll use it.

*Enter two Servants and BIANCA.*

1 *Serv.* 'Tis my place.

2 *Serv.* Yours?—Here, fair one; I'll acquaint  
My lord.

1 *Serv.* He's here; go to him boldly.

2 *Serv.* Please you

To let him understand how readily  
I waited on your errand!

1 *Serv.* Saucy fellow!—

You must excuse his breeding.

*Ces.* What's the matter?—

b b

Bianca? my Bianca?—To your offices!—

[*Exeunt Servants.*]

This visit, sweet, from thee, my pretty dear,  
By how much more 'twas unexpected, comes  
So much the more timely: Witness this free  
welcome,

Whate'er occasion led thee!

*Bian.* You may guess, sir;  
Yet indeed 'tis a rare one.

*Ces.* Pr'ythee speak it,  
My honest virtuous maid.

*Bian.* Sir, I have heard  
Of your misfortunes; and I cannot tell you  
Whether I have more cause of joy or sadness,  
To know they are a truth.

*Ces.* What truth, Bianca?  
Misfortunes? how? wherein?

*Bian.* You are disclaim'd  
For being the Lord Alberto's son, and publicly  
Acknowledged of as mean a birth as mine is:  
It cannot chuse but grieve you.

*Ces.* Grieve me? Ha, ha, ha, ha!  
Is this all?

*Bian.* This all?

*Ces.* Thou art sorry for't,  
I warrant thee: Alas, good soul, Bianca!  
That which thou call'st misfortune is my happiness!  
My happiness, Bianca!

*Bian.* If you love me,  
It may prove mine too.

*Ces.* May it? I will love thee,  
My good, good maid, if that can make thee happy,  
Better and better love thee.

*Bian.* Without breach then  
Of modesty, I come to claim the interest  
Your protestations, both by vows and letters,  
Have made me owner of: From the first hour  
I saw you, I confess I wish'd I had been  
Or not so much below your rank and greatness,  
Or not so much above those humble flames  
That should have warmed my bosom with a tem-  
Equality of desires in equal fortunes. [*perate*]

Still as you uttered language of affection,  
I courted Time to pass more slowly on,  
That I might turn more food to lend attention  
To what I durst not credit, nor yet hope for;  
Yet still as more I heard, I wish'd to hear more.

*Ces.* Didst thou in troth, wench?

*Bian.* Willingly betray'd  
Myself to hopeless bondage.

*Ces.* A good girl!

I thought I should not miss, whate'er thy answer  
*Bian.* But as I am maid, sir, (and i'faith [was].  
You may believe me, for I am a maid)  
So dearly I respected both your fame  
And quality, that I would first have perish'd  
In my sick thoughts, than e'er have given consent  
To have undone your fortunes, by inviting  
A marriage with so mean a one as I am:  
I should have died sure, and no creature known  
The sickness that had kill'd me.

*Ces.* Pretty heart!

Good soul, alas, alas!  
*Bian.* Now since I know  
There is no difference 'twixt your birth and mine,  
Not much 'twixt our estates, (if any be,  
The advantage is on my side) I come willingly  
To tender you the first-fruits of my heart,  
And am content to accept you for my husband,  
Now when you are at lowest.

*Ces.* For a husband?  
Speak sadly; dost thou mean so?

*Bian.* In good deed, sir,  
'Tis pure love makes this proffer.

*Ces.* I believe thee.

What counsel urged thee on? tell me; thy father?  
My worshipful smug Host? Was't not he, wench?  
Or mother Hostess? ha?

*Bian.* Do you mock my parentage?  
I do not scorn yours: Mean folks are as worthy  
To be well spoken of, if they deserve well,  
As some whose only fame lies in their blood.  
Oh, you're a proud poor man! all your oaths false-  
hood,

Your vows deceit, your letters forged and wicked!  
*Ces.* Thou'dst be my wife, I dare swear.

*Bian.* Had your heart,  
Your hand and tongue been twins, you had reputed  
This courtesy a benefit.

*Ces.* Simplicity,  
How prettily thou mov'st me! Why, Bianca,  
Report has cozen'd thee; I am not fallen  
From my expected honours or possessions,  
Though from the hope of birth-right.

*Bian.* Are you not?  
Then I am lost again! I have a suit too;  
You'll grant it, if you be a good man.

*Ces.* Any thing.

*Bian.* Pray do not talk of aught what I have  
said to you.

*Ces.* As I wish health, I will not!

*Bian.* Pity me; [*She weeps.*]

But never love me more!  
*Ces.* Nay, now you are cruel:  
Why all these tears?—Thou shalt not go.

*Bian.* I'll pray for you,  
That you may have a virtuous wife, a fair one;  
And when I am dead—

*Ces.* Fy, fy!

*Bian.* Think on me sometimes,  
With mercy for this trespass!

*Ces.* Let us kiss  
At parting as at coming! [*Kisses her.*]

*Bian.* This I have  
As a free dower to a virgin's grave.  
All goodness dwell with you! [*Exit.*]

*Ces.* Harmless Bianca!  
Unskill'd! what handsome toys are maids to play  
with!

How innocent!—But I have other thoughts  
Of nobler meditation.—

*Enter MARIANA and CLARISSA.*

My felicity,  
Thou com'st as I could wish: Lend me a lip  
As soft, as melting, as when old Alberto,  
After his first night's trial, taking farewell  
Of thy youth's conquest, tasted!

*Mar.* You are uncivil!

*Ces.* I will be lord of my own pleasures, madam;  
You are mine, mine freely: Come, no whimpering  
henceforth!

New-con the lessons of Love's best experience,  
That our delights may meet in equal measure  
Of resolutions and desires! this sulleness  
Is scurvy; I like it not.

*Mar.* Be modest;  
And do not learn, Cesario, how to prostitute  
The riot of thy hopes to common folly.  
Take a sad woman's word! howe'er thou dot'st

Upon the present graces of thy greatness,  
Yet I am not fallen so below my constancy  
To virtue, nor the care which I once tender'd  
For thy behoof, that I prefer a sentence  
Of cruelty before my honour.

*Ces.* Honour?

*Mar.* Hear me: Thou seest this girl, now the  
comfort

Of my last days! she is the only pledge  
Of a bed truly noble: She had a father  
(I need not speak him more than thou remem-  
Whom to dishonour by a meaner choice [ber'st])  
Were injury and infamy.

*Clar.* To goodness,

To time, and virtuous mention.

*Mar.* I have vowed,

(Observe me now, Cesario!) that how'er  
I may be forced to marry, yet no tyranny,  
Persuasions, flattery, gifts, intreats, or tortures,  
Shall draw me to a second bed.

*Clar.* 'Tis just too.

*Mar.* Yes, and 'tis just, Clarissa.—I allow  
The duke's late sentence, am resolved, young man,  
To be thy wife; but when the ceremony  
Of marriage is performed, in life I will be,  
Though not in name, a widow.

*Ces.* Pray a word to you!

Shall I in earnest never be your bedfellow?

*Mar.* Never, oh, never! and 'tis for your good

*Ces.* Prove that. [too.]

*Mar.* Alas, too many years are number'd  
In my account to entertain the benefit  
Which youth in thee, Cesario, and ability,  
Might hope for and require: It were injustice  
To rob a gentleman deserving memory,  
Of issue to preserve it.

*Ces.* No more! Herein

You are an excellent pattern of true piety.  
Let me now turn your advocate. Pray look into  
The order of the duke enjoined; admit  
I satisfy the sentence, without marriage  
With you? how then?

*Mar.* Cesario!

*Ces.* If I know

How to acquit your fears, yet keep th' injunction  
In every clause whole and entire, your charity  
Will call me still your servant?

*Mar.* Still my son.

*Ces.* Right, madam, now you have it, still your  
The genius of your blessings hath instructed [son]:  
Your tongue oraculously: We will forget  
How once I and Clarissa interchanged  
The ties of brother and of sister! henceforth  
New-style us man and wife.

*Clar.* By what authority?

*Ces.* Heaven's great appointment. Yet, in all  
my dotage

On thy perfections, when I thought, Clarissa,  
We had been pledges of one womb, no loose,  
No wanton heat of youth desired to claim  
Priority in thy affections, other  
Than Nature might commend: chastely I tender'd  
Thy welfare as a brother ought: But since  
Our bloods are strangers, let our hearts contract  
A long life-lasting unity! for this way  
The sentence is to be observed, or no way.

*Mar.* Then no way!

*Ces.* I expected other answer,  
Madam, from you.

*Mar.* No; every age shall curse me,

The monster and the prodigy of Nature!  
Horrors beyond extremity—

*Clar.* Pray, mother,  
Confine the violence of grief!

*Ces.* Yes, mother,  
Pray do!

*Mar.* Thus some catch at a matron's honour  
By flying lust, to plot incestuous witchcrafts,  
More terrible than whoredoms: Cruel mercy!  
When, to preserve the body from a death,  
The soul is strangled!

*Ces.* This is more than passion;  
It comes near to distraction.

*Mar.* I am quieted.

Cesario, thou mayst tell the duke securely,  
Alberto's titles, honours, and revenues,  
The duke may give away; enjoy them thou!  
Clarissa's birth-right, Mariana's dower,  
Thou shalt be lord of; turn us to the world  
Unpitied and unfriended; yet my bed  
Thou never sleep'st in. As for her, (she hears me)  
If she as much as in a thought consent,  
That thou mayst call her wife, a mother's curse  
Shall never leave her.

*Clar.* As a brother once

I loved you, as a noble friend yet honour you;  
But for a husband, sir, I dare not own you:  
My faith is given already.

*Ces.* To a villain;  
I'll cut his throat.

*Mar.* "Why this is more than passion;  
It comes near a distraction."

*Clar.* Call to mind, sir,

How much you have abated of that goodness  
Which once reign'd in you, which appear'd so  
lovely,

That such as friendship led to observation,  
Courted the great example!

*Ces.* Left, and flatter'd  
Into a broad derision!

*Mar.* Why d'ye think so—

*Enter BAPTISTA and MENTIVOLE.*

My lord Baptista, is your son grown cold  
In hasting on the marriage, which his vows  
Have seal'd to my wrong'd daughter?

*Bapt.* We come, lady,  
To consummate the contract.

*Ces.* With Mentivole!  
Is he the man!

*Ment.* Clarissa's troth and mine,  
Cesario, are recorded in a character  
So plain and certain, that except the hand  
Of Heaven, which writ it first, would blot it out  
again,

No human power can raze it.

*Ces.* But say you  
So too, young lady!

*Clar.* I should else betray  
My heart to falsehood, and my tongue to perjury.

*Ces.* Madam, you know the sentence.

*Bapt.* From the duke  
I have particular comforts, which require  
A private ear.

*Mar.* I shall approve it gladly.—  
We are resolved, Cesario.

*Bapt.* Be not insolent  
Upon a prince's favour!

*Clar.* Lose no glory,  
Your younger years have purchased!

*Ment.* And deserved too ;  
You have many worthy friends.

*Bapt.* Preserve and use them !

[*Exeunt all but CESARIO.*]

*Ces.* Good, very good ! why, here's a compli-  
Of mirth in desperation ! I could curse [ment  
My fate : Oh, with what speed men tumble down  
From hopes that soar too high ! Bianca now  
May scorn me justly too ; Clarissa married,  
Alberto's widow resolute, Bianca  
Refused, and I forsaken. Let me study !—  
I can but die a bachelor, that's the worst on't.

[*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the Inn.*

*Enter Host, Tailor, Muleteer, Dancer, Pedant, Coxcomb.*

*Host.* Come, gentlemen ; this is the day that  
our great artist hath promised to give all your  
several suits satisfaction.

*Dancer.* Is he stirring ?

*Host.* He hath been at his book these two hours.

*Pedant.* He's a rare physician.

*Host.* Why, I'll tell you ; were Paracelsus the  
German now living, he'd take up his single rapier  
against his terrible long sword : He makes it a  
matter of nothing to cure the gout ; sore eyes he  
takes out as familiarly, washes them, and puts  
them in again, as you'd blanch almonds.

*Tailor.* They say he can make gold.

*Host.* Ay, ay, he learnt it of Kelly in Germany.  
There's not a chemist in Christendom can go  
beyond him for multiplying.

*Pedant.* Take heed then he go not up your  
daughter's belly, my host !

*Host.* You are a merry gentleman, and the man  
of art will love you the better.

*Dancer.* Does he love mirth and crotchets ?

*Host.* Oh, he's the most courteous physician !  
you may drink or drab in's company freely ; the  
better he knows how your disease grows, the better  
he knows how to cure it.

*Dancer.* But I wonder, my Host, he has no  
more resort of ladies to him.

*Host.* Why, sir ?

*Dancer.* Oh, divers of 'em have great belief in  
conjurers : Lechery is a great help to the quality.

*Host.* He's scarce known to be in town yet ;  
ere long we shall have 'em come hurrying hither  
in feather-beds.

*Dancer.* How ! bed-ridden ?

*Host.* No, sir ; in feather-beds that move upon  
four wheels, in Spanish caroches.

*Pedant.* Pray acquaint him we give attendance.

*Host.* I shall, gentlemen.—I would fain be rid  
of these rascals, but that they raise profit to my  
wine-cellar. When I have made use of them suf-  
ficiently, I'll entreat the conjuror to tie crackers to  
their tails, and send them packing.

*Enter FOMOSO as studying.*

*For.* Come hither, mine Host ! Look here.

*Host.* What's that ?

*For.* A challenge from my man.

*Host.* For breaking's pate ?

*For.* He writes here, if I meet him not i' th'  
field within this half-hour, I shall hear more from  
him.

*Host.* Oh, sir, mind your profit ; ne'er think of  
the rascal ; Here are the gentlemen.

*For.* 'Morrow, my worthy clients ! what, are you  
all prepared of your questions, that I may give my  
resolution upon them ?

*All.* We are, sir.

*Pedant.* And have brought our money.

*For.* Each then in order ! and differ not for  
precedency.

*Dancer.* I am buying of an office, sir, and to  
that purpose I would fain learn to dissemble cunningly.

*For.* Do you come to me for that ? you should  
rather have gone to a cunning woman.

*Dancer.* Ay, sir, but their instructions are but  
like women ; pretty well, but not to the depth, as  
I'd have it : You are a conjuror, the devil's master,  
and I would learn it from you so exactly—

*For.* That the devil himself might not go beyond  
you ?

*Dancer.* You are i' th' right, sir.

*For.* And so your money for your purchase  
might come in again within a twelvemonth ?

*Dancer.* I would be a graduate, sir, no fresh-  
man.

*For.* Here's my hand, sir : I will make you dis-  
semble so methodically, as if the devil should be  
sent from the Great Turk, in the shape of an  
ambassador, to set all the Christian princes at  
variance.

*Dancer.* I cannot with any modesty desire any  
more. There's your money, sir !

*For.* For the art of dissembling. [*Writes.*]

*Coxc.* My suit, sir, will be news to you when I  
tell it.

*For.* Pray, on !

*Coxc.* I would set up a press here in Italy, to  
write all the corantes for Christendom.

*For.* That's news indeed ; and how would you  
employ me in't ?

*Coxc.* Marry, sir, from you I would gain my  
intelligence.

*For.* I conceive you : You would have me fur-  
nish you with a spirit to inform you.

*Coxc.* But as quiet a devil as the woman the  
first day and a half after she's married ; I can by  
no means endure a terrible one.

*For.* No, no, I'll qualify him : he shall not  
fright you : It shall be the ghost of some lying  
stationer, a spirit shall look as if butter would not  
melt in his mouth ; a new *Mercurius Gallo-  
Belgicus* !

*Coxc.* Oh, there was a captain was rare at it.

*For.* Ne'er think of him. Though that captain  
writ a full hand-gallop, and wasted indeed more  
harmless paper than ever did laxative physic, yet  
will I make you to out-scribble him ; and set  
down what you please, the world shall better  
believe you.

*Coxc.* Worthy sir, I thank you ! there's money !

*For.* A new office for writing pragmatical  
corantes. [*Writes.*]

*Pedant.* I am a schoolmaster, sir, and would  
fain confer with you about erecting four new sects  
of religion at Amsterdam.

*For.* What the devil should new sects of religion  
do there ?

*Pedant.* I assure you I would get a great deal  
of money by it.

*For.* And what are the four new sects of religion  
you would plant there ?

*Pedant.* Why, that's it I come about, sir ; 'tis

a devil of your raising must invent 'em ; I confess I am too weak to compass it.

*For.* So sir ! Then you make it a matter of no difficulty to have them tolerated ?

*Pedant.* Trouble not yourself for that ; let but your devil set them a-foot once, I have weavers, and gingerbread-makers, and mighty aquavite-men, shall set them a-going.

*For.* This is somewhat difficult ; and will ask some conference with the devil.

*Pedant.* Take your own leisure, sir. I have another business too, because I mean to leave Italy, and bury myself in those nether parts of the Low-Countries.

*For.* What's that, sir ?

*Pedant.* Marry, I would fain make nine days to the week, for the more ample benefit of the captain.

*For.* You have a shrewd pate, sir !

*Pedant.* But how this might be compass'd—  
*For.* Compass'd easily ; it is but making a new almanack, and dividing the compass of the year into larger penny-worths, as a chandler with his compass makes a geometric proportion of the Holland cheese he retails by stivers. But, for getting of it licensed ?

*Pedant.* Trouble not yourself with that, sir ; there's your money.

*For.* For four new sects of religions, and nine days to the week. [Writes.]

*Pedant.* To be brought in at general pay-days, write, I beseech you.

*For.* At general pay-days.

*Tailor.* I am by profession a tailor ; you have heard of me.

*For.* Yes, sir, and will not steal from you the least part of that commendation I have heard uttered.

*Tailor.* I take measure of your worth, sir ; and because I will not afflict you with any large bill of circumstances, I'll snip off particulars : I would fain invent some strange and exquisite new fashions.

*For.* Are you not travell'd, sir ?

*Tailor.* Yes, sir, but have observed all we can see, or invent, are but old ones with new names to 'em ; now I would some way or other grow more curious.

*For.* Let me see ; to devise new fashions !—Were you never in the moon ?

*Tailor.* In the Moon tavern ? Yes, sir, often.

*For.* No, I do mean in the new world, in the world that's in the moon yonder.

*Tailor.* How ! A new world i' th' moon ?

*For.* Yes, I assure you.

*Tailor.* And peopled ?

*For.* Oh, most fantastically peopled.

*Tailor.* Nay, certain then there's work for tailors ?

*For.* That there is, I assure you.

*Tailor.* Yet I have talked with a Scotch tailor that never discovered so much to me, though he has travelled far, and was a pedlar in Poland.

*For.* That was out of his way ; this lies beyond China. You'd study new fashions, you say ? Take my counsel, make a voyage, and discover that new world.

*Tailor.* Shall I be a moon-man ?

*For.* I am of opinion, the people of that world, if they be like the nature of that climate they live in, do vary the fashion of their clothes oftener than any quick-silver'd nation in Europe.

*Tailor.* Not unlikely ; but what should that be we call the man in the moon, then ?

*For.* Why, it is nothing but an Englishman that stands there stark naked, with a pair of sheers in one hand, and a great bundle of broad-cloth in t'other, (which resembles the bush of thorns) cutting out of new fashions.

*Tailor.* I have heard somewhat like this ; but how shall I get thither ?

*For.* I'll make a new compass shall direct you.

*Tailor.* Certain ?

*For.* Count me else for no man of direction.

*Tailor.* There's twenty ducats in hand ; at my return I'll give you a hundred.

*For.* A new voyage to discover new fashions.

[Writes.]

*Mulet.* I have been a traveller too, sir, that have shew'd strange beasts in Christendom, and got money by them, but I find the trade to decay ; your camelion, or East-Indian hedgehog, gets very little money ; and your elephant devours so much bread, brings in so little profit, his keeper were better every morning cram fifteen tailors with white manchet : I would have some new spectacle, and one that might be more attractive.

*For.* Let me see ! Were you ever in Spain ?

*Mulet.* Not yet, sir.

*For.* I would have you go to Madrill ; and against some great festival, when the court lies there, provide a great and spacious English ox, and roast him whole, with a pudding in's belly ; that would be the eighth wonder of the world in those parts, I assure you.

*Mulet.* A rare project without question !

*For.* Go beyond all their garlick *olla podridas*, though you sod one in Gargantua's cauldron ! Bring in more money than all the monsters of Afric !

*Host.* Good sir, do your best for him ; he's o' my acquaintance, and one, if you knew him—

*For.* What is he ?

*Host.* He was once a man of infinite letters.

*For.* A scholar ?

*Host.* No, sir, a packet-carrier, which is always a man of many letters, you know ; then he was a mule-driver ; now he's a gentleman, and feeds monsters.

*For.* A most ungrateful calling !

*Mulet.* There's money for your direction ! The price of the ox, sir ?

*For.* A hundred French crowns, for it must be a Lincolnshire ox, and a prime one.—For a rare and monstrous spectacle, to be seen at Madrill.

[Writes.]

Enter Clown, Hostess, and BLANCA.

*Hostess.* Pray forbear, sir ! We shall have a new quarrel.

*Clown.* You durst not meet me i' th' field ! I am therefore come to spoil your market.

*For.* What's the news with you, sir ?

*Clown.* Gentlemen, you that come hither to be most abominably cheated, listen, and be as wise as your planet will suffer you : Keep your money, be not gulled, be not laughed at !

*Pedant.* What means this ? 'would I had my money again in my pocket !

*Host.* The fellow is full of malice ; do not mind him.

*Clown.* This professed cheating rogue was my master, and I confess myself a more preternotorious

rogue than himself, in so long keeping his villainous counsel.

*For.* Come, come, I will not hear you.

*Clown.* No, cozener, though thou wouldest not hear me; I do but dare thee to suffer me to speak, and then thou and all thy devils spit fire, and spout aquafortis!

*For.* Speak on; I freely permit thee.

*Clown.* Why then, know, all you simple animals, you whose purses are ready to cast the calf, if they have not cast it already, if you give any credit to this juggling rascal, you are worse than simple widgeons, and will be drawn into the net by this decoy-duck, this tame cheater.

*For.* Ha, ha, ha! Pray mark him!

*Clown.* He does profess physic, and conjuring; for his physic, he has but two medicines for all manner of diseases; when he was in the Low Countries, he used nothing but butter'd beer, coloured with Alligant, for all kinds of maladies, and that he called his catholic medicine: Sure the Dutch smelt out it was buttered beer, else they would never have endured it, for the name's sake! Then does he minister a grated dog's turd instead of rhubarb, many times of unicorn's horn, which, working strongly with the conceit of the patient, would make them besummer to the height of a mighty purgation.

*For.* The rogue has studied this invective.

*Clown.* Now for his conjuring, the witches of Lapland are the devil's chairwomen to him, for they will sell a man a wind to some purpose; he sells wind, and tells you forty lies over and over.

*Hostess.* I thought what we should find of him.

*Host.* Hold your prating; be not you an heretic!

*Clown.* Conjure? I'll tell you; all the devils' names he calls upon are but fustian names, gather'd out of Welsh heraldry; in brief, he is a rogue of six reprieves, four pardons of course, thrice pilloried, twice sung *Lacrymæ* to the virginals of a cart's tail, he has five times been in the galleys, and will never truly run himself out of breath till he comes to the gallows.

*For.* You have heard, worthy gentlemen, what this lying, detracting rascal has vomited.

*Tailor.* Yes, certain; but we have a better trust in you; for you have ta'en our money.

*For.* I have so. Truth is, he was my servant, and for some chastisement I gave him, he does practise thus upon me. Speak truly, sirrah, are you certain I cannot conjure?

*Clown.* Conjure? Ha, ha, ha!

*For.* Nay, nay, but be very sure of it.

*Clown.* Sure of it? why, I'll make a bargain with thee, before all these gentlemen, use all thy art, all thy roguery, and make me do anything before all this company I have not a mind to, I'll first give thee leave to claim me for thy bond-slave, and, when thou hast done, hang me!

*For.* 'Tis a match; sirrah, I'll make you caper i' th' air presently.

*Clown.* I have too solid a body; and my belief is like a puritan's on Good-Friday, too high fed with capon.

*For.* I will first send thee to Greenland for a haunch of venison, just of the thickness of thine own tallow.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, ha! I'll not stir an inch for thee!

*For.* Thence to Amboyna i' th' East Indies, for pepper to bake it.

*Clown.* To Amboyna? so I might be pepper'd. *For.* Then will I convey thee stark naked to Develing, to beg a pair of brogs, to hide thy mountainous buttocks.

*Clown.* And no doublet to 'em?

*For.* No, sir; I intend to send you of a sleekless errand: But before you vanish, in regard you say I cannot conjure, and are so stupid and opinionated a slave, that neither I nor my art can compel you to do anything that is beyond your own pleasure, the gentlemen shall have some sport: You cannot endure a cat, sirrah?

*Clown.* What's that to thee, juggler?

*For.* Nor you'll do nothing at my entreaty?

*Clown.* I'll be hanged first.

*For.* Sit, gentlemen; and whatsoever you see, be not frightened.

*Hostess.* Alas, I can endure no conjuring.

*Host.* Stir not, wife!

*Bian.* Pray let me go, sir; I am not fit for these fooleries.

*Host.* Move not, daughter!

*For.* I will make you dance a new dance, called leap-frog.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, ha!

*For.* And as naked as a frog.

*Clown.* Ha, ha, ha! I defy thee!

[FORNOSCO looks in a book, strikes with his wand, music plays.]

*Enter four Boys, shaped like Frogs, and dance.*

*Pedant.* Spirits of the water in the likeness of frogs!

*Tailor.* He has fished far, believe me.

*Mulet.* See, see! he sweats and trembles!

*For.* Are you come to your quavers?

*Clown.* Oh, ho, ho!

*For.* I'll make you run division on those O's, ere I leave you! Look you, here are the play-fellows that are so endeared to you: Come, sir, first uncase, and then dance; nay, I'll make him dance stark naked.

*Host.* Oh, let him have his shirt on, and his mogul's breeches; here are women i' th' house.

*For.* Well, for their sakes he shall.

[Clown tears off his doublet, making strange faces as if compelled to it, falls into the dance.]

*Tailor.* He dances; what a lying rogue was this to say the gentleman could not conjure!

*For.* He does prettily well; but 'tis voluntary, I assure you, I have no hand in't.

*Clown.* As you are a conjurer, and a rare artist, free me from these couplets! Of all creatures I cannot endure a frog.

*For.* But your dancing's voluntary; I can compel you to nothing.

*Hostess.* Oh, me, daughter, let's take heed of this fellow! he'll make us dance naked, as we vex him. [Exit Hostess and Bianca.]

*For.* Now cut capers, sirrah! I'll plague that chine of yours.

*Clown.* Ho, ho, ho! my kidneys are roasted; I drop away like a pound of butter roasted!

*Tailor.* He'll dance himself to death.

*For.* No matter; I'll sell his fat to the 'pothecaries, and repair my injury that way.

*Host.* Enough, in conscience!

*For.* Well, at your entreaty—Vanish! [Exit Boys.] And now I will only make him break his neck in doing a somersault, and that's all the revenge I mean to take of him.

*Clown.* Oh, gentlemen, what a rogue was I to belie so an approved master in the noble dark science! You can witness, this I did only to spoil his practice, and deprive you of the happiness of enjoying his worthy labours: Rogue that I was to do it! Pray, sir, forgive me!

*For.* With what face canst thou ask it?

*Clown.* With such a face as I deserve, with a hanging look, as all here can testify.

*For.* Well, gentlemen, that you may perceive the goodness of my temper, I will entertain this rogue again, in hope of amendment; for, should I turn him off, he would be hanged.

*Clown.* You may read that in this foul copy.

*For.* Only with this promise, you shall never cozen any of my patients.

*Clown.* Never.

*For.* And remember henceforward, that though I cannot conjure, I can make you dance, sirrah. Go, get yourself into thy cottage again.

*Clown.* I will never more dance leap-frog.— Now I have got you into credit, hold it up, and cozen them in abundance. *[Aside to FORTINBROCO.]*

*For.* Oh, rare rascal! *[Exit Clown.]*

*Enter CESARIO.*

*Ces.* How now? a Fankford mart here? a mountebank  
And his worshipful auditory?

*Host.* They are my guests, sir.

*Ces.* A pox upon them! Shew your juggling tricks  
In some other room.

*Host.* And why not here, sir?

*Ces.* Hence,  
Or, sirrah, I shall spoil your figure-flinging,  
And all their radical questions!

*All.* Sir, we vanish.

*[Exeunt all but Host and CESARIO.]*

*Host.* Signor Cesario, you make bold with me,  
And somewhat, I must tell you, to a degree  
Of ill-manners: They are my guests, and men I  
live by,

And I would know by what authority  
You command thus far.

*Ces.* By my interest in  
Your daughter.

*Host.* Interest, do you call't? As I remember,  
I never put her out to usury  
On that condition.

*Ces.* Pray thee be not angry;  
I am come to make thee happy, and her happy.

*Enter BIANCA and Hostess.*

She's here: Alas, my pretty soul! I am come  
To give assurance that's beyond thy hope,  
Or thy belief; I bring repentance 'bout me,  
And satisfaction: I will marry thee.

*Bian.* Ha!

*Ces.* As I live, I will; but do not entertain it  
With too quick an apprehension of joy,  
For that may hurt thee; I have heard some die of't.

*Bian.* Do not fear me.

*Ces.* Then thou think'st I feign  
This protestation? I will instantly,  
Before these, testify my new alliance,  
Contract myself unto thee; then I hope  
We may be more private.

*Host.* But thou shalt not, sir;  
For so has many a maidenhead been lost,  
And many a bastard gotten.

*Ces.* Then to give you  
The best of any assurance in the world,  
Entreat thy father to go fetch a priest,  
We will instantly to bed, and there be married.

*Bian.* Pride hath not yet forsaken you I see,  
Though prosperity has.

*Host.* Sir, you are too confident  
To fashion to yourself a dream of purchase,  
When you're a beggar.

*Ces.* You are bold with me!

*Hostess.* Do we not know your value is cried  
down

Fourscore i' th' hundred?

*Bian.* Oh, sir, I did love you  
With such a fixed heart, that in that minute  
Wherein you slighted, or contemn'd me rather,  
I took a vow to obey your last decree,  
And never more look up at any hope  
Should bring me comfort that way; and though,

since,  
Your foster-mother and the fair Clarissa  
Have, in the way of marriage, despised you,  
That hath not any way bred my revenge,  
But compassion rather. I have found  
So much sorrow in the way to a chaste wedlock,  
That here I will sit down and never wish  
To come to th' journey's end: Your suit to me  
Henceforth be ever silenced!

*Ces.* My Bianca!

*Hostess.* Henceforward, pray, forbear her and  
my house!

She's a poor virtuous wench; yet her estate  
May weigh with yours in a gold balance.

*Host.* Yes, and her birth in any herald's  
office  
In Christendom.

*Hostess.* It may prove so; when you'll say,  
You have leap'd a whiting. *[Exeunt all but CESARIO.]*

*Enter BAPTISTA and MENTIVOLE.*

*Ces.* How far am I  
Grown behind-hand with fortune!

*Bapt.* Here's Cesario!—

My son, sir, is to-morrow to be married  
Unto the fair Clarissa.

*Ces.* So!

*Ment.* We hope  
You'll be a guest there.

*Ces.* No; I will not grace  
Your triumph so much.

*Bapt.* I'll not tax your breeding,  
But it alters not your birth, sir; fare you well!

*Ment.* Oh, sir, do not grieve him;  
He has too much affliction already. *[Exeunt.]*

*Ces.* Every way scorn'd and lost! Shame fol-  
low you!

For I am grown most miserable.

*Enter a Sailor.*

*Sailor.* Sir, do you know  
A lady's son in town here, they call Cesario?

*Ces.* There's none such, I assure thee.

*Sailor.* I was told  
You were the man.

*Ces.* What's that to thee?

*Sailor.* A pox on't!

You are melancholy; will you drink, sir?

*Ces.* With whom?

*Sailor.* With me, sir; despise not this pitch'd  
canvas!

The time was we have known them lined with Spanish ducats.  
I have news for you.  
*Ces.* For me?  
*Sailor.* Not unless you'll drink :  
We are like our sea provision,  
Once out of pickle, we require abundance  
Of drink. I have news to tell you,

That, were you prince, would make you send your mandate  
To have a thousand bonfires made i' th' city,  
And piss'd out again with nothing but Greek wine.  
*Ces.* Come, I will drink with thee howsoever.  
*Sailor.* And upon these terms I will utter my mind to you. [Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Inn.*

*Enter ALBERTO, PROSPERO, JULIANA, and Sailors.*

*Sailor.* Shall we bring your necessaries ashore, my lord?

*Alb.* Do what you please ; I am land-sick worse Than e'er I was at sea. [by far]

*Pros.* Collect yourself.

*Alb.* Oh, my most worthy Prospero, my best The noble favour I received from thee, [friend,  
In freeing me from the Turks, I now account  
Worse than my death ; for I shall never live  
To make requital.—What do you attend for?

*Sailor.* To understand your pleasure.

*Alb.* They do mock me !—

I do protest I have no kind of pleasure  
In anything i' th' world, but in thy friendship ;  
I must ever except that.

*Pros.* Pray leave him, leave him !

[Exeunt Sailors.]

*Alb.* The news I heard related since my landing.  
Of the division of my family,  
How is it possible for any man  
To bear it with a set patience?

*Pros.* You have suffer'd,

Since your imprisonment, more weighty sorrows.

*Alb.* Ay, then I was a man of flesh and blood ;  
Now I am made up of fire, to the full height  
Of a deadly calenture : Oh, these vile women,  
That are so ill preservers of men's honours,  
They cannot govern their own honesties !  
That I should thirty and odd winters feed  
My expectation of a noble heir,  
And by a woman's falsehood find him now  
A fiction, a mere dream of what he was !  
And yet I love him still.

*Pros.* In my opinion,

The sentence on this trial, from the duke,  
Was noble, to repair Cesario's loss  
With the marriage of your wife, had you been dead.

*Alb.* By your favour, but it was not ! I conceive  
'Twas disparagement to my name, to have my  
widow

Match with a falconer's son : And yet, believe it,  
I love the youth still, and much pity him.  
I do remember, at my going to sea,  
Upon a quarrel, and a hurt received  
From young Mentivole, my rage so far  
O'er-topt my nobler temper, I gave charge  
To have his hand cut off ; which since I heard,  
And to my comfort, brave Cesario  
Worthily prevented.

*Pros.* And 'twas nobly done.

*Alb.* Yet the revenge for this intent of mine  
Hath bred much slaughter in our families ;

And yet my wife (which infinitely moans me)  
Intends to marry my sole heir, Clarissa,  
To the head branch of the other faction.

*Pros.* It is the mean to work reconciliation.

*Alb.* 'Tween whom ?

*Pros.* Yourself and the worthy Baptista.

*Alb.* Never.

*Pros.* Oh, you have been of a noble and remarkable friendship ;

And, by this match, 'tis generally in Florence  
Hoped, will fully be reconciled ; to me  
'Twould be absolute content.

*Jul.* And to myself ;

I have main interest in it.

*Alb.* Noble sir,

You may command my heart to break for you,  
But never to bend that way. Poor Cesario,  
When thou putt'st on thy mournful willow garland,  
Thy enemy shall be suited, I do vow,  
In the same livery ! My Cesario,  
Loved as my foster-child, though not my son,  
Which in some countries formerly were barbarous.  
Was a name held most affectionate ; thou art lost.  
Unfortunate young man ! not only slighted  
Where thou receivest thy breeding, but since  
scorn'd,

I' th' way of marriage, by the poor Bianca,  
The innkeeper's daughter.

*Pros.* I have heard of that, too ;

But let not that afflict you ! for this lady  
May happily deliver, at more leisure,  
A circumstance may draw a fair event,  
Better than you can hope for. For this present,  
We must leave you, and shall visit you again  
Within these two hours.

*Alb.* Ever to me most welcome !—

[Exeunt PROSPERO and JULIANA.]

*Enter CESARIO.*

Oh, my Cesario !

*Ces.* I am none of yours, sir,  
So 'tis protested ; and I humbly beg,  
Since 'tis not in your power to preserve me  
Any longer in a noble course of life,  
Give me a worthy death !

*Alb.* The youth is mad.

*Ces.* Nay, sir, I will instruct you in a way  
To kill me honourably.

*Alb.* That were most strange.

*Ces.* I am turning pirate ; you may be employ'd  
By the duke to fetch me in, and in a sea-fight  
Give me a noble grave.

*Alb.* Questionless he's mad !

I would give any doctor a thousand crowns  
To free him from this sorrow.

*Ces.* Here's the physician.

[Shows a patient.]

*Alb.* Hold, sir; I did say  
To free you from the sorrow, not from life.  
*Ces.* Why, life and sorrow are unseparable.

*Alb.* Be comforted, Cesario! Mentivole  
Shall not marry Clarissa.

*Ces.* No, sir; ere he shall,  
I'll kill him.

*Alb.* But you forfeit your own life then.

*Ces.* That's worth nothing.

*Alb.* Cesario, be thyself; be mine, Cesario!  
Make not thyself incapable of that portion  
I have full purpose to confer upon thee,  
By falling into madness; bear thy wrongs  
With noble patience, the afflicted's friend,  
Which ever in all actions crowns the end!

*Ces.* You [have] well awaked me, nay, recover'd  
me

Both to sense and full life. Oh, most noble sir,  
Though I have lost my fortune, and lost you  
For a worthy father, yet I will not lose  
My former virtue; my integrity  
Shall not yet forsake me: But as the wild ivy  
Spreads and thrives better in some piteous ruin  
Of tower, or defaced temple, than it does  
Planted by a new building, so shall I  
Make my adversity my instrument  
To wind me up into a full content.

*Alb.* 'Tis worthily resolved! Our first adventure

Is to stop the marriage: For thy other losses,  
Practised by a woman's malice, but account them  
Like conjuror's winds, raised to a fearful blast,  
And do some mischief, but do never last!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter Fonzosoco and Clown.*

*Clown.* Now, sir, will not you acknowledge that  
I have mightily advanced your practice?

*For.* 'Tis confess'd; and I will make thee a great  
man for it.

*Clown.* I take a course to do that myself, for I  
drink sack in abundance.

*For.* Oh, my rare rascal! We must remove.

*Clown.* Whither?

*For.* Any whither; Europe is too little to be  
cozened by us: I am ambitious to go to the East  
Indies, thou and I to ride on our brace of  
elephants.

*Clown.* And for my part I long to be in Eng-  
land again; you will never get so much as in  
England; we have shifted many countries, and  
many names, but traunce the world over, you shall  
never purse up so much gold as when you were in  
England, and called yourself Doctor Lambstones.

*For.* 'Twas an attractive name, I confess;  
women were then my only admirers.

*Clown.* And all their visits were either to  
further their lust, or revenge injuries.

*For.* You should have forty in a morning be-  
leaguer my closet, and strive who should be  
cozened first: 'Mongst fourscore love-sick waiting-  
women that have come to me in a morning to  
learn what fortune should betide 'em in their first  
marriage, I have found above ninety-four to have  
lost their maidenheads.

*Clown.* By their own confession: but I was fain  
to be your male mid-wife, and work it out of them  
by circumstance.

*For.* Thou wast; and yet for all this frequent  
resort of women, and thy handling of their urinals  
and their cases, thou art not given to lechery.  
What should be the reason of it? Thou hast  
wholesome flesh enough about thee; and methinks  
the devil should tempt thee to't.

*Clown.* What need he do that, when he makes  
me his instrument to tempt others?

*For.* Thou canst not choose but utter thy rare  
good parts. Thou wast an excellent bawd, I  
acknowledge.

*Clown.* Well, and what I have done that way—  
I will spare to speak of all you and I have done,  
sir; And though we should—

*For.* We will for England, that's for certain.

*Clown.* We shall never want there.

*For.* Want? their Court of Wards shall want  
money first; for I profess myself lord paramount  
over fools and mad folks.

*Clown.* Do but store yourself with lies enough  
against you come thither.

*For.* Why, that's all the familiarity I ever had  
with the devil, my gift of lying; they say he's the  
father of lies; and though I cannot conjure, yet I  
profess myself to be one of his poor gossips. I  
will now reveal to thee a rare piece of service.

*Clown.* What is it, my most worshipful Doctor  
Lambstones?

*For.* There is a captain come lately from sea,  
they call Prosper; I saw him this morning, through a  
chink of wainscot that divides my lodging and the  
Host of the house, withdraw my Host and Hostess,  
the fair Bianca, and an ancient gentlewoman into  
their bedchamber: I could not overhear their con-  
ference, but I saw such a mass of gold and jewels!  
And, when he had done, he locked it up into a  
casket. Great joy there was amongst them, and  
forth they are gone into the city, and my Host  
told me at his going forth, he thought he should  
not return till after supper: Now, sir, in their  
absence will we fall to our picklocks, enter the cham-  
ber, seize the jewels, make an escape from Florence,  
and we are made for ever!

*Clown.* But if they should go to a true conjurer,  
and fetch us back in a whirlwind?

*For.* Do not believe there is any such fetch in  
astrology! And this may be a means to make us  
live honest hereafter.

*Clown.* 'Tis but an ill road to't, that lies through  
the highway of thieving.

*For.* Indeed I am weary of this trade of fortune-  
telling, and mean to give all over, when I come  
into England; for it is a very ticklish quality.

*Clown.* And i' th' end will hang by a twine  
thread.

*For.* Besides, the island has too many of the  
profession; they hinder one another's market.

*Clown.* No, no, the pillory hinders their market.

*For.* You know there the juggling captain.

*Clown.* Ay; there's a sure card!

*For.* Only the foreman of their jury is dead;  
but he died like a Roman.

*Clown.* Else 'tis thought he had made work for  
the hangman.

*For.* And the very Ball of your false prophets,  
he's quashed too.

*Clown.* He did measure the stars with a false  
yard, and may now travel to Rome with a mortar  
on's head, to see if he can recover his money that  
way.

*For.* Come, come, let's fish for this casket, and to sea presently!

*Clown.* We shall never reach London, I fear; my mind runs so much of hanging, landing at Wapping. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—A Room in ALBERTO's House.

*Enter MARIANA.*

*Mar.* This well may be a day of joy long-wish'd To my Clariassa; she is innocent, [for Nor can her youth but with an open bosom Meet Hymen's pleasing bounties: but to me, That an environ'd with black guilt and horror, It does appear a funeral: Though promising much In the conception - - - - -

- - - - - were hard to manage, But sad in the event. It was not hate, But fond indulgence in me, to preserve Cesario's threaten'd life, in open court That forced me to disclaim him, choosing rather To rob him of his birth-right, and honour, Than suffer him to run the hazard of Enraged Baptista's fury: While he lives, I know I have a son; and the duke's sentence A while deluded, and this tempest over, When he assures himself despair hath seized him, I can relieve and raise him. [Knocks within.] Speak, who is it That presses on my privacies?—

*Enter BAPTISTA.*

Sir, your pardon!

You cannot come unwelcome, though it were To read my secret thoughts.

*Bapt.* Lady, to you

Mine shall be ever open: *Lady*, said I? That name keeps too much distance! *sister* rather I should have styled you; and I now may claim it, Since our divided families are made one By this bless'd marriage; to whose honour comes The duke in person, waited on by all The braveries of his court, to witness it, And then to be our guests. Is the bride ready To meet and entertain him?

*Mar.* She attends

The coming of your son.

*Bapt.* Pray you bring her forth.

The duke's at hand: Music, in her loud voice, Speaks his arrival.

*Mar.* She's prepared to meet it. [Exit.]

*Enter MARIANA, CLARISSA led by two Maids; at the other door, BAPTISTA meets with MENTIVOLE led by two Courtiers; the Duke, Bishop, and divers Attendants. A Song, whilst they salute.*

*Duke.* It were impertinent to wish you joy, Since all joys dwell about you: Hymen's torch Was never lighted with a luckier omen, Nor burnt with so much splendour. To defer With fruitless compliment the means to make Your certain pleasures lawful to the world, (Since in the union of your hearts they are Confirm'd already) would but argue us A boaster of our favours: To the temple! And there the sacred knot once tied, all triumphs Our dukedom can afford shall grace your nuptials.

*Enter ALBERTO and CESARIO.*

*Bapt.* On there!

*Ment.* I hope it is not in the power Of any to cross us now.

*Alb.* But, in the breath Of a wrong'd father, I forbid the bans!

*Ces.* What, do you stand at gaze?

*Bapt.* Risen from the dead?

*Mar.* Although the sea had vomited up the figure

In which thy better part lived long imprison'd, True love, despising fear, runs thus to meet it.

*Clar.* In duty I kneel to it. [Kneels.]

*Alb.* Hence, vile wretches!

To you I am a substance incorporeal, And not to be profaned with your vile touch, That could so soon forget me; but such things Are neither worth my anger nor reproof.— To you, great sir, I turn myself, and these Immediate ministers of your government; And if in my rude language I transgress, Ascribe it to the cold remembrance of My services, and not my rugged temper!

*Duke.* Speak freely; be thy language ne'er so bitter,

To see thee safe, Alberto, signs thy pardon.

*Alb.* My pardon? I can need none, if it be not Received for an offence; I tamely bear Wrongs, which a slave-born Muscovite would check at.

Why, if for treason I had been delivered Up to the hangman's axe, and this dead trunk, Unworthy of a Christian sepulchre, Exposed a prey to feed the ravenous vulture, The memory of the much I oft did for you, (Had you but any touch of gratitude, Or thought of my deservings) would have stopp'd From these unjust proceedings. [you]

*Duke.* Hear the motives,

That did induce us.

*Alb.* I have heard them all;

Your highness' sentence, the whole court abused, By the perjuries and practice of this woman; (Weepst thou, crocodile?) my hopeful son, Whom I dare swear mine own, degraded of The honours that descend to him from me; And from that, in his love scorn'd by a creature Whose base birth, though made eminent by her beauty,

Might well have mark'd her out Cesario's servant!

All this I could have pardon'd and forgot; But that my daughter, with my whole estate (So hardly purchased) is assigned a dower,

To one whose father and whose family I so detest that I would lose my essence, And be transformed to a basilisk To look them dead, to me's an injury Admits no satisfaction!

*Bapt.* There's none offered.

*Alb.* Nor would it be accepted, though upon Thy knees 'twere tendered.

*Mar.* Now the storm grows high.

*Bapt.* But that I thought thee dead, and in thy The briny ocean had entomb'd thy name, [death I would have sought a wife in a bordello For my Mentivole, and gladly hugg'd Her spurious issue as my lawful nephews, Before his blood should e'er have mix'd with thine; So much I scorn it.

*Alb.* I'll not bandy words;

But thus dissolve the contract. [Parts them.]

*Bapt.* There I meet thee:

And seize on what's mine own.

*Alb.* For all my service,

Great sir, grant me the combat with this wretch,  
That I may scourge his insolence!

*Bapt.* I kneel for it.

*Ces.* And to approve myself Alberto's son,  
I'll be his second upon any odds,  
'Gainst him that dare most of Baptista's race.

*Ment.* Already, upon honourable terms,  
In me thou hast met thy better; for her sake  
I'll add no more.

*Alb.* Sir, let our swords decide it!

*Mar.* Oh, stay, sir; and as you would hold the  
Of a just prince, ere you grant licence to [title  
These madmen's fury, lend your private ear  
To the most distress'd of women!

*Duke.* Speak; 'tis granted.

[*He takes MARIANA aside.*]

*Clar.* In the mean time, let not Clarissa be  
A patient looker-on! Though as yet doubtful

[*Kneels.*]

To whom to bend her knee first, yet to all  
I stoop thus low in duty, and would wash  
The dust of fury with my virgin tears,  
From his bless'd feet, and make them beautiful,  
That would move to conditions of peace,  
Though with a snail-like pace; they all are wing'd  
To bear you to destruction! Reverend sirs,  
Think on your ancient friendship, cemented  
With so much blood, but shed in noble action,  
Divided now in passion for a brawl  
The makers blush to own! Much-loved Cesario,  
Brother, or friend, (each title may prevail)  
Remember with what tenderness from our child-  
We loved together, you preferring me [hood  
Before yourself, and I so fond of you  
That it begot suspicion in ill minds,  
That our affection was incestuous:  
Think of that happy time, in which I know  
That with your dearest blood you had prevented  
This shower of tears from me! Mentivole,  
My husband, register'd in that bright star-chamber,  
Though now on earth made strangers, be the ex-  
And offer in one hand the peaceful olive [ample!  
Of concord; or, if that can be denied,  
By powerful intercession, in the other  
Carry the Hermian rod, and force atonement!

[*Rises.*]

Nay, we will not be all marble; death's the worst  
then,

[*Offers to kill herself.*]

And he shall be my bridegroom.

*Ment.* Hold, Clarissa!

This loving violence [I] needs must offer:  
In spite of honour—

[*He matches away her knife, and sets it to his own  
breast; she slays his hand.*]

*Duke.* Was it to that end then?

On your religion?

*Mar.* And my hope in heaven, sir!

*Duke.* We then will leave entreaties, and make  
Of our authority.—Must I cry aim [use  
To this unheard of insolence? in my presence  
To draw your swords, and, as all reverence  
That's due to majesty were forfeited,  
Cherish this wildness? Sheathe them instantly,  
And shew an alteration in your looks;  
Or, by my power—

*Alb.* Cut off my head!

*Bapt.* And mine!

Rather than hear of peace with this bad man,  
I'll not alone give up my throat, but suffer  
Your rage to reach my family.

*Alb.* And my name

To be no more remember'd.

*Enter PROSPERO, JULIANA, and BIANCA, in brave Apparel.*

*Duke.* What are these?

*Ces.* Bianca? 'tis Bianca, still Bianca!  
But strangely alter'd.

*Bapt.* If that thirteen years

Of absence could raze from my memory  
The figure of my friend, I might forget thee;  
But if thy image be graven on my heart,  
Thou art my Prospero.

*Pros.* Thou my Baptista.

*Duke.* A sudden change!

*Bapt.* I dare not ask, dear friend,  
If Juliana live; for that's a blessing  
I am unworthy of! but yet deny not  
To let me know the place she hath made happy,  
By having there her sepulchre.

*Pros.* If your highness

Please to vouchsafe a patient ear,  
We shall make a true relation of a story  
That shall call on your wonder.

*Duke.* Speak; we hear you.

*Pros.* Baptista's fortune in the Genoa court,  
His banishment, with his fair wife's restraint,  
You are acquainted with; what since hath followed  
I faithfully will deliver. Ere eight moons  
After Baptista's absence were complete,  
Fair Juliana found the pleasures, that  
They had enjoyed together, were not barren,  
And, blushing at the burden of her womb,  
No father near to own it, it drew on  
A violent sickness, which call'd down compassion  
From the angry duke; then, careful of her health,  
Physicians were inquired of, and their judgment  
Prescribed the baths of Lucca as a means  
For her recovery: To my charge it pleased her  
To be committed; but as on the way  
We journey'd, those throes, only known to women,  
Came thick upon her: In a private village—

*Bapt.* She died?

*Pros.* Have patience!—She brought to the world  
A hopeful daughter: For her body's sickness,  
It soon decayed; but the grief of her mind  
Hourly increased, and life grew tedious to her;  
And, desperate e'er to see you, she enjoin'd me  
To place her in a Greekish monastery,  
And to my care gave up her pretty daughter.

*Bapt.* What monastery? as a pilgrim bare-foot,  
I'll search it out.

*Pros.* Pray you interrupt me not.

Now to my fortunes! The girl well disposed of  
With a faithful friend of mine, my cruel fate  
Made me a prisoner to the Turkish galleys,  
Where for twelve years these hands tugg'd at the  
oar;

But Fortune tired at length with my afflictions,  
Some ships of Malta met the Ottoman fleet,  
Charged them, and boarded them, and gave me  
With my deliverers I served, and got [freedom.  
Such reputation with the Great-Master,  
That he gave me command over a tall  
And lusty ship, where my first happy service  
Was to redeem Alberto, rumour'd dead,  
But was, like me, surpris'd by Cortugogli.

*Alb.* I would I had died there!

*Pros.* And from him learning  
Baptista lived, and their dissolved friendship,  
I hois'd up sails for Greece, found Juliana

A votary at her beads : Having made known  
Both that you lived, and where you were, she  
borrowed

So much from her devotion, as to wish me  
To bring her to you. If the object please you,  
With joy receive her !

*Bapt.* Rage and fury, leave me !

*[Throws away his sword, and embraces her.]*

I am so full of happiness, there's no room left  
To entertain you.—Oh, my long-lost jewel,  
Light of mine eyes, my soul's strength !

*Jul.* My best lord !

Having embraced you thus, death cannot fright me.

*Bapt.* Live long to do so ! though I should fix  
here,

Pardon me, Prospero, though I inquire  
My daughter's fortune !

*Pros.* That your happiness

May be at all parts perfect, here she is !

*Ces.* Bianca daughter to a princess ?

*Pros.* True.

With my faithful Host I left her, and with him  
Till now she hath resided, ignorant  
Both of her birth and greatness.

*Bapt.* Oh, my blest one !

Joy upon joy o'erwhelms me !

*Duke.* Above wonder !

*Alb.* I do begin to melt too ; this strange story  
Works much upon me.

*Duke.* Since it hath pleased Heaven  
To grace us with this miracle, I that am  
Heaven's instrument here, determine thus : Al-  
berto,

Be not unthankful for the blessings shewn you,  
Nor you, Baptista ! Discord was yet never  
A welcome sacrifice ; therefore, rage laid by,  
Embrace as friends, and let pass'd difference  
Be as a dream forgotten !

*Bapt.* 'Tis to me.

*Alb.* And me ; I thus confirm it. *[They embrace.]*

*Duke.* And to tie it

In bonds not to be broken, with the marriage  
Of young Mentivole and fair Clarissa,  
So you consent, great lady, your Bianca  
Shall call Cesario husband.

*Jul.* 'Tis a motion

I gladly yield to.

*Ces.* One in which you make

A sad man happy. *[Offers to kneel.]*

*Bian.* Kneel not ! all forgiven.

*Duke.* With the duke your uncle I will make  
atonement,  
And will have no denial.

*Mar.* Let this day  
Be still held sacred !

*Enter Host, Prospero and Clown bound and guarded  
by Officers.*

*Host.* Now if you can conjure,  
Let the devil unbind you.

*For.* We are both undone !

*Clown.* Already we feel it.

*Host.* Justice, sir !

*Duke.* What are they ?

*Pros.* I can resolve you ; slaves freed from the  
By the viceroy of Sicilia. *[gallies]*

*Duke.* What's their offence ?

*Host.* The robbing me of all my plate and jewels ;  
I mean, the attempting of it.

*Clown.* Please your grace, I will now discover  
this varlet in earnest ; this honest pestilent rogue  
professed the art of conjuring ; but all the skill  
that ever he had in the black art, was in making a  
sea-coal fire ; only with wearing strange shapes he  
begot admiration 'mongst fools and women.

*For.* Wilt thou peach, thou varlet ?

*Duke.* Why does he goggle with his eyes, and  
stalk so ?

*Clown.* This is one of his magical raptures.

*For.* I do vilify your censure ! You demand, if  
I am guilty ; whir—says my cloak, by a trick of  
legerdemain ! Now I am not guilty ; I am guarded  
with innocence, pure silver lace, I assure you.

*Clown.* Thus have I read to you your virtues,  
which, notwithstanding, I would not have you  
proud of.

*For.* Out, thou concealment of tallow, and  
counterfeit mummy !

*Duke.* To the gallies with them both !

*Clown.* The only sea-physic for a knave, is to  
be basted in a galley, with the oil of a bull's  
pizzle.

*For.* And will not you make a sour face at the  
same sauce, sirrah ? I hope to find thee so lean in  
one fortnight, thou mayst be drawn by the ears  
through the hoop of a firkin.

*Duke.* Divide them, and away with them to the  
gallies !

*Clown.* This will take down your pride, juggler.  
*[They are taken off.]*

*Duke.* This day,  
That hath given birth to blessings beyond hope,  
Admits no criminal sentence. To the temple,  
And there with humbleness praise Heaven's  
bounties !

For blessings ne'er descend from thence, but when  
A sacrifice in thanks ascends from men. *[Exeunt.]*

# CUPID'S REVENGE.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

CUPID.  
LEONTIUS, *the old Duke of Lycia.*  
LEUCIPPUS, *Son to the Duke.*  
ISEMENUS, *Nephew to the Duke.*  
TELAMON, *a Lycian Lord.*  
DORIALUS, }  
AGENOR, } *Courtiers.*  
NISUS, }  
TIMANTUS, *a villainous Sycophant.*  
ZOLUS, *Leucippus's Dwarf.*  
NILO, *sent in Commission to pull down Cupid's Images.*  
Priest to Cupid.

*Four young Men and Maids.*  
*Four Citizens.*

HIDASPEE, *Daughter to the Duke.*  
CLEOPHILA, }  
HERO, } *her Attendants.*  
BACHA, *a Strumpet.*  
URANIA, *her Daughter.*  
BACHA'S Maid.  
URANIA'S Maid.

Servants and Attendants.

SCENE,—LYCIA.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter DORIALUS, AGENOR, and NISUS.*

*Agenor.* Trust me, my lord Dorialus, I had missed of this, if you had not called me; I thought the princess's birth-day had been to-morrow.

*Nisus.* Why, did your lordship sleep out the day?

*Dor.* I marvel what the duke meant to make such an idle vow.

*Nisus.* Idle? why?

*Dor.* Is't not idle, to swear to grant his daughter anything she shall ask on her birth-day? she may ask an impossible thing; and I pray Heaven she do not ask an unfit thing, at one time or other: 'Tis dangerous trusting a man's vow upon the discretion of his daughter.

*Age.* I wonder most at the marquis her brother, who is always vehemently forward to have her desires granted.

*Dor.* He's acquainted with 'em before.

*Age.* She's doubtless very chaste and virtuous.

*Dor.* So is Leucippus her brother.

*Nisus.* She's twenty years old; I wonder she ask not a husband.

*Dor.* That were a folly in her, having refused all the great princes in one part of the world; she'll die a maid.

*Age.* She may ask but once, may she?

*Nisus.* A hundred times this day, if she will: And, indeed, every day is such a day; for though the duke has vowed it only on this day, he keeps it every day; he can deny her nothing.

*Cornets. Enter HIDASPEE, LEUCIPPUS, LEONTIUS, TIMANTUS, and TELAMON.*

*Leon.* Come, fair Hidaspee! thou art duchess to-day.

Art thou prepared to ask? thou know'st my oath Will force performance. And, Leucippus, if She now ask aught that shall or would have performance

After my death, when by the help of Heaven This land is thine, accused be thy race, May every one forget thou art my son, And so their own obedience—

*Leuc.* Mighty sir,

I do not wish to know that fatal hour, That is to make me king: But if I do, I shall most heartily, (and like a son) Perform your grants to all, chiefly to her,— Remember that you ask what we agreed upon.

*[Apart to her.]*

*Leon.* Are you prepared? then speak.

*Hid.* Most royal sir,

I am prepared, nor shall my will exceed A virgin's bounds; what I request shall both At once bring me [and you] a full content.

*Leon.* So it ever does.

Thou only comfort of my feeble age, Make known thy good desire! for I dare swear Thou lovest me.

*Hid.* This is it I beg,

And on my knees: The people of your land, The Lycians, are, through all the nations That know their name, noted to have in use A vain and fruitless superstition; So much more hateful, that it bears the show Of true religion, and is nothing else But a self-pleasing bold lasciviousness.

*Leon.* What is it?

*Hid.* Many ages before this, When every man got to himself a trade, And was laborious in that chosen course,

Hating an idle life far worse than death,  
Some one that gave himself to wine and sloth,  
Which breed lascivious thoughts, and found him-  
Contemn'd for that by every painful man, [self  
To take his stain away, framed to himself  
A god, whom he pretended to obey,  
In being thus dishonest; for a name  
He call'd him Cupid. This created god  
(Man's nature being ever credulous  
Of any vice that takes part with his blood)  
Had ready followers enow; and since  
In every age they grew, especially  
Amongst your subjects, who do yet remain  
Adorers of that drowsy deity,  
Which drink invented; and the winged boy  
(For so they call him) has his sacrifices,  
And these loose naked statues through the land,  
In every village; nay the palace  
Is not free from 'em. This is my request,  
That these erected obscene images  
May be pluck'd down and burnt, and every man  
That offers to 'em any sacrifice  
May lose his life.

*Leon.* But be advised,  
My fairest daughter! If he be a god,  
He will express it upon thee, my child;  
Which Heaven avert!

*Leuc.* There is no such power;  
But the opinion of him fills the land  
With lustful sins: Every young man and maid,  
That feel the least desire to one another,  
Dare not suppress it, for they think it is  
Blind Cupid's motion; and he is a god!

*Leon.* This makes our youth unchaste: I am  
resolved.—

Nephew Ismenus, break the statues down  
Here in the palace, and command the city  
To do the like: Let proclamations  
Be drawn, and hastily sent through the land,  
To the same purpose!

*Ism.* Sir, I'll break down none  
Myself, but I'll deliver your command:  
Hand I'll have none in't, for I like it not.

[*Exit ISMENUS.*]

*Leon.* Go and command it.—Pleasure of my  
life,

Wouldst thou aught else? Make many thousand  
They must and shall be granted. [suits;

*Hid.* Nothing else.

*Leon.* But go and meditate on other suits:  
Some six days hence I'll give thee audience again,  
And, by a new oath, bind myself to keep it.  
Ask largely for thyself: Dearer than life,  
In whom I may be bold to call myself  
More fortunate than any in my age,  
I will deny thee nothing!

*Leuc.* 'Twas well done, sister.

[*Exeunt all but DONIALUS, AGENOR, and NISUS.*]

*Nisus.* How like you this request, my lord?

*Dor.* I know not yet, I am so full of wonder!  
We should be gods ourselves shortly.  
An we pull 'em out of Heaven o' this fashion.

*Age.* We shall have wenches now when we can  
An we transgress thus. [catch 'em,

*Nisus.* An we abuse the gods once, 'tis a justice  
We should be held at hard meat. For my part,  
I'll e'en make ready for mine own affection;  
I know the god incensed must send a hardness  
Through all good women's hearts, and then we  
have brought

Our eggs and muscadine to a fair market:  
'Would I had given an hundred pound for a toler-  
ration,  
That I might but use my conscience in mine own  
house!

*Dor.* The duke, he's old and past it; he would  
never

Have brought such a plague upon the land else;  
'Tis worse than sword and famine! Yet, to say  
truth,

We have deserved it, we have lived so wickedly,  
Every man at his livery; and 'would that  
Would have sufficed us! we murmured at  
This blessing, that 'twas nothing; and cried out  
To the god for endless pleasures: He heard us, and  
Supplied us, and our women were new still,  
As we needed 'em; yet we, like beasts,  
Still cried, "Poor men can number their whores,  
give us

Abundance!" we had it, and this curse withal.

*Age.* By'r lady, we are like to have a long Lent  
on't;

Flesh shall be flesh now! Gentlemen, I had rather  
Have anger'd all the gods than that blind gunner.  
I remember, once the people did but slight him  
In a sacrifice, and what follow'd: Women kept  
Their houses, grew good huswives, honest for-  
sooth!

Was not that fine? wore their own faces, nay,  
They [let us] wear gay clothes without surveying;  
And, which was most lamentable, they loved their  
husbands.

*Nisus.* I do remember it to my grief,  
Young maids were as cold as cucumbers,  
And much of that complexion; bawds were abo-  
And (to which misery it must come again) [lish'd:  
There were no cuckolds. Well, we had need to pray  
To keep these devils from us; the times grow  
There he goes! Lord! [mischievous!—

*Enter one with an Image, and passes over the Stage.*

This is a sacrilege I have not heard of!

'Would I were gelt, that I might not feel what  
follows.

*Age.* And I too. You shall see, within these  
few years,

A fine confusion in the country; mark it!  
Nay, an we grow for to depose the powers,  
And set up Chastity again—Well, I have done!  
A fine new goddess certainly, whose blessings  
Are hunger and hard beds!

*Nisus.* This comes of fullness,  
A sin too frequent with us; I believe now  
We shall find shorter commons.

*Dor.* 'Would I were married! somewhat has  
some favour;

The race of gentry will quite run out, now  
'Tis only left to husbands; if younger sisters  
Take not the greater charity, 'tis lawful.

*Age.* Well, let come what will come, I am but  
And as the plague falls, I will shape myself: [one,  
If women will be honest, I'll be sound.

If the god be not too unmerciful,  
I'll take a little still, where I can get it,  
And thank him, and say nothing.

*Nisus.* This ill wind yet may blow the city good,  
And let them (if they can) get their own children,  
They have hung long enough in doubt: But, how-  
soever,

The old way was the surer; then they had 'em.

*Dor.* Farewell, my lords ! I'll e'en take up what I can before the day ; I fear the year  
Will fall out ill. [rent

*Age.* We'll with you, sir. And, Love, so favour us,  
As we are still thy servants ! Come, my lords ;  
Let's to the duke, and tell him to what folly  
His doting now has brought him. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*A Temple of Cupid.*

Enter Priest of Cupid, with four young Men and Maids.

*Priest.* Come, my children, let your feet  
In an even measure meet !  
And your cheerful voices rise,  
For to present this sacrifice  
To great Cupid ! in whose name,  
I his priest begin the same.  
Young men, take your loves and kiss ;  
Thus our Cupid honour'd is.  
Kiss again, and in your kissing  
Let no promises be missing !  
Nor let any maiden here  
Dare to turn away her ear,  
Unto the whisper of his love ;  
But give bracelet, ring, or glove,  
As a token to her sweetening,  
Of an after secret meeting !  
Now, boy, sing, to stick our hearts  
Fuller of great Cupid's darts !

SONG.

Lovers, rejoice ! your pains shall be rewarded,  
The god of love himself grieves at your crying :  
No more shall frozen honour be regarded,  
Nor the coy faces of a maid's denying.  
No more shall virgins sigh, and say " We dare not,  
For men are false, and what they do they care not."  
All shall be well again ; then do not grieve ;  
Men shall be true, and women shall believe.

Lovers, rejoice ! what you shall say henceforth,  
When you have caught your sweethearts in your arms,  
It shall be accounted oracle, and worth :  
No more faint-hearted girls shall dream of harms,  
And cry " They are too young : " The god hath said,  
Fifteen shall make a mother of a maid :  
Then, wise men, pull your roses yet unblown !  
Love hates the too-ripe fruit that falls alone.

[*A measure.*

Enter *Nilo*, and other Gentlemen.

*Nilo.* No more of this ! here break your rites for ever ;

The duke commands it so. Priest, do not stare !  
I must deface your temple, though unwilling,  
And your god Cupid here must make a scarecrow,  
For anything I know, or, at the best,  
Adorn a chimney-piece.

*Priest.* Oh, sacrilege unheard-of !

*Nilo.* This will not help it.—

Take down their images, and away with 'em !—  
Priest, change your coat, you had best ; all service  
now

Is given to men ; prayers above their hearing  
Will prove but babblings ; learn to lie and thrive,  
'Twill prove your best profession : For the gods,  
He that lives by 'em now must be a beggar.  
There's better holiness on earth, they say ;  
Pray God it ask not greater sacrifice ! Go home ;  
And if your god be not deaf as well as blind,  
He will make some smoke for it.

*Gent.* Sir—

*Nilo.* Gentlemen,  
There is no talking ; this must be done and  
speedily :

I have commission that I must not break.

*Gent.* We are gone to wonder what shall follow.

*Nilo.* On

To the next temple !

[*Exeunt.*

*Cornets.* *CUPID descends.*

*Cupid.* Am I then scorn'd ? is my all-doing will  
And power, that knows no limit, nor admits none,  
Now look'd into by less than gods, and weaken'd ?  
Am I, whose bow struck terror through the earth  
No less than thunder, and in this exceeding  
Even gods themselves, whose knees before my  
altars,

\* \* \* \* \*  
Now shook off ? and condemn'd by such, whose  
Are but my recreation ! Anger, rise ! [lives  
My sufferance and myself are made the subject  
Of sins against us. Go thou out, displeasure !  
Displeasure of a great god, fly thyself  
Through all this kingdom ; sow whatever evils  
Proud flesh is taking of, amongst these rebels ;  
And on the first hearts that despise my greatness  
Lay a strange misery, that all may know  
Cupid's Revenge is mighty ! With this arrow,  
Hotter than plagues of mine own anger, will I  
Now nobly right myself ; nor shall the prayers,  
Nor sweet smokes on my altars, hold my hand,  
Till I have left this a most wretched land. [*Ascends.*

SCENE III.—*A Room in the Palace.*

Enter *HIDASPE* and *CLEOPHILA*.

*Hid.* Cleophila, what was he that went hence ?

*Cleo.* What means your grace now ?

*Hid.* I mean that handsome man,  
That something more than man, I met at door.

*Cleo.* Here was no handsome man.

*Hid.* Come, he's some one

You would preserve in private ; but you want  
Cunning to do it, and my eyes are sharper  
Than yours, and can with one neglecting glance  
See all the graces of a man. Who was it ?

*Cleo.* That went hence now !

*Hid.* That went hence now ! ay, he !

*Cleo.* 'Faith, here was no such one as your grace  
thinks ;

*Zoilus*, your brother's dwarf, went out but now.

*Hid.* I think 'twas he : How bravely he pass'd !  
Is he not grown a goodly gentleman ? [by !

*Cleo.* A goodly gentleman, madam ? He is  
The most deformed fellow in the land.

*Hid.* Oh, blasphemy ! he may perhaps to thee  
Appear deformed, for he is indeed  
Unlike a man : His shape and colours are  
Beyond the art of painting ; he is like  
Nothing that we have seen, yet doth resemble  
Apollo, as I oft have fancied him,  
When rising from his bed he stirs himself,  
And shakes day from his hair.

*Cleo.* He resembles Apollo's recorder.

*Hid.* Cleophila, go send a page for him,  
And thou shalt see thy error, and repent.

[*Exit CLEOPHILA.*

Alas, what do I feel ? My blood rebels,  
And I am one of those I used to scorn :

My maiden-thoughts are fled ; against myself  
I harbour traitors ; my virginity,  
That from my childhood kept me company,  
Is heavier than I can endure to bear.  
Forgive me, Cupid ! for thou art a god,  
And I a wretched creature : I have sinn'd ;  
But be thou merciful, and grant that yet  
I may enjoy what thou wilt have me love !

*Enter CLEOPHILA and ZOILIUS.*

*Cleo.* Zoilius is here, madam.

*Hid.* He's there indeed.

Now be thine own judge ? see, thou worse than  
Is he deformed ! Look upon those eyes, [mad,  
That let all pleasure out into the world,  
Unhappy that they cannot see themselves !  
Look on his hair, that like so many beams,  
Streaking the east, shoot light o'er half the world !  
Look on him altogether, who is made

As if two natures had contention  
About their skill, and one had brought forth him !

*Zoilius.* Ha, ha, ha !

Madam, though Nature hath not given me  
So much as others in my outward show,  
I bear a heart as loyal unto you  
In this unsightly body (which you please  
To make your mirth) as many others do  
That are far more befriended in their births.  
Yet I could wish myself much more deform'd  
Than yet I am, so I might make your grace  
More merry than you are—Ha, ha, ha !

*Hid.* Bestrow me then

If I be merry ! but I am content  
Whilst thou art with me ; thou that art my saint ;  
By hope of whose mild favour I do live  
To tell thee so : I pray thee, scorn me not !  
Alas, what can it add unto thy worth  
To triumph over me, that am a maid  
Without deceit ! whose heart doth guide her tongue ?  
Drown'd in my passions ? Yet I will take leave  
To call it reason, that I dote on thee.

*Cleo.* The princess is beside her grace, I think,  
To talk thus with a fellow that will hardly  
Serve i' the dark when one is drunk.

*Hid.* What answer wilt thou give me ?

*Zoilius.* If it please your grace to jest on, I can  
abide it.

*Hid.* If it be jest, not to esteem my life  
Compared with thee ; if it be jest in me,  
To hang a thousand kisses in an hour  
Upon those lips, and take 'em off again ;  
If it be jest for me to marry thee,  
And take obedience on me whilst I live ;  
Then all I say is jest :  
For every part of this, I swear by those  
That see my thoughts, I am resolved to do !  
And I beseech thee, by thine own white hand,  
(Which, pardon me that I am bold to kiss  
With so unworthy lips) that thou wilt swear  
To marry me, as I do here to thee,  
Before the face of Heaven !

*Zoilius.* Marry you ? Ha, ha, ha !

*Hid.* Kill me, or grant ! Wilt thou not speak  
at all ?

*Zoilius.* Why, I will do your will for ever.

*Hid.* I ask no more : But let me kiss that  
That is so merciful ! that is my will ; [mouth  
Next, go with me before the king in haste,  
That is my will ; where I will make our peers  
Know, that thou art their better.

*Zoilius.* Ha, ha, ha !

That is fine ! ha, ha, ha !

*Cleo.* Madam, what means your grace ?  
Consider, for the love of Heaven, to what  
You run madly ! will you take this viper  
Into your bed !

*Hid.* Away ! hold off thy hands !  
Strike her, sweet Zoilius : for it is my will,  
Which thou hast sworn to do.

*Zoilius.* Away, for shame !  
Know you no manners ?—Ha, ha, ha !

[*Exit with HIDASPES.*]

*Cleo.* Thou know'st none, I fear.—  
This is just Cupid's anger : Venus look  
Down mildly on us ! and command thy son  
To spare this lady once, and let me be  
In love with all ; and none in love with me !

[*Exit*]

SCENE IV.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter ISMENUS and TIMANTUS.*

*Tim.* Is your lordship for the wars this summer ?

*Ism.* Timantus,

Wilt thou go with me ?

*Tim.* If I had a company,

My lord.

*Ism.* Of fiddlers ! Thou a company ?

No, no ; keep thy company at home, and cause

cuckolds ;

The wars will hurt thy face : There are no semsters  
Shoemakers, nor tailors, nor almond-milk i' the

morning,

Nor poached eggs to keep your worship soluble,  
No man to warm your shirt, and blow your roses

Nor none to reverence your round lace breeches.  
If thou wilt needs go, and go thus, get a case

For thy captainship ! a shower will spoil thee else  
Thus much for thee.

*Tim.* Your lordship's wondrous witty ;

Very pleasant, believe't.

*Enter TELAMON, DORIALUS, AGESOR, NISUS, and*

*LEONTIUS.*

*Leon.* No news yet of my son ?

*Tel.* Sir, there be divers out in search ; no doubt  
They'll bring the truth where he is, or the occasion  
That led him hence.

*Tim.* They must have good eyes then. [*Agesor*]

*Leon.* The gods go with them !—Who are those  
that wait there ?

*Tel.* The lord Ismenus, your general, for his  
dispatch.

*Leon.* Oh, nephew, we have no use to employ  
your virtue

In our war ; now the province is well settled.

Hear you aught of the marquis ?

*Ism.* No, sir.

*Leon.* 'Tis strange he should be gone thus ;  
These five days he was not seen.

*Tim.* I'll hold my life,  
I could bout him in an hour. [*Agesor*]

*Leon.* Where's my daughter ?

*Dor.* About the purging of the temples, sir.

*Leon.* She's chaste and virtuous. Fetch her  
And tell her I am pleased to grant her now [mouth

Her last request, without repenting me,  
Be it what it will.— [*Exit Nisus*]

She's wise, Dorialus,

And will not press me further than a father.

*Dor.* I pray the best may follow ! yet, if your grace

Had taken the opinions of your people,  
At least of such whose wisdoms ever wake  
About your safety, I may say it, sir,  
Under your noble pardon, that this change  
Either had been more honour to the gods,  
Or I think not at all. Sir, the princess.

*Enter HIDASPES, NISUS, and ZOLIUS.*

*Leon.* Oh, my daughter,  
My health ! and did I say my soul, I lied not,  
Thou art so near me ! Speak, and have whatever  
Thy wise will leads thee to ! Had I a Heaven,  
It were too poor a place for such a goodness !

*Dor.* What's here ?

*Age.* An ape's skin stuff'd I think,  
It is so plump.

*Hid.* Sir, you have past your word ;  
Still be a prince, and hold you to it. Wonder  
Not I press you ; my life lies in your word ;  
If you break that, you have broke my heart ! I  
must

Ask that's my shame, and your will must not deny  
me ;

Now, for Heaven, be not forsworn !

*Leon.* By the gods,  
I will not ! I cannot, were there no other  
Power than my love called to a witness of it.

*Dor.* They have much reason to trust ; you  
have forsworn

One of 'em out o' th' country already.

*Hid.* Then this is my request : This gentleman—  
Be not ashamed, sir : you are worth a kingdom.

*Leon.* In what ?

*Hid.* In the way of marriage.

*Leon.* How ?

*Hid.* In the way of marriage ; it must be so !  
Your oath is tied to Heaven, as my love  
To him.

*Leon.* I know thou dost but try my age ;  
Come, ask again !

*Hid.* If I should ask all my life-time,  
This is all still. Sir, I am serious ; I must have  
This worthy man, without enquiring why ;  
And suddenly, and freely : Do not look  
For reason or obedience in my words ;  
My love admits no wisdom ; only haste  
And hope hangs on my fury. Speak, sir, speak !  
But not as a father ; I am deaf and dull to counsel ;  
Inflamed blood hears nothing but my will.  
For God's sake, speak !

*Dor.* Here's a brave alteration !

*Nisus.* This comes of chastity.

*Hid.* Will you not speak, sir ?

*Age.* The god begins his vengeance : What a  
sweet youth

He has sent us here, with a pudding in's belly !

*Leon.* Oh, let me never speak,  
Or with my words let me speak out my life !  
Thou power abused, great Love, whose vengeance  
now

We feel and fear, have mercy on this land !

*Nisus.* How does your grace ?

*Leon.* Sick ; very sick, I hope.

*Dor.* Gods comfort you !

*Hid.* Will not you speak ? is this your royal  
word ?

Do not pull perjury upon your soul !

Sir, you are old, and near your punishment ;  
Remember !

*Leon.* Away, base woman !

*Hid.* Then be no more my father, but a plague  
I am bound to pray against ! be any sin  
May force me to despair, and hang myself !  
Be thy name never more remember'd, king,  
But in example of a broken faith,  
And curs'd even to forgetfulness ! may thy land  
Bring forth such monsters as thy daughter is !—  
I am weary of my rage. I pray forgive me,  
And let me have him ! will you, noble sir ?

*Leon.* Mercy, mercy, Heaven !

Thou heir of all dishonour, sham'st thou not  
To draw this little moisture left for life,  
Thus rudely from me ?—Carry that slave to death !

*Zolius.* For Heaven's sake, sir ! it is no fault of  
mine

That she will love me.

*Leon.* To death with him, I say !

*[Exit ZOLIUS, guarded.]*

*Hid.* Then make haste, tyrant, or I'll be before  
him !

This is the way to Hell.

*Leon.* Hold fast, I charge you !

Away with him !

*Hid.* Alas, old man, death hath more doors than  
one,

And I will meet him !

*[Exit.]*

*Leon.* Dorialus, pray

See her in her chamber, and lay a guard about her.  
The greatest curse the gods lay on our frailties  
Is will and disobedience in our issues.

Which we beget, as well as them, to plague us,  
With our fond loves. Beasts, you are only blest,  
That have that happy dulness to forget  
What you have made ! your young ones grieve not  
you ;

They wander where they list, and have their ways  
Without dishonour to you ; and their ends  
Fall on 'em without sorrow of their parents,  
Or after ill remembrance. Oh, this woman !  
'Would I had made myself a sepulchre,  
When I made her !—Nephew, where is the prince ?  
Pray God he have not more part of her baseness  
Than of her blood about him ! Gentlemen,  
Where is he ?

*Ism.* I know not, sir. He has his ways by  
himself,

Is too wise for my company.

*Leon.* I do not like

This hiding of himself, from such society

As [fits] his person, some of you needs must  
know.

*Ism.* I'm sure not I, nor have known twice these  
ten days ;

Which, if I were as proud as some of 'em,  
I should take scurvily : But he's a young man,  
Let him have his swinge ! 'twill make him—

*[TIMANTUS whispers to the DUKE.]*

There's some good matter now in hand :  
How the slave jeers and grins ! the duke is pleased ;  
There's a new pair of scarlet hose now, and as  
much

Money to spare, as will fetch the old from pawn,  
A hat and a cloak to go out to-morrow !  
Garters and stockings come by nature.

*Leon.* Be sure of this !

*Tim.* I durst not speak else, sir.

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The Temple.*

*Cornets. Cupid descends.*

*Cupid.* Leucippus, thou art shot through with a shaft

That will not rankle long, yet sharp enough  
To sow a world of helpless misery  
In this unhappy kingdom! Dost thou think,  
Because thou art a prince, to make a part  
Against my power? But it is all the fault  
Of thy old father, who believes his age  
Is cold enough to quench my burning darts;  
But he shall know ere long, that my dart loose  
Can thaw ice, and inflame the withered heart  
Of Nestor: Thou thyself art lightly struck;  
But his mad love shall publish, that the rage  
Of Cupid has the power to conquer age. [*Ascends.*]

SCENE II.—*The House of BACHA.*

*Enter LEUCIPPUS and BACHA.*

*Leuc.* Why, what's the matter?

*Bacha.* Have you got the spoil  
You thirsted for? Oh, tyranny of men!

*Leuc.* I pray thee leave!

*Bacha.* Your envy is, Heaven knows,  
Beyond the reach of all our feeble sex:  
What pain, alas, could it have been to you,  
If I had kept mine honour? You might still  
Have been a prince, and still this country's heir.  
That innocent guard which I till now had kept,  
For my defence, my virtue, did it seem  
So dangerous in a state, that [you] yourself  
Come to suppress it?

*Leuc.* Dry thine eyes again!  
I'll kiss thy tears away: This is but folly;  
'Tis past all help.

*Bacha.* Now you have won the treasure,  
'Tis my request that you would leave me thus,  
And never see these empty walls again:  
I know you will do so; and well you may,  
For there is nothing in them that is worth  
A glance: I loath myself, and am become  
Another woman! one, methinks, with whom  
I want acquaintance.

*Leuc.* If I do offend thee,  
I can be gone: And though I love thy sight,  
So highly do I prize thine own content,  
That I will leave thee.

*Bacha.* Nay, you may stay now;  
You should have gone before: I know not now  
Why I should fear you: All I should have kept  
Is stol'n; nor is it in the power of man  
To rob me further. If you can invent,  
Spare not! No naked man fears robbing less  
Than I do; now you may for ever stay.

*Leuc.* Why, I could do thee further wrong.

*Bacha.* You have a deeper reach in evil than I;  
'Tis past my thoughts.

*Leuc.* And past my will to act;  
But trust me I could do it.

*Bacha.* Good sir, do;  
That I may know there is a wrong beyond  
What you have done me.

*Leuc.* I could tell all the world  
What thou hast done.

*Bacha.* Yes, you may tell the world;  
And do you think I am so vain to hope  
You will not? You can tell the world but this,  
That I'm a widow, full of tears in show,  
(My husband dead, and one that loved me so,  
Hardly a week) forgot my modesty,  
And, caught with youth and greatness, gave  
myself

To live in sin with you: This you may tell;  
And this I do deserve!

*Leuc.* Why, dost thou think me  
So base to tell? These limbs of mine shall part  
From one another on a rack,  
Ere I disclose. But thou dost utter words  
That much afflict me; you did seem as ready,  
Sweet Bacha, as myself.

*Bacha.* You are right a man;  
When they have witch'd us into misery,  
Poor innocent souls, they lay the fault on us.  
But be it so! for prince Leucippus' sake,  
I will bear anything.

*Leuc.* Come, weep no more!  
I wrought thee to it; it was my fault.  
Nay, see if thou wilt leave! Here, take this pearl!  
Kiss me, sweet Bacha, and receive this purse.

*Bacha.* What should I do with these? they  
My mind. [will not deal]

*Leuc.* Why, keep 'em to remember me.  
I must be gone; I have been absent long:  
I know the duke my father is in rage,  
But I will see thee suddenly again.  
Farewell, my Bacha!

*Bacha.* Gods keep you!—Do you hear, sir?  
Pray give me a point to wear.

*Leuc.* Alas, good Bacha,  
Take one, I pray thee, where thou wilt.

*Bacha.* Coming  
From you, this point is of as high esteem  
With me, as all pearl and gold. Nothing but good  
Be ever with or near you!

*Leuc.* Fare thee well,  
Mine own good Bacha! I will make all haste. [Exit]

*Bacha.* Just as you are a dozen I esteem you;  
No more: Does he think I would prostitute  
Myself for love? It was the love of these pearls  
And gold that won me. I confess I lust  
More after him than any other,  
And would at any rate, if I had store,  
Purchase his fellowship; but being poor,  
I'll both enjoy his body and his purse,  
And, he a prince, ne'er think myself the worse.

*Enter LEONTIUS, LEUCIPPUS, ISMERUS, and TIMOTHY.*

*Leos.* Nay, you must back and shew us what  
That witches you out of your honour thus. [Exit]

*Bacha.* Who's that?

*Tim.* Look there, sir!

*Leon.* Lady, never fly;  
You are betray'd.

*Bacha.* Leave me, my tears, a while,  
And to my just rage give a little place!—  
What saucy man are you, that without leave  
Enter upon a widow's mournful house?  
You hinder a dead man from many tears,  
Who did deserve more than the world can show  
Though they should weep themselves to imagine

If not for love of me, yet of yourself,  
 Away, for you can bring no comfort to me !  
 But you may carry hence, you know not what :  
 Nay, sorrow is infectious.

*Leon.* Thou thyself

Art grown infectious ! Wouldst thou know my name ?

I am the duke, father to this young man  
 Whom thou corrupt'st.

*Bacha.* [*Aside.*] Has he then told him all ?

*Leuc.* You do her wrong, sir !

*Bacha.* Oh, he has not told.—

Sir, I beseech you pardon my wild tongue,  
 Directed by a weak distempered head,  
 Madded with grief ! Alas, I did not know  
 You were my sovereign ; but now you may  
 Command my poor unworthy life, which will  
 Be none, I hope, ere long.

*Leon.* All thy dissembling

Will never hide thy shame : And were't not more  
 Respecting womanhood in general,  
 Than anything in thee, thou should'st be made  
 Such an example, that posterity,  
 When they would speak most bitterly, should say,  
 "Thou art as impudent as Bacha was."

*Bacha.* Sir, though you be my king, whom I  
 will serve

In all just causes, yet when wrongfully  
 You seek to take mine honour, I will rise  
 Thus, and defy you ; for it is a jewel  
 Dearer than you can give, which whilst I keep,  
 (Though in this lowly house) I shall esteem  
 Myself above the princes of the earth  
 That are without it. If the prince your son,  
 Whom you accuse me with, know how to speak  
 Dishonour of me, if he do not do it,  
 The plagues of hell light on him, may he never  
 Govern this kingdom ! Here I challenge him  
 Before the face of Heaven, my liege, and these,  
 To speak the worst he can ! If he will lie,  
 To lose a woman's fame, I'll say he is  
 Like you (I think I cannot call him worse).  
 He's dead, that with his life would have defended  
 My reputation, and I forced to play  
 (That which I am) the foolish woman,  
 And use my liberal tongue.

*Leuc.* Is't possible ?

[*Aside.*]

We men are children in our carriages,  
 Compared with women. Wake thyself, for shame,  
 And leave not her (whose honour thou shouldst  
 keep

Safe as thine own) alone to free herself !  
 But I am press'd, I know not how, with guilt,  
 And feel my conscience (never used to lie)  
 Loth to allow my tongue to add a lie  
 To that too much I did : But it is lawful  
 To defend her, that only for my love  
 Loved evil.

*Leon.* Tell me, why did you, Leucippus,  
 Stay here so long ?

*Leuc.* If I can urge aught from me  
 But a truth, Hell take me !

[*Aside.*]

*Leon.* What's the matter ?  
 Why speak you not ?

*Tim.* Alas, good sir, forbear  
 To urge the prince ; you see his shamefacedness.

*Bacha.* What does he say, sir ?—If thou be a  
 prince,  
 Shew it, and tell the truth !

*Im.* If you have lain with her, tell your father ;

No doubt but he has done as ill before now :  
 The gentlewoman will be proud on't.

*Bacha.* For God's sake, speak !

*Leuc.* Have you done prating yet ?

*Im.* Who prates ?

*Leuc.* Thou know'st I do not speak to thee,  
 Ismenus :—

But what said you,

Timantus, concerning my shamefacedness ?

*Tim.* Nothing, I hope, that might displease your  
 highness.

*Leuc.* If any of thy great-great-grandmothers,  
 This thousand years, had been as chaste as she,  
 It would have made thee honest : I stay'd  
 To hear what you would say. She is, by Heaven,  
 Of the most strict and blameless chastity  
 That ever woman was :—Good gods, forgive me !—  
 Had Tarquin met with her, she had been kill'd  
 With a slave by her ere she had agreed.  
 I lie with her ! 'would I might perish then !  
 Our mothers, whom we all must reverence,  
 Could ne'er exceed her for her chastity,  
 Upon my soul ! for, by this light, she is  
 A most obstinate modest creature !

*Leon.* What did you with her then so long,  
 Leucippus ?

*Leuc.* I'll tell you, sir : You see she's beautiful.

*Leon.* I see it well.

*Leuc.* Moved by her face, I came  
 With lustful thoughts (which was a fault in me ;  
 But, telling truth, something more pardonable,  
 And for the world I will not lie to you :)  
 Proud of myself, I thought a prince's name  
 Had power to blow 'em down flat o' their backs ;  
 But here I found a rock not to be shook :  
 For, as I hope for good, sir, all the battery  
 That I could lay to her, or of my person,  
 My greatness, or gold, could nothing move her.

*Leon.* 'Tis very strange, being so young and fair.

*Leuc.* She's almost thirty, sir.

*Leon.* How do you know

Her age so just ?

*Leuc.* She told it me herself,  
 Once when she went about to show by reason  
 I should leave wooing her.

*Leon.* She stains the ripest virgins of her age.

*Leuc.* If I had sinn'd with her, I would be loth  
 To publish her disgrace ; but, by my life,  
 I would have told it you, because I think  
 You would have pardoned me the rather.  
 And I will tell you farther : By this light, sir,  
 (But that I never will bestow myself  
 But to your liking) if she now would have me,  
 I now would marry her.

*Leon.* How's that, Leucippus ?

*Leuc.* Sir, will you pardon me one fault, which  
 I have not done, but had a will to do, [yet  
 And I will tell it ?

*Leon.* Be it what it will,

I pardon thee.

*Leuc.* I offer'd marriage to her.

*Leon.* Did she refuse it ?

*Leuc.* With that earnestness,  
 And almost scorn to think of any other  
 After her lost mate, that she made me think  
 Myself unworthy of her.

*Leon.* You have stay'd  
 Too long, Leucippus.

*Leuc.* Yes, sir.—[*Aside.*] Forgive me, Heaven,  
 What multitude of oaths have I bestow'd

On lies ! and yet they were officious lies,  
There was no malice in 'em.

*Leon.* She's the fairest creature [Apart.  
That ever I beheld ; and then so chaste,  
'Tis wonderful : The more I look on her  
The more I am amazed. I have long  
Thought of a wife, and one I would have had,  
But that I was afraid to meet a woman  
That might abuse my age ; but here she is  
Whom I may trust to : Of a chastity  
Impregnable, and approved so by my son ;  
The meanness of her birth will still preserve her  
In due obedience ; and her beauty is  
Of force enough to pull me back to youth.  
My son once sent away, whose rivalship  
I have just cause to fear, if power, or gold,  
Or wit, can win her to me, she is mine.—  
Nephew Ismenus, I have new intelligence,  
Your province is unquiet still.

*Ism.* I am glad on't.

*Leon.* And so dangerously, that I must send the  
In person with you. [prince

*Ism.* I am glad of that too, sir :  
Will you dispatch us ? we shall wither here  
For ever.

*Leon.* You shall be dispatch'd within  
This hour : Leucippus, never wonder, nor ask ;  
It must be thus.—Lady, I ask your pardon,  
Whose virtue I have slubber'd with my tongue ;  
And you shall ever be  
Chaste in my memory hereafter ; but  
We old men often dote. To make amends  
For my great fault, receive that ring ! I'm sorry for  
Your grief ; may it soon leave you !—Come, my  
lords ;

Let us be gone. [Exeunt.

*Bacha.* Heaven bless your grace !—One that  
But so much modesty left as to blush, [had  
Or shrink a little at his first encounter,  
Had been undone ! where I come off with honour,  
And gain too : They that never would be track'd  
In any course, by the most subtle sense,  
Must bear it through with frontless impudence.

[Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Room in the Palace.

Enter DORIALUS, AGENOR, and NISUS.

*Dor.* Gentlemen, this is a strange piece of jus-  
To put the wretched dwarf to death because [tice,  
She doated on him : Is she not a woman,  
And subject to those mad figaries her whole sex  
Is infected with ? Had she loved you, or you,  
Or I, or all on's (as indeed the more  
The merrier still with them) must we therefore  
Have our heads pared with a hatchet ? So she may  
All the nobility out o' th' dukedom in [love  
A month, and let the rascals in.

*Nisus.* You will not, or you do not, see the  
That makes this just to the world ? [need

*Dor.* I cannot tell ; I would be loth to feel it :  
But, the best is, she loves not proper men ;  
We three were in wise cases else. But make me  
This need. [know

*Nisus.* Why, yes : He being ta'en away,  
This base incontinence dies presently,  
And she must see her shame and sorrow for it.

*Dor.* Pray God she do ! But was the sprat be-  
headed ?

Or did they swing him about like a chicken, and  
So break his neck ?

*Agén.* Yes, he was beheaded,  
And a solemn justice made of it.

*Dor.* That might have been deducted.

*Agé.* Why, how would you have had him die ?

*Dor.* 'Faith, I would have had him roasted like  
a warden,

In a brown paper, and no more talk on't ; or  
A feather stuck in's head like a quail ; or hang'd  
him

In a dog-collar : What, should he be beheaded ?  
We shall have it grow so base shortly, gentlemen  
Will be out of love with it.

*Nisus.* I wonder from whence this [race] of the  
dwarfs first sprung ?

*Dor.* From an old lecherous pair of breeches,  
that lay upon a wench to keep her warm ; for cer-  
tainly they are no man's work ; and I am sure a  
monkey would get one of the guard to this fellow !  
He was no bigger than a small portmanteau, and  
much about that making, if't had legs.

*Agé.* But, gentlemen, what say you to the  
prince ?

*Nisus.* Ay, concerning his being sent I know  
not whither.

*Dor.* Why, then, he will come home I know  
not when.

You shall pardon me ; I will talk no more  
Of this subject, but say, Gods be with him,  
Where'er he is, and send him well home again !  
For why he is gone, or when he will return,  
Let them know that directed him ! Only this,  
There's mad moriscoes in the state ;  
But what they are, I'll tell you when I know.  
Come, let's go, hear all, and say nothing !

*Agé.* Content. [Exeunt.

### SCENE IV.—Another in the same.

Enter TIMANTUS and TELAMON.

*Tel.* Timantus, is the duke ready yet ?

*Tim.* Almost.

*Tel.* What ails him ?

*Tim.* 'Faith, I know not ; I think he has dream'd  
he's but eighteen ; has been worse since he sent  
you forth for the frizzling iron.

*Tel.* That cannot be ; he lay in gloves all night,  
and this morning I brought him a new perriwig,  
with a lock at it, and knocked up a swing in's  
chamber.

*Tim.* Oh, but since, his tailor came, and they  
have fallen out about the fashion on's clothes ; and  
yonder's a fellow come, has bored a hole in's ear ;  
and he has hespake a vaulting-horse. You shall  
see him come forth presently : He looks like Win-  
ter, stuck here and there with fresh flowers.

*Tel.* Will he not tilt, think you ?

*Tim.* I think he will.

*Tel.* What does he mean to do ?

*Tim.* I know not ; but, by this light, I think he  
is in love ! He would ha' been shaved but for me.

*Tel.* In love ? with whom ?

*Tim.* I could guess, but you shall pardon me ;  
he will take me along with him some whither.

*Tel.* I overheard him ask your opinion of some-  
body's beauty.

*Tim.* Yes ; there it goes, that makes him so  
youthful. And he has laid by his crutch, and balld  
now with a leading staff.

*Enter LEBORIVUS, with a Staff and a Looking-glass.*

*Leon.* Timantus!

*Tim.* Sir.

*Leon.* This feather is not large enough.

*Tim.* Yes, 'faith, 'tis such an one as the rest of the young gallants wear.

*Leon.* Telamon, does it do well?

*Tel.* Sir, it becomes you, or you become it, the rarest!

*Leon.* Away! dost think so?

*Tel.* Think, sir? I know it.—Sir, the princess is past all hope of life since the dwarf was put to death.

*Leon.* Let her be so; I have other matters in hand. But this same tailor angers me; he has made my doublet so wide! And see, the knave has put no points at my arm!

*Tim.* Those will be put-to quickly, sir, upon any occasion.

*Leon.* Telamon,

Have you bid the dancer come a-mornings?

*Tel.* Yes, sir.

*Leon.* Timantus, let me see the glass again; Look you how careless you are grown! is this tooth well put in?

*Tim.* Which, sir?

*Leon.* This, sir.

*Tim.* It shall be.

*Tel.* Methinks that tooth should put him in mind on's years! and Timantus stands, as if (seeing the duke in such a youthful habit) he were looking in his mouth how old he were.

*Leon.* So, so!

*Tel.* Will you have your gown, sir?

*Leon.* My gown?

Why, am I sick? Bring me my sword! let a couple Of the great horses be brought out for us.

[*Exit TELAMON.*]

*Tim.* He'll kill himself.—Why, will you ride,

*Leon.* Ride? [sir?]

Dost thou think I cannot ride?

*Tim.* Oh, yes, sir, I know it! But, as I conceive your journey, you would have it private; and then you were better take a coach.

*Leon.* These coaches make me sick: Yet, 'tis no matter;

Let it be so.

[*Enter TELAMON, with a sword.*]

*Tel.* Sir, here's your sword.

*Leon.* Oh, well said; let me see it! I could, methinks— [Endeavours to draw it.]

Why, Telamon, bring me another! what, think'st thou

I'll wear a sword in vain?

*Tel.* He has not strength enough to draw it. A yoke of fleas tied to a hair would have drawn it.—'Tis out, sir, now; the scabbard is broke.

*Leon.* Oh, put it up again, and on with it! Methinks, I am not dress'd till I feel my sword on. Telamon, if any of my council ask for me, Say I am gone to take the air. [Exit.]

*Tim.* He has not

Been dress'd this twenty years thus. If this vein Hold but a week, he'll learn to play o' th' base-viol, And sing to't: He's poetical already;

For I have spied a sonnet of his making

Lie by his bed's side: I'll be so unmannerly To read it. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE V.—*The Apartment of the Princess.*

*HYDASPES discovered in a bed, CLEOPHILA and HERO attending.*

*Hid.* He's dead, he's dead, and I am following!

*Cleo.* Ask Cupid mercy, madam!

*Hid.* Oh, my heart!

*Cleo.* Help!

*Hero.* Stir her!

*Hid.* Oh, oh!

*Cleo.* She's going; wretched women that we are!

Look to her, and I'll pray the while. [*She kneels.*]

*Hero.* Why, madam—

*Cleo.* Cupid, pardon what is past,

And forgive our sins at last;

Then we will be coy no more,

But thy deity adore:

Troths at fifteen we will plight,

And will tread a dance at night,

In the fields, or by the fire,

With the youths that have desire—

How does she yet?

*Hero.* Oh, ill!

*Cleo.* Given ear-rings we will wear,

Bracelets of our lovers' hair,

Which they on our arms shall twist,

With their names carved on our wrist;

All the money that we owe

We in tokens will bestow;

And learn to write, that, when 'tis sent,

Only our loves know what is meant.

Oh, then pardon what is past,

And forgive our sins at last!

What, mends she?

*Hero.* Nothing; you do it not wantonly; you

*Cleo.* Why— [should sing.]

*Hero.* Leave, leave! 'tis now too late: She is Her last is breathed. [dead,

*Cleo.* What shall we do?

*Hero.* Go run,

And tell the duke; and, whilst, I'll close her eyes.

[*Exit CLEOPHILA.*]

Thus I shut thy faded light,

And put it in eternal night.

Where is she can boldly say,

Though she be as fresh as May,

She shall not by this corpse be laid,

Ere to-morrow's light do fade?

Let us all now living be

Warn'd by thy strict chastity,

And marry all fast as we can!

Till then we keep a piece of man

Wrongfully from them that owe it:

Soon may every maid bestow it. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE VI.—*The House of BACHA.*

*Enter BACHA and her Maid.*

*Bacha.* Who is it?

*Maid.* Forsooth there's a gallant coach at the door, and the brave old man in't, that you said was the duke.

*Bacha.* Cupid, grant he may be taken!

*Maid.* He's coming up, and looks the swaggering'st, and has such glorious clothes!

*Bacha.* Let all the house seem sad, and see all handsome!

*Enter LEONTIUS and TIMANTUS.*

*Leon.* Nay, widow, fly not back; we come not  
To chide; stand up, and bid me welcome. [*now*

*Bacha.* To a poor widow's house, that knows  
no end

Of her ill fortune, your highness is most welcome.

*Leon.* Come, kiss me then! this is but man-  
ners, widow:

Ne'er fling your head aside! I have more cause  
Of grief than you; my daughter's dead: But what!  
'Tis nothing.—Is the rough French horse brought  
to th' door?

They say he's a high goer; I shall soon try his  
mettle.

*Tim.* He will be, sir, and the grey Barbary;  
they're fiery both.

*Leon.* They are the better;  
Before the gods, I am lightsome, very lightsome!  
How dost thou like me, widow?

*Bacha.* As a person  
In whom all graces are.

*Leon.* Come, come, you flatter!  
I'll clap your cheek for that; and you shall not  
Be angry. Hast no music? Now could I cut  
Three times with ease, and do a cross point, should  
Shame all your gallants!

*Bacha.* I do believe you;—and yourself too:  
Lord what a fine old zany my love has made him!  
He's mine, I'm sure: Heaven make me thankful  
for him! [*Aside.*

*Leon.* Tell me how old thou art, my pretty  
sweetheart?

*Tim.* Your Grace will not buy her! she may  
trip, sir!

*Bacha.* My sorrow shews me elder than I am  
By many years.

*Leon.* Thou art so witty I must kiss again.

*Tim.* Indeed her age lies not in her mouth;  
Ne'er look it there, sir: She has a better register,  
If it be not burnt.

*Leon.* I will kiss thee;—I am a-fire, Timantus!

*Tim.* Can you chuse, sir, having such heavenly  
Before you? [*fire*

*Leon.* Widow, guess why I come; I pr'ythee do.

*Bacha.* I cannot, sir, unless you be pleased to  
make

A mirth out of my rudeness; and that I hope  
Your pity will not let you, the subject is  
So barren.—Bite, king, bite! I'll let you play a  
while. [*Aside.*

*Leon.* Now, as I am an honest man, I'll tell  
thee truly.—

How many foot did I jump yesterday,  
Timantus?

*Tim.* Fourteen of your own, and some  
Three fingers.

*Bacha.* This fellow lies as lightly, [*Aside.*  
As if he were in cut taffata:

Alas, good almanack, get thee to bed,  
And tell what weather we shall have to-morrow!

*Leon.* Widow, I'm come, in short, to be a suitor.

*Bacha.* For whom?

*Leon.* Why, by my troth, I come to woo thee,  
wench,

And win thee for myself: Nay, look upon me!  
I have about me that will do it.

*Bacha.* Now Heaven defend me! Your whore?  
[You] shall never—I thank the gods, I have  
A little left me to keep me warm and honest:  
If your grace take not that, I seek no more.

*Leon.* I am so far from taking anything,  
I'll add unto thee.

*Bacha.* Such additions may  
Be for your ease, sir, not my honesty;  
I'm well in being single; good sir, seek another;  
I am no meat for money.

*Leon.* Shall I fight for thee?

This sword shall cut his throat that dares lay claim  
But to a finger of thee, but to a look;  
I would see such a fellow!

*Bacha.* It would be [*Aside.*  
But a cold sight to you! This is the father of  
St George a-footback; Can such dry mummy  
talk?

*Tim.* Before the gods, your Grace looks like  
Æneas.

*Bacha.* He looks like his old father upon his  
back,

Crying to get aboard. [*Aside.*

*Leon.* How shall I win thy love? I pray thee  
tell me.

I'll marry thee, if thou desirest that:  
That is an honest course, (I am in good earnest)  
And presently within this hour (I am mad for  
thee:)

Pr'ythee deny me not; for, as I live,  
I'll pine for thee, but I will have thee!

*Bacha.* Now he is in the toil, I'll hold him fast.  
[*Aside.*

*Tim.* You do not know what 'tis to be a queen:  
Go to; you're made! Else what the old man falls  
short of,

There's others can eke out, when you please to  
call on 'em.

*Bacha.* I understand you not.—Love, I adore  
thee!—

Sir, on my knees I give you hearty thanks,  
For so much honouring your humble handmaid  
Above her birth, far more her wack deserving.  
I dare not trust the envious tongues of all  
That must repine at my unworthy rising;  
Beside, you have many fair ones in your kingdom.  
Born to such worth: Oh, turn yourself about,  
And make a noble choice!

*Leon.* If I do, let me famish! I will have thee,  
Or break up house and board here.

*Bacha.* Sir, you may  
Command an unwilling woman to obey you:  
But Heaven knows—

*Leon.* No more!  
These half-a-dozen kisses, and this jewel,  
And everything I have, and away with me,  
And clap it up; and have a boy by morning!—  
Timantus, let one be sent

Post for my son again; and for Ismenus!  
They are scarce twenty miles on their way yet:  
By that time we'll be married.

*Tim.* There shall, sir. [*Exeunt.*

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*A Room in the Palace.**Enter DORIALUS, AGENOR, and NISUS.**Nisus.* Is not this a fine marriage ?*Age.* Yes, yes ; let it alone.*Dor.* Ay, ay, the king may marry whom he list. Let's talk of other matters.*Nisus.* Is the prince coming home certainly ?*Dor.* Yes, yes ; he was sent post for yesterday : Let's make haste ! we'll see how his new mother-in-law will entertain him.*Nisus.* Why, well, I warrant you : Did you not mark how humbly she carried herself to us on her marriage-day, acknowledging her own unworthiness, and that she would be our servant ?*Dor.* But mark what's done.*Nisus.* Regard not show.*Age.* Oh, God ! I knew her when I have been offer'd her to be brought to my bed for five pounds ; whether it could have been perform'd or no, I know not.*Nisus.* Her daughter's a pretty lady.*Dor.* Yes ; and having had but mean bringing up, it talks the prettiest and innocentest ! The queen will be so angry to hear her betray her breeding by her language ! But I'm persuaded she's well disposed.*Age.* I think, better than her mother.*Nisus.* Come, we stay too long. [*Exeunt.*]SCENE II.—*Another in the same.**Enter LEUCIPPUS and ISMENUS.**Ism.* How now, man ? struck dead with a tale ?*Leuc.* No, but with a truth.*Ism.* Stand of yourself : Can you endure blows, and shrink at words ?*Leuc.* Thou know'st I have told thee all.*Ism.* But that all's nothing to make you thus ; your sister is dead.*Leuc.* That's much ; but not the most.*Ism.* Why, for the other, let her marry and hang ; 'tis no purposed fault of yours ! and if your father will needs have your cast whore, you shall shew the duty of a child better in being contented, and bidding much good do his good old heart with her, than in repining thus at it : Let her go ! what ! there are more wenches, man ; we'll have another.*Leuc.* Oh, thou art vain ; thou know'st I do not love her.

What shall I do ? I would my tongue had led me  
To any other thing, but blasphemy,  
So I had miss'd commending of this woman,  
Whom I must reverence, now she is my mother !  
My sin, Ismenus, has wrought all this ill :  
And I beseech thee to be warn'd by me,  
And do not lie ! If any man should ask thee  
But how thou dost, or what o'clock 'tis now,  
Be sure thou do not lie ! Make no excuse  
For him that is most near thee ! never let  
The most officious falsehood 'scape thy tongue !  
For thy above (that are entirely truth)  
Will make that seed which thou hast sown of lies,  
Yield miseries a thousand-fold  
Upon thine head, as they have done on mine.

*Enter TIMANTUS.**Tim.* Sir, your highness is welcome home ! the duke and queen will presently come forth to you.*Leuc.* I'll wait on them.*Tim.* Worthy Ismenus, I pray you, how have you sped in your wars ?*Ism.* This rogue mocks me !—Well, Timantus. Pray how have you sped here at home at shuffle-board ?*Tim.* 'Faith, reasonable. How many towns have you taken in this summer ?*Ism.* How many stags have you been at the death of this grass ?*Tim.* A number. Pray how is the province settled ?*Ism.* Pr'ythee how does the dun nag ?*Tim.* I think you mock me, my lord.*Ism.* Mock thee ? Yes, by my troth do I ; why, what wouldst thou have me to do with thee ? Art good for anything else ?*Enter LEONTIUS, BACHA, DORIALUS, AGENOR, NISUS, and TELAMON.**Leuc.* My good Ismenus, hold me by the wrist ; And if thou see'st me fainting, wring me hard, For I shall swoon again else ! [*Kneels.*]*Leon.* Welcome, my son ! Rise. I did send for thee

Back from the province, by thy mother's counsel,  
Thy good mother here, who loves thee well :  
She would not let me venture all my joy  
Amongst my enemies. I thank thee for her,  
And none but thee : I took her on thy word.

*Leuc.* Pinch harder. [*Aside to ISMENUS.*]*Leon.* And she shall bid thee welcome. I have now

Some near affairs, but I will drink a health  
To thee anon.—Come, Telamon ! I'm grown  
Lustier, I thank thee for it, since I married ;  
Why, Telamon, I can stand now alone,  
And never stagger.

[*Exeunt LEONTIUS and TELAMON.*]*Bacha.* Welcome, most noble sir, whose fame is come

Hither before you !—Out, alas ! you scorn me,  
And teach me what to do.

*Leuc.* No ; you are my mother.

*Bacha.* Far unworthy of that name,  
God knows ! But trust me, here before these lords,  
I am no more but nurse unto the duke ;  
Nor will I breed a faction in the state :  
It is too much for me that I am raised  
Unto his bed, and will remain the servant  
Of you that did it.

*Leuc.* Madam, I will serve you  
As shall become me.—[*Aside.*] Oh, dissembling  
woman !

Whom I must reverence though. Take from thy  
quiver,  
Sure-aim'd Apollo, one of thy swift darts,  
Headed with thy consuming golden beams,  
And let it melt this body into mist,  
That none may find it !

*Bacha.* Shall I beg, my lords,  
This room in private for the prince and me ?

[*Exeunt all but LEUCIPPUS and BACHA.*]*Leuc.* What will she say now ?

*Bacha.* [*Aside.*] I must still enjoy him :  
Yet there is still left in me a spark of woman,  
That wishes he would move it ; but he stands  
As if he grew there with his eyes on earth.—  
Sir, you and I, when we were last together,  
Kept not this distance, as we were afraid  
Of blasting by ourselves.

*Leuc.* Madam, 'tis true ;  
Heaven pardon it !

*Bacha.* Amen ! Sir, you may think  
That I have done you wrong in this strange mar-  
*Leuc.* 'Tis past now. [*riage.*]

*Bacha.* But it was no fault of mine :  
The world had call'd me mad, had I refused  
The king ; nor laid I any train to catch him,  
'Twas your own oaths that did it.

*Leuc.* 'Tis a truth,  
That takes my sleep away ! But 'would to Heaven,  
If it had been so pleased, you had refused him,  
Though I had gratified that courtesy  
With having you myself ! But since 'tis thus,  
I do beseech you that you will be honest  
From henceforth ; and not abuse his credulous age,  
Which you may easily do. As for myself,  
What I can say, you know, alas, too well,  
Is tied within me ; here 'twill sit like lead,  
But shall offend no other ; it will pluck me  
Back from my entrance into any mirth,  
As if a servant came, and whisper'd with me  
Of some friend's death : But I will bear myself,  
To you, with all the due obedience  
A son owes to his mother : More than this  
Is not in me, but I must leave the rest  
To the just gods, who, in their blessed time,  
When they have given me punishment enough  
For my rash sin, will mercifully find  
As unexpected means to ease my grief,  
As they did now to bring it.

*Bacha.* Grown so godly ? [*Aside.*]  
This must not be.—And I will be to you  
No other than a natural mother ought ;  
And for my honesty, so you will swear  
Never to urge me, I shall keep it safe  
From any other.

*Leuc.* Bless me ! I should urge you ?  
*Bacha.* Nay, but swear then that I may be at  
For I do feel a weakness in myself, [*peace !*]  
That can deny you nothing : If you tempt me,  
I shall embrace sin as it were a friend,  
And run to meet it.

*Leuc.* If you knew how far  
It were from me, you would not urge an oath ;  
But for your satisfaction, when I tempt you—

*Bacha.* Swear not.—I cannot move him. [*Aside.*]  
—This sad talk,

Of things past help, does not become us well :  
Shall I send one for my musicians, and we'll dance ?

*Leuc.* Dance, madam ?

*Bacha.* Yes, a *lavatta*.

*Leuc.* I cannot dance, madam.

*Bacha.* Then let's be merry !

*Leuc.* I am as my fortunes bid me :  
Do not you see me sour ?

*Bacha.* Yes.

And why think you I smile ?

*Leuc.* I am so far  
From any joy myself, I cannot fancy  
A cause of mirth.

*Bacha.* I'll tell you ; we're alone.

*Leuc.* Alone ?

*Bacha.* Yes.

*Leuc.* 'Tis true ; what then ?

*Bacha.* What then ? you make my smiling now  
Break into laughter ! What think you is  
To be done then ?

*Leuc.* We should pray to Heaven  
For mercy.

*Bacha.* Pray ? that were a way indeed  
To pass the time ! But I will make you blush,  
To see a bashful woman teach a man  
What we should do alone ; try again  
If you can find it out.

*Leuc.* I dare not think  
I understand you !

*Bacha.* I must teach you then :  
Come, kiss me.

*Leuc.* Kiss you ?

*Bacha.* Yes : be not ashamed  
You did it not yourself ; I will forgive you.

*Leuc.* Keep, you displeas'd gods, the due respect  
I ought to bear unto this wicked woman,  
As she is now my mother, fast within me,  
Lest I add sins to sins, till no repentance  
Will cure me.

*Bacha.* Leave these melancholy moods,  
That I may swear thee welcome on thy lips  
A thousand times !

*Leuc.* Pray leave this wicked talk :  
You do not know to what my father's wrong  
May urge me.

*Bacha.* I am careless, and do weigh  
The world, my life, and all my after hopes  
Nothing without thy love : Mistake me not ;  
Thy love, as I have had it, free and open  
As wedlock is, within itself : What say you ?

*Leuc.* Nothing.

*Bacha.* [*Kneels.*] Pity me ! behold a duchess  
Kneels for thy mercy ; and I swear to you,  
Though I should lie with you, it is no lust ;  
For it desires no change ; I could with you  
Content myself. What answer will you give ?

*Leuc.* They that can answer must be less amazed  
Than I am now ! You see my tears deliver  
My meaning to you.

*Bacha.* Shall I be contemn'd ?  
Thou art a beast, worse than a savage beast,  
To let a lady kneel, to beg that thing  
Which a right man would offer.

*Leuc.* 'Tis your will, Heav'n ;  
But let me bear me like myself,  
However she does !

*Bacha.* Were you made an eunuch,  
Since you went hence ? Yet they have more desire  
Than I can find in you. How fond was I  
To beg thy love ! I'll force thee to my will ;  
Dost thou not know that I can make the king  
Dote as me list ? Yield quickly, or by Heaven  
I'll have thee kept in prison for my purpose !  
Where I will make thee serve my turn, and have  
thee

Fed with such meats as best shall fit my ends,  
And not thy health.—Why dost not speak to me ?—  
And when thou dost displease me, and art grown  
Less able to perform, then I will have thee  
Kill'd and forgotten !—Are you stricken dumb ?

*Leuc.* All you have named, but making of me sin  
With you, you may command, but never that,  
Say what you will : I'll hear you as becomes me,  
If you speak ; I will not follow your counsel,  
Neither will I tell the world to your disgrace,

But give you the just honour that is due  
From me to my father's wife.

*Bacha.* Lord, how full

Of wise formality you are grown of late !—  
But you were telling me you could have wished  
That I had married you : if you will swear so yet,  
I'll make away the king.

*Leuc.* You are a strumpet—

*Bacha.* Nay, I care not

For all your railings ; they will batter walls  
And take in towns, as soon as trouble me :  
Tell him ! I care not ; I shall undo you only,  
Which is no matter.

*Leuc.* I appeal to you

Still, and for ever, that are and cannot be other !—  
Madam, I see 'tis in your power to work  
Your will on him ; and I desire you  
To lay what trains you will for my wish'd death,  
But suffer him to find his quiet grave  
In peace : Alas, he never did you wrong.  
And further, I beseech you pardon me  
For the ill word I gave you ; for however  
You may deserve, it became not me  
To call you so ; but passion urges me  
I know not whither.—My heart, break now,  
And ease me ever !

*Bacha.* Pray you get you hence  
Wi' your goodly humour ! I am weary of you  
Extremely .

*Leuc.* Trust me, so am I of myself too :  
Madam, I'll take my leave. Gods set all right !  
[*Exit.*]

*Bacha.* Amen ! Sir, get you gone !—  
Am I denied ? It does not trouble me  
That I have moved, but that I am refused :  
I have lost my patience ! I will make him know  
Lust is not love ; for lust will find a mate  
While there are men, and so will I, and more  
Than one, or twenty !

*Enter TIMANTUS.*

Yonder is Timantus,  
A fellow void of any worth to raise himself,  
And therefore like to catch at any evil  
That will but buck him up ; him will I make  
Mine own.—Timantus !

*Tim.* Madam ?

*Bacha.* Thou know'st well  
Thou wert, by chance, a means of this my raising ;  
Brought the duke to me ; and, though 'twere but  
chance,  
I must reward thee.

*Tim.* I shall bend my service  
Unto your highness.

*Bacha.* But do it then entirely, and in every  
thing ;

And tell me, couldst thou now think that thing  
Thou wouldst not do for me ?

*Tim.* No, by my soul, madam.

*Bacha.* Then thou art right.  
Go to my lodging, and I'll follow thee, with my  
instruction. [*Exit TIMANTUS.*]

I do see already,  
This prince, that did but now condemn me, dead !  
Yet will I never speak an evil word  
Unto his father of him, till I have  
Won a belief I love him ; but I'll make  
His virtues his undoing, and my praises  
Shall be so many swords against his breast ;  
Which once perform'd, I'll make Urania,

My daughter, the king's heir, and plant my issue  
In this large throne ; nor shall it be withstood :  
They, that begin in lust, must end in blood ! [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Apartment in the same.*

*Enter DORIALUS, AGENOR, and NISUS.*

*Dor.* We live to know a fine time, gentlemen.

*Nisus.* And a fine duke, that, through his doting  
Suffers himself to be a child again, [age,  
Under his wife's tuition.

*Age.* All the land

Holds in that tenure too, in woman's service :  
Sure we shall learn to spin !

*Dor.* No, that's too honest ;

We shall have other liberal sciences  
Fought us too soon : Lying and flattering,  
Those are the studies now ! and murder shortly  
I know will be humanity. Gentlemen,  
If we live here we must be knaves, believe it.

*Nisus.* I cannot tell, my lord Dorialus ;  
Though my own nature hate it,  
If all determine to be knaves, I'll try  
What I can do upon myself, that's certain :  
I will not have my throat cut for my goodness ;  
The virtue will not quit the pain.

*Age.* But pray you tell me,  
Why is the prince, now ripe and full experienced,  
Not made a doer in the state ?

*Nisus.* Because he's honest.

*Enter TIMANTUS.*

*Tim.* Goodness attend your honours !

*Dor.* You must not be amongst us then.

*Tim.* The duchess,

Whose humble servant I am proud to be,  
Would speak with you.

*Age.* Sir, we are pleased to wait ;  
When is it ?

*Tim.* An hour hence, my good lords ;  
And so I leave my service. [*Exit.*]

*Dor.* This is one

Of her ferrets that she boultis business out withal :  
This fellow, if he were well ript, has all  
The linings of a knave within him : How sly he  
looks !

*Nisus.* Have we nothing about our clothes that  
May catch at ? [he

*Age.* O' my conscience, there is  
No treason in my doublet ! if there be,  
My elbows will discover it, they're out.

*Dor.* 'Faith,

And all the harm that I can find in mine  
Is, that they are not paid for ; let him  
Make what he can of that, so he discharge that ;  
Come, let us go. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter BACHA, LEONTIUS, and TELAMON.*

*Bacha.* And you shall find, sir, what

A blessing Heaven gave you in such a son.

*Leon.* Pray gods I may ! Let's walk, and change  
our subject.

*Bacha.* Oh, sir, can anything come sweeter to  
Or strike a deeper joy into your heart, [you,  
Than your son's virtue ?

*Leon.* I allow his virtues ;

But 'tis not handsome thus to feed myself  
With such immoderate praises of mine own.

*Bacha.* The subject of our commendations  
Is itself grown so infinite in goodness,  
That all the glory we can lay upon it,  
Though we should open volumes of his praises,  
Is a mere modesty in his expression,  
And shews him lame still, like an ill-wrought piece  
Wanting proportion.

*Leon.* Yet still he is a man, and subject still  
To more inordinate vices than our love  
Can give him blessings.

*Bacha.* Else he were a god;  
Yet so near, as he is, he comes to Heaven,  
That we may see, so far as flesh can point us,  
Things only worthy them; and only these  
In all his actions.

*Leon.* This is too much, my queen!

*Bacha.* Had the gods loved me, that my un-  
Had bred this brave man— [worthy womb

*Leon.* Still you ran wrong!

*Bacha.* I would have lived upon the comfort of  
Fed on his growing hopes! [him,

*Leon.* This touches me!

*Bacha.* I know no friends, nor being, but his  
virtues.

*Leon.* You have laid out words enough upon a  
subject.

*Bacha.* But words cannot express him, sir. Why,  
what a shape  
Heaven has conceived him in! oh, Nature made

*Leon.* I wonder, duchess— [him up—

*Bacha.* So you must; for less than admiration  
Loses this godlike man.

*Leon.* Have you done with him?

*Bacha.* Done with him? Oh, good gods,  
What qualities thus pass by us without reverence!

*Leon.* I see no such perfection.

*Bacha.* Oh, dear sir,

You are a father, and those joys to you  
Speak in your heart, not in your tongue.

*Leon.* This leaves

A taste behind it worse than physic.

*Bacha.* Then

For all his wisdom, valour, good fortune, and all  
Those friends of honour, they are in him as free  
And natural, as passions in a woman.

*Leon.* You make me blush at all these years,  
To see how blindly you have flung your praises  
Upon a boy, a very child; and worthless,  
Whilst I live, of these honours.

*Bacha.* I would not have my love, sir, make my  
tongue

Shew me so much a woman, as to praise  
Or dispraise, where my will is, without reason,  
Or general allowance of the people.

*Leon.* Allowance of the people? what allow they?

*Bacha.* All I have said for truth; and they must  
do it,  
And dote upon him, love him, and admire him.

*Leon.* How's that?

*Bacha.* For in his youth and noble forwardness  
All things are bound together that are kingly;

A fitness to bear rule—

*Leon.* No more!

*Bacha.* And sovereignty,  
Not made to know command.

*Leon.* I have said, no more!

*Bacha.* I have done, sir, though unwilling; and

*Leon.* I do; not a word more! [pardon me!

*Bacha.* I have given thee poison [Aside.  
Of more infection than the dragon's tooth,  
Or the gross air o'erheated.

Enter TIMANTUS.

*Leon.* Timantus, when  
Saw you the prince?

*Tim.* I left him, now, sir.

*Leon.* Tell me truly,  
Out of your free opinion, without courting,  
How you like him.

*Tim.* How I like him?

*Leon.* Yes;

For you in conversation may see more  
Than a father.

*Bacha.* It works. [Aside.

*Tim.* Your grace has chosen out an ill observer.

*Leon.* Yes, I mean of his ill; you talk rightly.

*Tim.* But you take me wrong! All I know by  
him

I dare deliver boldly: He is the storehouse  
And head of virtue, your great self excepted,  
That feeds the kingdom.

*Leon.* These are flatteries!

Speak me his vices; there you do a service  
Worth a father's thanks.

*Tim.* Sir, I cannot.

If there be any, sure they are the times,  
Which I could wish less dangerous. But pardon  
I am too bold. [me

*Leon.* You are not; forward,  
And open what these dangers are!

*Tim.* Nay, good sir!

*Leon.* Nay, fall not off again; I will have all!

*Tim.* Alas, sir, what am I, you should believe

My eyes or ears so subtle to observe  
Faults in a state? all my main business  
Is service to your grace, and necessaries  
For my poor life.

*Leon.* Do not displease me, sirrah!  
But that you know tell me, and presently.

*Tim.* Since your grace will have it,  
I'll speak it freely; always my obedience  
And love preserved unto the prince.

*Leon.* Pr'ythee to the matter!

*Tim.* For, sir, if you consider  
How like a sun in all his great employments,  
How full of heat—

*Leon.* Make me understand  
What I desire!

*Tim.* And then at his return—

*Leon.* Do not anger me!

*Tim.* Then thus, sir: All mislike you,  
As they would do the gods, if they did dwell with

*Leon.* What? [em.

*Tim.* Talk and prate, as their ignorant rage  
Without allegiance or religion. [lead 'em.

For Heaven's sake, have a care of your own person!  
I cannot tell; their wickedness may lead  
Further than I dare think yet.

*Leon.* Oh, base people!

*Tim.* Yet the prince,  
For whom this is pretended, may persuade 'em,  
And no doubt will: Virtue is ever watchful;

But be you still secured and comforted!

*Leon.* Heaven! how have I offended, that this  
So heavy and unnatural, should fall upon me [rod

When I am old and helpless?

*Tim.* Brave gentleman!

That such a madding love should follow thee,

To rob thee of a father! All the court  
Is full of dangerous whisperers.

*Leon.* I perceive it;  
And, 'spite of all their strengths, will make my  
safety!

I'll cut him shorter—I'll cut him shorter first,  
Then let him rule.

*Bacha.* What a foul age is this,  
When virtue's made a sword to smite the virtuous?  
Alas, alas!

*Leon.* I'll teach him to fly lower.

*Tim.* By no means, sir; rather make more your  
And hold your favour to him: For 'tis now [love,  
Impossible to yoke him, if his thoughts  
(As I must ne'er believe) run with their rages  
(He ever was so innocent). But what reason  
His grace has to withdraw his love from me,  
And other good men that are near your person,  
I cannot yet find out; I know my duty  
Has ever been attending.

*Leon.* 'Tis too plain  
He means to play the villain; I'll prevent him.  
Not a word more of this; be private! [Exit.

*Tim.* Madam, 'tis done.

*Bacha.* He cannot escape me. Have you spoken  
The noblemen? [with

*Tim.* Yes, madam; they are here.  
I wait a further service.

*Bacha.* Till you see the prince,  
You need no more instructions.

*Tim.* No; I have it! [Exit.

*Bacha.* That fool, that willingly provokes a wo-  
Has made himself another evil angel, [man,  
And a new hell, to which all other torments  
Are but mere pastime.—

*Enter DORIALUS, NISUS, and AGENOR.*

Now, my noble lords,  
You must excuse me, that unmannerly  
We have broke your private business.

*Age.* Your good grace  
May command us, and that——

*Bacha.* 'Faith, my lord Agenor,  
It is so good a cause, I am confident  
You cannot lose by it.

*Dor.* Which way does she fish now? [Aside.  
The devil's but a fool to a right woman.

*Nisus.* Madam, we must needs win in doing  
To such a gracious lady. [service

*Bacha.* I thank you, and will let you know the  
business,

So I may have your helps: Never be doubtful,  
For 'tis so just a cause, and will to you  
Upon the knowledge seem so honourable,  
That I assure myself your willing hearts  
Will straight be for me in it.

*Age.* If she should prove good now, what were  
it like?

*Dor.* Thunder in January, or a good woman;  
that's stranger than all the monsters in Afric.

*Bacha.* It shall not need your wonder; this it is:  
The duke you know is old, and rather subject  
To ease and prayers now, than all those troubles,  
Cares, and continual watchings, that attend  
A kingdom's safety: Therefore, to prevent  
The fall of such a flourishing estate  
As this has been, and to put off  
The murmur of the people, that encrease  
Against my government, which the gods know  
I only feel the trouble of, I present  
The prince unto your loves, a gentleman  
In whom all excellencies are knit together,  
All pieces of a true man: Let your prayers  
Win from the duke half his vexation,  
That he may undertake it, whose discretion  
I must confess, though it be from a father,  
Yet now is stronger, and more apt to govern.  
'Tis not my own desire, but all the land's;  
I know the weakness of it.

*Nisus.* Madam, this noble care and love has  
won us

For ever to your loves: We'll to the king;  
And since your grace has put it in our mouths,  
We'll win him with the cunning'st words we can.

*Dor.* [Aside.] I was never cozen'd in a woman  
before, for commonly they are like apples: If once  
they bruise, they will grow rotten through, and  
serve for nothing but to assuage swellings.

*Bacha.* Good lords,  
Delay no time, since it is your good pleasures,  
To think my counsel good! and by no means  
Let the prince know it, whose affections  
Will stir mainly against it; besides, his father  
May hold him dangerous, if it be not carried  
So that his forward will appear not in it.  
Go, and be happy!

*Dor.* Well, I would not be chronicled as thou  
wilt be for a good woman, for all the world.

*Nisus.* Madam, we kiss your hand; and so in-  
spired,  
Nothing but happiness can crown our prayers.

[Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—An Apartment in the Palace.

*Enter LEUCIPPUS and ISMENUS.*

*Leuc.* Thus she has used me: Is't not a good  
*Is.* Why kill'd you her not? [mother?

*Leuc.* The gods forbid it!

*Is.* 'Slight, if all the women in the world were  
barren, she had died!

*Leuc.* But 'tis not reason directs thee thus.

*Is.* Then have I none at all; for all I have in  
me directs me. Your father's in a pretty rage.

*Leuc.* Why?

*Is.* Nay, 'tis well if he know himself: But

some of the nobility have delivered a petition to  
him; what is in't I know not; but it has put him  
to his trumps: He has taken a month's time to  
answer it, and chafes like himself.

*Enter LEONTIUS, BACHA, and TELAMON.*

*Leuc.* He's here, ISMENUS.

*Leon.* Set me down, TELAMON!—Leucippus!

*Leuc.* Sir.

*Bacha.* Nay, good sir, be at peace! I dare  
swear

He knew not of it.

*Leon.* You are foolish; peace!

*Bacha.* All will go ill! Deny it boldly, sir; Trust me, he cannot prove it by you.

*Leuc.* What?

*Bacha.* You'll make all worse too with your

*Leuc.* What is the matter? [facing it.

*Leon.* Know'st thou that petition?

Look on it well! Would'st thou be join'd with me?

Unnatural child! to be weary of me,  
Ere Fate esteem me fit for other worlds!

*Bacha.* May be he knows not of it.

*Leuc.* Oh, strange carriages!

Sir, as I have hope that there is anything  
To reward doing well, my usages,  
Which have been—but it is no matter what—  
Have put me so far from the thought of greatness,  
That I should welcome it like a disease  
That grew upon me, and I could not cure.  
They are my enemies that gave you this;  
And yet they call me friend, and are themselves,  
I fear, abused. I am weary of my life;  
For God's sake take it from me! it creates  
More mischief in the state than it is worth.  
The usage I have had, I know, would make  
Wisdom herself run frantic through the streets,  
And Patience quarrel with her shadow. Sir,  
This sword—

*Bacha.* Alas! help, for the love of Heaven!  
Make a way through me first; for he is your father.

*Leon.* What, would he kill me?

*Bacha.* No, sir, no.

*Leon.* Thou always mak'st the best on't; but I  
fear—

*Leuc.* Why do you use me thus? Who is't can  
That I would kill my father, that can yet [think  
Forbear to kill you?—Here, sir, is my sword;  
I dare not touch it lest she say again  
I would have kill'd you. Let me not have mercy  
When I most need it, if I would not change  
Place with my meanest servant!—Let these faults  
[Apart to BACHA.

Be mended, madam! if you saw how ill  
They did become you, you would part with them.

*Bacha.* I told the duke as much before.

*Leuc.* What? what did you tell him?

*Bacha.* That it was only an ambition,  
Nursed in you by your youth, provoked you thus,  
Which age would take away.

*Leon.* It was his doing then?—Come hither,

*Bacha.* No, indeed, sir. [love!

*Leuc.* How am I made, that I can bear all this?  
If one had used a friend of mine  
Near this, my hand had carried death about it.

*Leon.* Lead me hence, Telamon! Come, my  
I shall find time for this. [dear Bacha!

*Ism.* Madam, you know I dare not speak before  
The king; but you know well, (if not, I'll tell you)  
You're the most wicked, and most murderous  
That ever was call'd woman! [strumpet,

*Bacha.* My lord,  
What I can do for him, he shall command me.

*Leon.* I know thou art too kind: Away, I say!  
[Exit LEONTIUS, BACHA, TIMANTUS, and TELAMON.

*Ism.* Sir, I am sure we dream: this cannot be.

*Leuc.* Oh, that we did! My wickedness has  
brought

All this to pass, else I should bear myself.

[URANIA passes over the Stage.  
*Ism.* Look! do you see who's there! your virtuous  
mother's issue: Kill her yet! take some  
little piddling revenge.

*Leuc.* Away!

The whole court calls her virtuous; for they say  
She is unlike her mother; and if so,  
She can have no vice.

*Ism.* I'll trust none of 'em

That come of such a breed.

*Leuc.* But I have found  
A kind of love in her to me. Alas!  
Think of her death! I dare be sworn for her,  
She is as free from any hate to me  
As her bad mother's full. She was brought up  
I' th' country, as her tongue will let you know,  
If you but talk with her, with a poor uncle,  
Such as her mother had.

Enter URANIA.

*Ism.* She's come again.

*Ura.* I would fain speak to the good marquiss,  
If I but thought he could abaid me. [my brother,

*Leuc.* Sister, how do you?

*Ura.* Very well, I thank you.

*Ism.* How does your good mother?

*Leuc.* Py, fy, Ismenus!

For shame! mock such an innocent soul as this!

*Ura.* Feth, a' she be no good, God may her so!

*Leuc.* I know you wish it with your heart, dear  
But she is good, I hope. [sister!

*Ism.* Are you so simple,

To make so much of this? Do you not know,  
That all her wicked mother labours for  
Is but to raise her to your right, and leave her  
This dukedom?

*Ura.* Ay; but ne'er, sir, be afred;  
For though she take th' ungainest weas she can,  
I'll ne'er ha't fro' you.

*Leuc.* I should hate myself, Ismenus,  
If I should think of her simplicity  
Aught but extremely well.

*Ism.* Nay, as you will!

*Ura.* And though she be my mother,  
If she take any course to do you wrang,  
If I can see't, you'st quickly hear on't, sir:  
And so I'll take my leave.

*Leuc.* Farewell, good sister!

I thank you. [Exit URANIA.

*Ism.* You believe all this?

*Leuc.* Yes.

*Ism.* A good faith doth well; but, methinks, it  
were no hard matter now for her mother to send  
her.

Enter TIMANTUS.

Yonder's one you may trust if you will too.

*Leuc.* So I will,

If he can shew me as apparent signs  
Of truth as she did. Does he weep, Ismenus?

*Ism.* Yes, I think so; some good's happen'd!  
warrant.—Do you hear, you? What honest man  
has 'scaped misery, that thou art crying thus?

*Tim.* Noble Ismenus,  
Where is the prince?

*Ism.* Why, there: Hast wept thine eyes out!

*Tim.* Sir, I beseech you hear me.

*Leuc.* Well, speak on.

*Ism.* Why, will you hear him?

*Leuc.* Yes, Ismenus: why?

*Ism.* I would hear blasphemy as willingly,

*Leuc.* You are to blame.

*Tim.* No, sir, he's not to blame,

If I were as I was.

*Ism.* Nor as thou art,  
I' faith, a whit to blame.

*Leuc.* What is your business ?

*Tim.* 'Faith, sir, I am ashamed to speak before My conscience tells me I have injured you, [you ; And, by the earnest instigation Of others, have not done you to the king Always the best and friendliest offices : Which pardon me, or I will never speak !

*Ism.* Never pardon him, and silence a knave !

*Leuc.* I pardon thee.

*Tim.* Your mother sure is naught.

*Leuc.* Why shouldst thou think so ?

*Tim.* Oh, noble sir, your honest eyes perceive The dangers you are led to : Shame upon her, [not And what fell miseries the gods can think on, Shower down upon her wicked head ! She has plotted,

I know too well, your death : 'Would my poor life, Or thousand such as mine is, might be offer'd Like sacrifices up for your preserving ;

What free oblations would she have to glut her ! But she is merciless, and bent to ruin, If Heaven and good men step not to your rescue, And timely, very timely. Oh, this dukedom ! I weep, I weep for the poor orphans in This country, left without friends or parents.

*Leuc.* Now, Ismenus, what think you of this This was a lying knave, a flatterer ! [fellow ? Does not this love still shew him so ?

*Ism.* This love ? this halter ! If he prove not yet The cunning'st, rankest rogue that ever canted, I'll ne'er see man again ! I know him to bring, And can interpret every new face he makes. Look how he wrings, like a good stool, for a tear ! Take heed ;

Children and fools first feel the smart, then weep.

*Leuc.* Away, away ! such an unkind distrust Is worse than a dissembling, if it be one, And sooner leads to mischief : I believe it, And him an honest man ; he could not carry, Under an evil cause, so true a sorrow.

*Ism.* Take heed ! this is your mother's scorpion, That carries stings even in his tears, whose soul Is a rank poison through : Touch not at him ; If you do, you are gone, if you had twenty lives.

I knew him for a roguish boy, When he would poison dogs, and keep tame toads ; He lay with his mother, and infected her, And now she begs i' th' hospital, with a patch Of velvet where her nose stood, like the queen Of spades, and all her teeth in her purse.

The devil and this fellow are so near,

'Tis not yet known which is the eviler angel.

*Leuc.* Nay, then I see 'tis spite.—Come hither, friend !

Hast thou not heard the cause yet that incensed My mother to my death ? for I protest I feel none in myself.

*Tim.* Her will, sir, and ambition, as I think, Are the provokers of it, as in women Those two are ever powerful to destruction ; Beside a hate of your still-growing virtues, She being only wicked.

*Leuc.* Heavens defend me, As I am innocent, and ever have been, From all immoderate thoughts and actions, That carry such rewards along with 'em !

*Tim.* Sir, all I know my duty must reveal ; My country and my love command it from me, For whom I'll lay my life down : This night counsel is appointed by the duke, [ing

To sit about your apprehension :

If you dare trust my faith, (which, by all good Shall ever watch about you !) go along, [things, And to a place I'll guide you, where no word Shall 'scape without your hearing, nor no plot, Without discovering to you ; which once known, You have your answers and prevention.

*Ism.* You're not so mad to go ? shift off this fellow !

You shall be ruled once by a wise man.—Rats—Get you gone, or— [bane !

*Leuc.* Peace, peace for shame ! thy love is too 'Tis a way offer'd to preserve my life, [suspicious ; And I will take it.—Be my guide, Timantus, And do not mind this angry man ! thou know'st I may live to requite thee. [him.

*Tim.* Sir, this service Is done for Virtue's sake, not for reward, However he may hold me.

*Ism.* The great pox on you ! but thou hast that curse so much, 'twill grow a blessing in thee shortly.—Sir, for Wisdom's sake, court not your death ! I am your friend and subject, and I shall lose in both ; if I loved you not, I would laugh at you, and see you run your neck into the noose, and cry, a woodcock !

*Leuc.* So much of man, and so much fearful ; fy ! Pr'ythee have peace within thee ! I shall live yet Many a golden day to hold thee here, Dearest and nearest to me.—Go on, Timantus !—I charge you by your love, no more, no more !

[*Exeunt LEUCIPPUS and TIMANTUS.*

*Ism.* Go, and let your own rod whip you ! I pity you ;

And, dog, if he miscarry, thou shalt pay for't : I'll study for thy punishment, and it shall last Longer and sharper than a tedious winter, Till thou blasphem'st ; and then thou diest and damn'st. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter LEONTIUS and TELAMON.*

*Leon.* I wonder the duchess comes not.

*Tel.* She has heard, sir, your will is to speak with her :

But there is something leaden at her heart, (Pray God it be not mortal !) that even keeps her From conversation with herself.

*Enter BACHA.*

*Bacha.* Oh, whither

Will you, my cross affections, pull me ? Fortune, And you whose powers direct our actions, [Fate, And dwell within us, you that are angels Guiding to Virtue, wherefore have you given So strong a hand to evil ? wherefore suffer'd A temple of your own, you deities, Where your fair selves dwelt only, and your good- Thus to be soil'd with sin ? [ness,

*Leon.* Heaven bless us all ! From whence comes this distemper ? Speak, my fair one !

*Bacha.* And have you none, Love and Obedi- You ever faithful servants, to employ [ence, In this strange story of impiety, But me ? a mother ? Must I be your trumpet, To lay black treason open ? and in him In whom all sweetness was ; in whom my love Was proud to have a being ; in whom Justice,

And all the gods for our imitations,  
Can work into a man, were more than virtues?  
Ambition, down to Hell, where thou wert foster'd!  
Thou hast poison'd the best soul, the purest,  
And merest innocence itself, that ever [whitest,  
Man's greedy hopes gave life to.

*Leon.* This is still stranger! lay this treason  
To my correction. [open

*Bacha.* Oh, what a combat Duty and Affection  
Breed in my blood!

*Leon.* If thou conceal'st him, may,  
Beside my death, the curses of the country,  
Troubles of conscience, and a wretched end,  
Bring thee unto a poor forgotten grave!

*Bacha.* My being, for another tongue to tell it!  
Oh, ease a mother, some good man that dares  
Speak for his king and country! I am full  
Of too much woman's pity: Yet, oh, Heaven,  
Since it concerns the safety of my sovereign,  
Let it not be a cruelty in me,  
Nor draw a mother's name in question  
'Mongst unborn people, to give up that man  
To law and justice, that unrighteously  
Has sought his father's death! Be deaf, be deaf,  
Your son is the offender: Now have you all; [sir!  
'Would I might never speak again!

*Leon.* My son?  
Heaven help me! No more! I thought it;  
And since his life is grown so dangerous,  
Let them that gave him, take him! he shall die,  
And with him all my fears.

*Bacha.* Oh, use your mercy!  
You have a brave subject to bestow it on.  
I will forgive him, sir: and for his wrong  
To me, I'll be before you.

*Leon.* Durst his villainy  
Extend to thee?

*Bacha.* Nothing but heats of youth, sir.

*Leon.* Upon my life he sought my bed!

*Bacha.* I must confess he loved me  
Somewhat beyond a son; and still pursued it  
With such a lust, I will not say ambition,  
That, clean forgetting all obedience,  
And only following his first heat unto me,  
He hotly sought your death, and me in marriage.

*Leon.* Oh, villain!

*Bacha.* But I forget all; and am half ashamed  
To press a man so far.

*Enter TIMANTUS.*

*Tim.* Where is the duke?

For God's sake, bring me to him!

*Leon.* Here I am.

Each corner of the dukedom sends new affrights  
What wouldst thou? Speak! [forth!

*Tim.* I cannot, sir; my fear  
Ties up my tongue.

*Leon.* Why, what's the matter? Take  
Thy courage to thee, and boldly speak! Where are  
The guard? In the gods' name, out with it!

*Tim.* Treason, treason!

*Leon.* In whom?

*Bacha.* Double the guard!

*Tim.* There is a fellow, sir—

*Leon.* Leave shaking, man!

*Tim.* 'Tis not for fear, but wonder.

*Leon.* Well?

*Tim.* There is a fellow, sir, close in the lobby:—  
You o' the guard, look to the door there!

*Leon.* But let me know the business.

*Tim.* Oh, that the hearts of men should be so  
harden'd

Against so good a duke!—For God's sake, sir,  
Seek means to save yourself! This wretched slave  
Has his sword in his hand; I know his heart:  
Oh, it hath almost kill'd me with the thought of it!

*Leon.* Where is he?

*Enter the Guard.*

*Tim.* I' the lobby, sir, close in a corner:  
Look to yourselves, for Heaven's sake! methinks,  
He's here already. Fellows of the guard, be  
valiant!

*Leon.* Go, sirs, and apprehend him! Treason  
Never dare me in mine own gates. [shall  
[LUCIPIRUS brought in by the Guard.

*Tim.* 'Tis done.

*Bacha.* And thou shalt find it to thy best con-  
tent.

*Leon.* Are these the comforts of my age? They  
are happy

That end their days contented with a little,  
And live aloof from dangers! to a king  
Every content doth a new peril bring.  
Oh, let me live no longer! Shame of Nature,  
Bastard to Honour, traitor, murderer,  
Devil in a human shape! Away with him;  
He shall not breathe his hot infection here.

*Leuc.* Sir, hear me.

*Leon.* Am I or he your duke? Away with him  
To a close prison! Your highness now shall know.  
Such branches must be cropt before they grow.

*Leuc.* Whatever fortune comes, I bid it welcome:  
My innocence is my armour: Gods preserve you!  
[Exit.

*Bacha.* Fare thee well!

I shall ne'er see so brave a gentleman.

'Would I could weep out his offences!

*Tim.* Or

I could weep out mine eyes!

*Leon.* Come, gentlemen!

We'll determine presently about his death;  
We cannot be too forward in our safety.

I am very sick; lead me unto my bed! [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Street.

*Enter Citizen and his Boy.*

*Cit.* Sirrah, go fetch my fox from the cutler's:  
There's money for the scow'ring: Tell him I stop  
A groat since the last great muster, he had in stone  
pitch

For the bruise he took, with the recoiling of his gun.

*Boy.* Yes, sir.

*Cit.* And (do you hear?) when you come, take  
down my buckler,

And sweep the cobwebs off, and grind the pick on't,  
And fetch a nail or two and tack on the bracers:  
Your mistress made a pot-lid on't, I thank her,  
At her maid's wedding, and burnt off the handle.

*Boy.* I will, sir. [Exit.

*Cit.* [Knocking at a door.] Who's within here?  
Not stirring yet? [Ho, neighbour!

*Enter second Citizen.*

2 *Cit.* Oh, good morrow, good morrow!  
What news, what news?

1 *Cit.* It holds, he dies this morning.

2 *Cit.* Then happy man be his fortune! I am  
resolved.

1 *Cit.* And so am I, and forty more good fellows,  
That will not give their heads for the washing, I  
take it.

2 *Cit.* 'Sfoot, man, who would not hang in such  
good company,  
And such a cause? A fire o' wife and children!  
'Tis such a jest, that men should look behind 'em  
To the world, and let their honours, their honours,  
neighbour, slip.

1 *Cit.* I'll give thee a pint of bastard and a roll,  
For that bare word.

2 *Cit.* They say, that we tailors are  
Things that lay one another, and our geese hatch  
us:

I'll make some of 'em feel they are geese o' the  
game then.

Jack, take down my bill; 'tis ten to one I use it.—  
Take a good heart, man! all the low ward is ours,  
With a wet finger.—

And lay my cut-finger'd gauntlet ready for me,  
That that I used to work in, when the gentlemen  
Were up against us, and beaten out of town,  
And almost out of debt too; for a plague on 'em,  
They never paid well since! And take heed, sir—  
Your mistress hears not of this business; [rah,  
She's near her time: Yet, if she do, I care not;  
She may long for rebellion, for she has  
A devilish spirit.

1 *Cit.* Come, let's call up the new ironmonger!  
He's as tough as steel, and has a fine wit in  
These resurrections. Are you stirring, neighbours?  
[Knocking at another door.

3 *Cit.* [Within.] Oh, good morrow, neighbours!  
I'll come to you presently.

2 *Cit.* Go to—  
This is his mother's doing; she's a polecat!

1 *Cit.* As any is in the world.  
2 *Cit.* Then say I have hit it; and a vengeance  
Let her be what she will. [on her,

1 *Cit.* Amen say I!  
She has brought things to a fine pass with her wis-  
Do you mark it! [dom,

2 *Cit.* One thing I am sure she has, the good  
old duke;

She gives him pap again, they say, and dandles  
And hangs a coral and bells about his neck, [him,  
And makes him believe his teeth will come again;  
Which if they did, and I he, I would worry her  
As never cur was worried! I would, neighbour,  
Till my teeth met I know where; but that's counsel.

Enter third Citizen.

3 *Cit.* Good morrow, neighbours! Hear you the  
sad news?

1 *Cit.* Yes; 'woud we knew as well how to pre-  
vent it!

3 *Cit.* I cannot tell: Methinks, 'twere no great  
if men were men; but— [matter,

2 *Cit.* You do not twit me with my calling,  
neighbour?

3 *Cit.* No, surely; for I know your spirit to be  
Pray be not vexed! [tall:

2 *Cit.* Pray forward with your counsel.  
I am what I am, and they that prove me shall  
Find me to their cost—Do you mark me, neighbour?  
To their cost, I say.

1 *Cit.* Nay, look how soon you are angry!

2 *Cit.* They shall, neighbours; yes, I say they  
3 *Cit.* I do believe they shall. [shall.

1 *Cit.* I know they shall.

2 *Cit.* Whether you do or no, I care not two-  
pence!

I am no beast; I know mine own strength, neigh-  
bours:

God bless the king! Your companies is fair.

1 *Cit.* Nay, neighbour, now ye err; I must tell  
An ye were twenty neighbours. [ye so,

3 *Cit.* Ye had best  
Go peach; do peach!

2 *Cit.* Peach? I scorn the motion.

3 *Cit.* Do, and see what follows! I'll spend an  
hundred pound

(Ah't be two, I care not), but I'll undo thee.

2 *Cit.* Peach? oh, disgrace! peach in thy face!  
and do

The worst thou canst! I am a true-man, and a free-  
Peach? [man!

1 *Cit.* Nay, look, you will spoil all.

2 *Cit.* Peach?

1 *Cit.* Whilst you two brawl together,  
The prince will lose his life.

3 *Cit.* Come, give me your hand!  
I love you well. Are you for the action?

2 *Cit.* Yes;  
But peach provokes me! 'tis a cold fruit; I feel it  
Cold in my stomach still.

3 *Cit.* No more! I'll give you cake to digest it.

Enter fourth Citizen.

4 *Cit.* [Entering.] Shut up my shop, and be  
ready at a call, boys!

And one of you run over my old tuck with a few  
ashes

('Tis grown odious with toasting cheese), and burn  
A little juniper in my murrion (the maid made it  
Her chamber-pot); an hour hence I'll come again.  
And, as you hear from me, send me a clean shirt!

3 *Cit.* The chandler by the wharf, an it be thy  
2 *Cit.* Gossip, good morrow! [will!

4 *Cit.* Oh, good morrow, gossip!  
Good morrow, all! I see ye of one mind,  
Ye cleave so close together. Come; 'tis time!  
I have prepared an hundred, if they stand.

1 *Cit.* 'Tis well done: Shall we sever, and  
about it?

3 *Cit.* First, let's to th' tavern! and a pint  
Will make us dragons. [a-piece

2 *Cit.* I will have no mercy,  
Come what will of it.

4 *Cit.* If my tuck hold, I'll spit  
The guard like larks with sage between 'em.

2 *Cit.* I have  
A foolish bill to reckon with 'em, will make  
Some of their hearts ache, and I'll lay it on!  
Now shall I fight, 'twill do you good to see me.

3 *Cit.* Come, I'll do something for the town to  
talk of

When I am rotten: Pray God there be enough  
To kill, that's all! [Exeunt.

SCENE IV.—Before the Palace.

Enter DORALUS, NISUS, and AEGNOR.

*Aeg.* How black the day begins!

*Dor.* Can you blame it, and look upon such a  
deed as shall be done this morning?

*Nisus.* Does the prince suffer to-day?

*Dor.* Within this hour, they say.

*Aeg.* Well, they that are most wicked are most

safe. 'Twill be a strange justice, and a lamentable: Gods keep us from the too-soon feeling of it!

*Dor.* I care not if my throat were next; for to live still, and live here, were but to grow fat for the shambles.

*Nisus.* Yet we must do't, and thank 'em too, that our lives may be accepted.

*Age.* 'Faith, I'll go starve myself, or grow diseased, to shame the hangman; for I am sure he shall be my herald, and quarter me.

*Dor.* Ay, a plague on him, he's too excellent at arms.

*Nisus.* Will you go see this sad sight, my lord Agenor?

*Age.* I'll make a mourner.

*Dor.* If I could do him any good, I would go; the bare sight else would but afflict my spirit: My prayers shall be as near him as your eyes. As ye find him settled, remember my love and service to his grace.

*Nisus.* We will keep for you, sir. Farewell!

[*Exeunt.*]

*Dor.* Farewell!

To all our happiness, a long farewell!—  
Thou angry Power, whether of heaven or hell,  
That lay'st this sharp correction on our kingdom  
For our offences, infinite and mighty!  
Oh, hear me, and at length be pleased, be pleased  
With pity to draw back thy vengeance,  
Too heavy for our weakness; and accept  
(Since it is your discretion, heavenly wisdoms,  
To have it so) this sacrifice for all,  
That now is flying to your happiness,  
Only for you most fit; let all our sins  
Suffer in him!—

[*A shout within.*]

Gods, what's the matter? I hope  
'Tis joy:—How now, my lords?

[*Enter AGENOR and NISUS.*]

*Nisus.* I'll tell you with what little breath I have:  
More joy than you dare think; the prince is safe  
From danger.

*Dor.* How!

*Age.* 'Tis true, and thus it was: His hour was  
To lose his life; he, ready for the stroke, [come  
Nobly, and full of saint-like patience,  
Went with his guard; which when the people saw,  
Compassion first went out, mingled with tears,  
That bred desires, and whispers to each other,  
To do some worthy kindness for the prince;  
And ere they understood well how to do,  
Fury stepped in, and taught them what to do,  
Thrusting on every hand to rescue him,  
As a white innocent. Then flew the roar  
Through all the streets, of *Save him, save him,*  
*save him!*

And as they cried, they did; for catching up  
Such sudden weapons as their madness shew'd  
them,

In short, they beat the guard, and took him from  
And now march with him like a royal army. ['em.

*Dor.* Heaven, Heaven, I thank thee! what a  
slave was I

To have my hand so far from this brave rescue!  
'T had been a thing to brag on when I was old.  
Shall we run for a wager to the next temple,  
And give thanks?

*Nisus.* As fast as wishes.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*The Street.*

[*Enter LUCIUS and ISMENUS; the People within step.*]

*Luc.* Good friends, go home again! there's not  
Shall go with me. [a man

*Ism.* Will you not take revenge?

I'll call them on.

*Luc.* All that love me, depart!

I thank you, and will serve you for your loves;  
But I will thank you more to suffer me  
To govern 'em. Once more, I do beg ye,  
For my sake to your houses!

*All.* [Within.] Gods preserve you!

*Ism.* And what house will you go to?

*Luc.* Ismenus, I will take the wariest course  
That I can think of to defend myself,  
But not offend.

*Ism.* You may kill your mother, and ne'er offend  
your father, an honest man!

*Luc.* Thou know'st I can 'scape now; that's  
all I look for.

I will leave—

*Ism.* Timantus, a pox take him! 'would I had  
him here! I would kill him at his own weapon,  
single scythes. We have built enough on him.  
Plague on't, I'm out of all patience! discharge such  
an army as this, that would have follow'd you without  
paying? Oh, gods!

*Luc.* To what end shall I keep 'em? I am  
free.

*Ism.* Yes, free o' th' traitors; for you are pre-  
claimed one.

*Luc.* Should I therefore make myself one?

*Ism.* This is one of your moral philosophy, is it?  
Heaven bless me from subtilities to undo myself  
with! but I know, if reason herself were here, she  
would not part with her own safety.

*Luc.* Well, pardon, Ismenus! for I know  
My courses are most just; nor will I stain 'em  
With one bad action. For thyself, thou know'st,  
That though I may command thee, I shall be  
A ready servant to thee, if thou need'st:  
And so I'll take my leave.

*Ism.* Of whom?

*Luc.* Of thee.

*Ism.* 'Heart, you shall take no leave of me!

*Luc.* Shall I not?

*Ism.* No, by the gods, shall you not! Nay, if  
you have no more wit but to go absolutely alone.  
I'll be in a little.

*Luc.* Nay, pr'ythee, good Ismenus, part with  
me!

*Ism.* I wo'not, i'faith! never move it any more;  
for by this good light, I wo'not!

*Luc.* This is an ill time to be thus unruly:  
Ismenus, you must leave me.

*Ism.* Yes, if you can beat me away; else the  
gods refuse me, if I will leave you till I see more  
reason! you shall not undo yourself.

*Luc.* But why will not leave me?

*Ism.* Why, I'll tell you: Because when you are  
gone, then—'Life, if I have not forgot my reason.  
hell take me! you put me out of patience so. Oh!  
marry, when you are gone, then will your mother—  
A pox confound her!—she ne'er comes in my  
head, but she spoils my memory too. There are a  
hundred reasons.

*Luc.* But shew me one.

*Ism.* Shew you? what a stir here is! Why I  
will shew you: Do you think—well, well, I know

what I know; I pray come, come! 'Tis in vain, but I am sure—Devils take 'em! what do I meddle with them? You know yourself—'Soul, I think I am—Is there any man i' th' world—As if you knew not this already better than I! Pish, pish, I'll give no reason!

*Leuc.* But I will tell thee one, why thou shouldst stay:

I have not one friend in the court but thou, On whom I may be bold to trust to send me Any intelligence; and if thou lov'st me, Thou wilt do this; thou need'st not fear to stay; For there are new-come proclamations out, Where all are pardoned but myself.

*Ism.* 'Tis true; and in the same proclamation your fine sister Urania, whom you used so kindly, is proclaim'd heir-apparent to the crown.

*Leuc.* What though, thou may'st stay at home without danger?

*Ism.* Danger? hang danger! what tell you me of danger?

*Leuc.* Why, if thou wilt not do't, I think thou dar'st not.

*Ism.* I dare not? If you speak in earnest, you are a boy.

*Leuc.* Well, sir, if you dare, let me see you  
*Ism.* Why, so you shall; I will stay. [do't.

*Leuc.* Why, God-a-mercy—

*Ism.* You know I love you but too well!

*Leuc.* Now take these few directions, and fare—Send to me by the wariest ways thou canst: [well! I have a soul tells me we shall meet often. The gods protect thee!

*Ism.* Pox o' myself for an ass, I am crying now! God be with you! if I never see you again, why then—Pray get you gone; for grief and anger wo'not let me know what I say. I'll to the court as fast as I can, and see the new heir-apparent. [Exit.

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter URANIA, (in boys' clothes) and her Maid.

*Ura.* What, hast thou found him?

*Maid.* Madam, he's coming in.

*Ura.* God bless my brother, wheresoe'er he is! And I beseech you keep me fro' the bed Of any naughty tyrant, whom my mother Would ha' me have to wrong him.

Enter ISMENUS.

*Ism.* What would her new grace have with me?

*Ura.* Leave us awhile.— [Exit Maid.

My lord Ismenus,

I pray, for the love of Heaven and God, That you would tell me one thing, which I know You can do weel.

*Ism.* [Mocking her.] Where's her fain grace?

*Ura.* You know me weel inough, but that you I'm she my sen. [mock;

*Ism.* God bless him that shall be thy husband! if thou wear'st breeches thus soon, thou'lt be as impudent as thy mother.

*Ura.* But will you tell me this one thing?

*Ism.* What is it? if it be no great matter whether I do or no, perhaps I will.

*Ura.* Yes, 'faith, 'tis matter.

*Ism.* And what is't?

*Ura.* I pray you let me know whair the prince my brother is.

*Ism.* I'faith, you shan be hang'd first! Is your mother so foolish to think your good grace can sift it out of me?

*Ura.* If you have any mercy Left in you to a poor wench, tell me!

*Ism.* Why, wouldst not thou have thy brains beat out for this, to follow thy mother's steps so young?

*Ura.* But, believe me, she knows none of this.

*Ism.* Believe you? Why do you think I never had wits? or that I am run out of them? How should it belong to you to know, if I could tell?

*Ura.* Why, I will tell you; and if I speak false, Let the de'il ha' me! Yonder's a bad man, Come from a tyrant to my mother, and what name They ha' for him, good feith, I cannot tell.

*Ism.* An ambassador?

*Ura.* That's it: But he would carry me away, And have me marry his master; and I'll daye Ere I will ha' him.

*Ism.* But what's this to knowing where the prince is?

*Ura.* Yes; for ye know all my mother does Agen the prince, is but to ma' me great.

*Ism.* Pray, (I know that too well) what then?

*Ura.* Why,

I would go to the good marquis my brother, And put myself into his hands, that so He may preserve himself.

*Ism.* Oh, that thou hadst no seed of thy mother in thee, and couldst mean this now!

*Ura.* Why, feth I do;

'Would I might never stir more if I do not!

*Ism.* I shall prove a ridiculous fool, I'll be damn'd else: Hang me if I do not half believe thee?

*Ura.* By my troth, you may.

*Ism.* By my troth, I do! I know I'm an ass for't, but I cannot help it.

*Ura.* And won you tell me then?

*Ism.* Yes, faith will I, or any thing else i' th' world; for I think thou art as good a creature as ever was born.

*Ura.* But all go i'this lad's repanel; but you mun help me To silver.

*Ism.* Help thee? why, the pox take him that will not help thee to anything i' th' world! I'll help thee to money, and I'll do't presently too: And yet—'Soul, if you should play the scurvy harlotry, little pocky baggage now, and cozen me, what then?

*Ura.* Why, an I do, would I might ne'er see day again!

*Ism.* Nay, by this light, I do not think thou wilt: I'll presently provide thee money and a letter. [Exit.

*Ura.* Ay, but I'll ne'er deliver it. When I have found my brother, I will beg To serve him; but he shall never know who I am; For he must hate me then for my bad mother:

I'll say I am a country lad that want a service,  
And have stray'd on him by chance, lest he discover me.

I know I must not live long, but that taimé  
I ha' to spend, shall be in serving him.  
And though my mother seek to take his life  
Away, in ai day my brother shall be taught  
That I was ever good, though she were naught.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—*A Room in the Palace.*

Enter BACHA, reading a Letter, and TIMANTUS.

Bacha. Run away? the devil be her guide!

Tim. 'Faith, she's gone!

There's a letter; I found it in her pocket.—  
'Would I were with her! she's a handsome lady;  
A plague upon my bashfulness! I had bobb'd her  
Long ago else.

[Aside.]

Bacha. What a base whore is this, that, after all  
My ways for her advancement, should so poorly  
Make Virtue her undoer, and chuse this time,  
The king being deadly sick, and I intending  
A present marriage with some foreign prince,  
To strengthen and secure myself! She writes here,  
Like a wise gentlewoman, she will not stay;  
And the example of her dear brother makes  
Her fear herself, to whom she means to fly.

Tim. Why, who can help it?

Bacha. Now poverty and lechery, which is thy  
end,  
Rot thee, where'er thou goest, with all thy goodness!

Tim. By'r lady they'll bruise her, an she were  
of brass! I am sure they'll break stone walls: I  
have had experience of them both, and they have  
made me desperate. But there's a messenger,  
madam, come from the prince with a letter to  
Ismenus, who by him returns an answer.

Bacha. This comes as pat as wishes: Thou shalt  
presently away, Timantus.

Tim. Whither, madam?

Bacha. To the prince! and take the messenger  
for guide!

Tim. What shall I do there? I have done too  
much mischief to be believed again; or, indeed,  
to 'scape with my head on my back, if I be once  
known.

Bacha. Thou'rt a weak shallow fool! Get thee  
a disguise;

And withal, when thou com'st before him, have a  
letter

Feign'd to deliver him; and then, as thou  
Hast ever hope of goodness by me, or after me,  
Strike one home stroke that shall not need another!  
Dar'st thou? speak! dar'st thou? If thou fall'st off,  
Go be a rogue again, and lie and pandar  
To procure thy meat! Dar'st thou? speak to me.

Tim. Sure I shall never walk when I am dead,  
I have no spirit. Madam, I'll be drunk,  
But I will do it; that is all my refuge.

[Exit.]

Bacha. Away! no more! then I will raise an  
army

Whilst the king yet lives, if all the means and  
I have can do it; I cannot tell.

[power]

Enter ISMENUS and the three Lords.

Ism. Are you inventing still? we'll ease your

Bacha. Why, how now, saucy lords? [studies.]

Ism. Nay, I'll shake you! yes, devil, I will  
shake you!

Bacha. Do not you know me, lords?

Nis. Yes, deadly sin, we know you: 'Would  
we did not!

Ism. Do you hear, whore? a plague o' God  
The duke is dead.

[upon thee!]

Bacha. Dead?

Ism. Ay, wildfire and brimstone take thee!  
Good man, he is dead, and past those miseries,  
which thou, salt infection, like a disease fungest  
upon his head. Dost thou hear? An 'twere not  
more respect to womanhood in general than thee,  
because I had a mother, who—I will not say she  
was good, she lived so near thy time—I would  
have thee, in vengeance of this man, whose peace  
is made in Heaven by this time, tied to a post, and  
dried i' th' sun; and after carried about, and shewn  
at fairs for money, with a long story of the devil  
thy father, that taught thee to be whorish, envious,  
bloody.

Bacha. Ha, ha, ha!

Ism. You fleeing harlot, I'll have a horse to leap  
thee, and thy base issue shall carry sumpters.—  
Come, lords; bring her along! We'll to the prince  
all, where her hell-hood shall wait his censure:  
and if he spare thee, she-goat, may he lie with  
thee again! and beside, may'st thou lay upon him  
some nasty foul disease, that hate still follows,  
and his end a dry ditch!—Lead, you corrupted  
whore, or I'll draw a goad shall make you skip;  
away to the prince!

Bacha. Ha, ha, ha!

I hope yet I shall come too late to find him.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—*A Forest, with a Cave in the  
Back-ground.*

Cornets. Cupid descends.

Cupid. The time now of my revenge draws near;  
Nor shall it lessen, as I am a god,  
With all the cries and prayers that have been,  
And those that be to come, though they be in-  
finite

In need and number!

[Ascends.]

Enter LEUCIPPUS and URANIA from the Cave.

Leuc. Alas, poor boy, why dost thou follow me!  
What canst thou hope for? I am poor as thou art.

Ura. In good feth, I shall be weell and rich  
enough

If you will love me, and not put me from you!

Leuc. Why dost thou chuse out me, boy, to  
undo thee?

Alas, for pity, take another master,  
That may be able to deserve thy love  
In breeding thee hereafter! me thou knowest not  
More than my misery; and therefore canst not  
Look for rewards at my hands: 'Would I were  
able,

My pretty knave, to do thee any kindness!

Truly, good boy, I would, upon my faith;

Thy harmless innocence moves me at heart.

Wilt thou go save thyself? Why dost thou weep?  
Alas, I do not chide thee.

Ura. I cannot tell;

If I go from you, sir, I shall ne'er dawn day more:

Pray, if you can, (I will be true to you)

Let me wait on you! If I were a man,

I would fight for you: Sure you have some ill-  
I would slay 'em. [willers;

*Leuc.* Such harmless souls are ever prophets.  
Well

I take thy wish, thou shalt be with me still:  
But, pr'ythee eat, my good boy! thou wilt die,  
My child, if thou fast one day more; these four  
days

Thou hast tasted nothing: Go into the cave,  
And eat; thou shalt find something for thee,  
To bring thy blood again, and thy fair colour.

*Ura.* I cannot eat, God thank you! but I'll eat  
To-morrow.

*Leuc.* Thou'lt be dead by that time.

*Ura.* I should be

Well then; for you'll not love me.

*Leuc.* Indeed I will.—

This is the prettiest passion that e'er I felt yet!—  
Why dost thou look so earnestly upon me?

*Ura.* You have fair eyes, master.

*Leuc.* Sure the boy dotes!

Why dost thou sigh, my child?

*Ura.* To think that such

A fine man should live, and no gay lady love him.

*Leuc.* Thou wilt love me?

*Ura.* Yes sure, till I die; and when

I am in Heaven, I'll e'en wish for you.

*Leuc.* And I'll come to thee, boy.—This is a  
love

I never yet heard tell of.—Come, thou'rt sleepy,  
child;

Go in, and I'll sit with thee.—Heaven, what por-  
tends this?

*Ura.* You're sad, but I'm not sleepy: 'Would  
I could

Do ought to make you merry; shall I sing?

*Leuc.* If thou wilt, good boy. Alas, my boy,  
that thou

Shouldst comfort me, and art far worse than I!

*Enter TIMANTUS, disguised.*

*Ura.* La', master, there is one; look to your-  
self!

*Leuc.* What art thou that into this dismal place,  
Which nothing could find out but misery,

Thus boldly step'st? Comfort was never here;

Here is no food, nor beds, nor any house

Built by a better architect than beasts;

And ere you get a dwelling from one of them,

You must fight for it: If you conquer him,

He is your meat; if not, you must be his.

*Tim.* I come to you (for, if I not mistake,  
You are the prince) from that most noble lord  
Ismenus, with a letter.

*Ura.* Alas, I fear

I shall be discover'd now.

*Leuc.* Now I feel

Myself the poorest of all mortal things;

Where is he that receives such courtesies

But he has means to shew his gratefulness

Some way or other? I have none at all!

I know not how to speak so much as well

Of thee, but to these trees.

*Tim.* His letters speak him, sir.

*Ura.* Gods keep him but from knowing me till  
Ah me! sure I cannot live a day. [I die!

[LEUCIPPUS opening the Letter, the whilst TIMANTUS  
runs at him, and URANIA steps before, and receives  
the stroke.

Oh, thou foul traitor!—How do you, master?

*Leuc.* How dost thou, my child?—Alas! look  
It may make thee repentant, to behold [on this;  
Those innocent drops that thou hast drawn from  
thence.

*Ura.* 'Tis nothing, sir, an you be well.

*Tim.* Oh, pardon me!

Know you me now, sir?

[Kneels and discovers himself.

*Leuc.* How couldst thou find me out?

*Tim.* We intercepted

A letter from Ismenus, and the bearer

Directed me.

*Leuc.* Stand up, Timantus, boldly!

The world conceives that thou art guilty

Of divers treasons to the state and me:

But oh, far be it from the innocence

Of a just man, to give a traitor death

Without a trial! Here the country is not

To purge thee or condemn thee; therefore,

(A nobler trial than thou dost deserve,

Rather than none at all,) here I accuse thee,

Before the face of Heaven, to be a traitor

Both to the duke my father, and to me,

And the whole land. Speak! is it so, or no?

*Tim.* 'Tis true, sir; Pardon me!

*Leuc.* Take heed, Timantus,

How thou dost cast away thyself! I must

Proceed to execution hastily

If thou confess it: Speak once again! is't so, or no?

*Tim.* I am not guilty, sir.

*Leuc.* Gods and thy sword

Acquit thee! here it is.

[Delivers him his Sword.

*Tim.* I'll not use any violence

Against your highness.

*Leuc.* At thy peril then!

For this must be thy trial; and from henceforth

Look to thyself!

[TIMANTUS draws his sword, they fight, TIMANTUS falls.

*Tim.* I do beseech you, sir,

Let me not fight.

*Leuc.* Up, up again, Timantus!

There is no way but this, believe me. Now if—

Fy, fy, Timantus! is there no usage can

Recover thee from baseness! Wert thou longer

To converse with men, I would have chid thee for

Be all thy faults forgiven! [this.

*Tim.* Oh, spare me, sir, I am not fit for death.

*Leuc.* I think thou art not; yet trust me, fitter

than

For life. Yet tell me, ere thy breath be gone,

Know'st of any other plots against me?

*Tim.* Of none.

*Leuc.* What course wouldst thou have taken,

when thou hadst kill'd me?

*Tim.* I would have ta'en your page, and married

her. [URANIA swoons.

*Leuc.* What page? [Dies.

*Tim.* Your boy there— [Dies.

*Leuc.* Is he fall'n mad in death? what does he

mean?

Some good god help me at the worst!—How dost

thou?

Let not thy misery vex me; thou shalt have

What thy poor heart can wish: I am a prince,

And I will keep thee in the gayest clothes,

And the finest things that ever pretty boy

Had given him.

*Ura.* I know you well enough.

Feth, I am dying; and now you know all too.

*Leuc.* But stir up thyself : Look what a jewel here is,  
See how it glisters ! what a pretty show  
Will this make in thy little ear ! ha, speak !  
Eat but a bit, and take it.

*Ura.* Do you not know me ?

*Leuc.* I pr'ythee mind thy health ! why, that's  
My good boy, smile still. [well said ;

*Ura.* I shall smile till death,  
An I see you ! I am Urania,  
Your sister-in-law.

*Leuc.* How !

*Ura.* I am Urania.

*Leuc.* Dulness did seize me ! now I know thee  
Alas, why cam'st thou hither ? [well :

*Ura.* Feth, for love :

I would not let you know till I was dying ;  
For you could not love me, my mother was  
So naught. [Dies.

*Leuc.* I will love thee, or anything !  
What, wilt thou leave me as soon as I know thee ?  
Speak one word to me ! Alas, she is past it !  
She will ne'er speak more.—  
What noise is that ? it is no matter who  
Comes on me now.

*Enter ISMENUS, with the Lords bringing in BACHA.*

What worse than mad are you  
That seek out sorrows ? if you love delights,  
Begone from hence !

*Ism.* Sir, for you we come,  
As soldiers to revenge the wrongs you have suffer'd  
Under this naughty creature : What shall be done  
Say ; I am ready. [with her ?

*Leuc.* Leave her to Heaven, brave cousin !  
They shall tell her how she has sinn'd against 'em ;  
My hand shall ne'er be stain'd with such base  
blood.

Live, wicked mother ! that reverend title be  
Your pardon ! for I'll use no extremity  
Against you, but leave you to Heaven.

*Bacha.* Hell take you all ! or, if there be a  
place

Of torment that exceeds that, get you thither !  
And till the devils have you, may your lives  
Be one continued plague, and such a one  
That knows no friends nor ending ! may all ages  
That shall succeed curse you, as I do ! and,  
If it be possible, I ask it Heaven,  
That your base issues may be ever monsters,  
That must, for shame of Nature and succession,  
Be drown'd like dogs ! 'Would I had breath to  
poison you !

*Leuc.* 'Would you had love within you, and such  
grief

As might become a mother ! Look you there !  
Know you that face ? that was Urania :  
These are the fruits of those unhappy mothers,  
That labour with such horrid births as you do !  
If you can weep, there's cause ; poor innocent,  
Your wickedness has kill'd her ; I'll weep for you.

*Ism.* Monstrous woman ! Mars would weep at  
And yet she cannot. [this,

*Leuc.* Here lies your minion too, slain by my  
hand :

I will not say you are the cause ; yet certain,  
I know you were to blame : The gods forgive you !

*Ism.* See, she stands as if she were inventing  
Some new destruction for the world.

*Leuc.* Ismenus,

Thou art welcome yet to my sad company.

*Ism.* I come to make you somewhat sadder, sir.

*Leuc.* You cannot ; I am at the height already.

*Ism.* Your father's dead.

*Leuc.* I thought so ; Heaven be with him !

Oh, woman, woman, weep now or never ! thou  
Hast made more sorrows than we have eyes to  
utter.

*Bacha.* Now let Heaven fall ! I'm at the worst  
of evils ;

A thing so miserably wretched, that every thing,  
The last of human comforts, hath left me !  
I will not be so base and cold to live,  
And wait the mercies of these men I hate :  
No, 'tis just I die, since Fortune hath left me.  
My steep descent attends me : Hand, strike thee  
home !

I have soul enough to guide : and let all know,  
As I stood a queen, the same I'll fall,  
And one with me ! [Stabs the Prince, then hersef.

*Leuc.* Oh !

*Ism.* How do you, sir ?  
*Leuc.* Nearer my health than I think any here.

My tongue begins to falter : What is man !  
Or who would be one, when he sees a poor weak  
Can in an instant make him none ! [woman

*Dor.* She's dead already.

*Ism.* Let her be damn'd

Already, as she is ! Post all for surgeons !

*Leuc.* Let not a man stir ! for I am but dead.  
I have some few words which I would have you  
hear,

And am afraid I shall want breath to speak 'em :  
First to you, my lords ; you know Ismenus is  
Undoubted heir of Lycia ; I do beseech you all,  
When I am dead, to shew your duties to him.

*Lords.* We vow to do't.

*Leuc.* I thank you.—Next to you,  
Cousin Ismenus, that shall be the duke,  
I pray you let the broken images  
Of Cupid be re-edified ! I know  
All this is done by him.

*Ism.* It shall be so.

*Leuc.* Last, I beseech you that my mother-in-  
law

May have a burial according to—— [Dies.

*Ism.* To what, sir ?

*Dor.* There's a full point !

*Ism.* I will interpret for him : She shall have  
According to her own deserts, with dogs ! [burial

*Dor.* I would your majesty  
Would haste for settling of the people.

*Ism.* I am ready.

*Age.* Go ; and let the trumpets sound  
Some mournful thing, whilst we convey the body  
Of this unhappy prince to the court,  
And of that virtuous virgin to a grave !  
But drag her to a ditch, where let her lie,  
Accurs'd, whilst one man has a memory !

[A dead march. *Exeunt.*

# THIERRY AND THEODORET.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THIERRY, *King of France.*  
THEODORET, *his Brother, Prince of Austracia.*  
MARTELL, *their noble Kinsman.*  
PROTALDVE, *Gallant to BRUNHALT.*  
BAWDBER, *a Pandar.*  
LECURÉ, *Physician to BRUNHALT.*  
DE VITRY, *a disbanded Officer.*  
Revellers.  
Courtiers.  
Huntsmen.

A Priest.  
A Post.  
Soldiers.  
Doctors.

BRUNHALT, *Mother to THIERRY and THEODORET.*  
ORDELLA, *the King of ARRAGON's Daughter,*  
*married to THIERRY.*  
MEMBERGE, *THEODORET's Daughter.*  
Ladies.

SCENE,—FRANCE AND AUSTRACIA.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—AUSTRACIA. *An Apartment in THEODORET's Palace.*

*Enter THEODORET, BRUNHALT, and BAWDBER.*

*Brun.* Tax me with these hot taintures ?

*Theod.* You're too sudden ;

I do but gently tell you what becomes you,  
And what may bend your honour ! how these  
courses,

Of loose and lazy pleasures, not suspected,  
But done and known ; your mind that grants no  
limit,

(And all your actions follow,) which loose people,  
That see but through a mist of circumstance,  
Dare term ambitious ; all your ways hide sores  
Opening in the end to nothing but ulcers.  
Your instruments like these may call the world,  
And with a fearful clamour, to examine  
Why, and to what we govern. From example,  
If not for Virtue's sake, you may be honest :  
There have been great ones, good ones, and 'tis  
necessary,

Because you are yourself, and by yourself,  
A self-piece from the touch of power and justice,  
You should command yourself. You may imagine  
(Which cozens all the world, but chiefly women)  
The name of greatness glorifies your actions ;  
And strong power, like a pent-house, promises  
To shade you from opinion : Take heed, mother !  
And let us all take heed ! these most abuse us :  
The sins we do people behold through optics,  
Which shew them ten times more than common  
vices,

And often multiply them : Then what justice  
Dare we inflict upon the weak offenders,  
When we are thieves ourselves ?

*Brun.* This is Martell,  
Studied and penn'd unto you ; whose base person,

I charge you by the love you owe a mother,  
And as you hope for blessings from her prayers,  
Neither to give belief to, nor allowance !  
Next, I tell you, sir, you, from whom obedience  
Is so far fled that you dare tax a mother,  
Nay, further, brand her honour with your slanders,  
And break into the treasures of her credit,  
Your easiness is abused, your faith freighted  
With lies, malicious lies ; your merchant Mischief ;  
He that ne'er knew more trade than tales, and  
tumbling

Suspitions into honest hearts : What you, or he,  
Or all the world, dare lay upon my worth,  
This for your poor opinions ! I am she,  
And so will bear myself, whose truth and white-  
Shall ever stand as far from these detections [ness  
As you from duty. Get you better servants,  
People of honest actions, without ends,  
And whip these knaves away ! they eat your fa-  
vours,

And turn 'em unto poisons. My known credit,  
Whom all the courts o' this side Nile have envied,  
And happy she could cite me, brought in question,  
Now in my hours of age and reverence,  
When rather superstition should be render'd ?  
And by a rush that one day's warmth  
Hath shot up to this swelling ? Give me justice,  
Which is his life !

*Theod.* This is an impudence,  
(And he must tell you, that till now, mother,  
Brought you a son's obedience, and now breaks it)  
Above the sufferance of a son.

*Baw.* Bless us ! *[Aside.*  
For I do now begin to feel myself  
Turning into a halter, and the ladder  
Turning from me, one pulling at my legs too.

*Theod.* These truths are no man's tales, but all  
men's troubles ;

They are, though your strange greatness would  
out-stare 'em :

Witness the daily libels, almost ballads,  
In every place, almost in every province,  
And made upon your lust; tavern discourses;  
Crowds cramm'd with whispers; nay, the holy  
temples

Are not without your curses. Now you would  
blush;

But your black tainted blood dare not appear,  
For fear I should fright that too.

*Brun.* Oh, ye gods!

*Theod.* Do not abuse their names! they see  
your actions :

And your conceal'd sins, though you work like  
moles,

Lie level to their justice.

*Brun.* Art thou a son?

*Theod.* The more my shame is of so bad a mother,  
And more your wretchedness you let me be so.  
But, woman, (for a mother's name hath left me,  
Since you have left your honour) mend these ruins,  
And build again that broken fame; and fairly,  
(Your most intemperate fires have burnt) and  
quickly,

Within these ten days, take a monastery,  
A most strict house; a house where none may  
whisper,

Where no more light is known but what may make  
you

Believe there is a day; where no hope dwells,  
Nor comfort but in tears—

*Brun.* Oh, misery!

*Theod.* And there to cold repentance, and  
starved penance,

Tie your succeeding days: Or curse me, Heaven,  
If all your gilded knaves, brokers, and bedders,  
Even he you built from nothing, strong Protaldye,  
Be not made ambling geldings! all your maids,  
If that name do not shame 'em, fed with sponges  
To suck away their rankness! and yourself  
Only to empty pictures and dead arras  
Offer your old desires!

*Brun.* I will not curse you,

Nor lay a prophecy upon your pride,  
Though Heaven might grant me both; unthankful,  
no!

I nourish'd you; 'twas I, poor I, groan'd for you;  
'Twas I felt what you suffer'd; I lamented  
When sickness or sad hours held back your sweet-  
ness;

'Twas I pay'd for your sleeps; I watch'd your  
wakings;

My daily cares and fears that rid, play'd, walk'd,  
Discours'd, discover'd, fed and fashion'd you  
To what you are; and am I thus rewarded?

*Theod.* But that I know these tears, I could dote  
on 'em,

And kneel to catch 'em as they fall, then knit 'em  
Into an armllet, ever to be honour'd:

But, woman, they are dangerous drops, deceitful,  
Full of the weeper, anger and ill nature.

*Brun.* In my last hours despised?

*Theod.* That text should tell

How ugly it becomes you to err thus:

Your flames are spent, nothing but smoke main-  
tains you;

And those your favour and your bounty suffers,  
Lie not with you, they do but lay lust on you,  
And then embrace you as they caught a palsy;

Your power they may love, and, like Spanish jen-  
Commit with such a gust— [acts.

*Baw.* I would take whipping,

And pay a fine now!

[*Aside. Exit*

*Theod.* But were you once disgraced,  
Or fall'n in wealth, like leaves they would fly from  
you,

And become browse for every beast. You will'd  
me

To stock myself with better friends, and servants;  
With what face dare you see me, or any mankind.

That keep a race of such unheard-of relics,  
Bawds, lechers, leeches, female fornications,

And children in their rudiments to vices,  
Old men to shew examples, and (lest Art

Should lose herself in act) to call back custom?  
Leave these, and live like Niobe! I told you how:

And when your eyes have dropt away remembrance  
Of what you were, I am your son: Perform it!

[*Exit.*

*Brun.* Am I a woman, and no more power in me  
To tie this tiger up? a soul to no end?

Have I got shame, and lost my will? Brunhalt,  
From this accursed hour forget thou bro'rt him,

Or any part of thy blood gave him living!  
Let him be to thee an antipathy,

A thing thy nature sweats at, and turns backward;  
Throw all the mischiefs on him that thyself,

Or women worse than thou art, have invented,

And kill him drunk, or doubtful!

*Enter BAWDBER, PROTALDYE, and LECUE.*

*Baw.* Such a sweat

I never was in yet! clipt of my minstrels,  
My toys to prick up wenches withal? uphold me;  
It runs like snow-balls through me!

*Brun.* Now, my varlets,

My slaves, my running thoughts, my executions!

*Baw.* Lord, how she looks!

*Brun.* Hell take you all!

*Baw.* We shall be gelt.

*Brun.* Your mistress,

Your old and honour'd mistress, you tired curials,  
Suffers for your base sins! I must be cloister'd,  
Mew'd up to make me virtuous: Who can help  
this?

Now you stand still, like statues! Come, Protal-  
One kiss before I perish, kiss me strongly! [*dye!*  
Another, and a third!

*Lec.* I fear not gelding,

As long as she holds this way.

*Brun.* The young courser,

That unlick'd lump of mine, will win thy mistress:  
Must I be chaste, Protaldye?

*Prot.* Thus, and thus, lady! [*Exeunt her.*

*Brun.* It shall be so: Let him seek fools for  
[vestals!

Here is my cloister.

*Lec.* But what safety, madam,

Find you in staying here?

*Brun.* Thou hast hit my meaning:

I will to Thierry, son of my blessings,  
And there complain me, tell my tale so subtly,

That the cold stones shall sweat, and statues mourn;  
And thou shalt weep, Protaldye, in my witness;  
And these forswear.

*Baw.* Yes: any thing but gelding!

I am not yet in quiet, noble lady:

Let it be done to-night, for without doubt  
To-morrow we are capons!

*Brun.* Sleep shall not seize me,

Nor any food befriended me but thy kisses,  
Ere I forsake this desert. I live honest?  
He may as well bid dead men walk! I humbled,  
Or bent below my power? let night-dogs tear me,  
And goblins ride me in my sleep to jelly,  
Ere I forsake my sphere!

*Lec.* This place you will.

*Brun.* What's that to you, or any,  
Ye dross, ye powder'd pigsbones, rhubarb glisters!  
Must you know my designs? a college of you  
The proverb makes but fools.

*Prot.* But, noble lady—

*Brun.* You are a saucy ass too! Off I will not,  
If you but anger me, till a sow-gelder  
Have cut you all like colts: Hold me, and kiss me!  
For I am too much troubled. Make up my treat-  
And get me horses private; come, about it! [sure,  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter THEODORET, MARTELL, and Attendants.*

*Theod.* Though I assure myself, Martell, your  
counsel

Had no other end but allegiance and my honour,  
Yet I am jealous, I have pass'd the bounds  
Of a son's duty: For, suppose her worse  
Than your report, not by bare circumstance,  
But evident proof confirm'd, has given her out;  
Yet since all weaknesses in a kingdom are  
No more to be severely punish'd, than  
The faults of kings are, by the Thunderer,  
As oft as they offend, to be revenged;  
If not for piety, yet for policy,  
Since some are of necessity to be spared,  
I might, and now I wish I had not look'd  
With such strict eyes into her follies.

*Mar.* Sir,

A duty well discharged is never follow'd  
By sad repentance; nor did your highness ever  
Make payment of the debt you owed her, better  
Than in your late reproofs, not of her, but  
Those crimes that made her worthy of reproof.  
The most remarkable point in which kings differ  
From private men, is that they not alone  
Stand bound to be in themselves innocent,  
But that all such as are allied to them  
In nearness, or dependence, by their care  
Should be free from suspicion of all crime:  
And you have reap'd a double benefit  
From this last great act: First, in the restraint  
Of her lost pleasures you remove the example  
From others of the like licentiousness;  
Then when 'tis known that your severity  
Extended to your mother, who dares hope for  
The least indulgence or connivance in  
The easiest slips that may prove dangerous  
To you, or to the kingdom?

*Theod.* I must grant

Your reasons good, Martell, if, as she is  
My mother, she had been my subject, or  
That only here she could make challenge to  
A place of being: But I know her temper,  
And fear (if such a word become a king)  
That, in discovering her, I have let loose  
A tigress, whose rage, being shut up in darkness,  
Was grievous only to herself; which, brought  
Into the view of light, her cruelty,  
Provoked by her own shame, will turn on him

That foolishly presumed to let her see  
The loath'd shape of her own deformity.

*Mar.* Beasts of that nature, when rebellious  
Begin to appear only in their eyes, [threats  
Or any motion that may give suspicion  
Of the least violence, should be chained up;  
Their fangs and teeth, and all their means of hurt,  
Pared off, and knock'd out; and, so made unable  
To do ill, they would soon begin to loath it.  
I'll apply nothing; but had your grace done,  
Or would do yet, what your less-forward zeal  
In words did only threaten, far less danger  
Would grow from acting it on her, than may  
Perhaps have being from her apprehension  
Of what may once be practised: For, believe it,  
Who, confident of his own power, presumes  
To spend threats on an enemy, that hath means  
To shun the worst that can effect, gives armour  
To keep off his own strength; nay, more, disarms  
Himself, and lies unguarded 'gainst all harms  
Or doubt or malice may produce.

*Theod.* 'Tis true:

And such a desperate cure I would have used,  
If the intemperate patient had not been  
So near me as a mother; but to her,  
And from me, gentle unguents only were  
To be applied: And as physicians,  
When they are sick of fevers, eat themselves  
Such viands as by their directions are  
Forbidden to others, though alike diseased;  
So she, considering what she is, may challenge  
Those cordials to restore her, by her birth  
And privilege, which at no suit must be  
Granted to others.

*Mart.* May your pious care

Effect but what it aim'd at! I am silent.

*Enter DA VITRY, laughing.*

*Theod.* What laugh'd you at, sir?

*Vitry.* I have some occasion,  
I should not else; and the same cause perhaps  
That makes me do so, may beget in you  
A contrary effect.

*Theod.* Why, what's the matter?

*Vitry.* I see, and joy to see, that sometimes  
poor men

(And most of such are good) stand more indebted  
For means to breathe to such as are held vicious,  
Than those that wear, like hypocrites, on their  
foreheads

The ambitious titles of just men and virtuous.

*Mart.* Speak to the purpose!

*Vitry.* Who would e'er have thought  
The good old queen, your highness' reverend mo-  
Into whose house (which was an academe, [ther,  
In which all principles of lust were practised)  
No soldier might presume to set his foot;  
At whose most blessed intercession  
All offices in the state were charitably  
Conferr'd on pandars, o'er-worn chamber-wrest-  
And such physicians as knew how to kill [lers.  
With safety, under the pretence of saving,  
And such-like children of a monstrous peace;  
That she, I say, should at the length provide  
That men of war, and honest younger brothers,  
That would not owe their feeding to their codpiece,  
Should be esteem'd of more than moths or drones,  
Or idle vagabonds.

*Theod.* I am glad to hear it;

Pr'ythee what course takes she to do this?

*Vitry.* One

That cannot fail : She and her virtuous train,  
With her jewels, and all that was worthy the carrying,

The last night left the court ; and, as 'tis more  
Than said, for 'tis confirm'd by such as met her,  
She's fled unto your brother.

*Theod.* How !

*Vitry.* Nay, storm not ;

For if that wicked tongue of hers hath not  
Forgot its pace, and Thierry be a prince  
Of such a fiery temper as report  
Has given him out for, you shall have cause to use  
Such poor men as myself ; and thank us too  
For coming to you, and without petitions :  
Pray Heaven reward the good old woman for't !

*Mart.* I foresaw this.

*Theod.* I hear a tempest coming,

That sings mine and my kingdom's ruin. Haste,  
And cause a troop of horse to fetch her back !—  
Yet stay ! why should I use means to bring in  
A plague that of herself hath left me ?—Muster  
Our soldiers up ! we'll stand upon our guard ;  
For we shall be attempted !—Yet forbear !  
The inequality of our powers will yield me  
Nothing but loss in their defeature : Something  
Must be done, and done suddenly. Save your  
labour !

In this I'll use no counsel but mine own !  
That course, though dangerous, is best. Command  
Our daughter be in readiness to attend us !  
Martell, your company ! and, honest Vitry,  
Thou wilt along with me ?

*Vitry.* Yes, anywhere ;

To be worse than I'm here, is past my fear.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—PARIS. *An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter THIERRY, BRUNHALT, BAWDBER, and LECURE.*

*Thi.* You are here in a sanctuary : and that  
(Who, since he hath forgot to be a son, [viper  
I much disdain to think of as a brother)  
Had better, in despite of all the gods,  
To have razed their temples, and spurn'd down  
Than, in his impious abuse of you, [their altars,  
To have call'd on my just anger.

*Brun.* Princely son,  
And in this worthy of a nearer name,  
I have, in the relation of my wrongs,  
Been modest, and no word my tongue deliver'd  
To express my insupportable injuries,  
But gave my heart a wound : Nor has my grief  
Being from what I suffer ; but that he,  
Degenerate as he is, should be the actor  
Of my extremes, and force me to divide  
The fires of brotherly affection,  
Which should make but one flame.

*Thi.* That part of his,  
As it deserves, shall burn no more, if or  
The tears of orphans, widows, or all such  
As dare acknowledge him, to be their lord,  
Join'd to your wrongs, with his heart-blood have  
power

To put it out : And you, and these your servants,  
Who in our favours shall find cause to know,  
In that they left not you, how dear we hold them,  
Shall give Theodoret to understand  
His ignorance of the prizeless jewel which  
He did possess in you, mother, in you ;  
Of which I am more proud to be the owner,  
Than if the absolute rule of all the world  
Were offer'd to this hand. Once more, you are  
welcome !

Which with all ceremony due to greatness  
I would make known, but that our just revenge  
Admits not of delay.—Your hand, lord-general !

*Enter PROTALDYE with Soldiers.*

*Brun.* Your favour and his merit, I must say,  
Have made him such : but I am jealous how  
Your subjects will receive it.

*Thi.* How ! my subjects ?

What do you make of me ? Oh, Heaven ! my subjects ?

How base should I esteem the name of prince,  
If that poor dust were any thing before  
The whirlwind of my absolute command !  
Let 'em be happy, and rest so contented,  
They pay the tribute of their hearts and knees  
To such a prince, that not alone has power  
To keep his own, but to encrease it ; that,  
Although he hath a body may add to  
The famed night-labour of strong Hercules,  
Yet is the master of a continence  
That so can temper it, that I forbear  
Their daughters, and their wives ; whose hands,  
though strong,

As yet have never drawn by unjust mean  
Their proper wealth into my treasury !—  
But I grow glorious—and let them beware  
That, in their least repining at my pleasures,  
They change not a mild prince (for if provoked,  
I dare and will be so) into a tyrant !

*Brun.* You see there's hope that we shall rule  
again, [*Apert to LECURE and BAWDBER*]

And your fall'n fortunes rise.

*Baw.* I hope your highness  
Is pleased that I should still hold my place with you.  
For I have been so long used to provide you  
Fresh bits of flesh since mine grew stale, that surely,  
If cashier'd now, I shall prove a bad caterer  
In the fish-market of cold Chastity.

*Lec.* For me, I am your own ; nor, since I first  
Knew what it was to serve you, have remember'd  
I had a soul, but such a one whose essence  
Depended wholly on your highness' pleasure ;  
And therefore, madam—

*Brun.* Rest assured you are  
Such instruments we must not lose !

*Lec. Baw.* Our service !

*Thi.* You have view'd them then ? what's your  
opinion of them ?

In this dull time of peace, we have prepared 'em  
Apt for the war ; ha ?

*Prot.* Sir, they have limbs  
That promise strength sufficient, and rich armours.  
The soldier's best-loved wealth : More, it appears

They have been drill'd, nay, very prettily drill'd ;  
For many of them can discharge their musquets  
Without the danger of throwing off their heads,  
Or being offensive to the standers-by,  
By sweating too much backwards : Nay, I find  
They know the right and left-hand file, and may,  
With some impulsion, no doubt be brought  
To pass the *A, B, C*, of war, and come  
Unto the horn-book.

*Thi.* Well, that care is yours ;  
And see that you effect it !

*Prot.* I am slow  
To promise much ; but if within ten days,  
By precepts and examples, not drawn from  
Worm-eaten precedents, of the Roman wars,  
But from mine own, I make them not transcend  
All that e'er yet bore arms, let it be said  
Protaldye brags, which would be unto me  
As hateful as to be esteem'd a coward !  
For, sir, few captains know the way to win him,  
And make the soldier valiant. You shall see me  
Lie with them in their trenches, talk, and drink,  
And be together drunk ; and what seems stranger,  
We'll sometimes wench together, which, once  
practised,

And with some other care and hidden arts,  
They being all made mine, I'll breathe into them  
Such fearless resolution and such fervour,  
That, though I brought them to besiege a fort  
Whose walls were steeple-high, and cannon-proof,  
Not to be undermined, they should fly up  
Like swallows ; and, the parapet once won,  
For proof of their obedience, if I will'd them,  
They should leap down again ; and what is more,  
By some directions they should have from me,  
Not break their necks.

*Thi.* This is above belief.

*Brun.* Sir, on my knowledge, though he hath  
He's able to do more. [spoke much.

*Lec.* She means on her. [Apart.

*Brun.* And howsoever in his thankfulness,  
For some few favours done him by myself,  
He left Austracia ; not Theodoret,  
Though he was chiefly aim'd at, could have laid,  
With all his dukedom's power, that shame upon  
Which in his barbarous malice to my honour, [him,  
He swore with threats to effect.

*Thi.* I cannot but

Believe you, madam.—Thou art one degree  
Grown nearer to my heart, and I am proud  
To have in thee so glorious a plant  
Transported hither : In thy conduct, we  
Go on assur'd of conquest ; our remove  
Shall be with the next sun.

Enter THEODORET, MEMBERGE, MARTELL, and DE VITRY.

*Lec.* Amazement leave me !

'Tis he.

*Baw.* We are again undone !

*Prot.* Our guilt

Hath no assurance nor defence.

*Baw.* If now

Your ever-ready wit fail to protect us,  
We shall be all discovered.

*Brun.* Be not so

In your amazement and your foolish fears !  
I am prepared for't.

*Theod.* How ! not one poor welcome,  
In answer of so long a journey made  
Only to see you, brother ?

*Thi.* I have stood

Silent thus long, and am yet unresolved  
Whether to entertain thee on my sword,  
As fits a parricide of a mother's honour ;  
Or whether, being a prince, I yet stand bound  
(Though thou art here condemn'd) to give thee  
Before I execute. What foolish hope, [hearing,  
(Nay, pray you forbear) or desperate madness  
rather,

(Unless thou com'st assur'd, I stand in debt  
As far to all impiety as thyself)  
Has made thee bring thy neck unto the axe ?  
Since looking only here, it cannot but  
Draw fresh blood from thy sear'd-up conscience,  
To make thee sensible of that horror, which  
They ever bear about them, that like Nero—  
Like, said I ? thou art worse ; since thou dar'st  
strive

In her defame to murder thine alive.

*Theod.* That she that long since had the bold-  
ness to

Be a bad woman, (though I wish some other  
Should so report her) could not want the cunning,  
Since they go hand in hand, to lay fair colours  
On her black crimes, I was resolved before ;  
Nor make I doubt but that she hath impos'd  
Your good opinion of me, and so far  
Incens'd your rage against me, that too late  
I come to plead my innocence.

*Brun.* To excuse

Thy impious scandals rather !

*Prot.* Rather forced with fear

To be compell'd to come.

*Thi.* Forbear !

*Theod.* This moves not me ; and yet, had I not  
Transported on my own integrity, [been

I neither am so odious to my subjects,  
Nor yet so barren of defence, but that  
By force I could have justified my guilt,  
Had I been faulty : But since Innocence  
Is to itself an hundred thousand guards,  
And that there is no son, but though he owe  
That name to an ill mother, but stands bound  
Rather to take away, with his own danger,  
From the number of her faults, than, for his own  
Security, to add unto them : This,  
This hath made me to prevent the expence  
Of blood on both sides ; the injuries, the rapes,  
(Pages, that ever wait upon the war)

The account of all which, since you are the cause,  
Believe it, would have been required from you ;  
Rather I say to offer up my daughter,  
Who living only could revenge my death,  
With my heart-blood a sacrifice to your anger,  
Than that you should draw on your head more  
Than yet you have deserved. [curses

*Thi.* I do begin [Apart.

To feel an alteration in my nature,  
And, in his full-sail'd confidence, a shower  
Of gentle rain, that, falling on the fire  
Of my hot rage, hath quench'd it. Ha ! I would  
Once more speak roughly to him, and I will ;  
Yet there is something whispers to me, that  
I have said too much : How is my heart divided  
Between the duty of a son, and love  
Due to a brother ! Yet I am sway'd here,  
And must ask of you, how 'tis possible  
You can affect me, that have learn'd to hate  
Where you should pay all love ?

*Theod.* Which, join'd with duty,

Upon my knees I should be proud to tender,  
Had she not used herself so many swords  
To cut those bonds that tied me to it.

*Thi. Fy,*  
No more of that!

*Theod.* Alas, it is a theme  
I take no pleasure to discourse of: 'Would  
It could as soon be buried to the world,  
As it should die to me! nay more, I wish  
(Next to my part of Heaven) that she would spend  
The last part of her life so here, that all  
Indifferent judges might condemn me for  
A most malicious slanderer, nay, text it  
Upon my forehead.—If you hate me, mother,  
Put me to such a shame; pray you do! Believe it,  
There is no glory that may fall upon me,  
Can equal the delight I should receive  
In that disgrace; provided the repeal  
Of your long-banish'd virtues, and good name,  
Usher'd me to it.

*Thi.* See, she shews herself  
An easy mother, which her tears confirm!

*Theod.* 'Tis a good sign; the comfortablest rain  
I ever saw.

*Thi.* Embrace!—Why, this is well:  
May never more but love in you, and duty  
On your part, rise between you!

*Baw.* Do you hear, lord-general?  
Does not your new-stamp'd honour on the sudden  
Begin to grow sick?

*Prot.* Yes; I find it fit,  
That, putting off my armour, I should think of  
Some honest hospital to retire to.

*Baw.* Sure,  
Although I am a bawd, yet being a lord,  
They cannot whip me for't: What's your opinion?

*Lec.* The beadle will resolve you, for I cannot:  
There's something that more near concerns myself,  
That calls upon me.

*Mart.* Note but yonder scarabs,  
That lived upon the dung of her base pleasures;  
How from the fear that she may yet prove honest  
Hang down their wicked heads!

*Vitry.* What's that to me?  
Though they and all the polecats of the court,  
Were truss'd together, I perceive not how  
It can advantage me a caduceus,  
To help to keep me honest. [A horn.]

*Enter a Post.*

*Thi.* How! from whence?

*Post.* These letters will resolve your grace.

*Thi.* What speak they?— [Reads]

How all things meet to make me this day happy!  
See, mother, brother, to your reconciliation  
Another blessing, almost equal to it,  
Is coming towards me! my contracted wife  
Ordella, daughter of wise Datarick,  
The king of Arragon, is on our confines:  
Then, to arrive at such a time, when you  
Are happily here to honour with your presence  
Our long-deferr'd, but much-wish'd nuptial,  
Falls out above expression! Heaven be pleased  
That I may use these blessings pour'd on me  
With moderation!

*Brun.* Hell and furies aid me, [Apart.]  
That I may have power to avert the plagues,  
That press upon me!

*Thi.* Two days' journey, say'st thou?  
We will set forth to meet her. In the mean time,

See all things be prepared to entertain her:  
Nay, let me have your companies! there's a forest  
In the midway shall yield us hunting sport,  
To ease our travel! I'll not have a brow  
But shall wear mirth upon it; therefore clear them!  
We'll wash away all sorrow in glad feasts;  
And the war we meant to men, we'll make on beasts.

[*Exeunt all but BRUNHALT, BAWDRES, PROTALPIS,  
LECIURE.*]

*Brun.* Oh, that I had the magic to transform  
you

Into the shape of such, that your own bounds  
Might tear you piece-meal! Are you so stupid?  
No word of comfort? Have I fed your mouths  
From my excess of moisture, with such cost,  
And can you yield no other retribution,  
But to devour your maker? pandar, sponge,  
Impoisoner, all grown barren?

*Prot.* You yourself,  
That are our mover, and for whom alone  
We live, have fail'd yourself, in giving way  
To the reconciliation of your sons.

*Lec.* Which if  
You had prevented, or would teach us how  
They might again be severed, we could easily  
Remove all other hindrances that stop  
The passage of your pleasures.

*Baw.* And for me,  
If I fail in my office to provide you  
Fresh delicates, hang me!

*Brun.* Oh, you are dull, and find not  
The cause of my vexation; their reconciliation  
Is a mock castle built upon the sand  
By children, which, when I am pleased to o'er-  
I can with ease spurn down. [throw,

*Lec.* If so, from whence  
Grows your affliction?

*Brun.* My grief comes along  
With the new queen, in whose grace all my power  
Must suffer shipwreck: For me now,  
That hitherto have kept the first, to know  
A second place, or yield the least precedence  
To any other, 's death! to have my sleeps  
Less enquired after, or my rising up  
Saluted with less reverence, or my gates  
Empty of suitors, or the king's great favours  
To pass through any hand but mine, or he  
Himself to be directed by another,  
Would be to me—Do you understand me yet?  
No means to prevent this?

*Prot.* Fame gives her out  
To be a woman of a chastity  
Not to be wrought upon; and therefore, madam,  
For me, though I have pleased you, to attempt her,  
Were to no purpose.

*Brun.* Tush, some other way!

*Baw.* 'Faith, I know none else; all my bring-  
ing up  
Aim'd at no other learning.

*Lec.* Give me leave!  
If my art fail me not, I have thought on  
A speeding project.

*Brun.* What is't? but effect it,  
And thou shalt be my Æsculapius;  
Thy image shall be set up in pure gold,  
To which I will fall down, and worship it.

*Lec.* The lady's fair?

*Brun.* Exceeding fair.

*Lec.* And young?

*Brun.* Some fifteen at the most.

*Lev.* And loves the king  
With equal ardour ?

*Brun.* More ; she dotes on him.

*Lev.* Well then ; what think you if I make a drink,

Which, given unto him on the bridal-night,  
Shall for five days so rob his faculties  
Of all ability to pay that duty  
Which new-made wives expect, that she shall swear  
She is not match'd to a man ?

*Prot.* 'Twere rare !

*Lev.* And then,

If she have any part of woman in her,  
She'll or fly out, or at least give occasion  
Of such a breach which ne'er can be made up ;  
Since he that to all else did never fail  
Of as much as could be perform'd by man,  
Proves only ice to her.

*Brun.* 'Tis excellent !

*Baw.* The physician

Helps ever at a dead lift : A fine calling,  
That can both raise and take down : Out upon thee !

*Brun.* For this one service, I am ever thine !  
Prepare't ; I'll give it him myself.—For you, Protaldye,

By this kiss, and our promised sport at night,  
I do conjure you to bear up, not minding  
The opposition of Theodoret,  
Or any of his followers : Whatsoever  
You are, yet you appear valiant, and make good  
The opinion that is had of you ! For myself,  
In the new queen's remove being made secure,  
Fear not, I'll make the future building sure.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—A Forest. Winding of Horns.

*Enter THEODORET and THIERRY.*

*Theod.* This stag stood well, and cunningly.

*Thi.* My horse,

I am sure, has found it, for his sides are blooded  
From flank to shoulder. Where's the troop ?

*Enter MARTELL.*

*Theod.* Pass'd homeward,  
Weary and tired as we are.—Now, Martell ;  
Have you remember'd what we thought of ?

*Mart.* Yes, sir ; I have snigled him ; and if  
Any desert in's blood, beside the itch, [there be  
Or manly heat, but what decoctions,  
Leeches, and cullises have cramm'd into him,  
Your lordship shall know perfect.

*Thi.* What is that ?

May not I know too ?

*Theod.* Yes, sir ; to that end

We cast the project.

*Thi.* What is't ?

*Mart.* A desire, sir,  
Upon the gilded flag your grace's favour  
Has stuck up for a general ; and to inform you  
(For this hour he shall pass the test) what valour,  
Staid judgment, soul, or safe discretion,  
Your mother's wandering eyes, and your obedi-  
ence,

Have flung upon us ; to assure your knowledge,  
He can be, dare be, shall be, must be nothing  
(Load him with piles of honours, set him off  
With all the cunning foils that may deceive us !)  
But a poor, cold, unspirited, unmanner'd,  
Unhonest, unaffected, undone fool,

And most unheard-of coward ; a mere lump,  
Made to load beds withal, and, like a night-mare,  
Ride ladies that forget to say their prayers ;  
One that dares only be diseased, and in debt ;  
Whose body mews more plaisters every month,  
Than women do old faces !

*Thi.* No more ! I know him ;  
I now repent my error : Take your time,  
And try him home, ever thus far reserved,  
You tie your anger up !

*Mart.* I lose it else, sir.

*Thi.* Bring me his sword fair-taken without  
(For that will best declare him)— [violence,

*Theod.* That's the thing.

*Thi.* And my best horse is thine.

*Mart.* Your grace's servant ! [*Exit.*]

*Theod.* You'll hunt no more, sir ?

*Thi.* Not to-day ; the weather  
Is grown too warm ; besides, the dogs are spent :  
We'll take a cooler morning. Let's to horse,  
And halloo in the troop ! [*Exeunt. Wind horns.*]

*Enter two Huntsmen.*

1 *Hunts.* Ay marry, Twainer,  
This woman gives indeed ; these are the angels  
That are the keepers' saints !

2 *Hunts.* I like a woman  
That handles the deer's dowsets with discretion,  
And pays us by proportion.

1 *Hunts.* 'Tis no treason  
To think this good old lady has a stump yet,  
That may require a coral.

2 *Hunts.* And the balls too ;  
She has lost a friend of me else.

*Enter PROTALDYE.*

But here's the clerk :  
No more, for fear o' th' bell-ropes !

*Prot.* How now, keepers ?  
Saw you the king ?

1 *Hunts.* Yes, sir ; he's newly mounted,  
And, as we take it, ridden home.

*Prot.* Farewell then ! [*Exeunt Huntsmen.*]

*Enter MARTELL.*

*Mart.* My honour'd lord, fortune has made me  
happy  
To meet with such a man of men to side me.

*Prot.* How, sir ? I know you not,  
Nor what your fortune means.

*Mart.* Few words shall serve :  
I am betray'd, sir ; innocent and honest,  
Malice and violence are both against me,  
Basely and foully laid for ; for my life, sir !  
Danger is now about me, now in my throat, sir.

*Prot.* Where, sir ?

*Mart.* Nay, I fear not ;  
And let it now pour down in storms upon me,  
I have met a noble guard.

*Prot.* Your meaning, sir ?  
For I have present business.

*Mart.* Oh, my lord,  
Your honour cannot leave a gentleman,  
At least a fair design of this brave nature,  
To which your worth is wedded, your profession  
Hatch'd in, and made one piece, in such a peril.  
There are but six, my lord.

*Prot.* What six ?

*Mart.* Six villains ;  
Sworn, and in pay to kill me.

*Prot.* Six ?

*Mart.* Alas, sir,  
What can six do, or six score, now you're present?

Your name will blow 'em off: Say they have shot too;

Who dare present a piece? your valour's proof, sir.

*Prot.* No, I'll assure you, sir, nor my discretion, Against a multitude. 'Tis true, I dare fight Enough, and well enough, and long enough; But wisdom, sir, and weight of what is on me, (In which I am no more mine own, nor your's, sir, Nor, as I take it, any single danger, But what concerns my place) tells me directly, Beside my person, my fair reputation, If I thrust into crowds, and seek occasions, Suffers opinion. Six? Why Hercules Avoided two, man: Yet, not to give example, But only for your present danger's sake, sir, Were there but four, sir, I cared not if I kill'd They'll serve to whet my sword. [them;]

*Mart.* There are but four, sir; I did mistake them: But four such as Europe, Excepting your great valour—

*Prot.* Well consider'd! I will not meddle with 'em; four, in honour, Are equal with four score: Besides, they are people Only directed by their fury.

*Mart.* So much nobler  
Shall be your way of justice.

*Prot.* That I find not.

*Mart.* You will not leave me thus?

*Prot.* I would not leave you; but, look you, sir, Men of my place and business must not Be question'd thus.

*Mart.* You cannot pass, sir, Now they have seen me with you, without danger: They are here, sir, within hearing. Take but two!

*Prot.* Let the law take 'em! take a tree, sir—I'll take my horse—that you may keep with safety, If they have brought no hand-saws. Within this hour

I'll send you rescue, and a toil to take 'em.

*Mart.* You shall not go so poorly. Stay! but one, sir!

*Prot.* I have been so hamper'd with these rescues, So hew'd and tortured, that the truth is, sir, I have mainly vow'd against 'em. Yet, for your sake,

If, as you say, there be but one, I'll stay And see fair play o' both sides.

*Mart.* There is no More, sir, and, as I doubt, a base one too.

*Prot.* Fy on him! Go, lug him out by th' ears!

*Mart.* Yes, this is he, sir; the basest in the kingdom. [Seizes him.]

*Prot.* Do you know me?

*Mart.* Yes, for a general fool, A knave, a coward, an upstart stallion bawd, Beast, barking puppy, that dares not bite.

*Prot.* The best man best knows patience.

*Mart.* Yes, This way, sir; now draw your sword, and right you, [Kicks him.]

Or render it to me; for one you shall do!

*Prot.* If wearing it may do you any honour, I shall be glad to grace you; there it is, sir!

*Mart.* Now get you home, and tell your lady mistress,

She has shot up a sweet mushroom! quit your place too,

And say you are counsell'd well; thou wilt be beaten else

By thine own lanceprisadoes, (when they know thee)

That tuns of oil of roses will not cure thee:

Go, get you to your foining work at court;

And learn to sweat again, and eat dry mutton!

An armour like a frost will search your bones

And make you roar, your rogue! not a reply,

For if you do, your ears go off!

*Prot.* Still patience!

[Exit.]

SCENE III.—PARIS. *A Hall in the Palace.*

*Loud Musick. A Banquet set out.*

*Enter THIERRY, ORDELLA, BRUNNALT, THEODORET, LECURE, BAWDBER, and Attendants.*

*Thi.* It is your place; and though in all things You may, and ever shall command me, yet [exit] In this I'll be obey'd.

*Ord.* Sir, the consent

That made me yours, shall never teach me to Repent I am so: Yet be you but pleas'd To give me leave to say so much: the honour You offer me were better given to her, To whom you owe the power of giving.

*Thi.* Mother,

You hear this, and rejoice in such a blessing That pays to you so large a share of duty.— But, fy! no more! for as you hold a place Nearer my heart than she, you must sit nearest To all those graces that are in the power Of majesty to bestow.

*Brun.* Which I'll provide [Aside] Shall be short-lived.—*Lecure!*

*Lec.* I have it ready.

*Brun.* 'Tis well; wait on our cup.

*Lec.* You honour me.

*Thi.* We are dull;

No object to provoke mirth?

*Theod.* Martell,

If you remember, sir, will grace your feast With something that will yield matter of mirth, Fit for no common view.

*Thi.* Touching Protaldye?

*Theod.* You have it.

*Brun.* What of him?—I fear his baseness, In spite of all the titles that my favours Have cloth'd him with, will make discovery Of what is yet conceal'd. [Aside.]

*Enter MARTELL, with PROTALDYE'S sword.*

*Theod.* Look, sir; he has it!

Nay, we shall have peace, when so great a soldier As the renown'd Protaldye will give up His sword, rather than use it.

*Brun.* 'Twas thy plot,

Which I will turn on thine own head! [Aside.]

*Thi.* Pray you speak;

How won you him to part from't?

*Mart.* Won him, sir?

He would have yielded it upon his knees, Before he would have hazarded the exchange Of a fillip of the forehead: Had you will'd me, I durst have undertook he should have sent you His nose, provided that the loss of it Might have saved the rest of his face. He is, sir,

The most unutterable coward that e'er nature  
Bless'd with hard shoulders; which were only  
To the ruin of bastinadoes. [given him

*Thi.* Possible?

*Theod.* Observe but how she frets!

*Mart.* Why, believe it,

But that I know the shame of this disgrace  
Will make the beast to live with such, and never  
Presume to come more among men, I'll hazard  
My life upon it, that a boy of twelve  
Should scourge him hither like a parish-top,  
And make him dance before you.

*Brun.* Slave, thou liest!

Thou dar'st as well speak treason in the hearing  
Of those that have the power to punish it,  
As the least syllable of this before him:  
But 'tis thy hate to me.

*Mart.* Nay, pray you, madam;  
I have no ears to hear you, though a foot  
To let you understand what he is.

*Brun.* Villain—

*Theod.* You are too violent.

*Enter PROTALDVE.*

*Prot.* The worst that can come  
Is blanketing; for beating, and such virtues,  
I have been long acquainted with.

*Mart.* Oh, strange!

*Baw.* Behold the man you talk of!

*Brun.* Give me leave!

Or free thyself—think in what place you are—  
From the foul imputation that is laid  
Upon thy valour—be bold; I'll protect you—  
Or here I vow—deny it or forswear it—  
These honours which thou wear'st unworthily—  
Which be but impudent enough, and keep them—  
Shall be torn from thee, with thy eyes.

*Prot.* I have it.—

My valour? is there any here, beneath  
The style of king, dares question it?

*Thi.* This is rare!

*Prot.* Which of my actions, which have still  
been noble,

Has render'd me suspected?

*Thi.* Nay, Martell,

You must not fall off.

*Mart.* Oh, sir, fear it not:—

Do you know this sword?

*Prot.* Yes.

*Mart.* 'Pray you on what terms

Did you part with it?

*Prot.* Part with it, say you?

*Mart.* So.

*Thi.* Nay, study not an answer; confess freely.

*Prot.* Oh, I remember't now: At the stag's fall,  
As we to-day were hunting, a poor fellow,  
(And, now I view you better, I may say  
Much of your pitch) this silly wretch I spoke of,  
With this petition falling at my feet,  
(Which much against my will he kiss'd) desired,  
That, as a special means for his preferment,  
I would vouchsafe to let him use my sword,  
To cut off the stag's head.

*Brun.* Will you hear that?

*Baw.* This lie bears a similitude of truth.

*Prot.* I, ever courteous (a great weakness in me),  
Granted his humble suit.

*Mart.* Oh, impudence!

*Thi.* This change is excellent.

*Mart.* A word with you:

Deny it not! I was that man disguised:  
You know my temper, and, as you respect  
A daily cudgelling for one whole year,  
Without a second pulling by the ears,  
Or tweaks by the nose, or the most precious balm  
You used of patience, (patience, do you mark me?)  
Confess before these kings with what base fear  
Thou didst deliver it.

*Prot.* Oh, I shall burst!

And if I have not instant liberty  
To tear this fellow limb by limb, the wrong  
Will break my heart, although Herculean,  
And somewhat bigger! There's my gage! pray  
Let me redeem my credit! [you here

*Thi.* Ha, ha! Forbear!

*Mart.* Pray you let me take it up; and if I  
do not,

Against all odds of armour and of weapons,  
With this make him confess it on his knees,  
Cut off my head.

*Prot.* No, that's my office.

*Baw.* Fy!

You take the hangman's place?

*Ord.* Nay, good my lord,

Let me atone this difference! do not suffer  
Our bridal night to be the centaur's feast.—  
You are a knight, and bound by oath to grant  
All just suits unto ladies: For my sake,  
Forget your suppos'd wrong!

*Prot.* Well, let him thank you!

For your sake, he shall live, perhaps a day;  
And, may be, on submission, longer.

*Theod.* Nay,

Martell, you must be patient.

*Mart.* I am yours;

And this slave shall be once more mine.

*Thi.* Sit all!

One health, and so to bed! for I too long

Defer my choicest delicacies.

*Brun.* Which, if poison [Aside.

Have any power, thou shalt, like Tantalus,  
Behold and never taste.—Be careful!

*Lec.* Fear not!

*Brun.* Though it be rare in our sex, yet for once  
I will begin a health.

*Thi.* Let it come freely!

*Brun.* Lecure, the cup! Here, to the son we hope  
This night shall be an embriion!

*Thi.* You have named

A blessing that I most desired; I pledge you:  
Give me a larger cup; that is too little  
Unto so great a good.

*Brun.* Nay, then you wrong me;

Follow as I began!

*Thi.* Well, as you please.

*Brun.* Is't done?

*Lec.* Unto your wish, I warrant you;

For this night I durst trust him with my mother.

*Thi.* So, 'tis gone round: Lights!

*Brun.* Pray you use my service.

*Ord.* 'Tis that which I shall ever owe you,  
madam,

And must have none from you: Pray you pardon

*Thi.* Good rest to all! [me!

*Theod.* And to you pleasant labour!—

Martell, your company!—Madam, good night!

[Exit all but BRUNHALT, PROTALDVE, LECURE, and  
BAWDEER.

*Brun.* Nay, you have cause to blush; but I will  
hide it,

And, what's more, I forgive you. Is't not pity,  
That thou, that art the first to enter combat  
With any woman, and what's more, o'ercome her,  
In which she is best pleased, should be so fearful  
To meet a man?

*Prot.* Why, would you have me lose  
That blood that's dedicated to your service,  
In any other quarrel?

*Brun.* No; reserve it!  
As I will study to preserve thy credit.—  
You, sirrah, be't your care to find out one  
That's poor, though valiant, that at any rate  
Will, to redeem my servant's reputation,  
Receive a public baffling.

*Baw.* 'Would your highness  
Were pleased to inform me better of your purpose!

*Brun.* Why one, sir, that would thus be box'd  
or kick'd; [Kicks him.]

Do you apprehend me now?

*Baw.* I feel you, madam.  
The man that shall receive this from my lord,  
Shall have a thousand crowns?

*Prot.* He shall.

*Baw.* Besides,  
His day of bastinadoing past o'er,  
He shall not lose your grace nor your good favour?

*Brun.* That shall make way to it.

*Baw.* It must be a man.

Of credit in the court, that is to be  
The foil unto your valour?

*Prot.* True, it should.

*Baw.* And if he have place there, 'tis not the

*Brun.* 'Tis much the better. [worse?]

*Baw.* If he be a lord,

'Twill be the greater grace?

*Brun.* Thou'rt in the right.

*Baw.* Why then, behold that valiant man and  
lord,

That for your sake will take a cudgelling:  
For be assured, when it is spread abroad  
That you have dealt with me, they'll give you out  
For one of the nine worthies.

*Brun.* Out, you pandar!

Why, to beat thee is only exercise  
For such as do affect it: Lose no time  
In vain replies, but do it!—Come, my solace,  
Let us to bed! and, our desires once quenched,  
We'll there determine of Theodoret's death,  
For he's the engine used to ruin us.—

Yet one word more; Lecure, art thou assured  
The potion will work?

*Lec.* My life upon it!

*Brun.* Come, my Protaldye, then glut me with  
Those best delights of man, that are denied  
To her that does expect them, being a bride!

[Exeunt.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—An Apartment in the same.

*Enter THIERRY and ORDELLA, as from bed.*

*Thi.* Sure I have drunk the blood of elephants!  
The tears of mandrakes, and the marble dew,  
Mix'd in my draught, have quenched my natural  
And left no spark of fire, but in mine eyes, [heat,  
With which I may behold my miseries:  
Ye wretched flames which play upon my sight,  
Turn inward! make me all one piece, though earth!  
My tears shall overwhelm you else too.

*Ord.* What moves my lord to this strange sadness?  
If any late-discerned want in me  
Give cause to your repentance, care and duty  
Shall find a painful way to recompense.

*Thi.* Are you yet frozen, veins? feel you a  
breath,  
Whose temperate heat would make the north star  
reel,

Her icy pillars thaw'd, and do you not melt?  
Draw nearer! yet nearer,  
That from thy barren kiss thou may'st confess  
I have not heat enough to make a blush!

*Ord.* Speak nearer to my understanding, like a  
husband!

*Thi.* How should he speak the language of a  
husband,  
Who wants the tongue and organs of his voice?

*Ord.* It is a phrase will part with the same ease  
From you, with that you now deliver.

*Thi.* Bind not his ears up with so dull a charm,  
Who hath no other sense left open! why should  
thy words

Find more restraint than thy free-speaking actions,  
Thy close embraces, and thy midnight sighs,  
The silent orators to slow desire?

*Ord.* Strive not to win content from ignorance,  
Which must be lost in knowledge! Heaven can  
witness,

My furthest hope of good reach'd at your pleasure,  
Which seeing alone may in your look be read:  
Add not a doubtful comment to a text,  
That in itself is direct and easy.

*Thi.* Oh, thou hast drunk the juice of hemlock  
Or did upbraided Nature make this pair, [too:  
To shew she had not quite forgot her first  
Justly-praised workmanship, the first chaste cou-  
Before the want of joy taught guilty sight [ple,  
A way, through shame and sorrow, to delight?  
Say, may we mix, as in their innocence,  
When turtles kiss'd to confirm happiness,  
Not to beget it?

*Ord.* I know no bar.

*Thi.* Should I believe thee, yet thy pulse beats  
woman,

And says the name of wife did promise thee  
The blest reward of duty to thy mother;  
Who gave so often witness of her joy,  
When she did boast thy likeness to her husband.

*Ord.* 'Tis true, that to bring forth a second  
to yourself

Was only worthy of my virgin loss;  
And should I prize you less unpatter'd, sir,  
Than being exempted? Is't not more honour  
To be possessor of unequal'd virtue,  
Than what is parallel'd? Give me belief;  
The name of mother knows no way of good,  
More than the end in me: Who weds for lust  
Is oft a widow; when I married you,  
I lost the name of maid to gain a title  
Above the wish of change, which that part can  
Only maintain, is still the same in man,

His virtue and his calm society ;  
Which no grey hairs can threaten to dissolve,  
Nor wrinkles bury.

*Thi.* Confine thyself to silence, lest thou take  
That part of reason from me, is only left  
To give persuasion to me I'm a man !  
Or say, thou hast never seen the rivers haste  
With gladsome speed, to meet the amorous sea.

*Ord.* We are but to praise the coolness of their  
streams.

*Thi.* Nor view'd the kids, taught by their lust-  
ful fires,

Pursue each other through the wanton lawns,  
And liked the sport.

*Ord.* As it made way unto their envied rest,  
With weary knots binding their harmless eyes.

*Thi.* Nor do you know the reason why the dove,  
One of the pair your hands wont hourly feed,  
So often clapt and kiss'd her happy mate ?

*Ord.* Unless it were to welcome his wish'd sight,  
Whose absence only gave her mourning voice.

*Thi.* And you could, dove-like, to a single object  
Bind your loose spirits ? to one ? nay, such a one  
Whom only eyes and ears must flatter good,  
Your surer sense made useless ? nay, myself,  
As in my all of good, already known ?

*Ord.* Let proof plead for me ! let me be mew'd  
up

Where never eye may reach me, but your own !  
And when I shall repent, but in my looks ; if sigh—

*Thi.* Or shed a tear that's warm ?

*Ord.* But in your sadness.

*Thi.* Or when you hear the birds call for their  
mates,

Ask if it be Saint Valentine, their coupling day ?

*Ord.* If anything may make a thought suspected  
Of knowing any happiness but you,  
Divorce me, by the title of Most Falsehood !

*Thi.* Oh, who would know a wife,  
That might have such a friend ? Posterity,  
Henceforth lose the name of blessing, and leave  
The earth inhabited to people Heaven !

*Enter THEODORET, BRUNHALT, MARTELL, and PROTALDYE.*

*Mart.* All happiness to Thierry and Ordella !

*Thi.* 'Tis a desire but borrow'd from me ; my  
happiness

Shall be the period of all good men's wishes,  
Which friends, nay, dying fathers shall bequeath,  
And in my one give all ! Is there a duty  
Belongs to any power of mine, or love  
To any virtue I have right to ? Here, place it here ;  
Ordella's name shall only bear command,  
Rule, title, sovereignty.

*Brun.* What passion aways my son ?

*Thi.* Oh, mother, she has doubled every good  
The travail of your blood made possible  
To my glad being !

*Prot.* He should have done [Aside.  
Little unto her, he is so light-hearted.

*Thi.* Brother, friends, if honour unto shame,  
If wealth to want, enlarge the present sense,  
My joys are unbounded : Instead of question,  
Let it be envy not [to] bring a present  
To the high offering of our mirth ! banquets and  
masques

Keep waking our delights, mocking night's malice,  
Whose dark brow would fright pleasure from us !  
Be but one stage of revels, and each eye [our court  
The scene where our content moves !

*Theod.* There shall want

Nothing to express our shares in your delight, sir.  
*Mart.* Till now I ne'er repented the estate  
Of widower.

*Thi.* Music, why art thou so  
Slow-voiced ? it stays thy presence, my Ordella ;  
This chamber is a sphere too narrow for  
Thy all-moving virtue. Make way, free way, I say !  
Who must alone her sex's want supply,  
Had need to have a room both large and high.

*Mart.* This passion's above utterance !

*Theod.* Nay, credulity.

[*Exeunt all but THIERRY and BRUNHALT.*

*Brun.* Why, son, what mean you ? are you a

*Thi.* No, mother, I'm no man : [man ?

Were I a man, how could I be thus happy ?

*Brun.* How can a wife be author of this joy  
then ?

*Thi.* That, being no man, I am married to no  
The best of men in full ability [woman :

Can only hope to satisfy a wife ;  
And, for that hope ridiculous, I in my want,  
And such defective poverty, that to her bed  
As my first cradle brought no strength but thought,  
Have met a temperance beyond her's that rock'd  
Necessity being her bar ; where this [me,  
Is so much senseless of my depriv'd fire,  
She knows it not a loss by her desire.

*Brun.* It is beyond my admiration !

*Thi.* Beyond your sex's faith !

The unripe virgins of our age, to hear it,  
Will dream themselves to women, and convert  
The example to a miracle.

*Brun.* Alas, 'tis your defect moves my amaze-  
ment ;

But what ill can be separate from ambition ?  
Cruel Theodoret !

*Thi.* What of my brother ?

*Brun.* That to his name your barrenness adds  
rule :

Who, loving the effect, would not be strange  
In favouring the cause : Look on the profit,  
And gain will quickly point the mischief out.

*Thi.* The name of father, to what I possess,  
Is shame and care.

*Brun.* Were we begot to single happiness,  
I grant you ; but from such a wife, such virtue,  
To get an heir, what hermit would not find  
Deserving argument to break his vow,  
Even in his age of chastity ?

*Thi.* You teach a deaf man language.

*Brun.* The cause found out, the malady may cease.  
Have you heard of one Leforte ?

*Thi.* A learn'd astronomer, a great magician,  
Who lives hard-by retired ?

*Brun.* Repair to him, with the just hour and  
Of your nativity : Fools are amazed at fate ; [place  
Griefs, but conceal'd, are never desperate.

*Thi.* You have timely waken'd me ; nor shall I  
sleep

Without the satisfaction of his art. [*Exit THIERRY.*

*Brun.* Wisdom prepares you to't.—

*Enter LECURE.*

Lezure, met happily !

*Lez.* The ground answers your purpose, the con-  
Being secure and easy, falling just [veyance  
Behind the state set for Theodoret.

*Brun.* 'Tis well :

Your trust invites you to a second charge ;  
You know Leforte's cell ?

*Lec.* Who constellated your fair birth ?

*Brun.* Enough ; I see thou know'st him ; where is Bawdber ?

*Lec.* I left him careful of the project cast To raise Protaldye's credit.

*Brun.* A sore that must be plaister'd ; in whose wound Others shall find their graves think themselves sound.

Your ear and quickest apprehension ! [Exit.]

*Enter BAWDBER and a Servant.*

*Baw.* This man of war will advance ?

*Lec.* His hour's upon the stroke.

*Baw.* Wind him back, as you favour my ears ! I love no noise in my head ; my brains have hitherto been employ'd in silent businesses.

*Enter DE VITRY.*

*Lec.* The gentleman's within your reach, sir.

*Baw.* Give ground, whilst I drill my wits to the encounter.—De Vitry, I take it ?

*Vitry.* All that's left of him.

*Baw.* Is there another parcel of you ? If it be at pawn, I will gladly redeem it, to make you wholly mine.

*Vitry.* You seek too hard a pennyworth.

*Baw.* You do ill to keep such distance ; your parts have been long known to me, howsoever you please to forget acquaintance.

*Vitry.* I must confess, I have been subject to lewd company.

*Baw.* Thanks for your good remembrance ! You have been a soldier, De Vitry, and borne arms.

*Vitry.* A couple of unprofitable ones, that have only served to get me a stomach to my dinner.

*Baw.* Much good may it do you, sir.

*Vitry.* You should have heard me say I had dined first : I have built on an unwholesome ground, raised up a house before I knew a tenant, marched to meet weariness, fought to find want and hunger.

*Baw.* 'Tis time you put up your sword, and run away for meat, sir : Nay, if I had not withdrawn ere now, I might have kept the fast with you : But since the way to thrive is never late, what is the nearest course to profit, think you ?

*Vitry.* It may be your workshop will say bawdry.

*Baw.* True sense, bawdry.

*Vitry.* Why, is there five kinds of 'em ? I ne'er knew but one.

*Baw.* I'll shew you a new way of prostitution : Fall back ! Further yet ! Further ! There's fifty crowns ; do but as much to Protaldye, the queen's favourite, they are doubled.

*Vitry.* But thus much ?

*Baw.* Give him but an affront as he comes to the presence, and in his drawing make way, like a true bawd to his valour, the sum's thy own ; if ye take a scratch in the arm or so, every drop of blood weighs down a ducat.

*Vitry.* After that rate, I and my friends would beggar the kingdom.

Sir, you have made me blush to see my want, Whose cure is such a cheap and easy purchase : This is male-bawdry, belike ?

*Enter PROTALDYE, a Lady, and Revellers.*

*Baw.* See ! You shall not be long earning your wages ; your work's before your eyes.

*Vitry.* Leave it to my handling ; I'll fall upon it instantly.

*Baw.* What opinion will the managing of this affair bring to my wisdom ! my invention tickles with apprehension on't !

*Prot.* These are the joys of marriage, lady, whose sights are able to dissolve virginity. Speak freely ! Do you not envy the bride's felicity ?

*Lady.* How should I, being partner of't ?

*Prot.* What you

Enjoy is but the banquet's view ; the taste Stands from your palate : If he impart by day So much of his content, think what night gave !

*Vitry.* Will you have a relish of wit, lady ?

*Baw.* This is the man.

*Lady.* If it be not dear, sir.

*Vitry.* If you affect cheapness, how can you prize this sullied ware so much ? Mine's fresh, my own, not retail'd.

*Prot.* You are saucy, sirrah !

*Vitry.* The fitter to be in the dish with such dry stockfish as you are. [*PROTALDYE strikes him.*] How ! strike ?

*Baw.* Remember the condition, as you look for payment !

*Vitry.* That box was left out o' th' bargain.

*[Gives him a box on the ear.]*

*Prot.* Help, help, help !

*Baw.* Plague of the scrivener's running hand ! What a blow's this to my reputation !

*Enter THIERRY, THEODORET, BRUNHALT, ORDELLA, MEMBERGE, and MARTELL.*

*Thi.* What villain dares this outrage ?

*Vitry.* Hear me, sir ! This creature hired me with fifty crown in hand, to let Protaldye have the better of me at single rapier on a made quarrel. He, mistaking the weapon, lays me over the chops with his club-fist, for which I was bold to teach him the art of memory.

*Omes.* Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Theod.* Your general, mother, will display him—Spite of our peace, I see. [self.]

*Thi.* Forbear these civil jars : Fy, Protaldye ! So open in your projects ?—Avoid our presence, sirrah !

*Vitry.* Willingly. If you have any more wages to earn, you see I can take pains.

*Theod.* There's somewhat for thy labour, More than was promised. Ha, ha, ha !

*Baw.* Where could I wish myself now ? in the Isle of Dogs, so I might 'scape scratching ; for I see by her cat's eyes I shall be claw'd fearfully.

*Thi.* We'll hear no more on't ; music drown all sadness ! [Soft music.]

Command the Revellers in.—At what a rate I would

Purchase my mother's absence, to give my spleen Full liberty !

*Brun.* Speak not a thought's delay ; it names thy ruin. [Apart to PROTALDYE.]

*Prot.* I had thought life had borne more value with you.

*Brun.* Thy loss carries mine with't ; let that secure thee !

The vault is ready, and the door conveys to't. Falls just behind his chair ; the blow once given, Thou art unseen.

*Prot.* I cannot feel more than I fear, I am sure.

*Brun.* Be gone, and let them laugh their own destruction ! [*PROTALDYE withdraws.*]

*Thi.* You'll add unto her rage.

*Theod.* 'Sfoot, I shall burst,

Unless I vent myself : Ha, ha, ha !

*Brun.* Me, sir ? [*To one of the Revellers.*]

You never could have found a time to invite

More willingness in my dispose to pleasure.

*Mem.* 'Would you would please to make some other choice !

*Rev.* 'Tis a disgrace would dwell upon me, lady, Should you refuse.

*Mem.* Your reason conquers.—My grandmother's looks [*Aside.*]

Have turn'd all air to earth in me ; they sit Upon my heart like night-charms, black and heavy.

*Thi.* You are too much libertine. [*They dance.*]

*Theod.* The fortune of the fool persuades my laughter

More than his cowardice : Was ever rat

Ta'en by the tail thus ? ha, ha, ha !

*Thi.* Forbear, I say !

*Prot.* [*Rises behind the Throne.*] No eye looks this way : I will wink and strike,

Let I betray myself.

[*Slabs THEODORET, and disappears.*]

*Theod.* Ha ! did you not see one near me ?

*Thi.* How ! near you ? why do you look so pale, brother ?

Treason, treason ! [*THEODORET dies.*]

*Mem.* Oh, my presage ! Father ?

*Ord.* Brother !

*Mart.* Prince, noble prince !

*Thi.* Make the gates sure ! search into every angle

And corner of the court ; oh, my shame !—Mother, Your son is slain ! Theodoret, noble Theodoret,

Here in my arms, too weak a sanctuary

'Gainst treachery and murder !—Say, is the traitor taken ?

1 *Guard.* No man hath past the chamber, on my life, sir.

*Thi.* Set present fire unto the place, that all unseen

May perish in this mischief ! who moves slow to't Shall add unto the flame.

*Brun.* What mean you ! give me your private hearing.

*Thi.* Persuasion is a partner in the crime :

I will renounce my claim unto a mother,

If you make offer on't.

*Brun.* Ere a torch can take flame,

I will produce the author of the fact.

*Thi.* Withdraw ! But for your lights—

*Mem.* Oh, my too-true suspicion !

[*Exeunt all but THIERRY and BRUNHELT.*]

*Thi.* Speak ! where's the engine to this horrid

*Brun.* Here you behold her ; upon whom [act ?

Make good your causeless rage ! The deed was By my incitement, and not yet repented. [done

*Thi.* Whither did Nature start, when you conceived

A birth so unlike woman ? Say, what part

Did not consent to make a son of him,

Reserved itself within you to his ruin ?

*Brun.* Ha, ha ! a son of mine ? do not dis sever

Thy father's dust, shaking his quiet urn,

To which thy breath would send so foul an issue.

My son ? thy brother ?

*Thi.* Was not Theodoret my brother ?

vol. II.

Or is thy tongue confederate with thy heart,  
To speak and do only things monstrous ?

*Brun.* Hear me, and thou shalt make thine own belief :

Thy still-with-sorrow-mention'd father lived  
Three careful years, in hope of wished heirs,  
When I conceived, being from his jealous fear  
Enjoin'd to quiet home : One fatal day,  
Transported with my pleasure to the chase,  
I forced command, and in pursuit of game  
Fell from my horse, lost both my child and hopes.  
Despair, which only in his love saw life  
Worthy of being, from a gard'ner's arms  
Snatch'd this unlucky brat, and call'd it mine ;  
When the next year repaid my loss with thee,  
But in thy wrongs preserved my misery ;  
Which, that I might diminish, though not end,  
My sighs and wet eyes, from thy father's will,  
Bequeathed this largest part of his dominions  
Of France unto thee, and only left Austracia  
Unto that changeling ; whose life affords  
Too much of ill 'gainst me to prove my words,  
And call him stranger.

*Thi.* Come, do not weep ! I must, nay do believe you ;

And, in my father's satisfaction, count it  
Merit, not wrong, or loss.

*Brun.* You do but flatter ;

There's anger yet flames in your eyes.

*Thi.* See, I will quench it, and confess that you  
Have suffer'd double travail for me.

*Brun.* You will not fire the house then ?

*Thi.* Rather reward the author who gave cause  
Of knowing such a secret ; my oath and duty  
Shall be assurance on't.

*Brun.* Protaldye, rise,  
Good faithful servant ! Heaven knows how hardly  
He was drawn to this attempt.

*PROTALDYE rises from the Trap-door.*

*Thi.* Protaldye ? He had  
A gard'ner's fate, I'll swear, fell by thy hand :  
Sir, we do owe unto you for this service.

*Brun.* Why look'st thou so dejected ?

*Prot.* I want a little  
Shift, lady ; nothing else.

*Enter MARTELL.*

*Mart.* The fires are ready ;  
Please it your grace withdraw, whilst we perform  
Your pleasure.

*Thi.* Reserve them for the body : Since  
He had the fate to live and die a prince,  
He shall not lose the title in his funeral. [*Exit.*]

*Mart.* His fate to live a prince ? Thou old  
Impiety,

Made up by lust and mischief ! Take up the body.  
[*Exeunt with the body of THEODORET.*]

### SCENE II.—A mean Hut.

*Enter LECURE, disguised as an Astrologer, and a Servant.*

*Lec.* Dost think Leforte's sure enough ?

*Serv.* As bonds

Can make him : I have turn'd his eyes to th' east,  
And left him gaping after the morning star.

His head is a mere astrolabe ; his eyes  
Stand for the poles, the gag in his mouth being  
The coachman, his five teeth have the nearest re-  
To Charles's Wain— [semblance

*Lec.* Thou hast cast a figure  
Which shall raise thee : Direct my hair a little ;  
And in my likeness to him read a fortune  
Suiting thy largest hopes.

*Serv.* You are so far 'bove likeness, you're the  
same ;

If you love mirth, persuade him from himself.  
'Tis but an astronomer out of the way,  
And lying will bear the better place for't.

*Lec.* I  
Have profitabler use in hand : Haste to  
The queen, and tell her how you left me changed !  
[Exit Servant.]

Who would not serve this virtuous active queen ?  
She that loves mischief 'bove the man that does it.  
And him above her pleasure ; yet knows no Hea-  
ven else.

*Enter THIERRY.*

*Thi.* How well this liveness suits the art I seek,  
Discovering secret and succeeding fate,  
Knowledge that puts all lower happiness on,  
With a remiss and careless hand !—  
Fair peace unto your meditations, father !

*Lec.* The same to you you bring, sir !

*Thi.* Drawn by your much-famed skill, I come  
to know

Whether the man who owes this character  
Shall e'er have issue.

*Lec.* A resolution falling with most ease  
Of any doubt you could have named ! He is a  
Whose fortune you enquire. [prince]

*Thi.* He's nobly born.

*Lec.* He had a dukedom lately fall'n unto him,  
By one, call'd brother, who has left a daughter.

*Thi.* The question is of heirs, not lands.

*Lec.* Heirs ? yes ;

He shall have heirs.

*Thi.* Begotten of his body ? Why look'st thou  
Thou canst not suffer in his want. [pale ?]

*Lec.* Nor thou ;  
I neither can nor will give further knowledge  
To thee.

*Thi.* Thou must ! I am the man myself,  
Thy sovereign ; who must owe unto thy wisdom  
In the concealing of my barren shame.

*Lec.* Your grace doth wrong your stars : If this  
You may have children. [be yours,

*Thi.* Speak it again !

*Lec.* You may have fruitful issue.

*Thi.* By whom ? when ? how ?

*Lec.* It was the fatal means first struck my blood  
With the cold hand of wonder, when I read it  
Printed upon your birth.

*Thi.* Can there be any way unsmooth, has end  
So fair and good ?

*Lec.* We that behold the sad aspects of Heaven,  
Leading sense-blinded men, feel grief enough  
To know, though not to speak their miseries.

*Thi.* Sorrow must lose a name, where mine finds  
life !

If not in thee, at least ease pain with speed,  
Which must know no cure else.

*Lec.* Then thus :

The first of females which your eyes shall meet  
Before the sun next rise, coming from out  
The temple of Diana, being slain,  
You live father of many sons. [Exit.]

*Thi.* Call'st thou this sadness ? can I beget a  
Deserving less, than to give recompense [son  
Unto so poor a loss ? Whate'er thou art,  
Rest peaceable, bless'd creature, born to be  
Mother of princes, whose grave shall be more  
fruitful

Than others' marriage-beds ! Methinks his art  
Should give her form and happy figure to me ;  
I long to see my happiness : He's gone !  
As I remember, he named my brother's daughter :  
Were it my mother, 'twere a gainful death !  
Could give Ordella's virtue living breath ! [Exit.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—Before the Temple of Diana.

*Enter THIERRY and MARTELL.*

*Mart.* Your grace is early stirring.

*Thi.* How can he sleep,

Whose happiness is laid up in an hour,  
He knows comes stealing toward him ? Oh,  
Martell !

Is't possible the longing bride, whose wishes  
Out-run her fears, can, on that day she's married,  
Consume in slumbers ? or his arms rust in ease,  
That hears the charge, and sees the honour'd  
purchase

Ready to gild his valour ? Mine is more,  
A power above these passions ; this day France  
(France, that in want of issue withers with us,  
And, like an aged river, runs his head  
Into forgotten ways) again I ransom,  
And his fair course turn right : This day, Thierry,  
The son of France, whose manly powers like pri-  
soners

Have been tied up, and fetter'd by one death  
Gives life to thousand ages ; this day beauty,  
The envy of the world, the pleasure, glory,

Content above the world, desire beyond it,  
Are made mine own, and useful !

*Mart.* Happy woman,  
That dies to do these things !

*Thi.* But ten times happier,  
That lives to do the greater ! Oh, Martell,  
The gods have heard me now ; and those that  
scorn'd me,

Mothers of many children, and bless'd fathers,  
That see their issues like the stars unnumber'd,  
Their comforts more than them, shall in my praises  
Now teach their infants songs ; and tell their ages  
From such a son of mine, or such a queen,  
That chaste Ordella brings me. Blessed marriage.  
The chain that links two holy loves together !  
And, in the marriage, more than bless'd Ordella,  
That comes so near the sacrament itself,  
The priests doubt whether purer !

*Mart.* Sir, you are lost !

*Thi.* I pr'ythee let me be so !

*Mart.* The day wears ;  
And those that have been offering early prayers,  
Are now retiring homeward.

*Thi.* Stand, and mark then !

*Mart.* Is it the first must suffer ?

*Thi.* The first woman.

*Mart.* What hand shall do it, sir ?

*Thi.* This hand, Martell ;

For who less dare presume to give the gods  
An incense of this offering ?

*Mart.* 'Would I were she !

For such a way to die, and such a blessing,  
Can never crown my parting. [*Two Men pass over.*]

*Thi.* What are those ?

*Mart.* Men, men, sir, men.

*Thi.* The plagues of men light on 'em !  
They cross my hopes like hares. Who's that ?  
[*A Priest passes over.*]

*Mart.* A priest, sir.

*Thi.* 'Would he were gelt !

*Mart.* May not these rascals serve, sir,  
Well hang'd and quarter'd ?

*Thi.* No.

*Mart.* Here comes a woman.

*Enter ORDELLA, veiled.*

*Thi.* Stand, and behold her then !

*Mart.* I think, a fair one.

*Thi.* Move not, whilst I prepare her : May her  
peace,  
(Like his whose innocence the gods are pleased  
with,

And, offering at their altars, gives his soul  
Far purer than those fires) pull heaven upon her !  
You holy powers, no human spot dwell in her !

No love of anything, but you and goodness,  
Tie her to earth ! Fear be a stranger to her,  
And all weak blood's affections, but thy hope,  
Let her bequeath to women ! Hear me, Heaven !  
Give her a spirit masculine, and noble,  
Fit for yourselves to ask, and me to offer !

Oh, let her meet my blow, dote on her death ;  
And as a wanton vine bows to the pruner,  
That by his cutting off more may increase,  
So let her fall to raise me fruit !—Hail, woman ;  
The happiest, and the best (if thy dull will  
Do not abuse thy fortune) France e'er found yet !

*Ord.* She's more than dull, sir, less, and worse  
than woman,

That may inherit such an infinite  
As you propound, a greatness so near goodness,  
And brings a will to rob her.

*Thi.* Tell me this then ;

Was there e'er woman yet, or may be found,  
That for fair fame, unspotted memory,  
For Virtue's sake, and only for itself-sake,  
Has, or dare make a story ?

*Ord.* Many dead, sir ;

Living, I think, as many.

*Thi.* Say, the kingdom

May from a woman's will receive a blessing,  
The king and kingdom, not a private safety,  
A general blessing, lady ?

*Ord.* A general curse

Light on her heart denies it !

*Thi.* Full of honour !

And such examples as the former ages  
Were but dim shadows of, and empty figures ?

*Ord.* You strangely stir me, sir ; and were  
my weakness

In any other flesh but modest woman's,  
You should not ask more questions : May I do it ?

*Thi.* You may ; and, which is more, you must.

*Ord.* I joy in't,

Above a moderate gladness ! Sir, you promise  
It shall be honest ?

*Thi.* As ever Time discover'd.

*Ord.* Let it be what it may then, what it dare,  
I have a mind will hazard it.

*Thi.* But, hark you ;

What may that woman merit, makes this blessing ?

*Ord.* Only her duty, sir.

*Thi.* 'Tis terrible !

*Ord.* 'Tis so much the more noble.

*Thi.* 'Tis full of fearful shadows !

*Ord.* So is sleep, sir,

Or anything that's merely ours, and mortal ;  
We were begotten gods else : But those fears,  
Feeling but once the fires of nobler thoughts,  
Fly, like the shapes of clouds we form, to nothing.

*Thi.* Suppose it death !

*Ord.* I do.

*Thi.* And endless parting

With all we can call ours, with all our sweetness,  
With youth, strength, pleasure, people, time, nay  
reason !

For in the silent grave, no conversation,  
No joyful tread of friends, no voice of lovers,  
No careful father's counsel, nothing's heard,  
Nor nothing is, but all oblivion,  
Dust and an endless darkness : And dare you,  
Desire this place ? [*woman,*]

*Ord.* 'Tis of all sleeps the sweetest :

Children begin it to us, strong men seek it,  
And kings from height of all their painted glories  
Fall, like spent exhalations, to this centre :  
And those are fools that fear it, or imagine  
A few unhandsome pleasures, or life's profits,  
Can recompense this place ; and mad that stay it,  
Till age blow out their lights, or rotten humours  
Bring them dispersed to th' earth.

*Thi.* Then you can suffer ?

*Ord.* As willingly as say it.

*Thi.* Martell, a wonder !

Here is a woman that dares die.—Yet, tell me,  
Are you a wife ?

*Ord.* I am, sir.

*Thi.* And have children ?—

She sighs, and weeps !

*Ord.* Oh, none, sir.

*Thi.* Dare you venture,

For a poor barren praise you ne'er shall hear,  
To part with these sweet hopes ?

*Ord.* With all but Heaven,

And yet die full of children : He that reads me  
When I am ashes, is my son in wishes ;  
And those chaste dames that keep my memory,  
Singing my yearly requiems, are my daughters.

*Thi.* Then there is nothing wanting but my  
And what I must do, lady. [*knowledge,*]

*Ord.* You are the king, sir,

And what you do I'll suffer ; and that blessing  
That you desire, the gods shower on the kingdom !

*Thi.* Thus much before I strike then ; for I must  
kill you,

The gods have will'd it so : Thou'rt made the  
blessing

Must make France young again, and me a man.  
Keep up your strength still nobly !

*Ord.* Fear me not.

*Thi.* And meet death like a measure !

*Ord.* I am steadfast.

*Thi.* Thou shalt be sainted, woman ; and thy  
tomb

Cut out in crystal, pure and good as thou art;  
And on it shall be graven, every age,  
Succeeding peers of France that rise by thy fall;  
Till thou liest there like old and fruitful Nature.  
Dar'st thou behold thy happiness?

*Ord.* I dare, sir.

*Thi.* Ha! [*Pulls off her veil, lets fall his sword.*]

*Mart.* Oh, sir, you must not do it.

*Thi.* No, I dare not!

There is an angel keeps that paradise,  
A fiery angel, friend. Oh, virtue, virtue,  
Ever and endless virtue!

*Ord.* Strike, sir, strike!

And if in my poor death fair France may merit,  
Give me a thousand blows! be killing me  
A thousand days!

*Thi.* First, let the earth be barren,  
And man no more remember'd! Rise, Ordella,  
The nearest to thy Maker, and the purest  
That ever dull flesh shew'd us!—Oh, my heart-  
strings! [*Exit.*]

*Mart.* I see you full of wonder; therefore no-  
And trust amongst women, I will tell you [*blest,*  
The end of this strange accident.

*Ord.* Amazement

Has so much won upon my heart, that truly  
I feel myself unfit to hear: Oh, sir,  
My lord has slighted me!

*Mart.* Oh, no, sweet lady.

*Ord.* Robb'd me of such a glory, by his pity  
And most unprovoked respect—

*Mart.* Dear lady,

It was not meant to you.

*Ord.* Else where the day is,  
And hours distinguish time, time runs to ages,  
And ages end the world, I had been spoken!

*Mart.* I'll tell you what it was, if but your  
Will give me hearing. [*patience*]

*Ord.* If I have transgress'd,  
Forgive me, sir!

*Mart.* Your noble lord was counselld  
(Grieving the barrenness between you both,  
And all the kingdom with him) to seek out  
A man that knew the secrets of the gods:  
He went, found such an one, and had this answer:  
That if he would have issue, on this morning,  
(For this hour was prefix'd him) he should kill  
The first he met being female, from the temple,  
And then he should have children: The mistake  
Is now too perfect, lady.

*Ord.* Still 'tis I, sir;

For may this work be done by common women?  
Durst any but myself, that knew the blessing,  
And felt the benefit, assume this dying?  
In any other, 't had been lost and nothing,  
A curse and not a blessing: I was figured;  
And shall a little fondness bar my purchase?

*Mart.* Where should he then seek children?

*Ord.* Where they are?

In wombs ordain'd for issues; in those beauties  
That bless a marriage-bed, and make it procreant  
With kisses that conceive, and fruitful pleasures:  
Mine, like a grave, buries those loyal hopes,  
And too a grave it covets.

*Mart.* You are too good,  
Too excellent, too honest! Rob not us,  
And those that shall hereafter seek example,  
Of such inestimable worths in woman,  
Your lord of such obedience, all of honour!  
In coveting a cruelty is not yours,

A will short of your wisdom, make not error  
A tombstone of your virtues, whose fair life  
Deserves a constellation! Your lord dare not,  
He cannot, ought not, must not run this hazard;  
He makes a separation Nature shakes at,  
The gods deny, and everlasting Justice  
Shrinks back, and sheaths her sword at.

*Ord.* All's but talk, sir!

I find to what I am reserved, and needful:  
And though my lord's compassion makes me poor,  
And leaves me in my best use, yet a strength  
Above mine own, or his dull fondness, finds me:  
The gods have given it to me. [*Draws a knife.*]

*Mart.* Self-destruction? [*Holds her.*]

Now all good angels bless thee! oh, sweet lady!  
You are abused; this is a way to shame you,  
And with you all that know you, all that love you:  
To ruin all you build! Would you be famous?  
Is that your end?

*Ord.* I would be what I should be.

*Mart.* Live, and confirm the gods then! live,  
and be loaden

With more than olives bear, or fruitful autumn!  
This way you kill your merit, kill your cause,  
And him you would raise life to; Where or how  
Got you these bloody thoughts? what devil durst  
Look on that angel face, and tempt? do you know  
What 'tis to die thus? how you strike the stars,  
And all good things above us? do you feel  
What follows a self-blood? whither you venture,  
And to what punishment? Excellent lady,  
Be not thus cozen'd! do not fool yourself!  
The priest was never his own sacrifice,  
But he that thought his hell here.

*Ord.* I am counselld.

*Mart.* And I am glad on't; lie, I know, you

*Ord.* I never have done yet. [*dare not.*]

*Mart.* Pray take my comfort!

Was this a soul to lose? two more such women  
Would save their sex. See, she repents and prays!  
Oh, hear her, hear her! if there be a faith  
Able to reach your mercies, she hath sent it.

*Ord.* Now, good Martell, confirm me!

*Mart.* I will, lady,

And every hour advise you; for I doubt  
Whether this plot be Heaven's, or Hell's your  
And I will find it, if it be in mankind [*mother,*  
To search the centre of it: In the mean time,  
I'll give you out for dead, and by yourself,  
And shew the instrument; so shall I find  
A joy that will betray her.

*Ord.* Do what's fittest;

And I will follow you.

*Mart.* Then ever live

Both able to engross all love, and give! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—An Apartment in the Palace.

*Enter BRUNHALT and PROTALDYR.*

*Brun.* I am in labour

To be deliver'd of that burthenous project  
I have so long gone with! Ha, here's the mid-  
Or life, or death? [*wife:—*]

*Enter LECURE.*

*Lec.* If in the supposition  
Of her death in whose life you die, you ask me,  
I think you are safe.

*Brun.* Is she dead?

*Lec.* I have used

All means to make her so; I saw him waiting  
At the temple door, and used such art within,  
That only she, of all her sex, was first  
Given up unto his fury.

*Brun.* Which if love

Or fear made him forbear to execute,  
The vengeance he determined his fond pity  
Shall draw it on himself; for were there left  
Not any man but he, to serve my pleasures,  
Or from me to receive commands, (which are  
The joys for which I love life) he should be  
Removed, and I alone left to be queen  
O'er any part of goodness that's left in me.

*Lec.* If you are so resolved, I have provided  
A means to ship him hence: Look upon this,  
But touch it sparingly; for this once used,  
Say but to dry a tear, will keep the eye-lid  
From closing, until Death perform that office.

*Brun.* Give 't me! I may have use of 't; and  
on you

I'll make the first experiment, if one sigh  
Or heavy look beget the least suspicion,  
Childish compassion can thaw the ice  
Of your so-long-congeal'd and flinty hardness  
'Slight, go on constant, or I shall—

*Pro.* Best lady,

We have no faculties which are not yours.

*Lec.* Nor will be anything without you.

*Brun.* Be so,

And we will stand or fall together; For  
Since we have gone so far, that Death must stay  
The journey, which we wish should never end,  
And innocent, or guilty, we must die;  
When we do so, let's know the reason why!

*Enter THIERRY and Courtiers.*

*Lec.* The king!

*Thi.* We'll be alone.

*Prot.* I would I had

A convoy too, to bring me safe off!  
For rage, although it be allayed with sorrow,  
Appears so dreadful in him, that I shake  
To look upon it.

*Brun.* Coward, I will meet it,

And know from whence't has birth.—Son! kingly  
Thierry!

*Thi.* Is cheating grown so common among men,  
And thrives so well here, that the gods endeavour  
To practise it above?

*Brun.* Your mother!

*Thi.* Ha!—

Or are they only careful to revenge,  
Not to reward? or when, for our offences,  
We study satisfaction, must the cure  
Be worse than the disease?

*Brun.* Will you not hear me?

*Thi.* To lose the ability to perform those duties  
For which I entertain'd the name of husband,  
Ask'd more than common sorrow; but to impose  
For the redress of that defect, a torture  
In marking her to death, (for whom alone  
I felt that weakness as a want) requires  
More than the making the head bald, or falling  
Thus flat upon the earth, or cursing that way,  
Or praying this. Oh, such a scene of grief,  
And so set down, (the world the stage to act on)  
May challenge a tragedian better practised  
Than I am, to express it! for my cause  
Of passion is so strong, and my performance

So weak, that though the part be good, I fear  
The ill acting of it will defraud it of  
The poor reward it may deserve, men's pity.

*Brun.* I have given you way thus long: A king,  
and, what

Is more, my son, and yet a slave to that  
Which only triumphs over cowards, sorrow?  
For shame, look up!

*Thi.* Is't you? look down on me!

And if that you are capable to receive it,  
Let that return to you, that have brought forth  
One mark'd out only for it!—What are these?  
Come they, upon your privilege, to tread on  
The tomb of my afflictions?

*Prot.* No, not we, sir.

*Thi.* How dare you then omit the ceremony  
Due to the funeral of all my hopes?

Or come unto the marriage of my sorrows,  
But in such colours as may sort with them?

*Prot.* Alas, we will wear anything.

*Brun.* This is madness!

Take but my counsel!

*Thi.* Yours? dare you again,

Though arm'd with the authority of a mother,  
Attempt the danger that will fall on you,  
If such another syllable awake it?

Go, and with yours be safe: I have such cause  
Of grief, (nay more, to love it) that I will not  
Have such as these be sharers in it.

*Lec.* Madam!

*Prot.* Another time were better.

*Brun.* Do not stir,

For I must be resolved, and will: Be statues!

*Enter MARTELL.*

*Thi.* Ay, thou art welcome; and upon my soul  
Thou art an honest man.—Do you see? he has  
To lend to him whom prodigal expence [tears  
Of sorrow has made bankrupt of such treasure!—  
Nay, thou dost well.

*Mart.* I would it might excuse

The ill I bring along!

*Thi.* Thou mak'st me smile

I' the height of my calamities: As if  
There could be the addition of an atom,  
To the giant body of my miseries!

But try; for I will hear thee.—All sit down! 'tis  
To any that shall dare to interrupt him [death  
In look, gesture, or word.

*Mart.* And such attention

As is due to the last, and the best story

That ever was deliver'd, will become you.

The griev'd Ordella (for all other titles  
But take away from that) having from me,  
Prompted by your last parting groan, enquired  
What drew it from you, and the cause soon learn'd;

For she whom barbarism could deny nothing,  
With such prevailing earnestness desired it,  
'Twas not in me, though it had been my death,  
To hide it from her: She, I say, in whom

All was, that Athens, Rome, or warlike Sparta,  
Have register'd for good in their best women,  
But nothing of their ill; knowing herself  
Mark'd out (I know not by what power, but sure

A cruel one) to die, to give you children;  
Having first with a settled countenance  
Look'd up to Heaven, and then upon herself,  
(It being the next best object) and then smiled,  
As if her joy in death to do you service  
Would break forth, in despite of the much sorrow

She shew'd she had to leave you ; and then taking Me by the hand, (this hand, which I must ever Love better than I have done, since she touch'd it) "Go," said she, "to my lord, (and to go to him Is such a happiness I must not hope for) And tell him that he too much prized a trifle Made only worthy in his love, and her Thankful acceptance, for her sake to rob The orphan kingdom of such guardians, as Must of necessity descend from him ; And therefore, in some part of recompense Of his much love, and to shew to the world That 'twas not her fault only, but her fate, That did deny to let her be the mother Of such most certain blessings : yet, for proof She did not envy her, that happy her, That is appointed to them, her quick end Should make way for her." Which no sooner spoke,

But in a moment this too-ready engine Made such a battery in the choicest castle That ever Nature made to defend life, That straight it shook and sunk.

*Thi.* Stay ! dares any Presume to shed a tear before me ? or Ascribe that worth unto themselves to merit, To do so for her ? I have done ; now on !

*Mart.* Fall'n thus, once more she smil'd, as if that Death

For her had studied a new way to sever The soul and body, without sense of pain ; And then, "Tell him," quoth she, "what you have seen,

And with what willing 'twas done ! for which My last request unto him is, that he Would instantly make choice of one (most happy In being so chosen) to supply my place ; By whom, if Heaven bless him with a daughter, In my remembrance let it bear my name !" Which said, she died.

*Thi.* I hear this, and yet live ! [Draws.  
Heart ! art thou thunder-proof ? will nothing break thee ?

She's dead ; and what her entertainment may be In the other world without me is uncertain ; And dare I stay here unresolved ?

*Mart.* Oh, sir !

*Brun.* Dear son !

*Prot.* Great king !

*Thi.* Unhand me ! am I fall'n

So low, that I have lost the power to be Disposer of my own life ?

*Mart.* Be but pleased

To borrow so much time of sorrow, as To call to mind her last request, for whom (I must confess a loss beyond expression) You turn your hand upon yourself ! 'twas hers, And dying hers, that you should live, and happy, In seeing little models of yourself, By matching with another : And will you Leave anything that she desired ungranted ? And suffer such a life, that was laid down For your sake only, to be fruitless ?

*Thi.* Oh,

Thou dost throw charms upon me, against which I cannot stop my ears : Bear witness, Heaven ! That not desire of life, nor love of pleasures, Nor any future comforts, but to give Peace to her blessed spirit, in satisfying Her last demand, makes me defer our meeting !

Which in my choice, and sudden choice, shall be To all apparent.

*Brun.* How ! do I remove one mischief, [Apert

To draw upon my head a greater ?

*Thi.* Go,

Thou only good man, to whom for herself Goodness is dear, and prepare to inter it In her that was ! Oh, my heart, my Ordella ! A monument worthy to be a casket Of such a jewel.

*Mart.* Your command, that makes way Unto my absence, is a welcome one ; For, but yourself, there's nothing here Martell Can take delight to look on : Yet some comfort Goes back with me to her, who, though she want it, Deserves all blessings. [Exit

*Brun.* So soon to forget The loss of such a wife, believe it, will Be censured in the world.

*Thi.* Pray you, no more !

There is no argument you can use to cross it, But does increase in me such a suspicion I would not cherish.—Who's that ?

*Enter MEMBERS.*

*Membr.* One no guard

Can put back from access, whose tongue no threats, Nor prayers can silence ! a bold suitor, and For that which, if you are yourself, a king, You were made so to grant it : Justice, justice !

*Thi.* With what assurance dare you hope for Which is denied to me ? or how can I [that  
Stand bound to be just unto such as are Beneath me, that find none from those that are Above me ?

*Membr.* There is justice : 'Twere unfit That anything but vengeance should fall on him, That, by his giving way to more than murder, (For my dear father's death was parricide) Makes it his own.

*Brun.* I charge you, hear her not !

*Membr.* Hell cannot stop just prayers from entering Heaven :

I must and will be heard !—Sir, but remember That he that by her plot fell, was your brother ; And the place where, your palace, against all The inviolable rights of hospitality ; Your word, a king's word, given for his safety ; His innocence, his protection ; and the gods Bound to revenge the impious breach of such So great and sacred bonds ! and can you wonder (That in not punishing such a horrid murder You did it) that Heaven's favour is gone from you ? Which never will return, until his blood Be wash'd away in hers.

*Brun.* Drag hence the wretch !

*Thi.* Forbear.—With what variety Of torments do I meet ! Oh, thou hast open'd A book, in which, writ down in bloody letters, My conscience finds that I am worthy of More than I undergo ; but I'll begin, For my Ordella's sake, and for thine own, To make less Heaven's great anger : Thou hast A father ; I to thee am so : The hope [lost  
Of a good husband ; in me have one ! Nor Be fearful I am still no man ; already That weakness is gone from me.

*Brun.* That it might [Aside  
Have ever grown inseparably upon thee !—

What will you do? Is such a thing as this  
Worthy the loved Ordella's place? the daughter  
Of a poor gardener?

*Memb.* Your son!

*Thi.* The power

To take away that lowness is in me.

*Brun.* Stay yet; for rather than that thou shalt  
Incest unto thy other sins, I will, [add

With hazard of my own life, utter all :

Theodoret was thy brother.

*Thi.* You denied it,

Upon your oath; nor will I now believe you:  
Your Protean turnings cannot change my purpose!

*Memb.* And for me, be assured the means to be  
Revenge'd on thee, vile hag, admits no thought  
But what tends to it!

*Brun.* Is it come to that?

Then have at the last refuge!—Art thou grown

Insensible in ill, that thou goest on

Without the least compunction? There, take that!

[Gives him a handkerchief.]

To witness that thou hadst a mother, which  
Foresaw thy cause of grief and sad repentance,

That, so soon after bless'd Ordella's death,  
Without a tear, thou canst embrace another!  
Forgetful man!

*Thi.* Mine eyes, when she is named,  
Cannot forget their tribute, and your gift  
Is not unuseful now.

*Lec.* He's past all cure;

That only touch is death.

*Thi.* This night I'll keep it;

To-morrow I will send it you, and full  
Of my affliction.

[Exit.]

*Brun.* Is the poison mortal?

*Lec.* Above the help of physic.

*Brun.* To my wish.

Now for our own security! You, Protaldye,  
Shall this night post towards Austracia,  
With letters to Theodoret's bastard son,  
In which we will make known what for his rising  
We have done to Thierry: No denial,  
Nor no excuse in such acts, must be thought of;  
Which all dislike, and all again commend  
When they are brought unto a happy end.

[Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—Night. *A Forest.*

*Enter De Vrray and four Soldiers.*

*Vitry.* No war, no money, no master! banish'd  
the court, not trusted in the city, whipt out of the  
country, in what a triangle runs our misery! Let  
me hear which of you has the best voice to beg in,  
for other hopes or fortunes I see you have not.  
Be not nice; Nature provided you with tones for  
the purpose; the people's charity was your heri-  
tage, and I would see which of you deserves his  
birthright.

*All.* We understand you not, captain.

*Vitry.* You see this cardecue; the last, and the  
only quintessence of fifty crowns, distill'd in the  
limbeck of your garge, of which happy piece  
thou shalt be treasurer: Now he that can soonest  
persuade him to part with it, enjoys it, possesses  
it, and, with it, me and my future countenance.

1 *Sold.* If they want art to persuade it, I'll keep  
it myself.

*Vitry.* So you be not a partial judge in your own  
cause, you shall.

*All.* A match!

2 *Sold.* I'll begin to you: Brave sir, be proud to  
make him happy by your liberality, whose tongue  
vouchsafes now to petition, was never heard be-  
fore less than to command. I am a soldier by  
profession, a gentleman by birth, and an officer by  
place; whose poverty blushes to be the cause, that  
so high a virtue should descend to the pity of your  
charity.

1 *Sold.* In any case keep your high style! It is  
not charity to shame any man, much less a virtue  
of your eminence; wherefore preserve your worth,  
and I'll preserve my money.

3 *Sold.* You persuade? You are shallow! Give  
way to merit: Ah, by the bread of God, man, thou  
hast a bonny countenance and a blithe, promising  
mickle good to a siking wemb, that has trod a long  
and a sore ground to meet with friends, that will

owe much to thy reverence, when they shall hear  
of thy courtesy to their wandering countrymen.

1 *Sold.* You that will use your friends so hardly  
to bring them in debt, sir, will deserve worse of a  
stranger; wherefore, pead on, pead on, I say!

4 *Sold.* It is the Welsh must do't, I see.—  
Comrade, man of urship, St. Tavy be her patron,  
the gods of the mountains keep her cow and her  
cupboard; may she never want the green of the  
leek, nor the fat of the onion, if she part with her  
bounties to him, that is a great deal away from her  
cousins, and has two big suits in law to recover  
her heritage!

1 *Sold.* Pardon me, sir; I will have nothing to  
do with your suits; it comes within the statute of  
maintenance. Home to your cousins, and sow  
garlick and hempseed! the one will stop your  
hunger, the other end your suits: *Gammawash,*  
*comrade, gammawash!*

4 *Sold.* 'Foot, he'll hoord all for himself.

*Vitry.* Yes, let him: Now comes my turn; I'll  
see if he can answer me: Save you, sir! they say  
you have that I want, money.

1 *Sold.* And that you are like to want, for aught  
I perceive yet.

*Vitry.* Stand, deliver!

1 *Sold.* 'Foot, what mean you? You will not  
rob the exchequer?

*Vitry.* Do you prate?

1 *Sold.* Hold, hold! here, captain!

2 *Sold.* Why, I could have done this before  
you.

3 *Sold.* And I.

4 *Sold.* And I.

*Vitry.* You have done this: "Brave man, be  
proud to make him happy!" "By the bread of  
God, man, thou hast a bonny countenance!"  
"Comrade, man of urship, St. Tavy be her patron!"  
Out upon you, you uncurried colts! walking cans,  
that have no souls in you, but a little rosin to keep  
your ribs sweet, and hold in liquor!

*All.* Why, what would you have us to do, captain?

*Vitry.* Beg, beg, and keep constables waking, wear out stocks and whipcord, maunder for butter-milk, die of the jaundice, yet have the cure about you, lice, large lice, begot of your own dust, and the heat of the brick-kilns! May you starve, and fear of the gallows (which is a gentle consumption to it) only prevent it! or may you fall upon your fear, and be hang'd for selling those purses to keep you from famine, whose monies my valour empties, and be cast without other evidence! Here is my fort, my castle of defence! who comes by shall pay me toll; the first purse is your mittimus, slaves.

*2 Sold.* The purse? 'foot, we'll share in the money, captain, if any come within a furlong of our fingers.

*4 Sold.* Did you doubt but we could steal as well as yourself? Did not I speak Welsh?

*3 Sold.* We are thieves from our cradles, and will die so.

*Vitry.* Then you will not beg again?

*All.* Yes, as you did; "Stand and deliver!"

*2 Sold.* Hark! here comes handsel: 'Tis a trade quickly set up, and as soon cast down.

*Vitry.* Have goodness in your minds, varlets, and to't like men: He that has more money than we cannot be our friend, and I hope there is no law for spoiling the enemy.

*3 Sold.* You need not instruct us further; your example pleads enough.

*Vitry.* Disperse yourselves; and as their company is, fall on!

*2 Sold.* Come, there are a band of 'em; I'll charge single. [*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

*Enter PROTALDYR.*

*Prot.* 'Tis wonderful dark! I have lost my man, and dare not call for him, lest I should have more followers than I would pay wages to. What throes am I in, in this travel! These be honourable adventures! had I that honest blood in my veins again, queen, that your feats and these frights have drain'd from me, honour should pull hard, ere it drew me into these brakes.

*Vitry.* Who goes there?

*Prot.* Hey-ho! Here's a pang of preferment!

*Vitry.* 'Heart, who goes there?

*Prot.* He that has no heart to your acquaintance. What shall I do with my jewels and my letter? My codpiece, that's too loose; good, my boots!—Who is't that spoke to me? Here's a friend.

*Vitry.* We shall find that presently: Stand, as you love your safety, stand!

*Prot.* That unlucky word of standing has brought me to all this.—Hold, or I shall never stand you.

*Vitry.* I should know that voice. Deliver!

*Enter Soldiers.*

*Prot.* All that I have is at your service, gentlemen; and much good may it do you!

*Vitry.* Zoons, down with him! Do you prate?

*Prot.* Keep your first word, as you are gentlemen, and let me stand! alas, what do you mean?

*2 Sold.* To tie you to us, sir, bind you in the knot of friendship. [*They tie him to a tree.*]

*Prot.* Alas, sir, all the physic in Europe cannot bind me.

*Vitry.* You should have jewels about you, stones, precious stones.

*1 Sold.* Captain, away! There's company within hearing; if you stay longer, we are surpris'd.

*Vitry.* Let the devil come, I'll pillage this frigate a little better yet!

*2 Sold.* 'Foot, we are lost! they are upon us.

*Vitry.* Ha! upon us? make the least noise, 'tis thy parting gasp!

*3 Sold.* Which way shall we make, sir?

*Vitry.* Every man his own! Do you hear? only bind me before you go, and when the company's past, make to this place again: This carvel should have better lading in him. You are slow; why do you not tie harder? [*He is tied to a tree.*]

*1 Sold.* You are sure enough, I warrant you, sir.

*Vitry.* Darkness befriend you! away!

[*Exeunt Soldiers.*]

*Prot.* What tyrants have I met with! they leave me alone in the dark, yet would not have me cry. I shall grow wondrous melancholy, if I stay long here without company: I was wont to get a nap with saying my prayers; I'll see if they will work upon me now. But then if I should talk in my sleep, and they hear me, they would make a recorder of my windpipe, slit my throat. Heaven be praised! I hear some noise; it may be new purchase, and then I shall have fellows.

*Vitry.* They are gone past hearing: Now to task, De Vitry!—Help, help, as you are men, help! some charitable hand, relieve a poor distressed miserable wretch! Thieves, wicked thieves, have robbed me, bound me.

*Prot.* 'Foot, 'would they had gagged you too! your noise will betray us, and fetch them again.

*Vitry.* What blessed tongue spake to me? where, where are you, sir?

*Prot.* A plague of your hawling throat! We are well enough, if you have the grace to be thankful for't. Do but snore to me, and 'tis as much as I desire, to pass away time with, till morning; then talk as loud as you please. Sir, I am bound not to stir, wherefore, lie still and snore, I say.

*Vitry.* Then you have met with thieves, too, I see.

*Prot.* And desire to meet with no more of them.

*Vitry.* Alas, what can we suffer more? They are far enough by this time; have they not all, all that we have, sir?

*Prot.* No, by my faith, have they not, sir! I gave them one trick to boot for their learning: My boots, sir, my boots! I have saved my stock, and my jewels in them, and therefore desire to hear no more of them.

*Vitry.* Now blessing on your wit, sir! what a dull slave was I, dream'd not of your conveyance? Help to unbind me, sir, and I'll undo you; my life for yours, no worse thief than myself meets you again this night!

*Prot.* Reach me thy hands!

*Vitry.* Here, sir, here; I could beat my brains out, that could not think of boots, boots, sir, wide-topt boots; I shall love them them the better whilst I live. But are you sure your jewels are here, sir?

*Prot.* Sure, sayst thou? ha, ha, ha!

*Vitry.* So ho, illo ho!

*Sold.* [*Within.*] Here, captain, here.

*Prot.* 'Foot, what do you mean, sir?

*Enter Soldiers.*

*Vitry.* A trick to boot, say you? Here, you dull slaves, purchase, purchase! The soul of the rock, diamonds, sparkling diamonds!

*Prot.* I am betrayed, lost, past recovery, lost! As you are men—

*Vitry.* Nay, rook, since you will be prating, we will share your carrion with you. Have you any other conveyance now, sir?

*1 Sold.* 'Foot, here are letters, epistles, familiar epistles: We'll see what treasure is in them. They are sealed sure.

*Prot.* Gentlemen! as you are gentlemen, spare my letters, and take all willingly, all! I'll give you a release, a general release, and meet you here tomorrow with as much more.

*Vitry.* Nay, since you have your tricks, and your conveyances, we will not leave a wrinkle of you unsearch'd.

*Prot.* Hark! there comes company; you will be betrayed. As you love your safeties, beat out my brains; I shall betray you else.

*Vitry.* [*Reads the letters.*] Treason, unheard-of treason! monstrous, monstrous villainies!

*Prot.* I confess myself a traitor; shew yourselves good subjects, and hang me up for't.

*1 Sold.* If it be treason, the discovery will get our pardon, captain.

*Vitry.* 'Would we were all lost, hang'd, quarter'd, to save this one, one innocent prince! Thierry's poisoned, by his mother poisoned, the mistress to this stallion! who, by that poison, never shall sleep again!

*2 Sold.* 'Foot, let us mince him by piece-meal, till he eat himself up.

*3 Sold.* Let us dig out his heart with needles, and half broil him, like a mussel!

*Prot.* Such another and I prevent you; my blood's settled already.

*Vitry.* Here's that shall remove it! Toad, viper! Drag him unto Martell! Unnatural parricide! cruel, bloody woman!

*All.* On, you dog-fish, leech, caterpillar!

*Vitry.* A longer sight of him will make my rage turn pity, and with his sudden end prevent revenge and torture! Wicked, wicked Brunhalt!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—PARIS. *A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter DAUBER and three Courtiers.*

*1 Cour.* Not sleep at all? no means?

*2 Cour.* No art can do it?

*Baw.* I will assure you, he can sleep no more Than a hooded hawk; a sentinel to him, Or one of the city constables, are tops.

*3 Cour.* How came he so?

*Baw.* They are too wise that dare know; Something's amiss: Heaven help all!

*1 Cour.* What cure has he?

*Baw.* Armies of those we call physicians; Some with clisters, some with lettuce-caps, Some posset drinks, some pills; twenty consulting here

About a drench, as many here to blood him: Then comes a don of Spain, and he prescribes More cooling opium than would kill a Turk, Or quench a whore i' th' dog-days; after him, A wise Italian, and he cries, "Tie unto him

A woman of fourscore, whose bones are marble, Whose blood snow-water, not so much heat about As may conceive a prayer!" After him, [An English doctor, with a bunch of pot-herbs, And he cries out, "Endive and suckery, With a few mallow-roots and butter-milk!" And talks of oil made of a churchman's charity; Yet still he wakes.

*1 Cour.* But your good honour has a prayer in If all should fail?

*Baw.* I could have pray'd, and handsomely, but And an ill memory—

*3 Cour.* Has spoil'd your primmer.

*Baw.* Yet if there be a man of faith i' th' court, And can pray for a pension—

*THIERRY is brought in on a bed, with Doctors and Attendants.*

*2 Cour.* Here's the king, sir; And those that will pray without pay.

*Baw.* Then pray for me too.

*1 Doctor.* How does your grace now feel your-  
*Thi.* What's that? [self?]

*1 Doctor.* Nothing at all, sir, but your fancy.

*Thi.* Tell me,

Can ever these eyes more, shut up in slumbers, Assure my soul there is sleep? is there night And rest for human labours? do not you And all the world, as I do, out-stare Time, And live, like funeral lamps, never extinguish'd? Is there a grave? (and do not flatter me, Nor fear to tell me truth) and in that grave Is there a hope I shall sleep? can I die? Are not my miseries immortal? Oh, The happiness of him that drinks his water, After his weary day, and sleeps for ever! Why do you crucify me thus with faces, And gaping strangely upon one another! When shall I rest?

*2 Doctor.* Oh, sir, be patient!

*Thi.* Am I not patient? have I not endured More than a mangy dog, among your doses? Am I not now your patient? Ye can make Unwholesome fools sleep for a guarded footcloth; Whores for a hot sin-offering; yet I must crave, That feed ye, and protect ye, and proclaim ye. Because my power is far from your searching, Are my diseases so? can ye cure none But those of equal ignorance? Dare ye kill me?

*1 Doctor.* We do beseech your grace be more reclaim'd!

This talk doth but distemper you.

*Thi.* Well, I will die,

In spite of all your potions! One of you sleep; Lie down and sleep here, that I may behold What blessed rest it is my eyes are robb'd of!— See; he can sleep, sleep any where, sleep now, When he that wakes for him can never slumber! Is't not a dainty ease?

*2 Doctor.* Your grace shall feel it.

*Thi.* Oh, never, never I! The eyes of Heaven See but their certain motions, and then sleep: The rages of the ocean have their slumbers, And quiet silver calms; each violence Crowns in his end a peace; but my fix'd fires Shall never, never set!—Who's that?

*Enter MARTELL, BRUNHALT, DE VITRY, and Soldiers.*

*Mart.* No, woman, Mother of mischief, no! the day shall die first,

And all good things live in a worse than thou art,  
Ere thou shalt sleep! Dost thou see him?

*Brun.* Yes, and curse him;

And all that love him, fool, and all live by him.

*Mart.* Why art thou such a monster?

*Brun.* Why art thou

So tame a knave to ask me?

*Mart.* Hope of hell,

By this fair holy light, and all his wrongs,  
Which are above thy years, almost thy vices,  
Thou shalt not rest, not feel more what is pity,  
Know nothing necessary, meet no society  
But what shall curse and crucify thee, feel in  
thyself

Nothing but what thou art, bane and bad con-  
science,

Till this man rest; but for whose reverence,  
Because thou art his mother, I would say,  
Whore, this shall be! Do you nod? I'll waken you  
With my sword's point.

*Brun.* I wish no more of Heaven,  
Nor hope no more, but a sufficient anger  
To torture thee!

*Mart.* See, she that makes you see, sir!

And, to your misery, still see your mother,  
The mother of your woes, sir, of your waking,  
The mother of your people's cries and curses,  
Your murdering mother, your malicious mother!

*Thi.* Physicians, half my state to sleep an hour  
Is it so, mother? [now!—

*Brun.* Yes, it is so, son;  
And, were it yet again to do, it should be.

*Mart.* She nods again; swing her!

*Thi.* But, mother,

(For yet I love that reverence, and to death  
Dare not forget you have been so) was this,  
This endless misery, this careless malice,  
This snatching from me all my youth together,  
All that you made me for, and happy mothers  
Crown'd with eternal time are proud to finish,  
Done by your will?

*Brun.* It was, and by that will—

*Thi.* Oh, mother, do not lose your name!  
forget not

The touch of Nature in you, tenderness!  
'Tis all the soul of woman, all the sweetness:  
Forget not, I beseech you, what are children,  
Nor how you have groan'd for them; to what love  
They are born inheritors, with what care kept;  
And, as they rise to ripeness, still remember  
How they imp out your age! and when Time calls  
you,

That as an autumn flower you fall, forget not  
How round about your ears they hang, like

*Brun.* Holy fool, [penons!

Whose patience to prevent my wrongs has kill'd  
thee,

Preach not to me of punishments or fears,  
Or what I ought to be; but what I am,  
A woman in her liberal will defeated,  
In all her greatness cross'd, in pleasure blasted!  
My angers have been laugh'd at, my ends slighted,  
And all those glories that had crown'd my fortunes,  
Suffer'd by blasted Virtue to be scatter'd:  
I am the fruitful mother of these angers,  
And what such have done, read, and know thy

*Thi.* Heaven forgive you! [ruin!

*Mart.* She tells you true; for millions of her  
mischiefs

Are now apparent: Protaldye we have taken,

An equal agent with her, to whose care,  
After the damn'd defeat on you, she trusted  
The bringing-in of Leonor the bastard,  
Son to your murder'd brother: Her physician  
By this time is attach'd too, that damn'd devil!

*Enter Messenger.*

*Mess.* 'Tis like he will be so; for ere we came,  
Fearing an equal justice for his mischiefs,  
He drench'd himself.

*Brun.* He did like one of mine then!

*Thi.* Must I still see these miseries? no night  
To hide me from their horrors? That Protaldye  
See justice fall upon!

*Brun.* Now I could sleep too.

*Mart.* I'll give you yet more poppy; Bring the  
lady,  
And Heaven in her embraces give him quiet!

*Enter ORDELLA.*

Madam, unveil yourself.

*Ord.* I do forgive you;

And though you sought my blood, yet I'll pray for  
*Brun.* Art thou alive? [you.

*Mart.* Now could you sleep?

*Brun.* For ever.

*Mart.* Go carry her without wink of sleep, or  
quiet,  
Where her strong knave Protaldye's broke o' th'  
wheel,

And let his cries and roars be music to her!  
I mean to waken her.

*Thi.* Do her no wrong!

*Mart.* No, right, as you love justice!

*Brun.* I will think;

And if there be new curses in old nature,  
I have a soul dare send them!

*Mart.* Keep her waking!

[Exit BRUNHALT with a Guard.

*Thi.* What's that appears so sweetly? There's  
that face—

*Mart.* Be moderate, lady!

*Thi.* That's angel's face—

*Mart.* Go nearer.

*Thi.* Martell, I cannot last long! See the soul  
(I see it perfectly) of my Ordella,  
The heavenly figure of her sweetness, there!  
Forgive me, gods! it comes! Divinest substance!  
Kneel, kneel, kneel, every one! Saint of thy sex!  
If it be for my cruelty thou comest—  
Do ye see her, hoa?

*Mart.* Yes, sir; and you shall know her.

*Thi.* Down, down again!—To be revenged for  
blood!

Sweet spirit, I am ready. She smiles on me!

Oh, blessed sign of peace!

*Mart.* Go nearer, lady.

*Ord.* I come to make you happy.

*Thi.* Hear you that, sirs?

She comes to crown my soul: Away, get sacrifice!  
Whilst I with holy honours—

*Mart.* She is alive, sir.

*Thi.* In everlasting life; I know it, friend:

Oh, happy, happy soul!

*Ord.* Alas, I live, sir;

A mortal woman still.

*Thi.* Can spirits weep too?

*Mart.* She is no spirit, sir; pray kiss her.  
Lady,

Be very gentle to him!

*Thi.* Stay!—She is warm;

And, by my life, the same lips! Tell me, bright-  
Are you the same Ordella still? [ness,

*Mart.* The same, sir,  
Whom Heavens and my good angel stay'd from  
*Thi.* Kiss me again! [ruin.

*Ord.* The same still, still your servant.  
*Thi.* 'Tis she! I know her now, Martell. Sit  
down, sweet!

Oh, bless'd and happiest woman!—A dead slumber  
Begins to creep upon me: Oh, my jewel!

*Ord.* Oh, sleep, my lord!  
*Thi.* My joys are too much for me!

*Enter Messenger and MEMBERG.*

*Mess.* Brunbalt, impatient of her constraint to  
Portaldye tortured, has choak'd herself. [see

*Mart.* No more!  
Her sins go with her!

*Thi.* Love, I must die; I faint:  
Close up my glasses!

*1 Doctor.* The queen faints too, and deadly.  
*Thi.* One dying kiss!

*Ord.* My last, sir, and my dearest!  
And now, close my eyes too!

*Thi.* Thou perfect woman!—  
Martell, the kingdom's yours: Take Memberge to  
you,

And keep my line alive!—Nay, weep not, lady!  
Take me! I go. [Dies.

*Ord.* Take me too! Farewell, Honour! [Dies.  
*2 Doctor.* They are gone for ever.

*Mart.* The peace of happy souls go after them!  
Bear them unto their last beds, whilst I study  
A tomb to speak their loves whilst old Time lasteth.  
I am your king in sorrows.

*All.* We your subjects!  
*Mart.* De Vitry, for your services, be near us!  
Whip out these instruments of this mad mother

From court, and all good people; and, because  
She was born noble, let that title find her  
A private grave, but neither tongue nor honour!  
And now lead on! They that shall read this story,  
Shall find that Virtue lives in good, not glory.  
[Exeunt.

#### EPILOGUE.

OUR poet knows you will be just; but we  
Appeal to mercy; he desires that ye  
Would not distaste his muse, because of late  
Transplanted; which would grow here if no fate  
Have an unlucky 'bode: Opinion  
Comes hither but on crutches yet, the sun  
Hath lent no beam to warm us; if this play  
Proceed more fortunate, we'll crown the day  
And love that brought you hither. 'Tis in you  
To make a little sprig of laurel grow,  
And spread into a grove, where you may sit  
And hear soft stories, when by blasting it  
You gain no honour, though our ruins lye  
To tell the spoils of your offended eye:  
If not for what we are, (for, alas, here  
No Roscius moves to charm your eyes or ear!)  
Yet as you hope hereafter to see plays,  
Encourage us, and give our poet bays.

# THE WOMAN-HATER.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF MILAN, *in love with ORIANA.*  
COUNT VALORE.  
GONDARINO, *the Woman-Hater.*  
ARRIGO, *a Courtier.*  
LUCIO, *a weak formal Statesman.*  
LAZARILLO, *a voluptuous Smell-Feast.*  
Boy, LAZARILLO'S Servant.  
Mercer, *a Dupe, and an affected Admirer of Learning.*  
Pandar.  
Two Intelligencers.  
Secretary to LUCIO.

Gentleman.  
Servants, &c.  
Page.  
*The Mercer's Prentice.*

ORIANA, *Sister to VALORE.*  
JULIA,  
FRANCISINA, } *Two Courtezans.*  
*A Deaf Gentlewoman.*  
Ladies.  
Maid.

SCENE,—MILAN.

## PROLOGUE.

GENTLEMEN, inductions are out of date, and a Prologue in verse is as stale as a black velvet cloak and a bay garland; therefore you shall have it in plain prose, thus: If there be any amongst you that come to hear lascivious scenes, let them depart; for I do pronounce this, to the utter discomfort of all two-penny gallery-men, you shall have no bawdry in it: Or if there be any lurking amongst you in corners, with table-books, who have some hope to find fit matter to feed his—malice on, let them clasp them up, and slink away, or stay and be converted. For he that made this play means to please auditors so, as he may be an auditor himself hereafter, and not purchase them with the dear loss of his ears. I dare not call it comedy or tragedy; 'tis perfectly neither: A play it is,

which was meant to make you laugh; how it will please you, is not written in my part: For though you should like it to-day, perhaps yourselves know not how you should digest it to-morrow. Some things in it you may meet with, which are out of the common road: A duke there is, and the scene lies in Italy, as those two things lightly we never miss. But you shall not find in it the ordinary and over-worn trade of jesting at lords, and courtiers, and citizens, without taxation of any particular or new vice by them found out, but at the persons of them: Such, he, that made this, thinks vile, and for his own part vows, That he did never think, but that a lord, lord-born, might be a wise man, and a courtier an honest man.

## PROLOGUE,

AT THE REVIVAL.

LADIES, take't as a secret in your ear, Instead of homage, and kind welcome here, I heartily could wish you all were gone; For if you stay, 'good faith, we are undone. Alas! you now expect the usual ways Of our address, which is your sex's praise: But we to-night, unluckily, must speak Such things will make your lovers' heart-strings Be-lie your virtues, and your beauties stain, [break, With words, contrived long since, in your disdain, 'Tis strange you stir not yet; not all this while Lift up your fans to hide a scornful smile;

Whisper, or jog your lords to steal away,  
So leave us to act, unto ourselves, our play:  
Then sure, there may be hope, you can subdue  
Your patience to endure an act or two;  
Nay more, when you are told our poet's rage  
Pursues but one example, which that age  
Wherein he lived produced; and we rely  
Not on the truth, but the variety.  
His Muse believed not what she then did write:  
Her wings were wont to make a nobler flight,  
Soar'd high, and to the stars your sex did raise:  
For which, full twenty years he wore the boys.

'Twas he reduced Evadne from her scorn,  
And taught the sad Aspatia how to mourn;  
Gave Arethusa's love a glad relief;  
And made Panthea elegant in grief.  
If those great trophies of his noble muse  
Cannot one humour 'gainst your sex excuse,

Which we present to-night, you'll find a way  
How to make good the libel in our play:  
So you are cruel to yourselves; whilst he  
(Safe in the fame of his integrity)  
Will be a prophet, not a poet thought,  
And this fine web last long, though loosely wrought.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—Night. *A Street.*

*Enter DUKE, ARRIGO, and LUCIO.*

*Duke.* 'Tis now the sweetest time for sleep; the  
Scarce spent: Arrigo, what's o'clock? [night is  
*Arr.* Past four.

*Duke.* Is it so much, and yet the morn not up?  
See yonder, where the shame-faced maiden comes:  
Into our sight how gently doth she slide,  
Hiding her chaste cheeks, like a modest bride,  
With a red veil of blushes: as is she,  
Even such all modest virtuous women be!  
Why thinks your lordship I am up so soon?

*Lucio.* About some weighty state-plot.

*Duke.* And what thinks

Your knighthood of it?

*Arr.* I do think, to cure

Some strange corruptions in the commonwealth.

*Duke.* You are well conceited of yourselves, to  
I chase you out to bear me company [think  
In such affairs and business of state!  
But am not I a pattern for all princes,  
That break my soft sleep for my subjects' good?  
Am I not careful? very provident?

*Lucio.* Your grace is careful.

*Arr.* Very provident.

*Duke.* Nay, knew you how my serious working  
plots

Concern the whole estates of all my subjects,  
Ay, and their lives: then, Lucio, thou wouldst  
I were a loving prince. [swear,

*Lucio.* I think your grace  
Intends to walk the public streets disguised,  
To see the streets' disorders.

*Duke.* 'Tis not so.

*Arr.* You secretly will cross some other states,  
That do conspire against you.

*Duke.* Weightier far:

You are my friends, and you shall have the cause;  
I break my sleeps thus soon to see a wench.

*Lucio.* You are wond'rous careful for your sub-  
jects' good!

*Arr.* You are a very loving prince indeed!

*Duke.* This care I take for them, when their  
Are closed with heavy slumbers. [dull eyes

*Arr.* Then you rise

To see your wench.

*Lucio.* What Milan beauty hath the power  
To charm her sovereign's eyes, and break his sleeps?

*Duke.* Sister to count Valore! she is a maid  
Would make a prince forget his throne and state,  
And lowly kneel to her: The general fate  
Of all mortality, is hers to give;  
As she disposeth, so we die and live.

*Lucio.* My lord, the day grows clear; the court  
will rise.

*Duke.* We stay too long.—Is the umbrana's  
head,

As we commanded, sent to the sad Gondarino,  
Our general?

*Arr.* 'Tis sent.

*Duke.* But stay! where shines  
That light?

*Arr.* 'Tis in the chamber of Lazarillo.

*Duke.* Lazarillo? what is he?

*Arr.* A courtier, my lord; and one that I wonder  
your grace knows not, for he hath followed  
your court, and your last predecessor's, from place  
to place, any time this seven year, as faithfully as  
your spits and your dripping-pans have done, and  
almost as greedily.

*Duke.* Oh, we know him: As we have heard,  
he keeps

A calendar of all the famous dishes

Of meat, that have been in the court, ever since

Our great-grandfather's time; and when he can  
thrust

In at no table, he makes his meat of that.

*Lucio.* The very same, my lord.

*Duke.* A courtier call'st thou him?

Believe me, Lucio, there be many such  
About our court, respected, as they think,  
Even by ourself. With thee I will be plain:  
We princes do use to prefer many for nothing, and  
to take particular and free knowledge, almost in  
the nature of acquaintance, of many whom we do  
use only for our pleasures; and do give largely to  
numbers, more out of policy to be thought liberal,  
and by that means to make the people strive to de-  
serve our love, than to reward any particular desert  
of theirs to whom we give; and do suffer ourselves  
to hear flatterers, more for recreation than for love  
of it, though we seldom hate it:

And yet we know all these; and when we please,  
Can touch the wheel, and turn their names about.

*Lucio.* I wonder they that know their states so  
well,

Should fancy such base slaves.

*Duke.* Thou wonder'st, Lucio?

Dost not thou think if thou wert Duke of Milan,  
Thou shouldst be flatter'd?

*Lucio.* I know, my lord, I would not.

*Duke.* Why, so I thought till I was a duke; I  
thought I should have left me no more flatterers  
than there are now plain-dealers; and yet, for all  
this my resolution, I am most palpably flatter'd:  
The poor man may loath covetousness and flattery,  
but fortune will alter the mind when the wind  
turns; there may be well a little conflict, but it  
will drive the billows before it. Arrigo, it grows  
late;

For see, fair Tethys hath undone the bars  
To Phœbus' team; and his unrival'd light  
Hath chased the morning's modest blush away:  
Now must we to our love.—Bright Paphian queen,  
Thou Cytherean goddess, that delights

In stirring glances, and art still thyself  
More toying than thy team of sparrows be ;  
Thou laughing Erechina, oh, inspire  
Her heart with love, or lessen my desire ! [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—LAZARILLO's Lodging.

Enter LAZARILLO and Boy.

*Las.* Go, run, search, pry in every nook and angle of the kitchens, larders, and pasteries ; know what meat's boiled, baked, roast, stewed, fried, or soured, at this dinner, to be served directly, or indirectly, to every several table in the court ; begone !

*Boy.* I run ; but not so fast as your mouth will do upon the stroke of eleven. [Exit.]

*Las.* What an excellent thing did God bestow upon man, when he did give him a good stomach ! What unbounded graces there are pour'd upon them that have the continual command of the very best of these blessings ! 'Tis an excellent thing to be a prince ; he is served with such admirable variety of fare, such innumerable choice of delicates ; his tables are full fraught with most nourishing food, and his cupboards heavy laden with rich wines ; his court is still fill'd with most pleasing varieties : in the summer his palace is full of green-geese, and in winter it swarmeth woodcocks. Oh, thou goddess of Plenty !

Fill me this day with some rare delicates,  
And I will every year most constantly,  
As this day, celebrate a sumptuous feast  
(If thou wilt send me victuals) in thine honour !  
And to it shall be bidden, for thy sake,  
Even all the valiant stomachs in the court ;  
All short-cloak'd knights, and all cross-garter'd gentlemen ;

All pump and pantofle, foot-cloth riders ;  
With all the swarming generation  
Of long stocks, short pain'd hose, and huge stuff'd doublets :

All these shall eat, and, which is more than yet  
Hath e'er been seen, they shall be satisfied !—  
I wonder my ambassador returns not.

Enter Boy.

*Boy.* Here I am, master.

*Las.* And welcome !  
Never did that sweet virgin in her smock,  
Fair-cheek'd Andromeda, when to the rock  
Her ivory limbs were chain'd, and straight before  
A huge sea-monster, tumbling to the shore,  
To have devour'd her, with more longing sight  
Expect the coming of some hardy knight,  
That might have quell'd his pride, and set her free,  
Than I with longing sight have look'd for thee.

*Boy.* Your Perseus is come, master, that will destroy him ;

The very comfort of whose presence shuts  
The monster Hunger from your yelping guts.

*Las.* Brief, boy, brief !

Discourse the service of each several table  
Compendiously.

*Boy.* Here is a bill of all, sir.

*Las.* Give it me !

[Reads.]

"A bill of all the several services this day appointed for every table in the court :"

Ay, this is it on which my hopes rely ;  
Within this paper all my joys are closed !  
Boy, open it, and read it with reverence.

*Boy.* [Reads.] "For the captain of the guard's table, three chines of beef and two joles of star-geon."

*Las.* A portly service,  
But gross, gross. Proceed to the Duke's own table,  
Dear boy, to the duke's own table !

*Boy.* "For the duke's own table, the head of an umbrana."

*Las.* Is it possible ?  
Can Heaven be so propitious to the duke ?

*Boy.* Yes, I'll assure you, sir, 'tis possible ;  
Heaven is so propitious to him.

*Las.* Why then, he is the richest prince alive !  
He were the wealthiest monarch in all Europe,  
Had he no other territories, dominions,  
Provinces, seats, nor palaces, but only  
That umbrana's head.

*Boy.* 'Tis very fresh and sweet, sir ; the fish was taken but this night, and the head, as a rare novelty, appointed by special commandment for the duke's own table, this dinner.

*Las.* If poor unworthy I may come to eat  
Of this most sacred dish, I here do vow  
(If that blind huswife Fortune will bestow  
But means on me) to keep a sumptuous house,  
A board groaning under the heavy burden of the beast that cheweth the cud, and the fowl that catcheth the air : It shall not, like the table of a country justice, be sprinkled over with all manner of cheap sallads, sliced beef, giblets, and petittoes, to fill up room ; nor should there stand any great, cumbersome, un-cut-up pies, at the nether-end, filled with moss and stones, partly to make a show with, and partly to keep the lower mess from eating ; nor shall my meat come in sneaking, like the city service, one dish a quarter of an hour after another, and gone as if they had appointed to meet there, and had mistook the hour ; nor should it, like the new court service, come in in haste, as if it fain would be gone again, all courses at once, like a hunting breakfast ; but I would have my several courses, and my dishes well filed : My first course should be brought in after the ancient manner, by a score of old bleer-eyed serving-men, in long blue coats ;—Marry, they shall buy silk, facing, and buttons themselves ; but that's by the way—

*Boy.* Master, the time calls on ; will you be walking ?

*Las.* Follow, boy, follow ! my guts were half an hour since in the privy kitchen. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—An Apartment in the House of  
COUNT VALORE.

Enter VALORE and ORIANA.

*Ori.* 'Faith, brother, I must needs go yonder.

*Val.* And 'faith, sister, what will you do yonder ?

*Ori.* I know the lady Honoria will be glad to see me.

*Val.* Glad to see you ? 'Faith, the lady Honoria cares for you as she doth for all other young ladies ; she is glad to see you, and will shew you the privy-garden, and tell you how many gowns the duchess had. Marry, if you have ever an old uncle, that would be a lord, or ever a kinsman that hath done a murder, or committed a robbery, and will give good store of money to procure his pardon, then the lady Honoria will be glad to see you.

*Ori.* Ay, but they say one shall see fine sights at the court.

*Val.* I'll tell you what you shall see; you shall see many faces of man's making, for you shall find very few as God left them: And you shall see many legs too; amongst the rest you shall behold one pair, the feet of which were in times past sockless, but are now, through the change of time (that alters all things,) very strangely become the legs of a knight and a courtier; another pair you shall see, that were heir-apparent legs to a glover, these legs hope shortly to be honourable; when they pass by they will bow, and the mouth to these legs will seem to offer you some courtship; it will swear, but it will lie; hear it not!

*Ori.* Why, and are not these fine sights?

*Val.* Sister,

In seriousness you yet are young, and fair;  
A fair young maid, and apt—

*Ori.* Apt?

*Val.* Exceeding apt;  
Apt to be drawn to—

*Ori.* To what?

*Val.* To that you should not be; 'tis no dispraise; She is not bad that hath desire to ill, But she that hath no power to rule that will: For there you shall be woo'd in other kinds Than yet your years have known; The chiefest men will seem to throw themselves As vassals at your service, kiss your hand, Prepare you banquets, masks, shows, all intice- That Wit and Lust together can devise, [ments To draw a lady from the state of grace To an old lady widow's gallery; And they will praise your virtues; beware that! The only way to turn a woman whore, Is to commend her chastity: You'll go?

*Ori.* I would go, if it were but only to shew you, that I could be there, and be moved with none of these tricks.

*Val.* Your servants are ready?

*Ori.* An hour since.

*Val.* Well, if you come off clear from this hot service, your praise shall be the greater. Farewell, sister!

*Ori.* Farewell, brother!

*Val.* Once more! If you stay in the presence till candle-light, keep on the foreside o' th' curtain; and, do you hear, take heed of the old bawd, in the cloth-of-tissue sleeves, and the knit mittens! Farewell, sister!—[*Exit ORIANA.*] Now am I idle; I would I had been a scholar, that I might have studied now! the punishment of meaner men is, they have too much to do; our only misery is, that without company we know not what to do. I must take some of the common courses of our nobility, which is thus: if I can find no company that likes me, pluck off my hat-band, throw an old cloak over my face, and, as if I would not be known, walk hastily through the streets, till I be discovered; then "there goes count Such-a-one," says one; "There goes count Such-a-one," says another; "Look how fast he goes," says a third; "There's some great matters in hand questionless," says a fourth; when all my business is to have them say so. This hath been used. Or, if I can find any company, I'll after dinner to the stage to see a play; where, when I first enter, you shall have a murmur in the house; every one that does not know, cries, "What nobleman is that?" all the gal-

lants on the stage rise, vail to me, kiss their hand, offer me their places: Then I pick out some one, whom I please to grace among the rest, take his seat, use it, throw my cloak over my face, and laugh at him: the poor gentleman imagines himself most highly graced, thinks all the auditors esteem him one of my bosom-friends, and in right special regard with me. But here comes a gentleman, that I hope will make me better sport than either street and stage fooleries. [Retires to one side of the Stage.]

*Enter LAZARILLO and Boy.*

This man loves to eat good meat; always provided, he do not pay for it himself. He goes by the name of the Hungry Courtier; marry, because I think that name will not sufficiently distinguish him (for no doubt he hath more fellows there) his name is Lazarillo; he is none of these same ordinary eaters, that will devour three breakfasts, and as many dinners, without any prejudice to their bevers, drinkings, or suppers; but he hath a more courtly kind of hunger, and doth hunt more after novelty than plenty. I'll over-hear him.

*Laz.* Oh, thou most itching kindly appetite, Which every creature in his stomach feels, Oh, leave, leave yet at last thus to torment me! Three several sallads have I sacrificed, Bedew'd with precious oil and vinegar, Already to appease thy greedy wrath.— Boy!

*Boy.* Sir?

*Laz.* Will the count speak with me?

*Boy.* One of his gentlemen is gone to inform him of your coming, sir.

*Laz.* There is no way left for me to compass this fish-head, but by being presently made known to the duke.

*Boy.* That will be hard, sir.

*Laz.* When I have tasted of this sacred dish, Then shall my bones rest in my father's tomb In peace; then shall I die most willingly, And as a dish be served to satisfy Death's hunger; and I will be buried thus: My bier shall be a charger borne by four, The coffin where I lie a powd'ring-tub, Bestrew'd with lettuce, and cool sallad-herbs; My winding-sheet of tansies; the black guard Shall be my solemn mourners; and, instead Of ceremonies, wholesome burial prayers; A printed dirge in rhyme shall bury me. Instead of tears let them pour capon-sauce Upon my hearse, and salt instead of dust, Manchets for stones; for other glorious shields Give me a voider; and above my hearse, For a trutch sword, my naked knife stuck up!

[VALONS comes forward.]

*Boy.* Master, the count's here.

*Laz.* Where?—My lord, I do beseech you—

[Kneeling.]

*Val.* You are very welcome, sir; I pray you stand up; you shall dine with me.

*Laz.* I do beseech your lordship, by the love I still have borne to your honourable house—

*Val.* Sir, what need all this? you shall dine with me. I pray rise.

*Laz.* Perhaps your lordship takes me for one of these same fellows, that do, as it were, respect victuals.

*Val.* Oh, sir, by no means.

*Laz.* Your lordship has often promised, that

whensoever I should affect greatness, your own hand should help to raise me.

*Val.* And so much still assure yourself of.

*Las.* And though I must confess I have ever shunn'd popularity, by the example of others, yet I do now feel myself a little ambitious : Your lordship is great, and, though young, yet a privy-counsellor.

*Val.* I pray you, sir, leap into the matter; what would you have me do for you?

*Las.* I would entreat your lordship to make me known to the duke.

*Val.* When, sir?

*Las.* Suddenly, my lord; I would have you present me unto him this morning.

*Val.* It shall be done : But for what virtues would you have him take notice of you?

*Las.* Your lordship shall know that presently.

*Val.* [*Aside.*] 'Tis pity of this fellow; he is of good wit, and sufficient understanding, when he is not troubled with this greedy worm.

*Las.* 'Faith, you may entreat him to take notice of me for anything; for being an excellent farrier, for playing well at *spans*-counter, or sticking knives in walls, for being impudent, or for nothing; why may not I be a favourite on the sudden? I see nothing against it.

*Val.* Not so, sir; I know you have not the face to be a favourite on the sudden.

*Las.* Why then, you shall present me as a gentleman well qualified, or one extraordinary seen in divers strange mysteries.

*Val.* In what, sir? as how?

*Las.* Marry as thus—

*Enter Intelligencer.*

*Val.* Yonder's my old spirit, that hath haunted me daily, ever since I was a privy-counsellor; I must be rid of him.—[*To the Intelligencer.*] I pray you stay there; I am a little busy; I will speak with you presently.

*Las.* You shall bring me in, and after a little other talk, taking me by the hand, you shall utter these words to the duke: "May it please your grace, to take note of a gentleman, well read, deeply learned, and thoroughly grounded in the hidden knowledge of all sallads and pot-herbs whatsoever."

*Val.* 'Twill be rare! If you will walk before, sir, I will overtake you instantly.

*Las.* Your lordship's ever.

[*Exit.*]

*Val.* [*Aside.*] This fellow is a kind of an informer, one that lives in ale-houses and taverns; and because he perceives some worthy men in this land, with much labour and great expence, to have discover'd things dangerously hanging over the state, he thinks to discover as much out of the talk of drunkards in tap-houses: He brings me informations, pick'd out of broken words, in men's common talk, which, with his malicious mis-application, he hopes will seem dangerous; he doth, besides, bring me the names of all the young gentlemen in the city, that use ordinaries, or taverns, talking (to my thinking) only as the freedom of their youth teach them, without any further ends, for dangerous and seditious spirits; he is, besides, an arrant whoremaster as any is in Milan, of a

layman; I will not meddle with the clergy: He is parcel lawyer, and in my conscience much of their religion: I must put upon him some piece of service.—Come hither, sir: What have you to do with me?

*Int.* Little, my lord; I only come to know how your lordship would employ me.

*Val.* Observed you that gentleman that parted from me but now?

*Int.* I saw him now, my lord.

*Val.* I was sending for you; I have talk'd with this man, and I do find him dangerous.

*Int.* Is your lordship in good earnest?

*Val.* Hark you, sir; there may perhaps be some within ear-shot. [*He whispers with him.*]

*Enter LAMARILLO and Boy.*

*Las.* Sirrah, will you venture your life, the duke hath sent the fish head to my lord?

*Boy.* Sir, if he have not, kill me, do what you will with me!

*Las.* How uncertain is the state of all mortal things! I have these crosses from my cradle, from my very cradle, insomuch that I do begin to grow desperate: Fortune, I do despise thee, do thy worst!—Yet, when I do better gather myself together, I do find it is rather the part of a wise man to prevent the storms of fortune by stirring, than to suffer 'em, by standing still, to pour themselves upon his naked body: I will about it.

*Val.* Who's within there?

*Enter a Serving-man.*

Let this gentleman out at the back-door!—Forget not my instructions. If you find anything dangerous, trouble not yourself to find out me, but carry your informations to the lord Lucio; he is a man grave, and well experienced in these businesses.

*Int.* Your lordship's servant.

[*Exit Intelligencer and Serving-man.*]

*Las.* Will it please your lordship walk?

*Val.* Sir, I was coming; I will overtake you.

*Las.* I will attend you over against the lord Gondarino's house.

*Val.* You shall not attend there long.

*Las.* Thither must I

To see my love's face, the chaste virgin head  
Of a dear fish, yet pure and undeflower'd,  
Not known of man; no rough-bred country hand  
Hath once touch'd thee, no pander's wither'd paw,  
Nor an un-napkin'd lawyer's greasy fist,  
Hath once slubber'd thee; no lady's supple hand,  
Wash'd o'er with urine, hath yet seized on thee  
With her two nimble talons; no court-hand,  
Whom his own natural filth, or change of air,  
Hath bedeck'd with scabs, hath marr'd thy whiter  
Oh, let it be thought lawful then for me, [*grace* :  
To crop the flower of thy virginity! [*Exit.*]

*Val.* This day I am for fools; I am all theirs :  
Though, like to our young wanton cocker'd heirs,  
Who do affect those men above the rest  
In whose base company they still are best,  
I do not with much labour strive to be  
The wisest ever in the company;  
But for a fool our wisdom oft amends,  
As enemies do teach us more than friends. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

## SCENE I.—A Room in GONDARINO's House.

*Enter GONDARINO and Servants.*

*Serv.* My lord!

*Gond.* Ha!

*Serv.* Here's one hath brought you a present.

*Gond.* From whom? from a woman? if it be from a woman, bid him carry it back, and tell her she's a whore. What is it?

*Serv.* A fish-head, my lord.

*Gond.* What fish-head?

*Serv.* I did not ask that, my lord.

*Gond.* Whence comes it?

*Serv.* From the court.

*Gond.* Oh, 'tis a cod's head.

*Serv.* No, my lord; 'tis some strange head; it comes from the duke.

*Gond.* Let it be carried to my mercer; I do owe him money for silks; stop his mouth with that.—*[Exit Servants.]* Was there ever any man that hated his wife after death but I! and, for her sake, all women, women that were created only for the preservation of little dogs!

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord, the count's sister being overtaken in the streets with a great hail-storm, is lit at your gate, and desires room till the storm be overpast.

*Gond.* Is she a woman?

*Serv.* Ay, my lord, I think so.

*Gond.* I have none for her then; bid her get her gone; tell her she is not welcome!

*Serv.* My lord, she is now coming up.

*Gond.* She shall not come up! tell her anything; tell her I have but one great room in my house, and I am now in it at the close-stool.

*Serv.* She's here, my lord.

*Gond.* Oh, impudence of women! I can keep dogs out of my house, or I can defend my house against thieves; but I cannot keep out women.—Now, madam;

*Enter ORIANA, a Waiting-woman, and a Page.*

What hath your ladyship to say to me?

*Ori.* My lord, I was bold to crave the help of your house against the storm.

*Gond.* Your ladyship's boldness in coming will be impudence in staying; for you are most unwelcome.

*Ori.* Oh, my lord!

*Gond.* Do you laugh? by the hate I bear to you, 'tis true!

*Ori.* You are merry, my lord.

*Gond.* Let me laugh to death if I be, or can be, whilst thou art here, or livest, or any of thy sex!

*Ori.* I commend your lordship.

*Gond.* Do you commend me? why do you commend me! I give you no such cause: Thou art a filthy, impudent whore; a woman, a very woman!

*Ori.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Gond.* Begot when thy father was drunk.

*Ori.* Your lordship hath a good wit.

*Gond.* How? what? have I good wit?

*Ori.* Come, my lord; I have heard before of your lordship's merry vein in jesting against our sex; which I being desirous to hear, made me rather chuse your lordship's house than any other; but I know I am welcome.

*Gond.* Let me not live, if you be! Methinks it doth not become you to come to my house, being a stranger to you: I have no woman in my house to entertain you, nor to shew you your chamber; why should you come to me? I have no galleries, nor banqueting-houses, nor bawdy-pictures, to shew your ladyship.

*Ori.* Believe me, this your lordship's plainness makes me think myself more welcome than if you had sworn, by all the pretty court-oaths that are, I had been welcomer than your soul to your body.

*Gond.* Now she's in, talking treason will [not] get her out; I durst sooner undertake to talk an intelligencer out of the room, and speak more than he durst hear, than talk a woman out of my company.

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* My lord, the Duke being in the streets, and the storm continuing, is entered your gate, and now coming up.

*Gond.* The Duke?—Now I know your errand, madam; you have plots and private-meetings in hand: Why do you chuse my house? are you ashamed to go to it in the old coupling-place? though it be less suspicious here, (for no Christian will suspect a woman to be in my house) yet you may do it cleaner there, for there is a care had of those businesses; and wheresoever you remove, your great maintainer and you shall have your lodgings directly opposite: it is but putting on your night-gown and your slippers: Madam, you understand me!

*Ori.* Before, I would not understand him; but now he speaks riddles to me indeed.

*Enter the DUKE, ARRIGO, and LUCIO.*

*Duke.* 'Twas a strange hail-storm.

*Lucio.* 'Twas exceeding strange.

*Gond.* Good morrow to your grace!

*Duke.* Good morrow, Gondarino.

*Gond.* Justice, great prince!

*Duke.* Why should you beg for justice? I never did you wrong; what's the offender?

*Gond.* A woman.

*Duke.* Oh, I know your ancient quarrel against that sex; but what heinous crime hath she committed?

*Gond.* She hath gone abroad.

*Duke.* What? it cannot be.

*Gond.* She hath done it.

*Duke.* How! I never heard of any woman that did so before.

*Gond.* If she have not laid by that modesty That should attend a virgin, and, quite void Of shame, hath left the house where she was born, (As they should never do,) let me endure The pains that she should suffer!

*Duke.* Hath she so?

Which is the woman?

*Gond.* This, this.

*Duke.* How!—Arrigo! Lucio!

*Gond.* Ay, then it is a plot: No prince alive Shall force me make my house a brothel-house; Not for the sin's, but for the woman's sake; I will not have her in my doors so long:

Will they make my house as bawdy as their own

*Duke.* Is it not Oriana? [are?]

*ff*

*Lucio.* It is.

*Duke.* Sister to count Valore ?

*Arr.* The very same.

*Duke.* She that I love !

*Lucio.* She that you love.

*Duke.* I do suspect—

*Lucio.* So do I.

*Duke.* This fellow to be but a counterfeit ;  
One that doth seem to loath all woman-kind,  
To hate himself because he hath some part  
Of woman in him, seems not to endure  
To see or to be seen of any woman,  
Only because he knows it is their nature  
To wish to taste that which is most forbidden :  
And with this show he may the better compass  
(And with far less suspicion) his base ends.

*Lucio.* Upon my life, 'tis so.

*Duke.* And I do know,  
Before his late wife gave him that offence,  
He was the greatest servant to that sex  
That ever was. What doth this lady here  
With him alone ? Why should he rail at her  
To me ?

*Lucio.* Because your grace might not suspect.

*Duke.* It was so ! I do love her strangely.  
I would fain know the truth ; counsel me.

[*They three whisper.*]

*Enter VALORE, LAZARILLO, and Boy.*

*Val.* It falls out better than we could expect,  
sir, that we should find the duke and my lord Gon-  
darino together, both which you desire to be ac-  
quainted with.

*Laz.* 'Twas very happy.—Boy, go down into  
the kitchen, and see if you can spy that same.—  
[*Exit Boy.*] I am now in some hope ; I have  
methinks a kind of fever upon me, a certain gloom-  
iness within me, doubting, as it were, betwixt two  
passions : There is no young maid upon her wed-  
ding-night, when her husband sets first foot in the  
bed, blushes, and looks pale again, oftner than I do  
now. There is no poet acquainted with more  
shakings and quakings, towards the latter end of  
his new play, (when he's in that case that he stands  
peeping betwixt the curtains, so fearfully that a  
bottle of ale cannot be open'd, but he thinks some-  
body hisses) than I am at this instant.

*Val.* Are they in consultation ? If they be,  
either my young Duke hath gotten some bastard,  
and is persuading my knight yonder to father the  
child, and marry the wench, or else some cockpit  
is to be built.

*Laz.* My lord ! what nobleman's that ?

*Val.* His name is Lucio ; 'tis he that was made  
a lord at the request of some of his friends for his  
wife's sake ; he affects to be a great statesman, and  
thinks it consists in night-caps, and jewels, and  
toothpicks.

*Laz.* And what's that other ?

*Val.* A knight, sir, that pleaseth the Duke to  
favour, and to raise to some extraordinary fortunes :  
He can make as good men as himself every day in  
the week, and doth.

*Laz.* For what was he raised ?

*Val.* Truly, sir, I am not able to say directly  
for what, but for wearing of red breeches, as I take  
it : he is a brave man ; he will spend three knight-  
hoods at a supper without trumpets.

*Laz.* My lord, I'll talk with him ; for I have a  
friend that would gladly receive the honour—

*Val.* If he have the itch of knighthood upon him,  
let him repair to that physician, he'll cure him.  
But I will give you a note : Is your friend fat or  
lean ?

*Laz.* Something fat.

*Val.* It will be the worse for him.

*Laz.* I hope that's not material.

*Val.* Very much, for there's an impost set upon  
knighthoods, and your friend shall pay a noble in  
the pound.

*Duke.* [*Coming forward.*] I do not like exami-  
We shall find out the truth more easily, [nations ;  
Some other way less noted, and that course  
Should not be used, till we be sure to prove  
Something directly ; for when they perceive  
Themselves suspected, they will then provide  
More warily to answer.

*Lucio.* Doth she know  
Your grace doth love her ?

*Duke.* She hath never heard it.

*Lucio.* Then thus, my lord.

[*They whisper again.*]

*Laz.* What's he that walks alone so sadly, with  
his hands behind him ?

*Val.* The lord of the house, he that you desire  
to be acquainted with. He doth hate women for  
the same cause that I love them.

*Laz.* What's that ?

*Val.* For that which apes want : You perceive  
me, sir ?

*Laz.* And is he sad ? can he be sad that hath so  
rich a gem under his roof, as that which I do fol-  
low !—What young lady's that ?

*Val.* Which ? Have I mine eye-sight perfect ?  
'tis my sister ! Did I say the Duke had a bastard ?  
what should she make here with him and his coun-  
cil ? She hath no papers in her hand to petition to  
them ; she hath never a husband in prison, whose  
release she might sue for : That's a fine trick for a  
wench, to get her husband clapt up, that she may  
more freely, and with less suspicion, visit the pri-  
vate studies of men in authority. Now I do dis-  
cover their consultation ; yon fellow is a pandar  
without all salvation ! but let me not condemn her  
too rashly, without weighing the matter : She is a  
young lady ; she went forth early this morning  
with a waiting-woman, and a page or so : This is  
no garden-house, in my conscience, she went forth  
with no dishonest intent ; for she did not pretend  
going to any sermon in the further end of the city ;  
neither went she to see any odd old gentlewoman  
that mourns for the death of her husband, or the  
loss of her friend, and must have young ladies  
come to comfort her ; those are the damnable  
bawds ! 'Twas no set meeting certainly, for there  
was no wafer-woman with her these three days, or  
my knowledge. I'll talk with her.—Good mor-  
row, my lord !

*Gond.* You are welcome, sir.—Here's her bro-  
ther come now to do-a kind office for his sister ; is  
it not strange ?

*Val.* I am glad to meet you here, sister.

*Ori.* I thank you, good brother ; and if you  
doubt of the cause of my coming, I can satisfy  
you.

*Val.* No, 'faith, I dare trust thee : I do suspect  
thou art honest ; for it is so rare a thing to be  
honest, amongst you, that some one man in an age  
may perhaps suspect some two women to be  
honest, but never believe it verily.—

*Lucio.* Let your return be sudden !

*Arr.* Unsuspected by them.

*Duke.* It shall ; so shall I best

Perceive their love, if there be any : Farewell !

*Val.* Let me entreat your grace to stay a little,

To know a gentleman, to whom yourself

Is much beholding : He hath made the sport

For your whole court these eight years, on my

*Duke.* His name ? [knowledge.]

*Val.* Lazarillo.

*Duke.* I heard of him this morning ;

Which is he ?

*Val.* Lazarillo, pluck up thy spirits !

Thy fortunes are now raising ; the duke calls for

And thou shalt be acquainted with him. [thee]

*Lax.* He's going away,

And I must of necessity stay here,

Upon business.

*Val.* 'Tis all one ; thou shalt know him first.

*Lax.* Stay a little !— [Aside.]

If he should offer to take me away with him,

And by that means I should lose that I seek for—

But if he should, I will not go with him.

*Val.* Lazarillo, the duke stays ! wilt thou lose

This opportunity ?

*Lax.* How must I speak to him ?

*Val.* 'Twas well thought of ; you must not talk

As you do to an ordinary man, [to him]

Honest plain sense, but you must wind about him ;

For example ; if he should ask you what o'clock

it is,

You must not say, " If it please your grace, 'tis

nine ;"

But thus, " Thrice three o'clock, so please my sove-

reign ;"

Or thus, " Look how many muses there doth dwell

Upon the sweet banks of the learned well,

And just so many strokes the clock hath struck ;"

And so forth : And you must now and then

Enter into a description.

*Lax.* I hope I shall do it.

*Val.* Come ! " May it please your grace to take note of a gentleman, well seen, deeply read, and thoroughly grounded in the hidden knowledge of all salads and pot-herbs whatsoever."

*Duke.* I shall desire to know him more inwardly.

*Lax.* I kiss the ox-hide of your grace's foot.

*Val.* Very well !—Will your grace question him

*Duke.* How old are you ? [a little ?]

*Lax.* Full eight-and-twenty several almanacks

Have been compiled, all for several years,

Since first I drew this breath ; four prenticeships

Have I most truly served in this world ;

And eight-and-twenty times hath Phoebus' car

Run out his yearly course, since—

*Duke.* I understand you, sir.

*Lucio.* How like an ignorant poet he talks !

*Duke.* You are eight-and-twenty year old. What time of the day do you hold it to be ?

*Lax.* About the time that mortals whet their knives,

On thresholds, on their shoe-soles, and on stairs ;

Now bread is grating, and the testy cook

Hath much to do now ; now the tables all—

*Duke.* 'Tis almost dinner-time ?

*Lax.* Your grace doth apprehend me very rightly.

*Val.* Your grace shall find him, in your further conference, grave, wise, courtly, and scholar-like,

understandingly read in the necessities of the life of man :

He knows that man is mortal by his birth ;

He knows that man must die, and therefore live :

He knows that man must live, and therefore eat.

And if it shall please your grace to accompany yourself with him, I doubt not but that he will, at the least, make good my commendations.

*Duke.* Attend us, Lazarillo ; we do want

Men of such action, as we have received you

Reported from your honourable friend.

*Lax.* Good my lord, stand betwixt me and my overthrow ! you know I am tied here, and may not depart !—My gracious lord, so weighty are the businesses of mine own, which at this time do call upon me, that I will rather choose to die, than to neglect them.

*Val.* Nay, you shall well perceive ; besides the virtues that I have already inform'd you of, he hath a stomach which will stoop to no prince alive.

*Duke.* Sir, at your best leisure ; I shall thirst to see you.

*Lax.* And I shall hunger for it.

*Duke.* Till then, farewell all !

*Gond. Val.* Long life attend your grace !

*Duke.* I do not taste this sport. Arrigo ! Lucio !

*Arr. Lucio.* We do attend.

[Exit DUKES, ARRIGO, and LUCIO.]

*Gond.* His grace is gone, and hath left his Helen with me : I am no pandar for him ; neither can I be won, with the hope of gain, or the itching desire of tasting my lord's lechery to him, to keep her at my house, or bring her in disguise to his bed-chamber.

The twines of adders and of scorpions  
About my naked breast, will seem to me  
More tickling than those clasps, which men adore,  
The lustful, dull, ill-spirited embraces  
Of women ! The much-praised Amazons,  
Knowing their own infirmities so well,  
Made of themselves a people, and what men  
They take amongst them they condemn to die ;  
Perceiving that their folly made them fit  
To live no longer, that would willingly  
Come in the worthless presence of a woman.—  
I will attend, and see what my young lord  
Will do with his sister.

Enter Boy.

*Boy.* My lord, the fish-head is gone again.

*Val.* Whither ?

*Boy.* I know whither, my lord.

*Val.* Keep it from Lazarillo !—Sister, shall I confer with you in private, to know the cause of the duke's coming hither ? I know he makes you acquainted with his business of state.

*Ori.* I'll satisfy you, brother ; for I see you are jealous of me.

*Gond.* Now there shall be some course taken for her conveyance.

*Lax.* Lazarillo, thou art happy ! thy carriage hath begot love, and that love hath brought forth fruits ; thou art here in the company of a man honourable, that will help thee to taste of the bounties of the sea ; and when thou hast so done, thou shalt retire thyself unto the court, and there taste of the delicates of the earth, and be great in the eyes of thy sovereign. Now no more shalt thou need to scramble for thy meat, nor remove

thy stomach with the court; but thy credit shall command thy heart's desire, and all novelties shall be sent as presents unto thee.

*Val.* Good sister, when you see your own time, will you return home?

*Ori.* Yes, brother, and not before.

*Las.* I will grow popular in this state, and overthrow the fortunes of a number, that live by extortion.

*Val.* Lazarillo, bestir thyself nimbly and suddenly, and hear me with patience.

*Las.* Let me not fall from myself! Speak! I am bound to hear.

*Val.* So art thou to revenge, when thou shalt hear;

The fish-head is gone, and we know not whither.

*Las.* I will not curse, nor swear, nor rage, nor rail,

Nor with contemptuous tongue accuse my fate  
(Though I might justly do it;) nor will I  
Wish myself uncreated, for this evil!—  
Shall I entreat your lordship to be seen  
A little longer in the company  
Of a man cross'd by fortune?

*Val.* I hate to leave my friend in his extremities.

*Las.* 'Tis noble in you; then I take your hand,

And do protest, I do not follow this  
For any malice or for private ends,  
But with a love, as gentle and as chaste,  
As that a brother to his sister bears:  
And if I see this fish-head, yet unknown,  
The last words that my dying father spake,  
Before his eye-strings brake, shall not of me  
So often be remember'd, as our meeting:  
Fortune attend me, as my ends are just,  
Full of pure love, and free from servile lust!—

*Val.* [To GONDARINO.] Farewell, my lord! I was entreated to invite your lordship to a lady's up-sitting. [Exit VALORE, LAZARILLO, and Boy.]

*Gond.* Oh, my ears!—Why, madam, will not you follow your brother? You are waited for by great men; he'll bring you to 'em.

*Ori.* I am very well, my lord; you do mistake me, if you think I affect greater company than yourself.

*Gond.* What madness possesseth thee, that thou canst imagine me a fit man to entertain ladies? I tell thee, I do use to tear their hair, to kick them, and to twinge their noses, if they be not careful in avoiding me.

*Ori.* Your lordship may descant upon your own behaviour as please you, but I protest, so sweet and courtly it appears in my eye, that I mean not to leave you yet.

*Gond.* I shall grow rough.

*Ori.* A rough carriage is best in a man.—I'll dine with you, my lord.

*Gond.* Why, I will starve thee; thou shalt have nothing.

*Ori.* I have heard of your lordship's nothing; I'll put that to the venture.

*Gond.* Well, thou shalt have meat; I'll send it to thee.

*Ori.* I'll keep no state, my lord; neither do I mourn; I'll dine with you.

*Gond.* Is such a thing as this allow'd to live?

What power hath let thee loose upon the earth,  
To plague us for our sins? Out of my doors!

*Ori.* I would your lordship did but see how well  
This fury doth become you! it doth show  
So near the life, as it were natural.

*Gond.* Oh, thou damn'd woman! I will fly the vengeance

That hangs above thee: Follow, if thou darest!

[Exit GONDARINO.]

*Ori.* I must not leave this fellow; I will torment him to madness!

To teach his passions against kind to move,  
The more he hates, the more I'll seem to love.

[Exit ORIANA, Maid, and Page.]

## SCENE II.—The Street.

Enter Pandar and Mercer.

*Pandar.* Sir, what may be done by art shall be done; I wear not this black cloak for nothing.

*Mercer.* Perform this, help me to this great heir by learning, and you shall want no black cloaks: taffaties, silk-grograms, satins, and velvets are mine; they shall be yours, perform what you have promised; and you shall make me a lover of sciences; I will study the learned languages, and keep my shop-book in Latin.

*Pandar.* Trouble me not now; I will not fail you within this hour at your shop.

*Mercer.* Let art have her course. [Exit.]

Enter JULIA.

*Pandar.* 'Tis well spoken.—Madonna!

*Julia.* Hast thou brought me any customers?

*Pandar.* No.

*Julia.* What the devil dost thou in black?

*Pandar.* As all solemn professors of settled courses, cover my knavery with it. Will you marry a citizen, reasonably rich and unreasonably foolish, silks in his shop, money in his purse, and no wit in his head?

*Julia.* Out upon him! I could have been otherwise than so; there was a knight swore he would have had me, if I would have lent him but forty shillings to have redeem'd his cloak, to go to church in.

*Pandar.* Then your waistcoat-waiver shall have him; call her in.

*Julia.* Francissina!

*Fran.* [Within.] Anon.

*Julia.* Get you to the church, and shrive yourself, for you shall be richly married anon.

*Pandar.* And get you after her. I will work upon my citizen whilst he is warm; I must not suffer him to consult with his neighbours: The openest fools are hardly cozened, if they once grow jealous. [Exit.]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—*Another Room in GONDARINO'S House.**Enter GONDARINO, flying from OBIANA.*

*Gond.* Save me, ye better powers! let me not fall  
Between the loose embracements of a woman!  
Heaven, if my sins be ripe, grown to a head,  
And must attend your vengeance, I beg not to  
divert my fate,

Or to reprove a while thy punishment;  
Only I crave, (and hear me, equal Heavens!)  
Let not your furious rod, that must afflict me,  
Be that imperfect piece of Nature  
That Art makes up, woman, unsatiate woman!  
Had we not knowing souls, at first infused  
To teach a difference 'twixt extremes and goods?  
Were we not made ourselves, free, unconfined,  
Commanders of our own affections?  
And can it be, that this most perfect creature,  
This image of his Maker, well-squared man,  
Should leave the handfast, that he had of grace,  
To fall into a woman's easy arms?

*Enter OBIANA.*

*Ori.* Now, Venus, be my speed! inspire me with  
all the several subtle temptations, that thou hast  
already given, or hast in store hereafter to bestow  
upon our sex! Grant that I may apply that physic  
that is most apt to work upon him; whether he  
will soonest be moved with wantonness, singing,  
dancing, or (being passionate) with scorn; or with  
sad and serious looks, cunningly mingled with sighs,  
with smiling, lipping, kissing the hand, and making  
short curt'sies; or with whatsoever other nimble  
power he may be caught, do thou infuse into me;  
and, when I have him, I will sacrifice him up to  
thee!

*Gond.* It comes again! new apparitions,  
And tempting spirits! Stand and reveal thyself;  
Tell why thou follow'st me? I fear thee,  
As I fear the place thou camest from, Hell.

*Ori.* My lord, I am a woman, and such a one—

*Gond.* That I hate truly!  
Thou hadst better been a devil.

*Ori.* Why, my impatient lord?

*Gond.* Devils were once good; there they excell'd  
you women.

*Ori.* Can you be so uneasy? can you freeze,  
And such a summer's heat so ready to dissolve?  
Nay, gentle lord, turn not away in scorn,  
Nor hold me less fair than I am! Look on these  
cheeks;

They have yet enough of nature, true complexion;  
If to be red and white, a forehead high,  
An easy melting lip, a speaking eye,  
And such a tongue, whose language takes the ear  
Of strict religion, and men most austere:  
If these may hope to please, look here!

*Gond.* This woman with entreaty would shew all!  
—Lady, there lies your way; I pray you, farewell.

*Ori.* You're yet too harsh, too dissonant;  
There's no true music in your words, my lord.

*Gond.* What shall I give thee to be gone? Here  
stay;

As thou want'st lodging, take my house, 'tis big  
enough,

'Tis thine own; 'twill hold five lecherous lords  
And their lackies, without discovery:  
There's stoves and bathing-tubs.

*Ori.* Dear lord, you are too wild.

*Gond.* 'Shalt have a doctor too, thou shalt,  
'Bout six and twenty, 'tis a pleasing age;  
Or I can help thee to a handsome usher;  
Or if thou lack'st a page, I'll give thee one:  
Pr'ythee keep house, and leave me!

*Ori.* I do confess I am too easy, too much  
woman,  
Not coy enough to take affection;  
Yet I can frown, and nip a passion,  
Even in the bud: I can say,  
Men please their present heats, then please to  
leave us.

I can hold off, and, by my chymic power,  
Draw sonnets from the melting lover's brain;  
*Ay-me's*, and *elegies*: Yet to you, my lord,  
My love, my better self, I put these off,  
Doing that office not befits our sex,  
Entreat a man to love.—Are you not yet  
Relenting? ha' you blood and spirit in those veins?  
You are no image, though you be as hard  
As marble: Sure you have no liver; if you had,  
'Twould send a lively and desiring heat  
To every member! Is not this miserable?  
A thing so truly form'd, shaped out by symmetry,  
Has all the organs that belong to man,  
And working too, yet to show all these  
Like dead motions moving upon wires?  
Then, good my lord, leave off what you have been,  
And freely be what you were first intended for,  
A man!

*Gond.* Thou art a precious piece of sly damna-  
I will be deaf; I will lock up my ears: [tion!  
Tempt me not! I will not love! if I do—

*Ori.* Then I'll hate you.

*Gond.* Let me be 'nointed with honey, and  
turn'd  
Into the sun, to be stung to death with horse-flies!  
Hear'st thou, thou breeder? here I'll sit,  
And, in despite of thee, I will say nothing.

*[Sits down.]*

*Ori.* Let me, with your fair patience, sit beside  
you!

*Gond.* Madam, lady, tempter, tongue, woman,  
Look to me, I shall kick! I say again, [air,  
Look to me, I shall kick!

*Ori.* I cannot think your better knowledge  
Can use a woman so uncivilly.

*Gond.* I cannot think I shall become a coxcomb,  
To ha' my hair curl'd by an idle finger,  
My cheeks turn tabors, and be play'd upon,  
Mine eyes look'd babies in, and my nose blow'd  
to my hand:

I say again, I shall kick! sure, I shall.

*Ori.* 'Tis but

Your outside that you show; I know your mind  
Never was guilty of so great a weakness:  
Or, could the tongues of all men join'd together  
Possess me with a thought of your dislike,  
My weakness were above a woman's, to fall off  
From my affection, for one crack of thunder.  
Oh, would you could love, my lord!

*Gond.* I would thou wouldst  
Sit still, and say nothing! What madman let thee  
loose,

To do more mischief than a dozen whirlwinds?  
Keep thy hands in thy muff, and warm the idle

Worms in thy fingers' ends : Will you be doing still ?

Will no entreating serve you ? no lawful warning ?  
I must remove, and leave your ladyship :  
Nay, never hope to stay me ; for I will run  
From that smooth, smiling, witching, cozening,  
tempting,

Damning face of thine, as far as I can find any land,  
Where I will put myself into a daily course  
Of curses for thee and all thy family.

*Ori.* Nay, good my lord, sit still ! I'll promise  
peace,  
And fold mine arms up, let but mine eye dis-  
course ;

Or let my voice, set to some pleasing chord,  
sound out

The sullen strains of my neglected love !

*Gond.* Sing till thou crack thy treble-string in  
pieces,

And when thou hast done, put up thy pipes and  
Do anything, sit still and tempt me not ! [walk !

*Ori.* [*Aside.*] I would rather sing at doors for  
bread, than sing to

This fellow, but for hate : If this should be  
Told in the court, that I begin to woo lords,  
What a troop of the untruss'd nobility  
Should I have at my lodging to-morrow morning !  
[Sings.]

## SONG.

Come, sleep, and, with thy sweet deceiving,  
Lock me in delight awhile ;  
Let some pleasing dreams beguile  
All my fancies ; that from thence,  
I may feel an influence,  
All my powers of care bereaving !

Though but a shadow, but a sliding,  
Let me know some little joy !  
We that suffer long annoy,  
Are contented with a thought,  
Through an idle fancy wrought :  
Oh, let my joys have some abiding !

*Gond.* Have you done your wassail ?  
'Tis a handsome drowsy ditty, I'll assure you :  
Now I had as lief hear a cat cry, when her tail  
Is cut off, as hear these lamentations,  
These lousy love-lays, these bewailments.  
You think you have caught me, lady ; you think I  
melt now,

Like a dish of May-butter, and run  
All into brine and passion : Yes, yes, I am taken ;  
Look how I cross my arms, look pale, and dwindle,  
And would cry, but for spoiling my face !  
We must part : Nay, we'll avoid all ceremony ;  
No kissing, lady ! I desire to know  
Your ladyship no more.—'Death of my soul, the  
Duke !

*Ori.* God keep your lordship !

*Gond.* From thee and all thy sex.

*Ori.* I'll be the clerk, and cry, Amen ! Your  
lordship's  
Ever-assured enemy, Oriana. [Exit ORIANA.]

Enter DUKE, ARRIGO, and LUCIO.

*Gond.* All the day's good attend your lordship !

*Duke.* We thank you, Gondarino.—Is it pos-  
sible to see thee (one that hath cloister'd up all passion,  
Turn'd wilful votary, and forsworn converse  
With women) in company and fair discourse  
With the best beauty of Milan ?

*Gond.* 'Tis true ; and if your grace, that hath  
the sway

Of the whole state, will suffer this lewd sex,  
These women, to pursue us to our homes,  
Not to be pray'd nor to be rail'd away,  
But they will woo, and dance, and sing,  
And, in a manner looser than they are  
By nature (which should seem impossible),  
To throw their arms on our unwilling necks—

*Duke.* No more ! I can see through your visor ;  
dissemble it

No more ! Do not I know thou hast used all art,  
To work upon the poor simplicity  
Of this young maid, that yet hath known none ill.  
Thinks that damnation will fright those that woo  
From oaths and lies ? But yet I think her chaste.  
And will from thee, before thou shalt apply  
Stronger temptations, bear her hence with me.

*Gond.* My lord, I speak not this to gain new  
But howsoever you esteem my words, [grace.

My love and duty will not suffer me  
To see you favour such a prostitute,  
And I stand by dumb ; without rack, torture,  
Or strapado, I will unrip myself :

I do confess I was in company  
With that pleasing piece of frailty, that we call  
woman ;

I do confess, after a long and tedious siege,  
I yielded.

*Duke.* Forward !

*Gond.* 'Faith, my lord, to come quickly to the  
The woman you saw with me is a whore, [point.  
An arrant whore.

*Duke.* Was she not count Valore's sister ?

*Gond.* Yes ; that count Valore's sister is naught.

*Duke.* Thou darest not say so.

*Gond.* Not if it be distasting to your lordship ;  
But give me freedom, and I dare maintain  
She has embraced this body, and grown to it  
As close as the hot youthful vine to the elm.

*Duke.* Twice have I seen her with thee, twice  
my thoughts

Were prompted by mine eye, to hold thy strictness  
False and impostorous :

Is this your mew-ing-up, your strict retirement,  
Your bitterness and gall against that sex ?

Have I not heard thee say, thou would'st sooner  
The basilisk's dead-doing eye, than meet [meet  
A woman for an object ? Look it be true you tell  
me ;

Or, by our country's saint, your head goes off !—  
If thou prove a whore,

No woman's face shall ever move me more.

[Exit DUKE, ARRIGO, and LUCIO.]

*Gond.* So, so ! 'tis as't should be.

Are women grown so mankind ? must they be  
wooing ?

I have a plot shall blow her up ; she flies, she  
mounts ;

I'll teach her ladyship to dare my fury !  
I will be known, and fear'd, and more truly hated  
Of women than an eunuch.

Enter ORIANA.

She's here again :  
Good gall be patient ! for I must dissemble.

*Ori.* Now, my cold frosty lord,  
My Woman-Hater, you that have sworn  
An everlasting hate to all our sex !  
By my troth, good lord, and as I am yet a maid.

Methought 'twas excellent sport to hear your honour

Swear out an alphabet, chafe nobly like a general,  
Kick like a resty jade, and make ill faces!  
Did your good honour think I was in love?  
Where did I first begin to take that heat?  
From those two radiant eyes, that piercing sight?  
Oh, they were lovely, if the balls stood right!  
And there's a leg made out of a dainty staff,  
Where, the gods be thanked, there is calf enough!

*Gond.* Pardon him, lady, that is now a convertite:

Your beauty, like a saint, hath wrought this wonder.

*Ori.* Alas, has it been pricked at the heart?  
Is the stomach come down! will't rail no more  
At women, and call 'em devils, she-cats, and goblins?

*Gond.* [*Aside.*] He that shall marry thee, had better spend

The poor remainder of his days in a dung-barge,  
For two-pence a-week, and find himself.

Down again, spleen! I pry'thee down again!—  
Shall I find favour, lady? Shall at length  
My true unfeigned penitence get pardon  
For my harsh unseasoned follies?

I am no more an atheist; no; I do  
Acknowledge that dread powerful deity,  
And his all-quick'ning heats burn in my breast:  
Oh, be not as I was, hard, unrelenting;  
But as I am, be partner of my fires!

*Ori.* Sure we shall have store of larks; the skies will

Not hold up long: I should have look'd as soon  
For frost in the Dog-days, or another inundation,  
As hoped this strange conversion above miracle.  
Let me look upon your lordship: Is your name  
Gondarino? are you Milan's general, that  
Great bugbear Bloody-bones, at whose very name  
All women, from the lady to the laundress,  
Shake like a cold fit?

*Gond.* Good patience, help me!  
This fever will enrage my blood again.—  
Madam, I am that man; I am even he  
That once did owe unreconciled hate  
To you, and all that bear the name of woman;  
I am the man that wrong'd your honour to the Duke,

I am the man that said you were unchaste,  
And prostitute; yet I am he that dare deny all this.

*Ori.* Your big nobility is very merry.

*Gond.* Lady, 'tis true that I have wrong'd you thus,

And my contrition is as true as that;  
Yet have I found a means to make all good again:  
I do beseech your beauty, not for myself,  
(My merits are yet in conception)  
But for your honour's safety and my zeal,  
Retire a while, while I unsay myself  
Unto the Duke, and cast out that evil spirit  
I have possess'd him with!

I have a house conveniently private.

*Ori.* Lord, thou hast wrong'd my innocence;  
But thy confession hath gain'd thee faith.

*Gond.* By the true honest service that I owe those eyes,

My meaning is as spotless as my faith.

*Ori.* The Duke doubt mine honour? a' may judge strangely.

'Twill not be long before I'll be enlarged again?

*Gond.* A day or two.

*Ori.* Mine own servants shall attend me?

*Gond.* Your ladyship's command is good.

*Ori.* Look you be true! [*Exit.*]

*Gond.* Else let me lose the hopes my soul aspires to!—I will be a scourge to all females in my life, and, after my death, the name of Gondarino shall be terrible to the mighty women of the earth: they shall shake at my name, and at the sound of it their knees shall knock together; and they shall run into nunneries, for they and I are beyond all hope irreconcilable: for if I could endure an ear with an hole in't, or a plaited lock, or a bareheaded coachman, that sits like a sign where great ladies are to be sold within, agreement betwixt us were not to be despair'd of. If I could be but brought to endure to see women, I would have them come all once a week and kiss me, as witches do the devil, in token of homage. I must not live here; I will to the court,

And there pursue my plot; when it hath took,  
Women shall stand in awe but of my look.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—A Court in the Palace.

*Enter two Intelligencers.*

1 *Int.* There take your standing; be close and vigilant! here will I set myself; and let him look to his language! a' shall know the Duke has more ears in court than two.

2 *Int.* I'll quote him to a tittle: Let him speak wisely, and plainly, and as hidden as a' can, I shall crush him; a' shall not 'scape [by] characters; though a' speak Babel, I shall crush him. We have a fortune by this service hanging over us, that, within this year or two, I hope we shall be call'd to be examiners, wear politic gowns guarded with copper-lace, making great faces full of fear and office; our labours may deserve this.

1 *Int.* I hope it shall: Why, have not many men been raised from this wormy trade, first, to gain good access to great men; then, to have commissions out for search; and lastly, to be worthily named at a great arraignment? Yes; and why not we? They that endeavour well deserve their fee. Close, close! a' comes; mark well, and all goes well!  
[*They stand apart.*]

*Enter VALORE, LAZARILLO, and Boy.*

*Las.* Farewell, my hopes! my anchor now is broken!

Farewell, my *quondam* joys! of which no token is now remaining; such is the sad mischance, Where lady Fortune leads the slippery dance. Yet, at the length, let me this favour have, Give me my wishes, or a wished grave!

*Val.* The gods defend, so brave and valiant man Should slip into the never-satiate jaw Of black Despair! No; thou shalt live and know Thy full desires; Hunger, thy ancient foe, Shall be subdued; those guts that daily tumble, Through air and appetite, shall cease to rumble; And thou shalt now at length obtain thy dish, That noble part, the sweet head of a fish.

*Las.* Then am I greater than the duke!—

2 *Int.* There, there's a notable piece of treason? greater than the duke; mark that!

*Val.* But how, or where; or when this shall be compass'd, is yet out of my reach.

*Las.* I am so truly miserable, that might I be

now knock'd o' th' head, with all my heart I would forgive a dog-killer.

*Val.* Yet do I see,

Through this confusion, some little comfort.

*Las.* The plot, my lord, as e'er you came of a woman, discover.

*I Int.* Plots, dangerous plots! I will deserve by this most liberally.

*Val.* 'Tis from my head again.

*Las.* Oh, that it would stand me, that I might fight, or have some venture for it! that I might be turned loose, to try my fortune amongst the whole fry in a college or an inn of court, or scramble with the prisoners in the dungeon!

Nay, were it set down in the outer court,

And all the guard about it in a ring,

With their knives drawn, (which were a dismal  
And after twenty leisurely were told, [sight,])

I to be let loose only in my shirt,

To try their valour, how much of the spoil

I would recover from the enemies' mouths,

I would accept the challenge.

*Val.* Let it go! Hast not thou been held to have some wit in the court, and to make some fine jests upon country people in progress-time? and wilt thou lose this opinion for the cold head of a fish? I say, let it go! I'll help thee to as good a dish of meat.

*Las.* God, let me not live, if I do not wonder Men should talk so profanely!

But 'tis not in the power of loose words,

Or any vain or misbelieving man,

To make me dare to wrong thy purity.

Show me but any lady in the court,

That hath so full an eye, so sweet a breath,

So soft and white a flesh: This doth not lie

In almond-gloves, nor ever hath been wash'd

In artificial baths; no traveller

That hath brought *doctor* home with him, hath

With all his waters, powders, fucuses, [dared,

To make thy lovely corps sophisticate.

*Val.* I have it; 'tis now infused; be comforted!

*Las.* Can there be that little hope yet left

In nature? Shall I once more erect up trophies?

Shall I enjoy the sight of my dear saint,

And bless my palate with the best of creatures?

Ah, good my lord, by whom I breathe again,

Shall I receive this being?

*Val.* Sir, I have found by certain calculation,

And settled revolution of the stars,

The fish is sent by the lord Gondarino

To his mercer: Now it is a growing hope

To know where 'tis.

*Las.* Oh, it is far above

The good of women; the pathick cannot yield

More pleasing titillation!

*Val.* But how to compass it? search, cast about,

And bang your brains, Lazarillo! Thou art

Too dull and heavy to deserve a blessing.

*Las.* My lord, I'll not be idle:—Now, Lazarillo,

Think, think, think!

*Val.* [*Aside.*] Yonder's my informer, and his fellow, with table-books; they nod at me: upon my life, they have poor Lazarillo (that beats his brains about no such weighty matter) in for treason before this.

*Las.* My lord, what do you think, if I should have myself, put on midwife's apparel, come in with a handkerchief, and beg a piece for a great-bellied woman, or a sick child?

*Val.* Good, very good!

*Las.* Or corrupt the waiting prentice to betray the reversion?

*I Int.* There's another point in's plot; corrupt with money to betray: sure 'tis some fort a' means. Mark; have a care!

*Las.* An 'twere the bare vinegar 'tis eaten with, it would in some sort satisfy nature: but might I once attain the dish itself, though I cut out my means through sword and fire, through poison, through anything that may make good my hopes—

*2 Int.* Thanks to the gods, and our officiousness, the plot's discover'd! fire, steel, and poison; burn the palace, kill the duke, and poison his privy-council.

*Val.* To the mercer's!—Let me see! how if, before we can attain the means to make up our acquaintance, the fish be eaten?

*Las.* If it be eaten, here he stands, that is the most dejected, most unfortunate, miserable, accursed, forsaken slave this province yields! I will not, sure, out-live it; no, I will die bravely, and like a Roman;

And after death, amidst the Elysian shades

I'll meet my love again.

*I Int.* "I will die bravely, like a Roman:" have a care; mark that! when he hath done all, he will kill himself.

*Val.* Will nothing ease your appetite but this?

*Las.* No; could the sea throw up his vastness, And offer free his best inhabitants,

'Twere not so much as a bare temptation to me!

*Val.* If you could be drawn to affect beef, venison, or fowl, it would be far the better.

*Las.* I do beseech your lordship's patience!

I do confess that, in this heat of blood,

I have contemn'd all dull and grosser meats;

But I protest I do honour a chine of beef, I do

reverence a loin of veal; but, good my lord, give

me leave a little to adore this! But, my good lord,

would your lordship, under colour of taking up

some silks, go to the mercer's, I would in all

benignity attend your honour, where we may be

invited, if fortune stand propitious.

*Val.* Sir, you shall work me as you please.

*Las.* Let it be suddenly, I do beseech your lordship! 'Tis now upon the point of dinner-time.

*Val.* I am all yours.

[*Exeunt LAZARILLO AND VALORS.*]

*I Int.* Come, let's confer: *Imprimis*, a' saith, like a blasphemous villain, he's greater than the duke; this peppers him, an there were nothing else.

*2 Int.* Then a' was naming plots; did you not hear?

*I Int.* Yes; but a' fell from that unto discovery, to corrupt by money, and so attain—

*2 Int.* Ay, ay, a' meant some fort or citadel the duke hath; his very face betrayed his meaning. Oh, he is a very subtle and a dangerous knave; but if a' deal, a God's name, we shall worm him.

*I Int.* But now comes the stroke, the fatal blow, fire, sword, and poison: Oh, cannibal, thou bloody cannibal!

*2 Int.* What had become of this poor state had not we been?

*I Int.* 'Faith, it had lain buried in its own ashes, had not a greater hand been in't.

*2 Int.* But note the rascal's resolution; after the act's done, because he would avoid all fear of

torture, and cozen the law, a' would kill himself: Was there ever the like danger brought to light in this age? Sure we shall merit much: we shall be able to keep two men a-piece, and a two-hand sword between us; we will live in favour of the state, betray our ten or twelve treasons a-week, and the people shall fear us. Come; to the lord Lucio! the sun shall not go down 'till he be hang'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*A Room in the Mercer's House.*

*Enter Mercer and a Prentice.*

*Mercer.* Look to my shop; and if there come ever a scholar in black, let him speak with me. [*Ris* Boy.] We that are shopkeepers in good trade, are so pestered, that we can scarce pick out an hour for our morning's meditation; and howsoever we are all accounted dull, and common jesting stocks for your gallants, there are some of us do not deserve it; for, for my own part, I do begin to be given to my book. I love a scholar with my heart; for, questionless, there are marvellous things to be done by art: Why, sir, some of them will tell you what is become of horses, and silver spoons, and will make wenches dance naked to their beds. I am yet unmarried, and because some of our neighbours are said to be cuckolds, I will never marry without the consent of some of these scholars, that know what will come of it.

*Enter Pandar.*

*Pandar.* Are you busy, sir?

*Mercer.* Never to you, sir, nor to any of your coat. Sir, is there anything to be done by art, concerning the great heir we talk'd on?

*Pandar.* Will she, nil she, she shall come running into my house, at the further corner in Saint Mark's street, betwixt three and four.

*Mercer.* Betwixt three and four? She's brave in clothes, is she not?

*Pandar.* Oh, rich, rich!—[*Aside.*] Where should I get clothes to dress her in? Help me, invention!—Sir, that her running through the street may be less noted, my art more shown, and your fear to speak with her less, she shall come in a white waistcoat, and—

*Mercer.* What! shall she?

*Pandar.* [*Aside.*] And perhaps torn stockings; she hath left her old wont else.

*Enter Prentice.*

*Prent.* Sir, my lord Gondarino hath sent you a rare fish-head.

*Mercer.* It comes right; all things suit right with me since I began to love scholars! You shall have it home with you against she come. Carry it to this gentleman's house.

*Pandar.* The fair white house, at the further corner of Saint Mark's street. Make haste!—I must leave you too, sir; I have two hours to study. Buy a new accidence, and ply your book, and you shall want nothing that all the scholars in the town can do for you! [*Exit.*]

*Mercer.* Heaven prosper both our studies! What a dull slave was I before I fell in love with this learning! not worthy to tread upon the earth; and what fresh hopes it hath put into me! I do hope, within this twelvemonth, to be able by art to serve the court with silks, and not undo myself; to trust

knights, and yet get in my money again; to keep my wife brave, and yet she keep nobody else so.

*Enter VALORE and LAZARILLO.*

Your lordship is most honourably welcome, in regard of your nobility; but most especially in regard of your scholarship. Did your lordship come openly?

*Val.* Sir, this cloak keeps me private; besides, no man will suspect me to be in the company of this gentleman; with whom I will desire you to be acquainted: he may prove a good customer to you.

*Las.* For plain silks and velvets.

*Mercer.* Are you scholastical?

*Las.* Something addicted to the muses.

*Val.* I hope they will not dispute. [*Aside.*]

*Mercer.* You have no skill in the black art?

*Enter Prentice.*

*Prent.* Sir, yonder's a gentleman enquires hastily for count Valore.

*Val.* For me? what is he?

*Prent.* One of your followers, my lord, I think.

*Val.* Let him come in.

*Mercer.* Shall I talk with you in private, sir?

*Enter Messenger, with a Letter.*

*Val.* [*Reads.*] "Count, come to the court; your business calls you thither:" I will go. Farewell, sir! I'll see your silks some other time. Farewell, Lazarillo!

*Mercer.* Will not your lordship take a piece of beef with me?

*Val.* Sir, I have greater business than eating; I'll leave this gentleman with you.

[*Exeunt VALORE and Messenger.*]

*Las.* Now, now, now, now! Now do I feel that strange struggling within me, that I think I could prophesy.

*Mercer.* The gentleman is meditating.

*Las.* Hunger, Valour, Love, Ambition, are alike pleasing, and, let our philosophers say what they will, are one kind of heat; only Hunger is the safest: Ambition is apt to fall; Love and Valour are not free from dangers: only Hunger, begotten of some old limber courtier, in paned hose, and nursed by an attorney's wife; now so thriven, that he need not fear to be of the Great Turk's guard; is so free from all quarrels and dangers, so full of hopes, joys, and ticklings, that my life is not so dear to me as his acquaintance.

*Enter Boy.*

*Boy.* Sir, the fish-head is gone.

*Las.* Then be thou henceforth dumb, with thy ill-boding voice!

Farewell, Milan! Farewell, noble duke! Farewell, my fellow-courtiers all, with whom I have of yore made many a scrambling meal in corners, behind arras, on stairs; And in the action oftentimes have spoil'd Our doublets and our hose with liquid stuff! Farewell, you lusty archers of the guard, To whom I now do give the bucklers up, And never more with any of your coat Will eat for wagers! now you happy be; When this shall light upon you, think on me! You sewers, carvers, ushers of the court, Sirnamed *gentle* for your fair demean, Here I do take of you my last farewell: May you stand stiffy in your proper places,

And execute your offices aright !  
Farewell, you maidens, with your mothers eke,  
Farewell, you courtly chaplains that be there !  
All good attend you ! may you never more  
Marry your patron's lady's waiting-woman,  
But may you raised be by this my fall !  
May Lazarillo suffer for you all !

*Mercer.* Sir, I was hearkening to you.

*Laz.* I will hear nothing ! I will break my knife,  
the ensign of my former happy state, knock out my  
teeth, have them hung at a barber's, and enter into  
religion.

*Boy.* Why, sir, I think I know whether it is gone.

*Laz.* See the rashness of man in his nature !—  
Whither, whither ? I do unsay all that I have said !  
Go on, go on, boy ! I humble myself, and follow  
thee.—Farewell, sir !

*Mercer.* Not so, sir ; you shall take a piece of  
beef with me.

*Laz.* I cannot stay.

*Mercer.* By my fay, but you shall, sir, in re-

gard of your love to learning, and your skill in the  
black art.

*Laz.* I do hate learning, and I have no skill in  
the black art : I would I had !

*Mercer.* Why, your desire is sufficient to me ;  
you shall stay.

*Laz.* The most horrible and detested curses that  
can be imagined, light upon all the professors of  
that art ! May they be drunk, and, when they go  
to conjure, reel in the circle ! May the spirits by  
them raised tear 'em in pieces, and hang their  
quarters on old broken walls and steeple tops !

*Mercer.* This speech of yours shows you to have  
some skill in the science ; wherefore, in civility, I  
may not suffer you to depart empty.

*Laz.* My stomach is up ; I cannot endure it ! I  
will fight in this quarrel, as soon as for my prince.  
Room ! make way ! *[Draws his rapier.]*  
Hunger commands ; my valour must obey !

*[Exeunt.]*

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—*An Antechamber in the Palace.*

*Enter VALORS and ARRIGO.*

*Val.* Is the duke private ?

*Arr.* He is alone ; but I think your lordship  
may enter. *[Exit VALORS.]*

*Enter GONDARINO.*

*Gond.* Who is with the duke ?

*Arr.* The count is new gone in ; but the duke  
will come forth, before you can be weary of  
waiting.

*Gond.* I will attend him here.

*Arr.* I must wait without the door. *[Exit.]*

*Gond.* Doth he hope to clear his sister ? She  
will come no more to my house, to laugh at me :  
I have sent her to an habitation, where, when she  
shall be seen, it will set a gloss upon her name :  
Yet, upon my soul, I have bestowed her amongst  
the purest-hearted creatures of her sex, and the  
freest from dissimulation ; for their deeds are all  
alike, only they dare speak what the rest think.  
The women of this age, (if there be any degrees of  
comparison amongst their sex,) are worse than  
those of former times ; for I have read of women,  
of that truth, spirit, and constancy, that, were they  
now living, I should endure to see them : but I fear  
the writers of the time belied them ; for how fami-  
liar a thing is it with the poets of our age, to extol  
their whores (which they call *mistresses*) with hea-  
venly praises ! but, I thank their furies, and their  
crazed brains, beyond belief ! Nay, how many that  
would fain seem serious, have dedicated grave works  
to ladies, toothless, hollow-eyed, their hair shed-  
ding, purple-faced, their nails apparently coming  
off, and the bridges of their noses broken down,  
and have call'd them the choice handy-works of  
Nature, the patterns of perfection, and the wonder-  
ment of women ! Our women begin to swarm like  
bees in summer : As I came hither, there was no  
pair of stairs, no entry, no lobby, but was pestered  
with them : Methinks there might be some course  
taken to destroy them.

*Enter ARRIGO, and an old deaf Country Gentlewoman,  
Suitor to the Duke.*

*Arr.* I do accept your money : Walk here ; and  
when the duke comes out, you shall have fit oppor-  
tunity to deliver your petition to him.

*Gentlew.* I thank you heartily. I pray you who's  
he that walks there ?

*Arr.* A lord, and a soldier, one in good favour  
with the duke : If you could get him to deliver  
your petition—

*Gentlew.* What do you say, sir ?

*Arr.* If you could get him to deliver your peti-  
tion for you, or to second you, 'twere sure.

*Gentlew.* I hope I shall live to requite your  
kindness.

*Arr.* You have already. *[Exit.]*

*Gentlew.* May it please your lordship—

*Gond.* No, no.

*Gentlew.* To consider the estate—

*Gond.* No.

*Gentlew.* Of a poor oppressed country gentle-  
woman.

*Gond.* No, it doth not please my lordship.

*Gentlew.* First and foremost, I have had great  
injury ; then I have been brought up to the town  
three times.

*Gond.* A pox on him that brought thee to the  
town !

*Gentlew.* I thank your good lordship heartily !  
though I cannot hear well, I know it grieves you :  
And here we have been delay'd, and sent down  
again, and fetch'd up again, and sent down again,  
to my great charge ; and now at last they have  
fetch'd me up, and five of my daughters—

*Gond.* Enough to damn five worlds !

*Gentlew.* Handsome young women, though I  
say it : they are all without ; if it please your lord-  
ship, I'll call them in.

*Gond.* Five women ! how many of my senses  
should I have left me then ? call in five devils first !  
No, I will rather walk with thee alone,  
And hear thy tedious tale of injury,  
And give thee answers ; whisper in thine ear,

And make thee understand through thy French  
And all this with tame patience! [hood;

*Gentlew.* I see your lordship does believe that they are without; and I perceive that you are much moved at our injury: Here's a paper will tell you more.

*Gond.* Away!

*Gentlew.* It may be you had rather hear me tell it *viva voce*, as they say.

*Gond.* Oh, no, no, no, no! I have heard it before.

*Gentlew.* Then you have heard of enough injury, for a poor gentlewoman to receive.

*Gond.* Never, never!—But that it troubles my conscience to wish any good to these women, I could afford them to be valiant and able, that it might be no disgrace for a soldier to beat them.

*Gentlew.* I hope your lordship will deliver my petition to his grace; and you may tell him withal—

*Gond.* What? I will deliver anything against myself, to be rid on thee.

*Gentlew.* That yesterday, about three o'clock in the afternoon, I met my adversary.

*Gond.* Give me thy paper! he can abide no long tales.

*Gentlew.* 'Tis very short, my lord: And I demanding of him—

*Gond.* I'll tell him that shall serve thy turn.

*Gentlew.* How?

*Gond.* I'll tell him that shall serve thy turn: Begone! Man never doth remember how great his offences are, 'till he do meet with one of you, that plagues him for them. Why should women only, above all other creatures that were created for the benefit of man, have the use of speech? or why should any deed of theirs, done by their fleshly appetites, be disgraceful to their owners? Nay, why should not an act done by any beast I keep, against my consent, disparage me as much as that of theirs?

*Gentlew.* [Going, returns.] Here's some few angels for your lordship.

*Gond.* Again? yet more torments?

*Gentlew.* Indeed you shall have them.

*Gond.* Keep off!

*Gentlew.* A small gratuity for your kindness.

*Gond.* Hold away! [Throws them on the ground.]

*Gentlew.* Why, then, I thank your lordship! I'll gather them up again; and I'll be sworn it is the first money that was refused since I came to the court.

*Gond.* What can she devise to say more?

*Gentlew.* Truly, I would have willingly parted with them to your lordship.

*Gond.* I believe it, I believe it.

*Gentlew.* But since it is thus—

*Gond.* More yet?

*Gentlew.* I will attend without, and expect an answer.

*Gond.* Do; begone, and thou shalt expect, and have anything; thou shalt have thy answer from him: and he were best to give thee a good one at first, for thy deaf importunity will conquer him too in the end.

*Gentlew.* God bless your lordship, and all that favour poor distressed country gentlewomen!

[Exit.]

*Gond.* All the diseases of man light upon them that do, and upon me when I do! A week of such

days would either make me stark mad, or tame me. Yonder other woman, that I have sure enough, shall answer for thy sins. Dare they incense me still? I'll make them fear as much to be ignorant of me and my moods, as men are to be ignorant of the law they live under.—Who's there? my blood grew cold! I began to fear my suitor's return.—'Tis the Duke.

Enter DUKE and VALORE.

*Val.* I know her chaste, though she be young And is not of that forced behaviour [and free, That many others are; and that this lord, Out of the boundless malice to the sex, Hath thrown this scandal on her.

*Gond.* Fortune befriended me against my will, with this good old country gentlewoman.—I beseech your grace to view favourably the petition of a wronged gentlewoman.

*Duke.* What, Gondarino, are you become a petitioner for your enemies?

*Gond.* My lord, they are no enemies of mine: I confess, the better to cover my deeds, which sometimes were loose enough, I pretended it (as it is wisdom to keep close our incontinence); but since you have discovered me, I will no more put on that vizard, but will as freely open all my thoughts to you as to my confessor.

*Duke.* What say you to this?

*Val.* He that confesses he did once dissemble, I'll never trust his words: Can you imagine A maid, whose beauty could not suffer her To live thus long untempted by the noblest, Richest, and cunning'st masters in that art, And yet hath ever held a fair repute, Could in one morning, and by him, be brought To forget all her virtue, and turn whore?

*Gond.* I would I had some other talk in hand, Than to accuse a sister to her brother: Nor do I mean it for a public scandal, Unless by urging me you make it so.

*Duke.* I will read this at better leisure.— Where is the lady? [Gondarino,

*Val.* At his house.

*Gond.* No; she is departed thence.

*Val.* Whither?

*Gond.* Urge it not thus; or let me be excused, If what I speak betray her chastity, And both increase my sorrow, and your own.

*Val.* Fear me not so: If she deserve the fame Which she hath gotten, I would have it publish'd, Brand her myself, and whip her through the city! I wish those of my blood that do offend, Should be more strictly punish'd than my foes. Let it be proved!

*Duke.* Gondarino, thou shalt Prove it, or suffer worse than she should do.

*Gond.* Then pardon me, if I betray the faults Of one I love more dearly than myself, Since, opening hers, I shall betray mine own: But I will bring you where she now intends Not to be virtuous. Pride and Wantonness, That are true friends in deed, though not in show, Have enter'd on her heart; there she doth bathe, And sleek her hair, and practise cunning looks, To entertain me with; and hath her thoughts As full of lust as ever you did think Them full of modesty.

*Duke.* Gondarino, lead on; we'll follow thee.

[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The Street before the Bagnio.**Enter Pandar.*

*Pandar.* Here hope I to meet my citizen, and here hopes he to meet his scholar: I am sure I am grave enough to his eyes, and knave enough to deceive him: I am believed to conjure, raise storms and devils, by whose power I can do wonders: Let him believe so still; belief hurts no man. I have an honest black cloak for my knavery, and a general pardon for his foolery, from this present day, till the day of his breaking. Is't not a misery, and the greatest of our age, to see a handsome, young, fair enough, and well-mounted wench, humble herself in an old stammel petticoat, standing possessed of no more fringe than the street can allow her; her upper parts so poor and wanting, that you may see her bones through her bodice; shoes she would have, if her captain were come over, and is content the while to devote herself to ancient slippers. These premises well considered, gentlemen, will move; they make me melt, I promise you, they stir me much; and were't not for my smooth, soft, silken citizen, I would quit this transitory trade, get me an everlasting robe, sear up my conscience, and turn sergeant. But here he comes is mine; as good as prize: Sir Pandarus, be my speed!—You are most fitly met, sir.

*Enter Mercor.*

*Mercor.* And you as well encountered. What of this heir? Have your books been propitious?

*Pandar.* Sir, 'tis done! She's come, she's in my house; make yourself apt for courtship, stroke up your stockings, lose not an inch of your legs' goodness; I am sure you wear socks.

*Mercor.* There your books fail you, sir; in truth I wear no socks.

*Pandar.* I would you had, sir! it were the sweeter grace for your legs. Get on your gloves; are they perfumed?

*Mercor.* A pretty wash, I will assure you.

*Pandar.* 'Twill serve. Your offers must be full of bounty; velvets to furnish a gown, silks for petticoats and foreparts, shag for lining; forget not some pretty jewel, to fasten after some little compliment! If she deny this courtesy, double your bounties; be not wanting in abundance: fullness of gifts, link'd with a pleasing tongue, will win an anchorite. Sir, you are my friend, and friend to all that profess good letters; I must not use this office else; it fits not for a scholar and a gentleman. Those stockings are of Naples, they are silk?

*Mercor.* You are again beside your text, sir; they are of the best of wool, and they are cleped Jersey.

*Pandar.* Sure they are very dear?

*Mercor.* Nine shillings, by my love to learning!

*Pandar.* Pardon my judgment; we scholars use no other objects but our books.

*Mercor.* There is one thing entomb'd in that grave breast, that makes me equally admire it with your scholarship.

*Pandar.* Sir, but that in modesty I am bound not to affect mine own commendation, I would enquire it of you.

*Mercor.* Sure, you are very honest; and yet you have a kind of modest fear to show it: Do

not deny it; that face of yours is a worthy, learned, modest face.

*Pandar.* Sir, I can blush.

*Mercor.* Virtue and grace are always paired together: But I will leave to stir your blood, sir;—and now to our business!

*Pandar.* Forget not my instructions.

*Mercor.* I apprehend you, sir; I will gather myself together with my best phrases, and so I shall discourse in some sort takingly.

*Pandar.* This was well worded, sir, and like a scholar.

*Mercor.* The muses favour me, as my intents are virtuous! Sir, you shall be my tutor; 'tis never too late, sir, to love learning. When I can once speak true Latin—

*Pandar.* What do you intend, sir?

*Mercor.* Marry, I will then beggar all your bawdy writers, and undertake, at the peril of my own invention, all pageants, poesies for chimnies, speeches for the Duke's entertainment, whensoever and whatsoever; nay, I will build, at mine own charge, an hospital, to which shall retire all diseased opinions, all broken poets, all prose-men that are fallen from small sense to mere letters; and it shall be lawful for a lawyer, if he be a civil man, though he have undone others and himself by the language, to retire to this poor life, and learn to be honest.

*Pandar.* Sir, you are very good, and very charitable; you are a true pattern for the city, sir!

*Mercor.* Sir, I do know sufficiently, their shop-books cannot save them; there is a further end—

*Pandar.* Oh, sir, much may be done by manuscript.

*Mercor.* I do confess it, sir, provided still they be canonical, and have some worthy hands set to 'em for probation.—But we forget ourselves.

*Pandar.* Sir, enter when you please, and all good language tip your tongue!

*Mercor.* All that love learning pray for my good success! [Exit into the house.]

*Enter LAZARILLO and Boy.*

*Las.* Boy, whereabouts are we?

*Boy.* Sir, by all tokens, this is the house; bawdy, I am sure, because of the broken windows.—The fish-head is within; if you dare venture, here you may surprise it.

*Las.* The misery of man may fitly be compared to a didapper, who, when she is under water, past our sight, and indeed can seem no more to us, rises again, shakes but herself, and is the same she was; so is it still with transitory man: This day, oh, but an hour since, and I was mighty, mighty in knowledge, mighty in my hopes, mighty in blessed means, and was so truly happy, that I durst have said, "Live, Lazarillo, and be satisfied!" But now—

*Boy.* Sir, you are yet afloat, and may recover; be not your own wreck: Here lies the harbour; go in, and ride at ease!

*Las.* Boy, I am received to be a gentleman, a courtier, and a man of action, modest and wise; and, be it spoken with thy reverence, child, abounding virtuous; and wouldst thou have a man of these choice habits, covet the cover of a bawdy-house? Yet, if I go not in, I am but—

*Boy.* But what, sir?

*Las.* Dust, boy, but dust; and my soul, un-

tified, shall haunt the keepers of my blessed saint, and I will appear.

*Boy.* [*Aside.*] An ass to all men.—Sir, these are no means to stay your appetite; you must resolve to enter.

*Laz.* Were not the house subject to martial law—

*Boy.* If that be all, sir, you may enter, for you can know nothing here that the court is ignorant of; only the more eyes shall look upon you, for there they wink one at another's faults.

*Laz.* If I do not—

*Boy.* Then you must beat fairly back again, fall to your physical mess of porridge, and the twice-sack'd carcass of a capon: Fortune may favour you so much, to send the bread to it: but it's a mere venture, and money may be put out upon it.

*Laz.* I will go in and live; pretend some love to the gentlewoman, screw myself in affection, and so be satisfied.

*Pandar.* This fly is caught, is meshed already; I will suck him, and lay him by.

*Boy.* Muffle yourself in your cloak by any means; 'tis a received thing among gallants, to walk to their lechery as though they had the rheum. 'Twas well you brought not your horse.

*Laz.* Why, boy?

*Boy.* 'Faith, sir, 'tis the fashion of our gentry, to have their horses wait at door like men, while the beasts their masters are within at rack and manger; 'twould have discover'd much.

*Laz.* I will lay by these habits, forms, and grave Respects of what I am, and be myself:

Only my appetite, my fire, my soul,  
My being, my dear appetite, shall go  
Along with me;

Arm'd with whose strength I fearless will attempt  
The greatest danger dare oppose my fury.

I am resolved, wherever that thou art,  
Most sacred dish, hid from unhallo'd eyes,  
To find thee out!

Be'st thou in hell, by rap'd Proserpina,  
To be a rival in black Pluto's love;  
Or mov'st thou in the heavens, a form divine,  
Lashing the lazy spheres; or if thou be'st  
Return'd to thy first being, thy mother sea,  
There will I seek thee forth: Earth, sir, nor fire,  
Nor the black shades below shall bar my sight,  
So daring is my powerful appetite!

*Boy.* Sir, you may save this long voyage, and take a shorter cut: You have forgot yourself; the fish-head's here; your own imaginations have made you mad.

*Laz.* Term it a jealous fury, good my boy!

*Boy.* 'Faith, sir, term it what you will, you must use other terms before you can get it.

*Laz.* The looks of my sweet love are fair,  
Fresh and feeding as the air!

*Boy.* Sir, you forget yourself.

*Laz.* Was never seen so rare a head,  
Of any fish alive or dead!

*Boy.* Good sir, remember! this is the house, sir.

*Laz.* Cursed be he that dare not venture—

*Boy.* Pity yourself, sir, and leave this fury.

*Laz.* For such a prize! and so I enter.

[LAZARILLO and Boy exeunt into the house.]

*Pandar.* Dun's i' th' mire; get out again, how he can: My honest gallant, I'll show you one trick more than ever the fool your father dream'd of yet. Madonna Julia!

*Enter JULIA.*

*Julia.* What news, my sweet rogue? My dear sins' broker, what good news?

*Pandar.* There is a kind of ignorant thing, much like a courtier, now gone in.

*Julia.* Is a' gallant?

*Pandar.* He shines not very gloriously, nor does he wear one skin perfumed to keep the other sweet; his coat is not in *or*, nor does the world run yet on wheels with him; he's rich enough, and has a small thing follows him, like to a boat tied to a tall ship's tail. Give him entertainment; be light and flashing, like a meteor; hug him about the neck, give him a kiss, and lisping cry, "Good sir!" and he's thine own, as fast as he were tied to thine arms by indenture.

*Julia.* I dare do more than this, if he be of the true court cut; I'll take him out a lesson worth the learning: But we are but their apes.—What's he worth?

*Pandar.* Be he rich or poor, if he will take thee with him, thou may'st use thy trade, free from constables and marshals.—Who hath been here since I went out?

*Julia.* There is a gentleman sent hither by a lord: She's a piece of dainty stuff, my rogue; smooth and soft as new sattin; she was never gummed yet, boy, nor fretted.

*Pandar.* Where lies she?

*Julia.* She lies above, towards the street; not to be spoke with, but by the lord that sent her, or some from him, we have in charge from his servants.

*Enter LAZARILLO.*

*Pandar.* Peace! he comes out again upon discovery: Up with all your canvass, hale him in! and, when thou hast done, clap him aboard bravely, my valiant pinnace!

*Julia.* Be gone! I shall do reason with him.

[*Pandar retires.*]

*Laz.* Are you the special beauty of this house?

*Julia.* Sir, you have given it a more special regard by your good language, than these black brows can merit.

*Laz.* Lady, you are fair.

*Julia.* Fair, sir? I thank you! all the poor means I have left to be thought grateful, is but a kiss, and you shall have it, sir. [Kisses him.]

*Laz.* You have a very moving lip.

*Julia.* Prove it again, sir; it may be your sense was set too high, and so over-wrought itself.

*Laz.* [*Kisses her.*] 'Tis still the same. How far may you hold the time to be spent, lady?

*Julia.* Four o'clock, sir.

*Laz.* I have not eat to-day.

*Julia.* You will have the better stomach to your supper; in the mean time, I'll feed you with delight.

*Laz.* 'Tis not so good upon an empty stomach: If it might be without the trouble of your house, I would eat.

*Julia.* Boy, we can have a capon ready.

*Laz.* The day?

*Julia.* 'Tis Friday, sir.

*Laz.* I do eat little flesh upon these days.

*Julia.* Come, sweet! you shall not think on meat; I will drown it with a better appetite.

*Laz.* I feel it work more strangely; I must eat.

*Julia.* 'Tis now too late to send: I say you shall

not think on meat; if you do, by this kiss, I'll be angry.

*Lax.* I could be far more sprightly had I eaten, and more lasting.

*Julia.* What will you have, sir? name but the fish, my maid shall bring it, if it may be got.

*Lax.* Methinks your house should not be so unfurnished, as not to have some pretty modicum.

*Julia.* It is so now: but, could you stay till supper—

*Lax.* Sure I have offended highly, and much, and my inflictions make it manifest! I will retire henceforth, and keep my chamber, live privately, and die forgotten.

*Julia.* Sir, I must crave your pardon! I had forgot myself: I have a dish of meat within, and 'tis fish: I think this dukedom holds not a daintier; 'tis an umbrana's head.

*Lax.* Lady, this kiss is yours, and this.

*Julia.* Ho! within there! cover the board, and set the fish-head on it.

*Lax.* Now am I so truly happy, so much above all fate and fortune, that I should despise that man durst say, "Remember, Lazarillo, thou art mortal!"

*Enter Intelligencers with a Guard.*

*2 Int.* This is the villain: Lay hands on him!

*Lax.* [*He is seized.*] Gentlemen, why am I thus entreated? what is the nature of my crime?

*2 Int.* Sir, though you have carried it a great while privately, and (as you think) well, yet we have seen you, sir, and we do know thee, Lazarillo, for a traitor!

*Lax.* The gods defend our Duke.

*2 Int.* Amen! Sir, sir, this cannot save that stiff neck from the halter.

*Julia.* Gentlemen, I am glad you have discovered him: he should not have eaten under my roof for twenty pounds; and surely I did not like him when he call'd for fish.

*Lax.* My friends, will ye let me have that little favour—

*1 Int.* Sir, you shall have law, and nothing else.

*Lax.* To let me stay the eating of a bit or two; for I protest I am yet fasting.

*Julia.* I'll have no traitor come within my house.

*Lax.* Now could I wish myself I had been traitor! I have strength enough for to endure it, had I but patience. Man, thou art but grass, thou art a bubble, and thou must perish.

Then lead along; I am prepared for all:

Since I have lost my hopes, welcome my fall!

*2 Int.* Away, sir!

*Lax.* As thou hast hope of man, stay but this dish this two hours; I doubt not but I shall be discharged: By this light, I will marry thee!

*Julia.* You shall marry me first then.

*Lax.* I do contract myself unto thee now, before these gentlemen.

*Julia.* I'll preserve it till you be hanged or quitted.

*Lax.* Thanks! thanks!

*2 Int.* Away, away! you shall thank her at the gallows.

*Lax.* Adieu, adieu!

*[Exit LAZARILLO, Intelligencers, and Guard.]*

*Julia.* If he live, I'll have him; if he be hang'd, there's no loss in it. *[Exit.]*

*ORIANA and her Waiting-woman, looking out at a Window.*

*Ori.* Hast thou provided one to bear my letter to my brother?

*Wait.* I have enquired; but they of the house will suffer no letter nor message to be carried from you, but such as the lord Gondarino shall be acquainted with: Truly, madam, I suspect the house to be no better than it should be.

*Ori.* What dost thou doubt?

*Wait.* 'Faith, I am loth to tell it, madam.

*Ori.* Out with it! 'Tis not true modesty to fear to speak that thou dost think.

*Wait.* I think it be one of these same bawdy-houses.

*Ori.* 'Tis no matter, wench; we are warm in it; keep thou thy mind pure, and, upon my word, that name will do thee no hurt; I cannot force myself yet to fear anything. When I do get out, I'll have another encounter with my Woman-Hater. Here will I sit: I may get sight of some of my friends; it must needs be a comfort to them to see me here.

*Enter DUKE, GONDARINO, VALORE, and ARRIGO, disguised.*

*Gond.* Are we all sufficiently disguised? for this house where she attends me, is not to be visited in our own shapes.

*Duke.* We are not ourselves.

*Arr.* I know the house to be sinful enough; yet I have been, heretofore, and durst now, but for discovering of you, appear here in my own like.

*Duke.* Where's Lucio? [*ness.*]

*Arr.* My lord, he said the affairs of the commonwealth would not suffer him to attend always.

*Duke.* Some great ones, questionless, that be

*Val.* Come, let us enter. [*will handle.*]

*Gond.* [*Aside.*] See, how fortune strives to revenge my quarrel upon these women! She's in the window; were it not to undo her, I should not look upon her.

*Duke.* Lead us, Gondarino!

*Gond.* Stay; since you force me to display my shame,

Look there! and you, my lord! know you that

*Duke.* 'Tis she. [*face?*]

*Val.* It is.

*Gond.* 'Tis she, whose greatest virtue ever was

Disimulation; she that still hath strove More to sin cunningly, than to avoid it;

She that hath ever sought to be accounted

Most virtuous, when she did deserve most scandal;

'Tis she that itches now, and, in the height

Of her intemperate thoughts, with greedy eyes

Expects my coming to ally her lust.

Leave her! forget she is thy sister!

*Val.* Stay, stay!

*Duke.* I am as full of this as thou canst be;

The memory of this will easily

Hereafter stay my loose and wand'ring thoughts

From any woman.

*Val.* This will not down with me; I dare not

trust this fellow.

*Duke.* Leave her here! That only shall be her

punishment, never to be fetch'd from hence; but

let her use her trade to get her living.

*Val.* Stay, good my lord! I do believe all this,

as great men as I have had known whores to their

sisters, and have laugh'd at it. I would fain hear

how she talks, since she grew thus light: will your

grace make him show himself to her, as if he were

now come to satisfy her longing! whilst we, unseen

of her, overhear her wantonness. Let's make our best of it now; we shall have good mirth.

*Duke.* Do it, Gondarino.

*Gond.* I must:—Fortune, assist me but this once!

*Val.* Here we shall stand unseen, and near

*Gond.* Madam! Oriana! [enough.]

*Ori.* Who's that? Oh! my lord!

*Gond.* Shall I come up?

*Ori.* Oh, you are merry; shall I come down?

*Gond.* It is better there.

*Ori.* What is the confession of the lie you made to the Duke, which I scarce believe yet you had impudence enough to do? Did it not gain you so much faith with me, as that I was willing to be at your lordship's bestowing, till you had recovered my credit, and confessed yourself a liar, as you pretended to do? I confess I began to fear you, and desired to be out of your house; but your own followers forced me hither.

*Gond.* 'Tis well suspected; dissemble still, for there are some may hear us!

*Ori.* More tricks yet, my lord? What house this is I know not; I only know myself; 'twere a great conquest, if you could fasten a scandal upon me. 'Faith, my lord, give me leave to write to my brother!

*Duke.* Come down!

*Val.* Come down!

*Arr.* If it please your grace, there is a back door.

*Val.* Come, meet us there then.

*Duke.* It seems you are acquainted with the house.

*Arr.* I have been in it.

*Gond.* She saw you, and dissembled.

*Duke.* Sir, we shall know that better.

*Gond.* Bring me unto her! if I prove her not To be a strumpet, let me be contemn'd Of all her sex. [Exeunt.]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Lucio's Apartment. A Curtain in the back Part.*

*Enter Lucio.*

*Lucio.* Now, whilst the young duke follows his delights,

We that do mean to practise in the state,  
Must pick our times, and set our faces in,  
And nod our heads, as it may prove most fit  
For the main good of the dear commonwealth.—  
Who's within there?

*Enter Secretary.*

*Secr.* My lord?

*Lucio.* Secretary, fetch the gown I use to read petitions in, and the standish I answer French letters with; and call in the gentleman that attends. [Exit Secretary.]

Little know they that do not deal in state,  
How many things there are to be observed,  
Which seem but little; yet, by one of us  
(Whose brains do wind about the commonwealth)  
Neglected, cracks our credits utterly.

*Enter Gentleman and Secretary.*

Sir, but that I do presume upon your secrecy, I would not have appeared to you thus ignorantly attired, without a toothpick in a ribband, or a ring in my bandstring.

*Gent.* Your lordship sent for me.

*Lucio.* I did: Sir, your long practice in the state, under a great man, hath led you to much experience.

*Gent.* My lord!

*Lucio.* Suffer not your modesty to excuse it. In short, and in private, I desire your direction: I take my study already to be furnished after a grave and wise method.

*Gent.* What will this lord do? [Aside.]

*Lucio.* My book-strings are suitable, and of a reaching colour.

*Gent.* How's this? [Aside.]

*Lucio.* My standish of wood strange and sweet, and my fore-flap hangs in the right place, and as near Machiavel's as can be gather'd by tradition.

*Gent.* [Aside.] Are there such men as will say nothing abroad, and play the fools in their lodgings? This lord must be follow'd.—And hath your lordship some new-made words to scatter in your speeches in public, to gain note, that the hearers may carry them away, and dispute of them at dinner?

*Lucio.* I have, sir; and, besides, my several gowns and caps agreeable to my several occasions.

*Gent.* 'Tis well; and you have learned to write a bad hand, that the readers may take pains for it?

*Lucio.* Yes, sir; and I give out I have the palsy.

*Gent.* Good!—'Twere better though if you had it. [Aside.]—Your lordship hath a secretary that can write fair, when you purpose to be understood?

*Lucio.* 'Faith, sir, I have one; there he stands; he hath been my secretary these seven years, but he hath forgotten to write.

*Gent.* If he can make a writing face, it is not amiss, so he keep his own counsel. Your lordship hath no hope of the gout?

*Lucio.* Uh! little, sir, since the pain in my right foot left me.

*Gent.* 'Twill be some scandal to your wisdom, though I see your lordship knows enough in public business.

*Lucio.* I am not employed though to my desert in occasions foreign, nor frequented for matters domestical.

*Gent.* Not frequented? What course takes your lordship?

*Lucio.* The readiest way; my door stands wide; my secretary knows I am not denied to any.

*Gent.* In this (give me leave) your lordship is out of the way: make a back-door to let out intelligencers; seem to be ever busy, and put your door under keepers, and you shall have a troop of clients sweating to come at you.

*Lucio.* I have a back-door already: I will henceforth be busy.—Secretary, run and keep the door. [Exit Secretary.]

*Gent.* This will fetch 'em.

*Lucio.* I hope so.

*Re-enter Secretary.*

*Secr.* My lord, there are some require access to you, about weighty affairs of state.

*Lucio.* Already?

*Genl.* I told you so.

*Lucio.* How weighty is the business?

*Secr.* Treason, my lord.

*Lucio.* Sir, my debts to you for this are great.

*Genl.* I will leave your lordship now.

*Lucio.* Sir, my death must be sudden, if I requite you not. At the back-door, good sir.

*Genl.* I will be your lordship's intelligencer for once. [*Exit.*]

*Secr.* My lord.

*Lucio.* Let 'em in, and say I am at my study. [*Retires behind the curtain.*]

*Enter LAZARILLO and two Intelligencers.*

*1 Int.* Where is your lord?

*Secr.* At his study; but he will have you brought in.

*Las.* Why, gentlemen, what will you charge me withal?

*2 Int.* Treason, horrible treason: I hope to have the leading of thee to prison, and prick thee on i' th' arse with a halbert; to have him hang'd that salutes thee, and call all those in question that spit not upon thee.

*Las.* My thread is spun; yet, might I but call for this dish of meat at the gallows, instead of a psalm, it were to be endured. The curtain opens; now my end draws on. [*Secretary draws the curtain.*]

*Lucio.* Gentlemen, I am not empty of weighty occasions at this time. I pray you, your business.

*1 Int.* My lord, I think we have discovered one of the most bloody traitors that ever the world held.

*Lucio.* Signor Lazarillo, I am glad you are one of this discovery: give me your hand!

*2 Int.* My lord, that is the traitor.

*Lucio.* Keep him off! I would not for my whole estate have touched him.

*Las.* My lord—

*Lucio.* Peace, sir! I know the devil is at your tongue's end, to furnish you with speeches. What are the particulars you charge him with?

[*They deliver a Paper to Lucio, who reads.*]

*Both Int.* We have conferr'd our notes, and have extracted that, which we will justify upon our oaths.

*Lucio.* [*Reads.*] "That he would be greater than the duke; that he had cast plots for this, and meant to corrupt some to betray him; that he would burn the city, kill the duke, and poison the privy-council; and, lastly, kill himself." Though thou deservest justly to be hang'd with silence, yet I allow thee to speak: be short.

*Las.* My lord, so may my greatest wish succeed, So may I live, and compass what I seek, As I had never treason in my thoughts, Nor ever did conspire the overthrow Of any creatures, but of brutish beasts, Fowls, fishes, and such other human food, As is provided for the good of man. If stealing custards, tarts, and florentines, By some late statute be created treason, How many fellow-courtiers can I bring, Whose long attendance and experience Hath made them deeper in the plot than I!

*Lucio.* Peace! such hath ever been the clemency

of my gracious master the duke, in all his proceedings, that I had thought, and thought I had thought rightly, that Malice would long ere this have hid herself in her den, and have turned her own sting against her own heart: but I well now perceive, that so froward is the disposition of a depraved nature, that it doth not only seek revenge, where it hath received injury, but many times thirst after their destruction where it hath met with benefits.

*Las.* But, my good lord—

*2 Int.* Let's gag him.

*Lucio.* Peace! again! 'But many times thirst after their destruction where it hath met with benefits;' there I left. Such, and no better, are the business that we have now in hand.

*1 Int.* He's excellently spoken.

*2 Int.* He'll wind a traitor, I warrant him.

*Lucio.* But surely, methinks, setting aside the touch of conscience, and all other inward convulsions—

*2 Int.* He'll be hang'd, I know by that word.

*Las.* Your lordship may consider—

*Lucio.* Hold thy peace! thou canst not answer this speech; no traitor can answer it. But, because you cannot answer this speech, I take it you have confessed the treason.

*1 Int.* The Count Valore was the first that discovered him, and can witness it; but he left the matter to your lordship's grave consideration.

*Lucio.* I thank his lordship!—Carry him away speedily to the duke.

*Las.* Now, Lazarillo, thou art tumbled down The hill of fortune, with a violent arm!

All plagues that can be, famine and the sword, Will light upon thee; black despair will boil In thy despairing breast; no comfort by, Thy friends far off, thy enemies are nigh!

*Lucio.* Away with him! I'll follow you. Look you pinion him, and take his money from him, lest he swallow a shilling, and kill himself.

*2 Int.* Get thou on before! [*Exeunt*]

## SCENE II.—*A Room in the Palace.*

*Enter the DUKE, VALORE, GONDARINO, and ARBOZO.*

*Duke.* Now, Gondarino, what can you put on me? That may again deceive us?

Have you more strange illusions, yet more mists, Through which the weak eye may be led to error? What can you say that may do satisfaction Both for her wronged honour, and your ill?

*Gond.* All I can say, or may, is said already: She is unchaste, or else I have no knowledge, I do not breathe, nor have the use of sense.

*Duke.* Dare you be yet so wilful-ignorant Of your own nakedness? Did not your servants, In mine own hearing, confess they brought her to That house we found her in, almost by force. And with a great distrust of some ensuing hazard?

*Val.* He that hath begun so worthily, It fits not with his resolution

To leave off thus, my lord. I know these are But idle proofs. What says your lordship to them?

*Gond.* Count, I dare yet pronounce again, thy sister is not honest.

*Val.* You are yourself, my lord; I like your settledness.

*Gond.* Count, thou art young, and unexper-

The dark hidden ways of women : Thou dar'st  
With confidence, a lady of fifteen [affirm  
May be a maid ?

*Val.* Sir, if it were not so,  
I have a sister would sit near my heart.

*Gond.* Let her sit near her shame ! it better fits  
her :

Call back the blood that made your stream in near-  
ness,

And turn the current to a better use ;  
'Tis too much mudded ; I do grieve to know it.

*Duke.* Dar'st thou make up again ? dar'st thou  
knowing we know thee ? [turn face,

Hast thou not been discover'd openly ?  
Did not our ears hear her deny thy courtings ?  
Did we not see her blush with modest anger,  
To be so overtaken by a trick ?

Can you deny this, lord ?

*Gond.* Had not your grace and her kind brother  
been

Within level of her eye, you should have had a  
hotter

Volley from her, more full of blood and fire,  
Ready to leap the window where she stood ;  
So truly sensual is her appetite.

*Duke.* Sir, sir, these are but words and tricks :  
give me the proof !

*Val.* What need a better proof than your  
lordship ? I am sure  
You have lain with her, my lord.

*Gond.* I have confess'd it, sir.

*Duke.* I dare not give thee credit, without  
witness.

*Gond.* Does your grace think we carry seconds  
with us,

To search us, and see fair play ? Your grace hath  
been

Hll-tutor'd in the business ! but if you hope  
To try her truly, and satisfy yourself  
What frailty is, give her the test :

Do not remember, count, she is your sister ;  
Nor let my lord the duke believe she's fair ;  
But put her to it, without hope or pity !  
Then ye shall see that golden form fly off,  
That all eyes wonder at for pure and fix'd,  
And under it base blushing copper ; metal  
Not worth the meanest honour :

You shall behold her then, my lord, transparent,  
look through

Her heart, and view the spirits how they leap ;  
And tell me then I did belie the lady.

*Duke.* It shall be done !

Come, Gondarino, bear us company.

We do believe thee : she shall die, and thou shalt  
see it.

*Enter LAZARILLO bound, two Intelligencers, and Guard.*

How now, my friends ? who have you guarded  
hither ?

*2 Int.* So please your grace, we have discovered  
a villain and a traitor : the lord Lucio hath examined  
him, and sent him to your grace for judgment.

*Val.* My lord, I dare  
Absolve him from all sin of treason : I know  
His most ambition's but a dish of meat,  
Which he hath hunted with so true a scent,  
That he deserves the collar, not the halter.

*Duke.* Why do they bring him thus bound up ?  
The poor man had more need have some warm meat,  
To comfort his cold stomach.

VOL. II.

*Val.* Your grace shall have  
The cause hereafter, when you may laugh more  
freely.

But these are called *informers* ; men that live by  
treason,

As rat-catchers do by poison.

*Duke.* 'Would there were  
No heavier prodigies hung over us  
Than this poor fellow ! I durst redeem all perils  
Ready to pour themselves upon this state,  
With a cold custard.

*Val.* Your grace  
Might do it, without danger to your person.

*Las.* My lord, if ever I intended treason  
Against your person, or the state, unless  
It were by wishing from your table some dish  
Of meat, which I must needs confess was not  
A subject's part ; or coveting by stealth  
Sups from those noble bottles, that no mouth,  
Keeping allegiance true, should dare to taste,—  
I must confess, with more than covetous eye,  
I have beheld those dear concealed dishes,  
That have been brought in by cunning equipage,  
To wait upon your grace's palate :  
I do confess, out of this present heat,  
I have had stratagems and ambuscadoes ;  
But, God be thanked, they have never took !

*Duke.* Count,  
This business is your own : when you have done,  
Repair to us. [Exit.

*Val.* I will attend your grace.—Lazarillo,  
You are at liberty ; be your own man again :  
And, if you can, be master of your wishes ;  
I wish it may be so.

*Las.* I humbly thank your lordship !  
I must be unmannerly : I have some present  
business.

Once more, I heartily thank your lordship. [Exit.

*Val.* Now even a word or two to you, and so  
farewell :

You think you have deserved much of this state  
By this discovery : Ye are a slavish people,  
Grown subject to the common curse of all men.  
How much unhappy were that noble spirit,  
Could work by such base engines ! What misery  
Would not a knowing man put on with willingness,  
Ere he see himself grown fat and fall-fed,  
By fall of those you rise by ? I do discharge  
You my attendance ! Our healthful state  
Needs no such leeches to suck out her blood.

*1 Int.* I do beseech your lordship—

*2 Int.* Good my lord—

*Val.* Go, learn to be more honest ! When I see  
You work your means from honest industry,  
I will be willing to accept your labours ;

[Exit Intelligencers.

Till then I will keep back my promised favours.

*Enter Lucio.*

Here comes another remnant of folly :  
I must dispatch him too.—Now, lord Lucio,  
What business bring you hither ?

*Lucio.* 'Faith, sir, I am discovering what will  
become of that notable piece of treason intended by  
that varlet Lazarillo ; I have sent him to the duke  
for judgment.

*Val.* Sir, you have performed the part of a most  
careful statesman ; and, let me say it to your face,  
sir, of a father to this state : I would wish you to  
retire, and insconce yourself in study ; for such is

R R

your daily labour, and our fear, that your loss of an hour may breed our overthrow.

*Lucio.* Sir, I will be commanded by your judgment: And though I find it a trouble scant to be waded through, by these weak years; yet, for the dear care of the commonwealth, I will bruise my brains, and confine myself to much vexation.

*Val.* Go; and may'st thou knock down treason like an ox!

*Lucio.* Amen!

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*Another Street.*

*Enter Mercer, Pandar, and FRANCISINA.*

*Mercer.* Have I spoke thus much in the honour of learning, learned the names of the seven liberal sciences, before my marriage; and, since, have in base written epistles congratulatory to the nine muses, and is she proved a whore and a beggar?

*Pandar.* 'Tis true. You are not now to be taught that no man can be learned of a sudden; let not your first project discourage you: what you have lost in this, you may get again in alchymy.

*Fran.* Fear not, husband; I hope to make as good a wife as the best of your neighbours have, and as honest.

*Mercer.* I will go home. Good sir, do not publish this; as long as it runs amongst ourselves, 'tis good honest mirth. You'll come home to supper? I mean to have all her friends, and mine, as ill as it goes.

*Pandar.* Do wisely, sir, and bid your own friends; your whole wealth will scarce feast all hers; neither is it for your credit to walk the streets with a woman so noted: get you home, and provide her clothes; let her come an hour hence with a hand-basket, and shift herself, she'll serve to sit at the upper end of the table, and drink to your customers.

*Mercer.* Art is just, and will make me amends.

*Pandar.* No doubt, sir.

*Mercer.* The chief note of a scholar, you say, is to govern his passions; wherefore I do take all patiently: In sign of which, my most dear wife, I do kiss thee. Make haste home after me; I shall be in my study. [*Exit.*]

*Pandar.* Go, avaunt!—My new city-dame, send me what you promised me for consideration, and may'st thou prove a lady!

*Fran.* Thou shalt have it; his silks shall fly for it. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Street before the Bagnio.*

*Enter LAZARILLO and Boy.*

*Las.* How sweet is a calm after a tempest! what is there now that can stand betwixt me and felicity? I have gone through all my crosses constantly, have confounded my enemies, and know where to have my longing satisfied; I have my way before me: there's the door, and I may freely walk in to my delights. Knock, boy!

*Julia.* [*Within.*] Who's there?

*Las.* Madonna, my love! not guilty, not guilty! Open the door!

*Enter JULIA.*

*Julia.* Art thou come, sweetheart?

*Las.* Yes, to thy soft embraces, and the rest of my overflowing blisses! come, let us in and swim in our delights; a short grace as we go, and so to meat!

*Julia.* Nay, my dear love, you must bear with me in this; we'll to the church first.

*Las.* Shall I be sure of it then?

*Julia.* By my love, you shall!

*Las.* I am content; for I do now wish to hold off longer, to whet my appetite, and do desire to meet with more troubles, so I might conquer them:

And, as a holy lover that hath spent The tedious night with many a sigh and tears, Whilst he pursued his wench, and hath observed The smiles and frowns, not daring to displease; When [he] at last hath with his service won Her yielding heart, that she begins to dote Upon him, and can hold no longer out, But hangs about his neck, and woos him more Than ever he desired her love before; [He] then begins to flatter his desert, And, growing wanton, needs will cast her off; Try her, pick quarrels, to breed fresh delight, And to increase his pleasing appetite.

*Julia.* Come, mouse, will you walk?

*Las.* I pray thee let me be delivered of the joy I am so big with! I do feel that high heat within me, that I begin to doubt whether I be mortal: How I contemn my fellows in the court, With whom I did but yesterday converse! And in a lower, and an humbler key, Did walk and meditate on grosser meats! There are they still, poor rogues, shaking their chops,

And sneaking after cheeses, and do run Headlong in chase of every jack of beer That crosseth them, in hope of some repast That it will bring them to; whilst I am here, The happiest wight that ever set his tooth To a dear novelty! Approach, my love; Come, let us go to knit the true love's knot, That never can be broken!

*Boy.* That is, to marry a whore. [*Exit.*]

*Las.* When that is done, then will we taste the gift

Which fates have sent, my fortunes up to lift.

*Boy.* When that is done, you will begin to repent upon a full stomach: But I see, 'tis but a form in destiny, not to be altered. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE V.—*An Apartment in the Palace with a Gallery.*

*Enter ARRIGO and ORIANA below; DUKE, VALORE, and GONDARINO above.*

*Ori.* Sir, what may be the current of your business,

That thus you single out your time and place?

*Arr.* Madam, the business now imposed upon me Concerns you nearly;

I wish some worse man might finish it.

*Ori.* Why are you changed so? are you not well, sir?

*Arr.* Yes, madam, I am well: 'Would you were so!

*Ori.* Why, sir, I feel myself in perfect health.

*Arr.* And yet you cannot live long, madam.

*Ori.* Why, good Arrigo?

*Arr.* Why, you must die.

*Ori.* I know I must;

But yet my fate calls not upon me.

*Arr.* It does;

This hand the duke commands shall give you death.

*Ori.* Heaven, and the powers divine, guard well the innocent!

*Arr.* Lady, your prayers may do your soul some good,

But sure your body cannot merit by 'em:

You must prepare to die.

*Ori.* What's my offence? What have these years committed,

That may be dangerous to the duke or state?

Have I conspired by poison? have I given up

My honour to some loose unsettled blood,

That may give action to my plots? dear sir,

Let me not die ignorant of my faults!

*Arr.* You shall not:

Then, lady, you must know, you are held un-

honest:

The duke, your brother, and your friends in court,  
With too much grief condemn you; though to me,  
The fault deserves not to be paid with death.

*Ori.* Who's my accuser?

*Arr.* Lord Gondarino.

*Ori.* Arrigo, take these words, and bear them to the duke;

It is the last petition I shall ask thee:

Tell him, the child this present hour brought forth

To see the world has not a soul more pure,

More white, more virgin, than I have; tell him,

Lord Gondarino's plot I suffer for,

And willingly; tell him, it had been

A greater honour to have saved than kill'd:

But I have done: strike! I am arm'd for Heaven.

Why stay you? is there any hope?

*Arr.* I would not strike.

*Ori.* Have you the power to save?

*Arr.* With hazard of my life, if it should be known.

*Ori.* You will not venture that?

*Arr.* I will: Lady,

There is that means yet to escape your death,

If you can wisely apprehend it.

*Ori.* You dare not be so kind?

*Arr.* I dare, and will, if you dare but deserve it.

*Ori.* If I should slight my life, I were to blame.

*Arr.* Then, madam,

This is the means, or else you die: I love you.

*Ori.* I shall believe it if you save my life.

*Arr.* And you must lie with me.

*Ori.* I dare not buy my life so.

*Arr.* Come, you must resolve; say *yea* or *no*.

*Ori.* Then *no*! Nay, look not ruggedly upon me;

I am made up too strong to fear such looks:

Come, do your butcher's part! before

I would wish life, with the dear loss of honour,

I dare find means to free myself.

*Arr.* Speak, will you yield?

*Ori.* Villain, I will not! Murderer, do the worst  
Thy base un noble thoughts dare prompt thee to!

I am above thee, slave!

*Arr.* Wilt thou not be drawn

To yield by fair persuasions?

*Ori.* No; nor by—

*Arr.* Peace! I know your doom then: your lady-  
ship must remember

You are not now at home, where you dare feast

All that come about you; but you are fallen  
Under my mercy, which shall be but small,  
If thou refuse to yield: hear what I have sworn  
Unto myself; I will enjoy thee, though it be  
Between the parting of thy soul and body;  
Yield yet, and live!

*Ori.* I'll guard the one; let Heaven guard the other!

*Arr.* Are you so resolute then?

*Duke.* [From above.] Hold, hold, I say!

*Ori.* What, yet more terror to my tragedy?

*Arr.* Lady, the scene of blood is done;  
You are now as free from scandal as from death.

*Enter below DUKE, VALORS, and GONDARINO.*

*Duke.* Thou woman, which wert born to teach  
men virtue,

Fair, sweet, and modest maid, forgive my thoughts;  
My trespass was my love.

Seize Gondarino! Let him wait our dooms.

*Gond.* I do begin a little to love this woman;

I could endure her already, twelve miles off.

*Val.* Sister,

I am glad you have brought your honour off so  
fairly,

Without loss; you have done a work above your  
sex;

The duke admires it: give him fair encounter.

*Duke.* Best of all comforts, may I take this  
hand,

And call it mine?

*Ori.* I am your grace's handmaid!

*Duke.* 'Would you had said *myself*: might it  
not be so, lady?

*Val.* Sister, say *ay*; I know you can afford it.

*Ori.* My lord, I am your subject; you may  
command me,

Provided still your thoughts be fair and good.

*Duke.* Here; I am yours; and when I cease  
to be so,

Let Heaven forget me! thus I make it good.

*Ori.* My lord, I am no more mine own.

*Val.* So! this bargain was well driven.

*Gond.* Duke,

Thou hast sold away thyself to all perdition;

Thou art this present hour becoming cuckold:

Methinks I see thy gall grate through thy veins,

And jealousy seize on thee with her talons;

I know that woman's nose must be cut off;

She cannot 'scape it.

*Duke.* Sir, we have punishment for you.

*Ori.* I do beseech your lordship, for the wrongs  
This man hath done me, let me pronounce his  
punishment!

*Duke.* Lady, I give it to you; he is your own.

*Gond.* I do beseech your grace, let me be  
banish'd,

With all the speed that may be.

*Val.* Stay still! you shall attend her sentence.

*Ori.* Lord Gondarino, you have wrong'd me  
highly;

Yet since it sprung from no peculiar hate

To me, but from a general dislike

Unto all women, you shall thus suffer for it.—

Arrigo, call in some ladies to assist us.—

Will your grace take your state?

*Gond.* My lord, I do

Beseech your grace for any punishment,

Saving this woman: let me be sent upon

Discovery of some island; I do desire

But a small gondola, with ten Holland cheeses,  
And I'll undertake it.

*Ori.* Sir, you must be content.  
Will you sit down? Nay, do it willingly.—  
Arrigo, tie his arms close to the chair;  
I dare not trust his patience.

*Gond.* [*He is seized and bound in a chair.*]  
Mayst thou

Be quickly old and painted! may'st thou dote  
Upon some sturdy yeoman of the wood-yard,  
And he be honest! may'st thou be barred  
The lawful lechery of thy couch, for want  
Of instruments! and, last, be thy womb unopen'd!  
*Duke.* This fellow hath a pretty gall.

*Val.* My lord,  
I hope to see him purged, ere he part.

*Enter Ladies.*

*Ori.* Your ladyships are welcome! I must desire  
your helps,  
Though you are no physicians, to do a strange cure  
Upon this gentleman.

*Ladies.* In what we can assist you,  
Madam, you may command us.

*Gond.* Now do I  
Sit like a conjuror within my circle,  
And these the devils that are raised about me:  
I'll pray that they may have no power upon me.

*Ori.* Ladies, fall off in couples;  
Then, with a soft still march, with low demeanours,  
Charge this gentleman: I'll be your leader.

*Gond.* Let me be quarter'd, duke, quickly! I  
can endure it.  
These women long for man's flesh; let them  
have it!

*Duke.* Count, have you ever seen so strange a  
passion?  
What would this fellow do, if he should find himself  
In bed with a young lady?

*Val.* 'Faith, my lord,  
If he could get a knife, sure he would cut her  
throat;  
Or else he would do as Hercules did by Lycas,  
Swing out her soul:

He has the true hate of a woman in him.

*Ori.* Low with your courtesies, ladies!

*Gond.* Come not too near me! I have a breath  
will poison ye;

My lungs are rotten, and my stomach raw;  
I am given much to belching: hold off, as you  
love sweet airs!

Ladies, by your first night's pleasure I conjure  
you,

As you would have your husbands proper men,  
Strong backs, and little legs; as you would have  
'em hate

Your waiting-women—

*Ori.* Sir, we must court you, till we have obtain'd  
Some little favour from those gracious eyes;  
'Tis but a kiss a-piece.

*Gond.* I pronounce perdition to you all!  
Ye are a parcel of that damned crew  
That fell down with Lucifer, and here ye stay'd  
On earth to plague poor men: Vanish, avaunt!  
I am fortified against your charms.  
Heaven grant me breath and patience!

*1 Lady.* Shall we not kiss, then?

*Gond.* No! sear my lips with  
Hot irons first, or stitch them up like a ferret's!  
Oh, that this brunt were over!

*2 Lady.* Come, come, little rogue, thou art too  
maidenly; by my troth I think I must box thee  
till thou be'st bolder; the more bold, the more  
welcome: I pr'ythee kiss me! be not afraid.

[*She sits on his knee.*]

*Gond.* If there be any here  
That yet have so much of the fool left in them  
As to love their mothers, let them [look] on her,  
And loath them too!

*2 Lady.* What a slovenly little villain art thou!  
why dost thou not stroke up thy hair? I think  
thou ne'er comb'st it; I must have it lie in better  
order: so, so, so! Let me see thy hands! are they  
wash'd?

*Gond.* I would they were loose for thy sake!

*Duke.* She tortures him admirably.

*Val.* The best that ever was.

*2 Lady.* Alas, how cold they are! Poor golls!  
why dost thee not get thee a muff?

*Arr.* Madam, here's an old country gentlewoman  
at the door, that came nodding up for justice; she  
was with the lord Gondarino to-day, and would  
now again come to the speech of him, she says.

*Ori.* Let her in, for sport's sake, let her in!

*Gond.* Mercy, oh duke! I do appeal to thee:  
Plant cannons there, and discharge them  
Against my breast rather! Nay, first  
Let this she-fury sit still where she does,  
And with her nimble fingers stroke my hair,  
Play with my fingers' ends, or anything,  
Until my panting heart have broke my breast!

*Duke.* You must abide her censure.

[*The Lady rises from his knee.*]

*Enter old Gentlewoman.*

*Gond.* I see her come!  
Unbutton me, for she will speak.

*Gentlew.* Where is he, sir.

*Gond.* Save me! I hear her.

*Arr.* There he is in state, to give you audience.

*Gentlew.* How does your good lordship?

*Gond.* Sick of the spleen.

*Gentlew.* How?

*Gond.* Sick.

*Gentlew.* Will you chew a nutmeg? you shall  
not refuse it; 'tis very comfortable.

*Gond.* Nay, now thou art come, I know it is  
The devil's jubilee; hell is broke loose!

My lord, if ever I have done you service,  
Or have deserved a favour of your grace,  
Let me be turn'd upon some present action,  
Where I may sooner die than languish thus!  
Your grace hath her petition; grant it her,  
And ease me now at last.

*Duke.* No, sir; you must endure.

*Gentlew.* For my petition, I hope your lordship  
hath remembered me.

*Ori.* 'Faith, I begin to pity him; Arrigo,  
Take her off; bear her away; say her petition  
is granted.

*Gentlew.* Whither do you draw me, sir? I know  
it is not my lord's pleasure I should be thus used,  
before my business be dispatched.

*Arr.* You shall know more of that without.

[*She is led off.*]

*Ori.* Unbind him, ladies! But, before he go,  
This he shall promise: For the love I bear  
To our own sex, I would have them still  
Hated by thee; and enjoin thee, as a punishment,  
Never hereafter willingly to come

In the presence or sight of any woman,  
Nor never to seek wrongfully the public  
Disgrace of any.

*Gond.* 'Tis that I would have sworn, and do:  
when I meddle with them, for their good, or their  
bad, may time call back this day again! and when  
I come in their companies, may I catch the pox  
by their breath, and have no other pleasure for it!

*Duke.* You are too merciful.

*Ori.* My lord, I shew'd my sex the better.

*Val.* All is over-blown. Sister, you are like to  
have a fair night of it, and a prince in your arms.  
Let's go, my lord.

*Duke.* Thus, through the doubtful streams of joy  
and grief,  
True love doth wade, and finds at last relief.

[*Exeunt.*]

### EPILOGUE,

#### AT A REVIVAL.

THE monuments of virtue and desert  
Appear more goodly when the gloss of art  
Is eaten off by time, than when at first  
They were set up, not censured at the worst:  
We have done our best, for your contents, to fit,  
With new pains, this old monument of wit.

# THE NICE VALOUR;

OR,

## THE PASSIONATE MADMAN.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

#### DUKE OF GENOA.

SHAMONT, his Favourite, a superstitious lover of Reputation.

A Passionate Lord, the Duke's distracted Kinsman.

A Soldier, Brother to SHAMONT.

LAPET, the cowardly Monsieur.

A Gallant of the same temper.

POLTRUT, } Two mushroom Courtiers.

MOULBASON, } Two Brothers to the Lady, affecting the Passionate Lord.

LA NOVE, a Courtier.

#### Three Gentlemen of the Bed-Chamber.

BASE, Jester to the Passionate Lord.

A Priest, } in a Masque.

Six Women, }

GALOSHIO, a Clown.

A Huntsman.

Lords, Gallants, &c.

LADY, Sister to the Duke, SHAMONT's beloved.

LAPET's Wife.

A Lady, personating Cupid, Mistress to the Mad Lord.

SCENE,—GENOA, EXCEPT IN THE SECOND SCENE OF THE LAST ACT,  
WHERE IT IS IN THE COUNTRY.

### PROLOGUE,

AT THE REVIVING OF THIS PLAY.

It's grown in fashion of late, in these days,  
To come and beg a sufferance to our plays :  
'Faith, gentlemen, our poet ever writ  
Language so good, mix'd with such sprightly wit,  
He made the theatre so sovereign  
With his rare scenes, he scorn'd this crouching  
vein.

We stabb'd him with keen daggers, when we  
pray'd  
Him write a preface to a play well made.  
He could not write these toys ; 'twas easier far  
To bring a felon to appear at th' bar,  
So much he hated baseness ; which this day,  
His scenes will best convince you of in's play.

### ACT I.

SCENE I.—GENOA. *The Court of the Palace.*

Enter DUKE, SHAMONT, LA NOVE, and three Gentlemen.

Duke. Shamont, welcome, we have missed thee long,  
Though absent but two days : I hope your sports  
Answered your time and wishes.

Sham. Very nobly, sir ;  
We found game worthy your delight, my lord,  
It was so royal.

Duke. I have enough to hear on't ;  
Pr'ythee bestow't upon me in discourse.

[*They walk apart.*]

La Nove. What is this gentleman, coz ? You  
Therefore know all their insides. [are a courtier,

I Gent. No further than the taffaty goes, good  
coz,

For the most part, which is indeed the best part  
Of the most general inside. Marry, thus far  
I can with boldness speak this one man's character.  
And upon honour pass it for a true one :  
He has that strength of manly merit in him,  
That it exceeds his sovereign's power of gracing ;  
He's faithfully true to valour, that he hates  
The man, from Cæsar's time, or further off,  
That ever took disgrace unrevenged ;  
And if he chance to read his abject story,  
He tears his memory out, and holds it virtuous  
Not to let shame have so much life amongst us :  
There is not such a curious piece of courage

Amongst man's fellowship, or one so jealous  
Of honour's loss, or reputation's glory:  
There's so much perfect of his growing story!

*La Nove.* 'Twould make one dote on virtue, as  
you tell it.

1 *Gent.* I have told it to much loss, believe it,  
coz.—

2 *Gent.* How the Duke graces him! What is he,  
brother?

3 *Gent.* Do you not yet know him? a vain-  
glorious coxcomb,

As proud as he that fell for't!

Set but aside his valour, no virtue,

Which is indeed not fit for any courtier,

And we, his fellows, are as good as he,

Perhaps as capable of favour too,

For one thing or another, if 'twere look'd into.

Give me a man, were I a sovereign now,

Has a good stroke at tennis, and a stiff one;

Can play at *equinoctium* with the line,

As even as the thirteenth of September,

When day and night lie in a scale together!

Or, may I thrive as I deserve at *billiards*;

No otherwise at *chess*, or at *primero*!

These are the parts required; why not advanced?

*Duke.* Trust me, it was no less than excellent  
pleasure;

And I'm right glad 'twas thine.—How fares our  
Who can resolve us best? [kinsman?]

*La Nove.* I can, my lord.

*Duke.* There, if I had a pity without bounds,

It might be all bestow'd: A man so lost

In the wild ways of passion, that he's sensible

Of nought but what torments him!

*La Nove.* True, my lord;

He runs through all the passions of mankind,

And shifts 'em strangely too: One while in love;

And that so violent, that, for want of business,

He'll court the very 'prentice of a laundress,

Though she have kib'd heels; and, in his melan-  
choly again,

He will not brook an empress, though thrice fairer

Than ever Maud was, or higher-spirited

Than Cleopatra, or your English Countess.

Then, on a sudden, he's so merry again,

Out-laughs a waiting-woman before her first child;

And, turning of a hand, so angry—

He has almost beat the Northern fellow blind,

That is for that use only: If that mood hold, my  
lord,

He had need of a fresh man; I'll undertake

He shall bruise three a-month.

*Duke.* I pity him dearly;

And let it be your charge, with his kind brother,

To see his moods observed: Let every passion

Be fed even to a surfeit, which in time

May breed a loathing: let him have enough

Of every object that his sense is rapt with:

And being once glutted, then the taste of folly

Will come into disrelish.

*La Nove.* I shall see

Your charge, my lord, most faithfully effected.—  
[Exit DUKE.]

And how does noble Shamont?

*Sham.* Never ill, man,

Until I hear of baseness; then I sicken:

I am the healthfullest man i' th' kingdom else.

*Enter LAPET, and walks on one side of the Stage.*

*La Nove.* Be arm'd then for a fit! here comes  
a fellow

Will make you sick at heart, if baseness do't.

*Sham.* Let me be gone! What is he?

*La Nove.* Let me tell you first;

It can be but a qualm. Pray stay it out, sir!

Come, you have borne more than this.

*Sham.* Borne? never anything

That was injurious.

*La Nove.* Ha! I am far from that.

*Sham.* He looks as like a man as I have seen  
one:

What would you speak of him? Speak well, I

Even for humanity's cause. [pr'ythee,

*La Nove.* You would have it truth, though?

*Sham.* What else, sir? I have no reason to  
wrong Heaven

To favour Nature; let her bear her own shame

If she be faulty!

*La Nove.* Monstrous faulty there, sir.

*Sham.* I'm ill at ease already.

*La Nove.* Pray bear up, sir.

*Sham.* I pr'ythee let me take him down with  
speed then,

Like a wild object that I would not look upon.

*La Nove.* Then thus; he's one that will endure

As can be laid upon him. [as much

*Sham.* That may be noble;

I'm kept too long from his acquaintance.

*La Nove.* Oh, sir,

Take heed of rash repentance! you're too forward

To find out virtue where it never settled:

Take the particulars, first, of what he endures;

*Videlicet*, bastinadoes by the great.

*Sham.* How!

*La Nove.* Thumps by the dozen, and your kicks

*Sham.* No more of him! [by wholesale.

*La Nove.* The twinges by the nostril he snuffs

And holds it the best remedy for sneezing. [up,

*Sham* Away!

*La Nove.* He has been thrice switch'd from  
seven o'clock till nine;

Yet, with a cart-horse stomach, fell to breakfast,

Forgetful of his smart.

*Sham.* Nay, the disgrace on't;

There is no smart but that: Base things are felt

More by their shames than hurts.—[*Goes up to*

*LAPET.*] Sir, I know you not;

But that you live an injury to Nature,

I'm heartily angry with you.

*Lapet.* Pray give your blow or kick, and begone

For I ne'er saw you before; and indeed [then;

Have nothing to say to you, for I know you not.

*Sham.* Why, wouldst thou take a blow?

*Lapet.* I would not, sir,

Unless 'twere offer'd me; and, if from an enemy,

I would be loth to deny it from a stranger.

*Sham.* What! a blow?

Endure a blow? and shall he live that gives it?

*Lapet.* Many a fair year: Why not, sir?

*Sham.* Let me wonder!

As full a man to see too, and as perfect!

I pr'ythee live not long.

*Lapet.* How!

*Sham.* Let me entreat it!

Thou dost not know what wrong thou dost mankind,

To walk so long here; not to die betimes.

Let me advise thee, while thou hast to live here,

Even for man's honour sake, take not a blow more!

*Lapet.* You should advise them not to strike me

then, sir;

For I'll take none, I assure you, 'less they're given.

*Sham.* How fain would I preserve man's form from shame,  
And cannot get it done!—However, sir,  
I charge thee live not long.

*Lapet.* This is worse than beating.

*Sham.* Of what profession art thou, tell me, sir,  
Besides a tailor? for I'll know the truth.

*Lapet.* A tailor? I'm as good a gentleman—  
Can shew my arms and all.

*Sham.* How black and blue they are:  
Is that your manifestation? Upon pain  
Of pounding thee to dust, assume not wrongfully  
The name of *gentleman*, because I am one  
That must not let thee live!

*Lapet.* I have done, I have done, sir.  
If there be any harm, beswear the herald!  
I'm sure I ha' not been so long a gentleman,  
To make this anger: I have nothing, no where,  
But what I dearly pay for.

*Sham.* Groom, begone!— [Exit LAPET.  
I never was so heart-sick yet of man.

*Enter the Lady, and LAPET'S Wife.*

*La Nove.* Here comes a cordial, sir, from the  
other sex,  
Able to make a dying face look cheerful.

*Sham.* The blessedness of ladies!

*Lady.* You're well met, sir.

*Sham.* The sight of you has put an evil from me,  
Whose breath was able to make *Virtue* sicken.

*Lady.* I'm glad I came so fortunately. What  
was it, sir?

*Sham.* A thing that takes a blow, lives and eats  
after it,

In very good health: You ha' not seen the like,  
madam;

A monster worth your sixpence, lowly worth.

*Lady.* Speak low, sir! by all likelihoods 'tis  
her husband,

That now bestow'd a visitation on me.

Farewell, sir. [Exit.

*Sham.* Husband? is't possible that he has a  
wife?

Would any creature have him? 'tis some forced  
match!

If he were not kick'd to th' church o' th' wedding  
day,

I'll never come at court. 'Can be no otherwise;  
Perhaps he was rich; speak, *Mistress Lapet*, was't  
not so?

*Wife.* Nay, that's without all question.

*Sham.* Oh, ho! he would not want kickers  
enough then.

If you are wise, I much suspect your honesty,  
For *Wisdom* never fastens constantly,  
But upon *Merit*: If you incline to fool,  
You are alike unfit for his society;  
Nay, if it were not boldness in the man  
That honours you, to advise you, 'troth, his com-  
Should not be frequent with you. [pany

*Wife.* 'Tis good counsel, sir.

*Sham.* Oh, I'm so careful where I reverence,  
So just to Goodness, and her precious purity,  
I am as equally jealous, and as fearful,  
That any undeserved stain might fall  
Upon her sanctified whiteness, as of the sin  
That comes by wilfulness.

*Wife.* Sir, I love your thoughts,  
And honour you for your counsel and your care.

*Sham.* We are your servants.

*Wife.* He's but a gentleman o' th' chamber; [Aside.

He might have kiss'd me, faith!  
Where shall one find less courtesy than at court?  
Say, I have an undeserver to my husband,  
That's ne'er the worse for him. Well, strange-  
lipp'd man,  
'Tis but a kiss lost; there'll more come again. [Exit

*Enter the Passionate Lord; he makes a congee or two to nothing.*

*La Nove.* Look, who comes here, sir! his leve-  
fit's upon him:

I know it, by that set smile, and those congees.  
How courteous he's to nothing, which indeed  
Is the next kin to woman, only shadow,  
The elder sister of the twain, because 'tis seen  
See how it kisses the fore-finger still! [through!  
Which is the last edition, and, being come  
So near the thumb, every cobbler has got it.

*Sham.* What a ridiculous piece *Humanity*  
Here makes itself!

*La Nove.* Nay, good, give leave a little, sir;  
You're so precise a manhood—

*Sham.* It afflicts me

When I behold unseemliness in an image  
So near the godhead! 'Tis an injury  
To glorious eternity.

*La Nove.* Pray use patience, sir!

*Pas.* I do confess it freely, precious lady;  
And love's suit is so, the longer it hangs  
The worse it is: Better cut off, sweet madam.  
Oh, that same drawing in your nether lip there,  
Foreshews no goodness, lady. Make you question  
Shame on me, but I love you! [on't!

*La Nove.* Who is't, sir,

You are at all this pains for? may I know her?

*Pas.* For thee, thou fairest, yet the falsest wo-  
That ever broke man's heart-strings. [man.

*La Nove.* How? how's this, sir?

*Pas.* What, the old trick of ladies? man's ap-  
parel?

Will't ne'er be left amongst you? Steal from court!

*La Nove.* I see the fit grows stronger. [in't!

*Pas.* Pray let's talk a little.

*Sham.* I can endure no more!

*La Nove.* Good, let us alone a little!

You are so exact a work! love light things some-  
*Sham.* They're all but shames. [what, sir,

*La Nove.* What is't you would say to me, sir?

*Pas.* Can you be so forgetful to inquire it, lady?

*La Nove.* Yes, truly, sir.

*Pas.* The more I admire your flintiness!

What cause have I given you, illustrious madam,  
To play this strange part with me?

*La Nove.* Cause enough:

Do but look back, sir, into your memory,  
Your love to other women. Oh, lewd man,  
It has almost kill'd my heart; you see, I'm chang'd  
with it;

I ha' lost the fashion of my sex with grief on't!  
When I have seen you courting of a dowdy  
(Compared with me,) and kissing your fore-finger  
To one o' th' blackguard's mistresses; would not  
this

Crack a poor lady's heart, that believed love,  
And waited for the comfort? But 'twas said, sir,  
A lady of my hair cannot want pitying;  
The country's coming up: Farewell to you, sir!

*Pas.* Whither intend you, sir?

*La Novè.* A long journey, sir :  
The truth is, I'm with child, and go to travail.  
*Pas.* With child? I never got it.  
*La Novè.* I heard you were busy  
At the same time, sir; and was loth to trouble you.  
*Pas.* Why, are not you a whore then, excellent  
madam?  
*La Novè.* Oh, by no means; 'twas done, sir,  
in the state  
Of my belief in you, and that quits me;  
It lies upon your falsehood.  
*Pas.* Does it so?—  
You shall not carry her though, sir; she's my  
contract.  
*Sham.* I pr'ythee, thou four elements ill-brewed,  
Torment none but thyself! Away, I say,  
Thou beast of passion, as the drunkard is  
The beast of wine! Dishonour to thy making,  
Thou man in fragments!  
*Pas.* Hear me, precious madam!  
*Sham.* Kneel for thy wits to Heaven.  
*Pas.* Lady, I'll father it,  
Whoe'er begot it: 'Tis the course of greatness.  
*Sham.* How Virtue groans at this!  
*Pas.* I'll raise the court, but I will stay your  
flight. [Exit Passionate Lord.  
*Sham.* How wretched is that piece!

*La Novè.* He's the Duke's kinsman, sir.  
*Sham.* That cannot take a passion away, sir,  
Nor cut a fit but one poor hour shorter;  
He must endure as much as the poorest beggar,  
That cannot change his money; there's the equa-  
In our impartial essence.— [lity  
*Enter a Servant.*  
What's the news now?  
*Serv.* Your worthy brother, sir, has left his  
And come to see you. [charge,

*Enter the Soldier.*  
*Sham.* Oh, the noblest welcome  
That ever came from man, meet thy deservings!  
Methinks, I have all joy's treasure in mine arms  
now.  
*Sold.* You are so fortunate in prevention, brother,  
You always leave the answer barren, sir;  
You comprehend in few words so much worth.  
*Sham.* 'Tis all too little for thee: Come, thou'rt  
welcome! [Embraces him.  
So I include all.—Take especial knowledge, pray,  
Of this dear gentleman, my absolute friend,  
That loves a soldier far above a mistress,  
Though excellently faithful to 'em both:  
But love to manhood owns the purer truth. [Exit.

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—A Gallery in the Palace. Chairs  
placed against the wall.

*Enter the Soldier and the Lady.*

*Lady.* There should be in this gallery—Oh,  
they're here.  
Pray sit down: Believe me, sir, I'm weary.  
*Sold.* It well becomes a lady to complain a little  
Of what she never feels: Your walk was short,  
madam;  
You can be but afraid of weariness,  
Which well implies the softness of your sex:  
As for the thing itself, you never came to't.  
*Lady.* You're wondrously well read in ladies,  
sir.  
*Sold.* Shall I think such a creature as you, ma-  
Was ever born to feel pain, but in travail? [dam,  
There's your full portion,  
Besides a little tooth-ache in the breeding,  
Which a kind husband too takes from you, madam.  
*Lady.* But where do ladies, sir, find such kind  
Perhaps you have heard [husbands?  
The rheumatic story of some loving chandler now,  
Or some such melting fellow, that you talk  
So prodigal of men's kindness: I confess, sir,  
Many of those wives are happy, their ambition  
Does reach no higher than to love and ignorance,  
Which makes an excellent husband, and a fond  
one:  
Now, sir, your great ones aim at height and cun-  
ning,  
And so are oft deceived, yet they must venture it;  
For 'tis a lady's contumely, sir,  
To have a lord an ignorant; then the world's voice  
Will deem her for a wanton, ere she taste on't:  
But, to deceive a wise man, to whose circumspec-  
The world resigns itself with all his envy, [tion

'Tis less dishonour to us than to fall;  
Because his believed wisdom keeps out all.  
*Sold.* 'Would I were the man, Lady, that should  
His wisdom to your goodness! [venture  
*Lady.* You might fail  
In the return, as many men have done, sir.  
I dare not justify what is to come of me,  
Because I know it not; though I hope virtuously:  
Marry, what's past, or present, I durst put  
Into a good man's hand; which if he take  
Upon my word for good, it shall not cozen him.  
*Sold.* No, nor hereafter?  
*Lady.* It may hap so too, sir:  
A woman's goodness, when she is a wife,  
Lies much upon a man's desert, believe it, sir!  
If there be fault in her, I'll pawn my life on't,  
'Tis first in him, if she were ever good  
That makes one: knowing not a husband yet,  
Or what he may be, I promise no more virtues  
Than I may well perform; for that were cozenage.  
*Sold.* Happy were he that had you, with all  
That's my opinion, Lady. [fears!

*Enter SHAMONT and a Servant, listening.*

*Serv.* What say you now, sir?  
Dare you give confidence to your own eyes?  
*Sham.* Not yet I dare not.  
*Serv.* No?  
*Sham.* Scarce yet, or yet,  
Although I see 'tis he. Why, can a thing,  
That's but myself divided, be so false?  
*Serv.* Nay, do but mark how the chair plays his  
How amorously 'tis bent. [part too:  
*Sham.* Hell take thy bad thoughts!  
For they are strange ones. Never take delight  
To make a torment worse. Look on 'em, Heaven!  
For that's a brother! send me a fair enemy,

And take him ! for a fouler fiend there breathes  
I will not sin to think there's ill in her, [not.  
But what's of his producing :  
Yet goodness, whose inclosure is but flesh,  
Holds out oft-times but sordidly. But, as black, sir,  
As ever kindred was, I hate mine own blood,  
Because it is so near thine. Live without honesty ;  
And mayst thou die with an unmoisten'd eye,  
And no tear follow thee.

[*Exit SHAMONT and Servant.*]

*Lady.* You're wond'rous merry, sir ;  
I would your brother heard you !

*Sold.* Or my sister ;  
I would not, out o' th' way, let fall my words, lady,  
For the precisest humour.

*Enter Passionate Lord.*

*Pas.* Yea, so close ?

*Sold.* They are merry, that's the worst you can  
report of 'em ;

They are neither dangerous, nor immodest.

*Pas.* So, sir !

Shall I believe you, think you ?

*Sold.* Who's this, lady ?

*Lady.* Oh, the duke's cousin ; he came late from  
*Sold.* Respect belongs to him. [travel, sir.

*Pas.* [*Mimicking the Soldier.*] " For, as I said,  
lady,

They are merry, that's the worst you can report of  
They are neither dangerous, nor immodest." [ 'em ;

*Sold.* How's this ?

*Pas.* " And there I think I left."

*Sold.* Abuses me !

*Pas.* " Now, to proceed, Lady : Perhaps I  
swore I loved you ;

If you believe me not, you're much the wiser"—

*Sold.* He speaks still in my person, and derides

*Pas.* " For I can cog with you"— [me !

*Lady.* You can all do so ;

We make no question of men's promptness that  
way.

*Pas.* " And smile, and wave a chair with comely  
grace too,

Play with our tassel gently, and do fine things,  
That catch a lady sooner than a virtue."

*Sold.* I never used to let man live so long,  
That wronged me !

*Pas.* " Talk of battalions, woo you in a skirmish ;  
Divine my mind to you, lady : and, being sharp-

set,  
Can court you at half-pike ; or name your weapon,  
We cannot fail you, lady."

*Enter LA NOVE.*

*Sold.* Now he dies, [Draws.  
Were all succeeding hopes stored up within him !

*La Nove.* Oh, fy ! i' th' court, sir ? [*Detains him.*

*Sold.* I most dearly thank you, sir.

*La Nove.* 'Tis rage ill spent upon a passionate  
madman.

*Sold.* That shall not privilege him for ever, sir.  
A madman call you him ? I have found too much  
reason

Sound in his injury to me, to believe him so.

*La Nove.* If ever truth from man's lips may be  
held

In reputation with you, give this confidence ;  
And this his love-fit, which we observe still  
By his flattering and his fineness ; at some other  
He'll go as slovenly as heart can wish. [time  
The love and pity that his highness shews to him,

Makes every man the more respectful of him :  
He has never a passion but is well provided for,  
As this of love ; he is full fed in all  
His swinge, as I may term it : Have but patience.  
And you shall witness somewhat !

*Sold.* Still he mocks me :

Look you ! in action, in behaviour, sir.—  
Hold still the chair, with a grand mischief to you !  
Or I'll set so much strength upon your heart, sir—

*Pas.* " I feel some power has restrained me,  
If it be sent from Love, say, I obey it, [lady :  
And ever keep a voice to welcome it." [Sings.

SONG.

Thou dainty, swift-winged Love,  
Sometimes below, sometimes above,  
Little in shape, but great in power ;  
Thou, that makest a hearty thy tower,  
And thy loop-holes ladies' eyes,  
From whence thou strik'st the fond and wise ;  
Did all the shafts in thy fair quiver  
Stick fast in my ambitious liver,  
Yet thy power would I adore,  
And call upon thee to shoot more,  
Shoot more, shoot more !

*Enter a Lady disguised as Cupid, offering to shoot at the  
Passionate Lord.*

*Pas.* I pr'ythee hold though, sweet celestial  
I'm not requited yet with love enough [boy !  
For the first arrow that I have within me ;  
And if thou be an equal archer, Cupid,  
Shoot this lady, and twenty more for me.

*Lady.* Me, sir ?

*La Nove.* [*Apart to her.*] 'Tis nothing but de-  
vice ; fear it not, lady !  
You may be as good a maid after that shaft,  
madam,

As e'er your mother was at twelve and a half :  
'Tis like the boy that draws it, it has no sting yet.

*Cupid.* [*Aside.*] 'Tis like the miserable maid  
that draws it,

That sees no comfort yet, seeing him so passionat.

*Pas.* Strike me the Duchess of Valois in love  
with me,

With all the speed thou canst, and two of her  
women !

*Cupid.* You shall have more. [*Exit*

*Pas.* Tell 'em, I tarry for 'em.

*La Nove.* Who would be angry with that walk-  
That hurts none but itself ? [ing trouble now,

*Sold.* I am better quieted.

*Pas.* I'll have all woman-kind struck in time for  
After thirteen once. [me

I see this Cupid will not let me want ;  
And let him spend his forty shafts an hour,  
They shall be all found from the duke's exchequer.  
He's come already.

*Enter again the Lady, personating Cupid, her two Bro-  
thers and six Women as Masquers : Cupid's bow bent  
all the way towards them ; the first Woman singing and  
playing ; one disguised as a Priest.*

SONG.

BY THE FIRST WOMAN.

Oh, turn thy bow !

Thy power we feel and know,

Fair Cupid, turn away thy bow !

They be those golden arrows,

Bring ladies all their sorrows ;

And till there be more truth in men,

Never shoot at maid again !

*Pas.* What a felicity of whores are here !  
And all my concubines struck bleeding new !  
A man can in his life-time make but one woman,  
But he may make his fifty queans a month.

*Cup.* Have you remember'd a priest, honest brothers ? [Apart to the Brothers.

1 *Bro.* Yes, sister, and this is the young gentleman ;  
Make you no question of our faithfulness. [man ;

2 *Bro.* Thy growing shame, sister, provokes our care.

*Priest.* He must be taken in this fit of love, gentleman ;  
1 *Bro.* What else, sir ? he shall do't. [to men ?

2 *Bro.* Enough.

1 *Bro.* Be cheerful, wench !

[A Dance, Cupid leading.

*Pas.* Now, by the stroke of pleasure,—a deep oath !—

Nimble hopt, ladies all ! What height they bear  
A story higher than your common statures ; [too !  
A little man must go up stairs to kiss 'em :  
What a great space there is

Between Love's dining-chamber and his garret !

I'll try the utmost height. The garret stoops,  
methinks :

The rooms are made all bending, I see that,

And not so high as a man takes 'em for.

*Cupid.* Now, if you'll follow me, sir, I have that  
To make them follow you. [power

*Pas.* Are they all shot ?

*Cupid.* All, all, sir ; every mother's daughter of 'em.

*Pas.* Then there's no fear of following : If they  
be once shot,

They'll follow a man to the devil. As for you,  
sir—

[Exit with the Lady and the Masquers.

*Sold.* Me, sir ?

*La Novè.* Nay, sweet sir !

*Sold.* A noise, a threatening ! Did you not hear  
it, sir ?

*La Novè.* Without regard, sir ; so would I have  
you.

*Sold.* This must come to something ; never talk  
you never saw it otherwise. [of that, sir !

*La Novè.* Nay, dear Merit—

*Sold.* Me, above all men ?

*La Novè.* 'Troth, you wrong your anger.

*Sold.* I will be arm'd, my honourable lecher—

*La Novè.* Oh, fy, sweet sir !

*Sold.* That devours women's honesties by lumps,  
And never chew'at thy pleasure.

*La Novè.* What do you mean, sir ?

*Sold.* What does he mean, t' engross all to  
himself ?

There's others love a whore as well as he, sir.

*La Novè.* Oh, an that be part o' th' fury, we  
is very well provided for that case : [have a city

Let him alone with her, sir ! we have women

Are very charitable to proper men,

And to a soldier that has all his limbs :

Marry, the sick and lame gets not a penny ;

Right women's charity ! and the husbands follow't

Here comes his highness, sir. [too.

Enter DUKE, attired for the chase, and Lords.

*Sold.* I'll walk to cool myself. [Exit.

*Duke.* Who's that ?

*La Novè.* The brother of Shamont.

*Duke.* He's brother then

To all the court's love, they that love discretely,

And place their friendliness upon desert :  
As for the rest, that with a double face  
Look upon Merit much like Fortune's visage,  
That looks two ways, both to life's calms and  
storms,

I'll so provide for him, chiefly for him,  
He shall not wish their loves, nor dread their envies.  
And here comes my Shamont.

Enter SHAMONT, and walks on one side of the Stage.

*Sham.* That lady's virtues are my only joys ;  
And he to offer to lay siege to them !

*Duke.* Shamont !

*Sham.* Her goodness is my pride : In all dis-  
courses,

As often as I hear rash-tongued gallants  
Speak rudely of a woman, presently  
I give in but her name, and they're all silent.

Oh, who would lose this benefit !

*Duke.* Come hither, sir.

*Sham.* 'Tis like the gift of healing, but diviner :

For that but cures diseases in the body,

This works a cure on fame, on reputation ;

The noblest piece of surgery upon earth !

*Duke.* Shamont !—He minds me not.

*Sham.* A brother do't ?

*Duke.* Shamont, I say !

[Gives him a touch with his switch.

*Sham.* Ha !

If he be mortal, by this hand he perishes !

[Draws.

Unless it be a stroke from Heaven, he dies for't !

*Duke.* Why, how now, sir ? 'twas I.

*Sham.* The more's my misery.

*Duke.* Why, what's the matter, pr'ythee ?

*Sham.* Can you ask it, sir ?

No man else should : Stood forty lives before him,

By this I would have op'd my way to him.

It could not be you, sir ; excuse him not,

Whate'er he be, as you are dear to honour,

That I may find my peace again !

*Duke.* Forbear, I say !

Upon my love to truth, 'twas none but I.

*Sham.* Still miserable !

*Duke.* Come, come ; what ails you, sir ?

*Sham.* Never sat shame cooling so long upon me,

Without a satisfaction in revenge ;

And Heaven has made it here a sin to wish it.

*Duke.* Hark you, sir !

*Sham.* Oh, you have undone me !

*Duke.* How ?

*Sham.* Cruelly undone me ;

I have lost my peace and reputation by you !

Sir, pardon me ; I can ne'er love you more. [Exit.

*Duke.* What language call you this, sir ?

1 *Gent.* 'Truth, my lord,

I have seldom heard a stranger.

*La Novè.* He is a man of a most curious valour,

Wond'rous precise, and punctual in that virtue.

*Duke.* But why to me so punctual ? my last  
thought

Was most entirely fixed on his advancement.

Why, I came now to put him in possession

Of his fair fortunes,—what a mis-conceiver 'tis !—

And, from a gentleman of our chamber merely,

Make him vice-admiral ; I was settled in't :

I love him next to health. Call him, gentlemen !

Why, would not you, or you, ha' taken as much,

And never murmur'd ? [Exit LA NOVÈ.

1 *Gent.* 'Troth, I think we should, my lord ;

And there's a fellow walks about the court  
Would take a hundred of 'em.

*Duke.* I hate you all for it;  
And rather praise his high-pitch'd fortitude,  
Though in extremes for niceness: Now I think  
on't,

I would I had never done it!—Now, sir, where is  
he?

*Enter LA NOVE.*

*La Nove.* His suit is only, sir, to be excused.

*Duke.* He shall not be excused; I love him  
dearlier:

Say, we entreat him; go! he must not leave us.

*[Exit LA NOVE and 1 Gent.]*

So Virtue bless me, I ne'er knew him parallel'd!  
Why, he's more precious to me now than ever.

*Re-enter LA NOVE and First Gentleman, with SHAMONT,  
who stays in the back-ground.*

*La Nove.* With much fair language we have

*Duke.* Thanks!— *[brought him.]*

Where is he?

*1 Gent.* Yonder, sir.

*Duke.* Come forward, man.

*Sham.* Pray pardon me; I am ashamed to be  
seen, sir.

*Duke.* Was ever such a touchy man heard of?  
Pr'ythee come nearer.

*Sham.* More into the light?

Put not such cruelty into your requests, my lord:  
First, to disgrace me publicly, and then draw me  
into men's eye-sight, with the shame yet hot  
Upon my reputation!

*Duke.* What disgrace, sir?

*Sham.* What?

Such as there can be no forgiveness for,  
That I can find in honour.

*Duke.* That's most strange, sir.

*Sham.* Yet I have search'd my bosom to find  
And wrestled with my inclination; *[once,*  
But 'twill not be: 'Would you had kill'd me, sir!  
With what an ease had I forgiven you then!  
But, to endure a stroke from any hand,

Under a punishing angel's, which is justice,  
Honour disclaim that man! For my part chiefly,  
Had it been yet the malice of your sword,  
Though it had cleft me, it had been noble to me;  
You should have found my thanks paid in a smile,  
If I had fell unwor'ded: But, to shame me  
With the correction that your horse should have,  
Were you ten thousand times my royal lord,  
I cannot love you, never, nor desire  
To serve you more.

If your drum call me, I am vow'd to valour;  
But peace shall never know me yours again,  
Because I have lost mine own. I speak to die, sir:  
'Would you were gracious that way to take off  
shame,

With the same swiftness as you pour it on!  
And since it is not in the power of monarchs  
To make a gentleman, which is a substance  
Only begot of merit, they should be careful  
Not to destroy the worth of one so rare,  
Which neither they can make, nor, lost, repair.

*[Exit.]*

*Duke.* You have set a fair light, sir, before my  
judgment,

Which burns with wond'rous clearness; I acknow-  
ledge it,

And your worth with it: But then, sir, my love,  
My love—What, gone again?

*La Nove.* And full of scorn, my lord.

*Duke.* That language will undo the man that  
keeps it,

Who knows no difference 'twixt contempt and  
manhood.

Upon your love to goodness, gentlemen,  
Let me not lose him long.—How now?

*Enter a Huntsman.*

*Hunts.* The game's at height, my lord.

*Duke.* Confound both thee and it! Hence,  
break it off!

He hates me brings me news of any pleasure.  
I felt not such a conflict, since I could  
Distinguish betwixt worthiness and blood.

*[Exit.]*

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—*The Court of the Palace.*

*Enter the Two Brothers, LA NOVE, with those that were  
the Masquers, and the Lady disguised as Cupid.*

*La Nove.* I heartily commend your project,  
'Twas wise and virtuous. *[gentlemen;*

*1 Bro.* 'Twas for the safety  
Of precious honour, sir, which near blood binds  
us to:

He promised the poor easy fool, there, marriage;  
There was a good maidenhead lost i' th' belief on't,  
Beshrew her hasty confidence!

*La Nove.* Oh, no more, sir!

You make her weep again: Alas, poor Cupid!—  
Shall she not shift herself?

*1 Bro.* Oh, by no means, sir;

We dare not have her seen yet: All the while  
She keeps this shape, it is but thought device,  
And she may follow him so without suspicion,  
To see if she can draw all his wild passions  
To one point only, and that's love, the main point:

So far his highness grants, and gave at first  
Large approbation to the quick conceit;  
Which then was quick indeed.

*La Nove.* You make her blush, in sooth.

*1 Bro.* I fear 'tis more the flag of shame than  
grace, sir.

*La Nove.* They both give but one kind of colour.  
sir.

If it be bashfulness in that kind taken,  
It is the same with grace; and there, she weeps  
again.

In truth, you are too hard, much, much too bitter.  
sir;

Unless you mean to have her weep her eyes out,  
To play a Cupid truly.

*1 Bro.* Come, have done, then!

We should all fear to sin first; for, 'tis certain,  
When 'tis once lodged, though entertained in mirth,  
It must be wept out, if it e'er come forth.

*La Nove.* Now, 'tis so well, I'll leave you.

*1 Bro.* Faithfully welcome, sir!—

Go, Cupid, to your charge: He's your own now;  
If he want love, none will be blamed but you.

*Cupid.* The strangest marriage, and unfortun-  
nat'st bride,

That ever human memory contained!  
I cannot be myself for't.

[*Exit.*]

*Enter GALOSMO, the Clown.*

*Gal.* Oh, gentlemen!

*1 Bro.* How now, sir? what's the matter?

*Gal.* His melancholy passion is half spent al-  
ready;

Then comes his angry fit at the very tail on't:  
Then comes in my pain, gentlemen; he has beat  
me

E'en to a cullis: I am nothing, right worshipful,  
But very pap, and jelly; I have no bones,  
My body's all one business: they talk of ribs  
And chins most freely abroad i' the world; why, I  
Have no such thing; whoever lives to see me  
Dead, gentlemen, shall find me all mummy,  
Good to fill gallipots, and long dildo glasses;  
I shall not have a bone to throw at a dog.

*All.* Alas, poor vassal, how he goes!

*Gal.* Oh, gentlemen,

I am unjointed; do but think o' that!  
My breast is beat into my maw, that what I eat  
I'm fain to take't in all at mouth with spoons;—  
A lamentable hearing!—and, 'tis well known,  
My belly's driven into my back. I earned  
Four crowns a-month most dearly, gentlemen:  
And one he must have, when the fit's upon him;  
The privy purse allows it, and 'tis thriftiness;  
He would break else some forty pounds in case-  
ments,

And, in five hundred years, undo the kingdom:  
I have cast it up to a quarrel.

*1 Bro.* There's a fellow

Kick'd about court, I would he had his place, bro-  
But for one fit of his indignation! [ther,

*2 Bro.* And suddenly I have thought upon a

*1 Bro.* I pr'ythee how? [means for't.

*2 Bro.* 'Tis but preferring, brother,

This stock-fish to his service, with a letter  
Of commendations, the same way he wishes it,  
And then you win his heart; for o' my knowledge  
He has laid wait this half year for a fellow  
That will be beaten; and with a safe conscience  
We may commend the carriage of this man in't.  
Now servants he has kept, lusty tall feeders,  
But they have beat him, and turn'd themselves  
away:

Now one that would endure, is like to stay,  
And get good wages of him; and the service too  
Is ten times milder, brother; I would not wish it  
I see the fellow has a sore crush'd body, [else:  
And the more need he has to be kick'd at ease.

*Gal.* Ay, sweet gentlemen, a kick of ease!  
Send me to such a master.

*2 Bro.* No more, I say!

We have one for thee, a soft-footed master,  
One that wears wool in's toes.

*Gal.* Oh, gentlemen,

Soft garments may ye wear, soft skins may ye wed,  
But as plump as pillows, both for white and red!  
And now will I reveal a secret to you,  
Since you provide for my poor flesh so tenderly:  
He has hired mere rogues, out of his chamber-  
window,

To beat the Soldier, Monsieur Shamont's brother.

*1 Bro.* That nothing concerns us, sir.

*Gal.* For no cause, gentlemen,  
Unless it be for wearing shoulder-points,  
With longer tags than his.

*2 Bro.* Is not that somewhat?

By'r lakin, sir, the difference of long tags  
Has cost many a man's life, and advanced other  
Come, follow me! [some.

*Gal.* See what a gull am I!

Oh, every man in his profession!  
I know a thump now as judiciously  
As the proudest he that walks, I'll except none;  
Come to a tagg, how short I fall! I'm gone.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Street.*

*Enter LAPET.*

*Lapet.* I have been ruminating with myself

What honour a man loses by a kick.  
Why, what's a kick? the fury of a foot,  
Whose indignation commonly is stamp'd  
Under the hinder quarter of a man,  
Which is a place very unfit for honour,  
The world will confess so much:  
Then what disgrace, I pray, does that part suffer,  
Where honour never comes? I would fain know  
that.

This being well forced, and urged, may have the  
power

To move most gallants to take kicks in time,  
And spurn out the duellos out o' th' kingdom:  
For they that stand upon their honour most,  
When they conceive there is no honour lost,—  
As, by a table that I have invented  
For that purpose alone, shall appear plainly,  
Which shews the vanity of all blows at large,  
And with what ease they may be took of all sides,  
Numbering but twice over the letters *patience*,  
From *P. A.* to *C. E.*—I doubt not but in small  
To see a dissolution of all bloodshed, [time  
If the *Reformed Kick* do but once get up:  
For what a lamentable folly 'tis,  
If we observe't, for every little justle,  
Which is but the ninth part of a sound thump,  
In our meek computation, we must fight, forsooth:  
If I kill, I'm hanged; if I be killed myself, [yes!  
I die for't also: Is not this trim wisdom?  
Now for the *con.* A man may be well beaten,  
Yet pass away his fourscore years smooth after:  
I had a father did it; and, to my power,  
I will not be behind him.

*Enter SHAMONT.*

*Sham.* Oh, well met!

*Lapet.* Now a fine *punch* or two! I look for't  
*Sham.* I have been to seek you. [duly.

*Lapet.* Let me know your lodging, sir:

I'll come to you once a-day, and use your pleasure,  
sir.

*Sham.* I'm made the fittest man for thy society!  
I'll live and die with thee; Come, shew me a  
chamber!

There is no house but thine, but only thine,  
That's fit to cover me: I have took a blow, sirrah.

*Lapet.* I would you had indeed! Why, you  
may see, sir,

You'll all come to't in time, when my book's out.

*Sham.* Since I did see thee last, I have took a  
blow.

*Lapet.* Pho, sir, that's nothing; I ha' took forty since.

*Sham.* What, and I charged thee thou shouldst

*Lapet.* Ay, sir, [not ?

You might charge your pleasure; but they would Whether I would or no. [give't me

*Sham.* Oh, I walk

Without my peace; I have no companion now!

Pr'ythee resolve me, (for I cannot ask

A man more beaten to experience,

Than thou art in this kind) what manner of blow

Is held the most disgraceful, or distasteful?

For thou dost only censure 'em by the hurt,

Not by the shame they do thee: Yet, having felt

Abuses of all kinds, thou mayst deliver,

Though it be by chance, the most injurious one.

*Lapet.* You put me to't, sir; but, to tell you

They're all as one with me, little exception. [truth,

*Sham.* That little may do much; let's have it from you!

*Lapet.* With all the speed I may: First then, and foremost,

I hold so reverently of the *bastinado*, sir,

That if it were the dearest friend i' th' world,

I'd put it into his hand.

*Sham.* Go to! I'll pass that then.

*Lapet.* You're the more happy, sir;

'Would I were past it too: But being accustom'd It is the better carried. [to't,

*Sham.* Will you forward?

*Lapet.* Then there's your *souse*, your *wherrit*, and your *doust*,

*Tugs* on the hair, your *bob o' th' lips*, a *whelp on't*! I ne'er could find much difference. Now your

*thump*,

A thing derived first from your hemp-beaters,

Takes a man's wind away most spitefully;

There's nothing that destroys a cholick like it,

For it leaves no wind i' th' body.

*Sham.* On, sir, on!

*Lapet.* Pray give me leave; I'm out of breath with thinking on't.

*Sham.* This is far off yet.

*Lapet.* For the *twinge* by th' nose,

'Tis certainly unsightly, so my table says, But helps against the head-ache, wondrous strangely.

*Sham.* Is't possible?

*Lapet.* Oh, your *crushed nostrils* slakes your opilation,

And makes your pent powers flush to wholesome sneezes.

*Sham.* I never thought there had been half that in a wrung nose before. [virtue

*Lapet.* Oh, plenitude, sir.

Now come we lower to our *modern kick*,

Which has been mightily in use of late,

Since our young men drank coltsfoot; and I grant you

'Tis a most scornful wrong, 'cause the foot plays it;

But mark again how we that take't requite it

With the like scorn, for we receive it backward;

And can there be a worse disgrace retorted?

*Sham.* And is this all?

*Lapet.* All but a *lug by th' ear*,

Or such a trifle.

*Sham.* Happy sufferer!

All this is nothing to the wrong I bear:

I see the worst disgrace thou never felt'st yet:

It is so far from thee, thou canst not think on't;

Nor dare I let thee know it, 'tis so abject.

*Lapet.* I would you would though, that I might prepare for't!

For I shall have it at one time or another.

If it be a *thwack*, I make account of that;

There's no new-fashion'd swap that e'er came up

But I have the first on 'em, I thank 'em for't. [yet,

*Enter the Lady and Servants.*

*Lady.* [Entering.] Hast thou inquired?

1 *Serv.* But can hear nothing, madam.

*Sham.* [To LAPET.] If there be but so much substance in thee

To make a shelter for a man disgraced,

Hide my departure from that glorious woman,

That comes with all perfection about her,

So noble that I dare not be seen of her,

Since shame took hold of me: Upon thy life,

No mention of me! [Exit.

*Lapet.* I'll cut out my tongue first,—

Before I'll lose my life; there's more belongs to't.

*Lady.* See, there's a gentleman; inquire of him.

2 *Serv.* For Monsieur Shamont, madam?

*Lady.* For whom else, sir?

1 *Serv.* Why, this fellow dares not see him.

*Lady.* How!

1 *Serv.* Shamont, madam?

His very name's worse than a fever to him;

And when he cries, there's nothing stills him sooner:

Madam, your page of thirteen is too hard for him;

'Twas tried i' th' wood-yard.

*Lady.* Alas, poor grieved Merit!

What is become of him? If he once fail,

Virtue shall find small friendship! farewell, then,

To ladies' worths, for any hope in men!

He loved for goodness, not for wealth or lust,

After the world's foul dotage; he ne'er courted

The body, but the beauty of the mind,

A thing which common courtship never thinks on:

All his affections were so sweet and fair,

There is no hope for fame, if he despair.

[*Exeunt Lady and Servants.*]

*Enter GALOSHIO, kicks LAPET, and gives him a Letter.*

*Lapet.* Good morrow to you again most heartily, sir! [Kicks him again.

Cry you mercy, I heard you not; I was somewhat

*Gal.* He takes it as familiarly as an *ave*, [busy.

Or precious salutation: I was sick

'Till I had one, because I am so used to't.

*Lapet.* However you deserve, your friends and mine here

Give you large commendations i' this letter;

They say you will endure well.

*Gal.* I would be loath

To prove 'em liars: I have endured as much

As mortal pen and ink can set me down for.

*Lapet.* Say you me so?

*Gal.* I know and feel it so sir;

I have it under black and white already;

I need no pen to paint me out.

*Lapet.* He fits me, [Aside.

And hits my wishes pat, pat: I was never

In possibility to be better mann'd;

For he's half lamed already; I see't plain,

But take no notice on't, for fear I make

The rascal proud, and dear, to advance his wages—

First, let me grow into particulars with you!

What have you endured of worth? let me hear.

*Gal.* Marry, sir,

I am almost beaten blind.

*Lapet.* That's pretty well  
For a beginning; but many a mill-horse  
Has endured as much.

*Gal.* Shame o' the miller's heart  
For his unkindness then!

*Lapet.* Well, sir, what then?

*Gal.* I have been twice thrown down stairs,  
just before supper.

*Lapet.* Puh! so have I; that's nothing.

*Gal.* Ay, but, sir,  
Was yours, pray, before supper?

*Lapet.* There thou posdest me.

*Gal.* Ay, marry, that's it; it had been less grief  
to me,  
Had I but fill'd my belly, and then tumbled;  
But, to be flung down fasting, there's the dolor!

*Lapet.* It would have grieved me, that, indeed.  
Proceed, sir!

*Gal.* I have been pluck'd and tugg'd by th'  
hair o' th' head  
About a gallery half an acre long.

*Lapet.* Yes, that's a good one, I must needs  
confess;  
A principal good one that, 'an absolute good one!  
I have been trod upon, and spurn'd about,  
But never tugg'd by th' hair. I thank my fates.

*Gal.* Oh, 'tis a spiteful pain!

*Lapet.* Peace! never speak on't,  
For putting men in mind on't!

*Gal.* To conclude,  
I'm bursten, sir; my belly will hold no meat.

*Lapet.* No? that makes amends for all.

*Gal.* Unless it be puddings,  
Or such fast food; any loose thing beguiles me;  
I'm ne'er the better for't.

*Lapet.* Sheep-heads will stay with thee?

*Gal.* Yes, sir, or chawdrons.

*Lapet.* Very well, sir;  
Your bursten fellows must take heed of surfeits.  
Strange things, it seems, you have endured.

*Gal.* Too true, sir.

*Lapet.* But now the question is, what you'll  
Hereafter in my service? [endure]

*Gal.* Anything

That shall be reason, sir, for I'm but froth:  
Much like a thing new calved; or, come more  
nearer, sir,  
You have seen a cluster of frog-spawns in April;  
E'en such a starch am I, as weak and tender  
As a green woman yet.

*Lapet.* Now I know this,  
I will be very gently angry with thee,  
And kick thee carefully.

*Gal.* Oh, ay, sweet sir!

*Lapet.* Peace, when thou'rt offer'd well! lest I  
begin now.  
Your friends and mine have writ here, for your  
truth  
They'll pass their words themselves: And I must  
*Gal.* Then have you all; [meet 'em.  
As for my honesty, there's no fear of that,  
For I have never a whole bone about me. [Exeunt.

## SCENE III.—An Apartment in the Palace.

*Mus.* Enter the Passionate Lord, rudely and carelessly  
apparelled, unbraced, and untrussed; the Lady dis-  
guised as Cupid, following.

*Cupid.* Think upon love, which makes all crea-  
tures handsome,

Seemly for eye-sight! go not so diffusedly:  
There are great ladies purpose, sir, to visit you.

*Pas.* Grand plagues! Shut in my casements,  
that the breaths  
Of their coach-mares reek not into my nostrils!  
Those beasts are but a kind of bawdy forerunners.

*Cupid.* It is not well with you, when you speak  
ill of fair ladies.

*Pas.* Fair mischiefs! give me a nest of owls,  
and take 'em!

Happy is he, say I, whose window opens [there  
To a brown baker's chimney! he shall be sure  
To hear the bird sometimes after twilight.  
What a fine thing 'tis, methinks, to have our gar-  
Sit loose upon us, thus, thus carelessly! [ments  
It is more manly and more mortifying;  
For we're so much the readier for our shrouds:  
For how ridiculous were't to have death come,  
And take a fellow pinn'd up like a mistress!  
About his neck a ruff, like a pinch'd lanthorn,  
Which school-boys make in winter; and his doublet  
So close and pent, as if he feared one prison  
Would not be strong enough to keep his soul in,  
But his tailor makes another;  
And trust me, (for I know't when I loved, Cupid)  
He does endure much pain for the poor praise  
Of a neat-sitting suit.

*Cupid.* One may be handsome, sir,  
And yet not pain'd, nor proud.

*Pas.* There you lie, Cupid,  
As bad as Mercury: There is no handsomeness,  
But has a wash of pride and luxury.  
An you go there too, Cupid,—away, dissembler!—  
Thou takest the deed's part, which befools us all:  
Thy arrow-heads shoot out sinners: Hence, away!  
And after thee I'll send a powerful charm,  
Shall banish thee for ever.

*Cupid.* Never, never!  
I am too sure thine own.

[Exit.

*Pas.* [Sings.] Hence, all you vain delights,  
As short as are the nights

Wherein you spend your folly!  
There's nought in this life sweet,  
If man were wise to see't,  
But only melancholy;  
Oh, sweetest melancholy!

Welcome, folded arms, and fixed eyes,  
A sigh that piercing mortifies,  
A look that's fasten'd to the ground,  
A tongue chain'd up, without a sound!

Fountain heads, and pathless groves,  
Places which pale passion loves!  
Moon-light walks, when all the fowls  
Are warmly housed, save bats and owls!  
A midnight bell, a parting groan!  
These are the sounds we feed upon;  
Then stretch our bones in a still gloomy valley;  
Nothing's so dainty sweet as lovely melancholy.

Enter at another door LAPET, the disguised Lady's Brothers  
watching his coming.

1 Bro. So, so! the woodcock's ginn'd; Keep  
this door fast, brother.

2 Bro. I'll warrant this.

1 Bro. I'll go incense him instantly;

I know the way to't.

2 Bro. Will't not be too soon,

Think you, and make two fits break into one?

1 Bro. Pah! no, no; the tail of his melancholy  
Is always the head of his anger, and follows  
As close as the report follows the powder.

*Lapet.* This is the appointed place, and the hour  
If I can get security for his truth, [struck.  
I'll never mind his honesty: Poor worm!  
I durst lay him by my wife, which is a benefit  
Which many masters ha' not: I shall ha' no maid  
Now got with child but what I get myself,  
And that's no small felicity; in most places  
They are got by th' men, and put upon the mas-  
Nor shall I be resisted when I strike, [ters:  
For he can hardly stand; these are great blessings!

*Pas.* [Within.] I want my food; deliver me a  
varlet!

*Lapet.* How now! from whence comes that?

*Pas.* I am allow'd

A carcass to insult on: Where's the villain?

*Lapet.* He means not me, I hope.

*Pas.* My maintenance, rascals!

My bulk, my exhibition!

*Lapet.* Bless us all!

What names are these? 'Would I were gone again!

*The Passionate Lord enters furiously, with a truncheon.*

*Pas.* [Sings.] A curse upon thee, for a slave!

Art thou here, and heardst me rave?

Fly not sparkles from mine eye,

To shew my indignation nigh?

Am I not all foam and fire,

With voice as hoarse as a town-crier?

How my back opens and shuts together

With fury, as old men's with weather!

Couldst thou not hear my teeth gnash hither?

*Lapet.* No, truly, sir; I thought it had been a  
Shaving a hazel-nut. [squirrel

*Pas.* Death, hell, fends, and darkness!

I will thrash thy many carcass.

[Strikes him down.

*Lapet.* Oh, sweet sir!

*Pas.* There cannot be too many tortures

Spent upon those lousy quarters.

*Lapet.* Hold!—oh! [Falls down for dead.

*Pas.* Thy bones shall rue! thy bones shall rue!

Thou nasty, scurvy, mungrel toad,

Mischief on thee!

Light upon thee

All the plagues that can confound thee,

Or did ever reign abroad!

Better a thousand lives it cost,

Than have brave anger split or lost. [Exit.

*Lapet.* May I open mine eyes yet, and safely  
peep?

I'll try a groan first: Oh!—Nay then, he's gone.

There was no other policy but to die;

He would ha' made me else—Ribs, are you sore?

I was ne'er beaten to a tune before.

*Enter the Two Brothers.*

1 *Bro.* *Lapet!*

*Lapet.* Again?

[Falls again

1 *Bro.* Look, look! he's flat again,

And stretch'd out like a corse; a handful longer

Than he walks, trust me, brother.—Why, *Lapet!*

I hold my life we shall not get him speak now.—

Monsieur *Lapet!*—It must be a privy token,

If anything fetch him, he's so far gone.—

We come to pass our words for your man's truth.

*Lapet.* Oh, gentlemen, you're welcome! I have  
been thrash'd, i' faith.

2 *Bro.* How! thrash'd, sir?

*Lapet.* Never was Shrove-Tuesday bird

So cudgell'd, gentlemen.

1 *Bro.* Pray how? by whom, sir?

*Lapet.* Nay, that I know not.

1 *Bro.* Not who did this wrong?

*Lapet.* Only a thing came like a walking song.

1 *Bro.* What, beaten with a song?

*Lapet.* Never more tightly, gentlemen:

Such crotchets happen now and then; methinks,

He that endures well, of all waters drinks. [Exit.

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—An Apartment in the Palace.

*Enter Soldier and LA NOVE.*

*Sold.* Yes, yes; this was a madman, sir, with  
A Passionate Madman. [you,

*La Nove.* Who would ha' look'd for this, sir?

*Sold.* And must be privileged? a pox privilege  
him!

I was never so dry-beaten since I was born,  
And by a litter of rogues, mere rogues; the whole  
twenty

Had not above nine elbows 'mongst 'em all too;  
And the most part of those left-handed rascals,  
The very vomit, sir, of hospitals,  
Bridewells, and spital-houses; such nasty smellers,  
That, if they had been unfurnish'd of club-trun-  
cheons,

They might have cudgell'd me with their very  
stink,

It was so strong and sturdy: And shall this,  
This filthy injury, be set off with madness?

*La Nove.* Nay, take your own blood's counsel,  
sir; hereafter,

I'll deal no further in't: If you remember,  
It was not come to blows when I advised you.

*Sold.* No; but I ever said 'twould come to some-  
thing;

And 'tis upon me, thank him! Where he kin  
To all the mighty emperors upon earth,  
He has not now in life three hours to reckon!  
I watch but a free time.

*Enter SHAMONT.*

*La Nove.* Your noble brother, sir. I'll leave  
you now. [Exit.

*Sham.* Soldier, I would I could persuade my  
From thinking thee a brother, as I can [though  
My tongue from naming on't! Thou hast no friend  
here,

But fortune and thy own strength; trust to these!

*Sold.* How! what's the incitement, sir?

*Sham.* Treachery to virtue,

Thy treachery, thy faithless circumvention.

Has honour so few daughters—never fewer!—

And must thou aim thy treachery at the best?

The very front of virtue? that bless'd lady,

The duke's sister?

Created more for admiration's cause,

Than for love's ends; whose excellency sparkles

More in divinity, than mortal beauty;

And as much difference 'twixt her mind and body,  
As 'twixt this earth's poor centre and the sun :  
And couldst thou be so injurious to fair goodness,  
Once to attempt to court her down to frailty ?  
Or put her but in mind that there is weakness,  
Sin, and desire, which she should never hear of ?  
Wretch, thou'st committed worse than sacrilege,  
In the attempting on't, and ought'st to die for't !

*Sold.* I rather ought to do my best to live, sir.  
Provoke me not ! for I've a wrong sits on me,  
That makes me apt for mischief : I shall lose  
All respects suddenly of friendship, brotherhood,  
Or any sound that way !

*Sham.* But 'ware me most ;  
For I come with a two-edged injury,  
Both my disgrace, and thy apparent falsehood !  
Which must be dangerous.

*Sold.* I courted her, sir :  
Love starve me with delays, when I confess it not !

*Sham.* There's nothing then but death  
Can be a penance fit for thy confession.

*Sold.* But far from any vicious taint.

*Sham.* Oh, sir,  
Vice is a mighty stranger grown to courtship.

*Sold.* Nay, then, the fury of my wrong light on  
thee ! [Draws.]

*Enter LA NOVE and Three Gentlemen.*

*La Nove.* Forbear ! the duke's at hand ;  
Here, hard at hand, upon my reputation !

*Sold.* I must do something now. [Exit.]

*Sham.* I'll follow you close, sir.

*La Nove.* We must entreat you must not ; for  
Desires some conference with you. [The duke  
[They hold him.]

*Sham.* Let me go,  
As ye are gentlemen !

*1 Gent.* 'Faith, we dare not, sir.  
*Sham.* Dare ye be false to honour, and yet dare  
Do a man justice ? Give me leave ! [not]

*La Nove.* Good sweet sir !

He has sent twice for you.

*Sham.* Is this brave, or manly ?

*La Nove.* I pr'ythee, be conform'd !

*Sham.* 'Death !—

*Enter DUKE.*

*1 Gent.* Peace ! he's come, in troth.

*Sham.* Oh, have you betray'd me to my shame  
How I am bound to loath you ! [afresh ?]

*Duke.* Shamont, welcome !

I sent twice.

*1 Gent.* But, my lord, he never heard on't.

*Sham.* Pray pardon him for his falseness ! I did,  
sir,

Both times : I had rather be found rude than  
faithless.

*Duke.* I love that bluntness dearly : He has no  
vice,

But is more manly than some other's virtue,  
That lets it out only for show or profit.

*Execut LA NOVE and Gentlemen.*

*Sham.* Will't please you quit me, sir ? I have  
urgent business !

*Duke.* Come, you're so hasty now ! I sent for  
To a better end. [you]

*Sham.* And if it be an end

Better or worse, I thank your goodness for't.

*Duke.* I have ever kept that bounty in condition,  
And thankfulness in blood, which well becomes  
Both prince and subject, that where any wrong

Bears my impression, or the hasty figure  
Of my repented anger, I'm a law  
Even to myself, and doom myself most strictly  
To justice, and a noble satisfaction :  
So that what you, in tenderness of honour,  
Conceive to be loss to you, which is nothing  
But curious opinion, I'll restore again,  
Although I give you the best part of Genoa,  
And take to boot but thanks for your amends.

*Sham.* Oh, miserable satisfaction !  
Ten times more wretched than the wrong itself !  
Never was ill better made good with worse !  
Shall it be said that my posterity  
Shall live the sole heirs of their father's shame ?  
And raise their wealth and glory from my stripes !  
You have provided nobly, bounteous sir,  
For my disgrace, to make it live for ever,  
Out-lasting brass or marble !

This is my fear's construction, and a deep one,  
Which neither argument nor time can alter :  
Yet, I dare swear, I wrong your goodness in't,  
sir,

And the most fair intent on't ; which I reverence  
With admiration, that in you, a prince,  
Should be so sweet and temperate a condition,  
To offer to restore where you may ruin,  
And do it with justice ; and in me, a servant,  
So harsh a disposition, that I cannot  
Forgive where I should honour, and am bound to  
But I have ever had that curiosity [it.]  
In blood, and tenderness of reputation,  
Such an antipathy against a blow—

I cannot speak the rest ! good sir, discharge me !  
It is not fit that I should serve you more,  
Nor come so near you : I'm made now for privacy,  
And a retired condition ; that's my suit,  
To part from court for ever, my last suit ;  
And, as you profess bounty, grant me that, sir !

*Duke.* I would deny thee nothing.

*Sham.* Health reward you, sir ! [Exit.]

*Duke.* He's gone again already, and takes hold  
Of any opportunity : Not riches  
Can purchase him, nor honours, peaceably,  
And force were brutish. What a great worth's  
gone with him !

And but a gentleman ? Well, for his sake,  
I'll ne'er offend more " those I cannot make ;"  
They were his words, and shall be dear to memory.  
Say, I desire to see him once again—

Yet stay ! he's so well forward of his peace,  
'Twere pity to disturb him : He would groan  
Like a soul fetch'd again, and that were injury ;  
And I have wrong'd his degree too much already.  
Call forth the gentlemen of our chamber instantly !

*1 Serv.* [Within.] I shall, my lord.

*Duke.* I may forget again,  
And therefore will prevent : The strain of this  
Troubles me so, one would not hazard more.

*Enter LA NOVE and the three Gentlemen.*

*La Nove.* Your will, my lord ?

*Duke.* Yes, I discharge you all.

*1 Gent.* My lord—

*Duke.* Your places shall be otherwise disposed

*3 Gent.* Why, sir ? [of.]

*Duke.* Reply not ! I dismiss you all :  
You are gentlemen ; your worths will find you  
fortunes ;

Nor shall your farewell tax me of ingratitude.

I'll give you all noble remembrances,

As testimonies 'gainst reproach and malice,  
That you departed loved.

2 *Gent.* This is most strange, sir.

*La Nove.* But how is your grace furnish'd,  
these dismiss'd?

*Duke.* Seek me out grooms,  
Men more insensible of reputation,  
Less curious and precise in terms of honour;  
That, if my anger chance let fall a stroke,  
As we're all subject to impetuous passions,  
Yet it may pass unmurmur'd, undisputed,  
And not with braver fury prosecuted.

*La Nove.* It shall be done, my lord.

[*Exit the Duke.*]

2 *Gent.* Know you the cause, sir?

*La Nove.* Not I, kind gentlemen, but by con-  
jectures;

And so much shall be yours when you please.

3 *Gent.* Thanks, sir!

2 *Gent.* We shall i' th' mean time think our-  
selves guilty

Of some foul fault, through ignorance committed.

*La Nove.* No, 'tis not that, nor that way.

3 *Gent.* For my part,

I shall be disinherited, I know so much.

*La Nove.* Why, sir? for what?

3 *Gent.* My sire's of a strange humour;  
He'll form faults for me, and then swear 'em mine;  
And commonly the first begins with lechery;  
He knows his own youth's trespass.

*La Nove.* Before you go,

I'll come and take my leave, and tell you all, sirs.

2 *Gent.* Thou wert ever just and kind.

[*Exit the three Gentlemen.*]

*La Nove.* That's my poor virtue, sir;  
And parcel valiant; but it's hard to be perfect.  
The choosing of these fellows now will puzzle me,  
Horribly puzzle me; and there's no judgment  
Goes true upon man's outside, there's the mischief.  
He must be touch'd, and tried, for gold or dross;  
There is no other way for't, and that's dangerous  
too:

But, since I'm put in trust, I will attempt it;  
The duke shall keep one daring man about him.

*Enter a cowardly Gallant.*

Soft! who comes here? A pretty bravery this!

Every one goes so like a gentleman,

'Tis hard to find a difference, but by the touch.

I'll try your metal, sure. [*Strikes him.*]

*Gallant.* Why, what do you mean, sir?

*La Nove.* Nay, an you understand it not, I do  
not.

*Gallant.* Yes; 'would you should well know!

I understand it for a box o' th' ear, sir.

*La Nove.* And, o' my troth, that's all I gave it

*Gallant.* 'Twere best it be so! [*for.*]

*La Nove.* This is a brave coward,

A jolly threath'ning coward; he shall be captain.—  
Sir, let me meet you an hour hence i' th' lobby.

*Gallant.* Meet you? the world might laugh at  
me then, i' faith.

*La Nove.* Lay by your scorn and pride (they  
are scurvy qualities)

And meet me; or I'll box you while I have you,  
And carry you gambri'd thither like a mutton.

*Gallant.* Nay, an you be in earnest, here's my  
I will not fail you. [*hand;*]

*La Nove.* 'Tis for your own good—

*Gallant.* Away!

*La Nove.* Too much for your own good, sir, a  
pox on you!

*Gallant.* I pr'ythee curse me all day long so.

*La Nove.* Hang you!

*Gallant.* I'll make him mad; he's loth to curse  
too much to me.—

Indeed, I never yet took box o' th' ear,  
But it redounded, I must needs say so—

*La Nove.* Will you be gone?

*Gallant.* Curse, curse, and then I go.—

Look how he grins! I have anger'd him to th'  
kidnies. [*Exit.*]

*La Nove.* Was ever such a priggish coxcomb  
seen!

One might have beat him dumb now in this humour,  
And he'd ha' grinn'd it out still.

*Enter a plain Fellow.*

Oh, here's one

Made to my hand, methinks looks like a craven;  
Less pains will serve his trial; some slight justle.

[*Pushes him.*]

*Fel.* How! Take you that, sir; and if that con-  
tent you not— [*Strikes him.*]

*La Nove.* Yes, very well, sir; I desire no more.

*Fel.* I think you need not; for you have not  
lost by't. [*Exit.*]

*La Nove.* Who would ha' thought this would  
have proved a gentleman?

I'll never trust long chins and little legs again;

I'll know 'em sure for gentlemen hereafter:

A gristle but in show, but gave his cuff

With such a fetch and reach of gentry,  
As if he had had his arms before the flood.

I have took a villainous hard task upon me,

Now I begin to have a feeling on't.

*Enter LAPET, and GALOSHIO habited as his Servant.*

Oh, here comes a tried piece: Now the reform'd  
The millions of punches, spurns, and nips [*kick!*]

That he has endured! His buttock's all black-lead;  
He's half a negro backward; he was past a Spaniard

In eighty-eight, and more Egyptian like:

His table and his book come both out shortly,

And all the cowards in the town expect it.

So, if I fail of my full number now,

I shall be sure to find 'em at church corners.

Where Dives and the suffering ballads hang.

*Lapet.* Well, since thou'rt of so mild a temper.

So meek a spirit, thou mayst live with me, [*of*]

Till better times do smile on thy deserts.—

I'm glad I am got home again.

*Gal.* I'm happy

In your service, sir; you'll keep me from the  
hospital.

*Lapet.* So! bring me the last proof; this is  
corrected.

*Gal.* Ay, you're too full of your correction, sir.

*Lapet.* Look I have perfect books within this

*Gal.* Yes, sir. [*half-hour!*]

*Lapet.* Bid him put all the *thumps* in Fica  
Roman,

And with great T's, you vermin, as *thumps* should  
be.

*Gal.* Then in what letter will you have your  
kicks?

*Lapet.* All in *Italica*; your backward blows

All in *Italica*, you hermaphrodite!

When shall I teach you wit?

*Gal.* Oh, let it alone,

[*Half aside.*]

Till you have some yourself, sir!

*Lapet.* You mumble!

*Gal.* The victuals are lock'd up; I'm kept from mumbing. [*Exit.*]

*Lapet.* He prints my blows upon pot paper too, the rogue!

Which had been proper for some drunken pamphlet.

*La Nové.* Monsieur Lapet! How the world rings of you, sir!

Your name sounds far and near.

*Lapet.* A good report it bears, for an enduring name.

*La Nové.* What luck have you, sir!

*Lapet.* Why, what's the matter?

*La Nové.* I'm but thinking on't!

I have heard you wish this five year for a place; Now there's one fall'n, and freely without money too;

And empty yet, and yet you cannot have it.

*Lapet.* No! what's the reason? I'll give money Rather than go without, sir. [*for't,*]

*La Nové.* That's not it, sir:

The troth is, there's no gentleman must have it, Either for love or money; 'tis decreed so:

I was heartily sorry when I thought upon you; Had you not been a gentleman, I had fitted you.

*Lapet.* Who? I a gentleman? a pox! I'm none,

*La Nové.* How? [*sur.*]

*Lapet.* How! why, did you ever think I was?

*La Nové.* What! not a gentleman?

*Lapet.* I would thou hadst put it upon me, i'faith!

Did not my grandfather cry cony-skins?

My father aquavitæ? a hot gentleman!

All this I speak on, i' your time and memory too;

Only a rich uncle died, and left me chattels:

You know all this so well too!

*La Nové.* Pray excuse me, sir!

Ha' not you arms?

*Lapet.* Yes; a poor couple here,

That serve to thrust in wild-fowl.

*La Nové.* Herald's arms,

Symbols of gentry, sir; you know my meaning;

They have been shewn and seen.

*Lapet.* They have?

*La Nové.* I' fex, have they.

*Lapet.* Why, I confess, at my wife's instigation once,

(As women love these herald's kickshaws naturally) I bought 'em; but what are they, think you? puffs.

*La Nové.* Why, that's proper to your name being *Lapét*,

Which is *La fart*, after the English letter.

*Lapet.* The herald, sir, had much ado to find it.

*La Nové.* And can you blame him?

Why, 'tis the only thing that puzzles the devil.

*Lapet.* At last, he look'd upon my name again; And having well compared it, this he gave me;

The two cholics playing upon a wind instrument.

*La Nové.* An excellent proper one! But, I pray tell me,

How does he express the cholics? they are hard things.

*Lapet.* The cholics? with hot trenchers at their bellies;

There's nothing better, sir, to blaze a cholick.

*La Nové.* And are you not a gentleman by this,

*Lapet.* No; I disclaim it! [*sur?*]

No belly-ache upon earth shall make me one;

He shall not think to put his gripes upon me,

And wring out gentry so, and ten pound first.

If the wind instrument will make my wife one, Let her enjoy't, for she was a harper's grandchild! But, sir, for my particular, I renounce it.

*La Nové.* Or to be call'd so?

*Lapet.* Ay, sir, or imagined.

*La Nové.* None fitter for the place: Give me thy hand!

*Lapet.* A hundred thousand thanks, besides a bribe, sir!

*La Nové.* You must take heed of thinking toward a gentleman now.

*Lapet.* Pish! I am not mad, I warrant you! Nay, more, sir;

If one should twit me i' th' teeth that I'm a gentleman,

Twit me their worst, I am but one since Lammas; That I can prove, if they would see my heart out.

*La Nové.* Marry, in any case, keep me that evidence.

*Enter GALOSHIO, with a Proof-sheet and a Table.*

*Lapet.* Here comes my servant, sir: Galoshio Has not his name for nought; he will be trod What says my printer now? [*upon.—*]

*Gal.* Here's your last proof, sir;

You shall have perfect books now in a twinkling.

*Lapet.* These marks are ugly.

*Gal.* He says, sir, they're proper;

Blows should have marks, or else they are nothing

*Lapet.* But why a peel-crow here? [*worth.*]

*Gal.* I told 'em so, sir:

A scare-crow had been better.

*Lapet.* How, slave?—Look you, sir!

Did not I say this *wherrit*, and this *bod*,

Should be both Pica Roman?

*Gal.* So said I, sir,

Both *picked Romans*, and he has made 'em Welsh Indeed, I know not what to make on 'em. [*bills.*]

*Lapet.* Hey-day! a *souse*, *Italica*?

*Gal.* Yes, that may hold, sir:

*Souse* is a *bona roba*; so is *flops* too.

*Lapet.* But why stands *bastinado* so far off here?

*Gal.* Alas, you must allow him room to lay about him, sir.

*Lapet.* Why lies this *spurn* lower than that *spurn*, sir?

*Gal.* Marry, this signifies one kick down stairs, sir,

The other in a gallery: I ask'd him all these questions.

*La Nové.* Your book's name? pr'ythee, Lapet, You never told me yet. [*mind me!*]

*Lapet.* Marry, but shall, sir:

'Tis call'd, "The Uprising of the Kick,

And the Downfall of the Duello."

*La Nové.* Bring that to pass, you'll prove a happy member,

And do your country service: Your young bloods

Will thank you then, when they see four-score.

*Lapet.* I hope

To save my hundred gentlemen a-month by it;

Which will be very good for the private house.

*Gal.* Look you! your Table's finish'd sir, already. [*Giving the picture.*]

*Lapet.* Why, then, behold my master-piece!— See, see, sir;

Here's all your blows, and blow-men whatsoever,

Set in their lively colours, givers and takers.

*La Nové.* 'Troth, wondrous fine, sir!

*Lapet.* Nay, but mark the postures!

The standing of the takers I admire  
More than the givers : They stand scornfully,  
Most contumeliously ; I like not them.  
Oh, here's one cast into a comely figure.

*Gal.* My master means him there that's cast  
down headlong.

*Lapet.* How sweetly does this fellow take his  
dowst !

Stoops like a camel, that heroic beast,  
At a great load of nutmegs : And how meekly  
This other fellow here receives his *wherrit* !

*Gal.* Oh, master, here's a fellow stands most  
gallantly,

Taking his *kick* in private behind the hangings,  
And raising up his hips to it. But, oh, sir,  
How daintily this man lies trampled on !

'Would I were in thy place, whate'er thou art !  
How lovely he endures it !

*La Nove.* But will not  
These things, sir, be hard to practise, think you ?

*Lapet.* Oh, easy, sir ; I'll teach 'em in a dance.

*La Nove.* How ! in a dance ?

*Lapet.* I'll lose my new place else,

Whate'er it be ; I know not what 'tis yet.

*La Nove.* And now you put me in mind, I could  
employ it well,

For your grace, specially : For the duke's cousin  
Is by this time in his violent fit of mirth ;  
And a device must be sought out for suddenly,  
To over-cloy the passion.

*Lapet.* Say no more, sir !

I'll fit you with my scholars, new practitioners,  
Endurers of the time.

*Gal.* Whereof I am one, sir.

*La Nove.* You carry it away smooth : Give me  
thy hand, sir. [Exit.]

## ACT V.

## SCENE I.—An Apartment in the Palace.

Enter the Two Brothers.

*Pas.* [Within.] Ha, ha, ha !

*2 Bro.* Hark, hark ! how loud his fit's grown !

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha !

*1 Bro.* Now let our sister lose no time, but ply  
With all the power she has ! [it

*2 Bro.* Her shame grows big, brother ;

The Cupid's shape will hardly hold it longer ;

'Twould take up half an ell of China damask more,

And all too little ; it struts perilously ;

There is no tampering with these Cupids longer :

The mere conceit with woman-kind works strong.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha !

*2 Bro.* The laugh comes nearer now ;

'Twere good we were not seen yet.

[Exit Brothers.]

Enter Passionate Lord, and Base, his Jester.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha !

And was he bastinadoed to the life ? ha, ha, ha !  
I pr'ythee say, lord general, how did the rascals  
Entrench themselves ?

*Base.* Most deeply, politickly, all in ditches.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* 'Tis thought he'll ne'er bear arms i' th'  
field again :

He has much ado to lift 'em to his head, sir.

*Pas.* I would he had !

*Base.* On either side round truncheons play'd  
so thick,

That shoulders, chins, nay, flanks, were paid to  
the quick.

*Pas.* Well said, lord general ! ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* But pray, how grew the difference first  
betwixt you ?

*Pas.* There was never any, sir ; there lies the  
jest, man !

Only because he was taller than his brother,  
There's all my quarrel to him ; and methought  
He should be beaten for't, my mind so gave me, sir,  
I could not sleep for't : Ha, ha, ha, ha !  
Another good jest quickly, while 'tis hot now ;  
Let me not laugh in vain ! ply me, oh, ply me,  
As you will answer't to my cousin duke !

*Base.* Alas, who has a good jest !

*Pas.* I fall, I dwindle in't.

*Base.* Ten crowns for a good jest !—Ha' you a  
good jest, sir ?

Enter Servant.

*Serv.* A pretty moral one.

*Base.* Let's ha't, whate'er it be !

*Serv.* There comes a Cupid

Drawn by six fools.

*Base.* That's nothing.

*Pas.* Help it, help it then !

*Base.* I ha' known six hundred fools drawn by  
a Cupid.

*Pas.* Ay, that, that, that's the smarter moral :  
Ha, ha, ha !

Now I begin to be song-ripe, methinks.

*Base.* I'll sing you a pleasant air, sir, before  
you ebb.

## SONG.

*Pas.* Oh, 'how my lungs do tickle ! ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* Oh, how my lungs do tickle ! oh, oh, ho, ho !

*Pas.* Set a sharp jest

Against my breast,

Then how my lungs do tickle !

As nightingales,

And things in cambric ralls,

Sing best against a prickle.

Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* Ho, ho, ho, ho, ha !

*Pas.* Laugh !

*Base.* Laugh !

*Pas.* Laugh !

*Base.* Laugh !

*Pas.* Wide !

*Base.* Loud !

*Pas.* And vary !

*Base.* A smile is for a simpering novice,

*Pas.* One that ne'er tasted caveare,

*Base.* Nor knows the smack of dear anchovies.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* Ho, ho, ho, ho, ho !

*Pas.* A giggling waiting-wench for me,

That shows her teeth how white they be !

*Base.* A thing not fit for gravity,

For theirs are foul and hardly three.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha !

*Base.* Ho, ho, ho !

*Pas.* Democritus, thou ancient floerer,

How I miss thy laugh, and ha' across !

*Base.* There you named the famous Jeerer,  
That e'er jeer'd in Rome or Athens.

*Pas.* Ha, ha, ha!  
*Base.* Ho, ho, ho!

*Pas.* How brave lives he that keeps a fool,  
Although the rate be deeper!

*Base.* But he that is his own fool, sir,  
Does live a great deal cheaper.

*Pas.* Sure I shall burst, burst, quite break, thou art so witty.

*Base.* 'Tis rare to break at court, for that belongs to th' city.

*Pas.* Ha, ha! my spleen is almost worn to the last laughter.

*Base.* Oh, keep a corner for a friend; a jest may come hereafter.

*Enter LAPET and Clown, and four others, habited like Pools, dancing, the Lady disguised as Cupid leading; bearing LAPET'S Table, holding it up to him at every strain, and acting the postures.*

*Lapet.* Twinge all now! twinge, I say!  
2 Strain.  
Souse upon Souse.  
3 Strain.  
Doucees single.  
4 Strain.  
Justle sides.  
5 Strain.  
Knee belly.  
6 Strain.  
Kicksee Buttock.  
7 Strain.  
Downderry!

*Enter the Soldier, his sword drawn.*

*Sold.* Not angry law, nor doors of brass, shall keep me

From my wrong's expiation! To thy bowels  
I return my disgrace; and, after, turn  
My face to any death that can be sentenced.

[*Throws down LAPET and GALOSHIO, stabs the Madman, and exit.*]

*Base.* Murder! oh, murder! stop the murderer there!

*Lapet.* I am glad he's gone! he has almost trod my guts out:

Follow him who list for me! I'll ha' no hand in't.

*Gal.* Oh, 'twas your luck and mine to be squelch'd, master:

He has stamp'd my very puddings into pancakes.

*Cupid.* Oh, brothers, oh, I fear 'tis mortal! help, oh, help!

I'm made the wretchedest woman by this accident,  
That ever love beguiled!

*Enter Two Brothers.*

2 *Bro.* We are undone, brother;

Our shames are too apparent.—Away, receptacle

Of luxury and dishonour! most unfortunate,

To make thyself but lucky to thy spoil,

After thy sex's manner!—Lift him up, brother:

He breathes not to our comfort; he's too wasted

Ever to cheer us more. A chirurgian speedily!

Hence, the unhappiest that e'er steep't aside!

She'll be a mother, before she's known a bride.

*Cupid.* Thou hadst a most unfortunate conception,

What'er thou provest to be! In midst of mirth,

Comes ruin for a welcome to thy birth. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*The Country. A Room in a Cottage.*

*Enter SHAMONT.*

*Sham.* This is a beautiful life now! Privacy,  
The sweetness and the benefit of essence.  
I see there's no man but may make his paradise;  
And it is nothing but his love, and dotage  
Upon the world's foul joys, that keeps him out  
on't:

For he that lives retired in mind and spirit,  
Is still in paradise, and has his innocence  
Partly allow'd for his companion too,  
As much as stands with justice. Here no eyes  
Shoot their sharp-pointed scorns upon my shame:  
They know no terms of reputation here,  
No punctual limits, or precise dimensions:  
Plain down-right honesty is all the beauty  
And elegance of life found amongst shepherds;  
For knowing nothing nicely, or desiring it,  
Quits many a vexation from the mind,  
With which our quainter knowledge doth abuse us.  
The name of envy is a stranger here,  
That dries men's bloods abroad, robs health and  
rest:

Why, here's no such fury thought on; no, nor  
falsheood,  
That brotherly disease, fellow-like devil,  
That plays within our bosom, and betrays us.

*Enter LA NOVE.*

*La Nove.* Oh, are you here?

*Sham.* La Nove! 'tis strange to see thee.

*La Nove.* I ha' rid one horse to death to find  
you out, sir.

*Sham.* I am not to be found of any man  
That saw my shame, nor seen long.

*La Nove.* Good, your attention!

You ought to be seen now, and found out, sir,  
If ever you desire, before your ending,  
To perform one good office, nay, a dear one;  
Man's time can hardly match it.

*Sham.* Be it as precious

As reputation, if it come from court,  
I will not hear on't.

*La Nove.* You must hear of this, sir.

*Sham.* Must?

*La Nove.* You shall hear it.

*Sham.* I love thee, that thou'lt die.

*La Nove.* 'Twere nobler in me,  
Than in you living: You will live a murderer,  
If you deny this office.

*Sham.* Even to death, sir.

*La Nove.* Why, then, you will kill your brother.

*Sham.* How?

*La Nove.* Your brother, sir.—

Bear witness, Heaven, this man destroys his brother,

When he may save him; his least breath may save  
Can there be wilfuller destruction? [*him!*]

He was forced to take a most unmanly wrong,  
Above the suffering virtue of a soldier;

He has kill'd his injurer, a work of honour!  
For which, unless you save him, he dies speedily.

My conscience is discharged: I'm but a friend;  
A brother should go forward where I end. [*Rrit.*]

*Sham.* Dies?

Say he be naught! that's nothing to my goodness,  
Which ought to shine through use, or else it loses  
The glorious name 'tis known by. He's my brother;

Yet peace is above blood : Let him go !—Ay,  
 But where's the nobleness of affection then ?  
 That must be cared for too, or I'm imperfect.  
 The same blood that stood up in wrath against him,  
 Now, in his misery, runs all to pity :  
 I had rather die than speak one syllable  
 To save myself ; but, living as I am,  
 There's no avoiding on't ; the world's humanity  
 Expects it hourly from me. Curse of fortune !  
 I took my leave so well too—Let him die !  
 'Tis but a brother lost.—So pleasingly  
 And swiftly I came off, 'twere more than irksome—  
 To tread that path again ; and I shall never [ness,  
 Depart so handsomely. But then, where's pos-  
 terity ?  
 The consummation of our house and name ?  
 I'm torn in pieces betwixt love and shame. [Exit.

SCENE III.—GENOA. *An Apartment in the  
 Palace.*

*Enter LAPET, GALOSHIO, POLTROT, MOULBAZON, and others,  
 the new Court-officers.*

*Lapet.* Good morrow, fellow Poltrot, and Moul-  
 Good morrow, fellows all ! [bazon ;

*Pol.* Monsieur Lapet !

*Lapet.* Look, I have remember'd you ; here's  
 books a-piece for you !

*Moul.* Oh, sir, we dearly thank you.

*Lapet.* So you may ;

There's two impressions gone already, sirs.

*Pol.* What ! no ? in so short a time ?

*Lapet.* 'Tis as I tell you, sir.

My Kick sells gallantly, I thank my stars.

*Gal.* So does your Table ; you may thank the  
 moon too.

*Lapet.* 'Tis the book sells the Table.

*Clown.* But 'tis the bookseller

That has the money for 'em, I'm sure o' that.

*Lapet.* 'Twill much enrich the company of sta-  
 tioners ;

'Tis thought 'twill prove a lasting benefit,  
 Like the Wise Masters, and the Almanacks,  
 The Hundred Novels, and the Book of Cookery :  
 For they begin already to engross it,  
 And make it a stock-book, thinking indeed  
 'Twill prove too great a benefit and help  
 For one that's new set up ; (they know their way)  
 And make him warden ere his beard be grey.

*Moul.* Is't possible such virtue should lie hid,  
 And in so little paper ?

*Lapet.* How ! why, there was the Carpenter,  
 An unknown thing ; an odoriferous pamphlet,  
 Yet no more paper, by all computation,  
 Than Ajax Telamon would use at once ;  
 Your Herring proved the like, able to buy  
 Another Fisher's Folly, and your Pasquil  
 Went not below the Mad-Caps of that time ;  
 And shall my elaborate Kick come behind, think  
 you ?

*Clown.* Yes, it must come behind : 'tis in Ita-  
 According to your humour. [Itica too,

*Lapet.* Not in sale, varlet ?

*Gal.* In sale, sir ? it shall sail beyond 'em all, I  
 trow.

*Lapet.* What have you there now ? oh, page  
 twenty-one.

*Gal.* That page is come to his years ; he should  
 be a serving-man.

*Lapet.* Mark how I snap up the *Duello* there !  
 One would not use a dog so,

I must needs say ; but 'tis for the common good.  
*Gal.* Nay, sir, your commons seldom fight at  
 But buffet in a warehouse. [sharp,

*Lapet.* This will save  
 Many a gentleman of good blood from bleeding,  
 sirs :

I have a curse from many a barber-surgeon ;  
 They'd give but too much money to call't in.  
 Turn to page forty-five ; see what you find there.

*Gal.* Oh, out upon him !  
 Page forty-five ! that's an old thief indeed !

*Enter DUKE, the LADY, and LA NOVE.*

*Lapet.* The duke ! clap down your book  
 Away, Galoshio !

*Gal.* Indeed I am too foul to be i' th' presence :  
 They use to shake me off at the chamber-door still.  
 [Exit.

*Lady.* [Kneels.] Good my lord, grant my suit :  
 let me not rise

Without the comfort on't ! I have not often  
 Been tedious in this kind.

*Duke.* Sister, you wrong yourself,  
 And those great virtues that your fame is made of.  
 To waste so much breath for a murderer's life.

*Lady.* You cannot hate th' offence more than  
 I do, sir,

Nor the offender ; the respect I owe  
 Unto his absent brother makes me a suitor,  
 A most importunate suitor : Make me worthy  
 But of this one request !

*Duke.* I am deaf  
 To any importunacy, and sorry  
 For your forgetfulness : You never injured  
 Your worth so much ; you ought to be rebuked  
 for't !

Pursue good ways ; and as you did begin !

'Tis half the guilt to speak for such a sin.

*Lady.* This is love's beggary right ; that now is  
 ours,

When ladies love, and cannot shew their powers.  
 [Ent.

*Duke.* La Nove !

*La Nove.* My lord.

*Duke.* Are these our new attendants ?

*Lapet.* We are, my lord ; and will endure as  
 much

As better men, my lord ; and more, I trust

*Duke.* What's he ?

*La Nove.* My lord, a decay'd gentleman,  
 That will do any service.

*Duke.* A decay'd one ?

*La Nove.* A renounced one, indeed, for the  
 place only.

*Duke.* We renounce him then : Go, discharg-  
 him instantly !

He that disclaims his gentry for mere gains,  
 'That man's too base to make a vassal on.

*Lapet.* What says the duke ?

*Da Nove.* 'Faith, little to your comfort, sir ;  
 You must be a gentleman again.

*Lapet.* How !

*La Nove.* There's no remedy.

*Lapet.* Marry, the fates forefend ! ne'er while I  
 breathe, sir.

*La Nove.* The duke will have it so, there's no  
 He spied it i' your forehead. [resisting ;

*Lapet.* My wife's doing !

She thought she should be put below her betters  
And sued to ha' me a gentleman again. [now,  
*La Novs.* And very likely, sir.

Marry, I'll give you this comfort; when all's done,  
You'll never pass but for a scurvy one:  
That's all the help you have. Come, shew your  
pace!

*Lapet.* The heaviest gentleman that e'er lost  
place!

Bear witness, I am forced to it. [*Exit.*

*Duke.* Though you have a coarser title yet upon  
you

Than those that left your places without blame,  
'Tis in your power to make yourselves the same.

I cannot make you gentlemen; that's a work  
Raised from your own deservings; merit, manners,  
And in-born virtue does it: Let your own good-  
ness

Make you so great, my power shall make you  
greater;

And, more to encourage you, this I add again,  
There's many grooms now exact gentlemen.

*Enter SHAMONT, apart.*

*Sham.* Methinks 'tis strange to me to enter  
here!

Is there in nature such an awful power,  
To force me to this place, and make me do this?  
Is man's affection stronger than his will?  
His resolution? was I not resolved  
Never to see this place more? do I bear  
Within my breast one blood that confounds th'  
other?

The blood of love, and will, and the last weakest?  
Had I ten millions, I would give it all now,  
I were but past it, or 'twould never come!  
For I shall never do't, or not do't well,  
But spoil it utterly betwixt two passions.—  
Yonder's the duke himself: I will not do't now,  
Had twenty lives their several sufferings in him.

[*Exit.*

*Duke.* Who's that went out now?

*Poll.* I saw none, my lord.

*Duke.* Nor you?

*Moul.* I saw the glimpse of one, my lord.

*Duke.* What'er it was, methought it pleased  
me strangely,

And suddenly my joy was ready for't.

Did you not mark it better?

*Poll.* and *Moul.* 'Troth, my lord,  
We gave no great heed to it.

*Re-enter SHAMONT.*

*Sham.* 'Twill not be answer'd!

It brings me hither still, by main force, hither:  
Either I must give over to profess humanity,  
Or I must speak for him.

*Duke.* 'Tis here again:

No marvel 'twas so pleasing! 'tis delight  
And worth itself, now it appears unclouded.

*Sham.* My lord—He turns away from me! by  
this hand,

I am ill used of all sides! 'tis a fault  
That fortune ever had, to abuse a goodness.

*Duke.* Methought you were saying somewhat.

*Sham.* Mark the language! [*Apart.*

As coy as fate! I see 'twill ne'er be granted.

*Duke.* We little look'd in troth to see you here  
yet.

*Sham.* Not till the day after my brother's death,  
I think.

*Duke.* Sure some great business drew you.

*Sham.* No, in sooth, sir;

Only to come to see a brother die, sir,  
That I may learn to go too; and, if he deceive  
me not,

I think he will do well in't of a soldier,  
Manly, and honestly; and if he weep then,  
I shall not think the worse on's manhood for't,  
Because he's leaving of that part that has it.

*Duke.* He has slain a noble gentleman; think

*Sham.* I would I could not, sir. [on't, sir!

*Duke.* Our kinsman too.

*Sham.* All this is but worse, sir.

*Duke.* When 'tis at worst—

Yet, seeing thee, he lives!

*Sham.* My lord—

[*Kneels.*

*Duke.* He lives!

Believe it as thy bliss; he dies not for't:

Will this make satisfaction for things past?

*Sham.* Oh, my lord—

*Duke.* Will it? speak!

*Sham.* With greater shame to my unworthiness.

*Duke.* Rise then! we're even. I never found  
it harder

To keep just with a man: My great work's ended!  
I knew your brother's pardon was your suit, sir,  
However your nice modesty held it back.

*Sham.* I take a joy now to confess it, sir.

*Enter LA NOVS.*

*La Novs.* My lord—

*Duke.* Hear me first, sir, what'er your news be:  
Set free the Soldier instantly.

*La Novs.* 'Tis done, my lord.

*Duke.* How!

*La Novs.* In effect, 'twas part of my news too;  
There's fair hope of your noble kinsman's life, sir.

*Duke.* What say'st thou?

*La Novs.* And the most admired change  
That living flesh e'er had! he's not the man, my  
lord:

Death cannot be more free from passions, sir,

Than he is at this instant; he's so meek now,

He makes those seem passionate were never  
thought of;

And, for he fears his moods have oft disturb'd  
you, sir,

He's only hasty now for his forgiveness:

And here, behold him, sir!

*Enter the Passionate Lord, the Lady disguised as Cupid,  
and her two Brothers.*

*Duke.* Let me give thanks first!

Our worthy cousin—

*Pas.* Your unworthy trouble, sir!

For which, with all acknowledged reverence,  
I ask your pardon;—and for injury  
More known and wilful: I have chose a wife,  
Without your counsel, or consent, my lord.

*Duke.* A wife! where is she, sir?

*Pas.* This noble gentlewoman—

*Duke.* How!

*Pas.* Whose honour my forgetful times much  
wrong'd.

*Duke.* He's madder than he was.

*La Novs.* I would ha' sworn for him!

*Duke.* The Cupid, cousin?

*Pas.* Yes, this worthy lady, sir.

*Duke.* Still worse and worse!

1 *Bro.* Our sister, under pardon, my lord.

*Duke.* What?

2 Bro. Which shape love taught her to assume.

Duke. Is't truth, then ?

La Novè. It appears plainly now, below the waist, my lord.

Duke. Shamont, didst ever read of a she-Cupid !

Sham. Never in fiction yet ; but it might hold, sir ;

For desire is of both genders.

*Enter the Lady.*

Duke. Make that good here !  
I take thee at thy word, sir.

Sham. Oh, my lord,  
Love would appear too bold and rude from me ;  
Honour and admiration are her rights ;  
Her goodness is my saint, my lord.

Duke. I see  
You are both too modest to bestow yourselves :

I'll save that virtue still ; 'tis but my pains : Come,  
It shall be so.

*[He joins SHAMONT's hand and his sister's.]*

Sham. This gift does but set forth my poverty.

Lady. Sir, that which you complain of, is my riches.

*Enter the Soldier.*

Duke. Soldier, now every noise sounds peace,  
thou'rt welcome !

Sold. *[Kneels.]* Sir, my repentance sues for your  
blest favour,

Which, once obtain'd, no injury shall lose it :  
I'll suffer mightier wrongs.

Duke. Rise, loved and pardon'd !  
For where hope fail'd, nay, art itself resign'd,  
Thou hast wrought that cure which skill could  
never find :

Nor did there cease, but to our peace extend :  
Never could wrongs boast of a nobler end !

*[Exeunt.]*

#### EPILOGUE.

OUR poet bid us say, for his own part,  
He cannot lay too much forth of his art ;  
But fears our over-acting passions may,  
As not adorn, deface his labour'd play :  
Yet still he's resolute, for what is writ  
Of Nicer Valour, and assumes the wit ;  
But, for the love-scenes, which he ever meant  
Cupid in's petticoat should represent,  
He'll stand no shock of censure. The play's good,  
(He says he knows it) if well understood :  
But we, blind god, beg, if thou art divine,  
Thou'lt shoot thy arrows round ; this play was thine.

# THE HONEST MAN'S FORTUNE.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DUKE OF ORLEANS, *a spleenful detracting Lord.*  
EARL OF AMIENS, *Brother-in-Law to ORLEANS,*  
*a noble accomplished Gentleman, Servant to*  
*LAMIRA.*  
MONTAGUE, *the HONEST MAN.*  
LONGUEVILLE, } *Two faithful Followers of MON-*  
DUBOIS, } *TAGUE.*  
VERAMOUR, *the loving and loyal Page of MON-*  
*TAGUE.*  
LAVERDINE, *a knavish Courtier.*  
LA-POOP, *a joisting Sea-Captain.*

MALICORN, *a sharking Citizen.*  
Two Lawyers.  
Two Creditors.  
Officers.  
Servants.

DUCHESS OF ORLEANS, *a virtuous Lady, and*  
*chaste (but suspected) Wife to the Duke.*  
LAMIRA, *a modest Virgin, rich and noble.*  
CHARLOTTE, *LAMIRA'S Woman.*

SCENE,—PARIS, AND THE NEIGHBOURING COUNTRY.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—PARIS. *Before the Hall of Justice.*

*Enter ORLEANS and AMIENS, at several Doors.*

*Ami.* MORTOW, my lord of Orleans!

*Orl.* You salute me like a stranger.

Brother Orleans were, to me, a title more  
Belonging whom you call the husband of  
Your sister.

*Ami.* 'Would the circumstances of  
Your brotherhood had never offer'd cause  
To make our conversation less familiar!  
I meet you like a hindrance in your way!  
Your great law-suit is now upon the tongue,  
And ready for a judgment.

*Orl.* Came you from  
The hall now?

*Ami.* Without stay. The court is full;  
And such a press of people does attend  
The issue, as if some great man were brought  
To his arraignment.

*Orl.* Every mother's son  
Of all that multitude of hearers, went  
To be a witness of the misery  
Your sister's fortunes must have come to, if  
My adversary, who did love her first,  
Had been her husband.

*Ami.* The success may draw  
A testimony from them, to confirm  
The same opinion; but they went prepared  
With no such hope or purpose.

*Orl.* And did you  
Entreat the number of them that are come,  
With no such hope or purpose?

*Ami.* Tush! your own  
Experience of my heart can answer you.

*Orl.* This doubtful makes me clearly understand  
Your disposition.

*Ami.* If your cause be just,  
I wish you a conclusion like your cause.

*Orl.* I can have any common charity  
To such a prayer: From a friend I would  
Expect a love to prosper in, without  
Exceptions; such a love as might make all  
My undertakings thankful to't: Precisely just  
Is seldom faithful in our wishes to  
Another man's desires. Farewell! *[Exit.]*

*Enter MONTAGUE, DUBOIS, LONGUEVILLE, and VERAMOUR.*

*Dubois.* Here comes your adversary's brother-  
*Long.* The lord of Amiens. *[in-law.]*

*Dubois.* From the hall, I think.

*Ami.* I did so. Save your lordship!

*Mont.* That's a wish,  
My lord, as courteous to my present state,  
As ever honest mind was thankful for;  
For now my safety must expose itself  
To question: Yet to look for any free  
Or hearty salutation, sir, from you  
Would be unreasonable in me.

*Ami.* Why?

*Mont.* Your sister is my adversary's wife;  
That nearness needs must consequently draw  
Your inclination to him.

*Ami.* I will grant  
Him all the nearness his alliance claims;  
And yet be nothing less impartial,  
My lord of Montague.

*Mont.* Lord of Montague yet;  
But, sir, how long the dignity or state  
Belonging to it will continue, stands  
Upon the dangerous passage of this hour;  
Either for evermore to be confirmed,  
Or, like the time wherein 'twas pleaded, gone;  
Gone with it, never to be call'd again!

*Ami.* Justice direct your process to the end !  
To both your persons my respect shall still  
Be equal ; but the righteous cause is that  
Which bears my wishes to the side it holds :  
Wherever, may it prosper !

[Exit.]

*Mont.* Then my thanks  
Are proper to you : If a man may raise  
A confidence upon a lawful ground,  
I have no reason to be once perplex'd  
With any doubtful motion. *Longueville,*  
That lord of Amiens (didst observe him?) has  
A worthy nature in him.

*Long.* Either 'tis  
His nature or his cunning.

*Mont.* That's the vizard  
Of most men's actions, whose dissembled lives  
Do carry only the similitude  
Of goodness on 'em ; but for him,  
Honest behaviour makes a true report  
What disposition does inhabit him,  
Essential Virtue.

*Long.* Then 'tis pity that  
Injurious Orleans is his brother.

*Dubois.* He's but his brother-in-law.

*Long.* Law ? that's as bad.

*Dubois.* How is your law as bad ? I rather wish  
The hangman thy executor, than that  
Equivocation should be ominous.

*Enter two Lawyers and two Creditors.*

*Long.* Some of your lawyers !

1 *Law.* What is ominous ?

2 *Law.* Let no distrust trouble your lordship's  
thought !

1 *Law.* The evidences of your questioned land  
Ha' not so much as any literal  
Advantage in 'em to be made against  
Your title.

2 *Law.* And your counsel understands  
The business fully.

1 *Law.* They are industrious, just——

2 *Law.* And very confident.

1 *Law.* Your state endures

A voluntary trial ; like a man  
Whose honours are maliciously accused.

2 *Law.* The accusation serves to clear his cause——

1 *Law.* And to approve his truth more.

2 *Law.* So shall all

Your adversary's pleadings strengthen your  
Possession.

1 *Law.* And be set upon record,  
To witness the hereditary right  
Of you and yours.

2 *Law.* Courage ! you have the law.

*Long.* And you, the profits.

*Mont.* If discouragement  
Could work upon me, your assurances  
Would put me strongly into heart again :  
But I was never fearful ; and let Fate  
Deceive my expectation, yet I am  
Prepared against dejection !

1 *Cred.* So are we.

2 *Cred.* We have received a comfortable hope  
That all will speed well.

*Long.* What is he, *Dubois* ?

*Dubois.* A creditor.

*Long.* I thought so ; for he speaks  
As if he were a partner in his state.

*Mont.* Sir, I am largely indebted to your loves——

*Long.* More to their purses.

*Mont.* Which you shall not lose.

1 *Cred.* Your lordship——

*Dubois.* That's another creditor.

1 *Cred.* Has interest in me.

*Long.* You have more of him.

1 *Cred.* And I have had so many promises  
From these, and all your learned counsellors,  
How certainly your cause will prosper, that——

*Long.* You brought no serjeants with you ?

*Dubois.* To attend

His ill success ?

*Mont.* Good sir, I will not be  
Unthankful either to their industries,  
Or your affections.

1 *Law.* All your land, my lord,  
Is at the bar now ; give me but ten crowns,  
I'll save you harmless.

*Long.* Take him at his word !

If he does lose, you're saved by miracle :  
For I ne'er knew a lawyer yet undone.

1 *Law.* Then now you shall, sir, if this prosper  
not.

*Long.* Sir, I beseech you do not force your voice  
To such a loudness, but be thrifty now !

Preserve it till you come to plead at bar ;

It will be much more profitable in  
The satisfaction, than the promise.

1 *Law.* Is

Not this a satisfaction to engage  
Myself for this assurance, if he——

*Mont.* No, sir ; my ruin never shall import  
Another's loss, if not by accident,  
And that my purpose is not guilty of :  
You are engaged in nothing but your care.

[Exit Lawyers]

Attend the procurator to the court ;  
Observe how things incline, and bring me word !

*Long.* I dare not, sir ; if I be taken there,  
Mine ears will be in danger.

*Mont.* Why ? hast thou  
Committed something that deserves thine ears ?

*Long.* No, but I fear the noise ! my hearing  
will be

Perished by the noise ; it is as good to want

A member, as to lose the use——

*Mont.* The ornament is excepted.

*Long.* Well, my lord,  
I'll put 'em to the hazard.

[Exit]

1 *Cred.* Your desires

Be prosperous to you !

2 *Cred.* Our best prayers wait

Upon your fortune.

[Exit Creditors]

*Dubois.* Yourselves, not him.

*Mont.* Thou canst not blame 'em ; I am in their  
debts.

*Ver.* But had your large expence (a part  
You owe 'em) for unprofitable silks (whereof

And laces, been bestowed among the poor,  
That would have pray'd the right way, for you,  
Not upon you——

*Mont.* For unprofitable silks

And laces ? Now, believe me, honest boy,

Thou hast hit upon a reprehension that

Belongs unto me.

*Ver.* By my soul, my lord,

I had not so unmannerly a thought,

To reprehend you !

*Mont.* Why, I love thee for't ;

Mine own acknowledgment confirms thy words :

For once, I do remember, coming from

The mercer's, where my purse had spent itself  
 On those unprofitable toys thou speak'st of,  
 A man half naked with his poverty  
 Did meet me, and requested my relief:  
 I wanted whence to give it: yet his eyes  
 Spoke for him; those I could have satisfied  
 With some unfruitful sorrow (if my tears  
 Would not have added rather to his grief,  
 Than eased it,) but the true compassion that  
 I should have given I had not. This began  
 To make me think how many such men's wants  
 The vain superfluous cost I wore upon  
 My outside would have cloath'd, and left myself  
 A habit as becoming. To increase  
 This new consideration, there came one  
 Clad in a garment plain and thrifty, yet  
 As decent as these fair dear follies, made  
 As if it were of purpose to despise  
 The vanity of show; his purse had still  
 The power to do a charitable deed,  
 And did it.

*Dubois.* Yet your inclination, sir,  
 Deserved no less to be commended than  
 His action.

*Mont.* Pr'ythee, do not flatter me!  
 He that intends well, yet deprives himself  
 Of means to put his good thoughts into deed,  
 Deceives his purpose of the due reward  
 That goodness merits. Oh, antiquity,  
 Thy great examples of nobility  
 Are out of imitation; or at least  
 So lamely followed, that thou art as much  
 Before this age in virtue, as in time!

*Dubois.* Sir, it must needs be lamely followed,  
 The chiefest men who love to follow it [when  
 Are for the most part cripples.

*Mont.* Who are they?

*Dubois.* Soldiers, my lord, soldiers.

*Mont.* 'Tis true, Dubois;

But if the law disables me no more  
 For noble actions than good purposes,  
 I'll practise how to exercise the worth  
 Commended to us by our ancestors:  
 The poor neglected soldier shall command  
 Me from a lady's courtship, and the form  
 I'll study shall no more be taught me by  
 The tailor, but the scholar; that expence  
 Which hitherto has been to entertain  
 The intemperate pride and pleasure of the taste,  
 Shall fill my table more to satisfy,  
 And less to surfeit.

What an honest work it would be when we find  
 A virgin in her poverty and youth  
 Inclining to be tempted to employ  
 As much persuasion and as much expence  
 To keep her upright, as men use to do  
 Upon her falling?

*Dubois.* It is charity  
 That many maids will be unthankful for;  
 And some will rather take it for a wrong,  
 To buy 'em out of their inheritance,  
 The thing that they were born to.

*Enter LONGUEVILLE.*

*Mont.* Longueville,  
 Thou bring'st a cheerful promise in thy face;  
 There stands no pale report upon thy cheek,  
 To give me fear or knowledge of my loss;  
 'Tis red and lively. How proceeds my suit?

*Long.* That's, with leave, sir,

A labour, that to those of Hercules  
 May add another; or, at least, be call'd  
 An imitation of his burning shirt:  
 For 'twas a pain of that unmerciful  
 Perplexity, to shoulder through the throng  
 Of people that attended your success,  
 My sweaty linen fix'd upon my skin,  
 Still as they pull'd me took that with it; 'twas  
 A fear I should have left my flesh among 'em:  
 Yet I was patient, for, methought, the toil  
 Might be an emblem of the difficult  
 And weary passage to get out of law.  
 And, to make up the dear similitude,  
 When I was forth seeking my handkerchief  
 To wipe my sweat off, I did find a cause  
 To make me sweat more; for my purse was lost  
 Among their fingers.

*Dubois.* There 'twas rather found.

*Long.* By them.

*Dubois.* I mean so.

*Mont.* Well, I will restore  
 Thy damage to thee. How proceeds my suit?  
*Long.* Like one at broker's; I think, forfeited.  
 Your promising counsel at the first  
 Put strongly forward with a labour'd speed,  
 And such a violence of pleading, that  
 His fee in sugar-candy scarce will make  
 His throat a satisfaction for the hurt  
 He did it; and he carried the whole cause  
 Before him, with so clear a passage, that  
 The people in the favour of your side  
 Cried, "Montague, Montague!" in the spite of  
 That cried out *silence*, and began to laugh [him  
 Your adversary's advocate to scorn;  
 Who, like a cunning footman, set me forth  
 With such a temperate easy kind of course,  
 To put him into exercise of strength,  
 And followed his advantages so close,  
 That when your hot-mouth'd pleader thought he  
 had won,  
 Before he had reach'd it he was out of breath,  
 And then the other stript him.

*Mont.* So, all's lost?

*Long.* But how I know not; for, methought, I  
 Confounded with the clamour of the court, [stood  
 Like one embark'd upon a storm at sea,  
 Where the tempestuous noise of thunder, mix'd  
 With roaring of the billows, and the thick  
 Imperfect language of the seamen, takes  
 His understanding and his safety both  
 Together from him.

*Mont.* Thou dost bring ill news!

*Long.* Of what I was unwilling to have been  
 The first reporter.

*Mont.* Didst observe no more?

*Long.* At least no better.

*Mont.* Then thou'rt not inform'd  
 So well as I am: I can tell thee that  
 Will please thee; for, when all else left my cause,  
 My very adversaries took my part.

*Long.* Whosoever told you that,  
 Abused you.

*Mont.* Credit me, he took my part  
 When all forsook me.

*Long.* Took it from you?

*Mont.* Yes;

I mean so: And I think he had just cause  
 To take it, when the verdict gave it him.

*Dubois.* His spirit would ha' sunk him, ere he  
 could

Have carried an ill fortune of this weight  
So lightly.

*Mont.* Nothing is a misery,  
Unless our weakness apprehend it so ;  
We cannot be more faithful to ourselves  
In anything that's manly, than to make  
Ill fortune as contemptible to us  
As it makes us to others.

*Enter Lawyers.*

*Long.* Here come they,  
Whose very countenances will tell you how  
Contemptible it is to others.

*Mont.* Sir !

*Long.* The Sir of knighthood may be given him,  
Ere they hear you now.

*Mont.* Good sir, but a word !

*Dubois.* How soon the loss of wealth makes any  
Grow out of knowledge ! [man

*Long.* Let me see : I pray, sir,  
Never stood you upon the pillory ?

*1 Law.* The pillory ?

*Long.* Oh, now I know you did not ;  
You have ears, I thought ye had lost 'em : Pray,  
observe ;

Here's one that once was gracious in your eyes !

*1 Law.* Oh ! my lord ! [I] have an eye upon  
him.

*Long.* But ha' you ne'er a counsel to redeem  
His land yet from the judgment ?

*2 Law.* None but this ;

A writ of error to remove the cause.

*Long.* No more of error ! we have been in that  
Too much already.

*2 Law.* If you will reverse

The judgment, you must trust to that delay——

*Long.* Delay ? Indeed he's like to trust to that,  
With you has any dealing.

*2 Law.* Ere the law

Proceeds to an *habere facias possessionem.*

*Mont.* That is a language, sir, I understand not.

*Long.* Thou art a very strange unthankful  
fellow,

To have taken fees of such a liberal measure,  
And then [to] give a man hard words for's money !

*1 Law.* If men will hazard their salvations,

What should I say ? I've other business !

*Mont.* You are i' th' right ; that's it you should  
Prosperity has left me. [say, now

*Enter two Creditors.*

*1 Cred.* Have an eye upon him ! if  
We lose him now, he's gone for ever : Stay,  
And dog him ! I'll go fetch the officers.

*Long.* Dog him, you blood-hound ? by this  
point, thou shalt [Draws.

More safely dog an angry lion, than  
Attempt him.

*Mont.* What's the matter ?

*Long.* Do but stir

To fetch a serjeant, and, besides your loss  
Of labour, I will have you beaten till  
Those casements in your faces be false lights !

*Dubois.* Falsar than those you sell by !

*Mont.* Who gave you

Commission to abuse my friends thus ?

*Long.* Sir,

Are those your friends that would betray you ?

*Mont.* 'Tis

To save themselves, rather than betray me.

*1 Cred.* Your lordship makes a just construc-  
tion of it.

*2 Cred.* All our desire is but to get our own.

*Long.* Your wives' desires and yours do differ

*Mont.* So far as my ability will go, [then  
You shall have satisfaction.—Longueville !

*Long.* And leave yourself neglected ?—Every  
Is first a debtor to his own demands, [man  
Being honest.

*Mont.* As I take it, sir,  
I did not entertain you for my counsellor.

*Long.* Counsel's the office of a servant, when  
The master falls upon a danger, as  
Defence is : Never threaten with your eyes !  
They are no cockatrices. Do you hear ?  
Talk with the girlder, or the milliner ;  
He can inform you of a kind of men  
That first undid the profit of those trades  
By bringing up the form of carrying  
Their morglays in their hands ; with some of those  
A man may make himself a privilege  
To ask a question at the prison-gates,  
Without your good permission.

*2 Cred.* By your leave !

*Mont.* Stay, sir ! what one example, since the  
That first you put your hat off to me, have [time  
You noted in me to encourage you

To this presumption ? By the justice now  
Of thine own rule, I should begin with thee ;  
I should turn thee away ungratified  
For all thy former kindness, forget  
Thou ever didst me any service.—'Tis not fear  
Of being arrested, makes me thus incline

To satisfy you ; for you see by him,  
I lost not all defences with my state :

The curses of a man, to whom I am  
Beholding, terrify me more than all  
The violence he can pursue me with.—

*Dubois.* I did prepare me for the worst ;  
These two small cabinets do comprehend

The sum of all the wealth that it hath pleased  
Adversity to leave me ; one as rich

As the other, both in jewels : Take thou this,  
And, as the order put within it shall

Direct thee, distribute it half between  
Those creditors, and the other half among

My servants ;—for, sir, they are my creditors  
As well as you are ; they have trusted me

With their advancement. If the value fail  
To please you all, my first increase of means

Shall offer you a fuller payment. Be content  
To leave me something ; and imagine that

Ye put a new beginner into credit.  
*Cred.* So prosper our own blessings, as we wish

You to your merit !

*Mont.* Are your silences

Of discontent or of sorrow ?

*Dubois.* Sir,

We would not leave you.

*Long.* Do but suffer us

To follow you, and what our present means  
Or industries hereafter can provide,  
Shall serve you.

*Mont.* Oh, desire me not to live  
To such a baseness, as to be maintain'd  
By those that serve me ! Pray, begone ; I will  
Defend your honesties to any man,  
That shall report you have forsaken me :

I pray, begone !—

[*Exeunt all but VERANDOUR and MONTAGNE.*

Why dost thou weep, my boy ?  
Because I do not bid thee go too ?

*Ver.* No ;

I weep, my lord, because I would not go ;  
I fear you will command me.

*Mont.* No, my child,  
I will not ; that would discommend the intent  
Of all my other actions : Thou art yet  
Unable to advise thyself a course,  
Should I put thee to seek it ; after that,  
I must excuse, or at the least forgive,  
Any uncharitable deed that can  
Be done against myself.

*Ver.* Every day,  
My lord, I tarry with you, I'll account  
A day of blessing to me ; for I shall  
Have so much less time left me of my life  
When I am from you ; and if misery  
Befal you (which I hope so good a man  
Was never born to) I will take my part,  
And make my willingness increase my strength  
To bear it. In the winter I will spare  
Mine own clothes from myself to cover you ;  
And in the summer carry some of yours,  
To ease you : I'll do anything I can !

*Mont.* Why, thou art able to make Misery  
Ashamed of hurting, when thy weakness can  
Both bear it, and despise it. Come, my boy !  
I will provide some better way for thee  
Than this thou speak'st of. 'Tis the comfort, that  
Ill fortune has undone me into the fashion ;  
For now, in this age, most men do begin  
To keep but one boy, that kept many men.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the DUKE'S  
Palace.*

*Enter ORLEANS, SERVANT, and DUCHESS following.*

*Orl.* Where is she ? call her !

*Duch.* I attend you, sir.

*Orl.* Your friend, sweet madam—

*Duch.* What friend, good my lord ?

*Orl.* Your Montague, madam, he will shortly  
Those courtly graces that you love him for : [want  
The means wherewith he purchased this, and this,  
And all his own provisions, to the least  
Proportion of his feeding, or his clothes,  
Came out of that inheritance of land  
Which he unjustly lived on ; but the law  
Has given me right in't, and possession : Now  
Thou shalt perceive his bravery vanish, as  
This jewel does from thee now, and these pearls  
To him that owes 'em.

*Duch.* You're the owner, sir,  
Of every thing that does belong to me.

*Orl.* No, not of him, sweet lady.

*Duch.* Oh, good Heaven !

*Orl.* But in a while your mind will change, and  
As ready to disclaim him, when his wants [be  
And miseries have perish'd his good face,  
And taken off the sweetness that has made  
Him pleasing in a woman's understanding.

*Duch.* Oh, Heaven, how gracious had creation  
To women, who are born without defence, [been  
If to our hearts there had been doors, through  
which

Our husbands might have look'd into our thoughts,  
And made themselves undoubtful !

*Orl.* Made 'em mad !

*Duch.* With honest women ?

*Orl.* Thou dost still pretend

A title to that virtue : Pr'ythee let  
Thy honesty speak freely to me now.  
Thou know'st that Montague, of whose land  
I am the master, did affect thee first,  
And should have had thee, if the strength of friends  
Had not prevail'd above thine own consent :  
I have undone him ! tell me how thou dost  
Consider his ill fortune and my good ?

*Duch.* I'll tell you justly : His undoing is  
An argument for pity and for tears,  
In all their dispositions that have known  
The honour and the goodness of his life ;  
Yet that addition of prosperity  
Which you have got by't, no indifferent man  
Will malice or repine at, if the law  
Be not abused in't. Howsoever, since  
You have the upper fortune of him, 'twill  
Be some dishonour to you to bear yourself  
With any pride or glory over him.

*Orl.* This may be truly spoken ; but in thee  
It is not honest.

*Duch.* Yes ; so honest, that  
I care not if the chaste Penelope  
Were now alive to hear me.

*Enter AMIENS.*

*Orl.* Who comes there ?

*Duch.* My brother.

*Ami.* Save you !

*Orl.* Now, sir ! you have heard  
Of prosperous Montague ?

*Ami.* No, sir ; I have heard  
Of Montague, but of your prosperity.

*Orl.* Is he distracted ?

*Ami.* He does bear his loss

With such a noble strength of patience, that  
Had Fortune eyes to see him, she would weep  
For having hurt him, and pretending that  
She did it but for trial of his worth,  
Hereafter ever love him.

*Orl.* I perceive

You love him ; and, because I must confess  
He does deserve that, (though for some respects,  
I have not given him that acknowledgment,)  
Yet in mine honour I did still conclude  
To use him nobly.

*Ami.* Sir, that will become  
Your reputation, and make me grow proud  
Of your alliance.

*Orl.* I did reserve  
The doing of this friendship till I had  
His fortunes at my mercy, that the world  
May tell him 'tis a willing courtesy.

*Duch.* This change will make me happy !

*Orl.* 'Tis a change ;

Thou shalt behold it : Then observe me ! When  
That Montague had possession of my land,  
I was his rival, and at last obtain'd  
This lady, who, by promise of her own  
Affection to him, should have been his wife :  
I had her, and with-held her like a pawn,  
Till now my land is render'd to me again ;  
And since it is so, you shall see I have  
The conscience not to keep her : Give him her !

[*Draws.*]

For, by the faithful temper of my sword,  
She shall not tarry with me.

*Ami.* Give me way !—

[*Draws.*]

Thou most unworthy man!—God!—Give me way!  
Or, by the wrong he does the innocent,  
I'll end thy misery and his wickedness  
Together!

*Duch.* Stay, and let me justify  
My husband in that! I have wronged his bed—  
[*Excunt AMIENS and Servant.*]

Never—all shames that can afflict me, fall  
Upon me, if I ever wrong'd you!

*Orl.* Didst  
Thou not confess it?

*Duch.* 'Twas to save your blood  
From shedding: That has turn'd my brother's edge.  
He, that beholds our thoughts as plainly as  
Our faces, knows it, I did never hurt  
My honesty, but by accusing it.

*Orl.* Women's consents are sooner credited  
Than their denials; and I'll never trust  
Her body, that prefers any defence  
Before the safety of her honour.—Here!

*Enter Servant.*

Shew forth that stranger.—Give me not a word!  
Thou see'st a danger ready to be tempted.

*Duch.* Cast that upon me, rather than my shame;  
And, as I am now dying, I will vow  
That I am honest!

*Orl.* Put her out of doors!  
But that I fear my land may go again  
To Montague, I would kill thee! I am loth  
To make a beggar of him that way; or else—  
Go! now you have the liberty of flesh;  
And you may put it to a double use,  
One for your pleasure, th' other to maintain  
Your well-beloved; he will want: [*Exit DUCHESSES.*]  
In such a charitable exercise  
The virtue will excuse you for the vice. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.—*A Grove before the City.*

*Enter AMIENS with his sword drawn, MONTAGUE and  
VERAMOUR meeting him.*

*Mont.* What means your lordship?

*Ver.* For the love of God—

*Ami.* Thou hast advantage of me; cast away  
This buckler!

*Mont.* So he is, sir, for he lives  
With one that is undone.—Avoid us, boy!

*Ver.* I'll first avoid my safety:  
Your rapier shall be button'd with my head,  
Before it touch my master.

*Ami.* Montague!

*Mont.* Sir?

*Ami.* You know my sister—

*Mont.* Yes, sir.

*Ami.* For a whore.

*Mont.* You lie! and shall lie lower if you dare  
Abuse her honour.

*Enter DUCHESSES.*

*Duch.* I am honest.

*Ami.* Honest?

*Duch.* Upon my faith, I am.

*Ami.* What did then  
Perseude thee to condemn thyself?

*Duch.* Your safety.

*Ami.* I had rather be exposed  
To danger than dishonour: Thou hast betray'd  
The reputation of my family

More basely, by the falseness of that word,  
Than if thou hadst deliver'd me asleep  
Into the hand of a base enemy.  
Relief will never make thee sensible  
Of thy disgraces! Let thy wants compel thee to it.  
[*Exit.*]

*Duch.* Oh, I'm a miserable woman!

*Mont.* Why, madam? Are you utterly  
Without means to relieve you?

*Duch.* I have nothing, sir,  
Unless by changing of these clothes for worse,  
And then at last the worst for nakedness.

*Mont.* Stand off, boy!—Nakedness would be a  
change

To please us, madam, to delight us both.

*Duch.* What nakedness, sir?

*Mont.* Why, the nakedness  
Of body, madam; we were lovers once.

*Duch.* Never dishonest lovers.

*Mont.* Honesty

Has no allowance now to give ourselves.

*Duch.* Nor you allowance against honesty.

*Mont.* I'll send my boy hence: Opportunity  
Shall be our servant. Come, and meet me first  
With kisses like a stranger at the door,  
And then invite me nearer, to receive  
A more familiar inward welcome; where,  
Instead of tapers made of virgin's wax,  
The increasing flames of our desires shall light  
Us to a banquet; and, before the taste  
Be dull with satisfaction, I'll prepare  
A nourishment composed of every thing  
That bears a natural friendship to the blood,  
And that shall set another edge upon't;  
Or else, between the courses of the feast,  
We'll dally out an exercise of time,  
That ever as one appetite expires  
Another may succeed it.

*Duch.* Oh, my lord,  
How has your nature lost her worthiness?  
When our affections had their liberty,  
Our kisses met as temperately as  
The hands of sisters or of brothers, yet  
Our bloods were then as moving; then you were  
So noble, that I durst have trusted your  
Embraces in an opportunity  
Silent enough to serve a ravisher,  
And yet come from you undishonour'd: How  
You think me alter'd, that you promise your  
Attempt success, I know not: but were all  
The sweet temptations that deceive us set  
On this side, and on that side all the tortures,  
These neither should persuade me, nor these force.

*Mont.* Then misery may waste your body.

*Duch.* Yes;

But lust shall never.

*Mont.* I have found you still  
As uncorrupted as I left you first.  
Continue so, and I will serve you with  
As much devotion as my word, my hand,  
Or purse can shew you! And, to justify  
That promise, here is half the wealth I have;  
Take it! you owe me nothing, till you fall  
From virtue! which, the better to protect,  
I have bethought me of a present means.—  
[*To VERAMOUR.*] Give me the letter!—This com-  
mends my boy

Into the service of a lady, whose  
Free goodness you have been acquainted with,  
Lamira.

*Duch.* Sir, I know her.

*Mont.* Then believe

Her entertainment will be noble to you.  
My boy shall bring you thither, and relate  
Your manner of misfortune, if your own  
Report needs any witness: So, I kiss  
Your hand, good lady!

*Duch.* Sir, I know not how

To promise; but I cannot be unthankful.

*Mont.* All that you can improve in thankfulness  
Be yours, to make you the more prosperous!—  
Farewell, my boy!—I am not yet oppress'd,  
Having the power to help one that's distress'd.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—A Street.

Enter LONGUEVILLE and DUBOIS.

*Long.* What shall we do now? swords are out of  
And words are out of credit. [use,

*Dubois.* We must serve.

*Long.* The means to get a service will first spend  
Our purses; and, except we can allow  
Ourselves an entertainment, service will  
Neglect us: Now, 'tis grown into a doubt  
Whether the master or the servant gives  
The countenance.

*Dubois.* Then fall in with mistresses!

*Long.* They keep more servants now, indeed,  
than men;

But yet the age is grown so populous  
Of those attendants, that the women are  
Grown full too.

*Dubois.* What, shall we propound ourselves?

*Long.* I'll think on't.

*Dubois.* Do. Old occupations have  
Too many setters-up to prosper; some  
Uncommon trade would thrive now.

*Long.* We will even

Make up some half a dozen proper men;  
And should not we get more than all  
Your female sinners?

*Dubois.* If the house be seated,  
As it should be, privately.

*Long.* Ay; but that would make  
A multitude of witches.

*Dubois.* Witches? how, pr'ythee?

*Long.* Thus:

The bawds would all turn witches to revenge  
Themselves upon us; and the women that  
Come to us, for disguises must wear beards;  
And that's, they say, a token of a witch.

*Dubois.* What shall we then do?

*Long.* We must study on't  
With more consideration.—Stay, Dubois:  
Are not the lord of Orleans and the lord  
Of Amiens enemies?

*Dubois.* Yes; what of that?

*Long.* Methinks the factions of two such great  
Should give a promise of advancement now, [men  
To us that want it.

*Dubois.* Let the plot be thine,  
And in the enterprize I'll second thee.

*Long.* I have it! we will first set down ourselves  
The method of a quarrel, and make choice  
Of some frequented tavern, or such a place  
Of common notice, to perform it in,  
By way of undertaking, to maintain  
The several honours of those enemies:  
Thou for the lord of Orleans; I for Amiens.

*Dubois.* I like the project; and I think 'twill  
take

The better, since their difference first did rise  
From his occasion whom we follow'd once.

*Long.* We cannot hope less, after the report,  
Than entertainment or gratuity:  
Yet those are ends I do not aim at most.  
Great spirits that are needy, and will thrive,  
Must labour whilst such troubles are alive.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—A Tavern.

Enter LAVERDINE and LA-POOP.

*La-P.* Hunger is sharper than the sword! I  
have fed these three days upon leaf-tobacco, for  
want of other victuals.

*Lav.* You have lived the honestest, captain. But  
be not so dejected! But hold up thy head, and  
meat will sooner fall i' thy mouth.

*La-P.* I care not so much for meat, so I had  
but good liquor, for which my guts croak like so  
many frogs for rain.

*Lav.* It seems you are troubled with the wind-  
cholic, captain: swallow a bullet; 'tis present re-  
medy, I'll assure you.

*La-P.* A bullet? I'll tell you, sir! My paunch  
is nothing but a pile of bullets: when I was in  
any service, I stood between my general and the  
shot, like a mud wall: I am all lead; from the  
crown of the head to the soal of the foot, not a  
sound bone about me.

*Lav.* It seems you have been in terrible hot  
service, captain.

*La-P.* It has ever been the fate of the Low-  
Country wars to spoil many a man; I have not been  
the first, nor shall not be the last. But, I'll tell  
you, sir, (hunger has brought it into mind,) I  
served once at the siege of Brest, ('tis memorable  
to this day,) where we were in great distress for  
victuals; whole troops fainted more for want of  
food than for blood, and died; yet we were resolved  
to stand it out. I myself was but then gentleman  
of a company, and had as much need as any man:  
And indeed I had perished, had not a miraculous  
providence preserved me.

*Lav.* As how, good captain?

*La-P.* Marry, sir, e'en as I was fainting and  
falling down for want of sustenance, the enemy  
made a shot at me, and struck me full in the  
paunch with a penny-loaf.

*Lav.* Instead of a bullet?

*La-P.* Instead of a bullet.

*Lav.* That was miraculous indeed! And that  
loaf sustained you?

*La-P.* Nourished me, or I had famished with  
the rest.

*Lav.* You have done worthy acts, being a sol-  
dier. And now you shall give me leave to requite

your tale, and to acquaint you with the most notorious deeds that I have done, being a courtier: I protest, captain, I will lie no more than you have done.

*La-P.* I can endure no lies.

*Lav.* I know you cannot, captain, therefore I'll only tell you of strange things: I did once a deed of charity, for itself; I assisted a poor widow in a suit, and obtained it; yet, I protest, I took not a penny for my labour.

*La-P.* 'Tis no such strange thing.

*Lav.* By Mars, captain, but it is, and a very strange thing too, in a courtier; it may take the upper-hand of your penny-loaf for a miracle. I could have told you how many ladies have languished for my love, and how I was once solicited by the mother, the daughter, and grandmother; out of the least of which I might have digged myself a fortune; they were all great ladies, for two of them were so big I could hardly embrace them; but I was sluggish in my rising courses, and therefore let them pass. What means I had is spent upon such as had the wit to cheat me; that wealth being gone, I have only bought experience with it, with a strong hope to cheat others.—But see, here comes the much-declined Montague, who had all the manor-houses, which were the body of his estate, overthrown by a great wind!

*Enter MONTAGUE and MALLICORN.*

*La-P.* How! by a great wind? Was he not overthrown by law?

*Lav.* Yes, marry was he; but there was terrible puffing and blowing before he was overthrown, if you observed; and believe it, captain, there's no wind so dangerous to a building as a lawyer's breath.

*La-P.* What's he with him?

*Lav.* An eminent citizen, Monsieur Mallicorn: Let's stand aside, and listen their design!—

*Mar.* Sir, profit is the crown of labour; 'tis the life, the soul of the industrious merchant: in it he makes his Paradise, and for it neglects wife, children, friends, parents, nay, all the world, and delivers up himself to the violence of storms, and to be tossed into unknown airs. As there's no faculty so perilous, so there's none so worthy profitable.

*Mont.* Sir, I am very well possess of it; and what of my poor fortunes remains, I would gladly hazard upon the sea; it cannot deal worse with me than the land, though it sink or throw it in the hands of pirates. I have yet five hundred pounds left, and your honest and worthy acquaintance may make me a young merchant: the one moiety of what I have I would gladly adventure.

*Mal.* How! adventure? you shall hazard nothing; you shall only join with me in certain commodities that are safe arrived unto the key: You shall neither be in doubt of danger nor damage; but, so much money disbursed, so much receive. Sir, I would have you conceive I pursue it not for any good your money will do me, but merely out of mine own freeness and courtesy to pleasure you.

*Mont.* I can believe no less; and you express a noble nature, seeking to build up a man so ruined as myself.—

*Lav.* Captain, here is subject for us to work upon, if we have wit: You hear that there is money

yet left, and it is going to be laid out in rattles, bells, hobby-horses, brown paper, or some such-like sale commodities; now it would do better in our purses, upon our backs in good gold-lace and scarlet; and then we might pursue our projects, and our devices towards my lady Annabella. Go to! there's a conceit newly landed: Hark! I stand in good reputation with him, and therefore may the better cheat him: captain, take a few instructions from me. [*They walk apart.*]

*Mont.* What monies I have is at your disposing; and upon twelve, I will meet you at the palace with it.

*Mal.* I will there expect you; and so I take my leave. [*Exit.*]

*Lav.* You apprehend me?

*La-P.* Why, do ye think I am a dunce?

*Lav.* Not a dunce, captain; but you might give me leave to misdoubt that pregnancy in a soldier, which is proper and hereditary to a courtier: But prosecute it; I will both second and give credit to it.—Good monsieur Montague! I would your whole revenues lay within the circuit of mine arms, that I might as easily bestow, or restore it unto you as my courtesy!

*La-P.* My zealous wishes, sir, do accompany his for your good fortunes.

*Lav.* Believe it, sir, our affection towards you is a strong bond of friendship.

*Mont.* To which I shall most willingly seal. But, believe me, gentlemen, in a broken estate the bond of friendship oft is forfeited; but that it is your free and ingenuous nature to renew it.

*Lav.* Sir, I will amply extend myself to your use, and am very zealously afflicted, as not one of your least friends, for your crooked fate: But let it not seize you with any dejection; you have, as I hear, a sufficient competency left, which, well disposed, may erect you as high in the world's account as ever.

*Mont.* I cannot live to hope it, much less enjoy it: Nor is it any part of my endeavour; my study is to render every man his own, and to contain myself within the limits of a gentleman.

*Lav.* I have the grant of an office given me by some noble favourites of mine in court; it there stands but a small matter between me and it: If your ability be such to lay down the present sum, out of the love I bear you, before any other man, it shall be confirmed yours.

*Mont.* I have heard you often speak of such a thing; if it be assured to you, I will gladly deal in it: That portion I have I would not hazard upon one course, for I see the most certain is uncertain.

*La-P.* Having money, sir, you could not light upon men that could give better direction. There is at this time a friend of mine upon the seas (so be plain with you, he is a pirate) that hath wrote to me to work his freedom; and by this gentleman's means, whose acquaintance is not small at court, we have the word of a worthy man for it: only there is some money to be suddenly disbursed; and if your happiness be such to make it up, you shall receive treble gain by it, and good assurance for it.

*Mont.* Gentlemen, out of the weakness of my estate you seem to have some knowledge of my breast, that would, if it were possible, advance my declined fortunes, to satisfy all men of whom I

have had credit; and I know no way better than these which you propose: I have some money ready under my command; some part of it is already promised, but the remainder is yours to such uses as are propounded.

*Lav.* Appoint some certain place of meeting; for these affairs require expedition.

*Mont.* I will make it my present business. At twelve I am to meet Mallicorn, the merchant, at the palace, (you know him, sir,) about some negotiation of the same nature; there I will be ready to tender you that money, upon such conditions as we shall conclude of.

*Lav.* The care of it be yours, so much as the affair concerns you!

*Mont.* Your caution is effectual; and till then I take my leave. [Exit.]

*Lav.* Good Master Montague!

[Within, a clamour, Down with their weapons!

Enter LONGUEVILLE and DUBOIS, their Swords drawn; Servants and others between them.

*Ser.* Nay, gentlemen, what mean you? Pray be quiet!

Have some respect unto the house.

*Long.* A treacherous slave!

*Dubois.* Thou dost revile thyself, base Longueville!

*Long.* I say thou art a villain, and a corrupt one,

That hast some seven years fed on thy master's trencher,

Yet ne'er bred'st good blood towards him; for if thou hadst,

Thou hadst a sounder heart.

*Dubois.* So, sir! you can

Use your tongue something nimbler than your sword.

*Long.* 'Would you could use your tongue well of your master, friend!

You might have better employment for your sword.

*Dubois.* I say again, and I will speak it loud and often,

That Orleans is a noble gentleman, With whom Amiens is too light to poise the scale.

*Long.* He is the weaker, for taking of a praise Out of thy mouth.

*Dubois.* This hand shall seal his merit at thy heart.

*Lav.* Part them, my masters, part them!

*Serv.* Part them, sir? Why do you not part them? You stand by w<sup>i</sup> your sword in your hand, and cry, part 'em!

*Lav.* Why, you must know, my friend, my clothes are better than yours; and, in a good suit, I do never use to part any body.

*La-P.* And it is discretion.

*Lav.* Ay, marry is it, captain.

*Long.* Dubois, though this place

Privilege thee, know, where next we meet, The blood, which at thy heart flows, drops at thy feet! [Exit.]

*Dubois.* I would not spend it better

Than in this quarrel, and on such a hazard.

Enter AMIENS in haste; his Sword drawn.

*Ami.* What uproar's this? Must my name here be question'd

In tavern-brawls, and by affected ruffians?

*Lav.* Not we indeed, sir.

VOL. II.

*Dubois.* Fear cannot make me shrink out of your fury,

Though you were greater than your name doth make you;

I am one, and the opposer: If your sworn rage Have sought in malice to enforce, express it.

*Ami.* I seek thee not; nor shalt thou ever gain That credit, which a blow from me would give

By my soul, I more detest that fellow [thee. Which took my part than thee, that he durst offer

To take my honour in his feeble arms, And spend it in a drinking-room. Which way

went he?

*Lav.* That way, sir.—I would you would after! For I do fear we shall have some more scuffling.

*Ami.* I'll follow him; and, if my speed o'ertake him,

I shall ill thank him for his forwardness. [Exit.]

*Lav.* I am glad he's gone; for I do not love to see a sword drawn in the hand of a man that looks so furious; there's no jesting with edge tools: How say you, captain?

*La-P.* I say, 'tis better jesting than to be in earnest with them.

Enter ORLEANS.

*Orl.* How now?

What's the difference? They say there have been swords drawn,

And in my quarrel: Let me know that man,

Whose love is so sincere to spend his blood

For my sake! I will bounteously requite him.

*Lav.* We were all of your side; but there he stands begun it.

*Orl.* What's thy name?

*Dubois.* Dubois.

*Orl.* Give me thy hand! Thou hast received no hurt?

*Dubois.* Not any; nor were this body Stuck full of wounds, I should not count them hurts,

Being taken in so honourable a cause As the defence of my most worthy lord.

*Orl.* The dedication of thy love to me Requires my ample bounty: Thou art mine;

For I do find thee made unto my purposes.—

Monsieur Laverdine, pardon my neglect!

I not observed you. And how runs rumour?

*Lav.* Why, it runs, my lord, like a footman without a cloak, to shew that what's once rumoured it cannot be hid.

*Orl.* And what say the rabble? Am not I the subject of their talk?

*Lav.* 'Troth, my lord, the common mouth speaks foul words.

*Orl.* Of me, for turning away my wife, do they not?

*Lav.* 'Faith, the men do a little murmur at it, and say, 'tis an ill precedent in so great a man. Marry, the women, they rail outright.

*Orl.* Out upon them, rampallions! I'll keep myself safe enough out of their fingers. But what say my pretty jolly composed gallants, that censure every thing more desperate than it is dangerous? what say they?

*Lav.* Marry, they are laying wagers what death you shall die: One offers to lay five hundred pounds (and yet he had but a groat about him, and that was in two twopences too) to any man that would make it up a shilling, that you were

killed with a pistol charged with white powder ; another offered to pawn his soul for five shillings, (and yet nobody would take him,) that you were stabbed to death, and should die with more wounds than Cæsar.

*Orl.* And who should be the butchers that should do it ? Montague and his associates ?

*Lav.* So it is conjectured.

*La-P.* And, believe it, sweet prince, it is to be feared, and therefore prevented.

*Orl.* By turning his purpose on himself ? were not that the way ?

*Lav.* The most direct path for your safety : For where doth danger sit more furious than in a desperate man ?

*La-P.* And being you have declined his means, you have increased his malice.

*Lav.* Besides the general report that steams in every man's breath, and stains you all over with infamy, that Time, the devourer of all things, cannot eat out.

*La-P.* Ay, for that former familiarity which he had with your lady.

*Lav.* Men speak it as boldly as words of compliment ; *good morrow, good even, or God save you, sir,* are not more usual : If the word *cuckold* had been written upon your forehead in great capital letters, it could not have been dilated with more confidence.

*Orl.* He shall not sleep another night ; I will have his blood, though it be required of my hands again !

*Lav.* Your lordship may, and without hazarding your own person : Here's a gentleman in whose looks I see a resolution to perform it.

*Dubois.* Let his lordship give me but his honourable word for my life, I'll kill him as he walks.

*Lav.* Or pistol him as he sits at meat——

*La-P.* Or at game——

*Lav.* Or as he is drinking——

*Dubois.* Any way.

*Orl.* Wou't thou ?

Call what is mine thine own ! Thy reputation shall not

Be brought in question for it, much less thy life ; It shall be named a deed of valour in thee,

Not murder : Farewell ! [Exit.]

*Dubois.* I need no more encouragement ; It is a work I will persuade myself That I was born to.

*Lav.* And you may persuade yourself too that you shall be saved by it, being that it is for his honourable lordship.

*Dubois.* But you must yield me means, how, when, and where.

*Lav.* That shall be our tasks ; nay, more, we will be agents with thee : This hour we are to meet him, on the receipt of certain monies, which indeed we purpose honestly to cheat him of, And that's the main cause I would have him slain : Who works with safety makes a double gain. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.—Another Street.

Enter LONGUEVILLE, AMIENS following him.

*Ami.* Stay, sir ! I have took some pains to over-Your name is Longueville ? [takes you.]

*Long.* I have the word

Of many honest men for't.—I crave your lordship's pardon !

Your sudden apprehension on my steps Made me to frame an answer unwitting, and Unworthy your respect.

*Ami.* Do you know me ?

*Long.* Yes, my lord.

*Ami.* I know not you ; nor am I well pleased to make

This time, as the affair now stands, the induction Of your acquaintance. You are a fighting fellow ?

*Long.* How, my lord ?

*Ami.* I think I too much grace you ;

Rather you are a fellow dares not fight, But spit and puff and make a noise, whilst Your trembling hand draws out your sword, to lay Upon andirons, stools, or tables, rather Than on a man. [id]

*Long.* Your honour may best speak this ; yet, With little safety, if I thought it serious.

*Ami.* Come, you're a very braggart ; And you have given me cause to tell you so ; What weakness have you ever seen in me To prompt yourself, that I could need your help ? Or what other reasons could induce you to it ? You ne'er yet had a meal's meat from my table, Nor as I remember, from my wardrobe Any cast suit.

*Long.* 'Tis true.

I ne'er durst yet have yet such a servile spirit To be the minion of a full-swoln lord, But always did detest such slavery :

A meal's meat ? or a cast suit ? I would first eat the stones,

And from such rags the dunghill does afford

Pick me a garment.

*Ami.* I have mistook the man ! His resolute spirit

Proclaims him generous ; he has a noble heart, As free to utter good deeds as to act them ;

For had he not been right, and of one piece, He would have crumpled, curl'd, and struck him

Out of the shape of man into a shadow.— [see]

But, pry'thee tell me, if no such fawning hope Did lead thee on to hazard life for my sake, What was it that incited thee ? tell me ; speak it

Without the imputation of a sycophant !

*Long.* Your own desert ; and with it was join'd

The unfeigned friendship that I judged you ever Held unto my former lord.

*Ami.* The noble Montague ?

*Long.* Yes ;

The noble and much-injured Montague. *Ami.* To such a man as thou art, my heart shall

A casket : I will lock thee up there, And esteem thee as a faithful friend,

The richest jewel that a man enjoys : And, being thou didst follow once my friend,

And in thy heart still dost, not with his fortunes Casting him off, thou shalt go hand in hand with

And share as well in my ability [see] As love : 'Tis not my end

To gain men for my use, but a true friend. [Exeunt.]

### SCENE IV.—Another Street.

Enter DUBOIS.

*Dubois.* There's no such thriving way to live in grace,

As to have no sense of it; his back nor belly  
Shall not want warming, that can practise mis-  
I walk now with a full purse, [chief :  
Grow high and wanton, prune and brisk myself  
In the bright shine of his good lordship's favours ;  
And for what virtue ?

For fashioning myself a murderer.  
Oh, noble Montague, to whom I owe my heart,  
With all my best thoughts, though my tongue have  
promised

To exceed the malice of thy destiny,  
Never in time of all my service knew I  
Such a sin tempt thy bounty ! those that did feed  
Upon thy charge, had merit or else need.

Enter LAYARDINE and LA-POOF, with disguises.

Lav. Dubois ! most prosperously met !

Dubois. How now ? Will he come this way ?

Lav. This way, immediately ; therefore, thy as-  
sistance, dear Dubois !

Dubois. What, have you cheated him of the  
money you spoke of ?

Lav. Fough ! as easily as a silly country wench  
of her maidenhead ; we had it in a twinkling.

Dubois. 'Tis well. Captain, let me help you ;  
you must be our leader in this action.

La-P. Tut ! fear not ; I'll warrant you, if my  
sword hold, we'll make no sweating sickness of it.

Dubois. Why, that's well said. But let's retire  
a little, that we may come on the more bravely.  
This way, this way ! [Exeunt.

### SCENE V.—The Same.

Enter MONTAGUE in the Hands of three Officers, and three  
Creditors.

1 Cred. Officers, look to him ; and be sure you  
take good security before he part from you !

Mont. Why, but, my friends,  
You take a strange course with me ! the sums I  
owe you

Are rather forgetfulness, (they are so slight,)  
Than want of will or honesty to pay you.

1 Cred. Ay, sir, it may be so ; but we must be  
paid, and we will be paid before you escape : we  
have wife and children, and a charge ! and you are  
going down the wind, as a man may say ; and  
therefore it behoves us to look to't in time.

2 Cred. Your cloak here would satisfy me ; mine  
is not above a three-pound matter, besides the  
arrest.

3 Cred. 'Faith, and mine is much about that mat-  
ter too ; your girdle and hangers, and your beaver,  
shall be sufficient bail for't.

1 Cred. If you have ever a plain black suit at  
home, this silken one, with your silk stockings,  
garters, and roses, shall pacify me too ; for I take  
no delight, if I have a sufficient pawn, to cast any  
gentleman in prison : therefore 'tis but an untruss-  
ing matter, and you are free. We are no unrea-  
sonable creatures, you see : For mine own part, I  
protest I am loth to put you to any trouble for  
security.

Mont. Is there no more of you ? he would next  
demand my skin.

1 Cred. No, sir : here's no more of us, nor do  
any of us demand your skin ; we know not what to  
do with it : But it may be, if you owed your glover  
any money, he knew what use to make of it.

Mont. Ye dregs of baseness, vultures amongst  
men,

That tire upon the hearts of generous spirits—  
1 Cred. You do us wrong, sir ; we tire no gene-  
rous spirits ; we tire nothing but our hacknies.

Enter MALLICORN.

Mont. But here comes one made of another  
A man well meriting that free-born name [piece !  
Of citizen.—Welcome, my deliverer !

I am fallen into the hands of blood-bounds, that  
For a sum lesser than their honesties,  
Which is nothing, would tear me out of my skin.

Mal. Why, sir, what is the matter ?

1 Cred. Why, sir, the matter is, that we must  
have our money ; which if we cannot have, we'll  
satisfy ourselves with his carcase, and be paid that  
ways.—You had as good, sir, not have been so  
peremptory.—Officer, hold fast !

1 Officer. The strenuous fist of vengeance now  
is clutch'd ;  
Therefore fear nothing !

Mal. What may be the debt in gross ?

Mont. Some forty crowns ; nay, rather not so  
'Tis quickly cast. [much :

Mal. 'Tis strange to me, that your estate should  
have

So low an ebb, to stick at such slight sums.—

Why, my friends, you are too strict in your ac-  
And call too sudden on this gentleman ; [counts,  
He has hopes left yet to pay you all.

1 Cred. Hopes ? ay, marry ! bid him pay his  
friends with hopes, and pay us with current coin !  
I knew a gallant once that fed his creditors still  
with hopes, and bid 'em they should fear nothing,  
for he had 'em tied in a string ; and trust me, so  
he had indeed, for at last he and all his hopes  
hopt in a halter.

Mont. Good sir, with what speed you may, free  
me out of the company of these slaves, that have  
nothing but their names to shew 'em men.

Mal. What would you wish me do, sir ? I pro-  
test I ha' not the present sum (small as it is) to lay  
down for you ; and for giving my word, my friends,  
no later than yesternight, made me take bread and  
eat it, that I should not do it for any man breath-  
ing i' the world : Therefore I pray hold me excused !

Mont. You do not speak this seriously ?

Mal. As ever I said my prayers, I protest to  
you.

Mont. What may I think of this ?

Mal. 'Troth, sir, thought is free for any man ;  
we abuse our betters in it ; I have done it myself.

Mont. Trust me, this speech of yours doth  
much amaze me !

Pray leave this language ; and out of that same  
You lately did receive of me, lay down [sum  
As much as may discharge me.

Mal. You are a merry man, sir ; and I am glad  
you take your crosses so temperately. Fare you  
well, sir ! And yet I have something more to say  
to you ; a word in your ear, I pray ! To be plain  
with you, I did lay this plot to arrest you, to en-  
joy this money I have of yours with the more  
safety. I am a fool to tell you this now ; but, in  
good faith, I could not keep it in ; and the money  
would ha' done me little good else. An honest  
citizen cannot wholly enjoy his own wife for you ;  
they grow old before they have true use of them,  
which is a lamentable thing, and truly much har-

dens the hearts of us citizens against you. I can say no more, but am heartily sorry for your heaviness; and so I take my leave. [Exit.]

1 *Cred.* Officers, take hold on him again! for Monsieur Mallicorn will do nothing for him, I perceive.

*Enter DUBOIS, LA-POOP, and LAVERDINE.*

*Dubois.* Nay, come, my masters, leave dancing of the old measures, and let's assault him bravely.

*Lav.* By no means; for it goes against my stomach to kill a man in an unjust quarrel.

*La-P.* It must needs be a clog to a man's conscience all his life-time.

*Lav.* It must indeed, captain: Besides, do you not see he has gotten a guard of friends about him, as if he had some knowledge of our purpose?

*Dubois.* Had he a guard of devils, As I think them little better, My sword should do the message that it came for.

*Lav.* If you will be so desperate, the blood lies upon your own neck, for we'll not meddle in't!

*Dubois.* I am your friend and servant; [Apart

to MONTAGUE.] Struggle with me, and take my sword.—

[DUBOIS runs upon MONTAGUE, and struggling yields him his Sword: the Officers draw, one of them falls; LAVERDINE and LA-POOP in the scuffling retir: MONTAGUE chaseth them off the Stage, himself wounded.]

Noble sir, make your way! You have slain an officer. [Exit.]

*Mont.* Some one of them has certainly requited me;

For I do lose much blood. [Exit.]

1 *Officer.* Udsprecious! We have lost a brother: Pursue the gentlemen!

2 *Officer.* I'll not meddle with him: You see what comes on't; besides, I know he will be hang'd ere he be taken.

1 *Officer.* I tell thee, yeoman, he must be taken ere he be hang'd.—He is hurt in the guts; run afore therefore, and know how his wife will rate his sausages a-pound.

3 *Officer.* Stay, brother! I may live; for surely I find I am but hurt in the leg, a dangerous kick on the shin-bone. [Exit.]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Grove near the Country-house of LAMIRA.

*Enter LAMIRA, DUCHESS, and VERAMOUR.*

*Lam.* You see, lady, What harmless sports our country life affords; And though you meet not here with city dainties, Or courtly entertainment, what you have is free and hearty.

*Duch.* Madam, I find here What is a stranger to the court, content; And receive courtesies done for themselves, Without an expectation of return, Which binds me to your service.

*Lam.* Oh, your love! My homely house, built more for use than show, Observes the golden mean, equally distant From glittering pomp, and sordid avarice: For masques, we will observe the works of Nature; And in the place of visitation, read; Our physic shall be wholesome walks; our viands Nourishing, not provoking: for I find Pleasures are tortures that leave stings behind.

*Duch.* You have a great estate.

*Lam.* A competency Sufficient to maintain me and my rank; Nor am I, I thank Heaven, so courtly bred As to employ the utmost of my rents In paying tailors for fantastic robes; Or, rather than be second in the fashion, Eat out my officers and my revenues With grating usury; my back shall not be The base on which your soothing citizen Erects his summer-houses; nor, on th' other side, Will I be so penuriously wise, As to make money, that's my slave, my idol; Which yet to wrong, merits as much reproof, As to abuse our servant.

*Duch.* Yet, with your pardon, I think you want the crown of all contentment.

*Lam.* In what, good madam?

*Duch.* In a worthy husband.

*Lam.* God! it is strange the galley-slave should praise His oar, or strokes; or you, that have made ship-wreck

Of all delight upon this rock call'd Marriage, Sould sing encomiums on't.

*Duch.* Madam, though one Fall from his horse and break his neck, will you Conclude from that it is unfit to ride? Or must it follow, because Orleans, My lord, is pleased to make his passionate trial Of my suspected patience, that my brother (Were he not so, I might say worthy Amiens) Will imitate his ills, that cannot fancy What's truly noble in him?

*Lam.* I must grant There's as much worth in him as can be look'd for From a young lord; but not enough to make Me change my golden liberty, and consent To be a servant to it, as wives are To the imperious humours of their lords. Methinks, I'm well: I rise and go to bed When I think fit; eat what my appetite Desires, without controul; to my servants' study Is my contentment, and to make me merry Their farthest aims; my sleeps are inquired after, My rising-up saluted with respect: Command and liberty now wait upon My virgin state; what would I more? change all And for a husband? no! these freedoms die, In which they live, with my virginity: 'Tis in their choice, that's rich, to be a wife, But not, being yoked, to chuse the single life.— [Veramour!]

*Ver.* Madam.

*Lam.* How like you the country?

*Ver.* I like the air of it well, madam; and the rather, because, as on Irish timber your spider will

not make his web, so, for aught I see yet, your beater, pandar, and informer, being in their dispositions too foggy for this piercing climate, shun it, and choose rather to walk in mists in the city.

*Lam.* Who did you serve first, boy?

*Ver.* A rich merchant's widow; and was by her refer'd to a young court-lady.

*Duch.* And what difference found you in their service?

*Ver.* Very much; for look, how much my old lady madam gave to her young visitants, so much my lady received from her hoary court-servants.

*Lam.* And what made you leave her?

*Ver.* My father, madam, had a desire to have me a tall man. took me from thence.

*Lam.* Well, I perceive you inherit the wag from your father.

*Ver.* Doves beget doves, and eagles eagles, madam: A citizen here, though left never so rich, seldom at the best proves a gentleman; the son of an advocate, though dubb'd like his father, will shew a relish of his descent, and the father's thriving practice; as I have heard, she that of a chambermaid is metamorphos'd into a madam, will yet remember how oft her [father's] daughter by her mother ventured to lie upon the rushes, before she could get in that which makes many ladies.

*Duch.* But what think you of your late master?

*Ver.* Oh, madam! *[Sighs.]*

*Lam.* Why do you sigh? you are sorry that you left him;

He made a wanton of you.

*Ver.* Not for that;

Or if he did, for that my youth must love him.

Oh, pardon me, if I say liberty

is bondage, if compar'd with his kind service;

And but to have power now to speak his worth

To its desert, I should be well content

To be an old man when his praise were ended;

And yet, if at this instant you were pleas'd

I should begin, the livery of age

Would take his lodging upon this head

Ere I should bring it to a period.

In brief, he is a man (for God forbid

That I should ever live to say he was)

Of such a shape as would make one beloved

That never had good thought; and to his body

He hath a mind of such a constant temper,

In which [all] virtues throng to have a room;

Yet 'gainst this noble gentleman, this Montague,

(For in that name I comprehend all goodness,) Wrong, and the wrested law, false witnesses,

And Envy sent from hell, have rose in arms,

And, though not pierced, batter'd his honour'd shield.

What shall I say? I hope you will forgive me,

That if you were but pleas'd to love,

I know no Juno worthy such a *Ver.*

*Enter CHARLOTTE with a Letter.*

*Lam.* 'Tis well yet that I have the second place in your affection.—From whence?

*Charl.* From the lord Amiens, madam.

*Lam.* 'Tis welcome, though it bear his usual language. *[Reads.]*

I thought so much; his love-suit speaks his health.

What's he that brought it?

*Charl.* A gentleman of good rank, it seems.

*Lam.* Where is he?

*Charl.* Receiving entertainment in your house, Sorting with his degree.

*Lam.* 'Tis well.

*Charl.* He waits

Your ladyship's pleasure.

*Lam.* He shall not wait long.—

I'll leave you for a while.—Nay, stay you, boy; Attend the lady.

*[Exit LAMIRA and CHARLOTTE.]*

*Ver.* 'Would I might live once

To wait on my poor master!

*Duch.* That's a good boy!

This thankfulness looks lovely on thy forehead;

And in it, as a book, methinks I read

Instructions for myself, that am his debtor,

And would do much that I might be so happy

To repair that which to our grief is ruined.

*Ver.* It were a work a king might glory in,

If he saw with my eyes. If you please, madam,

(For sure to me you seem unapt to walk)

To sit, although the churlish birds deny

To give us music in this grove, where they

Are prodigal to others, I'll strain my voice

For a sad song; the place is safe and private.

*Duch.* 'Twas my desire: Begin, good Veramour!

*Music, a Song; at the end of it, enter MONTAGUE fainting, his Sword drawn.*

*Duch.* What's he, Veramour?

*Ver.* A goodly personage.

*Mont.* Am I yet safe? or is my flight a dream?

My wounds and hunger tell me that I wake:

Whither have my fears borne me? No matter

Who hath no place to go to, cannot err. [where:]

What shall I do? Cunning Calamity,

That others' gross wits uses to refine,

When I most need it, dulls the edge of mine.

*Duch.* Is not this Montague's voice?

*Ver.* My master's? fy!

*Mont.* What sound was that? Fish!

Fear makes the wretch think every leaf o' th' jury.

What course to live? beg? better men have done

But in another kind: Steal? Alexander, [it,

Though styl'd a conqueror, was a proud thief,

Though he robb'd with an army. Fy, how idle

These meditations are! though thou art worse

Than sorrow's tongue can speak thee, thou art

Or shouldst be, honest Montague. [still,

*Duch.* 'Tis too true.

*Ver.* 'Tis he!

What villain's hands did this? Oh, that my flesh

Were balm! in faith, sir, I would pluck it off

As readily as this! Pray you accept

My will to do you service? I have heard

The mouse once saved the lion in his need,

As the poor scarab spoil'd the eagle's seed.

*Duch.* How do you?

*Mont.* As a forsaken man.

*Duch.* Do not say so! take comfort;

For your misfortunes have been kind in this,

To cast you on a hospitable shore,

Where dwells a lady—

*Ver.* She to whom, good master,

You prefer'd me.

*Duch.* In whose house, whatsoever

Your dangers are, I'll undertake your safety.

*Mont.* I fear that I'm pursued; and doubt

In my defence, have kill'd an officer. [that I,

*Ver.* Is that all? There's no law under the sun

But will, I hope, confess, one drop of blood

Shed from this arm is recompence enough,  
Though you had cut the throats of all the catch-  
In France, nay, in the world. [poles]

*Mont.* I would be loth  
To be a burden, or feed like a drone  
On the industrious labour of a bee;  
And baser far I hold it to owe for  
The bread I eat, what's not in me to pay:  
Then, since my [once] full fortunes are declined,  
To their low ebb I'll fashion my high mind.  
It was no shame to Hecuba, to serve  
When Troy was fired: If't be in your power  
To be a means to make her entertain me,  
And far from that I was; but to supply  
My want with habit fit for him that serves)  
I shall owe much to you.

*Duch.* Leave that care to me.

*Ver.* Good sir, lean on my shoulder.—Help,  
good madam!—

Oh, that I were a horse for half an hour,  
That I might carry you home on my back!  
I hope you will love me still?

*Mont.* Thou dost deserve it, boy.

That I should live to be thus troublesome!

*Duch.* Good sir, 'tis none.

*Ver.* Trouble? most willingly I would be changed  
Like Apuleius, wear his ass's ear,  
Provided I might still this burthen bear.

*Duch.* 'Tis a kind boy!

*Mont.* I find true proof of it. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—PARIS. *A Street before the Palace  
of Orleans.*

*Enter AMIENS and LONGUEVILLE, with a Paper.*

*Ami.* You'll carry it?

*Long.* As I live, although my packet  
Were like Bellerophon's. What have you seen  
In me or my behaviour, since your favours  
So plentifully shower'd upon my wants,  
That may beget distrust of my performance?

*Ami.* Nay, be not angry! if I entertained  
But the least scruple of your love, or courage,  
I would make choice of one with my estate  
Should do me right in this: Nor can you blame me,  
If in a matter of such consequence  
I am so importunate.

*Long.* Good my lord,  
Let me prevent your further conjurations  
To raise my spirit! I know this is a challenge  
To be delivered unto Orleans' hand;  
And that my undertaking ends not there,  
But I must be your second, and in that  
Not alone search your enemy, measure weapons,  
But stand in all your hazards, as our bloods  
Run in the self-same veins; in which if I  
Better not your opinion, as a limb  
That's putrified and useless cut me off,  
And underneath the gallows bury it!

*Ami.* At full you understand me, and in this  
Bind me, and what is mine, to you and yours:  
I will not so much wrong you as to add  
One syllable more; let it suffice I leave  
My honour to your guard, and in that prove  
You hold the first place in my heart and love!

[Exit.]

*Long.* The first place in a lord's affection? very  
good! And how long doth that last? perhaps the  
changing of some three shirts in the tennis-court.

Well, it were very necessary that an order were  
taken (if it were possible) that younger brother  
might have more wit, or more money; for now,  
however the fool hath long been put upon him  
that inherits, his revenue hath bought him a  
sponge, and wiped off the imputation: and for  
the understanding of the younger, let him get a  
much rhetoric as he can, to grace his language:  
they will see he shall have gloss little enough to  
set out his bark.

*Enter DUBOIS.*

Stand, Dubois! Look about! is all safe?

*Dubois.* Approach not near me but with reverence  
Laurel, and adorations! I have done [revere]  
More than deserves a hundred thanks.

*Long.* How now? What's the matter?

*Dubois.* With this hand, only aided by this brain  
Without an Orpheus' harp, redeem'd, from hell's  
Three-headed porter, our Eurydice.

*Long.* Nay, pr'ythee, speak sense! this is libel  
the stale braggart in a play.

*Dubois.* Then, in plain prose, thus, and with a  
little action as thou canst desire; the three-headed  
porter were three inexorable catchpoles, out of  
whose jaws, without the help of Orpheus' harp  
bait or bribe, (for those two strings make the mass  
that mollifies those stony furies,) I rescued our  
Eurydice; I mean my old master Montague.

*Long.* And is this all? A poor rescue! I thought  
thou hadst reversed the judgment for his over-  
throw in his suit; or wrought upon his adversary  
Orleans, taken the shape of a ghost, frighted his  
mind into distraction, and, for the appeasing of  
his conscience, forced him to make restitution of  
Montague's lands, or such like. Rescued? 'Slight!  
I would have hired a chrocheteur for two card-  
cues to have done so much with his whip!

*Dubois.* You would, sir? And yet 'tis not  
than three on their foot cloths durst do for a wretched  
brother in a coach.

*Long.* Besides, what proofs of it? for aught  
I know this may be a trick; I had rather have him  
a prisoner, where I might visit him, and do him  
service, than not at all, or I know not where.

*Dubois.* Well, sir, the end will shew it. What  
doth? a challenge?

*Long.* Yes; where's Orleans? though we fight  
in jest, he must meet with Amiens in earnest—  
Fall off! we are discover'd!—My horse, gary  
ha!

*Dubois.* Were it not in a house, and in his presence  
To whom I owe all duty— [scam]

*Long.* What would it do?  
Prate, as it does; but be as far from striking,  
As he that owes it, Orleans.

*Dubois.* How?

*Long.* I think thou art his porter,  
Set here to answer creditors, that his lordship  
Is not within, or takes the diet. I am sent,  
And will grow here until I have an answer,  
Not to demand a debt of money, but  
To call him to a strict account for wrong  
Done to the honours of a gentleman,  
Which nothing but his heart-blood shall wash off.

*Dubois.* Shall I hear this?

*Long.* And more; that if I may not  
Have access to him, I will fix this here,  
To his disgrace and thine—

*Dubois.* And thy life with it.

*Long.* Then have the copies of it pasted on the

Like pamphlet-titles, that sue to be sold ;  
Have his disgrace talk for tobacco-shops,  
His picture baffled—

*Dubois.* All respect away !

Were't in a church—

[*Draw both.*]

*Long.* This is the book I pray with.

*Enter ORLEANS.*

*Orl.* Forbear, upon your lives !

*Long.* What, are you roused ? I hope your lordship can read (though he stain not his birth with scholarship.)—Doth it not please you now ? If you are a right monsieur, muster up the rest of your attendance, which is a page, a cook, a pandar, coachman, and a footman, (in these days, a great lord's train) pretending I am unworthy to bring you a challenge ; instead of answering it, have me kick'd.

*Dubois.* If he does, thou deservest it.

*Long.* I dare you all to touch me ! I'll not stand What answer you ? [still.]

*Orl.* That thou hast done to Amiens The office of a faithful friend, which I Would cherish in thee, were he not my foe. However, since on honourable terms He calls me forth, say I will meet with him ; And by Dubois, ere sun-set, make him know The time and place, my sword's length, and whatever

Scruple of circumstance he can expect.

*Long.* This answer comes unlook'd-for. Fare you well !

Finding your temper thus, 'would I had said less ! [Exit.]

*Orl.* Now comes thy love to the test.

*Dubois.* My lord, 'twill hold, And in all dangers prove itself true gold. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*The Country. A Hall in LAMIRA'S House.*

*Enter LAYARDINE, LA-POOP, MALLICORN, and Servant.*

*Serv.* I will acquaint my lady with your coming. Please you repose yourselves here.

*Mal.* There's a tester ;

Nay, now I am a wooer, I must be bountiful.

*Serv.* If you would have two three-pences for it, sir,

To give some of your kindred as you ride, I'll see if I can get them ; we use not

(Though servants) to take bribes. [Exit.]

*Lav.* Then thou art unfit to be in office, either in court or city.

*La-P.* Indeed corruption is a tree, whose branches are of an unmeasurable length ; they spread every where, and the dew that drops from thence hath infected some chairs and stools of authority.

*Mal.* Ah, captain, lay not all the fault upon officers ; you know you can shark, though you be out of action, witness Montague !

*Lav.* Hang him ! he's safe enough : you had a hand in it too, and have gained by him. But I wonder you citizens, that keep so many books, and take such strict accounts for every farthing due to you from others, reserve not so much as a memorandum for the courtesies you receive.

*Mal.* Would you have a citizen book those ? Thankfulness is a thing we are not sworn to in our indentures ; you may as well urge conscience.

*Lav.* Talk no more of such vanities ! Montague is irrecoverably sunk : I would we had twenty more to send after him. The snake that would be a dragon, and have wings, must eat ; and what implies that, but this, that in this cannibal age, he, that would have the suit of wealth must not care whom he feeds on ? And, as I have heard, no flesh battens better than that of a professed friend ; and he that would mount to honour, must not make dainty to use the head of his mother, back of his father, or neck of his brother, for ladders to his preferment : for but observe, and you shall find for the most part, cunning Villainy sit at a feast as principal guest, and innocent Honesty wait as a contemned servant with a trencher.

*La-P.* The ladies !

*Enter MONTAGUE bareheaded, LAMIRA, DUCHESS, CHARLOTTE, and VERAMOUR.*

*Mont.* Do you smell nothing ?

*Charl.* Not I, sir.

*Mont.* The carrion of knaves is very strong in my nostrils.

*Lav.* We came to admire ; and find Fame was a niggard,

Which we thought prodigal in your report, Before we saw you.

*Lam.* Tush, sir ! this courtship's old.

*La-P.* I'll fight for thee, sweet wench ; This is my tongue, and woes for me.

*Lam.* Good man of war, Hands off ! if you take me, it must be by siege, Not by an onset : And for your valour, I Think that I have deserved few enemies, And therefore need it not.

*Mal.* Thou needest nothing, sweet lady, but an obsequious husband ; and where wilt thou find him, if not in the city ?—We are true Muscovites to our wives, and are never better pleased than when they use us as slaves, bridle and saddle us : Have me ! Thou shalt command all my wealth as thine own ; thou shalt sit like a queen in my warehouse ; and my factors, at the return with my ships, shall pay thee tribute of all the rarities of the earth ; thou shalt wear gold, feed on delicates ; the first peascods, strawberries, grapes, cherries, shall—

*Lam.* Be mine : I apprehend what you would say.

Those dainties, which the city pays so dear for, The country yields for nothing, and as early ; And, credit me, your far-fet viands please not My appetite better than those that are near hand.

Then, for your promised service and subjection To all my humours when I am your wife,

(Which, as it seems, is frequent in the city)

I cannot find what pleasure they receive

In using their fond husbands like their maids :

But, of this, more hereafter ! I accept

Your proffer kindly, and yours : My house stands open

To entertain you ; take your pleasure in it,

And ease after your journey !

*Duch.* Do you note

The boldness of the fellows ?

*Lam.* Alas, madam !

A virgin must in this be like a lawyer ;

And as he takes all fees, she must hear all suitors ;

The one for gain, the other for her mirth :

Stay with the gentlemen ! we'll to the orchards.

[*Exeunt LAMIRA, DUCHESS, VERAMOUR, and CHARLOTTE.*]

*La-P.* Pox! what art thou?

*Mont.* An honest man, though poor:

[*Puts on his hat.*]

And look they like to monsters? are they so rare?

*Lav.* Rose from the dead?

*Mal.* Do you hear, monsieur Serviteur? Didst thou never hear of one Montague, a prodigal gull, that lives about Paris?

*Mont.* So, sir!

*Lav.* One that, after the loss of his main estate in a law-suit, bought an office in the court?

*La-P.* And should have letters of mart, to have the Spanish treasure as it came from the Indies? were not thou and he twins? Put off thy hat; let me see thy forehead.

*Mont.* Though you take privilege

To use your tongues, I pray you hold your fingers! 'Twas your base cozenage made me as I am;

And, were you somewhere else, I would take off This proud film from your eyes, that will not let Know I am Montague. [*you*]

*Enter LAMIRA behind the Arras.*

*Lam.* I'll observe this better.

*Lav.* And art thou he? I will do thee grace; give me thy hand! I am glad thou hast taken so good a course: serve God, and please thy mistress; if I prove to be thy master, as I am very likely, I will do for thee.

*Mal.* 'Faith, the fellow's well-made for a serving-man, and will no doubt carry a chine of beef with a good grace.

*La-P.* Pr'ythee be careful of me in my chamber: I will remember thee at my departure.

*Mont.* All this I can endure, under this roof; And so much owe I her, whose now I am, That no wrong shall incense me to molest Her quiet house. While you continue here, I will not be ashamed to do you service More than to her, because such is her pleasure. But you that have broke thrice, and fourteen times Compounded for two shillings in the pound, Know I dare kick you in your shop! Do you hear? If ever I see Paris, though an army Of musty murrions, rusty brown bills and clubs, Stand for your guard—I have heard of your tricks. And you that smell of amber at my charge, And triumph in your cheat—well, I may live To meet thee! be it among a troop of such That are upon the fair face of the court Like running ulcers, and before thy whore, Trample upon thee!

*La-P.* This a language for a livery? take heed; I am a captain.

*Mont.* A coxcomb, are you not? that thou and I, To give proof which of us dares most, were now In midst of a rough sea, upon a piece Of a split ship, where only one might ride, I would—but foolish anger makes me talk Like a player! [*LAMIRA from the Arras.*]

*Lam.* Indeed, you act a part doth ill become you,

My servant; is this your duty?

*Mont.* I crave your pardon, And will hereafter be more circumspect.

*Lav.* Oh, the power of a woman's tongue! It hath done more than we three with our swords durst undertake; put a madman to silence.

*Lam.* Why, sirrah, these are none of your comrades,

To drink with in the cellar; one of those, For aught you know, may live to be your master.

*La-P.* There's some comfort yet.

*Lam.* Here's choice of three: A wealthy merchant—

*Mal.* Hem! she is taken: she hath spied my good calf, and many ladies chuse their husbands by that.

*Lam.* A courtier that's in grace; a valiant captain;

And are these mates for you? Away, begone!

*Mont.* I humbly pray you will be pleased to pardon!

And to give satisfaction to you, madam, (Although I break my heart) I will confess That I have wrong'd them too, and make submission.

*Lam.* No; I'll spare that. Go bid the cook haste supper. [*Exit MONTAGUE.*]

*La-P.* Oh, brave lady, thou art worthy to have servants, to be commandress of a family, that knowest how to use and govern it.

*Lav.* You shall have many mistresses that will so mistake, as to take their horse-keepers and footmen instead of their husbands; thou art none of those.

*Mal.* But she that can make distinction of men, and knows when she hath gallants and fellows of rank and quality in her house—

*Lam.* Gallants indeed, if it be the gallants' To triumph in the miseries of a man, [*fashion*] Of which they are the cause! one that transcends (In spite of all that Fortune hath, or can be done)

A million of such things as you!—My doors Stand open to receive all such as wear The shape of gentlemen; and my gentlier nature (I might say weaker) weighs not the expence Of entertainment: Think you I'll forget yet What's due unto myself? do not I know, That you have dealt with poor Montague, but like Needy commanders, cheating citizens, And perjured courtiers? I am much moved, else use not

To say so much. If you will bear yourselves As fits such you would make me think you are, You may stay; if not, the way lies before you. [*Exit.*]

*Mal.* What think you of this, captain?

*La-P.* That this is a bawdy-house, with pinacles and turrets, in which this disguised Montague goes to rut gratis; and that this is a landed pandress, and makes her house a brothel for charity.

*Mal.* Come, that's no miracle; but from whence derive you the supposition?

*Lav.* Observe but the circumstance! You all know, that in the height of Montague's prosperity, he did affect, and had his love returned by, this lady Orleans: since her divorcement, and his decay of estate, 'tis known they have met; not so much as his boy is wanting; and that this can be anything else than a mere plot for their nightwork, is above my imagination to conceive.

*Mal.* Nay, it carries probability: let's observe it better; but yet with such caution, as our prying be not discovered! here's all things to be had without cost, and therefore good staying here.

*La-P.* Nay, that's true; I would we might woo her twenty years, like Penelope's suitors. Come, Laverdine! [*Exit MONTAGUE and LA-FOUR.*]

*Lav.* I follow instantly.—Yonder he is. The thought of this boy hath much cooled my affection to this lady; and by all conjectures this is a disguised whore: I'll try if I can search this mine.—

*Enter VERAMOUR.*

Page 1

*Ver.* Your pleasure, sir?

*Lav.* Thou art a pretty boy.

*Ver.* And you a brave man: now I am out of your debt. [*Going.*]

*Lav.* Nay, pr'ythee stay!

*Ver.* I am in haste, sir.

*Lav.* By the faith of a courtier—

*Ver.* Take heed what you say! you have taken a strange oath.

*Lav.* I have not seen a youth that hath pleased me better: I would thou couldst like me, so far as to leave thy lady and wait on me! I would maintain thee in the bravest clothes—

*Ver.* Though you took them up on trust, or bought them at the broker's?

*Lav.* Or any way. Then thy employments should be so neat and cleanly—thou shouldst not touch a pair of pantables in a month; and thy lodging—

*Ver.* Should be in a brothel.

*Lav.* No; but in mine arms.

*Ver.* That may be the circle of a bawdy-house, or worse.

*Lav.* I mean thou shouldst lie with me.

*Ver.* Lie with you? I had rather lie with my lady's monkey! 'twas never a good world since our French lords learned of the Neapolitans to make their pages their bedfellows; it doth more hurt to the suburb ladies than twenty dead vacations. 'Tis supper-time, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Lav.* I thought so! I know by that 'tis a woman; for because peradventure she hath made trial of the monkey, she prefers him before me, as one unknown: Well,

These are strange creatures, and have strange desires;

And men must use strange means to quench strange fires. [*Exit.*]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*Before the same.*

*Enter MONTAGUE alone, in mean habit.*

*Mont.* Now, Montague! who discerns thy spirit now,

Thy breeding, or thy blood? here's a poor cloud  
Eclipseth all thy splendour: Who can read  
In thy pale face, dead eye, or Lenten suit,  
The liberty thy ever-giving hand  
Hath bought for others, manacling itself  
In gyves of parchment indissoluble?  
The greatest-hearted man, supplied with means,  
Nobility of birth, and gentlest parts,  
Ay, though the right-hand of his sovereign,  
If Virtue quit her seat in his high soul,  
Glitters but like a palace set on fire,  
Whose glory, whilst it shines, but ruins him;  
And his bright show, each hour to ashes tending,  
Shall at the last be raked up like a sparkle,  
Unless men's lives and fortunes feed the flame.  
Not for my own wants, though, blame I my stars,  
But suffering others to cast love on me,  
When I can neither take, nor thankful be:  
My lady's woman, fair and virtuous,  
Young as the present month, solicits me  
For love and marriage; now, being nothing worth—

*Enter VERAMOUR.*

*Ver.* Oh, master! I have sought you a long hour:

'Good faith, I never joy'd out of your sight!  
For God's sake, sir, be merry, or else bear  
The buffets of your fortunes with more scorn!  
Do but begin to rail; teach me the way,  
And I'll sit down, and help your anger forth.  
I have known you wear a suit full worth a lord-  
ship;

Give to a man, whose need ne'er frighted you  
From calling of him *friend*, five hundred crowns,  
Ere sleep had left your senses to consider  
Your own important present uses: Yet,

Since, I have seen you with a trencher wait,  
Void of all scorn; therefore I'll wait on you.

*Mont.* 'Would God thou wert less honest!

*Ver.* 'Would to God

You were less worthy! I am even w' ye, sir.

*Mont.* Is not thy master strangely fallen, when  
Serv'st for no wages, but for charity? [*thou*]  
Thou dost surcharge me with thy plenteous love;  
The goodness of thy virtue shewn to me,  
More opens still my disability

To quit thy pains: Credit me, loving boy,

A free and honest nature may be oppressed,

Tired with courtesies from a liberal spirit,

When they exceed his means of gratitude.

*Ver.* But 'tis a due in him that, to that end,  
Extends his love or duty.

*Mont.* Little world

Of virtue, why dost love and follow me?

*Ver.* I will follow you through all countries;

I'll run (fast as I can) by your horse-side,

I'll hold your stirrup when you do alight,

And without grudging wait till you return:

I will quit offer'd means, and expose myself

To cold and hunger, still to be with you;

Fearless I'll travel through a wilderness;

And when you are weary, I will lay me down,

That in my bosom you may rest your head;

Where, whilst you sleep, I'll watch, that no wild  
beast

Shall hurt or trouble you; and thus we'll breed

A story to make every hearer weep,

When they discourse our fortunes and our loves.

*Mont.* Oh, what a scoff might men of women  
make,

If they did know this boy!—But my desire

Is, that thou wouldst not (as thou usest still,

When, like a servant, I 'mong servants sit)

Wait on my trencher, fill my cups with wine:

Why shouldst thou do this, boy? pr'ythee, con-  
I am not what I was. [*aside,*]

*Ver.* Curs'd be the day

When I forget that Montague was my lord,  
Or not remember him my master still!

*Mont.* Rather curse me, with whom thy youth  
hath spent  
So many hours, and yet untaught to live  
By any worldly quality.

*Ver.* Indeed  
You never taught me how to handle cards,  
To cheat and cozen men with oaths and lies;  
Those are the worldly qualities to live:  
Some of our scarlet gallants teach their boys  
These worldly qualities.  
Since stumbling Fortune then leaves Virtue thus,  
Let me leave Fortune, ere be vicious!

*Mont.* Oh, lad, thy love will kill me!

*Ver.* In truth,  
I think in conscience I shall die for you.  
Good master, weep not! do you want aught, sir?  
Will you have any money? here's some silver,  
And here's a little gold; 'twill serve to play,  
And put more troublesome thoughts out of your  
mind:

I pray, sir, take it! I'll get more with singing,  
And then I'll bring it you: My lady ga't me;  
And, by my soul, it was not covetousness,  
But I forgot to tell you sooner on't.

*Mont.* Alas, boy, thou art not bound to tell it  
me,  
And less to give it; buy thee scarfs and garters!  
And when I have money, I'll give thee a sword:  
Nature made thee a beautiful cabinet,  
To lock up all the goodness of the earth.

*Enter CHARLOTTE.*

*Ver.* I have lost my voice with the very sight  
of this gentlewoman! Good sir, steal away! you  
were wont to be a curious avoider of women's  
company.

*Mont.* Why, boy, thou dar'st trust me any  
where, dar'st thou not?

*Ver.* I had rather trust you by a roaring lion,  
than a ravening woman.

*Mont.* Why, boy?

*Ver.* Why, truly, she devours more man's flesh.

*Mont.* Ay, but she roars not, boy.

*Ver.* No, sir? why she is never silent but when  
her mouth is full.

*Charl.* Monsieur Montague!

*Mont.* My sweet fellow! since you please to  
call me so.

*Ver.* Ah, 'my conscience, she would be pleased  
well enough to call you bed-fellow. Oh, master,  
do not hold her by the hand so! A woman is a  
lime-bush, that catcheth all she toucheth.

*Charl.* I do most dangerously suspect this boy  
to be a wench: Art thou not one? Come hither,  
let me feel thee.

*Ver.* With all my heart.

*Charl.* Why dost thou pull off thy glove?

*Ver.* Why, to feel whether you be a boy, or no.

*Charl.* Fy, boy! go to! I'll not look your head,  
nor comb your locks any more, if you talk thus.

*Ver.* Why, I'll sing to you no more then.

*Charl.* Fy upon't, how sad you are! A young  
gentleman that was the very sun of France—

*Mont.* But I am in the eclipse now.

*Charl.* Suffer himself to be o'er-run with a  
lethargy of melancholy and discontent!  
Rouse up thy spirit, man, and shake it off:  
A noble soul is like a ship-at sea,

That sleeps at anchor when the ocean's calm;  
But when she rages, and the wind blows high,  
He cuts his way with skill and majesty.  
I would turn a fool, or poet, or anything, or marry,  
to make you merry: Pr'ythee let's walk!—Good  
Veramour, leave thy master and me; I have earn-  
est business with him.

*Ver.* Pray do you leave my master and me! we  
were very merry before you came. He does not  
covet women's company: What have you to do  
with him?—Come, sir, will you go? and I'll sing  
to you again.—I'faith, his mind is stronger than to  
credit women's vows, and too pure to be capable  
of their loves.

*Charl.* The boy is jealous. Sweet lad, leave us!  
my lady call'd for you, I swear: That's a good  
child! there is a piece of gold for thee; go, buy a  
feather!

*Ver.* There's two pieces for you; do you go  
and buy one, or what you will, or nothing, so you  
go!—Nay then, I see you would have me go, sir!  
why, i'faith I will, now I perceive you love her  
better than you do me: But, God bless you!  
Whatever you do, or intend, I know you are a  
very honest man! [Exit]

*Charl.* Still shall I woo thee, whilst thy ears  
I cannot, or I will not marry thee? [repley]  
Why hast thou drawn the blood out of my cheeks,  
And given a quicker motion to my heart?  
Oh, thou hast bred a fever in my veins,  
Call'd Love, which no physician can cure!  
Have mercy on a maid, whose simple youth—

*Mont.* How your example, fairest, teacheth me  
A ceremonious idolatry! [Kneels]

By all the joy of love, I love thee better  
Than I or any man can tell another!  
And will express the mercy which thou cravest;  
I will forbear to marry thee. Consider,  
Thou art Nature's heir in feature, and thy parents'  
In fair inheritances: Rise with these thoughts,  
And look on me; but with a woman's eye:  
A decayed fellow, void of means and spirit.

*Charl.* Of spirit?

*Mont.* Yes; [else] could I tamely live,  
Forget my father's blood, wait, and make legs,  
Stain my best breeches with the servile drops  
That fall from others' draughts?

*Charl.* This vizard wherewith thou wouldst hide  
Is perspective, to show it plainlier: [thy spirit]  
This undervalue of thy life, is but  
Because I should not buy thee. What more speaks  
Greatness of man than valiant patience,  
That shrinks not under his fate's strongest strokes:  
These Roman deaths, as falling on a sword,  
Opening of veins, with poison quenching thirst,  
Which we erroneously do style the deeds  
Of the heroic and magnanimous man,  
Was dead-eyed Cowardice, and white-check'd Fear:  
Who doubting Tyranny, and fainting under  
Fortune's false lottery, desperately run [stout]  
To Death, for dread of Death; that soul's most  
That, bearing all mischance, dares last it out.  
Will you perform your word, and marry me,  
When I shall call you to't?

*Mont.* I'faith, I will.

*Enter LONGUEVILLE, with a Riding-rod.*

*Charl.* Who's this alights here?

*Long.* With leave, fair creature,  
Are you the lady-mistress of the house?

*Charl.* Her servant, sir,

*Long.* I pray then favour me,  
To inform your lady, and duke Orleans' wife,  
A business of import waits 'em here,  
And craves for speedy answer.

*Charl.* Are you in post, sir?

*Long.* No; I am in sattin, lady;  
I would you would be in post.

*Charl.* I will return, sweet. [Exit.]

*Long.* Honest, friend, do you belong to the  
I pray be cover'd. [house?]

*Mont.* Yes, sir, I do.

*Long.* Ha! dream'st thou, Longueville?  
Sure 'tis not he!—Sir, I should know you.

*Mont.* So should I you, but that I am ashamed:  
But, though thou know'st me, pr'ythee, Longueville,

Mock not my poverty! Pray remember yourself:  
Shews it not strangely for thy clothes to stand  
Without a hat to mine? Mock me no more.

*Long.* The pox embroider me all over, sir,  
If ever I began to mock you yet.

The plague upon me, why should I wear velvet  
And silver lace? 'Sdeath, I will tear it off.

*Mont.* Why, madman?

*Long.* Put on my hat? Yes, when I'm hanged  
Pox! I could break my head, [I will!]

For holding eyes that knew not you at first!  
But, Time and Fortune, run your courses with him;  
He'll laugh and storm you, when you shew most  
hate!

*Enter LAMORA, DUCHESS, LAVERDINE, LA-POOP, MALLICORN, VERAMOUR, and CHARLOTTE.*

*Lam.* You are a fair monsieur.

*Long.* Do you mock me, lady?

*Lam.* Your business, sir, I mean.

*Duch.* Regard yourself, good monsieur Longueville!

*Lam.* You are too negligent of yourself and  
Cover your head, sweet monsieur! [place;]

*Long.* Mistake me not, fair ladies;

'Tis not to you, nor you, that I stand bare.

*Lav.* Nay, sweet dear monsieur, let it be not to  
*La-P.* A pox of compliment! [us then!]

*Mont.* And pox of manners!

Pray hide your head; your gallants use to do't.

*Long.* And you your foreheads! Why, you  
needful accessory rascals,

That cannot live without your mutual knaveries,  
More than a bawd, a pandar, or a whore,

From one another, how dare you suspect  
That I stand bare to you? What make you here?—

Shift your house, lady, of 'em; for I know 'em;  
They come to steal [your] napkins, and your  
spoons:

Look to your silver bodkin, gentlewoman,  
'Tis a dead utensil; and, page, beware your  
pockets!

My reverence is unto this man, my master;  
Whom you, with protestations and oaths,

As high as Heaven and as deep as Hell, which  
Deceive the wisest man of honest nature, [would  
Have cozen'd and abused: But, I may meet you,  
And beat you one with th' other!

*Mont.* Peace! no more!

*Long.* Not a word, sir.

*Lav.* I am something thick of hearing;  
What said he?

*La-P.* I hear him, but regard him not.

*Mal.* Nor I; I am never angry fasting.

*Long.* My love

Keeps back my duty. Noblest lady, if  
Husband, or brother, merit love from you,  
Prevent their dangers: this hour brings to trial  
Their hereto-sleeping hates: By this time, each  
Within a yard is of the other's heart;  
And met to prove their causes and their spirits  
With their impartial swords' points: Haste and  
save,

Or never meet them more, but at the grave!  
*Duch.* Oh, my distracted heart! that my  
wreck'd honour

Should for a brother's, or a husband's life,  
Through thy undoing, die!

*Lam.* Amiens engaged?

If he miscarry, all my hopes and joys,  
I now confess it loudly, are undone:

Caroch, and haste! one minute may betray  
A life more worth than all time can repay.

[Exit Ladies and MONTAGUE.]

*Mal.* Humph! monsieur Laverdine pursues this  
boy extremely.—Captain, what will you do?

*La-P.* Anything but follow to this land-service:  
I am a sea-captain, you know, and to offer to part  
'em, without we could do't like watermen with long  
staves, a quarter of a mile off, might be dangerous.

*Mal.* Why then, let's retire and pray for 'em! I  
am resolved to stop; your intent? Abused more  
than we have been we cannot be, without they fall  
to flat beating on's. [Exit MALLICORN and LA-POOP.]

*Lav.* And that were unkindly done, i'faith.

*Ver.* Curse me, but you are the troublesomest  
ass that e'er I met with! Retire! you smell like  
a woman's chamber, that's newly up, before she  
has pinched her vapours in with her clothes.

*Lav.* I will haunt thee like thy grandame's ghost;  
thou shalt never rest for me!

*Ver.* Well, I perceive 'tis vain to conceal a secret  
from you; Believe it, sir, indeed I'm a woman.

*Lav.* Why, la! I knew't; this prophetic tongue  
of mine never fail'd me: My mother was half  
a witch; never anything that she forespoke but  
came to pass. A woman! how happy am I! Now  
we may lawfully come together, without fear  
of hanging! Sweet wench, be gracious! In honour-  
able sort I woo, no otherwise.

*Ver.* 'Faith, the truth is, I have loved you long—  
*Lav.* See, see!

*Ver.* But durst not open it:

*Lav.* By Heaven, I think so!

*Ver.* But briefly, when you bring it to the test,  
if there be not one gentleman in this house will  
challenge more interest in me than you can, I am  
at your disposal. [Exit.]

*Lav.* Oh, Fortunatus, I envy thee not  
For cap, or pouch! this day I'll prove my fortune,  
In which your lady doth elect her husband,  
Who will be Amiens; 'twill save my wedding-din-

*Pauvre La-Poop and Mallicorn!* If all fail, [ner:  
I will turn citizen: A beauteous wife  
Is the horn-book to the richest tradesman's life.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Field before the Gates of PARIS.

*Enter DUBOIS, ORLEANS, LONGUEVILLE, AMIENS, two  
Laocques, a Page with two Pistols.*

*Dubois.* Here's a good even piece of ground, my  
Will you fix here? [lords:]

*Orl.* Yes; any where.—*Lacquey*,  
Take off my spurs!—Upon a bridge, a rail,  
But my sword's breadth, upon a battlement,  
I'll fight this quarrel!

*Dubois.* O' the ropes, my lord!

*Orl.* Upon a line.

*Dubois.* So all our country duels  
Are carried like a firework on a thread.

*Orl.* Go, now; stay with the horses! And, do  
you hear?

Upon your lives, till some of us come to you,  
Dare not to look this way!

*Dubois.* Except you see  
Strangers or others, that, by chance or purpose,  
Are like to interrupt us.

*Orl.* Then give warning.

*Long.* Who takes a sword? The advantage is so  
small,  
As he that doubts hath the free leave to chuse.

*Orl.* Come, give me any, and search me: 'Tis  
not

The ground, weapon, or seconds, that can make  
Odds in those fatal trials, but the cause.

*Ami.* Most true; and, but it is no time to wish  
When men are come to do, I would desire  
The cause 'twixt us were other than it is;  
But where the right is, there prevail our swords!  
And if my sister have out-lived her honour,  
I do not pray I may out-live her shame.

*Orl.* Your sister, Amiens, is a whore, at once!

*Ami.* You oft have spoke that sense to me before,  
But never in this language, Orleans:  
And when you spoke it fair, and first, I told you  
That it was possible you might be abused:  
But now, since you forget your manners, you shall  
If I transgress my custom, you do lie! [find,  
And are a villain! which I had rather yet  
My sword had proved, than I been forced to  
speak.—

Nay, give us leave!—And since you stand so  
haughtily

And highly on your cause, let you and I,  
Without engaging these two gentlemen,  
Singly determine it!

*Long.* My lord, you'll pardon us!

*Dubois.* I trust your lordships may not do us

*Ami.* As how? [that affront.

*Dubois.* We kiss your lordship's hand, and come  
You here with swords. [to serve

*Long.* My lord, we understand ourselves.

*Dubois.* We have had the honour to be call'd  
The business, and we must not now quit it [unto  
On terms.

*Ami.* Not terms of reason?

*Long.* No;

No reason for the quitting of our calling.

*Dubois.* True;

If I be call'd to't, I must ask no reason.

*Long.* Nor hear none neither, which is less:

It is a favour if my throat be cut,  
Your lordship does me; which I never can  
Nor must have hope how to requite.—What noise?

[A noise within crying, Down with their swords!  
What cry is that? My lord, upon your guard!  
Some treachery is afoot.

Enter DUCHESS, LAMIRA, and MONTAGUE.

*Duch.* Oh, here they are!

My lord.—Dear lady, help me! help me all!  
I have so woeful interest in both,

I know not which to fear for most; and yet  
I must prefer my lord.—Dear brother,  
You are too understanding, and too noble,  
To be offended when I know my duty,  
Though scarce my tears will let me see to do it.

*Orl.* Out, loathed strumpet!

*Duch.* Oh, my dearest lord,  
If words could on me cast the name of whore,  
I then were worthy to be loathed: But,  
Know your unkindness cannot make me wicked;  
And therefore should less use that power upon me.

*Orl.* Was this your art, to have these actors  
come,

To make this interlude? Withdraw, cold man!  
And, if thy spirit be not frozen up,  
Give me one stroke yet at thee for my vengeance!

*Ami.* Thou shalt have strokes, and strokes, thou  
glorious man,  
Till thou breath'st thinner air than that thou talk'st.

*Lam.* My lord! count Amiens!

*Duch.* Princely husband!

*Orl.* Whore!

*Lam.* You wrong her, impudent lord! Oh, that  
I had

The bulk of those dull men! look, how they stand,  
And no man will revenge an innocent lady!

*Ami.* You hinder it, madam.

*Lam.* I would hinder you;  
Is there none else to kill him?

*Duch.* Kill him, madam!

Have you learn'd that bad language? Oh, repent,  
And be the motive rather both kill me.

*Orl.* Then die, my infamy!

[Runs at her.

*Mont.* Hold, bloody man!

*Orl.* Art thou there, basilisk?

*Mont.* To strike thee dead,

But that thy fate deserves some weightier hand.

*Dubois.* Sweet my lord!

*Orl.* Oh, here's a plot!

You bring your champions with you! the adulteress  
With the adulterer! Out, howling—

*Dubois.* Good my lord!

*Orl.* Are you her grace's countenancer, lady,  
The receiver to the poor vicious couple?

*Dubois.* Sweet my lord!

*Orl.* Sweet rascal, didst thou not tell me, false  
This Montague here was murder'd? [fellow,

*Dubois.* I did so;

But he was falsèr, and a worthless lord,  
Like thy foul self, that would have had it so.

*Long.* Orleans, 'tis true; and shall be proved  
upon thee.

*Mont.* Thy malice, duke, and this thy wicked  
Are all as visible as thou; but I, [nature,

Born to contemn thy injuries, do know,  
That though thy greatness may corrupt a jury,

And make a judge afraid, and carry out  
A world of evils with thy title, yet  
Thou art not quiet at home: thou bear'st about  
thee

That that doth charge thee, and condemn thee too.  
The thing that grieves me more, and doth indeed  
Displease me, is, to think that so much baseness  
Stands here to have encounter'd so much honour.  
Pardon me, my lord, what late my passion spakèd,  
When you provoked my innocence!

*Orl.* Yes, do!

Oh, flattery becomes him better than  
The suit he wears; give him a new one, Amiens!

*Ami.* Orleans,

'Tis here no time nor place to jest or rail  
Poorly with you ; but I will find a time to  
Whisper you forth to this, or some fit place,  
As shall not hold a second interruption.

*Mont.* I hope your lordship's honour and your  
Are destined unto higher hazards ; this [life  
Is of a meaner arm.

*Dubois.* Yes, faith, or none.

*Long.* He is not fit to fall by an honest sword :  
A prince, and lie?

*Dubois.* And slander ? and hire men  
To publish the false rumours he hath made ?

*Long.* And stick 'em on his friends and innocents ?

*Dubois.* And practise 'gainst their lives after  
their fames ?

*Long.* In men that are the matter of all lewd-  
ness,

Bawds, thieves, and cheaters, it were monstrous !

*Dubois.* But in a man of blood how more con-  
*Ami.* Can this be ? [spicuous !

*Duch.* They do slander him.

*Orl.* Hang them, a pair of railing hang-by's !

*Long.* How ! Stand, Orleans ! stay ! Give me  
my pistols, boy !

Hinder me not ! by Heaven, I will kill him !

*Duch.* Oh, stay his fury !

*Ami.* Longueville, my friend !

*Long.* Not for myself, my lord, but for mankind,  
And all that have an interest to virtue,  
Or title unto innocence.

*Ami.* Why, hear me !

*Long.* For Justice' sake——

*Ami.* That cannot be.

*Long.* To punish

His wife's, your honour, and my lord's wrongs here,  
Whom I must ever call so : For your loves,  
I swear, I'll sacrifice——

*Ami.* Longueville,

I did not think you a murderer before.

*Long.* I care not what you thought me !

*Ami.* By Heaven, if thou attempt

His life, thy own is forfeit !

*Mont.* Foolish frantic man,

The murder will be of us, not him.

*Duch.* Oh, God !

*Mont.* We could have kill'd him, but we would  
The justice out of Fate's—— [not take  
Singe but a hair of him, thou diest !

*Long.* No matter. [Shoots.

*Ami.* Villain !

[The DUCHESS falls.

*Dubois.* My lord, your sister's slain.

*Ami.* Bianca !

*Mont.* Oh, hapless and most wretched chance !

*Lam.* Stand'st thou [To ORLEANS.

Looking upon the mischief thou hast made,  
Thou godless man, feeding thy blood-shot eyes  
With the red spectacle, and art not turn'd  
To stone with horror ? Hence, and take the wings  
Of thy black infamy, to carry thee  
Beyond the shoot of looks, or sound of curses,  
Which will pursue thee till thou hast out-fled  
All but thy guilt.

*Orl.* Oh, wish it off again ; for I am crack'd  
Under the burden, and my heart will break.  
How heavy guilt is, when men come to feel !

If you could know the mountain I sustain  
With horror, you would each take off your part,  
And more, to ease me. I cannot stand ! forgive  
Where I have wronged, I pray ! [Falls.

*Ami.* Look to him, Montague.

*Long.* My lords and gentlemen, the lady is  
Well, but for fear ; unless that have shot her :  
I have the worst of it, that needs would venture  
Upon a trick had like to ha' cost my guts.  
Look to her ! she'll be well : It was but powder  
I charged with, thinking that a guilty man  
Would have been frighted sooner ; but I am glad  
He's come at last.

*Lam.* How is Bianca ? well ?

*Ami.* Lives she ? See ! Sister !—Doth she  
breathe ?

*Duch.* Oh, gentlemen, think you I can breathe,  
That am restored to the hateful sense  
Of feeling in me my dear husband's death ?  
Oh, no, I live not ; life was that I left,  
And what you have call'd me to is death indeed :  
I cannot weep so fast as he doth bleed !

*Dubois.* Pardon me, madam ; he is well.

*Duch.* Ha ! my husband ?

*Orl.* I cannot speak whether my joy or shame  
Be greater ; but I thank the Heavens for both.

Oh, look not black upon me, all my friends !  
To whom I will be reconciled, or grow

Unto this earth, till I have wept a trench  
That shall be great enough to be my grave ;  
And I will think them too most manly tears,  
If they do move your pities. It is true,  
Man should do nothing that he should repent ;  
But if he have, and say that he is sorry,  
It is a worse fault if he be not truly.

*Lam.* My lord, such sorrow cannot be sus-  
pected :

Here, take your honour'd wife, and join your  
hands.

She hath married you again !

And, gentlemen, I do invite you all

This night to take my house ; where, on the mor-  
To heighten more the reconciling feast, [row,  
I'll make myself a husband and a guest. [Exeunt.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—A Room in LAMIRA'S Country-  
House.

Enter MONTAGUE and CHARLOTTE.

*Charl.* Well, now, I am sure you're mine.

*Mont.* I am sure I'm glad

I have one to own then : You will find me honest,  
As these days go, enough ; poor without question,  
Which beggars hold a virtue ; give me meat,

And I shall do my work, else knock my shoes off,  
And turn me out again.

*Charl.* You are a merry fellow.

*Mont.* I have no great cause.

*Charl.* Yes, thy love to me.

*Mont.* That's as we make our game.

*Charl.* Why, you repent then ?

*Mont.* Faith, no ; worse than I am I cannot be ;  
Much better I expect not : I shall love you,

And, when you bid me go to bed, obey,  
Lie still or move, as you shall minister;  
Keep a four-nobles nag, and a Jack-Merlin,  
Learn to love ale, and play at two-hand Irish;  
And there's then all I aim at.

*Charl.* Nay, sweet fellow,  
I'll make it something better.

*Mont.* If you do, you'll make me worse:  
Now I am poor, and willing to do well,  
Hold me in that course! of all the king's creatures,  
I hate his coin; keep me from that, and save me!  
For if you chance, out of your housewifery,  
To save a hundred pound or two, bestow it  
In plumb-broth ere I know it, else I take it;  
Seek out a hundred men that want this money,  
Share it among 'em, they'll cry *noble Montague!*  
And so I stand again at livery!

*Charl.* You have pretty fancies, sir; but mar-  
This charity will fall home to yourself. [cried once,

*Mont.* I would it would! I am afraid my loose-  
ness

Is yet scarce stopt, though it have nought to work  
But the mere air of what I have had. [on

*Charl.* Pretty!

*Mont.* I wonder, sweetheart, why you'll marry  
I can see nothing in myself deserves it, [me;  
Unless the handsome wearing of a band,  
For that's my stock now, or a pair of garters,  
Necessity will not let me lose.

*Charl.* I see, sir,  
A great deal more; a handsome man, a husband,  
To make a right good woman truly happy.

*Mont.* Lord, where are my eyes? Either you  
are foolish,

As wenches once a-year are, or far worse,  
Extremely virtuous: Can you love a poor man  
That relies on cold meat and cast stockings,  
One only suit to his back, which now is mewing,  
But what will be the next coat will pose Tristram?  
If I should levy from my friends a fortune,  
I could not raise ten groats to pay the priest now.

*Charl.* I'll do that duty: 'Tis not means nor  
money

Makes me pursue your love! were your mind  
I would never love you. [bankrupt,

*Enter LAMIRA.*

*Mont.* Peace, wench! here's my lady.

*Lam.* Nay, never shrink I th' wetting, for my  
Do ye find her willing, Montague? [presence!

*Mont.* Willing, madam!

*Lam.* How dainty you make of it! Do not I  
You two love one another? [know

*Mont.* Certain, madam,

I think you have revelations of these matters:  
Your ladyship cannot tell me when I kiss'd her.

*Lam.* But she can, sir.

*Mont.* But she will not, madam;  
For when they talk once, 'tis like fairy-money,  
They get no more close kisses.

*Lam.* Thou art wanton.

*Mont.* God knows I need not; yet I would be  
lusty;

But, by my soul, my provender scarce pricks me.

*Lam.* It shall be mended, Montague: I am glad  
You are grown so merry.

*Mont.* So am I too, madam.

*Lam.* You two will make a pretty handsome  
consort.

*Mont.* Yes, madam, if my fiddle fail me not.

*Lam.* Your fiddle! why your fiddle? I warrant,  
thou mean'st madly.

*Mont.* Can you blame me! Alas, I am in love!

*Charl.* 'Tis very well, sir!

*Lam.* How long have you been thus?

*Mont.* How? thus in love?

*Lam.* You are very quick, sir! No;

I mean thus pleasant.

*Mont.* By Heaven, ever since I was poor.

*Lam.* A little wealth would change you then!

*Mont.* Yes, lady,

Into another suit, but never more  
Into another man; I'll bar that mainly.  
The wealth I get henceforward shall be charm'd  
For ever hurting me; I'll spend it fasting.  
As I live, noble lady, there is nothing,  
I have found, directly cures the melancholy,  
But want and wedlock: When I had store of  
money,

I sump'd sometime, and spoke wond'rous wise,  
But never laugh'd out-right; now I am empty,  
My heart sounds like a bell, and strikes at both  
sides.

*Lam.* You are finely temper'd, Montague.

*Mont.* Pardon, lady,

If any way my free mirth have offended!  
'Twas meant to please you; if it prove too saucy,  
Give it a frown, and I am ever silenced.

*Lam.* I like it passing well; pray follow it!  
This is my day of choice, and shall be yours too;  
'Twere pity to delay you. Call to the steward,  
And tell him 'tis my pleasure he should give you  
Five hundred crowns; make yourself handsome.

Montague;

Let none wear better clothes; 'tis for my credit:  
But pray be merry still!

*Mont.* If I be not,

And make a fool of twice as many hundreds,  
Clap me in canvas, lady! [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter LA-POOP, LAVERDINE, and MALLICORN.*

*Lav.* I am strangely glad I have found the  
mystery

Of this disguis'd boy out; I ever trusted  
It was a woman, and how happy  
I have found it so! and for myself, I am sure,  
One that would offer me a thousand pound now  
(And that's a pretty sum to make one stagger)  
In ready gold for this concealment, could not  
Buy my hope of her. She's a dainty wench,  
And such a one I find I want extremely,  
To bring me into credit: Beauty does it.

*Mal.* Say we should all meach here, and stay  
the feast now,  
What can the worst be! We have play'd the  
That's without question. [knaves:

*La-P.* True;

And, as I take it, this is the first truth  
We told these ten years, and, for anything  
I know, may be the last: but, grant we are knaves.  
Both base and beastly knaves—

*Mal.* Say so then.

*Lav.* Well.

*La-P.* And likewise let it be consider'd, we  
have wrong'd,

And most maliciously, this gentlewoman  
We cast to stay with, what must we expect now?

*Mal.* Ay, there's the point; we would expect good eating.

*La-P.* I know we would, but we may find good beating.

*Lav.* You say true, gentlemen; and, by my soul, Though I love meat as well as any man, I care not what he be, if 'a eat a' God's name; Such crab-sauce to my meat will turn my palate.

*Mal.* There's all the hazard; for the frozen Montague

Has now got spring again and warmth in him, And, without doubt, dares beat us terribly. For, not to mince the matter, we are cowards, And have, and shall be beaten, when men please To call us into cudgelling.

*La-P.* I feel

We are very prone that way.

*Lav.* The sons of Adam.

*La-P.* Now, here then rests the state o' th' question;

Whether we yield our bodies for a dinner

To a sound dog-whip (for, I promise ye,

If men be given to correction,

We can expect no less,) or quietly

Take a hard egg or two, and ten mile hence

Bait in a ditch? this we may do securely;

For, to stay hereabout will be all one,

If once our moral mischiefs come in memory.

*Mal.* But, pray ye hear me: Is not this the day

The virgin lady doth elect her husband?

*Lav.* The dinner is to that end.

*Mal.* Very well then;

Say we all stay, and say we all 'scape this whip- And be well entertain'd, and one of us [ping, Carry the lady!

*La-P.* 'Tis a seemly saying,

I must confess; but if we stay, how fitly

We may apply it to ourselves (i' th' end)

Will ask a Christian fear: I cannot see,

If I say true, what special ornaments

Of art or nature (lay aside our lying,

Whoring, and drinking, which are no great virtues)

We are endued withal to win this lady.

*Mal.* Yet women go not by the best parts ever;

That I have found directly.

*Lav.* Why should we fear then?

They chuse men as they feed: Sometimes they settle

Upon a white-broth'd face, a sweet smooth gallant,

And him they make an end of in a night;

Sometimes a goose; sometimes a grosser meat,

A rump of beef, will serve 'em at some season,

And fill their bellies too, though without doubt

They are great devourers; stock-fish is a dish,

If it be well dressed, for the toughness' sake,

Will make the proudest of 'em long and leap for't;

They'll run mad for a pudding, ere they'll starve.

*La-P.* For my own part, I care not, come what can come;

If I be whipt, why so be it! if cudgell'd,

I hope I shall out-live it: I am sure

'Tis not the hundredth time I have been served so,

And yet, I thank God, I'm here.

*Mal.* Here's resolution!

*La-P.* A little patience, and a rotten apple,

Cures twenty worse diseases: What say you, sir?

*Lav.* Marry, I say, sir, if I had been acquainted

With lamming in my youth, as you have been,

With whipping, and such benefits of nature,

I should do better; as I am, I'll venture:

And if it be my luck to have the lady, I'll use my fortune modestly; if beaten, You shall not hear a word; one I am sure of, And if the worst fall, she shall be my physic. Let's go then, and a merry wind be with us!

*Mal.* Captain, your shoes are old; pray put 'em off,

And let one fing 'em after us. Be bold, sirs;

And howsoe'er our fortune falls, let's bear

An equal burden! if there be an odd lash,

We'll part it afterwards.

*La-P.* I am arm'd at all points. [Exeunt.

SCENE III.—Another in the same.

Enter four Servants, with a Banquet.

1 *Serv.* Then my lady will have a bedfellow tonight?

2 *Serv.* So she says: Heaven, what a dainty arm-full

Shall he enjoy that has the launching of her!

What a fight she will make!

3 *Serv.* Ay, marry, boys,

There will be sport indeed! there will be grappling!

She has a murderer lies in her brow,

I am afraid will fright his main-mast, Robin.

4 *Serv.* Who dost thou think shall have her, of

Thou art a wise man. [thy conscience?

3 *Serv.* If she go the old way,

The way of lot, the longest cut sweeps all

Without question.

1 *Serv.* She has lost a friend of me else.

What think you of the courtier?

2 *Serv.* Hang him, hedge-hog!

He has nothing in him but a piece of Euphues,

And twenty dozen of twelpenny ribband, all

About him; he is but one pedlar's shop

Of gloves and garters, pick-teeth and pomander.

3 *Serv.* The courtier! marry, God bless her,

Steven, she is not

Mad yet; she knows that trindle-tail too well;

He's crest-fall'n, and pin-buttock'd, with leasing

landresses.

4 *Serv.* The merchant? sure she will not be so To have him. [base

1 *Serv.* I hope so; Robin, he'll sell us all

To the Moors to make mummy. Nor the captain?

4 *Serv.* Who? potgun? that's a sweet youth,

Will he stay, think ye? [indeed!

3 *Serv.* Yes, without question,

And have half dined too ere the grace be done.

He's good for nothing in the world but eating,

Lying, and sleeping; what other men devour

In drink he takes in pottage: They say he has

been

At sea; a herring-fishing, for without doubt

He dares not hail an eelboat, i' th' way of war.

2 *Serv.* I think so; they would beat him off with butter.

3 *Serv.* When he brings in a prize, unless it be

Cockles, or Calais sand to scour with,

I'll renounce my five mark a-year,

And all the hidden art I have in carving,

To teach young birds to whistle Walsingham:

Leave him to the lime-boats! Now what think you

Of the brave Amiens?

1 *Serv.* That's a thought indeed.

2 *Serv.* Ay, marry, there's a person fit to feed

Upon a dish so dainty; and he'll do't,

I warrant him, i' th' nick, boys; he has a body World without end.

4 *Serv.* And such a one my lady Will make no little of. But is not Montague Married to-day?

3 *Serv.* Yes, 'faith, honest Montague Must have his bout too.

2 *Serv.* He's as good a lad As ever turn'd a trencher: Must we leave him?

3 *Serv.* He's too good for us, Stephen. I'll give him health

To his good luck to-night in the old beaker, And it shall be sack too.

4 *Serv.* I must have a garter; And, boys, I have bespoke a posset; somebody Shall give me thanks for't! 't has a few toys in't Will raise commotions in a bed, lad.

1 *Serv.* Away! my lady. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter ORLEANS and DUCHES, arm-in-arm, AMIENS, LAMIRA, CHARLOTTE like a Bride, MONTAGUE brave, LAVERDINE, LONGUEVILLE, DUBOIS, MALLICORN, and LA-POOF.*

*Lam.* Seat yourselves, noble lords and gentlemen;

You know your places. Many royal welcomes I give your grace! How lovely shews this change! My house is honoured in this reconciliation.

*Orl.* Thus, madam, must you do; My lady now shall see you made a woman, And give you some short lessons for your voyage. Take her instructions, lady; she knows much.

*Lam.* This becomes you, sir.  
*Duch.* My lord must have his will.

*Orl.* 'Tis all I can do now, sweetheart. Fair lady,

This to your happy choice!—Brother Amiens, You are the man I mean it to.

*Ami.* I'll pledge you.  
*Orl.* And with my heart.  
*Ami.* With all my love I take it.  
*Lam.* Noble lords,

I am proud ye have done this day so much content, And me such estimation, that this hour (In this poor house) shall be a league for ever: For so I know ye mean it.

*Ami.* I do, lady.  
*Orl.* And I, my lord.  
*All.* You have done a work of honour.

*Ami.* Give me the cup! where this health stops, let that man

Be either very sick or very simple; Or I am very angry.—Sir, to you!—Madam, methinks this gentleman might sit too; He would become the best on's.

*Orl.* Pray sit down, sir: I know the lady of the feast expects not This day so much old custom.

*Lam.* Sit down, Montague! Nay, never blush for the matter.

*Mont.* Noble madam, I have two reasons against it, and I dare not; Duty to you first, as you are my lady, And I your poorest servant! next, the custom Of this day's ceremony.

*Lam.* As you are my servant, I may command you then?

*Mont.* To my life, lady.  
*Lam.* Sit down, and here! I'll have it so.  
*Ami.* Sit down, man;

Never refuse so fair a lady's offer.  
*Mont.* It is your pleasure, madam, not my pride,

And I obey.—I'll pledge you now, my lord. Monsieur Longueville!

*Long.* I thank you, sir. [*Drinks.*

*Mont.* This to my lady, And her fair choice to-day, and happiness! *Long.* 'Tis a fair health; I'll pledge you though I sink for't.

*Lam.* Montague, you are too modest: Come, I'll add

A little more wine to you; 'twill make you merry, This to the good I wish [you]!

*Mont.* Honoured lady, I shall forget myself with this great bounty.

*Lam.* You shall not, sir.—Give me some wine.  
*Ami.* By Heaven,

You are a worthy woman; and that man Is blest can come near such a lady.

*Lam.* Such a blessing Wet weather washes.

*Mont.* At all! I will not go A lip less, my lord.

*Orl.* 'Tis well cast, sir.  
*Mal.* If Montague get more wine, we are like to hear of it.

*Lav.* I do not like that sitting there.  
*Mal.* Nor I;

Methinks he looks like a judge.  
*La-P.* Now have I

A kind of grudging of a beating on me; I fear my hot fit.

*Mal.* Drink apace; there's nothing Always a cudgel like it.

*Lam.* Montague, now I'll put my choice to you: Who do you hold, In all this honoured company, a husband Fit to enjoy thy lady? Speak directly.

*Mont.* Shall I speak, madam?  
*Lam.* Montague, you shall.

*Mont.* Then, as I have a soul, I'll speak my conscience.

Give me more wine! *in vino veritas:* Here's to myself, and—Montague, have a care!

*Lam.* Speak to the cause.  
*Mont.* Yes, madam.—

First, I'll begin to thee!  
*Lav.* Have at us!

*La-P.* Now for a psalm of mercy!  
*Mont.* You, good monsieur,

You that belie the noble name of *courtier*, And think your claim good here, hold up your hand!

Your worship is indicted here for a vain-glorious  
*Lav.* Good! oh, sir! [*fool—*

*Mont.* For one whose wit Lies in a ten-pound waistcoat, yet not warm. You have travell'd like a fiddler to make faces, And brought home nothing but a case of tooth-picks.

You would be married, and no less than ladies, And of the best sort, can serve you!—Thou silk-worm, [*To MALLICORN.*

What hast thou in thee to deserve this woman? Name but the poorest piece of man, good manners. There's nothing sound about thee; 'faith, thou hast none;

It lies pawn'd at thy silk-man's, for so much lace Thy credit with his wife cannot redeem it; Thy clothes are all the soul thou hast, for so Thou sav'st them handsome for the next great tilting,

Let who will take the other; thou wert never christened

(Upon my conscience) but in barber's water; Thou art never out o' th' bason, thou art rotten, And, if thou dar'est tell truth, thou wilt confess it;—Thy skin

Looks of a chesnut colour, greased with amber; All women that on earth do dwell thou lovest, Yet none that understand love thee again, But those that love the spital. Get thee home, Poor painted butterfly! thy summer's past. Go, sweat, and eat dry mutton; thou may'st live To do so well yet, a bruis'd chambermaid May fall upon thee, and advance thy follies. You have your sentence!—Now it follows, captain, I treat of you.

*La-P.* Pray God I may deserve it!

*Orl.* Beshrew my heart, he speaks plain.

*Ami.* That's plain dealing.

*Mont.* You are a rascal, captain!

*La-P.* A fine calling.

*Mont.* A water-coward!

*Ami.* He would make a pretty stuff.

*Mont.* May I speak freely, madam?

*Lam.* Here's none ties you.

*Mont.* Why shouldst thou dare come hither with a thought

To find a wife here fit for thee? are all Thy single-money whores, that fed on carrots, And fill'd the high grass with familiars, Fallen off to footmen? Pr'ythee tell me truly, (For now I know thou dar'st not lie) couldst thou not

Wish thyself beaten well with all thy heart now, And out of pain? say that I broke a rib, Or cut thy nose off, were't not merciful For this ambition?

*La-P.* Do your pleasure, sir;

Beggars must not be chusers.

*Orl.* He longs for beating.

*Mont.* But that I have nobler thoughts possess my soul,

Than such brown biscuit, such a piece of dog-fish, Such a most mangy mackrel-eater as thou art, That dares do nothing that belongs to th' sea But spew and catch rats, and fear men of war, Though thou hast nothing in the world to lose Aboard thee, but one piece of beef, one musquet Without a cock for peace-sake, and a pitch-barrel—I'll tell thee, if my time were not more precious Than thus to lose it, I would rattle thee, It may be beat thee, and thy pure fellow, The merchant there of catskins, till my words, Or blows, or both, made ye two branded wretches To all the world hereafter! You would fain too Venture your bills of lading for this lady: What would you give now for her? Some five frail Of rotten figs, good godson, would you not, sir? Or a parrot that speaks High Dutch? Can all thou ever saw'st

Of thine own fraughts from sea, or cozenage (At which thou art as expert as the devil,) Nay, sell thy soul for wealth too, as thou wilt do, Forfeit thy friends, and raise a mint of money, Make thee dream all these double could procure A kiss from this good lady! Canst thou hope She would lie with such a nook of bell as thou art, And hatch young merchant-furies? Oh, ye dog-boils!

That fear no hell but Dunkirk, I shall see you

Serve in a lousy lime-boat, ere I die, For mouldy cheese, and butter Billingsgate Would not endure, or bring in rotten pippins To cure blue eyes, and swear they came from China.

*Lam.* Vex 'em no more; alas, they shake!

*Mont.* Down quickly upon your narrow-bones, and thank this lady;

I would not leave you thus else! there are blankets, And such delights for such knaves: But fear still! 'Twill be revenge enough to keep you waking. Ye have no mind of marriage, ha' ye?

*La-P.* Surely no great mind now.

*Mont.* Nor you?

*Mal.* Nor I, I take it.

*Mont.* Two eager suitors!

*Lao.* 'Troth, 'tis wond'rous hot; Heaven bless us from him!

*Lam.* You have told me, Montague, Who are not fit to have me; let me know The man you would point out for me.

*Mont.* There he sits;

My lord of Amiens, madam, is my choice: He's noble every way, and worthy a wife With all the dowries of—

*Ami.* Do you speak, sir, Out of your friendship to me?

*Mont.* Yes, my lord, And out of truth; for I could never flatter.

*Ami.* I would not say how much I owe you for it,

For that were but a promise; but I'll thank you, As now I find you, in despite of fortune, A fair and noble gentleman.

*Lam.* My lords,

I must confess the choice this man hath made Is every way a great one, if not too great, And no way to be slighted: Yet, because We love to have our own eyes sometimes, now Give me a little liberty to see How I could fit myself, if I were put to't.

*Ami.* Madam, we must.

*Lam.* Are ye all agreed?

*All.* We be.

*Lam.* Then, as I am a maid, I shall chuse here! Montague, I must have thee.

*Mont.* Why, madam, I have learned to suffer more

Than you can (out of pity) mock me with, This way especially.

*Lam.* Thou think'st I jest now;

But, by the love I bear thee, I will have thee!

*Mont.* If you could be so weak to love a fall'n He must deserve more than I ever can, [man, Or ever shall! Dear lady, look but this way Upon that lord, and you will tell me then Your eyes are no true chusers of good men.

*Ami.* Do you love him truly?

*Lam.* Yes, my lord:

I will obey him truly, for I'll marry him; And justly think he that has so well served me With his obedience, being born to greatness, Must use me nobly of necessity, When I shall serve him.

*Ami.* 'Twere a deep sin to cross you.—Noble Montague,

I wish ye all content, and am as happy In my friend's good as it were merely mine!

*Mont.* Your lordship does ill to give up your right!

I am not capable of this great goodness :  
There sits my wife, that holds my troth.

*Charl.* I'll end all :

I woo'd you for my lady, and now give up my title.  
Alas, poor wench, my aims are lower far.

*Mont.* How's this, sweetheart ?

*Lam.* Sweetheart, 'tis so ; the drift was mine, to  
My purpose till it struck home. [hide

*All.* Give you joy !

*Lam.* Pr'ythee leave wond'ring ! by this kiss,  
I'll have thee !

*Mont.* Then, by this kiss, and this, I'll ever serve  
you !

*Long.* This gentleman and I, sir, must needs  
Once more to follow you. [hope

*Mont.* As friends and fellows ;  
Never as servants more.

*Long. Dub.* You make us happy !

*Orl.* Friend Montague, you have taught me so  
much honour,

I have found a fault in myself ; but thus I'll purge  
My conscience of it : The late land I took  
By false play from you, with as much contrition  
And entireness of affection

To this most happy day, again I render :

Be master of your own ; forget my malice,

And make me worthy of your love, lord Montague !

*Mont.* You have won me, and honour to your  
name.

*Mal.* Since your lordship has begun good deeds,  
we'll follow.

Good sir, forgive us ! We are now those men  
Fear you for Goodness' sake : Those sums of  
money

Unjustly we detain from you, on your pardon  
Shall be restored again, and we your servants.

*La-P.* You are very forward, sir ! it seems you  
have money :

I pray you lay out ; I'll pay you, or pray for you,  
As the sea works.

*Lav.* Their penance, sir, I'll undertake, so please  
To grant me one concealment. [you

*Long.* A right courtier,  
Still a-begging.

*Mont.* What is it, sir ?

*Lav.* A gentlewoman.

*Mont.* In my gift ?

*Lav.* Yes, sir, in yours.

*Mont.* Why, bring her forth, and take her.

[Exit LAVERDINE.

*Lam.* What wench would he have ?

*Mont.* Any wench, I think.

Enter LAVERDINE, and VERAMOUR like a Woman.

*Lav.* This is the gentlewoman.

*Mont.* 'Tis my page, sir.

*Ver.* No, sir ; I am a poor disguised lady,  
That like a page have followed you full long  
For love, God wot.

*All.* A lady !

*Lav.* Yes, yes ; 'tis a lady.

*Mont.* It may be so ; and yet we have lain  
together,

But, by my troth, I never found her lady.

*Duch.* Why wore you boys' clothes ?

*Ver.* I will tell you, madam ;

I took example by two or three plays, that  
Methought concerned me.

*Mont.* Why made you not me acquainted  
with it ?

*Ver.* Indeed, sir, I knew it not myself,  
Until this gentleman opened my dull eyes,  
And by persuasion made me see it.

*Ami.* Could his power in words make such a  
change ?

*Ver.* Yes ;

As truly woman as yourself, my lord.

*Lav.* Why, but, hark you ! are not you a  
woman ?

*Ver.* If hands and face make it not evident,  
You shall see more.

*Mal.* Breeches, breeches, Laverdine !

*La-P.* 'Tis not enough ; women may wear those  
Search further, courtier. [cass ;

*All.* Ha, ha, ha !

*La-P.* Oh, thou fresh-water gudgeon, wouldst  
thou come

To point of marriage with an ignoramus ?  
Thou shouldst have had her urine to the doctor's ;  
The foolishhest physician could have made plain  
The liquid Epicœne ; a blind man by the hand  
Could have discovered the ring from the stone.—  
Boy, come to sea with me ; I'll teach thee to  
climb,

And come down by the rope, nay, to eat rats.

*Ver.* I shall devour my master before the prison  
then ;

Sir, I have began my trade.

*Mal.* Trade ! to the city, child :

A flat cap will become thee.

*Mont.* Gentlemen,

I beseech you molest yourselves no further  
For his preferment ; 'tis determined.

*Lav.* I am much ashamed ; and if my cheek  
Gives not satisfaction, break my head.

*Mont.* Your shame's enough, sir.

*Ami.* Montague,

Much joy attend thy marriage-bed ! By thy  
Example of true goodness, Envy is exiled ;  
And to all honest men that truth intend,  
I wish good luck ! fair Fate be still thy friend !

[Exeunt.

UPON  
AN HONEST MAN'S FORTUNE,

BY  
MR. JOHN FLETCHER.

---

You that can look through Heaven, and tell the stars,

Observe their kind conjunctions, and their wars ;  
Find out new lights, and give them where you please,

To those men honours, pleasures, to those ease ;  
You that are God's surveyors, and can shew  
How far, and when, and why the wind doth blow ;

Know all the charges of the dreadful thunder,  
And when it will shoot over, or fall under ;

Tell me, by all your art I conjure ye,  
Yes, and by truth, what shall become of me ?

Find out my star, if each one, as you say,  
Have his peculiar angel, and his way ;

Observe my fate, next fall into your dreams,  
Sweep clean your houses, and new-line your seams,

Then say your worst ! Or have I none at all ?  
Or, is it burnt out lately ? or did fall ?

Or, am I poor ? not able, no full flame ?  
My star, like me, unworthy of a name ?

Is it, your art can only work on those  
That deal with dangers, dignities, and clothes ?

With love, or new opinions ? You all lie !  
A fish-wife hath a fate, and so have I ;

But far above your finding ! He that gives,  
Out of his providence, to all that lives,

And no man knows his treasure, no, not you ;  
He that made Ægypt blind, from whence you grew

Scabby and lousy, that the world might see  
Your calculations are as blind as ye ;

He that made all the stars you daily read,  
And from thence filch a knowledge how to feed,

Hath hid this from you ; your conjectures all  
Are drunken things, not how, but when they fall :

Man is his own star, and the soul that can  
Render an honest and a perfect man,

Commands all light, all influence, all fate ;  
Nothing to him falls early, or too late.

Our acts our angels are, or good or ill,  
Our fatal shadows that walk by us still ;

And when the stars are labouring, we believe  
It is not that they govern, but they grieve

For stubborn ignorance ; all things that are  
Made for our general uses, are at war,

Even we among ourselves ; and from the strife,  
Your first unlike opinions got a life.

Oh, man ! thou image of thy Maker's good,  
What canst thou fear, when breath'd into thy blood

His spirit is, that built thee ? what dull sense  
Makes thee suspect, in need, that Providence,

Who made the morning, and who placed the light  
Guide to thy labours ; who call'd up the night,

And bid her fall upon thee like sweet showers  
In hollow murmurs, to lock up thy powers ;

Who gave thee knowledge, who so trusted thee,  
To let thee grow so near himself, the tree ;

Must he then be distrusted ! shall his frame  
Discourse with him, why thus and thus I am ?

He made the angels thine, thy fellows all,  
Nay, even thy servants, when devotions call

Oh, canst thou be so stupid then, so dim,  
To seek a saving influence, and lose him ?

Can stars protect thee ? or can poverty,  
Which is the light to Heaven, put out his eye ?

He is my star, in him all truth I find,  
All influence, all fate ! and when my mind

Is furnish'd with his fullness, my poor story  
Shall out-live all their age, and all their glory !

The hand of danger cannot fall amiss,  
When I know what, and in whose power it is :

Nor want, the curse of man, shall make me  
groan ;

A holy hermit is a mind alone.  
Doth not experience teach us, all we can,

To work ourselves into a glorious man ?  
Love's but an exhalation to beat eyes,

The matter spent, and then the fool's fire dies !  
Were I in love, and could that bright star bring

Encrease to wealth, honour, and every thing ;  
Were she as perfect good as we can aim,

The first was so, and yet she lost the game.  
My mistress, then, be Knowledge and fair Truth !

So I enjoy all beauty and all youth.  
And thought to Time her lights and laws she lends,

She knows no age that to corruption bends :  
Friends' promises may lead me to believe,

But he that is his own friend, knows to live ;  
Affliction, when I know it is but this,

A deep alloy, whereby man tougher is  
To bear the hammer, and, the deeper, still

We still arise more image of his will ;  
Sickness, an humorous cloud 'twixt us and light,

And death, at longest, but another night !  
Man is his own star, and that soul that can

Be honest, is the only perfect man.

FOUR PLAYS,  
OR  
MORAL REPRESENTATIONS,  
IN ONE.

---

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| <p>EMANUEL, <i>King of Portugal and Castile,</i><br/>         ISABELLA, <i>his Queen,</i><br/>         Lords,<br/>         FRIGOSO, <i>a Courtier,</i><br/>         RINALDO, <i>his Acquaintance,</i><br/>         Post, Lords, Attendants, Spectators.</p> | } | <p><i>Spectators of the Play at the<br/>         Celebration of the Nuptials.</i></p> |
|---|---|---|

SCENE,—LISBON.

---

THE TRIUMPH OF HONOUR.

MARTIUS, *a Roman General.*  
 VALERIUS, *his Brother.*  
 SOPHOCLES, *Duke of Athens.*  
 NICODEMUS, *a cowardly Corporal.*  
 CORNELIUS, *a willful Butler.*  
 Captains.

DIANA.  
 DORIGEN, *SOPHOCLES'S Wife, the example of  
 Chastity.*  
 FLORENCE, *Wife to CORNELIUS.*

SCENE,—ATHENS, AND THE ADJOINING COUNTRY.

---

THE TRIUMPH OF LOVE.

CUPID.  
 RINALDO, *Duke of Milan.*  
 BENVOLGIO, }  
 RANDULPHO, } *Brothers, Lords of Milan.*  
 ALPHONSO, { *disguised under the names of GER-*  
 ASCANIO, { *RARD, FERDINAND, Sons of the*  
 { *Duke, supposed to be lost.*  
 Friar, *Secretary, Guard, States, Executioners.*  
 ANGELINA, *Wife to BENVOLGIO.*  
 VIOLANTE, *her Daughter, GERRARD'S Mistress.*  
 DOROTHEA, *VIOLANTE'S Attendant.*  
 CORNELIA, *the obscured Duchess.*

SCENE,—MILAN.

THE TRIUMPH OF DEATH.

DUKE OF ANJOU.  
 LAVALL, *his justful Heir.*  
 MARINE, *Father to HELLENA.*  
 GENTILLE, *a Courtier, Father to PERLOOT.*  
 PERLOOT, *contracted to GABRIELLA.*  
 Two Gentlemen.  
 A Spirit.  
 SHALLOONE, *Servant to LAVALL.*

GABRIELLA, *the despised Wife of LAVALL.*  
 HELLENA, *his Second Wife.*  
 CASTA, *Daughter to GENTILLE.*  
 MARIA, *a Servant attending on GABRIELLA.*

SCENE,—ANGIERS.

---

THE TRIUMPH OF TIME.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <p>JUPITER.<br/>         MERCURY.<br/>         PLUTUS.<br/>         TIME.<br/>         ATROPHOS.<br/>         DESIRE.<br/>         VAIN-DELIGHT.<br/>         BOUNTY.<br/>         POVERTY.<br/>         HONESTY.</p> | <p>SIMPLICITY.<br/>         HUMILITY.<br/>         FAME.<br/>         INDUSTRY.<br/>         THE ARTS.<br/>         LABOUR.<br/>         CRAFT.<br/>         LUCK.<br/>         VANITY.<br/>         INDIANS.</p> |
|---|---|

## INDUCTION.

LISBON. *A State-Room in the Palace, with a Throne and Scaffolds, crowded with Spectators.*

*Enter FRIGOSO. [Noise within.]*

*Fri.* Away with those bald-pated rascals there! their wits are bound up in vellum; they are not current here. Down with those city gentlemen! Out with those cuckolds, I say, and in with their wives at the back door!—Worship and place, I am weary of ye; ye lie on my shoulders like a load of gold on an ass's back. A man in authority is but as a candle in the wind, sooner wasted or blown out than under a bushel.—How now! What's the matter?—who are you, sir?

*Enter RINALDO.*

*Rin.* Who am I, sir? Why, do you not know me?

*Fri.* No, by my faith, do I not.

*Rin.* I am sure we dined together to-day.

*Fri.* That's all one: as I dined with you in the city, and as you paid for my dinner there, I do know you, and am beholding to you: but as my mind is since transmigrated into my office, and as you come to court to have me pay you again, and be beholding to me, I know you not, I know you not!

*Rin.* Nay, but look you, sir!

*Fri.* Pardon me! If you had been my bedfellow these seven years, and lent me money to buy my place, I must not transgress principles: this very talking with you is an ill example.

*Rin.* Fish! You are too punctual a courtier, sir! Why, I am a courtier too; yet never understood the place or name to be so infectious to humanity and manners, as to cast a man into a burning pride and arrogance, for which there is no cure. I am a courtier, and yet I will know my friends, I tell you.

*Fri.* And I tell you, you will thrive accordingly, I warrant you.

*Rin.* But, hark you, signor Frigoso! you shall first understand, I have no friends with me to trouble you.

*Fri.* Humh! that's a good motive.

*Rin.* Nor to borrow money of you.

*Fri.* That's an excellent motive.

*Rin.* No, my sweet don, nor to ask what you owe me.

*Fri.* Why, that is the very motive of motives why I ought and will know thee: and if I had not wound thee up to this promise, I would not have known thee these fifteen years, no more than the arrantest or most foundered Castilian that followed our new queen's carriages a-foot.

*Rin.* Nor for anything, dear don, but that you would place me conveniently to see the play to-night.

*Fri.* That shall I, signor Rinaldo. But would you had come sooner: You see how full the scaffolds are! there is scant room for a lover's thought here.—Gentlewomen, sit close, for shame! Has none of ye a little corner for this gentleman?—I'll place you, fear not. And how did our brave king of Portugal, Emanuel, bear himself to-day? You saw the solemnity of the marriage.

*Rin.* Why, like a fit husband for so gracious and excellent a princess, as his worthy mate Isabella, the king of Castile's daughter, doth, in

her very external lineaments, mixture of colours, and joining dove-like behaviour, assure herself to be. And I protest, my dear don, seriously, I can sing prophetically nothing but blessed hymns, and happy occasions to this sacred union of Portugal and Castile, which have so wisely and mutually conjoined two such virtuous and beautiful princes as these are; and, in all opinion, like to multiply to their very last minute.

*Fri.* The king is entering: Signor, hover hereabout, and as soon as the train is set, clap into me; we'll stand near the state. If you have any creditors here, they shall renew bonds a twelvemonth on such a sight: But to touch the pomel of the king's chair, in the sight of a citizen, is better security for a thousand double ducats, than three of the best merchants in Lisbon. Besides, signor, we will censure, not only the king in the play here, that reigns his two hours, but the king himself, that is to rule his life-time. Take my counsel!—I have one word to say to this noble assembly, and I am for you.

*Rin.* Your method shall govern me.

*Fri.* *Prologues are hushiers bare before the wise;*

*Why may not then a hushier prologueise?  
Here's a fair sight; and were ye oftner seen*

*Thus gather'd here, 'twould please our king  
and queen.*

*Upon my conscience, ye are welcome all  
To Lisbon, and the court of Portugal;  
Where your fair eyes shall feed on no worse  
sights*

*Than preparations made for kings' de-  
lights.*

*We wish to men content, the manliest  
treasure;*

*And to the women, their own wish'd-for  
pleasure!* [Flourish.]

*Enter EMANUEL and ISABELLA, and take their seat on the Throne; Lords, and Attendants.*

*Eman.* Fair fountain of my life, from whose pure streams

The propagation of two kingdoms flows,  
Never contention rise in either's breast,  
But contestation whose love shall be best!

*Isab.* Majestic ocean, that with plenty feeds  
Me, thy poor tributary rivulet;  
Sun of my beauty, that with radiant beams  
Dost gild and dance upon these humble streams;  
Cursed be my birth-hour, and my ending day,  
When back your lovefloods I forget to pay!  
Or if this breast of mine, your crystal brook,  
Ever take other form in, other look

But yours, or e'er produce unto your grace  
A strange reflection, or another's face,  
But be your love-book clasp'd, open'd to none  
But you, nor hold a story, but your own;  
A water fix'd, that ebbs nor floods pursue,  
Frozen to all, only dissolved to you!

*Eman.* Oh, who shall tell the sweetness of our love

To future times, and not be thought to lie?  
I look through this hour like a perspective,  
And far off see millions of prosperous seeds,

That our reciprocal affection breeds.  
Thus my white rib, close in my breast with me,  
Which nought shall tear hence, but mortality!

*Lords.* Be kingdoms blest in you, you blest in them!

*Fri.* Whist! signor! My strong imagination shews me Love, methinks, bathing in milk and wine in her cheeks. Oh, how she clips him, like a plant of ivy!

*Rin.* Ay; could not you be content to be an owl in such an ivy-bush, or one of the oaks of the city, to be so clipt?

*Fri.* Equivocal don, though I like the clipping well, I could not be content either to be your owl, or your ox of the city.—The play begins.

[*Flourish.*]

*Enter a Poet with a Garland.*

Poet Prologue. *Low at your sacred feet our poor muse lays*

*Her, and her thunder-fearless verdant days.*

*Four several Triumphs to your princely eyes,*

*Of Honour, Love, Death, and Time, do rise*

*From our approaching subject; which we move*

*Tow'rd you with fear, since that a sweeter love,*

*A brighter honour, purer chastity,*

*March in your breasts this day triumphantly,*

*Than our weak scenes can shew: Then her dare we*

*Present, like apes, and zanies, things that be Exemplified in you, but that we know*

*We ne'er craved grace which you did not bestow?*

## THE TRIUMPH OF HONOUR.

### SCENE I.—*Before the Walls of Athens.*

*Enter in Triumph with Drums, Trumpets, Colours, MARTIUS, VALERIUS, SOPHOCLES bound, NICODEMUS, CORNELIUS, Captains, and Soldiers.*

*Mar.* What means proud Sophocles?

*Soph.* To go even with Martius, And not to follow him like his officer: I never waited yet on any man.

*Mar.* Why, poor Athenian duke, thou martyr My blows have conquer'd thee.

[*slave;*]

*Soph.* Thy slave, proud Martius?

Cato thy countryman (whose constancy, Of all the Romans, I did honour most) Ripp'd himself twice to avoid slavery, Making himself his own anatomy.

But look thee, Martius; not a vein runs here From head to foot, but Sophocles would unseam,

and, Li' a spring-garden, shoot his scornful blood Into their eyes, durst come to tread on him.

As for thy blows, they did not conquer me: Seven battles have I met thee face to face, And given thee blow for blow, and wound for wound,

And, till thou taught'st me, knew not to retire: Thy sword was then as bold, thy arm as strong: Thy blows then, Martius, cannot conquer me.

*Val.* What is it then?

*Soph.* Fortune.

*Val.* Why, yet in that

Thou art the worse man, and must follow him.

*Soph.* Young sir, you err: If Fortune could be Or his, or yours, or mine, in good or evil,

[*call'd*] For any certain space, thou hadst spoke truth; But she but jests with man, and in mischance Abhors all constancy, flouting him still

With some small touch of good, or seeming good, Midst of his mischief; which vicissitude Makes him strait doff his armour, and his fence He had prepared before, to break her strokes.

So from the very zenith of her wheel, When she has dandled some choice favourite, Given him his boons in women, honour, wealth,

And all the various delicacies of earth, That the fool scorns the gods in his excess, She whirls, and leaves him at th' Antipodes.

*Mar.* Art sure we have taken him? is this Sophocles?

His fetter'd arms say, no; his free soul, ay. This Athens nurseth arts as well as arms.

*Soph.* Nor glory, Martius, in this day of thine! 'Tis behind yesterday, but before to-morrow; Who knows what Fortune then will do with thee? She never yet could make the better man, The better chance she has: The man that's best She still contends with, and doth favour least.

*Mar.* Methinks, a graver thunder than the skies Breaks from his lips: I am amazed to hear; And Athens' words, more than her swords, do fear.

[*Aside.*]

Slave Sophocles—

*Soph.* Martius, couldst thou acquire And did thy Roman gods so love thy prayers And solemn sacrifice, to grant thy suit To gather all the valour of the Cæsars Thy predecessors, and what is to come, And by their influence fling it on thee now, Thou couldst not make my mind go less, not part With all their swords one virtue from my soul: How am I vassal'd then? make such thy slaves, As dare not keep their goodness past their graves. Know, general, we two are chances on The die of Fate; now thrown, thy six is up, And my poor one beneath thee; next, thy throw May set me upmost, and cast thee below.

*Mar.* Yet will I try thee more: Calamity

[*Aside.*]

Is man's true touchstone.—Listen, insolent prince, That darest contemn the master of thy life, Which I will force here 'fore thy city walls With barbarous cruelty, and call thy wife To see it, and then after send her—

*Soph.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Mar.* And then demolish Athens to the ground. Depopulate her, fright away her fame, And leave succession neither stone nor name.

*Soph.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Mar.* Dost thou deride me ?

*Val.* Kneel ! ask Martius

For mercy, Sophocles, and live happy still !

*Soph.* Kneel ! and ask mercy ? Roman, art a god ?  
I never kneel'd, or begg'd, of any else.

Thou art a fool ! and I will lose no more  
Instructions on thee, now I find thy ears  
Are foolish, like thy tongue. [Solemn music.

*Enter DORIGEN, Ladies bearing a Sword.*

My Dorigen !

Oh, must she see me bound ?

1 *Capt.* There's the first sigh  
He breathed since he was born, I think.

2 *Capt.* Forbear,  
All but the lady his wife !

*Soph.* How my heart chides  
The manacles of my hands, that let them not  
Embrace my Dorigen !

*Val.* Turn but thy face,  
And ask thy life of Martius thus, and thou,  
With thy fair wife, shalt live ; Athens shall stand,  
And all her privileges augmented be.

*Soph.* 'Twere better Athens perish'd, and my  
(Which, Romans, I do know a worthy one,) [wife  
Than Sophocles should shrink of Sophocles,  
Commit prophane idolatry, by giving  
The reverence due to gods to thee, blown man !

*Mar.* Rough, stubborn cynic !

*Soph.* Thou art rougher far,  
And of a coarser wale, fuller of pride,  
Less temperate to bear prosperity.

Thou seest my mere neglect hath raised in thee  
A storm more boist'rous than the ocean's ;  
My virtue, Patience, makes thee vicious.

*Mar.* Why, fair-eyed lady, do you kneel ?

*Dor.* Great general,

Victorious, god-like Martius, your poor handmaid  
Kneels, for her husband will not, cannot ; speaks  
Thus humbly, that he may not. Listen, Roman !  
Thou whose advanced front doth speak thee Roman  
To every nation, and whose deeds assure it !  
Behold a princess, whose declining head,  
Like to a drooping lily after storms,  
Bows to thy feet, and playing here the slave,  
To keep her husband's greatness unabated ;  
All which doth make thy conquest greater ! For,  
If he be base in aught whom thou hast taken,  
Then Martius hath but taken a base prize :  
But if this jewel hold lustre and value,  
Martius is richer then in that he hath won.  
Oh, make him such a captive as thyself  
Unto another wouldst, great captain, be !  
Till then, he is no prisoner fit for thee.

*Mar.* Valerius, here is harmony would have  
brought

Old crabbed Saturn to sweet sleep, when Jove  
Did first incense him with rebellion !  
Athens doth make women philosophers ;  
And sure their children chat the talk of gods.

*Val.* Rise, beauteous Dorigen !

*Dor.* Not until I know

The general's resolution.

*Val.* One soft word

From Sophocles would calm him into tears,  
Like gentle showers after tempestuous winds.

*Dor.* To buy the world he will not give a word,  
A look, a tear, a knee, 'gainst his own judgment,  
And the divine composure of his mind :  
All which I therefore do ; and here present

This victor's wreath, this rich Athenian sword,  
Trophies of conquest, which, great Martius, wear,  
And be appeas'd ! Let Sophocles still live !

*Mar.* He would not live.

*Dor.* He would not beg to live :  
When he shall so forget, then I begin  
To command, Martius ; and when he kneels,  
Dorigen stands ; when he lets fall a tear,  
I dry mine eyes, and scorn him.

*Mar.* Scorn him now then,  
Here in the face of Athens and thy friends !—  
Self-will'd, stiff Sophocles, prepare to die,  
And by that sword thy lady honoured me,  
With which herself shall follow.—Romans, friends,  
Who dares but strike this stroke, shall part with me  
Half Athens, and my half of victory.

*Capt.* By Heaven, not we !

*Nic. Corn.* We two will do it, sir.

*Soph.* Away, ye fish-faced rascals !

*Val.* Martius,  
To eclipse this great eclipse labours thy fame ;  
Valerius thy brother shall for once  
Turn executioner : Give me the sword.—  
Now, Sophocles, I'll strike as suddenly  
As thou darest die.

*Soph.* Thou canst not ! and Valerius,  
'Tis less dishonour to thee thus to kill me,  
Than bid me kneel to Martius ; 'Tis to murder  
The fame of living men, when great ones do  
Their studies strangle ; poison makes away,  
The wretched hangman only ends the play.

*Val.* Art thou prepared ?

*Soph.* Yes.

*Val.* Bid thy wife farewell !

*Soph.* No ; I will take no leave !—My Dorigen,  
Yonder above, 'bout Ariadne's crown,  
My spirit shall hover for thee ; pr'ythee haste !

*Dor.* Stay, Sophocles ! with this tie up my sight ;  
Let not soft Nature so transformed be  
(And lose her gentler-sex'd humanity)  
To make me see my lord bleed !—So ! 'tis well ;  
Never one object underneath the sun  
Will I behold before my Sophocles.  
Farewell ! Now teach the Romans how to die.

*Mar.* Dost know what 'tis to die ?

*Soph.* Thou dost not, Martius,  
And therefore not what 'tis to live. To die  
Is to begin to live : It is to end  
An old stale weary work, and to commence  
A newer and a better : 'Tis to leave  
Deceitful knaves, for the society  
Of gods and goodness : Thou thyself must part  
At last from all thy garlands, pleasures, triumphs,  
And prove thy fortitude, what then 'twill do.

*Val.* But art not grieved nor vexed to leave  
life thus ?

*Soph.* Why should I grieve or vex for being  
sent

To them I ever loved best ?—Now, I'll kneel ;  
But with my back toward thee. 'Tis the last duty  
This trunk can do the gods.

*Mar.* Strike, strike, Valerius,  
Or Martius' heart will leap out at his mouth !  
This is a man ; a woman ! Kiss thy lord,  
And live with all the freedom you were wont.  
Oh, Love ! thou doubly hast afflicted me,  
With virtue and with beauty. Treacherous heart,  
My hand shall cast thee quick into my urn,  
Ere thou transgress this knot of piety.

*Val.* What ails my brother ?

*Soph.* Martius, oh, Martius!  
Thou now hast found a way to conquer me.  
*Dor.* Oh, star of Rome, what gratitude can speak  
Fit words to follow such a deed as this?

*Mar.* Doth Juno talk, or Dorigen?

*Val.* You are observed.

*Mar.* This admirable duke, Valerius, [Apart.  
With his disdain of fortune, and of death,  
Captiv'd himself, hath captiv'd me;  
And though my arm hath ta'en his body here,  
His soul hath subjugat'd Martius' soul;  
By Romulus, he is all soul, I think!  
He hath no flesh, and spirit cannot be gyv'd:  
Then we have vanquish'd nothing; he is free,  
And Martius walks now in captivity.

*Soph.* How fares the noble Roman?

*Mar.* Why?

*Dor.* Your blood

Is sunk down to your heart, and your bright eyes  
Have lost their splendour.

*Mar.* Baser fires go out

When the sun shines on 'em.—I am not well;  
An apoplectic fit I use to have,  
After my heats in war carelessly cool'd.

*Soph.* Martius shall rest in Athens with his  
friends,

Till this distemper leave him. Oh, great Roman!  
See Sophocles do that for thee he could not  
Do for himself, weep. Martius, by the gods,  
It grieves me that so brave a soul should suffer  
Under the body's weak infirmity.—  
Sweet lady, take him to thy loving charge,  
And let thy care be tender.

*Dor.* Kingly sir,

I am your nurse and servant.

*Mar.* Oh, dear lady,

My mistress, nay, my deity! Guide me, Heaven!  
Ten wreaths triumphant Martius will give.  
To change a Martius for a Sophocles:  
Can it not be done, Valerius, with this boot?  
Inseparable affection, ever thus  
Colleague with Athens Rome!

*Dor.* Beat warlike tunes,

Whilst Dorigen thus honours Martius' brow  
With one victorious wreath more!

*Soph.* And Sophocles

Thus girds his sword of conquest to his thigh,  
Which ne'er be drawn, but cut out victory!

*Lords.* For ever be it thus!

[Exeunt all but CORNELIUS and NICODEMUS.]

*Corn.* Corporal Nicodemus, a word with you.

*Nic.* My worthy sutler Cornelius, it befits not  
Nicodemus the Roman officer to parley with a  
fellow of thy rank; the affairs of the empire are to  
be occupied.

*Corn.* Let the affairs of the empire lie awhile  
unoccupied! Sweet Nicodemus, I do require the  
money at thy hands, which thou dost owe me;  
and if fair means cannot attain, force of arms shall  
accomplish. [Draws.]

*Nic.* Put up, and live.

*Corn.* I have put up too much already, thou  
corporal of concupiscence; for I suspect thou hast  
dishonour'd my flock-bed, and with thy foolish  
eloquence, and that bewitching face of thine,  
drawn my wife, the young harlotry baggage, to  
prostitute herself unto thee. Draw, therefore;  
for thou shalt find thyself a mortal corporal!

*Nic.* Stay thy dead-doing hand, and hear; I  
will rather descend from my honour, and argue

these contumelies with thee, than clutch thee (poor  
fly) in these eaglet claws of mine; or draw my  
sword of fate on a peasant, a besognio, a coccoloch,  
as thou art. Thou shalt first understand this  
foolish eloquence, and intolerable beauty of mine,  
(both which, I protest, are merely natural) are the  
gifts of the gods, with which I have neither sent  
bawdy sonnet, nor amorous glance, or (as the  
vulgar call it) sheep's eye to thy betrothed  
Florence.

*Corn.* Thou liest!

*Nic.* Oh, gods of Rome, was Nicodemus born  
To bear those braveries from a poor provant?  
Yet when dogs bark, or when the asses bray,  
The lion laughs; not roars, but goes his way.

*Corn.* A pox o' your poetical vein! this versifying  
my wife, has hornified me. Sweet corporal Cod's-  
head, no more standing on your punctilios and  
punctetos of honour, they are not worth a louse;  
the truth is, thou art the general's bigamy, that is,  
his fool, and his knave; thou art miscreant and  
recreant; not an horse-boy in the legions, but  
has beaten thee; thy beginning was knapsack, and  
thy ending will be halter-sack.

*Nic.* Methinks I am now Sophocles the wise,  
and thou art Martius the mad.

*Corn.* No more of your tricks, good corporal  
Leather-chops! I say, thou hast dishonour'd me;  
and since honour now-a-days is only repaired by  
money, pay me, and I am satisfied; even reckon-  
ing keeps long friends.

*Nic.* Let us continue friends then, for I have  
been even with thee a long time; and though I  
have not paid thee, I have paid thy wife.

*Corn.* Flow forth, my tears! thou hast de-  
flowered her, Tarquin! the garden of my delight,  
hedged about, in which there was but one bowling-  
alley for mine own private procreation, thou hast,  
like a thief in the night, leaped the hedge, entered  
my alley, and without my privacy played thine  
own rubbers.

*Nic.* How long shall patience thus securely  
Is it my fault, if these attractive eyes, [snore:  
This budding chin, or rosy-coloured cheek,  
This comely body, and this wren leg,  
Have drawn her into a fool's paradise?  
By Cupid's godhead I do swear (no other)  
She's chaster far than Lucrece, her grandmother;  
Pure as glass-window, ere the rider dash it,  
Whiter than lady's smock, when she did wash it:  
For well thou wot'st (though now my heart's com-  
mandress)

I once was free, and she but the camp's laundress.

*Corn.* Ay; she then came sweet to me; so part  
about her but smelt of soap-suds; like a dried  
out of a wash-bowl. Pray, or pay!

*Nic.* Hold!

*Corn.* Was thy cheese mouldy, or thy penny-  
worths small?—Was not thy ale the mightiest of  
the earth in malt, and thy stupe fill'd like a tide?  
was not thy bed soft, and thy bacon fatter than a  
drosy? Come, sir!

*Nic.* Mars then inspire me with the fencing's skill  
Of our tragedian actors! Honour pricks;  
And, sutler, now I come with thwacks and  
thwicks.

Grant us one crush, one pass, and now a high  
lavalto fall;

Then up again, now down again, yet do no harm  
at all! [They exit.]

Enter FLORENCE.

*Flor.* Oh, that ever I was born! why, gentlemen!

*Corn.* Messaline of Rome; away, disloyal concubine! I will be deafer to thee than thou art to others: I will have my hundred drachmas he owes me, thou arrant whore!

*Flor.* I know he is an hundred drachmas o' the score; but what o' that? no bloodshed, sweet Cornelius! Oh, my heart! o' my conscience, 'tis fallen throw the bottom of my belly! Oh, my sweet Didymus, if either of ye miskill one another, what will become of poor Florence! pacify yourselves, I pray!

*Corn.* Go to! my heart's not stone; I am not marble: dry your eyes, Florence!—[*Aside.*] The scurvy ape's face knows my blind side well enough.—Leave your puling: will this content you? let him taste thy nether lip; which, in sign of amity, I thus take off again. Go thy ways, and provide the cow's udder.

*Nic.* Lily of concord!—And now, honest sutler, since I have had proof as well of thy good nature, as of thy wife's before, I will acquaint thee with a project shall fully satisfy thee for thy debt. Thou shalt understand, I am shortly to be knighted.

*Corn.* The devil thou art!

*Nic.* Renounce me else! For the sustenance of which worship (which worship many times wants sustenance) I have here the general's grant to have the leading of two hundred men.

*Corn.* You jest, you jest!

*Nic.* Refuse me else to the pit.

*Corn.* Mercy on us! ha' you not forgot yourself? by your swearing, you should be knighted already.

*Nic.* Damn me, sir, here's his hand! Read it.

*Corn.* Alas, I cannot.

*Nic.* [*Aside.*] I know that.—It has pleased the general to look upon my service. Now, sir, shall you join with me in petitioning for fifty men more, in regard of my arrears to you; which, if granted, I will bestow the whole profit of those fifty men on thee and thine heirs for ever, Till Atropos do cut this simple thread.

*Corn.* No more, dear corporal! Sir Nicodemus that shall be! I cry your worship's mercy! I am your servant, body and goods, moveables and immoveables; use my house, use my wife, use me, abuse me, do what you list.

*Nic.* A figment is a candied lie: This is an old pass. Mark, what follows! [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—A rocky View before the City.

Enter MARTIUS and two Captains.

*Mar.* Pray leave me! You are Romans, honest men;

Keep me not company; I am turned knave, Have lost my fame and nature. [*Exeunt Captains.*]

Athens, Athens,

This Dorigen is thy Palladium!

He that will sack thee, must betray her first, Whose words wound deeper than her husband's sword;

Her eyes make captive still the conqueror, And here they keep her only to that end.

Oh, subtle devil, what a golden ball

Did tempt, when thou didst cast her in my way!

Why, foolish Sophocles, brought'st thou not to field Thy lady, that thou might'st have overcome? Martius had kneel'd, and yielded all his wreaths That hang like jewels on the seven-fold hill, And bid Rome send him out to fight with men, (For that she knew he durst) and not 'gainst Fate Or deities; what mortal conquers them? Insatiate Julius, when his victories Had run o'er half the world, had he met her, There he had stopp'd the legend of his deeds, Laid by his arms, been overcome himself, And let her vanquish th' other half; and Fame Made beauteous Dorigen the greater name. Shall I thus fall? I will not! no; my tears, Cast on my heart, shall quench these lawless fires: He conquers best, conquers his lewd desires.

Enter DORIGEN with Ladies.

*Dor.* Great sir, my lord commands me visit you: And thinks your retired melancholy proceeds From some distaste of worthless entertainment. Will't please you take your chamber? How d'ye do, sir?

*Mar.* [*Aside.*] Lost, lost again! the wild rage of my blood

Doth ocean-like o'erflow the shallow shore Of my weak virtue: My desire's a vane, That the least breath from her turns every way.

*Dor.* What says my lord?

*Mar.* Dismiss

Your women, pray, and I'll reveal my grief.

*Dor.* Leave me! [*Exeunt Ladies.*]

*Mar.* Long tales of love (whilst love itself Might be enjoy'd) are languishing delays. There is a secret strange lies in my breast, I will partake with you, which much concerns Your lord, yourself, and me. Oh!

*Dor.* Strange secrets, sir, Should not be made so cheap to strangers: yet If your strange secret do no lower lie Than in your breast, discover it.

*Mar.* I will.

Oh! Can you not see it, lady, in my sighs?

*Dor.* Sighs none can paint, and therefore who can see?

*Mar.* Scorn me not, Dorigen, with mocks! Alcides,

That master'd monsters, was by beauty tamed; Omphale smiled his club out of his hand, And made him spin her smocks.—Oh, sweet, I love And I love Sophocles: I must enjoy you; [you: And yet I would not injure him.

*Dor.* Let go!

You hurt me, sir! Farewell!—Stay, is this Mar- I will not tell my lord: He'll swear I lie; [tius? Doubt my fidelity, before thy honour.

How hast thou vexed the gods, that they would let Thus violate friendship, hospitality, [thee And all the bonds of sacred piety?

Sure thou but try'st me, out of love to him, And wouldst reject me if I did consent.

Oh, Martius, Martius! wouldst thou in one minute Blast all thy laurels, which so many years Thou hast been purchasing with blood and sweat?

Hath Dorigen never been written, read, Without the epithet of *chaste*, *chaste* Dorigen,

And wouldst thou fall upon her chastity, Like a black drop of ink, to blot it out?

When men shall read the records of thy valour, Thy hitherto-brave virtue, and approach

(Highly content yet) to this foul assault  
Included in this leaf, this ominous leaf,  
They shall throw down the book, and read no more,  
Though the best deeds ensue, and all conclude  
That ravell'd thy whole story, whose sound heart  
(Which should have been) proved the most leprous  
part.

*Mar.* Oh, thou confut'st divinely, and thy  
Do fall like rods upon me! but they have [words  
Such silken lines and silver hooks, that I  
Am faster snared; My love has ta'en such hold,  
That (like two wrestlers) though thou stronger be,  
And hast cast me, I hope to pull thee after:  
I must, or perish.

*Dor.* Perish, Martius, then!  
For I here vow unto the gods, these rocks,  
These rocks we see so fix'd, shall be removed,  
Made champain field, ere I so impious prove,  
To stain my lord's bed with adulterous love.

*Enter VALERIUS.*

*Val.* The gods protect fair Dorigen!

*Dor.* Amen!

From all you volvish Romans!

[*Exit.*

*Val.* Ha! what's this?

Still, brother, in your moods?—Oh, then my  
doubts

Are truths. Have at it! I must try a way  
To be resolved. [*Aside.*

*Mar.* How strangely dost thou look!  
What ail'st thou?

*Val.* What ail'st thou?

*Mar.* Why, I am mad.

*Val.* Why, I am madder!—Martius, draw thy  
And lop a villain from the earth; for if [sword,  
Thou wilt not, on some tree about this place  
I'll hang myself! Valerius shall not live  
To wound his brother's honour, stain his country,  
And branded with ingratitude to all times.

*Mar.* For what can all this be?

*Val.* I am in love.

*Mar.* Why, so am I.—With whom? ha?

*Val.* Dorigen.

*Mar.* With Dorigen?—How dost thou love her?  
speak;

*Val.* Even to the height of lust; and I must  
Or else I die. [*have her,*

*Mar.* Thou shalt, thou daring traitor.  
On all the confines I have rid my horse,  
Was there no other woman for thy choice  
But Dorigen? Why, villain, she is mine:  
She makes me pine thus, sullen, mad, and fool;  
'Tis I must have her, or I die.

*Val.* Oh, all ye gods,  
With mercy look on this declining rock  
Of valour and of virtue! breed not up,  
From infancy, in honour to full man,  
As you have done him, to destroy! Here, strike!  
For I have only search'd thy wound; dispatch!  
Far, far be such love from Valerius!  
So far, he scorns to live to be call'd *brother*  
By him that dares own such folly and such vice.

*Mar.* 'Tis truth thou speak'st! but I do hate  
it: Peace!

If Heaven will snatch my sword out of my hand,  
And put a rattle in it, what can I do?  
He that is destined to be odious  
In his old age, must undergo his fate.

*Enter CORNELIUS and NICODEMUS.*

*Corn.* If you do not back me, I shall never do't.

*Nic.* I warrant you.

*Corn.* Humh, humh!—Sir! my lord! my lord!

*Mar.* Ha! what's the matter?

*Corn.* Humh!—Concerning the odd fifty, my  
lord, an't please your generality, his worship Sir  
Nicodemus—

*Mar.* What's here? a pass? you would far  
Rome? You lubbers!

Doth one day's laziness make you covet home?

Away, ye boarish rogues! ye dogs, away!

[*Strikes them.*

*Enter FLORENCE.*

*Corn.* Oh, oh, oh!

*Flor.* How now, man? are you satisfied!

*Corn.* Ay, ay, ay; a pox o' your corporal! I am  
paid soundly; I was never better paid in all my  
life.

*Flor.* Marry, the gods' blessing on his honour's  
heart!—You have done a charitable deed, sir;  
many more such may you live to do, sir! The gods  
keep you, sir, the gods protect you!

[*Exit with CORNELIUS and NICODEMUS.*

*Mar.* These peasants mock me sure!—Valerius.

Forgive my dotage, see my ashes urn'd,  
And tell fair Dorigen, (she that but now  
Left me with this harsh vow, sooner these rocks  
Should be removed, than she would yield) that I  
Was yet so loving, on her gift to die!

*Val.* Oh, Jupiter forbid it, sir, and grant  
This my device may certify thy mind!  
You are my brother, nor must perish thus;  
Be comforted! Think you fair Dorigen  
Would yield your wishes, if these envious rocks  
By skill could be removed, or by fallacy  
She made believe so?

*Mar.* Why, she could not chuse;  
The Athenians are religious in their vows,  
Above all nations.

*Val.* Soft! down yonder hill  
The lady comes this way. Once more to try her.  
If she persist in obstinacy, by my skill,  
Learn'd from the old Chaldean by my tutor,  
Who train'd me in the mathematics, I will  
So dazzle and delude her sight, that she  
Shall think this great impossibility  
Effected by some supernatural means.  
Be confident; this engine shall at least,  
Till the gods better order, still this breast. [*Exit.*

*Mar.* Oh, my best brother, go; and for reward  
Chuse any part o' th' world, I'll give it thee.  
Oh, little Love, men say thou art a god;  
Thou might'st have got a fitter fool than I.

*Enter DORIGEN.*

*Dor.* Art thou there, basilisk? Remove thee  
For I am sick to death with thy infection. [*Eyes.*

*Mar.* Yet, yet have mercy on me! save him,  
lady,

Whose single arm defends all Rome, whose mercy  
Hath saved thy husband's and thy life!

*Dor.* To spoil

Our fame and honours? No; my vow is fix'd,  
And stands as constant as these stones do, still.

*Mar.* Then pity me, ye gods! you only may  
Move her, by tearing these firm stones away.

[*Solemn music. A mist arises, the rocks remove.*

*Enter VALENIUS, habited like MERCURY, singing.*

*Val.* Martius, rejoice! Jove sends me from above,  
His messenger, to cure thy desperate love,

To shew rash vows cannot bind Destiny.  
 Lady, behold, the rocks transplanted be!  
 Hard-hearted Dorigen, yielded; lest, for contempt,  
 They fix thee here a rock, whence they're exempt.  
 [Exit.]

*Dor.* What strange delusion's this? what sor-  
 Affrights me with these apparitions? [crying]  
 My colder chastity's nigh turn'd to death.—  
 Hence, lewd magician! dar'st thou make the gods  
 Bawds to thy lust? will they do miracles  
 To further evil? or do they love it now?  
 Know, if they dare do so, I dare hate them,  
 And will no longer serve 'em. Jupiter,  
 Thy golden shower, nor thy snow-white swan,  
 Had I been Leda, or bright Danaë,  
 Had bought mine honour. Turn me into stone,  
 For being good, and blush when thou hast done!  
 [Exit DORIGEN.]

Enter VALERIUS.

*Mar.* Oh, my Valerius, all yet will not do:  
 Unless I could so draw mine honesty  
 Down to the lees to be a ravisher.  
 She calls me witch and villain!  
*Val.* Patience, sir!  
 The gods will punish perjury. Let her breathe,  
 And ruminates on this strange sight!—Time decays  
 [Aside.]  
 The strongest, fairest buildings we can find;  
 But still, Diana, fortify her mind! [Exit.]

SCENE III.—Athens. A Room in the House  
 of SOPHOCLES.

Enter SOPHOCLES and DORIGEN.

*Soph.* Weep not, bright Dorigen; for thou hast  
 stood  
 Constant and chaste, it seems, 'gainst gods and  
 men,  
 When rocks and mountains were removed.—These  
 wonders [Aside.]

Do stupify my senses! Martius,  
 This is inhuman. Was thy sickness lust?  
 Yet were this truth, why weeps she? Jealous soul,  
 What dost thou thus suggest? Vows, magic, rocks,  
 Fine tales, and tears! She ne'er complain'd before.  
 I bade her visit him; she often did,  
 Had many opportunities. Humh! 'tis naught:  
 Oh!

No way but this.—Come, weep no more; I have  
 This miracle, the anger of the gods, [ponder'd]  
 Thy vow, my love to thee and Martius:  
 He must not perish, nor thou be forsworn,  
 Lest worse fates follow us: Go, keep thy oath!  
 For *chaste*, and *whore*, are words of equal length.  
 But let not Martius know that I consent.—

Oh, I am pull'd in pieces! [Aside.]  
*Dor.* Ay? say you so? [Aside.]  
 I'll meet you in your path. Oh, wretched men!  
 With all your valour and your learning, bubbles!—  
 [Kneels.]

Forgive me, Sophocles—Yet why kneel I  
 For pardon, having been but over-diligent,  
 Like an obedient servant, antedating  
 My lord's command!—  
 Sir, I have often, and already given  
 This bosom up to his embraces, and  
 Am proud that my dear lord is pleased with it;  
 Whose gentle honourable mind I see  
 Participates even all, his wife and all,

Unto his friend. You are sad, sir! Martius loves  
 And I love Martius with such ardency [me,  
 As never married couple could: I must  
 Attend him now. My lord, when you have need  
 To use your own wife, pray, sir, send for me;  
 Till then, make use of your philosophy! [Exit.]  
*Soph.* Stay, Dorigen!—Oh, me, inquisitive fool!  
 Thou that didst order this congested heap  
 When it was chaos, 'twixt thy spacious palms,  
 Forming it to this vast rotundity,  
 Dissolve it now; shuffle the elements,  
 That no one proper by itself may stand!  
 Let the sea quench the sun, and in that instant  
 The sun drink up the sea! Day, ne'er come down,  
 To light me to those deeds that must be done!  
 [Exit.]

SCENE IV.—The Roman Camp before the City.

Enter MARTIUS, VALERIUS, Captains and Soldiers, with  
 Drums and Colours at one Door; and DORIGEN with  
 Ladies, at another.

*Dor.* Hail, general of Rome! From Sophocles,  
 That honours Martius, Dorigen presents  
 Herself to be dishonour'd: Do thy will;  
 For Sophocles commands me to obey.  
 Come, violate all rules of holiness,  
 And rend the consecrated knot of love!

*Mar.* Never, Valerius, was I blest till now!  
 Behold the end of all my weary steps,  
 The prize of all my battles. Leave us, all;  
 Leave us as quick as thought. Thus joy begin!  
 In zealous love a minute's loss is sin.

*Val.* Can Martius be so vile? or Dorigen?

*Dor.* Stay, stay! and, monster, keep thou fur-  
 ther off!  
 I thought thy brave soul would have much, much  
 loath'd

To have gone on still on such terms as this.  
 See, thou ungrateful, since thy desperate lust  
 Nothing can cure but death, I'll die for thee,  
 While my chaste name lives to posterity.

[Offers to kill herself.]

*Mar.* [Kneels.] Live, live, (thou angel of thy  
 sex, forgive!)

Till by those golden tresses thou be'st snatch'd  
 Alive to Heaven; for thy corruption's  
 So little, that it cannot suffer death.  
 Was ever such a woman? Oh, my mirror!  
 How perfectly thou shew'st me all my faults,  
 Which now I hate; and when I next attempt thee,  
 Let all the fires in the zodiac  
 Drop on this cursed head!

*All.* Oh, bless'd event!

*Dor.* Rise like the sun again in all his glory,  
 After a dark eclipse!

*Mar.* Never, without a pardon.

[Enter SOPHOCLES, and two or three with him.]

*Dor.* Sir, you have forgiven yourself.

*Soph.* Behold their impudence! are my words  
 just?

Unthankful man, viper to arms, and Rome  
 Thy natural mother! have I warm'd thee here  
 To corrode even my heart? Martius, prepare  
 To kill me, or be kill'd.

*Mar.* Why, Sophocles,  
 Then pr'ythee kill me; I deserve it highly;  
 For I have both transgress'd 'gainst men and gods;  
 But am repentant now, and in best case

To uncase my soul of this oppressing flesh ;  
Which, though (gods witness) ne'er was actually  
Injurious to thy wife and thee, yet 'twas  
Her goodness that restrained and held me now :  
But take my life, dear friend, for my intent,  
Or else forgive it !

*Val.* By the gods of Athens,  
These words are true, and all direct again.

*Soph.* Pardon me, Dorigen !

*Mar.* Forgive me, Sophocles,  
And Dorigen too, and every one that's good !

*Dor.* Rise, noble Roman.—Beloved Sophocles,  
Take to thy breast thy friend !

*Mar.* And to thy heart  
Thy matchless wife ! Heaven has not stuff enough  
To make another such ; for if it could,  
Martius would marry too. For thy blest sake,  
(Oh, thou infinity of excellence)  
Henceforth in men's discourse Rome shall not take  
The wall of Athens, as 'to-fore. But when  
In their fair honours we to speak do come,  
We'll say 'twas so in Athens and in Rome.

[*Exeunt in pomp.*]

*DIANA descends.*

*Diana.* Honour, set open thy gates, and with thee  
bring

*My servant and thy friend, fair Dorigen ;  
Let her triumph with him, her lord and friend,  
Who, though misled, still honour was their end !*

[*Flourish.*]

*Enter the Show of Honour's Triumph ; a great flourish of  
Trumpets and Drums within ; then enter a noise of  
Trumpets sounding cheerfully ; then follows an armed  
Knight bearing a Crimson Banneret in hand, with the  
inscription Valour ; by his side a Lady bearing a  
White Banneret, the inscription Clemency ; next,  
MARTIUS and SOPHOCLES with Coronets ; next, two  
Ladies, one bearing a White Banneret, the inscription  
Chastity ; the other a Black, the inscription Constancy ;  
then DORIGEN crowned ; last, a Chariot drawn by two  
Moors, in it a Person crowned, with a Sceptre ; on the  
top, in an antique Escutcheon, is written Honour. As  
they pass over, DIANA ascends.*

*Rin.* How like you it ?

*Fri.* Rarely ; so well, I would they would do it

again ! How many of our wives now-a-days would  
deserve to triumph in such a chariot !

*Rin.* That's all one ; you see they triumph in  
caroches.

*Fri.* That they do, by the mass ; but not all  
neither ; many of them are content with carts.  
But, signor, I have now found out a great absurdity,  
i' faith.

*Rin.* What was't ?

*Fri.* The prologue, presenting four Triumph  
made but three legs to the king : A three-legg'd  
prologue ! 'Twas monstrous.

*Rin.* 'T had been more monstrous to have had  
a four-legg'd one. Peace ! the king speaks.

*Eman.* Here was a woman, Isabel !

*Isab.* Ay, my lord,  
But that she told a lie to vex her husband ;  
Therein she fail'd.

*Eman.* She served him well enough ;  
He that was so much man, yet would be cast  
To jealousy for her integrity.  
This teacheth us, the passion of love  
Can fight with soldiers, and with scholars too.

*Isab.* In Martius, clemency and valour shown,  
In the other, courage and humanity ;  
And therefore in the Triumph they were usher'd  
By Clemency and Valour.

*Eman.* Rightly observed ;  
As she by Chastity and Constancy.  
What hurt's now in a play, 'gainst which some men  
So vehemently ? thou and I, my love,  
Make excellent use, methinks : I learn to be  
A lawful lover void of jealousy,  
And thou a constant wife. Sweet poetry's  
A flower, where men, like bees and spiders, may  
Bear poison, or else sweets and wax away.  
Be venom-drawing spiders they that will !  
I'll be the bee, and suck the honey still. [*Flourish.*]

*CUPID descends.*

*Cupid.* Stay, clouds ! ye rack too fast. Bright  
*Phabus, see,*

*Honour has triumph'd with fair Chastity :  
Give Love now leave, in purity to shew  
Unchaste affections fly not from his bow.  
Produce the sweet example of your youth,  
Whilst I provide a Triumph for your truth.*

[*Flourish.*]

## THE TRIUMPH OF LOVE.

SCENE I.—MILAN. *A Room in BENVOLGIO'S  
House.*

*Enter VIOLANTE (with child) and GERRARD.*

*Vio.* Why does my Gerrard grieve ?

*Ger.* Oh, my sweet mistress,  
It is not life (which, by our Milan law,  
My fact hath forfeited) makes me thus pensive ;  
That I would lose to save the little finger  
Of this your noble burden from least hurt,  
Because your blood is in't : But since your love  
Made poor incompatible me the parent,  
(Being we are not married) your dear blood  
Falls under the same cruel penalty ;  
And can Heaven think fit you die for me ?

For Heaven's sake, say I ravish'd you ! I'll swear  
To keep your life safe and repute unstain'd. [*It.*]

*Vio.* Oh, Gerrard, thou'rt my life and faculties.  
(And if I lose thee, I'll not keep mine own)  
The thought of whom sweetens all miseries.  
Wouldst have me murder thee beyond thy death !  
Unjustly scandal thee with ravishment ?  
It was so far from rape, that, Heaven doth know.  
If ever the first lovers, ere they fell,  
Knew simply in the state of innocence,  
Such was this act, this, that doth ask no blush !

*Ger.* Oh, but my rarest Violante, when  
My lord Randolpho, brother to your father,  
Shall understand this, how will he exclaim,  
At my poor aunt, and me, which his free aims

Hath nursed, since Milan by the duke of Mantua (Who now usurps it) was surprised ! that time My father and my mother were both slain, With my aunt's husband, as she says, their states Despoil'd and seil'd ; 'tis past my memory, But thus she told me : Only this I know, Since I could understand, your honour'd uncle Hath given me all the liberal education That his own son might look for, had he one ; Now will he say, " Dost thou requite me thus ? " Oh ! the thought kills me.

*Vio.* Gentle, gentle Gerrard, Be cheer'd, and hope the best ! My mother, father, And uncle, love me most indulgently, Being the only branch of all their stocks : But neither they, nor he thou wouldst not grieve With this unwelcome news, shall ever hear Violante's tongue reveal, much less accuse, Gerrard to be the father of his own : I'll rather silent die, that thou may'st live To see thy little offspring grow and thrive.

Enter DOROTHEA.

*Der.* Mistress, away ! your lord and father seeks I'll convey Gerrard out at the back-door. [you : He has found a husband for you, and insults In his invention, little thinking you Have made your own choice, and possess'd him too.

*Vio.* A husband ? 't must be Gerrard, or my Farewell ! be only true unto thyself, [death. And know, Heaven's goodness shall prevented be, Ere worst it Gerrard suffer harm for me.

*Ger.* Farewell, my life and soul ! Aunt, to your counsel I flee for aid.—Oh, unexpressible Love ! thou art An undigested heap of mixed extremes, Whose pangs are wakings, and whose pleasures dreams. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

Enter BENVOLIO, ANGELINA, and FERDINAND.

*Benv.* My Angelina, never didst thou yet So please me, as in this consent ; and yet Thou hast pleased me well, I swear, old wench ! ha, ha !—

Ferdinand, she's thine own ; thou'st have her, boy ; Ask thy good lady else.

*Ferd.* Whom shall I have, sir ?

*Benv.* Whom do you think, i' faith ?

*Ang.* Guess !

*Ferd.* Noble madam,

I may hope (prompted by [my] shallow merit)

Through your profound grace, for your chamber-

*Benv.* How's that ? how's that ? [maid.

*Ferd.* Her chambermaid, my lord.

*Benv.* Her chamber-pot, my lord !—You modest Thou never shew'st thyself an ass till now : [ass ! 'Fore Heaven, I am angry with thee ! Sirrah, sirrah,

This whitemeat spirit's not yours legitimate :

Advance your hope, an't please you ! guess again.

*Ang.* And let your thoughts flee higher ; aim them right,

Sir, you may hit ; you have the fairest white.

*Ferd.* If I may be so bold then, my good lord, Your favour doth encourage me to aspire To catch my lady's gentlewoman.

*Benv.* Where ?

Where would you catch her ?

Do you know my daughter ? Violante, sir ?

*Ang.* Well said ; no more about the bush !

*Ferd.* My good lord,

I have gazed on Violante, and the stars, Whose heavenly influence I admired, not knew : Nor ever was so sinful to believe I might attain it.

*Benv.* Now you're an ass again ;

For, if thou ne'er attain'st, 'tis only long Of that faint heart of thine, which never did it. She is your lord's heir, mine, Benvoglio's heir, My brother's too, Randolpho's ; her descent Not behind any of the Millanois.

And, Ferdinand, although thy parentage be Unknown, thou know'st that I have bred thee up From five years old ; and (do not blush to hear it) Have found thy wisdom, trust, and fair success So full in all my affairs, that I am fitter To call thee master than thou me thy lord : Thou canst not be but sprung of gentlest blood ; Thy mind shines through thee, like the radiant sun, Although thy body be a beauteous cloud.

Come ! seriously this is no flattery ; And well thou know'st it, though thy modest blood Rise like the morning in thy cheek to heart : Sir, I can speak in earnest. Virtuous service, So meritorious, Ferdinand, as yours, Yet bashful still, and silent, should extract A fuller price than impudence exact : And this is now the wages it must have ; My daughter is thy wife, my wealth thy slave.

*Ferd.* Good madam, pinch ! I sleep ! does my lord mock,

And you assist ? Custom's inverted quite : For old men now-a-days do flout the young.

*Benv.* Fetch Violante !—As I intend this Religiously, let my soul find joy or pain !

[Exit ANGELINA.

*Ferd.* My honour'd lord and master, if I hold That worth could merit such felicity, You bred it in me, and first purchased it ; It is your own, and what productions In all my faculties my soul begets, Your very mark is on ; you need not add Rewards to him, that is in debt to you. You saved my life, sir, in the massacre ; There you begot me new, since foster'd me : Oh, can I serve too much, or pray for you ? Alas, 'tis slender payment to your bounty. Your daughter is a Paradise, and I Unworthy to be set there : You may chuse The royal'st seeds of Milan.

*Benv.* Pr'ythee, peace !

Thy goodness makes me weep. I am resolved ; I am no lord o' th' time, to tie my blood To sordid muck ; I have enough ; my name, My state, and honours, I will store in thee, Whose wisdom will rule well, keep and increase : A knave or fool, that could confer the like, Would bate each hour, diminish every day. Thou art her prize lot then, drawn out by fate : An honest wise man is a prince's mate.

*Ferd.* Sir, Heaven and you have over-charged my breast

With grace beyond my continence ; I shall burst ! The blessing you have given me, witness saints, I would not change for Milan !—But, my lord, Is she prepared ?

*Benv.* What needs preparative,  
Where such a cordial is prescribed as thou?  
Thy person and thy virtues, in one scale,  
Shall poise hers, with her beauty and her wealth;  
If not, I add my will unto thy weight.  
Thy mother's with her now. Son, take my keys;  
And let thy preparation for this marriage,  
(This welcome marriage) long determined here,  
Be quick, and gorgeous.—*Gerrard!*

*Enter GERRARD.*

*Ger.* My good lord,  
My lord your brother craves your conference  
Instantly, on affairs of high import.

*Benv.* Why, what news?

*Ger.* The tyrant, my good lord,  
Is sick to death of his old apoplexy;  
Whereon the states advise, that letters missive  
Be straight dispatch'd to all the neighbour-coun-  
And schedules too divulged on every post, [tries,  
To enquire the lost duke forth: Their purpose is  
To re-instate him.

*Benv.* 'Tis a pious deed.—  
Ferdinand, to my daughter! This delay,  
Though to so good a purpose, angers me;  
But I'll recover it. Be secret, son!  
Go woo with truth and expedition. *[Exit.*

*Ferd.* Oh, my unsounded joy!—How fares my  
Gerrard,

My noble twin-friend?—Fy, thy look is heavy,  
Sullen, and sour; and blanch it! Didst thou know  
My cause of joy, thou'dst never sorrow more,  
I know thou lov'st me so. How dost thou?

*Ger.* Well;

Too well! my fraught of health my sickness is;  
In life, I am dead; by living, dying still.

*Ferd.* What subaltern mischief can predominate  
A wise man thus? or doth thy friendship play  
(In this antipathous extreme) with mine,  
Lest gladness suffocate me? I, I, I do feel  
My spirits turn'd to fire, my blood to air,  
And I am like a purified essence  
Tried from all drossy parts!

*Ger.* Were't but my life,  
The loss were sacrifice; but Virtue must  
For me be slain, and Innocence made dust!

*Ferd.* Farewell, good Gerrard!

*Ger.* Dearest friend, stay!

*Ferd.* Sad thoughts are no companions for me  
now,

Much less sad words: Thy bosom binds some secret,  
Which do not trust me with! for mine retains  
Another, which I must conceal from thee.

*Ger.* I would reveal it; 'tis a heavy tale.  
Canst thou be true and secret still?

*Ferd.* Why, friend,

If you continue true unto yourself,  
I have no means of falsehood. Lock this door;  
Come, yet your prisoner's sure.

*Ger.* Stay, Ferdinand!

*Ferd.* What is this trouble? love?  
Why, thou art capable of any woman.  
Doth want oppress thee? I will lighten thee.  
Hast thou offended law? my lord and thine,  
And I, will save thy life. Does servitude  
Upbraid thy freedom, that she suffers it?  
Have patience but three days, and I will make  
thee

Thy lord's companion. Can a friend do more?

*Ger.* Lead me the means. How can this be?

*Ferd.* First, let

This cabinet keep your pawn, and I will trust;  
Yet, for the form of satisfaction,  
Take this my oath to boot: By my presumed  
Gentry, and sacred known Christianity,  
I'll die ere I reveal thy trust!

*Ger.* Then hear it!

Your lord's fair daughter, Violante, is  
My betroth'd wife, goes great with child by me;  
And, by this deed, both made a prey to law.  
How may I save her life? advise me, friend.

*Ferd.* What did he say? Gerrard, whose voice  
was that?

Oh, death unto my heart, bane to my soul!  
My wealth is vanish'd like the rich man's store:  
In one poor minute, all my dainty fare  
But juggling dishes; my fat hope, despair.

*Ger.* Is this so odious? where's your mirth?

*Ferd.* Why, thou

Hast robb'd me of it! Gerrard, draw thy sword;  
And if thou lov'st my mistress' chastity,  
Defend it, else I'll cut it from thy heart,  
Thy thievish heart that stole it, and restore't;  
Do miracles to gain her!

*Ger.* Was she thine?

*Ferd.* Never, but in my wish, and her father's  
vow,

Which now he left with me; on such sure terms,  
He call'd me son, and will'd me to provide  
My wedding preparation.

*Ger.* Strange!

*Ferd.* Come, let's

Kill one another quickly!

*Ger.* Ferdinand,

My love is old to her, thine new-begot:  
I have not wrong'd thee; think upon thine oath!

*Ferd.* It manacles me, Gerrard; else this hand  
Should bear thee to the law. Farewell for ever!  
Since friendship is so fatal, never more  
Will I have friend: Thou hast put so sure a plea.  
That all my weal's litigious made by thee. *[Exit.*

*Ger.* I did no crime to you.—His love transports  
And yet I mourn that cruel destiny *[him!]*  
Should make us two thus one another's cross.  
We have loved since boys; for the same time cast  
On lord Benvoglio, that my aunt and I *[him]*  
Were succour'd by Randalpho: Men have call'd us  
The parallels of Milan; and some said  
We were not much unlike. Oh, Heaven divert,  
That we should (ever since that time) be breeding  
Mutual destruction!

*Enter DOROTHEA.*

*Dor.* Oh, where are you? You have made a  
fair hand! By Heaven, yonder is your aunt with  
my lady: she came in just as she was wooing your  
mistress for another; and what did me she, but out  
with her purse, and shewed all the naked truth.  
i'faith. Fy upon you! You should never trust an  
old woman with a secret; they cannot hold, they  
cannot hold so well as we, an you'd hang 'em.  
First, there was swearing and staring; then there  
was howling and weeping, and Oh, my daughter!  
and Oh, my mother!

*Ger.* The effect, the effect?

*Dor.* Marry, no way, but one with you!

*Ger.* Why, welcome! Shall she 'scape?

*Dor.* Nay, she has made her 'scape already.

*Ger.* Why, is she gone?

*Dor.* The 'scape of her virginity, I mean. You

men are as dull, you can conceive nothing; you think it is enough to beget.

*Ger.* Ay;

But surely, Dorothea, that 'scaped not;  
Her maidenhead suffer'd.

*Dor.* And you were the executioner.

*Ger.* But what's the event? Lord, how thou starvest me, Doll!

*Dor.* "Lord, how thou starvest me, Doll?"

By Heaven, I would fain see you cry a little! Do you stand now, as if you could get a child? Come, I'll rack you no more; this is the heart of the business—Always provided, signor, that if it please the fates to make you a lord, you be not proud, nor forget your poor handmaid Doll, who was partly accessory to the incision of this Holofernian maidenhead.

*Ger.* I will forget my name first. Speak!

*Dor.* Then thus: My lady knows all; her sorrow is reasonably well digested; has vowed to conceal it from my lord, till delay ripen things better; wills you to attend her this evening at the back gate: I'll let you in, where her own confessor shall put you together lawfully, ere the child be born; which birth is very near, I can assure you. All your charge is your vigilance; and to bring with you some trusty nurse, to convey the infant out of the house.

*Ger.* Oh, beam of comfort! Take.

[Gives money.]

Go, tell my lady

I pray for her as I walk. My joys so flow,  
That what I speak or do, I do not know! [Exeunt.]

### SCENE III.—Another Room in the same.

DUMB SHOW.

Enter VIOLANTE at one Door, weeping, supported by CORNELIA and a Friar; at another Door, ANGELINA weeping, attended by DOROTHEA. VIOLANTE kneels down for pardon. ANGELINA shewing remorse, takes her up, and cheers her; so doth CORNELIA. ANGELINA sends DOROTHEA for GERRARD. Enter GERRARD with DOROTHEA; ANGELINA and CORNELIA seem to chide him, shewing VIOLANTE'S heavy plight. VIOLANTE rejoiceth in him; he makes signs of sorrow, entreating pardon: ANGELINA brings GERRARD and VIOLANTE to the Friar; he joins them hand in hand, takes a ring from GERRARD, puts it on VIOLANTE'S finger, blesseth them; GERRARD kisseth her; the Friar takes his leave. VIOLANTE makes show of great pain, is instantly conveyed in by the Women, GERRARD is bid stay; he walks in meditation, seeming to pray. Enter DOROTHEA, whispers him, sends him out. Enter GERRARD with a Nurse blindfold; gives her a purse. To them enter ANGELINA and CORNELIA with an Infant; they present it to GERRARD, he kisseth and blesseth it, puts it into the Nurse'S arms, kneels, and takes his leave. Exeunt all severally.

### SCENE IV.—Another Room, with a Curtain in the Back-ground.

Enter BENVOLIO and RANDOLPHO.

*Benv.* He's dead, you say then?

*Rand.* Certainly; and to hear

The people now dissect him now he's gone,  
Makes my ears burn, that loved him not: Such libels,

Such elegies and epigrams, they have made,  
More odious than he was!—Brother, great men

Had need to live by love, meting their deeds  
With Virtue's rule; sound with the weight of judgment

Their privatest action: For though, while they live,  
Their power and policy masque their villainies,  
Their bribes, their lust, pride and ambition,  
And make a many slaves to worship 'em,  
That are their flatterers, and their bawds in these;  
These very slaves shall, when these great beasts die,  
Publish their bowels to the vulgar eye.

*Ben.* 'Fore Heaven, 'tis true. But is Rinaldo,  
Our good duke, heard of living? [brother,

*Rand.* Living, sir,  
And will be shortly with the senate: has  
Been close concealed at Mantua, and relieved.  
But what's become of his, no tidings yet!

But, brother, till our good duke shall arrive,  
Carry this news here. Where's your Ferdinand?

*Benv.* Oh, busy, sir, about this marriage:  
And yet my girl o' th' sudden is fall'n sick.  
You'll see her ere you go.

*Rand.* Yes. Well I love her;  
And yet I wish I had another daughter  
To gratify my Gerrard, who, by Heaven,  
Is all the glory of my family,  
But has too much worth to live so obscure:  
I'll have him secretary of estate  
Upon the duke's return; for, credit me,  
The value of that gentleman's not known:  
His strong abilities are fit to guide  
The whole republic: He hath learning, youth,  
Valour, discretion, honesty of a saint.  
His aunt is wond'rous good too.

*Benv.* You have spoke  
The very character of Ferdinand:  
One is the other's mirrour.

The Curtain is drawn, VIOLANTE is discovered in a Bed,  
ANGELINA and DOROTHEA sitting by her.

How now, daughter?

*Rand.* How fares my niece?

*Viol.* A little better, uncle, than I was,  
I thank you.

*Rand.* Brother, a mere cold!

*Ang.* It was  
A cold and heat, I think; but Heaven be thank'd,  
We have broken that away.

*Benv.* And yet, Violante,  
You lie alone still, and you see what's got.

*Dor.* Sure, sir, when this was got, she had a  
bed-fellow. [Aside.]

*Rand.* What has her cholic left her in her belly?

*Dor.* 'T has left her, but she has had a sore fit.

*Rand.* Ay, that same cholic and stone's inherent  
to us

O' th' woman's side! our mothers had them both.

*Dor.* So has she had, sir.—[Aside.] How these  
old fornicators talk! she had more need of mace-  
ale, and Rhenish-wine caudles, Heaven knows, than  
your aged discipline.

*Benv.* Say.

*Ang.* She will have the man; and, on recovery,  
Will wholly be disposed by you.

*Benv.* That's my wench!—

Enter FERDINAND in mourning.

How now! what change is this? Why, Ferdinand,  
Are these your robes of joy should be indue'd?

Doth Hymen wear black? I did send for you  
To have my honourable brother witness

The contract I will make 'twixt you and her.  
Put off all doubt; she loves you: What d'ye say?

*Rand.* Speak, man; why look you so distractedly?

*Ferd.* There are your keys, sir: I'll no con-  
divinest Violante, I will serve you [tracts, I.  
Thus on my knees, and pray for you.

*Juno Lucina, fer open!*  
My inequality ascends no higher:

I dare not marry you.

*Beno.* How's this?

*Ferd.* Good-night!

I have a friend has almost made me mad:  
I weep sometimes, and instantly can laugh;  
Nay, I do dance, and sing, and suddenly  
Roar like a storm. Strange tricks these! are they  
not?

And wherefore all this? shall I tell you? no!  
Thorough mine ears, my heart a plague hath  
caught;

And I have vow'd to keep it close, not shew  
My grief to any, for it has no cure.—  
On, wand'ring steps, to some remote place move!  
I'll keep my vow, though I have lost my love.

[*Exit.*

*Beno.* 'Fore Heaven, distracted for her! Fare  
ye well!

I'll watch his steps; for I no joy shall find,  
Till I have found his cause, and calm'd his mind.

[*Exit.*

*Rand.* He's overcome with joy.

*Ang.* 'Tis very strange.

*Rand.* Well, sister, I must leave you; the time's  
busy.—

Violante, cheer you up! And I pray Heaven  
Restore each to their love, and health again.

[*Exit.*

*Viol.* Amen, great uncle!—Mother, what a  
Unluckily is added to my woe, [chance  
In this young gentleman!

*Ang.* True, Violante;

It grieves me much.—Doll, go you instantly,  
And find out Gerrard! tell him his friend's hap,  
And let him use best means to comfort him;  
But, as his life, preserve this secret still!

*Viol.* Mother—I'd not offend you—might not  
Steal in, and see me in the evening? [Gerrard

*Ang.* Well;

Bid him do so.

*Viol.* Heaven's blessing o' your heart!—  
Do you not call child-bearing *travel*, mother?

*Ang.* Yes.

*Viol.* It well may be: The bare-foot traveller  
That's born a prince, and walks his pilgrimage,  
Whose tender feet kiss the remorseless stones  
Only, ne'er felt a travel like to it.

Alas, dear mother, you groan'd thus for me;  
And yet, how disobedient have I been!

*Ang.* Peace, Violante; thou hast always been  
Gentle and good.

*Viol.* Gerrard is better, mother:  
Oh, if you knew the implicit innocency  
Dwells in his breast, you'd love him like your  
I see no reason but my father might [pray'rs.  
Be told the truth, being pleas'd for Ferdinand  
To woo himself; and Gerrard ever was  
His full comparative: My uncle loves him,  
As he loves Ferdinand.

*Ang.* No, not for the world!  
Since his intent is cross'd, loved Ferdinand

Thus ruin'd, and a child got out of wedlock,  
His madness would pursue ye both to death!

*Viol.* As you please, mother. I am now,  
methinks,

Even in the land of Ease; I'll sleep.

*Ang.* Draw in

The bed nearer the fire.—Silken rest,  
Tie all thy cares up!

[*Exeunt.*

### SCENE V.—A Grove.

*Enter FERDINAND, and BENVOLIO privately after him.*

*Ferd.* Oh, blessed solitude! Here my grief  
may speak;

And, Sorrow, I will argue with thee now.  
Nothing will keep me company! the flowers  
Die at my moan; the gliding silver streams  
Hasten to flee my lamentations;

The air rolls from 'em; and the golden sun  
Is smother'd pale as Phoebe with my sighs:  
Only the earth is kind, that stays: Then, Earth,  
To thee will I complain. Why do the Heavens  
Impose upon me love what I can ne'er

Enjoy? Before fruition was impossible,  
I did not thirst it: Gerrard, she is thine,  
Sealed and delivered; but 'twas ill to stain  
Her virgin state, ere ye were married.  
Poor infant, what's become of thee? thou know'st  
not

The woe thy parents brought thee to. Dear Earth,  
Bury this close in thy sterility;  
Be barren to this seed, let it not grow!  
For if it do, 'twill bud no violet,  
Nor gilly-flower, but wild brier, or rank rue,  
Unsavoury and hurtful.

*Beno.* Ferdinand,  
Thy steel hath digg'd the earth, thy words my  
heart.

*Ferd.* Oh, I have violated faith, betrayed  
My friend and innocence!

*Beno.* Desperate youth,  
Violate not thy soul too! I have showers  
For thee, young man; but, Gerrard, flame: for  
thee!

Was thy base pen made to dash out mine honour,  
And prostitute my daughter? bastard, whore:  
Come, turn thy female tears into revenge,  
Which I will quench my thirst with, ere I see  
Daughter, or wife, or branded family.

By Heaven, both die! and, for amends,  
Ferdinando, be my heir! I'll to my brother;  
First tell him all, then to the duke for justice;  
This morning he's received. Mountains nor seas  
Shall bar my flight to vengeance! the foul stain  
Printed on me, thy blood shall rinse again. [*Exit.*

*Ferd.* I have transgress'd all goodness, wickedly!  
Raised mine own curses from posterity!  
I'll follow, to redress in what I may;  
If not, your heir can die as well as they. [*Exit.*

### SCENE VI.—An Apartment in the Palace.

DUMB SHOW.

*Enter DUKE RINALDO with Attendants, at one Door  
States, RANDOLPH, and GERRARD, at another: They  
kneel to the DUKE, he accepts their obedience, and  
raises them up; they prefer GERRARD to the next,  
who entertains him; they seat the DUKE in S.C. 2.*

*Enter BENVOLGIO and FERDINAND: BENVOLGIO kneels for justice; FERDINAND seems to restrain him. BENVOLGIO gives the DUKE a paper; DUKE reads, frowns on GERRARD, shews the paper to the States, they seem sorry, consult, cause the GUARD to apprehend him; they go off with him. Then RANDULPHO and BENVOLGIO seem to crave justice, DUKE vows it, and exit with his Attendants. RANDULPHO, BENVOLGIO, and FERDINAND confer. Enter to them CORNELIA, with two SERVANTS; she seems to expostulate; RANDULPHO in scorn causeth her to be thrust out poorly. Exit RANDULPHO. BENVOLGIO decks FERDINAND to him, with much seeming passion, swears him, then stamps with his foot. Enter DOROTHEA, with a Cup, weeping, she delivers it to FERDINAND, who with discontent exit, and exeunt BENVOLGIO and DOROTHEA.*

## SCENE VII.—A Room in BENVOLGIO's House.

*Enter VIOLANTE.*

*Viol.* Gerrard not come? nor Dorothy return'd? What adverse star ruled my nativity? The time to-night hath been as dilatory As languishing consumptions. But till now, I ne'er durst say, my Gerrard was unkind. Heaven grant all things go well! and nothing does, If he be ill, which I much fear! My dreams Have been portentous: I did think I saw My love arrayed for battle with a beast, A hideous monster, armed with teeth and claws, Grinning, and venomous, that sought to make Both us a prey; on's tail was lash'd in blood *Law*; and his forehead I did plainly see Held characters that spell'd *Authority*. This rent my slumbers; and my fearful soul Ran searching up and down my dismay'd breast, To find a port to escape. Good faith, I am cold; But Gerrard's love is colder: Here I'll sit, And think myself away.

*Enter FERDINAND with a Cup and a Letter.*

*Ferd.* The peace of love Attend the sweet *Violante*! Read; For the sad news I bring I do not know: Only I am sworn to give you that, and this.  
*Viol.* Is it from Gerrard? gentle Ferdinand, How glad am I to see you thus well restored! In troth he never wrong'd you in his life, Nor I, but always held fair thoughts of you: Knew not my father's meaning till of late; Could ne'er have known it soon enough: For, sir, Gerrard's and my affection began In infancy: My uncle brought him off In long coats hither; you were such another; The little boy would kiss me, being a child, And say he loved me, give me all his toys, Bracelets, rings, sweetmeats, all his rosy smiles: I then would stand, and stare upon his eyes, Play with his locks, and swear I loved him too; For sure, methought, he was a little Love! He wooed so prettily in innocence, That then he warmed my fancy; for I felt A glimmering beam of love kindle my blood, Both which, time since hath made a flame and flood.

*Ferd.* Oh, gentle innocent! methinks it talks Like a child still, whose white simplicity Never arrived at sin. Forgive me, lady! I have destroyed Gerrard and thee; rebelled Against Heaven's ordinance; dis-paired two doves,

Made 'em sit mourning; slaughtered love, and The heart of all integrity. This breast [cleft Was trusted with the secret of your vow, By Gerrard, and revealed it to your father.

*Viol.* Ha!

*Ferd.* Read, and curse me!

*Viol.* Neither; I will never

Nor write, nor read again!

*Ferd.* My penance be it!

[*Reads.* "Your labyrinth is found, your lust proclaim'd."

*Viol.* Lust? hum!

My mother sure felt none when I was got.

*Ferd.* "I, and the law, implacably offended;

Gerrard's imprison'd, and to die."

*Viol.* Oh, Heaven!

*Ferd.* "And you to suffer, with reproach and

A public execution. I have sent you [scoffs,

An antidote 'gainst shame, poison, by him

You have most wrong'd: Give him your penitent

*Viol.* Hum! 'tis not truth. [tears."

*Ferd.* "Drink, and farewell for ever!

And though thy whoredom blemish thy whole line,

Prevent the hangman's stroke, and die like mine."

*Viol.* Oh, woe is me for Gerrard! I have brought

Confusion on the noblest gentleman

That ever truly loved. But we shall meet

Where our condemners shall not, and enjoy

A more refined affection than here:

No law nor father hinders marriage there

'Twill souls divinely affied as, sure, ours were;

There we will multiply and generate joys,

Like fruitful parents.—Luckless Ferdinand,

Where's the good old gentlewoman, my husband's

ant?

*Ferd.* Thrust from your uncle, to all poverty.

*Viol.* Alas, the pity! Reach me, sir, the cup:

I'll say my prayers, and take my father's physic.

*Ferd.* Oh, villain that I was, I had forgot

To spill the rest, and am unable now

To stir to hinder her!

*Viol.* What ail you, sir?

*Ferd.* Your father is a monster, I a villain,

This tongue has kill'd you!—Pardon, *Violante*!

Oh, pardon, Gerrard! and for sacrifice

Accept my life, to expiate my fault:

I have drunk up the poison.

*Viol.* Thou art not so

Uncharitable! a better fellow far;

Thou hast left me half. Sure Death is now a-dry,

And calls for more blood still to quench his thirst.

I pledge thee, Ferdinand, to Gerrard's health!

[*Drinks.*

Dear Gerrard, poor aunt, and unfortunate friend!

Ay me, that love should breed true lovers' end!

*Ferd.* Stay, madam, stay!—Help, ho! for

Heaven's sake, help!—

Improvident man! that good I did intend

For satisfaction, saving of her life,

My equal cruel stars made me forget.

*Enter ANGELOINA with two Servants.*

*Ang.* What spectacle of death assaults me? oh!

*Viol.* My dearest mother, I am dead: I leave

Father, and friends, and life, to follow Love.

Good mother, love my child, that did no ill.

Fy, how men lie, that say, death is a pain!

Or has he changed his nature? like soft sleep

He seizes me. Your blessing! Last, I crave,

That I may rest by Gerrard in his grave. [*Falls.*

*Ferd.* There lay me too. Oh, noble mistress, I

Have caused all this, and therefore justly die.

That key will open all.

[Falls.

*Ang.* Oh, viperous father!

For Heaven's sake, bear 'em in! Run for physicians,

And medicines quickly! Heaven, thou shalt not have her

Yet; 'tis too soon: Alas, I have no more;

And, taking her away, thou robb'st the poor.

[Exit.

SCENE VIII.—*An open place in the City.*

*Enter RINALDO, States, RANDOLPHO, BENVOGLIO, GERRARD, Secretary, Executioner, and Guard.*

*Rin.* The law, as greedy as your red desire, Benvoglio, hath cast this man: 'Tis pity So many excellent parts are swallowed up In one foul wave. Is Violante sent for? Our justice must not lop a branch, and let The body grow still.

*Benv.* Sir, she will be here, Alive or dead, I am sure.

*Ger.* How cheerfully my countenance comments death!

That which makes men seem horrid, I will wear Like to an ornament. Oh, Violante! Might my life only satisfy the law, How jocundly my soul would enter Heaven! Why shouldst thou die? thou wither'st in thy bud, As I have seen a rose, ere it was blown.—

I do beseech your grace, the statute may (In this case made) be read: Not that I hope To extenuate my offence or penalty, But to see whether it lay hold on her. And since my death is more exemplary Than just, this public reading will advise Caution to others.

*Rin.* Read it.

*Rand.* Brother, does not

Your soul groan under this severity?

*Sec.* [Reads.] "A statute provided in case of unequal matches, marriages against parents' consent, stealing of heirs, rapes, prostitutions, and such like: That if any person meanly descended, or ignorant of his own parentage, which implies as much, shall, with a foul intent, unlawfully solicit the daughter of any peer of the dukedom, he shall for the same offence forfeit his right-hand: But if he further prostitute her to his lust, he shall first have his right-hand cut off, and then suffer death by the common executioner. After whom, the lady so offending shall likewise the next day, in the same manner, die for the fact."

*Ger.* This statute has more cruelty than sense! I see no ray of mercy. Must the lady Suffer death too? Suppose she were enforced, By some confederates borne away, and ravished; Is she not guiltless?

*Rin.* Yes, if it be proved.

*Ger.* This case is so: I ravished Violante.

*State.* Who ever knew a rape produce a child?

*Benv.* Pish! these are idle. Will your grace The executioner proceed? [command

*Rin.* Your office!

*Ger.* Farewell to thy enticing vanity, Thou round gilt box, that dost deceive man's eye! The wise man knows, when open thou art broke, The treasure thou includ'st is dust and smoke; Even thus, I cast thee by.—My lords, the law

Is but the great man's mule; he rides on it, And tramples poorer men under his feet: Yet when they come to knock at your bright gate, One's rags shall enter 'fore the other's state. Peace to ye all!—Here, sirrah, strike! This hand Hath Violante kiss'd a thousand times; It smells sweet ever since: This was the hand Plighted my faith to her; do not think thou canst Cut that in sunder with my hand.—My lord, As free from speck as this arm is, my heart Is of foul lust, and every vein glides here As full of truth.—Why does thy hand shake so? 'Tis mine must be cut off, and that is firm; For it was ever constant.

*Enter CORNELIA veiled.*

*Cor.* Hold! your sentence Unjustly is pronounced, my lord! This blow Cuts your hand off; for his is none of yours, But Violante's, given in holy marriage Before she was delivered, consummated With the free will of her mother, by her confessor, In lord Benvoglio's house.

*Ger.* Alas, good aunt,

That helps us nothing; else I had reveal'd it.

*Rin.* What woman's this?

*Benv.* A base confederate

In this proceeding, kept of alms long time By him; who now, exposed to misery, Talks thus distractedly.—Attach her, guard!

*Rand.* Your cruelty, brother, will have end.

*Cor.* You'd best

Let them attach my tongue.

*Rin.* Good woman, peace!

For, were this truth, it doth not help thy nephew: The law's infringed by their disparity; That forfeits both their lives.

*Cor.* Sir, with your pardon, Had your grace ever children?

*Rin.* Thou hast put

A question, whose sharp point toucheth my heart! I had two little sons, twins, who were both (With my good duchess) slain, as I did hear, At that time when my dukedom was surprised.

*Cor.* I have heard many say, my gracious lord, That I was wond'rous like her. [Lament

*Onnes.* Ha!

*Rin.* By all man's joy, it is Cornelia, My dearest wife!

*Cor.* To ratify me her,

Come down, Alphonso, one of those two twins. And take thy father's blessing! Thou hast broke No law, thy birth being above thy wife's: Ascanio is the other, named Fernando, Who, by remote means, to my lord Benvoglio I got preferr'd; and in poor habits clad, (You fled, and the innovation laid again) I wrought myself into Randolpho's service. With my eldest boy; yet never durst reveal What they and I were, no, not to themselves. Until the tyrant's death.

*Rin.* My joy has fill'd me

Like a full-winded sail! I cannot speak!

*Ger.* Fetch Violante and my brother.

*Benv.* Run,

Run like a spout, you rogue! A pox o' poison! That little whore I trusted will betray me. Stay, hangman! I have work for you: There's gold;

Cut off my head, or hang me, presently!

*Soft Music. Enter ANGELINA, with the Bodies of FERDINAND and VIOLANTE on a Bier; DOBOTHEA carrying the Cup and Letter, which she gives to RINALDO; he reads, seems sorrowful; shews it to CORNELIA and GERRARD, they lament over the Bier. RANDOLPHO and BENVOLGIO seem fearful, and seem to report to ANGELINA and DOBOTHEA what hath passed before.*

*Rand.* This is your rashness, brother!  
*Rin.* Oh, joy, thou wert too great to last;  
 This was a cruel turning to our hopes!  
 Unnatural father! poor Ascanio!  
*Ger.* Oh, mother, let me be Gerrard again,  
 And follow Violante!  
*Cor.* Oh, my son—  
*Rin.* Your lives yet, bloody men, shall answer  
 this.

*Dor.* I must not see 'em longer grieve.—My  
 Be comforted; let sadness generally [lord,  
 Forsake each eye and bosom; they both live:  
 For poison, I infused mere opium;  
 Holding compulsive perjury less sin  
 Than such a loathed murder would have been.

*All.* Oh, blessed maiden!  
*Dor.* Music, gently creep  
 Into their ears, and fright hence lazy sleep!  
 [Music.

*Morpheus, command thy servant Sleep  
 In leaden chains no longer keep  
 This prince and lady! Rise, wake, rise,  
 And round about convey your eyes!*  
*Rise, prince; go, greet thy father and thy mother;*  
*Rise thou, to embrace thy husband and thy brother.*

*Rin.* Cor. Son, daughter!  
*Ferd.* Father, mother, brother!  
*Ger.* Wife!  
*Viol.* Are we not all in Heaven!  
*Ger.* 'Faith, very near it.  
*Ferd.* How can this be?  
*Rin.* Hear it!  
*Dor.* If I had served you right, I should have  
 Your old pate off, ere I had reveal'd. [seen  
*Benv.* Oh, wench!  
 Oh, honest wench! if my wife die, I'll marry thee:  
 There's my reward.

*Rin.* 'Tis true.  
*Ferd.* 'Tis very strange.  
*Ger.* Why kneel you, honest master?  
*Ferd.* My good lord!  
*Ger.* Dear mother!  
*Rin.* Rise, rise! all are friends. I owe ye  
 For all their boards: And, wench, take thou the  
 man  
 Whose life thou saved'st; less cannot pay thy  
 How shall I part my kiss? I cannot! let [merit.  
 One generally therefore join our cheeks.  
 A pen of iron, and a leaf of brass,  
 To keep this story to eternity,  
 And a Promethean wit!—Oh, sacred Love,  
 Nor chance, nor death, can thy firm truth remove.  
 [Exit. Flourish.

*Eman.* Now, Isabella?  
*Isab.* This can true love do.  
 I joy they all so happily are pleased!  
 The ladies and the brothers must triumph.  
*Eman.* They do;  
 For Cupid scorns but to have his Triumph too.  
 [Flourish.

## THE TRIUMPH.

*Enter divers Mustolans, then certain Singers, bearing Bannets, inscribed, Truth, Loyalty, Patience, Concord; next, GERRARD and FERDINAND with Garlands of Roses; then VIOLANTE; last, a Chariot drawn by two Cupids, and a Cupid sitting in it.*

*Flourish. Enter Prologue.*

*Prol.* Love, and the strength of fair affection,  
 Most royal sir, what long seem'd lost, have won  
 Their perfect ends, and crown'd those constant  
 hearts  
 With lasting triumph, whose most virtuous  
 parts,  
 Worthy desires, and love, shall never end.  
 Now turn we round the scene; and, great sir,  
 lend  
 A sad and serious eye to this of Death.  
 This black and dismal triumph; where man's  
 breath,  
 Desert, and guilty blood, ascend the stage;  
 And view the tyrant, ruin'd in his rage.  
 [Exit. Flourish.

## THE TRIUMPH OF DEATH.

SCENE I.—*Angers. A Room in the House of  
 LAVALL.*

*Enter LAVALL, GABRIELLA, and MARIA.*

*Gab.* No, good my lord, I am not now to find  
 Your long neglect of me: All those affections  
 You came first clad in to my love, like summer,  
 Lusty and full of life; all those desires  
 That like the painted spring bloom'd round about  
 Giving the happy promise of an harvest, [ye,  
 How have I seen drop off, and fall forgotten!  
 With the least lustre of another's beauty,  
 How oft, forgetful lord, have I been blasted!  
 Was I so easily won? or did this body  
 Yield to your false embraces, with less labour  
 Than if you had carried some strong town?

*Lav.* Good Gabriella!  
*Gab.* Could all your subtilties and sighs betray  
 me,  
 The vows ye shook me with, the tears ye drown'd  
 Till I came fairly off with honour'd marriage? [me,  
 Oh, fy, my lord!  
*Lav.* Pr'ythee, good Gabriella!  
*Gab.* 'Would I had never known you, nor your  
 honours!  
 They are stuck too full of griefs. Oh, happy wo-  
 That plant your love in equal honest bosoms, [men,  
 Whose sweet desires, like roses set together,  
 Make one another happy in their blushes,  
 Growing and dying without sense of greatness,  
 To which I am a slave! and that blest sacrament  
 That daily makes millions of happy mothers,

Link'd me to this man's lust alone, there left me :  
I dare not say I am *his* wife, 'tis dangerous ;  
His *love* I cannot say. Alas, how many—

*Lav.* You grow too warm ; pray you be content !  
You best know

The time's necessity, and how our marriage,  
Being so much unequal to mine honour,  
While the duke lives, I standing high in favour,  
(And, whilst I keep that stand, next to the dukedom)  
Must not be known, without my utter ruin.  
Have patience for a while, and do but dream, wench,  
The glory of a duchess.—How she tires me ! [*Aside.*]  
How dull and leaden is my appetite  
To that stale beauty now ! Oh, I could curse  
And crucify myself for childish doting  
Upon a face that feeds not with fresh figures  
Every fresh hour ; she is now a surfeit to me !—

*Enter GENTILLE.*

Who's that ? Gentille ?—I charge ye, no acquaint-  
ance, [*Apart to GABRIELLA.*]

You nor your maid, with him, nor no discourse,  
Till times are riper !

*Gent.* Fy, my noble lord !

Can you be now a stranger to the court,  
When your most virtuous bride the beauteous  
Hellena,

Stands ready like a star to gild your happiness ?  
When Hymen's lusty fires are now a-lighting,  
And all the flower of Anjou—

*Lav.* Some few trifles,

For matter of adornment, have a little  
Made me so slow, Gentille ; which now in readiness,  
I am for court immediately.

*Gent.* Take heed, sir !

This is no time for trifling, nor she no lady  
To be now entertain'd with toys ; 'twill cost you—

*Lav.* You're an old cock, Gentille.

*Gent.* By your lordship's favour—

*Lav.* Pr'ythee, away ! 'twill lose time.

*Gent.* Oh, my lord,

Pardon me that, by all means !

*Lav.* We have business  
A-foot, man, of more moment !

*Gent.* Than my manners ?

I know none, nor I seek none.

*Lav.* Take to-morrow !

*Gent.* Even now, by your lordship's leave.—Ex-  
My service here I ever dedicate, [cellent beauty,  
In honour of my best friend, your dead father,  
To you, his living virtue ; and wish heartily,  
That firm affection that made us two happy,  
May take as deep undying root, and flourish  
Betwix my daughter Casta, and your goodness,  
Who shall be still your servant.

*Gab.* I much thank you.

*Lav.* Pox o' this dreaming puppy !—Will you

*Gent.* A little more, good lord ! [go, sir ?

*Lav.* Not now, by Heaven !

Come, I must use you.

*Gent.* Goodness dwell still with you !

[*Exeunt GENTILLE and LAVALL.*]

*Gab.* The sight of this old gentleman, Maria,  
Pulls to mine eyes again the living picture  
Of Perolot his virtuous son, my first love,  
That died at Orleans.

*Maria.* You have felt both fortunes,  
And in extremes, poor lady ! for young Perolot,  
Being every way unable to maintain you,  
Durst not make known his love to friend or father ;

My lord Lavall, being powerful, and you poor,  
Will not acknowledge you.

*Gab.* No more ! Let's in, wench ;  
There let my late speak my laments ! they have  
tired me. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE II.—*Before the Palace.*

*Enter Two Courtiers.*

*1 Court.* I grant, the duke is wond'rous provi-  
In his now planting for succession ; [dent  
I know his care as honourable in the choice too,  
Marine's fair virtuous daughter : But what's all  
To what end excellent arrives this travel, [this  
When he that bears the main roof is so rotten ?

*2 Court.* You have hit it now indeed ; for, if  
He is untemperate. [Fame lie not.

*1 Court.* You express him poorly,  
Too gentle, sir : The most debosh'd and barbarous.  
Believe it ; the most void of all humanity,  
Howe'er his cunning cloke it to his uncle,  
And those his pride depends upon.

*2 Court.* I have heard too,  
Given excessively to drink.

*1 Court.* Most certain,  
And in that drink most dangerous : I speak these  
things

To one I know loves truth, and dares not wrong ;  
*2 Court.* You may speak on. [br.

*1 Court.* Uncertain as the sea, sir,  
Proud and deceitful as his sin's great master ;  
His appetite to women, (for there he carries  
His main-sail spread) so boundless and abominable.  
That but to have her name by that tongue spoken,  
Poisons the virtue of the purest virgin.

*2 Court.* I am sorry for young Gabriella then.  
A maid reputed, ever of fair carriage ;  
For he has been noted visiting.

*1 Court.* She is gone then ;  
Or any else, that promises, or power,  
Gifts, or his guileful vows, can work upon :  
But these are but poor parcels.

*2 Court.* 'Tis great pity !

*1 Court.* Nor want these sins a chief saint to  
befriend 'em :

The devil follows him ; and, for a truth, sir,  
Appears in visible figure often to him ;  
At which time he's possess'd with sudden trances.  
Cold deadly sweats, and griping of the conscience.  
Tormented strangely, as they say.

*2 Court.* Heaven turn him !

This marriage-day may'st thou well curse, fair  
But let's go view the ceremony. [Helca.—

*1 Court.* I'll walk with you. [*Exeunt.*]

## SCENE III.—*A Street before LAVALL'S House.*

*Music.* GABRIELLA and MARIA appear at a Window  
below, enter LAVALL, HELLENA. States in solemnity as to  
Marriage, and pass over ; then DUKE, MARINE, and  
LONGVILLE.

*Maria.* I hear 'em come !

*Gab.* 'Would I might never hear more !

*Maria.* I told you still ; but you were so in-  
See, there they kiss ! [dulce—

*Gab.* Adds by your embraces !  
The poison of a rotten heart, oh, Hellen,  
Blast thee as I have been ! Just such a flattery,

With that same cunning face, that smile upon't,  
(Oh, mark it, Mary, mark it seriously!)  
That master smile caught me.

*Maria.* There's the old duke, and  
Marine her father.

*Gab.* Oh!

*Maria.* There Longaville;  
The ladies now.

*Gab.* Oh, I am murder'd, Mary!—  
Beast, most inconstant beast!

*Maria.* There—

*Gab.* There I am not;  
No more—I am not there. Hear me, oh, Heaven!  
And, all you pow'rs of justice, bow down to me!  
But you, of pity, die. I am abused;  
She that depended on your providence,  
She is abused! your honour is abused!  
That noble piece ye made, and call'd it *man*,  
Is turn'd to devil: all the world's abused!  
Give me a woman's will, provoked to mischief,  
A two-edged heart; my suffering thoughts to  
wildfires,  
And my embraces to a timeless grave turn!

*Maria.* Here I'll step in; for 'tis an act of merit.

*Gab.* I am too big to utter more.

*Maria.* Take time then.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The same.*

*Enter GENTILLE and CASTA.*

*Gent.* This solitary life at home undoes thee,  
Obscures thy beauty first, which should prefer thee;  
Next, fills thee full of sad thoughts, which thy years  
Must not arrive at yet; they choke thy sweetness:  
Follow the time, my girl; and it will bring thee  
Even to the fellowship of the noblest women,  
Hellen herself, to whom I would prefer thee,  
And under whom this poor and private carriage,  
(Which I am only able yet to reach at)  
Being cast off, and all thy sweets at lustre,  
Will take thee as a fair friend, and prefer thee.

*Casta.* Good sir, be not so cruel as to seek  
To kill that sweet content you have bred me to.  
Have I not here enough to thank Heaven for?  
The free air, uncorrupted with new flattery?  
The water that I touch, unbribed with odours  
To make me sweet to others? the pure fire  
Not smother'd up, and choak'd with lustful in-  
cense

To make my blood sweat? but, burning clear and  
high,

Tells me my mind must flame up so to Heaven.  
What should I do at court? wear rich apparel?  
Methinks these are as warm, and, for your state,  
sir,

Wealthy enough: Is it, you would have me proud,  
And, like a pageant, stuck up for amazements?  
Teach not your child to tread that path; for fear,  
sir,

Your dry bones, after death, groan in your grave  
The miseries that follow.

*Gent.* Excellent Casta!

*Casta.* When shall I pray again, a courtier?  
Or when I do, to what god? what new body  
And new face must I make me, with new manners  
(For I must be no more myself)? whose mistress  
Must I be first? with whose sin offering season'd?  
And when I am grown so great and glorious  
With prostitution of my burning beauties,

That great lords kneel, and princes beg for favours,  
Do you think I'll be your daughter, a poor gen-  
Or know you for my father? [tleman's,

*Gent.* My best Casta!

Oh, my most virtuous child! Heaven reigns with-  
in thee!

Take thine own choice, sweet child, and live a  
saint still.—

*Enter LAVALL.*

The lord Lavall! stand by, wench.

*Lav.* Gabriella—  
She cannot, nor she dares not make it known;  
My greatness crushes her, whene'er she offers:  
Why should I fear her then?

*Gent.* Come; let's pass on, wench.

*Lav.* Gentille, come hither!—Who's that gen-  
tlewoman?

*Gent.* A child of mine, sir, who, observing  
custom,

Is going to the monastery to her prayers.

*Lav.* A fair one, a most sweet one! fitter far  
To beautify a court, than make a votarist.—

Go on, fair beauty, and in your orisons

Remember me: Will you, fair sweet?

*Casta.* Most humbly. [*Exit with GENTILLE.*]

*Lav.* An admirable beauty! how it fires me!  
But she's too full of grace, and I too wicked.—

*Enter a Spirit.*

I feel my wonted fit: Defend me, Goodness!  
Oh! It grows colder still, and stiffer on me;  
My hair stands up, my sinews shake and shrink;  
Help me, good Heaven, and good thoughts dwell  
within me!

Oh, get thee gone, thou evil, evil spirit;

Haunt me no more, I charge thee!

*Spirit.* Yes, Lavall;

Thou art my vassal, and the slave to mischief:  
I blast thee with new sin. Pursue thy pleasure!  
Casta is rare and sweet, a blowing beauty;  
Set thy desires a-fire, and never quench 'em  
Till thou enjoy'st her! make her all thy Heaven,  
And all thy joy, for she is all true happiness.  
Thou art powerful; use command; if that prevail  
Force her: I'll be thy friend. [not,

*Lav.* Oh, help me, help me!

*Spirit.* Her virtue, like a spell, sinks me to dark-  
ness. [*Vanishes.*]

*Enter GENTILLE and CASTA.*

*Gent.* He's here still.—How is't, noble lord?  
Methinks, sir,

You look a little wildly?—Is it that way?  
Is't her you stare on so? I have spied your fire, sir  
But dare not stay the flaming:—Come!

*Lav.* Sweet creature,  
Excellent beauty, do me but the happiness  
To be your humble servant.—Oh, fair eyes!  
Oh, blessed, blessed sweetness, divine virgin!

*Casta.* Oh, good my lord, retire into your  
honour!

You are spoken good and virtuous, placed at helm  
To govern others from mischances; from example  
Of such fair chronicles as great ones are,  
We do, or sure we should, direct our lives.

I know you are full of worth; a school of virtue,  
Daily instructing us that live below you,  
I make no doubt, dwells there.

*Lav.* I cannot answer;  
She has struck me dumb with wonder.

*Casta.* Goodness guide you ! [Exeunt.

*Lav.* She's gone, and with her all light, and has left me

Dark as my black desires. Oh, devil Lust,  
How dost thou hug my blood, and whisper to me,  
There is no day again, no time, no living,  
Without this lusty beauty break upon me !  
Let me collect myself ; I strive like billows,  
Beaten against a rock, and fall a fool still.  
I must enjoy her, and I will ; from this hour  
My thoughts, and all my business shall be nothing,  
My eating, and my sleeping, but her beauty,  
And how to work it.

Enter MARIA.

*Maria.* Health to my lord Lavall !  
Nay, good sir, do not turn with such displeasure !  
I come not to afflict your new-born pleasures.  
My honour'd mistress—Neither let that vex you,  
For nothing is intended, but safe to you.

*Lav.* What of your mistress ? I am full of business.

*Maria.* I will be short, my lord. She, loving  
Considering the unequal tie between ye, [Lady,  
And how your ruin with the duke lay on it,  
As also the most noble match now made,  
By me sends back all links of marriage,  
All holy vows, and rights of ceremony,  
All promises, oaths, tears, and all such pawns  
You left in hostage ; only her love she cannot,  
For that still follows you, but not to hurt you :  
And still beholds you, sir, but not to shame you :  
In recompense of which, this is her suit, sir,  
Her poor and last petition, but to grant her,  
When weary nights have cloyed you up with kisses,  
(As such must come) the honour of a mistress,  
The honour but to let her see those eyes,  
(Those eyes she dotes on, more than gods on good-  
ness)

And but to kiss you only ; with this prayer,  
(A prayer only to awake your pity)  
And on her knees she made it, that this night  
You'd bless her with your company at supper.

*Lav.* I like this well ; and, now I think on't  
better,

I'll make a present use from this occasion—[Aside.  
*Maria.* Nay, good my lord, be not so cruel to  
Because she has been yours ! [her,

*Lav.* And to mine own end [Aside.  
A rare way I will work.

*Maria.* Can love for ever,  
The love of her, my lord, so perish in you ?  
As you desire in your desires to prosper !  
What gallant under Heaven, but Anjou's heir,  
then  
Can brag so fair a wife, and sweet a mistress ?  
Good, noble lord !

*Lav.* You misapply me, Mary ;  
Nor do I want true pity to your lady :  
Pity and love tell me, too much I have wrong'd  
her  
To dare to see her more : Yet if her sweetness  
Can entertain a mediation,  
(And it must be a great one that can cure me)  
My love again, as far as honour bids me,  
My service, and myself—

*Maria.* That's nobly spoken !

*Lav.* Shall hourly see her ; Want shall never  
know her ;  
Nor where she has bestow'd her love, repent her.

*Maria.* Now whither drives he ? [Aside.

*Lav.* I have heard, Maria,  
That no two women in the world more loved,  
Than thy good mistress and Gentille's fair daughter.

*Maria.* What may this mean ?—You have heard  
a truth, my lord ;

But since the secret love betwixt you two,  
My mistress durst not entertain such friendship :  
Casta is quick, and of a piercing judgment,  
And quickly will find out a flaw.

*Lav.* Hold, Mary : [Gives a purse.  
Shrink not ; 'tis good gold, wench : Prepare a  
banquet,

And get that Casta thither ; for she's a creature  
So full of forcible divine persuasion,  
And so unwearied ever with good office,  
That she shall cure my ill cause to my mistress.  
And make all errors up.

*Maria.* I'll do my best, sir :  
But she's too fearful, coy, and scrupulous,  
To leave her father's house so late ; and bashful  
At any man's appearance, that, I fear, sir,  
'Twill prove impossible.

*Lav.* There's more gold, Mary ;  
And feign thy mistress wond'rous sick, to death,  
wench !

*Maria.* I have you in the wind now, and I'll  
pay you. [Aside.

*Lav.* She cannot chuse but come ; 'tis charity,  
The chief of her profession : Undertake this,  
And I am there at night ; if not, I leave you.

*Maria.* I will not lose this offer, though it fall  
out [Aside.

Clean cross to that we cast.—I'll undertake it,  
I will, my lord ; she shall be there.

*Lav.* By Heaven ?

*Maria.* By Heaven, she shall.

*Lav.* Let it be something late then,  
For being seen !—Now force or favour wins her.  
My spirits are grown dull ; strong wine, and store  
Shall set 'em up again, and make me fit  
To draw home at the enterprize I aim at. [Exit

*Maria.* Go thy ways, false lord ! if thou hold'st  
thou pay'st

The price of all thy lusts. Thou shalt be there.  
Thou modest maid, if I have any working,  
And yet thy honour safe ; for which this thief,  
I know, has set this meeting ; but I'll watch him.

Enter PEROLOT.

*Per.* Maria !

*Maria.* Are mine eyes mine own ? or—bless  
Am I deluded with a flying shadow ? [mc.

*Per.* Why do you start so from me ?

*Maria.* It speaks sensibly,  
And shews a living body ; yet I am fearful.

*Per.* Give me your hand, good Maria.

*Maria.* He feels warm too.

*Per.* And next your lips.

*Maria.* He kisses perfectly :  
Nay, an the devil be no worse—You are Perolot ?

*Per.* I was, and sure I should be : Can a small  
distance,

And ten short months, take from your memory  
The figure of your friend, that you stand wond'ring ?  
Be not amazed ! I am the self-same Perolot,  
Living and well, son to Gentille, and brother  
To virtuous Casta ; to your beauteous mistress,  
The long-since poor betrothed, and still-vowed  
servant.

*Maria.* Nay, sure he lives!—My lord Lavall,  
your master,  
Brought news long since to your much-mourning  
mistress,

You died at Orleans; bound her with an oath too,  
To keep it secret from your aged father,  
Lest it should rack his heart.

*Per.* A pretty secret,  
To try my mistresses' love, and make my welcome  
From travel of more worth; from whence, Heaven  
thank'd!

My business for the duke dispatch'd to th' pur-  
pose, [wench.]

And all my money spent. I am come home,  
How does my mistress? for I have not yet seen  
Any, nor will I, till I do her service.

*Maria.* But did the lord Lavall know of your  
Before he went? [love, sir,

*Per.* Yes; by much force he got it,  
But none else knew; upon his promise too,  
And honour, to conceal it faithfully  
Till my return: To farther which, he told me,  
My business being ended, from the duke  
He would procure a pension for my service,  
Able to make my mistress a fit husband.

*Maria.* But are you sure of this?

*Per.* Sure as my sight, wench.

*Maria.* Then is your lord a base dissembling  
villain,

A devil lord, the damn'd lord of all lewdness,  
And has betray'd you, and undone my mistress,  
My poor sweet mistress (oh, that lecher lord!)  
Who, poor soul, since was married!

*Per.* To whom, *Maria*?

*Maria.* To that unlucky lord, a pox upon him!  
Whose hot horse appetite being allayed once  
With her chaste joys, married again (scarce cool'd,  
The torches yet not out the yellow Hymen  
Lighted about the bed, the songs yet sounding)  
*Marine's* young noble daughter *Hellena*,  
Whose mischief stands at door next. Oh, that  
recrunt!

*Per.* Oh, villain! oh, most unmanly falsehood!  
Nay, then, I see my letters were betrayed too.  
Oh, I am full of this, great with his mischiefs,  
Loaden and burst! Come, lead me to my lady.

*Maria.* I cannot, sir; Lavall keeps her con-  
ceal'd:

Besides, her griefs are such, she will see no man.

*Per.* I must, and will go to her; I will see her:  
There be my friend, or this shall be thy furthest!

[*Put his hand on his sword.*]

*Maria.* Hold, and I'll help thee! But first you  
shall swear to me,

As you are true and gentle, as you hate  
This beastly and base lord, where I shall place you,  
(Which shall be within sight) till I discharge you,  
Whate'er you see or hear, to make no motion.

*Per.* I do, by Heaven!

*Maria.* Stay here about the house then,  
Till it be later; yet, the time's not perfect:  
There at the back-door I'll attend you truly.

*Per.* Oh, monstrous, monstrous, beastly villain!  
[*Exit.*]

*Maria.* How cross this falls, and from all ex-  
pectation!

And what the end shall be, Heaven only yet  
knows:

Only I wish, and hope. But I forget still;  
*Casta* must be the bait, or all miscarries. [*Exit.*]

SCENE V.—*The same.*

*Enter GENTILE, with a Torch, SHALLOON, at a Window.*

*Gent.* Holla, Shalloon!

*Shal.* Who's there?

*Gent.* A word from the duke, sir.

*Shal.* Your pleasure?

*Gent.* Tell your lord he must to court straight,

*Shal.* He's ill at ease; and prays he may be  
The occasions of this night. [pardon'd

*Gent.* Belike he is drunk then.

He must away; the duke and his fair lady,  
The beauteous *Hellena*, are now at Cent;  
Of whom she has such fortune in her carding,  
The duke has lost a thousand crowns, and swears,  
He will not go to bed, till by Lavall

The tide of loss be turn'd again. Awake him!  
For 'tis the pleasure of the duke he must rise.

*Shal.* Having so strict command, sir, to the  
I dare not do it: I beseech your pardon. [contrary  
*Gent.* Are you sure he is there?

*Shal.* Yes.

*Gent.* And asleep?

*Shal.* I think so.

*Gent.* And are you sure you will not tell him,

*Shal.* Yes, very sure. [Shalloon?

*Gent.* Then I am sure, I will:

Open, or I must force.

*Shal.* Pray you stay! he is not,

Nor will not be this night: You may excuse it.

*Gent.* I knew he was gone about some woman's  
labour.

As good a neighbour, though I say it, and as com-  
fortable! [lady,

Many such more we need, Shalloon. Alas, poor  
Thou art like to lie cross-legg'd to-night. Good  
monsieur,

I will excuse your master for this once, sir,  
Because sometimes I have loved a wench myself

*Shal.* 'Tis a good hearing, sir. [too.

*Gent.* But for your lie, Shalloon,

If I had you here, it should be no good hearing;

For your pate I would pummel.

*Shal.* A fair good-night, sir! [Exit.

*Gent.* Good-night, thou noble knight, Sir Pan-  
darus!

My heart is cold o' th' sudden, and a strange dull-  
ness

Possesses all my body: Thy will be done, Heaven!  
[Exit.

SCENE VI.—*A Room in the House with a  
Gallery.*

*Enter GABRIELLA, CASTA, and MARIA with a Taper.*

*Casta.* 'Faith, friend, I was even going to my  
bed,

When your maid told me of your sudden sickness:  
But from my grave (so truly I love you)

I think your name would raise me. You look ill

Since last I saw you, much decay'd in colour;

Yet, I thank Heaven, I find no such great danger

As your maid frighted me withal: Take courage,

And give your sickness course! Some grief you  
have got

That feeds within upon your tender spirits,

And, wanting open way to vent itself,

Murders your mind, and chokes up all your sweet-  
ness.

*Gab.* It was my maid's fault, worthy friend, to trouble you,  
So late, upon so light a cause; yet, since I have  
Oh, my dear Casta— [you,

*Casta.* Out with it, i' God's name!

*Gab.* The closet of my heart I will lock here,  
wench,

And things shall make you tremble.—Who's that  
knocks there? [Knocking within.

*Maria.* 'Tis Lavall.

*Gab.* Sit you still!—Let him in.—

I am resolved; and, all you wronged women,  
You noble spirits, that, as I, have suffer'd  
Under this glorious beast, insulting man,  
Lend me your causes, then your cruelties;  
For I must put on madness above women!

*Casta.* Why do you look so ghastly?

*Gab.* Peace! no harm, dear.

*Enter LAVALL.*

*Lav.* There, take my cloak and sword.—Where  
is this banquet?

*Maria.* In the next room.

*Casta.* How came he here? Heaven bless me!

*Lav.* Give me some wine, wench; fill it full,  
and sprightly—

*Gab.* Sit still, and be not fearful.

*Lav.* Till my veins swell,

And my strong sinews stretch like that brave Cen-  
That at the table snatch'd the bride away [taur,  
In spite of Hercules.

*Casta.* I am betrayed!

*Lav.* Nay, start not, lady! 'tis for you that I  
come,

And for your beauty: 'Tis for you, Lavall  
Honours this night: to you, the sacred shrine,  
I humbly bow, offering my vows and prayers;  
To you I live.—

*Gab.* [To *MARIA.*] In with the powder quickly!  
—So; that and the wine will rock you.

*Lav.* Here; to the health [Drinks.  
Of the most beautiful and divine fair Casta,  
The star of sweetness!

*Gab.* Fear him not; I'll die first.—  
And who shall pledge you?

*Lav.* Thou shalt, thou tann'd gipsy!  
And worship to that brightness give, cold Tartar!—  
By Heaven, you shall not stir! You are my mis-  
The glory of my love, the great adventure, [tress,  
The mistress of my heart, and she my whore!

*Gab.* Thou liest, base, beastly lord! drunker  
than anger,  
Thou soused lord, got by a surfeit, thou liest  
basely!

Nay, stir not! I dare tell thee so.—Sit you still.—  
If I be whore, it is in marrying thee,  
That art so absolute and full a villain,  
No sacrament can save that piece tied to thee.  
How often hast thou wooed, in those flatteries,  
Almost those very words, my constancy?  
What goddess have I not been, or what goodness?  
What star, that is of any name in Heaven,  
Or brightness? which of all the virtues  
(But drunkenness, and drabbing, thy two morals)  
Have not I reach'd to? what spring was ever  
sweeter?

What Scythian snow so white? what crystal  
chaster?

Is not thy new wife now the same too? Hang  
Base bigamist, thou honour of ill women! [thee,

*Casta.* How's this? Oh, Heaven defend me!

*Gab.* Thou salt-itch,  
For whom no cure but ever-burning brimstone  
Can be imagined!

*Lav.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Gab.* Dost thou laugh, thou breaker  
Of all law, all religion? of all faith  
Thou foul contemner?

*Lav.* Peace, thou paltry woman!—

And sit by me, sweet.

*Gab.* By the devil?

*Lav.* Come,

And lull me with delights.

*Gab.* It works amain now. [Aside.

*Lav.* Give me such kisses as the queen of she-  
dows

Gave to the sleeping boy she stole on Latmos;  
Lock round about, in snaky wreaths close-folded,  
Those rosy arms about my neck, oh, Venus!

*Gab.* Fear not, I say.

*Lav.* Thou admirable sweetness,  
Distil thy blessings like those silver drops,  
That, falling on fair grounds, rise all in roses;  
Shoot me a thousand darts from those fair eyes,  
And through my heart transfix 'em all, I'll stand!  
Send me a thousand smiles, and presently 'em;  
I'll catch 'em in mine eyes, and by Love's power  
Turn 'em to Cupids all, and fling 'em on thee.  
How high she looks, and heavenly!—More wine for  
me!

*Gab.* Give him more wine; and, good friend,  
be not fearful!

*Lav.* Here on my knee, thou goddess of delights,  
This lusty grape I offer to thy beauties:  
See, how it leaps to view that perfect redness  
That dwells upon thy lips! now, how it blushes  
To be out-blush'd! Oh, let me feed my fancy!  
And as I hold the purple god in one hand,  
Dancing about the brim and proudly swelling,  
Deck'd in the pride of Nature, young and blowing,  
So let me take fair Semele in the other,  
And sing the loves of gods, then drink: their nec-  
Not yet desired! [tar's

*Casta.* Oh!

*Lav.* Then, like lusty Tarquin,  
Turn'd into flames with Lucrece' coy denials,  
His blood and spirit equally ambitious,  
I force thee for mine own.

*Casta.* Oh, help me justice! help me, my chas-

*Lav.* Now I am bravely quarried. [tity!

*Enter PERELOT, above.*

*Per.* 'Tis my sister!

*Gab.* No, bawdy slave, no, traitor, she is not  
carried. [Exit *CASTA.*

*Per.* She's loose again, and gone. I'll keep my  
place still.

*Maria.* Now it works bravely. Stand! he can-  
not hurt you.

*Lav.* Oh, my sweet love, my life!

*Maria.* He sinks.

*Lav.* My blessing! [He falls down and sleeps.

*Maria.* So; now he is safe awhile.

*Gab.* Lock all the doors, wench;  
Then for my wrongs!

*Per.* Now I'll appear to know all.

*Gab.* Be quick, quick, good Maria, sure and  
sudden.

*Per.* Stay! I must in first.

*Gab.* Oh, my conscience!

It is young Perolot ! Oh, my stung conscience !  
It is my first and noblest love.

*Maria.* Leave wond'ring,  
And recollect yourself : The man is living ;  
Equally wrong'd as you, and by that devil.

*Per.* 'Tis most true, lady ; your unhappy fortune

I grieve for as mine own ; your fault forgive too,  
If it be one. This is no time for kisses :  
I have heard all, and known all, which mine ears  
Are crack'd a-pieces with, and my heart perish'd.  
I saw him in your chamber, saw his fury,  
And am a-fire till I have found his heart out.  
What do you mean to do ? for I'll make one.

*Gab.* To make his death more horrid (for he

*Per.* He must, he must. [shall die]—

*Gab.* We'll watch him till he wakes,  
Then bind him, and then torture him.

*Per.* 'Tis nothing !

No ; take him dead-drunk now, without repentance,  
His lechery in seam'd upon him.

*Gab.* Excellent !

*Per.* I'll do it myself ; and, when 'tis done, pro-  
For we'll away for Italy this night. [vide ye ;

*Gab.* We'll follow through all hazards.

*Per.* Oh, false lord,

Unmanly, mischievous ! how I could curse thee !  
But that but blasts thy fame : Have at thy heart,  
fool !

Loop-holes I'll make enough to let thy life out.

*Lav.* Oh ! does the devil ride me ?

*Per.* Nay, then ! [Stabs him.

*Lav.* Murder !

Nay, then, take my share too. [Stabs PEROLOT.

*Per.* Help ! oh ! he has slain me.

Bloody intentions must have blood.

*Lav.* Ha !

*Per.* Heaven— [Dies.

*Gab.* He sinks, he sinks, for ever sinks ! Oh,  
Fortune !

Oh, sorrow ! how like seas thou flow'st upon me !  
Here will I dwell for ever. Weep, Maria,  
Weep this young man's misfortune. Oh, thou  
truest—

*Enter Spirit.*

*Lav.* What have I done ?

*Spirit.* That that has mark'd thy soul, man.

*Lav.* And art thou come again, thou dismal

*Spirit.* Yes, to devour thy last. [Spirit ?

*Lav.* Mercy upon me !

*Spirit.* Thy hour is come : Succession, honour,  
pleasure,

And all the lustre thou so long hast look'd for,  
Must here have end : Summon thy sins before thee.

*Lav.* Oh, my affrighted soul !

*Spirit.* There lies a black one ;

Thy own best servant by thy own hand slain :

Thy drunkenness procured it ; there's another :

Think of fair Gabriella : there she weeps ;

And such tears are not lost.

*Lav.* Oh, miserable !

*Spirit.* Thy foul intention to the virtuous Casta.

*Lav.* No more, no more, thou wildfire !

*Spirit.* Last, thy last wife,

Think on the wrong she suffers.

*Lav.* Oh, my misery !

Oh, whither shall I fly ?

*Spirit.* Thou hast no faith, fool.

Hark to thy knell ! [Sings and vanishes.

*Lav.* Millions of sins muster about mine eyes  
now ;

Murders, ambitions, lust, false faiths : Oh, Horror,  
In what a stormy form of death thou ridest now !  
Methinks I see all tortures, fires, and frosts,  
Deep-sinking caves, where nothing but despair  
dwells,

The baleful birds of night hovering about 'em ;

A grave, methinks, now opens, and a hearse,

Hung with my arms, tumbles into it. Oh !

Oh, my afflicted soul ! I cannot pray ;

And the least child, that has but goodness in him,

May strike my head off, so stupid are my powers :

I'll lift mine eyes up though.

*Maria.* Cease these laments !

They are too poor for vengeance : Lavall lives yet.

*Gab.* Then thus I dry all sorrows from these  
eyes ;

Fury and rage possess 'em now ! Damn'd devil !

*Lav.* Ha !

*Gab.* This for young Perolot ! [Stabs him.

*Lav.* Oh, mercy, mercy !

*Gab.* This for my wrongs !

*Lav.* But one short hour to cure me !

Oh, be not cruel ! Oh ! oh ! [Knock within.

*Maria.* Hark, they knock !

Make haste, for Heaven's sake, mistress !

*Gab.* This for Casta ! [Stabs him again.

*Lav.* Oh, oh, oh, oh ! [He dies.

*Maria.* He's dead ; come, quickly, let's away  
with him,

'Twill be too late else.

*Gab.* Help, help, up to th' chamber !

[Exeunt with LAVALL'S body.

*Enter DUKE, HELLENA, GENTILLE, CASTA, and Attendants,  
with Lights.*

*Duke.* What frights are these ?

*Gent.* I am sure here's one past frightening.

Bring the lights nearer :—I have enough already.

Out, out, mine eyes !—Look, Casta.

*Lord.* 'Tis young Perolot !

*Duke.* When came he over ?—Hold the gentle-  
She sinks ; and bear her off. [woman !

*Casta.* Oh, my dear brother ! [Exit.

*Gent.* There is a time for all ; for me, I hope  
And very shortly. Murder'd ? [too,

[GABRIELLA, MARIA, with LAVALL'S body above.

*Duke.* Who's above there ?

*Gab.* Look up, and see.

*Duke.* What may this mean ?

*Gab.* Behold it ?

Behold the drunken murderer

Of that young gentleman : behold the rankest,

The vilest, basest slave that ever flourish'd !

*Duke.* Who kill'd him ?

*Gab.* I ; and there's the cause I did it :

Read, if your eyes will give you leave. [Throws down a paper.

*Hel.* Oh, monstrous !

*Gab.* Nay, out it shall : There, take this false  
heart to ye, [Throws down his heart.

The base dishonour of a thousand women !

Keep it in gold, duke ; 'tis a precious jewel.

Now to myself ! for I have lived a fair age,

Longer by some months than I had a mind to.

*Duke.* Hold !

*Gab.* Here, young Perolot, my first-contracted !  
True love shall never go alone. [Stabs herself.

*Duke.* Hold, Gabriella !

I do forgive all.

*Gab.* I shall die the better.  
Thus let me seek my grave, and my shames with me!

*Maria.* Nor shalt thou go alone, my noble mistress:

Why should I live, and thou dead? [*Stabs herself.*]

*Lord.* Save the wench there!

*Maria.* She is, I hope; and all my sins here

*Duke.* This was a fatal night. [*written.*]

*Gent.* Heaven has his working,  
Which we cannot contend against.

*Duke.* Alas!

*Gent.* Your grace has your *alas* too.

*Duke.* 'Would 'twere equal!

For thou hast lost an honest noble child.

*Gent.* 'Tis heir enough he has left, a good remembrance.

*Duke.* See all their bodies buried decently;  
Though some deserved it not!—How do you, lady?

*Hel.* Even, with your grace's leave, ripe for a monastery;

There will I wed my life to tears and prayers,  
And never know what man is more.

*Duke.* Your pleasure.—

How does the maid within?

*Lord.* She is gone before, sir,  
The same course that her lady takes.

*Gent.* And my course  
Shall be my beads at home, so please your grace  
To give me leave to leave the court.

*Duke.* In peace, sir;

And take my love along!

*Gent.* I shall pray for you.

*Duke.* Now to ourselves: Retire we, and begin  
By this example to correct each sin!

[*Exeunt. Flourish.*]

*Eman.* By this we plainly view the two imposthumes

That choke a kingdom's welfare; ease and want  
In both of which Lavall was capital: [*toanness;*  
For, first, ease stole away his mind from honour;  
That active noble thoughts had kept still working;  
And then delivered him to drink and women,  
Lust and outrageous riot; and what their ends are.  
How infamous and foul, we see example.  
Therefore, that great man that will keep his name,  
And gain his merit out of Virtue's schools,  
Must make the pleasures of the world his fools.

[*Flourish.*]

#### THE TRIUMPH.

*Enter Musicians; next them, PEROLOR, with the wound he died with; then GABRIELLA and MARIA, with their wounds; after them, four Furies with BANNETTS, inscribed, Revenge, Murder, Lust, and Drunkenness, singing; next them, LAVALL wounded; then a Cherub with Death, drawn by the Destinies.* [*Flourish.*]

#### ENTER PROLOGUE.

*Prolog.* From this sad sight ascend your noble eye,  
And see old Time, helping triumphantly,  
Helping his master, Man: View here his vanities;  
And see his false friends, like those glutes flies,  
That, when they've suck'd their fill, fall off, and fade  
From all remembrance of him, like a shade:  
And last, view who relieves him! and that gone,  
We hope your favour, and our play is done.

[*Flourish.*]

## THE TRIUMPH OF TIME.

### SCENE I.—A City.

*Enter ANTHROPOS, DESIRE, VAIN-DELIGHT, and BOUNTY.*

*Anth.* What hast thou done, Desire, and how employed

The charge I gave thee, about levying wealth  
For our supplies?

*Desire.* I have done all, yet nothing;  
Tried all, and all my ways, yet all miscarried:  
There dwells a sordid dulness in their minds,  
Thou son of Earth, colder than that thou art made of.

I came to Craft; found all his hooks about him,  
And all his nets baited and set; his sly self  
And greedy Lucre at a serious conference,  
Which way to tie the world within their statutes:  
Business of all sides and of all sorts swarming,  
Like bees broke loose in summer: I declared  
Your will and want together, both enforcing  
With all the power and pains I had, to reach him;  
Yet all fell short.

*Anth.* His answer?

*Desire.* This he gave me:  
Your wants are never ending; and those supplies  
That came to stop those breaches, are ever lavish'd,  
Before they reach the main, in toys and trifles,

Gewgaws, and gilded puppets. Vain-Delight,  
He says, has ruin'd you, with clapping all  
That comes in for support, on clothes and coaches,  
Perfumes and powder'd pates; and that your  
mistress,

The lady Pleasure, like a sea, devours  
At length both you and him too. If you have  
houses,

Or land, or jewels, for good pawn, he'll hear you,  
And will be ready to supply occasions;  
If not, he locks his ears up, and grows stupid.  
From him, I went to Vanity, whom I found  
Attended by an endless troop of tailors,  
Mercers, embroiderers, feather-makers, fumers,  
All occupations opening like a mart,  
That serve to rig the body out with bravery;  
And through the room new fashions flew, like flies.  
In thousand gaudy shapes; Pride waiting on her,  
And busily surveying all the breaches  
Time and decaying Nature had wrought in her,  
Which still with art she pieced again and strength-

ened:  
I told your wants; she shewed me gowns and head-

tires,  
Embroider'd waistcoats, smocks seamed through  
with cut-works,

Scarfs, mantles, petticoats, muffs, powders, paint-ings,

Dogs, monkeys, parrots, which all seem'd to shew me

The way her money went. From her to Pleasure I took my journey.

*Anth.* And what says our best mistress?

*Desire.* She danced me out this answer presently:

Revels and masques had drawn her dry already. I met old Time too, mowing mankind down, Who says you are too hot, and he must purge you.

*Anth.* A cold *quietus*! Miserable creatures, Born to support and beautify your master, The godlike Man, set here to do me service, The children of my will, why, or how dare ye, Created to my use alone, disgrace me?

Beasts have more courtesy; they live about me, Offering their warm wool to the shearer's hand To clothe me with, their bodies to my labours; Nay, even their lives they daily sacrifice, And proudly press with garlands to the altars, To fill the gods' oblations. Birds bow to me, Striking their downy sails to do me service, Their sweet airs ever echoing to mine honour, And to my rest their plummy softs they send me.

Fishes, and plants, and all where life inhabits, But mine own cursed kind, obey their ruler; Mine have forgot me, miserable mine, Into whose stony hearts, neglect of duty, Squint-eyed Deceit and Self-love are crept closely! None feel my wants? not one friend with me?

*Desire.* None, sir.

*Anth.* Thou hast forgot, Desire, my best friend He cannot fail me. [Flattery;

*Delight.* Fail? he will sell himself,

And all within his power, close to his skin first.

*Desire.* I thought so too, and made him my first venture;

But found him in a young lord's ear so busy, So like a smiling shower pouring his soul In at his portals; his face in thousand figures, Catching the vain mind of the man; I pull'd him, But still he hung like bird-lime; spoke unto him; His answer still was, "By the lord, sweet lord,"

And, "By my soul, thou master-piece of honour!" Nothing could stave him off: He has heard your flood's gone,

And on decaying things he seldom smiles, sir.

*Anth.* Then here I break up state, and free my followers,

Putting my fortune now to Time and Justice: Go seek new masters now; for Anthropos, Neglected by his friends, must seek new fortunes.

*Desire.* To Avarice I here commend thee, Where thou may'st live at full bent of thy wishes.

And, Vain-Delight, thou feeder of my follies, With light Fantastickness be thou in favour!

To leave thee, Bounty, my most worthy servant, Troubles me more than mine own misery;

But we must part: Go, plant thyself, my best friend,

In honourable hearts that truly know thee, And there live ever like thyself, a virtue!

But leave this place, and seek the country; For Law and Lust, like fire, lick all up here.

Now none but Poverty must follow me, Despised patch'd Poverty; and we two married,

Will seek Simplicity, Content, and Peace out, And live with them in exile.

*Enter POVERTY.*

How uncall'd on

My true friend comes!

*Pov.* Here hold thee, Anthropos! Thou art almost arrived at rest: Put this on, A penitential robe, to purge thy pleasures; Off with that vanity!

*Anth.* Here, Vain-Delight, And, with this, all my part to thee again Of thee I freely render.

*Pov.* Take this staff now, And be more constant to your steps hereafter! The staff is Staidness of Affections.— Away, you painted flies, that with man's summer Take life and heat, buzzing about his blossoms! When growing full, ye turn to caterpillars, Gnawing the root that gave you life. Fly, shadows! [Exit *DESIRE* and *DELIGHT*.

Now to Content I'll give thee, Anthropos, To Rest and Peace: No Vanity dwells there, Desire, nor Pleasure, to delude thy mind more; No Flattery's smooth-filed tongue shall poison thee.

*Anth.* Oh, Jupiter, if I have ever offer'd Upon thy burning altars but one sacrifice Thou and thy fair-eyed Juno smiled upon; If ever, to thine honour, bounteous feasts, Where all thy statues sweet with wine and incense, Have by the son of Earth been celebrated; Hear me (the child of Shame now) hear, thou helper,

And take my wrongs into thy hands, thou justice, Done by unmindful man, unmerciful, Against his master done, against thy order; And raise again, thou father of all honour, The poor, despis'd, but yet thy noblest creature! Raise from his ruins once more this sunk cedar, That all may fear thy power, and I proclaim it!

[Exit.

## SCENE II.—OLYMPUS.

*JUPITER* and *MERCURY* descend severally. *Soft Music.*

*Jup.* Ho, Mercury, my winged son!

*Merc.* Your servant.

*Jup.* Whose powerful prayers were those that reached our ears,

Arm'd in such spells of pity now?

*Merc.* The sad petitions [pos; Of the scorned son of Earth, the god-like Anthro- He that has swell'd your sacred fires with incense, And piled upon your altars thousand heifers; He that (beguiled by Vanity and Pleasure, Desire, Craft, Flattery, and smooth Hypocrisy) Stands now despised and ruined, left to Poverty.

*Jup.* It must not be; he was not raised for ruin;

Nor shall those hands heaved at my altars perish: He is our noblest creature. Flee to Time; And charge him presently release the bands Of Poverty and Want this suitor sinks in: Tell him, among the sun-burnt Indians, That know no other wealth but peace and pleasure, He shall find golden Plutus, god of riches, Who idly is adored, the innocent people Not knowing yet what power and weight he carries: Bid him compel him to his right use, honour, And presently to live with Anthropos.

It is our will. Away!

*Merc.* I do obey it.

[*JUPITER* and *MERCURY* ascend again. *Music.*

SCENE III.—*A Savage Country.*

*Enter PLUTUS, with a Troop of Indians singing and dancing wildly about him, and bowing to him; which ended, enter TIME.*

*Time.* Rise, and away! 'tis Jove's command.

*Plutus.* I will not!

Ye have some fool to furnish now; some Midas, That to no purpose I must choak with riches.

Who must I go to?

*Time.* To the son of Earth; He wants the god of wealth.

*Plutus.* Let him want still!

I was too lately with him, almost torn Into ten thousand pieces by his followers: I could not sleep, but Craft or Vanity Were filing 'off my fingers; not eat, for fear Pleasure would cast herself into my belly, And there surprise my heart.

*Time.* These have forsaken him: Make haste then! thou must with me. Be not For fear a greater anger light upon thee. [*angry,*

*Plutus.* I do obey thee: But will change my For when I willingly befriend a creature, [*figure;* Goodly and full of glory I shew to him; But when I am compelled, old and decrepid, I halt and hang upon my staff. Farewell, friends! I will not be long from ye: All my servants I leave among ye still, and my chief riches.

[*Exeunt Indians, with a Dance.*

Oh, Time, what innocence dwells here, what goodness!

They know me not, nor hurt me not, yet hug me. Away! I'll follow thee: But not too fast, Time! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*A Rocky Country.*

*Enter ANTHROPOS, HONESTY, SIMPLICITY, HUMILITY, and POVERTY.*

*Humil.* Man, be not sad; nor let this divorce From Mundus, and his many ways of pleasure, Afflict thy spirits! which, considered rightly, With inward eyes, makes thee arrive at happy.

*Pov.* For now what danger or deceit can reach What matter left for Craft or Covetize [*thee?* To plot against thee? what Desire to burn thee?

*Hon.* Oh, son of Earth, let Honesty possess Be as thou wast intended, like thy Maker; [*thee?* See through those gaudy shadows, that, like dreams,

Have dwelt upon thee long; call up thy goodness, Thy mind and man within thee, that lie shipwrecked;

And then how thin and vain these fond affections, How lame this worldly love, how lump-like, raw, And ill-digested, all these vanities Will shew, let Reason tell thee!

*Simpl.* Crown thy mind With that above the world's wealth, joyful suffer- And truly be the master of thyself. [*ing,* Which is the noblest empire! and there stand The thing thou wert ordained, and set to govern!

*Pov.* Come, let us sing the world's shame: Hear us, Anthrosos!

*Song: And then enter TIME and PLUTUS.*

*Hon.* Away! we are betray'd.

[*Exeunt all but POVERTY.*

*Time.* Get thou too after,

Thou needy bare companion! go for ever, For ever, I conjure thee. Make no answer!

[*Exit POVERTY.*

*Anth.* What mak'st thou here, Time? thou that Never stood still by me?

*Time.* I have brought thee succour; And now, catch hold, I am thine; The god of riches (Compell'd by him that saw thy miseries, The ever-just and wakeful Jove) at length Is come unto thee; use him as thine own; For 'tis the doom of Heaven, he must obey thee.

*Anth.* Have I found pity then?

*Time.* Thou hast, and justice Against those false seducers of thine honour. Come, give him present helps! [*Exit TIME.*

*INDUSTRY and the ARMS discovered.*

*Plutus.* Come, Industry, Thou friend of life! and next to thee, rise, Labour! Rise presently; and now to your employments! But first conduct this mortal to the rock.

[*They carry ANTHROPOS to a rock, and set a-digging.*

What see'st thou now?

[*PLUTUS strikes the rock, and flames fly out.*

*Anth.* A glorious mine of metal.—

Oh, Jupiter, my thanks!

*Plutus.* To me a little.

*Anth.* And to the god of wealth, my sacrifice!

*Plutus.* Nay, then I am rewarded. Take heed now, son,

You are afloat again, lest Mundus catch you!

*Anth.* Never betray me more!

*Plutus.* I must to India, From whence I came, where my main wealth lies buried, And these must with me. Take that book and mattock,

And, by those, know to live again!

[*Exeunt PLUTUS, INDUSTRY, LABOUR, &c.*

*Anth.* I shall do.

*Enter FAME, sounding.*

*Fame.* Through all the world the fortune of great Anthrosos

Be known and wonder'd at; his riches envied, As far as sun or time is; his power fear'd too!

[*Exeunt. Music.*

*Enter DELIGHT, PLEASURE, CRAFT, LUCRE, VANITY, &c. dancing (and masqued) towards the Rock, offering service to ANTHROPOS. MERCURY from above. Music heard. One half of a Cloud drawn, Singers are discovered; then the other half drawn. JUPITER seen in glory.*

*Merc.* Take heed, weak man! those are the sins that sunk thee;

Trust 'em no more: Kneel, and give thanks to Jupiter.

*Anth.* Oh, mighty power!

*Jup.* Unmask, ye gilded poisons!— Now look upon 'em, son of Earth, and shame 'em;

Now see the faces of thy evil angels; Lead 'em to Time, and let 'em fill his triumph! Their memories be here forgot for ever.

*Anth.* Oh, just, great god! how many lives of service,

What ages only given to thine honour,

What infinites of vows and holy prayers  
Can pay my thanks ?

*Jup.* Rise up ! and, to assure thee  
That never more thou shalt feel want, strike Mer-  
cury,

Strike him ; and by that stroke he shall for ever  
Live in that rock of gold, and still enjoy it.  
Be't done, I say ! Now sing in honour of him.

## SONG.

*Enter the Triumph. First, the Musicians : Then VAIN-  
DELIGHT, PLEASURE, CRAFT, LUCRE, VANITY, and  
other of the Vices : Then a Chariot with the Person of*

*Time sitting in it, drawn by four Persons, representing  
Hours, singing.*

[Exeunt. Flourish.]

*Eman.* By this we note, sweetheart, in kings  
and princes,

A weakness, even in spite of all their wisdoms,  
And often to be mastered by abuses ;  
Our natures here described too, and what humours  
Prevail above our reasons to undo us :  
But this the last and best : When no friend stands,  
The gods are merciful, and lend their hands.

[Flourish. Exeunt.]

## EPILOGUE.

Now as the husbandman, whose costs and pain,  
Whose hopes and helps, lie buried in his grain,  
Waiting a happy spring to ripen full  
His longed-for harvest to the reaper's pull,  
Stand we expecting (having sown our ground  
With so much charge, the fruitfulness not found)  
The harvest of our labours : For we know  
You are our spring ; and when you smile we grow.  
Nor change nor pain shall bind us from your pleasures,  
So you but lend your hands to fill our measures !

# THE FAITHFUL FRIENDS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

TITUS MARTIUS, *King of Rome.*  
MARCUS TULLIUS, *the Roman General.*  
OLD TULLIUS, *his Father, a Senator.*  
MARCELLANUS, *a Senator, Father to PHILADELPHA.*  
ARMANUS, *Friend to MARCUS TULLIUS.*  
MARIUS, *Friend to TULLIUS, and Lover of LELIA.*  
RUPINUS, }  
LEARCHUS, } *Captains, and Enemies to TULLIUS.*  
LEONTIUS, }  
MARCELLUS, *a Roman Captain.*  
SARNIUS, *General of the Sabines.*  
ARMINIUS, *a Sabine Captain.*  
SIR PERGAMUS, *a humorous Knight, in Love with FLAVIA.*

BELLARIO, *an old Soldier.*  
SNIPSNAP, *a Tailor.*  
BLACKSKIN, *a Smith.*  
CALVESKIN, *a Shoemaker.*  
Pedester.  
Senators, Lictors, Flamens, Constable, Officers,  
Tapsters, Sutler, Heralds, Postmaster, Messengers, Petitioners, and Attendants.

PHILADELPHA, *Wife to MARCUS TULLIUS.*  
LELIA, *disguised as JANUS, her Page; Sister to TULLIUS.*  
FLAVIA, *Servant to PHILADELPHA.*  
Ladies and Attendants.

SCENE,—ROME, AND THE COUNTRY OF THE SABINES.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—ROME. *Before the Capitol.*

*Enter MARIUS, RUPINUS, and LEONTIUS.*

*Ruf.* You have made a large relation, but more rare,

Of your experienced travels; and I fear  
You will depopulate our court and land  
Of the most noble youths; who, being fired  
By your rich benefit, will like lightning fly  
To purchase fame and honour.

*Leont.* You're full fraught  
With many kingdoms' virtues.

*Mar.* Sir, you flatter now,  
And do outprize my willing industry:  
Yet, without boast, I have been no drone, my lords,  
To suck up others' labours; nor, as many  
Of our nobles do, purchased new fashions  
With the loss of lands; nor spent my five years  
travels

To bring home a Spanish block, or a French  
compliment,

A German health, or English tilting-staff;  
Nor fiddled out my time in capering:  
Yet these, nor any other active exercises  
That can be added to adorn the state  
Of a true gentleman, are strange to one,  
Occasion best will witness. But, my lords,  
I have not yet, in the least syllable,  
Received the knowledge of domestic things;  
What change of state, of friends, or enemies;  
The custom of the court; who are in grace:  
Lest my long absence hence may make me igno-  
Of due respect deserved by noble merit; [rant,  
And who is favourite to the king?

I would be loth to appear ridiculous  
In any errors at first interview.

*Ruf.* You have outstripped the wing of our de-  
We did reserve it with a full intent [sirs:  
To make a just return to your relation.

*Mar.* My thoughts thirst for it.

*Ruf.* You knew young Tullius?

*Mar.* Servius Tullius' son?

*Ruf.* The same.

*Mar.* Pray on.

*Ruf.* He was a man, you know, of no great birth.

*Leont.* A gentleman; that's all.

*Mar.* A king's no more.

*Ruf.* He is the only gallant of the times,  
The court's chief school, master in arts and arms:  
The chief star that adorns this hemisphere  
Is thrown into his bosom for his bride.

*Mar.* Her name, Rufinus?

*Ruf.* 'Tis beauteous Philadelphæ, the sole  
Of Marcellanus, our chief senator. [daughter

*Mar.* A lovely dame; Rome wants her parallel,  
Except my saint, the bright-cheeked Lelia.

*Ruf.* The solemn graces, hymeneal sports,  
And revellings at this great nuptial,  
Cannot by the tongue of wonder be compared.  
Millions were lavished in excessive sports,  
And piebald pageantry.

And then the open favours of the king,  
Crowned with the gaping multitude,  
Made Atlas shake with laughter.

*Mar.* When was this, my lords?

*Ruf.* Some two days since:  
The happy bridegroom has not yet, I am sure,  
Plucked the Hesperian fruit; 'twas her desire

To lie three nights alone ; your courtlike way  
To make them feed the freer when they meet.

*Mar.* I curse my slow speed

That made mine eye a stranger to these sights.

*Ruf.* Rather adore that deity that detained you.

*Mar.* Do you then malign his happiness,  
Young Tullius' honours, and my sovereign's grace?

*Ruf.* Do we ! Who does not ? and contemn  
As ————— [them too,

*Mar.* I do you,

Or any that true worth shall emulate.

I know young Tullius is a noble youth,

Endued with virtues and perfections

Fitting to rank with our best Roman blood.

*Ruf. Leont.* Ha, ha, ha, ha !

*Mar.* Do you laugh ?

By all our gods, Rufinus, Tullius' merits  
Deserve those graces are bestowed upon him  
Better than any one that envies them.

*Ruf.* How, Marius ?

*Mar.* Pish ! 'gainst the winds look big.

*Enter LEARCHUS.*

*Learch.* That bigness blew me hither.

*Ruf.* In post, Learchus ?

*Learch.* 'Foot ! had I wings like Perseus, and  
could fly,

I were too slow-paced to divulge this news.

*Leont.* What is't, i' th' name of wonder ?

*Learch.* For firm truth,

The Sabines are in arms, whose stubborn necks  
These many years stooped to the yoke of Rome,  
Now shake their fetters off, and with sharp steel  
Swear to enlarge their former privilege.

*Ruf.* This your tidings ?

The expectation takes the strangeness off :  
It has been long suspected.

*Learch.* You're too greedy,

And glut your appetites with the first dish :

I have a feast of news yet,

Who do you think is chosen general,

And command given for a present press,

Of our most ablest, expert soldiers,

Ten thousand horse, and twenty thousand foot,

To quell this hot rebellion ?

*Ruf.* Who but we ?

*Learch.* You have been.

*Ruf.* May be thyself, Learchus ?

*Learch.* No, no, no.

*Ruf.* Then 'tis Leontius ?

*Learch.* You are wider still.

*Ruf.* Who else is fit to bear 't, and we put by ?

*Learch.* Who but the warlike Tullius ?

*Ruf.* That milksop ! Sure the king

Will make an idol of him.

*Learch.* Who should command but he that awes  
command ?

Tullius is general, and, with greatest pomp,

Is coming this way ; the king leaning thus

Upon his soldier : eyeing as they pass

The looks and gestures of each gazer-on.

How they relish his election.

*Ruf.* But rawly, without salt ;

They have a fresh soldier to their general.

*Mar.* Your bitterness makes the digestion

In my conceit, be that endeavours well, [harsh :

Though he come short of him that hath performed

Something worth praise, deserves far more com-  
mends

Than those that boast their actions ; it takes off

The lustre that belongs to't. Pardon me  
If I make question of your loyalties,  
That dare disparage thus my sovereign's choice  
Of his respected subjects : it infers  
A doubt made of his wisdom. Why should we  
Tax the prerogative pleasures of our prince ?  
Whom he shall grace, or where bestow his favours ?  
That law's allowed to every private man :  
Then, to confine or disallow a king,  
Were most injurious and preposterous.  
For as \* \* \* \* \* as they're gods,  
They are subject to their passions as they're men :  
Alexander the Great had his Hephestion,  
Philip of Spain his Lerma : Not to offend,  
I could produce from courts that I have seen  
More royal precedents, but I'll not give  
Such satisfaction to detraction tongues,  
That publish such foul noise against a man  
I know for truly virtuous.

*Ruf. Learch.* Leon. Ha, ha, ha !

*Learch.* What's he

That takes upon him thus to contradict

What we shall please to censure ?

*Ruf.* 'Tis young Marius,

He that was severed from fair Lelia,

Old Tullius' daughter.

*Learch.* Alas, poor lover ! these are frantic fits :

He adores Tullius for his sister's sake.

*Ruf.* Now the great general comes.

*Leon.* How fierce he looks !

*Enter MARCELLUS, leading : DRUMS and Colours ; TITUS  
MARTIUS, MARCUS TULLIUS, ARMANUS, Soldiers, and  
Attendants.*

*Mar.* The blessings of the gods be multiplied  
To add increase of glory and renown  
To Titus Martius, my dread sovereign,  
And to the general, fame, and victory.

*Titus.* Thy last fair wish begets a double thanks.  
Rise, Marius.

Thy virtue was the harbinger to prepare  
A welcome to thy country ; but to us  
That exiled thee from Rome, and from thy bliss,  
The beauteous Lelia, our command shall crown  
Your loves with a rich dowry ; she is thine.

*Mar.* A bounty, sir, I prize above my life.

All joys reward you, noble Tullius.

*M. Tull.* Welcome as what I long for, victory !

*Arm.* With like arms I embrace you.

*All.* So do all.—

*Ruf.* There's a young demi-god too : With  
The king doth entertain him ! [what grace

*Learch.* Oh, my lord,

Must he not be allied to Tullius ?

*Ruf.* I cry you mercy, I had forgot that.

*Leon.* 'Foot, we're not minded here ; these  
dunghill-cocks

Flutter their feathers so before his eyes,  
He does or will not see us.

*Ruf.* It is no matter : let 'em use their wings,  
We shall sit heavily upon their skirts for't.—

*Titus.* We'll leave our Tullius now, and back to  
court :

Time must allow some hours for a kind leave  
'Twixt you and your fair bride ; we'll not be by  
To see so sad a parting.

*M. Tull.* Royal sir,

How'er the thought of danger may beget  
Some sorrow for my absence, being divorced  
Ere Hymen's rites are fully finished :

Yet, when her love shall look upon the cause

Commands my service, and this three-fold grace  
Conferred on me by you, she will with smiles  
Turn from me; her chief care  
Is of my honour, not my dalliance.

*Titus.* Thou deifest her with this character;  
Yet she deserves a larger. Farewell Marcus,

Mars guide thy marches. Peace thy footsteps

*M. Tull.* I live but for your safety. [home!]

*Titus.* Ours in thine. [Exit.]

*Ruf. Leon. Learch.* Ha, ha, ha! [Exeunt.]

*Mar.* [Detaining TULLIUS.] Could you dispense, sir, with your high affairs,  
I'd gladly borrow some short conference.

*M. Tull.* I'll lend it, sir, most willing: I wish  
Would engage me for the like courtesy. [time]

*Mar.* I'll not be tedious, trust me.

*M. Tull.* Worthy friend, [To ARMANTUS.]  
Take off the edge of Philadelpa's grief  
For this short separation; be you the first  
That shall acquaint her with my great command,  
It will abate some of the bitterness,  
And mitigate her passions ere we meet,  
To make our parting sweeter.

*Arm.* Friend, I shall, and, with persuasive  
speech,  
Arm her with patience to beat back sad thoughts,  
And hoodwink danger with your honour's veil.

*M. Tull.* I know you need no tutor. I'll exchange  
Some words with Marius, whose approach, I pray

You'd certify my bride before we come,  
For I intend to bring him.

*Arm.* Your best pleasure.

*M. Tull.* You shall not want us long.

*Arm.* We'll all attend you.

[Exit, with MARCELLUS and Soldiers.]

*Mar.* Now let me freely fold thee, noble lord:  
All bars that stood betwixt us are removed,  
Great Martius' frown, our fathers' enmity,  
Caused by the antipathy of honour's stem,  
Which your deserts have levelled. Their stern  
hate,

That strived to contradict our plighted faiths,  
Which long ere this had linked to you a brother,  
I hope is reconciled. Good, bless me then  
To hear of my dear Lelia: is she well?

Hath not my discontinuance, and harsh threats  
Of both our parents, forced her timorous sex  
To shun my wished embraces, and give up  
Her heart and hand unto some resident suitor?  
My soul is racked till you dissolve my fears.

*M. Tull.* And mine till you resolve me to what  
end

You ask these frivolous questions. Good, my lord,  
Now is no time to dwell on circumstance,  
And I am something wondered you should make  
A doubt of Lelia's faith,

Having the cabinet in your custody  
That does contain the jewel: 'Tis a prize,  
(Wear it!) the richest in love's lottery,  
Won from a woman: Sir, remember that.

Yet such a spotless worth fame crowns you with,  
I do not fear the preservation on't;

But 'tis your own, howsoever lasting joy.  
Now make me happy to partake her welfare:  
How does my sister?

*Mar.* Ha!

*M. Tull.* You have made a sad old man: the  
king's entreats,  
Persuades of friends, business of state, my honours,

Marriage rites, nor aught that can be named,  
Since Lelia's loss, can move him from the place  
In which he lives a retired life and much discon-  
solate.

*Mar.* I dare not understand you. Lelia lost?

*M. Tull.* To all but you. Why do you dally thus.  
Trifling with that is now so precious?

If you will glad an aged father's heart  
With sight of his sole daughter, questionless

The joy will seal your pardon:  
You're not the first has stol'n a handsome lady.  
Good Marius, do not linger.

*Mar.* Hold for Heaven's sake!

You have condemned me of a fact, which I  
Of force must die, because not guilty of't.  
Hear me, dear Tullius: Witness all our gods,  
If ever since the time of our divorce,  
Signed by your father's hate, and king's command,  
When I set forth to travel, I e'er saw  
Or heard of my sweet Lelia,  
All lovers' curses seize me, and my life  
Languish in torments unexpressible!

*M. Tull.* In this belief I am wretched: 'Would  
you had, sir!

Till now her loss was nothing: Since that time  
That an ill-twisted fate divided you,  
My sister ne'er was seen; all Rome conceived,  
And did not spare to speak it, for your sake  
All comforts else she banished.

*Mar.* And from me  
All other joys for ever.

*M. Tull.* From my breast  
She has forced millions of contented thoughts,  
And placed cold cakes of sorrow. Worthy sir,  
Let my example mitigate your grief,  
And smother it a while; our better stars  
May work more fair effects, and she be found  
When rumour shall report your safe return.  
This news would soon shorten my father's days,  
For he is fixed upon't she fled with you.  
Were Rome in peace, or my command ta'en of,  
I'd take a pilgrimage in search of her,  
Though I left joys above Elysium.

*Mar.* You speak beyond a brother, loving  
Tullius.

*M. Tull.* For my sake, then, conceal her loss  
a while,  
Lest it should raise a censure of despair.

*Mar.* Despair!  
Death durst not taint a goodness with such sin:  
That thought shall ne'er afflict me for her loss.  
The key of silence here shall lock it up  
Close from the world and you.

I would not have a partner in my woe,  
For that, like her, solely belongs to me;  
Yet, lest deep melancholy drive my sense  
To range the world in madness, I'll cast off  
All show of discontent, and, with my sword,  
Assist you in this hot hostility.

*M. Tull.* Your company's a second life to me.  
[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—A Tavern.

BELLARIO, a tattered Soldier; BLACKSPOOT, a Smith.  
SNIPENAP, a Tailor; CALVEBEEKIN, a Shoemaker, sitting  
round a Table, every one Pots in their Hand. Fair  
Tapster.

*Snip.* Some more drink, boy.

*Tap.* You shall, sir, by and by.

*Black.* Come, my brave soldier,  
Take off thy basting, bully! By this hand,  
You shall not pay a farthing of this reckoning:  
I am Blacksnout still.

*Bell.* Pay? What word's that?  
Oh, disgrace to a man of resolution!  
Name pay in time of peace.

*Calve.* Stay, be not angry, my bold swash-  
buckler:

He means thou shalt not pay for what's come in.  
*Snip.* No more he shall not, by this thimble,  
whilst I have  
A groat: I should have two two-pences, I mistake  
else.

Not a doit, by this drink! So here's to thee, boy.  
[Drinks.]

*Bell.* No, nor you neither, my fine fox-catchers!  
Pay? 'tis against my profession:  
I have a bitch shall bite him to the bone  
Dares ask but such a question. 'Las! you are  
fresh men:  
I'm an old weather-beaten soldier, that, whilst  
drum

And trumpets terrified cowards, had the world  
At will; but in this armour-rusting peace  
I'm glad to change god Mars for Mercury,  
And pick a living out of my wits.

*Snip.* Pick, I allow you:  
Give me a trade, say I; I'll undertake  
To finish more suits in a year than any  
Two lawyers in the town, and get as much  
By th' hand too; 'tis well known we purchase  
As well as they. [now-a-days]

*Black.* Why not! Your fees go all one way:  
Lawyers and tailors have their several bells.

*Calve.* Well fare the honest gentle-craft, my  
Our labour always comes to a good end. [hearts]

*Black.* Peace, Calveskin! your thin sole takes  
water.

*Calve.* 'Tis want of liquor then.—Some more  
drink, sirrah!

*Black.* Which of you all can hold out tack with  
Blacksnout,

The horse-shoemaker? It is always good  
When a man has two irons in the fire:  
We seldom have cold doings.

*Snip.* I'd be loth  
To have nothing but my wits to live upon.

*Black.* I believe thee, thou wouldst have none  
at all then.

*Snip.* 'Tis but a threadbare living at the best.  
*Bell.* 'Sfoot, ye all talk

Like a company of sprat-fed mechanics.  
I tell you, my sincere jobbernowls, I would not  
change

The revenues that this brain brings me in yearly  
For ne'er a trade-fall'n citizen's in Europe,  
Though their charter were sealed, to swear and lie  
*Calve.* I st possible? [by authority.]

*Bell.* There's many a trim gallant in this town  
That lives by nothing else, and bravely too.  
'Las! we have comings-in that every goose  
I' th' city thinks not of: as, for example,—  
Sit round.

*Black.* Sit round, sit round.

*Bell.* I'll explain  
This mystery: Here's a young high-mettled lady,  
Whilst her unable lord lies languishing  
In a lingering consumption, she, poor soul,  
Is almost pined for want of necessaries:

Who must help this malady but Bellario,  
A lusty well-timbered fellow? yet no loggerhead—  
Mistake me not.

*Black.* No, no, you are i' the right.  
*Bell.* And there, besides a satin suit,  
With all things correspondent, cap-a-pie;  
These coffers are furnished for a month or two.  
*Snip.* Good, i' faith.

*Black.* I begin to relish this.  
*Bell.* Then this brave cavaliero  
Is openly baffled in his mistress' sight,  
And dares not fight himself; who must maintain  
This quarrel but Bellario? And so some forty  
Or fifty crusados entice my trusty friend here  
To leave his peaceful mansion, to make good  
His reputation.

*Calve.* What do you think of this?  
*Black.* Better and better still.—Some more  
drink, boy.

*Bell.* Next, here's a rich devouring cormorant  
Comes up to town, with his leathern budget  
stuffed

Till it crack again, to empty it upon a company  
Of spruce clerks and squalling lawyers, when  
'twere fitter

Such honest lads as myself had it; that, instead  
Of pedlar's French, gives him plain language for  
his money,—

Stand and deliver! besides all the prayers  
Of the poor people in a country, whom  
This cut-throat would have undone in a term-time.  
Is not this fit?

*Snip.* Very necessary, I protest to you.

*Bell.* To proceed—

*Black.* Ay, to proceed. Here's to you. [Drinks.]

*Bell.* This new-come novice  
Would be instructed in the generous garb;  
This tiffany-trader wants customers; I thrust 'em  
together.

This greasy citizen would put off some musty  
commodity,  
That some young heir would half hang himself to  
take up:

I help all these, and all these help me. The honest  
whore, Fortune,

Finds a thousand ways to pleasure her favourites.  
Now, my fine finger-blowing, cross-legged compa-  
nions,

Is not wit an unknown legacy?

*Snip.* Ay, I'll be sworn is't.

I'd spend a crown to see my father's will;  
Sure he left me that unknown legacy.

He was once mayor o' th' town.

*Black.* I should have wit,  
I was a soldier once.

*Snip.* *Calve.* Thou a soldier?

*Black.* Yes, and have been shot too.

*Snip.* With a pot-gun.

*Black.* No, Snipsnap, nor a goose gun,  
But with a bullet as big as a penny-loaf:

Thou would'st have eat it ere thou hadst suffered it.

*Bell.* Where? Where about was't, Blacksnout?

*Black.* In the groin.

'Twas at the siege of Bunnil, passing the straights  
'Twixt Mayor's-lane and Terra del Fuego, the  
fiery isle.

*Bell.* Hot service, by my faith.

*Black.* Phew! nothing to me:

He is no good smith that ne'er burnt his fingers.

Here, soldier, here's to thee.

*Snip.* Does't call me soldier? I tell thee I scorn't:

I am a tailor, and as good a man as thyself.

*Black.* As good a man as I? Snipsnap, thou liest.

*Snip.* Lie: Oh, my patience! I'd give forty drachmas

I were a gentleman, that I might fight with thee.

*Calve.* Nay, nay, no quarrelling: Some more drink, Tapster.—

Pray help me to make them friends; the tailor, sir, is something cross sometimes, and so's the smith, Too hot and fiery.

*Bell.* Come, Blacksnout, drink to him.

*Black.* I care not if I do.

*Snip.* Care not? Nay then—

*Black.* What then?

*Snip.* I care not if I pledge thee.

*Bell.* So, so, this is well.

*Calve.* Of all things in the world I cannot endure This foolish quarrelling. My wife and I have a bout

Sometimes, but I always come by the worst on't.

*Snip.* More drink, Tapster.

*Tap.* Sir, my master

Will let me draw no more till this be paid for.

*Snip.* Does he misdoubt our payment? Then there's for you:

Go change me that cracked crown. [*Strikes him.*]

*Bell.* Oh, brave Snipsnap! Who said he durst not fight?

*Tap.* Well, sir, you'll dearly answer this:

My master's constable; he'll trounce you for't.

*Snip.* Dost tell me of a constable?

*Black.* A constable's

An ass. I've been a constable myself,

*Calve.* I was head-borough then, you know.

*Enter Constable and Officers.*

*Const.* How now?

What coil is here?

*Black.* Level coil, you see, every man's pot.

*Const.* Which is he, sirrah?

*Tap.* He, sir, that struts it so.

*Const.* I do command thee stand, in the king's name.

*Black.* You must write great letters then.

*Const.* I do command thee stand.

*Snip.* Well, so I do:

Now I sit down again.

*Const.* Thou hast broke my man's head

Here, in my own house.

*Snip.* That's a lie,

I broke't within the length of my own yard.

*Const.* Neighbours, what were I best lay to his It is no felony nor burglary. [*charge?*]

1 *Off.* Yes, but 'tis;

Is't not burglary to break a house?

2 *Off.* That it is.

1 *Off.* And is not the flesh the house of your *Const.* Right. [*soul?*]

1 *Off.* Then attach him

Of burglary for breaking your man's house.

2 *Off.* No, no, lay fiat murder to his charge:

Who knows whether your man may die after it?

*Const.* Peace! Tell me one thing first; is not True subject's blood the king's? [*every*]

1 *Off.* Yes, that it is.

*Const.* And is't not treason to spill the king's blood?

1 *Off.* Yes, by my faith is't, and high treason too.

*Const.* Very good: then, my tapster being a true subject,

His blood's the king's, and it is treason to spill't.

1 *Off.* Oh, well considered, master constable:

This 'tis to have a wise man in the place.

*Const.* Stand up again, thou monster.

*Snip.* Bear witness, neighbours, I am a married man.—Sir, I shall firke You for't.

*Const.* I do here attach thee of high treason For breaking my tapster's head.

*Calve.* How? how? treason?

*Const.* Or any man than dares not justify it— Away with him to prison!

*Snip.* Good master constable, 'Twas wilfully done of me, I must confess; But did not think 'twas treason. Neighbours, speak for me.

*Const.* Away with him, I say.

*Black.* Pray, master constable, be good to him: Of a tailor he's a very honest man; 'tis against A good time too, and if he should be hanged For this, he would go near to lose all his custom.

*Const.* I'll hear no more.

*Enter MARCELLIUS, Soldiers with Drums and Colours.*

*Marc.* How now? What uproar's this? Are you the constable?

*Const.* I am the king's sworn image.

*Marc.* Can you read?

*Const.* Yes, very well.

*Marc.* There is his highness' seal For present levy of a band of men.— That's the wrong end.

*Const.* If't be, all's one to me.

*Marc.* What men are these i' th' house?

*Const.* A company of quarrelling Jacks, as't please you;

They say they have been soldiers, and fall out About their valours.

*Marc.* Such as these I look for.

*Const.* They have broke my tapster's head amongst 'em, captain.

*Marc.* They shall have heads enow to break ne'er doubt.—

Bellarion, are you here? A man of your know And quarrel in an ale-house? [*parts.*]

*Bell.* Pardon, captain;

'Twas no offence of mine; I lit by chance

Into their company: necessity, you know,—

*Marc.* Hold thee, here's gold; furnish thyself Thou shalt be my lieutenant. [*with speed.*]

*Bell.* Thanks, brave captain.

*Marc.* These shall along with us too. Receive your press.

*Calve.* Oh, good captain, I have a wife, indeed, sir.

*Marc.* If she be a striker, I will press her too.

*Black.* 'Sfoot, I'll go, an't be but to be rid of mine.

*Snip.* Oh, that I had been hanged out of the way! Sweet captain!

*Marc.* Prate not, take it, you were best.

*Const.* He is my prisoner, captain; I attached him

Of high-treason, for breaking my tapster's head.

*Marc.* Away, you coxcomb! Bring 'em on. Bellarion. [*Exit.*]

*Const.* Pray, gentlemen, will you pay your reckoning then?

*Snip.* Not a cross, by this hand, and stay me if thou darest.

*Black.* I'll go to all the wars in the world before I'll pay a doit.

*Bell.* To wars, my boys! Why, 'tis the bravest life.

I'll sing you a song now shall encourage you,  
And make you fight like furies.

*All.* Oh, let's hear't.

SONG, by BELLARIO.

Hark, oh hark, you valliant soldiers,  
How the drum and trumpets sound!  
How true valour shall be crown'd!  
\* \* \* \* \*

SCENE III.—*An Apartment in the House of TULLIUS.*

*Enter PHILADELPHA, and LELIA disguised as JANUS her Page.*

*Phi.* Thy news darts death and horror to my Think't thou 'tis true? [heart:]

*Lel.* Madam, I wish 'twere false; but credit me, it is a general rumour through the city.

*Enter ARMANUS.*

Here comes one can resolve you.

*Phi.* My lord's best friend, best welcome! Oh, Armanus,

Free my sad fears from this same killing sound,  
That flies from vulgar mouths; words dipt in gall  
Have pierced my quickest sense. Must Tullius

*Arm.* Pardon me, lady, [leave me?]

If my harsh language shall offend your ears  
In seconding what you have caught already:  
My friend must leave you; no desire of his,  
Purchase of fame or wealth, but the king's will  
And country's safety, care of public good,  
Which, like the gods' decrees, must be observed.  
The Sabines, that have bowed their lowly necks  
Thus long beneath Rome's mild and gentle yoke,  
Pull their sad fates from our unwilling hands  
By base rebellion and foul breach of faith;  
And your great lord, for such is the king's love,  
Must go as general to correct their pride,  
An honour that great princes emulate,  
And strive to be preferred to: let that grace,  
With thought of his return and high renown  
Clear your wet eyes, and make pale fear grow red  
To see a woman valiant.

*Phi.* You have words

Able to comfort a despairing soul:  
Yet sure you do but try me; it cannot be,  
Nor shall I ever think nature would waste  
Such pains and cost to frame a man in whom  
She might admire herself, to be a prey  
For cut-throats in his prime.

*Arm.* No, lady, Heaven defend!

A better angel guards him.

*Phi.* Where is he, good Armanus?

Have we but one poor minute's time to part in,  
And shall we lose a sand or thought of that?

*Arm.* Ere you can wish again, he'll visit you.

*Phi.* Visit indeed, for I am sick to death

To think of his departure.

*Arm.* He is now in conference with young

*Lel.* Marius? [Marius.]

*Arm.* That should have wed his sister, the bright Lelia.

*Lel.* Hold, my heart! [Aside.]

*Phi.* Is he call'd home again?

*Arm.* And in more grace than ever.

*Phi.* 'Deed, I am glad on't.

*Lel.* [Aside.] My breast's too little to contain  
My tongue will sure betray me. [my joy:]

*Arm.* Both by this

Are entering the first court.

*Phi.* Look, Janus.—

*Lel.* [Apart.] Look? my eye-ball's out.

*Phi.* And give me notice ere they enter here,  
Lest the wished sight o'ercome me.

*Lel.* I could stand [Aside.]

A tedious winter's night on a cold plain  
To entertain the object. Marius, I come. [Exit.]

*Phi.* Tell me, Armanus, must the general fight?

*Arm.* Yes, fairest, if the day  
Grow dangerous; for when the soldiers' spirits  
Grow weak and faint, it heartens up the troop,  
And adds a double strength to see him strike.

*Phi.* Alas, my Tullius never practised it,  
Or if he were inured or trained in arms,  
He has not the heart, I know, to kill a man:  
I never saw him angry.

*Arm.* 'Tis a sign

He is the better man, more temperate;  
For he that knows how to respect a friend  
Best knows which way to use an enemy:  
Smooth amorists are roughest warriors.

[A flourish of drums and trumpets, and shouts within.]

Hark, madam, how the general salutes you,  
And with what joy the soldiers welcome him!  
Who would not leap to hear it?—See, they come.

*Enter LELIA, MARCUS TULLIUS, and MARIUS.*

*Lel.* My message was before me.

*Phi.* Oh, dear love! [They embrace.]

*Mar.* What a true sorrow speaks that mute embrace!

*Lel.* [Aside.] Durst I unclasp the book in  
which is writ

My heart's affection, thou would'st read it here;  
But envious time forbids it.

*M. Tull.* Comfort, sweet!

Think not on danger; that is farthest off;  
Imagine I accompany the king  
In a short progress: 'tis no more, my love,  
Although stern Mars, the cruel god of war,  
Ever since that still-remembered time  
He lay in Vulcan's gyves a laughing-stake,  
Has been to lovers' joys an ireful foe,  
And tugs me from these arms to arms of steel,  
Envyng our soft embraces.

*Phi.* I see all earth-bred joys are born and dead  
In a short moment. I fare now like her  
Was turned from paradise ere she had tasted bliss,  
Or like a king killed at his coronation.

*M. Tull.* Weep not, love! Oh, spare those  
orient pearls,

Whose worth out-values all the world beside!  
For every drop those crystal spheres let fall,  
A crimson flood from their black breast shall run  
That thus divorce us. Pr'ythee dry thy tears,  
Or I shall traitor prove to honoured arms,  
Discovering a wet eye-lid.

*Phi.* You shall command what kings want  
power to do,

My passions.—Your pardon, noble sir, [To MARIUS.]

This sudden cause of sorrow has bereft  
My better faculties of all respect  
Fitting so worthy a guest.

*Mar.* I want power

In all things but the will to render thanks  
For my rich welcome; you have feasted me  
With what I have most longed for, your fair sight:  
Your cates I come not for: your lord and I  
Must not look now to feed deliciously.  
I am his servant, lady, in this war,  
And will in life and death take part with him.

*Lel.* [*Apart.*] I am now lost for ever. Wretched  
What planet reigned at thy nativity [Lelia,  
That thus prolongs still thy desired bliss?  
Marius to wars? No danger shall detain me,  
But step by step I'll still attend on him,  
And dally with destruction.

*Phi.* To part thus!

The all-seeing sun, that makes chaste virgins  
blush,

But three short nights hath hid his peeping eyes  
Since that uniting Hymen tied our hearts  
In a connubial band, yet ne'er allowed  
So much true freedom to our infant sports  
To make us practicable lovers.

*M. Tull.* There's no help, we must part; though  
with less grief

I could attend my father's funeral hearse,  
Than leave thee, in whose each part reigns a world  
Of strange attractive pleasure.

*Phi.* Shall not these breasts for this night be  
your pillow?

*M. Tull.* 'Tis my wish, and if with my safety  
it may be,

Which for thy sake I only strive to keep.

*Enter RUFINUS.*

*Ruf.* Hail to the general!

*M. Tull.* 'Like, my lord, to you.

*Arm.* [*Aside.*] What makes this screech-owl  
here?

I never see him, but methinks his face  
Is more prodigious than a fiery comet.

*Ruf.* The king by me, sir, greets you, and com-  
You instantly make to the enemy [mands  
Before his forces join, and make the way  
To victory more difficult. I have done, sir. [*Exit.*

*Mar.* A strict injunction, more severely uttered.  
*M. Tull.* My Philadelpha sees then there's no  
Only a kiss and part: that, though the foe [stay;  
Were entered Rome, and ready to give fire  
To her proud buildings, and my presence solely  
Could save the ruin, I would stay to take.—  
My love transports me. Pardon, my Armannus,  
Pardon my madness: nothing else, thou know'st,  
Could make me let thee stand so long neglected.  
Farewell, my dearest friend!

*Arm.* Farewell to whom?—

You wrong me, friend, to think my love so faint  
To leave you now; no, though your way were  
Hell's pitchy cave, without a Sybil's clue, [through  
I'd follow you.

Sands shall be numbered first, the heavens stand  
Earth fly her centre, before death or— [still,

*M. Tull.* Forbear,

Thou best of men, a true and faithful friend;  
Urge not what cannot be: I know thy love  
And valour both exceed comparison,  
Yet now thou must not go.

*Arm.* Not go?

*M. Tull.* No, my prophetic soul

Tells me my absence gives too free a scope  
To them that hate me, to supplant my honours:  
Besides my own observance I've received  
The knowledge of black hatred lodged i' th' breasts  
Of our most greatest peers;

Then, lest my danger here at home should prove  
More than abroad, stay thou to curb their actions.

Next, here's a virgin in a moment cast

From highest joy to sorrow's lowest valley:

Be thou her comfort, and believe me, friend,  
The least of these more, much more, I esteem,  
Than if thy manly breast should stand a shield  
'Twixt me and thousand perils.

*Arm.* I am won, sir,

And yield at first charge; may your foes do so!  
And Heaven guard me but as I strive to keep  
Your honours clear and spotless.

*M. Tull.* I should sin

In making question of it. Now I'm happy,  
But I fear I am over bold with time.—

Dearest, farewell, and think our parting now,  
When we meet next, will seal our pleasures high.  
And add a new step to felicity. [*Exeunt severally.*

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—An Apartment in the Palace.

*Enter RUFINUS.*

*Ruf.* A general! Oh, ye gods,

Why so disgrace ye a great soldier's name:  
To cast it on a creature so unworthy?  
I that these twenty years have tugged with danger  
Where'er it durst appear, and oft have done  
Those deeds would make this novice quake to hear;  
I that have stood more breaches for my country  
Than e'er he numbered years, while this right hand  
From Mars' alluring favourites have forced  
Unwilling victory: for all are now  
By the ungrateful king slighted, neglected;  
While this young puny thing is set a' cock-horse.  
Well, king, not fear but wisdom makes me hold  
My fury thus long from thee: but, my general,

Ward yourself well, or my revengeful ire,  
Like a resistless storm, sent from the north,  
Shall blast your springing glory in the bud.  
The deadly shirt dipt in the centaur's gore,  
Thou fool, thou might'st have put on with less  
danger

Than clothe thee thus in these unfitting honours  
Which fate ordained for me: I hate thee firmly,  
And hate deep-rooted in a soldier's breast  
Can hardly be digged out.—Oh, his grace comes,  
And I must clear my brow; for anger seen  
Loses his force, kept secret strengthens spleen.

*Enter LEARCHUS, LEONTIUS, MARCELLANUS, and another  
Senator; then TITUS MARTIUS, talking to ARMANUS.*

*Titus.* Armanus, we have sent thy friend to  
But Honour leads him on. We ever saw [danger.

Some dawning virtue in his generous look,  
Which now, we hope, in action will shine clear,  
And dazzle Envy's eyes.—Pray speak, lords, freely,  
How like you our election of a general?

*Sen.* As if the gods themselves had made the choice.

*Ruf.* [*Aside.*] Yes, 'mongst schoolboys to lead a feasting on.

*Titus.* Your approbation pleases, and, we trust,  
He'll bring home peace and victory together;  
Therefore the fear of ill success be far:

On his high altar, to Tarpeian Jove,  
A milk-white bull with gilded horns we'll offer  
To favour Rome, and be propitious to him.

Let all our temple-gates be opened wide,  
And daily orisons to all the gods  
Be made, to send him home a happy victor.

*Ruf.* [*Aside.*] The king's grown woud'rous holy  
o' the sudden.

*Titus.* Ourself in private here, low on our knees,  
Will pour our prayers for his tender safety.  
Then leave us, lords, and see our will performed  
Religiously.—Nay, you may stay, Rufinus.

[*Exeunt all but TITUS MARTIUS and RUFINUS.*]

*Ruf.* [*Aside.*] What's the king's meaning? To  
make me his priest?

Why, I yet never knew which way to pray;  
Or, if my nurse e'er taught me such a language,  
I left it in my cradle.—Here's a cushion.  
Pleaseth your grace to kneel?

*Titus.* To kneel? To whom?

Dost not thou think the gods would blush to see  
A man, in greatness equalling themselves,  
Debase himself so poorly? Know, Rufinus,  
If Jove be able to do us a kindness,  
Our merits bind him to it. The garlands, crowns,  
High altars, sacrifices, stately temples  
Our bounty has bestowed upon him, yet  
Are unrewarded all: then, without pride,  
We scorn to be a beggar to our debtor.

*Ruf.* Then I mistook you, sir.

*Titus.* And so thou dost

In more than this, Rufinus. Pr'ythee, tell me,  
What's thy conceit of Tullius and his honours?

*Ruf.* May I speak freely, sire?

*Titus.* And fearless too,

As if thou wert my oracle or priest:  
Though all thy words be pointed, and black trea-  
Hung upon every harsh-tuned syllable [son  
Of what thou now shalt utter, by my crown  
My love shall be as firm to thee as now.

*Ruf.* Then, sir, for Tullius, he's a white-cheeked  
boy,

Whose fearful soul a soldier's frown would fright  
From his fine mettled breast; he has a face  
That would disgrace a wound. Had you viewed  
As he went drooping through the city-gates, [him  
You might have seen his heart there characterized:  
He looked as if with joy he could have changed  
His march for a soft measure, his loud drum  
For a still quavering lute,  
His waving colours for a lady's scarf,  
And his stiff armour for a masquing suit;  
Nor can I think your eyes, sir, were so blinded  
But you saw many more able, more deserving men,  
Whose virtues might have claimed what you have  
cast

On him, without desert; amongst which number,  
Since you're pleased to forget it, I may name  
Myself without the title of vain-glorious;

And boast this hand has pulled contiguous death  
Even from that breast of yours, and quenched  
those fires

That would have turned your palace into cinders,  
In three set battles 'gainst the manly Gauls,  
Which were the first since godlike Hercules  
That ever climbed the Alpine hills, with force  
This sword hath won you glory: but henceforth  
I'll learn to rest at home, secured from danger;  
Your wives shall be deflow'ed, your children's  
brains

Strew the cold pavement, all the channels run  
With crimson rivers, and your tottering crown  
Drop from your head ere I will strike a stroke,  
Or stir a foot for any so unthankful.

*Titus.* How, traitor?

*Ruf.* Never storm; you have given free speech,  
And I'll be bold to use it. As for Tullius,  
Let him be sure my justly-stirred-up wrath  
Shall never die, till smothered in his ashes;  
And do not think but he that dares speak this  
Unto his angry king, dare see it done,  
Nay act it; the like Learchus and Leontius,  
And divers valiant spirits, have resolved,  
And do not fear to speak it. Then judge you  
What hope your general has e'er to return,  
Or if return, how long to enjoy his honours.  
Now, sir, you know our minds.

*Titus.* Yes, sir, we do,  
And you shall all feel ours. Poor envious fools,  
Whose shallow judgments could not search our  
reach

In sending Tullius hence. I knew your hate,  
Your puffed ambition and your poisonous spleens  
Darting at Marcus' graces, which, like motes,  
But darken the bright beams of his clear virtues:  
Your honours make you odious; grace bestowed  
On those that shall corrupt it, blacker shows,  
And does present the persons baser far  
Than such as spring from dunghills. You have  
By this device thrown that into our bosom [now  
We would have purchased with a magazine.

*Ruf.* Your poor partaking it; for since I see  
Revenge sit on your forehead, we know now  
How to prevent your fury. Fare you well, sir.

*Titus.* Stay.

*Ruf.* Not to hear one word more.

*Titus.* We do entreat thee stay.

*Ruf.* Well, what's your will?

*Titus.* That thou shouldst look more mildly,  
banish doubt,

For we so prize thee and thy high deserts,  
We'll take away the cloud that hides the truth  
From thy deluded eyes; therefore prepare  
To hear a story shall astonish thee.  
Thou canst be secret!

*Ruf.* Yes, I think I can.

*Titus.* Then know, these furrows cast up in our  
Was but to cover seed that has ta'en root [brow  
In this our dry-parched brain: We are in love  
With beauteous Philadelpha.

*Ruf.* What's that to me?

*Titus.* Be patient, thou shalt hear: I dote on  
her

More than the fool on folly, wise on knowledge,  
The usurer on his gold, or proud of honour.  
It was her love that advanced Tullius  
Unto this type of state;  
Her beauty only made him general,  
And thrust him hence into the jaws of danger.

Which his debilities will leap into.  
For whilst he stayed at home, what hope had I,  
Of any opportunity, to gain  
The richest prize that ever sweetened sin?  
My love to thee is firm as e'er it was,  
But lust so sure has marked me for her own  
That I neglect all things that tend not solely  
To the attainment of my wished delight.

*Ruf.* 'Faith, sir, in my mind,  
An easier battery might win such a fort.

*Titus.* I know not, for I yet ne'er found the man  
I could think worthy of the embassy  
To bear the message of my heart to her;  
But thou, Rufinus, through the court art famed  
For thy neat 'suasive speech and candied tongue,  
With which from fixed resolutions off  
Thou hast removed yourself, and made us wonder  
At our own weakness, seeking to conclude  
Matters of weight without thee. 'Tis my wish—

*Ruf.* That I should be your spokesman.

*Titus.* Before any.

*Ruf.* A fair preferment! Thus, whilst Tullius  
wins

Honour abroad, styled your great general,  
I must be kept at home to be your pandar?  
You are ignoble to propose a deed  
Of so much baseness to a soldier:  
Had I no other name to honour me?  
I'll sooner fly unto your enemy,  
And with my sword compel this princely boy  
To bring her to your arms, nay, to your bed,  
And make him there be bawd to his own wife,  
Than undergo the title pandar: 'Sdeath!

*Titus.* Stop not at that; 'tis far from our intent.

*Ruf.* Yet since 'tis Tullius must be cuckolded,  
I well could brook that name, or any worse,  
To fix my vengeance on him. Hear me, sir:  
Armanus, his great friend, is made the guardian  
To watch this golden fruit; 'twixt him and me  
Long time has festered an old enmity;  
Remove but him, or work him to your wish,  
'Twill be the better: none can sooner stir  
Affection in the wife, than he that's most  
Familiar with the husband, nor can move  
More freely and suspectless. The ice broke,  
I'll second him, and plunge into a sea  
Of lovers' passion, promise of such grace,  
Your godlike virtues, care of her chaste name,  
Command of sovereignty, the world's chief bliss  
And women's sole desire; then, sir—

*Titus.* No more.

Pr'ythee no more: thou shalt not waste such words,  
Whose eloquence would force a frozen nun  
To fly her holy orisons to embrace me.  
I build upon't she's mine. About it then;  
I am yet a bondman, thou must set me free,  
Or I shall range beyond community.

About it, dear Rufinus!— [Exit RUFINUS.]

Thus must kings,

For private ends, the insolence endure  
Of those were born their vassals, and immature  
Their high disdain, that, like a storm, should drown  
Their full-sailed pride, and headlong strike it down.  
But who is't can prevent it? Chance or fate,  
What we intend wants power or wit to mate.

[Exit.]

SCENE II.—A Room in the House of TULLIUS.

Enter PHILADELPHA in a Mourning Habit, and FLAVIA.

*Phi.* Is not Armanus yet returned from court?

*Fla.* Returned? No, madam, but I wonder at it; being a merchant venturer as he is, and there such excellent trading, methinks, ere this he might have made return by tale or wholesale.

*Phi.* I pr'ythee, Flavia, cease. Why art thou still

So jocund when I'm sad?

*Fla.* 'Faith, lady, to try if the company of mirth can drive away this unwelcome melancholy: 'tis a scurvy guest, and still disturbs you.

*Phi.* 'Tis a kind friend that still associates me; My Tullius, when he parted, left us two  
To keep his house, and there's no other lord  
Shall bear rule here till he himself take place.

*Fla.* Worse luck, says I! Oh, fie upon't! This marriage spoils us all; when you were a maid—

*Phi.* A maid, Flavia!

*Fla.* I mean uncoupled, madam: you are a maid now but for necessity, against your will: Love knows that's a hard case. How often have I heard [you] after you had spent a whole day in discourse with some dry-brained suitor, at night laugh at him in your sleep.

*Phi.* Thou art a mad wench. 'Faith, tell me, Flavia,

Since we are entered thus in fond discourse,  
How many suitors hast thou?

*Fla.* Let me see; tag and rag, 'think some four and twenty, as many as would make up a grand-jury: but if I were in question for my life, I'd be prest ere I'd be tried by 'em, they have been so often forsworn.

*Phi.* Lord, wench, what dost thou do with them all?

*Fla.* Do with 'em all? Venus forbid it, madam! I keep 'em at a further distance; by my faith, he's a happy man that once in a moon gets a touch of my lips. Yet there was a saucy mercer t'other day thrust in upon me with his yard in his hand, and ere I was aware made shift to feel what stuff my petticoat was made of: but I think I gave him a cooling card. I taught him what it was for a citizen to meddle with a waiting gentlewoman; I made him stand at bay like a chased stag.

*Phi.* Are you so good a huntswoman! 'Tis well. But which of all the number dost thou love? Which is the man like to go through with thee?

*Fla.* 'Faith, madam, there is one that's like to go as far as a man can do with a woman.

*Phi.* Thou art knavish still: What is he, Hare-brain?

*Fla.* He is stiled the right worshipful Sir Pergamus; a gallant of some six hundred a-year, but no more wit than I wish my husband should have. He was here yesterday to shew his clothes; a new suit some two hundred years behind the fashion; compliment correspondent: at first encounter he scraped me a leg that set my teeth on edge, and then entered into an amorous discourse of the troublesome adventures in love betwixt him and one of his mother's milk-maids, interlarded with strong sighs that would have turned a windmill, able to move a sick horse to compassion. He goes waddling up and down the streets as if he were driving a flock of geese before him, (but six hundred

pounds a-year drowns greater faults than these) about the city. He promised to see me again to-day.

[Knocking within.

Somebody knocks; if it be he, Expect to hear a perfect comedy.

[Exit.

Phi. This wench is honest, only strains this mirth To qualify my sorrow.—

Re-enter FLAVIA.

Now, who is't?

Fla. The worthy wight I spoke of: Good, sweet Do but vouchsafe a welcome.

[madam,

Phi. Bring him in.

Enter SIR PERGAMUS, in an old Armour, a Capon's Tail in his Beaver, a long Sword; and DINDIMUS, his Dwarf, carrying his Lance and Shield.

Bless me! what pageant's this?

Per. Now, Flavia, behold thy Pergamus, In arms complete, for thy sweet sake addressed, With lance and shield likewise, and in my crest The favour thou bestow'dst on me last day, Whose very shaking shall the man dismay Dares stand the force of my unvanquish'd arm.

Dind. I'll swear unvanquish'd, [it] was never tried yet.

Fla. Alas! what means my love? You affright Are these fit tools to come a-wooing with?

Dind. I ne'er knew a woman find fault with a long tool before.

Per. No talk of wooing now: thy beauteous sight Must blazoned be before thy warlike knight Will touch thy tender skin.

Fla. A poet too?

Per. 'Faith, some such idle vein infects my muse; It comes to me by natural instinct, I can scarce talk but in such foolish verse.

Fla. I think no less.

Phi. It is a sign you have

A pregnant wit, Sir Pergamus.

Per. Am I o'erheard?

A rival? Then— [Seizes the lance.

Fla. Oh, hold! What will you do?

It is my lady come to welcome you.

Per. Oh, is it so? Then rest, my Rosiclear, That ne'er was drawn, but it killed somebody. Fairest!

Phi. Excellent! Go on, I long to hear you talk.

Dind. Ay, but his set speech is at an end; he's spoke all that he studied.

Per. Lady, you must not look for compliment, It is absurd in soldiers, but—

Phi. At a stop?

Per. At such a butt, fair lady, give me leave To draw my prickshaft home.

Fla. He hit now indeed: nay, madam, I told you what a sutor I had of him.

Phi. Is that your dwarf, Sir Pergamus?

Per. This is my page.

Dind. The Squire of low Degree, That does attend upon this errant knight.

Per. All this is little to the purpose, madam; I come prepared, you see, with utmost speed To march with your brave general to the wars. I would be sorry but to be the first And foremost in the rank, next to himself.

Phi. Your haste deserves it, trust me; but my Is there by this time— [lord

Per. How?—Come, Dindimus.

Phi. And coming back, I hope, with victory.

Per. And I not there? It is impossible.

Post, Dindimus, fetch me my swiftest horse And one that can run best.

Dind. Your curtaed jennet?

Per. Whip, I say, begone!

I would not for a hundred Roman dollars, But be the first that should come home again To tell the story of our chivalry.

Dind. One honour's enough for me when I am there once. [Exit.

Fla. But will my dearest leave me?

Per. Will I? Oh, hold me not, this sword shall A chronicle of thee; Hector of Troy [write Amongst the Trojans ne'er made such annoy.

Fla. Amongst the Greeks you mean.

Per. All's one to me,

Some thing he did; but, Flavia, thou shalt see Sir Pergamus of Rome will him excel.

If thou ne'er seest me more, then say—

Enter ARMANUS.

Arm. How now, who's this?

Phi. Armanus, is it you?

Arm. Madam, I desire

Some private conference. Pray discharge your woman.

Phi. She may be gone: Were't in a wilderness, I'd trust myself with your known virtues.

Fla. Come, Sir Pergamus, till your horse come, you and I'll go play at shuttle-cock.

Per. A match, i'faith; I love that sport a' life. Yet my mother charged me not to use it for fear of putting my arm out of joint. [Exit with FLAVIA.

Arm. Lady, I come to be a sutor to you.

Phi. Whate'er it be lies in my power to grant, That love which shines on Tullius sues my tongue To say you must not want it.

Arm. Quickly you yield; but look that like rash After his promise to his hare-brained son, [Phœbus Or like Heaven's monarch after his sad vow To his loved Semele, you repent not Of what you grant so freely: The first, this.

[Kisses her.

Phi. My promise is performed, And you enjoy't: But if aught else you crave, Your counsel makes me wise to ask what 'tis Ere I engage me further.

Arm. Fairest, know

I come to sue for love.

Phi. And can you doubt, sir, but you have it amply?

Arm. I mean such love as Tullius shall enjoy When he lies panting in these ivory arms; Such love as Venus calls for, that which swims In highest pleasure, such as cynic fools Style lust and wantonness, but wiser men The world's Elysium.

Phi. Defend me! What strange sounds Beat at my ears for entrance, or what fiend Assumes the habit of my lord's best friend To wrong his goodness and my chastity? This cannot be Armanus?

Arm. Why, dear madam?

Because I speak the heart of him that lies A captive at your mercy, bound and chained By your enchanting beauty, in your breath The life of all his joys? Oh, let the doom Be mild and gentle then as is the air You draw: one kind embrace raises us up To Heaven; only this.

Phi. All faith in men farewell!

Do you not blush to make me blush to hear  
 Your unchaste speeches? Is your heart so foul  
 As your false tongue would make it? Good, my  
 lord,

What light collections has your searching eye  
 Caught from my loose behaviour? what wild looks,  
 Immodest gestures, wanton dalliance,  
 Since my dearest Tullius' absence ever dwelt  
 Or dimpled this with laughter, that you dare  
 Essay to tempt me to impurity?  
 Suppose I were as wicked as you wish me,  
 Or did exceed Pasiphae in her lust,  
 Can you imagine I would trust my truth,  
 Or virgin honour, or the unspotted white  
 Which Tullius ne'er unclasped yet, with a man  
 That proves so faithless to so good a friend?

*Arm.* Sure you mistake me.

*Phi.* The gods grant I do.

*Arm.* There's no lust reigns in me.

*Phi.* Oh, pardon, sir, [Kneels.

Pardon my misconceit and harsh reply,  
 And I'll attend you ever.

*Arm.* Your bent knee [Kneels.

Is my instruction's badge, and thus low  
 Once more I urge the acceptance of that suit  
 You so abhor to hear;  
 But for another.

*Phi.* This is worse, more hateful:

Love, that enforced the gods themselves to err  
 Might in yourself have made it pardonable,  
 But for another! Nothing can be baser.

*Arm.* The man but known, the name of base-  
 ness fades:

'Tis for the king, whose awful dread command  
 Must be obeyed before our own desires.

*Phi.* He must command then just and worthy  
 Else 'tis more noble to deny his will. [things,

*Arm.* He may compel, you know, what he en-  
 treats.

*Phi.* Yes, such as 'bove their honours prize their  
 Not her that chooses virtue for her guide. [lives,  
 You greater powers, guard me from violence,  
 And from a wilful fall I'll keep myself.  
 High Jupiter, the 'venger of foul sin,  
 With angry thunder strike me to the deepest  
 And darkest shades of hell, when I consent  
 To 'file my unstained faith!

*Arm.* Heaven hear thy vows, and turn  
 Those plagues on me when I shall tempt thee fur-  
 ther!

Rise the world's wonder, a pure virgin-wife!  
 Sweet angel, fly me not, for what I spake  
 Was only to confirm my sacred thoughts  
 Of thy religious virtue. Yet those sparkling eyes  
 Have kindled raging flames in the king's breast,  
 And I was wooed, and seemingly was won,  
 To aid Rufinus in the overthrow  
 Of thy unvanquished goodness.

*Phi.* I am now safe and sheltered with a rock.  
 Tullius, thou'rt happy above happiness,  
 Blest with so true a friend.—

*Enter FLAVIA.*

In haste? Thy news.

*Fla.* The lord Rufinus, madam, all alone  
 Is enter'd the house, and craves some speech with

*Phi.* What shall I do, Armanus? [you.

*Arm.* With all love, seem to afford a welcome;  
 Give him free audience. In some place unseen  
 I'll overhear your conference, that when time

Calls to account these injuries I may stand

A witness 'gainst their falsehoods. [*Stands aside.*

*Phi.* Bring him in. [*Exit FLAVIA.*

*Enter RUFINUS.*

*Ruf.* All health and happiness.

*Phi.* If your fair words

And wishes parallel your lordship's welcome.

*Ruf.* No words can parallel my wishes, madam;

The happiness I bring you wants a name;

'Tis more ineffable than are the joys

Of love or paradise.

*Phi.* You astonish me.

*Ruf.* Be not perverse, fair miracle of nature!

The queen of heaven shall emulate thy state;

Princes shall throng to kiss these hands, and kings

Shall be thy tenants but at will.

*Arm.* [*Aside.*] Smooth villain!

*Ruf.* The world shall be thy dowry, and all men

Shall study how to please and honour thee!

All this and more is thine, do but consent

To entertain a bliss exceeds the rest.

*Phi.* 'Tis a hard thing a woman can deny

On these conditions.

*Ruf.* 'Tis what all women court to embrace,

Or else most writers err. If to enjoy

A man excels his sex as you do yours—

When he was young (and yet he is not old)

His face disgraced Adonis; or the boy

The thunder-bearer stole from mourning Troy;

And since virility upon his chin

Hath planted golden hairs, blind Cupid sits

Weaving his nets of them to catch coy virgins.

*Phi.* Is he a properer man than Tullius?

*Ruf.* Compare the crow to the unspotted swan!

*Æsop* to Hyacinth!

*Phi.* What pity 'tis

So sweet a man was born without a name!

*Ruf.* Nay, certainly

He has a name, bright beauty, and the best:

'Tis Titus Martius, my dread sovereign,

Whose royal love in this, as in his heart,

Is fixed with deep impression.

*Phi.* My sad thoughts

Told me some poisonous snake was closely hid

Under your flourishing words.

*Ruf.* Can you deny a lover's smile to him

That lays a crown beneath your conquering feet?

*Phi.* Unheard-of cruelty! Dare such black

Enter the bosom of a true-born prince, [thoughts

Where clearest streams should run? By his own

And free election I was made the spouse [choice

Of noble Tullius; with his royal hand

In the holy temple given to my lord;

And does he seek in the uniting spring

To reap the harvest of unripened joys,

And pluck that fruit the owner never tasted?

Was it for this my Marcus was removed

From safety's valley, where content sits crowned,

To tread upon the slippery steps of state

Where pride and envy strive to throw him down,

And folly and disdain deriding him?

Was't not enough to mock his youth with hopes

Of a feigned happiness, then send him forth

To stand the battery of rebellious arms

That would deface his country, and raze down

This city and his palace; but meanwhile

Seek to make spoil of his chief treasury,

And rob this storehouse by adulterous theft,

Where all his joys are hoarded? Poor young man.

Poor in thy riches, lessened being made great !  
For when with honour's loss we honour gain,  
'Tis an ill-thriving purchase ; they that win  
Are the most losers ; I'll not hazard mine.

*Ruf.* You are too hard a gamester ; for all know  
Honour attends the favour of a king.

*Phi.* Would you then urge me to infringe my  
And violate the sacred vow I made [oath,  
Before the gods and men, to Tullius ?

*Ruf.* That's an excuse easily dispensed withal :  
A lover's vows the gods ne'er hearken after,  
But in the air they die. Madam, be wise ;  
If you refuse these graces you may pull  
Perils on him you seem to tender so,  
And danger your own safety. Kings' requests  
Must not be dallied with, chiefly in love ;  
For what they least enjoy they covet most,  
And are unbounded in't. Bethink yourself,  
And bless me with your answer ; I'll attend it.

*Phi.* You have left my sense in a strange wil-  
Searching a thousand ways to find reply. [derness,  
So great a lover, such an orator,  
Might make Diana stagger in her choice ;  
Then blame not my weak fancy : but to yield  
At first encounter may befit the state  
Of some suburbane strumpet, but not her  
A king shall crown with his affection.  
I crave but ten short days to give resolve  
To this important suit, in which consists  
My endless shame, or lasting happiness ;  
Till when my senseless ears shall be stopt up  
'Gainst all enticements : Urge no more, 'tis vain.

*Ruf.* If you command, lady, I must obey,  
Since what you will no prince dares contradict.

[Exit.

*Arm.* [Coming forward.] A cunning slave and  
smooth-tongued flatterer !

*Phi.* For fear a strict denial might have wrought  
Some stratagem against my Tullius' life,  
Thus long I have heard hell's messenger,  
And with a liberal tongue and feigned words,  
Have outstripp'd modesty ; but Heaven can tell  
How far 'twas from my heart.

*Arm.* Best of thy sex, I know't, and with my  
Will still assist 'gainst all temptations. [life

*Phi.* May my lord live to thank you !

*Arm.* 'Tis a wish

Beyond which all the world wants recompence.  
[Exit.

SCENE III.—Before the Walls of the Sabine  
Capital.

Enter, with Drums and Colours, MARCUS TULLIUS,  
MARIUS, MARCELLUS, BELLARIO, BLACKSNOUT, SNIP-  
SNAP, CALVERKIN, LELIA disguised as JANUS, and  
Soldiers.

*M. Tull.* Thus far our troops have marched  
auspiciously,

And, like to wildfire, turned to nothing all  
That durst resist them. Sure some greater power  
Which favours Rome, and is above the strength  
Of any mortal arms, fights on our side.  
Our foes are fled into their walls again,  
And dare not stand the encounter.

*Mar.* 'Tis most strange ;

Thrice have they issued forth, and braved our  
force,

Couching their lances, reining up their steeds  
As if we should have met like thunder claps,

And then turned head and took their holds again :  
Either it is some cunning stratagem  
To train us to our ruin, or some one  
Within our host, protected, Jason-like,  
Mars dares not cope withal, whose blessed fate  
Makes all our army happy.

*Lel.* [Aside.] If the prayers  
Of a pure virgin e'er could move the gods  
To be compassionate, and end in peace  
These threatening summons, for thy safety,  
Marius,  
And my dear brother's, Lelia will ne'er cease  
Her invocations to those potent powers  
That yet in all your actions guarded ye.

[A Parley sounded on the Walls.

*Marc.* Hark, my lord, again they summon us.  
*M. Tull.* Answer once more that sound : Bring  
up our troops.

We'll offer parley to them, and propose  
Rough war, or peace, such articles observed  
As we before provided.

[The Parley answered below.

Enter on the Walls, SABINUS and others.

*Marc.* They appear.

*M. Tull.* Sabinus, we are come to give thee  
If upon fair conditions thou'lt receive it : [peace,  
Surrender up again those forts and towns  
Which with rebellious arms thou hast divorced  
From Rome and us, and Titus pardons all  
Thy bold attempts, nor shall the life or goods  
Of thee, or any thy assistants, feel  
The wreak of his just anger. Be not rash,  
But answer with advice, for if our swords  
But once more see the sun's reflected beams,  
Ruin and death attends them.

*Sab.* Proudly spoke,  
And like a Roman : but, young general, know  
No threatening can afflict us. When first of all  
With war and fury you o'er-run our country,  
What cause could you pretend for so foul a wrong,  
But only, we were weak, and you in arms  
Potent and practis'd : since which time we have  
Your insolencies and oppressions [borne  
With a dull leaden patience ; but now  
Are wearied with your slavish tyranny,  
And cannot longer suffer it. You may chance  
By your great odds to win our towns again,  
But you must find new people to inhabit 'em ;  
For there's not one amongst us that draws breath  
Able to lift a sword or steel, whose point  
Can pierce a Roman's breast, but is resolved  
To embrace pale death in his most horrid shape,  
Ere live a captive to so proud a foe.

*Mar.* Against necessity who is't can stand ?  
Therefore consider and submit yourselves ;  
It may regain your former liberty.

*Sab.* A seeming liberty is worse than thrall.  
We scorn such clemency.

*M. Tull.* Pervert not truth :  
Yet ask for mercy, and it may be granted.

*Sab.* We hate to beg it, Tullius. Though your  
power

You think resistless, ere to-morrow's noon  
These hands shall force it from thee.

*M. Tull.* Cease to boast.—  
'Twas answered like a soldier.

*Sab.* When we meet,  
Our swords shall prove as much.

[Exit with his Soldiers.

*Calve.* Oh, now, now, Snipsnap!

*Snip.* We are all dead men.

*M. Tull.* Well, gentlemen, you see

What a stiff foe we have to deal withal:

But be not daunted, for our strengths compared  
Were to match Hercules with . . . .

Let your arms be in readiness, and strong watch  
This night in every quarter. Come, Marius,  
We'll take our tent again; methinks I feel  
The bleak and moist rawness of the vaporous air  
To be malignant to me. How cheers Janus?

*Mar.* Do not the humorous elements offend  
Thy tenderness? How fares my pretty page?

*Lel.* As one whose life were governed by those  
stars

Shined at your happy births: There is no ill  
Can craze my health that not assails yours first.

*M. Tull.* Loving boy, thy goodness sure pro-  
jects us.

[*Exeunt* MARCUS TULLIUS, MARIUS, LELIA, and  
MARCELLUS.]

*Bell.* How now, my fresh-water soldiers? How  
We are like to have hot doings. [is't?]

*Black.* We are indeed;

It puts me into a cold sweat to think on't.

*Snip.* 'Would my mother's cat

Had kill'd me in my cradle!

*Black.* Or my wife, whose nails are sharper,  
Scratched out my eyes I might not see my death.

*Bell.* Tut, man, courage!

Let's fight it valiantly, and never fear.

*Snip.* Truly, lieutenant, I dare not fight.

*Bell.* Not fight, man! Why?

*Snip.* Because there was an old woman once  
Told me, if ever I fought I should be killed.

*Calve.* She told us all three so, indeed, lieu-  
tenant.

*Bell.* Hang her, damned witch! Can there be  
a braver death

Than to die for our country?

*Snip.* Bravery call you it?

'Tis an invisible bravery, a man's ne'er seen

To wear it. Lieutenant, here's all the money I  
have:

Speak a good word to the general I may go home  
again,

You may say I'm troubled with a catching disease  
That will infect the army.

*Black.* Or, do you hear,

Tell him we are not our own men; when we

Came forth, 'twas only drink that made us valiant;  
And, unless he'll be at the charge to keep us drunk  
As long as the wars last, we shall be able  
To do him no service at all.

*Bell.* You shall not want for drink, boys, take  
my word.

Pox on't! 'Tis base to return; you shall have  
every rogue

And tattered tinker kick you, spit at you,  
And every wench in Rome, as ye pass by, fling  
dirt at you,

Saying, "There are the soldiers durst not draw  
their blades."

*Snip.* But they shall find we dare, and strike  
home too.

I am now resolved, and will be valiant;  
This bodkin quilts their skins as full of holes  
As e'er was canvas doubled.

*Bell.* Spoke like a man, bold snip.

*Black.* These words have fired me too,  
And, though their scull-caps be of anvil-proof,  
This blade shall hammer some of 'em.

*Calve.* [*Draws.*] Then come forth,  
Thou Durindan so bright.

*Bell.* Why, how now? Mad, Orlando?

*Calve.* I am mad,

My hair, like biftistles, raise their forked ends  
Against these Sabines; I shall leather 'em.

*Black.* Well said, my tough Calveskia. One  
health now,

Here at the sutler's, to our victory;  
Then each man to his quarter.

*Snip.* Done, i'faith.

*Bell.* Give us some liquor here.

*Enter* Suttler.

*Sut.* You shall, gentlemen, instantly.  
How much will't please you have?

*Bell.* Each man his double measure.

*Sut.* In a trice. [Exit

*Bell.* Shall's have a catch, my hearts?

*Calve.* Ay, good lieutenant.

*Black.* Methinks a soldier should sing nothing  
else;

Catch that catch may is all our life, you know.

*Bell.* Blacksnout's conceited too.

*Re-enter* Suttler with Drink.

*Sut.* Here, gentlemen.

*Bell.* Come on then, boys, and each man bear a  
part. [*A Song; then exeunt*]

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—ROME. *An Apartment in the  
Palace.*

*Enter* TITUS MARTIUS and RUFINUS.

*Titus.* Away, injurious man!  
Tysiphone must learn to imitate  
Those baleful tortures thou hast put me to  
With thy protraction: A willing suitor  
Might well ere this have tempted, wooed, and won,  
And seen the longing fruit of hot desire  
With blushes call him father, while thou'rt fumb-  
ling.

Impatience brooks no stay. By Heaven, but  
that—

*Ruf.* Come, spare your threats, or I shall spare  
my service.

If I had known your madness had preferred  
A sudden fall before deliberate comfort,  
I could have fitted you.

*Titus.* Bring'st thou comfort then?

*Ruf.* Yes, were your ears prepared to entertain it.  
*Titus.* Pardon a lover's passion, dear Rufinus:

Is beauteous Philadelphia then content  
To make her heaven (for so is every place  
Where she, celestial star, shall deign to shine)  
In our yet dusky court? Which, if she do,  
Memnon's miraculous palace set by ours,  
Shall seem a cottage, or some coarser building.

Why stands my Mercury mute? Speak, will my love

Be pleased these circling arms shall be her sphere,  
While our loved kisses make the music harsh,  
The intelligencers on the winged spheres  
Sound so divinely?

*Ruf.* Sir, you are too hasty;  
Your eager appetite must wait a while  
On ceremony; 'twould not fit the state  
Of such a high-born lady to descend,  
Or come at first beck.

*Titus.* Where's your comfort then?

*Ruf.* 'Sblood, give me leave, or starve! I'll keep it still.

*Titus.* Come, come, my rage is o'er. Pr'ythee, proceed:

How did she stand the parley? With what looks,  
Or patience, entertain thy embassy?

*Ruf.* I'll tell you, sir: When first I spoke of love,  
She started back, and marked her beautiful brow  
With angry characters; still I went on,  
And, by fair courtship and persuasion,  
Moved her to ask what kind of man he was,  
Or how compared with Tullius; which I,  
With my best art sublimed, blazoned your worth,  
Which made a deep impression; but your name  
Dispersed all clouds, and, with a clear aspect,  
Seemed to embrace your suit: only she craves,  
Out of a longing virgin modesty,  
A little time to ripen young desire  
That buds already in her blushing cheek.

*Titus.* What time must we expect?

*Ruf.* But ten short days.

*Titus.* But ten short days, dost say? The siege of Troy

Was shorter far, though it were ten twelve moons.  
The limping fire-god ne'er was half so hot  
Upon the Gorgon-armed Minerva's lance  
As I am upon her. Before that time,  
If Tullius do survive, he may return:  
Then where were all my hopes? No, I've a plot  
To give slow time new wings.  
Should love's bright flame live ten days here unquenched,

'Twould burn me into ashes. Hark! 'tis thus:  
To-morrow's sun, by time's alternate course,  
Lights the first day that gave life to these eyes,  
Which, as propitious, we will celebrate,  
And make an edict, that what lord or lady,  
Any of noble blood, within ten miles,  
That shall abstain from court, shall be condemned  
As guilty of contemning majesty.

*Ruf.* What avails this?

*Titus.* Fie, art thou shallow yet?

Amongst the rest my angel will appear,  
A white Albanian amongst Æthiops set;  
She being a stranger and unskilled at court,  
Her doubtful steps may easily be diverted  
Some devious way into some private place,  
Where only love and I will wait on her.  
How lik'st it, man?

*Ruf.* 'Tis rare,

A more invincible and cunning net  
Than for Gradivus the black cuckold made.

*Titus.* Let it be straight divulged. Till that wished hour

The time with mirth and music we'll beguile.

[*Exit.*]

*Ruf.* Are thy besotted senses so soon fooled  
Childish Martius! to think the cuckolding [then?

Of him my soul abhors can end my anger.

'Tis like that Philadelpa may be led  
From Vesta's temple unto Venus' bower,  
And Tullius' brows may sprout: but what of this?  
Great kings have had the like, nay, there be those  
Above the crystal sky, armed on their foreheads.

No, my swift revenge  
Shall snatch his thread of life from lingering fate,  
And tear it into atoms! That's the end  
My fiery rage must point at. The king's all set  
on lust;

Murder's a sin too high for his low spirit.  
Here I have framed a letter that discovers  
His hot desire, Armanus' treachery,  
And Philadelpa's weakness; this hid fury  
I'll send him as a friend, which, when he reads,  
Just then begins his ruin: He is bold,  
And full of fury; then, in his fell rage,  
He'll either leave the camp with his life's hazard,  
Or plot some shallow treason 'gainst the king  
Of pow'r and force enough to take off his.

[*Enter PEDESTER.*]

Pedester? come as wished for: Take this letter  
Post to the camp, give it the general,  
Or some that near attends him; be not slow.  
I know thy trust; my only care shall be  
To study recompence.— [Exit PEDESTER.]

So, now 'tis done:

The god of wrath sits on my bended brow,  
Triumphantly attired in Tyrian scarlet.  
I'm over-racked with expectation  
Of the event, this plot will train him to:  
If this should fail, I have another snare  
The devil cannot shun. A desperate man,  
That climbs a tower whose top the wind ne'er  
Must chary be, lifting his resolute foot, [touched,  
Or headlong down he comes. Fate and I  
So cunningly have framed this tragedy,  
The curious looker-on, till it be done,  
Knows not which way 'twill end, nor how begun. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—An Apartment in TULLIUS' House.

[*Enter PHILADELPHA and FLAVIA.*]

*Phi.* Flavia, if Rufinus come again,  
Say I'm not well, abroad, or anything.

*Fla.* 'Troth, madam, you've enjoined me to a task

Will try me like a pack-horse; for these courtiers  
Will never be said nay, but stand in't still,  
Most if they find me lying.

*Phi.* Thou art still

In thy old rhetoric: But, Flavia,  
I have more serious cogitations now  
That crave advice of my best memory;  
Therefore let none disturb me.

*Fla.* Not Armanus, madam?

*Phi.* Yes, he may;

He is my heart's companion, my soul's doctor,  
Ministring heavenly physic that dissolves,  
And takes away my greatest maladies.  
Pr'ythee let none press in.

*Fla.* Let none press in?

I think it were the only way to cure  
Your sickness. Venus, I beseech thee, keep me  
Unmarried still, except I have a man  
Will come home oftener! Here's a life indeed!  
A virgin wife? Fie on't! But to my charge.

[*Exit.*]

*Phi.* Why was I born a woman? Nature sure  
Gave me these lineaments in mockery,  
To tempt the world, and Envy joined with her  
To make my life a scandal to my sex.  
Fortune's both kind and cruel; seats me first  
In highest honour, links me with a man,  
In my respect above the world's esteem,  
Then plucks me from his arms with iron hands,  
And throws me in a dungeon: My dark thoughts  
Which way to 'scape the king's lust, make it so.

*Enter ARMANUS.*

*Arm.* Still meditating, madam?

*Phi.* Oh, Armanus,  
My sad fears still increase:  
I have been pondering a thousand ways,  
And clad my mind in Proteus' coloured robe,  
Yet find no remedy but my resolve,  
Which beyond death is constant.

*Arm.* Hold it still,  
My death shall teach you how; but Heaven, I  
Will find a fairer dissolution. [hope,  
I have bethought some means (sit, Philadelphia,)  
To ease our doubts: I will delate 'em to you.

*Fla.* [Within.] She's not within, in troth.

*Learchus.* [Within.] We know she is.

*Arm.* What interruption's this?

*Phi.* Some visitants belike whose impudence  
Will not be answered with a fair repulse.

*Enter FLAVIA.*

What are they, Flavia?

*Fla.* Serpents, madam, I think, they have such  
stinging tongues in their mouths; if their tails be  
such there's no meddling with 'em: Courtiers they  
say they are: they have made me swell above the  
girdle-stead. I cannot keep 'em out.

*Phi.* Alas, good Flavia, thou art troubled still.

*Fla.* Nay, I have had a hundred more, I think.  
First comes a senator: I denied him; the very  
sight of his scarlet gown made me blush as red as  
a turkey-cock; but the grave gentleman, knowing  
what a virtue it was in a woman to keep counsel,  
rewarded my modesty and departed. Next comes  
a lawyer; he was so used to lying himself, he  
would hardly believe me; I put the case to him,  
which he not being able to stand in long, let fall  
his suit, and sneaked away again. After him, a  
citizen, your jeweller, madam, asked if you wanted  
any precious stones; I made choice of a couple of  
his fairest, and said he should have's payment next  
time he came. Then comes a page: the saucy  
jacket-wearer stood upon's pantables with me, and  
would in; but I think I took him down ere I had  
done with him, and bade him go and rub his lady's  
roses. But now these courtiers,—there's no doing  
with 'em.

*Phi.* Why, Flavia—

*Arm.* Let 'em come,  
'Can be no prejudice; we may beget  
Something from their intelligence may befriend us.

*Phi.* Your will's my law in all things.—Bring  
'em in.

*Enter LEARCHUS and LEONTIUS.*

*Learch.* Why how now, my close counting-  
house? Do you stand [To FLAVIA.  
So strict upon your office, not a man  
Admitted without money?

*Fla.* Money? Marry, gip! You might have  
stood there till moss had grown o' your heels, ex-

cept some friend had lent it. Such gay clothes  
seldom have silver linings.

*Leon.* A plaugy biting wench! I think she  
Our pockets. [searched

*Arm.* Noble lords.

*Learch.* Worthy Armanus,  
We are bold visitants to see this widowed virgin.

*Arm.* Oh, your loves: she's much indebted to  
You come in best time, she was sadly fixed. [you;

*Phi.* Such entertainment as the house affords,  
The owner being absent, shall be stretched  
To bid your lordships welcome; but as yet  
We know not well whether a bridal feast,  
Or funeral banquet, best befits ye:  
Excuse then what is wanting.

*Learch.* You're all bounty.

Have you received no news then from the camp?

*Phi.* Not the least tidings yet.

*Learch.* 'Tis hot at court

Your happy lord has got the victory,  
Repulsed the foe, and ta'en their strongest hold—  
And there, I hope, is perished. [Arid.

*Phi.* Your news brings life: Truth live, with  
you for ever!

*Leon.* The king for joy proclaims a festival,  
Triumphs, and masques, rich courtly revellings,  
And celebrates withal his royal birth-day.

*Arm.* When is this happy jubilee solemnized?

*Leon.* The ensuing morn, you shall have notice  
doubtless.

*Enter RUFUS.*

*Ruf.* Before me, gallants? you have then made  
known

This preparation.—From my sovereign's mouth,  
Lady, you are invited, the chief guest:  
His edict bears command, but kind entreaty  
Summons your lovely presence.

*Phi.* His command,

Whate'er our hearts be, must not be denied.

*Ruf.* You have best cause to come; 'tis only  
done

In honour of your lord and your high grace,  
Which all Rome does rejoice at.

*Phi.* We are vassals unto Rome and him.

*Ruf.* You must cast off this veil of widowhood;  
It ill becomes a beauty of your years,  
A married virgin too: Your bridal robes  
I think ne'er saw as yet a second sun.

*Phi.* We shall appear as best befits the time.

*Ruf.* A time oft wished for by Martius, madam.

*Phi.* A banquet and some wine!—Please you,  
my lords,

To taste such homely cates as the house yields.

*Ruf.* You are prodigal in all things but in vice.

*Arm.* [Apart.] This man's malevolent in his  
aspect;

I look to hear the raven croak some news  
That's baleful ere's departure; 'tis strange else.

*Enter Servants with a Banquet.*

*Phi.* Pray, seat you, lords; we'll bear you con-  
But with small stomach to taste any food. [part.

*Arm.* Thou art all goodness, virtue's pattern  
Shews love e'en to her greatest enemies. [right.

*Learch.* Will not you sit, Armanus?

*Arm.* No, my lords,

I am my friend's sole steward, and my care  
Consists in your free welcome.

*Ruf.* You are kind, sir,

And worthy such a friend,—here and in hell,  
Whither I'll quickly send you. *[Aside.]*

*Enter FLAVIA.*

*Fla.* News, news, news!

*Phi.* Thou never com'st without; good, there's

*Ruf.* What is it, Flavia? *[no question.]*

*Fla.* A fool, and like your lordship, a mere ass,  
That thinks himself a wondrous wise man,  
A politician too:

*Arm.* Gramercy, wench;

That jest shall purchase a new gown from me.

*Fla.* It is Sir Pergamus return'd from camp

Ere he was half way there, holding up's snout

Like a sow smelling the wind; his mighty dwarf

Loaded with all his spoils and victories,

Which must hang up for trophies.

*Learch.* And he by 'em.

*Fla.* If honour take not place, 'tis like he may.

*Ruff.* I pr'ythee bring him in: His mirth may  
Better digestion than a doctor's pill. *[prove]*

*Fla.* Bring him in!

I warrant ye there's none can keep him out

If he hears talk but of a banquet once.

*Leon.* We shall hear wondrous stories, doubtless.

*Ruff.* The best will be some news of Tullius,  
That may bring joy to you.—The warrior comes.

*Enter SIR PERGAMUS and DINDIMUS, bearing Trophies.*

*Per.* When sound the drums and trumpets that  
We are returned in triumph? *[should tell]*

*Dind.* By and by, sir;

They have run so fast, sir, to gape after us,

They have not recovered breath yet.

*Per.* Dindimus,

Be sure to second whatso'er I say,

And swear it too profoundly.

*Dind.* I warrant you, sir;

Stamp you and stare, let me alone to swear.

*Per.* All hail!

*Learch.* He begins to storm already.

*Ruf.* Sir Pergamus, welcome to Rome, brave  
knight.

*Per.* You have cause to bid us welcome, for  
you see

We have brought home the spoils of victory.

*Dind.* They have spoil'd me, I'm sure; such  
another load

Would make me a dwarf all days of my life.

*Leon.* What honoured trophies has your valour

Pray relate, Sir Pergamus. *[won?]*

*Per.* The first part

Of a bold soldier is to eat, you know.

*Ruf.* That's true, indeed; pray fall to, Sir Per-

*Dind.* I am my master's second. *[gamus.]*

*Per.* Forbear Dindimus,

We shall be thought unmannerly; therefore, first

We'll finish our discourse; only reserve

A modicum to relish in the interim.

*Learch.* Nay, pray take all this pie, Sir Pergamus.

*Per.* By no means.

*Leon.* Now for your brave exploits.

*Per.* Behold this shield!

*Dind.* *[Aside.]* We bought it at an armourer's.

*Per.* This from the arm of bold Arminius,

The stoutest champion of the Sabinets,

When on my lance's point from his horse' back,

I bore't some three spears length, fell to the ground,

Which Dindimus took up; in that career,

Ere I could stay my Neapolitan steed,

Unhorsed some fifteen more.

*All.* Oh, wonderful!

*Dind.* Nay, this is nothing yet.

*Per.* See you this tail?

*Dind.* *[Aside.]* I cut it from a dead horse that  
can now

Neither wigher nor wag tail.

*Per.* This, with my scymitar, having cleft a man

Down to the saddle, my blade glanced along,

And pared it off by the stump; which shall adorn

The crest of Dindimus, that men may say,

Speaking of's honour, thereby hangs a tale.

*Dind.* Thanks, noble and renowned Sir Per-  
gamus.

*Per.* But here, view this the standard of the foe.

*Dind.* *[Aside.]* It cost ten drachmas at a  
painter's shop.

*Per.* This standing in the middle of the host,

I, with my page before me—

*Dind.* I went first.

*Per.* Made such a lane amongst the thickest  
troops,

That twenty men abreast might follow me,

And brought this ensign thence by force of arms.

*All.* Is't possible?

*Dind.* By Mars' great toe, 'tis true.

*Learch.* And yet you 'scaped unhurt?

*Per.* And free as you see.

*Learch.* 'Tis most horrible!

*Ruf.* But all this while what did the general?

*Per.* He fought upon the other side o' th' field;

But when they fled we met, and joined our force

To beat 'em into th' town; they barred their gates,

Which we as easily tore unto the earth

As I this tower of marchpane: So we entered.

We only stayed there to refresh ourselves,

And so came posting home to bring the news.

*Arm.* It is a worthy story, and deserves

A recompence 'bove bounty.

*Per.* Cates we scorn,

Here's that's more worth than gold, or precious  
stone,

My smug-faced Flavia, for whose lovely sake

These hard adventures I did undertake.

*Ruf.* She cannot but requite you. Is't a match?

*Fla.* With all my heart.—The fool has wealth  
enough, *[Aside.]*

Though he wants wit; whom I like fares the  
better.

*Ruf.* I will add something to't for our good

mirth.

*Arm.* I'll see thou shalt not want, sweet Flavia.

*Per.* And are we met? Ring bells, and bonfires  
flame!

Go, Dindimus, this nuptial straight proclaim!

Come they that will unto our wedding feast,

For there will be a hundred geese at least.

*[Exit SIR PERGAMUS, DINDIMUS, and FLAVIA.]*

*Learch.* Lady, I fear we are too long trouble-  
Thanks for our entertain. *[some.]*

*Phi.* Welcome, that's all.

*Arm.* This fool speaks comfort. Learchus here  
says there is some speech of his victory.

*Ruf.* Yes, over death, *[Apart to ARMANUS.]*

'Tis true; he has won that fort, Armanus.

*Arm.* How?

*Ruf.* Upon my life, most certain, he is slain;

But none dares whisper it unto the king,

Nor would I have your tongue the doleful bell

To ring it in her ears; but seek some way

In smoothest terms which way to publish it.

I'm studying how to break it to the king ;  
But not before to-morrow's triumph's end.

*Arm.* [*Aside.*] Rufinus is a villain, and I fear  
This is some hellish stratagem of his  
Aiming at Tullius' life, thus to divulge  
His death ere it be acted. Swift as thought  
I'll fly unto the camp : If there be plots  
My notice may prevent [his] treachery. [*Exit.*]

*Phi.* Whither's Armanus posted in such haste ?  
*Ruf.* Unto the court, where we must after him ;  
There's some important business of state  
To be debated on. Madam, adieu ;  
Small thanks must now suffice for your great love.  
Think of to-morrow's triumph. [*Exit.*]

*Phi.* To my death  
I'd go triumphantly. Oh, Tullius,  
This is the latest night that thou canst stay :  
Be it for ever night ere day's bright eye  
See me disrobed of my pure chastity. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Before the Gates of the Sabine  
City. The Tent of TULLIUS on one side of the  
Stage.*

*Enter* MARCUS TULLIUS, MARIUS, and LELIA, with a Letter.

*M. Tull.* A letter, Janus ?

*Lel.* Yes.

*M. Tull.* From whence ?

*Lel.* From Rome.

*M. Tull.* My Philadelpha ? No.

*Mar.* Armanus ?

*M. Tull.* Neither,  
You shall partake it presently.

*Mar.* Let's leave him. [*Exit* MARIUS and LELIA.]

*M. Tull.* [*Reads*] "The king solicits your fair  
bride to lust ;

Armanus is his cunning instrument,  
And Philadelpha makes but weak defence :  
If that your bed be pure, 'tis only want  
Of opportunity defers the sin."—  
Within there, ho !

*Enter* BELLARIO.

*Bell.* My lord ?

*M. Tull.* Where's he that brought this letter ?

*Bell.* Posted hence ;

He said it craved no answer, and we discharged  
him.

*M. Tull.* I charge you on your lives make after  
him,

And bring him back with speed ! take swiftest  
horse !— [*Exit.* BELLARIO.]

Armanus ! Philadelpha ! Eyes drop forth,  
And lose your light for ever ! Oh, ye gods,  
How could you find out such a merciless  
And murdering torture for an innocent man ?  
What deed of mine ever deserved so ill  
As this inscription does inflict on me ?  
Erianius sends her snakes in horrid clusters  
To swarm about my breast ; but here they find  
Such matchless torments, that, their stings unfelt,  
For shame they back retire. Oh, fickle creatures,  
Euripus' madding billows do not rush  
With half that swiftness on another's necks,  
As do your perjuries and infinite sins.  
Your love at best is as an April shower ;  
Your rosy cheeks are shaded about with thorns,  
That do not prick our fingers but our hearts.  
Your pictures far excel you, for they have  
All that is good in you, your outward feature,

But your infernal minds they, happy, want.  
Beauty, at best, is like a blooming tree,  
Fairest in bud, when it bears foulest fruit.  
Fool that I am thus to invest against her !  
'Protest I had forgot she is a woman.  
What shall I do ? Like a tame fool lament  
My injuries with an unfruitful sorrow,  
And still live wronged ?—What are these last  
black lines ? [*Reads.*]

"Use your own will ; censure me how you please,  
What I have writ my life shall justify :  
No friend's a friend till [he shall] prove a friend."  
I am resolved : Grief, I discard thee now,  
Anger and fury in thy place must enter.  
King, it is thee on whom my rage must light,  
And that best, worst of men, a faithless friend.  
Just Vengeance, bear me on thy violent wings  
Quickly to Rome, and arm me with thy fierceness.  
That, without fear or pity, I may prove  
Heaven's instrument to punish treachery !—  
Marcellus.

*Enter* MARCELLUS.

*Mar.* Calls my lord ?

*M. Tull.* Call Marius hither, come along with  
him.— [*Exit* MARCELLUS.]

Good gods ! Armanus turned a villain too !  
The story of Orestes was a fable,  
I'll not believe that ever friend was faithful.—

*Enter* MARIUS and MARCELLUS.

I sent for you, and, captain, draw you near ;  
My suit is now to both : I do not doubt  
Those proteatations of your proffered loves,  
Of which we have had some trial, need again  
A new oath to confirm me.—Kind friends, know  
I must, but for what cause you must not ask,  
A while forsake you, and must leave the camp  
Wholly to your protection ; 'tis my suit,  
For fear my absence should be dangerous,  
That you, till my return, under my name  
Would see my place discharged.

*Mar.* To yield to this

Is but to accept my own advancement ;  
But, in the mean space, should the soldiers find  
I were no general but a counterfeit,  
Their scoffs at least, if not their violent rage,  
Would persecute me, and, with shame and horror,  
Work my destruction.

*M. Tull.* No such fear molest you,  
For in the field I yet was never seen  
But armed at all points, and but seldom so.  
Wear my coat-armour, that disguise alone  
Will make us undistinguished ; but without  
Take this rich scarf which, for her sake that gave it,  
Has been my individual ornament  
And chiefest mark of note.—Marcellus,  
Do you commend me to my nearest friends,  
Entreat them wink at my departure ;  
If adverse fortune e'er chance to reveal it,  
Be you my witness, that to honoured Marius  
I thus resign all my authority.

*Mar.* Which I accept,  
Although I know more dangers do attend it  
Than wait upon a hundred diadems.

*M. Tull.* Pray do not think that fear or cowardice  
Incites my blood to put these honours off,  
This being the day of battle : Let suffice  
The affairs that urge me are of such great weight.  
I have scarce time to thank you. Fare you well.  
[*Exit.*]

*Mar.* Goodness guide thy actions whatsoever.

*Marc.* I wonder what's the matter with the general?

*Mar.* I neither know, nor do desire to know, Since 'tis his will I should not.—

*Enter LELIA.*

Pretty Janus,

Look not so wild, my boy, nor wonder not At this short transmutation, for anon Thou shalt partake it all; for thy discourse And countenance too, next her that keeps my heart,

Hold it in their possession: thy lord's safe.

*Lel.* But from your tongue I would not credit Till I beheld him so. [truth

*Enter BELLARIO.*

*Bell.* Where is the general?

*Mar.* The news with thee?

*Bell.* The drums beat up, the enemy comes on; They have forsook the town, and march in rank As if they'd give us battle.

*Mar.* Let 'em come!

Order our troops, and bring 'em near us: the foe Shall see against what odds they strive.—

[*Exit BELLARIO.*

Now, Marcellus

The first scene of a bloody act begins; The chief part I must play, and till my bones And sinews crack, I'll stretch my utmost strength That I may truly imitate his worth Whom I now represent. 'Tis my desire To break a spear, the soldier's compliment, With stout Sabinus, for I emulate His daring valour.—Janus, keep my tent, A strong guard shall attend thee, for I vow There's something in thee takes my fancies so I would not have thee perish for a world.

*Lel.* Whate'er that unknown charm be, which Is hidden as the cause that merits it, [to me By that love I entreat you, let these hands Bear to the field your target and your lance, And share with you this day your destiny In all that shall be dangerous. Know, dear sir, My father was a soldier, and that blood I took from him which flows within this breast, Not, swallow-like, foreseeing of a storm Flags to the ground, but soars up higher still. There's not a man, methinks, that dares touch you But this weak arm can strike him to the earth. Good sir, deny me not.

*Mar.* Have thy desire; Yet I protest, if by untimely fate These eyes should see thee sink, it would abate All that is man within me. [A flourish.

Hark! they come.

*Enter BELLARIO.*

*Bell.* To parley, not to fight. There is a herald sent out from their army That craves admittance.

*Marc.* Let him have it. [*Exit BELLARIO.*

*Enter a Sabine Herald.*

*Her.* To the great general of the Roman host Sabinus wisheth happiness.

*Mar.* We scarce credit it.

*Her.* If from his own mouth you desire to hear it, He's marching hitherward, and craves a parley.

*Mar.* Tell him we shall expect him, and, on terms

That do not jar with honour, should be glad To entertain his friendship. So return.—

[*Exit Herald.*

Though his high pride did fly above his reach Making a daring challenge, I commend him. The princely eagle, when she means to soar The highest pitch, raises her lofty flight From lowest valley; and if smooth-faced Peace Yet step betwixt us, for his resolute spirit I must both love and honour him.

*Enter BELLARIO.*

*Bell.* My lord, Sabinus is at hand, but brings with him Not past a dozen gentlemen, and they, Instead of weapons, in their unarmed hands Bear olive branches, signals of calm peace.

*Mar.* 'Tis wonderful that he who yesterday Like a Leonidas stood for his country, Out-threatening death and danger, should so soon Change his determined course; but I'll suspend My censure till the event make known The certain cause. Like number meet; the rest Fall off again.

*Enter SABINUS, ARMINIUS, and other Sabines, with Olive Branches in their Hands, and Colours wrapt up. A slow March.*

*Sab.* Renowned Tullius, The valiant general of a warlike people, Thus have we left our walls that might have scorned Jove's battering thunder, or disjuncting earthquakes, Sent from the depth of hell; and in our hands Bear the true emblem of our hearts, now filled With a desire of peace; but on what terms We entertain it, that can best resolve you.

[*Offers a paper.*

*Mar.* A herald!

*Enter a Roman Herald.*

Read those articles aloud, That all may hear on what conditions Great Martius frees his subjects' lives from peril.

*Herald.* [*Reads.*] "Titus Martius, king of the Romans, to Sabinus, captain of the Sabines, greeting.

Incited by A religious care, wherewith the gods endued us, To save the blood of our dear countrymen, Desiring rather to put up injury Than right ourselves by too much cruelty, We are contented not to cast our eye Severely on those misdeceivours past, That we may call them by so mild a name, Our mercy may remit them; which but viewed Severely, would pull on too great a ruin: Wherefore, once more, not as impotent, but with arm'd hands

We offer peace on these conditions: First, as a yearly tribute you shall pay Seven hundred sestertias to the Roman crown; Next, whene'er we have occasion, Either of foreign or domestic wars, You aid us with six thousand armed men; And, lastly, you shall keep within your bounds, Not suffering any upon pain of death To rob and spoil upon our Latin confines: If you consent unto these articles, In all respects your liberty shall be

As large and free as in the days  
Of our loved predecessor Tacitus ;  
If otherwise, expect the encrease of plagues  
That war and Rome hath often laid on you ;  
But these confirmed, let Tullius our general  
Enter your city with a competent number  
Of well-armed men, and take the oaths of you  
And your chief senators. Farewell."

*Mar.* Sir, we have heard  
What we much wonder at ; yet I rejoice  
For your sake that Martius is gracious  
To yield to what's here written. Let's join hands ;  
This knot of true-loved peace banish all former  
discords !

[*Within.*] Who !

*Mar.* How the glad soldiers do applaud this  
league !

Singing the same panegyric of peace !  
Then let's avoid delay.—Bellario,  
You, with some few of our chief officers,  
Shall to the city with us, where this league  
Before the gods we must see ratified.  
Our other soldiers now may rest themselves,  
For those that will depart, give them their pay,  
And let them take their pleasures.

*Sab.* Come, brave Tullius.

[*They march together, and at the entrance of the gate  
Marius is stabbed.*]

*Mar.* Oh, I am slain !

[*Falls.*]

*Lel.* Treason ! murder ! help !

*Sab.* Shut up the gates, and suffer none to enter !  
He falls that lifts a hand !

*Lel.* Villains, tyrants !

*Sab.* Bind fast that boy !

*Lel.* Sanguivole murderers !

Can soldiers harbour such damned treachery ?

*Sab.* Tullius, thy pardon. By a soldier's faith,  
I much lament thy too hard fate, for see,

[*Throws down a letter.*]

There is the crimson tyrant. 'Tis thy blood  
From unknown feet frees our affrighted country,  
Which shed, Titus Martius, by the gods of Rome,  
The powers of Heaven, of earth, of sea, of hell,  
And the infernal shades, has bound himself  
With ancient liberty to raise again  
Our gorgeous buildings, battered down by war,  
And seat us high as ever.

*Mar.* He the man ? Oh !

*Lel.* Accursed fiend ! barbarous, inhuman king !  
Sabinus, see, behold the wretched wife of Tullius !  
Look what a woeful widow you have made !  
Our loves scarce measured a short hour in essence,  
But in expectancy it was eternal,  
And so my grief must be, without a period ;  
For as the day ends with the setting sun,  
So with thy death my happy days are done,  
For I am lost for ever.

*Sab.* Matchless woman,  
Witness the gods how much I pity you !—  
Oh, gentlemen, why do you fix your eyes  
So firmly upon me ? I know the strangeness  
Of this sad act may make my truth suspected ;  
I'll use no airy protestations now  
To clear myself ; but if you please to enter,

After our oaths are taken to preserve  
Those articles of peace inviolate,  
The funeral obsequies, and true shed tears,  
Which to his everlasting bed shall bring  
All that remains of this unfortunate,  
I know not what to call him, shall express  
How dear I prized his goodness : but the love  
We bear our country beats all pity back.—  
Take up the body.

*Lel.* Touch him not, you furies !  
No blood-stained hands shall dare to touch the  
On which I sacrifice these virgin tears, [alt  
Which shall outlast the marble which is laid  
To cover his fair corpse. Stand off, I say !  
Myself will see him coffined and embalmed,  
And in one tomb rest with him.—Dear Tullius !

*Sab.* Cross her in nothing, let her use her will :  
She's had too much wrong. Pray enter, lords,  
For by our hearty sorrow you shall find  
In all but this we bore a godlike mind.

[*Exeunt all but LELIA and MARIUS.*]

*Lel.* Oh, Marius, I have wronged thy blessed  
spirit

To mourn thy death by a contrary name,  
But 'twas a sister's love ; then pardon me.  
If any life remain, fix but thine eye  
Upon thy Lelia's sorrow, crying now  
On Marius, Marius, breathing nothing else  
Till my loathed breath expire. Oh, Marius !

*Mar.* What life-restoring balm those true love's  
tears

Pour in my bleeding wounds, able to free  
A dying soul from death's strongest charnel-house !  
But I am well, far distant from that place :  
This shirt of mail worn near my skin  
Rebated their sharp steel and killing points  
Were darted at my breast. My greatest hurt  
Is but a scratch compared to mortal wounds.  
Yet I have changed my life, my life of woe,  
And am transported into paradise,  
Rapt above apprehension to behold  
My dearest Lelia's sight : Hast thou been dead  
To all men's knowledge since I first left Rome,  
And dost survive to be my life's preserver ?

*Lel.* I lived not else at all : But dangers now  
Surround us everywhere ; some sudden means  
Must further our swift flight, or we are lost again  
Past remedy.

[*Enter BELLARIO.*]

Here comes a trusty friend, Bellario.—  
Oh, good Bellario, help me to convey  
This habit where it may be hid for ever,  
And lend us any garments ; Marius lives ;  
Throw it into any pool. Thy coat and hat !  
Nay quickly dear Bellario. [She disguises MARIUS.]

*Mar.* Thy reward for this,  
Whene'er we see thee next, wants precedent  
Of what thy trust hath gained thee. Fare thee  
Commend me to Marcellus : thou and he [well]  
Appease the mutinous soldiers, and make head.  
You shall with speed hear from us.—Come, my  
bliss,  
Never had man a happiness like this. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Forest.**Enter ARMANUS.*

*Arm.* Thrice has my horse o'erthrown me ; the last time

Fell stark dead under me : ominous signs !  
The scorching beams too weaken and make faint  
My bruised limbs, that I of force must rest,  
If rest dares steal into the dwelling place  
Of grief and care.

If Tullius fell by damned practices,  
And not by honourable dint of sword,  
I take a solemn vow ne'er to return,  
Or live 'mongst other creatures willingly  
Than wolves and tigers, studying how to learn  
Their savage fierceness, and to practise it  
Upon their hearts were causers of his death.  
My weariness o'er masters me, and fills  
My head with strange distemp'ature ; sleep weighs  
down  
My eyelids. [Sleeps.]

*Enter MARCUS TULLIUS.*

*M. Tull.* I would have no one marry, for it is  
A foolish, vain, and idle ceremony ;  
Let every woman choose the man she likes  
To pleasure her, and after him another,  
Changing as often as the subtle wind, [thoughts :  
The pale-faced moon, or their own wandering  
'Twere better far than thus with breach of faith,  
To fill the world with sin and bastard births.  
Oh, Philadelpa, if thou dost prove false,  
Betwixt the parched Indians, short-breathed men,  
And longest-lived, cold Hyperboreans,  
Lives not a constant woman. But, Armanus !  
To see the antipathy 'twixt love and friendship !  
As if it were ingrafted in the soul,  
In which there is more pleasure than desire,  
In will and in affection ; like two hearts  
Closed up both in a mold, that if one die  
The poisonous infection kills the other.  
I would I could forget thee, for methinks  
I am ne'er alone when I remember thee :  
Such sympathy, conditions, manners, speech,  
In studies, pleasures, inclinations  
Bearing continual one thought and motion,  
For such are perfect friends—I am o'erheard ;  
And yet I am not. There's a happy man ;  
No politic devices keep him waking  
For mines of gold : my mad and mutinous thoughts  
Will not afford me such a minute's rest.  
These three days have these eyelids kept asunder,  
And still unfriendly they deny to meet.  
Yet I will lay me down by this blest creature ;  
It may be his example may teach me  
How to beguile fond passions. [Lays down.]

*Arm.* Forgive me, [In his sleep.]  
I will revenge thy death, by Heaven I will.

*M. Tull.* Alas, poor soul, he is afflicted too.  
Methinks that face should be no stranger to me :  
Armanus !

Oh, see the spring from whence comes all my woe,  
Whose flattering bubbles show like crystal streams,  
But I have found 'em full of Lernean poison.  
How sound he sleeps ! He is so used to sin,  
Not the black furies that still hover about him,  
Nor his own guilt that's ever calling him,  
Can waken him ; but here is that can do't. [Draws.]

Just Nemesis, that sit'st on sharpest thorns,  
Twisting thy iron whips for perjured man,  
Behold thy priest offer a sacrifice  
That will be pleasing to thee !—My hand shakes.  
Revenge and fury guard me round about,  
And force calm pity and compassion back !—  
Once more have at thee.—Still my arm wants  
And cannot hold my weapon. [strength,

*Arm.* Sacred spirit, [Awakes.]  
That from the ever-springing fields art come  
To this unhallowed ground, why dost thou shake  
Thy threatening sword, and so austere bend  
Thy incorporeal brow against the man  
That ever loved and honoured Tullius' name  
So dear, the natural antipathy  
Betwixt my frail and thy immortal substance,  
Which guilty creatures tremble to behold,  
And drives their cold blood through their shaking  
joints,

Nothing dimays me ; but with open arms  
Run to embrace thy shadow. Shun me not !  
By all my hopes of future happiness  
Tell me but who they were contrived thy death,  
And though the Cyclops guard them, or the race  
That from his kingdom durst attempt to drive  
The star-crowned monarch, yet my vengeful flame  
Shall strike 'em down to hell, where thou shalt  
hear,

To those bless'd shades where all the worthies live,  
Their tortured souls with anguish howl and yell.  
Then do not fly my arms.

*M. Tull.* Villain, keep off !  
Thou art mad ; a pandar, nay, what's worse,  
A traitor to thy friend.

*Arm.* Devil, or ghost,  
Spirit of earth, of air, of active fire  
(For Tullius thou art not ; he never used  
Such barbarous language to a faithful friend)  
Therefore whate'er thou art that dar'st assume  
The blessed shape of my dear murdered friend  
Where goodness so long dwelt, prepare thyself ;  
My anger thus salutes thee. [Draws.]

*M. Tull.* What dream's this ?  
What spirit or what murder talks he of ?  
This is a fetch past man's capacity.  
Armanus, thou hast lost thyself too far :  
I am no deluding goblin, nor false friend,  
But real as thyself.

*Arm.* Lives Tullius then ?  
With joy and wonder thus—

*M. Tull.* Keep distance, slave !  
Yes, I do live, and only live to be  
A terror to thy falsehood.

*Arm.* These are words  
I must not live to hear.

*M. Tull.* Villain, read that : [Gives him the letter.]  
So long I'll spare my justice, which shall fall  
As horrid as thy fact. Does't startle you ?

*Arm.* Whoever writ these black lies is a devil,  
Which are as false and envious as himself :  
Yet, if you can believe 'em, 'tis high time  
That I were turned to earth. See, there's my sword,  
And thus my breast flies open to your fury :  
Strike, and strike home, and when my guiltless  
blood

Shall dye this green grass crimson, you shall see  
How free 'twas from corruption.

*M. Tull.* I am struck  
With deep astonishment: If that were false,  
To what end should that man, what'er he were,  
Engage himself so dreadfully? 'Tis a reach  
Beyond my understanding. By the truth  
And forepast protestations tied our hearts  
In bonds of amity, (a greater oath  
Sin cannot think upon) resolve my fear:  
Has not my Philadelpha 'fil'd her faith?

*Arm.* She is as pure as the unspotted sun  
Shining in brightest glory.

*M. Tull.* Does not the king solicit her?

*Arm.* He does;

And politic Rufinus haunts her hourly,  
Like an ill spirit, striving to seduce her  
To what she most abhors; 'twas he possessed  
Me with your credulous death,  
And has by this divulged it to the king:  
Which rumour winged me on to fly to th' camp,  
Doubting some dangerous plot laid 'gainst your life  
That he so confidently spoke you dead.  
By all my comforts hoped for, and those plagues  
Which perjury would tremble to recite,  
By our past friendship and unwrinkled truth,  
Which hitherto I ever have adored,  
What I have spoken is as free from blot  
As is the firmament.

*M. Tull.* And I, as true, believe it. Pardon me;  
Thus will I beg it from thee. Jealousy [*Kneels.*]  
And frantic rage, which from these lines took life,  
And had their black original, bereft  
And put me past myself. Now, I conceive  
Rufinus' damn'd intent, to draw me from  
The camp unto my death, or execute  
Some hellish treason there. Heaven keep Marius  
*Arm.* Speak low, here's company. [*safe!*]

*Enter Marius disguised, and LELIA like a Post-boy.*

*Mar.* Let's rest a while, sweet Lelia, we have  
rid hard,

And whilst our horses graze, refresh ourselves;  
These pleasant groves yield comfortable shades.

*LeL.* Marius!

*Mar.* Ha! what affrights my love?

*LeL.* Saw you that face?

*Mar.* 'Tis—

*LeL.* Tullius, my dear brother; that, Armanus.

*Mar.* Oh, everlasting comfort! Tullius—

*M. Tull.* Amazement! Marius! loving Janus  
Joy and sad fear both struggle in my breast: [too!  
Your sights are Heaven, but the sudden cause  
Forced you to leave the camp, and thus disguised,  
Begets in me a wonder beyond thought.

*Mar.* And well it may. Oh, noble worthy lord,  
I shall amaze you with strange stratagems.  
Titus is a tyrant; bloody snares  
And horrid treasons do begirt thee round;  
But I was trapt with 'em, yet hate to think  
Thy virtue knew of them.

Behold a warrant granted for thy death,  
Upon condition of a feigned league,  
Signed with his own hand and commanding seal,  
Which I observed in all things void of fear,  
And as I entered through their flattering gates,  
Which stood wide open to receive us in,  
Going to take their oaths of fealty,  
I fell by their sharp weapons; witness these.

[*Shows his wounds.*]

But how I was restored and 'scaped with life  
Will wonder you far more: here is the hand  
That under heaven was my only safety.

*M. Tull.* Who? pretty Janus?

*Mar.* No, thy sister Tullius,  
And my dear Lelia, that all this while  
Like my good angel hath protected me:  
The manner now's too tedious to rehearse,  
For I could ever sit recounting it.

*M. Tull.* Is't possible, sweet sister, thou shouldst  
live

Thus long disguised, and serve me as my page.  
And these eyes ne'er descry thee, that have took  
Such infinite delight to gaze upon  
The splendour of thy beauty? nay, I vow,  
Wert not my sister, even doted on thee.

*Arm.* Is this your post? Was she your happy  
I could fast ever to kiss such a post. [*guide!*]

*M. Tull.* Surcease a while this explicating joy,  
And let us study how to be revenged  
On this injurious king, King Machiavel.

*Mar.* For such a plot no fury ever formed.

*M. Tull.* Were all these honours and the gilded  
He heaped upon my head against my will, [*titles*]  
Laid on my shoulders for to weigh me down,  
And sink me with black obloquy? Well, king,  
The moon may dim the sun, and so may I  
Wrap up thy blazing pride in a red cloud,  
And darken thee for ever. Come to Rome:  
We'll yet determine nothing; what we do  
Occasion must present us. On to Rome. [*Exeunt.*]

#### SCENE II.—*Before the Temple.*

*Enter in a dumb Show, two Flamens; after them one bearing an Offering for the King; then four Senators; after them TITUS MARTIUS, talking to RUFINUS; LEARCHUS and LEONTIUS following; then PHILADELPHA richly attired, her Train borne up by Virgins, all carrying in their Hands several kinds of Sacrifice: so pass over the Stage.*

#### SCENE III.—*A Banqueting-Room in the Palace.*

*Soft Music strikes. A Banquet being set forth, enter TITUS and PHILADELPHA, who sit down at each end of one Table; then at another Side-table sit down MARCELLANUS and other Senators, and Old TULLIUS; then RUFINUS, LEARCHUS, and LEONTIUS, who wait on the King.*

*Titus.* Sit, glorious Philadelpha, there's thy chair,

To which thou'lt add more beauty than the sun  
Can to his golden chariot. Reverend Tullius,  
You have been long a stranger; this approach  
Adds to your double welcome: There, sit there.  
And you, Lucius Marcellanus, take your place;  
'Tis for you and your fellow senators.

*O. Tull.* The king is full of sacred courtesies.  
*Titus.* Sit, my dear beauteous guest; methinks,  
As we are placed in opposition, thou, like that  
Eternal soul of nature, which can give  
Or take at pleasure every excellence,  
Add'st or depriv'st me of perfection.

Methinks all dread, all reverence, majesty, [*same*]  
With which kings shake their footstools, like a  
Leaves me to lodge in thy bright countenance.

*Phi.* If there be such a wonder, 'tis your grace  
And favour which creates it; that withdrawn,  
I am dark and nothing, only but your handmaid.

*Titus.* Thou art all man's wish can climb to—  
Fill some wine!

Here's to thee, sweetness, and a solemn health  
To noble Tullius and his victories!

You are all engaged, my lords; this must go round;  
'Tis the king's friend, nay, his companion.

[The health goes about.]

1 *Sen.* Sir, you're a happy man that does enjoy  
A son of this rare merit.

O. *Tull.* Rather blest  
To have a king, whose judgment can infuse  
Merit, where merit's wanting.

2 *Sen.* Noble sir,  
You are not short in this felicity  
To have a daughter past all parallel:  
In brief you're both true maps of happiness  
In having such rare children.

*Marcellan.* They're the gifts  
Of Heaven, not of Nature.

O. *Tull.* Mine, alas,  
Is what the king hath made him; so far good  
As goodness sparkles in his actions;  
Though grief be my remembrancer, I must  
Confess I have lost ten sons, in every part  
As hopeful, good, though not so fortunate,  
In loss of my dear Lelia.

*Ruf.* How fain the old man would be flattered,  
And yet not seem to catch it!

*Lear.* Oh, it is  
A modesty which strives how to convert  
Praise into adoration.

*Leon.* Rather, sir,  
Your coy whore's rhetoric, ever to deny  
What they would swallow with most greediness.

*Ruf.* May superstition choke them! What's  
Or idol they so reverence, but a sponge [this toy,  
Fill'd with the king's waste moisture, or a bag  
Blown with the breath of greatness? When the  
Of wrath shall squeeze it, or a little pin [hand  
Prick but the windy outside, down falls all,  
And leaves him nought but despised emptiness.

*Lear.* Come, you're too bitter. See, how the  
king sits gazing!

*Titus.* Whence is this music? [Music within.]

*Ruf.* 'Tis, as I conceive,  
A warning of the masquers' readiness,  
Prepared to attend your triumphs.

*Titus.* Let them come.  
Quickly remove these tables!—Here's your place,  
For all things this night strive to honour you.—  
More lights and more attendants!—Sit, my lords,  
Revels ask elbow-room at all times. So.

*Enter the Masque, in which is Young TULLIUS, MARIUS,  
and ARMANUS, dressed as Furies, with Torches, and  
LELLIA in Lady's Habit; they dance with the Ladies.*

You have done to the height of motion; yet I'll  
Dancing a greater glory: 'Tis but lame [give  
When beauty shares not in it; here are they  
Can give life unto measure. Hand her, lords.  
Nay, you must not excuse it; for but you,  
Perfection hath no crown to triumph in.

*Phi.* Your majesty will make me to disclose  
Errors I would have hidden. [She dances.]

*Titus.* Say not so,  
You can shew art rules to astonish her.  
How like the nimble winds, which play upon  
The tender grass, yet press it not, or fly  
Over the crystal face of smoothest streams,  
Leaving no curl behind them; or how like  
The yellow-feathered Hymen when he treads  
Upon the soft air's bosom, doth she pass  
Observed by admiration! Why, she makes  
Motion the god of every excellence,  
And what the muses would with study find,

She teaches in her dancing; 'tis indeed  
A school to teach all we call liberal.  
I cannot give her worth a name; to me  
It must suffice only to say, 'tis she.

[The Dance ends.]

*Lear.* This is no rich idolatry.

*Ruf.* Yes, sure,  
And set out to the full height; there nor wants  
Imbosture nor embroidery: What dull eye  
But sees the swelling bosage, and your trails  
How they do hug and stifle flattery?

*Leon.* No more, the king observes us.

*Titus.* Blessed thing,  
Come, I have wronged thy sweetness, and I know  
Thou'rt weary; but I'll make a recompence.  
See, that a stately banquet be prepared  
To entertain the masquers; they've this night  
Tied to their king a strange beholdingness,  
And I am all your debtors. Call for lights!  
We'll to our chamber straight. Madam, your rest  
Must be to-night in the court, that and I  
Are both proud you will grace it. Rufinus, 'tis  
Your honour to attend her. So to all  
Good night and best repose. Reverend Tullius,  
Thou good old man, much peace.—But thousand  
happy rests

Dwell on thy noble bosom. [To PHILADELPHA.]

*Phi.* Ten times those,  
Doubled in myriads, live with my sovereign.

[Exit all but RUFINUS, PHILADELPHA, MARIUS, TULLIUS, ARMANUS, and MARIUS.]

*M. Tull.* Marius, Armanus, as you are noble  
friends,

Go to the privy garden, and in the walk,  
Next to the stillatory, stay for me,  
I must adventure something. Give me that torch.

*Mar. Arm.* Dispose yourself, we will attend  
your coming. [Exit.]

*Ruf.* Who waits there? Lights for the noble  
lady!

*M. Tull.* They are ready, and attend you.

*Ruf.* Away before then.  
Lead to the chamber called Elysium. [Exit.]

SCENE IV.—A Bed Chamber spendidly  
furnished.

*Enter TULLIUS disguised, with a Torch; PHILADELPHA,  
RUFINUS, and Ladies.*

*M. Tull.* This is the lodging called Elysium.  
*Ruf.* It is your lodging, madam; here the king  
Prays you may sleep with comfort.

*Phi.* Sir, I'm bound  
To his respect and your most noble trouble.

*Ruf.* Avoid the chamber, and put out your torch.

*M. Tull.* Is this the devil's chamber?—I am  
But not so far as mischief wishes me; [gone,—  
I must attend your night-spells. Arras, thou  
Shalt hide my body, but light my understanding.

[Puts out the Torch, and steps behind the Arras.]

*Phi.* Sir, I beseech you let my women stay,  
They must this night attend me.

*Ruf.* Oh, not these!  
These to attend your person? Madam, know,  
The greatest dames of Rome and Italy,  
Nay, the altezzas and their sovereigns,  
Must this night do you service; as for these,  
They must spare their duties.

*Phi.* Good my lord,  
Let mine own creatures serve me; others will

In this work supererogate, and I  
Shall think their diligence a mockery.

*Ruf.* Nothing so,  
You shall find virtue in their services.  
Come, ladies, you must vanish.

[*Exit with PHILADELPHA'S Women.*]

*Phi.* I do not like this courtship.—Ha! the door  
Locked up and bolted? in the name of truth,  
What differs this from strong imprisonment?  
Virtue, thou art my mistress, and I sit  
Under thy shade so safely, that methinks  
Dishonour dare not touch me. Yet, alas,  
Man is an untamed creature, and dare break  
Through any fence of goodness: Help me, then,  
Oh, sacred Virtue, and mine innocence!

*Enter TITUS MARTIUS.*

*Titus.* They will, believe it; never didst thou ask  
What piety denied thee.

*Phi.* Now I see I'm ruined:  
In the name of wonder, sir, what make you here?

*Titus.* To tell thee truth, not wonders, for no  
eye

Sees thee but stands amazed, and would turn  
His crystal humour into atomies  
Ever to play about thee.

*Phi.* Sacred sir,  
Oh, let me understand you!—Yet, sir, hold,  
Let me not understand you: let me be  
Dull as the earth, more ignorant than fools,  
Rather than know you are dishonourable.

*Titus.* Let not suspicion scare you, or respect  
Of that which is but nothing make you run  
From the height of all great fortunes. Plainly,  
sweet,

I love you, dearly love you; love you so  
As no speech can express it, and have by art  
And such discretion shaped opportunity,  
That malice cannot touch you in your honour.  
Come, you must be kind.

*Phi.* Great sir, keep farther distance! you speak  
poison.

*M. Tull.* Ha! here is some hope in her  
goodness.

*Titus.* Do not with coyness cast that fortune off  
You would with torments purchase; be to me  
The sweetness which I long for, and to all  
Thy thoughts, thy wishes, and thine actions,  
No power shall put a girdle; thou shalt be  
Greater than greatness thinks on, sway more  
hearts,

Have more eyes hanging on thee, and command  
More glorious titles and more sovereignty  
Than is spoke of Egypt and Assyria.

*M. Tull.* Now do I see  
The devil's a cunning book-thief, and hath robbed  
The honest schools of their best rhetoric  
To tempt poor virgins' weakness.

*Titus.* Poppæa, when she met her emperor  
Clad in the wealth of many monarchies,  
Nor rich Paulina that out-braved the sun,  
And made him dark with sparkling jewelry,  
Compared with thee shall be as poor and dull  
As wasted dross or baser excrements,  
Only let me enjoy thee.

*M. Tull.* Hold now or never!

*Phi.* I took you, sir, to be the only thing  
The earth could call her good one, and no doubt  
You are no less, only now seek to prove  
How an ill thing would scare me. Pray, sir, think

These foul ingredients cannot alter me.  
Trust me, I prize poor virtue with a rag  
Better than vice with both the Indies.

*M. Tull.* This is some comfort, if it have con-  
stancy.

*Titus.* Be not a fool for custom, know my worth,  
And who I am that do solicit you;  
Think of the crowns hang o'er you, crowns of joy,  
Honour and reputation; if they fail,  
Think of the swords I carry, swords of shame,  
Contempt, disgrace, slander, and infamy,  
And think with these how I can torture you,  
Nay, whip you to obedience; and by Heaven  
I'll spare nought to afflict you.

*M. Tull.* [*Stepping forward.*] Yes, you will,  
Virtue I know must be no instrument.

*Titus.* How's this? surprised? oh me! 'tis  
Tullius.

*M. Tull.* Yes, it is Tullius, Tullius the unfor-  
Are you a god, a king, nay, but a man, [*tunatic.*]  
And dare commit this outrage? Do you know  
A good thought and dare speak thus? Good sir,  
think,

Although I am your subject, and do view  
Each beam that shines about you, and conceive  
How dear you are to the gods, to angels, saints,  
The world, and mankind; though I know you are  
A temple so divine and hallowed,  
That but to dream ill of you were to plunge  
Men's souls into damnation; yet, to it  
Think what this woman is: My wife, sir, she's  
my wife,

My chaste dear wife, a word that's precious,  
Self of myself, nay, such a self beyond,  
That where she falls my fame is perish'd;  
Mine did I say? nay, my posterity,  
Mine utter generation, all my name  
Lost and undone to all eternity!

How this will tempt a good man, oh, sir, think,  
Tremble and fear to think it.

*Titus.* Be not jealous.

*M. Tull.* Not jealous, and have heard your  
blasphemy?

What slave can be so stupid? Sir, if you  
Have raised me for this merit, or built up  
My low foundations with strange pinnacles  
Higher than other's buildings; if you have  
Made me a glittering outside, but within  
Store nothing but dishonour, cast me down,  
Beat me to dust; my ashes will appear  
A monument more glorious than your palace.

*Titus.* On my life,  
Thou dost mistake me strangely.

*M. Tull.* 'Would I did,  
So I might perish for it; but my eyes  
And own ears are my witness.

*Titus.* Come, no more:  
They have told you a false message, and your heart  
Seduced by them is much too credulous;  
For I protest by all that's good or holy,  
Never did I conceive 'gainst her or thee  
A thought of so much baseness. What is done  
Was done for special caution; first, to stop  
Their poisoned mouths I know do envy you,  
Next to convert their malice to this ground  
Which else had touched thy person; next to try  
The temper of her goodness, and how far  
Corruption might work on her, which I find  
Past praise and past example, and she is  
The jewel I renounced her, and indeed

Worthy the love of noble Tullius :

'Twas this design that led me ; by my life,  
No other thought came near me.

*M. Tull.* It was a course pious and full of virtue,  
A deed for which I ever owe a debt  
Of terror and affliction : Fearful king,  
Nay, impudent transgressor, now thou seest  
Thy lustful breast lie bare to my revenge  
Coin'dst these apparent falsehoods ; but I have  
Strange and undoubted causes : witness this,  
This warrant for my murder ; besides that,  
The articles of peace you sent the rebels  
Sabinus and Arminius, but the cause  
Was written in a bloody character,  
Such as I think had never precedent ;  
This can speak how firm is your affection.

[Gives him the warrant.]

*Phi.* I am lost in my amazement : Dearest,  
What warrant for thy murder ? [speak,

*M. Tull.* Oh, my love,  
Time will not now permit me to relate  
The cruel circumstance ; thou shalt partake it.

*Titus.* What slave or hell-hound has abused my  
truth,

And forged this slanderous writ ? Oh, my Tullius,  
I cannot blame thee now had thy just rage  
Flown out above man's temper. This would move  
A creature without gall. Who should be  
This angry billow that thus seeks to drown  
The fair bark I would nourish ? By dread Jove,  
I will sift out this swelling sycophant,  
And beat him down so flat, so low, so dead,  
Make him so smooth and calm, that but his shame  
There shall be nothing to remember him.  
Tullius, by this embracement credit me  
I am sound in all thoughts to thee. Do not  
neither

Believe nor them nor me ; but as short time  
Shall prove this lie most odious, so let truth  
Shine in my other actions. With all speed  
We'll call a present council, and send post  
For proud Sabinus,  
Who dreadful in his articles may come ;  
If not, we'll force him hither ; you, disguised,  
Shall hear our strange proceedings ; thou shalt see  
How quaintly I shall trip 'em. Love this sweet,  
She is a thing for Heaven to envy at,  
And tell thyself thou hast all the joys of life,  
A perfect royal friend and faithful wife. [Exit.

*M. Tull.* 'Would I could hope the first, the  
last is sure,

And both I'll seek to perfect.—Come, my love,  
Thou hast played the part of goodness royally,  
And I'll strive to deserve it. Yet, since things  
Lie but at half discovered, for a time  
In some strange shape I'll shroud me,  
Free from the knowledge of the king or any,  
Until these tares be weeded ; when they're ripe,  
I'll be myself, and shine unlimited.

*Phi.* Your will is my direction, and I'll move  
Only by your commandment and your love. [Exeunt.

#### SCENE V.—A Temple.

Enter *SER PERGAMUS*, the foolish Knight, like a Bridegroom, leading *FLAVIA*, his Bride ; *BELLARIO*, the singing Soldier ; *BLACKNOUT* the Smith, *SNIPENAP* the Tailor, and *CALVESKIN* the Shoemaker.—An Altar to be set forth with the Image of Mars ; *DINDIMUS* the Dwarf bearing *SER PERGAMUS'* Lance and Shield, which are

hung up for *Trophies*, and *SER PERGAMUS* vows, for the Love of *FLAVIA*, never to bear Arms again ; the like does *BLACKNOUT*, who hangs up his Sword, and takes his Hammer, vowing to God *Vulcan* never to use another Weapon. The Tailor and the Shoemaker do vow the like to God *Mercury*. Then *BELLARIO* sings a Song how they will fall to their old Trades. A Clap of Thunder, and all run off. *Finis 4 Act.*

*Per.* There hang, thou fatal engine of my wrath,  
Thou great divorcer of the soul and body,  
Which three-score princes, emperors, and kings,  
Besides some thousand lords, captains sans number,  
One lance-prisado and a sutler's wife,  
Hast sent to Erebus and dismal lake ;  
Hang there, I say, and this the world shall grant  
None e'er shall use the like but John of Gaunt.

*All.* Oh, rare, rare Pergamus !

*Per.* Now give me that ! [Takes the Shield.  
Come thou, thou faithful bulwark to my breast,  
Thou that keep'st off the cannon-shot like hail,  
Cut through and through some four-score inches  
deep

With direful strokes and dreary hardiment ;  
Whose wide-mouthed trenches keep imprisoned  
Five thousand captains couchant to thy mercy,  
Which must yield Pergamus a world for ransom,  
Terror, hang there ! no Guildhall shews the like,  
Bloody in peace, but in war politic.

*Dind.* Go on, brave Pergamus, the son of a fame,  
The child of fortune ; all men know the same.

*Fla.* A periphrasis of a fool that fortunes favour.

*Per.* Hang there, ye instruments of blood and  
rust !

Hence, fighting vain ! My Flavia must be buss'd.  
Yet thus far, Mars, I will thy soldier be,  
And valiantly in thy great quarrel strike,  
When Flavia teaches me to raise the pike.

*Black.* Blacknout the like doth vow, and in a  
Into a hammer I'll convert my sword. [word  
Though Venus Vulcan horn, I'll wive : our hall  
Increased by us may grow a capital.

I am for Vulcan now, for Mars no more ;  
If my wife scold, my bout-hammer shall roar.

*Snip.* Turn garment, tailor, too, and be not  
I'll marry and betake me to my yard, [barr'd :  
And if my trade then prove not worth a dodkin,  
Curse, curse o' women, both my yard and bodkin !

*Calve.* Then, shoemaker, the last of all the rout,  
Of tailor, Pergamus, or fair Blacknout :  
By Mercury I swear it is my draught  
To take a wife and use the gentle craft.

#### SONG by BELLARIO.

Then farewell the drum, pike, gun, and the fife !  
If a man loves jarring and plenty of strife,  
To try his valour let him take a wife,

And to our old trades again.

*Chorus.* And to our old trades again.

Come, Pergamus, tailor, and Blacknout too,  
The shoemaker will teach your wives all what to do,  
For if you tread awry they'll underlay you :

Then to our old trades again !

*Chorus.* Then to our old trades again !

So, furious Mars, we bid thee adieu,  
We care not for killing, it's a life for a Jew :  
So let us be jogging with our jovial crew,

And to our old trades again !

*Chorus.* And to our old trades again !

[Thunder.

*Bell.* Oh, the gods are angry ! Let's begone.

*All.* Oh, oh, oh ! [Exeunt running.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Before the Palace.*

Enter LEARCHUS and LEONTIUS meeting, muffled up in Cloaks.

*Lear.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Leon.* Why dost thou laugh, Learchus?

*Lear.* To see us two walk thus like Saturnists Muffled up in a condensed cloud.

Why art thou sad, Leontius?

*Leon.* 'Troth, I know not.

Why art thou melancholy?

*Lear.* Hang me if I can tell. Oh, now I remember:

The king is discontented, and we courtiers  
Are like the Macedonian humourists,  
'Cause Philip had a wry neck they wore theirs so,  
And said 'twas all the fashion: yet, methinks,  
'Tis something more than strange  
To see this sudden alteration;  
Last night he was unbounded and profuse  
In mirth and jovialty, but looks this morn  
As if he had drunk Lethe.

Enter RUFINUS.

*Ruf.* Plotting still?

You think to outdo me now in some rare springe  
To catch this green-head general; but you shall not,

Nay, you cannot: know, brave spirits, 'tis done;  
Our stratagem has taken rare effect,  
The peace is made, the articles confirmed,  
The execution past, and Tullius sunk  
Lower than policy can ever search,  
Or plumb the unfathomed bottom.—

What means this silence? Do not your glad hearts leap

Into your bosom to hear this brave revenge?  
Have you thus far mingled your bloods with mine,  
And waded hand in hand through death and hell,  
And do you now repent?

*Lear. Leon.* Repent!

*Ruf.* What then portends this sadness?

*Lear.* Understand it:  
Saw you the king to-day?

*Ruf.* No. What succeeds your question?

*Lear.* He is wondrous discontented.

*Ruf.* What of that?

*Leon.* Think you he has not caught intelligence  
Of Tullius' murder, or this feigned truce?

*Ruf.* Why, say he have, do you shrink or shudder at it?

We have ventured too far in to retire now:  
But I'll take off that doubt, 'tis no such thing,  
Neither does grief or anger make him show  
A wrinkled front or a dejected look;  
'Tis rather too much joy, surfeit of pleasure,  
And those sweet delights with which he has been sated

This last night in the arms of Philadelpa;  
Tullius' fair hoard was made his cradle  
In which the devil and lust sate rocking him.

*Lear.* Is't possible? is Tullius' mounted higher?

*Ruf.* Yes, on the horn of greatness.

*Lear.* Ha, ha, ha!

*Ruf.* And being fixed, perchance,  
In meditation of these sugared sins,  
He did not greatly mind ye; there's his sadness:  
But when we come in presence you shall see

Another change of countenance, for I am  
The served-up instrument whose tearing brain  
Gives motion to his actions.—

Enter Messenger.

Sent to me?

*Mess.* And all your honours.

The senate sits this morning instantly,  
The king in person too, but for what cause  
None but himself yet knows.

*Ruf.* 'Tis a short summons: well, we shall attend him. [Exit Messenger.]

*Lear.* What thinks Rufinus now?

*Ruf.* By Jove, I am puzzled; yet, now  
To forge or study for replies would show  
A shallow brain. Let not our timorous guilt  
Betray ourselves; and scorn the worst event;  
If we must down let us like cedars fall,  
And make an earthquake tumbling, that our fame  
May live to after-ages, and our acts  
By all rare politicians be eternized:  
'Tis nobler far than live in such a state  
Where worth hath no reward, merit no grace.  
Can virtue spring where true regard is wanting?  
It is impossible: Thus join we then,  
And let our fates be like the elements,  
So linked and chained that none can break the twine

But they that twisted it. This knot, methinks,  
Resembles just the trinal sisterhood  
That spun our thread of life: make much on't then.  
Before the destinies do wind it up  
They shall have many turnings. But when you  
There is no remedy, let one stroke divide us. [see  
*Lear. Leon.* 'Tis resolved.

[Cornets play a Lesson.

*Ruf.* The senate's coming, fall into the train. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—*The Capitol.*

Enter MARCELLANUS, OLD TULLIUS, and two other Senators; then TITUS MARTIUS, RUFINUS, LEARCHUS, LEONTIUS, and other Attendants; MARCUS TULLIUS in Disguise among other Petitioners.

*M. Tull.* I hope this habit's undiscoverable,  
In which, as in a perspic, I shall see [Aside.]  
These hidden furies tread the devil's maze.

*Titus.* Grave fathers,  
You in whose wisdom rest the states of kings,  
Whose prudent and discreet directions  
Uphold and govern all things next the gods,  
To you I now appeal, and shall in brief  
Declare the motive that incited us  
To call this sudden council. I must first  
Confess my rashness, that, without advice  
Of your sage judgments and a general voice,  
We made a general thy son, Tullius,  
And him sent forth without a full consent  
Against the Sabines that invaded us;  
The error is acknowledged, yet, my lords,  
The strong necessity considered,  
The fierceness of the insurrection,  
And devastation which the rebels used,  
Was cause sufficient for a present choice  
Without deliberate council.

*2 Sen.* 'Twas most fit.

*Ruf.* A policy both good and requisite.

*Titus.* We are excused for't then. But, reverend senate,  
 Having since weighed by weighty circumstance,  
 Grounded on reason, that the opinions  
 And several censures of the commonalty,  
 And some of our great peers too, may, perchance,  
 Out of their ignorance raise a mutiny  
 That might in time work a conspiracy  
 Against young Tullius,  
 Not being elected by a public voice,  
 (For what they do without all malice moves,  
 But thousands envy where a king once loves)  
 These known examples make us cautious  
 Of future dangers : therefore, once more, lords,  
 Deliver your minds freely ; if you think  
 His youth or judgment, strength or discipline,  
 Debilitate his person, or his birth  
 Make him unfit to undergo a place  
 So eminent and powerful, call him home,  
 Choose a more able, more experienced man,  
 That thirsts for such an honour, and let him  
 Revel at home here with his beauteous bride :  
 Poor soul ! She has the most wrong ; such a war  
 Were far more pleasing to a courtier,  
 One so complete and young as Tullius is,  
 And questionless she'll thank ye. Now, you hear  
 The cause of your assembly, speak your thoughts,  
 And let your hearts and tongues so sympathise  
 That truth may write the comments.

*O. Tull.* Royal sir,  
 I humbly crave I may be pardoned,  
 And licensed to suspend my censure yet,  
 Until that their opinions be all passed :  
 A father's doom will be thought partial,  
 Though the gods record it.

*Titus.* Use your will.

*Marcellan.* I beg like liberty, dread sovereign :  
 We two are equal sharers in his honours ;  
 'Twould ill beseem us to detract from him.

*Titus.* Shall one man speak for all, then ?

*All.* Willingly.

*1 Sen.* And whom your majesty shall please to  
 His voice shall give a general approbation. [call,  
*Titus.* Rufinus, you are he then.

*Ruf.* I, my liege ?

*Titus.* Refusal is in vain, we'll have it so.

*Ruf.* The most unworthiest creature.

*Titus.* Wrong not your worth, we know your  
 merits, sir.

You have done good service in the like affairs,  
 And know best what belongs to't : Therefore

*Ruf.* With pardon then I shall. [speak.  
 Your highness might have made a surer choice  
 Of an approved soldier ; but a man  
 More daring and more valiant, Rome contains not ;  
 For what he wants in years and discipline,  
 His industry and spirit countervails ;  
 He's mild and courteous to the people too,  
 Which is the chain that ties the soldiers' hearts  
 And general's together ; last and chief,  
 He's fortunate, crying as Cæsar did,  
 Who, being tossed in a small boat at sea  
 In a tempestuous storm, cheered up the mariners  
 With, 'On, brave hearts ! Think not of fear, you  
 Me and my fortunes ;' [bear  
 Which shows that resolution is the crown  
 Of all a soldier's honours, and brings in  
 A happy conquest : All this Tullius has.  
 No doubt need to be made then of his worth,  
 But that he still enjoy it.

*All.* 'Tis confirmed.

*Leor.* Stand away,  
 I pr'ythee let me hug him ; by this hand,  
 Leontius, the devil's a novice to him.

*M. Tull.* [Apart.] I am swallowed in this  
 quicksand : all my thoughts  
 Again are quite diverted : He speak thus !

*Titus.* Rufinus, you have given a noble verdict,  
 We are become your debtor.

*Lictor.* [Within.] Back there, back ! keep  
 back.

*Ruf.* What uproar's that, disturbs the senate ?

*Enter a Lictor.*

*Lictor.* A captain post from the camp.

*Titus.* Admit him straight.

*Enter MARCELLUS.*

*Lictor.* Your sword.

*Marc.* No, sir, 'tis kept for a far better use,  
 Than cut his master's throat.

*Ruf.* A guard !

*Marc.* Ten guards ! There are some persons  
 Ten millions cannot shelter. [here

*1 Sen.* What means this ?

*Marc.* King, king ! senate !  
 Oh, that I could speak to you in a tone  
 Would drown the voice of thunder, that, the sound  
 Being echoed by this marble capitol,  
 Each syllable were doubled in your ears,  
 Or that you had more hearts, for those weak  
 strings  
 Will crack at the first entrance. Tullius is—

*All.* What ?

*Marc.* Dead ; (does that damp you ?) he is  
 [murdered.

*All.* Ha ! Murdered !

*M. Tull.* [Apart.] Now it begins to work.

*Marc.* Yes, murdered,  
 Butchered by most inhuman slaughter, treachery.

*O. Tull.* Forgive me, Jupiter ! When he said  
 dead  
 I had almost shed a tear, but murder straight  
 Caused fiery rage to dry it up again.

*Marcellan.* The manner, good Marcellus, or by  
*Marc.* By Titus Martius. [whom ?

*All.* The king !

*Marc.* Yes.

*Titus.* Traitor !

*Marc.* Tyrant !—He, 'twas he, grave lords,  
 That by damn'd feigned articles of peace  
 Conspired our general's ruin. To this truth  
 I here give up my body to more torments  
 Than can by man be thought on, and rejoice  
 To lose my life so meritoriously,  
 As to discover this black treachery.

*Ruf.* [Apart.] Beyond our wishes published.

*Titus.* Villain, thy death shall be more terrible  
 Than ever time could pattern.

*O. Tull.* Except thine. [Rises.

Off with these robes of peace and clemency,  
 And let us hoop our aged limbs with steel,  
 And study tortures for this tyranny.

*Marc.* 'Tis needless, sir ; vengeance is near at  
 Lord Marius and Armanus are conjoined, [hand :  
 And vow for their dear friend's untimely fall  
 To lay his palace level with the dust,  
 And kill the tyrant in the capitol,  
 In the very throne he has polluted so.

*Ruf.* Desperate traitors ! See you now, dread  
 sir,  
 This brood of vipers ! Who can suffer this ?

Leontius and Learchus, let's to arms !  
Give us three leave, my liege : We'll raise such  
To guard Rome and your person, [force  
That Marius and Armanus shall as soon  
Grasp lightning as but touch a hair of you.

*Leon.* [*Aside.*] Excellent villain !—Oh that we were gone once.

*Titus.* Stir not. I do entreat you let 'em come.  
If I be guilty of these practices,  
Let me with shame and horror suffer for't.  
There's the arch-wreath ; thus we dethrone our-  
And, as a private man, will answer here [self,  
'Gainst all objections. Only let me crave  
Sabinus may be sent for with all speed,  
Who, dreadful in his articles, may come :  
The law of arms does warrant him.  
2 *Sen.* See it done.

*Enter a Lictor.*

*Lict.* Reverend lords,  
There is a pilgrim sent from the Sabines,  
That craves admittance into th' capitol.

*Titus.* Bring him with speed to th' senate.

*Ruf.* On my life,  
Some strange confession of this stratagem  
And penitent submission.

*Enter Sabinus in a Palmer's Habit, which he throws off ; with a Postmaster.*

*Sab.* The gods of Rome protect ye.

*All.* Ha, Sabinus !

*Sab.* Yes. Do you wonder ? Though a native  
Caused a transgression to regain our own, [love  
We now are Titus' substitute, and come  
In peace and duty to acknowledge it.  
There is my warrant.

*Titus.* For thy death, damn'd rebel !  
No warrant, nor no articles of mine.  
From whom didst thou receive it ?

*Sab.* What matters that ? Suppose I have forgot,  
There's thy own hand to witness it.

*Titus.* Thou art deceived, Sabinus ; 'twas a trick  
To train thee to the block ; 'tis counterfeit ;  
Therefore, if thou hast hope of any mercy,  
Confess from whom thou hadst it.

*Sab.* I shall disclose your plot if I talk thus.

*Titus.* Slave, what plot ?

*Sab.* Young Tullius' murder ; the caution, sir,  
Of these sworn articles, delivered me  
By this chief Postmaster, whom I have brought  
To testify as much.

*Ruf.* Now we are caught : [Aside.  
Hell and damnation strike him dumb for ever !

*O. Tull.* From whom received you this ?

*Postm.* Oh, pardon—

*Ruf.* Peace, fearful slave !

Thou shalt not have the glory to pronounce it :—  
It was from me.

*Learch.* Let us have part of it ;—'twas from us  
three.

*Ruf.* It is confessed ; give sentence. Ha, ha, ha !  
Could you imagine, dotards, that our spirits  
Could brook an upstart stripling to be borne  
Up to the clouds with pomp, and we rejected,  
But we would check your peacock ?

*Sen.* Lictors, seize him. [They are seized.

*Learch.* Come, come, quick, dispatch :  
Now we have reached the pitch of our desires,  
'Tis hell to hold life longer.

*M. Tull.* [*Throwing off his Disguise.*] In that  
hell

Your conscience shall torment ye. ' On my knee  
I beg that for their sentence.'

*All.* Tullius !

*Learch.* Death now were heaven.

*Ruf.* What incantation's this ?

*O. Tull.* O blessed metamorphosis !

*Marcellan.* This capitol appears a new Elysium.

*M. Tull.* Sacred sir, let me adore your goodness.  
That are in all things so unmatchable.

*Titus.* Thy virtues make it so. Rise, Tullius,  
And be thy own judge of these impious crimes.

*M. Tull.* The doom is passed already. If your  
grace

And favour will permit it, they shall live.

*Titus.* Live, Tullius ?

*M. Tull.* Yes, dear sir ;

Their own bloods cannot wash away their fact,  
'Tis so infectious ; but their conscience may,  
Touched with this mercy, purge the sin away.

*Titus.* Thou still transcend'st in goodness :  
Have thy wish,

Let 'em still live, but never near the court.

*Ruf.* The farther thence, the farther from my  
pain,  
Parched Afric's deserts will more please than  
Rome.

[*Exeunt RUFINUS, LEARCHUS, and LEONTIUS.*

*Enter PHILADELPHA, MARIUS, LELIA, and ARMANUS.*

*Titus.* Welcome to thy husband's noble triumph,  
Where he has vanquished his domestic foes,  
As he has done his country's foes abroad.  
Here, Tullius, take her, worthy of thy virtues,  
And worthy the imperial seat of Rome,  
When thou shalt gain her voices to be king,  
As I foresee thou wilt. Marius, and Lelia too,  
Enjoy the harvest of your ripened loves ;  
I have tried you all, and find you worthy favour ;  
For whilst I reign, on virtue will I smile,  
And honour only with me still prevail. [Exeunt.

# THE TWO NOBLE KINSMEN.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

THESEUS, *Duke of Athens.*  
PALAMON, } *the TWO NOBLE KINSMEN, in Love*  
ARCITE, } *with EMILIA.*  
PERITHOUS, *an Athenian General.*  
ARTESIUS, *a Captain.*  
VALEMIUS, *a Theban Nobleman.*

*Six valiant Knights.*  
Herald.  
Jailor.  
Woor to the Jailor's Daughter.

Brother }  
Friends } *to the Jailor.*  
GERBOLD, *a Schoolmaster.*  
A Taborer, Countrymen, Soldiers, &c.

HIPPOLITA, *Bride to THESEUS.*  
EMILIA, *her Sister.*  
Three Queens.  
Jailor's Daughter, *in Love with PALAMON.*  
Servant to EMILIA.  
Nymphs, Wenches, &c.

SCENE,—ATHENS, AND IN PART OF THE FIRST ACT, THESEUS.

## PROLOGUE.

[*Flourish.*]  
New plays and maidenheads are near a-kin ;  
Much follow'd both, for both much money gi'en,  
If they stand sound, and well : And a good play,  
(Whose modest scenes blush on his marriage-day,  
And shake to lose his honour) is like her  
That after holy tie, and first night's stir,  
Yet still is modesty, and still retains  
More of the maid to sight than husband's pains.  
We pray our play may be so ; for I'm sure  
It has a noble breeder, and a pure,  
A learned, and a poet never went,  
More famous yet 'twixt Po and silver Trent :  
Chaucer (of all admired) the story gives :  
There constant to eternity it lives !  
If we let fall the nobleness of this,  
And the first sound this child hear be a hiss,  
How will it shake the bones of that good man,

And make him cry from under-ground, " Oh, fan  
From me the witless chaff of such a writer  
That blasts my bays, and my famed works makes  
lighter  
Than Robin Hood !" This is the fear we bring ;  
For, to say truth, it were an endless thing,  
And too ambitious, to aspire to him.  
Weak as we are, and almost breathless swim,  
In this deep water, do but you hold out  
Your helping hands, and we will tack about,  
And something do to save us : you shall hear  
Scenes, though below his art, may yet appear  
Worth two hours' travel. To his bones sweet  
sleep !  
Content to you !—If this play do not keep  
A little dull time from us, we perceive  
Our losses fall so thick, we must needs leave.

[*Flourish.*]

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—ATHENS. *Before the Temple.*

*Music. Enter HYMEN with a Torch burning ; a Boy, in a white robe before, singing and strewing flowers ; after HYMEN, a Nymph, encompassed in her tresses, bearing a wheaten Garland ; then THESEUS, between two other Nymphs, with wheaten chaplets on their heads ; then HIPPOLITA, led by PERITHOUS, and another ; holding a Garland over her head, her tresses likewise hanging ; after her EMILIA, holding up her train. ARTESIUS and Attendants.*

#### SONG.

Roses their sharp spines being gone,  
Not royal in their smells alone,  
But in their hue ;

Maiden pinks, of odour faint,  
Daisies smell-less, yet most quaint,  
And sweet thyme true ;

Primroses, first-born child of Ver,  
Merry spring-time's harbinger,  
With her bells dim :  
Oxlips in their cradles growing,  
Marigolds on death-beds blowing,  
Lark-heels trim ;

All, dear Nature's children sweet,  
Lie 'fore bride and bridegroom's feet,  
Blessing their sense ! [*Strewing flowers.*]  
Not an angel of the air,  
Bird melodious or bird fair,  
Be absent hence !

The crow, the slanderous cuckoo, nor  
The boding raven, nor chough hoar,  
Nor chattering pie,  
May on our bridehouse perch or sing,  
Or with them any discord bring,  
But from it fly!

*Enter three Queens, in black, with veils stained, with imperial Crowns. The first Queen falls down at the foot of THEBESUS; the second falls down at the foot of HIPPOLITA; the third before EMILIA.*

1 *Queen.* For pity's sake, and true gentility's,  
Hear and respect me!

2 *Queen.* For your mother's sake,  
And as you wish your womb may thrive with fair  
Hear, and respect me! [ones,

3 *Queen.* Now for the love of him whom Jove  
hath mark'd

The honour of your bed, and for the sake  
Of clear virginity, be advocate  
For us, and our distresses! This good deed  
Shall raze you out o' the book of trespasses  
All you are set down there.

*The.* Sad lady, rise!

*Hip.* Stand up!

*Emi.* No knees to me! What woman I  
May sted, that is distress'd, does bind me to her.

*The.* What's your request? Deliver you for all.

1 *Queen.* We are three Queens, whose sove-  
reigns fell before

The wrath of cruel Creon; who endured  
The beaks of ravens, talons of the kites,  
And pecks of crows, in the foul fields of Thebes.

He will not suffer us to burn their bones,  
To urn their ashes, nor to take th' offence  
Of mortal loathsomeness from the blest eye  
Of holy Phœbus, but infects the winds  
With stench of our slain lords. Oh, pity, duke!  
Thou purger of the earth, draw thy fear'd sword  
That does good turns to th' world; give us the  
bones

Of our dead kings, that we may chapel them!  
And of thy boundless goodness, take some note  
That for our crowned heads we have no roof  
Save this, which is the lion's and the bear's,  
And vault to every thing!

*The.* Pray you kneel not!

I was transported with your speech, and suffer'd  
Your knees to wrong themselves. I have heard  
the fortunes

Of your dead lords, which gives me such lamenting  
As wakes my vengeance and revenge for 'em.

King Capaneus was your lord: The day  
That he should marry you, at such a season  
As now it is with me, I met your groom  
By Mars's altar; you were that time fair,  
Not Juno's mantle fairer than your tresses,  
Nor in more bounty spread her; your wheat  
wreath

Was then nor thresh'd nor blasted; Fortune at you  
Dimpled her cheek with smiles; Hercules our  
kinsman,

(Then weaker than your eyes) laid by his club,  
He tumbled down upon his Nemean hide,  
And swore his sinews thaw'd: Oh, Grief and Time,  
Fearful consumers, you will all devour!

1 *Queen.* Oh, I hope some god,  
Some god hath put his mercy in your manhood,  
Whereto he'll infuse power, and press you forth  
Our undertaker!

*The.* Oh, no knees, none, widow!

Unto the helmeted Bellona use them,  
And pray for me, your soldier.—Troubled I am.

[*Turns away.*]

2 *Queen.* Honour'd Hippolita,  
Most dreaded Amazonian, that hast slain  
The scythe-tusk'd boar; that, with thy arm as  
strong

As it is white, wast near to make the male  
To thy sex captive; but that this thy lord  
(Born to uphold creation in that honour  
First Nature styl'd it in) shrunk thee into  
The bound thou wast o'er-flowing, at once sub-  
Thy force, and thy affection; soldieress, [dying  
That equally canst poise sternness with pity,  
Who now, I know, hast much more power on him  
Than e'er he had on thee; who ow'st his strength  
And his love too, who is a servant to  
The tenor of thy speech; dear glass of ladies,  
Bid him that we, whom flaming War doth scorch,  
Under the shadow of his sword may cool us!  
Require him he advance it o'er our heads;  
Speak't in a woman's key, like such a woman  
As any of us three; weep ere you fail;  
Lend us a knee;

But touch the ground for us no longer time  
Than a dove's motion, when the head's pluck'd off.  
Tell him, if he i' th' blood-sized field lay swoln,  
Shewing the sun his teeth, grinning at the moon,  
What you would do!

*Hip.* Poor lady, say no more!

I had as lief trace this good action with you  
As that whereto I am going, and never yet  
Went I so willing way. My lord is taken  
Heart-deep with your distress: Let him consider;  
I'll speak anon.

3 *Queen.* Oh, my petition was [To EMILIA  
Set down in ice, which by hot grief uncandied  
Melts into drops: so sorrow wanting form  
Is press'd with deeper matter.

*Emi.* Pray stand up;

Your grief is written in your cheek.

3 *Queen.* Oh, woe!

You cannot read it there; there through my tears.  
Like wrinkled pebbles in a glassy stream,  
You may behold 'em! Lady, lady, alack,  
He that will all the treasure know o' th' earth  
Must know the centre too; he that will fish  
For my least minnow, let him lead his line  
To catch one at my heart. Oh, pardon me!  
Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits,  
Makes me a fool.

*Emi.* Pray you say nothing; pray you!  
Who cannot feel nor see the rain, being in't,  
Knows neither wet nor dry. If that you were  
The ground-piece of some painter, I would buy you  
To instruct me 'gainst a capital grief indeed;  
(Such heart-pierced demonstration!) but, alas,  
Being a natural sister of our sex,  
Your sorrow beats so ardently upon me,  
That it shall make a counter-reflect 'gainst  
My brother's heart, and warm it to some pity  
Though it were made of stone: Pray have good  
comfort!

*The.* Forward to th' temple! leave not out a jot  
O' th' sacred ceremony.

1 *Queen.* Oh, this celebration  
Will longer last, and be more costly, than  
Your supplicants' war! Remember that your fame  
Knolls in the ear o' th' world: What you do quickly  
Is not done rashly; your first thought is more

Than others' labour'd meditative ; your premeditating  
More than their actions ; but, (oh, Jove !) your actions,

Soon as they move, as osprays do the fish,  
Subdue before they touch : Think, dear duke,  
What beds our slain kings have ! [think]

2 *Queen*. What griefs our beds,  
That our dear lords have none !

3 *Queen*. None fit for the dead :  
Those that with cords, knives, drams, precipitance,  
Weary of this world's light, have to themselves  
Been Death's most horrid agents, human grace  
Affords them dust and shadow.

1 *Queen*. But our lords  
Lie blist'ring 'fore the visitating sun,  
And were good kings, when living.

*Thes*. It is true ;  
And I will give you comfort,  
To give your dead lords graves :  
The which to do must make some work with Creon.

1 *Queen*. And that work [now] presents itself  
to the doing :

Now 'twill take form ; the heats are gone to-mor-  
Then bootless Toil must recompense itself, [row ;  
With its own sweat ; now he's secure,  
Not dreams we stand before your puissance,  
Rinsing our holy begging in our eyes,  
To make petition clear.

2 *Queen*. Now you may take him,  
Drunk with his victory.

3 *Queen*. And his army full  
Of bread and sloth.

*Thes*. Artesius, that best know'st  
How to draw out, fit to this enterprize  
The prim'st for this proceeding, and the number  
To carry such a business ; forth and levy  
Our worthiest instruments ; whilst we dispatch  
This grand act of our life, this daring deed  
Of fate in wedlock !

1 *Queen*. Dowagers, take hands !  
Let us be widows to our woes ! Delay  
Commends us to a famishing hope.

*All the Queens*. Farewell !

2 *Queen*. We come unseasonably ; but when  
could Grief

Cull forth, as unpan'g'd Judgment can, fit'st time  
For best solicitation.

*Thes*. Why, good ladies,  
This is a service, whereto I am going,  
Greater than any war ; it more imports me  
Than all the actions that I have foregone,  
Or futrely can cope.

1 *Queen*. The more proclaiming  
Our suit shall be neglected : When her arms,  
Able to lock Jove from a synod, shall  
By warranting moon-light corslet thee, oh, when  
Her twinning cherries shall their sweetness fall  
Upon thy tasteful lips, what wilt thou think  
(Of rotten kings, or blubber'd queens ? what care  
For what thou feel'st not, what thou feel'st being  
able

To make Mars spurn his drum ? Oh, if thou couch  
But one night with her, every hour in't will  
Take hostage of thee for a hundred, and  
Thou shalt remember nothing more than what  
That banquet bids thee to.

*Hip*. Though much unlike [Kneels.  
You should be so transported, as much sorry  
I should be such a suitor ; yet I think

Did I not, by th' abstaining of my joy,  
Which breeds a deeper longing, cure the surfeit,  
That craves a present medicine, I should pluck  
All ladies' scandal on me : Therefore sir,  
As I shall here make trial of my prayers,  
Either presuming them to have some force,  
Or sentencing for aye their vigour dumb,  
Prorogue this business we are going about,  
And hang

Your shield afore your heart, about that neck  
Which is my fee, and which I freely lend  
To do these poor queens service !

*All Queens*. Oh, help now ! [To Emilia.  
Our cause cries for your knee.

*Emi*. If you grant not  
My sister her petition, in that force,  
With that celerity and nature, which  
She makes it in, from henceforth I'll not dare  
To ask you anything, nor be so hardy  
Ever to take a husband.

*Thes*. Pray stand up !  
I am entreating of myself to do  
That which you kneel to have me.—Perithous,  
Lead on the bride ! Get you and pray the gods  
For success and return ; omit not anything  
In the pretended celebration. Queens,  
Follow your soldier.—As before, hence you,  
And at the banks of Aulis meet us with  
The forces you can raise, where we shall find  
The moiety of a number, for a business  
More bigger look'd !—[Exit ARTESIUS.] Since  
that our theme is haste,

I stamp this kiss upon thy currant lip ;  
Sweet, keep it as my token ! Set you forward ;  
For I will see you gone.

[Exeunt towards the Temple all but PERITHOUS, THESAIUS,  
and QUEENS.]

Farewell, my beauteous sister ! Perithous,  
Keep the feast full ; bate not an hour on't !

*Per*. Sir,  
I'll follow you at heels : The feast's solemnity  
Shall want till your return.

*Thes*. Cousin, I charge you  
Budge not from Athens ; we shall be delaying  
Ere you can end this feast, of which I pray you  
Make no abatement. Once more, farewell all !

1 *Queen*. Thus dost thou still make good the  
tongue o' th' world.

2 *Queen*. And earn'st a deity equal with Mars.

3 *Queen*. If not above him ; for  
Thou being but mortal, mak'st affections bend  
To godlike honours ; they themselves, some say,  
Groan under such a mastery.

*Thes*. As we are men,  
Thus should we do ; being sensually subdued,  
We lose our humane title. Good cheer, ladies !

Now turn we towards your comforts. [Flourish.  
[Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—THEBES. *The Court of the Palace.*

*Enter PALAMON and ARCITE.*

*Arc*. Dear Palamon, dearer in love than blood,  
And our prime cousin, yet unharden'd in  
The crimes of nature ; let us leave the city  
Thebes, and the temptings in't, before we further  
Sully our gloss of youth !  
And here to keep in abstinence we shame  
As in incontinence : For not to swim

I' th' aid o' th' current, were almost to sink,  
At least to frustrate striving; and to follow  
The common stream, 'twould bring us to an eddy  
Where we should turn or drown; if labour through,  
Our gain but life, and weakness.

*Pal.* Your advice

Is cried up with example: What strange ruins,  
Since first we went to school, may we perceive  
Walking in Thebes! Scars, and bare weeds,  
The gain o' th' martialist, who did propound  
To his bold ends, honour, and golden ingots,  
Which though he won he had not; and now flurried  
By Peace, for whom he fought! Who then shall  
offer

To Mars's so-scorn'd altar? I do bleed  
When such I meet, and wish great Juno would  
Resume her ancient fit of jealousy,  
To get the soldier work, that Peace might purge  
For her repletion, and retain anew  
Her charitable heart, now hard, and harsher  
Than Strife or War could be.

*Ar.* Are you not out?

Meet you no ruin but the soldier in  
The cranks and turns of Thebes? You did begin  
As if you met decays of many kinds:  
Perceive you none that do arouse your pity,  
But th' unconsider'd soldier?

*Pal.* Yes; I pity

Decays where-er I find them; but such most  
That, sweating in an honourable toil,  
Are paid with ice to cool 'em.

*Ar.* 'Tis not this

I did begin to speak of; this is virtue  
Of no respect in Thebes: I speak of Thebes,  
How dangerous, if we will keep our honours,  
It is for our residing; where every evil  
Hath a good colour; where every seeming good's  
A certain evil; where not to be even jump  
As they are, here were to be strangers, and  
Such things to be mere monsters.

*Pal.* 'Tis in our power

(Unless we fear that apes can tutor us) to  
Be masters of our manners: What need I  
Affect another's gait, which is not catching  
Where there is faith? or to be fond upon  
Another's way of speech, when by mine own  
I may be reasonably conceived; saved too,  
Speaking it truly? Why am I bound  
By any generous bond to follow him  
Follows his tailor, haply so long, until  
The follow'd make pursuit? Or let me know,  
Why mine own barber is unblest'd, with him  
My poor chin too, for 'tis not scissar'd just  
To such a favourite's glass? What canon is there  
That does command my rapier from my hip,  
To dangle't in my hand, or to go tip-toe  
Before the street be foul? Either I am  
The fore-horse in the team, or I am none  
That draw i' th' sequent trace! These poor slight  
sores

Need not a plantain; that which rips my bosom,  
Almost to th' heart, 's—

*Ar.* Our uncle Creon.

*Pal.* He,

A most unbounded tyrant! whose successes  
Make Heaven unfair'd, and villainy assured,  
Beyond its power there's nothing; almost puts  
Faith in a fever, and deifies alone  
Volatile chance: who only attributes  
The faculties of other instruments

To his own nerves and act; commands men's  
service,

And what they win in't, boot and glory too;  
That fears not to do harm; good dares not: Let  
The blood of mine that's sibbe to him, be suck'd  
From me with leeches; let them break and fall  
Off me with that corruption!

*Ar.* Clear-spirited cousin,

Let's leave his court, that we may nothing share  
Of his loud infamy! for our milk  
Will relish of the pasture, and we must  
Be vile, or disobedient; not his kinsmen  
In blood, unless in quality.

*Pal.* Nothing truer!

I think the echoes of his shames have deaf'd  
The ears of heavenly justice: Widows' cries  
Descend again into their throats, and have not  
Due audience of the gods.—Valerius!

*Enter VALERIUS.*

*Val.* The king calls for you; yet be leaden-  
footed,

Till his great rage be off him! Phoebus when  
He broke his whipstock, and exclaim'd against  
The horses of the sun, but whispered, to  
The loudness of his fury.

*Pal.* Small winds shake him:

But what's the matter?

*Val.* Theseus (who where he threatens appals)  
hath sent

Deadly defiance to him, and pronounces  
Ruin to Thebes; who is at hand to seal  
The promise of his wrath.

*Ar.* Let him approach!

But that we fear the gods in him, he brings not  
A jot of terror to us: Yet what man  
Thirds his own worth (the case is each of ours)  
When that his action's dregg'd with mind assur'd  
'Tis bad he goes about?

*Pal.* Leave that unreason'd!

Our services stand now for Thebes, not Creon.  
Yet, to be neutral to him, were dishonour,  
Rebellious to oppose; therefore we must  
With him stand to the mercy of our Fate,  
Who hath bounded our last minute.

*Ar.* So we must.

Is't said this war's afoot? or it shall be,  
On fail of some condition?

*Val.* 'Tis in motion;

The intelligence of state came in the instant  
With the defier.

*Pal.* Let's to the king! who, were he  
A quarter carrier of that honour which  
His enemy comes in, the blood we venture  
Should be as for our health; which were not spent,  
Rather laid out for purchase: But, alas,  
Our hands advanced before our hearts, what will  
The fall o' th' stroke do damage?

*Ar.* Let th' event,

That never-erring arbitrator, tell us  
When we know all ourselves; and let us follow  
The becking of our chance! [Exeunt]

SCENE III.—*Before the Gates of Athens.*

*Enter PERITHOUS, HIPPOLITA, and EMILIA.*

*Per.* No further!

*Hip.* Sir, farewell! Repeat my wishes  
To our great lord, of whose success I dare not  
Make any timorous question; yet I wish him

Excess and overflow of power, an't might be,  
To dure ill-dealing Fortune. Speed to him!  
Store never hurts good governors.

*Per.* Though I know

His ocean needs not my poor drops, yet they  
Must yield their tribute there. My precious maid,  
Those best affections that the heavens infuse  
In their best-temper'd pieces, keep enthroned  
In your dear heart!

*Emi.* Thanks, sir! Remember me  
To our all-royal brother! for whose speed  
The great Bellona I'll solicit: And  
Since, in our terrene state, petitions are not  
Without gifts understood, I'll offer to her  
What I shall be advised she likes. Our hearts  
Are in his army, in his tent!

*Hip.* In's bosom!

We have been soldiers, and we cannot weep  
When our friends don their helms, or put to  
sea,

Or tell of babes broach'd on the lance, or women  
That have sod their infants in (and after eat them)  
The brine they wept at killing 'em: Then if  
You stay to see of us such spinsters, we  
Should hold you here for ever.

*Per.* Peace be to you,  
As I pursue this war! which shall be then  
Beyond further requiring. [*Exit.*

*Emi.* How his longing  
Follows his friend! Since his depart, his sports,  
Though craving seriousness and skill, past slightly  
His careless execution, where nor gain  
Made him regard, or loss consider! but  
Playing one business in his hand, another  
Directing in his head, his mind nurse equal  
To these so differing twins! Have you observed  
Since our great lord departed? [him

*Hip.* With much labour,  
And I did love him for't. They two have cabin'd  
In many as dangerous, as poor a corner,  
Peril and want contending, they have skiff'd  
Torrents, whose roaring tyranny and power  
I th' least of these was dreadful; and they have  
Fought out together, where Death's self was  
lodged,

Yet Fate hath brought them off. Their knot of  
love

Tied, weav'd, entangled, with so true, so long,  
And with a finger of so deep a cunning,  
May be out-worn, never undone. I think  
Theseus cannot be umpire to himself,  
Cleaving his conscience into twain, and doing  
Each side like justice, which he loves best.

*Emi.* Doubtless,  
There is a best, and reason has no manners  
To say it is not you. I was acquainted  
Once with a time, when I enjoy'd a playfellow;  
You were at wars when she the grave enrich'd,  
Who made too proud the bed, took leave o' th'  
moon

(Which then look'd pale at parting) when our  
Was each eleven. [count

*Hip.* 'Twas Flavinna.

*Emi.* Yes.

You talk of Perithous' and Theseus' love:  
Their has more ground, is more maturely  
season'd,

More buckled with strong judgment, and their  
The one of th' other may be said to water [needs  
Their intertangled roots of love; but I

And she (I sigh and spoke of) were things innocent,  
Loved for we did, and like the elements  
That know not what nor why, yet do effect!  
Rare issues by their opeance; our souls  
Did so to one another: What she liked,  
Was then of me approved; what not, condemn'd,  
No more arraignment; the flower that I would  
pluck

And put between my breasts, (oh, then but begin-  
ning

To swell about the blossom) she would long  
Till she had such another, and commit it  
To the like innocent cradle, where, phoenix-like,  
They died in perfume; on my head no toy  
But was her pattern; her affections (pretty,  
Though happily her careless wear) I follow'd  
For my most serious decking; had mine ear  
Stol'n some new air, or at adventure humm'd on  
From musical coinage, why, it was a note  
Whereon her spirits would sojourn, (rather dwell  
And sing it in her slumbers: This rehearsal [on]  
(Which every innocent wots well, comes in  
Like old Importment's bastard) has this end,  
That the true love 'tween maid and maid may be  
More than in sex individual.

*Hip.* You are out of breath;  
And this high-speeded pace is but to say,  
That you shall never, like the maid Flavinna,  
Love any that's call'd man.

*Emi.* I am sure I shall not.

*Hip.* Now, alack, weak sister,  
I must no more believe thee in this point  
(Though in't I know thou dost believe thyself)  
Than I will trust a sickly appetite,  
That loaths even as it longs. But sure, my sister,  
If I were ripe for your persuasion, you  
Have said enough to shake me from the arm  
Of the all-noble Theseus; for whose fortunes  
I will now in and kneel, with great assurance,  
That we, more than his Perithous, possess  
The high throne in his heart.

*Emi.* I am not  
Against your faith; yet I continue mine. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*The Field of Battle before THEBES.*

*A Battle struck within; then a Retreat; flourish. Then enter THESEUS (victor): the three Queens meet him, and fall on their Faces before him.*

1 *Queen.* To thee no star be dark!

2 *Queen.* Both Heaven and earth  
'Friend thee for ever!

3 *Queen.* All the good that may  
Be wish'd upon thy head, I cry *amen* to't!

*Thee.* The impartial gods, who from the mounted  
Heavens

View us their mortal herd, behold who err,  
And in their time chastise. Go, and find out  
The bones of your dead lords, and honour them  
With treble ceremony! rather than a gasp  
Should be in their dear rites, we would supply it.  
But those we will depute which shall invest  
You in your dignities, and even each thing  
Our haste does leave imperfect: So adieu,  
And Heaven's good eyes look on you!—What are  
those? [*Exeunt Queens.*

*Herald.* Men of great quality, as may be judged  
By their appointment; some of Thebes have told us  
They are sister's children, nephews to the king.

*Thes.* By the helm of Mars, I saw them in the Like to a pair of lions, smear'd with prey, [war, Make lanes in troops aghast: I fix'd my note Constantly on them; for they were a mark Worth a god's view! What prisoner was't that When I enquired their names? [told me,

*Herald.* With leave, they are called Arcite and Palamon.

*Thes.* 'Tis right; those, those. They are not dead?

*Herald.* Nor in a state of life: Had they been taken

When their last hurts were given, 'twas possible They might have been recover'd; yet they breathe, And have the name of men.

*Thes.* Then like men use 'em! The very lees of such, millions of rates Exceed the wine of others; all our surgeons Convent in their behoof; our richest balms, Rather than niggard, waste! their lives concern us Much more than Thebes is worth. Rather than have 'em

Freed of this plight, and in their morning state, Sound and at liberty, I would 'em dead; But, forty thousand fold, we had rather have 'em Prisoners to us than Death. Bear 'em speedily From our kind air (to them unkind), and minister What man to man may do! for our sake, more! Since I have known frights, fury, friends' behests, Love's provocations, zeal, a mistress' task, Desire of liberty, a fever, madness, 'T hath set a mark which Nature could not reach to Without some imposition, sickness in will,

Or wrestling strength in reason. For our love, And great Apollo's mercy, all our best Their best skill tender!—Lead into the city; Where, having bound things scatter'd, we will post To Athens 'fore our army. [*A flourish. Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—*Another part of the same.*

*Enter the Queens, with the Hearse of their Knight, in a Funeral Solemnity, &c.*

SONG.

Urns and odours bring away,  
Vapors, sighs, darken the day!  
Our dole more deadly looks than dying!  
Balms, and gums, and heavy cheers,  
Sacred vials fill'd with tears,  
And clamours, through the wild air flying:  
Come, all sad and solemn shows,  
That are quick-eyed Pleasure's foes!  
We convent nought else but woe,  
We convent, &c.

3 *Queen.* This funeral path brings to your household graves:  
Joy seize on you again! Peace sleep with him!  
2 *Queen.* And this to yours!  
1 *Queen.* Yours this way! Heavens lend  
A thousand differing ways to one sure end!  
3 *Queen.* This world's a city full of straying streets;  
And death's the market-place, where each one meets. [*Exeunt severally.*

ACT II.

SCENE I.—ATHENS. *A Garden, with a Tower in the Back-ground.*

*Enter Jallor and Wooer.*

*Jallor.* I may depart with little, while I live; something I may cast to you, not much. Alas, the prison I keep, though it be for great ones, yet they seldom come: Before one salmon, you shall take a number o' minnows. I am given out to be better lined, than it can appear to me report is a true speaker. I would I were really, that I am delivered to be! Marry, what I have (be't what it will) I will assure upon my daughter at the day of my death.

*Wooer.* Sir, I demand no more than your own offer; and I'll estate your daughter, in what I have promised.

*Jallor.* Well, we will talk more of this, when the solemnity is past. But have you a full promise of her? When that shall be seen, I tender my consent.

*Enter DAUGHTER, with rushes.*

*Wooer.* I have, sir. Here she comes.

*Jallor.* Your friend and I have chanced to name you here, upon the old business: But no more of that now! So soon as the court-hurry is o'er, we'll have an end of it: I' th' mean time, look tenderly to the two prisoners! I can tell you they are princes.

*Daugh.* These strewings are for their chamber. 'Tis pity they are in prison, and 'twere pity they

should be out. I do think they have patience to make any adversity ashamed: The prison itself is proud of them; and they have all the world in their chamber.

*Jallor.* They are famed to be a pair of absolute men.

*Daugh.* By my troth, I think Fame but stammers 'em; they stand a grief above the reach of report.

*Jallor.* I heard them reported, in the battle to be the only doers.

*Daugh.* Nay, most likely; for they are noble sufferers. I marvel how they would have lock'd, had they been victors, that with such a constant nobility enforce a freedom out of bondage, making Misery their mirth, and Affliction a toy to jest at.

*Jallor.* Do they so?

*Daugh.* It seems to me, they have no more sense of their captivity, than I of ruling Athens: They eat well, look merrily, discourse of many things, but nothing of their own restraint and disasters. Yet, some time, a divided sigh, martyr'd as 'twere in the deliverance, will break from one of them: when th' other presently gives it so sweet a rebuke, that I could wish myself a sigh to be so chid, or at least a sigher to be comforted.

*Wooer.* I never saw 'em.

*Jallor.* The duke himself came privately in the night, and so did they; what the reason of it is, I know not.

*PALAMON and ARCITE appear at the Window of their Prison.*

Look, yonder they are! that is Arcite looks out.

*Daugh.* No, sir, no; that's Palamon: Arcite's the lower of the twain; you may perceive a part of him.

*Sailor.* Go to, leave your pointing! They would not make us their object: Out of their sight!

*Daugh.* It is a holiday to look on them! Lord, the difference of men! [*Exeunt.*]

*Pal.* How do you, noble cousin?

*Arc.* How do you, sir?

*Pal.* Why, strong enough to laugh at Misery, And bear the chance of war yet. We are prisoners I fear for ever, cousin.

*Arc.* I believe it; And to that destiny have patiently Laid up my hour to come.

*Pal.* Oh, cousin Arcite, Where is Thebes now? where is our noble country? Where are our friends, and kindreds? Never more Must we behold those comforts; never see The hardy youths strive for the games of honour, Hung with the painted favours of their ladies, Like tall ships under sail; then start amongst 'em, And, as an east wind, leave 'em all behind us Like lazy clouds, whilst Palamon and Arcite, Even in the wagging of a wanton leg, Out-strip the people's praises, won the garlands, Ere they have time to wish 'em ours. Oh, never Shall we two exercise, like twins of Honour, Our arms again, and feel our fiery horses, Like proud seas under us! our good swords now, (Better the red-eyed god of war ne'er wore) Ravish'd our sides, like age, must run to rust, And deck the temples of those gods that hate us; These hands shall never draw 'em out like light-To blast whole armies, more! [*ning,*]

*Arc.* No, Palamon,

Those hopes are prisoners with us: Here we are, And here the graces of our youths must wither, Like a too-timely spring; here Age must find us, And, which is heaviest, Palamon, unmarried; The sweet embraces of a loving wife Loaden with kisses, arm'd with thousand Cupids, Shall never clasp our necks! no issue know us, No figures of ourselves shall we e'er see, To glad our age, and like young eagles teach 'em Boldly to gaze against bright arms, and say Remember what your fathers were, and conquer! The fair-eyed maids shall weep our banishments, And in their songs curse ever-blinded Fortune, Till she for shame see what a wrong she has done To Youth and Nature: This is all our world; We shall know nothing here, but one another; Hear nothing, but the clock that tells our woes; The vine shall grow, but we shall never see it; Summer shall come, and with her all delights, But dead-cold Winter must inhabit here still!

*Pal.* 'Tis too true, Arcite! To our Theban hounds,

That shook the aged forest with their echoes, No more now must we halloo; no more shake Our pointed javelins, whilst the angry swine Flies like a Parthian quiver from our rages, Struck with our well-steel'd darts! All valiant uses

(The food and nourishment of noble minds) In us two here shall perish; we shall die,

(Which is the curse of Honour!) lastly, Children of Grief and Ignorance.

*Arc.* Yet, cousin,

Even from the bottom of these miseries, From all that Fortune can inflict upon us, I see two comforts rising, two mere blessings, If the gods please to hold here; a brave patience, And the enjoying of our griefs together. Whilst Palamon is with me, let me perish If I think this our prison!

*Pal.* Certainly,

'Tis a main goodness, cousin, that our fortunes Were twined together: 'Tis most true, two souls Put in two noble bodies, let 'em suffer The gall of hazard, so they grow together, Will never sink; they must not; say they could, A willing man dies sleeping, and all's done.

*Arc.* Shall we make worthy uses of this place, That all men hate so much?

*Pal.* How, gentle cousin?

*Arc.* Let's think this prison a holy sanctuary, To keep us from corruption of worse men! We are young, and yet desire the ways of Honour; That, liberty and common conversation, The poison of pure spirits, might, like women, Woo us to wander from. What worthy blessing Can be, but our imaginations May make it ours? and here being thus together, We are an endless mine to one another; We are one another's wife, ever begetting New births of Love; we are father, friends, ac- We are, in one another, families; [quaintance; I am your heir, and you are mine; this place Is our inheritance; no hard oppressor Dare take this from us: Here, with a little pa- tience,

We shall live long, and loving; no surfeits seek us; The hand of War hurts none here, nor the seas Swallow their youth; were we at liberty, A wife might part us lawfully, or business; Quarrels consume us; envy of ill men Crave our acquaintance; I might sicken, cousin, Where you should never know it, and so perish Without your noble hand to close mine eyes, Or prayers to the gods: A thousand chances, Were we from hence, would sever us.

*Pal.* You have made me

(I thank you, cousin Arcite!) almost wanton With my captivity: What a misery It is to live abroad, and every where! 'Tis like a beast methinks! I find the court here, I am sure a more content; and all those pleasures That woo the wills of men to vanity, I see through now; and am sufficient To tell the world, 'tis but a gaudy shadow, That old Time, as he passes by, takes with him. What had we been, old in the court of Creon, Where sin is justice, lust and ignorance The virtues of the great ones? Cousin Arcite, Had not the loving gods found this place for us, We had died as they do, ill old men weeps, And had their epitaphs, the people's curses! Shall I say more?

*Arc.* I would hear you still.

*Pal.* You shall.

Is there record of any two that loved Better than we do, Arcite?

*Arc.* Sure there cannot.

*Pal.* I do not think it possible our friendship Should ever leave us.

*Arc.* Till our deaths it cannot;  
And after death our spirits shall be led  
To those that love eternally. Speak on, sir!

*Enter EMILIA, and her Servant, below.*

*Emi.* This garden has a world of pleasures in't.  
What flower is this?

*Serv.* 'Tis call'd Narcissus, madam.

*Emi.* That was a fair boy certain, but a fool  
To love himself; were there not maids enough?—

*Arc.* Pray, forward!

*Pal.* Yes.—

*Emi.* Or were they all hard-hearted?

*Serv.* They could not be to one so fair.

*Emi.* Thou wouldst not?

*Serv.* I think I should not, madam.

*Emi.* That's a good wench!

But take heed to your kindness though!

*Serv.* Why, madam?

*Emi.* Men are mad things.—

*Arc.* Will you go forward, cousin?—

*Emi.* Canst not thou work such flowers in silk,

*Serv.* Yes. [wench?]

*Emi.* I'll have a gown full of 'em; and of these;

This is a pretty colour: Will't not do

Rarely upon a skirt, wench?

*Serv.* Dainty, madam.—

*Arc.* Cousin! Cousin! How do you, sir? Why,  
Palamon!

*Pal.* Never till now I was in prison, Arcite.

*Arc.* Why, what's the matter, man?

*Pal.* Behold, and wonder!

By Heaven, she is a goddess!

*Arc.* Ha!

*Pal.* Do reverence!

She is a goddess, Arcite!—

*Emi.* Of all flowers,

Methinks a rose is best.

*Serv.* Why, gentle madam?

*Emi.* It is the very emblem of a maid:

For when the west wind courts her gently,

How modestly she blows, and paints the sun

With her chaste blushes! when the north comes  
near her,

Rude and impatient, then, like Chastity,

She locks her beauties in her bud again,

And leaves him to base briars.

*Serv.* Yet, good madam,

Sometimes her modesty will blow so far

She falls for it: A maid,

If she have any honour, would be loth

To take example by her.

*Emi.* Thou art wanton.—

*Arc.* She is wond'rous fair!

*Pal.* She is all the beauty extant!

*Emi.* The sun grows high; let's walk in! Keep  
these flowers;

We'll see how near Art can come near their  
colours.

I am wond'rous merry-hearted; I could laugh now.

*Serv.* I could lie down, I am sure.

*Emi.* And take one with you?

*Serv.* That's as we bargain, madam.

*Emi.* Well, agree then. [Exit with Servant.]

*Pal.* What think you of this beauty?

*Arc.* 'Tis a rare one.

*Pal.* Is't but a rare one?

*Arc.* Yes, a matchless beauty.

*Pal.* Might not a man well lose himself, and  
love her?

*Arc.* I cannot tell what you have done; I have,  
Beshrew mine eyes for't! Now I feel my shackles.

*Pal.* You love her then?

*Arc.* Who would not?

*Pal.* And desire her?

*Arc.* Before my liberty.

*Pal.* I saw her first.

*Arc.* That's nothing.

*Pal.* But it shall be.

*Arc.* I saw her too.

*Pal.* Yes; but you must not love her.

*Arc.* I will not, as you do; to worship her,

As she is heavenly, and a blessed goddess:

I love her as a woman, to enjoy her;

So both may love.

*Pal.* You shall not love at all!

*Arc.* Not love at all? who shall deny me?

*Pal.* I that first saw her; I, that took possession

First with mine eye of all those beauties in her

Revealed to mankind! If thou lovest her,

Or entertain'st a hope to blast my wishes,

Thou art a traitor, Arcite, and a fellow

False as thy title to her: Friendship, blood,

And all the ties between us, I disclaim,

If thou once think upon her!

*Arc.* Yes, I love her;

And if the lives of all my name lay on it,

I must do so; I love her with my soul.

If that will lose you, farewell, Palamon!

I say again, I love; and, in loving her, maintain

I am as worthy and as free a lover,

And have as just a title to her beauty,

As any Palamon, or any living,

That is a man's son.

*Pal.* Have I call'd thee friend?

*Arc.* Yes, and have found me so. Why are you  
moved thus?

Let me deal coldly with you! am not I  
Part of your blood, part of your soul? you have  
told me

That I was Palamon, and you were Arcite.

*Pal.* Yes.

*Arc.* Am not I liable to those affections,

Those joys, griefs, angers, fears, my friend shall

*Pal.* You may be. [suffer?]

*Arc.* Why then would you deal so cunningly,

So strangely, so unlike a Noble Kinsman,

To love alone? Speak truly; do you think me

Unworthy of her sight?

*Pal.* No; but unjust

If thou pursue that sight.

*Arc.* Because another

First sees the enemy, shall I stand still,

And let mine honour down, and never charge?

*Pal.* Yes, if he be but one.

*Arc.* But say that one

Had rather combat me?

*Pal.* Let that one say so,

And use thy freedom! else, if thou pursuest her,

Be as that cursed man that hates his country,

A branded villain!

*Arc.* You are mad.

*Pal.* I must be,

Till thou art worthy, Arcite; it concerns me!

And, in this madness, if I hazard thee

And take thy life, I deal but truly.

*Arc.* Fy, sir!

You play the child extremely: I will love her.

I must, I ought to do so, and I dare;

And all this justly.

*Pal.* Oh, that now, that now  
Thy false self, and thy friend, had but this fortune,  
To be one hour at liberty, and grasp  
Our good swords in our hands, I would quickly  
teach thee

What 'twere to filch affection from another !  
Thou art baser in it than a cutpurse !  
Put but thy head out of this window more,  
And, as I have a soul, I'll nail thy life to't !

*Aro.* Thou dar'st not, fool ; thou can'st not ;  
thou art feeble !

Put my head out ? I'll throw my body out,  
And leap the garden, when I see her next,  
And pitch between her arms, to anger thee.

*Enter Jailor.*

*Pal.* No more ! the Keeper's coming : I shall  
To knock thy brains out with my shackles. [live

*Arc.* Do !

*Jailor.* By your leave, gentlemen !

*Pal.* Now, honest Keeper ?

*Jailor.* Lord Arcite, you must presently to the  
The cause I know not yet. [duke :

*Arc.* I am ready, Keeper.

*Jailor.* Prince Palamon, I must awhile bereave  
Of your fair cousin's company. [you

[*Exit with ARCITE.*

*Pal.* And me too,  
Even when you please, of life !—Why is he sent  
It may be, he shall marry her ; he's goodly. [for ?  
And like enough the duke hath taken notice  
Both of his blood and body. But his falsehood !  
Why should a friend be treacherous ? If that  
Get him a wife so noble, and so fair,  
Let honest men ne'er love again. Once more  
I would but see this fair one.—Blessed garden,  
And fruit and flowers more blessed, that still blos-  
som

As her bright eyes shine on ye ! 'Would I were,  
For all the fortune of my life hereafter,  
Yon little tree, you blooming apricot !  
How I would spread, and fling my wanton arms  
In at her window ! I would bring her fruit  
Fit for the gods to feed on ; youth and pleasure,  
Still as she tasted, should be doubled on her ;  
And, if she be not heavenly, I would make her  
So near the gods in nature, they should fear her ;  
And then I am sure she would love me.

*Enter Jailor.*

How now, Keeper !

Where's Arcite ?

*Jailor.* Banished. Prince Perithous  
Obtain'd his liberty ; but never more,  
Upon his oath and life, must he set foot  
Upon this kingdom.

*Pal.* He's a blessed man !

He shall see Thebes again, and call to arms  
The bold young men, that, when he bids 'em  
charge,

Fall on like fire : Arcite shall have a fortune,  
If he dare make himself a worthy lover,  
Yet in the field to strike a battle for her ;  
And if he lose her then, he's a cold coward :  
How bravely may he bear himself to win her,  
If he be noble Arcite, thousand ways !  
Were I at liberty, I would do things  
Of such a virtuous greatness, that this lady,  
This blushing virgin, should take manhood to her,  
And seek to ravish me.

VOL. II.

*Jailor.* My lord, for you  
I have this charge too.

*Pal.* To discharge my life ?

*Jailor.* No ; but from this place to remove your  
The windows are too open. [lordship ;

*Pal.* Devils take 'em,  
That are so envious to me ! Pr'ythee kill me !

*Jailor.* And hang for't afterward ?

*Pal.* By this good light,  
Had I a sword, I would kill thee.

*Jailor.* Why, my lord ?

*Pal.* Thou bring'st such pelting scurvy news  
continually,

Thou art not worthy life ! I will not go.

*Jailor.* Indeed you must, my lord.

*Pal.* May I see the garden ?

*Jailor.* No.

*Pal.* Then I'm resolved I will not go.

*Jailor.* I must

Constrain you then ; and, for you are dangerous,  
I'll clap more irons on you.

*Pal.* Do, good Keeper !

I'll shake 'em so, you shall not sleep ;

I'll make you a new morris ! Must I go ?

*Jailor.* There is no remedy.

*Pal.* Farewell, kind window !

May rude wind never hurt thee !—Oh, my lady,  
If ever thou hast felt what sorrow was,  
Dream how I suffer !—Come, now bury me.

[*Exeunt.*

## SCENE II.—The Country.

*Enter ARCITE.*

*Aro.* Banish'd the kingdom ? 'Tis a benefit,  
A mercy, I must thank 'em for ; but banish'd  
The free enjoying of that face I die for,  
Oh, 'twas a studied punishment, a death  
Beyond imagination ! Such a vengeance,  
That were I old and wicked, all my sins  
Could never pluck upon me. Palamon,  
Thou hast the start now ; thou shalt stay and see  
Her bright eyes break each morning 'gainst thy  
window,

And let in life into thee ; thou shalt feed  
Upon the sweetness of a noble beauty,  
That nature ne'er exceeded, nor ne'er shall ;  
Good gods, what happiness has Palamon !  
Twenty to one, he'll come to speak to her ;  
And, if she be as gentle as she's fair,  
I know she's his ; he has a tongue will tame  
Tempests, and make the wild rocks wanton. Come  
what can come,

The worst is death ; I will not leave the kingdom :  
I know mine own is but a heap of ruins,  
And no redress there ; if I go, he has her.  
I am resolv'd : Another shape shall make me,  
Or end my fortunes ; either way, I am happy :  
I'll see her, and be near her, or no more.

*Enter four Country People ; one with a Garland before  
them.*

1 *Coun.* My masters, I'll be there, that's cer-

2 *Coun.* And I'll be there. [tain.

3 *Coun.* And I.

4 *Coun.* Why then, have with ye, boys ! 'tis  
but a chiding ;

Let the plough play to-day ! I'll tickle't out  
Of the jades' tails to-morrow !

1 *Coun.* I am sure

o o

To have my wife as jealous as a turkey :

But that's all one ; I'll go through, let her mumble.

2 *Coun.* Clap her aboard to-morrow night, and  
And all's made up again. [stow her,

3 *Coun.* Ay, do but put

A feskue in her fist, and you shall see her

Take a new lesson out, and be a good wench.

Do we all hold, against the maying !

4 *Coun.* Hold ? what

Should ail us ?

3 *Coun.* Arcas will be there.

2 *Coun.* And Sennois,

And Rycas ; and three better lads ne'er danced  
Under green tree ; and ye know what wenches.  
Ha !

But will the dainty *domine*, the schoolmaster,  
Keep touch, do you think ! for he does all, ye  
know.

3 *Coun.* He'll eat a hornbook, ere he fail ! Go  
The matter is too far driven between [to !  
Him and the tanner's daughter, to let slip now ;  
And she must see the duke, and she must dance

4 *Coun.* Shall we be lusty ? [too.

2 *Coun.* All the boys in Athens

Blow wind i' th' breech on us ! and here I'll be,  
And there I'll be, for our town, and here again,  
And there again ! Ha, boys, heigh for the weavers !

1 *Coun.* This must be done i' th' woods.

4 *Coun.* Oh, pardon me !

2 *Coun.* By any means ; our thing of learning  
Where he himself will edify the duke [says so ;  
Most pariously in our behalfs : He's excellent i'  
th' woods ;

Bring him to th' plains, his learning makes no cry.

3 *Coun.* We'll see the sports ; then every man  
to's tackle !

And, sweet companions, let's rehearse by any  
Before the ladies see us, and do sweetly, [means,  
And God knows what may come on't !

4 *Coun.* Content : The sports

Once ended, we'll perform. Away, boys, and hold !

*Arc.* By your leaves, honest friends ! Pray you  
whither go you ?

4 *Coun.* Whither ? why, what a question's that !

*Arc.* Yes, 'tis a question, to me that knows not.

3 *Coun.* To the games, my friend.

2 *Coun.* Where were you bred, you know it not ?

*Arc.* Not far, sir.

Are there such games to-day ?

1 *Coun.* Yes, marry are there ;

And such as you ne'er saw : The duke himself  
Will be in person there.

*Arc.* What pastimes are they ?

2 *Coun.* Wrestling and running.—'Tis a pretty

3 *Coun.* Thou wilt not go along ? [fellow.

*Arc.* Not yet, sir.

4 *Coun.* Well, sir,

Take your own time.—Come, boys !

1 *Coun.* My mind misgives me

This fellow has a vengeance trick o' th' hip ;

Mark, how his body's made for't !

2 *Coun.* I'll be hang'd though,

If he dare venture ; hang him, plumb-porridge !

He wrestle ? He roast eggs. Come, let's be gone,  
lads ! [Exeunt Countrymen.

*Arc.* This is an offer'd opportunity  
I durst not wish for. Well I could have wrestled,  
The best men call'd it excellent ; and run,  
Swifter the wind upon a field of corn  
(Curling the wealthy ears) ne'er flew ! I'll venture,

And in some poor disguise be there : Who knows  
Whether my brows may not be girt with garlands,  
And happiness prefer me to a place,  
Where I may ever dwell in sight of her ? [Exit

SCENE III.—ATHENS. *A Room in the Prison.*

*Enter Jailor's Daughter.*

*Daugh.* Why should I love this gentleman ?  
He never will affect me : I am base, ['Tis odds  
My father the mean keeper of his prison,  
And he a prince : To marry him is hopeless,  
To be his whore is witless. Out upon't !  
What pushes are we wenches driven to,  
When fifteen once has found us ! First, I saw him ;  
I, seeing, thought he was a goodly man ;  
He has as much to please a woman in him,  
(If he please to bestow it so) as ever  
These eyes yet look'd on : Next, I pitied him ;  
And so would any young wench o' my conscience,  
That ever dream'd, or vow'd her maidenhead  
To a young handsome man : Then, I loved him,  
Extremely loved him, infinitely loved him,  
And yet he had a cousin, fair as he too ;  
But in my heart was Palamon, and there,  
Lord, what a coil he keeps ! To hear him  
Sing in an evening, what a heaven it is !  
And yet his songs are sad ones. Fairer spoken  
Was never gentleman : When I come in  
To bring him water in a morning, first  
He bows his noble body, then salutes me thus :  
" Fair, gentle maid, good morrow ! may thy good-  
ness

Get thee a happy husband !" Once he kiss'd me ;  
I loved my lips the better ten days after :  
'Would he would do so every day ! He grieves  
And me as much to see his misery : [mch,  
What should I do, to make him know I love him ?  
For I would fain enjoy him : Say I ventured  
To set him free ? what says the law then ?  
Thus much for law, or kindred ! I will do it,  
And this night, or to-morrow : He shall love me !  
[Exit

SCENE IV.—*An open Place in the City. A  
short flourish of cornets, and shouts within.*

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, PEARSBOUR, EMILIA, ARCITA  
disguised, with a garland, and Countrymen.*

*Thes.* You have done worthily ; I have not seen,  
Since Hercules, a man of tougher sinews :  
Whate'er you are, you run the best, and wrestle,  
That these times can allow.

*Arc.* I am proud to please you.

*Thes.* What country bred you ?

*Arc.* This ; but far off, prince.

*Thes.* Are you a gentleman ?

*Arc.* My father said so ;

And to those gentle uses gave me life.

*Thes.* Are you his heir ?

*Arc.* His youngest, sir.

*Thes.* Your father

Sure is a happy sire then. What proves you ?

*Arc.* A little of all noble qualities :

I could have kept a hawk, and well have hollo'd  
To a deep cry of dogs ; I dare not praise  
My feat in horsemanship, yet they that knew me  
Would say it was my best piece ; last, and greatest,  
I would be thought a soldier.

*Thes.* You are perfect.

*Per.* Upon my soul a proper man!

*Emi.* He is so.

*Per.* How do you like him, lady?

*Hip.* I admire him:

I have not seen so young a man so noble,  
(If he say true) of his sort.

*Emi.* Believe,

His mother was a wond'rous handsome woman!  
His face, methinks, goes that way.

*Hip.* But his body,

And fiery mind, illustrate a brave father.

*Per.* Mark how his virtue, like a hidden sun,  
Breaks through his baser garments.

*Hip.* He's well got, sure.

*Thes.* What made you seek this place, sir?

*Arc.* Noble Theseus,

To purchase name, and do my ablest service  
To such a well-found wonder as thy worth;  
For only in thy court, of all the world,  
Dwells fair-eyed Honour.

*Per.* All his words are worthy.

*Thes.* Sir, we are much indebted to your travel,  
Nor shall you lose your wishes.—Perithous,  
Dispose of this fair gentleman.

*Per.* Thanks, Theseus!—

Whate'er you are, you are mine; and I shall give  
To a most noble service, to this lady, [You  
This bright young virgin: Pray observe her good-  
ness.

You have honour'd her fair birth-day with your  
virtues,

And, as your due, you are hers; kiss her fair hand,  
sir.

*Arc.* Sir, you're a noble giver.—Dearest beauty,  
Thus let me seal my vow'd faith! when your  
servant

(Your most unworthy creature) but offends you,  
Command him die, he shall.

*Emi.* That were too cruel.

If you deserve well, sir, I shall soon see't:

You are mine; and somewhat better than your  
I'll use you. [rank

*Per.* I'll see you furnish'd: And because you  
You are a horseman, I must needs entreat you [say  
This afternoon to ride; but 'tis a rough one.

*Arc.* I like him better, prince; I shall not then  
freeze in my saddle.

*Thes.* Sweet, you must be ready:

And you, Emilia; and you, friend; and all;  
To-morrow, by the sun, to do observance  
To flowery May, in Dian's wood.—Wait well, sir,  
Upon your mistress!—Emily, I hope  
He shall not go a-foot.

*Emi.* That were a shame, sir,

While I have horses.—Take your choice; and what  
You want at any time, let me but know it:  
If you serve faithfully, I dare assure you  
You'll find a loving mistress.

*Arc.* If I do not,  
Let me find that my father ever hated,  
Disgrace and blows!

*Thes.* Go, lead the way; you have won it;  
It shall be so: You shall receive all dues  
Fit for the honour you have won; 'twere wrong  
else.—

Sister, beahrew my heart, you have a servant,  
That, if I were a woman, would be master;  
But you are wise. [Flourish.

*Emi.* I hope too wise for that, sir. [Exit.

## SCENE V.—A Room in the Prison.

Enter Jailor's Daughter.

*Daugh.* Let all the dukes, and all the devils  
roar,

He is at liberty! I have ventured for him;  
And out I have brought him to a little wood  
A mile hence. I have sent him where a cedar,  
Higher than all the rest, spreads like a plane  
Fast by a brook; and there he shall keep close,  
Till I provide him files and food; for yet  
His iron bracelets are not off. Oh, Love,  
What a stout-hearted child thou art! My father  
Durst better have endured cold iron, than done it.  
I love him beyond love, and beyond reason,  
Or wit, or safety! I have made him know it:  
I care not; I am desperate! If the law  
Find me, and then condemn me for't, some  
wenches,

Some honest-hearted maids, will sing my dirge,  
And tell to memory my death was noble,  
Dying almost a martyr. That way he takes,  
I purpose is my way too: Sure he cannot  
Be so unmanly as to leave me here!  
If he do, maids will not so easily  
Trust men again: And yet he has not thank'd me  
For what I have done; no, not so much as kiss'd  
me;

And that, methinks, is not so well; nor scarcely  
Could I persuade him to become a freeman,  
He made such scruples of the wrong he did  
To me and to my father. Yet, I hope,  
When he considers more, this love of mine  
Will take more root within him: Let him do  
What he will with me, so he use me kindly!  
For use me so he shall, or I'll proclaim him,  
And to his face, no man. I'll presently  
Provide him necessaries, and pack my clothes up,  
And where there is a path of ground I'll venture,  
So he be with me! by him, like a shadow,  
I'll ever dwell. Within this hour the whoobub  
Will be all o'er the prison: I am then  
Kissing the man they look for. Farewell, father!  
Get many more such prisoners, and such daughters,  
And shortly you may keep yourself. Now to him!  
[Exit.

## ACT III.

SCENE I.—A Forest. Cornets in sundry places.  
Noise and hallooing as people a-Maying.

Enter ARCTS.

*Arc.* The duke has lost Hippolita; each took  
A several land. This is a solemn rite

They owe bloom'd May, and the Athenians pay it  
To the heart of ceremony. Oh, queen Emilia,  
Fresher than May, sweeter  
Than her gold buttons on the boughs, or all  
Th' enamell'd knacks o' th' mead or garden! yea,  
We challenge too the bank of any nymph,

That makes the stream seem flowers; thou, oh, jewel  
O' th' wood, o' th' world, hast likewise blest a place  
With thy sole presence.—In thy rumination  
That I, poor man, might eftsongs come between,  
And chop on some cold thought!—Thrice blessed  
chance,

To drop on such a mistress! Expectation  
Most guiltless of it! Tell me, oh, lady Fortune,  
(Next after Emily my sovereign) how far  
I may be proud. She takes strong note of me,  
Hath made me near her, and this beauteous morn  
(The prim'st of all the year) presents me with  
A brace of horses: two such steeds might well  
Be by a pair of kings back'd, in a field  
That their crowns' titles tried. Alas, alas,  
Poor cousin Palamon, poor prisoner! thou  
So little dream'st upon my fortune, that  
Thou think'st thyself the happier thing, to be  
So near Emilia; me thou deem'st at Thebes,  
And therein wretched, although free: But if  
Thou knew'st my mistress breathed on me, and  
that

I ear'd her language, lived in her eye, oh, coz,  
What passion would enclose thee!

*Enter PALAMON out of a Bush, with his Shackles; bends  
his Fist at Arcite.*

*Pal.* Traitor kinsman!  
Thou shouldst perceive my passion, if these signs  
Of prisonment were off me, and this hand  
But owner of a sword. By all oaths in one,  
I, and the justice of my love, would make thee  
A confess'd traitor! Oh, thou most perfidious  
That ever gently look'd! the void'st of honour  
That e'er bore gentle token! falsest cousin  
That ever blood made kin! call'st thou her thine?  
I'll prove it in my shackles, with these hands  
Void of appointment, that thou liest, and art  
A very thief in love, a chaffy lord,  
Nor worth the name of villain! Had I a sword  
And these house-clogs away—

*Arc.* Dear cousin Palamon—

*Pal.* Cozener Arcite, give me language such  
As thou hast shew'd me feat!

*Arc.* Not finding, in  
The circuit of my breast, any gross stuff  
To form me like your blazon, holds me to  
This gentleness of answer: 'Tis your passion  
That thus mistakes; the which to you being  
enemy,

Cannot to me be kind. Honour and honesty  
I cherish, and depend on, howso'er  
You skip them in me; and with them, fair coz,  
I'll maintain my proceedings. Pray be pleased  
To shew in generous terms your griefs, since that  
Your question's with your equal, who professes  
To clear his own way, with the mind and sword  
Of a true gentleman.

*Pal.* That thou durst, Arcite!

*Arc.* My coz, my coz, you have been well ad-  
vertised  
How much I dare: You have seen me use my  
sword

Against the advice of fear. Sure, of another  
You would not hear me doubted, but your silence  
Should break out, though i' th' sanctuary.

*Pal.* Sir,

I have seen you move in such a place, which well  
Might justify your manhood; you were call'd

A good knight and a bold: But the whole week's  
not fair,

If any day it rain! Their valiant temper  
Men lose, when they incline to treachery;  
And then they fight like compell'd bears, would fly  
Were they not tied.

*Arc.* Kinsman, you might as well  
Speak this, and act it in your glass, as to  
His ear, which now disdains you!

*Pal.* Come up to me!

Quit me of these cold gyves, give me a sword  
(Though it be rusty), and the charity  
Of one meal lend me; come before me then,  
A good sword in thy hand, and do but say  
That Emily is thine, I will forgive  
The trespass thou hast done me, yea my life,  
If then thou carry't; and brave souls in shades,  
That have died manly, which will seek of me  
Some news from earth, they shall get none but  
That thou art brave and noble. [this]

*Arc.* Be content;  
Again betake you to your hawthorn-house!  
With counsel of the night, I will be here  
With wholesome viands; these impediments  
Will I file off; you shall have garments, and  
Perfumes to kill the smell o' th' prison; after,  
When you shall stretch yourself, and say but,  
"Arcite,

I am in plight!" there shall be at your choice  
Both sword and armour.

*Pal.* Oh, you heavens, dare any  
So noble bear a guilty business? None  
But only Arcite; therefore none but Arcite  
In this kind is so bold.

*Arc.* Sweet Palamon—

*Pal.* I do embrace you and your offer: For  
Your offer do't I only, sir; your person,  
Without hypocrisy, I may not wish  
More than my sword's edge on't.

[Wind horns of cornet.]

*Arc.* You hear the horns:  
Enter your muse, lest this match between us  
Be cross ere met. Give me your hand; farewell!  
I'll bring you every needful thing: I pray you  
Take comfort, and be strong!

*Pal.* Pray hold your promise,  
And do the deed with a bent brow! most certain  
You love me not; be rough with me, and pour  
This oil out of your language: By this sir,  
I could for each word give a cuff! my stomach  
Not reconciled by reason.

*Arc.* Plainly spoken!

Yet pardon me hard language? When I spur  
My horse, I chide him not; content and anger  
In me have but one face. [Wind horns.]

Hark, sir! they call  
The scatter'd to the banquet: You must guess  
I have an office there.

*Pal.* Sir, your attendance  
Cannot please Heaven; and I know your office  
Unjustly is achieved.

*Arc.* I have a good title,  
I am persuaded: This question, sick between us  
By bleeding must be cured. I am a suitor  
That to your sword you will bequeath this plea,  
And talk of it no more.

*Pal.* But this one word:  
You're going now to gaze upon my mistress;  
For, note you, mine she is—

*Arc.* Nay, then—

*Pal.* Nay, pray you!—  
You talk of feeding me to breed me strength :  
You are going now to look upon a sun  
That strengthens what it looks on : there you have  
A vantage o'er me ; but enjoy it till  
I may enforce my remedy. Farewell ! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Another Part of the Forest.*

*Enter Jailor's Daughter.*

*Daugh.* He has mistook the brake I meant ; is gone

After his fancy. 'Tis now well-nigh morning ;  
No matter ! 'would it were perpetual night,  
And Darkness lord o' th' world!—Hark ! 'tis a  
wolf :

In me hath Grief slain Fear, and, but for one thing,  
I care for nothing, and that's Palamon :  
I reckon not if the wolves would jaw me, so  
He had this file. What if I halloo'd for him ?  
I cannot halloo : if I whoop'd, what then ?  
If he not answer'd, I should call a wolf,  
And do him but that service. I have heard  
Strange howls this live-long night ; why may't not  
be

They have made prey of him ? He has no weapons ;  
He cannot run ; the jingling of his gyves  
Might call fell things to listen, who have in them  
A sense to know a man unarm'd, and can  
Smell where resistance is. I'll set it down  
He's torn to pieces ; they howl'd many together,  
And then they fed on him : So much for that !  
Be bold to ring the bell ; how stand I then ?  
All's charred when he is gone. No, no, I lie ;  
My father's to be hang'd for his escape ;  
Myself to beg, if I prized life so much  
As to deny my act ; but that I would not,  
Should I try death by dozens?—I am moped :  
Food took I none these two days ; sipt some  
water ;

I have not closed mine eyes, save when my lids  
Scowered off their brine. Alas, dissolve, my life !  
Let not my sense unsettle, lest I should drown,  
Or stab, or hang myself !  
Oh, state of Nature, fail together in me,  
Since thy best props are warp'd!—So ! which way  
now ?

The best way is, the next way to a grave :  
Each errant step besides is torment. Lo,  
The moon is down, the crickets chirp, the screech-  
Calls in the dawn ! all offices are done, [*owl*]  
Save what I fail in : But the point is this,  
An end, and that is all ! [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*The same Part of the Forest as before.*

*Enter ARCITE, with Meat, Wine, and Files.*

*Arc.* I should be near the place.—Ho, cousin  
Palamon !

*Enter PALAMON.*

*Pal.* Arcite ?

*Arc.* The same : I have brought you food and  
files.

Come forth, and fear not ; here's no Theseus.

*Pal.* Nor none so honest, Arcite.

*Arc.* That's no matter ;

We'll argue that hereafter. Come, take courage ;  
You shall not die thus beastly ; here, sir ; drink !  
I know you are faint ; then I'll talk further with  
you.

*Pal.* Arcite, thou might'st now poison me.

*Arc.* I might ;

But I must fear you first. Sit down ; and, good  
No more of these vain parlies ! let us not, [*now,*]  
Having our ancient reputation with us,  
Make talk for fools and cowards. To your health !  
[*Drinks.*]

*Pal.* Do—

*Arc.* Pray sit down then ; and let me entreat you,  
By all the honesty and honour in you,  
No mention of this woman ! 'twill disturb us ;  
We shall have time enough.

*Pal.* Well, sir, I'll pledge you.

*Arc.* Drink a good hearty draught ! it breeds  
good blood, man.

Do not you feel it thaw you ?

*Pal.* Stay ; I'll tell you  
After a draught or two more.

*Arc.* Spare it not ;  
The duke has more, coz. Eat now !

*Pal.* Yes.

*Arc.* I am glad  
You have so good a stomach.

*Pal.* I am gladder  
I have so good meat to't.

*Arc.* Is't not mad lodging  
Here in the wild woods, cousin ?

*Pal.* Yes, for them  
That have wild consciences.

*Arc.* How tastes your victuals ?  
Your hunger needs no sauce, I see.

*Pal.* Not much :  
But if it did, yours is too tart, sweet cousin.  
What is this ?

*Arc.* Venison.

*Pal.* 'Tis a lusty meat.  
Give me more wine : Here, Arcite, to the wenches  
We have known in our days ! The lord-steward's  
daughter :

Do you remember her ?

*Arc.* After you, coz.

*Pal.* She loved a black-hair'd man.

*Arc.* She did so : Well, sir ?

*Pal.* And I have heard some call him Arcite ;

*Arc.* Out with it, 'faith ! [*and—*]

*Pal.* She met him in an arbour :

What did she there, coz ? Play o' th' virginals ?

*Arc.* Something she did, sir.

*Pal.* Made her groan a month for't ;

Or two, or three, or ten.

*Arc.* The marshal's sister

Had her share too, as I remember, cousin,  
Else there be tales abroad : You'll pledge her ?

*Pal.* Yes.

*Arc.* A pretty brown wench 'tis ! There was a  
time

When young men went a hunting, and a wood,  
And a broad beech ; and thereby hangs a tale.—  
Heigh-ho !

*Pal.* For Emily, upon my life !—Fool,  
Away with this strain'd mirth ! I say again,  
That sigh was breathed for Emily : Base cousin,  
Darest thou break first ?

*Arc.* You are wide.

*Pal.* By Heaven and earth,  
There's nothing in thee honest !

*Arc.* Then I'll leave you :  
You are a beast now.

*Pal.* As thou mak'st me, traitor.

*Arc.* There's all things needful ; files, and shirts,  
and perfumes :

I'll come again some two hours hence, and bring  
That that shall quiet all.

*Pal.* A sword and armour ?

*Arc.* Fear me not. You are now too foul : Fare-  
well !

Get off your trinkets ; you shall want nought.

*Pal.* Sirrah—

*Arc.* I'll hear no more ! [Exit.

*Pal.* If he keep touch, he dies for't ! [Exit.

SCENE IV.—*Another Part of the Forest.*

*Enter Jailor's Daughter.*

*Daugh.* I am very cold ; and all the stars are  
out too,

The little stars, and all that look like aglets :  
The sun has seen my folly. Palamon !

Alas, no ; he's in Heaven !—Where am I now ?—  
Yonder's the sea, and there's a ship ; how't tum-  
bles !

And there's a rock lies watching under water ;  
Now, now, it beats upon it ! now, now, now !  
There's a leak sprung, a sound one ; how they cry !  
Spoon her before the wind, you'll lose all else !  
Up with a course or two, and tack about, boys !  
Good night, good night ; you are gone !—I am  
very hungry :

'Would I could find a fine frog ! he would tell me  
News from all parts o' th' world ; then would I  
A carrack of a cockle-shell, and sail [make  
By East and North-east to the king of Pigmies,  
For he tells fortunes rarely. Now, my father,  
Twenty to one, is truss'd up in a trice  
To-morrow morning ; I'll say never a word. [Sings.

SONG.

For I'll out my green coat, a foot above my knee ;  
And I'll clip my yellow locks, an inch below mine e'e.  
Hey, nonny, nonny, nonny.  
He's buy me a white out, forth for to ride,  
And I'll go seek him through the world that is so wide.  
Hey, nonny, nonny, nonny.

Oh, for a prick now like a nightingale,  
To put my breast against ! I shall sleep like a top  
else. [Exit.

SCENE V.—*A Grove in the Forest.*

*Enter GARNOLD, four Countrymen, as Morris-dancers,  
(and the Bavian), Arc WENOCH, with a Taborer.*

*Ger.* Fy, fy !

What tediousity and disensanity  
Is here among ye ! Have my rudiments  
Been labour'd so long with ye, milk'd unto ye,  
And, by a figure, even the very plumb-broth  
And marrow of my understanding laid upon ye,  
And do ye still cry *where*, and *how*, and *wherafore* ?  
Ye most coarse freeze capacities, ye jave judg-  
Have I said *thus let be*, and *there let be*, [ments,  
And *then let be*, and no man understand me ?  
*Proh Deum, medius fidius* ; ye are all dunces !  
For why ? here stand I ; here the duke comes ;  
there are you,

Close in the thicket ; the duke appears, I meet him,  
And unto him I utter learned things,  
And many figures ; he hears, and nods, and hums,  
And then cries *rare* ! and I go forward ; at length  
I fling my cap up ; mark there ! then do you,  
As once did Meleager and the boar,  
Break comely out before him, like true lovers,  
Cast yourselves in a body decently,  
And sweetly, by a figure, trace, and turn, boys !

1 *Coun.* And sweetly we will do it, master Ger-  
rold.

2 *Coun.* Draw up the company. Where's the  
3 *Coun.* Why, Timothy ! [taborer ?

*Tab.* Here, my mad boys : have at ye !

*Ger.* But I say where's their women ?

4 *Coun.* Here's Frix and Maudlin.

2 *Coun.* And little Luce, with the white legs,  
and bouncing Barbbery.

1 *Coun.* And freckled Nell, that never fail'd her  
master.

*Ger.* Where be your ribbands, maids ? Swin  
with your bodies,

And carry it sweetly, and deliverly ;  
And now and then a favour, and a friak !

*Nell.* Let us alone, sir.

*Ger.* Where's the rest o' th' music ?

3 *Coun.* Dispersed as you commanded.

*Ger.* Couple then,

And see what's wanting. Where's the Bavian ?

My friend, carry your tail without offence

Or scandal to the ladies ; and be sure

You tumble with audacity, and manhood !

And when you bark, do it with judgment.

*Bav.* Yes, sir.

*Ger.* *Quo usque tandem* ? Here's a woman  
wanting.

4 *Coun.* We may go whistle ; all the fat's i' th'

*Ger.* We have, [fire !

As learned authors utter, wash'd a tile ;

We have been *fatusus*, and labour'd vainly.

2 *Coun.* This is that scornful piece, that scarry  
hilding,

That gave her promise faithfully she would be here.

Cicely, the sempster's daughter !

The next gloves that I give her shall be dog's skin !

Nay, an she fail me once—You can tell, Arcas.

She swore, by wine and bread, she would not break

*Ger.* An eel and woman,

A learned poet says, unless by th' tail

And with thy teeth thou hold, will either fail.

In manners this was false position.

1 *Coun.* A fire ill take her ! does she finch now ?

3 *Coun.* What

Shall we determine, sir ?

*Ger.* Nothing ;

Our business is become a nullity,

Yea, and a woful, and a piteous nullity !

4 *Coun.* Now, when the credit of our town is by  
on it,

Now to be frampal, now to piss o' th' nettle !

Go thy ways ; I'll remember thee, I'll fit thee !

*Enter Jailor's Daughter, and sings.*

*Daugh.* The George alow came from the South.

From the coast of Barbary-a,

And there he met with brave gallants of war,

By one, by two, by three-a.

Well hail'd, well hail'd, you jolly gallants !

And whither now are you bound-a ?

Oh, let me have your company

Till [we] come to the Sound-a !

There was three fools, fell out about an howlet :

The one said 'twas an owl,

The other he said nay,

The third he said it was a hawk,

And her bells were cut away.

3 *Coun.* There's a dainty mad woman, master,  
As mad as a March hare ! [comes i' th' nick ;

If we can get her dance, we are made again :

I warrant her, she'll do the rarest gambols !

1 *Coun.* A mad woman ? We are made, boys !

*Ger.* And are you mad, good woman ?

*Daugh.* I would be sorry else ;

Give me your hand.

*Ger.* Why ?

*Daugh.* I can tell your fortune :

You are a fool. Tell ten : I have pos'd him. Buz !

Friend, you must eat no white bread ; if you do,

Your teeth will bleed extremely. Shall we dance,

I know you ; you're a tinker : Sirrah tinker, [ho ?

Stop no more holes, but what you should !

*Ger.* *Dii boni !*

A tinker, damsel ?

*Daugh.* Or a conjurer :

Raise me a devil now, and let him play

*Qui passa*, o' th' bells and bones !

*Ger.* Go, take her,

And fluently persuade her to a peace :

*Atque opus exegi, quod neo Jovis ira, neo ignis—*

Strike up, and lead her in !

2 *Coun.* Come, lass, let's trip it !

*Daugh.* I'll lead. [Wind horns.

3 *Coun.* Do, do.

*Ger.* Persuasively, and cunningly ; away, boys !

[*Exeunt all but GEROLD.*

I hear the horns : Give me some meditation,

And mark your cue. Pallas inspire me !

*Enter THESEUS, PERITHOUS, HIPPOLITA, EMILIA, ARSITE,*  
*and Train.*

*Thes.* This way the stag took.

*Ger.* Stay, and edify !

*Thes.* What have we here ?

*Per.* Some country-sport, upon my life, sir.

*Thes.* Well, sir, go forward ; we will edify.

Ladies, sit down ! we'll stay it.

*Ger.* Thou doughty duke, all hail ! all hail, sweet

*Thes.* This is a cold beginning. [ladies !

*Ger.* If you but favour, our country pastime

We are a few of those collected here, [made is.

That ruder tongues distinguish villager ;

And to say verity, and not to fable,

We are a merry rout, or else a rabble,

Or company, or, by a figure, chorus,

That 'fore thy dignity will dance a morris.

And I that am the rectifier of all,

By title Pedagogus, that let fall

The birch upon the breeches of the small ones,

And humble with a ferula the tall ones,

Do here present this machine, or this frame :

And, dainty duke, whose doughty dismal fame

From Dis to Dedalus, from post to pillar,

Is blown abroad ; help me, thy poor well-willer,

And, with thy twinkling eyes, look right and

straight

Upon this mighty *morr*—of mickle weight ;

*Is*—now comes in, which being glew'd together

Makes *morris*, and the cause that we came hither.

The body of our sport, of no small study,

I first appear, though rude, and raw, and muddy,

To speak before thy noble grace, this tenor :

At whose great feet I offer up my penner.

The next, the lord of May, and lady bright,

The chambermaid, and servingman by night,

That seek out silent hanging : Then mine host,

And his fat spouse, that welcome to their cost

The galled traveller, and with a beck'ning

Informs the tapster to inflame the reck'ning :

Then the beast-eating clown, and next the fool,

The Bavian, with long tail, and eke long tool ;

*Cum multis aliis*, that make a dance ;

Say *ay*, and all shall presently advance.

*Thes.* Ay, ay, by any means, dear *domine !*

*Per.* Produce.

*Ger.* *Intrate, filii !* Come forth, and foot it.

*Enter Countrymen, Wenches, &c. They dance a Morris.*

Ladies, if we have been merry,

And have pleased ye with a derry,

And a derry, and a down,

Say the schoolmaster's no clown.

Duke, if we have pleased thee too,

And have done as good boys should do,

Give us but a tree or twain

For a Maypole, and again

Ere another year run out,

We'll make thee laugh, and all this rout.

*Thes.* Take twenty, *domine*.—How does my

*Hip.* Never so pleased, sir. [sweetheart ?

*Emi.* 'Twas an excellent dance ; and, for a pre-  
I never heard a better. [face,

*Thes.* Schoolmaster, I thank you—

One see 'em all rewarded !

*Per.* And here's something

To paint your pole withal.

*Thes.* Now to our sports again !

*Ger.* May the stag thou hunt'st stand long,

And thy dogs be swift and strong !

May they kill him without letts,

And the ladies cat's dowsets !

Come, we are all made ! [Wind horns.

*Dii Deaque omnes !* ye have danced rarely,

wenches. [*Exeunt.*

#### SCENE VI.—Another Part of the Forest.

*Enter PALAMON from the Bush.*

*Pal.* About this hour my cousin give his faith

To visit me again, and with him bring

Two swords, and two good armours ; if he fail,

He's neither man, nor soldier. When he left me,

I did not think a week could have restored

My lost strength to me, I was grown so low

And crest-fall'n with my wants : I thank thee,

*Arcite,*

Thou art yet a fair foe ; and I feel myself,

With this refreshing, able once again

To out-dure danger. To delay it longer

Would make the world think, when it comes to

That I lay fatting like a swine, to fight, [hearing,

And not a soldier : Therefore, this blest morning

Shall be the last ; and that sword he refuses,

If it but hold, I kill him with ; 'tis justice :

So, Love and Fortune for me !—Oh, good morrow !

*Enter ARSITE, with Armour and Swords.*

*Arc.* Good morrow, Noble Kinsman !

*Pal.* I have put you

To too much pains, sir.

*Arc.* That too much, fair cousin,

Is but a debt to honour, and my duty.

*Pal.* Would you were so in all, sir! I could wish  
As kind a Kinsman, as you force me find [you  
A beneficial foe, that my embraces  
Might thank you, not my blows.

*Arc.* I shall think either,  
Well done, a noble recompense.

*Pal.* Then I shall quit you.

*Arc.* Defy me in these fair terms, and you shew  
More than a mistress to me: no more anger,  
As you love anything that's honourable!  
We were not bred to talk, man! when we are armed,  
And both upon our guards, then let our fury,  
Like meeting of two tides, fly strongly from us!  
And then to whom the birthright of this beauty  
Truly pertains (without upbraidings, scorns,  
Despising of our persons, and such poutings  
Fitter for girls and schoolboys) will be seen,  
And quickly, yours, or mine. Wilt please you arm,  
Or if you feel yourself not fitting yet, [sir?  
And furnish'd with your old strength, I'll stay,  
cousin,

And every day discourse you into health,  
As I am spared: Your person I am friends with,  
And I could wish I had not said I loved her,  
Though I had died; but loving such a lady,  
And justifying my love, I must not fly from't.

*Pal.* Arcite, thou art so brave an enemy,  
That no man but thy cousin's fit to kill thee:  
I am well, and lusty; chase your arms!

*Arc.* Chase you, sir!

*Pal.* Wilt thou exceed in all, or dost thou do it  
To make me spare thee?

*Arc.* If you think so, cousin,  
You are deceived; for as I am a soldier,  
I will not spare you!

*Pal.* That's well said!

*Arc.* You'll find it.

*Pal.* Then, as I am an honest man, and love  
With all the justice of affection,  
I'll pay thee soundly! This I'll take.

*Arc.* That's mine then;

I'll arm you first. [*Put on PALAMON'S armour.*

*Pal.* Do pray thee, tell me, cousin,

Where got'st thou this good armour?

*Arc.* 'Tis the duke's;

And to say true, I stole it. Do I pinch you?

*Pal.* No.

*Arc.* Is't not too heavy?

*Pal.* I have worn a lighter;  
But I shall make it serve.

*Arc.* I'll buckle't close.

*Pal.* By any means.

*Arc.* You care not for a grand-guard?

*Pal.* No, no; we'll use no horses: I perceive  
You would fain be at that fight.

*Arc.* I am indifferent.

*Pal.* 'Faith, so am I. Good cousin, thrust the  
Through far enough! [buckle

*Arc.* I warrant you.

*Pal.* My casque now!

*Arc.* Will you fight bare-arm'd?

*Pal.* We shall be the nimble.

*Arc.* But use your gauntlets though: Those are  
Pr'ythee take mine, good cousin! [o'th' least;

*Pal.* Thank you, Arcite!

How do I look? am I fall'n much away?

*Arc.* 'Faith, very little; Love has used you

*Pal.* I'll warrant thee, I'll strike home. [kindly.

*Arc.* Do, and spare not!

I'll give you cause, sweet cousin.

*Pal.* Now to you, sir!

Methinks this armour's very like that, Arcite,  
Thou wor'st that day the three kings fell, but  
lighter.

*Arc.* That was a very good one; and that day,  
I well remember, you out-did me, cousin;  
I never saw such valour: When you charged  
Upon the left wing of the enemy,  
I spurred hard to come up, and under me  
I had a right good horse.

*Pal.* You had indeed;

A bright-bay, I remember.

*Arc.* Yes. But all

Was vainly labour'd in me; you out-went me,  
Nor could my wishes reach you: Yet a little  
I did by imitation.

*Pal.* More by virtue;

You are modest, cousin.

*Arc.* When I saw you charge first,  
Methought I heard a dreadful clap of thunder  
Break from the troop.

*Pal.* But still before that flew  
The lightning of your valour. Stay a little!  
Is not this piece too straight?

*Arc.* No, no; 'tis well.

*Pal.* I would have nothing hurt thee but my  
A bruise would be dishonour. [sword;

*Arc.* Now I'm perfect.

*Pal.* Stand off then!

*Arc.* Take my sword! I hold it better.

*Pal.* I thank you, no; keep it; your life lies on  
Here's one, if it but hold, I ask no more [it:  
For all my hopes. My cause and honour guard me!

[*They bow several ways; then advance and stand.*

*Arc.* And me, my love! Is there aught else to  
say?

*Pal.* This only, and no more: Thou'rt mine  
aunt's son,

And that blood we desire to shed is mutual;  
In me, thine, and in thee, mine: My sword  
Is in my hand, and if thou killest me  
The gods and I forgive thee! If there be  
A place prepared for those that sleep in honour,  
I wish his weary soul that falls may win it!  
Fight bravely, cousin: Give me thy noble hand!

*Arc.* Here, Palamon! This hand shall never  
more

Come near thee with such friendship.

*Pal.* I commend thee.

*Arc.* If I fall, curse me, and say I was a coward:  
For none but such dare die in these just trials.  
Once more, farewell, my cousin!

*Pal.* Farewell, Arcite! [Fight  
[*Horns within; they stand.*

*Arc.* Lo, cousin, lo! our folly has undone us!

*Pal.* Why?

*Arc.* This is the duke, a-hunting as I told you:  
If we be found, we are wretched! Oh, retire,  
For Honour's sake and safety, presently  
Into your bush again, sir! We shall find  
Too many hours to die in. Gentle cousin,  
If you be seen you perish instantly,  
For breaking prison; and I, if you reveal me,  
For my contempt: Then all the world will scorn us.  
And say we had a noble difference,  
But base disposers of it.

*Pal.* No, no, cousin;

I will no more be hidden, nor put off  
This great adventure to a second trial;  
I know your cunning, and I know your cause.

He that faints now, shame take him ! Put thyself  
Upon thy present guard——

*Arc.* You are not mad ?

*Pal.* Or I will make the advantage of this hour  
Mine own ; and what to come shall threaten me,  
I fear less than my fortune. Know, weak cousin,  
I love Emilia ! and in that I'll bury  
Thee, and all crosses else !

*Arc.* Then come what can come,  
Thou shalt know, Palamon, I dare as well  
Die as discourse, or sleep : Only this fears me,  
The law will have the honour of our ends.  
Have at thy life !

*Pal.* Look to thine own well, Arcite !

[*Fight again.* *Horns.*]

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, EMILIA, PERITHOUS, and  
Train.*

*Thes.* What ignorant and mad malicious traitors  
Are you, that, 'gainst the tenor of my laws,  
Are making battle, thus like knights appointed,  
Without my leave, and officers of arms ?  
By Castor, both shall die !

*Pal.* Hold thy word, Theseus !

We are certainly both traitors, both despisers  
Of thee, and of thy goodness : I am Palamon,  
That cannot love thee, he that broke thy prison ;  
Think well what that deserves ! and this is Arcite ;  
A bolder traitor never trod thy ground,  
A falsèr ne'er seem'd friend : This is the man  
Was begg'd and banished ; this is he contemns thee,  
And what thou dar'st do ; and in this disguise,  
Against this known edict, follows thy sister,  
That fortunate bright star, the fair Emilia,  
(Whose servant, if there be a right in seeing,  
And first bequeathing of the soul to, justly  
I am ;) and, which is more, dares think her his !  
This treachery, like a most trusty lover,  
I call'd him now to answer : If thou be'st,  
As thou art spoken, great and virtuous,  
The true decider of all injuries,  
Say, "Fight again !" and thou shalt see me, The-  
Do such a justice, thou thyself wilt envy ; [seus,  
Then take my life ! I'll woo thee to't.

*Per.* Oh, Heaven,  
What more than man is this !

*Thes.* I have sworn.

*Arc.* We seek not  
Thy breath of mercy, Theseus ! 'Tis to me  
A thing as soon to die, as thee to say it,  
And no more moved. Where this man calls me  
traitor,

Let me say thus much : If in love be treason,  
In service of so excellent a beauty,  
As I love most, and in that faith will perish ;  
As I have brought my life here to confirm it ;  
As I have served her truest, worthiest ;  
As I dare kill this cousin, that denies it ;  
So let me be most traitor, and you please me.  
For scorning thy edict, duke, ask that lady  
Why she is fair, and why her eyes command me  
Stay here to love her ; and if she say traitor,  
I am a villain fit to lie unburied.

*Pal.* Thou shalt have pity of us both, oh, The-  
If unto neither thou shew mercy ; stop, [seus,  
As thou art just, thy noble ear against us ;  
As thou art valiant, for thy cousin's soul,  
Whose twelve strong labours crown his memory,  
Let's die together, at one instant, duke !  
Only a little let him fall before me,  
That I may tell my soul he shall not have her.

*Thes.* I grant your wish ; for, to say true, your  
cousin

Has ten times more offended, for I gave him  
More mercy than you found, sir, your offences  
Being no more than his. — None here speak for 'em !  
For, ere the sun set, both shall sleep for ever.

*Hip.* Alas, the pity ! Now or never, sister,  
Speak, not to be denied : That face of yours  
Will bear the curses else of after-ages,  
For these lost cousins !

*Emi.* In my face, dear sister,  
I find no anger to 'em, nor no ruin ;  
The misadventure of their own eyes kills 'em :  
Yet that I will be woman, and have pity,  
My knees shall grow to the ground but I'll get  
mercy.

Help me, dear sister, in a deed so virtuous,  
The powers of all women will be with us.  
Most royal brother.—— [They kneel.

*Hip.* Sir, by our tie of marriage——

*Emi.* By your own spotless honour——

*Hip.* By that faith,

That fair hand, and that honest heart you gave  
me——

*Emi.* By that you would have pity in another,  
By your own virtues infinite——

*Hip.* By valour,

By all the chaste nights I have ever pleased you——  
*Thes.* These are strange conjurings !

*Per.* Nay, then I'll in too : [Kneels.

By all our friendship, sir, by all our dangers,  
By all you love most, wars, and this sweet lady——

*Emi.* By that you would have trembled to deny  
A blushing maid——

*Hip.* By your own eyes, by strength,  
In which you swore I went beyond all women,  
Almost all men, and yet I yielded, Theseus——

*Per.* To crown all this, by your most noble soul,  
Which cannot want due mercy ! I beg first.

*Hip.* Next, hear my prayers !

*Emi.* Last, let me entreat, sir !

*Per.* For mercy !

*Hip.* Mercy !

*Emi.* Mercy on these princes !

*Thes.* You make my faith reel : Say I felt  
Compassion to 'em both, how would you place it ?

*Emi.* Upon their lives ; but with their banish-  
ments.

*Thes.* You're a right woman, sister ; you have  
pity,

But want the understanding where to use it.  
If you desire their lives ; invent a way  
Safer than banishment : Can these two live,  
And have the agony of love about 'em,  
And not kill one another ? Every day  
They would fight about you ; hourly bring your  
honour

In public question with their swords : Be wise  
then,  
And here forget 'em ! it concerns your credit,  
And my oath equally : I have said, they die !  
Better they fall by the law, than one another.  
Bow not my honour.

*Emi.* Oh, my noble brother,  
That oath was rashly made, and in your anger ;  
Your reason will not hold it : If such vows  
Stand for express will, all the world must perish.  
Beside, I have another oath 'gainst yours,  
Of more authority, I am sure more love ;  
Not made in passion neither, but good heed.

*Thes.* What is it, sister ?

*Per.* Urge it home, brave lady !

*Emi.* That you would ne'er deny me anything  
Fit for my modest suit, and your free granting ;  
I tie you to your word now ; if you fail in't,  
Think how you maim your honour ;  
(For now I am set a-begging, sir, I am deaf  
To all but your compassion !) how their lives  
Might breed the ruin of my name, opinion !  
Shall anything that loves me perish for me ?  
That were a cruel wisdom ! do men prune  
The straight young boughs, that blush with thou-  
sand blossoms,

Because they may be rotten ? Oh, duke Theseus,  
The goodly mothers that have groan'd for these,  
And all the longing maids that ever loved,  
If your vow stand, shall curse me and my beauty,  
And, in their funeral songs for these two cousins,  
Despise my cruelty, and cry woe-worth me,  
Till I am nothing but the scorn of women :  
For Heaven's sake save their lives, and banish

*Thes.* On what conditions ?

*Emi.* Swear 'em never more

To make me their contention, or to know me,  
To tread upon thy dukedom, and to be,  
Wherever they shall travel, ever strangers  
To one another.

*Pal.* I'll be cut a-pieces

Before I take this oath ! Forget I love her ?  
Oh, all ye gods, despise me then ! Thy banishment  
I not mislike, so we may fairly carry  
Our swords and cause along : Else, never trifle,  
But take our lives, duke ! I must love, and will ;  
And for that love, must and dare kill this cousin,  
On any piece the earth has !

*Thes.* Will you, Arcite,  
Take these conditions ?

*Pal.* He's a villain then !

*Per.* These are men !

*Arc.* No, never, duke ; 'tis worse to me than  
begging,

To take my life so basely. Though I think  
I never shall enjoy her, yet I'll preserve  
The honour of affection, and die for her,  
Make death a devil !

*Thes.* What may be done ? for now I feel com-

*Per.* Let it not fall again, sir ! [passion.]

*Thes.* Say, Emilia,

If one of them were dead, as one must, are you  
Content to take the other to your husband ?

They cannot both enjoy you ; they are princes  
As goodly as your own eyes, and as noble  
As ever Fame yet spoke of ; look upon 'em,  
And, if you can love, end this difference !

I give consent :—Are you content too, princes ?

*Both.* With all our souls.

*Thes.* He that she refuses

Must die then.

*Both.* Any death thou canst invent, duke.

*Pal.* If I fall from that mouth, I fall with  
favour,

And lovers yet unborn shall bless my ashes.

*Arc.* If she refuse me, yet my grave will wed  
And soldiers sing my epitaph. [me,

*Thes.* Make choice then !

*Emi.* I cannot, sir ; they are both too excellent :  
For me, a hair shall never fall of these men.

*Hip.* What will become of 'em ?

*Thes.* Thus I ordain it ;

And, by mine honour, once again it stands,  
Or both shall die !—You shall both to your  
country ;

And each within this month, accompanied  
With three fair knights, appear again in this  
place,

In which I'll plant a pyramid : And whether,  
Before us that are here, can force his cousin  
By fair and knightly strength to touch the pillar,  
He shall enjoy her ; the other lose his head,  
And all his friends : Nor shall he grudge to fall,  
Nor think he dies with interest in this lady.  
Will this content ye ?

*Pal.* Yes. Here, cousin Arcite,

I am friends again till that hour.

*Arc.* I embrace you.

*Thes.* Are you content, sister ?

*Emi.* Yes : I must, sir ;  
Else both miscarry.

*Thes.* Come, shake hands again then ;  
And take heed, as you are gentlemen, this quarrel  
Sleep till the hour prefix'd, and hold your course !

*Pal.* We dare not fall thee, Theseus.

*Thes.* Come, I'll give ye

Now usage like to princes, and to friends.

When ye return, who wins, I'll settle here ;  
Who loses, yet I'll weep upon his bier. [Exeunt.]

## ACT IV.

### SCENE I.—ATHENS. *A Room in the Prison.*

*Enter Jailer and a Friend.*

*Jailer.* Hear you no more ? Was nothing said  
Concerning the escape of Palamon ? [of me  
Good sir, remember !

1 *Friend.* Nothing that I heard ;  
For I came home before the business  
Was fully ended : Yet I might perceive,  
Ere I departed, a great likelihood  
Of both their pardons ; for Hippolita,  
And fair-eyed Emily, upon their knees  
Begg'd with such handsome pity, that the duke  
Methought stood staggering whether he should  
His rash oath, or the sweet compassion [follow  
Of those two ladies ; and to second them,

That truly noble prince Perithous,  
Half his own heart set in too, that I hope  
All shall be well : Neither heard I one question  
Of your name, or his 'scape.

*Enter Second Friend.*

*Jailer.* Pray Heaven, it hold so !  
2 *Friend.* Be of good comfort, man ! I bring  
Good news. [you news.

*Jailer.* They are welcome.

2 *Friend.* Palamon has clear'd you,  
And got your pardon, and discover'd how  
And by whose means he 'scaped, which was your  
Daughter's,

Whose pardon is procured too ; and the prisoner  
(Not to be held ungrateful to her goodness)

Has given a sum of money to her marriage,  
A large one, I'll assure you.

*Jailor.* You're a good man,  
And ever bring good news.

*1 Friend.* How was it ended?

*2 Friend.* Why, as it should be; they that never  
begg'd

But they prevail'd, had their suits fairly granted.  
The prisoners have their lives.

*1 Friend.* I knew 'twould be so.

*2 Friend.* But there be new conditions, which  
At better time. [you'll hear of]

*Jailor.* I hope they are good.

*2 Friend.* They are honourable;

How good they'll prove I know not.

*1 Friend.* 'Twill be known.

*Enter Woocer.*

*Woocer.* Alas, sir, where's your Daughter?

*Jailor.* Why do you ask?

*Woocer.* Oh, sir, when did you see her?

*2 Friend.* How he looks!

*Jailor.* This morning.

*Woocer.* Was she well? Was she in health, sir?  
When did she sleep?

*1 Friend.* These are strange questions.

*Jailor.* I do not think she was very well; for, now

You make me mind her, but this very day  
I ask'd her questions, and she answered me  
So far from what she was, so childishly,  
So sillily, as if she were a fool,  
An innocent! and I was very angry.  
But what of her, sir?

*Woocer.* Nothing but my pity;  
But you must know it, and as good by me  
As by another that less loves her.

*Jailor.* Well, sir?

*1 Friend.* Not right?

*2 Friend.* Not well?

*Woocer.* No, sir; not well;

'Tis too true, she is mad.

*1 Friend.* It cannot be.

*Woocer.* Believe, you'll find it so.

*Jailor.* I half suspected

What you [have] told me; the gods comfort her!  
Either this was her love to Palamon,  
Or fear of my miscarrying on his 'scape,  
Or both.

*Woocer.* 'Tis likely.

*Jailor.* But why all this haste, sir? [angling]  
*Woocer.* I'll tell you quickly. As I late was  
In the great lake that lies behind the palace,  
From the far shore, thick set with reeds and sedges,  
As patiently I was attending sport,  
I heard a voice, a shrill one; and attentive  
I gave my ear; when I might well perceive  
'Twas one that sung, and, by the smallness of it,  
A boy or woman. I then left my angle  
To his own skill, came near, but yet perceived not  
Who made the sound, the rushes and the reeds  
Had so encompass'd it: I laid me down,  
And listen'd to the words she sung; for then,  
Through a small glade cut by the fishermen,  
I saw it was your Daughter.

*Jailor.* Pray go on, sir!

*Woocer.* She sung much, but no sense; only I  
Repeat this often: "Palamon is gone, [heard her  
Is gone to th' wood to gather mulberries;  
I'll find him out to-morrow."

*1 Friend.* Pretty soul!

*Woocer.* "His shackles will betray him, he'll be  
taken;

And what shall I do then! I'll bring a beavy,  
A hundred black-eyed maids that love as I do,  
With chaplets on their heads, of daffillies,  
With cherry lips, and cheeks of damask roses,  
And all we'll dance an antic 'fore the duke,  
And beg his pardon." Then she talk'd of you, sir,  
That you must lose your head to-morrow morning,  
And she must gather flowers to bury you,  
And see the house made handsome: Then she sung  
Nothing but "Willow, willow, willow;" and be-  
Ever was, "Palamon, fair Palamon!" [tween,  
And "Palamon was a tall young man!" The  
place

Was knee-deep where she sat; her careless tresses,  
A wreath of bull-rush rounded; about her stuck  
Thousand fresh-water flowers of several colours;  
That methought she appear'd like the fair nymph  
That feeds the lake with waters, or as Iris  
Newly dropt down from Heaven! Rings she made  
Of rushes that grew by, and to 'em spoke  
The prettiest posies; "Thus our true love's tied;"  
"This you may loose, not me;" and many a one:  
And then she wept, and sung again, and sigh'd,  
And with the same breath smiled, and kist her

*2 Friend.* Alas, what pity 'tis! [hand.

*Woocer.* I made in to her;

She saw me, and straight sought the flood; I saved  
And set her safe to land; when presently [her,  
She slept away, and to the city made;  
With such a cry, and swiftness, that, believe me,  
She left me far behind her: Three, or four,  
I saw from far off cross her, one of 'em  
I knew to be your brother; where she stay'd,  
And fell, scarce to be got away; I left them with  
And hither came to tell you. Here they are! [her,

*Enter Brother, Daughter, and others.*

*Daugh.* [Sings.] May you never more enjoy the  
light, &c.

Is not this a fine song?

*Brother.* Oh, a very fine one!

*Daugh.* I can sing twenty more.

*Brother.* I think you can.

*Daugh.* Yes, truly can I; I can sing the Broom,  
And bonny Robin. Are not you a tailor?

*Brother.* Yes.

*Daugh.* Where's my wedding-gown?

*Brother.* I'll bring it to-morrow.

*Daugh.* Do very rarely; I must be abroad else,  
To call the maids, and pay the minstrels;  
For I must lose my maidenhead by cock-light;  
'Twill never thrive else.

Oh, fair, oh, sweet, &c. [Sings.

*Brother.* You must even take it patiently.

*Jailor.* 'Tis true.

*Daugh.* Good even, good men! Pray did you  
Of one young Palamon? [ever hear

*Jailor.* Yes, wench, we know him.

*Daugh.* Is't not a fine young gentleman?

*Jailor.* 'Tis love!

*Brother.* By no means cross her; she is then  
Far worse than now she shews. [distemper'd

*1 Friend.* Yes, he's a fine man.

*Daugh.* Oh, is he so! You have a sister?

*1 Friend.* Yes.

*Daugh.* But she shall never have him, tell  
her so,

For a trick that I know: You had best look to her,

For if she see him once, she's gone; she's done,  
And undone in an hour. All the young maids  
Of our town are in love with him; but I laugh  
at 'em,

And let 'em all alone; is't not a wise course?

1 *Friend*. Yes.

*Daugh*. There is at least two hundred now with  
child by him,

There must be four; yet I keep close for all this,  
Close as a cockle; and all these must be boys,  
He has the trick on't; and at ten years old  
They must be all gelt for musicians,  
And sing the Wars of Theseus.

2 *Friend*. This is strange.

*Daugh*. As ever you heard; but say nothing.

1 *Friend*. No.

*Daugh*. They come from all parts of the duke-  
dom to him;

I'll warrant you, he had not so few last night  
As twenty to dispatch; he'll tickle't up  
In two hours, if his hand be in.

*Jailor*. She's lost,  
Past all cure!

*Brother*. Heaven forbid, man!

*Daugh*. Come hither; you are a wise man.

1 *Friend*. Does she know him?

2 *Friend*. No; 'would she did!

*Daugh*. You are master of a ship?

*Jailor*. Yes.

*Daugh*. Where's your compass?

*Jailor*. Here.

*Daugh*. Set it to th' North;

And now direct your course to the wood, where  
Lies longing for me; for the tackling [Palamon  
Let me alone: Come weigh, my hearts, cheerly!

*All*. Ough, ough, ough! 'tis up, the wind is  
Top the bowling; out with the main-sail! [fair,  
Where is your whistle, master?

*Brother*. Let's get her in.

*Jailor*. Up to the top, boy.

*Brother*. Where's the pilot?

1 *Friend*. Here.

*Daugh*. What ken'st thou?

2 *Friend*. A fair wood.

*Daugh*. Bear for it, master; tack about! [Sings.  
When Cynthia with her borrow'd light, &c.

[*Exeunt*.]

## SCENE II.—A Room in the Palace.

*Enter EMILIA with two Pictures.*

*Emi*. Yet I may bind those wounds up, that  
must open

And bleed to death for my sake else: I'll choose,  
And end their strife; two such young handsome  
men

Shall never fall for me: Their weeping mothers,  
Following the dead-cold ashes of their sons,  
Shall never curse my cruelty. Good Heaven,  
What a sweet face has Arcite! If wise Nature,  
With all her best endowments, all those beauties  
She sows into the births of noble bodies,  
Were here a mortal woman, and had in her  
The coy denials of young maids, yet doubtless  
She would run mad for this man: What an eye!  
Of what a fiery sparkle, and quick sweetness,  
Has this young prince! here Love himself sits  
Just such another wanton Ganymede [smiling;  
Set Jove a-fire with, and enforced the god

Snatch up the goodly boy, and set him by him,  
A shining constellation! what a brow,  
Of what a spacious majesty, he carries,  
Arch'd like the great-eyed Juno's, but far sweeter,  
Smother than Pelops' shoulder! Fame and Honour,  
Methinks, from hence, as from a promontory  
Pointed in Heaven, should clap their wings, and  
To all the under-world, the loves and fights [sing  
Of gods, and such men near 'em. Palamon  
Is but his foil; to him, a mere dull shadow;  
He's swarth and meagre, of an eye as heavy  
As if he had lost his mother; a still temper,  
No stirring in him, no alacrity;  
Of all this sprightly sharpness, not a smile.  
Yet these that we count errors, may become him:  
Narcissus was a sad boy, but a heavenly  
Oh, who can find the beat of woman's fancy?  
I am a fool, my reason is lost in me!  
I have no choice, and I have lied so lowly  
That women ought to beat me. On my knees  
I ask thy pardon, Palamon! Thou art alone,  
And only beautiful; and these thy eyes,  
These the bright lamps of beauty, that command  
And threaten love, and what young maid dare cross  
What a bold gravity, and yet inviting, [em:  
Has this brown manly face! Oh, Love, this only  
From this hour is complexion; lie there, Arcite!  
Thou art a changeling to him, a mere gipsy,  
And this the noble body—I am sotted,  
Utterly lost! my virgin's faith has fled me.  
For if my brother but even now had asked me  
Whether I loved, I had run mad for Arcite;  
Now if my sister, more for Palamon.  
Stand both together! Now, come, ask me, brother;  
Alas, I know not! ask me, now, sweet sister;  
I may go look! What a mere child is fancy,  
That, having two fair gawds of equal sweetness,  
Cannot distinguish, but must cry for both!—

*Enter a Gentleman.*

How now, sir?

*Gent*. From the noble duke your brother,  
Madam, I bring you news: The knights are come.

*Emi*. To end the quarrel?

*Gent*. Yes.

*Emi*. 'Would I might end first!  
What sins have I committed, chaste Diana,  
That my unspotted youth must now be soil'd  
With blood of princes? and my chastity  
Be made the altar, where the lives of lovers  
(Two greater and two better never yet  
Made mothers' joy) must be the sacrifice  
To my unhappy beauty?

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, PERITHOOS, and Attendants*

*Thes*. [Entering.] Bring 'em in  
Quickly by any means! I long to see 'em—  
Your two contending lovers are return'd,  
And with them their fair knights: Now, my fair  
You must love one of them. [sister.

*Emi*. I had rather both,

So neither for my sake should fall untimely.

*Thes*. Who saw 'em?

*Per*. I a while.

*Gent*. And I.

*Enter Messenger.*

*Thes*. From whence come you, sir?

*Mess*. From the knights.

*Thes*. Pray speak,  
You that have seen them, what they are

*Mess.* I will, sir,  
And truly what I think : Six braver spirits  
Than these they have brought, (if we judge by the  
outside)

I never saw, nor read of. He that stands  
In the first place with Arcite, by his seeming  
Should be a stout man, by his face a prince  
(His very looks so say him) : his complexion  
Nearer a brown than black ; stern, and yet noble,  
Which shows him hardy, fearless, proud of dangers ;  
The circles of his eyes shew far within him,  
And as a heated lion, so he looks ;  
His hair hangs long behind him, black and shining  
Like ravens' wings ; his shoulders broad, and  
strong ;

Arm'd long and round ; and on his thigh a sword  
Hung by a curious baldrick, when he frowns  
To seal his will with ; better, o' my conscience,  
Was never soldier's friend.

*Thes.* Thou hast well described him.

*Per.* Yet a great deal short,  
Methinks of him that's first with Palamon.

*Thes.* Pray speak him, friend.

*Per.* I guess he is a prince too,  
And, if it may be, greater ; for his show  
Has all the ornament of honour in't.  
He's somewhat bigger than the knight he spoke of,  
But of a face far sweeter ; his complexion  
Is (as a ripe grape) ruddy ; he has felt,  
Without doubt, what he fights for, and so apter  
To make this cause his own ; in's face appears  
All the fair hopes of what he undertakes ;  
And when he's angry, then a settled valour  
(Not tainted with extremes) runs through his body,  
And guides his arm to brave things ; fear he can-  
not,

He shows no such soft temper ; his head's yellow,  
Hard-hair'd, and curl'd, thick twined, like ivy tops,  
Not to undo with thunder ; in his face  
The livery of the warlike maid appears,  
Pure red and white, for yet no beard has blest him ;  
And in his rolling eyes sits Victory,  
As if she ever meant to crown his valour ;  
His nose stands high, a character of honour,  
His red lips, after fights, are fit for ladies.

*Emi.* Must these men die too ?

*Per.* When he speaks, his tongue  
Sounds like a trumpet ; all his lineaments  
Are as a man would wish 'em, strong and clean ;  
He wears a well-steel'd axe, the staff of gold ;  
His age some five-and-twenty.

*Mess.* There's another,  
A little man, but of a tough soul, seeming  
As great as any ; fairer promises  
In such a body yet I never look'd on.

*Per.* Oh, he that's freckle-faced ?

*Mess.* The same, my lord :

Are they not sweet ones ?

*Per.* Yes, they are well.

*Mess.* Methinks,  
Being so few, and well-disposed, they shew  
Great, and fine art in Nature. He's white-hair'd,  
Not wanton-white, but such a manly colour  
Next to an Auburn ; tough, and nimble set,  
Which shews an active soul ; his arms are brawny,  
Lined with strong sinews ; to the shoulder-piece  
Gently they swell, like women new-conceived,  
Which speaks him prone to labour, never fainting  
Under the weight of arms ; stout-hearted, still,  
But, when he stirs, a tiger ; he's grey-eyed,

Which yields compassion where he conquers ; sharp  
To spy advantages, and where he finds 'em,  
He's swift to make 'em his ; he does no wrongs,  
Nor takes none ; he's round-faced, and when he  
smiles

He shews a lover, when he frowns, a soldier ;  
About his head he wears the winner's oak,  
And in it stuck the favour of his lady ;  
His age, some six-and-thirty. In his hand  
He bears a charging-staff, emboss'd with silver.

*Thes.* Are they all thus ?

*Per.* They are all the sons of honour.

*Thes.* Now, as I have a soul, I long to see 'em !  
Lady, you shall see men fight now.

*Hip.* I wish it,

But not the cause, my lord : They would shew  
Bravely about the titles of two kingdoms ;  
'Tis pity Love should be so tyrannous.—  
Oh, my soft-hearted sister, what think you ?  
Weep not, till they weep blood, wench ! it must be.

*Thes.* You have steel'd 'em with your beauty.—  
Honour'd friend,

To you I give the field ; pray order it,  
Fitting the persons that must use it !

*Per.* Yes, sir.

*Thes.* Come, I'll go visit 'em : I cannot stay  
(Their fame has fired me so) till they appear ;  
Good friend, be royal !

*Per.* There shall want no bravery.

*Emi.* Poor wench, go weep ; for whosoever wins  
Loses a noble cousin for thy sins. [Exit.

### SCENE III.—A Room in the Prison.

Enter Jallor, Wooer, and Doctor.

*Doctor.* Her distraction is more at some time of  
the moon than at other some, is it not ?

*Jailor.* She is continually in a harmless distem-  
per ; sleeps little, altogether without appetite, save  
often drinking ; dreaming of another world, and a  
better ; and what broken piece of matter soe'er she  
is about, the name Palamon lards it ; that she forces  
every business withal, fits it to every question.

Enter Daughter.

Look, where she comes ! you shall perceive her  
behaviour.

*Daugh.* I have forgot it quite ; the burden on't  
was down-a-down-a ; and penn'd by no worse man  
than Giraldo, Emilia's schoolmaster : He's as fan-  
tastical too, as ever he may go upon's legs ; for in  
the next world will Dido see Palamon, and then  
will she be out of love with Æneas.

*Doctor.* What stuff's here ? poor soul !

*Jailor.* Even thus all day long.

*Daugh.* Now for this charm that I told you of :  
you must bring a piece of silver on the tip of your  
tongue, or no ferry : Then if it be your chance to  
come where the blessed spirits [are,] (there's a  
sight now) we maids that have our livers periah'd,  
crack'd to pieces with love, we shall come there,  
and do nothing all day long but pick flowers with  
Proserpine ; then will I make Palamon a nosegay ;  
then let him—mark me—then !

*Doctor.* How prettily she's amiss ! note her a  
little further !

*Daugh.* 'Faith, I'll tell you ; sometime we go to  
barley-break, we of the bless'd : Alas, 'tis a sore  
life they have i' th' other place, such burning, fry-

ing, boiling, hissing, howling, chattering, cursing, oh, they have shrewd measure; take heed! If one be mad, or hang, or drown themselves, thither they go; Jupiter bless us! and there shall we be put in a cauldron of lead and usurers' grease, amongst a whole million of cut-purses, and there boil like a gammon of bacon that will never be enough.

*Doctor.* How her brain coins!

*Daugh.* Lords and courtiers, that have got maids with child, they are in this place; they shall stand in fire up to the navel, and in ice up to the heart, and there the offending part burns, and the deceiving part freezes: In troth, a very grievous punishment, as one would think, for such a trifle! believe me, one would marry a leprous witch, to be rid on't, I'll assure you.

*Doctor.* How she continues this fancy! 'Tis not an engrafted madness, but a most thick and profound melancholy.

*Daugh.* To hear there a proud lady, and a proud city-wife, howl together! I were a beast, an I'd call it good sport: one cries, "Oh, this smoke!" another, "this fire!" one cries, "Oh, that ever I did it behind the arras!" and then howls; the other curses a suing fellow and her garden-house.

[Sings.

I will be true, my stars, my fate, &c.

[Exit Daughter.

*Jailor.* What think you of her, sir?

*Doctor.* I think she has a perturbed mind which I cannot minister to.

*Jailor.* Alas, what then?

*Doctor.* Understand you she ever affected any man, ere she beheld Palamon?

*Jailor.* I was once, sir, in great hope she had fixed her liking on this gentleman, my friend.

*Wooer.* I did think so too; and would account

I had a great pen'worth on't, to give half my state, that both she and I at this present stood unfignodly on the same terms.

*Doctor.* That intemperate surfeit of her eye hath distemper'd the other senses; they may return and settle again to execute their preordain'd faculties; but they are now in a most extravagant vagary. This you must do: confine her to a place where the light may rather seem to steal in than be permitted. Take upon you (young sir, her friend) the name of Palamon; say you come to eat with her, and to commune of love; this will catch her attention, for this her mind beats upon: other objects that are inserted 'tween her mind and eye, become the pranks and friskins of her madness; sing to her such green songs of love, as she says Palamon hath sung in prison; come to her, stuck in as sweet flowers as the season is mistress of, and thereto make an addition of some other compounded odours, which are grateful to the sense: all this shall become Palamon, for Palamon can sing, and Palamon is sweet, and every good thing; desire to eat with her, carve her, drink to her, and still among intermingle your petition of grace and acceptance into her favour; learn what maids have been her companions, and play-pheers; and let them repair to her with Palamon in their mouths, and appear with tokens, as if they suggested for him: It is a falsehood she is in, which is with falsehoods to be combated. This may bring her to eat, to sleep, and reduce what's now out of square in her, into their former law and regiment: I have seen it approved, how many times I know not; but to make the number more, I have great hope in this. I will, between the passages of this project, come in with my appliance. Let us put it in execution; and hasten the success, which, doubt not, will bring forth comfort. [Exit.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*Before the Temple of Mars, which appears in the Back-ground.*

*A Flourish.* Enter THESEUS, PERITHOUS, HIPPOLITA, and Attendants.

*Thes.* Now let 'em enter, and before the gods Tender their holy prayers! let the temples Burn bright with sacred fires, and the altars In hallow'd clouds commend their swelling incense To those above us! Let no due be wanting! They have a noble work in hand, will honour The very powers that love 'em.

*A Flourish of Cornets.* Enter PALAMON, ARCTIZ, and their Knights.

*Per.* Sir, they enter.

*Thes.* You valiant and strong-hearted enemies, You royal germane foes, that this day come To blow that nearness out that flames between ye,

Lay by your anger for an hour, and dove-like Before the holy altars of your helpers (The all-fear'd gods) bow down your stubborn bodies!

Your ire is more than mortal; so your help be! And, as the gods regard ye, fight with justice! I'll leave you to your prayers, and betwixt ye I part my wishes.

*Per.* Honour crown the worthiest!

[Exit all but PALAMON, ARCTIZ, and their Knights.

*Pal.* The glass is running now that cannot finish

Till one of us expire: Think you but thus; That were there sought in me which strove to shew Mine enemy in this business, were't one eye Against another, arm oppress'd by arm, I would destroy th' offender; coz, I would, Though parcel of myself! then from this gather How I should tender you!

*Arct.* I am in labour

To push your name, your ancient love, our kindred, Out of my memory; and I th' self-same place To seat something I would confound: So hoist we The sails, that must these vessels port even where The heavenly Limiter pleases!

*Pal.* You speak well:

Before I turn, let me embrace thee, cousin! This I shall never do again.

*Arct.* One farewell!

*Pal.* Why, let it be so: Farewell, coz!

*Arct.* Farewell, sir!—

[Exit PALAMON and his Knights.

Knights, kinsmen, lovers, yea, my sacrifices, True worshippers of Mars, whose spirit in you Expels the seeds of fear, and th' apprehension,

Which still is father of it, go with me  
 Before the god of our profession! There  
 Require of him the hearts of lions, and  
 The breath of tigers, yea, the fierceness too!  
 Yea, the speed also! to go on, I mean,  
 Else wish we to be snails: you know my prize  
 Must be dragg'd out of blood! force and great feat  
 Must put my garland on, where she will stick  
 The queen of flowers; our intercession then  
 Must be to him that makes the camp a cestron  
 Brimm'd with the blood of men; give me your aid,  
 And bend your spirits towards him!—

*[They enter the Temple, and fall prostrate before the Statue of MARS.]*

Thou mighty one, that with thy power hast turn'd  
 Green Neptune into purple; [whose approach]  
 Comets prewarn; whose havock in vast field  
 Unearthed skulls proclaim; whose breath blows  
 down

The teeming Ceres' foyzon; who dost pluck  
 With hand armipotent from forth blue clouds  
 The mason'd turrets; that both mak'st and  
 break'st

The stony girths of cities; me thy pupil,  
 Youngest follower of thy drum, instruct this day  
 With military skill, that to thy laud  
 I may advance my streamer, and by thee  
 Be steyled the lord o' th' day! Give me, great Mars,  
 Some token of thy pleasure!

*[Here they fall on their faces as formerly, and there is heard clanging of armour, with a short thunder, as the burst of a battle, whereupon they all rise, and bow to the altar.]*

Oh, great corrector of enormous times,  
 Shaker of o'er-rank states, thou grand decider  
 Of dusty and old titles, that heal'st with blood  
 The earth when it is sick, and cur'st the world  
 O' th' plurisy of people; I do take  
 Thy signs auspiciously, and in thy name  
 To my design march boldly. Let us go! *[Exeunt.]*

### SCENE II.—*The Temple of Venus.*

*Enter PALAMON and his Knights, fall prostrate, and rise again.*

*Pal.* Our stars must glisten with new fire, or be  
 To-day extinct: Our argument is love,  
 Which if the goddess of it grant, she gives  
 Victory too: Then blend your spirits with mine,  
 You, whose free nobleness do make my cause  
 Your personal hazard! To the goddess Venus  
 Commend we our proceeding, and implore  
 Her power unto our party!— *[They kneel.]*  
 Hail, sovereign queen of secrets! who hast power  
 To call the fiercest tyrant from his rage,  
 To weep unto a girl; that hast the might  
 Even with an eye-glance to choak Mars's drum,  
 And turn th' alarm to whispers; that canst make  
 A cripple flourish with his crutch, and cure him  
 Before Apollo; that may'st force the king  
 To be his subject's vassal, and induce  
 Stale Gravity to dance; the polled bachelor,  
 (Whose youth, like wanton boys through bonfires,  
 Have skipt thy flame) at seventy thou canst catch,  
 And make him, to the scorn of his hoarse throat  
 Abuse young lays of love. What godlike power  
 Hast thou not power upon? To Phoebus thou  
 Add'st flames, hotter than his; the heavenly fires  
 Did scorch his mortal son, thine him; the huntress  
 All moist and cold, some say, began to throw

Her bow away, and sigh; take to thy grace  
 Me, thy vow'd soldier! who do bear thy yoke  
 As 'twere a wreath of roses, yet is heavier  
 Than lead itself, stings more than nettles:  
 I have never been foul-mouth'd against thy law;  
 Ne'er reveal'd secret, for I knew none, would not  
 Had I ken'd all that were; I never practis'd  
 Upon man's wife, nor would the libels read  
 Of liberal wits; I never at great feasts  
 Sought to betray a beauty, but have blush'd  
 At simpering airs that did; I have been harsh  
 To large confessors, and have hotly ask'd them  
 If they had mothers? I had one, a woman,  
 And women 'twere they wrong'd. I knew a man  
 Of eighty winters, (this I told them) who  
 A lass of fourteen bridged; 'twas thy power  
 To put life into dust; the aged cramp  
 Had screw'd his square foot round,  
 The gout had knit his fingers into knots,  
 Torturing convulsions from his globy eyes  
 Had almost drawn their spheres, that what was life  
 In him seem'd torture; this anatomy  
 Had by his young fair pheeer a boy, and I  
 Believed it was his, for she swore it was,  
 And who would not believe her? 'Brief, I am  
 To those that prate, and have done, no companion;  
 To those that boast, and have not, a defier;  
 To those that would, and cannot, a rejoicer:  
 Yea, him I do not love, that tells close offices  
 The foulest way, nor names concealments in  
 The boldest language; such a one I am,  
 And vow that lover never yet made sigh  
 Truer than I. Oh, then, most soft sweet goddess,  
 Give me the victory of this question, which  
 Is true love's merit, and bless me with a sign  
 Of thy great pleasure!

*[Here music is heard, doves are seen to flutter, they fall again upon their faces, then on their knees.]*

Oh, thou that from eleven to ninety reign'st  
 In mortal bosoms, whose chace is this world,  
 And we in herds thy game, I give thee thanks  
 For this fair token! which being laid unto  
 Mine innocent true heart, arms in assurance  
 My body to this business. Let us rise  
 And bow before the goddess! Time comes on.  
*[They bow, and exeunt.]*

### SCENE III.—*The Temple of Diana.*

*[Still music of records.]*

*Enter EMILIA in white, her hair about her shoulders, a wheaten wreath; one in white holding up her train, her hair stuck with flowers; one before her carrying a silver Hind, in which is conveyed incense and sweet odours, which being set upon the Altar, her Maid standing aloof, she sets fire to it; then they curtsy and kneel.]*

*Emi.* Oh, sacred, shadowy, cold and constant  
 queen,

Abandoner of revels, mute, contemplative,  
 Sweet, solitary, white as chaste, and pure  
 As wind-fann'd snow, who to thy female knights  
 Allow'st no more blood than will make a blush,  
 Which is their order's robe; I here, thy priest,  
 Am humbled 'fore thine altar. Oh, vouchsafe,  
 With that thy rare green eye, which never yet  
 Beheld thing maculate, look on thy virgin!  
 And, sacred silver mistress, lend thine ear  
 (Which ne'er heard scurril term, into whose port  
 Ne'er enter'd wanton sound) to my petition,  
 Season'd with holy fear! This is my last

Of vestal office ; I am bride-habited,  
But maiden-hearted ; a husband I have 'pointed,  
But do not know him ; out of two I should  
Chuse one, and pray for his success, but I  
Am guiltless of election of mine eyes ;  
Were I to lose one, (they are equal precious)  
I could doom neither ; that which perish'd should  
Go to't unsentenced : Therefore, most modest  
queen,

He, of the two pretenders, that best loves me  
And has the truest title in't, let him  
Take off my wheaten garland, or else grant  
The file and quality I hold I may  
Continue in thy hand !

*[Here the Hind vanishes under the Altar, and in the  
place ascends a rose-tree, having one rose upon it.]*

See what our general of ebbs and flows  
Out from the bowels of her holy altar  
With sacred act advances ? But one rose ?  
If well inspired, this battle shall confound  
Both these brave knights, and I a virgin flower  
Must grow alone unpluck'd.

*[Here is heard a sudden twang of instruments, and  
the rose falls from the tree.]*

The flower is fallen, the tree descends ! Oh, mis-  
tress,

Thou here dischargest me ; I shall be gather'd,  
I think so ; but I know not thine own will :  
Unclasp thy mystery !—I hope she's pleased ;  
Her signs were gracious.

*[They curtsy, and exeunt.]*

SCENE IV.—*A darkened Apartment in the  
Prison.*

*Enter Doctor, Jailor, and Wooer (in habit of PALAMON.)*

*Doctor.* Has this advice I told you done any  
good upon her ?

*Wooer.* Oh, very much : The maids that kept  
her company  
Have half persuaded her that I am Palamon ;  
Within this half hour she came smiling to me,  
And asked me what I would eat, and when I  
would kiss her :

I told her presently, and kiss'd her twice.

*Doctor.* 'Twas well done ! twenty times had  
been far better ;

For there the cure lies mainly.

*Wooer.* Then she told me  
She would watch with me to-night, for well she  
What hour my fit would take me. *[knew]*

*Doctor.* Let her do so ;

And when your fit comes, fit her home and pre-  
*Wooer.* She would have me sing. *[sently !]*

*Doctor.* You did so ?

*Wooer.* No.

*Doctor.* 'Twas very ill done then ;  
You should observe her every way.

*Wooer.* Alas,

I have no voice, sir, to confirm her that way.

*Doctor.* That's all one, if you make a noise :

If she entreat again, do anything ;  
Lie with her, if she ask you.

*Jailor.* Ho, there, Doctor !

*Doctor.* Yes, in the way of cure.

*Jailor.* But first, by your leave,  
I' th' way of honesty !

*Doctor.* That's but a niceness :

Ne'er cast your child away for honesty ;

Cure her first this way ; then, if she will be honest,  
She has the path before her.

*Jailor.* Thank you, Doctor !

*Doctor.* Pray bring her in,  
And let's see how she is.

*Jailor.* I will, and tell her

Her Palamon stays for her : But, Doctor,  
Methinks you are i' th' wrong still. *[Exit.]*

*Doctor.* Go, go ! you fathers are fine fools :  
Her honesty ?

And we should give her physic till we find that—

*Wooer.* Why, do you think she is not honest.

*Doctor.* How old is she ? *[sir ?]*

*Wooer.* She's eighteen.

*Doctor.* She may be ;

But that's all one, 'tis nothing to our purpose :

Whate'er her father says, if you perceive

Her mood inclining that way that I spoke of,

*Videlicet,* the way of flesh—you have me ?

*Wooer.* Yes, very well, sir.

*Doctor.* Please her appetite,

And do it home ; it cures her, *ipso facto,*

The melancholy humour that infects her.

*Wooer.* I am of your mind, Doctor.

*Enter Jailor, Daughter, and Maid.*

*Doctor.* You'll find it so. She comes ; pray  
humour her !

*Jailor.* Come ; your love Palamon stays for you,  
child ;

And has done this long hour, to visit you.

*Daugh.* I thank him for his gentle patience ;  
He's a kind gentleman, and I'm much bound to  
Did you ne'er see the horse he gave me ? *[him.]*

*Jailor.* Yes.

*Daugh.* How do you like him ?

*Jailor.* He's a very fair one.

*Daugh.* You never saw him dance.

*Jailor.* No.

*Daugh.* I have often ;

He dances very finely, very comely ;  
And, for a jig, come cut and long tail to him !  
He turns you like a top.

*Jailor.* That's fine indeed.

*Daugh.* He'll dance the morris twenty mile an  
hour,

And that will founder the best hobby-horse

(If I have any skill) in all the parish ;

And gallops to the tune of Light o' Love :

What think you of this horse ?

*Jailor.* Having these virtues,  
I think he might be brought to play at tennis.

*Daugh.* Alas, that's nothing.

*Jailor.* Can he write and read too ?

*Daugh.* A very fair hand ; and casts himself the  
accounts

Of all his hay and provender ; that hostler  
Must rise betime that cozens him. You know

The chesnut mare the duke has ?

*Jailor.* Very well.

*Daugh.* She is horribly in love with him, poor  
beast ;

But he is like his master, coy and scornful.

*Jailor.* What dowry has she ?

*Daugh.* Some two hundred bottles  
And twenty strike of oats : But he'll ne'er have

He lissps in's neighing, able to entice *[her.]*

A miller's mare ; he'll be the death of her.

*Doctor.* What stuff she utters !

*Jailor.* Make curt'sy ; here your love comes !

*Wooser.* Pretty soul,  
How do you? That's a fine maid! there's a  
curt'sy!

*Daugh.* Yours to command, i' th' way of hon-  
nesty.

How far is't now to th' end o' th' world, my mas-

*Doctor.* Why, a day's journey, wench. [ters?]

*Daugh.* Will you go with me?

*Wooser.* What shall we do there, wench?

*Daugh.* Why, play at stool-ball:

What is there else to do?

*Wooser.* I am content,

If we shall keep our wedding there.

*Daugh.* 'Tis true;

For there I will assure you we shall find  
Some blind priest for the purpose, that will venture  
To marry us, for here they are nice and foolish;  
Besides, my father must be hang'd to-morrow,  
And that would be a blot i' th' business.

Are not you Palamon?

*Wooser.* Do not you know me?

*Daugh.* Yes; but you care not for me! I have  
nothing

But this poor petticoat, and two coarse smocks.

*Wooser.* That's all one; I will have you.

*Daugh.* Will you surely?

*Wooser.* Yes; by this fair hand, will I.

*Daugh.* We'll to bed then.

*Wooser.* Even when you will.

*Jailor.* Oh, sir, you would fain be nibbling.

*Wooser.* Why do you rub my kiss off?

*Daugh.* 'Tis a sweet one,

And will perfume me finely 'gainst the wedding.

Is not this your cousin Arcite?

*Doctor.* Yes, sweetheart;

And I am glad my cousin Palamon

Has made so fair a choice.

*Daugh.* Do you think he'll have me?

*Doctor.* Yes, without doubt.

*Daugh.* Do you think so too?

*Jailor.* Yes.

*Daugh.* We shall have many children. Lord,  
how you're grown!

My Palamon I hope will grow too, finely,  
Now he's at liberty: Alas, poor chicken,  
He was kept down with hard meat, and ill lodging,  
But I will kiss him up again.

*Enter a Messenger.*

*Mess.* What do you here?

You'll lose the noblest sight that e'er was seen.

*Jailor.* Are they i' th' field?

*Mess.* They are:

You bear a charge there too.

*Jailor.* I'll away straight.—

I must even leave you here.

*Doctor.* Nay, we'll go with you;

I will not lose the fight.

*Jailor.* How did you like her?

*Doctor.* I'll warrant you within these three or  
four days

I'll make her right again.—You must not from her,  
But still preserve her in this way.

*Wooser.* I will.

*Doctor.* Let's get her in.

*Wooser.* Come, sweet, we'll go to dinner;

And then we'll play at cards.

*Daugh.* And shall we kiss too?

*Wooser.* A hundred times.

*Daugh.* And twenty?

vol. II.

*Wooser.* Ay, and twenty.

*Daugh.* And then we'll sleep together?

*Doctor.* Take her offer.

*Wooser.* Yes, marry will we.

*Daugh.* But you shall not hurt me.

*Wooser.* I will not, sweet.

*Daugh.* If you do, love, I'll cry. [Exit.

SCENE V.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, EMILIA, PERITHOOS, and  
Attendants.*

*Emi.* I'll not step further.

*Per.* Will you lose this sight?

*Emi.* I had rather see a wren hawk at a fly,  
Than this decision: Every blow that falls  
Threats a brave life; each stroke laments  
The place whereon it falls, and sounds more like  
A bell, than blade: I will stay here:  
It is enough, my hearing shall be punish'd  
With what shall happen, ('gainst the which there is  
No deafing) but to hear, not taint mine eye  
With dread sights it may shun.

*Per.* Sir, my good lord,  
Your sister will no further.

*Thes.* Oh, she must;  
She shall see deeds of honour in their kind,  
Which sometime shew well, pencill'd: Nature now  
Shall make and act the story, the belief  
Both seal'd with eye and ear. You must be pre-  
sent;

You are the victor's meed, the price and garland  
To crown the question's title.

*Emi.* Pardon me;

If I were there, I'd wink.

*Thes.* You must be there;

This trial is as 'twere i' th' night, and you  
The only star to shine.

*Emi.* I am extinct:

There is but envy in that light, which shews  
The one the other. Darkness, which ever was  
The dam of Horror, who does stand accursed  
Of many mortal millions, may even now,  
By casting her black mantle over both  
That neither could find other, get herself  
Some part of a good name, and many a murder  
Set off whereto she's guilty.

*Hip.* You must go.

*Emi.* In faith I will not.

*Thes.* Why, the knights must kindle  
Their valour at your eye: Know, of this war  
You are the treasure, and must needs be by  
To give the service pay.

*Emi.* Sir, pardon me;

The title of a kingdom may be tried  
Out of itself.

*Thes.* Well, well then, at your pleasure!  
Those that remain with you could wish their office  
To any of their enemies.

*Hip.* Farewell, sister!

I am like to know your husband 'fore yourself,  
By some small start of time: He whom the gods  
Do of the two know best, I pray them he  
Be made your lot!

[Exit THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, PERITHOOS, &c.]

*Emi.* Arcite is gently visaged; yet his eye  
Is like an engine bent, or a sharp weapon  
In a soft sheath; Mercy, and manly courage,  
Are bedfellows in his visage. Palamon

Has a most menacing aspect; his brow  
Is graved, and seems to bury what it frowns on;  
Yet sometimes 'tis not so, but alters to  
The quality of his thoughts; long time his eye  
Will dwell upon his object; melancholy  
Becomes him nobly; so does Arcite's mirth;  
But Palamon's sadness is a kind of mirth,  
So mingled, as if Mirth did make him sad,  
And Sadness, merry; those darker humours that  
Stick misbecomingly on others, on him  
Live in fair dwelling.

[*Cornets. Trumpets sound as to a charge, within.*  
Hark, how you spurs to spirit do incite  
The princes to their proof! Arcite may win me;  
And yet may Palamon wound Arcite, to  
The spoiling of his figure. Oh, what pity  
Enough for such a chance! If I were by,  
I might do hurt; for they would glance their eyes  
Toward my seat, and in that motion might  
Omit a ward, or forfeit an offence,  
Which craved that very time; it is much better  
I am not there: oh, better never born  
Than minister to such harm!—

[*Cornets. Cry within, A Palamon!*  
—What is the chance?

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The cry's a Palamon.  
*Emi.* Then he has won. 'Twas ever likely:  
He look'd all grace and success, and he is  
Doubtless the prim'st of men. I pry'thee run  
And tell me how it goes.

[*Shout, and Cornets; cry, A Palamon.*

*Serv.* Still Palamon.

*Emi.* Run and enquire. Poor servant, thou  
hast lost!  
Upon my right side still I wore thy picture,  
Palamon's on the left: Why so, I know not;  
I had no end in't else; Chance would have it so.  
On the sinister side the heart lies; Palamon  
Had the best boding chance.—[*Another cry and  
shout within, and Cornets.*—This burst  
of clamour  
Is sure the end o' the combat.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* They said that Palamon had Arcite's  
body  
Within an inch o' th' pyramid, that the cry  
Was general "a Palamon;" but anon,  
The assistants made a brave redemption, and  
The two bold tilers at this instant are  
Hand to hand at it.  
*Emi.* Were they metamorphosed  
Both into one—Oh, why? there were no woman  
Worth so composed a man! Their single share,  
Their nobleness peculiar to them, gives  
The prejudice of disparity, value's shortness  
To any lady breathing.—More exulting?

[*Cornets. Cry within, Arcite, Arcite!*

Palamon still?

*Serv.* Nay, now the sound is Arcite.

*Emi.* I pry'thee lay attention to the cry;  
Set both thine ears to th' business.

[*Cornets. A great shout, and cry, Arcite, Victory!*

*Serv.* The cry is  
Arcite, and Victory! Hark! Arcite, victory!  
The combat's consummation is proclaim'd  
By the wind instruments.

*Emi.* Half sights saw  
That Arcite was no babe: God's lid, his richness

And costliness of spirit look'd through him! it  
No more be hid in him than fire in flax, [could  
Than humble banks can go to law with waters,  
That drift-winds force to raging. I did think  
Good Palamon would miscarry; yet I knew not  
Why I did think so: Our reasons are not prophets,  
When off our fancies are. They are coming off;  
Alas, poor Palamon!

[*Cornets.*

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, PERITHOOS, ARSITE as victor,  
Attendants, &c.*

*Thes.* Lo, where our sister is in expectation,  
Yet quaking and unsettled. Fairest Emilia,  
The gods, by their divine arbitrament,  
Have given you this knight: He is a good one  
As ever struck at head. Give me your hands!  
Receive you her, you him; be plighted with  
A love that grows as you decay!

*Arco. Emily,*  
To buy you I have lost what's dearest to me,  
Sav what is bought; and yet I purchase cheaply,  
As I do rate your value.

*Thes.* Oh, loved sister,  
He speaks now of as brave a knight as e'er  
Did spur a noble steed: Surely the gods  
Would have him die a bachelor, lest his race  
Should shew i' th' world too godlike! His behaviour  
So charm'd me, that methought Alcides was  
To him a sow of lead: If I could praise  
Each part of him to th' all I have spoke, you  
Arcite

Did not lose by't; for he that was thus good,  
Encounter'd yet his better. I have heard  
Two emulous Philomels beat the ear o' th' night  
With their contentious throats, now one the higher.  
Anon the other, then again the first,  
And by and by out-breasted, that the sense  
Could not be judge between 'em: So it fared  
Good space between these Kinsmen; till Heaven  
did

Make hardly one the winner.—Wear the garland  
With joy that you have won! For the subdued,  
Give them our present justice, since I know  
Their lives but pinch 'em; let it here be done.  
The scene's not for our seeing: Go we hence,  
Right joyful, with some sorrow! Arm your prize.  
I know you will not lose her. Hippolita,  
I see one eye of yours conceives a tear,  
The which it will deliver. [Flourish.

*Emi.* Is this winning?  
Oh, all you heavenly powers, where is your mercy:  
But that your wills have said it must be so,  
And charge me live to comfort this unfriended,  
This miserable prince, that cuts away  
A life more worthy from him than all women,  
I should, and would die too.

*Hip.* Infinite pity,  
That four such eyes should be so fix'd on one,  
That two must needs be blind for't!

*Thes.* So it is. [Exeunt.

SCENE VI.—An open Place in the City, with a  
Scaffold.

*Enter PALAMON and his Knights pinioned, Jailer,  
Executioner, and Guard.*

*Pal.* There's many a man alive, that hath out-  
lived  
The love o' th' people; yea, i' th' self-same state  
Stands many a father with his child: Some comfort

We have by so considering; we expire  
And not without men's pity; to live still,  
Have their good wishes; we prevent  
The loathsome misery of age, beguile  
The gout and rheum, that in lag hours attend  
For grey approachers; we come towards the gods  
Young, and unwapper'd, not halting under crimes  
Many and stale; that sure shall please the gods  
Sooner than such, to give us nectar with 'em,  
For we are more clear spirits. My dear kinsmen,  
Whose lives (for this poor comfort) are laid down,  
You have sold 'em too, too cheap.

1 *Knight*. What ending could be  
Of more content? O'er us the victors have  
Fortune, whose title is as momentary  
As to us death is certain; a grain of honour  
They not o'er-weigh us.

2 *Knight*. Let us bid farewell;  
And with our patience anger tottering Fortune,  
Who at her certain't reels!

3 *Knight*. Come; who begins?  
*Pal*. Even he that led you to this banquet, shall  
Taste to you all.—Ah ha, my friend, my friend!  
Your gentle Daughter gave me freedom once;  
You'll see't done now for ever. Pray how does she?  
I heard she was not well; her kind of ill  
Gave me some sorrow.

*Jailor*. Sir, she's well restored,  
And to be married shortly.

*Pal*. By my short life,  
I am most glad on't! 'tis the latest thing  
I shall be glad of; pr'ythee tell her so;  
Commend me to her, and to piece her portion  
Tender her this.

1 *Knight*. Nay, let's be offerers all!

2 *Knight*. Is it a maid?

*Pal*. Verily, I think so;  
A right good creature, more to me deserving  
Than I can quite or speak of!

All *Knights*. Commend us to her.  
*[Give their purses.]*

*Jailor*. The gods requite you all,  
And make her thankful!

*Pal*. Adieu! and let my life be now as short  
As my leave-taking. *[Lies on the block.]*

1 *Knight*. Lead, courageous cousin!

2 *Knight*. We'll follow cheerfully.

*[A great noise within, crying, Run, save, hold!]*

*Enter in haste a Messenger.*

*Mess*. Hold, hold! oh, hold, hold, hold!

*Enter PERITHOUS in haste.*

*Per*. Hold, ho! it is a cursed haste you made,  
If you have done so quickly.—Noble Palamon,  
The gods will shew their glory in a life  
That thou art yet to lead.

*Pal*. That can be, when  
Venus I have said is false? How do things fare?

*Per*. Arise, great sir, and give the tidings ear  
That are most dearly sweet and bitter!

*Pal*. What  
Hath waked us from our dream?

*Per*. List then! Your cousin,  
Mounted upon a steed that Emily  
Did first bestow on him, a black one, owing  
Not a hair worth of white, which some will say  
Weakens his price, and many will not buy  
His goodness with this note; which superstition  
Here finds allowance: On this horse is Arcite,  
Trotting the stones of Athens, which the calkins

Did rather tell than trample; for the horse  
Would make his length a mile, if't pleased his  
rider

To put pride in him: As he thus went counting  
The flinty pavement, dancing as 'twere to the  
music

His own hoofs made (for, as they say, from iron  
Came music's origin) what envious flint,  
Cold as old Saturn, and like him possess'd  
With fire malevolent, darted a spark,  
Or what fierce sulphur else, to this end made,  
I comment not; the hot horse, hot as fire,  
Took toy at this, and fell to what disorder  
His power could give his will, bounds, comes on end,  
Forgets school-doing, being therein train'd,  
And of kind manage; pig-like he whines  
At the sharp rowl, which he frets at rather  
Than any jot obeys; seeks all foul means  
Of boisterous and rough jady, to dis-seat  
His lord that kept it bravely: When nought served,  
When neither curb would crack, girth break, nor  
diff'ring plunges

Dis-root his rider whence he grew, but that  
He kept him 'tween his legs, on his hind-hoofs  
On end he stands,  
That Arcite's legs being higher than his head,  
Seem'd with strange art to hang: His victor's  
wreath

Even then fell off his head; and presently  
Backward the jade comes o'er, and his full poize  
Becomes the rider's load. Yet is he living,  
But such a vessel 'tis that floats but for  
The surge that next approaches: He much desires  
To have some speech with you. Lo, he appears!

*Enter THESEUS, HIPPOLITA, EMILIA, ARCITE brought in a  
Chair.*

*Pal*. Oh, miserable end of our alliance!  
The gods are mighty!—Arcite, if thy heart,  
Thy worthy manly heart, be yet unbroken,  
Give me thy last words! I am Palamon,  
One that yet loves thee dying.

*Arc*. Take Emilia,  
And with her all the world's joy. Reach thy  
hand;

Farewell! I have told my last hour. I was false,  
Yet never treacherous: Forgive me, cousin!  
One kiss from fair Emilia! *[Kisses her.]* 'Tis  
done:

Take her. I die! *[Dies.]*

*Pal*. Thy brave soul seek Elysium!

*Emi*. I'll close thine eyes, prince; blessed souls  
be with thee!

Thou art a right good man; and while I live  
This day I give to tears.

*Pal*. And I to honour.

*Thes*. In this place first you fought; even very  
here

I sunder'd you: Acknowledge to the gods  
Our thanks that you are living.  
His part is play'd, and, though it were too short,  
He did it well: Your day is lengthen'd, and  
The blissful dew of Heaven does arrose you;  
The powerful Venus well hath graced her altar,  
And given you your love; our master Mars  
Has vouch'd his oracle, and to Arcite gave  
The grace of the contention: So the deities  
Have shew'd due justice. Bear this hence!

*Pal*. Oh, cousin,  
That we should things desire, which do cost us

The loss of our desire ! That nought could buy  
Dear love, but loss of dear love !

*Thes.* Never Fortune

Did play a subtler game: The conquer'd triumphs,  
The victor has the loss ; yet in the passage  
The gods have been most equal. Palamon,  
Your kinsman hath confess'd the right o' the lady  
Did lie in you ; for you first saw her, and  
Even then proclaim'd your fancy ; he restored her,  
As your stolen jewel, and desired your spirit  
To send him hence forgiven : The gods my justice  
Take from my hand, and they themselves become  
The executioners. Lead your lady off ;  
And call your lovers from the stage of death,

Whom I adopt my friends ! A day or two  
Let us look sadly, and give grace unto  
The funeral of Arcite ! in whose end  
The visages of Bridegrooms we'll put on,  
And smile with Palamon ; for whom an hour  
But one hour since, I was as dearly sorry,  
As glad of Arcite ; and am now as glad,  
As for him sorry. Oh, you heavenly charmers,  
What things you make of us ! For what we lack  
We laugh, for what we have are sorry ; still  
Are children in some kind. Let us be thankful,  
For that which is, and with You leave dispute  
That are above our question ! Let's go off,  
And bear us like the time ! *[Flourish. Exeunt.]*

### EPILOGUE.

I WOULD now ask ye how ye like the play ;  
But, as it is with schoolboys cannot say,  
I am cruel fearful ! Pray yet stay a while,  
And let me look upon ye ! No man smile ?  
Then it goes hard, I see : He that has  
Loved a young handsome wench then, shew his face !  
'Tis strange if none be here ; and if he will  
Against his conscience, let him hiss, and kill  
Our market ! 'Tis in vain, I see, to stay ye ;  
Have at the worst can come, then ! Now what say ye ?  
And yet mistake me not : I am not bold ;  
We have no such cause. If the tale we have told  
(For 'tis no other) any way content ye,  
(For to that honest purpose it was meant ye)  
We have our end ; and ye shall have ere long  
I dare say many a better, to prolong  
Your old loves to us : We, and all our might,  
Rest at your service. Gentlemen, good-night !

*[Flourish.]*

# THE MAID IN THE MILL.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

DON PHILIPPO, *King of Spain.*  
 OTRANTE, *a Spanish Count, in Love with FLORIMEL.*  
 JULIO, *a Nobleman, Uncle to ANTONIO.*  
 BELLIDES, *Father to ISMENIA, Enemy to JULIO.*  
 LISAURO, *Brother to ISMENIA, BELLIDES' Son.*  
 TERZO, *Kinsman to LISAURO, and Friend to BELLIDES.*  
 ANTONIO, *in Love with ISMENIA, an Enemy to BELLIDES.*  
 MARTINE, *Friend to ANTONIO, and his secret Rival.*  
 GERASTO, *Friend to OTRANTE.*  
 PEDRO, }  
 MONCADO, } *Two Courtiers.*  
 GOSTANZO, }  
 GIRALDO, } *Three Gentlemen, Friends to JULIO.*  
 PHILIPPO, }

VERTIGO, *a French Tailor.*  
 FRANIO, *a Miller, supposed Father to FLORIMEL.*  
 BUSTOPHA, *FRANIO'S Son, a Clown.*  
 PEDRO, *a Songster.*  
 Lords attending the King in progress.  
 Gentlemen, Shepherd, Constable, Officers, Servants, a Boy, &c.

ISMENIA, *Daughter to BELLIDES, Mistress of ANTONIO.*  
 AMINTA, *Cousin to ISMENIA, and her private competitor in ANTONIO'S Love.*  
 FLORIMEL, *supposed Daughter to FRANIO, Daughter to JULIO, stolen from him a child.*  
 GILLIAN, *FRANIO'S Wife.*  
 Country Maids.

SCENE,—TOLEDO, AND THE NEIGHBOURING COUNTRY.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—*The Country.*

*Enter LISAURO, TERZO, ISMENIA, and AMINTA.*

*Lisauro.* Let the coach go round! we'll walk along these meadows, And meet at port again.—Come, my fair sister, These cool shades will delight you.

*Amin.* Pray be merry: The birds sing as they meant to entertain you; Every thing smiles abroad; methinks the river, As he steals by, curls up his head, to view you: Every thing is in love.

*Ism.* You would have it so. You, that are fair, are easy of belief, cousin; The theme slides from your tongue—

*Amin.* I fair? I thank you! Mine is but shadow when your sun shines by me. *Ism.* No more of this; you know your worth, Where are we now? [Aminta.]

*Amin.* Hard by the town, Ismenia.

*Terzo.* Close by the gates.

*Ism.* 'Tis a fine air.

*Lis.* A delicate;

The way so sweet and even, that the coach Would be a tumbling trouble to our pleasures. Methinks I am very merry.

*Ism.* I am sad.

*Amin.* You are ever so when we entreat you, cousin.

*Ism.* I have no reason. Such a trembling here, Over my heart, methinks—

*Amin.* Sure you are fasting, Or not slept well to-night; some dream, Ismenia?  
*Ism.* My dreams are like my thoughts, honest and innocent; Yours are unhappy. Who are these that coast us? You told me the walk was private.

*Enter ANTONIO and MARTINE.*

*Terzo.* 'Tis most commonly.

*Ism.* Two proper men! It seems they have some business;

With me none sure. I do not like their faces; They are not of our company.

*Terzo.* No, cousin.—

*Lisauro,* we are dogg'd.

*Lis.* I find it, cousin.

*Ant.* What handsome lady?

*Mart.* Yes, she's very handsome;

They are handsome both.

*Ant.* Martine, stay; we are cozen'd.

*Mart.* I will go up; A woman is no wildfire.

*Ant.* Now, by my life, she is sweet. Stay, good Martine!

They are of our enemies, the house of Bellides; Our mortal enemies.

*Mart.* Let them be devils, They appear so handsomely, I will go forward. If these be enemies, I'll ne'er seek friends more.

*Ant.* Pr'ythee, forbear! the gentlewomen—

*Mart.* That's it, man, [Ladies— That moves me like a gin. Pray ye stand off.—

*Lis.* They are both our enemies, both hate us  
By this fair day, our mortal foes! [equally;

*Terzo.* I know 'em.—  
And come here to affront! How they gape at us!  
They shall have gaping work. [They draw.

*Ism.* Why your swords, gentlemen?  
*Terzo.* Pray you stand you off, cousin;—  
And good now leave your whistling!—We are  
Back, back, I say! [abused all!—

*Lis.* Go back!  
*Ant.* We are no dogs, sir,  
To run back on command.

*Terzo.* We'll make ye run, sir.  
*Ant.* Having a civil charge of handsome ladies,  
We are your servants! Pray ye no quarrel, gen-  
There's way enough for both. [tlemen.

*Lis.* We'll make it wider.  
*Ant.* If you will fight, arm'd for this saint, have  
at ye! [They fight.

*Ism.* Oh, me unhappy! Are ye gentlemen,  
Discreet and civil, and in open view thus—

*Amin.* What will men think of us! Nay, you  
may kill us.

Mercy o' me! through my petticoat? what bloody  
gentlemen!

*Ism.* Make way through me, ye had best, and  
kill an innocent!

Brother! why, cousin! by this light, I'll die too!  
This gentleman is temperate; be you merciful;  
Alas, the swords!

*Amin.* You had best run me through the belly!  
'Twill be a valiant thrust.

*Ism.* I faint amongst ye.  
*Ant.* Pray ye be not fearful! I have done,  
sweet lady;

My sword's already awed, and shall obey you.  
I come not here to violate sweet beauty;  
I bow to that.

*Ism.* Brother, you see this gentleman,  
This noble gentleman—

*Lis.* Let him avoid then,  
And leave our walk!

*Ant.* The lady may command, sir;  
She bears an eye more dreadful than your weapon.

*Ism.* What a sweet nature this man has! Dear  
Put up your sword. [brother,

*Terzo.* Let them put up, and walk then.

*Ant.* No more loud words! there's time enough  
before us.

For shame, put up! do honour to these beauties.  
*Mart.* Our way is this; we will not be denied it.

*Terzo.* And ours is this, we will not be cross'd  
in it.

*Ant.* Whate'er your way is, lady, 'tis a fair one;  
And may it never meet with rude hands more,  
Nor rough uncivil tongues!

[Exit ANTONIO and MARTINE.

*Ism.* I thank you, sir,  
Indeed I thank you nobly!—A brave enemy:  
Here's a sweet temper now! This is a man, brother;  
This gentleman's anger is so nobly seated,  
That it becomes him; yours proclaim ye monsters.  
What if he be your house-foe? we may brag on't;  
We have ne'er a friend in all our house so honour-  
able:

I had rather from an enemy, my brother,  
Learn worthy distances and modest difference,  
Than from a race of empty friends loud nothings.  
I am hurt between ye.

*Amin.* So am I, I fear too.

I am sure their swords were between my legs.

Dear cousin,  
Why look you pale? where are you hurt?

*Ism.* I know not;  
But here methinks.

*Lis.* Unlace her, gentle cousin.

*Ism.* My heart, my heart! and yet I bless the  
*Amin.* Is it so dangerous? [hurter.

*Ism.* Nay, nay, I faint not.

*Amin.* Here is no blood that I find; sure 'tis  
inward.

*Ism.* Yes, yes, 'tis inward; 'twas a subtle  
The hurt not to be cured, I fear. [weapon;

*Lis.* The coach there!

*Amin.* May be a fright.

*Ism.* Aminta, 'twas a sweet one;

And yet a cruel.

*Amin.* Now I find the wound plain:  
A wond'rous handsome gentleman—

*Ism.* Oh, no deeper!  
Pr'ythee be silent, wench; it may be thy case.

*Amin.* You must be search'd; the wound will  
And of so sweet a nature— [rankle, cousin.—

*Ism.* Dear Aminta,

Make it not sorer!

*Amin.* And on my life admires you.

*Ism.* Call the coach, cousin.

*Amin.* The coach, the coach!

*Terzo.* 'Tis ready. Bring the coach there!

*Lis.* Well, my brave enemies, we shall yet meet  
And our old hate shall testify— [yc.

*Terzo.* It shall, cousin. [Exit.

SCENE II.—TOLEDO. A Room in the House  
of ANTONIO.

Enter ANTONIO and MARTINE.

*Ant.* Their swords! alas, I weigh 'em not, dear  
friend;

The indiscretion of the owners blunts 'em;  
The fury of the house affrights not me,  
It spends itself in words. Oh me, Martine!

There was a two-edged eye, a lady carried,  
A weapon that no valour can avoid,  
Nor art, the hand of spirit, put aside.

Oh, friend, it broke out on me, like a bullet  
Wrapt in a cloud of fire; that point, Martine,  
Dazzled my sense, and was too subtle for me;

Shot like a comet in my face, and wounded  
(To my eternal ruin) my heart's valour.

*Mart.* Methinks she was no such piece.

*Ant.* Blaspheme not, sir!

She is so far beyond weak commendation,  
That impudence will blush to think ill of her.

*Mart.* I see it not, and yet I had both eyes open.  
And I could judge; I know there is no beauty

Till our eyes give it 'em, and make 'em handsome:  
What's red and white, unless we do allow 'em?  
A green face else; and methinks such another—

*Ant.* Peace, thou lewd heretic! thou judge of  
beauties?

Thou hast an excellent sense for a sign-post, friend.  
Didst thou not see, (I'll swear thou art stone-blind  
else,

As blind as Ignorance) when she appear'd first,  
Aurora breaking in the East? and through her face.  
(As if the hours and graces had strew'd roses)  
A blush of wonder flying? when she was frighted  
At our uncivil swords, didst thou not mark

How far beyond the purity of snow  
The soft wind drives, whiteness of innocence,  
Or anything that bears celestial paleness,  
She appear'd o' th' sudden? Didst thou not see  
her tears

When she entreated? Oh, thou reprobate!  
Didst thou not see those orient tears flow'd from  
The little worlds of love? A set, Martine, [her,  
Of such sanctified beads, and a holy heart to love,  
I could live ever a religious hermit.

*Mart.* I do believe a little; and yet, methinks,  
She was of the lowest stature.

*Ant.* A rich diamond,  
Set neat and deep! Nature's chief art, Martine,  
Is to reserve her models curious,  
Not cumbersome and great; and such a one,  
For fear she should exceed upon her matter,  
Has she framed this. Oh, 'tis a spark of beauty!  
And where they appear so excellent in little,  
They will but flame in great; extension spoils 'em.  
Martine, learn this; the narrower that our eyes  
Keep way unto our object, still the sweeter  
That comes unto us: Great bodies are like coun-  
tries,

Discovering still, toil and no pleasure finds 'em.  
*Mart.* A rare cosmographer for a small island!  
Now I believe she's handsome.

*Ant.* Believe heartily;  
Let thy belief, though long a-coming, save thee.

*Mart.* She was, certain, fair.  
*Ant.* But hark you, friend Martine!

Do not believe yourself too far before me;  
For then you may wrong me, sir.  
*Mart.* Who bid you teach me?  
Do you shew me meat, and stitch my lips, Antonio?  
Is that fair play?

*Ant.* Now if thou shouldst abuse me—  
And yet I know thee for an arrant wench,  
A most immoderate thing; thou canst not love  
long.

*Mart.* A little serves my turn; I fly at all games;  
But I believe—

*Ant.* How if we never see her more?  
She is our enemy.

*Mart.* Why are you jealous then?  
As far as I conceive, she hates our whole house.

*Ant.* Yet, good Martine—  
*Mart.* Come, come; I have mercy on you:  
You shall enjoy her in your dream, Antonio,  
And I'll not hinder. Though, now I persuade  
myself—

*Ant.* Sit with persuasion down, and you deal  
I will look better on her. [honestly;

*Enter AMINTA with a Letter.*

*Mart.* Stay; who's this, friend?  
*Ant.* Is't not the other gentlewoman?  
*Mart.* Yes. A letter!  
She brings no challenge sure? If she do, Antonio,  
I hope she'll be a second too; I am for her.

*Amin.* A good hour, gentlemen!  
*Ant.* You are welcome, lady!  
'Tis like our late rude passage has pour'd on us  
Some reprehension.

*Amin.* No, I bring no anger;  
Though some deserved it.

*Ant.* Sure we are all to blame, lady:  
But for my part, in all humility,  
And with no little shame, I ask your pardons!  
Indeed I wear no sword to fright sweet beauties.

*Amin.* You have it; and this letter, pray you  
And my commission's done. [sir, view it,

*Mart.* Have you none for me, lady?

*Amin.* Not at this time.

*Mart.* I am sorry for't; I can read too.

*Amin.* I am glad: But, sir, to keep you in your  
exercise,

You may chance meet with one ill written.

*Mart.* Thank you!

So it be a woman's, I can pick the meaning;

For likely they have but one end.

*Amin.* You say true, sir. [Exit.

*Ant.* Martine, my wishes are come home and  
loaden,

Loaden with brave return: most happy, happy!  
I am a blessed man!—Where's the gentlewoman?

*Mart.* Gone, the spirit's gone; what news?

*Ant.* 'Tis from the lady;

From her we saw; from that same miracle!

I know her name now. Read but these three  
lines;

Read with devotion, friend! the lines are holy.

*Mart.* [Reading.] "I dare not chide you in my  
letter, sir;

'Twill be too gentle: If you please to look me  
In the West-street, and find a fair stone window  
Carved with white cupids, there I'll entertain you:  
Night and discretion guide you. Call me Ismenia."

*Ant.* Give it me again! Come, come; fly, fly!

*Mart.* There may be danger. [I am all fire!

*Ant.* So there is to drink,

When men are thirsty; to eat hastily,  
When we are hungry; so there is in sleep, friend,  
Obstructions then may rise and smother us;  
We may die laughing-choak'd; even at devotions,  
An apoplexy, or a sudden palsy,  
May strike us down.

*Mart.* May be, a train to catch you.

*Ant.* Then I am caught; and let Love answer  
'Tis not my folly, but his infamy; [for it!

And if he be adored, and dare do vile things—

*Mart.* Well, I will go.

*Ant.* She is a lady, sir,

A maid, I think, and where that holy spell  
Is flung about me, I ne'er fear a villainy.

'Tis almost night; away, friend!

*Mart.* I am ready:

I think I know the house too.

*Ant.* Then we are happy. [Exit.

SCENE III.—*Night. A Street before the House  
of BELLIDES.*

*Enter ISMENIA and AMINTA.*

*Ism.* Did you meet him?

*Amin.* Yes.

*Ism.* And did you give my letter?

*Amin.* To what end went I?

*Ism.* Are you sure it was he?

Was it that gentleman?

*Amin.* Do you think I was blind?

I went to seek no carrier, nor no midwife.

*Ism.* What kind of man was he? Thou may'st  
be deceived, friend.

*Amin.* A man with a nose on's face; I think he  
And hands, for sure he took it. [had eyes too;

*Ism.* What an answer!

*Amin.* What questions are these to one that's  
hot and troubled!

Do you think me a babe? Am I not able, cousin,  
At my years and discretion, to deliver  
A letter handsomely? Is that such a hard thing?  
Why every wafer-woman will undertake it:  
A sempster's girl, or a tailor's wife, will not miss it:  
A puritan hostess, cousin, would scorn these  
My legs are weary. [questions.]

*Ism.* I'll make 'em well again,

*Amin.* Are they at supper?

*Ism.* Yes, and I am not well,  
Nor desire no company. Look out, 'tis darkish.

*Amin.* I see nothing yet. Assure yourself,  
If he be a man, he will not miss. [Ismenia,

*Ism.* It may be he is modest,  
And that may pull him back from seeing me;  
Or has made some wild construction of my easiness:  
I blush to think what I writ.

*Amin.* What should you blush at?

Blush when you act your thoughts, not when you  
write 'em;

Blush soft between a pair of sheets, sweet cousin.  
Though he be a curious-carried gentleman, I  
cannot think

He's so unnatural to leave a woman,  
(A young, a noble, and a beauteous woman)  
Leave her in her desires. Men of this age  
Are rather prone to come before they are sent for.  
Hark! I hear something: Up to th' chamber,  
You may spoil all else. [cousin!]

*Enter ANTONIO and MARTINE.*

*Ism.* Let me see! They are gentlemen;  
It may be they.

*Amin.* They are they. Get you up,  
And like a load-star draw him!

*Ism.* I am shame-faced!

[*Excunt ISMENIA and AMINTA into the house.*]

*Ant.* This is the street.

*Mart.* I am looking for the house.  
Close, close, pray you close!—Here.

*Ant.* No; this is a merchant's;  
I know the man well.

*Mart.* And this is a 'pothecary's: I have lain  
here many times,  
For a looseness in my hilts.

*Ant.* Have you not past it?

*Mart.* No sure;

There is no house of mark that we have 'scaped yet.  
*Ant.* What place is this?

*Mart.* Speak softer! 'may be spies.  
If any, this; a goodly window too,  
Carved fair above! that I perceive. 'Tis dark;  
But she has such a lustre—

*ISMENIA and AMINTA appear at the Window with a Taper.*

*Ant.* Yes, Martino;

So radiant she appears—

*Mart.* Else we may miss, sir.  
The night grows vengeance black: Pray Heaven  
she shine clear!

Hark, hark! a window, and a candle too!

*Ant.* Step close. 'Tis she! I see the cloud  
disperse;

And now the beauteous planet—

*Mart.* Ha! 'Tis indeed.

Now, by the soul of love, a divine creature!

*Ism.* Sir, sir!

*Ant.* Most blessed lady!

*Ism.* Pray you stand out.

*Amin.* You need not fear; there's nobody now  
stirring.

*Mart.* Beyond his commendation I am taken,  
Infinite strangely taken. [Aside.]

*Amin.* I love that gentleman;  
Methinks he has a dainty nimble body:  
I love him heartily.

*Ism.* 'Tis the right gentleman;

But what to say to him?—Sir—

*Amin.* Speak.

*Ant.* I wait still;

And will do till I grow another pillar,  
To prop this house, so it please you.

*Ism.* Speak softly;

And pray you speak truly too.

*Ant.* I never lied, lady.

*Ism.* And do not think me impudent to ask you—  
I know you are an enemy, (speak low!)  
But I would make you a friend.

*Ant.* I am friend to beauty;

There is no handsomeness I dare be foe to.

*Ism.* Are you married?

*Ant.* No.

*Ism.* Are you betrothed?

*Ant.* No, neither.

*Ism.* Indeed, fair sir?

*Ant.* Indeed, fair sweet, I am not.

Most beauteous virgin, I am free as you are.

*Ism.* That may be, sir; then you are miserable,  
For I am bound.

*Ant.* Happy the bonds that hold you!

Or do you put them on yourself for pleasure?

Sure they be sweeter far than liberty:

There is no blessedness but in such bondage.

Give me that freedom, madam, I beseech you,

(Since you have questioned me so cunningly)

To ask you whom you are bound to; he must be  
certain

More than human, that bounds in such a beauty:

Happy that happy chain! such links are heavenly.

*Ism.* Pray you do not mock me, sir.

*Ant.* Pray you, lady, tell me.

*Ism.* Will you believe? and will you keep it to  
And not scorn what I speak? [you?]

*Ant.* I dare not, madam;

As oracle, what you say I dare swear to.

*Ism.* I'll set the candle by, for I shall blush  
now—

Fy, how it doubles in my mouth! It must out.—  
'Tis you I am bound to.

*Ant.* Speak that word again!

I understand you not.

*Ism.* 'Tis you I am bound to.

*Ant.* Here is another gentleman.

*Ism.* 'Tis you, sir.

*Amin.* He may be loved too.

*Mart.* Not by thee; first curse me! [Aside.]

*Ism.* And if I knew your name—

*Ant.* Antonio, madam.

*Ism.* Antonio, take this kiss; 'tis you I am  
bound to.

*Ant.* And when I set you free, may Heaven for-  
sake me!

*Ismenia—*

*Ism.* Yes, now I perceive you love me;  
You have learned my name.

*Ant.* Hear but some vows I make to you;  
Hear but the protestations of a true love.

*Ism.* No, no, not now: Vows should be cheer-  
ful things,

Done in the clearest light, and noblest testimony:  
No vow, dear sir: tie not my fair belief

To such strict terms; those men have broken credits,  
Loose and dismember'd faiths, my dear Antonio,  
That splinter 'em with vows. Am I not too bold?

Correct me when you please.

*Ant.* I had rather hear you,  
For so sweet music never struck mine ears yet.  
Will you believe now?

*Ism.* Yes.

*Ant.* I am yours.

*Ism.* Speak louder;

If you answer the priest so low, you'll lose your wedding.

*Mart.* Would I might speak! I would holloa.

*Ant.* Take my heart;

And if it be not firm and honest to you,  
Heaven—

*Ism.* Peace; no more! I'll keep your heart, and credit it:

Keep you your word. When will you come again, friend?

For this time we have woo'd indifferently:  
I would fain see you, when I dare be bolder.

*Ant.* Why, any night. Only, dear noble mistress,  
Pardon three days! My uncle Julio  
Has bound me to attend him upon promise,  
Upon expectation too: We have rare sports there,

Rare country sports; I would you could but see  
Dare you so honour me? [*'em!*]

*Ism.* I dare not be there;

You know I dare not; no, I must not, friend.

Where I may come with honourable freedom—

Alas, I am ill too; we in love—

*Ant.* You flout me.

*Ism.* Trust me, I do not; I speak truth, I am sickly,

And am in love; but you must be physician.

*Ant.* I'll make a plaister of my best affection.

*Ism.* Be gone! we have supp'd: I hear the people stir.

Take my best wishes! Give me no cause, Antonio,  
To curse this happy night.

*Ant.* I'll lose my life first.

A thousand kisses!

*Ism.* Take ten thousand back again!

*Mart.* I am dumb with admiration!—Shall we go, sir? [*Exit ANTONIO and MARTINE.*]

*Ism.* Dost thou know his uncle?

*Amin.* No, but I can ask, cousin.

*Ism.* I'll tell thee more of that. Come, let's to bed both;

And give me handsome dreams, Love, I beseech thee!

*Amin.* He has given you a handsome subject.

*Ism.* Pluck-to the windows. [*Exit.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*The Country. Before the Mill of Franio.*

*Enter BUSTOPHA.*

*Bust.* [*Reading.*] *The thund'ring seas, whose wat'ry fire*

*Washes the whiting-mops,  
The gentle whale, whose feet so fell  
Flies o'er the mountains' tops—*

*Fra.* [*Within.*] Boy!

*Bust.* *The thund'ring—*

*Fra.* [*Within.*] Why, boy Bustopha!

*Enter FRANIO.*

*Bust.* Here I am. *The gentle whale—*

*Fra.* Oh, are you here, sir? where's your sister?

*Bust.* *The gentle whale flies o'er the mountains'*

*Fra.* Where's your sister, man? [*tops—*]

*Bust.* *Washes the whiting-mops—*

*Fra.* Thou liest! she has none to wash. Mops?

The boy is half way out of his wits sure.

Sirrah, who am I?

*Bust.* *The thund'ring seas—*

*Fra.* Mad, stark mad!

*Bust.* Will you not give a man leave to con?

*Fra.* Yes, and 'fees too,

Ere I have done with you, sirrah. Am I your father?

*Bust.* The question is too hard for a child; ask me anything

That I have learned, and I will answer you.

*Fra.* Is that a hard question? Sirrah, am not I your father?

*Bust.* If I had my mother-wit I could tell you.

*Fra.* Are you a thief?

*Bust.* So far forth as the son of a miller.

*Fra.* Will you be hang'd?

*Bust.* Let it go by eldership.

*The gentle whale—*

*Fra.* Sirrah, lay by your foolish study there,  
And beat your brains about your own affairs; or—

*Bust.* I thank you!

You'd have me go under the sails, and beat  
My brains about your mill? a natural father you are!

*Fra.* I charge you go not to the sports to-day:  
Last night I gave you leave; now I recant.

*Bust.* Is the wind turn'd since last night?

*Fra.* Marry is it, sir:

Go no further than my mill; there's my command upon you.

*Bust.* I may go round about then as your mill does.

I will see your mill gelded, and his stones fried

In steaks, ere I deceive the country so!

Have I not my part to study? How shall

The sports go forward, if I be not there?

*Fra.* They'll want their fool indeed, if thou be'st not there.

*Bust.* Consider that, and go yourself.

*Fra.* I have fears, sir, that I cannot utter:

You go not, nor your sister; there's my charge.

*Bust.* The price of your golden thumb cannot hold me. [*Hounds in full cry within.*]

*Fra.* Ay, this was sport that I have tightly loved!

I could have kept company with the hounds—

*Bust.* You are fit for no other company yet.

*Fra.* Run with the hare,

And been in the whore's tail, i'faith!

*Bust.* That was

Before I was born: I did ever mistrust

I was a bastard, because *lapis* is  
In the singular number with me.

*Enter OTRANTE and GERASTO.*

*Otr.* Leave thou that game, Gerasto, and chase  
Do thou but follow it with my desires. [here;  
Thou'lt not return home empty.

*Ger.* I am prepared,  
My lord, with advantages: And see,  
Yonder's the subject I must work upon.

*Otr.* Her brother? 'tis: Methinks it should  
be easy:

That gross compound cannot but diffuse  
The soul, in such a latitude of ease,  
As to make dull her faculties, and lazy.  
What wit, above the least, can be in him,  
That reason ties together?

*Ger.* I have proved it, sir,  
And know the depth of it: I have the way  
To make him follow me a hackney-pace,  
With all that flesh about him: yes, and drag  
His sister after him. [*Cry of hounds.*

This baits the old one;

Rid you him, and leave me to the other. [*Exit.*

*Otr.* 'Tis well.—Oh, Franio, the good day to  
you!

You were not wont to hear this music standing;  
The beagle and the bugle you have loved,  
In the first rank of huntsmen.

*Bust.* The dogs cry out of him now.

*Fra.* Sirrah, leave your barking; I'll bite you

*Bust.* *Cur! cur!* [else.

*Fra.* Slave, dost call me dog?

*Otr.* Oh fy, sir!

He speaks Latin to you; he would know  
Why you'll bite him.

*Bust.* *Responde, cur!* You see his under-  
standing, my lord.

*Fra.* I shall have a time to curry you for this!—  
But, my lord, to answer you; the days have been  
I must have footed it before this hornpipe,  
Though I had hazarded my mill a-fire,  
And let the stones grind empty: But those  
dancings

Are done with me: I have good will to't still,  
And that's the best I can do.

*Otr.* Come, come, you shall be horsed;  
Your company deserves him; though you kill him,  
Run him blind, I care not.

*Bust.* He will do it

O' purpose, my lord, to bring him up to the mill.

*Fra.* Do not tempt me too far, my lord.

*Otr.* There is

A foot i' th' stirrop; I'll not leave you now.  
You shall see the game fall once again.

*Fra.* Well, my lord, I will make ready  
My legs for you, and try 'em once a-horseback.—  
Sirrah! my charge; keep it! [*Exit.*

*Bust.* Yes;

When you pare down your dish for conscience  
sake,

When your thumb's coin'd into *bona et legalis*,  
When you're a true man-miller.

*Otr.* What's the matter, Bustopha?

*Bust.* My lord, if you

Have e'er a drunken jade that has the staggers,  
That will fall twice the height of our mill with him,  
Set him o' th' back on him; a galled jennet  
That will winch him out o' th' saddle, and break  
one on's necks,

Or a shank of him (there was a fool  
Going that way, but the ass had better luck);  
Or one of your brave Barbaries, that would pass  
The Straits, and run into his own country with him:  
The first Moor he met would cut his throat  
For complexion's sake; there's as deadly feud  
between

A Moor and a miller, as between black and white.

*Otr.* Fy, fy! this is unnatural, Bustopha,  
Unless on some strong cause.

*Bust.* Be judge, my lord: I am studied in my  
part;

The Julian feast's to-day, the country expects me;  
I speak all the dumb-shows; my sister chosen  
For a nymph. "*The gentle whale, whose feet  
fell.*"

'Cry mercy! that was some of my part; but his  
charge is,

To keep the mill, and disappoint the revels.

*Otr.* Indeed, there it speaks shrewdly for thee,  
Expecting. [the country

*Bust.* Ay, and for mine own grace too.

*Otr.* Yes, and being studied too, and the main  
speaker too.

*Bust.* The main? why, all my speech lies in the  
main,

And the dry ground together: "*The thousand  
seas, whose—*"

*Otr.* Nay, then thou must go; thou'lt be much  
condemn'd else.

But then, o' th' other side, obedience.

*Bust.* Obedience? But speak your conscience  
now, my lord;

Am not I past asking blessing at these years?  
Speak as you're a lord; if you had a miller to your  
father—

*Otr.* I must yield to you, Bustopha;

Your reasons are so strong, I cannot contradict.  
This I think, if you go, your sister ought  
To go along with you.

*Bust.* There I stumble now:  
She is not at age.

*Otr.* Why, she's fifteen, and upwards.

*Bust.* Thereabouts.

*Otr.* That's woman's ripe age; as full as thou  
art

At one-and-twenty: She's manable, is she not?

*Bust.* I think not: Poor heart, she was never  
tried,

In my conscience. 'Tis a coy thing: she will not  
Kiss you a clown, not if he would kiss her—

*Otr.* What, man?

*Bust.* Not if he would kiss her, I say.

*Otr.* Oh, 'twas cleaner than I expected.—Well,  
sir,

I'll leave you to your own; but my opinion is,  
You may take her along.—This is half way;  
The rest, Gerasto;—and I hunt my prey. [*Exit.*

*Bust.* Away with the old miller, my lord!

And the mill strikes sail presently.

*Enter PEDRO, with GERASTO disguised as a blind Ballad-  
Singer.*

SONG.

*Ger.* Come follow me, you country-lasses!  
And you shall see such sport as passes:  
You shall dance, and I will sing;  
Pedro, he shall rub the string;  
Each shall have a loose-bodied gown  
Of green, and laugh till you lie down.  
Come follow me, come follow, &c.

Enter FLORIMEL.

*Bust.* Oh, sweet Diego, the sweetest Diego! Stay.—Sister Florimel!

*Flor.* What's that, brother?

*Bust.* Didst not hear Diego? Hear him, and thou'lt be ravish'd.

*Flor.* I have heard him sing, yet unravish'd, brother.

*Bust.* You had the better luck, sister. I was ravish'd

By my own consent. Come away: for the sports!

*Flor.* I have the fear of a father on me, brother.

*Bust.* Out! the thief is as safe as in his mill; He's hunting with our great landlord, the Don Strike up, Diego. [Otrante.—

*Flor.* But say he return before us, where's our excuse?

*Bust.* Strike up, Diego! Hast no strings to thy apron?

*Flor.* Well, the fault lie upon your head, brother.

*Bust.* My faults never mount so high, girl; they rise

But to my middle at most.—Strike up, Diego.

*Ger.* Follow me by the ear: I'll lead thee on, Bustopha, and pretty Florimel thy sister.

Oh, that I could see her!

*Bust.* Oh, Diego, there's two pities upon thee; Great pity thou art blind; and as great a pity, Thou canst not see.

SONG.

*Ger.* You shall have crowns of roses, daisies,  
Buds, where the honey-maker grazes:  
You shall taste the golden thighs,  
Such as in wax-chamber lies.  
What fruits please you, taste, freely pull,  
Till you have all your bellies full.  
Come follow me, &c.

*Bust.* Oh, Diego! the don Was not so sweet when he perfumed the steeple. [Exeunt.

SCENE II.—A Hall in the House of JULIO.

Enter ANTONIO and MARTINE.

*Mart.* Why, how now, friend? thou art not lost again?

*Ant.* Not lost? Why, all the world's a wilderness;

Some places peopled more by braver beasts Than others are; but faces, faces, man; May a man be caught with faces?

*Mart.* Without wonder, 'Tis odds against him: May not a good face Lead a man about by the nose? Alas, The nose is but a part against the whole.

*Ant.* But is it possible that two faces Should be so twinn'd in form, complexion, Figure, aspect, that neither wen, nor mole, The table of the brow, the eyes' lustre, The lips' cherry, neither the blush nor smile, Should give the one distinction from the other? Does Nature work in moulds?

*Mart.* Altogether; We are all one mould, one dust.

*Ant.* Thy reason's mouldy: I speak from the form, thou the matter. Why? Was it not ever one of Nature's glories, Nay, her great piece of wonder, that amongst So many millions millions of her works

She left the eye distinction, to cull out The one from other; yet all one name, the face? *Mart.* You must compare 'em by some other Of the body, if the face cannot do't. [part

*Ant.* Didst ask her name?

*Mart.* Yes, and who gave it her; And what they promised more, besides a spoon, And what apostle's picture: She is christen'd too, In token whereof she's called Isabella; The daughter of a country plow-swain by: If this be not true, she lies.

*Ant.* She cannot:

It would be seen, a blister on her lip, Should falsehood touch it, it is so tender. Had her name held, 't had been Ismenia, And not another of her name.

*Mart.* Shall I speak?

*Ant.* Yes, if thou wilt speak truth. Is she not wond'rous like?

*Mart.* As two garments of the same fashion, Cut from the same piece; yet, if any excel, This has the first; and in my judgment 'tis so.

*Ant.* 'Tis my opinion.

*Mart.* Were it the face

Where mine eyes should dwell, I would please both With this, as soon as one with the other.

*Ant.* And yet the other is the cause of this.

Had I not look'd upon Ismenia, I ne'er had stray'd beyond good-morrow's time In view of this.

*Mart.* 'Would I could leave him here! [Aside. 'Twere a free passage to Ismenia.

I must now blow, as to put out the fire; Yet kindle't more.—You not consider, sir, The great disparity is in their bloods, Estates and fortunes: There is the rich beauty, Which this poor homeliness is not endow'd with; There's difference enough.

*Ant.* The least of all;

Equality is no rule in Love's grammar. That sole unhappiness is left to princes, To marry blood: We are free disposers, And have the power to equalize their bloods Up to our own; we cannot keep it back: 'Tis a due debt from us.

*Mart.* Ay, sir, had you

No father, nor uncle, nor such hinderers, You might do with yourself at your pleasure; But as it is—

*Ant.* As it is? It is nothing:

Their powers will come too late, to give me back The yesterday I lost.

*Mart.* Indeed, to say sooth,

Your opposition from the other part Is of more force; there you run the hazard Of every hour a life, had you supply; You meet your dearest enemy in love With all his hate about him: 'Twill be more hard For your Ismenia to come home to you, Than you to go to country Isabel.

*Ant.* Tush! 'Tis not fear removes me.

*Mart.* No more! your uncle.

Enter JULIO.

*Julio.* Oh, the good hour upon you, gentlemen! Welcome, nephew! speak it to your friend, sir; It may be happier received from you, In his acceptance.

*Ant.* I made bold, uncle, To do it before; and I think he believes it.

*Mart.* 'Twas never doubted, sir.

*Julio.* Here are sports, dons,  
That you must look on with a loving eye,  
And without censure, unless it be giving  
My country neighbours' loves their yearly offerings,  
That must not be refus'd; though't be more pain  
To the spectator, than the painful actor;  
It will abide no more test than the tinsel  
We clad our masks in for an hour's wearing,  
Or the livery lace sometimes on the cloaks  
Of a great don's followers: I speak no farther  
Than our own country, sir.

*Mart.* For my part, sir,

The more absurd, 't shall be the better welcome.  
*Julio.* You'll find the guest you look for.—I  
heard, cousin,

You were at Toledo the other day.

*Ant.* Not late, sir.

*Julio.* Oh fy! must I be plainer? You changed  
the point

With Terzo and Lisauro, two of the stock  
Of our antagonists, the Bellides.

*Ant.* A mere proffer, sir; the prevention  
Was quick with us: We had done somewhat else.  
This gentleman was engaged in't.

*Julio.* I am the enemy  
To his foe for it. That wildfire will crave  
More than fair water to quench it, I suspect:  
Whence it will come, I know not.

*Ant.* I was about a gentle reconciliation;  
But I do fear I shall go back again.

*Jul.* Come, come; the sports are coming on us.

*Enter GOSTANZO, GIRALDO, and PHILIPPO.*

Nay, I have more guests to grace it: Welcome, don  
Gostanzo, Giraldo, Philippo! Seat, seat all!

[*Music.*]

*Enter a Boy, as Cupid, blinded.*

*Cupid.* "Love is little, and therefore I present  
him;

Love is a fire, therefore you may lament him."

*Mart.* Alas, poor Love! who are they that can  
quench him?

*Julio.* He's not without those members; fear him  
not.

*Cupid.* "Love shoots; therefore I bear his bow  
about;

And love is blind; therefore my eyes are out."

*Mart.* I ne'er heard Love give reason for what  
he did before.

*Enter BUSTOPHA, for Paris.*

*Cupid.* "Let such as can see, see such as cannot.  
Behold

Our goddesses all three strive for the ball of gold:  
And here fair Paris comes, the hopeful youth of  
Troy,

Queen Hecuba's darling son, king Priam's only

*Mart.* Is this Paris? [joy.]

I should have taken him for Hector rather.

*Bust.* Paris at this time: Pray you hold your

*Ant.* Paris can be angry. [prating!]

*Julio.* Oh, at this time

You must pardon him; he comes as a judge.

*Mart.* God's mercy on all that look upon him,  
say I.

*Bust.* "The thund'ring seas, whose watery fire  
washes the whiting-mops,

The gentle whale, whose feet so fell flies o'er the  
mountain tops,

No roars so fierce, no throats so deep, no howls  
can bring such fears,  
As Paris can, if garden from he call his dogs and  
bears."

*Mart.* Ay, those they were that I feared all this  
*Bust.* "Yes, Jack-an-apes"—— [while.]

*Mart.* I thank you, good Paris!

*Bust.* You may hold your peace, and stand fur-  
ther out o' th' way then:

The lines will fall where they light.

"Yes, Jack-an-apes he hath to sport, and faces  
make like mirth,  
Whilst bellowing bulls the horned beasts do toss  
from ground to earth.

Blind bear there is, as Cupid blind"——

*Ant.* That bear would be whipp'd for losing of  
his eyes.

*Bust.* "Be-whipped man may see,  
But we present no such content, but nymphs such  
as they be."

*Ant.* These are long lines.

*Mart.* Can you blame him, leading bulls and  
bears in 'em?

*Enter Shepherd singing, with ISMONTA, AMINTA, FLO-  
MEL, (as JUNO, PALLAS, VENUS,) and three Nymphs  
attending.*

*Bust.* "Go, Cupid blind, conduct the dumb;  
for ladies must not speak here.

Let shepherds sing with dancing feet, and cords of  
music break here! [Song.]

Now, ladies, fight, with heels so light; by lot your  
luck must fall,

Where Paris please, to do you ease, and give the  
golden ball." [Dance.]

*Mart.* If you play'd Paris now, Antonio,  
Where would you bestow it?

*Ant.* I pr'ythee, friend,

Take the full freedom of thought, but no words.

*Mart.* 'Protest there is a third, which by her  
habit

Should personate Venus, and, by consequence  
Of the story, receive the honour's prize:

And were I a Paris, there it should be.

Do you note her?

*Ant.* No; mine eye is so fix'd, I cannot move it.

*Cupid.* The dance is ended; now to judgment,  
Paris!

*Bust.* "Here, Juno, here!—But stay; I do  
A pretty gleek coming from Pallas' eye: [espj

Here, Pallas, here!—Yet stay again; methinks  
I see the eye of lovely Venus winks:

Oh, close them both; shut in those golden ey'n!  
And I will kiss those sweet blind cheeks of thine.

Juno is angry; yes, and Pallas frowns:  
'Would Paris now were gone from Ida's downs!

They both are fair; but Venus has the mole,  
The fairest hair, and sweetest dimple-hole:

To her, or her, or her, or her, or neither;  
Can one man please three ladies all together!

No; take it, Venus! toss it at thy pleasure!  
Thou art the lover's friend beyond his measure."

[*Gives her the apple.*]

*Julio.* Paris has done what man can do, pleas'd  
Who can do more? [one:]

*Mart.* Stay, here's another person.

*Enter GRASSO, as Mars.*

*Ger.* "Come, lovely Venus; leave this lower  
orb,

And mount with Mars up to his glorious sphere."

*Bust.* How now? what's he?

*Flor.* I'm ignorant what to do, sir.

*Ger.* "Thy silver yoke of doves are in the team,  
And thou shalt fly thorough Apollo's beam:  
I'll see thee seated in thy golden throne,  
And hold with Mars a sweet conjunction."

[*Exit with FLORIMEL.*]

*Bust.* Ha! what fellow's this has carried away  
my sister Venus?

He ne'er rehearsed his part with me before.

*Julio.* What follows now, Prince Paris?

*Flor.* [Within.] Help, help, help!

*Bust.* Hue and cry! I think, sir, this is Venus'  
Mine own sister Florimel's. [voice,

*Mart.* What, is there some tragic act behind?

*Bust.* No, no; altogether comical; Mars and  
Are in the old conjunction, it seems. [Venus

*Mart.* 'Tis very improper then; for Venus  
Never cries out when she conjoins with Mars.

*Bust.* That's true indeed; they are out of their  
parts sure:

It may be 'tis the book-holder's fault; I'll go see.  
[*Exit.*]

*Julio.* How like you our country revels, gentle-  
men?

*All Gent.* Oh, they commend themselves, sir.

*Ant.* Methinks now

Juno and Minerva should take revenge on Paris;  
It cannot end without it.

*Mart.* I did expect,  
Instead of Mars, the storm-gaoler Æolus;  
And Juno proffering her deiopieia  
As satisfaction to the blust'ring god,  
To send his tossers forth.

*Julio.* It may so follow;  
Let's not prejudicate the history!

*Enter BUSTOPHA.*

*Bust.* Oh, oh, oh, oh!

*Julio.* So here's a passion towards.

*Bust.* Help, help, if you be gentlemen! my  
My Venus! she's stol'n away. [sister,

*Julio.* The story changes  
From our expectation.

*Bust.* Help! my father,  
The miller will hang me else: God Mars  
Is a bawdy villain! he said he should ride upon  
doves:

She's hors'd, she's hors'd, whether she will or no.

*Mart.* Sure, I think he's serious.

*Bust.* She's hors'd upon  
A double-gelding, and a stone-horse in  
The breach of her: The poor wench cries help,  
And I cry help, and none of you will help.

*Julio.* Speak, is it the show? or dost thou  
bawl?

*Bust.* A pox on the ball! my sister bawls, and  
I bawl!

Either bridle horse and follow, or give me a halter  
To hang myself: I cannot run so fast  
As a hog.

*Julio.* Why, follow me! I'll fill  
The country with pursuit, but I will find  
The thief! My house thus abused? [Exit.

*Bust.* 'Tis my house that's abused;  
The sister of my flesh and blood! Oh, oh! [Exit.

1 *Wench.* 'Tis time we all shift for ourselves, if  
Be serious. [this

2 *Wench.* However, I'll be gone.

3 *Wench.* And I. [Exeunt.

*Ant.* You need not fright your beauties, pretty  
With the least pale complexion of a fear. [souls,  
*Mart.* Juno has better courage, and Minerva's  
more discreet.

*Ism.* Alas, my courage was so counterfeit,  
It might have been struck from me with a feather:  
Juno ne'er had so weak a presenter.

*Amin.* Sure I was ne'er the wiser for Minerva;  
That I find yet about me.

[ANTONIO schiapers ISEMENIA.

*Ism.* My dwelling, sir?

'Tis a poor yeoman's roof, scarce a league off,  
That never shamed me yet.

*Ant.* Your gentle pardon!

I vow my erring eyes had almost cast you  
For one of the most mortal enemies  
That our family has.

*Ism.* I am sorry, sir,  
I am so like your foe: 'Twere fit I hasted  
From your offended sight.

*Ant.* Oh, mistake not;  
It was my error, and I do confess it.  
You'll not believe you're welcome; nor can I  
speak it;

But there's my friend can tell you; pray hear him!

*Mart.* Shall I tell her, sir? I'm glad of the  
employment.

*Ant.* A kinswoman to that beauty?

*Amin.* A kin to her, sir;

But nothing to her beauty.

*Ant.* Do not wrong it;

It is not far behind her.

*Amin.* Her hinder parts  
Are not far off, indeed, sir.

*Mart.* Let me but kiss you with his ardour  
You shall feel how he loves you. [now,

*Ism.* Oh, forbear!

'Tis not the fashion with us. But would you  
Persuade me that he loves me?

*Mart.* I'll warrant you  
He dies in't; and that were witness enough on't.

*Ism.* Love me, sir? Can you tell me for what  
reason?

*Mart.* Fy! will you ask me? That which you  
have about you.

*Ism.* I know nothing, sir.

*Mart.* Let him find it then!

He constantly believes you have the thing  
That he must love you for; much is apparent,  
A sweet and lovely beauty.

*Ism.* So, sir; pray you  
Shew me one thing; Did he ne'er love before?

(I know you are his bosom counsellor.)  
Nay, then, I see your answer is not ready;  
I'll not believe you, if you study farther.

*Mart.* Shall I speak truth to you?

*Ism.* Or speak no more.

*Mart.* There was a smile thrown at him, from  
a lady,

Whose deserts might buy him treble, and lately  
He received it, and I know where he lost it;  
In this face of yours: I know his heart's within

*Ism.* May I know her name? [you.

*Mart.* In your ear you may,  
With vow of silence. [They walk apart.

*Amin.* He'll not give over, sir;  
If he speak for you, he'll sure speed for you.

*Ant.* But that is not the answer to my question.

*Amin.* You are the first, in my virgin-conscience,  
That ever spoke love to her: Oh, my heart!

*Ant.* How do you ?  
*Amin.* Nothing, sir ; but 'would I had  
 A better face ! how well your pulse beats !  
*Ant.* Healthfully ;  
 Does it not ?  
*Amin.* It thumps prettily, methinks.—  
*Ism.* Alack, I hear it with much pity : How  
 great  
 Is your fault too, in wrong to the good lady !  
*Mart.* You forget the difficult passage he has to  
 A hell of feud's between the families. [her ;  
*Ism.* And that has often Love wrought by ad-  
 To peaceful reconciliation. [vantage  
*Mart.* There impossible.  
*Ism.* This way 'tis worsen ; it may seed again  
 In her unto another generation :  
 For where, poor lady, is her satisfaction ?  
*Mart.* It comes in me. To be truth, I love her  
 (I'll go no farther for comparison)  
 As dear as he loves you.  
*Ism.* How if she love not ?  
*Mart.* Tush, be that my pains ! You know not  
 I have those ways. [what art  
*Ism.* Beshrew you ! you have practised upon  
 me ;  
 Well, speed me here, and you with your Ismenia.  
*Mart.* Go, the condition's drawn, ready dated ;  
 There wants but your hand to't.  
*Amin.* Truly you have taken  
 Great pains, sir.  
*Mart.* A friendly part, no more, sweet beauty.  
*Amin.* They are happy, sir, have such friends as  
 you are :  
 But do you know you have done well in this ?  
 How will his allies receive it ? She, though I say't,  
 Is of no better blood than I am.  
*Mart.* There  
 I leave it ; I am at farthest that way.  
*Ism.* You shall extend your vows no larger  
 now :  
 My heart calls you mine own, and that's enough.  
 Reason, I know, would have all yet conceal'd.  
 I shall not leave you unsaluted long,  
 Either by pen or person.  
*Ant.* You may discourse  
 With me, when you think you're alone ; I shall  
 Be present with you.  
*Ism.* Come, cousin, will you walk ?  
*Amin.* Alas, I was ready long since. In con-  
 science,  
 You would with better will yet stay behind.  
*Ism.* Oh, Love ! I never thought thou hadst  
 been so blind. [Exit  
*Mart.* You'll answer this, sir.

*Ant.* If e'er it be spoke on :  
 I purpose not to propound the question.

*Enter JULIO.*

*Julio.* 'Tis true the poor knave said : Some  
 ravisher,  
 Some of Lust's blood-hounds, have seized upon her ;  
 The girl is hurried, as the devil were with 'em  
 And help'd their speed.

*Mart.* It may be not so ill, sir.  
 A well-prepared lover may do as much  
 In hot blood as this, and perform it honestly.

*Julio.* What ? steal away a virgin 'gainst her  
 will ?

*Mart.* It may be any man's case ; despise nothing :  
 And that's a thief of a good quality,  
 Most commonly he brings his theft home again,  
 Though with a little shame.

*Julio.* There's a charge by't  
 Fall'n upon me : Paris (the miller's son)  
 Her brother, dares not venture home again,  
 Till better tidings follow of his sister.

*Ant.* You are the more beholding to the mis-  
 chance, sir :

Had I gone a boot-haling, I should as soon  
 Have stolen him as his sister : Marry then,  
 To render him back in the same plight he is  
 May be costly ; his flesh is not maintain'd with  
 little.

*Julio.* I think the poor knave will pine away ;  
 All-to-be-pitied yonder. [he cries

*Mart.* Pray you, sir, let's go see him : I should  
 To see him cry, sure. [laugh

*Julio.* Well, you are merry, sir.—  
 Antonio, keep this charge ; (I have fears  
 Move me to lay it on you) pray forbear  
 The ways of your enemies, the Bellides.  
 I have reason for my injunction, sir. [Exit

*Enter AMINTA as a Page, with a Letter.*

*Ant.* To me, sir ? from whom ?

*Amin.* A friend, I dare vow, sir,  
 Though on the enemies' part : The lady Ismenia.

*Mart.* Take heed ; blush not too deep. Let me  
 advise you

In your answer ; it must be done heedfully.

*Ant.* I should not see a masculine, in peace,  
 Out of that house.

*Amin.* Alas, I am a child, sir ;  
 Your hates cannot last 'till I wear a sword.

*Ant.* Await me for your answer.

*Mart.* He must see her,  
 To manifest his shame ; 'tis my advantage :  
 While our blood's under us, we keep above ;  
 But then we fall, when we do fall in love. [Exit

### ACT III.

SCENE I.—*An Apartment in the same.*

*Enter JULIO and FRANIO.*

*Fra.* My lord, my lord, your house hath injured  
 Robb'd me of all the joys I had on earth. [me,

*Julio.* Where wert thou brought up, fellow ?

*Fra.* In a mill ;

You may perceive it by my loud exclaims,  
 Which must rise higher yet.

*Julio.* Obstreperous carle,

If thy throat's tempest could o'er-turn my house,  
 What satisfaction were it for thy child ?  
 Turn thee the right way to thy journey's end :  
 Wilt have her where she's to ?

*Fra.* Here was she lost,  
 And here must I begin my footing after ;  
 From whence, until I meet a power to punish,  
 I will not rest. You are not quick to grief ;  
 Your hearing's a dead sense ! Were your's the loss,  
 Had you a daughter stol'n, perhaps be-whored,

(For to what other end should come the thief ?)  
You'd play the miller then, be loud and high ;  
But, being not a sorrow of your own,  
You have no help nor pity for another.

*Julio.* Oh, thou hast oped a sluice was long shut  
And let a flood of grief in ; a buried grief [up,  
Thy voice hath waked again, a grief as old  
As likely 'tis thy child is ! Friend, I tell thee,  
I did once lose a daughter.

*Fra.* Did you, sir ?  
Beseech you then, how did you bear her loss ?  
*Julio.* With thy grief trebled.

*Fra.* But was she stolen from you ?

*Julio.* Yes, by devouring thieves, from whom  
cannot

Ever return a satisfaction :  
The wild beasts had her in her swathing clothes.

*Fra.* Oh, much good do 'em with her !

*Julio.* Away, tough churl !

*Fra.* Why, she was better eaten, than my child,  
Better by beasts, than beastly men devoured :  
They took away a life, no honour, from her ;  
Those beasts might make a saint of her ; but these  
Will make my child a devil. But was she, sir,  
Your only daughter ?

*Julio.* I ne'er had other, friend.

*Enter GILLIAN.*

*Gil.* Where are you, man ? Your business lies  
not here !

Your daughter's in the pound ; I have found where  
'Twill cost you dear, her freedom.

*Fra.* I'll break it down, and free her without  
pay !

Horse-locks nor chains shall hold her from me.  
[*GILLIAN whispers him.*

*Jul.* I'll take this relief :

I now have time to speak alone with grief. [*Exit.*

*Fra.* How ! my landlord ? he is lord of my  
lands,

But not my cattle : I'll have her again, Gil.

*Gil.* You are not mad upon the sudden now ?

*Fra.* No, Gil ;

I have been mad these five hours ! I'll sell my mill  
And buy a roaring—I'll batter down his house,  
And make a stew on't.

*Gil.* Will you gather up your wits

A little, and hear me ? The king's near by, in pro-  
Here I have got our supplication drawn, [gress ;  
And there's the way to help us.

*Fra.* Give it me, Gil :

I will not fear to give it to the king.  
To his own hands, God bless him, will I give it ;  
And he shall set the law upon their shoulders,  
And hang 'em all that had a hand in it.

*Gil.* Where is your son ?

*Fra.* He shall be hang'd in fitches !

The dogs shall eat him in Lent ; there's cats' meat  
And dogs' meat enough about him.

*Gil.* Sure the poor girl is the count's whore by  
this time.

*Fra.* If she be the count's whore, the whore's  
count

Shall pay for't ; he shall pay for a new maidenhead !

*Gil.* You are so violous !—This I'm resolved ;

If she be a whore once, I'll renounce her.

You know, if every man had his right,  
She's none of our child, but a mere foundling ;  
(And I can guess the owner for a need too)

We have but foster'd her.

*Fra.* Gil, no more of that !  
I'll cut your tongue out, if you tell those tales.

[*A Flourish within.*  
Hark, hark ! these toasters tell us the king's coming.  
Get you gone ; I'll see if I can find him. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the Palace.*

*Enter LISUARO, TERZO, PEDRO, and MONCADO.*

*Lis.* Does the king remove to-day ?

*Terzo.* So say the harbingers,  
And keeps his way on to Valentia ;  
There ends the progress.

*Pedro.* He hunts this morning, gentlemen,  
And dines i' th' fields : The court is all in rea-  
diness.

*Lis.* Pedro, did you send for this tailor ? or you,  
Moncado !

This light French demi-lance that follows us ?

*Pedro.* No, I assure ye on my word, I am  
guiltless ;

I owe him too much to be inward with him.

*Monc.* I am not quit, I am sure : There is a  
reckoning

(Of some four scarlet cloaks, and two laced suits,)  
Hangs on the file still, like a fearful comet,  
Makes me keep off.

*Lis.* I am in too, gentlemen,  
I thank his faith, for a matter of three hundred.

*Terzo.* And I for two. What a devil makes he  
I do not love to see my sins before me. [this way ?

*Pedro.* 'Tis the vacation, and these things break  
To see the court and glory in their debtors. [out

*Terzo.* What do you call him ? for I never love  
To remember their names that I owe money to ;  
'Tis not genteel : I shun 'em like the plague ever.

*Lis.* His name's Vertigo, (hold your heads, and  
wonder !)

A Frenchman, and a founder of new fashions :  
The revolutions of all shapes and habits  
Run madding through his brains.

*Enter VERTIGO.*

*Monc.* He's very brave !

*Lis.* The shreds of what he steals from us, be-  
lieve it,

Make him a mighty man. He comes ; have at ye !

*Vert.* Save ye together, my sweet gentlemen !

I have been looking—

*Terzo.* Not for money, sir ?

You know the hard time.

*Vert.* Pardon me, sweet signor !

'Good faith, the least thought in my heart ; your  
love, gentlemen,

Your love's enough for me. Money ? hang money !  
Let me preserve your love.

*Lis.* Yes, marry shall you,  
And we our credit. You would see the court ?

*Monc.* He shall see every place.

*Vert.* Shall I, i' faith, gentlemen ?

*Pedro.* The cellar, and the buttery, and the  
The pastry, and the pantry. [kitchen,

*Terzo.* Ay, and taste too

Of every office, and be free of all too ;

That he may say, when he comes home in glory—

*Vert.* And I will say, i' faith, and say it openly,  
And say it home too. Shall I see the king also ?

*Lis.* 'Shalt see him every day ; 'shalt see the  
ladies

In their French clothes; shalt ride a hunting with him;

Shalt have a mistress too.—We must fool hand—To keep him in belief we honour him; [somely He may call on us else.

*Pedro.* A pox upon him!

Let him call at home in's own house for salt butter.

*Vert.* And when the king puts on a new suit—

*Terso.* Thou shalt see it first, And dissect his doublets, that thou may'st be perfect.

*Vert.* The wardrobe I would fain view, gentle—Fain come to see the wardrobe. [men,

*Lis.* Thou shalt see it,

And see the secret of it, dive into it; Sleep in the wardrobe, and have revelations Of fashions five years hence.

*Vert.* Ye honour me, Ye infinitely honour me!

*Terso.* Anything i' th' court, sir, Or within the compass of a courtier—

*Vert.* My wife shall give ye thanks.

*Terso.* You shall see anything!

The privat'at place, the stool, and where 'tis emptied.

*Vert.* Ye make me blush, ye pour your bounties, In such abundance. [gentlemen,

*Lis.* I will shew thee presently

The order that the king keeps when he comes To open view, that thou may'st tell thy neighbours Over a shoulder of mutton, thou hast seen something;

Nay, thou shalt present the king for this time—

*Vert.* Nay, I pray, sir!

*Lis.* That thou mayst know what state there does belong to't.

Stand there, I say! and put on a sad countenance, Mingled with height! Be covered and reserved; Move like the sun, by soft degrees, and glorious. Into your order, gentlemen, uncovered!

The king appears.—We'll sport with you a while, sir; [Aside.

I'm sure you're merry with us all the year long, tailor.—

Move softer still; keep in that fencing leg, mon— Turn to no side. [sieur;

*Enter FRANCO out of breath.*

*Terso.* What's this that appears to him?

*Lis.* He has a petition, and he looks most la—Mistake him, and we are made. [mentably.

*Fra.* This is the king sure,

The glorious king! I know him by his gay clothes.

*Lis.* Now bear yourself, that you may say here—after—

*Fra.* I have recover'd breath; I'll speak unto him presently.

May it please your gracious majesty to consider A poor man's case? [Kneels.

*Vert.* What's your will, sir?

*Lis.* You must accept, and read it.

*Terso.* The tailor will run mad upon my life for't.

*Pedro.* How he mumps and bridles! He will ne'er cut clothes again.

*Vert.* And what's your grief?

*Monc.* He speaks i' th' nose like his goose.

*Fra.* I pray you read there; I am abused and frump'd, sir,

By a great man, that may do ill by authority: Poor honest men are hang'd for doing less, sir.

My child is stol'n, the Count Otrante stole her! A pretty child she is, although I say it, A handsome mother; he means to make a whore of her, A silken whore; his knaves have filched her from me; He keeps lewd knaves, that do him beastly offices. I kneel for justice: Shall I have it, sir?

*Enter PHILIPPO and Lords.*

*Phil.* What pageant's this?

*Lis.* The king!—

Tailor, stand off! Here ends your apparition.— Miller, turn round, and there address your paper: There, there's the king indeed.

*Fra.* May it please your majesty!—

*Phil.* Why didst thou kneel to that fellow?

*Fra.* In good faith, sir,

I thought he had been a king, he was so gallant; There's none here wears such gold.

*Phil.* So foolishly?

You have golden business sure! Because I am homely

Clad, in no glittering suit, I am not looked on. Ye fools, that wear gay clothes, love to be gaped at. What are you better when your end calls on you? Will gold preserve ye from the grave? or jewels? Get golden minds, and fling away your trappings: Unto your bodies minister warm raiments, Wholesome and good; glitter within, and spare not! Let my court have rich souls! their suits I weigh not.—

And what are you that took such state upon you? Are you a prince?

*Lis.* The prince of tailors, sir:

We owe some money to him, an't like your majesty!

*Phil.* If it like him, 'would ye owed more! Be modester:—

And you less saucy, sir; and leave this place: Your pressing-iron will make no perfect courtier. Go stitch at home, and cozen your poor neighbours: Shew such another pride, I'll have you whipt for't! And get worse clothes; these but proclaim your And what's your paper? [felony.—

*Fra.* I beseech you read it.

*Phil.* What's here? the Count Otrante task'd For stealing of a maid? [for a base villainy?

*Lord.* The Count Otrante?

Is not the fellow mad, sir?

*Fra.* No, no, my lord;

I am in my wits: I am a labouring man, And we have seldom leisure to run mad; We have other business to employ our heads in; We have little wit to lose too. If we complain, And if a heavy lord lie on our shoulders, Worse than a sack of meal, and oppress our perversities,

We are mad straight, and whoop'd, and tied in fetters,

Able to make a horse mad, as you use us. You are mad for nothing, and no man dare pro— In you a wildness is a noble trick, [claim it: And cherished in ye, and all men must love it; Oppressions of all sorts sit like new clothes, Neatly and handsomely, upon your lordships: And if we kick, when your honours spur us, We are knaves and jades, and ready for the justice. I am a true miller.

*Phil.* Then thou art a wonder.

2 Lord. I know the man reputed for a good man,  
An honest and substantial fellow.

Phil. He speaks sense,  
And to the point: Greatness begets much rudeness.—

How dare you, sirrah, 'gainst so main a person,  
A man of so much noble note and honour,  
Put up this base complaint? must every peasant  
Upon a saucy wilt affront great lords?  
All fellows, miller?

Fra. I have my reward, sir;  
I was told, one greatness would protect another,  
As beams support their fellows; now I find it.  
If't please your grace to have me hang'd, I am  
'Tis but a miller, and a thief dispatched. [ready;  
Though I steal bread, I steal no flesh to tempt me.  
I have a wife; an't please him to have her too,  
With all my heart; 'twill make my charge the  
less, sir;

She'll hold him play a-while. I have a boy too;  
He's able to instruct his honour's hogs,  
Or rub his horse heels; when it please his lordship,  
He may make him his slave too, or his bawd:  
The boy is well bred, can exhort his sister.  
For me, the prison, or the pillory,  
To lose my goods, and have mine ears cropt off,  
Whipt like a top, and have a paper stuck  
Before me, for abominable honesty  
To his own daughter! I can endure, sir; the miller  
Has a stout heart, tough as his toll-pin.

Phil. I suspect this shrewdly!  
Is it his daughter that the people call  
The miller's fair maid?

2 Lord. It should seem so, sir.

Phil. Be sure you be 't th' right, sirrah.  
Fra. If I be 't th' wrong, sir,  
Be sure you hang me; I will ask no courtesy.  
Your grace may have a daughter, (think of that, sir)  
She may be fair, and she may be abused too,  
(A king is not exempted from these cases)  
Stol'n from your loving care—

Phil. I do much pity him.  
Fra. But Heaven forbid that she should be in  
that venture

That mine is in at this hour. I'll assure your grace,  
The lord wants a water-mill, and means to grind  
with her:

'Would I had his stones to set! I would fit him for't.  
Phil. Follow me, miller, and let me talk with  
you further;

And keep this private all, upon your loyalties!  
To-morrow morning, though I am now beyond him,  
And the less look'd for, I'll break my fast with the  
good count.

No more; away! all to our sports; be silent!  
[*Exeunt PHILIPPO, FRANCO, and Lords.*]

Vert. What grace shall I have now?

Lis. Choose thine own grace,  
And go to dinner when thou wilt, Vertigo;  
We must needs follow the king.

Terso. You heard the sentence.

Mono. If you stay here, I'll send thee a shoulder  
of venison.

Go home, go home; or, if thou wilt disguise,  
I'll help thee to a place to feed the dogs.

Pedro. Or thou shalt be special tailor to the  
king's monkey;

'Tis a fine place. We cannot stay.

Vert. No money,  
Nor no grace, gentlemen?

VOL. II.

Terso. 'Tis too early, tailor;  
The king has not broke his fast yet.

Vert. I shall look for you  
The next term, gentlemen.

Pedro. Thou shalt not miss us:  
Pr'ythee provide some clothes. And, dost thou  
hear, Vertigo?

Commend me to thy wife: I want some shirts too.

Vert. I have chambers for you all.

Lis. They are too musty;  
When they are clear, we'll come.

Vert. I must be patient  
And provident; I shall never get home else.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*An Apartment in the House of*  
*OTRANTE.*

*Enter OTRANTE and FLORINEL.*

Otr. Pr'ythee be wiser, wench! thou canst not  
'scape me:

Let me with love and gentleness enjoy that,  
That may be still preserved with love, and longed  
If violence lay rough hold, I shall hate thee; [for.  
And after I have enjoyed thy maidenhead,  
Thou wilt appear so stale and ugly to me,  
I shall despise thee, cast thee off—

Flor. I pray you, sir,  
Begin it now, and open your doors to me.  
I do confess I am ugly; let me go, sir!  
A gipsy-girl; why would your lordship touch me?  
Fy, 'tis not noble! I am homely bred,  
Coarse, and unfit for you; why do you flatter me?  
There be young ladies many, that will love you,  
That will dote on you: You are a handsome gentle-  
man.

What will they say when once they know your  
quality?

"A lord, a miller? Take your toll-dish with you!  
You that can deal with gurgeons, and coarse flour,  
'Tis pity you should taste what manchet means."  
Is this fit, sir, for your repute and honour!

Otr. I'll love thee still.

Flor. You cannot; there's no sympathy  
Between our births, our breeding, arts, conditions;  
And where these are at difference, there's no liking.  
This hour it may be I seem handsome to you,  
And you are taken with variety

More than with beauty; to-morrow, when you  
have enjoyed me,  
Your heat and lust assuaged, and come to examine,  
Out of a cold and penitent condition,  
What you have done, whom you have shared your  
love with,

Made partner of your bed, how it will vex you,  
How you will curse the devil that betrayed you!  
And what shall become of me then?

Otr. Wilt thou hear me?

Flor. As hasty as you were then to enjoy me,  
As precious as this beauty shewed unto you,  
You'll kick me out of doors, you'll whore, and  
ban me;

And if I prove with child with your fair issue,  
Give me a pension of five pound a-year  
To breed your heir withal, and so God speed me!

Otr. I'll keep thee like a woman.

Flor. I'll keep myself, sir,  
Keep myself honest, sir; there's the brave keeping!  
If you will marry me—

*Otr.* Alas, poor Florimel !

*Flor.* I do confess I am too coarse and base, sir,  
To be your wife ; and it is fit you scorn me ;  
Yet such as I have crown'd the lives of great ones :  
To be your whore I am sure I am too worthy,  
(For, by my troth, sir, I am truly honest)  
And that's an honour equal to your greatness !

*Otr.* I'll give thee what thou wilt.

*Flor.* Tempt me no more then :

Give me that peace, and then you give abundance.  
I know you do but try me ; you are noble ;  
All these are but to try my modesty :  
If you should find me easy, and once coming,  
I see your eyes already, how they would fright me ;  
I see your honest heart, how it would swell,  
And burst itself into a grief against me ;  
Your tongue in noble anger, now, even now, sir,  
Ready to rip my loose thoughts to the bottom,  
And lay my shame unto myself wide open.  
You are a noble lord ; you pity poor maids.  
The people are mistaken in your courses :  
You, like a father, try 'em to the uttermost ;  
As they do gold, you purge the dross from them,  
And make them shine.

*Otr.* This cunning cannot help you !  
I love you to enjoy you ; I have stol'n you,  
To enjoy you now, not to be fool'd with circum-  
Yield willingly, or else—— [stance.

*Flor.* What ?

*Otr.* I will force you :

I will not be delay'd ! A poor base wench,  
That I in courtesy make offer to,  
Argue with me ?

*Flor.* Do not ; you'll lose your labour :  
Do not, my lord ; it will become you poorly.  
Your courtesy may do much on my nature,  
For I am kind as you are, and as tender.  
If you compel, I have my strengths to fly to,  
My honest thoughts, and those are guards about  
me :

I can cry too, and noise enough I dare make,  
And I have curses, that will call down thunder ;  
For all I am a poor wench, Heaven will hear me.  
My body you may force, but my will never !  
And be sure I do not live, if you do force me,  
Or have no tongue to tell your beastly story ;  
For if I have, and if there be a justice——

*Otr.* Pray ye go in here ! I'll calm myself for  
And be your friend again. [this time,

*Flor.* I am commanded. [Exit.

*Otr.* You cannot 'scape me yet ; I must enjoy  
you !

I'll lie with thy wit, though I miss thy honesty.  
Is this a wench for a boor's hungry bosom ?  
A morsel for a peasant's base embraces ?  
And must I starve, and the meat in my mouth ?  
I'll none of that.

*Enter GERASTO.*

*Ger.* How now, my lord ? how sped you ?  
Have you done the deed ?

*Otr.* No, pox upon't, she's honest.

*Ger.* Honest ! what's that ? You take her bare  
denial ?

Was there ever wench brought up in a mill, and  
honest ?

That were a wonder worth a chronicle.

Is your belief so large ? What did she say to you ?

*Otr.* She said her honesty was all her dowry ;  
And preached unto me, how unfit, and homely,

Nay, how dishonourable, it would seem in me  
To act my will ; popt me i' th' mouth with mo-  
desty——

*Ger.* What an impudent quean was that ! That's  
their trick ever.

*Otr.* And then discoursed to me very learnedly,  
What fame and loud opinion would tell of me.

A wife she touched at——

*Ger.* Out upon her, varlet !

Was she so bold ? These home-spun things are  
devils !

They'll tell you a thousand lies, if you'll believe  
'em,

And stand upon their honours like great ladies ;  
They'll speak unhappily too good words to cozen  
you,

And outwardly seem saints ; they'll cry down-  
right also,

But 'tis for anger that you do not crush 'em.

Did she not talk of being with child ?

*Otr.* She touched at it.

*Ger.* The trick of an errant whore, to milk  
your lordship !

And then a pension named ?

*Otr.* No, no, she scorned it :  
I offer'd anything ; but she refused all,  
Refused it with a confident hate.

*Ger.* You thought so ;

You should have ta'en her then, turn'd her, and  
tew'd her

I' th' strength of all her resolution, flatter'd her,  
And shook her stubborn will ; she would have  
thank'd you,

She would have loved you infinitely : They must  
seem modest,

It is their parts ; if you had play'd your part, sir,  
And handled her as men do unmann'd hawks,  
Cast her, and mail'd her up in good clean linen,  
And there have coy'd her, you had caught her  
heart-strings.

These tough virginities, they blow like white thorns,  
In storms and tempests.

*Otr.* She's beyond all this ;

As cold, and harden'd, as the virgin crystal.

*Ger.* Oh, force her, force her, sir ! she longs  
to be ravish'd ;

Some have no pleasure but in violence ;

To be torn in pieces is their paradise :

'Tis ordinary in our country, sir, to ravish all ;

They will not give a penny for their sport

Unless they be put to't, and terribly ;

And then they swear they'll hang the man comes  
And swear it on his lips too. [near 'em,

*Otr.* No, no forcing ;

I have another course, and I will follow it.

I command you, and do you command your fellows.

That when ye see her next, disgrace and scorn her :

I'll seem to put her out o' th' doors o' th' sudden,  
And leave her to conjecture, then seize on her.

Away ! be ready straight.

*Ger.* We shall not fail, sir. [Exit.

*Otr.* Florimel !

*Enter FLORIMEL.*

*Flor.* My lord.

*Otr.* I am sure you have now consider'd,  
And like a wise wench weigh'd a friend's dis-  
pleasure,  
Repented your proud thoughts, and cast your  
scorn off.

*Flor.* My lord, I am not proud; I was never beautiful,  
Nor scorn I anything that's just and honest.

*Otr.* Come, to be short, can you love yet? You told me

Kindness would far compel you: I am kind to you, And mean to exceed that way.

*Flor.* I told you too, sir,  
As far as it agreed with modesty, [you.  
With honour, and with honesty, I would yield to  
Good my lord, take some other theme; for love,  
Alas, I never knew yet what it meant,  
And on the sudden, sir, to run through volumes  
Of his most mystic art, 'tis most impossible;  
Nay, to begin with lust, which is an heresy,  
A foul one too; to learn that in my childhood—  
Oh, good my lord!

*Otr.* You will not out of this song?  
Your modesty, and honesty? is that all?  
I will not force you.

*Flor.* You are too noble, sir.  
*Otr.* Nor play the childish fool, and marry you:  
I am yet not mad.

*Flor.* If you did, men would imagine—  
*Otr.* Nor will I woo you at that infinite price  
It may be you expect.

*Flor.* I expect your pardon,  
And a discharge, my lord; that's all I look for.  
*Otr.* No, nor fall sick for love.

*Flor.* 'Tis a healthful year, sir.  
*Otr.* Look ye; I'll turn ye out o' doors, and  
*Flor.* Thank you, my lord. [scorn ye.

*Otr.* A proud slight peat I found ye,  
A fool, it may be too—  
*Flor.* An honest woman,  
Good my lord, think me.

*Otr.* And a base I leave you;  
So, fare you well! [Exit.

*Flor.* Blessing attend your lordship!—  
This is hot love, that vanisheth like vapours;  
His ague's off, his burning fits are well quenched,  
I thank Heaven for't.—His men! They will not  
force me?

Enter GERASTO and Servants.

*Ger.* What dost thou stay for? dost thou not  
know the way,  
Thou base unprovident whore?

*Flor.* Good words, pray ye, gentlemen!  
1 *Serv.* Has my lord smoked ye over, good-  
wife miller?

Is your mill broken that you stand so useless?  
2 *Serv.* An impudent quean! upon my life, she's  
unwholesome!

Some base discarded thing my lord has found her;  
He would not have turn'd her off o' th' sudden else.

*Ger.* Now against every sack, my honest sweet-  
With every Smig and Smug— [heart,

*Flor.* I must be patient.  
*Ger.* And every greasy guest, and sweaty rascal,  
For his royal hire between his fingers, gentlewoman!

1 *Serv.* I fear thou hast given my lord the pox,  
thou damned thing.

2 *Serv.* I have seen her in the stews.  
*Ger.* The knave her father

Was bawd to her there, and kept a tipling-house.  
You must e'en to't again: A modest function!

*Flor.* If ye had honesty, ye would not use me  
Thus basely, wretchedly, though your lord bid ye;  
But he that knows—

*Ger.* Away, thou carted impudence,  
You meat for every man! A little meal  
Flung in your face, makes ye appear so proud—

*Flor.* This is inhuman. Let these tears persuade  
(If ye be men) to use a poor girl better! [you  
I wrong not you, I am sure; I call you gentlemen.

Enter OTRANTE.

*Otr.* What business is here? Away! [Exit  
Servants.] Are not you gone yet?

*Flor.* My lord, this is not well, although you  
hate me,

(For what I know not) to let your people wrong  
Wrong me maliciously, and call me— [me,

*Otr.* Peace,  
And mark me what we say, advisedly,  
Mark, as you love that, that you call your credit!  
Yield now, or you're undone; your good name's  
perish'd;

Not all the world can buoy your reputation;  
'Tis sunk for ever else: These people's tongues  
will poison you;

Though you be white as innocence, they'll taint  
They will speak terrible and hideous things; [you;  
And people in this age are prone to credit;  
They'll let fall nothing that may brand a woman:  
Consider this, and then be wise and tremble!

Yield yet, and yet I'll save you.  
*Flor.* How?

*Otr.* I'll shew you;  
Their mouths I'll seal up, they shall speak no more  
But what is honourable and honest of you,  
And saint-like they shall worship you: They are  
And what I charge them, Florimel— [mine,

*Flor.* I am ruined!  
Heaven will regard me yet, they are barbarous  
Let me not fall, my lord! [wretches.

*Otr.* You shall not, Florimel:  
Mark how I'll work your peace, and how I honour  
Who waits there? come all in. [you.—

Enter GERASTO and Servants.

*Ger.* Your pleasure, sir?  
*Otr.* Who dare say this sweet beauty is not  
heavenly?

This virgin, the most pure, the most untainted,  
The holiest thing—  
*Ger.* We know it, my dear lord:  
We are her slaves; and that proud impudence  
That dares disparage her, this sword, my lord—

1 *Serv.* They are rascals base, the sons of com-  
mon women,  
That wrong this virtue, or dare own a thought  
But fair and honourable of her: When we slight  
her,

Hang us, or cut's in pieces; let's tug i' th' gal-  
2 *Serv.* Brand us for villains! [lies—  
*Flor.* Why, sure I dream! these are all saints.  
*Otr.* Go, and live all her slaves.  
*Ger.* We are proud to do it.

[Exit GERASTO and Servants.

*Otr.* What think you now? Am not I able, Flo-  
yet to preserve you? [rimel,

*Flor.* I am bound to your lordship;  
You are all honour! And, good my lord, but  
grant me,

Until to-morrow, leave to weigh my fortunes,  
I'll give you a free answer, perhaps a pleasing;  
Indeed I'll do the best I can to satisfy you.

*Otr.* Take your good time. This kiss! Till then,  
farewell, sweet! [Exit.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*A Grove.*

*Enter ANTONIO, MARTINE, and BUSTOPHA.*

*Mart.* By all means discharge your follower.

*Ant.* If we can get him off.—Sirrah, Bustopha, Thou must needs run back.

*Bust.* But I must not, unless you send a bier, Or a licitor at my back : I do not use To run from my friends.

*Ant.* Well, go! will serve turn ; I have forgot—

*Bust.* What, sir ?

*Ant.* See, if I can think on't now !

*Bust.* I know what 'tis now.

*Ant.* A pistol of that !

*Bust.* Done ! You have forgot a device to send You are going a-smocking perhaps ? [ *me away.*

*Mart.* His own ! due, due i' faith, Antonio ; The pistol's his own !

*Ant.* I confess it :

There 'tis ! Now if you could afford out of it A reasonable excuse to mine uncle—

*Bust.* Yes, I can ;

But an excuse will not serve your turn : It must be A lie, a full lie ; 'twill do no good else.

If you'll go to the price of that—

*Ant.* Is a lie

Dearer than an excuse ?

*Bust.* Oh, treble ; this is

The price of an excuse ; but a lie is two more.

Look, how many foils go to a fair fall, So many excuses to a full lie ; and less Cannot serve your turn, let any tailor i' th' town make it.

*Mart.* Why, 'tis reasonable ; give him his price : Let it be large enough now !

*Bust.* I'll warrant you ; Cover him all over.

*Ant.* I would have proof of one now.

*Bust.* What ? stale my invention, beforehand ? you shall pardon me

For that ! Well, I'll commend you to your uncle, And tell him you'll be at home at supper with him.

*Ant.* By no means ; I cannot come to-night, man.

*Bust.* I know that too : You do not know a lie When you see it.

*Mart.* Remember

It must stretch for all night.

*Bust.* I shall want stuff :

I doubt 'twill come to the other pistol.

*Ant.* Well, lay out ; you shall be no loser, sir.

*Bust.* It must be faced, you know ; there will be Of dissimulation at least, city-measure, [ *a yard* And cut upon an untruth or two ; lined with fables, That must needs be, cold weather's coming ; if it had a galloon

Of hypocrisy, 'twould do well ; and hook'd together With a couple of conceits, that's necessity.

Well, I'll bring in my bill : I'll warrant you As fair a lie by that time I have done with it, As any gentleman i' th' town can swear to, If he would betray his lord and master. [ *Exit.*

*Ant.* So, so, this necessary trouble's over.

*Mart.* I would you had bought an excuse of him Before he went ; you'll want one for Ismenia.

*Ant.* Tush, there needs none, there's no suspicion yet ;

And I'll be arm'd, before the next encounter, In a fast tie with my fair Isabel.

*Enter BUSTOPHA.*

*Mart.* Yes,

You'll find your errand is before you now.

*Bust.* Oh, gentlemen, look to yourselves ! ye are Men of another world else : Your enemies Are upon you ! the old house of the Bellides Will fall upon your heads. Signor Lisauro—

*Ant.* Lisauro ?

*Bust.* And don what call you him ? he's a gentleman,

Yet he has but a yeoman's name. Don Tarsio, Tarsio, and a dozen at their heels.

*Ant.* Lisauro, Terso, nor a dozen more, Shall fright me from my ground, nor shun my path, Let 'em come on in their ablest fury.

*Mart.* 'Tis worthily resolved ; I'll stand by you, This way ! I am thy true friend. [ *sir.*

*Bust.* I'll be gone, sir, That one may live to tell what is become of you—

Put up, put up ! Will you never learn to know a lie

From an Æsop's fables ? There's a taste for you now ! [ *Exit.*

*Enter ISMENIA and AMINTA.*

*Mart.* Look, sir ! what time of day is it ?

*Ant.* I know not ;

My eyes go false, I dare not trust 'em now !

I prythee tell me, Martine, if thou canst, Is that Ismenia or Isabella ?

*Mart.* This is the lady ; forget not Isabella.

*Ant.* If this face may be borrowed and lent out, If it can shift shoulders, and take other tires, So, 'tis mine where'er I find it—

*Ism.* Be sudden :

I cannot hold out long. [ *Exit AMINTA.*

*Mart.* Believe't, she frowns.

*Ant.* Let it come, she cannot frown me off on't.

How prettily it woos me to come nearer !—

How do you, lady, since yesterday's pains ?

Were you not weary ? of my faith—

*Ism.* I think you were.

*Ant.* What, lady ?

*Ism.* Weary of your faith ; it is a burthen

That men faint under, though they bear little of it.

*Mart.* So ! this is to the purpose.

*Ant.* You came home

In a fair hour, I hope.

*Ism.* From whence, sir ?

*Enter AMINTA.*

*Amin.* Sir, there's a gentlewoman without de- To speak with you. [ *sires*

*Ant.* They were pretty homely toys ; but your Made them illustrious. [ *presence*

*Ism.* My cousin speaks to you.

*Amin.* A gentlewoman, sir ; Isabella She names herself.

*Mart.* So, so ! it hits finely now.

*Ant.* Name yourself how you please, speak what you please,

I'll hear you cheerfully.

*Ism.* You are not well ;—

Request her in, she may have more acquaintance With his passions, and better cure for 'em.

*Amin.* She's nice in that, madam : Poor soul,  
She's fearful of your displeasure. [it seems

*Ism.* I'll quit her  
From that presently, and bring her in myself. [Exit.

*Mart.* How carelessly do you behave yourself,  
When you should call all your best faculties  
To counsel in you ! How will you answer  
The breach you made with fair Ismenia ?  
Have you forgot the retrograde vow you took  
With her that now is come in evidence ?  
You'll die upon your shame ; you need no more  
Enemies of the house, but the lady now :  
You shall have your dispatch.

*Enter ISMENIA habited like Juno.*

*Ant.* Give me that face,  
And I am satisfied, upon whose shoulders  
Soe'er it grows. Juno, deliver us  
Out of this amazement !—Beseech you, goddess,  
Tell us of our friends ; how does Ismenia ?  
And how does Isabella ? Both in good health,  
I hope, as you yourself are.

*Ism.* I am at furthest [Aside.  
In my counterfeit.—My Antonio,  
I have matter against you may need pardon,  
As I must crave of you.

*Ant.* Observe you, sir,  
What evidence is come against me ! What think  
The Hydra-headed jury will say to't ? [you

*Mart.* 'Tis I am fool'd ; [Aside.  
My hopes are pour'd into the bottomless tubs.

'Tis labour for the house of Bellides ;  
I must not seem so yet.—But in sooth, lady,  
Did you imagine your changeable face  
Hid you from me ? By this hand, I knew you !

*Ant.* I went by the face : And by these eyes I  
Have been deceived. [might

*Ism.* You might indeed, Antonio ;  
For this gentleman did vow to Isabella,  
That he it was that loved Ismenia,  
And not Antonio.

*Mart.* Good ! and was not that  
A manifest confession that I knew you ?  
I else had been unjust unto my friend.  
'Twas well remembered ! there I found you out ;  
And speak your conscience now.

*Ant.* But did he so protest ?  
*Ism.* Yes, I vow to you, had Antonio ;  
Wedded Isabella, Ismenia  
Had not been lost ; there had been her lover.

*Ant.* Why much good do you, friend ! take her  
to you ;

I crave but one ; here have I my wish full ;  
I am glad we shall be so near neighbours.

*Mart.* Take both, sir ; Juno to boot, three parts  
in one

Saint Hilarie bless you !—Now opportunity,  
Beware to meet with falsehood ! if thou canst,  
Shun it. My friend's faith's turning from him.

*Ism.* Might I not justly accuse Antonio  
For a love-wanderer ? You know no other  
But me, for another, and confess troth now ?

*Ant.* Here was my guide ; where-e'er I find  
I am a lover. Marry, I must not miss [this face  
This freckle then, (I have the number of 'em)  
Nor this dimple ; not a silk from this brow ;  
I carry the full idea ever with me.  
If nature can so punctually parallel,  
I may be cozen'd.

*Ism.* Well, all this is even :  
But now, to perfect all, our love must now  
Come to our enemies' hands, where neither part  
Will ever give consent to it.

*Ant.* Most certain :  
For which reason it must not be put to 'em.  
Have we not prevention in our own hands ?  
Shall I walk by the tree, desire the fruit,  
Yet be so nice to pull, 'till I ask leave  
Of the churlish gardener, that will deny me ?

*Ism.* Oh, Antonio !  
*Ant.* 'Tis manners to fall to  
When grace is said.

*Ism.* That holy act's to come.  
*Mart.* You may ope an oyster or two before  
grace.

*Ant.* Are there not double vows as valuable  
And as well spoke as any friar utters ?  
Heaven has heard all.

*Ism.* Yes ; but stays the blessing,  
'Till all dues be done : Heaven is not served by  
halves :

We shall have ne'er a father's blessing here ;  
Let us not lose the better from above !

*Ant.* You take up weapons of unequal force ;  
It shews you cowardly. Hark in your ear !

*Amin.* Have I lost all employment ? 'Would  
this proffer [Aside.  
Had been made to me, though I had paid it with  
A reasonable penance !

*Mart.* Have I past  
All thy fore-lock, Time ? I'll stretch a long arm  
But I'll catch hold again, (do but look back  
Over thy shoulder) and have a pull at thee.

*Ism.* I hear you, sir ; nor can I hear too much  
While you speak well : You know th' accustom'd  
Of our night-parley ; if you can ascend, [place  
The window shall receive you ; you may find there  
A corrupted churchman to bid you welcome.

*Ant.* I would meet no other man.

*Ism.* Aminta, you hear this.

*Amin.* With joy, madam, because it pleases you :  
It may be mine own case another time.

Now you go the right way, ask the banss out ;  
Put it past father, or friends, to forbid it,  
And then you're sure. Sir, your Hymen taper  
I'll light up for you ; the window shall shew you  
The way to Sestos.

*Ant.* I will venture drowning.

*Mart.* The simile holds not ; 'tis hanging rather.  
You must ascend your castle by a ladder ;  
To the foot I'll bring you.

*Ant.* Leave me to climb it.

*Mart.* If I do turn you off ?

*Ant.* Till night, fare well, then better.

*Ism.* Best it should be ;

But peevish hatred keeps back that decree. [Exit.

*Mart.* I never look'd so smooth as now I pur-  
pose :

And then, beware ! Knave is at worst of knave  
When he smiles best, and the most seems to save.

[Exit.

SCENE II.—An Apartment in JULIO'S House.

*Enter JULIO.*

*Julio.* My mind's unquiet ; while Antonio  
My nephew's abroad, my heart is not at home ;  
Only my fears stay with me ; bad company !  
But I cannot shift 'em off. This hatred

Betwixt the house of Bellides and us  
Is not fair war; 'tis civil, but uncivil.  
We are near neighbours; were of love as near,  
Till a cross misconstruction ('twas no more,  
In conscience) put us so far asunder:  
I would 'twere reconciled! it has lasted  
Too many sun-sets. If grace might moderate,  
Man should not lose so many days of peace,  
To satisfy the anger of one minute.  
I could repent it heartily. I sent  
The knave to attend my Antonio too,  
Yet he returns no comfort to me neither.

Enter BUSTOPHA.

Bust. No, I must not—

Julio. Ha! he is come.

Bust. I must not;

'Twill break his heart to hear it.

Julio. How! there's bad tidings: [Steps aside.  
I must obscure and hear it; he'll not tell me,  
For breaking of my heart; 'tis half split already.

Bust. I have spied him: Now to knock down a  
With a lie, a silly harmless lie! 'twill be [don  
Valiantly done, and nobly perhaps.

Julio. I cannot hear him now.

Bust. Oh, the bloody days that we live in!  
The envious, malicious, deadly days  
That we draw breath in!

Julio. Now I hear too loud.

Bust. The children that never shall be born may  
rue it;

For men, that are slain now, might have lived  
To have got children, that might have cursed  
Their fathers.

Julio. Oh, my posterity is ruined!

Bust. Oh, sweet Antonio!

Julio. Oh, dear Antonio!

Bust. Yet it was nobly done of both parts:  
When he and Lisauro met—

Julio. Oh, death has parted 'em!

Bust. "Welcome, my mortal foe," says one!  
"Welcome,

My deadly enemy," says th' other! Off go their  
doublets,

They in their shirts, and their sword stark naked;  
Here lies Antonio, here lies Lisauro;  
He comes upon him with an *embrocado*,  
That he puts by with a *punta reversa*; Lisauro  
Recoils me two paces, and some six inches back,  
Takes his career, and then, oh—

Julio. Oh!

Bust. Runs Antonio

Quite through—

Julio. Oh, villain!

Bust. Quite through between the arm and the  
So that he had no hurt at that bout. [body;

Julio. Goodness be praised!

Bust. But then, at next encounter,  
He fetches me up Lisauro; Lisauro  
Makes out a lunge at him, which he thinking  
To be a *passado*, Antonio's foot  
Slipping down, oh, down—

Julio. Oh, now thou art lost!

Bust. Oh, but the quality of the thing, both  
gentlemen,

Both Spanish Christians: Yet one man to shed—

Julio. Say his enemies' blood.

Bust. His hair may come

By divers casualties, though he never go  
Into the field with his foe; but a man

To lose nine ounces and two drams of blood  
At one wound, thirteen and a scruple at another,  
And to live till he die in cold blood—Yet the  
surgeon,

That cur'd him, said if *pia mater* had not  
Been perished, he had been a lives man  
Till this day.

Julio. There he concludes he is gone.

Bust. But all this is nothing: Now I come to  
the point—

Julio. Ay the point, that's deadly; the ancient  
blow

Over the buckler ne'er went half so deep.

Bust. Yet pity bids me keep in my charity;  
For me to pull an old man's ears from his head  
With telling of a tale—Oh, foul tale! No, be  
silent, tale.

Furthermore, there is the charge of burial;  
Every one will cry *blacks, blacks*, that had  
But the least finger dipt in his blood, though ten  
Degrees removed when it was done. Moreover,  
The surgeon (that made an end of him) will  
be paid;

Sugar-plums and sweet-breads! yet, I say,  
The man may recover again, and die in his bed.

Julio. What motley stuff is this? Sirrah, speak  
What hath befallen my dear Antonio? [truth.  
Restrain your pity in concealing it!

Tell me the danger full; take off your care  
Of my receiving it; kill me that way,  
I'll forgive my death! what thou keep'st back from  
truth

Thou shalt speak in pain; do not look to find  
A limb in his right place, a bone unbroke,  
Nor so much flesh unbroil'd of all that mountain.  
As a worm might sup on; dispatch, or be dis-  
patched!

Bust. Alas, sir, I know nothing, but that Antonio  
Is a man of God's making to this hour:  
'Tis not two since I left him so.

Julio. Where didst thou leave him?

Bust. In the same clothes he had on when he  
went from you.

Julio. Does he live?

Bust. I saw him drink.

Julio. Is he not wounded?

Bust. He may have a cut i' th' leg by this  
time: for Don Martine

And he were at whole slashes.

Julio. Met he not with Lisauro?

Bust. I do not know her.

Julio. Her? Lisauro is a man, as he is.

Bust. I saw

Ne'er a man like him.

Julio. Didst thou not discourse

A fight betwixt Antonio and Lisauro?

Bust. Ay, to myself;

I hope a man may give himself the lie  
If it please him.

Julio. Didst thou lie then?

Bust. As sure as you live now.

Julio. I live

The happier by it. When will he return?

Bust. That he sent me to tell you; within these  
Ten days at furthest.

Julio. Ten days? he's not wont

To be absent two.

Bust. Nor I think he will not;

He said he would be at home to-morrow; but I love  
To speak within my compass.

*Julio.* You shall speak within mine, sir, now.  
Within there!

*Enter Servants.*

Take this fellow into custody!

Keep him safe, I charge you!

*Bust.* Safe? Do you hear? take notice  
What plight you find me in; if there want but a  
Or a steak o' me, look to't! [collop,

*Julio.* If my nephew  
Return not in his health to-morrow, thou goest  
To the rack.

*Bust.* Let me go to th' manger first;  
I had rather eat oats than hay. [*Exit, with Servants.*

*Enter BELLIDES with a Letter.*

*Bel.* By your leave, sir.

*Julio.* For aught I know yet, you are welcome,  
sir.

*Bel.* Read that, and tell me so; or if thy spec-  
tacles

Be not easy, keep thy nose unsaddled, and ope  
Thine ears: I can speak thee the contents; I made  
'Tis a challenge, a fair one, I'll maintain't: [*'em.*  
I scorn to hire my second to deliver't,  
I bring't myself. Dost know me, Julio?

*Julio.* Bellides?

*Bel.* Yes; is not thy hair on end now?

*Julio.* Somewhat amazed at thy rash hardness:  
How durst thou come so near thine enemy?

*Bel.* Durst?

I dare come nearer: Thou art a fool, Julio.

*Julio.* Take it home to thee, with a knave to  
boot.

*Bel.* Knave to thy teeth again! and all that's  
Give me not a fool more than I give thee, [quit.  
Or, if thou dost, look to hear on't again.

*Julio.* What an encounter's this!

*Bel.* A noble one!

My hand is to my words; thou hast it there:  
There I do challenge thee, if thou dar'st, be  
Good friends with me; or I'll proclaim thee

*Julio.* Be friends with thee? [coward.

*Bel.* I'll shew thee reasons for't:

A pair of old coxcombs, (now we go together)  
Such as should stand examples of discretion,  
The rules of grammar to unwilling youth  
To take out lessons by; we, that should check  
And quench the raging fire in others' bloods,  
We strike the battle to destruction?  
Read 'em the black art? and make 'em believe  
It is divinity? Heathens, are we not?

Speak thy conscience: how hast thou slept this  
Since this fiend haunted us? [month,

*Julio.* Sure some good angel  
Was with us both last night! Speak thou truth  
Was it not last night's motion? [now;

*Bel.* Dost not think

I would not lay hold of it at first proffer,  
Should I ne'er sleep again?

*Julio.* Take not all from me;

I'll tell the doctrine of my vision.

"Say that Antonio, best of thy blood,  
Or any one, the least allied to thee,  
Should be the prey unto Lisauro's sword,  
Or any of the house of Bellides"——

*Bel.* Mine was the just inversion; on, on!

*Julio.* "How would mine eyes have emptied  
thee in sorrow,

And left the conduit of Nature dry!

Thy hands have turn'd rebellious to the balls,

And broke the glasses; with thine own curses  
Have torn thy soul, left thee a statue  
To propagate thy next posterity!"

*Bel.* "Yes, and thou causer!" so it said to me,  
"They fight but your mischiefs; the young men  
As is the life and blood coagulate, [were friends,  
And curded in one body; but this is yours,  
An inheritance that you have gather'd for 'em,  
A legacy of blood to kill each other  
Throughout your generations." Was't not so?

*Julio.* Word for word.

*Bel.* Nay, I can go farther yet.

*Julio.* 'Tis far enough: Let us atone it here,  
And in a reconciled circle fold  
Our friendship new again.

*Bel.* The sign's in Gemini;  
An auspicious house! 't has join'd both ours again.

*Julio.* You cannot proclaim me coward now,  
Don Bellides.

*Bel.* No; thou'rt a valiant fellow; so am I:  
I'll fight with thee at this hug, to the last leg  
I have to stand on, or breath or life left.

*Julio.* This is the salt unto humanity,  
And keeps it sweet.

*Bel.* Love! oh, life stinks without it.—  
I can tell you news.

*Julio.* Good has long been wanting.

*Bel.* I do suspect, and I have some proof on't,  
(So far as a love-epistle comes to)  
That Antonio (your nephew) and my daughter  
Ismenia, are very good friends before us.

*Julio.* That were a double wall about our houses,  
Which I could wish were builded.

*Bel.* I had it from

Antonio's intimate, Don Martine:

And yet, methought, it was no friendly part  
To shew it me.

*Julio.* Perhaps 'twas his consent:  
Lovers have policies as well as statesmen:  
They look not always at the mark they aim at.

*Bel.* We'll take up cudgels, and have one bout  
They shall know nothing of this union; [with 'em.  
And, till they find themselves most desperate,  
Succour shall never see 'em.

*Julio.* I'll take your part, sir.

*Bel.* It grows late; there's a happy day past us.

*Julio.* The example, I hope, to all behind it.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.—*Night. Before the House of  
BELLIDES.*

*AMINTA appears at the Window with a Taper.*

*Amin.* Stand fair, light of love! which epithet  
and place

Adds to thee honour, to me it would be shame.  
We must be weight in love, no grain too light;  
Thou art the land-mark: but if Love be blind,  
(As many that can see have so reported)  
What benefit canst thou be to his darkness?  
Love is a jewel (some say) inestimable,  
But hung at the ear, deprives our own sight,  
And so it shines to others, not ourselves.  
I speak my skill; I have only heard on't,  
But I could wish a nearer document.

Alas, the ignorant desire to know!  
Some say, Love's but a toy, and with a but——  
Now, methinks, I should love it ne'er the worse;  
A toy is harmless sure, and may be play'd with;  
It seldom goes without his adjunct, *pretty,*

"A pretty toy," we say; 'tis metre to joy too.  
Well, here may be a mad night yet, for all this!  
Here's a priest ready, and a lady ready;  
A chamber ready, and a bed ready;  
'Tis then but making unready, and that's soon  
done.

My lady is my cousin; I myself;  
Which is nearest then? My desires are mine;  
Say they be hers too, is't a hanging matter?  
It may be ventured in a worse cause.  
I must go question with my conscience;  
I have the word; centinel, do thou stand;  
Thou shalt not need to call, I'll be at hand. *[Exit.]*

*Enter below, ANTONIO and MARTINE.*

*Ant.* Are we not dogg'd behind us, think'st thou,  
friend?

*Mart.* I heard not one bark, sir.

*Ant.* There are that bite

And bark not, man; methought I spied two  
fellows,

That through two streets together walk'd aloof,  
And wore their eyes suspiciously upon us.

*Mart.* Your jealousy, nothing else; or such  
perhaps

As are afraid as much of us; who knows  
But about the like business? but, for your fears'  
I'll advise and entreat one courtesy. *[sake,*

*Ant.* What is that, friend?

*Mart.* I will not be denied, sir;

Change your upper garments with me.

*Ant.* It needs not.

*Mart.* I think so too; but I will have it so,

If you dare trust me with the better, sir.

*Ant.* Nay then—

*Mart.* If there should be danger towards,

There will be the main mark, I'm sure.

*Ant.* Here thou takest from me—

*Mart.* Tush! the general

Must be safe, howe'er the battle goes.

*[They change cloaks.]*

See you the beacon yonder?

*Ant.* Yes; we are near shore.

*Enter two Gentlemen, with weapons drawn; they set  
upon MARTINE; ANTONIO pursues them out in rescue of  
MARTINE.*

*Mart.* Come, land, land! you must clamber by  
Here are no stairs to raise by. *[the cliff]*

*Ant.* Ay! are you there? *[Fight, and crowd.]*

*Enter AMINTA above, and MARTINE, returned again,  
ascends.*

*Amin.* Antonio?

*Mart.* Yes. Ismenia?

*Amin.* Thine own.

*Mart.* Quench the light; thine eyes are guides  
illustrious.

*Amin.* 'Tis necessary. *[Exeunt.]*

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Your legs have saved your lives, whoe'er  
ye are.

Friend! Martine! where art thou? not hurt, I

Sure I was farthest i' th' pursuit of 'em. *[hope!]*

My pleasures are forgotten through my fears!

The light's extinct! it was discreetly done;

They could not but have notice of the broil,

And fearing that might call up company,

Have carefully prevented, and closed up;

I do commend the heed. Oh, but my friend,

I fear he's hurt!—Friend! friend! I cannot be

So mortal, that I should lose thee quite, friend!

A groan! anything that may discover thee!

Thou art not sunk so far, but I might hear thee.

I'll lay mine ear as low as thou canst fall:

Friend! Don Martine! I must answer for thee.

'Twas in my cause thou fell'st if thou be'st down.

Such dangers stand betwixt us and our joys,

That, should we forethink ere we undertake,

We'd sit at home, and save.—What a night's here!

Purposed for so much joy, and now disposed

To so much wretchedness! I shall not rest in't!

If I had all my pleasures there within,

I should not entertain 'em with a smile.

Good night to you! Mine will be black and sad;

A friend cannot, a woman may be had. *[Exit.]*

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the House of BELLIDES.

*Enter ISMENIA and AMINTA.*

*Ism.* Oh, thou false—

*Amin.* Do your daring'st! he's mine own,  
Soul and body mine, church and chamber mine,  
Totally mine.

*Ism.* Darest thou face thy falsehood?

*Amin.* Shall I not give a welcome to my wishes,  
Come home so sweetly? Farewell, your company,  
Till you be calmer, woman! *[Exit.]*

*Ism.* Oh, what a heap  
Of misery has one night brought with it!

*Enter ANTONIO.*

*Ant.* Where is he? Do you turn your shame  
from me?

You're a blind adulteress! you know you are.

*Ism.* How's that, Antonio?

*Ant.* Till I have vengeance,

Your sin's not pardonable! I will have him,  
If hell hide him not! you have had your last of  
him. *[Exit.]*

*Ism.* What did he speak? I understood him not.  
He call'd me a foul name; it was not mine;  
He took me for another, sure.

*Enter BELLIDES.*

*Bel.* Ha! are you there?

Where is your sweetheart? I have found you,  
traitor

To my house! wilt league with mine enemy?

You'll shed his blood, you'll say: Ha! will you so?

And fight with your heels upwards? No, minion:

I have a husband for you, (since you're so rank)

And such a husband as thou shalt like him,

Whether thou wilt or no: Antonio?

*Ism.* It thunders with the storm now.

*Bel.* And to-night

I'll have it dispatch'd; I'll make it sure, I!

By to-morrow this time thy maidenhead

Shall not be worth a chequin, if it were  
Knock'd at an out-cry. Go! I'll ha' you before me:  
Shough, shough! up to your coop, pea-hen!

*Ism.* Then I'll try my wings. [*Exit.*]

*Bel.* Ay? are you good at that? stop, stop,  
thief! stop there! [*Exit.*]

SCENE II.—*An Apartment in the House of*  
OTRANTE.

*Enter OTRANTE and FLORINEL, singing.*

SONG.

*Flor.* Now having leisure, and a happy wind,  
Thou mayst at pleasure cause the stones to grind;  
Sails spread, and grist here ready to be ground;  
Fy, stand not idly, but let the mill go round!

*Otr.* Why dost thou sing and dance thus? why  
so merry?

Why dost thou look so wantonly upon me?  
And kiss my hands?

*Flor.* If I were high enough,  
I would kiss your lips too.

*Otr.* Do, this is some kindness;  
This tastes of willingness; nay, you may kiss still.  
But why o' th' sudden now does the fit take you,  
Unoffer'd, or uncompell'd? why these sweet cur-  
tesies? [*thus:*]

Even now you would have blush'd to death to kiss  
Pr'ythee, let me be prepared to meet thy kindness!  
I shall be unfurnish'd else to hold thee play, wench!  
Stay now a little, and delay your blessings!  
If this be love, methinks it is too violent:  
If you repent you of your strictness to me,  
It is so sudden, it wants circumstance.

*Flor.* Fy, how dull!

SONG.

How long shall I pine for love?  
How long shall I sue in vain?  
How long, like the turtle-dove,  
Shall I heavily thus complain?  
Shall the sails of my love stand still?  
Shall the grist of my hopes be unground?  
Oh fy, oh fy, oh fy!  
Let the mill, let the mill go round!

*Otr.* Pr'ythee be calm a little!  
Thou makest me wonder; thou that wert so strange,  
And read such pious rules to my behaviour  
But yesternight; thou that wert made of modesty,  
Shouldst in a few short minutes turn thus desperate!

*Flor.* You are too cold.

*Otr.* I do confess I freeze now!  
I am another thing all over me.  
It is my part to woo, not to be courted.  
Unfold this riddle; 'tis to me a wonder,  
That now o' th' instant, ere I can expect,  
Ere I can turn my thoughts, and think upon  
A separation of your honest carriage  
From the desires of youth, thus wantonly,  
Thus beyond expectation—

*Flor.* I will tell you,  
And tell you seriously, why I appear thus,  
To hold you no more ignorant and blinded:  
I have no modesty; I am truly wanton;  
I am that you look for, sir: Now, come up  
roundly!

If my strict face and counterfeited stateliness  
Could have won on you, I had caught you that way,  
And you should ne'er have come to have known  
who hurt you.

Pr'ythee, sweet count, be more familiar with me!  
However we are open in our natures,  
And apt to more desires than you dare meet with,  
Yet we affect to lay the gloss of good on't.  
I saw you touch'd not at the bait of chastity,  
And that it grew distasteful to your palate  
To appear so holy; therefore I take my true shape:  
Is your bed ready, sir? you shall quickly find me.

SONG.

On the bed I'll throw thee, throw thee down;  
Down being laid,  
Shall we be afraid  
To try the rights that belong to love?  
No, no; there I'll woo thee with a crown,  
Crown our desires;  
Kindle the fires,

When love requires we should wanton prove,  
We'll kiss, we'll sport, we'll laugh, we'll play;  
If thou comest short, for thee I'll stay;  
If thou unskillful art, on the ground  
I'll kindly teach—we'll have the mill go round.

*Otr.* Are you no maid?

*Flor.* Alas, my lord, no certain;  
I am sorry you're so innocent to think so.  
Is this an age for silly maids to thrive in?  
It is so long too since I lost it, sir,  
That I have no belief I ever was one:  
What should you do with maidenheads? you hate  
'em;  
They are peevish, pettish things, that hold no game  
up,

No pleasure neither; they are sport for surgeons;  
I'll warrant you I'll fit you beyond maidenhead:  
A fair and easy way men travel right in,  
And with delight, discourse, and twenty pleasures,  
They enjoy their journey; madmen creep through  
hedges.

*Otr.* I am metamorphosed! Why do you appear,  
I conjure you, beyond belief thus wanton?

*Flor.* Because I would give you pleasure beyond  
belief.

SONG.

Think me still in my father's mill,  
Where I have oft been found-a  
Thrown on my back,  
On a well-fill'd sack,  
While the mill has still gone round-a:  
Pr'ythee, sirrah, try thy skill;  
And again let the mill go round-a!

*Otr.* Then you have traded?

*Flor.* Traded? how should I know else how to  
live, sir,  
And how to satisfy such lords as you are,  
Our best guests and our richest?

*Otr.* How I shake now!  
You take no base men?

*Flor.* Any that will offer;  
All manner of men, and all religions, sir,  
We touch at in our time; all states and ages,  
We exempt none.

SONG.

The young one, the old one.  
The fearful, the bold one,  
The lame one, though ne'er so unsound,  
The Jew or the Turk,  
Have leave for to work,  
The whilst that the mill goes round.

*Otr.* You are a common thing then?

*Flor.* No matter, since you have your private  
And have it by an artist excellent, [pleasure,

Whether I am thus, or thus ; your men can tell you.

*Otr.* My men? defend me! how I freeze together,

And am on ice! Do I bite at such an orange? After my men? I am preferr'd!

*Flor.* Why stay you?  
Why do we talk, my lord, and lose our time?  
Pleasure was made for lips, and sweet embraces;  
Let lawyers use their tongues!—Pardon me, Modesty!  
[*Apart.*]

This desperate way must help; or I am miserable.  
*Otr.* She turns, and wipes her face; she weeps for certain!

Some new way now; she cannot be thus beastly;  
She is too excellent fair to be thus impudent;  
She knows the elements of common looseness;  
The art of lewdness—that, that, that—How now, sir!

*Enter a Servant.*

*Serv.* The king, an't please your lordship, is Close at the gate. [alighted]

*Otr.* The king?  
*Serv.* And calls for you, sir;  
Means to breakfast here too.

*Flor.* Then I am happy!  
*Otr.* Stolen so suddenly? Go, lock her up;  
Lock her up where the courtiers may not see her;  
Lock her up closely, sirrah, in my closet.

*Serv.* I will, my lord. What, does she yield yet?  
*Otr.* Peace!

She's either a damn'd devil, or an angel.—  
No noise, upon your life, dame, but all silence!  
[*Exeunt FLORIMEL and Servant.*]

*Enter King, Lords, VENTIGO, LISAURO, and TERZO.*

*Otr.* Your majesty heaps too much honour on me,  
With such delight to view each several corner  
Of a rude pile; there's no proportion in't, sir.

*Phil.* Methinks 'tis handsome, and the rooms along  
Are neat, and well contrived: the gallery  
Stands pleasantly and sweet. What rooms are  
*Otr.* They are sluttish ones. [these?]

*Phil.* Nay, I must see.  
*Otr.* Pray you do, sir:  
They are lodging-chambers o'er a homely garden.

*Phil.* Fit still, and handsome; very well!—and those?

*Otr.* Those lead to the other side o' th' house,  
*Phil.* Let me see those. [an't like you]

*Otr.* You may; the doors are open.—  
What should this view mean? I am half suspicious.  
[*Aside.*]

*Phil.* This little room?  
*Otr.* 'Tis mean; a place for trash, sir,  
For rubbish of the house.

*Phil.* I would see this too:  
I will see all.

*Otr.* I beseech your majesty!  
The savour of it, and the coarse appearance—

*Phil.* 'Tis not so bad; you would not offend  
Come, let me see. [your house with it:]

*Otr.* 'Faith, sir—  
*Phil.* I'faith, I will see.

*Otr.* My groom has the key, sir; and 'tis ten to one—

*Phil.* But I will see it.—Force the lock, my lords,

There be smiths enough to mend it:—I perceive  
You keep some rare things here, you would not  
shew, sir.

*FLORIMEL discovered.*

*Terzo.* Here's a fair maid indeed!  
*Phil.* By my faith is she;  
A handsome girl!—Come forward! do not fear,  
wench.—

Ay, marry, here's a treasure worth concealing.  
Call in the miller.

*Otr.* Then I am discover'd!—  
I'll confess all before the miller comes, sir:  
'Twas but intention; from all act I am clear yet.

*Enter FRANKO.*

*Phil.* Is this your daughter?  
*Fra.* Yes, an't please your highness,  
This is the shape of her; for her substance, sir,  
Whether she be now honourable or dishonourable,  
Whether she be a white rose, or a canker, is the  
question.

I thank my lord, he made bold with my filly:  
If she be for your pace, you had best preserve her,  
sir;

She's tender-mouth'd; let her be broken hand-  
*Phil.* Maid, were you stol'n? [somerly!]

*Flor.* I went not willingly,  
An't please your grace; I was ne'er bred so boldly.

*Phil.* How has he used you!  
*Flor.* Yet, sir, very nobly.

*Phil.* Be sure you tell truth.—And be sure, my  
lord,

You have not wrong'd her; if you have, I tell you,  
You have lost me and yourself too!—Speak again,  
wench.

*Flor.* He has not wrong'd me, sir; I am yet a  
maid:

By all that's white and innocent, I am, sir!  
Only I suffer'd under strong temptations,  
The heat of youth; but Heaven delivers'd me.—  
My lord, I am no whore, for all I feign'd it;  
And feign'd it cunningly, and made you loath me:  
'Twas time to out-do you: I had been robb'd else,  
I had been miserable; but I forgave you.

*Phil.* What recompense for this?  
*Otr.* A great one, sir;

First a repentance, and a hearty one.—  
Forgive me, sweet!

*Flor.* I do, my lord.

*Otr.* I thank you!  
The next, take this, and these; all I have, Flori-  
mel! [Offers jewels.]

*Flor.* No, good my lord, these often corrupt  
maidens;

I dare not touch at these, they are lime for virgins;  
But if you'll give me—

*Otr.* Anything in my power,  
Or in my purchase.

*Flor.* Take heed, noble sir!

You'll make me a bold asker.

*Otr.* Ask me freely.

*Flor.* Ask you? I do ask you, and I deserve  
you;

I have kept you from a crying sin would damn you  
To men and time; I have preserved your credit,  
That would have died to all posterity:  
Curses of maids shall never now afflict you,  
Nor parents' bitter tears make your name barra-  
caded. If he deserves well that redeems his country,  
And as a patriot be remember'd nobly,

Nay, set the highest ; may not I be worthy  
To be your friend, that have preserved your  
honour ?

*Otr.* You are, and thus I take you ; thus I seal  
Mine own, and only mine. [you

*Phil.* Count, she deserves you :  
And let it be my happiness to give you !

[Gives her to OTRANTE.  
I have given a virtuous maid now, I dare say it ;  
'Tis more than blood. I'll pay her portion, sir ;  
And it shall be worthy you.

*Fra.* I'll sell my mill,  
I'll pay some too ! I'll pay the fiddlers,  
And we'll have all i' th' country at this wedding.  
Pray let me give her too :—Here, my lord, take  
her,

Take her with all my heart, and kiss her freely.  
'Would I could give you all this hand has stol'n  
too,

In portion with her ! 'twould make her a little  
whiter.

The wind blows fair now ; get me a young miller !  
*Vert.* She must have new clothes.

*Terso.* Yes.

*Vert.* Yes, marry must she.—

If't please ye, madam, let me see the state of your  
I'll fit you instantly. [body ;

*Phil.* Art not thou gone yet ?

*Vert.* An't please your grace, a gown, a hand-  
An orient gown— [some gown now,

*Phil.* Nay, take thy pleasure of her.

*Vert.* Of cloth of tissue—I can fit you, madam :  
(My lords, stand out o' th' light !) a curious body !  
The neatest body in Spain this day—with embroi-  
der'd flowers,

A clinquant petticoat of some rich stuff,  
To catch the eye : I have a thousand fashions.  
Oh, sleeve, oh, sleeve ! I'll study all night, madam,  
To magnify your sleeve.

*Otr.* Do, superstitious tailor,

When you have more time.

*Flor.* Make me no more than woman, and I am  
thine.

*Otr.* Sir, happily my wardrobe, with your help,  
May fit her instantly ; will you try her ?

*Vert.* If I fit her not, your wardrobe cannot :  
But if the fashion be not there, you mar her.

*Enter ANTONIO, Constable, and Officers.*

*Ant.* Is my offence so great, ere I be convict,  
To be torn with rascals ? If it be law,  
Let 'em be wild horses rather than these.

*Phil.* What's that ?

*Con.* This is a man suspected of murder, if it  
please your grace.

*Phil.* It pleases me not, friend. But who sus-  
pects him ?

*Con.* We that are your highness' extraordinary  
officers, we that have taken our oaths to maintain  
you in peace.

*Phil.* 'Twill be a great charge to you.

*Con.* 'Tis a great charge indeed ; but then we  
call our neighbours to help us. This gentleman  
and another were fallen out (yet that is more than  
I am able to say, for I heard no words between 'em,  
but what their weapons spoke, clash, and clatter)  
which we seeing, came with our bills of govern-  
ment, and first knock'd down their weapons, and  
then the men.

*Phil.* And this you did to keep the peace ?

*Con.* Yes, an't like your grace, we knock'd 'em  
down, to keep the peace : This we laid hold on,  
the other we set in the stocks. That I could do,  
by mine own power, without your majesty.

*Phil.* How so, sir ?

*Con.* I am a shoemaker by my trade.

*Enter AMINTA.*

*Amin.* Oh, my husband !  
Why stands my husband as a man endanger'd ?  
Restore him me, as you are merciful !  
I'll answer for him.

*Ant.* What woman's this ?—What husband ?—  
Hold thy bawling !

I know thee for no wife.

*Amin.* You married me last night.

*Ant.* Thou liest ! I neither was

In church nor house last night, nor saw I thee.  
A thing that was my friend, I scorn to name now,  
Was with Ismenia, like a thief, and there  
He violated a sacred trust : This thou may'st know.

*Amin.* Are not you he ? [Aminta.

*Ant.* No, nor a friend of his :

'Would I had killed him ! I hope I have.

*Amin.* That was my husband, royal sir, that  
That excellent man ! [man,

*Ant.* That villain, that thief !

*Enter BELLIDUS.*

*Bel.* Have I caught you, sir ? Well overtaken !  
This is mine enemy.—Pardon, my sovereign !

*Phil.* Good charity, to crave pardon for your  
enemy !

*Bel.* Mine own pardon, sir, for my joy's rude-  
In what place better could I meet my foe, [ness.  
And both of us so well provided too ?

He with some black blood-thirsty crime upon him,  
That (ere the horse-leech burst) will suck him dry ;  
I with a second accusation,  
Enough to break his neck, if need should be ;  
And then to have even Justice' self to right us !  
How should I make my joys a little civil,  
They might not keep this noise ?

*Ant.* Here is some hope :

Should the axe be dull, the altar is preparing.

*Phil.* What is your accusation, sir ? We have  
The former. [heard

*Enter JULIO.*

*Bel.* Mine, my lord ? A strong one.

*Julio.* A false one, sir,  
At least malicious ; an evidence  
Of hatred and despite : He would accuse  
My poor kinsman of that he never dreamed of,  
Nor, waking, saw,—the stealing of his daughter ;  
She whom, I know, he would not look upon.—  
Speak, Antonio, didst thou ever see her ?

*Ant.* Yes, sir ; I have seen her.

*Bel.* Ah, ha, friend Julio !

*Julio.* He might ; but how ? With an unheed-  
ful eye,

An accidental view, as men see multitudes,  
That the next day dare not precisely say  
They saw that face, or that, amongst 'em all—  
Didst thou so look on her ?

*Bel.* Guilty, guilty !

His looks hang themselves.

*Phil.* Your patience, gentlemen !

I pray you tell me if I be in error ;  
I may speak often when I should but hear,  
This is some show you would present us with,

And I do interrupt it. Pray you speak,  
(It seems no more) is't anything but a show?

*Bel.* My lord, this gentlewoman can shew you  
all,

So could my daughter too, if she were here :  
By this time they are both immodest enough.  
She is fled me, and I accuse this thief for't.  
Don Martine, his own friend, 's my testimony ;  
A practised night-work !

*Phil.* That Martine's the other  
In your custody ; he was forgotten :  
Fetch him hither.

*Con.* We'll bring the stocks and all else,  
An't please your grace !

*Amin.* That man's my husband certain, instead  
Of this : Both would have deceived, and both be-  
guiled.

*Enter BUSTOPHA and ISMENIA as Juno.*

*Bust.* So ho, miller, miller ! look out, miller ! Is  
there ne'er a miller amongst you here, gentlemen ?

*Terso.* Yes, sir, here is a miller amongst gentle-  
A gentleman miller. [men,

*Bust.* I should not be far off then ; here went  
but a pair of sheers and a bookin between us.—  
Will you to work, miller ? Here's a maid has a  
sack full of news for you : Shall your stones walk ?  
Will you grind, miller ?

*Phil.* This your son, Franio ?

*Fra.* My ungracious, my disobedient,  
My unnatural, my rebel son, my lord.

*Bust.* Fy ! your hopper runs over, miller.

*Fra.* This villain  
(Of my own flesh and blood) was accessory  
To the stealing of my daughter.

*Bust.* Oh mountain, shalt thou call a molehill a  
scab upon the face of the earth ? Though a man be  
a thief, shall a miller call him so ? Oh, egregious !

*Julio.* Remember, sirrah, who you speak before.

*Bust.* I speak before a miller, a thief in grain ;  
for he steals corn : He that steals a wench, is a  
true man to him.

*Phil.* Can you prove that ?

You may help another cause that was in pleading.

*Bust.* I'll prove it strongly. He that steals  
corn, steals the bread of the commonwealth ; he  
that steals a wench, steals but the flesh.

*Phil.* And how

Is the bread-stealing more criminal than the flesh ?

*Bust.* He that steals bread, steals that which is  
lawful every day ; he that steals flesh, steals no-  
thing from the fasting day : *ergo*, to steal the bread  
is the arranter theft.

*Phil.* This is to some purpose.

*Bust.* Again, he that steals flesh, steals for his  
own belly full ; he that steals bread, robs the guts  
of others : *Ergo*, the arranter thief the bread-stealer.  
Again, he that steals flesh, steals once, and gives  
over ; yes, and often pays for it ; the other steals  
every day, without satisfaction. To conclude, bread-  
stealing is the more capital crime ; for what he  
steals, he puts it in at the head ; he that steals  
flesh (as the Dutch author says) puts it in at the  
foot (the lower member).—Will you go as you are  
now, miller ?

*Phil.* How has this satisfied you, Don Bellides ?

*Bel.* Nothing, my lord ; my cause is serious !  
I claim a daughter from that loving thief there.

*Ant.* I would I had her for you, sir !

*Bel.* Ah, ha, Julio !

*Julio.* How said you, Antonio ! Wish you, you  
had his daughter ?

*Ant.* With my soul I wish her ; and my body  
Shall perish, but I will enjoy my soul's wish.  
I would have slain my friend for his deceit,  
But I do find his own deceit hath paid him.

*Julio.* Will you vex my soul forth ? no other  
choice

But where my hate is rooted ?—Come hither, girl !  
Whose pretty maid art thou ?

*Ism.* The child of a poor man, sir.

*Julio.* The better for it. With my sovereign's  
I will wed thee to this man, will he, will he. [leave,

*Phil.* Pardon me, sir, I'll be no love-enforcer ;  
I use no power of mine unto those ends.

*Julio.* Wilt thou have him ?

*Ism.* Not unless he love me.

*Ant.* I do love thee : Farewell all other beauties !  
I settle here.—You are Ismenia ?

[*Aside to ISMENIA.*

*Ism.* The same I was ; better, nor worse, An-  
tonio.

*Ant.* I shall have your consent here, I'm sure,  
sir.

*Bel.* With all my heart, sir ; nay, if you accept  
I'll do this kindness to mine enemy, [it,  
And give her as a father.

*Ant.* She'll thank you as a daughter ;—

Will you not, Ismenia ?

*Bel.* How ! Ismenia ?

*Ism.* Your daughter, sir.

*Bel.* Is't possible ?—

Away, you feeble-witted things ! You thought  
You had caught the old ones ! You wade, you  
wade

In shallow fords ; we can swim, we : Look here !  
We made the match ; we are all friends, good  
friends :

Thin, thin ! Why, the fool knew all this, this  
fool.

*Bust.* Keep that to yourself, sir ; what I knew  
I knew : This sack is a witness.—Miller, this is  
not for your thumbing : Here's gold lace ; you  
may see her in the holiday clothes if you will ; I  
was her wardrobe man.

*Enter MARTINE, AMINTA, Constable, and Officers.*

*Ant.* You beguiled me well, sir. [To JULIO.

*Mart.* Did you speak to me, sir ?

*Ant.* It might seem to you, Martine ;  
Your conscience has quick ears.

*Mart.* My sight was  
A little dim i' th' dark indeed ; so was  
My feeling cozen'd ; yet I am content :  
I am the better understander now ;  
I know my wife wants nothing of a woman !  
There you're my junior.

*Ant.* You are not hurt ?

*Mart.* Not shrewdly hurt ;  
I have good flesh to heal, you see, good round  
flesh.

These cherries will be worth chopping, crack  
stones and all ;

I should not give much to boot to ride in your  
new,

And you in my old ones now.

*Ant.* You mistake the weapon : Are you not  
hurt ?

*Mart.* A little scratch ; but I shall claw it off  
well enough.

Enter GILLIAN.

*Gil.* I can no longer own what is not mine,  
With a free conscience.—My liege, your pardon.

*Phil.* For what?—Who knows this woman?

*Fra.* I best, my lord; I have been acquainted  
with her

These forty summers, and as many winters,  
Were it spring again: She's like the gout; I can  
No cure for her. [get

*Phil.* Oh, your wife, Franio?

*Fra.* 'Tis "oh, my wife" indeed, my lord;  
A painful stitch to my side; 'would it were pick'd

*Phil.* Well, sir, your silence! [out!

*Bust.* Will you be older and older every day  
than other? The older you live the older still?  
Must his majesty command your silence, ere you'll  
hold your tongue?

*Phil.* Your reprehension runs into the same  
Pray, sir, will you be silent? [fault:

*Bust.* I have told him of this before now, my  
liege; but age will have his course, and his weak-  
nesses—

*Phil.* Good sir, your forbearance.

*Bust.* And his frailties, and his follies, as I may  
say, that cannot hold his tongue ere he be bid-  
den—

*Phil.* Why, sirrah!

*Bust.* But I believe your majesty will not be  
long troubled with him: I hope that woman has  
something to confess will hang 'em both.

*Phil.* Sirrah, you'll pull your destiny upon you,  
If you cease not the sooner.

*Bust.* Nay, I have done, my liege; yet it grieves  
me that I should call that man father, that should  
be so shameless, that being commanded to hold  
his tongue—

*Phil.* To the porter's lodge with him.

*Bust.* I thank your grace! I have a friend there.

*Phil.* Speak, woman!

If any interruption meet thee more, it shall  
Be punish'd sharply.

*Gil.* Good my liege, (I dare not)

Ask you the question why that old man weeps.

*Phil.* Who? Count Julio? I observed it not.—  
You hear the question, sir; will you give the  
cause?

*Julio.* Oh, my lord, it hardly will get passage,  
(It is a sorrow of that greatness grown)  
'Less it dissolve in tears, and come by parcels.

*Gil.* I'll help you, sir, in the delivery,  
And bring you forth a joy: You lost a daughter.

*Julio.* 'Twas that recounted thought brought  
forth these sorrows.

*Gil.* She's found again. Know you this mantle,

*Julio.* Ha! [sir?

*Gil.* Nay, leave your wonder, I'll explain it to  
you.

This did enwrap your child, whom ever since  
I have call'd mine, when nurse Amaranth,  
In a remove from Mora to Corduba,  
Was seized on by a fierce and hungry bear;  
She was the ravin's prey, as Heaven so would!  
He, with his booty fill'd, forsook the babe:  
All this was in my sight; and so long I saw,  
Until the cruel creature left my sight;  
At which advantage I adventured me  
To rescue the sweet lamb: I did it, sir;  
And ever since I have kept back your joy,  
And made it mine. But age hath wearied me,  
And bids me back restore unto the owner

What I unjustly kept these fourteen years.

*Julio.* Oh, thou hast ta'en so many years from  
me,

And made me young as was her birth-day to me.

Oh, good my liege, give my joys a pardon!

I must go pour a blessing on my child,

Which here would be too rude and troublesome.

[Exit.

*Phil.* Franio, you knew this before?

*Bust.* Oh, oh! Item for you, miller!

*Fra.* I did, my liege; I must confess I did;

And I confess, I ne'er would have confess'd,

Had not that woman's tongue begun to me.

We poor ones love, and would have comforts, sir,

As well as great. This is no strange fault, sir;

There's many men keep other men's children,

As though they were their own.

*Bust.* It may stretch farther yet; I beseech

you, my liege, let this woman be a little farther

examined; let the wards of her conscience be

search'd: I would know how she came by me;

I am a lost child, if I be theirs: Though I have

been brought up in a mill, yet I had ever a mind,

methought, to be a greater man.

*Phil.* She will resolve you sure.

*Gil.* Ay, ay, boy; thou art mine own flesh and  
Born of mine own body. [blood,

*Bust.* 'Tis very unlikely that such a body should

bear me! There's no trust in these millers.

Woman, tell the truth! My father shall forgive

thee, whatsoever he was, were he knight, squire,

or captain; less he should not be.

*Gil.* Thou art mine own child, boy.

*Bust.* And was the miller my father?

*Gil.* Wouldst thou make thy mother a whore,  
knave?

*Bust.* Ay, if she make me a bastard.—The rack  
must make her confess, my lord; I shall never  
come to know who I am else. I have a worship-  
ful mind in me, sure; methinks I do scorn poor  
folks.

Enter OTRANTE, FLORIMEL, JULIO, &c.

*Phil.* Here comes the brightest glory of the day;  
Love yoked with love, the best equality,  
Without the level of estate or person.

*Jul.* You both shall be rewarded bountifully;

We'll be a-kin too; brother and sister shall

Be changed with us ever.

*Bust.* Thank you, uncle! My sister is my cousin

yet, at the last cast: Farewell, sister-foster; if I

had known the civil law would have allowed it,

thou hadst had another manner of husband than

thou hast; but much good do thee! I'll dance at

thy wedding, kiss the bride, and so—

*Julio.* Why, how now, sirrah?

*Bust.* 'Tis lawful now, she's none of my sister.

[Sings.

It was a miller and a lord,

That had a scabbard and a sword,

He put it up, in the country word;

The miller and his daughter.

She has a face, and she can sing,

She has a grace, and she can bring,

She has a place with another thing.

Tradoodle.

*Fra.* A knavish brother of yours, my lord.

*Bust.* 'Would I were acquainted with your  
tailor, noble brother.

*Otr.* You may ; there he is ! mine, newly entertain'd.

*Verf.* If you have any work for me, I can fit I fitted the lady. [you, sir ;

*Bust.* My sister, tailor ? What fits her will hardly fit me.

*Verf.* Who fits her

May fit you, sir ; the tailor can do both.

*Bust.* You have a true yard, tailor ?

*Verf.* Ne'er a whit too long, I warrant you.

*Bust.* [*Sings.*] Then, tailor, march with me away !  
I scorn these robes, I must be gay ;

My noble brother he shall pay  
Tom Tailor. [Exit.]

*Phil.* Your recovered friendships are sound, gentlemen ?

*Bel.* At heart, at heart, my lord : The worm shall not

Beyond many ages find a breach to enter at.

*Phil.* These lovers' unities I will not doubt of. How happy have you made our progress then, To be the witness of such fair accords !

Come, now we'll eat with you, my lord Otrante : 'Tis a charge saved ; you must not grudge your guest ;

'Tis both my welcome, and your wedding-feast.

[Exit.]

# LOVE'S PILGRIMAGE.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ALONSO, *Governor of Barcelona.*  
LEONARDO, *a noble Genoese, Father to MARC-ANTONIO.*  
SANCHEO, *an old lame angry Soldier, Father to LEOCADIA.*  
ALPHONSO, *a choleric Don, Father to THEODOSIA.*  
PHILIPPO, *Son to ALPHONSO, Lover of LEOCADIA.*  
MARC-ANTONIO, *Son to LEONARDO.*  
PEDRO, *Friend to LEONARDO.*  
RODERIGO, *General of the Spanish Gallies.*  
INCUBO, *Bailiff of Castel-Blanco.*  
DIEGO, *Host of OSSUNA.*  
LALABO, *Hostler to DIEGO.*

Host }  
Bailiff } *of Ygualada.*  
Chirurgions, Soldiers, Townsmen, Attendants,  
Passengers, Boys, Servants.  
THEODOSIA, *Daughter to* } *Love-sick Ladies in*  
ALPHONSO, } *pursuit of MARC-*  
LEOCADIA, *Daughter to* } *ANTONIO.*  
SANCHEO, }  
EUGENIA, *Wife to the Governor of Barcelona.*  
Hostess, *Wife to DIEGO.*  
Wife to the Host of Barcelona.

SCENE,—SPAIN, AND AT SEA.

## PROLOGUE.

To this place, gentlemen, full many a day  
We have bid ye welcome, and to many a play:  
And those whose angry souls were not diseased  
With law, or lending money, we have pleased;  
And make no doubt to do again. This night,  
No mighty matter, nor no light,  
We must entreat you look for: A good tale,  
Told in two hours, we will not fail,  
If we be perfect, to rehearse ye. New  
I am sure it is, and handsome; but how true

Let them dispute that writ it. Ten to one  
We please the women, and I'd know that man  
Follows not their example! If ye mean  
To know the play well, travel with the scene,  
For it lies upon the road: If we chance tire,  
As ye are good men, leave us not i' th' mire;  
Another bait may mend us: If you grow  
A little gall'd or weary, cry but "ho,"  
And we'll stay for ye. When our journey ends,  
Every man's pot I hope, and all part friends.

## ACT I.

### SCENE I.—OSSUNA. *The Inn.*

*Enter Incubo and Diego.*

*Incubo.* Signor Don Diego, and mine host, save  
*Diego.* I thank you, master Bailiff. [thee!

*Inc.* Oh, the block!

*Diego.* Why, how should I have answer'd?

*Inc.* Not with that

Negligent rudeness; but, "I kiss your hands,  
Signor Don Incubo de' Hambre;" and then  
My titles; "master Bailiff of Castel-Blanco."  
Thou ne'er wilt have the elegancy of an host;  
I sorrow for thee, as my friend and gossip—  
No smoke, nor steam out-breathing from the kit-  
There's little life i' th' hearth then. [chen?

*Diego.* Ay; there, there!

That is his friendship, hearkening for the spit,  
And sorry that he cannot smell the pot boil.

*Inc.* Strange an inn should be so cursed, and  
not the sign

Blasted nor wither'd; very strange! three days  
And not an egg eat in it, or an onion. [now.

*Diego.* I think they ha' strew'd the highways  
with caltraps, I;

No horse dares pass 'em; I did never know  
A week of so sad doings, since I first  
Stood to my sign-post.

*Inc.* Gossip, I have found  
The root of all: Kneel, pray; it is thyself  
Art cause thereof; each person is the founder  
Of his own fortune, good or bad: But mend it;  
Call for thy cloak and rapier.

*Diego.* How!

*Inc.* Do, call,  
And put 'em on in haste: Alter thy fortune,  
By appearing worthy of her. Dost thou think  
Her good face e'er will know a man in *cuero*?  
In single body, thus? in hose and doublet,  
The horse-boy's garb? base blank, and half-blank  
*cuero*?

Did I, or master dean of Sevil, our neighbour,  
E'er reach our dignities in *cuervo*, think'st thou?  
In squirting hose and doublet? Signor, no;  
There went more to't: There were cloaks, gowns,  
And other *paramentos*: Call, I say.— [cassocks,  
His cloak and rapier here!

*Enter Hostess.*

*Hostess.* What means your worship?

*Inc.* Bring forth thy husband's sword.—So!  
hang it on.

And now his cloak; here, cast it up.—I mean,  
Gossip, to change your luck, and bring you guests.

*Hostess.* Why, is there charm in this?

*Inc.* Expect. Now walk;

But not the pace of one that runs on errands!  
For want of gravity in an host is odious.  
You may remember, gossip, if you please,  
(Your wife being then th' *infanta* of the gipsies,  
And yourself governing a great man's mules then)  
Me a poor 'squire at Madrid, attending  
A master of ceremonies (but a man, believe it,  
That knew his place to the gold-weight;) and such,  
Have I heard him oft say, ought every host  
Within the catholic king's dominions  
Be, in his own house.

*Diego.* How?

*Inc.* A master of ceremonies;

At least, vice-master, and to do nought in *cuervo*;  
That was his maxim. I will tell thee of him:  
He would not speak with an ambassador's cook,  
See a cold bake-meat from a foreign part,  
In *cuervo*: Had a dog but stay'd without,  
Or beast of quality, as an English cow,  
But to present itself, he would put on  
His Savoy chain about his neck, the ruff  
And cuffs of Holland, then the Naples hat,  
With the Rome hatband, and the Florentine agate,  
The Milan sword, the cloak of Genoa, set  
With Flemish buttons; all his given pieces,  
To entertain 'em in; and compliment  
With a tame cony, as with the prince that sent it.

[*Knock within.*]

*Diego.* List! who is there?

*Inc.* A guest, an't be thy will!

*Diego.* Look, spouse; cry "luck," an we be  
encounter'd. Ha!

*Hostess.* Luck then, and good; for 'tis a fine  
With a brave horse. [brave guest,

*Inc.* Why now, believe of *cuervo*  
As you shall see occasion. Go, and meet him.

*Enter THEODOUSA in Men's Clothes.*

*Theod.* Look to my horse, I pray you, well.

*Diego.* He shall, sir.

*Inc.* Oh, how beneath his rank and call was  
that now!

"Your horse shall be entreated as becomes  
A horse of fashion, and his inches."

*Theod.* Oh! [Faints.

*Inc.* Look to the cavalier! What ails he? Stay!  
If it concern his horse, let it not trouble him;  
He shall have all respect the place can yield him,  
Either of barley, or fresh straw.

*Diego.* Good sir,  
Look up.

*Inc.* He sinks! Somewhat to cast upon him;  
He'll go away in *cuervo* else.

*Diego.* What, wife!

Oh, your hot waters quickly, and some cold  
To cast in his sweet face.

*Hostess.* Alas, fair flower!

[*Erit.*]

*Inc.* Does any body entertain his horse?

*Diego.* Yes; Lazaro has him.

*Enter Hostess with a Glass of Water.*

*Inc.* Go you see him in person. [*Erit Druso.*]

*Hostess.* Sir, taste a little of this; of mine own  
water,

I did distill't myself. Sweet lilly, look upon me;  
You are but newly blown, my pretty tulip;  
Faint not upon your stalk. 'Tis firm and fresh.  
Stand up: So! bolt upright. You are yet in  
growing.

*Theod.* Pray you let me have a chamber.

*Hostess.* That you shall, sir.

*Theod.* And where I may be private, I entreat  
you.

*Hostess.* For that, in troth, sir, we have no  
choice: Our house

Is but a vent of need, that now and then  
Receives a guest between the greater towns,  
As they come late; only one room—

*Inc.* She means, sir, 'tis none

Of those wild scatter'd heaps call'd inns, where  
scarce  
The host's heard, though he wind his horn to his  
people;

Here is a competent pile, wherein the man,  
Wife, servants, all do live within the whistle.

*Hostess.* Only one room—

*Inc.* A pretty modest quadrangle!

She will describe to you.

*Hostess.* (Wherein stand two beds, sir)

We have: and where, if any guest do come,  
He must of force be lodged; that is the truth, sir.

*Enter Druso.*

*Theod.* But if I pay you for both your beds,  
That should alike content you. [methinks,

*Hostess.* That it shall, sir:

If I be paid, I am paid.

*Theod.* Why, there's a ducat!

Will that make you content?

*Hostess.* Oh, the sweet face on you!

A ducat? yes: An there were three beds, sir,  
And twice so many rooms, which is one more,  
You should be private in them all, in all, sir:  
No one should have a piece of a bed with you;  
Not master dean of Sevil himself, I swear,  
Though he came naked hither, as once he did,  
When he had like to have been ta'en a-bed with  
the Moor,

And gelt by her master; you shall be as private  
As if you lay in's own great house that's haunted,  
Where nobody comes, they say.

*Theod.* I thank you, Hostess.

Pray you, will you shew me in?

*Hostess.* Yes, marry will I, sir;

And pray that not a flea, or a chink vex you.

[*Exeunt Hostess and THEODOUSA.*]

*Inc.* You forget supper! Gossip, move for sup-  
per.

*Diego.* 'Tis strange what love to a beast may do!  
Threw him into this fit. [his horse

*Inc.* You shall excuse me;

It was his being in *cuervo* merely caused it.

*Diego.* Do you think so, sir?

*Inc.* Most unlucky *cuervo*!

Nought else. He looks as he would eat partridge.  
This guest; ha' you 'em ready in the house?

And a fine piece of kid now? and fresh garlic,  
With a sardina and Zant oil?—How now?

*Enter Hostess.*

Has he bespoke? what, will he have a brace,  
Or but one partridge? or a short-legg'd hen,  
Daintily carbonadoed?

*Hostess.* 'Las, the dead

May be as ready for a supper as he.

*Inc.* Ha?

*Hostess.* He has no mind to eat, more than his  
*Inc.* Say you! [shadow.

*Diego.* How does your worship?

*Inc.* I put on

My left-shoe first to-day, (now I perceive it)  
And skipt a bead in saying them over, else  
I could not be thus cross'd! He cannot be  
Above seventeen; one of his years, and have  
No better a stomach?

*Hostess.* And in such good clothes too!

*Diego.* Nay, those do often make the stomach  
That is no reason. [worse, wife;

*Inc.* I could, at his years, gossips,  
(As temperate as you see me now) have eaten  
My brace of ducks, with my half-geese, my cony,  
And drank my whole twelve marvedis in wine,  
As easy as I now get down three olives.

*Diego.* And, with your temperance' favour, yet  
I think

Your worship would put to't at six-and-thirty,  
For a good wager, and the meal in too.

*Inc.* I do not know what mine old mouth can  
I have not proved it lately. [do;

*Diego.* That's the grief, sir.

*Inc.* But is he, without hope then, gone to bed?

*Hostess.* I fear so, sir; he has lock'd the door  
Sure he is very ill. [close to him:

*Inc.* That is with fasting.

You should ha' told him, gossip, what you had  
Given him the inventory of your kitchen; [had,  
It is the picklock in an inn, and often  
Opens a close-barr'd stomach. What may he be,  
Has he so good a horse? [trow!

*Diego.* Oh, a brave jennet,  
As e'er your worship saw.

*Inc.* And he eats?

*Hostess.* Strongly.

*Inc.* A mighty solecism! Heaven grant me pa-  
What creatures has he? [tience!

*Hostess.* None.

*Inc.* And so well clothed,  
And so well mounted?

*Diego.* That's all my wonder, sir,  
Who he should be: He is attired and horsed  
For the constable's son of Spain.

*Inc.* My wonder's more  
He should want appetite.—Well, a good night  
To both my gossips! I will for this time  
Put off the thought of supping. In the morning  
Remember him of breakfast, pray you.

*Hostess.* I shall, sir.

*Diego.* A hungry time, sir.

*Inc.* We that live like mice

On other's meat, must watch when we can get it.  
[Exit.

*Hostess.* Yes, but I would not tell him, our fair  
Says, though he eat no supper, he will pay [guest  
For one.

*Diego.* Good news! we'll eat it, spouse, to his  
'Twas politely done to admit no sharers. [health.

*Enter PHILIPPO.*

*Phil.* Look to the mules there! Where's mine  
*Diego.* Here, sir.— [host?  
Another fairy?

*Hostess.* Bless me!

*Phil.* From what, sweet Hostess?

Are you afraid o' your guests?

*Hostess.* From angels, sir;

I think there's none but such come here to-night.

My house had never so good luck before,  
For brave fine guests: And yet, the ill luck on't is,  
I cannot bid you welcome.

*Phil.* No?

*Hostess.* Not lodge you, sir.

*Phil.* Not, Hostess?

*Hostess.* No, in troth, sir; I do tell you,

Because you may provide in time: my beds  
Are both ta'en up by a young cavalier,  
That will and must be private.

*Diego.* He has paid, sir,

For all our chambers.

*Hostess.* Which is one; and beds,  
Which I already ha' told you are two. But, sir,  
So sweet a creature—I am very sorry  
I cannot lodge you by him; you look so like him!  
You are both the loveliest pieces—

*Phil.* What train has he?

*Diego.* None but himself.

*Phil.* And will no less than both beds  
Serve him?

*Hostess.* He has given me a ducat for 'em.

*Phil.* Oh,

You give me reason, Hostess. Is he handsome,

And young, do you say?

*Hostess.* Oh, sir, the delicat'st flesh,  
And finest clothes withal, and such a horse,  
With such a saddle!

*Phil.* She's in love with all,  
The horse, and him, and saddle, and clothes.—  
Good woman,

Thou justifiest thy sex, lov'st all that's brave.

*Enter INCUBO.*

Sure, though I lie o' th' ground, I'll stay here now,  
And have a sight of him: You'll give me house-  
room,

Fire, and fresh meat, for money, gentle Hostess,  
And make me a pallet?

*Inc.* Sir, she shall do reason.—

I understood you had another guest, gossips:  
Pray you let his mule be lock'd to, have good straw,  
And store of bran. And, gossip, do you hear,  
Let him not stay for supper: What good fowl ha'  
This gentleman would eat a pheasant. [you?

*Hostess.* 'Las, sir,

We ha' no such.

*Inc.* I kiss your hands, fair sir.—

What ha' you then? speak what you have.—I'm  
Here for the Catholic king, an officer [one, sir,  
To enquire what guests come to these places: You;  
Appear a person of quality, and 'tis fit [sir,  
You be accommodated.—Why speak you not?  
What ha' you, woman? are you afraid to vent  
That which you have?

*Phil.* This is a most strange man,  
To appoint my meat!

*Hostess.* The half of a cold hen, sir,  
And a boill'd quarter of kid, is all i' th' house.

*Inc.* Why, all's but cold. Let him see it forth;  
And give the eye some satisfaction: [cover,

A traveller's stomach must see bread and salt ;  
His belly is nearer to him than his kindred.—  
Cold hen's a pretty meat, sir.

*Phil.* What you please.—

I am resolved to obey.

*Inc.* So is your kid,

With pepper, garlic, and the juice of an orange :  
She shall with sallads help it, and clean linen.—  
Dispatch !—What news at court, sir ?

*Phil.* 'Faith, new tires

Most of the ladies have, the men old suits ;  
Only the king's fool has a new coat  
To serve you.

*Inc.* I did guess you came from thence, sir.

*Phil.* But I do know I did not.

*Inc.* I mistook, sir.

What hear you of the archdukes ?

*Phil.* 'Troth, your question.

*Inc.* Of the French business what ?

*Phil.* As much.

*Inc.* No more ?

*Enter Hostess and Servants, with a Table.*

They say the French—Oh, that's well ; come, I'll  
help you.—

Have you no giblets now ? or a broil'd rasher ?  
Or some such present dish to assist ?

*Host.* Not any, sir.

*Inc.* The more your fault ! you ne'er should be  
without

Such aids : What cottage would ha' lack'd a pheasant  
And kid forth quickly, [sant

*Excunt Hostess and Servants.*

At such a time as this ? Well, bring your hen.

*Phil.* That should be my prayer,

To 'scape his inquisition.

*Inc.* Sir, the French,

They say, are divided 'bout their match with us :  
What think you of it ?

*Phil.* As of nought to me, sir.

*Inc.* Nay, it's as little to me too ; but I love  
To ask after these things, to know the affections  
Of states and princes, now and then, for bettering—

*Phil.* Of your own ignorance.

*Inc.* Yes, sir.

*Phil.* Many do so.

*Inc.* I cannot live without it. What do you hear  
Of our Indian fleet ? they say, they are well re-  
turn'd.

*Phil.* I had no venture with 'em, sir ; had you ?

*Inc.* Why do you ask, sir ?

*Phil.* 'Cause it might concern you ;

It does not me.

*Enter Hostess and Servants with Meat, and excunt.*

*Inc.* Oh, here's your meat come.

*Phil.* Thanks !

I welcome it at any price.

*Inc.* Some stools here !

And bid mine host bring wine.—I'll try your kid,  
If he be sweet : He looks well. Yes ; he is good.  
I'll carve you, sir.

*Phil.* You use me too, too princely ;

Taste, and carve too !

*Inc.* I love to do these offices.

*Phil.* I think you do ; for whose sake ?

*Inc.* For themselves, sir ;

The very doing of them is reward.

*Phil.* He had little faith would not believe you,

*Inc.* Gossip, some wine ! [sir.

*Enter DiSSO with Wine.*

*Diego.* Here 'tis, and right Saint Martin.

*Inc.* Measure me out a glass.

*Phil.* I love the humanity  
Used in this place.

*Inc.* Sir, I salute you here.

*Phil.* I kiss your hands, sir.

*Inc.* Good wine ! it will beget an appetite :  
Fill him, and sit down, gossip ; entertain  
Your noble guest here, as becomes your title.

*Diego.* Please you to like this wine, sir ?

*Phil.* I dislike

Nothing, mine host, but that I may not see  
Your concealed guest. Here's to you ?

*Diego.* In good faith, sir,

I wish you as well as him ; 'would you might see  
him !

*Inc.* And wherefore may he not ?

*Diego.* He has lock'd himself, sir,  
Up ; and has hired both the beds o' my wife  
At extraordinary rate.

*Phil.* I'll give as much

(If that will do't) for one, as he for both ;  
What say you, mine host ? The door once open,  
I'll sling myself upon the next bed to him,  
And there's an end of me till morning ; noise  
I will make none.

*Diego.* I wish your worship well ; but—

*Inc.* His honour is engaged ; and my she-gossip  
Hath past her promise, hath she not ?

*Diego.* Yes, truly.

*Inc.* That toucheth to the credit of the house :  
Well, I will eat a little, and think. How say you,  
sir,

Unto this brawn o' th' hen ?

*Phil.* I ha' more mind

To get this bed, sir.

*Inc.* Say you so ? Why then,

Give't me again, and drink to me.—Mine host,  
Fill him his wine ! Thou'rt dull, and dost not  
praise it.—

I eat but to teach you the way, sir.

*Phil.* Sir,

Find but the way to lodge me in this chamber,  
I'll give mine host two ducats for his bed,  
And you, sir, two reals. Here's to you !

*Inc.* Excuse me ;

I am not mercenary.—Gossip, pledge him for me.  
I'll think. A little more ; but even one bit ;  
And then—Talk on ; you cannot interrupt me.

*Diego.* This piece of wine, sir, cost me—

*Inc.* Stay, I have found—

This little morsel, and then—Here's excellent  
garlic !

Have you not a bunch of grapes now, or some bacon,  
To give the mouth a relish ?

*Diego.* Wife, do you hear ?

*Inc.* It is no matter.—Sir, give mine host your  
ducats.

*Diego.* How, sir !

*Inc.* Do you receive 'em : I will save  
The honesty of your house ; and yours too, gossip :  
And I will lodge the gentleman. Shew the cham-  
ber.

*Diego.* Good sir, do you hear ? [ber.

*Inc.* Shew me the chamber.

*Diego.* Pray you, sir,

Do not disturb my guest.

*Inc.* Disturb ? I hope

The Catholic king, sir, may command a lodging,  
Without disturbing, in his vassal's house,

For any minister of his, employ'd  
In business of the state. Where is the door?—  
Open the door! Who are you there? Within!

[Knocks.]

In the king's name!

*Theod.* [Within.] What would you have?

*Inc.* Your key, sir,

And your door open: I have here command  
To lodge a gentleman, from the justice, sent  
Upon the king's affairs.

*Theod.* Kings and necessities

Must be obey'd: The key's under the door.

*Inc.* How now, sir? are you fitted? you secured?

*Phil.* Your two reals are grown a piece of eight.

*Inc.* Excuse me, sir!

*Phil.* 'Twill buy a hen, and wine,

Sir, for to-morrow.

[Exit.]

*Inc.* I do kiss your hands, sir.—

Well, this will bear my charge yet to the galleys,  
(Where I am owing a ducat) whither this night,  
By the moon's leave, I'll march; for in the morn-  
Early, they put from Port Saint Mary's. [ing

*Diego.* Lazaro! [Exeunt all but DIEGO.]

Enter LAZARO.

How do the horses?

*Laz.* 'Would you would go and see, sir!

A plague of all jades, what a clap he has given me!  
As sure as you live, master, he knew perfectly  
I cozen'd him on's oats; he look'd upon me,  
And then he sneer'd, as who should say, "Take  
heed, sirrah!"

And when he saw our half-peck, which you know  
Was but an old court-dish, Lord, how he stamp!  
I thought 't had been for joy; when suddenly  
He cuts me a back caper with his heels,  
And takes me just o' th' crupper; down came I,  
And all my ounce of oats: Then he neigh'd out,  
As though he had had a mare by th' tail.

*Diego.* 'Faith, Lazaro,

We are to blame, to use the poor dumb servitors  
So cruelly.

*Laz.* Yonder's this other gentleman's horse,  
Keeping our Lady-eye; the devil a bit  
He has got since he came in yet; there he stands,  
And looks, and looks—But 'tis your pleasure, sir,  
He shall look lean enough. He has hay before  
him,

But 'tis as big as hemp, and will as soon choak  
him,

Unless he eat it butter'd. He had four shoes,  
And good ones, when he came; 'tis a strange  
wonder

With standing still he should cast three.

*Diego.* Oh, Lazaro,

The devil's in this trade! Truth never knew it;  
And to the devil we shall travel, Lazaro,  
Unless we mend our manners. Once every week  
I meet with such a knock to mollify me,  
Sometimes a dozen to awake my conscience,  
Yet still I sleep securely.

*Laz.* Certain, master,

We must use better dealing.

*Diego.* 'Faith, for mine own part,  
(Not to give ill example to our issues)  
I could be well content to steal but two girths,  
And now and then a saddle-cloth; change a bridle,  
Only for exercise.

*Laz.* If we could stay there,

There were some hope on's master; but the devil is  
We are drunk so early, we mistake whole saddles,  
Sometimes a horse; and then it seems to us too  
Every poor jade has his whole peck, and tumbles  
Up to his ears in clean straw; and every bottle  
Shews at the least a dozen; when the truth is, sir,  
There's no such matter, not a smell of provender,  
Not so much straw as would tie up a horse-tail,  
Nor anything i' th' rack, but two old cobwebs,  
And so much rotten hay as had been a hen's nest.

*Diego.* Well, these mistakings must be mended,  
These apparitions, that abuse our senses, [Lazaro,  
And make us ever apt to sweep the manger,  
But put in nothing; these fancies must be forgot,  
And we must pray it may be reveal'd to us  
Whose horse we ought, in conscience, to cozen,  
And how, and when: A parson's horse may suffer  
A little greasing in his teeth, 'tis wholesome,  
And keeps him in a sober shuffle; and his saddle  
May want a stirrup, and it may be sworn  
His learning lay on one side, and so broke it:  
He has ever oats in's cloak-bag to prevent us,  
And therefore 'tis a meritorious office  
To tithe him soundly.

*Laz.* And a grazier may

(For those are pinching puckfoists, and suspicious)  
Suffer a mist before his eyes sometimes too,  
And think he sees his horse eat half a bushel;  
When the truth is, rubbing his gums with salt,  
Till all the skin come off, he shall but mumble  
Like an old woman that were chewing brawn,  
And drop 'em out again.

*Diego.* That may do well too,  
And no doubt 'tis but venial: But, good Lazaro,  
Have you a care of understanding horses,  
Horses with angry heels, gentlemen's horses,  
Horses that know the world! Let them have meat  
Till their teeth ache, and rubbing till their ribs  
Shine like a wench's forehead; they are devils—

*Laz.* And look into our dealings. As sure as  
we live,

These courtiers' horses are a kind of Welch pro-  
phets;

Nothing can be hid from 'em! For mine own part,  
The next I cozen of that kind shall be founder'd,  
And of all four too; I'll no more such compliments  
Upon my crupper.

*Diego.* Steal but a little longer,  
Till I am lamed too, and we'll repent together;  
It will not be above two days.

*Laz.* By that time

I shall be well again; and all forgot, sir.

*Diego.* Why then, I'll stay for thee. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Bed-Room in the same.

THEODOBIA AND PHILIPPO, discovered on several Beds.

*Theod.* Oh—ho! oh—ho!

*Phil.* Ha!

*Theod.* Oh—oh!—Heart, heart, heart, heart!

*Phil.* What's that?

*Theod.* When wilt thou break, break, break,

*Phil.* Ha! [break?

I would the voice were stronger, or I nearer.

*Theod.* Shame, shame, eternal shame! what

*Phil.* Done? [have I done—

*Theod.* And to no end! what a wild journey  
Have I more wildly undertaken!

*Phil.* Journey?

*Theod.* How, without counsel, care, reason, or

*Phil.* Whither will this fit carry? [fear!

*Theod.* Oh, my folly!

*Phil.* This is no common sickness.

*Theod.* How have I left

All I should love or keep! Oh, Heaven!

*Phil.* Sir!

*Theod.* Ha!

*Phil.* How do you, gentle sir?

*Theod.* Alas, my fortune!

*Phil.* It seems your sorrow oppresses: Please your goodness,

Let me bear half, sir; a divided burthen

Is so made lighter.

*Theod.* Oh!

*Phil.* That sigh betrays

The fullness of your grief.

*Theod.* Ay, if that grief

Had not bereft me of my understanding,

I should have well remembered where I was,

And in what company; and clapt a lock

Upon this tongue for talking.

*Phil.* Worthy sir,

Let it not add to your grief, that I have heard

A sigh or groan come from you; that is all, sir.

*Theod.* Good sir, no more! you have heard too much, I fear:

'Would I had taken poppy when I spake it!

*Phil.* It seems you have an ill belief of me,

And would have fear'd much more, had you spoke

I could interpret. But, believe it, sir, [aught

Had I had means to look into your breast,

And ta'en you sleeping here, that so securely

I might have read all that your woe would hide,

I would not have betrayed you.

*Theod.* Sir, that speech

Is very noble, and almost would tempt

My need to trust you.

*Phil.* At your own election;

I dare not make my faith so much suspected

As to protest again; nor am I curious

To know more than is fit.

*Theod.* Sir, I will trust you;

But you shall promise, sir, to keep your bed,

And, whatsoever you hear, not to importune

More, I beseech you, from me—

*Phil.* Sir, I will not.

*Theod.* Than I am prone to utter.

*Phil.* My faith for it!

*Theod.* If I were wise, I yet should hold my  
You will be noble? [peace.

*Phil.* You shall make me so,

If you'll but think me such.

*Theod.* I do. Then know

You are deceived with whom you have talk'd so  
I am a most unfortunate lost woman. [long;

*Phil.* Ha!

*Theod.* Do not stir, sir! I have here a sword.

*Phil.* Not I, sweet lady. Of what blood or

*Theod.* You'll keep your faith! [name:

*Phil.* I'll perish else.

*Theod.* Believe, then,

Of birth too noble for me, so descended—

I am ashamed, no less than I'm affrighted.

*Phil.* Fear not: By all good things, I will not  
wrong you!

*Theod.* I am the daughter of a noble gentleman,

Born in this part of Spain; my father's name, sir—

But why should I abuse that reverence,

When a child's duty has forsaken me?

*Phil.* All may be mended, in fit time, too:

*Theod.* Alphonso, sir. [Speak it.

*Phil.* Alphonso? What's your own name?

*Theod.* Any base thing you can invent.

*Phil.* Deal truly.

*Theod.* They call me Theodosia.

*Phil.* Ha! and love

Is that that hath changed you thus?

*Theod.* You have observed me

Too nearly, sir; 'tis that indeed; 'tis love, sir;

And love of him—oh, Heavens, why should men  
deal thus?

Why should they use their arts to cozen us

That have no cunning, but our fears, about us;

And ever that too late too; no dissembling

Or double way, but dotting, too much loving?

Why should they find new oaths, to make more

*Phil.* What may his name be? [wretches!

*Theod.* Sir, a name that promises,

Methinks, no such ill usage; Marc-Antonio,

A noble neighbour's son. Now I must desire you

To stay a while; else my weak eyes must answer.

*Phil.* I will.—Are you yet ready? What's his  
quality?

*Theod.* His best, a thief, sir; that he would be  
known by

Is, heir to Leonardo, a rich gentleman;

Next of a handsome body, had Heaven made him

A mind fit to it. To this man, my fortune

(My more than purblind fortune) gave my faith,

Drawn to it by as many shows of service

And signs of truth, as ever false tongue utter'd:

Heaven pardon all!

*Phil.* 'Tis well said! Forward, lady.

*Theod.* Contracted, sir, and by exchange of rings

Our souls delivered; nothing left unfinished

But the last work, enjoying me, and ceremony;

For that, I must confess, was the first wise doubt

I ever made. Yet, after all this love, sir,

All this profession of his faith, when daily

And hourly I expected the bless'd priest,

He left me like a dream, as all this story

Had never been, nor thought of; why, I know not;

Yet I have call'd my conscience to confession,

And every syllable that might offend

I have had in shrift: Yet neither love's law, signor,

Nor tie of maiden's duty, but desiring,

Have I transgress'd in. Left his father too;

Nor whether he is gone, or why departed,

Can any tongue resolve me. All my hope

(Which keeps me yet alive, and would persuade me

I may be once more happy, and thus shapes me

A shame to all my modest sex) is this, sir;

I have a brother, and his old companion,

Student in Salamanca; there my last hope,

If he be yet alive, and can be loving,

Is left me to recover him: For which travel,

In this suit left at home of that dear brother's,

Thus as you find me, without fear, or wisdom,

I have wander'd from my father, fled my friends,

And now am only child of hope and danger.

You are now silent, sir; this tedious story

(That ever keeps me waking) makes you heavy:

'Tis fit it should do so; for that and I

Can be but troubles.

*Phil.* No; I sleep not, lady:

I would I could!—Oh, Heaven, is this my comfort?

*Theod.* What ail you, gentle sir?

*Phil.* Oh!

*Theod.* Why do you groan so?

*Phil.* I must, I must! oh, misery! [*Rises.*]

*Theod.* But now, sir,  
You were my comfort: If any thing afflict you,  
Am not I fit to bear a part on't? and by your own  
rule?

*Phil.* No; if you could heal, as you have wound—  
But 'tis not in your power. [*Ed me—*]

*Theod.* I fear intemperance.

*Phil.* Nay, do not seek to shun me! I must see  
you,

By Heaven, I must.—Hoa there, mine host! a  
Strive not; I will not stir you. [*candle!—*]

*Theod.* Noble sir,  
This is a breach of promise.

*Phil.* Tender lady,  
It shall be none but necessary.—Hoa there!  
Some light, some light, for Heaven's sake!

*Theod.* Will you betray me?

Are you a gentleman?

*Phil.* Good woman!

*Theod.* Sir!

[*Enter DIZOO, with a Light.*]

*Phil.* If I be prejudicial to you, curse me!

*Diego.* You are early stirring, sir.

*Phil.* Give me your candle;

And so, good morrow for a while.

*Diego.* Good morrow, sir. [*Exit.*]

*Theod.* My brother Don Philippo? Nay, sir,  
kill me! [*Kneels.*]

I ask no mercy, sir, for none dare know me;  
I can deserve none. As you look upon me,  
Behold in infinite these foul dishonours  
My noble father, then yourself, last all  
That bear the name of kindred, suffer in me!  
I have forgot whose child I am, whose sister;  
Do you forget the pity tied to that,  
Let not compassion sway you! you will be then  
As foul as I, and bear the same brand with me,  
A favourer of my fault. You have a sword, sir,  
And such a cause to kill me in—

*Phil.* Rise, sister!

I wear no sword for women, nor no anger,  
While your fair chastity is yet untouched.

*Theod.* By those bright stars, it is, sir.

*Phil.* For my sister

I do believe you; and so near blood has made us,  
With the dear love I ever bore your virtues,  
That I will be a brother to your griefs too.  
Be comforted: 'Tis no dishonour, sister,  
To love, nor to love him you do; he is a gentleman  
Of as sweet hopes as years, as many promises  
As there be growing truths, and great ones.

*Theod.* Oh, sir!

*Phil.* Do not despair.

*Theod.* Can you forgive?

*Phil.* Yes, sister,

Though this be no small error, a far greater.

*Theod.* And think me still your sister?

*Phil.* My dear sister.

*Theod.* And will you counsel me?

*Phil.* To your own peace too:

You shall love still.

*Theod.* How good you are!

*Phil.* My business

And duty to my father, which now drew me  
From Salamanca, I will lay aside,  
And only be your agent. To persuade you  
To leave both love, and him, and well retire you—

*Theod.* Oh, gentle brother!

*Phil.* I perceive 'tis folly:  
Delay's in love more dangerous—

*Theod.* Noble brother!

*Phil.* Fear not, I'll run your own way; and to  
help you,

(Love having rack'd your passions beyond counsel)  
I'll hazard mine own fame. Whither shall we ven-  
*Theod.* Alas, I know not, sir. [*ture?*]

*Phil.* Come, 'tis bright morning.

Let's walk out, and consider. You will keep this  
*Theod.* I would, sir. [*habit?*]

*Phil.* Then it shall be: What must I call you?  
Come, do not blush; pray speak; I may spoil all

*Theod.* Pray call me Theodoro. [*else.*]

*Enter DIZOO.*

*Diego.* Are you ready?

The day draws on apace. Once more, good-mor-  
row.

*Theod.* Good-morrow, gentle host. Now I must

*Phil.* Who dost thou think this is? [*thank you.*]

*Diego.* Were you a wench, sir,

I think you would know before me.

*Phil.* Mine own brother.

*Diego.* By th' mass, your noses are akin! Should  
I then

Have been so barbarous to have parted brothers?

*Phil.* You knew it then?

*Diego.* I knew 'twas necessary

You should be both together: Instinct, signor,

Is a great matter in an host.

*Theod.* I am satisfied.

*Enter PEDRO.*

*Pedro.* Is not mine host up yet?

*Phil.* Who's that?

*Diego.* I'll see.

*Phil.* Sister, withdraw yourself. [*She steps aside.*]

*Pedro.* Signor Philippo!

*Phil.* Noble Don Pedro! where have you been  
this way?

*Pedro.* I came from Port Saint Maries, whence  
the gallees

Put this last tide; and bound for Barcelona,

I brought Marc-Antony upon his way.

*Phil.* Marc-Antony?

*Pedro.* Who is turned soldier,

And entertained in the new regiment

For Naples.

*Phil.* Is it possible?

*Pedro.* I assure you.

*Phil.* And put they in at Barcelona?

*Pedro.* So

One of the masters told me.

*Phil.* Which way go you, sir?

*Pedro.* Home.

*Phil.* And I for Sevil. Pray you, sir, say not

That you saw me, if you shall meet the question;  
I have some little business.

*Pedro.* Were it less, sir,

It shall not become me to lose the caution.

Shall we breakfast together?

*Phil.* I'll come to you, sir. — [*Exit PEDRO.*]

Sister, you hear this; I believe your fortune  
Begins to be propitious to you. We will hire  
Mules of mine host here; if we can, himself  
To be our guide, and straight to Barcelona.  
This was as happy news as unexpected.

Stay you till I rid him away.

*Theod.* I will.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Before the House of LEONARDO, in Andalusia.*

*Enter ALPHONSO and a Servant.*

*Alph.* Knock at the door.

*Serv.* 'Tis open, sir.

*Alph.* That's all one;

Knock when I bid you.

*Serv.* Will not your worship enter?

*Alph.* Will not you learn more manners, sir, and do that

Your master bids you? Knock, you knave, or I'll knock

Such a round peal about your pate—I enter Under his roof, or come to say, "God save you" to him,

The son of whose base dealings has undone me? (Knock louder! louder yet!) I'll starve and rot This open air is every man's. [first;

2 *Serv.* [*Within.*] Come in, sir.

*Enter Second Servant.*

*Alph.* No, no, sir; I am none of these "Come-in-sirs,"

None of those visitants: Bid your wise master Come out; I have to talk unto him; go, sir!

2 *Serv.* Your worship may be welcome.

*Alph.* Sir, I will not;

I come not to be welcome. Good my three ducats, My pickled sprat a-day, and no oil to't, And once a-year a cotton coat! leave prating, And tell your master I am here.

2 *Serv.* I will, sir.—

This is a strange old man. [Exit.

*Alph.* I welcome to him?

I'll be first welcome to a pest-house.—Sirrah, Let's have your valour now cased up, and quiet, When an occasion calls; 'tis wisdom in you, A serving-man's discretion: If you do draw, Draw but according to your entertainment; Five nobles' worth of fury.

*Enter LEONARDO, and SANCIO (carried by two Servants in a Chair).*

*Leo.* Signor Alphonso, I hope no discontent from my will given, Has made you shun my house: I ever loved you; And credit me, amongst my fears 'tis greatest To minister offences.

*Alph.* Oh, good signor, I know you for Italian breed, fair-tongued! Spare your apologies; I care not for 'em; As little for your love, sir: I can live Without your knowledge, eat mine own, and sleep Without dependences, or hopes upon you. I come to ask my daughter.

*Leo.* Gentle sir!

*Alph.* I am not gentle, sir; nor gentle will be, Till I have justice, my poor child restored Your caper-cutting boy has run away with, Young signor Smooth-face; he that takes up wenches

With smiles and sweet behaviours, songs, and sonnets;

Your high-fed jennet, that no hedge can hold: They say you bred him for a stallion.

*Sanc.* Fy, signor! there be times, and terms of honour

To argue these things in, decidements able To speak ye noble gentlemen, ways punctual, And to the life of credit; you're too rugged.

*Alph.* I am too tame, sir.

*Leo.* Will you hear but reason?

*Alph.* No, I will hear no reason: I come not hither

To be popt off with reason;—reason then.

*Sanc.* Why, signor, in all things there must be method;

You choke the child of Honour else, Discretion.

Do you conceive an injury?

*Alph.* What then, sir?

*Sanc.* Then follow it in fair terms; let you When time calls, not your tongue. [sword bite.

*Alph.* I know, sir,

Both when and what to do, without directions, And where, and how; I come not to be tutor'd; My cause is no man's but mine own.—You, signor, Will you restore my daughter?

*Leo.* Who detains her?

*Alph.* No more of these slight shifts!

*Leo.* You urge me, signor,

With strange injustice: Because my son has err'd—*Sanc.* Mark him.

*Leo.* Out of the heat of youth, does't follow

I must be father of his crimes?

*Alph.* I say still,

Leave off your rhetoric, and restore my daughter, And suddenly; bring in your rebel too, Moundragon, he that mounts without commission. That I may see him punished, and severely; Or, by that holy Heaven, I'll fire your house! And there's my way of honour.

*Sanc.* Pray give me leave.

Was not man made the noblest creature?

*Alph.* Well, sir?

*Sanc.* Should not his mind then answer to his making,

And to his mind his actions? If this ought to be. Why do we run a blind way from our worths, And cancel our discretions, doing those things To cure offences, are the most offences?

We have rules of justice in us; to those rules Let us apply our angers: You can consider The want in others of these terminations, And how unfurnish'd they appear.

*Alph.* Hang others!

And, where the wrongs are open, hang respects!

I come not to consider.

*Leo.* Noble sir,

Let's argue coolly, and consider like men.

*Alph.* Like men?

*Leo.* You are too sudden still.

*Alph.* Like men, sir?

*Sanc.* It is fair language, and allied to honour.

*Alph.* Why, what strange beast would your grave Make me appear! Like men? [reverence

*Sanc.* Taste but that point, sir,

And you recover all.

*Alph.* I tell thy wisdom

I am as much a man, and as good a man—

*Leo.* All this is granted, sir.

*Alph.* As wise a man—

*Sanc.* You are not tainted that way.

*Alph.* And a man

Dares make thee no man; or, at best, a base man.

*Sanc.* Fy, fy! here wants much carriage.  
*Alph.* Hang much carriage!  
*Leo.* Give me good language.  
*Alph.* Sirrah signor, give me my daughter.  
*Leo.* I am as gentle as yourself, as free born—  
*Sanc.* Observe his way.  
*Leo.* As much respect owed to me—  
*Sanc.* This hangs together nobly.  
*Leo.* And for civil,  
 A great deal more, it seems. Go look your daughter!  
*Sanc.* There you went well off, signor.  
*Leo.* That rough tongue  
 You understand at first. You never think, sir,  
 Out of your mightiness, of my loss; here I stand,  
 A patient anvil to your burning angers,  
 Made subject to your dangers; yet my loss equal:  
 Who shall bring home my son?  
*Alph.* A whipping beadle.  
*Leo.* Why, is your daughter whorish?  
*Alph.* Ha, thou darest not—  
 By Heaven, I know thou darest not—  
*Leo.* I dare more, sir,  
 If you dare be uncivil.  
*Alph.* Laugh too, pigeon?  
*Sanc.* A fitter time, for Fame's sake! two weak  
 nurses  
 Would laugh at this. Are there no more days  
 coming,  
 No ground but this to argue on? No swords left,  
 Nor friends to carry this, but your own furies?  
 Alas! it shews too weakly.  
*Alph.* Let it shew!  
 I come not here for shows. Laugh at me, sirrah?  
 I'll give you cause to laugh.  
*Leo.* You are as like, sir,  
 As any man in Spain.  
*Alph.* By Heaven, I will;  
 I will, brave Leonardo!  
*Leo.* Brave Alphonso,  
 I will expect it then.  
*Sanc.* Hold ye there both!  
 These terms are noble.  
*Alph.* You shall hear shortly from me.  
*Sanc.* Now discreetly.  
*Alph.* Assure yourself you shall. Do you see  
 this sword, sir?  
 He has not cast his teeth yet.  
*Sanc.* Rarely carried!  
*Alph.* He bites deep, most times mortal: Signor,  
 I'll hound him at thee; fair and home.  
*Sanc.* Still nobly.  
*Alph.* And at all those that dare maintain you.  
*Sanc.* Excellent!  
*Leo.* How you shall please, sir, so it be fair:  
 though certain  
 I had rather give you reason.  
*Sanc.* Fairly urged too!  
*Alph.* This is no age for reason; prick your  
 Upon your sword's point— [reason  
*Sanc.* Admirably follow'd!  
*Alph.* And there I'll hear it. So, till I please,  
 live, sir. [Exit.  
*Leo.* And so, farewell! you're welcome.  
*Sanc.* The end crowns all things. Signor,  
 Some little business past, this cause I'll argue,  
 And be a peace between ye, if't so please you,  
 And by the square of honour to the utmost.  
 I feel the old man's master'd by much passion,  
 And too high racked, which makes him overshoot  
 His valour should direct at, and hurt those [all

That stand but by as blenchers. This he must  
 know too,  
 As necessary to his judgment; doting women  
 Are neither safe nor wise adventurers, conceive me,  
 If once their wills have wander'd: Nor is't then  
 A time to use our rages; for why should I  
 Bite at the stone, when he that throws it wrongs  
 me?  
 Do not we know that women are most woovers,  
 Though closest in their carriage? Do not all men  
 know,  
 Scarce all the compass of the globe can hold 'em,  
 If their affections be a-foot? Shall I then covet  
 The follies of a she-fool, that by nature  
 Must seek her like, by reason be a woman?  
 Sink a tall ship, because the sails defy me?  
 No, I disdain that folly; he that ventures  
 Whilst they are fit to put him on, has found out  
 The everlasting motion in his scabbard.  
 I doubt not to make peace. And so, for this time,  
 My best love and remembrance!  
*Leo.* Your poor servant! [Exit.

## SCENE II.—A Forest near Ossuna.

Enter DIEGO, PHILIPPO, and THEODOSIA.

*Phil.* Where will our horses meet us?  
*Diego.* Fear not you, sir;  
 Some half-mile hence my worship's man will  
 stay us.  
 How is it with my young bloods? Come, be  
 jovial;  
 Let's travel like a merry flock of wild geese,  
 Every tongue talking.  
*Phil.* We are very merry.  
 But do you know this way, sir?  
*Theod.* Is't not dangerous?  
 Methinks these woody thickets should harbour  
 knaves.  
*Diego.* I fear none but fair wenches; those are  
 thieves  
 May quickly rob me of my good conditions,  
 If they cry *stand* once. But the best is, signors,  
 They cannot bind my hands; for any else,  
 They meet an equal knave, and there's my pass-  
 port.  
 I have seen fine sport in this place; had these  
 trees tongues,  
 They would tell ye pretty matters: Do not you  
 They are not every day's delights. [fear, though;  
*Phil.* What sport, sir?  
*Diego.* Why, to say true, the sport of all sports.  
*Phil.* What was't?  
*Diego.* Such turning-up of taffetaes! and you  
 know  
 To what rare whistling tunes they go, far beyond  
 A soft wind in the shrouds; such *stand* there,  
 And *down* i' th' other place! such supplications  
 And sub-divisions for those toys their honours!  
 One, "As you are a gentleman," in this bush;  
 And "Oh, sweet sir, what mean you? There's a  
 bracelet,  
 And use me, I beseech you, like a woman!"  
 And her petition's heard; another scratches,  
 And cries she will die first, and then swoons; but  
 certain  
 She's brought to life again, and does well after.  
 Another, "Save mine honour, oh, mine honour!  
 My husband serves the duke, sir, in his kitchen;

I have a cold pie for you; fy, fy, fy, gentlemen!  
Will nothing satisfy you? where's my husband?"  
Another cries, "Do you see, sir, how they use me?  
Is there no law for these things?"

*Theod.* And, good mine host,  
Do you call these fine sports?

*Diego.* What should I call 'em?

They have been so call'd these thousand years and

*Phil.* But what becomes o' th' men? [upwards.

*Diego.* They are stript and bound,  
Like so many Adams, with fig-leaves afore 'em,  
And there's their innocence.

*Theod.* 'Would we had known this,  
Before we reach'd this place!

*Phil.* Come, there's no danger;  
These are but sometimes chances.

*Diego.* Now we must through.

*Enter Incubo.*

*Theod.* Who's that?

*Diego.* Stand to it, signors!

*Phil.* No, it needs not;

I know the face, 'tis honest.

*Inc.* What, mine host,

Mine everlasting honest host?

*Diego.* 'Mass, Bailly?

Now in the name of an ill reckoning,  
What make you walking this round?

*Inc.* A pox of this round,  
And of all business too, through woods! and, rascals,  
They have rounded me away a dozen ducats,  
Beside a fair round cloak: Some of 'em knew me,  
Else they had cased me like a cony too,  
As they have done the rest, and I think roasted me,  
For they began to baste me soundly. My young  
signors,

You may thank Heaven, and heartily, and hourly,  
You set not out so early; ye had been smoked else,  
By this true hand ye had, sirs, finely smoked;  
Had ye been women, smock'd too.

*Theod.* Heaven defend us!

*Inc.* Nay, that had been no prayer; there were  
those

That run that prayer out of breath, yet failed too.  
There was a friar, now you talk of prayer,  
With an huge bunch of beads, like a rope of onions,  
(I am sure as big) that, out of fear and prayer,  
In half-an-hour wore 'em as small as bugles;  
Yet he was fied too.

*Phil.* At what hour was this?

*Inc.* Some two hours since.

*Theod.* Do you think the passage sure now?

*Inc.* Yes, a rope take 'em (as it will) and bless  
They have done for this day, sure. [em!

*Phil.* Are many rifed?

*Inc.* At the least a dozen,  
And there left bound.

*Theod.* How came you free?

*Inc.* A courtesy

They use out of their rogueries, to bequeath  
To one, that, when they give a sign from far,  
(Which is from out of danger) he may presently  
Release the rest: As I met you I was going,  
Having the sign from yonder hill to do it.

*Theod.* Alas, poor men!

*Phil.* Mine host, pray go unty 'em.

*Diego.* Let me alone for cancelling! where are  
they?

*Inc.* In every bush, like black-birds; you can-  
not miss 'em.

*Diego.* I need not stalk unto 'em. [Exit.

*Inc.* No, they'll stand you,

My busy life for yours, sir.—You would wonder  
To see the several tricks and strange behaviours  
Of the poor rascals in their miseries:  
One weeps, another laughs at him for weeping,  
A third is monstrous angry he can laugh,  
And cries, "Go to! this is no time;" he laughs  
still;

A fourth exhorts to patience; him a fifth man  
Curses for tameness; him a friar schools;  
All hoot the friar; here one sings a ballad;  
And there a little curate confutes him: and in  
This linsay-woolsey way, that would make a dog  
Forget his dinner, or an old man fire,  
They rub out for their ransoms. Amongst the rest,  
There is a little boy robb'd, a fine child,  
It seems a page: I must confess my pity  
(As 'tis a hard thing in a man of my place  
To shew compassion) stirred at him; so finely,  
And without noise, he carries his afflictions,  
And looks as if he had but dream'd of losing.  
This boy's the glory of this robbery;  
The rest but shame the action.—Now ye may hear  
'em.

*Enter DIEGO, LUCADIA disguised as a Boy; a Friar and  
other Passengers as robbed.*

*Diego.* Come, lads, 'tis holy-day; hang clothes;  
And sweating agues are abroad. [tis hot,  
1 Passenger. It seems so;

For we have met with rare physicians  
To cure us of that malady.

*Diego.* Fine footing,

Light and deliver; now, my boys! Master Friar,  
How does your holiness? Bear up, man! what,  
A cup of neat sack now, and a toast? ha, Friar?  
A warm plaister to your belly, father!  
There were a blessing now!

*Friar.* You say your mind, sir.

*Diego.* Where's my fine boy, my pointer?

*Inc.* There's the wonder.

*Diego.* A rank whore scratch their sides till the  
pox follow

For robbing thee! thou hast a thousand ways  
To rob thyself, boy; dice, and a chamber-devil—  
*Leoc.* You are deceived, sir.

*Diego.* And thy master too, boy.

*Phil.* A sweet-faced boy, indeed! what rogues  
were these,

What barbarous, brutish slaves, to strip this beauty!

*Theod.* Come hither, my boy. Alas! he's cold:  
We must entreat your cloak. [Mine host,

*Diego.* Can you entreat it?

*Phil.* We do presume so much; you have other

*Diego.* Will you entreat those too? [garments.

*Theod.* Your mule must too

To the next town: you say 'tis near: In pity,  
You cannot see this poor boy perish; I know  
You have a better soul. We'll satisfy you.

*Diego.* 'Tis a strange foolish trick I have, but I  
cannot help it;

I am ever cozen'd with mine own commendations;  
It is determined then I shall be robb'd too,  
To make up vantage to this dozen. Here, sir;  
Heaven has provided you a simple garment  
To set you off; pray keep it handsomer  
Than you kept your own, and let me have it re-  
brush'd and discreetly folded. [der'd,

*Leoc.* I thank you, sir.

*Diego.* Who wants a doublet ?

*2 Pass. I.*

*Diego.* Where will you have it ?

*2 Pass.* From you, sir, if you please.

*Diego.* Oh, there's the point, sir.

*Phil.* My honest friends, I am sorry for your fortunes ;

But that's but poor relief : Here are ten ducats ;  
And to your distribution, holy sir,  
I render 'em, and let it be your care  
To set 'em, as your wants are, well divided.

*Diego.* Plain dealing now, my friends ; and Father Friar,

Set me the saddle right ! no wringing, Friar,  
Nor tithing to the church ! these are no duties ;  
Scour me your conscience ! if the devil tempt you,  
Off with your cord, and swing him !

*Friar.* You say well, sir.

*All.* Heaven keep your goodness !

*Theod.* Peace keep you ! Farewell, friends !

*Diego.* Farewell, light-horsemen !

[*Exeunt Friar and Passengers.*]

*Phil.* Which way travel you, sir ?

*Inc.* To the next town.

*Theod.* Do you want anything ?

*Inc.* Only discretion to travel at good hours,  
And some warm meat to moderate this matter ;  
For I am most outrageous, cruel hungry.

*Diego.* I have a stomach too, such as it is,  
Would pose a right good pasty ; I thank Heaven  
for't.

*Inc.* Cheese, that would break the teeth of a  
new handsaw,

I could endure now like an estrich ; or salt beef,  
That Cæsar left in pickle.

*Phil.* Take no care ;

We'll have meat for you, and enough. I 'th' mean  
time,

Keep you the horse-way, lest the fellow miss us ;  
We'll meet you at the end o' th' wood.

*Diego.* Make haste then.

[*Exeunt DIEGO and INCUBO.*]

*Theod.* My pretty sir, till your necessities

Be full supplied, so please you trust our friend-  
We must not part. [ships !]

*Leoc.* You have pull'd a charge upon you ;

Yet such a one as ever shall be thankful.

*Phil.* You have said enough. May I be bold  
to ask you,

What province you were bred in ? and of what pa-  
rents ?

*Leoc.* You may, sir : I was born in Andalusia,  
My name Francisco, son to Don Henriques  
De Cardinas.

*Theod.* Our noble neighbour !

*Phil.* Son to Don Henriques ?

I know the gentleman : And, by your leave, sir,  
I know he has no son.

*Leoc.* None of his own, sir,  
Which makes him put that right upon his brother  
Don Sanchio's children : One of which I am,  
And therefore do not much err.

*Phil.* Still you do, sir,

For neither has Don Sanchio any son :  
A daughter, and a rare one, is his heir,  
Which, though I never was so blest to see,  
Yet I have heard great good of.

*Theod.* Urge no further !

He is ashamed, and blushes.

*Phil.* Sir,

If't might import you to conceal yourself,  
I ask your mercy, I have been so curious.

*Leoc.* Alas ! I must ask yours, sir, for these lies :  
Yet they were useful ones ; for by the claiming  
Such noble parents, I believed your bounties  
Would shew more gracious. The plain truth is,  
gentlemen,

I am Don Sanchio's steward's son, a wild boy,  
That for the fruits of his unhappiness  
Is fain to seek the wars.

*Theod.* This is a lie too, [Apart to PHILIPPO.  
If I have any ears.

*Phil.* Why ?

*Theod.* Mark his language,  
And you shall find it of too sweet a relish  
For one of such a breed. I'll pawn my hand,  
This is no boy.

*Phil.* No boy ? what would you have him !

*Theod.* I know, no boy : I watch'd how fearfully,  
And yet how suddenly, he cured his lies,  
The right wit of a woman ; now I am sure—

*Phil.* What are you sure ?

*Theod.* That 'tis no boy ; I'll burn in't.

*Phil.* Now I consider better, and take counsel,  
Methinks he shews more sweetness in that face,  
Than his fears dare deliver.

*Theod.* No more talk on't !

There hangs some great weight by it ; soon at night  
I'll tell you more.

*Phil.* Come sir, whate'er you are,  
With us, embrace your liberty, and our helps  
In any need you have.

*Leoc.* All my poor service

Shall be at your command, sir, and my prayers.

*Phil.* Let's walk apace ; hunger will cut their  
throats else. [Exeunt.]

SCENE III.—On board of a Galley at Sea.

Enter RODERIGO and MARC-ANTONIO ; two Chairs set out.

*Rod.* Call up the master.

*Master.* [Within.] Here, sir.

*Rod.* Honest master,

Give order all the galleys with this tide  
Fall round, and near upon us ; that the next wind  
We may weigh off together, and recover  
The port of Barcelona, without parting.

*Master.* [Within.] Your pleasure's done, sir.

*Rod.* Signor Marc-Antonio,  
Till meat be ready, let's sit here, and prepare  
Our stomachs with discourses.

*Marc.* What you please, sir.

*Rod.* Pray you answer me to this doubt.

*Marc.* If I can, sir.

*Rod.* Why should such plants as you are, Plea-  
sure's children,  
That owe their blushing years to gentle objects,  
Tenderly bred, and brought up in all fullness,  
Desire the stubborn wars ?

*Marc.* In those 'tis wonder,  
That make their ease their god, and not their  
honour :

But, noble general, my end is other ;  
Desire of knowledge, sir, and hope of tying  
Discretion to my time, which only shews me,  
And not my years, a man, and makes that more  
Which we call handsome ; the rest is but boy's  
And with the boy consumed. [beauty,

*Rod.* You argue well, sir.

*Marc.* Nor do I wear my youth, as they wear breeches,  
For object, but for use; my strength for danger,  
(Which is the liberal part of man) not dalliance;  
The wars must be my mistress, sir.

*Rod.* Oh, signor,  
You'll find her a rough wench.

*Marc.* When she is won once,  
She'll show the sweeter, sir.

*Rod.* You can be pleased, though,  
Sometimes to take a tamer?

*Marc.* 'Tis a truth, sir;  
So she be handsome, and not ill-condition'd.

*Rod.* A soldier should not be so curious.

*Marc.* I can make shift with any for a heat, sir.

*Rod.* Nay, there you wrong your youth too;  
and however

You are pleased to appear to me, which shews well,  
signor,

A tougher soul than your few years can testify;  
Yet, my young sir, out of mine own experience  
When my spring was, I am able to confute you,  
And say, you had rather come to th' shock of eyes,  
And boldly march up to your mistress' mouth,  
Than to the cannon's.

*Marc.* That's as their lading is, sir.

*Rod.* There be trenches  
Fitter and warmer for your years, and safer,  
Than where the bullet plays.

*Marc.* There's it I doubt, sir.

*Rod.* You'll easily find that faith. But come, be liberal;

What kind of woman could you make best wars  
*Marc.* They are all but heavy marchers. [with?]

*Rod.* Fy, Marc-Antonio!  
Beauty in no more reverence?

*Marc.* In the sex, sir,  
I honour it, and, next to honour, love it,  
For there is only beauty; and that sweetness,  
That was first meant for modesty, sever it,  
And put it in one woman, it appears not;  
'Tis of too rare a nature, she too gross  
To mingle with it—

*Rod.* This is a mere heresy.

*Marc.* Which makes 'em ever mending; for  
that gloss

That cozens us for beauty, is but bravery,  
An outward shew of things well set, no more:  
For heavenly beauty is as Heaven itself, sir,  
Too excellent for object, and what's seen  
Is but the veil then, airy clouds: Grant this,  
It may be seen, 'tis but like stars in twinklings.

*Rod.* 'Twas no small study in their libraries  
Brought you to this experience. But what think  
you

Of that fair red and white, which we call beauty?

*Marc.* Why, 'tis our creature, sir; we give it 'em  
Because we like those colours! else 'tis certain  
A blue face with a motley nose would do it,  
And be as great a beauty, so we loved it:  
That we cannot give, which is only beauty,  
Is a fair mind.

*Rod.* By this rule, all our choices  
Are to no ends.

*Marc.* Except the dull end, doing.

*Rod.* Then all to you seem equal?

*Marc.* Very true, sir,  
And that makes equal dealing: I love any  
That's worth love.

*Rod.* How long love you, signor?

*Marc.* Till I have other business.

*Rod.* Do you never  
Love steadfastly one woman?

*Marc.* 'Tis a toil, sir,  
Like riding in one road perpetually;  
It offers no variety.

*Rod.* Right youth!  
He must needs make a soldier.—Nor do you think  
One woman can love one man?

*Marc.* Yes, that may be,  
Though it appear not often; they are things  
ignorant,

And therefore apted to that superstition  
Of doting fondness. Yet of late years, signor,  
The world's well mended with 'em; fewer are  
found now

That love at length, and to the right mark; all  
Stir now, as the time stirs; fame and fashion  
Are ends they aim at now, and to make that love  
That wiser ages held ambition:  
They that cannot reach this may love by index;  
By every day's surveying who best promises,  
Who has done best, who may do, and who mended  
May come to do again; who appears neatest  
Either in new-stamp clothes, or courtesies,  
Done but from hand to mouth neither; nor love  
they these things

Longer than new are making, nor that succession  
Beyond the next fair feather. Take the city,  
There they go to't by gold-weight, no gain from  
All they can work by fire and water to 'em, [em.  
Profit is all they point at; if there be love,  
'Tis shewed ye by so dark a light, to bear out  
The bracks and old stains in't, that ye may purchase  
French velvet better cheap; all loves are endless.

*Rod.* 'Faith, if you have a mistress, 'would she  
heard you!

*Marc.* 'Twere but the venturing of my place, or  
swearing

I meant it but for argument, as schoolmen  
Dispute high questions.

*Rod.* What a world is this,  
When young men dare determine what those are.  
Age and the best experience ne'er could aim at!

*Marc.* They were thick-eyed then, sir; now the  
print is bigger,

And they may read their fortunes without spectacles.  
*Rod.* Did you ne'er love?

*Marc.* 'Faith, yes, once after supper,  
And the fit held till midnight.

*Rod.* Hot, or shaking?

*Marc.* To say true, both.

*Rod.* How did you rid it?

*Marc.* Thus, sir;

I laid my hand upon my heart, and bless'd me,  
And then said over certain charms I had learn'd  
Against mad dogs (for love and they are all one):  
Last, thought upon a windmill, and so slept,  
And was well ever after.

*Rod.* A rare physician!

What would your practice gain you?

*Marc.* The wars ended,  
I mean to use my art, and have these fools  
Cut in the head like cats, to save the kingdoms  
Another inquisition.

*Rod.* So old a soldier,  
Out of the wars, I never knew yet practis'd.

*Marc.* I shall mend every day. But, noble  
general,

Believe this, but as this you named, discourses—

*Rod.* Oh, you're a cunning gamester.

*Marc.* Mirths and toys

To cozen time withal; for, o' my troth, sir,  
I can love; I think, well too, well enough;  
And think as well of women as they are,  
Pretty fantastic things, some more regardful,  
And some few worth a service: I am so honest,  
I wish 'em all in Heaven; and you know how hard,  
sir,

'Twill be to get in there with their great farthingals.

*Rod.* Well, Marc-Antonio, I would not lose thy  
For the best galley I command. [company]

*Marc.* 'Faith, general,  
If these discourses please you, I shall fit you  
Once every day.

*Rod.* Thou canst not please me better. Hark,  
they call [Knock within.]

Below to dinner: You are my cabin guest;  
My bosom's, so you please sir.

*Marc.* Your poor servant! [Exeunt.]

SCENE IV.—YQUALADA.—A Room in the Inn.

Enter Host and his Wife.

*Host.* Let 'em have meat enough, woman, half  
a hen;

There be old rotten pilchards, put 'em off too;  
'Tis but a little new anointing of 'em,  
And a strong onion, that confounds the stink.

*Wife.* They call for more, sir.

*Host.* Knock a dozen eggs down;

But then beware your wenchens.

*Wife.* More than this too.

*Host.* Worts, worts, and make 'em porridge;  
pop 'em up, wench;

But they shall pay for collieses.

*Wife.* All this is nothing;

They call for kid and partridge.

*Host.* Well remember'd;

Where's the falconer's half dog he left?

*Wife.* It stinks, sir;

Past all hope that way.

*Host.* Run it o'er with garlic,  
And make a Roman dish on't.

*Wife.* Pray you be patient,

And get provision in: These are fine gentlemen,  
And liberal gentlemen: they have *unde quare*;

No mangy muleteers, nor pinching posts,  
That feed upon the parings of musk-melons,  
And rashes, as big and tough as rafters.  
Will you be stirring in this business? Here's your  
brother,

Mine old host of Ossuna, as wise as you are,  
That is, as knavish; if you put a trick,  
Take heed he do not find it.

*Host.* I'll be wagging. [Exit.]

*Wife.* 'Tis for your own commodity.—Why,  
*Serv.* [Within.] Anon forsooth. [wenchens!]

*Wife.* Who makes a fire there? and who gets in  
water?

Let Oliver go to the justice, and beseech his wor-  
ship

We may have two spits going; and, do you hear,  
Druce?

Let him invite his worship, and his wife's worship,  
To the left meat to-morrow.

Enter INCUBO.

*Inc.* Where's this kitchen?

*Wife.* E'en at the next door, signor. What, old  
We meet but seldom. [don!]

*Inc.* Pr'ythee be patient, Hostess;  
And tell me where the meat is.

*Wife.* 'Faith, master Bailly,  
How have you done? and how, man—

*Inc.* Good sweet Hostess,  
What shall we have to dinner?

*Wife.* How does your woman?  
And a fine woman she is, and a good woman.  
Lord, how you bear your years!

*Inc.* Is't veal or mutton,  
Beef, bacon, pork, kid, pheasant? or all these?  
And are they ready all?

*Wife.* The hours that have been  
Between us two, the merry hours: Lord!

*Inc.* Hostess,  
Dear Hostess, do but hear! I am hungry.

*Wife.* You are merrily disposed, sir.

*Inc.* Monstrous hungry,  
And hungry after much meat! I have brought  
Right worshipful to pay the reckoning; [hither  
Money enough too with 'em; desire enough  
To have the best meat, and of that enough too:  
Come to the point, sweet wench; and so I kiss  
thee.

*Wife.* You shall have anything, and instantly,  
Ere you can lick your ears, sir.

*Inc.* Portly meat,  
Bearing, substantial stuff, and fit for hunger,  
I do beseech you, Hostess, first; then some light  
garnish,

Two pheasants in a dish; if you have leverets,  
(Rather for way of ornament, than appetite)  
They may be look'd upon, or larks; for fish,  
As there's no great need, so I would not wish you  
To serve above four dishes; but those full ones.  
You have no cheese of Parma?

*Wife.* Very old, sir.

*Inc.* The less will serve us; some ten pound.

*Wife.* Alas, sir,

We have not half these dainties.

*Inc.* Peace, good Hostess,

And make us hope you have.

*Wife.* You shall have all, sir—

*Inc.* That may be got for money.

Enter DIEGO and a Boy.

*Diego.* Where's your master?  
Bring me your master, Boy! I must have liquor  
Fit for the myrmidons; no dashing now, child,  
No conjurings by candle-light! I know all;  
Strike me the oldest sack, a piece that carries  
Point-blank to this place, Boy, and batters.—  
Hostess,

I kiss thy hands, through which many a round  
reckoning

And things of moment have had motion.

*Wife.* Still mine old brother.

*Diego.* Set thy cellar open,  
For I must enter, and advance my colours.  
I have brought thee dons indeed, wench, dons  
with ducats,

And those dons must have dainty wine, pure  
Bacchus,  
That bleeds the life-blood.—What, is your cure  
ended?

*Inc.* We shall have meat, man.

*Diego.* Then we will have wine, man,  
And wine upon wine, cut and drawn with wine.

*Wife.* Ye shall have all, and more than all.

*Inc.* All, well then.

*Diego.* Away, about your business! you with her,  
For old acquaintance sake, to stay your stomach!  
[*Exeunt Wife and Incubo.*]

And, Boy, be you my guide, *ad inferos*;  
For I will make a full descent in equipage.

*Boy.* I'll shew you rare wine.

*Diego.* Stinging gear?

*Boy.* Divine, sir.

*Diego.* Oh, divine Boy! march, march, my  
child. Rare wine, boy?

*Boy.* As any is in Spain, sir.

*Diego.* Old, and strong too?

Oh, my fine boy! clear too?

*Boy.* As crystal, sir, and strong as truth.

*Diego.* Away, boy!

I am enamour'd, and I long for dalliance.  
Stay no where, child, not for thy father's blessing,  
I charge thee, not to save thy sister's honour,  
Nor to close thy dam's eyes, were she a-dying,  
Till we arrive; and, for thy recompense,  
I will remember thee in my will.

*Boy.* You have said, sir.

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Room in the same Inn.

*Enter PHILIPPO and Host.*

*Phil.* Mine Host, is that apparel got you spoke  
You shall have ready money. [of?]

*Host.* 'Tis come in, sir; he has it on, sir,  
And I think 'twill be fit; and o' my credit,  
'Twas never worn but once, sir, and for necessity  
Pawn'd to the man I told you of.

*Phil.* Pray bargain for't,

And I will be the paymaster.

*Host.* I will, sir.

*Phil.* And let our meat be ready when you  
I mean as soon. [please;]

*Host.* It shall be presently.

*Phil.* How far stands Barcelona?

*Host.* But two leagues off, sir.

You may be there by three o'clock.

*Phil.* I am glad on't. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—A Grove near the same.

*Enter THEODOSIA and LEOCADIA.*

*Theod.* Signor Francisco, why I draw you hither  
To this remote place, marvel not; for, trust me,  
My innocence yet never knew ill dealing;  
And as you have a noble temper, start not  
Into offence, at anything my knowledge,  
And for your special good, would be inform'd of;  
Nor think me vainly curious.

*Leoc.* Worthy sir,

The courtesies you and your noble brother,  
Even then when few men find the way to do 'em,  
I mean in want, so freely shower'd upon me,  
So truly and so timely minister'd,  
Must, if I should suspect those minds that made  
Either proclaim me an unworthy taker, [ 'em,  
Or worse, a base believer. Speak your mind, sir,  
Freely, and what you please; I am your servant.

*Theod.* Then, my young sir, know, since our  
first acquaintance,  
Induced by circumstances that deceive not,  
To clear some doubts I have (nay, blush not,  
signor!)

I have beheld you narrowly. More blushes?  
Sir, you give me so much light, I find you  
A thing confess'd already. Yet more blushes?  
You would ill cover an offence might sink you,  
That cannot hide yourself. Why do you shake so?  
I mean no trouble to you. This fair hand  
Was never made for hardness, nor those eyes

(Come, do not hide 'em) for rough objects.  
Hark ye,

You have betray'd yourself; that sigh confirms me.  
Another? and a third too? Then I see  
These boy's clothes do but pinch you. Come, be  
liberal;

You have found a friend that has found you; dis-  
guise not

That loaden soul that labours to be open.

Now you must weep, I know it, for I see

Your eyes down-laden to the lids; another

Manifest token that my doubts are perfect:

Yet I have found a greater; tell me this,

Why were these holes left open? there was an  
error,

A foul one, my Francisco!—Have I caught you?

Oh, pretty sir, the custom of our country

Allows men none in this place. Now the shower  
comes.

*Leoc.* Oh, signor Theodoro! [*Weeps.*]

*Theod.* This sorrow shews so sweetly,

I cannot chuse but keep it company.

Take truce and speak, sir: And I charge your  
goodness,

By all those perfect hopes that point at virtue.

By that remembrance these fair tears are shed for,

If any sad misfortune have thus form'd you,

That either care or counsel may redeem,

Pain, purse, or anything within the power

And honour of free gentlemen, reveal it,

And have our labours.

*Leoc.* I have found you noble,

And you shall find me true: Your doubts are  
certain,

Nor dare I more dissemble; I am a woman,

The great example of a wretched woman.

Here you must give me leave to shew my sex.—

And now, to make you know how much your  
credit

Has won upon my soul, so it please your patience,  
I'll tell you my unfortunate sad story.

*Theod.* Sit down and say on, lady.

*Leoc.* I am born, sir,

Of good and honest parents, rich and noble,

And, not to lie, the daughter of Don Sanchio,

If my unhappy fortune have not lost me;

My name call'd Leocadia, even the same

Your worthy brother did the special honour

To name for beautiful, and without pride

I have been often made believe so, signor;

But that's impertinent! Now to my sorrows:

Not far from us a gentleman of worth,

A neighbour, and a noble visitor,  
Had his abode, who often met my father  
In gentle sports of chase and river-hawking,  
In course and riding; and with him often brought  
A son of his, a young and hopeful gentleman,  
Nobly train'd up, in years fit for affection;  
A sprightly man, of understanding excellent,  
Of speech and civil 'haviour no less powerful;  
And of all parts, else my eyes lied, abundant;  
We grew acquainted, and from that acquaintance  
Nearer into affection; from affection  
Into belief.

*Theod.* Well?

*Leoc.* Then we durst kiss.

*Theod.* Go forward!

*Leoc.* But oh, man, man, unconstant, careless  
man,

Oh, subtle man, how many are thy mischiefs!

Oh, Marc-Antonio, I may curse those kisses!

*Theod.* What did you call him, lady?

*Leoc.* Marc-Antonio;

The name to me of misery.

*Theod.* Pray, forward!

*Leoc.* From these we bred desires, sir; but lose  
If mine were lustful! [me, Heaven,

*Theod.* I believe.

*Leoc.* This nearness

Made him importunate: When, to save mine  
honour,

(Love having full possession of my powers)

I got a contract from him.

*Theod.* Sealed?

*Leoc.* And sworn too;

Which since, for some offence Heaven laid upon  
I lost amongst my monies in the robbery [me,

(The loss that makes me poorest:) This won from  
Fool that I was, and too too credulous, [him,

I 'pointed him a bye-way to my chamber

The next night at an hour—

*Theod.* Pray stay there, lady!

And when the night came, came he? kept he  
touch with you?

(Be not so shame-faced!) had ye both your wishes?

Tell me, and tell me true, did he enjoy ye?

Were ye in one another's arms a-bed? the contract

Confirm'd in full joys there? did he lie with you?

Answer to that! ha! Did your father know this,

The good old man, or kindred privy to't?

And had you their consents? did that night's  
Make you a mother? [promise

*Leoc.* Why do you ask so nearly?

Good sir, does it concern you anything?

*Theod.* No, lady;

Only the pity why you should be used so

A little stirs me. But did he keep his promise?

*Leoc.* No, no, signor;

Alas, he never came, nor never meant it!

My love was fool'd, time number'd to no end,

My expectation flouted; and guess you, sir,

What dor unto a doting maid this was,

What a base breaking-off!

*Theod.* [*Aside.*] All's well then.—Lady,

Go forward in your story.

*Leoc.* Not only fail'd, sir,

(Which is a curse in love; and may he find it

When his affections are full-wing'd, and ready

To stoop upon the quarry, then when all

His high hopes are in's arms!) not only thus, sir,

But more injurious, faithless, treacherous,

Within two days Fame gave him far removed

With a new love; which, much against my con-  
science,

But more against my cause, which is my hell,

I must confess a fair one, a right fair one,

Indeed of admirable sweetness, daughter

Unto another of our noble neighbours;

The thief call'd Theodosia, whose perfections

I am bound to ban for ever, curse to wrinkles,

As Heaven I hope will make them soon, and aches;

For they have robb'd me, poor unhappy wench,

Of all, of all, sir, all that was my glory,

And left me nothing but these tears and travel.

Upon this certain news, I quit my father,

(And, if you be not milder in construction,

I fear mine honour too) and like a page

Stole to Ossuna; from that place to Sevil;

From thence to Barcelona I was travelling

When you o'er-took my misery, in hope

To hear of galleys bound up for Italy; for never

Will I leave off the search of this bad man,

This filcher of affections, this love-pedar!

Nor shall my curses cease to blast her beauties,

And make her name as wand'ring as her nature,

Till, standing face to face before their lusts,

I call Heaven's justice down.

*Theod.* This shews too angry;

Nor can it be her fault she is beloved:

If I give meat, must they that eat it surfeit?

*Leoc.* She loves again, sir, there's the mischief

And in despite of me, to drown my blessings, [of it.

Which she shall dearly know—

*Theod.* You are too violent.

*Leoc.* She has devils in her eyes, to whose de-

He offers all his service. [votion

*Theod.* Who can say

But she may be forsaken too? He that once wan-

ders

From such a perfect sweetness as you promise,

Has he not still the same rule to deceive?

*Leoc.* No, no; they are together, love together,

Past all deceit of that side; sleep together,

Live, and delight together; and such deceit

Give me in a wild desert!

*Theod.* By your leave, lady,

I see no honour in this cunning.

*Leoc.* Honour?

True, none of her part; honour? she deserves

none;

'Tis ceased with wand'ring ladies, such as she is,

So bold and impudent.

*Theod.* I could be angry, [*Aside.*

Extremely angry now, beyond my nature,

An 'twere not for my pity: What a man

Is this, to do these wrongs!—Believe me, lady,

I know the maid, and know she is not with him—

*Leoc.* I would you knew she were in Heaven!

*Theod.* And so well know her,

That I think you are cozen'd.

*Leoc.* So I say, sir.

*Theod.* I mean, in her behaviour; for, trust my

So much I dare adventure for her credit, [faith,

She never yet delighted to do wrong.

*Leoc.* How can she then delight in him? Dare

she think

(Be what she will, as excellent as angels)

My love so fond, my wishes so indulgent,

That I must take her prewnings? stoop at that

She has tired upon? No, sir, I hold my beauty,

(Wash but these sorrows from it) of a sparkle

As right and rich as hers, my means as equal,

My youth as much unblown; and, for our worths  
And weight of virtue—

*Theod.* Do not task her so far.

*Leoc.* By Heaven she's cork, and clouds! light,  
light, sir, vapour!

But I shall find her out, with all her witchcrafts,  
Her paintings, and her pouncings; for 'tis art,  
And only art preserves her, and mere spells  
That work upon his powers. Let her but shew me  
A ruin'd cheek like mine, that holds his colour  
(And writes but sixteen years) in spite of sorrows,  
An unbathed body, smiles that give but shadows,  
And wrinkle not the face! Besides, she's little,  
A demy dame, that makes no object.

*Theod.* Nay,  
Then I must say you err; for, credit me,  
I think she's taller than yourself.

*Leoc.* Why, let her!  
It is not that shall mate me; I but ask  
My hands may reach unto her.

*Theod.* Gentle lady,  
'Tis now ill time of further argument;  
For I perceive your anger void of counsel,  
Which I could wish more temperate.

*Leoc.* Pray forgive me,  
If I have spoke uncivilly: They that look on  
See more than we that play; and I beseech you  
Impute it love's offence, not mine; whose torments,  
If you have ever loved, and found my crosses,  
You must confess are seldom tied to patience:  
Yet I could wish I had said less.

*Theod.* No harm then;  
You have made a full amends. Our company  
You may command, so please you, in your travels,  
With all our faith and furtherance; let it be so.

*Leoc.* You make too great an offer.

*Theod.* Then it shall be.  
Go in, and rest yourself; our wholesome diet  
Will be made ready straight. But hark you, lady!  
One thing I must entreat; your leave and suffer-  
ance,

That these things may be open to my brother,  
For more respect and honour.

*Leoc.* Do your pleasure.  
*Theod.* And do not change this habit, by no  
Unless you change yourself. [means,

*Leoc.* Which must not yet be.

*Theod.* It carries you conceal'd and safe.

*Leoc.* I am counsel'd. [Exit.

Enter PHILIPPO.

*Phil.* What's done?  
*Theod.* Why, all we doubted; 'tis a woman,  
And of a noble strain too: Guess!

*Phil.* I cannot.  
*Theod.* You have heard often of her.  
*Phil.* Stay; I think not.

*Theod.* Indeed you have; 'tis the fair Leocadia,  
Daughter unto Don Sanchio, our noble neighbour.

*Phil.* Nay?  
*Theod.* 'Tis she, sir, o' my credit.

*Phil.* Leocadia?  
Fish! Leocadia it must not be.

*Theod.* It must be, or be nothing.  
*Phil.* Pray give me leave to wonder: Leocadia?  
*Theod.* The very same.

*Phil.* The damsel Leocadia?  
I guess'd it was a woman, and a fair one,  
I see it through her shape, transparent, plain;  
But that it should be she! tell me directly.

*Theod.* By Heavens, 'tis she.

*Phil.* By Heavens, then, 'tis a sweet one.

*Theod.* That's granted too.

*Phil.* But hark you, hark you, sister!

How came she thus disguised?  
*Theod.* I'll tell you that too;  
As I came, on the self-same ground, so used too.

*Phil.* By the same man?

*Theod.* The same too.

*Phil.* As I live,  
You lovers have fine fancies, wondrous fine ones!

*Theod.* Pray Heaven, you never make one!

*Phil.* 'Faith, I know not:  
But, in that mind I am, I had rather cobble;  
'Tis a more Christian trade.—Pray tell me one  
thing;

Are not you two now monstrous jealous  
Of one another?

*Theod.* She is much of me,  
And has rail'd at me most unmercifully,  
And to my face; and, o' my conscience,  
Had she but known me, either she or I,  
Or both, had parted with strange faces,  
She was in such a fury.

*Phil.* Leocadia?

Does she speak handsomely?

*Theod.* Wond'rous well, sir,  
And all she does becomes her, even her anger.

*Phil.* How seem'd she when you found her?

*Theod.* Had you seen  
How sweetly fearful her pretty self  
Betray'd herself; how neat her sorrow shew'd,  
And in what handsome phrase she put her story;  
And as occasion stirr'd her how she started,  
Though roughly, yet most aptly, into anger;  
You would have wonder'd.

*Phil.* Does she know you?

*Theod.* No,  
Nor must not by no means.

*Phil.* How stands your difference?

*Theod.* I'll tell you that some fitter time; but,  
trust me,

My Marc-Antonio has too much to answer.

*Phil.* May I take knowledge of her?

*Theod.* Yes, she's willing.

*Phil.* Pray use her as she is, with all respects  
then;

For she's a woman of a noble breeding.

*Theod.* You shall not find me wanting.

*Phil.* Which way bears she?

*Theod.* Our way, and to our end.

*Phil.* I am glad on't. Hark you!

She keeps her shape?

*Theod.* Yes, and I think, by this time,  
Has mew'd her old.

Enter LEOCADIA in another Suit.

*Phil.* She's here: By Heaven, a rare one!  
An admirable sweet one! what an eye!  
Of what a full command she bears! how gracious  
All her aspect shews? Bless me from a fever!  
I am not well o' th' sudden.

*Leoc.* Noble friends,  
Your meat and all my service waits upon ye.

*Phil.* You teach us manners, lady; all which  
service

Must now be mine to you, and all too poor too;  
Blush not we know you; for, by all our faiths,  
With us your honour is in sanctuary,  
And ever shall be.

*Leo.* I do well believe it :  
Will you walk nearer, sir ?

[*Exit PHILIPPO and LEOCADIA.*]

*Theod.* She shews still fairer,  
Younger in every change, and clearer, neater :  
I know not ; I may fool myself, and finely  
Nourish a wolf to eat my heart out. Certain  
As she appears now, she appears a wonder,  
A thing amazes me ; what would she do then  
In woman's helps, in ornaments apt for her,  
And deckings to her delicacy ? Without all doubt,  
She would be held a miracle ; nor can I think  
He has forsaken her, say what she please ;  
I know his curious eye : Or, say he had,  
Put case he could be so boy-blind and foolish,  
Yet still I fear she keeps the contract with her,  
Not stol'n, as she affirms, nor lost by negligence ;  
She would lose herself first, 'tis her life ; and there  
All my hopes are dispatch'd. Oh, noble Love,  
That thou could'st be without this jealousy,  
Without this passion of the heart, how heavenly  
Wouldst thou appear upon us ! Come what may  
come,

I'll see the end on't : And since chance has cast her  
Naked into my refuge, all I can  
She freely shall command, except the man. [*Exit.*]

SCENE III.—*Before LEONARDO'S House, in Andalusia.*

*Enter LEONARDO and PEDRO.*

*Leo.* Don Pedro, do you think assuredly  
The galleys will come round to Barcelona  
Within these two days ?

*Pedro.* Without doubt.

*Leo.* And think you  
He will be with 'em certainly ?

*Pedro.* He is, sir ;

I saw him at their setting off.

*Leo.* Must they needs  
Touch there for water, as you say ?

*Pedro.* They must, sir,

And for fresh meat too ; few or none go by it.  
Beside, so great a fleet must needs want trimming,  
If they have met with foul seas ; and no harbour  
On this side Spain is able, without danger,  
To moor 'em, but that haven.

*Leo.* Are the wars  
His only end ?

*Pedro.* So he professes.

*Leo.* Bears he

Any command amongst 'em ?

*Pedro.* Good regard

With all ; which quickly will prefer him.

*Leo.* Pray, sir, tell me,

And as you are a gentleman be liberal.

*Pedro.* I will, sir, and most true.

*Leo.* Who saw you with him ?

*Pedro.* None but things like himself ; young  
soldiers,

And gentlemen desirous to seek honour.

*Leo.* Was there no woman there, nor none dis-  
guised

That might be thought a woman ? In his language,  
Did he not let slip something of suspicion  
Touching that wanton way ?

*Pedro.* Believe me, sir,

I neither saw, nor could suspect that face  
That might be doubted woman's ; yet I am sure

Aboard him I see all that past : And 'tis impossible  
Among so many high-set bloods there should be  
A woman, let her close herself within a cockle,  
But they would open her : He must not love  
Within that place alone ; and therefore surely  
He would not be so foolish, had he any,  
To trust her there. For his discourse, 'twas ever  
About his business, war, or mirth, to make us  
Relish a can of wine well ; when he spoke private,  
'Twas only the remembrance of his service,  
And hope of your good prayers for his health, sir ;  
And so I gave him to the seas.

*Leo.* I thank you,  
And now am satisfied. And to prevent  
Suspicious that may nourish dangers, signor,  
(For I have told you how the mad Alphonso  
Chafes like a stag i' th' toil, and bends his fury  
'Gainst all, but his own ignorance) I'm determined,  
For peace sake and the preservation  
Of my yet untouched honour, and his cure,  
Myself to seek him there, and bring him back,  
As testimony of an unsought injury  
By either of our actions ; that the world  
And he, if he have reason, may see plainly  
Opinion is no perfect guide, nor all fames  
Founders of truths. In the mean time this courtesy  
I must entreat of you, sir ; be myself here,  
And as myself command my family.

*Pedro.* You lay too much trust on me.

*Leo.* 'Tis my love, sir.

I will not be long from you. If this question  
Chance to be call'd upon ere my return,  
I leave your care to answer. So, farewell, sir !

*Pedro.* You take a wise way ; all my best en-  
deavours

Shall labour in your absence. Peace go with  
you !— [*Exit LEONARDO.*]

A noble, honest gentleman, free-hearted,  
And of an open faith, much loving and much loved,  
And father of that goodness only malice  
Can truly stir against ; what dare befall  
Till his return I'll answer. [*Exit.*]

*Enter ALPHONSO and Servant.*

*Alph.* Walk off, sirrah ;  
But keep yourself within my call.

*Serv.* I will, sir.

*Alph.* And stir my horse, for taking cold.—  
Within there !

Hoa, people ! you that dwell there ! my brave  
signor !

What, are ye all asleep ? is't that time with ye ?  
I'll ring a little louder.

*Enter PEDRO.*

*Pedro.* Sir, who seek you ?

*Alph.* Not you, sir. Where's your master ?

*Pedro.* I serve no man

In way of pay, sir.

*Alph.* Where's the man o' th' house then ?

*Pedro.* What would you have with him, sir ?

*Alph.* Do you stand here, sir,  
To ask men questions when they come ?

*Pedro.* I would, sir,

Being his friend, and hearing such alarms,  
Know how men come to visit him.

*Alph.* You shall, sir :

Pray tell his mightiness here is a gentleman,  
By name Alphonso, would entreat his conference  
About affairs of state, sir. Are you answer'd ?

*Enter SANCHE carried in a Chair.*

*Pedro.* I must be, sir.

*Sanc.* Stay; set me down. Stay, signor!  
You must stay, and you shall stay.

*Alph.* Meaning me, sir?

*Sanc.* Yes, you, sir; you I mean, I mean you.

*Alph.* Well, sir?

Why should I stay?

*Sanc.* There's reason.

*Alph.* Reason, sir?

*Sanc.* Ay, reason, sir;

My wrong is greatest, and I will be served first.  
Call out the man of fame.

*Alph.* How served, sir?

*Sanc.* Thus, sir.

*Alph.* But not before me?

*Sanc.* Before all the world, sir,

As my case stands.

*Alph.* I have lost a daughter, sir.

*Sanc.* I have lost another, worth five score of her, sir.

*Alph.* You must not tell me so.

*Sanc.* I have; and, hark ye,

Make it up five score more. Call out the fellow;  
And stand you by, sir.

*Pedro.* This is the mad morris.

*Alph.* And I stand by?

*Sanc.* I say, stand by, and do it.

*Alph.* Stand by, among thy lungs.

*Sanc.* Turn presently,

And say thy prayers, thou art dead.

*Alph.* I scorn thee!

And scorn to say my prayers more than thou dost!  
Mine is the most wrong, and my daughter dearest,  
And mine shall first be righted.

*Sanc.* Shall be righted?

*Pedro.* A third may live, I see.—Pray hear me,

*Sanc.* Shall be? [gentlemen.]

*Alph.* Ay, shall be righted.

*Sanc.* Now?

*Alph.* Now.

*Sanc.* Instantly?

*Alph.* Before I stir.

*Sanc.* Before me?

*Alph.* Before any.

*Sanc.* Dost thou consider what thou sayst?

Hast thou friends here

Able to quench my anger, or persuade me  
(After I have beaten thee into one main bruise,  
And made thee spend thy state in rotten apples)  
Thou canst at length be quiet? Shall I kill thee?  
Divide thee like a rotten pumpkin,  
And leave thee stinking to posterity?  
There's not the least blow I shall give, but does  
Urge me no further: I am first. [this.]

*Alph.* I'll hang first!

No, Goodman Glory, 'tis not your bravadoes,  
Your punctual honour, nor soldadoship—

*Sanc.* Set me a little nearer.

*Alph.* Let him sally!—

Lined with your quirks of carriage and discretion,  
Can blow me off my purpose. Where's your credit,  
With all your school-points now? your decent  
arguing.

And apt time for performing? where are these  
toys,

These wise ways and most honourable courses,  
To take revenge? How dar'st thou talk of killing,  
Or think of drawing anything but squirts,  
When lechery has dry-founder'd thee?

*Sanc.* Nearer yet!

That I may spit him down!—Thou look'st like a  
*Pedro.* I would be thought so, sir. [man.]

*Sanc.* Pr'ythee do but take me,  
And fling me upon that puppy.

*Alph.* Do, for Heaven's sake,  
And see but how I'll hug him.

*Sanc.* Yet take warning!

*Pedro.* 'Faith, gentlemen, this is a needless  
quarrel.

*Sanc.* And do you desire to make one?

*Pedro.* As a friend, sir,  
To tell you all this anger is but lost, sir;  
For Leonardo is from home.

*Alph.* No, no, sir!

*Pedro.* Indeed he is.

*Sanc.* Where dare he be, but here, sir,  
When men are wrong'd, and come for satisfac-  
tions?

*Pedro.* It seems he has done none, sir; for his  
business,

Clear of those cares, hath carried him for some  
To Barcelona: If he had been guilty, [time]  
I know he would have stayed, and cleared all  
difference,

Either by free confession, or his sword.

*Sanc.* This must not be!

*Pedro.* Sure as I live, it is, sir.

*Alph.* Sure, as we all live,  
He's run away for ever!—Barcelona?  
Why, 'tis the key for Italy, from whence  
He stole first hither.

*Sanc.* And having found his knaveries  
Too gross to be forgiven, and too open,  
He has found the same way back again: I believe  
The good grass gentleman, for his own ease, [too]  
Has taken one o' th' fillies. Is not his stuff sold?

*Alph.* I fear his worship's shoes too, to escape  
I do not think he has a diah within doors, [as]  
A louse left of his lineage.

*Pedro.* You are too wide, sir.

*Alph.* Or one poor wooden spoon.

*Pedro.* Come in and see, sir.

*Alph.* I'll see his house on fire, first!

*Pedro.* Then be pleased,

Sir, to give better censure.

*Sanc.* I will after him,  
And search him like conceal'd land, but I'll have  
him;

And, though I find him in his shrift, I'll kill him.

*Alph.* I'll bear you company.

*Sanc.* Pray have a care then,  
A most especial care, indeed a fear,  
You do not anger me.

*Alph.* I will observe you;

And if I light upon him handsomely—

*Sanc.* Kill but a piece of him; leave some, Al-  
For your poor friends! [phoaso,

*Pedro.* I fear him not for all this.

*Alph.* Shall we first go home,  
(For it may prove a voyage) and dispose  
Of things there? Heaven knows what may follow

*Sanc.* No;

I'll kill him in this shirt I have on: Let things  
Govern themselves! I am master of my honour  
At this time, and no more; let wife, and land,  
Lie lay till I return!

*Alph.* I say *Amen* to't:

But what care for our monies?

*Sanc.* I'll not spend

Above three shillings, till his head be here ;  
Four is too great a sum for all his fortunes.  
Come, take me up instantly.

*Aph.* Farewell to you, sir !  
And if your friend be in a feather-bed,  
Sow'd up to shrowd his fears, tell him 'tis folly ;  
For no course but his voluntary hanging  
Can get our pardons. [*Exeunt.*

*Pedro.* These I think would be  
Offence enough, if their own indiscretions

Would suffer 'em ; two of the old seditions !  
When they want enemies, they are their own foes !  
Were they a little wiser, I should doubt 'em ;  
Till when, I'll ne'er break sleep, nor suffer hunger,  
For any harm he shall receive : For 'tis as easy,  
If he be guilty, to turn these two old men  
Upon their own throats, and look on, and live still,  
As 'tis to tell five pound ; a great deal sooner.  
And so I'll to my meat, and then to hawking. [*Exit.*

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—BARCELONA. *The Harbour.*

*Enter MARC-ANTONIO and a Gentleman.*

*Marc.* Sir, this is compliment ; I pray you leave

*Gent.* Sir, it is not. [*me.*

*Marc.* Why, I would only see  
The town.

*Gent.* And only that I come to shew you.

*Marc.* Which I can see without you.

*Gent.* So you may,

Plainly, not safely : For such difference  
As you have seen betwixt the sea and earth  
When waves rise high, and land would beat 'em  
As fearful of invasion ; such we find [*back,*  
When we land here at Barcelona.

*Marc.* Sir—

*Gent.* Besides, our general of the gallies, fearing  
Your hasty nature, charged me not return  
Without you safe.

*Marc.* Oh, sir, that Roderigo  
Is noble, and he does mistake my temper :  
There is not in the world a mind less apt  
To conceive wrongs, or do 'em. Has he seen me  
In all this voyage, in the which he pleases  
To call me friend, let slip a hasty word ?—

*Enter EUGENIA with divers Attendants.*

'Slight, sir ! yonder is a lady veil'd ;  
For properness beyond comparison,  
And sure her face is like the rest ; we'll see't.

*Gent.* Why, you are hasty, sir, already. Know  
What 'tis you go about ? [*you*

*Marc.* Yes ; I would see  
The woman's face.

*Gent.* By Heaven you shall not do't !  
You do not know the custom of the place :  
To draw that curtain here, though she were mean,  
Is mortal.

*Marc.* Is it ? Earth must come to earth  
At last ; and, by my troth, I'll try it, sir.

*Gent.* Then I must hold you fast. By all the  
That can be placed in man, 'tis an attempt [faith  
More dangerous than death ; 'tis death and shame !  
I know the lady well.

*Marc.* Is she a lady ?

I shall the more desire to see her, sir.

*Gent.* She is Alanso's wife, the governor,  
A noble gentleman.

*Marc.* Then let me go :

If I can win her, you and I will govern  
This town, sir, fear it not, and we will alter  
These barbarous customs then ; for every lady  
Shall be seen daily, and seen over too.

*Gent.* Come, do not jest, nor let your passions  
bear you

To such wild enterprizes ! Hold you still ;  
For, as I have a soul, you shall not do't !  
She is a lady of unblemish'd fame,  
And here to offer that affront, were base.  
Hold on your way : and we will see the town,  
And overlook the ladies.

*Marc.* I am school'd,  
And promise you I will.—But, good sir, see !  
She will pass by us now : I hope I may  
Salute her thus far off.

*Gent.* 'Sfoot, are you mad ?

'Twill be as ill as the other,  
I *Attend.* What's the matter ?

What would that fellow have ?

*Gent.* Good sir, forbear.

I *Attend.* It seems you are new landed ; would  
Anything here ? [*you beg*

*Marc.* Yes, sir, all happiness  
To that fair lady, as I hope.

*Gent.* Marc-Antonio !

*Marc.* Her face, which needs no hiding, I would  
A sight of. [*beg*

*Gent.* Now go on ; for 'tis too late  
To keep this from a tumult.

I *Attend.* Sirrah, you  
Shall see a fitter object for your eyes,  
Than a fair lady's face.

*Eug.* For Heaven's sake, raise not  
A quarrel in the streets for me !

I *Attend.* Slip in then ;

This is your door.

*Eug.* Will you needs quarrel then ?

I *Attend.* We must, or suffer

This outrage.—Is't not all your minds, sirs ? speak.

*All.* Yes.

*Eug.* Then I do beseech ye, let my lord  
Not think the quarrel about me ; for 'tis not. [*Exit.*

*Enter three or four Soldiers.*

*Gent.* See, happily some of our galley soldiers  
Are come ashore.

I *Attend.* Come on, sir ! you shall see  
Faces enough.

*Enter certain Townsmen.*

*Gent.* Some one of you call to  
Our general ! the whole roar of the town  
Comes in upon us.—

*Marc.* I have seen, sir, better [*To Attendants.*  
Perhaps, than that was covered ; and will yet  
See that, or spoil yours. [*They fight.*

*Enter PHILIPPO, THEODORA, and LUCADIA.*

*Phil.* On ! why start you back ?

*Theod.* Alas, sir, they are fighting.

*Leoc.* Let's be gone.— [*MARC-ANTONIO falls.*]

See, see, a handsome man struck down!

*Gent.* Ho, general!

Look out! Antonio is in distress.

*Theod.* Antonio?

*Leoc.* Antonio? 'Tis he.

[*RODRIGO appears on the deck of a galley.*]

*Rod.* [*Within.*] Ho, Governor!—Make a shot into the town!

I'll part you. Bring away Antonio [*A shot.*]  
Into my cabin. [*Exeunt Attendants and Townsmen.*]

*Gent.* I will do that office:

I fear it is the last that I shall do him.

[*Exeunt Soldiers and Gentlemen, with MARC-ANTONIO.*]

*Theod.* The last? why, will he die? [*Faints.*]

*Leoc.* Since I have found him, happiness leave me,

When I leave him! [*Exit.*]

*Phil.* Why, Theodosia!

My sister! wake! Alas, I grieved but now  
To see the streets so full, and now I grieve  
To see them left so empty: I could wish  
Tumult himself were here, that yet at least  
Amongst the band I might espy some face  
So pale and fearful, that would willingly  
Embrace an errand for a cordial,  
Or *agua-vita*, or a cup of sack,  
Or a physician. But to talk of these—  
She breathes!—Stand up! oh, Theodosia!  
Speak but as thou wert wont; give but a sigh,  
Which is but the most unhappy piece of life,  
And I will ever after worship sadness,  
Apply myself to grief, prepare and build  
Altars to sorrow!

*Theod.* Oh, Philippo, help me!

*Phil.* I do: These are my arms, Philippo's  
arms,

Thy brother's arms, that hold thee up.

*Theod.* You help me

To life; but I would see Antonio

That's dead.

*Phil.* Thou shalt see anything. How dost thou?

*Theod.* Better, I thank you.

*Phil.* Why, that's well. Call up

Thy services, and uncloud thy covered spirits.

How now?

*Theod.* Recovered. But Antonio!

Where is he?

*Phil.* We will find him. Art thou well?

*Theod.* Perfectly well, saving the miss of him.

And I do charge you here, by our alliance,  
And by the love which would have been betwixt us,  
Knew we no kindred; by that killing fear,  
Mingled with twenty thousand hopes and doubts,  
Which you may think placed in a lover's heart,  
And in a virgin's too when she wants help,  
To grant me your assistance to find out  
This man, alive or dead! and I will pay you,  
In service, tears, or pray'rs, a world of wealth;  
But other treasure I have none. Alas!  
You men have strong hearts; but we feeble maids  
Have tender eyes, which only given be  
To blind themselves, crying for what they see.

*Phil.* Why dost thou charge me thus? Have I  
been found

Slow to perform, what I could but imagine  
Thy wishes were? Have I at any time  
Tendered a business of mine own, beyond  
A vanity of thine? Have I not been  
As if I were a senseless creature, made

To serve thee without power of questioning?

If so, why fear'st thou?

*Theod.* I am satisfied.

*Phil.* Come then, let's go!—Where's Leocadia?

*Theod.* I know not, sir.

*Phil.* Where's Leocadia?

*Theod.* I do not know.

*Phil.* Leocadia!

This tumult made the streets as dead as night;  
A man may talk as freely! what's become  
Of Leocadia?

*Theod.* She is run away.

*Phil.* Be'gone, and let us never more behold  
Each other's face, till we may, both together,  
Fasten our eyes on her! Accursed be  
Those tender cozening names of Charity,  
And Natural Affection! they have lost  
Me, only by observing them, what cost,  
Travel, and fruitless wishes, may in vain  
Search through the world, but never find again.

*Theod.* Good sir, be patient! I have done no  
fault

Worthy this banishment.

*Phil.* Yes: Leocadia,

The lady so distress'd, who was content  
To lay her story, and to lay her heart  
As open as her story to yourself;  
Who was content that I should know her sex,  
Before dissembled, and to put herself  
Into my conduct; whom I undertook  
Safely to guard; is in this tumult lost!

*Theod.* And can I help it, sir?

*Phil.* No; 'would thou couldst!

You might have done, but for that zeal'd religion  
Your women bear to swoonings: You do pick  
Your times to faint, when somebody is by  
Bound or by nature, or by love, or service,  
To raise you from that well-dissembled death:  
Inform me but of one that has been found  
Dead in her private chamber by herself,  
Where sickness would no more forbear than here,  
And I will quit the rest for her.

*Theod.* I know not

What they may do, and how they may dissemble;  
But, by my troth, I did not.

*Phil.* By my troth,

'Would I had tried! 'would I had let thee lain.  
And follow'd her!

*Theod.* I would you had done so,

Rather than been so angry. Where's Antonio?

*Phil.* Why dost thou vex me with these ques-  
tions?

I'll tell thee where; he's carried to the gallees,  
There to be chain'd, and row, and beat, and row  
With knotted ropes, and pizales; if he swoon,  
He has a dose of biscuit.

*Theod.* I am glad

He is alive.

*Phil.* Was ever man thus troubled?

Tell me where Leocadia is!

*Theod.* Good brother,

Be not so hasty, and I think I can:  
You found no error in me, when I first  
Told you she was a woman; and, believe me,  
Something I have found out which makes me think.  
Nay, almost know so well, that I durst swear  
She follow'd hurt Antonio.

*Phil.* What do we

Then lingering here? We will aboard the gallees.  
And find her. [*Exit.*]

*Enter the Governor, two Attendants, and the Townsmen.*

*Gov.* Made he a shot into the town?

1 *Attend.* He did, sir.

*Gov.* Call back those gentlemen.

1 *Attend.* The Governor

Commands you back.

*Phil.* We will obey him, sir.

*Gov.* You gave him cause to shoot, I know: He So far from rash offence, and holds with me [is Such curious friendship—Could not one of you Have call'd me while 'twas doing? Such an uproar, Before my door too?

1 *Towns.* By my troth, sir,

We were so busy in the public cause, Of our own private falling out, that we forgot it. At home we see now you were not; but as soon As the shot made us fly, we ran away As fast as we could to seek your honour.

*Gov.* 'Twas gravely done! but no man tells the cause,

Or chance, or what it was, that made you differ.

1 *Towns.* For my part, sir, if there were any that

I knew of, the shot drove it out of my head.—

Do you know any neighbours?

*All.* Not we, neither.

*Gov.* Not we?—Nor can you tell?

1 *Attend.* No other cause,

But the old quarrel betwixt the town and the gallees.

*Gov.* Come nearer, gentlemen! What are your

*Phil.* My name Philippo. [names?]

*Theod.* And mine Theodoro.

*Gov.* Strangers you are, it seems.

*Phil.* Newly arrived.

*Gov.* Then you are they begun this tumult.

*Phil.* No, sir.

*Gov.* Speak one of you.

1 *Attend.* They are not; I can quit 'em.

*Theod.* Yet we saw part, and an unhappy part, Of this debate; a long-sought friend of ours Struck down for dead, and borne unto the gallees; His name is Marc-Antonio.

*Phil.* And another

Of our own company, a gentleman Of noble birth, besides accompanied With all the gifts of Nature, ravish'd hence We know not how, in this dissention.—

*Gov.* Get you home all, and work; and when I You meddle with a weapon any more, [hear But those belonging to your trades, I'll lay you Where your best customers shall hardly find you.—

[*Exeunt Townsmen.*]

I am sorry, gentlemen, I troubled you, Being both strangers, by your tongues, and looks, Of worth: To make ye some part of amends, If there be anything in this poor town Of Barcelona that you would command, Command me!

*Theod.* Sir, this wounded gentleman, If it might please you, if your power and love Extend so far, I would be glad to wish Might be removed into the town for cure: The gallees stay not; and his wound, I know, Cannot endure a voyage.

*Gov.* Sir, he shall, I warrant you.—Go call me hither, sirrah, One of my other servants. [*Exit 1st Attendant.*]

*Phil.* And besides, The gentleman we lost, signor Francisco, Shall he be render'd too?

*Enter a Servant.*

*Gov.* And he, sir, too.—Go, sirrah, bear this To Roderigo, my most noble friend, [ring The general of the gallees: Tell him this.

[*Talks apart to his Servant. Exit Servant.*]

*Theod.* Now we shall have 'em both.

*Phil.* Blest be thy thoughts For apprehending this! blest be thy breath For uttering it!

*Gov.* Come, gentlemen, you shall Enter my roof; and I will send for surgeons, And you shall see your friends here presently.

*Theod.* His name was Marc-Antonio.

*Gov.* I know it, And have sent word so.

*Phil.* Did you not forget Francisco's name?

*Gov.* Nor his. You are truly welcome; To talk about it more, were but to say The same word often over: You are welcome. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*Before the House of the Governor.*

*Enter MARC-ANTONIO, carried by two Soldiers; LUCADIA and the Servant following.*

*Serv.* This is the house, sir.

*Marc.* Enter it, I pray you; For I am faint, although I think my wound Be nothing.—Soldiers, leave us now; I thank you.

1 *Sold.* Heaven send you health, sir!

*Serv.* Let me lead you in.

*Marc.* My wound's not in my feet; I shall en-treat 'em, I hope, to bear me so far. [*Exit with the Servant.*]

2 *Sold.* How seriously

These land-men fled, when our general made A shot, as if he had been a warning To call 'em to their hall!

1 *Sold.* I cannot blame 'em:

What a man have they now in the town Able to maintain a tumult, or uphold A matter out of square, if need be? Oh, The quiet hurly-burries that I have seen In this town, when we have fought four hours together,

And not a man amongst us so impertinent Or modest to ask why!

But now the pillars that bare up this blessed Town in that regular debate, and scrambling, Are dead, the more's the pity.

2 *Sold.* Old Ignatio

Lives still.

1 *Sold.* Yes, I know him; he will do Prettily well at a man's liver: But where Is there a man now living in the town That hath a steady hand, and understands Anatomy well? If it come To a particular matter of the lungs, Or the spleen, why, alas! Ignatio is to seek. Are there any such men left as I have known, That would say they would hit you in this place? Is there ever a good artist, Or a member-piercer, or a small-gut-man, Left in the town? Answer me that.

2 *Sold.* 'Mass,

I think there be not.

1 *Sold.* No, I warrant thee.

Come, come; 'tis time we were at the gallees. [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in the same House.*

*Enter* GOVERNOR, EUGENIA, MARC-ANTONIO, PHILIPPO, THEODOSIA, LEOCADIA, and Attendants.

*Gov.* Sir, you may know by what I said already You may command my house; but I must beg Pardon to leave you. If the public business Forced me not from you, I myself should call it Unmannerly; but, good sir, do you give it A milder name. It shall not be an hour Ere I return.

*Marc.* Sir, I was ne'er so poor In my own thoughts, as that I want a means To requite this with.

*Gov.* Sir, within this hour. [Exit.]

*Marc.* Is this the lady that I quarrell'd for? [Apart.]

Oh, Lust, if wounds cannot restrain thy power,  
Let shame! Nor do I feel my hurt at all,  
Nor is it aught; only I was well beaten.  
If I pursue it, all the civil world,  
That ever did imagine the content  
Found in the band of man and wife unbroke,  
The reverence due to households, or the blemish  
That may be stuck upon posterity,  
Will catch me, bind me, burn upon my forehead,  
"This is the wounded stranger, that, received  
For charity into a house, attempted"——  
I will not do it. [Going.]

*Eug.* Sir, how do you now,  
That you walk off?

*Marc.* Worse, madam, than I was;  
But it will over.

*Eug.* Sit, and rest a while!

*Marc.* Where are the surgeons?

*Eug.* Sir, it is their manner,  
When they have seen the wound, especially  
The patient being of worth, to go consult  
(Which they are now at in another room)  
About the dressing.

*Marc.* Madam, I do feel  
Myself not well.

*Theod.* Alas!

*Leoc.* How do you, sir?

*Eug.* Will you drink waters?

*Marc.* No, good madam; 'tis not  
So violent upon me, nor I think  
Any thing dangerous: But yet there are  
Some things that sit so heavy on my conscience,  
That will perplex my mind, and stop my cure;  
So that unless I utter 'em, a scratch,  
Here on my thumb, will kill me.—Gentlemen,  
I pray you leave the room, and come not in  
Yourselves, or any other, till I have  
Open'd myself to this most-honour'd lady!

*Phil.* We will not.

*Theod.* Oh, blessed! he'll discover now  
His love to me.

*Leoc.* Now he will tell the lady  
Our contract.

[Exeunt all but EUGENIA and MARC-ANTONIO.]

*Eug.* I do believe he will confess to me  
The wrong he did a lady in the streets;  
But I forgive him.

*Marc.* Madam, I perceive  
Myself grow worse and worse.

*Eug.* Shall I call back  
Your friends?

*Marc.* Oh, no! but, ere I do impart  
What burthens me so sore, let me entreat you

(For there is no trust in these surgeons)  
To look upon my wound; it is perhaps  
My last request: But tell me truly too,  
(That must be in) how far you do imagine  
It will have power upon me.

*Eug.* Sir, I will.

*Marc.* For Heaven's sake, softly! Oh! I  
must needs lay  
My head down easily, whilst you do it.

*Eug.* Do, sir.—

'Tis but an ordinary blow; a child  
Of mine has had a greater, and been well:  
Are you faint-hearted?

*Marc.* Oh!

*Eug.* Why do you sigh?

There is no danger in the world in this:  
I wonder it should make a man——Sit down.  
What do you mean? why do you kiss my breasts?  
Lift up your head; your wound may well endure it.

*Marc.* Oh, madam, may I not express affection  
(Dying affection too, I fear) to those  
That do me favours, such as this of yours?

*Eug.* If you mean so, 'tis well: But what's the  
Lies on your conscience? [business]

*Marc.* I will tell you, madam.

*Eug.* Tell me, and laugh?

*Marc.* But I will tell you true,  
Though I do laugh: I know as well as you,  
My wound is nothing; nor the power of earth  
Could lay a wound upon me in your presence,  
That I could feel: But I do laugh to think  
How covertly, how far beyond the reach  
Of men, and wise men too, we shall deceive 'em.  
Whilst they imagine I am talking here  
With that short breath I have, ready to swoon  
At every full point; you my ghostly mother  
To hear my sad confession; you and I  
Will on that bed within, prepared for me,  
Debate the matter privately.

*Eug.* Forbear!

Thou wert but now as welcome to this house  
As certain cures to sick men, and just now  
This sudden alteration makes thee look  
Like plagues come to infect it; if thou knew'st  
How loathsome thou wilt be, thou wouldst entreat  
These walls or posts to help thee to a hurt,  
Past thy dissimulation.

*Marc.* Gentle madam,  
Call 'em not in!

*Eug.* I will not yet; this place  
I know to be within the reach of tongues  
And ears; thou canst not force me; therefore hear  
What I will tell thee quickly: Thou art born [me]  
To end some way more disesteemed than this;  
Or, which is worse, to die of this hurt yet.—  
Come, gentlemen!

Enter LEOCADIA.

*Marc.* Good madam!

*Eug.* Gentlemen!

*Leoc.* Madam, how is't? Is Marc-Antonio well?  
Methinks your looks are alter'd, and I see  
A strange distemper in you.

*Eug.* I am wrought  
By that dissembling man, that fellow, worth  
Nothing but kicking.

Enter PHILIPPO and THEODOSIA.

*Leoc.* Gentle madam, speak  
To me alone! let not them understand  
His fault! he will repent it, I dare swear.

*Eug.* I'll tell it you in private.—

*Phil.* Marc-Antonio,

How do you!

*Marc.* Stand further off I pray you;  
Give me some air.

*Theod.* Good brother, will he 'scape?

The surgeons say there is no danger.

*Phil.* 'scape?

No doubt he will.—

*Leoc.* Alas, will he not leave

This trying all?—Madam, I do beseech you  
Let me but speak to him, you and these by,  
And I dare almost promise you to make him  
Shew himself truly sorrowful to you.  
Besides, a story I shall open to you,  
Not put in so good words, but in itself  
So full of chance, that you will easily  
Forgive my tediousness, and be well pleased  
With that so much afflicts me.

*Eug.* Good sir, do.

*Leoc.* And I desire no interruption  
Of speech may trouble me, till I have said  
What I will quickly do.

*Theod.* What will she say?

*Eug.* Come, gentlemen, I pray you lend your  
ears,

And keep your voices.

*Leoc.* Signor Marc-Antonio,

How do you?

*Marc.* Oh, the surgeons!

*Leoc.* Let me tell you,

Who know as well as you, you do dissemble,  
It is no time to do so; leave the thoughts  
Of this vain world, forget your flesh and blood,  
And make your spirit an untroubled way  
To pass to what it ought.

*Marc.* You are not in earnest?  
Why, I can walk, sir, and am well.

*Leoc.* 'Tis true

That you can walk, and do believe you're well:  
It is the nature, as your surgeons say,  
Of these wounds, for a man to go, and talk,  
Nay merrily, till his last hour, his minute:  
For Heaven sake, sir, sit down again!

*Marc.* Alas,

Where are the surgeons?

*Leoc.* Sir, they will not come;  
If they should dress you, you would die, they say,  
Ere one told twenty. Trouble not your mind,  
Keep your head warm, and do not stir your body,  
And you may live an hour.

*Marc.* Oh, Heavens, an hour?

Alas, it is too little to remember  
But half the wrongs that I have done: How short  
Then for contrition, and how least of all  
For satisfaction!

*Leoc.* But you desire  
To satisfy?

*Marc.* Heaven knows, I do!

*Leoc.* Then know

That I am he, or she, or what you will,  
Most wrong'd by you, your Leocadia,  
(I know you must remember me)—

*Marc.* Oh, Heaven!

*Leoc.* That lost her friends, that lost her father's  
house,

That lost her fame in losing of her sex,  
With these strange garments: There is no excuse  
To hinder me; it is within your power  
To give me satisfaction; you have time

Left in this little piece of life to do it:  
Therefore I charge you for your conscience' sake,  
And for our fame, which I would fain have live  
When both of us are dead, to celebrate  
That contract, which you have both seal'd and  
sworn,

Yet ere you die; which must be hastily,  
Heaven knows.

*Marc.* Alas, the sting of conscience  
To death-ward for our faults! Draw nearer all,  
And hear what I, unhappy man, shall say.—  
First, madam, I desire your pardon; next,  
(I feel my spirits fail me!) gentlemen,  
Let me shake hands with you, and let's be friends;  
For I have done wrong upon wrong so thick,  
I know not where, that every man methinks  
Should be mine enemy; forgive me both!  
Lastly, 'tis true (oh, I do feel the power  
Of death seize on me!) that I was contracted  
By seal and oath to Leocadia;

(I must speak fast, because I fear my life  
Will else be shorter than my speech would be)  
But 'tis impossible to satisfy

You, Leocadia, but by repentance,  
Though I can dyingly and boldly say  
I know not your dishonour; yet that was  
Your virtue, and not mine, you know it well:  
But herein lies the impossibility;  
(Oh! Theodosia, Theodosia!)  
I was betroth'd to Theodosia,  
Before I ever saw thee; Heaven forgive me!  
She is my wife this half-hour whilst I live.

*Theod.* That's I, That's I! I'm Theodosia.  
Hear me a little now, who have not suffer'd  
Disgrace at all methinks, since you confess  
What I so long have sought for. Here is with  
me

Philippe too, my brother.

*Marc.* I am glad;

All happiness to him! Come, let me kiss thee,  
Beg pardon of that maid for my offence;  
And let me further, with a dying breath,  
Tell in thine ear the rest of my desires.

[*Whispers THEODOSIA.*]

*Eug.* I am afraid they will all four turn women,  
If we hold longer talk.

*Leoc.* Alas, there is

No hope for me; that's Theodosia,  
And that her brother. I am only sorry  
I was beholding to 'em; I will search  
Over the world, as careless of my fortunes  
As they of me, till I can meet a curse  
To make these almost-killing sorrows worse! [*Exit.*]

*Theod.* Sir, as I live, she lied, only to draw  
A just confession from you, which she bath;  
A happy one for me! Ask of this lady,  
Ask of my brother.

*Eug.* Sir, she did dissemble;

Your wound is nothing.

*Phil.* Leocadia's gone!

[*Exit.*]

*Theod.* Rise up, and stir yourself; 'tis but  
amazement

And your imagination that afflicts you;

Look you, sir, now!

[*He rises.*]

*Marc.* I think 'tis so, indeed.

*Theod.* The surgeons do not come, because they  
swear

It needs no dressing.

*Eug.* You shall talk with 'em  
Within, for your own fancy.

*Marc.* Where's your brother,  
And Leocadia ?

*Eug.* Within, belike.

*Marc.* I feel myself, methinks, as well as ever.

*Eug.* Keep then your mind so too ; I do forgive  
The fault you did to me ; but here is one  
Must not be wrong'd hereafter.

*Marc.* Neither shall she :

When I make jests of oaths again, or make  
My lust play with religion ; when I leave  
To keep true joys for her, and yet within  
Myself true sorrow for my passed deeds ;  
May I want grace when I would fain repent,  
And find a great and sudden punishment !

[*Exeunt.*]

## ACT V.

### SCENE I.—*A Street.*

*Enter PHILIPPO, DIEGO, and INCUBO.*

*Phil.* Where is mine host ? did not he see him  
*Diego.* Not I, i'faith, sir. [neither ?]

*Phil.* Nor the muletter ?

*Inc.* Nay, he's past seeing, unless it be in's sleep,  
By this time ; all his visions were the pots,  
Three hours since, sir.

*Phil.* Which way should she take ?

*Nay,* look you now ! do you all stand still ? Good  
Heaven !

You might have lighted on him. Now, this instant !  
For love's sake, seek him out ! Whoever finds him,  
I will reward his fortune as his diligence.

Get all the town to help, that will be hired ;  
Their pains I'll turn to an annual holiday,

If it shall chance but one bring word of her :  
Pray you, about it !

*Inc.* Her, sir ? who do you mean ?

*Phil.* I had forgot myself ; the page, I meant,  
That came along with us.

*Diego.* He you gave the clothes to ?

*Phil.* I gave the clothes to, rascal ?

*Diego.* Nay, good sir !

*Phil.* Why dost thou mention or upbraid my  
Slave ? [courtcsies,

*Diego.* For your honour, sir.

*Phil.* Wretch ! I was honour'd,  
That she should wear 'em (he, I would say)'s death !  
Go, get and find him out, or never see me.—  
I shall betray my love, ere I possess it.  
Some star direct me, or ill planet strike me ! [*Exit.*]

*Inc.* Best to divide.

*Diego.* I'll this way.

*Inc.* And I this.

*Diego.* I, as you, find him for a ryal !

*Inc.* 'Tis done.

*Diego.* My course is now directly to some pie-  
I know the pages' compass. [house ;

*Inc.* I think rather  
The smock side o' th' town, the surer harbour  
At his years to put in.

*Diego.* If I do find  
The hungry haunt, I take him by the teeth now.

*Inc.* I by the tail ; yet I as you !

*Diego.* No more. [*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE II.—*Another Street.*

*Enter PHILIPPO.*

*Phil.* Dear Leocadia, where canst thou be fled  
Thus, like a spirit, hence ? and in a moment !  
What cloud can hide thee from my following search,  
If yet thou art a body ? Sure she hath not  
Ta'en any house : She did too late leave one

Where all humanity of a place received her,  
And would, if she had stay'd, have help'd to right  
The wrong her fortune did her. Yet she must  
Be enter'd somewhere, or be found ; no street,  
Lane, passage, corner, turn, hath 'scaped enquiry.  
If her despair had ravish'd her to air,  
She could not yet be rarified so,  
But some of us should meet her : Though their eyes  
Perhaps be leaden, and might turn, mine would  
Strike out a lightning for her, and divide  
A mist as thick as ever darkness was,  
Nay, see her through a quarry : They do lie,  
Lie grossly, that say Love is blind ; by him,  
And Heaven, they lie ! he has a sight can pierce  
Through ivory, as clear as it were horn,  
And reach his object.

*Enter INCUBO.*

*Inc.* Sir, he's found, he's found !

*Phil.* Ha ? where ? But reach that happy note  
And let it relish truth, thou art an angel. [again,

*Inc.* He's here ; fast by, sir ; calling for a boat  
To go aboard the gallees.

*Phil.* Where, where ? Hold thee !

[*Gives money, and cri-*

*Inc.* He might ha' kept this now, I had nought  
to shew for't,

If he had had the wit to have gone from's word :  
These direct men, they are no men of fashion ;  
Talk what you will, this is a very smelt. [*Exit.*]

### SCENE III.—*A Room in the House of the Surgeon.*

*Enter LEONARDO, with the Surgeon.*

*Leo.* Upon your art, sir, and your faith to  
assist it,

Shall I believe you then his wound's not mortal ?

*Surg.* Sir, 'tis not worth your question, less your  
fear.

*Leo.* You do restore me, sir ; I pray you accept  
This small remembrance of a father's thanks,  
For so assured a benefit.

*Surg.* Excuse me !

*Leo.* Sir, I can spare it, and must not believe  
But that your fortune may receive't ; except  
You'd ha' me think you live not by your practice.

*Surg.* I crave your pardon, sir ; you teach me  
manners.

*Leo.* I crave your love and friendship ; and  
require,

As I have made now both myself and business  
A portion of your care, you will but bring me,  
Under the person of a call'd assistant,  
To his next opening ; where I may but see him.  
And utter a few words to him in private,

And you will merit me : For I am loth,  
 Since here I have not to appear myself,  
 Or to be known unto the Governor,  
 Or make a tumult of my purpose.

*Surg.* Neither  
 I hope will be your need, sir : I shall bring you  
 Both there, and off again, without the hazard.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*The Harbour.*

*Enter PHILIPPO and LEOCADIA.*

*Phil.* Will you not hear me ?

*Leoc.* I have heard so much  
 Will keep me deaf for ever ! No, Marc-Antonio,  
 After thy sentence, I may hear no more :  
 Thou hast pronounced me dead !

*Phil.* Appeal to Reason :  
 She will relieve you from the power of grief,  
 Which rules but in her absence : Hear me say  
 A sovereign message from her, which in duty,  
 And love to your own safety, you ought hear.  
 Why do you strive so ? whither would you fly ?  
 You cannot wrest yourself away from care,  
 You may from counsel ; you may shift your place,  
 But not your person ; and another clime  
 Makes you no other.

*Leoc.* Oh !

*Phil.* For passion's sake,  
 (Which I do serve, honour, and love in you)  
 If you will sigh, sigh here ; if you would vary  
 A sigh to tears, or outcry, do it here !  
 No shade, no desert, darkness, nor the grave,  
 Shall be more equal to your thoughts than I.  
 Only but hear me speak !

*Leoc.* What would you say ?

*Phil.* That which shall raise your heart, or pull  
 down mine,

Quiet your passion, or provoke mine own ;  
 We must have both one balsam, or one wound.  
 For know, loved fair, since the first providence  
 Made me your rescue, I have read you through,  
 And with a wond'ring pity looked on you ;  
 I have observed the method of your blood,  
 And waited on it even with sympathy  
 Of a like red and paleness in mine own ;  
 I knew which blush was Anger's, which was  
 Love's,

Which was the eye of Sorrow, which of Truth ;  
 And could distinguish honour from disdain  
 In every change ; and you are worth my study.  
 I saw your voluntary misery  
 Sustain'd in travel : A disguised maid,  
 Wearied with seeking, and with finding lost ;  
 Neglected, where you hoped most, or put by ;  
 I saw it, and have laid it to my heart :  
 And though it were my sister which was righted,  
 Yet being by your wrong, I put off nature,  
 Could not be glad, where I was bound to triumph,  
 My care for you so drown'd respect of her ;  
 Nor did I only apprehend your bonds,  
 But studied your release ; and for that day  
 Have I made up a ransom, brought you health,  
 Preservative 'gainst chance, or injury,  
 Please you apply it to the grief ; myself.

*Leoc.* Humh !

*Phil.* Nay, do not think me less than such a cure,  
 Antonio was not ; and, 'tis possible,  
 Philippo may succeed : My blood and house  
 Are as deep-rooted, and as fairly spread,

As Marc-Antonio's ; and in that all seek,  
 Fortune hath given him no precedency :  
 As for our thanks to Nature, I may burn  
 Incense as much as he ; I ever durst  
 Walk with Antonio by the self-same light  
 At any feast, or triumph, and ne'er cared  
 Which side my lady or her woman took  
 In their survey ; I durst have told my tale too,  
 Though his discourse new ended.

*Leoc.* My repulse—

*Phil.* Let not that torture you, which makes me  
 happy ;  
 Nor think that conscience, fair, which is no  
 shame !

'Twas no repulse ; it was your dowry rather :  
 For then methought a thousand graces met  
 To make you lovely, and ten thousand stories  
 Of constant virtue, which you then out-reach'd,  
 In one example did proclaim you rich :  
 Nor do I think you wretched, or disgraced,  
 After this suffering, and do therefore take  
 Advantage of your need ; but rather know  
 You are the charge and business of those powers,  
 Who, like best tutors, do inflict hard tasks  
 Upon great natures, and of noblest hopes.  
 Read trivial lessons, and half lines to slugs ;  
 They that live long, and never feel mischance,  
 Spend more than half their age in ignorance.

*Leoc.* 'Tis well you think so.

*Phil.* You shall think so too ;

You shall, sweet Leocadia, and do so.

*Leoc.* Good sir, no more ! you have too fair  
 a shape

To play so foul a part in as the tempter :  
 Say that I could make peace with Fortune, who,  
 Who should absolve me of my vow yet ? ha ?  
 My contract made ?

*Phil.* Your contract ?

*Leoc.* Yes, my contract :

Am I not his ? his wife ?

*Phil.* Sweet, nothing less.

*Leoc.* I have no name then ?

*Phil.* Truly then, you have not :  
 How can you be his wife, who was before  
 Another's husband ?

*Leoc.* Oh, though he dispense

With his faith given, I cannot with mine.

*Phil.* You do mistake, clear soul ; his pre-  
 contract

Doth annul yours, and you have given no faith  
 That ties you in religion, or humanity ;  
 You rather sin against that greater precept,  
 To covet what's another's ; sweet, you do :  
 Believe me, who dare not urge dishonest things !  
 Remove that scruple therefore, and but take  
 Your dangers now into your judgment's scale,  
 And weigh them with your safeties : Think but  
 whither

Now you can go ; what you can do to live ;  
 How near you ha' barred all ports to your own  
 succour,

Except this one that I here open, love.  
 Should you be left alone, you were a prey  
 To the wild lust of any, who would look  
 Upon this shape like a temptation,  
 And think you want the man you personate ;  
 Would not regard this shift, which love put on  
 As virtue forc'd, but covet it like vice ;  
 So should you live the slander of each sex,  
 And be the child of error and of shame ;

And, which is worse, even Marc-Antony  
 Would be call'd just, to turn a wanderer off,  
 And fame report you worthy his contempt;  
 Where, if you make new choice, and settle here,  
 There is no further tumult in this flood,  
 Each current keeps his course, and all suspicions  
 Shall return honours. Came you forth a maid?  
 Go home a wife: Alone? and in disguise?  
 Go home a waited Leocadia:  
 Go home, and, by the virtue of that charm,  
 Transform all mischiefs, as you are transform'd;  
 Turn your offended father's wrath to wonder,  
 And all his loud grief to a silent welcome;  
 Unfold the riddles you have made. What say you?  
 Now is the time; delay is but despair;  
 If you be chang'd, let a kiss tell me so! [*Kisses her.*  
*Leoc.* I am; but how, I rather feel than know.

*Enter SANCHEO carried, ALPHONSO and Servants.*

*Sanc.* Come, sir; you are welcome now to Bar-  
 Take off my hood. [*celona.*

*Phil.* Who be these? Stay, let's view 'em!

*Alph.* 'Twas a long journey; are you not weary,  
 sir?

*Sanc.* Weary? I could have rid it in mine  
*Leoc.* Alas! [*armour.*

*Phil.* What ail you, dear?

*Leoc.* It is my father.

*Phil.* Your father? which?

*Leoc.* He that is carried: Oh,

Let us make hence!

*Phil.* For love's sake, good my heart!

*Leoc.* Into some house, before he see me.

*Phil.* Dear,

Be not thus frightened.

*Leoc.* Oh, his wrath is tempest.

*Phil.* Sweet, take your spirit to you, and stay.  
 Be't he,

He cannot know you in this habit; and me  
 I'm sure he less knows, for he never saw me.

*Alph.* Ha! who is that? my son Philippo!

*Phil.* Sir!

*Alph.* Why, what make you here? Is this  
 Salamanca?

And that your study? ha?—Nay, stay him too;  
 We'll see him, by his leave. [*They hold them.*

*Serv.* You must not strive, sir.

*Alph.* No, no; come near.

*Sanc.* My daughter? Leocadia?

*Alph.* How, sir! your daughter?

*Sanc.* Yes, sir: and as sure

As that's your son.—Come hither!—What now?  
 run

Out o' your sex? breech'd? Was it not enough  
 At once to leave thy father, and thine honour,  
 Unless thou had'st quit thyself too?

*Phil.* Sir, what fault

She can be urged of, I must take on me

The guilt and punishment.

*Sanc.* You must, sir? How

If you shall not, though you must? I deal not  
 With boys, sir, I: You have a father here  
 Shall do me right.

*Alph.* Thou art not mad, Philippo?

Art thou Marc-Antony, son to Leonardo?

Our business is to them. [*LEOCADIA slips out.*

*Sanc.* No, no, no, no!

I'll ha' the business now, with you, none else.

Pray you let's speak in private.—Carry me to  
 him.—

Your son's the ravisher, sir; and here I find him.  
 I hope you'll give me cause to think you noble,  
 And do me right, with your sword, sir, as becomes  
 One gentleman of honour to another:  
 All this is fair, sir; here's the sea fast by;  
 Upon the sands we will determine.  
 'Tis that I call you to; let's make no days ba't;  
 I'll lead your way.—To the sea-side, rascals!

*Phil.* Sir,

I would beseech your stay; he may not follow  
 you.

*Sanc.* No?—Turn.—I'll kill him here then.—

Slaves, rogues, blocks,

Why do you not bear me to him? Ha! you been  
 Acquainted with my motions, logs, so long,  
 And yet not know to time 'em?

*Phil.* Were you, sir,  
 Not impotent—

*Alph.* Hold you your peace, boy!

*Sanc.* Impotent?

'Death, I'll cut his throat first, and then his fa-  
 ther's.

*Alph.* You must provide you then a sharper  
 razor

Than is your tongue; for I not fear your sword.

*Sanc.* 'Heart, bear me to either of 'em!

*Phil.* Pray, sir, your patience.

*Enter Governor and Attendants.*

*Alph.* My curse light on thee, if thou stay him!

*Phil.* Hold!

*Gov.* Why, what's the matter, gentlemen? what  
 tumult

Is this you raise i' th' street! before my door?

Know you what 'tis to draw a weapon here!

*Sanc.* Yes, and to use it.—Bear me up to him,  
 Thus, at a traitor's heart! [*rogues.*

*Alph.* Truer than thine.

*Gov.* Strike, strike; some of the people disarm  
 Kill 'em if they resist. [*'em;*

*Phil.* Nay, generous sir,

Let not your courtesy turn fury now.

*Gov.* Lay hold upon 'em; take away their wea-  
 I will be worth an answer, ere we part. [*poss.*

*Phil.* It is the Governor, sir.

*Alph.* I yield myself. [*Gives up his sword.*

*Sanc.* My sword? What think'st thou of me?  
 pray thee, tell me.

*Attend.* As of a gentleman.

*Sanc.* No more?

*Attend.* Of worth,  
 And quality.

*Sanc.* An I should quit my sword,

There were small worth or quality in that, friend;

Pray thee learn thou more worth and quality,

Than to demand it.

*Gov.* Force it, I say!

*Attend.* The Governor,

You hear, commands.

*Sanc.* The Governor shall pardon me.

*Phil.* How! Leocadia gone again?

[*Exit PARRINO.*

*Sanc.* He shall, friend,  
 I' th' point of honour, by his leave; so tell him:  
 His person and authority I acknowledge,  
 And do submit me to it; but my sword,  
 He shall excuse me, were he fifteen governors;  
 That and I dwell together, and must yet,  
 Till my hands part, assure him.

*Gov.* I say, force it. [*His sword is taken from him.*

*Sanc.* Stay, hear me! Hast thou ever read Caranza?

Understandest thou honour, noble Governor?

*Gov.* For that we'll have more fit dispute.

*Sanc.* Your name, sir?

*Gov.* You shall know that too, but on colder terms;

Your blood and brain are now too hot to take it.

*Sanc.* Force my sword from me? This is an

*Gov.* Bring 'em away! [affront.

*Sanc.* You'll do me reparation? [Exit.

Enter PHILIPPO.

*Phil.* I have for ever lost her, and am lost, And worthily; my tameness hath undone me! She is gone hence, ashamed of me; yet I seek her: Will she be ever found to me again, Whom she saw stand so poorly, and dare nothing In her defence here, when I should have drawn This sword out, like a meteor, and have shot it In both our parents' eyes, and left 'em blind Unto their impotent angers? Oh, I am worthy, On whom this loss and scorn should light to death; Without the pity that should wish me better, Either alive, or in my epitaph. [Exit.

SCENE V.—A Room in the Governor's House.

Enter LEONARDO and MARC-ANTONIO.

*Leo.* Well, son, your father is too near himself, And hath too much of nature, to put off Any affection that belongs to you: I could have only wish'd you had acquainted Her father, whom it equally concerns, Though you'd presumed on me; it might have An easier gate and path to both our joys: [open'd For though I am none of those flinty fathers, That, when their children do but natural things, Turn rock and offence straight, yet, Marc-Antonio, All are not of my quarry.

*Marc.* 'Tis my fear, sir; And if hereafter I should e'er abuse So great a piety, it were my malice.

Enter Attendants.

*Attend.* We must entreat you, gentlemen, to take Another room; the Governor is coming Here, on some business.

Enter Governor, SANCIO carried, ALPHONSO, and Attendants.

*Marc.* We will give him way.

*Sanc.* I will have right, sir, on you (that believe,) If there be any marshal's court in Spain.

*Gov.* For that, sir, we shall talk.

*Sanc.* Pox! do not slight me, Though I am without a sword.

*Gov.* Keep to your chair, sir.

*Sanc.* Pox! let me fall, and hurl my chair, slaves, at him!

*Gov.* You are the more temper'd man, sir; let me entreat

Of you, the manner how this brawl fell out.

*Alph.* Fell out? I know not how, nor do I care much;

But here we came, sir, to this town together, Both in one business, and one wrong, engaged, To seek one Leonardo, an old Genoese— I ha' said enough; there! would you more?— False father

Of a false son, call'd Marc-Antonio, Who had stole both our daughters; and which fa-Conspiring with his son in treachery, [ther, It seem'd, to fly our satisfaction, Was, as we heard, come private to this town, Here to take ship for Italy.

*Leo.* You heard [Comes forward.

More than was true then, by the fear, or falsehood: And though I thought not to reveal myself (Pardon my manners in't) to you, for some Important reasons; yet, being thus character'd And challenged, know I dare appear, and do, To who dares threaten.

*Marc.* I say he is not worthy The name of man, or any honest preface, That dares report or credit such a slander.

Do you, sir, say it?

*Alph.* Sir, I do say it.

*Gov.* Hold!—

Is this your father, signor Marc-Antonio? You have ill requited me, thus to conceal him From him would honour him, and do him service.

*Leo.* 'Twas not his fault, sir.

Enter EUGENIA.

*Eug.* Where's my lord?

*Gov.* Sweetheart!

*Eug.* Know you these gentlemen? they are all the fathers

Unto our friends.

*Gov.* So it appears, my dove.

*Sanc.* Sir, I say nothing: I do want a sword; And till I have a sword I will say nothing.

*Eug.* Good sir, command these gentlemen their arms;

Entreat 'em as your friends, not as your prisoners. Where be their swords?

*Gov.* Restore each man his weapon.

*Sanc.* It seems thou hast not read Caranza, fel-I must have reparation of honour, [low: As well as this; I find that wounded.

*Gov.* Sir,

I did not know your quality; if I had, 'Tis like I should have done you more respects.

*Sanc.* It is sufficient, by Caranza's rule.

*Eug.* I know it is, sir.

*Sanc.* Have you read Caranza, lady?

*Eug.* If you mean him that writ upon the duel, He was my kinsman.

*Sanc.* Lady, then you know, By the right noble writings of your kinsman, My honour is as dear to me as the king's.

*Eug.* 'Tis very true, sir.

*Sanc.* Therefore I must crave Leave to go on now with my first dependance.

*Eug.* What! ha' you more?

*Gov.* None here, good signor.

*Sanc.* I will refer me to Caranza still.

*Eug.* Nay, love, I pr'ythee let me manage this! With whom is't, sir?

*Sanc.* With that false man Alphonso.

*Eug.* Why, he has the advantage, sir, in legs.

*Sanc.* But I

In truth, and hand, and heart, and a good sword.

*Eug.* But how if he will not stand you, sir?

*Alph.* For that,

Make it no question, lady; I will stick My feet in earth down by him, where he dare.

*Sanc.* Ob, 'would thou wouldst!

*Alph.* I'll do it!

*Sanc.* Let me kiss him.  
I fear thou wilt not yet.  
*Eug.* Why, gentlemen,  
If you'll proceed according to Caranza,  
Methinks an easier way were two good chairs ;  
So you would be content, sir, to be bound,  
'Cause he is lame : I'll fit you with like weapons,  
Pistols and poniards, and even end it, if  
The difference between you be so mortal  
It cannot be ta'en up.

*Sanc.* Ta'en up ? take off

This head first !

*Alph.* Come, bind me in a chair.

[*He is bound down.*]

*Eug.* Yes, do.

*Gov.* What mean you, dove ?

*Eug.* Let me alone ;—

And set 'em at their distance : When you have  
done,

Lend me two poniards ; I'll have pistols ready  
Quickly. [Exit.]

Enter PHILIPPO.

*Phil.* She is not here.—Marc-Antonio,  
Saw you not Leocadia ?

*Marc.* Not I, brother.

*Phil.* Brother, let's speak with you. You were  
false unto her.

*Marc.* I was, but have ask'd pardon : Why do  
you urge it ?

*Phil.* You were not worthy of her !

*Marc.* May be I was not ;

But 'tis not well, you tell me so.

*Phil.* My sister

Is not so fair—

*Marc.* It skills not.

*Phil.* Nor so virtuous.

*Marc.* Yes, she must be as virtuous.

*Phil.* I would fain—

*Marc.* What, brother ?

*Phil.* Strike you.

*Marc.* I shall not bear strokes,  
Though I do these strange words.

*Phil.* Will you not kill me ?

*Marc.* For what, good brother ?

*Phil.* Why, for speaking well  
Of Leocadia.

*Marc.* No, indeed.

*Phil.* Nor ill

Of Theodosia ?

*Marc.* Neither.

*Phil.* Fare you well, then !

Enter EUGENIA, LEOCADIA, THEODOSIA, and SERVANT, with  
two Pistols.

*Eug.* Nay, you shall have as noble seconds too  
As ever duellists had. Give 'em their weapons :  
Now, Saint Iago !

*Sanc.* Are they charged ?

*Eug.* Charged, sir !

I warrant you.

*Alph.* 'Would they were well discharged !

*Sanc.* I like a sword much better, I confess.

*Eug.* Nay, wherefore stay you ? Shall I mend  
your mark ?

Strike one another thorough these ?

*Phil.* My love !

*Alph.* My Theodosia !

*Sanc.* I ha' not the heart.

*Alph.* Nor I.

*Eug.* Why, here is a dependance ended.

Unbind that gentleman.—Come, take here to you  
Your sons and daughters, and be friends ! A feast

Waits you within, is better than your fray.—

Lovers, take you your own ; and all forbear,

Under my roof, either to blush or fear !—

My love, what say you ? could Caranza himself

Carry a business better ?

*Gov.* It is well.

All are content, I hope ; and we well eased,

If they, for whom we have done all this, be pleased.

[Exit.]

# THE LOVERS' PROGRESS.

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

### KING OF FRANCE.

CLEANDER, *Husband to CALISTA.*  
LIDIAN, *Brother to CALISTA, in love with OLINDA.*  
CLARANGE, *Rival to LIDIAN.*  
DORILAUS, *Father to LIDIAN and CALISTA, a merry old Man.*  
LIBANDER, *Friend to CLEANDER, and Lover to CALISTA.*  
ALCIDON, *Friend to LIDIAN.*  
BERONTE, *Brother to CLEANDER.*  
LEMURE, *a noble Courtier.*  
LEON, *a Villain, Lover of CLARINDA.*  
MALFORT, *a foolish Steward of CLEANDER.*

LANCELOT, *Servant to LIBANDER.*  
Friar.

Host's Ghost.  
Chamberlain.  
JASPER, *Servant to DORILAUS.*  
Servants.

CALISTA, *a virtuous Lady, Wife to CLEANDER.*  
OLINDA, *a noble Maid, and rich Heir, Mistress to LIDIAN and CLARANGE.*  
CLARINDA, *a lustful Wench, CALISTA'S Waiting-Woman.*

SCENE,—PARIS, AND THE NEIGHBOURING COUNTRY.

## PROLOGUE.

A STORY, and a known one, long since writ,  
(Truth must take place) and by an able wit !  
(Foul-mouth'd detraction daring not deny  
To give so much to Fletcher's memory ;)  
If so, some may object, why then do you  
Present an old piece to us for a new ?  
Or wherefore will your profest writer be  
(Not taxed of theft before) a plagiarist ?  
To this he answers in his just defence,  
And to maintain to all our innocence,  
Thus much ; though he hath travell'd the same way,  
Demanding, and receiving too the pay

For a new poem, you may find it due,  
He having neither cheated us, nor you :  
He vows, and deeply, that he did not spare  
The utmost of his strengths, and his best care  
In the reviving it ; and though his powers  
Could not, as he desired, in three short hours  
Contract the subject, and much less express  
The changes, and the various passages  
That will be look'd for, you may hear this day  
Some scenes that will confirm it is a play,  
He being ambitious that it should be known,  
What's good was Fletcher's, and what ill his own.

## ACT I.

SCENE I.—PARIS. *A Room in the House of CLEANDER.*

*Enter LEON and MALFORT.*

*Malf.* And, as I told you, sir—

*Leon.* I understand you ;

*Clarinda's* still perverse.

*Malf.* She's worse ; obdurate,  
Flinty, relentless ; my love-passions jeered at,  
My presents scorn'd !

*Leon.* 'Tis strange, a waiting-woman,  
In her condition, apt to yield, should hold out,  
A man of your place, reverend beard and shape,  
Besieging her.

*Malf.* You might add too, my wealth,  
Which she contemns ; five hundred crowns *per annum.* (knows it)

(For which I have ventured hard, my conscience

Not thought upon, though offer'd for a jointure ;  
This chain, which my lord's peasants worship,  
flouted ;

My solemn hum's and ha's, the servants quake at,  
No rhetoric with her ; every hour she hangs out  
Some new flag of defiance to torment me :  
Last Lent my lady call'd me her Poor-John,  
But now I am grown a walking skeleton ;  
You may see through and through me.

*Leon.* Indeed you are  
Much fall'n away.

*Malf.* I am a kind of nothing,  
As she hath made me : Love's a terrible glister,  
And if some cordial of her favours help not,  
I shall, like an Italian, die backward,  
And breathe my last the wrong way.

*Leon.* As I live,  
You have my pity : but this is cold comfort,

And, in a friend, lip-physic ; and, now I think on't,  
I should do more, and will, so you deny not  
Yourself the means of comfort.

*Malf.* I'll be hang'd first :

One dram of't, I beseech you !

*Leon.* You're not jealous  
Of any man's access to her ?

*Malf.* I would not

Receive the dor ; but as a bosom friend  
You shall direct me ; still provided, that  
I understand who is the man, and what  
His purpose that pleads for me.

*Leon.* By all means.

First, for the undertaker, I am he :  
The means that I will practise, thus——

*Malf.* Pray you forward !

*Leon.* You know your lady, chaste Calista, loves

*Malf.* Too well ; that makes her proud. [her.

*Leon.* Nay, give me leave.

This beauteous lady (I may style her so,  
Being the Paragon of France for feature)  
Is not alone contented in herself

To seem and be good, but desires to make  
All such as have dependence on her like her :

For this, Clarinda's liberty's restrain'd,  
And though her kinsman, the gate's shut against

Now if you please to make yourself the door [me :

For my conveyance to her, though you run  
The hazard of a check for't, 'tis no matter.

*Malf.* It being for mine own ends ?

*Leon.* I'll give it o'er,

If that you make the least doubt otherwise.

Studying upon't ? good morrow !

*Malf.* Pray you stay, sir !

You are my friend : yet, as the proverb says,  
" When love puts in, friendship is gone : " Suppose  
You should yourself affect her ?

*Leon.* Do you think

I'll commit incest ! for it is no less,  
She being my cousin-german. Fare you well, sir.

*Malf.* I had forgot that ; for this once, forgive  
Only, to ease the throbbing of my heart, [me.  
(For I do feel strange pangs) instruct me what  
You will say for me.

*Leon.* First, I'll tell her that  
She hath so far besotted you, that you have  
Almost forgot to cast account.

*Malf.* Mere truth, sir.

*Leon.* That of a wise and provident steward, you  
Are turn'd stark ass.

*Malf.* Urge that point home ; I am so.

*Leon.* That you adore the ground she treads  
And kiss her footsteps. [upon,

*Malf.* As I do when I find

Their print i' th' snow.

*Leon.* A loving fool ; I know it,  
By your bloodless frosty lips. Then, having re-  
lated

How much you suffer for her, and how well  
You do deserve it——

*Malf.* How ? to suffer ?

*Leon.* No, sir ;

To have your love return'd——

*Malf.* That's good ; I thank you.

*Leon.* I will deliver her an inventory  
Of your good parts ; as this, your precious nose,  
Dropping affection ; your high forehead, reaching  
Almost to the crown of your head ; your slender  
waist,

And a back not like a thresher's, but a bending

And court-like back, and so forth, for your body.  
But when I touch your mind, (for that must take  
her,

Since your outside promises little) I'll enlarge it,  
Though ne'er so narrow ; as, your arts to thrive,  
Your composition with the cook and butler  
For the coney-skins and chippings ; and half a  
With all the under-officers o' th' house, [share  
In strangers' bounties ; that she shall have all,  
And you as 'twere her bailiff.

*Malf.* As I will be.

*Leon.* As you shall, so I'll promise.—Then your  
qualities ;

As playing on a gittern, or a Jew's trump——

*Malf.* A little too o' th' viol.

*Leon.* Fear you nothing.—

Then singing her asleep with curious catches  
Of your own making ; for, as I have heard,  
You are poetical.

*Malf.* Something given that way :  
Yet my works seldom thrive ; and the main reason  
The poets urge for't is, because I am not  
As poor as they are.

*Leon.* Very likely. Fetch her,  
While I am in the vein.

*Malf.* 'Tis an apt time,  
My lady being at her prayers.

*Leon.* Let her pray on.  
Nay, go ; and if, upon my intercession,  
She do you not some favour, I'll disclaim her.  
I'll ruminate on't the while.

*Malf.* A hundred crowns  
Is your reward.

*Leon.* Without 'em.—Nay, no trifling.

[Exit MALFORT.

That this dull clod of ignorance should know  
How to get money, yet want eyes to see  
How grossly he's abused, and wrought upon !  
When he should make his will, the rogue's turn'd  
rampant,

As he had renew'd his youth. A handsome wench  
Love one a spital whore would run away from ?  
Well, master steward, I will plead for you  
In such a method, as it shall appear  
You are fit to be a property.

Enter MALFORT and CLARINDA.

*Malf.* Yonder he walks,

That knows my worth and value, though you scorn

*Clari.* If my lady know not this—— [it.

*Malf.* I'll answer it.

If you were a nun, I hope your cousin-german  
Might talk with you through a grate ; but you are  
none,

And therefore may come closer : Ne'er hang off ;  
As I live you shall bill ; you may salute as strangers,  
Custom allows it.—Now, now, come upon her  
[To LEON.

With all your oratory, tickle her to the quick,  
As a young advocate should, and leave no virtue  
Of mine unmention'd. I'll stand centinel ;  
Nay, keep the door myself. [Exit.

*Clari.* How have you work'd  
This piece of motley to your ends ?

*Leon.* Of that  
At leisure, mistress. [Kissing.

*Clari.* Lower ; you are too loud ;  
Though the fool be deaf, some of the house may  
hear you.

*Leon.* Suppose they should, I am a gentleman.

And held your kinsman ; under that, I hope,  
I may be free.

*Clari.* I grant it, but with caution ;  
But be not seen to talk with me familiarly,  
But at fit distance ; or not seen at all,  
It were the better : You know my lady's humour ;  
She is all honour, and composed of goodness,  
As she pretends ; and you having no business,  
How jealous may she grow !

*Leon.* I will be ruled :  
But you have promised, and I must enjoy you.

*Clari.* We shall find time for that ; you are too  
hasty :

Make yourself fit, and I shall make occasion ;  
Deliberation makes best in that business,  
And contents every way.

*Leon.* But you must feed  
This foolish steward with some shadow of  
A future favour, that we may preserve him  
To be our instrument.

*Clari.* Hang him !

*Leon.* For my sake, sweet !  
I undertook to speak for him ; any bauble,  
Or slight employment in the way of service,  
Will feed him fat.

*Clari.* Leave him to me.

*Enter MALFORT.*

*Malf.* She comes !  
My lady !

*Clari.* I will satisfy her.

*Malf.* How far  
Have you prevail'd ?

*Leon.* Observe.

*Clari.* Monsieur Malfort,  
I must be brief ; my cousin hath spoke much  
In your behalf, and to give you some proof  
I entertain you as my servant, you  
Shall have the grace—

*Leon.* Upon your knee receive it.

*Clari.* And take it as a special favour from me—  
To tie my shoe.

*Malf.* I am o'erjoy'd.

*Leon.* Good reason.

*Clari.* You may come higher in time.

*Enter CALISTA.*

*Leon.* No more ; the lady !

*Malf.* She frowns.

*Clari.* I thank you for this visit, cousin ;

But, without leave hereafter from my lady,  
I dare not change discourse with you.

*Malf.* Pray you take

Your morning's draught.

*Leon.* I thank you :—Happiness

Attend your honour !

[*Exeunt LEON and MALFORT.*]

*Cal.* Who gave warrant to

This private parle ?

*Clari.* My innocence ; I hope

My conference with a kinsman cannot call  
Your anger on me.

*Cal.* Kinsman ? Let me have  
No more of this, as you desire you may  
Continue mine !

*Clari.* Why, madam, under pardon,  
Suppose him otherwise ; yet, coming in  
A lawful way, it is excusable.

*Cal.* How's this ?

*Clari.* I grant you are made of pureness,  
And that your tenderness of honour holds

The sovereignty o'er your passions : Yet you have  
A noble husband with allow'd embraces  
To quench lascivious fires, should such flame in you,  
As I must ne'er believe. Were I the wife  
Of one that could but zany brave Cleander,  
Even in his least perfections, (excuse  
My o'er bold inference) I should desire  
To meet no other object.

*Cal.* You grow saucy !

Do I look further ?

*Clari.* No, dear madam ; and

It is my wonder, or astonishment rather,  
You could deny the service of Lisander ;  
A man without a rival, one the king  
And kingdom gazes on with admiration,  
For all the excellences a mother could  
Wish in her only son.

*Cal.* Did not mine honour  
And obligation to Cleander, force me  
To be deaf to his complaints ?

*Clari.* 'Tis true ; but yet

Your rigour to command him from your presence  
Argued but small compassion ; the groves  
Witness his grievous sufferings ; your fair name  
Upon the rind of every gentle poplar,  
And amorous myrtle, (trees to Venus sacred,)  
With adoration carved, and kneel'd unto.  
This you, unseen of him, both saw and heard  
Without compassion ; and what received he  
For his true sorrows, but the heavy knowledge  
That twas your peremptory will and pleasure,  
Howe'er my lord lived in him, he should quit  
Your sight and house for ever ?

*Cal.* I confess

I gave him a strong potion to work  
Upon his hot blood, and I hope 'twill cure him :  
Yet I could wish the cause had concern'd others,  
I might have met his sorrows with more pity ;  
At least, have lent some counsel to his miseries.  
Though now, for honour sake, I must forget him,  
And never know the name more of Lisander ;  
Yet in my justice I am bound to grant him,  
Laying his love aside, most truly noble :  
But mention him no more. This instant hour  
My brother Lidian, new return'd from travel,  
And his brave friend Clarangè, long since rivals  
For fair and rich Olinda, are to hear  
Her absolute determination, whom  
She pleases to elect. See all things ready  
To entertain 'em ; and, on my displeasure,  
No more words of Lisander !

*Clari.* She endures

To hear him named by no tongue but her own :  
Howe'er she carries it, I know she loves him.

[*Exit.*]

*Cal.* Hard nature, hard condition of poor wo-  
men,

That, where we are most sued to, we must fly most !  
The trees grow up, and mix together freely,  
The oak not envious of the sailing cedar,  
The lusty vine not jealous of the ivy  
Because she clips the elm ; the flowers shoot up,  
And wantonly kiss one another hourly,  
This blossom glorying in the other's beauty,  
And yet they smell as sweet, and look as lovely :  
But we are tied to grow alone. Oh, honour,  
Thou hard law to our lives, chain to our freedom !  
He that invented thee had many curses.  
How is my soul divided ! Oh, Cleander,  
My best-deserving husband ! Oh, Lisander,

The truest lover that e'er sacrificed  
To Cupid against Hymen! Oh, mine honour,  
A tyrant, yet to be obey'd! and 'tis  
But justice we should thy strict laws endure,  
Since our obedience to thee keeps us pure. [Exit.

SCENE II.—*Another Apartment in the same.*

Enter CLEANDER, LIDIAN, and CLARANGE.

*Cle.* How insupportable the difference  
Of dear friends is, the sorrow that I feel  
For my Lisander's absence (one that stamps  
A reverend print on friendship) does assure me.  
You are rivals for a lady, a fair lady;  
And, in the acquisition of her favours,  
Hazard the cutting of that gordian knot  
From your first childhood to this present hour,  
By all the ties of love and amity fastened.  
I am blest in a wife (Heaven make me thankful!)  
Inferior to none, sans pride I speak it;  
Yet if I were a freeman, and could purchase  
At any rate the certainty to enjoy  
Lisander's conversation while I lived,  
(Forgive me, my Calista, and the sex!)  
I never would seek change.

*Lid.* My lord and brother,  
I dare not blame your choice, Lisander's worth  
Being a mistress to be ever courted;  
Nor shall our equal suit to fair Olinda  
Weaken, but add strength to our true affection,  
With zeal so long continued.

*Clara.* When we know  
Whom she prefers, as she can chuse but one,  
By our so-long-tried friendship we have vowed  
The other shall desist.

*Cle.* 'Tis yet your purpose;  
But how this resolution will hold  
In him that is refused, is not alone  
Doubtful, but dangerous.

Enter MALFOIT.

*Malf.* The rich heir is come, sir.

*Cle.* Madam Olinda?

*Malf.* Yes, sir; and makes choice,  
After some little conference with my lady,  
Of this room to give answer to her suitors.

*Cle.* Already both look pale, between your hopes  
To win the prize, and your despair to lose  
What you contend for.

*Lid.* No, sir; I am armed.

*Clara.* I confident of my interest.

*Cle.* I'll believe you  
When you've endured the test.

Enter CALISTA, OLINDA, and CLARINDA.

*Malf.* Is not your garter  
Untied? You promised that I should grow higher  
In doing you service.

*Clari.* Fall off, or you lose me! [Exit MALFOIT.

*Cle.* Nay, take your place; no Paris now sits  
On the contending goddesses: You are [Judge  
The deity that must make curst, or happy,  
One of your languishing servants.

*Olin.* I thus look  
With equal eyes on both; either deserves  
A fairer fortune than they can in reason  
Hope for from me: From Lidian I expect,  
When I have made him mine, all pleasures that  
The sweetness of his manners, youth, and virtues,  
Can give assurance of: But turning this way

To brave Clarangè, in his face appears  
A kind of majesty which should command,  
Not sue for favour. If the fairest lady  
Of France, set forth with nature's best endowments,  
Nay, should I add a princess of the blood,  
Did now lay claim to either for a husband,  
So vehement my affection is to both,  
My envy at her happiness would kill me.

*Cle.* The strangest love I ever heard!

*Cal.* You can

Enjoy but one.

*Clari.* The more, I say, the merrier. [Aside.

*Olin.* Witness these tears I love both, as I know  
You burn with equal flames, and so affect me;  
Abundance makes me poor; such is the hard  
Condition of my fortune. Be your own judges;  
If I should favour both, 'twill taint my honour,  
And that before my life I must prefer:  
If one I lean to, the other is disvalued;  
You are fiery both, and love will make you warmer.

*Clari.* The warmer still the fitter. You're a fool,  
lady. [Aside.

*Olin.* To what may love, and the devil jealousy,  
spur you,

Is too apparent; my name's called in question;  
Your swords fly out, your angers range at large:  
Then what a murder of my modesty follows!

*Clari.* Take heed of that by any means.—Oh,  
innocent; [Aside.

That will deny a blessing when 'tis offer'd!  
Would I were murder'd so, I would thank my

*Cle.* What pause you on? [modesty.

*Olin.* It is at length resolved.

*Clara.* We are on the rack; uncertain expect  
The greatest torture! [tation

*Lid.* Command what you please,  
And you shall see how willingly we will execute.

*Olin.* Then hear what, for your satisfaction,  
And to preserve your friendship, I resolve  
Against myself; and 'tis not to be alter'd:  
You are both brave gentlemen, I'll still profess it,  
Both noble servants, for whose gentle offers  
The undeserving and the poor Olinda  
Is ever bound; you love both, fair and virtuously:  
'Would I could be so happy to content both!  
Which, since I cannot, take this resolute answer:  
Go from me both contentedly, and he  
That last makes his return, and comes to visit,  
Comes to my bed. You know my will; farewell!  
My heart's too big to utter more.—Come, friend!

*Cal.* I'll wait on you to your coach.

[Exit OLINDA, CALISTA, and CLARINDA.

*Cle.* You both look blank;  
I cannot blame you.

*Lid.* We have our dispatches.

*Clara.* I'll home.

*Lid.* And I'll abroad again: Farewell!

*Clara.* Farewell to ye!

[Exit CLARANGE and LIDIAN severally.

*Cle.* Their blunt departure troubles me: I fear,  
A sudden and a dangerous division  
Of their long love will follow.

Enter CALISTA.

Have you took

Your leave of fair Olinda?

*Cal.* She is gone, sir.

*Cle.* Had you brought news Lisander were re-  
turned too,

I were most happy.

*Cal.* Still upon Lisander?

*Cle.* I know he loves me, as he loves his health ;  
And Heaven knows I love him.

*Cal.* I find it so ;  
For me you have forgot, and what I am to you.

*Cle.* Oh, think not so. If you had lost a sister  
You lock'd all your delights in, it would grieve you ;  
A little you would wander from the fondness  
You owed your husband : I have lost a friend,  
A noble friend ; all that was excellent  
In man, or manking, was contain'd within him.  
That loss, my wife—

*Enter MALFORT.*

*Malf.* Madam, your noble father—  
A fee for my good news !

*Cal.* Why, what of him, sir ?

*Mal.* Is lighted at the door, and longs to see you.

*Cal.* Attend him hither.

*Cle.* Oh, my dear Lisander !  
But I'll be merry. Let's meet him, my Calista.

*Cal.* I hope Lisander's love will now be buried :  
My father will bring joy enough for one month,  
To put him out of his memory.

*Enter DORILAUS : his arm in a Scarf.*

*Dor.* How do you, son ?  
Bless my fair child ! I am come to visit you,  
To see what house you keep ; they say you are  
bountiful ;

I like the noise well, and I come to try it.  
Ne'er a great belly yet ? How have you trifled !  
If I had done so, son, I should have heard on't  
On both sides, by saint Dennis !

*Cle.* You are nobly welcome, sir !  
We have time enough for that.

*Dor.* See how she blushes ;  
'Tis a good sign, you'll mend your fault. How  
My good Calista ? [dost thou,

*Cal.* Well, now I see you, sir ;  
I hope you bring a fruitfulness along with you.

*Dor.* Good luck, I never miss ; I was ever good  
at it :

Your mother groaned for't, wench ; so did some  
But I durst never tell. [other,

*Cal.* How does your arm, sir ?

*Cle.* Have you been let blood of late ?

*Dor.* Against my will, sir.

*Cal.* A fall, dear father ?

*Dor.* No, a gun, dear daughter ;  
Two or three guns ; I have one here in my buttock,  
'T would trouble a surgeon's teeth to pull it out.

*Cal.* Oh, me ! oh, me !

*Dor.* Nay, if you fall to fainting,  
'Tis time for me to trudge : Art such a coward,  
At the mere name of hurt to change thy colour ?  
I have been shot that men might see clean through  
And yet I fainted not. Besides myself, [me,  
Here are an hospital of hurt men for you.

*Enter JAFFER and other Servants, wounded in several places.*

*Cle.* What should this wonder be ?

*Cal.* I am amazed at it.

*Dor.* What think ye of these ? they are every  
one hurt soundly,

Hurt to the proof ; they are through and through,  
I assure ye ;

And that's good game ; they scorn your puling  
scratches.

*Cal.* Who did this, sir ?

*Dor.* Leave crying, and I'll tell you ;

And get your plaisters, and your warm stupes  
ready :

Have you ne'er a shepherd that can tar us over ?

'Twill prove a business else, we are so many.

Coming to see you, I was set upon,

I and my men, as we were singing frolicly ;

Not dreaming of an ambush of base rogues,

Set on i' th' forest, I have forgot the name—

*Cle.* 'Twixt this and Fontainebleau ? in the wild  
forest ?

*Dor.* The same, the same, in that accursed forest,  
Set on by villains, that make boot of all men ;

The peers of France are pillage there. They shot  
at us,

Hurt us, unhorsed us, came to the sword, there  
plied us,

Oppressed us with fresh multitudes, fresh shot  
still ;

Rogues that would hang themselves for a fresh  
doublet,

And for a scarlet cassock kill their fathers !

*Cle.* Lighted you among these ?

*Dor.* Among these murderers  
Our poor bloods were engaged ; yet we struck  
bravely,

And more than once or twice we made them shun  
us,

And shrink their rugged heads ; but we were hurt  
all.

*Cle.* How came you off ? for I even long to hear  
that.

*Dor.* After our prayers made to Heaven to help  
Or to be merciful unto our souls, [us,

So near we were—Alas, poor wench, wipe, wipe !  
See, Heaven sends remedy.

*Cal.* I am glad 'tis come, sir ;  
My heart was even a-bleeding in my body.

*Dor.* A curl'd-hair gentleman stepp'd in, a  
stranger ;

As he rode by, belike he heard our bickering,  
Saw our distresses, drew his sword, and proved  
He came to execute, and not to argue.

Lord, what a light'ning methought flew about him,  
When he once tossed his blade ! In face Adonis,

While peace inhabited between his eye-brows ;  
But when his noble anger stirr'd his mettle,

And blew his fiery parts into a flame,  
Like Pallas, when she sits between two armies,

Viewing with horrid brows their sad events,  
Such then he looked, and as her shield had armed  
him.

*Cal.* This man, sir, were a friend to give an age  
This gentleman I must love naturally ; [for.

Nothing can keep me off. I pray you go on, sir.

*Dor.* I will, for now you please me. This brave  
This bud of Mars, (for yet he is no ripen) [youth,

When once he had drawn blood, and fleshed his  
Fitted his manly metal to his spirit, [sword,

How he bestirred him ! what a lane he made,  
And through their fiery bullets thrust securely,

The hardened villains wond'ring at his confidence !  
Lame as I was, I followed, and admired too,

And stirred, and laid about me with new spirit ;  
My men too with new hearts thrust into action,

And down the rogues went.

*Cle.* I am struck with wonder !

*Dor.* Remember but the story of strong Hector,  
When like to light'ning he broke through his van-  
guard,

How the Greeks frighted ran away by troops,

And trod down troops to save their lives ; so this man

Dispersed these slaves : Had they been more and mightier,

He had come off the greater and more wonder.

*Cle.* Where is the man, good sir, that we may honour him ?

*Cal.* That we may fall in superstition to him.

*Dor.* I know not that ; from me he late departed, But not without that pious care to see safe Me, and my weak men lodged, and dressed. I urged him

First hither, that I might more freely thank him : He told me he had business, craved my pardon, Business of much import.

*Cle.* Know you his name ?

*Dor.* That he denied me too ; a vow had barred him.

*Cal.* In that he was not noble to be nameless. *Dor.* Daughter, you must remember him when And in a noble sort requite his piety ! [I am dead, 'Twas his desire to dedicate this service To your fair thoughts.

*Cal.* He knows me then ?

*Dor.* I named you, And named you mine : I think that's all his know-

*Cle.* No name ? no being ? [I ledge.

*Cal.* Now I am mad to know him ! Saving mine honour, anything I had now, But to enjoy his sight, but his bare picture— Make me his saint ? I must needs honour him. *Jasp.* I know his name.

*Cal.* There's thy reward for't ; speak it.

[Gives a purse.

*Jasp.* His man told me ; but he desired my silence.

*Cal.* Oh, Jasper, speak ! 'tis thy good master's cause too :

We all are bound in gratitude to compel thee.

*Jasp.* Lisander ? yes, I am sure it was Lisander.

*Cal.* Lisander ? 'twas Lisander.

*Cle.* 'Tis Lisander.

Oh, my base thoughts, my wicked ! to make question

This act could be another man's ! 'tis Lisander.— A handsome-timber'd man ?

*Jasp.* Yes.

*Cle.* My Lisander !

Was this friend's absence to be mourned ?

*Cal.* I grant it ;

I'll mourn his going now, and mourn it seriously.

When you weep for him, sir, I'll bear you com-

That so much honour, so much honesty, [pany.

Should be in one man, to do things thus bravely !

Make me his saint ? to me give this brave service ?

What may I do to recompense his goodness ?

I cannot tell.

*Cle.* Come, sir, I know you are sickly ;

So are your men.

*Dor.* I must confess I am weak,

And fitter for a bed than long discourses :

You shall hear to-morrow.—To-morrow—Pro-

*Cle.* Lisander ! [vide surgeons.

*Cal.* What new fire is this ? Lisander ! [Exeunt.

## ACT II.

### SCENE I.—Before the House of CLARANGE.

Enter LISANDER and LANCELOT.

*Lis.* Pr'ythee, good Lancelot, remember that Thy master's life is in thy trust ; and therefore Be very careful.

*Lan.* I will lose mine own, Rather than hazard yours.

*Lis.* Take what disguise You in your own discretion shall think fittest, To keep yourself unknown.

*Lan.* I warrant you ; 'Tis not the first time I have gone invisible : I am as fine a fairy in a business Concerning night-work—

*Lis.* Leave your vanities. With this purse (which delivered, you may spare Your oratory) convey this letter to Calista's woman.

*Lan.* 'Tis a handsome girl ; Mistress Clarinda.

*Lis.* I have made her mine. You know your work.

*Lan.* And if I sweat not in it, At my return discard me.

*Lis.* Oh, Calista ! The fairest, cruellest—

Enter CLARANGE.

*Clara.* So early stirring ? A good day to you !

*Lis.* I was viewing, sir,

The site of your house, and the handsomeness about it :

Believe me it stands healthfully and sweetly.

*Clara.* The house and master of it really Are ever at your service.

*Lis.* I return it :

Now, if you please, go forward in your story Of your dear friend and mistress.

*Clara.* I will tell it, And tell it short, because 'tis breakfast time, And (love's a tedious thing to a quick stomach) You eat not yester-night.

*Lis.* I shall endure, sir.

*Clara.* Myself and (as I then delivered to you.)

A gentleman of noble hope, one Lidian, Both brought up from our infancy together, One company, one friendship, and one exercise Ever affecting, one bed holding us, One grief and one joy parted still between us, More than companions, twins in all our actions, We grew up till we were men, held one heart still : Time call'd us on to arms, we were one soldier, Alike we sought our dangers and our honours, Gloried alike one in another's nobleness :

When arms had made us fit, we were one lover, We loved one woman, loved without division, And wooed a long time with one fair affection ; And she, as it appears, loves us alike too.

At length, considering what our love must grow to

And covet in the end, this one was parted ; Rivals and honours make men stand at distance.

We then wooed with advantage, but were friends  
Saluted fairly, kept the peace of love; [still,  
We could not both enjoy the lady's favour,  
Without some scandal to her reputation;  
We put it to her choice; this was her sentence,  
"To part both from her, and the last returning  
Should be her lord;" we obey'd; and now you  
know it:

And, for my part, (so truly I am touch'd with't)  
I will go far enough, and be the last too,  
Or ne'er return.

*Lis.* A sentence of much cruelty,  
But mild, compared with what's pronounced on me.  
Our loving youth is born to many miseries.—  
What is that Lidian, pray you?

*Clara.* Calista's brother,  
If ever you have heard of that fair lady.

*Lis.* I have seen her, sir.

*Clara.* Then you have seen a wonder.

*Lis.* I do confess. Of what years is this Lidian?

*Clara.* About my years; there is not much be-

*Lis.* I long to know him. [tween us.

*Clara.* 'Tis a virtuous longing:

As many hopes hang on his noble head,  
As blossoms on a bough in May, and sweet ones.

*Lis.* You're a fair story of your friend.

*Clara.* Of truth, sir.—

*Enter a Servant.*

Now, what's the matter?

*Serv.* There is a gentleman

At door would speak with you on private business.

*Clara.* With me?

*Serv.* He says so, and brings haste about him.

*Clara.* Wait on him in. [Exit Servant.

*Lis.* I will retire the while, to the next room. [Exit.

*Clara.* We shall not long disturb you.

*Enter ALCIDON.*

*Alc.* Save you, sir!

*Clara.* The like to you, fair sir! Pray you come near.

*Alc.* Pray you instruct me, for I know you not:  
With monsieur Clarangè I would speak.

*Clara.* I am he, sir:

You are nobly welcome. I wait your business.

*Alc.* This will inform you.

[Gives him a Letter, which he reads.

*Clara.* Will you please to sit down?

He shall command me, sir; I'll wait upon him  
Within this hour.

*Alc.* You are a noble gentleman.

Will't please you bring a friend? we are two of us,  
And pity either, sir, should be unfurnish'd.

*Clara.* I have none now; and the time's set so  
'Twill not be possible. [short,

*Alc.* Do me the honour:

I know you are so full of brave acquaintance,  
And worthy friends, you cannot want a partner;  
I would be loth to stand still, sir. Besides,  
You know the custom and the vantage of it,  
If you comè in alone.

*Clara.* And I must meet it.

*Alc.* Send; we'll defer an hour, let us be equal:  
Games won and lost on equal terms shew fairest.

*Clara.* 'Tis to no purpose to send any whither,  
Unless men be at home by revelation.

So please you breathe a while, when I have done  
with him

You may be exercised too: I'll trouble no man.

VOL. II.

*Enter LISANDER.*

*Lis.* They are very loud.—Now, what's the news?

*Clara.* I must leave you,

Leave you a while; two hours hence I'll return,  
friend.

*Lis.* Why, what's the matter?

*Clara.* A little business.

*Lis.* An't be but a little, you may take me with  
you.

*Clara.* 'Twill be a trouble to you.

*Lis.* No, indeed;

To do you service I account a pleasure.

*Clara.* I must alone.

*Lis.* Why?

*Clara.* 'Tis necessity.

Before you pass the walks, and back again,  
I will be with you.

*Lis.* If it be not unmannerly

To press you, I would go.

*Clara.* I'll tell you true, sir;

This gentleman and I, upon appointment,

Are going to visit a lady.

*Lis.* I am no Capuchin;

Why should not I go?

*Alc.* Take the gentleman;

Come, he may see the gentlewoman too,  
And be most welcome; I do beseech you take him.

*Lis.* By any means; I love to see a gentlewoman,  
A pretty wench too.

*Clara.* Well, sir, we will meet you,  
And at the place. My service to the lady.

*Alc.* I kiss your hand. [Exit.

*Clara.* Pr'ythee read o'er her letter.

*Lis.* [Reading.] "Monsieur,

I know you have consider'd the dark sentence  
Olinda gave us; and that, however she disguised  
it,

It pointed more at our swords' edges than  
Our bodies' banishments: The last must enjoy her!

If we retire, our youths are lost in wandering;

In emulation we shall grow old men and feeble,

(Which is the scorn of love, and rust of honour,)

And so return more fit to wed our sepulchres,

Than the saint we aim at; let us therefore make

Our journey short and our hearts ready, and,

With our swords in our hands, put it to fortune

Which shall be worthy to receive that blessing.

I'll stay you on the mountain, our old hunting-  
place.

This gentleman alone runs the hazard with me:

And so I kiss your hand.

Your servant, Lidian."

Is this your wench? You'll find her a sharp  
mistress.

What have I thrust myself into? Is this that Lidian  
You told me of?

*Clara.* The same.

*Lis.* My lady's brother! [Aside.

No cause to heave my sword against but his?

To save the father yesterday, and this morning

To help to kill the son? This is most courteous;

The only way to make the daughter dote on me!

*Clara.* Why do you muse? would you go off?

*Lis.* No, no;

I must on now.—This will be kindly taken;

No life to sacrifice, but part of hers?—

Do you fight straight?

*Clara.* Yes, presently.

*Lis.* To-morrow, then, [Aside.

The baleful tidings of this day will break out,

ff

And this night's sun will set in blood. I am troubled!  
If I am kill'd, I am happy.

*Clara.* Will you go, friend?

*Lis.* I am ready, sir.—Fortune, thou hast made me monstrous! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Room in CLEANDER'S House.*

*Enter MALFORD and CLARINDA.*

*Malf.* Your cousin, and my true friend, lusty Shall know how you use me. [*Leon,*]

*Clari.* Be more temperate,  
Or I will never use, nor know you more  
I' th' way of a servant: All the house takes notice  
Of your ridiculous foppery; I have no sooner  
Performed my duties in my lady's chamber,  
And she scarce down the stairs, but you appear  
Like my evil spirit to me.

*Malf.* Can the fish live  
Out of the water, or the salamander  
Out of the fire? or I live warm, but in  
The frying-pan of your favour?

*Clari.* Pray you forget  
Your curious comparisons, borrowed from  
The pond and kitchen, and remember what  
My lady's pleasure is for the entertainment  
Of her noble father.

*Malf.* I would learn the art  
Of memory in your table-book.

*Clari.* Very good, sir!  
No more but up and ride? I apprehend  
Your meaning; soft fire makes sweet malt, sir: I'll  
Answer you in a proverb.

*Malf.* But one kiss from  
Thy honey lip!

*Clari.* You fight too high; my hand is  
A fair ascent from my foot.—His slaving kisses  
Spoil me more gloves—Enough for once; you'll  
With too much grace. [*surfeit*]

*Malf.* Have you no employment for me?

*Clari.* Yes, yes; go send for Leon, and convey  
Into the private arbour; from his mouth [*him*]  
I hear your praises with more faith.

*Malf.* I am gone.  
Yet one thing ere I go; there's at the door  
The rarest fortune-teller—he hath told me  
The strangest things! he knows you are my mis-  
tress,

And under seal delivered how many children  
I shall beget on you; pray you give him hearing,  
He'll make it good to you.

*Clari.* A cunning man  
Of your own making! howsoe'er, I'll hear him  
At your entreaty.

*Malf.* Now I perceive you love me.  
At my entreaty!—Come in, friend: Remember  
To speak as I directed.

*Enter LANCELOT like a Fortune-teller, with a Purse and two Letters in it.*

He knows his lesson,  
And the right way to please her: This it is  
To have a head-piece! [*Exit.*]

*Clari.* 'Tis said you can tell  
Fortunes to come.

*Lan.* Yes, mistress, and what's past:  
Un-glove your hand. By this straight line I see  
You have lain crooked.

*Clari.* How! lain crooked?

*Lan.* Yes;  
And in that posture played at the old game,  
(Nobody hears me, and I'll be no biab)  
And at it lost your maidenhead.

*Clari.* A shrewd fellow!  
'Tis truth, but not to be confessed.—In this  
Your palmistry deceives you. Something else, sir.

*Lan.* You're a great woman with your lady, and  
Acquainted with her counsels.

*Clari.* Still more strange!  
*Lan.* There is a noble knight, Lisander, loves  
Whom she regards not; and the destinies, [*her.*]  
With whom I am familiar, have delivered  
That by your means alone he must enjoy her.  
Your hand again! Yes, yes, you have already  
Promised him your assistance, and, what's more,  
Tasted his bounty; for which, from the sky  
There are two hundred crowns dropp'd in a purse:  
Look back, you'll find it true. Nay, open it;  
'Tis good gold, I assure you.

*Clari.* How! two letters?  
The first indorsed to me! this to my lady?  
Subscribed Lisander.

*Lan.* And the fortune-teller  
His servant Lancelot.

*Clari.* How had I lost my eyes,  
That I could not know thee! Not a word o' th' loss  
Of my virginity!

*Lan.* Nor who I am.  
*Clari.* I'll use all speedy means for your dispatch  
With a welcome answer; but till you receive it  
Continue thus disguised. Monsieur Malford  
(You know the way to humour him) shall provide  
A lodging for you, and good entertainment;  
Nay, since we trade both one way, thou shalt have  
Some feeling with me: take that.

*Lan.* Bountiful wench,  
Mayst thou ne'er want employment!

*Clari.* Nor such pay, boy! [*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A hilly Country.*

*Enter severally, LIDIAN and ALCIDON, LEANDER, and CLARINDA.*

*Lid.* You are welcome.

*Alc.* Let us do our office first,  
And then make choice of a new piece of ground  
To try our fortunes.

*Lis.* All's fair here.

*Alc.* And here:  
Their swords are equal.

*Lis.* If there be any oddsIn mine, we will exchange.

*Alc.* We'll talk of that  
When we are further off. Farewell!

*Lis.* Farewell, friend! [*Exeunt LEANDER and ALCIDON*]

*Lid.* Come, let us not be idle!

*Clara.* I will find you  
Employment, fear not.

*Lid.* You know, sir, the cause  
That brings us hither.

*Clara.* There needs no more discouraging;  
No time nor place for repetition now.

*Lid.* Let our swords argue; and I wish, *Clara*,  
The proud *Olinda* saw us.

*Clara.* 'Would she did!  
Whatever estimation she holds of me,  
She should behold me like a man fight for her.

*Lid.* 'Tis nobly said. Set on. Love and my fortune. [*They fight.*]

*Clara.* The same for me! Come home, brave Lidian!

'Twas manly thrust: This token to the lady!

[*Wounds him.*]  
You have it, sir; deliver it. Take breath;  
I see you bleed apace; you shall have fair play.

*Enter LISANDER.*

*Lis.* You must lie there a while; I cannot help you.

*Lid.* Nay, then my fortune's gone; I know I must die:

Yet dearly will I sell my love. Come on both,  
And use your fortunes; I expect no favour;  
Weak as I am, my confidence shall meet you!

*Clara.* Yield up your cause, and live.

*Lid.* What, dost thou hold me  
A recreant, that prefers life before credit?  
Though I bleed hard, my honour finds no issue;  
That's constant to my heart.

*Clara.* Have at your life then!

*Lis.* Hold, or I'll turn, and bend my sword  
against you; [*man,*]

My cause, Clarangé, too. View this brave gentleman  
That yet may live to kill you; he stands nobly,  
And has as great a promise of the day  
As you can tis unto yourself; he's ready;  
His sword as sharp: View him with that remem-  
That you delivered him to me, Clarangé, [*brance*  
And with those eyes; that clearness will become  
you:

View him, as you reported him; survey him;  
Fix on your friendship, sir. I know you are noble,  
And step but inward to your old affection,  
Examine but that soul grew to your bosom,  
And try then if your sword will bite; it cannot,  
The edge will turn again, ashamed and blunted.—  
Lidian, you are the pattern of fair friendship,  
Exampl'd for your love, and imitated;

The temple of true hearts, stored with affections,  
For sweetness of your spirit made a saint:  
Can you decline this nobleness to anger?  
To mortal anger? 'gainst the man you love most?  
Have you the name of virtuous, not the nature?

*Lid.* I will sit down.

*Clara.* And I'll sit by you, Lidian.

*Lis.* And I'll go on. Can Heaven be pleased  
with these things?

To see two hearts that have been twined together,  
Married in friendship, to the world two wonders,  
Of one growth, of one nourishment, one health,  
Thus mortally divorced for one weak woman?  
Can Love be pleased? Love is a gentle spirit;  
The wind that blows the April flowers not softer;  
She's drawn with doves to shew her peacefulness;  
Lions and bloody pards are Mars's servants.

Would you serve Love? do it with humbleness,  
Without a noise, with still prayers, and soft mur-  
Upon her altars offer your obedience, [*lurs;*  
And not your brawls; she's won with tears, not  
That fire you kindle to her deity, [*terrors:*  
Is only grateful when it's blown with sighs,  
And holy incense flung with white-hand innocence;  
You wound her now; you are too superstitious:  
No sacrifice of blood or death she longs for.

*Lid.* Came he from Heaven?

*Clara.* He tells us truth, good Lidian.

*Lis.* That part of noble love which is most sweet,

And gives eternal being to fair beauty,  
Honour, ye hack a-pieces with your swords;  
And that ye fight to crown ye kill, fair credit!

*Clara.* Thus we embrace; no more fight, but all  
friendship!

And where Love pleases to bestow his benefits,  
Let us not argue.

*Lid.* Nay, brave sir, come in too,  
You may love also, and may hope; if you do,  
And not rewarded for't, there is no justice.  
Farewell, friend! here let's part upon our pil-  
grimage:

It must be so, Cupid draws on our sorrows,  
And where the lot lights—

*Clara.* I shall count it happiness.  
Farewell, dear friend!

*Lis.* First, let's relieve the gentleman  
That lies hurt in your cause, and bring him off,  
And take some care for your hurts; then I'll part  
A third unfortunate, and willing wanderer. [*too,*  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE IV.—*Paris.*—A Room in CLEANDER'S  
House.

*Enter OLINDA and CALISTA.*

*Olin.* My fears foresaw 'twould come to this.

*Cal.* I would

Your sentence had been milder.

*Olin.* 'Tis past help now.

*Cal.* I share in your despair, and yet my hopes  
Have not quite left me, since all possible means  
Are practised to prevent the mischief following  
Their mortal meeting: My lord is coasted one way;  
My father, though his hurts forbade his travel,  
Hath took another; my brother-in-law Beronte,  
A third; and every minute we must look for  
The certain knowledge, which we must endure  
With that calm patience Heaven shall please to  
lend us.

*Enter DORILAUS and CLEANDER, severally.*

*Dor.* Dead both?

*Cle.* Such is the rumour, and 'tis general.

*Olin.* I hear my passing-bell.

*Cal.* I am in a fever.

*Cle.* They say, their seconds too; but what they  
are

Is not known yet; some worthy fellows certain.

*Dor.* Where had you knowledge?

*Cle.* Of the country people;

'Tis spoken every where.

*Dor.* I heard it so too;

And 'tis so common, I do half believe it.—

You have lost a brother, wench; he loved you well,  
And might have lived to have done his country  
service;

But he is gone. Thou fell'st untimely, Lidian,  
But by a valiant hand, that's some small comfort,  
And took'st him with thee too; thou lov'dst brave  
company.

Weeping will do no good: You lost a servant,  
He might have lived to have been your master,  
But you feared that. [*lady;*

*Olin.* Good sir, be tender to me;

The news is bad enough, you need not press it:  
I loved him well, I loved 'em both.

*Dor.* It seems so.

How many more have you to love so, lady?

They were both fools to fight for such a fiddle!

Certain there was a dearth of noble anger,  
When a slight woman was thought worth a quarrel.

*Olin.* Pray you think nobler.

*Dor.* I'll tell thee what I think ; the plague,  
war, famine,  
Nay, put in dice and drunkenness, (and those  
You'll grant are pretty helps) kill not so many  
(I mean so many noble) as your loves do,  
Rather your lewdness. I crave your mercy, women !  
Be not offended, if I anger ye :  
I am sure ye have touched me deep. I came to be  
merry,  
And with my children ; but to see one ruin'd  
By this fell accident—

*Enter BERONTE and ALCIDON ; CLARINDA following.*  
Are they all dead ?

If they be, speak.

*Cle.* What news ?

*Ber.* What dead ? Ye pose me ;  
I understand you not.

*Cle.* My brother Lidian,  
Clarangè, and their seconds.

*Ber.* Here is one of 'em ;  
And sure this gentleman's alive.

*Alc.* I hope so ;

So is your son, sir ; so is brave Clarangè :  
They fought indeed, and they were hurt sufficiently ;  
We were all hurt ; that bred the general rumour ;  
But friends again all, and like friends we parted.

*Cle.* Heard you of Lisander ?

*Ber.* Yes, and miss'd him narrowly ;  
He was one o' th' combatants, fought with this  
gentleman,  
Second against your brother ; by his wisdom  
(For certainly good fortune follows him)  
All was made peace. I'll tell you the rest at dinner,  
For we are hungry.

*Alc.* I, before I eat,  
Must pay a vow I am sworn to. My life, madam,  
Was at Lisander's mercy, I live by it :  
And, for the noble favour, he desired me  
To kiss your fair hand for him, offering  
This second service as a sacrifice  
At the altar of your virtues.

*Dor.* Come, joy on all sides !  
Heaven will not suffer honest men to perish.

*Cle.* Be proud of such a friend.

*Dor.* Forgive me, madam ;  
It was a grief might have concerned you near too.

*Cle.* No work of excellence but still Lisander ?  
Go thy ways, worthy !

*Olin.* We'll be merry too.

Were I to speak again, I would be wiser.

*Cal.* Too much of this rare cordial makes me  
However, I obey you. [sick ;

[*Exit all but CALISTA and CLARINDA.*

*Clari.* Now or never  
Is an apt time to move her.—Madam !

*Cal.* Who's that ?

*Clari.* Your servant : I would speak with your  
*Cal.* Why dost thou look about ? [ladyship.

*Clari.* I have private business  
That none must hear but you. *Lisander*—

*Cal.* Where ?

*Clari.* Nay, he's not here, but would entreat  
this favour ;

Some of your balsam from your own hand given,  
For he's much hurt, and that he thinks would cure

*Cal.* He shall have all, my prayers too. [him.

*Clari.* But conceive me,  
It must be from yourself immediately :  
'Pity so brave a gentleman should perish !  
He is superstitious, and he holds your hand  
Of infinite power. I would not urge this, madam,  
But only in a man's extremes, to help him.

*Cal.* Let him come,  
Good wench ! 'tis that I wish ; I am happy in't :  
My husband his true friend, my noble father,  
The fair Olinda, all desire to see him ;  
He shall have many hands.

*Clari.* That he desires not,  
Nor eyes, but yours, to look upon his miseries ;  
For then he thinks 'twould be no perfect cure. ma-  
He would come private. [dam :

*Cal.* How can that be here ?

I shall do wrong unto all those that honour him,  
Besides my credit.

*Clari.* Dare you not trust a hurt man ?  
Nor strain a courtesy to save a gentleman ?  
To save his life, that has saved all your family ?  
A man that comes, like a poor mortified pilgrim,  
Only to beg a blessing, and depart again ?  
He would but see you ; that he thinks would cure  
him :

But since you find fit reasons to the contrary,  
And that it cannot stand with your clear honour,  
(Though you best know how well he has deserved  
of you)

I'll send him word back (though I grieve to do it,  
Grieve at my soul, for certainly 'twill kill him)  
What your will is.

*Cal.* Stay ! I will think upon't.

Where is he, wench ?

*Clari.* If you desire to see him,  
Let not that trouble you, he shall be with you.  
And in that time that no man shall suspect you :  
Your honour, madam, is in your own free keeping :  
Your care in me, in him all honesty ;  
If you desire him not, let him pass by you,  
And all this business reckon but a dream !

*Cal.* Go in, and counsel me ; I would fain see  
And willingly comfort him. [him.

*Clari.* 'Tis in your power ;  
And, if you dare trust me, you shall do it safely.  
Read that, [Giving a Letter.] and let that tell you  
how he honours you. [Errest.

## ACT III.

### SCENE I.—A Hall in the same House.

*Enter CLARINDA and LEON.*

*Leon.* This happy night— [Kisses her.

*Clari.* Preserve this eagerness  
Till we meet nearer ; there is something done  
Will give us opportunity.

*Leon.* Witty girl ! the plot ?

*Clari.* You shall hear that at leisure.  
The whole house reels with joy at the report  
Of Lidian's safety, and that joy increased  
From their affection to the brave Lisander,  
In being made the happy instrument to compound  
The bloody difference.

*Leon.* They will hear shortly that  
Will turn their mirth to mourning: He was then  
The principal means to save two lives; but, since,  
There are two fall'n, and by his single hand,  
For which his life must answer, if the king,  
Whose arm is long, can reach him.

*Clari.* We have now  
No spare time to hear stories: Take this key;  
'Twill make your passage to the banqueting-house  
In the garden free.

*Leon.* You will not fail to come?

*Clari.* For mine own sake, ne'er doubt it.—Now  
for Lisander! [Exit LEON.]

*Enter DORILAUS, CLEANDER, and Servants with Lights.*

*Dor.* To bed, to bed! 'tis very late.

*Cle.* To bed all!

I have drank a health too much.

*Dor.* You'll sleep the better;

My usual physic that way.

*Cle.* Where's your mistress?

*Clari.* She is above, but very ill and aguish;  
The late fright of her brother has much troubled  
She would entreat to lie alone. [her:]

*Cle.* Her pleasure.

*Dor.* Commend my love to her, and my pray'rs  
for her health:

I'll see her ere I go. [Exit all but CLARINDA.]

*Clari.* All good rest to ye!—

Now to my watch for Lisander! when he's fur-  
nish'd,

For mine own friend! Since I stand sentinel,  
I love to laugh in the evenings too; and may,  
The privilege of my place will warrant it. [Exit.]

SCENE II.—Before the Garden.

*Enter LISANDER and LANCSLOT.*

*Lis.* You have done well hitherto. Where are  
we now?

*Lan.* Not far from the house, I hear by th'  
owls; there are

Many of your Welch falconers about it.

Here were a night to choose to run away with  
Another man's wife, and do the feat!

*Lis.* Peace, knave;

The house is here before us, and some may hear us.  
The candles are all out.

*Lan.* But one i' th' parlour;

I see it simper hither. Pray come this way.

*Lis.* Step to the garden-door, and feel an't be  
open.

*Lan.* I am going; luck deliver me from the  
saw-pits,

Or I'm buried quick! I hear a dog;

No, 'tis a cricket. Ha! here's a cuckold buried;  
Take heed of his horns, sir. Here's the door; 'tis  
*Clari.* [At the Door.] Who's there? [open.]

*Lis.* A friend.

*Clari.* Sir! Lisander!

*Lis.* I.

*Clari.* You are welcome; follow me, and make  
no noise.

*Lis.* Go to your horse, and keep your watch  
with care, sirrah,

And be sure you sleep not.

[Exit LISANDER and CLARINDA.]

*Lan.* Send me out the dairy-maid,

To play at trump with me, and keep me waking.

My fellow horse and I now must discourse,  
Like two learn'd almanack-makers, of the stars,  
And tell what a plentiful year 'twill prove of  
drunkards.

If I had but a pottle of sack, like a sharp prickle,  
To knock my nose against when I am nodding,  
I should sing like a nightingale; but I must  
Keep watch without it. I am apt to dance;  
Good Fortune, guide me from the fairies' circles!

[Exit.]

SCENE III. A Bed-Room in the House.

*Enter CLARINDA, (with a Taper,) and LISANDER. CA-  
LISTA sitting behind a Curtain.*

*Clari.* Come near! I'll leave you now; draw  
but that curtain,  
And have your wish.—Now, Leon, I am for  
thee:

We that are servants must make use of stol'n hours,  
And be glad of snatch'd occasions. [Exit.]

*Lis.* She's asleep; [Draws the Curtain.]

Fierce Love hath closed his lights, (I may look on  
her)

Within her eyes he has lock'd the Graces up;  
I may behold and live. How sweet she breathes!  
The orient morning, breaking out in odours,  
Is not so full of perfumes as her breath is;  
She is the abstract of all excellence,  
And scorns a parallel.

*Cal.* Who's there?

*Lis.* Your servant,

[Kneels.]

Your most obedient slave, adored lady,  
That comes but to behold those eyes again,  
And pay some vows I have to sacred beauty,  
And so pass by: I am blind as ignorance,  
And know not where I wander, how I live,  
Till I receive from their bright influence  
Light to direct me. For devotion's sake,  
(You are the saint I tread these holy steps to,  
And holy saints are all relenting sweetness)  
Be not enraged, nor be not angry with me;  
The greatest attribute of Heaven is mercy,  
And 'tis the crown of Justice, and the glory,  
Where it may kill with right, to save with pity.

*Cal.* Why do you kneel? I know you come to  
mock me,

To upbraid me with the benefits you have given  
Which are too many, and too mighty, sir, [me,  
For my return; and I confess 'tis justice,  
That for my cruelty you should despise me;  
And I expect, however you are calm now,  
(A foil you strive to set your cause upon)  
It will break out: Calista is unworthy,  
Coy, proud, disdainful. (I acknowledge all)  
Colder of comfort than the frozen north is,  
And more a stranger to Lisander's worth,  
His youth and faith, than it becomes her gratitude;  
I blush to grant it: Yet take this along,  
(A sovereign medicine to allay displeasure,  
May be, an argument to bring me off too)  
She's married, and she's chaste; how sweet that  
How it perfumes all air 'tis spoken in! [sounds!  
Oh, dear Lisander, would you break this union?

*Lis.* No; I adore it: Let me kiss your hand,  
And seal the fair faith of a gentleman on it!

*Cal.* You are truly valiant: Would it not afflict  
you

To have the horrid name of coward touch you?  
Such is the whore to me.

*Lis.* I nobly thank you :  
And may I be the same when I dishonour you.  
This I may do again. *[Kissing her hand.]*

*Cal.* You may, and worthily ;  
Such comforts maids may grant with modesty,  
And neither make her poor, nor wrong her bounty.  
Noble Lisander, how fond now am I of you !  
I heard you were hurt.

*Lis.* You dare not heal me, lady ?  
I am hurt here. How sweetly now she blushes !  
Excellent objects kill our sight ; she blinds me :  
The roses in the pride of May shew pale to her.  
Oh, tyrant Custom, and, oh, coward Honour !  
How ye compel me to put on mine own chains !  
May I not kiss you now in superstition ?  
For you appear a thing that I would kneel to :  
Let me err that way ! *[Kisses her.]*

*Cal.* You shall err for once ;  
I have a kind of noble pity on you.  
Among your manly sufferings, make this most,  
To err no further in desire ; for then, sir,  
You add unto the gratuities I owe you ;  
And after death, your dear friend's soul shall bless

*Lis.* I am wond'rous honest. *[you.]*

*Cal.* I dare try. *[Kiss.]*

*Lis.* I have tasted  
A blessedness too great for dull mortality :  
Once more, and let me die !

*Cal.* I dare not murder :  
How will maids curse me, if I kill with kisses,  
And young men fly the embraces of fair virgins !  
Come, pray sit down ; but let's talk temperately.

*Lis.* Is my dear friend a-bed ?

*Cal.* Yes, and asleep,  
Secure asleep : 'Tis midnight too, Lisander ;  
Speak not so loud.

*Lis.* You see I am a statue ;  
I could not stand else as I had eaten ice,  
Or took into my blood a drowsy poison,  
And Nature's noblest, brightest flame burn in me.  
Midnight ? and I stand quietly to behold so ?  
The alarm rung, and I sleep like a coward ?  
I am worn away ; my faith, and dull obedience,  
Like crutches, carry my decayed body  
Down to the grave ; I have no youth within me.  
Yet happily you love too ?

*Cal.* Love with honour.

*Lis.* Honour ? what's that ? 'tis but a specious  
We should not prize too high. *[title]*

*Cal.* Dearer than life.

*Lis.* The value of it is as time has made it,  
And time and custom have too far insulted :  
We are no gods, to be always tied to strictness ;  
'Tis a presumption to shew too like 'em :  
March but an hour or two under love's ensigns !  
We have examples of great memories—

*Cal.* But foul ones too, that greatness cannot  
cover !

That wife that by example sins, sins double,  
And pulls the curtain open to her shame too.  
Methinks, to enjoy you thus—

*Lis.* 'Tis no joy, lady :

A longing bride, if she stop here, would cry ;  
The bridegroom too, and with just cause, curse  
But yield a little, be one hour a woman, *[Hymen.]*  
(I do not speak this to compel you, lady)  
And give your will but motion, let it stir,  
But in the taste of that weak fears call evil ;  
Try it to understand it, (we'll do nothing)  
You'll never come to know pure good else.

*Cal.* Fy, sir !

*Lis.* I have found a way ; let's slip into this  
As innocents, that know not what we did ; [error  
As we were dreaming both, let us embrace ;  
The sin is none of ours then, but our fancies—  
What have I said ? what blasphemy to honour ?  
Oh, my base thoughts ! Pray you take this, and  
My villain thoughts ! *[shoot me.]*

*[Offering her a Pistol.]*

*Cal.* I weep your miseries,  
And 'would to Heaven—What noise ? *[Noise within.]*

*Lis.* It comes on louder.  
Kill me, and save yourself ; save your fair honour,  
And lay the fault on me ; let my life perish,  
My base lascivious life ! Shoot quickly, lady !

*Cal.* Not for the world. Retire behind the  
hangings,  
And there stand close.—My husband ! close, Li-  
sander ! *[He retires.]*

*Enter CLEANDER with a Taper.*

*Cle.* Dearest, are you well ?

*Cal.* Oh, my sad heart !  
My head, my head !

*Cle.* Alas, poor soul ! what do you  
Out of your bed ! you take cold, my Calista.  
How do you ?

*Cal.* Not so well, sir, to lie by you :  
My brother's fright—

*Cle.* I had a frightful dream too,  
A very frightful dream, my best Calista :  
Methought there came a dragon to your chamber,  
A furious dragon, wife ; I yet shake at it.  
Are all things well ?

*Lis.* *[From behind the Hangings.]* Shall I  
*Cal.* No.—All well, sir. *[shoot him ?]*  
'Twas but your care of me, your loving care,  
Which always watches.

*Cle.* And methought he came  
As if he had risen thus out of his den,  
As I do from these hangings—

*Lis.* Dead ?

*Cal.* Hold, good sir !

*Cle.* And forced you in his arms thus.

*Cal.* 'Twas but fancy .

That troubled you ; here's nothing to disturb me.  
Good sir, to rest again ; and I'm now drowsy,  
And will to bed. Make no noise, dear husband,  
But let me sleep ; before you can call anybody  
I am a-bed.

*Cle.* This, and sweet rest dwell with you !

*[Kisses her, and exit.]*

*Cal.* Come out again ; and, as you love, Lisander,  
Make haste away ! You see his mind is troubled :  
Do you know the door you came in at ?

*Lis.* Well, sweet lady.

*Cal.* And can you hit it readily ?

*Lis.* I warrant you.

And must I go ? must here end all my happiness,  
Here in a dream, as if it had no substance ?

*Cal.* For this time, friend, or here begin our  
We are both miserable. *[ruins ;]*

*Lis.* This is some comfort  
In my afflictions, they are so fall already,  
They can find no increase.

*Cal.* Dear, speak no more !

*Lis.* You must be silent, then.

*Cal.* Farewell, Lisander,  
Thou joy of man, farewell !

*Lis.* Farewell, bright lady,  
Honour of woman-kind, a heavenly blessing !  
*Cal.* Be ever honest !  
*Lis.* I will be a dog else !  
The virtues of your mind I'll make my library,  
In which I'll study the celestial beauty :  
Your constancy, my armour that I'll fight in :  
And on my sword your chastity shall sit,  
Terror to rebel blood.  
*Cal.* Once more, farewell ! [Noise within.  
Oh, that my modesty could hold you still, sir !  
He comes again.  
*Lis.* Heaven keep my hand from murder,  
Murder of him I love !  
*Cal.* Away, dear friend,  
Down to the garden-stairs ; that way, Lisander !  
We are betrayed else.  
*Lis.* Honour guard the innocent ! [Exit.

*Enter CLEANDER.*

*Cle.* Still up ! I feared your health.  
*Cal.* [Aside.] He has missed him happily.—  
I am going now ; I have done my meditations,  
My heart's almost at peace.  
*Cle.* To my warm bed then !  
*Cal.* I will ; pray you lead.

[A Pistol shot within.

*Cle.* A pistol shot i' th' house ?  
At these hours ? Sure some thief, some murderer !  
Rise, ho ! rise all ! I am betray'd.  
*Cal.* Oh, Fortune ! [Aside.  
Oh, giddy thing ! He has met some opposition,  
And killed ! I am confounded, lost for ever !

*Enter DORILAUS.*

*Dor.* Now, what's the matter ?  
*Cle.* Thieves, my noble father,  
Villains and rogues.  
*Dor.* Indeed, I heard a pistol :  
Let's search about.

*Enter MALFORT, CLARINDA, and Servants.*

*Malf.* To bed again ; they are gone, sir,  
(I will not bid you thank my valour for't)  
Gone at the garden-door ; there were a dozen,  
And bravely armed ; I saw 'em.  
*Clari.* I am glad,  
Glad at the heart.  
*Serv.* One shot at me, and missed me.  
*Malf.* No, 'twas at me ; the bullet flew close by  
Close by my ear : Another had a huge sword, [me,  
Flourished it thus, but at the point I met him :  
But the rogue taking me to be your lordship,  
(As sure your name is terrible, and we  
Not much unlike i' th' dark) roared out aloud,  
" It is the kill-cow Dorilaus ! " and away  
They ran as they had frown.—Now you must love  
Or fear me for my courage, wench. [me,

[Aside to CLARINDA.

*Clari.* Oh, rogue !  
Oh, lying rogue !—Lisander stumbled, madam,  
At the stairs' head, and in the fall the shot went  
'Was gone before they rose. [off ;  
*Cal.* I thank Heaven for't !  
*Clari.* I was frighted too ; it spoiled my game  
with Leon. [Aside.  
*Cle.* You must sit up ; an they had come to your  
chamber,  
What pranks would they have played ?—How came  
the door open ?

*Malf.* I heard 'em when they forced it ; up I  
rose,  
Took Durindana in my hand, and like  
Orlando issued forth.  
*Clari.* I know you are valiant.  
*Cle.* To bed again,  
And be you henceforth provident ! At sun-rising  
We must part for a while.  
*Dor.* When you're a-bed,  
Take leave of her ; there 'twill be worth the taking,  
Here 'tis but a cold ceremony. Ere long  
We'll find Lisander, or we have ill fortune.  
*Cle.* Lock all the doors fast.  
*Malf.* Though they all stood open,  
My name writ on the door, they dare not enter !  
[Exeunt.

◆

SCENE IV.—*The Country. Before a Monastery.*

*Enter CLARANCE, FRIAR, with a Letter and a Novice.*

*Clara.* Turned hermit ?  
*Friar.* Yes, and a devout one too ;  
I heard him preach.  
*Clara.* That lessens my belief ;  
For though I grant my Lidian a scholar,  
As far as fits a gentleman, he hath studied  
Humanity, and in that he is a master,  
Civility of manners, courtship, arms,  
But never aimed at, as I could perceive,  
The deep points of divinity.  
*Friar.* That confirms his  
Devotion to be real, no way tainted  
With ostentation or hypocrisy,  
The cankers of religion ; his sermon  
So full of gravity, and with such sweetness  
Delivered, that it drew the admiration  
Of all the hearers on him ; his own letters  
To you, which witness he will leave the world,  
And these to fair Olinda, his late mistress,  
In which he hath, with all the moving language  
That ever expressed rhetoric, solicited  
The lady to forget him, and make you  
Blessed in her embraces, may remove  
All scrupulous doubts.  
*Clara.* It strikes a sadness in me !  
I know not what to think of't.  
*Friar.* Ere he entered  
His solitary cell, he penned a ditty,  
His long and last farewell to love and women,  
So feelingly, that I confess, however  
It stands not with my order to be taken  
With such poetical raptures, I was moved,  
And strangely, with it.  
*Clara.* Have you the copy ?  
*Friar.* Yes, sir :  
My Novice too can sing it if you please  
To give him hearing.  
*Clara.* And it will come timely,  
For I am full of melancholy thoughts,  
Against which I have heard, with reason, music  
To be the speediest cure ; pray you apply it.

A SONG, by the Novice.

Adieu, fond love ! farewell, you wanton Powers !  
I am free again ;  
Thou dull disease of blood and idle hours,  
Bewitching pain,  
Fly to the fools that sigh away their time !  
My nobler love, to Heaven climb,

And there behold beauty still young,  
That time can ne'er corrupt, nor death destroy;  
Immortal sweetness by fair angels sung,  
And honour'd by eternity and joy!  
There lives my love, thither my hopes aspire;  
Fond love declines, this heavenly love grows higher.

*Friar.* How do you approve it?

*Clara.* To its due desert;  
It is a heavenly hymn, no ditty, father;  
It passes through my ears unto my soul,  
And works divinely on it. Give me leave  
A little to consider:—Shall I be  
Out-done in all things? nor good of myself,  
Nor by example? shall my loose hopes still,  
The viands of a fond affection, feed me  
As I were a sensual beast? spiritual food  
Refused by my sick palate? 'tis resolved.—  
How far off, father, doth this new-made hermit  
Make his abode?

*Friar.* Some two days' journey, son.

*Clara.* Having revealed my fair intentions to  
I hope your piety will not deny me [you,  
Your aids to further 'em.

*Friar.* That were against  
A good man's charity.

*Clara.* My first request is,  
You would some time, for reasons I will shew you,  
Defer delivery of Lidian's letters  
To fair Olinda.

*Friar.* Well, sir.

*Clara.* For what follows,  
You shall direct me.—Something I will do,  
A new-born zeal and friendship prompts me to. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*A Country Inn.*

*Enter DOMILAUS, CLEANDER, Chamberlain; a Table,  
Tapers, and Chairs.*

*Cle.* We have supp'd well, friend: Let our beds  
We must be stirring early. [be ready;

*Cham.* They are made, sir.

*Dor.* I cannot sleep yet. Where's the jovial host  
You told me of? 'T has been my custom ever  
To parley with mine host.

*Cle.* He's a good fellow,  
And such a one I know you love to laugh with.—  
Go call your master up.

*Cham.* He cannot come, sir.

*Dor.* Is he a-bed with his wife?

*Cham.* No, certainly.

*Dor.* Or with some other guests?

*Cham.* Neither, an't like you.

*Cle.* Why then he shall come, by your leave, my  
I'll fetch him up myself. [friend;

*Cham.* Indeed you'll fail, sir.

*Dor.* Is he i' th' house?

*Cham.* No, but he's hard by, sir;  
He is fast in's grave; he has been dead these three  
weeks.

*Dor.* Then o' my conscience he will come but  
And discourse worse. [lamely,

*Cle.* Farewell, mine honest host then,  
Mine honest merry host!—Will you to bed yet?

*Dor.* No, not this hour; I pr'y'thee sit and chat  
by me.

*Cle.* Give us a quart of wine then; we'll be  
merry.

*Dor.* A match, my son.—Pray let your wine be  
Or lay it by your master. [living,

*Cham.* It shall be quick, sir. [Exit.

*Dor.* Has not mine host a wife?

*Cle.* A good old woman.

*Dor.* Another coffin! that is not so handsome;  
Your hostesses in inns, should be blithe things;  
Pretty and young, to draw in passengers:  
She'll ne'er fill her beds well, if she be not beau-  
*Cle.* And courteous too. [trous.

*Dor.* Ay, ay; and a good fellow,  
That will mistake sometimes a gentleman  
For her good man.

*Enter Chamberlain with Wine.*

Well done: Here's to Lisander!

*Cle.* My full love meets it.—Make fire in our  
lodgings;

We'll trouble thee no farther.— [Exit Chamberlain.  
To your son!

*Dor.* Put in Clarangè too; off with't. I thank  
you.

This wine drinks merrier still. Oh, for mine host  
Were he alive again, and well disposed, [now!  
I would so claw his pate!

*Cle.* You're a hard drinker.

*Dor.* I love to make mine host drunk; he will  
lie then

The rarest, and the roundest, of his friends,  
His quarrels, and his guests; and they're the best  
bawds too,

Take 'em in that tune.

*Cle.* You know all.

*Dor.* I did, son;

But time and arms have worn me out.

*Cle.* 'Tis late, sir;

I hear none stirring. [A lute is struck within.

*Dor.* Hark! what's that? a lute?

'Tis at the door, I think.

*Cle.* The doors are shut fast.

*Dor.* 'Tis morning; sure, the fiddlers are got up  
To fright men's sleeps. Have we ne'er a piss-pot  
ready?

*Cle.* Now I remember, I've heard mine host  
that's dead

Touch a lute rarely, and as rarely sing too,  
A brave still mean.

*Dor.* I would give a brace of French crowns  
To see him rise and fiddle.

*Cle.* Hark; a song!

A SONG [within.]

'Tis late and cold; stir up the fire;  
Sit close, and draw the table nigher;  
Be merry, and drink wine that's old,  
A hearty medicine 'gainst a cold!  
Your beds of wanton down the best,  
Where you shall tumble to your rest;  
I would wish you wenchas too,  
But I am dead, and cannot do.  
Call for the best the house may ring,  
Sack, white, and claret, let them bring,  
And drink apoc, while breath you have;  
You'll find but cold drink in the grave:  
Plover, partridge, for your dinner,  
And a capon for the sinner,  
You shall find ready when you're up,  
And your horse shall have his sup:  
Welcome, welcome, shall fly round,  
And I shall smile, though under ground.

*Cle.* Now, as I live, it is his voice!

*Dor.* He sings well;  
The devil has a pleasant pipe.

*Cle.* The fellow lied, sure.

*Enter the Hoer's Ghost.*

He is not dead ; he's here. How pale he looks !

*Dor.* Is this he ?

*Cle.* Yes.

*Host.* You are welcome, noble gentlemen !  
My brave old guest, most welcome !

*Cle.* Lying knaves,  
To tell us you were dead. Come, sit down by us.  
We thank you for your song.

*Host.* 'Would 't had been better !

*Dor.* Speak, are you dead ?

*Host.* Yes, indeed am I, gentlemen ;  
I have been dead these three weeks.

*Dor.* Then here's to you,  
To comfort your cold body !

*Cle.* What do you mean ?  
Stand further off.

*Dor.* I will stand nearer to him.  
Shall he come out on's coffin to bear us company,  
And we not bid him welcome ?—Come, mine host,  
Mine honest host, here's to you !

*Host.* Spirits, sir, drink not.

*Cle.* Why do you appear ?

*Host.* To wait upon ye, gentlemen ;  
'T has been my duty living, now my farewell)  
I fear ye are not used accordingly.

*Dor.* I could wish you warmer company, mine  
Howe'er we are used. [host,

*Host.* Next, to entreat a courtesy ;  
And then I go to peace.

*Cle.* Is't in our power ?

*Host.* Yes, and 'tis this ; to see my body buried  
In holy ground, for now I lie unhallow'd,  
By the clerk's fault ; let my new grave be made  
Amongst good fellows, that have died before me,  
And merry hosts of my kind.

*Cle.* It shall be done.

*Dor.* And forty stoops of wine drank at thy  
*Cle.* Do you know our travel ? [funeral.

*Host.* Yes, to seek your friends,  
That in afflictions wander now.

*Cle.* Alas !

*Host.* Seek 'em no farther, but be confident  
They shall return in peace.

*Dor.* There's comfort yet.

*Cle.* Pray you one word more : Is't in your power,  
mine host,

(Answer me softly) some hours before my death,  
To give me warning ?

*Host.* I cannot tell you truly ;  
But if I can, so much alive I loved you,  
I will appear again. Adieu ! [Exit.

*Dor.* Adieu, sir.

*Cle.* I am troubled ; these strange apparitions are  
For the most part fatal.

*Dor.* This, if told, will not  
Find credit. The light breaks apace ; let's lie down,  
And take some little rest, an hour or two,  
Then do mine host's desire, and so return.  
I do believe him.

*Cle.* So do I. To rest, sir ! [Exit.

SCENE VI.—PARIS. A Room in CLEANDER'S  
House.

*Enter CALISTA and CLARINDA.*

*Cal.* Clarinda !

*Clari.* Madam.

*Cal.* Is the house well order'd ?

The doors lock'd to, now in your master's absence ?  
Your care and diligence amongst the servants ?

*Clari.* I am stirring, madam.

*Cal.* So thou art, Clarinda,  
More than thou ought'st, I am sure. Why dost  
*Clari.* I do not blush. [thou blush !

*Cal.* Why dost thou hang thy head, wench ?

*Clari.* Madam, you are deceived, I look upright ;  
I understand you not.—She has spied Leon :  
Shame of his want of caution ! [Aside.

*Cal.* Look on me.

What ! blush again ?

*Clari.* 'Tis more than I know, madam ;  
I have no cause that I find yet.

*Cal.* Examine then.

*Clari.* Your ladyship is set, I think, to shame

*Cal.* Do not deserve't. Who lay with you last  
night ?

What bedfellow had you ! none of the maids came

*Clari.* Madam, they did. [near you.

*Cal.* 'Twas one in your cousin's clothes then,  
And wore a sword ; and sure I keep no Amazons.  
Wench, do not lie ; 'twill but proclaim thee guilty :  
Lies hide our sins like nets ; like perspectives,  
They draw offences nearer still, and greater.

Come, tell the truth.

*Clari.* You are the strangest lady  
To have these doubts of me ! how have I lived,  
And which of all my careful services [madam,  
Deserves these shames ?

*Cal.* Leave facing, 'twill not serve you :  
This impudence becomes thee worse than lying.  
I thought you had lived well, and I was proud  
of't ;

But you are pleased to abuse my thoughts. Who  
was't ?

Honest repentance yet will make the fault less.

*Clari.* Do you compel me ! do you stand so strict  
too ? [Apart.

Nay, then have at you.—I shall rub that sore,  
madam,

Since you provoke me, will but vex your ladyship :  
Let me alone !

*Cal.* I will know.

*Clari.* For your own peace,  
The peace of your own conscience, ask no further :  
Walk in, and let me alone.

*Cal.* No ; I'll know all.

*Clari.* Why, then, I'll tell you : 'Twas a man I  
lay with,

(Never admire ; 'tis easy to be done, madam,  
And usual too) a proper man I lay with,  
(Why should you vex at that ?) young as Lisander,  
And able too ! I grudge not at your pleasure,  
Why should you stir at mine ? I steal none from

*Cal.* And dost thou glory in this sin ? [you.

*Clari.* I am glad on't ;  
To glory in't is for a mighty lady,  
That may command.

*Cal.* Why didst thou name Lisander !

*Clari.* Does it anger you ? does it a little gall  
you ?

I know it does. Why would you urge me, lady ?  
Why would you be so curious to compel me ?

I named Lisander as my precedent,  
The rule I erred by : You love him, I know it ;  
I grudged not at it, but am pleased it is so ;  
And, by my care and diligence, you enjoyed him.  
Shall I for keeping counsel have no comfort ?

Will you have all yourself? engross all pleasure?  
Are you so hard-hearted? Why do you blush now,  
madam!

*Cal.* My anger blushes, not my shame, base woman!

*Clari.* I'll make your shame blush, since you put me to't:

Who lay with you t'other night!

*Cal.* With me, you monster!

*Clari.* Whose sweet embraces circled you? not your husband's.

I wonder you dare touch me in this point, madam?  
Stir her against you in whose hand your life lies?  
More than your life, your honour? What smug Amazon

Was that I brought you? that maid had ne'er a petticoat.

*Cal.* She'll half persuade me anon I am a beast  
And I mistrust myself, though I am honest, [too;  
For giving her the helm.—Thou know'st, Clarinda,  
Even in thy conscience, I was ever virtuous;  
As far from lust in meeting with Lisander,  
As the pure wind in welcoming the morning;  
In all the conversation I had with him,  
As free, and innocent, as yon fair Heaven.  
Didst not thou persuade me too?

*Clari.* Yes, I had reason for't;  
And now you are persuaded, I'll make use on't.

*Cal.* If I had sinned thus, and my youth enticed  
The nobleness and beauty of his person, [me,  
Beside the mighty benefits I am bound to,  
Is this sufficient warrant for thy weakness?  
If I had been a whore, and craved thy counsel  
In the conveyance of my fault, and faithfulness,  
Thy secrecy and truth in hiding of it,  
Is it thy justice to repay me thus?

To be the master sinner to compel me,  
And build thy lust's security on mine honour!

*Clari.* They that love this sin love their security:  
Prevention, madam, is the nail I knock'd at,  
And I have hit it home, and so I'll hold it,  
And you must pardon me, and be silent too,  
And suffer what you see, and suffer patiently;  
I shall do worse else.

*Cal.* Thou canst not touch my credit;  
Truth will not suffer me to be abused thus.

*Clari.* Do not you stick to Truth, she's seldom heard, madam;

A poor weak tongue she has, and that is hoarse too  
With pleading at the bars; none understands her:  
Or, if you had her, what can she say for you?  
Must she not swear he came at midnight to you,  
The door left open, and your husband cozened  
With a feigned sickness?

*Cal.* But, by my soul, I was honest!  
Thou know'st I was honest.

*Clari.* That's all one what I know;  
What I will testify is that shall vex you!  
Trust not a guilty rage with likelihoods,  
And on apparent proof; take heed of that, madam:  
If you were innocent, as it may be you are,  
(I do not know; I leave it to your conscience)  
It were the weakest and the poorest part of you,  
Men being so willing to believe the worst,  
So open-eyed in this age to all infamy,  
To put your fame in this weak bark to the venture.

*Cal.* What do I suffer! Oh, my precious honour,  
Into what box of evils have I lock'd thee!  
Yet, rather than be thus outraved, and by  
My drudge, my footstool, one that sued to be so,  
Perish both life and honour! Devil, thus  
I dare thy worst, defy thee, spit at thee!  
And in my virtuous rage, thus trample on thee!  
Awe me, thy mistress, whore, to be thy bawd?  
Out of my house! proclaim all that thou know'st,  
Or malice can invent; fetch jealousy  
From hell, and like a fury breathe it in  
The bosom of my lord; and to thy utmost  
Blast my fair fame! yet thou shalt feel, with horror  
To thy seared conscience, my truth is built  
On such a firm base, that if e'er it can  
Be forced, or undermined by thy base scandals,  
Heaven keeps no guard on innocence! [Exit.

*Clari.* I am lost,  
In my own hopes forsaken; and must fall  
(The greatest torment to a guilty woman)  
Without revenge. Till I can fashion it,  
I must submit, at least appear as if  
I did repent, and would offend no farther.  
Monsieur Berontè, my lord's brother, is  
Obliged unto me for a private favour;  
'Tis he must mediate for me: But when time  
And opportunity bids me strike, my wreck  
Shall pour itself on her nice chastity  
Like to a torrent; deeds, not words, shall speak  
me! [Exit.

## ACT IV.

## SCENE I.—A Hall in the same House.

*Enter ALCIDON and BERONTÈ, severally.*

*Alc.* You are opportunely met.

*Ber.* Your countenance  
Expresses haste mixed with some fear.

*Alc.* You'll share  
With me in both, as soon as you are made  
Acquainted with the cause: If you love virtue,  
In danger not secure—I have no time  
For circumstance: Instruct me if Lisander  
Be in your brother's house.

*Ber.* Upon my knowledge  
He is not there.

*Alc.* I am glad on't.

*Ber.* Why, good sir?

Without offence I speak it, there's no place  
In which he is more honoured, or more safe,  
Than with his friend Cleander.

*Alc.* In your votes  
I grant it true; but, as it now stands with him,  
I can give reason to make satisfaction  
For what I speak: You cannot but remember  
The ancient difference between Lisander  
And Cloridon, a man in grace at court.

*Ber.* I do; and the foul plot of Cloridon's  
kinsmen

Upon Lisander's life, for a fall given  
To Cloridon 'fore the king, as they encounter'd  
At a solemn tilting.

*Alc.* It is now revenged.

In brief, a challenge was brought to Lisander

By one Chrysanthes; and, as far as valour  
Would give him leave, declined by bold Lisander:  
But peace refused, and braves on braves heaped on  
him,  
Alone he met the opposites, ending the quarrel  
With both their lives.

*Ber.* I am truly sorry for't.

*Alc.* The king, incensed for his favourite's death,  
Hath set a price upon Lisander's head,  
As a reward to any man that brings it,  
Alive or dead: To gain this, every where  
He is pursued and laid for; and, the friendship  
Between him and your noble brother known,  
His house in reason cannot pass unsearch'd;  
And that's the principal cause that drew me hither,  
To hasten his remove, if he had chosen  
This castle for his sanctuary.

*Ber.* 'Twas done nobly,  
And you most welcome. This night pray you take  
A lodging with us; and, at my entreaty,  
Conceal this from my brother: He is grown  
Exceeding sad of late; and the hard fortune  
Of one he values at so high a rate,  
Will much encrease his melancholy.

*Alc.* I am tutored.

Pray you lead the way.

*Ber.* To serve you, I will shew it. [Exit.

SCENE II.—A Room in the same.

*Enter CLEANDER, with a Book.*

*Cle.* Nothing more certain than to die; but when  
Is most uncertain: If so, every hour  
We should prepare us for the journey, which  
Is not to be put off. I must submit  
To the divine decree, not argue it,  
And cheerfully I welcome it: I have  
Disposed of my estate, confessed my sins,  
And have remission from my ghostly father,  
Being at peace too here. The apparition  
Proceeded not from fancy; Dorilaus  
Saw it, and heard it with me; it made answer  
To our demands, and promised, if 'twere not  
Denied to him by Fate, he would forewarn me  
Of my approaching end. I feel no symptom  
Of sickness; yet, I know not how, a dulness  
Invadeth me all over.—Ha!

*Enter the Spirit of the Host.*

*Host.* I come, sir,  
To keep my promise; and, as far as spirits  
Are sensible of sorrow for the living,  
I grieve to be the messenger to tell you,  
Ere many hours pass, you must resolve  
To fill a grave.

*Cle.* And feast the worms?

*Host.* Even so, sir.

*Cle.* I hear it like a man.

*Host.* It well becomes you;  
There's no evading it.

*Cle.* Can you discover  
By whose means I must die?

*Host.* That is denied me:  
But my prediction is too sure: Prepare  
To make your peace with Heaven; so farewell, sir!  
[Exit.

*Cle.* I see no enemy near; and yet I tremble  
Like a pale coward! My sad doom pronounced  
By this aerial voice, as in a glass

Shews me my death in its most dreadful shape.  
What rampire can my human frailty raise  
Against the assault of Fate? I do begin  
To fear myself! my inward strengths forsake me;  
I must call out for help.—Within there! haste,  
And break in, to my rescue!

*Enter DORILAUS, CALISTA, OLINDA, BERTONTE, ALCIDON,  
Servants, and CLARINDA, at several doors.*

*Dor.* Rescue? where?

Shew me your danger.

*Cal.* I will interpose  
My loyal breast between you and all hazard.

*Ber.* Your brother's sword secures you.

*Alc.* A true friend  
Will die in your defence.

*Cle.* I thank ye!

To all my thanks! Encompass'd thus with friends,  
How can I fear? And yet I do! I am wounded,  
Mortally wounded. Nay, it is within;  
I am hurt in my mind. One word—

*Dor.* A thousand.

*Cle.* I shall not live to speak so many to you.

*Dor.* Why? what forbids you?

*Cle.* But even now the spirit  
Of my dead host appeared, and told me, that  
This night I should be with him. Did you not  
meet it?

It went out at that door.

*Dor.* A vain chimera

Of your imagination! Can you think  
Mine Host would not as well have spoke to me  
now,

As he did in the inn? These waking dreams  
Not alone trouble you, but strike a strange  
Distraction in your family. See the tears  
Of my poor daughter, fair Olinda's sadness,  
Your brother's and your friend's grief, servants'  
sorrow.

Good son, bear up; you have many years to live  
A comfort to us all. Let's in to supper.  
Ghosts never walk till after midnight, if  
I may believe my grannam. We will wash  
These thoughts away with wine, 'spite of hob-  
goblins.

*Cle.* You reprehend me justly.—Gentle madam,  
And all the rest forgive me; I'll endeavour  
To be merry with you.

*Dor.* That's well said.

*Ber.* I have  
Procured your pardon. [To CLARINDA.

*Cal.* Once more I receive you  
Into my service; but take special care  
You fall no further.

*Clari.* Never, madam.—Sir, [Apart.  
When you shall find fit time to call me to it,  
I will make good what I have said.

*Ber.* Till when,  
Upon your life be silent!

*Dor.* We will have  
A health unto Lisander.

*Cle.* His name, sir,  
Somewhat revives me; but his sight would cure  
However, let's to supper. [me.

*Olinda.* 'Would Clarange  
And Lidian were here too! as they should be,  
If wishes could prevail.

*Cal.* They are fruitless, madam. [Exit.

SCENE III.—*The Garden. Night.**Enter LEON.*

*Leon.* If that report speak truth, Clarinda is Discharged her lady's service, and what burden I then have drawn upon me is apparent. The crop she reaped from her attendance was Her best revenue, and my principal means Clarinda's bounty, though I laboured hard for't, A younger brother's fortune. Must I now Have sour sauce, after sweetmeats? and be driven To levy half-a-crown a week, besides Clouts, sope, and caudles, for my heir apparent, If she prove, as she swears she is, with child? Such as live this way, find, like me, though wenching

Hath a fair face, there's a dragon in the tail of't, That stings to th' quick. I must sculk here, until I am resolved: How my heart pants, between My hopes and fears! She's come.—

*Enter CLARINDA.*

Are we i' the port?

If not, let's sink together.

*Clari.* Things go better

Than you deserve; you carry things so openly, I must bear every way. I am once more In my lady's grace.

*Leon.* And I in yours?

*Clari.* It may be;

But I have sworn unto my lady never To sin again.

*Leon.* To be surprised. The sin Is in itself excusable; to be taken Is a crime, as the poet writes.

*Clari.* You know my weakness, And that makes you so confident.—You have got A fair sword: Was it not Lisander's?

*Leon.* Yes, wench;

And I grown valiant by the wearing of it: It hath been the death of two. With this Lisander Slew Cloridon and Chrysanthes: I took it up, Broken in the handle, but that is reformed; And now, in my possession, the late master Dares never come to challenge it. This sword, And all the weapons that I have, are ever Devoted to thy service: Shall we bill? I am very gamesome.

*Clari.* I must first dispose of The fool Malfort; he hath smoked you, and is not, But by some new device, to be kept from me; I have it here shall fit him. You know where You must expect me; with all possible silence Get thither.

*Leon.* You will follow?

*Clari.* Will I live?

She that is forfeited to lust must die, That humour being un-fed. Be gone; here comes My champion, in armour. [Exit LEON.]

*Enter MALFORT, in Armour.*

*Malf.* What adventure

I am bound upon I know not, but it is My mistress' pleasure that I should appear thus. I may perhaps be terrible to others, But, as I am, I am sure my shadow frights me: The clashing of my armour, in my ears Sounds like a passing-bell; and my buckler puts me

In mind of a bier; this my broad sword, a pick-axe

To dig my grave. Oh, love! abominable love! What monsters issue from thy dismal den Clarinda's placket, which I must encounter, Or never hope to enter.

*Clari.* Here's a knight-errant!— Monsieur Malfort.

*Malf.* Stand, stand, or I'll fall for you.

*Clari.* Know you not my voice?

*Malf.* Yes, 'twas at that I trembled. But, were my false friend Leon here—

*Clari.* 'Tis he.

*Malf.* Where? where?

*Clari.* He is not come yet.

*Malf.* 'Tis well for him, I am so full of wrath.

*Clari.* Or fear.—This Leon, Howe'er my kinsman, hath abused you grossly. And this night vows to take me hence perforce, And marry me to another: 'Twas for this, Presuming on your love, I did entreat you To put your armour on, that with more safety You might defend me.

*Malf.* And I'll do it bravely.

*Clari.* You must stand here to beat him off, and suffer

No human thing to pass you, though it appear In my lord's shape or lady's: Be not cozen'd With a disguise.

*Malf.* I have been fool'd already, But now I am wise.

*Clari.* You must swear not to stir hence.

*Malf.* Upon these lips.

*Clari.* Nor move until I call you.

*Malf.* I'll grow here rather.

*Clari.* This night's task well ended, I am yours to-morrow. Keep sure guard. [Exit.]

*Malf.* Adieu!

My honeycomb, how sweet thou art, did not A nest of horns keep it! what impossibilities Love makes me undertake! I know myself A natural coward, and, should Leon come, Though this were cannon-proof, I should deliver The wench before he ask'd her. I hear some footing!

'Tis he: Where shall I hide myself? that is My best defence.

*Enter CLEANDER.*

*Cle.* I cannot sleep; strange visions Make this poor life I feared of late to lose, A toy that I grow weary of.

*Malf.* 'Tis Leon.

*Cle.* What's that?

*Malf.* If you are come, sir, for Clarinda, I am glad I have her for you; I resign My interest: You'll find her in her chamber; I did stay up to tell you so.

*Cle.* Clarinda?

And Leon? There is something more in this Than I can stay to ask. [Exit.]

*Malf.* What a cold pickle, And that none of the sweetest, do I find My poor self in!

*Cle.* [Within.] Yield, villain!

*Enter CLARINDA and LEON RUNNING, CLEANDER following.*

*Clari.* 'Tis my lord!

Shift for yourself.

*Leon.* His life shall first make answer

For this intrusion. [Kills CLEANDER.]

*Malf.* I am going away !  
I am gone already ! [Falls in a swoon.]

*Cle.* Heaven take mercy on  
My soul ! too true presaging Host ! [Dies.]

*Clari.* He's dead,  
And this wretch little better. Do you stare  
Upon your handy-work ?

*Leon.* I am amazed.

*Clari.* Get o'er the garden-wall ; fly for your  
life,

But leave your sword behind ; enquire not why :  
I'll fashion something out of it, though I perish,  
Shall make way for revenge.

*Leon.* These are the fruits  
Of lust, Clarinda !

*Clari.* Hence, repenting milk-sop ! [Exit LEON.]  
Now 'tis too late.—Lisander's sword ? Ay, that,  
[Puts the Sword in MALFORT'S Hand.]

That is the base I'll build on. So ; I'll raise  
The house.—Help ! murder ! a most horrid mur-  
Monsieur Beronté ! noble Dorilaus ! [der !]  
All buried in sleep ? Ah me ! a murder !  
A most unheard-of murder !

*Enter DORILAUS, as from bed.*

*Dor.* More lights, knaves !  
Beronté, Alcidon, more lights !

*Enter BERONTE, ALCIDON, and Servants with Lights.*

*Clari.* By this  
I see too much.

*Dor.* My son Cleander bathing  
In his own gore ! The devil to tell truth  
I' th' shape of an Host !

*Ber.* My brother ?

*Malf.* I have been  
I' th' other world, in hell I think, these devils  
With fire-brands in their paws sent to torment  
me

(Though I ne'er did the deed) for my lewd purpose  
To be a whoremaster.

*Dor.* Who's that ?

*Alc.* 'Tis one

In armour. A bloody sword in's hand.

*Dor.* Sans question,  
The murderer.

*Malf.* Who ? I ? you do me wrong :  
I never had the heart to kill a chicken ;  
Nor do I know this sword.

*Alc.* I do, too well.

*Ber.* I have seen Lisander wear it.

*Clari.* This confirms [To BERONTE.]  
What yester-night I whisper'd : Let it work ;  
The circumstance may make it good.

*Malf.* My lord ?  
And I his murderer ?

*Ber.* Drag the villain hence !  
The rack shall force a free confession from him.

*Malf.* I am struck dumb ; you need not stop my  
mouth.

*Ber.* Away with him ! [MALFORT carried off.]

*Enter CALISTA and OLINDA.*

*Cal.* Where is my lord ?  
*Dor.* All that  
Remains of him lies there. Look on this object,  
And then turn marble.

*Cal.* I am so already,  
Made fit to be his monument : But wherefore  
Do you, that have both life and motion left you,

Stand sad spectators of his death, and not  
Bring forth his murderer ?

*Ber.* That lies in you :  
You must, and shall produce him.

*Dor.* She, Beronté ?

*Ber.* None else.

*Dor.* Thou liest ! I'll prove it on thy head,  
Or write it on thy heart. [Draws.]

*Alc.* Forbear ! there is  
Too much blood shed already.

*Ber.* Let not choler

Stifle your judgment ! Many an honest father  
Hath got a wicked daughter. If I prove not,  
With evident proofs, her hand was in the blood  
Of my dear brother, (too good a husband for her)  
Give your revenge the reins, and spur it forward.

*Dor.* In any circumstance but shew her guilty,  
I'll strike the first stroke at her.

*Ber.* Let me ask

A question calmly : Do you know this sword ?  
Have you not seen Lisander often wear it ?

*Dor.* The same with which he rescued me.

*Cal.* I do :

What inference from this to make me guilty ?

*Ber.* Was he not with you in the house to-  
night ?

*Cal.* No, on my soul !

*Ber.* Nor ever heretofore  
In private with you, when you feigned a sickness,  
To keep your husband absent ?

*Cal.* Never, sir,  
To a dishonest end.

*Ber.* Was not this woman  
Your instrument ! Her silence does confess it.  
Here lies Cleander dead, and here the sword  
Of false Lisander, too long covered with  
A mask of seeming truth.

*Dor.* And is this all

The proof you can alledge ? Lisander guilty,  
Or my poor daughter an adulteress ?  
Suppose that she had changed discourse with one  
To whom she owed much more ?

*Cal.* Thou hast thy ends,  
Wicked Clarinda ! [She faints.]

*Olin.* Help ! the lady sinks ;  
Malice hath killed her.

*Dor.* I would have her live,  
Since I dare swear she's innocent. 'Tis no time  
Or place to argue now ; this cause must be  
Decided by the judge ; and, though a father,  
I will deliver her into the hands  
Of justice : If she prove true gold when tried,  
She's mine ; if not, with curses I'll disclaim her.  
Take up your part of sorrow ; mine shall be  
Ready to answer with her life the fact  
That she is charged with.

*Ber.* Sir, I look upon you  
As on a father.

*Dor.* With the eyes of sorrow,  
I see you as a brother. Let your witnesses  
Be ready.

*Ber.* 'Tis my care.

*Alc.* I am for Lidian :  
This accident, no doubt, will draw him from  
His hermit's life.

*Clari.* Things yet go right ; persist, sir.

[Exit with CALISTA, and CLEANDER'S Body.]

SCENE IV.—*A Forest.**Enter LISANDER and LANCELOT.**Lis.* Are the horses dead?*Lan.* Out-right. If you ride at this rate, You must resolve to kill your two a day, And that's a large proportion.*Lis.* Will you please, At any price, and speedily, to get fresh ones? You know my danger, and the penalty That follows it, should I be apprehended: Your duty in obeying my commands Will in a better language speak your service, Than your unnecessary and untimely care Of my expence.*Lan.* I am gone, sir.*[Exit.**Lis.* In this thicket I will expect you. Here yet I have leisure To call myself unto a strict account For my pass'd life, how vainly spent! I would I stood no further guilty! but I have A heavier reckoning to make! This hand, Of late as white as innocence, and unspotted, Now wears a purple colour, dyed in gore; My soul of the same tincture! Purbblind passion, With flattering hopes, would keep me from despair, Pleading I was provoked to't; but my reason, Breaking such thin and weak defences, tells me, I have done a double murder; and for what? Was it in service of the king? his edicts Command the contrary: Or for my country? Her genius, like a mourning mother, answers, In Cloridon and Chrysanthes she hath lost Two hopeful sons, that might have done their parts To guard her from invasion. For what cause then? To keep the opinion of my valour upright I' th' popular breath; a sandy ground to build on! Bought with the king's displeasure, as the breach Of Heaven's decrees, the loss of my true comforts, In parents, kinsmen, friends; as the fruition Of all that I was born to, and that sits Like to a bill of lead here. In my exile, (Never to be repealed, if I escape so) I have cut off all hopes ever to look on*Enter LIDIAN, like a Hermit.*

Divine Calista, from her sight and converse For ever banished!

*Lid.* I should know this voice.

His naming too my sister, whom Lisander Honoured, but in a noble way, assures me That it can be no other: I stand bound To comfort any man I find distressed; But to aid him that saved my life, religion, And thankfulness, commands! and it may be High providence for this good end hath brought him

Into my solitary walk.—Lisander!  
Noble Lisander!*Lis.* Whatsoe'er thou art, That honourable attribute thou giv'st me, I can pretend no right to. Come not near me; I am infectious; the sanctity Of thy profession (for thou appear'st A reverend hermit) if thou fly not from me, As from the plague, or leprosy, cannot keep thee From being polluted.*Lid.* With good counsel, sir, And holy prayers to boot, I may cure you, Though both ways so infected. You look wildly,

(Peace to your conscience!) sir, and stare upon me, As if you never saw me: Hath my habit Altered my face so much, that yet you know not Your servant Lidian?

*Lis.* I am amazed!

So young and so religious?

*Lid.* I purpose

(Heaven make me thankful for't!) to leave the world:

I have made some trial of my strengths in this My solitary life; and yet I find not A faintness to go on.

*Lis.* Above belief!

Do you inhabit here?

*Lid.* Mine own free choice, sir:

I live here poorly, but contentedly, Because I find enough to feed my fortunes; Indeed too much: These wild fields are my gardens, The crystal rivers they afford their waters, And grudge not their sweet streams to quench afflictions;

The hollow rocks their beds, which, though they are hard,

(The emblems of a doting lover's fortune)

Yet they are quiet; and the weary slumbers The eyes catch there, softer than beds of down, friend:

The birds my bell to call me to devotions; My book the story of my wandering life, In which I find more hours due to repentance Than time hath told me yet.

*Lis.* Answer me truly.*Lid.* I will do that without a conjuration.*Lis.* I' th' depth of meditation, do you not Sometimes think of Olinda?*Lid.* I endeavour

To raze her from my memory, as I wish You would do the whole sex; for know, Lisander, The greatest curse brave man can labour under, Is the strong witchcraft of a woman's eyes. Where I find men, I preach this doctrine to 'em: As you're a scholar, knowledge make your mistress, The hidden beauties of the Heavens your study; There shall you find fit wonder for your faith, And for your eye inimitable objects; As you're a profess'd soldier, court your honour; Though she be stern, she's honest, a brave mistress: The greater danger you oppose to win her, She shews the sweeter, and rewards the nobler; Woman's best loves to hers mere shadows be, For after death she weds your memory. These are my contemplations.

*Lis.* Heavenly ones;

And in a young man more remarkable. But wherefore do I envy, and not tread in This blessed track? Here's in the heart no falsehood

To a vowed friend, no quarrels seconded With challenges, which, answered in defence Of the word *reputation*, murder follows. A man may here repent his sins, and though His hand, like mine, be stained in blood, it may be With penitence and true contrition washed off; You have proved it, Lidian?*Lid.* And you'll find it true, If you persevere.*Lis.* Here then ends my flight, And here the fury of the king shall find me Prepared for Heaven, if I am marked to die For that I truly grieve for.

*Enter Friar, and CLARANGÉ, in a Friar's habit.*

*Friar.* Keep yourself  
Conceal'd; I am instruct'd.

*Clara.* How the sight  
Of my dear friend confirms me!

*Lis.* What are these?

*Lid.* Two reverend friars; one I know.

*Friar.* To you  
This journey is devoted.

*Lid.* Welcome, father!

*Friar.* I know your resolution so well grounded,  
And your adieu unto the world so constant,  
That though I am the unwilling messenger  
Of a strange accident to try your temper,  
It cannot shake you. You had once a friend,  
A noble friend, Clarangé.

*Lid.* And have still,  
I hope, good father.

*Friar.* Your false hopes deceive you;  
He's dead.

*Lis.* Clarangé dead?

*Friar.* I buried him.

Some said he died of melancholy, some of love,  
And of that fondness perish'd.

*Lid.* Oh, Clarangé!

*Clara.* Hast thou so much brave nature, noble  
So tenderly to love thy rival's memory? [*Lidian,*  
The bold Lisander weeps too. *Liside.*]

*Friar.* I expected

That you would bear this better.

*Lid.* I am a man, sir,  
And, my great loss weigh'd duly——

*Friar.* His last words were,  
After confession, "Live long, dear Lidian,  
Possess'd of all thy wishes!" And of me  
He did desire, bathing my hand with tears,  
That with my best care I should seek and find you,  
And from his dying mouth prevail so with you,  
That you a while should leave your hermit's strict-  
And on his monument pay a tear or two, [*ness,*  
To witness how you loved him.

*Lid.* Oh, my heart!

To witness how I loved him? Would he had not  
Led me unto his grave, but sacrific'd  
His sorrows upon mine! He was my friend,  
My noble friend; I will bewail his ashes.  
His fortunes and poor mine were born together,  
And I will weep 'em both: I will kneel by him,  
And on his hallowed earth do my last duties.  
I'll gather all the pride of spring to deck him;  
Woodbines shall grow upon his honoured grave,  
And, as they prosper, clasp to shew our friendship,  
And, when they wither, I'll die too.

*Clara.* Who would not

Desire to die, to be bewailed thus nobly?

*Friar.* There is a legacy he hath bequeath'd you;  
But of what value I must not discover,  
Until those rites and pious ceremonies  
Are duly tendered.

*Lid.* I am too full of sorrow  
To be inquisitive.

*Lis.* To think of his,  
I do forget mine own woes.

*Enter ALCIDON.*

*Alc.* [*Entering.*] Graze thy fill, now  
Thou hast done thy business.—Ha! who have we  
here?

Lisander? Lidian? and two reverend friars?  
What a strange scene of sorrow is expressed

In different postures, in their looks and station!  
A common painter eyeing these, to help  
His dull invention, might draw to the life  
The living sons of Priam, as they stood  
On the pale walls of Troy, when Hector fell  
Under Achilles' spear. I come too late;  
My horse, though good and strong, moved like a  
tortoise:

Ill news had wings, and hath got here before me.  
All Pythagoreans? not a word?

*Lid.* Oh, Alcidon!  
Deep rivers with soft murmurs glide along,  
The shallow roar. Clarangé!

*Lis.* Cloridon!  
Chrysanthes! Spare my grief, and apprehend  
What I should speak.

*Alc.* Their fates I have long since  
For your sake mourn'd: Clarangé's death (for so  
Your silence doth confirm) till now I heard not:  
Are these the bounds that are prescribed unto  
The swelling seas of sorrow?

*Lis.* The bounds, Alcidon?  
Can all the winds of mischief from all quarters,  
Euphrates, Ganges, Tigris, Volga, Po,  
Paying at once their tribute to this ocean,  
Make it swell higher? I am a murderer,  
Banished, proscribed: Is there aught else that can  
Be added to it?

*Lid.* I have lost a friend,  
Prized dearer than my being, and he dead,  
My miseries at the height condemn the worst  
Of Fortune's malice.

*Alc.* How our human weakness,  
Grown desperate from small disasters, makes us  
Imagine them a period to our sorrows,  
When the first syllable of greater woes  
Is not yet written!

*Lid.* How?

*Lis.* Speak it at large:  
Since grief must break my heart, I am ambitious  
It should be exquisite.

*Alc.* It must be told;  
Yet, ere you hear it, with all care put on  
The surest armour, anvil'd in the shop  
Of passive Fortitude. The good Cleander,  
Your friend, is murdered.

*Lis.* 'Tis a terrible pang,  
And yet it will not do; I live yet. Act not  
The torturer's part; if that there be a blow  
Beyond this, give it, and at once dispatch me.

*Alc.* Your sword, dyed in his heart-blood, was  
found near him:

Your private conference at midnight urg'd  
With fair Calista; which by her, whose pure truth  
Would never learn to tell a lie, being granted,  
She by enraged Beronte is accus'd  
Of murder and adultery, and you  
(However I dare swear it false) concluded  
Her principal agent.

*Lid.* Wave upon wave rolls o'er me!  
My sister! my dear sister!

*Clara.* Hold, dear heart!

*Friar.* Tear open his doublet.

*Lis.* Is this wound too narrow  
For my life to get out at? Bring me to  
A cannon loaded, and some pitying friend  
Give fire unto it, while I nail my breast  
Unto his thund'ring mouth, that in the instant  
I may be piece-meal torn, and blown so far  
As not one joint of my dismember'd limbs

May ever be, by search of man, found out.  
Cleander! Yet why name I him! However  
His fall deserved an earthquake, if compared  
With what true honour in Calista suffers,  
Is of no moment. My good angel, keep me  
From blasphemy, and strike me dumb, before,  
I' th' agony of my spirit, I do accuse  
The powers above, for their unjust permission  
Of virtue, innocent virtue, to be branded  
With the least vicious mark!

*Clara.* I never saw  
A man so far transported.

*Alc.* Give it way;  
'Tis now no time to stop it.

*Enter LANCLOT.*

*Lan.* Sir, I have bought  
Fresh horses; and, as you respect your life,  
Speedily back 'em; the archers of the king's  
guard  
Are every where in quest of you.

*Lis.* My life? [*Strikes LANCLOT.*]  
Perish all such with thee that wish it longer!  
Let it but clear Calista's innocence,  
And Nestor's age to mine was youth. I'll fly  
To meet the rage of my incensed king,  
And wish his favourite's ghost appeared in flames,  
To urge him to revenge. Let all the tortures  
That tyranny e'er found out circle me,  
Provided justice set Calista free! [*Exit.*]  
*Alc.* I'll follow him.

[*Exit ALCIDON and LANCLOT.*]

*Lid.* I am rooted here.  
*Friar.* Remember  
Your dear friend's last request, your sister's des-  
With the aids that you may lend her. [*Exit.*]

*Lid.* Pray you support me;  
My legs deny their office. [*Exit.*]

*Clara.* I grow still  
Further engaged unto his matchless virtues;  
And I am dead indeed, until I pay  
The debt I owe him in a noble way. [*Exit.*]

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—PARIS. *An Apartment in CLEAN-  
DER'S House.*

*Enter DORILAUS and Servant.*

*Dor.* Thou hast him safe?  
*Serv.* As fast as locks can make him:  
He must break through three doors, and cut the  
Of ten tall fellows, if that he escape us. [*throats*]  
Besides, as far as I can apprehend,  
He hath no such intention, for his looks  
Are full of penitence.

*Dor.* Trust not a knave's looks;  
They are like a whore's oaths. How does my poor  
Brook her restraint? [*daughter*]

*Serv.* With such a resolution  
As well becomes your lordship's child. [*Knock within.*]

*Dor.* Who's that?

*Enter LEMURE.*

*Serv.* Monsieur Lemure.  
*Dor.* This is a special favour,  
And may stand an example in the court  
For courtesy: It is the client's duty  
To wait upon his patron; you prevent me,  
That am your humble suitor.

*Lem.* My near place  
About the king, though it swell others, cannot  
Make me forget your worth and age, which may  
Challenge much more respect: And I am sorry  
That my endeavours for you have not met with  
The good success I wished; I moved the king  
With my best advantage, both of time and place,  
I' th' favour of your daughter.

*Dor.* How do you find  
His majesty affected?

*Lem.* Not to be  
Swayed from the rigour of the law; yet so far  
The rarity of the cause hath won upon him,  
That he resolves to have in his own person  
The hearing of it; her trial will be noble,  
And to my utmost strength, where I may serve her,  
My aids shall not be wanting.

*Dor.* I am your servant.

*Lem.* One word more: If you love Lisander's  
Advise him, as he tenders it, to keep [*life,*]  
Out of the way; if he be apprehended,  
This city cannot ransom him. So, good morrow. [*Exit.*]

*Dor.* All happiness attend you! Go thy ways:  
Thou hast a clear and noble soul. For thy sake,  
I'll hold that man mine enemy, who dares matter  
The court is not the sphere where Virtue moves,  
Humanity and nobleness waiting on her.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Two gentlemen (but what they are I know  
Their faces are so muffled) press to see you, [not.  
And will not be denied.

*Dor.* What'er they are,  
I am too old to fear.

*Serv.* They need no usher;  
They make their own way.

*Enter LISANDER and ALCIDON.*

*Dor.* Take you yours.—Lisander! [*Exit Servant.*]  
My joy to see you, and my sorrow for  
The danger you are in, contend so here,  
(Though different passions, nay, opposed in nature)  
I know not which to entertain.

*Lis.* Your hate  
Should win the victory from both: With justice  
You may look on me as a homicide,  
A man whose life is forfeited to the law;  
But if, howe'er I stand accused, in thought  
I sinned against Cleander's life, or live  
Guilty of the dishonour of your daughter,  
May all the miseries that can fall on man  
Here, or hereafter, circle me!

*Dor.* To me  
This protestation's useless; I embrace you,  
As the preserver of my life, the man  
To whom my son owes his; with life, his honour:  
And howsoever your affection  
To my unhappy daughter, though it were  
(For I have sifted her) in a noble way,  
Hath printed some taint on her fame, and brought  
Her life in question; yet I would not purchase

The wish'd recovery of her reputation,  
With strong assurance of her innocence  
Before the king her judge, with certain loss  
Of my Lisander, for whose life, if found,  
There's no redemption: My excess of love  
(Though to enjoy you one short day would lengthen  
My life a dozen years) boldly commands me,  
Upon my knees, which yet were never bent  
But to the king and Heaven, to entreat you  
To fly hence with all possible speed, and leave  
Calista to her fortune.

*Lis.* Oh, blessed saints!  
Forsake her in affliction! Can you  
Be so unnatural to your own blood,  
To one so well deserving, as to value  
My safety before hers? Shall innocence  
In her be branded, and my guilt escape  
Unpunished? Does she suffer so much for me,  
For me unworthy, and shall I decline  
Eating the bitter bread of banishment,  
The course of justice, to draw out a life?  
A life? I style it false, a living death,  
Which, being uncompelled laid down, will clear her,  
And write her name a-new in the fair legend  
Of the best women. Seek not to dissuade me!  
I will not, like a careless poet, spoil  
The last act of my play, till now applauded,  
By giving the world just cause to say I feared  
Death more than loss of honour.

*Dor.* But suppose  
Heaven hath designed some other saving means  
For her deliverance?

*Lis.* Other means? That is  
A mischief above all I have groaned under:  
Shall any other pay my debt, while I  
Write myself bankrupt? or Calista owe  
The least beholdingness for that which she,  
On all the bonds of gratitude I have seal'd to,  
May challenge from me to be freely tender'd?  
Avert it, mercy! I'll go to my grave  
Without the curses of my creditors;  
I'll vindicate her fair name, and so cancel  
My obligation to her: To the king,  
To whom I stand accountable for the loss  
Of two of his loved subjects' lives, I'll offer  
Mine own in satisfaction; to Heaven  
I'll pay my true repentance; to the times  
Present and future, I'll be registered  
A memorable precedent to admonish  
Others, however valiant, not to trust  
To their abilities to dare and do;  
And much less for the airy words of honour,  
And false-stamp'd reputation, to shake off  
The chains of their religion and allegiance,  
The principal means appointed to prefer  
Societies and kingdoms.

[Exit.]

*Dor.* Let's not leave him;  
His mind's much troubled.

*Alc.* Were your daughter free,  
(Since from her dangers his distraction rises)  
His cause is not so desperate for the slaughter  
Of Cloridon and Chrysanthes, but it may  
Find passage to the mercy of the king,  
The motives urged in his defence, that forced him  
To act that bloody scene.

*Dor.* Heaven can send aids,  
When they are least expected. Let us walk;  
The hour of trial draws near.

*Alc.* May it end well!

[Exeunt.]

## SCENE II.—Another Room in the same.

Enter OLINDA and LIDIAN.

*Olin.* That for my love you should turn hermit,  
As much amazes me as your report [Lidian,  
Clarangé's dead.

*Lid.* He is so, and all comforts  
My youth can hope for, madam, with him buried;  
Nor had I ever left my cell, but that  
He did enjoin me at his death to shed  
Some tears of friendship on his monument;  
And, those last rites performed, he did bequeath  
As the best legacy a friend could give, [you,  
Or I indeed could wish, to my embraces.

*Olin.* 'Tis still more strange; is there no foul  
I must confess I am not sorry, sir, [play in it?  
For your fair fortune; yet 'tis fit I grieve  
The most untimely death of such a gentleman;  
He was my worthy servant.

*Lid.* And for this  
Acknowledgment, if I could prize you at  
A higher rate, I should; he was my friend,  
My dearest friend.

*Olin.* But how should I be assured, sir,  
(For slow belief is the best friend of truth)  
Of this gentleman's death? If I should credit it,  
And afterward it fall out contrary,  
How am I shamed! how is your virtue tainted!

*Lid.* There is a friar that came along with me,  
His business, to deliver you a letter  
From dead Clarangé: You shall hear his testi-  
mony.

Enter CLARANGÉ, as a Friar, with another Friar.

Father! my reverend father!—Look upon him;  
Such holy men are authors of no fables.

*Olin.* They should not be; their lives and their  
opinions,  
Like brightest purest flames, should still burn  
upwards.—

To me, sir? [CLARANGÉ, delivers a letter.

*Clara.* If you are the fair Olinda.

*Friar.* I do not like these cross points.

*Clara.* Give me leave;

I am nearest to myself: What I have plotted  
Shall be pursued; you must not over-rule me.

*Olin.* Do you put the first hand to your own  
undoing?

Play to betray your game? Mark but this letter!

“Lady, I am come to claim your noble promise:  
[Reads.

If you be mistress of your word, you are mine;  
I am last returned. Your riddle is dissolved,  
And I attend your faith. Your humble servant,  
Clarangé.”

Is this the friar that saw him dead?

*Lid.* 'Tis he;  
Clarangé, on my life! I am defeated!  
Such reverend habits juggle? my true sorrow  
For a false friend, not worth a tear, derided?

*Friar.* You have abused my trust.

*Olin.* It is not well,

Nor like a gentleman.

*Clara.* All stratagems  
In love, and that the sharpest war, are lawful.

By your example, I did change my habit,  
Caught you in your own toil, and triumph in it;  
And what by policy's got, I will maintain  
With valour! No Lisander shall come in  
Again to fetch you off.

*Lid.* His honoured name,  
Pronounced by such a treacherous tongue, is  
tainted.

Maintain thy treason with thy sword? With what  
Contempt I hear it! in a wilderness  
I durst encounter it, and would, but that  
In my retired hours, (not counterfeited  
As thy religious shape was) I have learn'd,  
When justice may determine, such a cause,  
And of such weight, as this fair lady is,  
Must not be put to Fortune. I appeal  
Unto the king; and he, whose wisdom knows  
To do his subjects right in their estates,  
As graciously with judgment will determine  
In points of honour.

*Oliv.* I'll steer the same course with you.

*Clara.* I'll stand the trial.

*Friar.* What have you done? or what  
Intend you?

*Clara.* Ask not; I'll come off with honour.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Court of Justice.*

Enter BERONTE, CLARINDA, MALPONT, guarded, and  
Officers.

*Ber.* Be constant in your proofs: Should you  
shrink back now,  
Your life must answer it; nor am I safe,  
My honour being engaged to make that good  
Which you affirm.

*Clari.* I am confident, so dearly  
I honoured my dead lord, that no respect,  
Or, of my lady's bounties, (which were great ones,  
I must confess) nor of her former life,  
(For while that she was chaste, indeed I loved her)  
Shall hinder me from lending my assistance  
Unto your just revenge—mine own I mean.  
If Leon keep far off enough, all's secure: [*Aside.*  
Lisander dares not come in; modest blushes  
Parted with me long since, and impudence,  
Armed with my hate unto her innocence, shall be  
The weapon I will fight with now.

*Ber.* The rack  
Being presented to you, you'll roar out  
What you conceal yet.

*Malf.* Conceal? I know nothing  
But that I shall be hanged, and that I look for:  
It is my destiny; I ever had  
A hanging look; and a wise woman told me,  
Though I had not the heart to do a deed  
Worthy the halter, in my youth or age,  
I should take a turn with a wry mouth; and now  
'Tis come about. I have penn'd mine own ballad  
Before my condemnation, in fear  
Some rhymer should prevent me.

Enter DORILAUS, CALISTA, and OLINDA.

Here's my lady:  
'Would I were in Heaven, or a thousand miles  
hence,

That I might not blush to look on her!

*Dor.* You

Behold this preparation, and the enemies  
Who are to fight against your life; yet if  
You bring no witness here, that may convince you  
Of breach of faith to your lord's bed, and hold up  
Unspotted hands before the king, this trial  
You are to undergo will but refine,  
And not consume, your honour.

*Cal.* How confirmed

I am here, whatsoever fate falls on me,  
You shall have ample testimony. Till the death  
Of my dear lord, (to whose sad memory  
I pay a mourning widow's tears) I lived  
Too happy in my holiday trim of glory,  
And courted with felicity, that drew on me,  
With other helps of nature, as of fortune,  
The envy, not the love, of most that knew me;  
This made me to presume too much, perhaps  
Too proud; but I am humbled: And if now  
I do make it apparent, I can bear  
Adversity with such a constant patience  
As will set off my innocence, I hope, sir,  
In your declining age, when I should live  
A comfort to you, you shall have no cause,  
How'er I stand accused, to hold your honour  
Shipwrecked in such a daughter.

*Oliv.* Oh, best friend!

My honour's at the stake too; for—

*Dor.* Be silent:

The king.

Enter KING, LEMURE, and Attendants.

*Lem.* Sir, if you please to look upon  
The prisoner, and the many services  
Her father hath done for you—

*King.* We must look on  
The cause, and not the persons. Yet beholding,  
With an impartial eye, the excellent beauties  
Of this fair lady, (which we did believe  
Upon report, but till now never saw 'em)  
It moves a strange kind of compassion in me.  
Let us survey you nearer! She's a book  
To be with care perused; and 'tis my wonder,  
If such mishapen guests as Lust and Murder,  
At any price, should ever find a lodging  
In such a beauteous inn! Mistake us not;  
Though we admire the outward structure, if  
The rooms be foul within, expect no favour.  
I were no man, if I could look on beauty  
Distressed, without some pity; but no king,  
If any superficial gloss of feature  
Could work me to decline the course of justice.  
But to the cause, Cleander's death! what proof  
Can you produce against her?

*Ber.* Royal sir,  
Touching that point, my brother's death, we build  
On suppositions—

*King.* Suppositions? how?  
Is such a lady, sir, to be condemned  
On suppositions?

*Ber.* They are well-grounded, sir;  
And if we make it evident she is guilty  
Of the first crime we charge her with, Adultery,  
That being the parent, it may find belief  
That murder was the issue.

*King.* We allow  
It may be so; but that it may be, must not  
Infer a necessary consequence  
To cast away a lady's life. What witnesses  
To make this good?

*Ber.* The principal, this woman,  
For many years her servant; she hath taken  
Her oath in court.—Come forward!

*King.* By my crown,  
A lying face!

*Clari.* I swore, sir, for the king;  
And if you are the party, as I do  
Believe you are, (for you have a good face,

However mine appears) swearing for you, sir,  
I ought to have my oath pass.

*King.* Impudent too?

Well, what have you sworn?

*Clari.* That this lady was  
A goodly tempting lady, as she is:  
How thinks your majesty? And I her servant,  
Her officer, as one would say, and trusted  
With her closest chamber-service; that Lisander  
Was a fine-timbered gentleman, and active;  
That he could do fine gambols  
To make a lady merry; that this pair,  
A very loving couple, mutually  
Affected one another: So much for them, sir!  
That I, a simple waiting-woman, having taken  
My bodily oath, the first night of admittance  
Into her ladyship's service, on her slippers,  
(That was the book) to serve her will in all things,  
And to know no religion but her pleasure,  
('Tis not yet out of fashion with some ladies)  
That I, as the premises shew, being commanded  
To do my function, in conveyance of  
Lisander to her chamber, (my lord absent,  
On a pretended sickness) did the feat,  
(It cannot be denied) and at dead midnight  
Left 'em together: What they did, some here  
Can easily imagine. I have said, sir.

*Dor.* The devil's oratrix!

*King.* Then you confess  
You were her bawd?

*Clari.* That's coarse; her agent, sir.

*King.* So, goody Agent! And you think there  
is

No punishment due for your agency?

*Clari.* Let her suffer first,  
Being my better, for adultery,  
And I'll endure the mulct imposed on bawds,  
Call it by the worst name.

*Cal.* Live I to hear this?

*King.* Take her aside.—Your answer to this,  
lady.

*Cal.* Heaven grant me patience! To be thus  
confronted

(Oh, pardon, royal sir, a woman's passion!)  
By one (and this the worst of my misfortunes)  
That was my slave, but never to such ends, sir,  
Would give a statue motion into fury.  
Let my past life, my actions, nay intentions,  
Be by my grand accuser justly censured,  
(For her I scorn to answer) and if they  
Yield any probability of truth  
In that she urges, then I will confess  
A guilty cause. The people's voice, which is  
The voice of truth, my husband's tenderness  
In his affection to me, (that, no dotage,  
But a reward of humbleness) the friendship  
Echoed through France between him and Lisander,  
All make against her. For him, in his absence,  
(Whatever imputation it draw on me)  
I must take leave to speak: 'Tis true he loved  
me,

But not in such a wanton way; his reason  
Mastered his passions: I grant I had  
At midnight conference with him; but if he  
Ever received a farther favour from me  
Than what a sister might give to a brother,  
May I sink quick! And thus much, (did he know  
The shame I suffer for him, with the loss  
Of his life for appearing) on my soul,  
He would maintain.

*Enter LISANDER and ALCIDON.*

*Lis.* And will, thou clear example  
Of women's pureness!

*King.* Though we hold her such,  
Thou hast expressed thyself a desperate fool,  
To thrust thy head into the lion's jaws,  
The justice of thy king.

*Lis.* I came prepared for't,  
And offer up a guilty life to clear  
Her innocence: The oath she took, I swear to;  
And for Cleander's death, to purge myself  
From any colour malice can paint on me,  
Or that she had a hand in't, I can prove  
That fatal night when he in his own house fell,  
And many days before, I was distant from it  
A long day's journey.

*Clari.* I am caught.

*[Aside.]*

*Ber.* If so,  
How came your sword into this steward's hands?—  
Stand forth.

*Malf.* I have heard nothing that you spake:  
I know I must die; and what kind of death  
Pray you resolve me; I shall go away else  
In a qualm; I am very faint.

*King.* Carry him off;

His fear will kill him. *[MALFOUR is carried off.]*

*Dor.* Sir, 'twas my ambition,  
My daughter's reputation being wounded  
I' th' general opinion, to have it  
Cured by a public trial; I had else  
Forborne your majesty's trouble.

*Enter LEON, Servants, and Guard.*

I'll bring forth  
Cleander's murderer; in a wood I heard him,  
As I rode sadly by, unto himself,  
With some compunction, though this devil had  
Lament what he had done, cursing her lust [none,  
That drew him to that bloody fact.

*Leon.* To lessen  
The foulness of it, (for which I know justly  
I am to suffer) and with my last breath  
To free these innocents, I do confess all,  
This wicked woman only guilty with me.

*Clari.* Is't come to this? Thou puling rogue!  
die thou

With prayers in thy mouth; I'll curse the laws  
By which I suffer! All I grieve for is,  
That I die unrevenged.

*Leon.* But one word more, sir,  
And I have done: I was by accident where  
Lisander met with Cloridon and Chrysanthes,  
Was an ear-witness when he sought for peace,  
Nay, begged it upon colder terms than can  
Almost find credit, his past deeds considered;  
But they, deaf to his reasons, severally  
Assaulted him; but such was his good fortune,  
That both fell under it. Upon my death  
I take it uncompelled, that they were guilty  
Of their own violent ends; and he, against  
His will, the instrument.

*Alc.* This I will swear too;  
For I was not far off.

*Dor.* They have alledged  
As much to wake your sleeping mercy, sir,  
As all the advocates of France can plead  
In his defence.

*King.* The criminal judge shall sentence  
These to their merits.

*[LEON and CLARINDA taken away guarded.]*

With mine own hand, lady,  
I take you from the bar, and do myself  
Pronounce you innocent.

*All.* Long live the King!

*King.* And, to confirm you stand high in our  
favour,

And as some recompence for what you have  
With too much rigour in your trial suffer'd,  
Ask what you please, becoming me to grant,  
And be possessed of't.

*Cal.* Sir, I dare not doubt [Kneels.  
Your royal promise; in a king it is  
A strong assurance; that emboldens me  
Upon my humble knees to make my boon  
Lisander's pardon!

*Dor.* My good genius  
Did prompt her to it.

*Lem.* At your feet thus prostrate,  
I second her petition.

*Alc.* Never king  
Poured forth his mercy on a worthier subject.

*Ber.* To witness my repentance, for the wrong  
In my unjust suspicion I did both,  
I join in the same suit.

*Lis.* The life you give,  
Still ready to lay down for your service,  
Shall be against your enemies employed,  
Not hazarded in brawls.

*All.* Mercy, dread sir!

*King.* So many pressing me, and with such rea-  
Moving compassion, I hope it will not [sons  
Be censured levity in me, though I borrow  
In this from justice, to relieve my mercy:  
I grant his pardon at your intercession,  
But still on this condition; you, Lisander,  
In expiation of your guilt, shall build  
A monument for my Cloridon and Chrysanthes;  
And never henceforth draw a sword, but when  
By us you are commanded, in defence of  
The Flower-de-Luce; and, after one year's sorrow  
For your dear friend Cleander's wretched fate,  
Marry Calista.

*Lis.* On your sacred hand,  
I vow to do it seriously.

*Enter LIDIAN.*

*Lid.* Great sir, stay!  
Leave not your seat of justice, till you have  
Given sentence in a cause as much important  
As this you have determined.

*King.* Lidian?

*Lid.* He, sir,

Your humblest subject. I accuse Clarangè  
Of falsehood in true friendship at the height;  
We both were suitors to this lady, both  
Enjoined one penance—

*Enter CLARANGÈ and FRIAR.*

*Clara.* Trouble not the King  
With an unnecessary repetition,  
Of what the court's familiar with already.

*King.* Clarangè?

*Dor.* With a shaven crown?

*Olin.* Most strange!

*Clara.* Look on thy rival—your late servant,  
But now devoted to a better mistress, [madam,  
The Church, whose orders I have took upon me:  
I here deliver up my interest to her,  
And what was got with cunning (as you thought)  
I simply thus surrender. Heretofore,  
You did outstrip me in the race of friendship;  
I am your equal now.

*Dor.* A suit soon ended!

*Clara.* And joining thus your hands, (I know  
both willing)

I may do in the church my friar's office  
In marrying you.

*Lid.* The victory is yours, sir.

*King.* It is a glorious one, and well sets off  
Our scene of mercy. To the dead we tender  
Our sorrow; to the living, ample wishes  
Of future happiness. 'Tis a King's duty  
To prove himself a father to his subjects;  
And I shall hold it, if this well succeed,  
A meritorious and praise-worthy deed. [Exeunt

### EPILOGUE.

STILL doubtful, and perplex'd too, whether he  
Hath done Fletcher right in this history,  
The poet sits within; since he must know it,  
He, with respect, desires that you would shew it  
By some accustomed sign; if from our action,  
Or his endeavours, you meet satisfaction,  
With ours he hath his ends; we hope the best,  
To make that certainty in you doth rest.

# THE NIGHT-WALKER;

OR,

## THE LITTLE THIEF.

### DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

JUSTICE ALGRIFE, married to MARIA.  
FRANK HEARTLOVE, enamoured of MARIA.  
TOM LUNCHEK, Brother to ALATHE.  
JACK WILDBRAIN, Nephew to the Lady.  
TOBY, Coachman to the Lady.  
Gentlemen.  
Servants.  
Sexton.  
Bell-ringers.

Lady, Mother to MARIA.  
MARIA, in Love with HEARTLOVE.  
ALATHE, contracted to ALGRIFE, disguised as a  
Boy.  
Nurse.  
MISTRESS NEWLOVE.  
Women.  
Mistress, a Courtesan to LUNCHEK.

SCENE,—LONDON.

### ACT I.

#### SCENE I.—Before the House of ALGRIFE.

*Enter LUNCHEK and WILDBRAIN.*

*Lurc.* Jack!

*Wildb.* What wind brought thee hither?

In what old hollow tree, or rotten wall,  
Hast thou been, like a swallow, all this winter?  
Where hast thou been, man?

*Lurc.* Following the plough.

*Wildb.* What plough? Thou hast no land;  
Stealing's thy only purchase.

*Lurc.* The best inheritance.

*Wildb.* Not in my opinion;  
Thou hadst five hundred pound a-year.

*Lurc.* 'Tis gone:  
Pr'ythee, no more on't! Have I not told thee,  
And oftentimes, Nature made all men equal,  
Her distribution to each child alike;  
Till Labour came and thrust a new will in,  
Which I allow not; till men won a privilege  
By that they call *endeavour*, which-indeed  
Is nothing but a lawful cozenage,  
An allowed way to cheat? Why should my neighbour,

That hath no more soul than his horsekeeper,  
Nor bounteous faculties above a broom-man,  
Have forty thousand pounds, and I four groats?  
Why should he keep it?

*Wildb.* Thy old opinion still.

*Lurc.* Why should that scrivener,  
That ne'er writ reason in his life, nor anything  
That time e'er gloried in; that never knew  
How to keep any courtesy conceal'd,  
But *noverrint universi* must proclaim it,  
Purchase perpetually, and I a rascal?

Consider this; why should that mouldy-cobler  
Marry his daughter to a wealthy merchant,  
And give five thousand pound? is this good justice?  
Because he has a tougher constitution, [tice]  
Can feed upon old songs, and save his money,  
Therefore must I go beg?

*Wildb.* What's this to thee!

Thou canst not mend it: If thou be'st determined  
To rob all, like a tyrant, yet take heed  
A keener justice do not overtake thee,  
And catch you in a noose.

*Lurc.* I am no woodcock;  
He that shall sit down frightened with that foolery  
Is not worth pity; let me alone to shuffle!  
Thou art for wenching.

*Wildb.* For beauty I, a safe course:  
No halter hangs in my way; I defy it.

*Lurc.* But a worse fate, a wilful poverty;  
For where thou gain'st by one that indeed loves  
thee,

A thousand will draw from thee; 'tis thy destiny!  
One is a kind of weeping cross, Jack,  
A gentle purgatory: Do not fling at all;  
You'll pay the box so often, till you perish.

*Wildb.* Take you no care for that, sir, 'tis my  
pleasure:

I will employ my wits a great deal faster  
Than you shall do your fingers; and my loves,  
If I mistake not, shall prove riper harvest  
And handsomer, and come within less danger.  
Where's thy young sister?

*Lurc.* I know not where she is; she's not worth  
caring for,  
She has no wit. Oh, you'd be nibbling with her!  
She's far enough, I hope: I know not where:

She's not worth caring for, a sullen thing,  
She would not take my counsel, Jack; and so  
I parted from her.

*Wildb.* Leave her to her wants?

*Lurc.* I gave her a little money, what I could  
spare;

She had a mind to th' country; she is turn'd,  
By this, some farmer's dairy-maid; I may meet  
her

Riding from market one day, 'twixt her dorsers;  
If I do, by this hand I wo' not spare  
Her butter-pence.

*Wildb.* Thou wilt not rob thy sister?

*Lurc.* She shall account me for her eggs and  
cheeses.

*Wildb.* A pretty girl. Did not old Algripe love  
A very pretty girl she was. [her?

*Lurc.* Some such thing;

But he was too wise to fasten. Let her pass.

*Wildb.* Then where's thy mistress?

*Lurc.* Where you sha' not find her,  
Nor know what stuff she is made on; no, indeed,  
I chose her not for your use. [sir,

*Wildb.* Sure she's handsome.

*Lurc.* Yes, indeed is she; she is very handsome;  
But that's all one.

*Wildb.* You'll come to th' marriage?

*Lurc.* Is it

To-day?

*Wildb.* Now, now, they are come from church  
now.

*Lurc.* Any great preparation!

Does Justice Algripe shew his power?

*Wildb.* Very glorious,

And glorious people there.

*Lurc.* I may meet with him

Yet ere I die, as cunning as he is.

*Wildb.* You may do good, Tom, at the marriage;  
We have plate and dainty things.

*Lurc.* Do you no harm, sir;

For yet methinks the marriage should be marr'd  
If thou may'st have thy will: Farewell; say no-  
thing! [Exit.

*Enter Gentlemen.*

*Wildb.* You are welcome, noble friends.

1 *Gent.* I thank you, sir.—

Nephew to the old lady; his name's Wildbrain,  
And wild his best condition.

2 *Gent.* I have heard of him.—

I pray you tell me, sir, is young Maria merry  
After her marriage-rites? Does she look lively?  
How does she like her man?

*Wildb.* Very scurvily;

And as untowardly she prepares herself:  
But it is mine aunt's will, that this dull metal  
Must be mix'd with her, to allay her handsomeness.

1 *Gent.* Had Heartlove no fast friends?

*Wildb.* His means are little;

And where those little are, as little comforts  
Ever keep company: I know she loves him,  
His memory beyond the hopes of Heaven,  
Beyond the Indies in his mouldy cabinets;  
But 'tis her unhandsome fate—

*Enter HEARTLOVE.*

1 *Gent.* I am sorry for't.

Here comes poor Frank.—Nay, we are friends;  
start not, sir!

We see your willow, and are sorry for't;  
And, though it be a wedding, we are half incourners.

*Heartl.* Good gentlemen, remember not my  
fortunes;

They are not to be help'd with words.

*Wildb.* Look up, man!

A proper sensible fellow, and shrink for a wench?  
Are there no more? or is she all the handsomeness?

*Heartl.* Pr'ythee, leave fooling.

*Wildb.* Pr'ythee, leave thou whining!

Have maids forgot to love?

*Heartl.* You are injurious.

*Wildb.* Let 'em alone a while, they'll follow  
thee.

1 *Gent.* Come, good Frank,  
Forget now, since there is no remedy,  
And shew a merry face, as wise men would do.

2 *Gent.* Be a free guest, and think not of those  
passages.

*Wildb.* Think how to nick him home; thou  
know'st she dotes on thee;

Graft me a dainty medlar on his crabstock;

Pay me the dreaming puppy.

*Heartl.* Well, make your mirth, the whilst I  
bear my misery:

Honest minds would have better thoughts.

*Wildb.* I am her kinsman,  
And love her well, am tender of her youth;  
Yet, honest Frank, before I would have that  
stinkard,

That walking rotten tomb, enjoy her maidenhead—

*Heartl.* Pr'ythee leave mocking!

*Wildb.* Pr'ythee, Frank, believe me;  
Go to, consider. Hark, they knock to dinner!

[Knock within.

Come, wo't thou go?

2 *Gent.* I pr'ythee, Frank, go with us,  
And laugh and dance as we do.

*Heartl.* You are light, gentlemen,  
Nothing to weigh your hearts; pray give me leave!  
I'll come and see, and take my leave.

*Wildb.* We'll look for you.

Do not despair; I have a trick yet. [Exit.

*Heartl.* Yes,  
When I am mischievous I'll believe your projects!  
She is gone, for ever gone, (I cannot help it.)  
My hopes and all my happiness gone with her,  
Gone like a pleasing dream! What mirth and

jollity

Reigns round about this house! how every office  
Sweats with new joys! Can she be merry too?

Is all this pleasure set by her appointment?  
Sure she has a false heart then. Still they grow

louder.

The old man's god, his gold, has won upon her,  
(Light-hearted, cordial gold!) and all my services,  
That offered naked truth, are clean forgotten:

Yet if she were compell'd—but it cannot be—

If I could but imagine her will mine,

Although he had her body—

*Enter Lady and WILDBRAIN.*

*Lady.* He shall come in!  
Walk without doors o' this day! Though an enemy,  
It must not be.

*Wildb.* You must compel him, madam.

*Lady.* No, she shall fetch him in, nephew; it  
shall be so.

*Wildb.* It will be fittest. [Exit with Lady.

*Heartl.* Can fair Maria look again upon me?  
Can there be so much impudence in sweetness?  
Or has she got a strong heart to defy me?

*Enter MARIA.*

She comes herself : How rich she is in jewels !  
Methinks they shew like frozen isicles,  
Cold Winter had hung on her. How the roses,  
That kept continual spring within her cheeks,  
Are wither'd with the old man's dull embraces !  
She would speak to me.—I can sigh too, lady ;  
But from a sounder heart : Yes, and can weep too ;  
But 'tis for you, that ever I believed you,  
Tears of more pious value than your marriage !  
You would excuse yourself, and I must credit you,  
So much my old obedience compels from me.  
Go, and forget me, and my poverty—  
I need not bid you, you're too perfect that way :  
But still remember that I loved Maria,  
Loved with a loyal love. Nay, turn not from me !  
I will not ask a tear more, you are bountiful ;  
Go, and rejoice, and I will wait upon you  
That little of my life left !

*Maria.* Good sir, hear me !  
What has been done, was the act of my obedience  
And not my will, forced from me by my parents :  
Now 'tis done, do as I do, bear it handsomely ;  
And if there can be more society,  
Without dishonour to my tie of marriage,  
Or place for noble love, I shall love you still.  
You had the first ; the last, had my will prosper'd.  
You talk of little time of life, dear Frank ;  
Certain, I am not married for eternity :  
The joy my marriage brings, tells me I am mortal,  
And shorter-lived than you, else I were miserable ;  
Nor can the gold and ease his age hath brought me  
And what I coveted, content. Go with me ;  
They seek a day of joy ; pr'ythee let's shew it,  
Though it be forced ; and, by this kiss believe me,  
However I must live at his command now,  
I'll die at yours.

*Heartl.* I have enough ; I'll honour you.

[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE II.—*A Street.*

*Enter LURCHER.*

*Luro.* Here are my trinkets, and this lusty mar-  
I mean to visit ; I have shifts of all sorts, [riage  
And here are thousand wheels to set 'em working.  
I am very merry, for I know this wedding  
Will yield me lusty pillage : If mad Wildgoose,  
That debosh'd rogue, keep but his ancient revels,  
And breed a hubbub in the house, I am happy.—

*Enter ALATHE, as a Boy.*

Now, what are you ?

*Alathe.* A poor distressed boy, sir,  
Friendless and comfortless, that would entreat  
Some charity and kindness from your worship.  
I would fain serve, sir, and as fain endeavour  
With duteous labour to deserve the love  
Of that good gentleman shall entertain me.

*Luro.* A pretty boy, but of too mild a breeding,  
Too tender, and too bashful a behaviour.  
What canst thou do ?

*Alathe.* I can learn anything  
That's good and honest, and shall please a master.

*Luro.* He blushes as he speaks, and that I like  
I love a bold and secure confidence, [not ;  
An impudence that one may trust : This boy now,  
Had I instructed him, had been a jewel,  
A treasure for my use.—Thou canst not lie ?

*Alathe.* I would not willingly.

*Luro.* Nor thou hast no wit  
To dissemble neatly ?

*Alathe.* Do you love such boys, sir ?

*Luro.* Oh, mainly, mainly ; I would have my  
boy impudent,

Out-face all truth, yet do it piously ;  
Like Proteus, cast himself into all forms,  
As sudden and as nimble as his thoughts ;  
Blench at no danger, though it be the gallows,  
Nor make no conscience of a cozenage,  
Though it be i' th' church. Your soft, demure,  
still children

Are good for nothing, but to get long graces,  
And sing songs to dull tunes : I would keep thee,  
And cherish thee, hadst thou any active quality,  
And be a tender master to thy knavery ;  
But thou art not for my use.

*Alathe.* Do you speak this seriously ?

*Luro.* Yes, indeed do I.

*Alathe.* Would you have your boy, sir,  
Read in these moral mischiefs ?

*Luro.* Now thou mov'st me.

*Alathe.* And be a well-train'd youth in all ac-

*Luro.* By any means. [ivities ?

*Alathe.* Or do you this to try me,

Fearing a proneness ?

*Luro.* I speak this to make thee.

*Alathe.* Then take me, sir, and cherish me, and  
love me ;

You have me what you would : Believe me, sir,  
I can do anything for your advantage.

I guess at what you mean ; I can lie naturally,  
As easily as I can sleep, sir, and securely ;  
As naturally I can steal too—

*Luro.* That I am glad on,  
Right heartily glad on ; hold thee there, thou art  
excellent.

*Alathe.* Steal any thing from any body living.

*Luro.* Not from thy master ?

*Alathe.* That is mine own body,  
And must not be.

*Luro.* The boy mends mightily.

*Alathe.* A rich man, that like snow heaps up his  
I have a kind of pious zeal to meet still ; [monies,  
A fool, that not deserves 'em, I take pity on,  
For fear he should run mad, and so I ease him.

*Luro.* Excellent boy, and able to instruct me !  
Of mine own nature just !

*Alathe.* I scorn all hazard,  
And on the edge of danger I do best, sir.  
I have a thousand faces to deceive,  
And, to those, twice so many tongues to flatter ;  
An impudence, no brass was ever tougher ;  
And for my conscience—

*Luro.* Peace ! I have found a jewel,  
A jewel all the Indies cannot match !  
And thou shalt feel—

*Alathe.* This tittle, and I ha' done, sir :  
I never can confess, I have that spell on me ;  
And such rare modesties before a magistrate,  
Such innocence to catch a judge, such ignorance—

*Luro.* I'll learn of thee ; thou art mine own.  
I'll give thee action presently. [Come, boy !

*Alathe.* Have at you !

*Luro.* What must I call thee ?

*Alathe.* Snap, sir.

*Luro.* 'Tis most natural ;  
A name born to thee : Sure thou art a fairy !  
Shew but thy skill, and I shall make thee happy.  
[*Exeunt.*]

SCENE III.—*A Room in the House of ALGRIFE.*

*Enter Lady, Nurse, Mrs. NEWLOVE, and TOBY.*

*Lady.* Where be these knaves? who serves up  
Is the bride's bed made? [all the liveries?

*Toby.* Yes, madam, and a bell  
Hung under it artificially.

*Lady.* Out, knave, out!  
Must we have larums now?

*Toby.* A little warning,  
That we may know when to begin our healths, ma-  
The justice is a kind of old jade, madam, [dam,  
That will go merriest with a bell.

*Lady.* All the house drunk?

*Toby.* This is a day of jubilee.

*Lady.* Are the best hangings up? and the plate  
Who makes the posset, Nurse? [set out?

*Nurse.* The dairy maid,  
And she will put that in will make him caper.—  
Well, madam, well, you might ha' chose another,  
A handsomer, for her years.

*Lady.* Peace! he is rich, nurse;  
He's rich, and that is beauty.

*Nurse.* I am sure he's rotten;  
Would he had been hang'd when he first saw her!

*Lady.* Termagant!  
What an angry quean is this!—Where \* \* \*  
\* \* \* \* \* Who looks to him?

*Toby.* He's very merry, madam; Master Wild-  
brain  
Has him in hand, i' th' bottom o' the cellar;  
He sighs and tipples.

*Nurse.* Alas, good gentleman!  
My heart's sore for thee.

*Lady.* Sorrow must have his course. Sirrah,  
Give him some sack to dry up his remembrance.  
How does the bridegroom? I am afraid of him.

*Nurse.* He's a trim youth to be tender of, hemp  
take him!

Must my sweet new-blown rose find such a winter  
Before her spring be near?

*Lady.* Peace, peace! thou'rt foolish.

*Nurse.* And dances like a town-top, and reels  
and hobbles.

*Lady.* Alas, good gentleman! give him not much

*Toby.* He shall ha' none by my consent. [wine.

*Lady.* Are the women comforting my daughter?

*Newl.* Yes, yes, madam,  
And reading to her a pattern of true patience;  
They read, and pray for her too.

*Nurse.* They had need!  
You had better marry her to her grave a great deal;  
There will be peace and rest. Alas, poor gentle-  
woman!

Must she become a nurse, now in her tenderness?  
Well, madam, well! my heart bleeds!

*Lady.* Thou art a fool still—

*Nurse.* Pray Heaven I be!

*Lady.* And an old fool, to be vex'd thus!  
'Tis late; she must to bed. Go, knave; be merry:  
Drink for a boy: Away to all your charges!  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*Another Room in the same.*

*Enter WILDBRAIN and HEARTLOVE.*

*Wildb.* Do as thou wo't; but, if thou dost re-  
fuse it,

Thou art the stupid'st ass—There's no long argu-  
Time is too precious, Frank. [ing;

*Heartl.* I am hot with wine.  
And apt now to believe; but if thou dost this  
Out of a villainy, to make me wrong her,  
As thou art prone enough—

*Wildb.* Does she not love thee?  
Did she not cry down-right, e'en now, to part with  
thee?

Had she not swounded if I had not caught her?  
Canst thou have more?

*Heartl.* I must confess all this.

*Wildb.* Do not stand prating, and misdocting,  
casting!

If she go from thee now, she's lost for ever;  
Now, now she's going, she that loves thee, going!  
She whom thou lov'st—

*Heartl.* Pray let me think a little.

*Wildb.* There is no leisure; think when thou  
hast embraced her,

Can she imagine thou didst ever honour her?  
Ever believe thy oaths, that tamely suffer'st  
An old dry ham of horse-flesh to enjoy her,  
Enjoy her maidenhead? Take but that from her,  
That we may tell posterity a man had it,  
A handsome man, a gentleman, a young man,  
To save the honour of our house, the credit!  
'Tis no great matter I desire.

*Heartl.* I hear you.

*Wildb.* Free us both from the fear of breeding  
fools

And oafs, got by this shadow: We talk too long.  
*Heartl.* She is going now to bed, among the wo-  
What opportunity can I have to meet her? [men:

*Wildb.* Let me alone! Hast thou a will? speak  
soundly,

Speak discretely, speak home and handsomely;  
Is't not pity, nay misery, nay infamy, to leave  
So rare a pye to be cut up by a rascal?

*Heartl.* I will go presently.—Now, now, I stay  
thee.

*Wildb.* Such a dainty doe to be taken  
By one that knows not neck-beef from a pheasant,  
Nor cannot relish bragat from ambrosia?  
Is it not conscience!

*Heartl.* Yes, yes; now I feel it.

*Wildb.* A meritorious thing?

*Heartl.* Good father Wildgoose,  
I do confess it.

*Wildb.* Come then, follow me,  
And pluck a man's heart up! I'll lock thee  
privately,

Where she alone shall presently pass by,  
None near to interrupt thee: But be sure—

*Heartl.* I shall be sure enough; lead on, and  
crown me.

*Wildb.* No wringings in your mind now, as you  
love me! [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*A Gallery in the same.*

*Enter Lady, MARIA, ALGRIFE, Gentlewomen, Nurse, and  
MRS. NEWLOVE.*

*Lady.* 'Tis time you were a-bed.

*Alg.* I pr'ythee, sweetheart,  
Consider my necessity!—Why art sad?  
I must tell you a tale in your ear anon—

*Nurse.* Of Tom Thumb;

I believe that will prove your stiffest story.

*Newl.* I pity thee, young wench!

1 *Gentlew.* And so do I too.

2 *Gentlew.* Come, old sticks take fire.

1 *Gentlew.* But the plague is, he'll burn out  
Give him another cup. [instantly.]

2 *Gentlew.* Those are but flashes;  
A tun of sack wo' not set him high enough.—  
Will you to bed?

*Maria.* I must.

1 *Gentlew.* Come, have a good heart,  
And win him like a bowl to lie close to you;  
Make your best use!

*Alg.* Nay, pr'ythee, duck, go instantly:  
I'll dance a jig or two to warm my body.

*Enter WILDBRAIN.*

*Wildb.* 'Tis almost midnight.

*Lady.* Pr'ythee to bed, *Maria.*

*Wildb.* Go you afore, and let the ladies follow,  
And leave her to her thoughts awhile; there must  
A time of taking leave of these same fooleries, [be  
Bewailing o' their maidenheads.

*Lady.* Come then,  
We'll wait in the next room.

*Alg.* Do not tarry;  
For if thou dost, by my troth I shall fall asleep,  
Mall.

[*Exeunt all but WILDBRAIN and MARIA.*

*Wildb.* Do, do, and dream of dottrels!—Get  
you to bed quickly,

And let us ha' no more stir; come, no crying!  
'Tis too late now; carry yourself discretely:  
The old thief loves thee dearly, that's the benefit;  
For the rest, you must make your own play. Nay,  
not that way!

They'll pull you all to pieces for your whim-  
whams,

Your garters and your gloves; go modestly,  
Am privately steal to bed; 'tis very late, Mall;  
For if you go by them, such a new larum—

*Maria.* I know not which way to avoid 'em.

*Wildb.* This way,

This through the cloisters, and so steal to bed!  
When you are there once, all will separate,  
And give you rest: I came out of my pity  
To shew you this.

*Maria.* I thank you.

*Wildb.* Here's the keys:

Go presently, and lock the doors fast after you,  
That none shall follow.

*Maria.* Good night!

*Wildb.* Good night, sweet cousin!

A good and sweet night—or I'll curse thee, Frank.  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.—*A Dark Cloister.*

*Enter HEARTLOVE.*

*Heartl.* She stays long: Sure young Wildgoose  
has abused me,  
He has made sport wi' me. I may yet get out  
again,  
And I may see his face once more: I ha' foul in-  
tentions;  
But they are drawn on by a fouler dealing.

*Enter MARIA.*

Hark, hark! it was the door!  
Something comes this way, wond'rous still and  
stealing!

May be, some walking spirit to affright me.

*Maria.* Oh, Heaven, my fortune!

*Heartl.* 'Tis her voice! stay. [Seizes her.

*Maria.* Save me,  
Bless me, you better powers!

*Heartl.* I am no devil.

*Maria.* You are little better, to disturb me now.

*Heartl.* My name is Heartlove.

*Maria.* Fy, fy, worthy friend!

Fy, noble sir!

*Heartl.* I must talk further with you:

You know my fair affection—

*Maria.* So preserve it;

You know I am married now. For shame, be  
Not all the earth shall make me— [civilier!

*Heartl.* Pray walk this way;

And if you ever loved me—

*Maria.* Take heed, Frank,  
How you divert that love to hate: Go home,  
pr'ythee.

*Heartl.* Shall he enjoy that sweet—

*Maria.* Nay, pray unhand me.

*Heartl.* He that never felt what love was?

*Maria.* Then I charge you

Stand further off!

*Heartl.* I am tame; but let me walk wi' you,  
Talk but a minute.

*Maria.* So your talk be honest,  
And my untainted honour suffer not,  
I'll walk a turn or two.

*Heartl.* Give me your hand then. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.—*A Bed-room in the same House.*

*Enter WILDBRAIN, ALGRIFE, Lady, NURSE, Gentlewomen,  
and Mrs. NEWLOVE.*

*Alg.* She is not in her chamber.

*Lady.* She is not here.

*Wildb.* And I'll tell you what I dream'd—

*Alg.* Give me a torch!

1 *Gentlew.* Be not too hasty, sir.

*Wildb.* Nay, let him go;

For if my dream be true he must be speedy;

He will be trick'd, and blazed else.

*Nurse.* As I am a woman,

I cannot blame her if she take her liberty!

'Would she would make thee cuckold, thou old

A notorious cuckold, for tormenting her! [bully,

*Lady.* I'll hang her then.

*Nurse.* I'll bless her then! she does justice:

Is this old stinking dog's-flesh for her diet?

*Wildb.* Pr'ythee, honest Nurse, do not fret too  
much;

For fear I dream you'll hang yourself too.

*Alg.* [WILDBRAIN whispers ALGRIFE.] The  
cloister?

*Wildb.* Such was my fancy; I do not say 'tis  
Nor do I bid you be too confident. [true,

*Alg.* Where are the keys, the keys I say?

*Wildb.* I dream'd she had 'em to lock herself

*Nurse.* What a devil do you mean? [in.

*Enter Servant.*

*Wildb.* No harm; good Nurse, be patient!

*Serv.* They are not in the window, where they  
use to be.

*Wildb.* What foolish dreams are these!

*Alg.* I am mad.

*Wildb.* I hope so; [Apart.

If you be not mad, I'll do my best to make you.

1 *Gentlew.* This is some trick.

2 *Gentlew.* I smell the Wildgoose.

*Alg.* Come, gentlemen; come quickly, I beseech you.  
Quick as you can! this may be your case, gentlemen.

And bring some lights, some lights! [Exit.  
*Willb.* Move faster, faster! you'll come too late else.

I'll stay behind and pray for you. I had rather She were dishonest than thou shouldst have her. [Exeunt.

SCENE VIII.—*The Cloisters.*

Enter *MARIA* and *HEARTLOVE*.

*Maria.* You are most unmanly! Yet I have some breath left,  
And this steel to defend me: Come not near me! For if you offer but another violence,  
As I have life I'll kill you! if I miss that  
Upon my own heart will I execute,  
And let that fair belief out, I had of you.

*Heartl.* Most virtuous maid, I have done: Forgive my follies;  
Pardon, oh, pardon! I now see my wickedness,  
And what a monstrous shape it puts upon me.  
On your fair hand I seal—

*Alg.* [Within.] Down with the door!  
*Maria.* We are betray'd! Oh, Frank, Frank!  
*Heartl.* I'll die for you;

Rather than you shall suffer, I'll—  
Enter *ALGRIFE*, *Lady*, *Nurse*, *Gentlewomen*, *Mrs. NEW-LOVE*, and *Servants*.

*Alg.* Now enter,  
Enter, sweet gentlemen. Mine eyes, mine eyes!  
Oh, how my head aches!

1 *Gentlew.* Is it possible?  
2 *Gentlew.* Hold her; she sinks.

*Maria.* A plot upon my honour!  
To poison my fair name, a studied villainy!  
Farewell! As I have hope of peace, I am honest. [Faints.

*Alg.* My brains, my brains, my monstrous brains! they bud sure.

*Nurse.* She is gone, she is gone!  
*Alg.* A handsome riddance of her.  
'Would I could as easily lose her memory!

*Nurse.* Is this the sweet of marriage? have I For this reward? [bred thee  
1 *Gentlew.* Hold, hold! He's desperate too.

*Alg.* Be sure you hold him fast! we'll bind him over  
To the next sessions, and, if I can, I'll hang him. [The Servants seize him.

*Heartl.* Nay then, I'll live to be a terror to thee.—  
Sweet virgin rose, farewell! Heaven has thy beauty,

That's only fit for Heaven. I'll live a little,  
To find the villain out that wrought this injury,  
And then, most blessed soul, I'll climb up to thee.  
Farewell! I feel myself another creature. [He is led out.

*Lady.* Oh, misery of miseries!  
*Nurse.* I told you, madam.

*Lady.* Carry her in.—You will pay back her portion?

*Alg.* No, not a penny: Pay me back my credit,  
And I'll condition w' ye.

*Lady.* A sad wedding!  
Her grave must be her bridal-bed. Oh, Mall,  
'Would I had wed thee to thy own content!  
Then I had had thee still.

*Alg.* I am mad! Farewell!  
Another wanton wife will prove a hell. [Exeunt.

ACT II.

SCENE I.—*Behind the same House.*

Enter *LURCHER* and *ALATHE*.

*Luro.* What hast thou done?  
*Alathe.* I have walked through all the lodgings:  
A silence, as if Death dwelt there, inhabits.

*Luro.* What hast thou seen?  
*Alathe.* Nought but a sad confusion;  
Everything left in such a loose disorder,  
That, were there twenty thieves, they would be laden.

*Luro.* 'Tis very well; I like thy care: But 'tis  
A wedding-night should be so solitary. [strange

*Alathe.* Certainly there's some cause; some  
death or sickness

Is fallen suddenly upon some friend,  
Or some strange news is come.

*Luro.* Are they all a-bed?  
*Alathe.* I think so, and sound asleep, unless it be  
Some women that keep watch in a low parlour,  
And drink, and weep, I know not to what end.

*Luro.* Where's all the plate?  
*Alathe.* Why, lock'd up in that room:

I saw the old lady, ere she went to bed,  
Put up her plate, and some of the rich hangings,  
In a small long chest; her chains and rings are  
It stands close by the table, on a form. [there too:

*Luro.* 'Twas a good notice; didst thou see the men?

*Alathe.* I saw them sad too, and all take their leaves;

But what they said I was too far to hear, sir.  
*Luro.* 'Tis daintily discover'd; we shall certainly

Have a most prosperous night. Which way?  
*Alathe.* A close one,

A back-door that the women have left open,  
To go in and out to fetch necessaries,  
Close on the garden side.

*Luro.* I love thy diligence:  
Wert thou not fearful?

*Alathe.* Fearful? I'll be hang'd first.  
*Luro.* Say they had spied thee?

*Alathe.* I was then determined  
To have cried downright too, and have kept 'em company,

As one that had an interest in their sadness;  
Or made an errand to I know not whom, sir.

*Luro.* My dainty boy! Let us discharge; that  
Makes a perpetual motion in my fingers [plate  
Till I have fast hold of it.

*Alathe.* Pray be wise, sir; do't handsomely, be  
not greedy;  
Let's handle it with such an excellence

As if we would bring thieving into honour :  
We must disguise, to fright these reverend watches—  
*Luro.* Still my blest boy!

*Alathe.* And clear the room of drunken jealousies.

The chest is of some weight, and we may make  
Such noise i' th' carriage we may be snapp'd.

*Luro.* Come, open : Here's a devil's face.

*Alathe.* No, no, sir, we'll have no shape so ter-  
We will not do the devil so much pleasure [rible ;  
To have him face our plot.

*Luro.* A winding-sheet then !

*Alathe.* That's too cold a shift,

I would not wear the reward of my wickedness :  
I wonder you're an old thief, and no cunninger.  
Where's the long cloak ?

*Luro.* Here, here.

*Alathe.* Give me the turbant

And the false beard. I hear some coming this way!  
Stoop, stoop, and let me sit upon your shoulders,  
And now as I direct—Stay, let them enter,  
And when I touch move forward ; make no noise !

[*She mounts on Lurcher's back, and they stand apart.*

*Enter Nurse and Toby.*

*Nurse.* Oh, 'tis a sad time ! All the burnt wine's  
drunk, Nick.

*Toby.* We may thank your dry chaps for't. The  
canary's gone too ;

No substance for a sorrowful mind to work upon ;  
I cannot mourn in beer : If she should walk now,  
As discontented spirits are wont to do—

*Nurse.* And meet us in the cellar ?

*Toby.* What fence have we with single beer  
against her ?

What heart can we defy the devil with ?

*Nurse.* The March beer's open.

*Toby.* A fortification of March beer will do well ;  
I must confess 'tis a most mighty armour,  
For I presume I cannot pray.

*Nurse.* Why, Nicholas ?

*Toby.* We coachmen have such tumbling faiths,  
Can go an even pace. [no prayers

*Nurse.* Hold up your candle.

*Toby.* Verily, Nurse, I have cried so much  
For my young mistress that is mortified,  
That if I have not more sack to support me,  
I shall even sleep : Heigho, for another flaggon !  
These burials and christ'nings are the mournful'st  
And they ask more drink— [matters :

*Nurse.* Drink to a sad heart's needful.

*Toby.* Mine's ever sad, for I am ever dry, Nurse.

*Nurse.* Methinks the light burns blue ; I pr'y-  
There's a thief in't, I think. [these snuff it !

*Toby.* There may be one near it.

*Nurse.* What's that that moves there, i' th' name  
That thing that walks ? [of—Nicholas ?

*Toby.* 'Would I had a ladder to behold it !

Mercy upon me, the ghost of one o' th' guard sure ;  
'Tis the devil by his claws, he smells of brimstone ;  
Sure he farts fire, what an earthquake I have in me !  
Out with thy prayer-book, Nurse !

*Nurse.* It fell i' th' frying-pan, and the cats  
eat it.

*Toby.* I have no power to pray ! It grows still  
longer,

'Tis steeple-high now ; and it sails away, Nurse.  
Let's call the butler up, for he speaks Latin,  
And that will daunt the devil. I am blasted ;  
My belly's grown to nothing.

*Nurse.* Fly, fly, Toby !

[*Exit with Tosv.*

*Alathe.* So let them go ! And whilst they are  
astonish'd,

Let's presently upon the rest now, suddenly.

*Luro.* Off, off, and up again when we're near  
the parlour ! [*She descends.*

Art sure thou know'st the chest ?

*Alathe.* Tho' it were i' th' dark, sir,  
I can go to it.

*Luro.* On then, and be happy. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter Tosv.*

*Toby.* How my haunches quake ! Is the thing  
here still ?

Now can I out-do any button-maker at his own  
trade ;

I have fifteen fits of an ague.—Nurse, 'tis gone, I  
hope ;

The hard-hearted woman has left me alone.—  
Nurse !

And she knows too I ha' but a lean conscience to  
keep me company. [*Noise within.*

The devil's among 'em in the parlour sure,  
The ghost three stories high, he has the Nurse  
sure,

He's boiling of her bones now ; hark, how she  
whistles !

There's gentlewomen within too ; how will they do ?  
I'll to the cook, for he was drunk last night,  
And now he's valiant ; he's a-kin to th' devil too,  
And fears no fire. [*Exit.*

*Enter LURCHER and ALATHE, with a Coffin.*

*Luro.* No light ?

*Alathe.* None left, sir ;

They are gone, and carried all the candles with 'em.  
Their fright is infinite ; let's make good use on't :  
We must be quick, sir, quick, or the house will rise

*Luro.* Was this the chest ? [else.

*Alathe.* Yes, yes.

*Luro.* There was two of 'em,

Or I mistake.

*Alathe.* I know the right. No stay, sir,  
Nor no discourse, but to our labour lustily !  
Put to your strength, and make as little noise—  
Then presently out at the back door.

*Luro.* Come boy ;

Come, happy child, and let me hug thy excellence !  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.—*Another in the same.*

*Enter WILDBRAIN with a Light.*

*Wildb.* What thousand noises pass through all  
the rooms !

What cries and hurries ! Sure the devil's drunk,  
And tumbles through the house. My villainies,  
That never made me apprehend before  
Danger or fear, a little now molest me :

My cousin's death sits heavy o' my conscience ;  
'Would I had been half-hang'd when I hammer'd  
I aimed at a living divorce, not at burial, [it !

That Frank might have had some hope. Hark !  
In every room confusion ; they're all mad [still  
Most certain all stark-mad within the house ;

A punishment inflicted for my lewdness,  
That I might have the more sense of my mischief,  
And run the more mad too. My aunt is hang'd  
sure,

Sure hang'd herself, or else the fiend has fetch'd  
her.

I heard a hundred cries, " the devil, the devil ! "

Then roaring, and then tumbling; all the cham-  
Are a mere Babel, or another Bedlam. [bers  
What should I think? I shake myself too:  
Can the devil find no time, but when we are merry?  
Here's something comes.

Enter Mrs. NEWLOVE.

Newl. Oh, that I had some company,  
(I care not what they were) to ease my misery,  
To comfort me!

Wildb. Who's that?

Newl. Again? Nay then receive—

Wildb. Hold, hold! I am no fury.—

The merchant's wife!

Newl. Are you a man? Pray Heaven you be!

Wildb. I am.

Newl. Alas, I have met, sir,  
The strangest things to-night.

Wildb. Why do you stare?

Newl. Pray comfort me, and put your candle  
For if I see the spirit again I die for't. [out;  
And hold me fast, for I shall shake to pieces else.

Wildb. I'll warrant you, I'll hold you,  
Hold you as tenderly—I have put the light out;  
Retire into my chamber, there I'll watch w' ye,  
I'll keep you from all frights.

Newl. And will you keep me?

Wildb. Keep you as secure, lady—

Newl. You must not wrong me then; the devil  
will have us.

Wildb. No, no, I'll love you; then the devil  
will fear us;

For he fears all that love. Pray come in quickly!  
For this is the malicious hour he walks in,  
The hour he blasts sweet faces, lames the limbs in,  
Depraves the senses; now within this half-hour,  
He will have power to turn all citizens' wives  
Into strange creatures, owls, and long-tail'd mon-  
kies,

Jays, pies, and parrots: Quickly! I smell his  
brimstone.

Newl. It comes again! I am gone; shift for  
yourself, sir! [Exit.

Wildb. Sure this whole night is nothing but il-  
lusion.

Here's nothing comes: all they are mad! damn'd  
devil,

To drive her back again! It had been thy policy  
To have let us alone: we might have done some  
fine thing

To have made thy hell-hound laugh: 'Tis a dainty  
wench;

If I had her again, not all your fellow goblins,  
Nor all their claws, should scratch her hence. I'll  
stay still;

May be her fright will bring her back again;  
Yet I will hope.

Enter TOBY.

Toby. I can find no bed, nobody, nor no chamber:  
Sure they are all i' th' cellar! and I cannot find  
that neither.

I am led up and down like a tame ass; my light's out,  
And I grope up and down like blind-man buff,  
And break my face, and break my pate.

Wildb. It comes again sure!

I see the shadow; I'll have faster hold now.  
Sure she's mad; I long to lie with a mad woman,  
She must needs have rare new tricks.

Toby. I hear one whisper:

If it be the devil now to allure me into his clutches,  
For devils have a kind of tone like crickets—

Wildb. I have a glimpse of her guise: 'Tis she,  
But I'll stand sure. [would steal by me,

Toby. I have but a dram of wit left,  
And that's even ready to run: Oh, for my bed now!

Wildb. She named a bed; I like that, she re-  
Where is she now? [pents serv:

Toby. Who's that?

Wildb. Are you there? In, in,

In presently!

Toby. I feel his talons through me;  
'Tis an old haggard devil; what will he do with me!

Wildb. Let me kiss thee first, quick, quick!

Toby. A lecherous devil!

Wildb. What a hairy whore 'tis; sure she has a  
muffler.

Toby. If I should have a young Satan by him,  
(for I dare not deny him)

In what case were I! Who durst deliver me?

Wildb. 'Tis but my fancy; she's the same. In  
Gently, my sweet girl! [quickly,

Toby. Sweet devil, be good to me! [Essent.

SCENE III.—A Room in the House of LURCHER'S  
Mistress.

Enter LURCHER and ALATHE.

Lurc. Where's my love, boy?

Alathe. She's coming with a candle,  
To see our happy prize.

Lurc. I am cruel weary.

Alathe. I cannot blame ye; plate is very heavy  
To carry without light or help.

Lurc. The fear too

At every stumble to be discover'd, boy,

At every cough to raise a constable!

Well, we'll be merry now.

Alathe. We have some reason:

Things compass'd without fear or imminent danger.

Are too luxurious, sir, to live upon:

Money and wealth got thus are as full venture,

And carry in their natures as much merit,

As his that digs 'em out o' th' mine; they taste too

Season'd with doubts and dangers, most deliciously;

Riches that fall upon us are too ripe,

And dull our appetites.

Lurc. Most learned child!

Enter LURCHER'S Mistress.

Mistress. You are welcome! where have you

Lurc. In the next room, hard by. [left it:

Mistress. Is it plate all?

Lurc. All, all, and jewels. I am monstrous  
Pr'ythee let's go to bed. [weary;

Mistress. Pr'ythee let's see't first.

Lurc. To-morrow's a new day, sweet.

Mistress. Yes, to melt it;

But let's agree to-night, how it shall be handled.

I'll have a new gown—

Lurc. 'Sha't have anything.

Mistress. And such a riding-suit as Mistress  
Newlove's:

What though I be no gentlewoman born,

I hope I may achieve it by my carriage.

Lurc. Thou say'st right. [laquey.

Mistress. You promised me a horse too, and a

Lurc. Thou shalt have horses six, and a postilion.

Mistress. That will be stately, sweetheart; a  
postilion?

*Luro.* Nay, we'll be in fashion; he shall ride before us

In winter with as much dirt would damp a mus-The inside of our coach shall be of scarlet. [quiet;

*Mistress.* That will be dear.

*Luro.* There is a dye projecting [anything. Will make it cheap, wench. Come, thou shalt have

*Mistress.* Where is this chest? I long, sweet, Our Indies. [to behold

*Alathe.* Mistress, let's melt it first, and then 'tis fit

You should dispose it; then 'tis safe from danger.

*Mistress.* I'll be a loving mistress to my boy too. Now fetch it in, and let's rejoice upon't.

*Alathe.* Hold your light, mistress, we may see to enter.

[LUNCHER and ALATHE drag in the Coffin.

*Mistress.* Ha! what's here? Call you this a

*Alathe.* We ha' miss'd, sir; [chest? Our haste and want of light made us mistake.

*Mistress.* A very coffin!

*Luro.* How! a coffin? Boy, 'tis very like one.

*Alathe.* The devil owed us a shame, and now he

*Mistress.* Is this your treasure? [has paid us

*Alathe.* Bury me alive in't.

*Luro.* It may be there's no room.

*Mistress.* Nay, I will search it: I'll see what wealth's within.—

[They open the Coffin, in which MARIA appears.

A woman's face,

And a fair woman's?

*Alathe.* I cannot tell, sir;

Belike this was the sadness that possess'd 'em.

The plate stood next, I am sure.

*Luro.* I shake, I shake, boy;

What a cold sweat!

*Alathe.* This may work. What will become on's, sir?

*Mistress.* She's cold, dead cold; d'ye find your conscience?

D'ye bring your Gillians hither?—Nay, she's pu-Your conceal'd love's cas'd up. [nish'd,

*Luro.* It is Maria;

The very same, the bride: New horror!

*Mistress.* These are fine tricks; you hope she's in a swoon,

But I'll take order she shall ne'er recover

To bore my nose: come, take her up and bury her quickly, or I'll cry out; take her up instantly.

*Luro.* Be not so hasty, fool; that may undo us: We may be in for murder so: Be patient;

Thou seest she's dead, and cannot injure thee.

*Mistress.* I am sure she shall not.

*Alathe.* Be not, sir, dejected

Too much: A strange mistake! this had not been It makes me almost weep to think upon it. [else;

*Luro.* What an unlucky thief am I!

*Mistress.* I'll no considering; either bestir your-

*Luro.* Hold! [self, or—

*Mistress.* Let it not stay to smell then; I will Endure the stink of a rival. [not

*Luro.* 'Would 'twere there again!

*Alathe.* We must bury her.

*Luro.* But where o' th' sudden, or with what That no eyes watch us? [providence,

*Mistress.* Take a spade and follow me; [yard: The next fair ground we meet make the church-As I live I'll see her lodged. [Exit.

*Luro.* It must be so;

How heavy my heart is! I ha' no life left.

*Alathe.* I am past thinking too, no understand-That I should miss the right chest! [ing:

*Luro.* The happy chest!

*Alathe.* That which I saw and mark'd too!

*Luro.* Well, passion wo'not help us.

Had I twenty falls for this—

*Alathe.* 'Twas my fault, sir.

*Luro.* And twenty thousand fears for this! Oh, the devil!

Now could I curse! Well, we have her now, And must dispose of her.

Enter Mistress.

*Mistress.* Hang both, for two blind buzzards! Here's a spade?

Quickly, or I'll call the neighbours.

*Luro.* There's no remedy;

'Would the poor hungry prisoners had this pasty! [Exit, carrying out the Coffin.

SCENE IV.—Near the Church-yard, behind ALATHE'S House.

Enter ALATHE and a Servant with a Torch.

*Serv.* 'Twas a strange mischance, sir.

*Alg.* Mischance, say'at? No, 'twas happiness to me;

There is so much charge saved; I have her portion; I'll marry twenty more on such conditions.

*Serv.* Did it not trouble you, sir, to see her dead?

*Alg.* Not much, I thank my conscience: I was tormented till that happen'd; furies Were in my brain, to think myself a cuckold At that time of the night.

When I come home, I charge you shut my doors! Locks, bolts, and bars, are little enough to secure

*Serv.* Why, an it please you? [me.

*Alg.* Fool, to ask that question!

To keep out women. I expect her mother Will visit me with her clamours: Oh, I hate Their noise, and do abhor the whole sex heartily! They are all walking devils, harpies; I will study A week together how to rail sufficiently Upon 'em all: And, that I may be furnish'd, Thou shalt buy all the railing books and ballads That malice hath invented against women: I will read nothing else, and practise 'em, Till I grow fat with curses.

*Serv.* If you'll go

To th' charge, let me alone to find you books!—What's that? They come near us.

*Alg.* Where? hold up the torch, knave!

*Serv.* Did you hear nothing? 'tis a—

*Alg.* Why dost make a stand?

*Serv.* What's that?

*Alg.* Where, where? dost see anything?

We are hard by the church-yard, and I was never Valiant at midnight in such irksome places; They say ghosts walk sometimes.—Hark! d'ye hear nothing?

Enter LUNCHER and ALATHE, with the Coffin, and Mistress.

*Mistress.* No further; dig here, and lay her in quickly.

*Luro.* What light is that, boy? we shall be discovered!

Set the coffin up an end, and get behind me; There's no avoiding.

*Alathe.* Oh!

*Alg.* Where is that groan ?  
I begin to be afraid.  
*Serv.* What shall we do, sir ?  
*Alg.* We are almost at home now ; thou must  
Perhaps 'twas my imagination. [go forward ;  
*Luro.* 'Tis he !  
*Alathe.* I know him too ; let me alone.  
*Serv.* Oh, sir,  
A ghost, the very ghost of mistress bride !  
I have no power to run away.  
*Alg.* Cursed ghost ! bless me ! preserve me !  
I do command thee, whatsoe'er thou art,  
I do conjure thee, leave me ; do not fright me.  
If thou be'st a devil, vex me not so soon !  
If thou be'st—the spirit of my wife—  
*Alathe.* Thy wife.  
*Alg.* I shall be tormented !  
*Alathe.* Thy abused wife,  
That cannot peaceably enjoy her death.  
Thou hast an evil conscience.  
*Alg.* I know it.  
*Alathe.* Among thy other sins, which black thy  
Call to thy mind thy vow made to another, [soul,  
Whom thou hast wrong'd, and make her satisfac-  
Now I am dead, thou perjured man ! or else [tion  
A thousand black tormentors shall pursue thee,  
Until thou leap into eternal flames ;  
Where gold, which thou adorest here on earth,  
Melted, the fiends shall pour into thy throat !  
For this time, pass ; go home and think upon me !  
*Luro.* Away !  
*Serv.* There are more spirits !  
*Alg.* Thank you, dear wife !  
I'll bestow twenty nobles o' a tomb for thee ;  
Thou shalt not walk and catch cold after death.  
[*They go backward into the House.*

*Luro.* So, so ; they are gone ; 'twas my ingeni-  
ous rascal !  
But how dost know he made vows to another ?  
*Alathe.* I overheard the women talk to-night  
on't ;  
But now let's lose no time, sir ! pray let's bury  
This gentlewoman. Where's my mistress ?

*Enter Mistress.*

*Mistress.* Here ; I durst not tarry.  
*Luro.* We ha' so cozen'd the old forty i' th'  
hundred,  
An the devil hinder him not, he'll go a pilgrimage ;  
But come, about our business ! set her down again.  
*Maria.* Oh !  
*Luro.* She groans ! ha !  
*Maria.* Oh !  
*Luro.* Again ! she stirs !  
*Mistress.* Let's fly, or else we shall be torn in  
pieces.  
*Luro.* An you be good at that, bury yourself,  
Or let the sexton take you for his fee.  
Away, boy ! [Exit.  
*Maria.* [Rises from the Coffin.] I am very cold,  
dead-cold !  
Where am I ? what's this ? a coffin ? where have I  
been ? [Exit.  
Mercy defend me ! Ha ! I do remember  
I was betrayed and sounded. My heart aches ;  
I am wood'rous hungry too ; dead bodies eat not ;  
Sure I was meant for burial ; I am frozen ;  
Death, like a cake of ice, dwells round about me :  
Darkness spreads o'er the world too. Where ?  
what path ?  
Best Providence, direct me ! [Exit.

### ACT III.

#### SCENE I.—A Room in the Lady's House.

*Enter Lady, WILDBRAIN, Women, and Toby.*

*Lady.* Thou art the most unfortunate fellow—  
*Wildb.* Why, aunt,  
What have I done ?  
*Lady.* The most malicious varlet—  
Thy wicked head never at rest, but hammering  
And hatching hellish things, and to no purpose,  
So thou may'st have thy base will.  
*Wildb.* Why do you rail thus ?  
Cannot a scurvy accident fall out,  
But I must be at one end on't ?  
*Lady.* Thou art at both ends.  
*Wildb.* Cannot young sullen wenches play the  
fools,  
And marry, and die, but I must be the agent ?  
All that I did (and if that be an injury,  
Let the world judge it) was but to persuade her,  
(And, as I take it, I was bound to it too,)  
To make the reverend coxcomb, her husband,  
cuckold :  
What else could I advise her ? was there harm i'  
this ?  
You are of years, and have run through experience ;  
Would you be content, if you were young again,  
To have a continual cough grow to your pillow ?  
A rottenness, that vaults are perfumes to,

Hang in your roof, and like a fog infect you ?  
Anointed hams, to keep his hinges turning,  
Reek ever in your nose, and twenty night-caps,  
With twenty several sweats ?  
*Toby.* Some Jew, some justice,  
A thousand heathen-smells, to say truth, madam ;  
And would you mellow my young pretty mistress  
In such a mis-ken ?  
*Lady.* Sirrah,  
Where is the body of my girl ?  
*Wildb.* I know not ;  
I am no conjurer : You may look the body !  
I was like to be stolen away myself ; the spirit  
Had like to ha' surpris'd me in the shape of a  
woman,  
Of a young woman, and you know those are dan-  
gerous.  
*Toby.* So had I, madam, simply though I stand  
here,  
I had been ravish'd too : I had twenty spirits ;  
In every corner of the house a fiend met me.  
*Lady.* You lie, like rascals ! Was Mistress New-  
love such  
A spirit, sir, to fright your worship ? Well,  
I discharge you, sir ; you are now at liberty ;  
Live where you please, and do what pranks you  
fancy ; [Exit.  
You know your substance : Though you are my

I am no way bound, sir, to protect your mischief:  
So, fare you well!

*Wildb.* Farewell, good aunt! I thank you!  
Adieu, honest Nick! The devil, if he have power,  
Will persecute your old bones for this marriage.  
Farewell, Mistress Win! *[Exit Lady.]*

*Toby.* And shall we part with dry lips?  
Shall we, that have been fellow-devils together,  
Flinch for an old woman's fart?

*Wildb.* 'Tis a fine time o'night too; but we  
must part, Nick.

*Toby.* Shall we never ring again? ne'er toss the  
And roll the changes in a cup of claret? *[tenor,*  
You shall not want; whate'er I lay my hands on  
*(As I am sure Automedon the coachman)*  
Shall be distributed: Bear up, I say, hang sorrow!  
Give me that bird abroad that lives at pleasure.  
Sam the butler's true, the cook a reverend Trojan;  
The falkner shall sell his hawks, and swear they  
were rotten;

There be some wand'ring spoons, that may be met  
with;

I'll pawn a coach-horse. Peace, utter no sentences!  
The harness shall be used in our wars also:  
Or shall I drive her *(tell me but your will now;*  
Say but the word) over some rotten bridge,  
Or by a marl-pit side? she may slip in daintily;  
Let me alone for myself!

*Wildb.* No, no; farewell, Toby!  
Farewell, spiny Nicholas! no such thing;  
There be ways i' the world—if you see me  
A day or two hence, may be we'll crack a quart yet,  
And pull a bell. Commend me to the household!  
Nay, cry not, Toby; 'twill make thy head giddy.

*Toby.* Sweet Master Wildbrain!

*Wildb.* No more, Toby; go,

The times may alter.—

But where's the corpse of my dead cousin,  
If she be dead? I hoped 't had but dissembled:  
That sits heavy here. Toby, honest Toby,  
Lend me thy lanthorn; I forgot 'twas dark;  
I had need look to my ways now.

*Toby.* Take a lodging with me to-night in the  
stable,

And ride away to-morrow with one of the horses,  
Next your heart, pray do!

*Wildb.* No.

Good night, good neighbour Toby! I will wander;  
I scorn to submit myself, ere I have rambled—  
But whither, or with what? that's more material;  
No matter; and the worst come, 'tis but stealing,  
And my aunt wo'not see me hang'd for her own  
credit;

And farewell in a halter costs me nothing. *[Exeunt.]*

SCENE II.—*The Church-yard.*

*Enter HEARTLOVE.*

*Heartl.* The night, and all the evils the night  
covers,  
The goblins, hags, and the black spawn of dark-  
ness,

Cannot fright me. No, Death, I dare thy cruelty!  
For I am weary both of life and light too.  
Keep my wits, Heaven! They say spirits appear  
To melancholy minds, and the graves open:  
I would fain see the fair Maria's shadow,  
But speak unto her spirit, ere I died,  
But ask upon my knees a mercy from her.  
I was a villain; but her wretched kinsman,

That set his plot, shall with his heart-blood satisfy  
Her injured life and honour.—What light's this?

*Enter WILDBRAIN with a lanthorn.*

*Wildb.* It is but melancholy walking thus;  
The tavern-doors are barricadoed too,  
Where I might drink till morn, in expectation;  
I cannot meet the watch neither; nothing in  
The likeness of a constable, whom I might,  
In my distress, abuse, and so be carried,  
For want of other lodging, to the Counter.

*Heartl.* 'Tis his voice; Fate, I thank thee!

*Wildb.* Ha! who's that? An thou be't a man,  
speak:

Frank Heartlove? then I bear my destinies!  
Thou art the man of all the world I wish'd for:  
My aunt has turned me out a-doors; she has,  
At this unchristian hour; and I do walk  
Methinks like Guido Faux, with my dark lanthorn,  
Stealing to set the town a-fire; i' th' country  
I should be ta'en for William o' the Wisp,  
Or Robin Good-fellow. And how dost, Frank?

*Heartl.* The worse for you!

*Wildb.* Come, thou'rt a fool. Art going to thy  
lodging?

I'll lie with thee to-night; and tell thee stories,  
How many devils we ha' met withal;  
Our house is haunted, Frank, whole legions—  
I saw fifty for my share.

*Heartl.* Didst not fright 'em?

*Wildb.* How! fright 'em? No, they frighted  
me sufficiently.

*Heartl.* Thou hadst wickedness enough to make  
them stare,

And be afraid o' thee, malicious devil! *[Draws.]*  
And draw thy sword; for, by Maria's soul,  
I will not let thee 'scape, to do more mischief.

*Wildb.* Thou art mad! what dost mean?

*Heartl.* To kill thee; nothing else will ease my  
The injury is fresh I bleed withal; *[anger:]*  
Nor can that word express it, there's no peace in't,  
Nor must it be forgiven, but in death:  
Therefore call up thy valour, if thou hast any,  
And summon up thy spirits to defend thee!  
Thy heart must suffer for thy damned practices  
Against thy noble cousin, and my innocence.

*Wildb.* Hold! hear a word! did I do anything  
But for your good? That you might have her?  
That in that desperate time I might redeem her,  
Although with show of loss?

*Heartl.* Out, ugly villain!

Fling on her the most hated name of *whore*  
To the world's eye, and face it out in courtesy?  
Bring him to see't, and make me drunk to attempt  
it?

*Enter MARIA, in her shroud.*

*Maria.* I hear some voices this way.

*Heartl.* No more! if you can pray,  
Do it as you fight.

*Maria.* What new frights oppose me?  
I have heard that tongue.

*Wildb.* 'Tis my fortune;  
You could not take me in a better time, sir;  
I have nothing to lose, but the love I lent thee.  
My life my sword protect! *[Draws. They fight.]*

*Maria.* I know 'em both; but, to prevent their  
ruins,

Must not discover—Stay, men most desperate!  
The mischief you are forward to commit

Will keep me from my grave; and tie my spirit  
To endless troubles else.

*Wildb.* Ha! 'tis her ghost!

*Heartl.* Maria!

*Maria.* Hear me both! Each wound you make  
Runs through my soul, and is a new death to me;  
Each threat'ning danger will affright my rest.  
Look on me, Heartlove, and, my kinsman, view  
Was I not late, in my unhappy marriage [me]  
Sufficient miserable, full of all misfortunes,  
But you must add, with your most impious angers,  
Unto my sleeping dust this insolence?  
Would you teach Time to speak eternally,  
Of my disgraces? make records to keep 'em,  
Keep them in brass? Fight then, and kill my  
honour!

Fight deadly both; and let your bloody swords,  
Through my revived and recking infamy,  
(That never shall be purged) find your own ruins!  
Heartlove, I loved thee once; and hoped again  
In a more blessed love to meet thy spirit:  
If thou kill'st him, thou art a murderer;  
And murder shall never inherit Heaven.  
My time is come, my conceal'd grave expects me:  
Farewell, and follow not! your feet are bloody,  
And will pollute my peace.—I hope they are  
melted:

This is my way sure. [Exit.]

*Heartl.* Stay, blessed soul!

*Wildb.* 'Would she had

Come sooner, and ha' saved some blood!

*Heartl.* Dost bleed?

*Wildb.* Yes, certainly; I can both see and  
feel it.

*Heartl.* Now I well hope it is not dangerous.  
Give me thy hand; as far as honour guides me,  
I will know thee again. [Exit.]

*Wildb.* I thank thee heartily;—

I know not where to get a surgeon.  
This vision troubles me; sure she is living,  
And I was foolish blind, I could not find it.  
I bleed apace still, and my heart grows heavy:  
If I go far I faint; I'll knock at this house,  
They may be charitable. 'Would 'twere perfect  
day! [Knocks at a door.]

Enter Mistress.

*Mistress.* 'Tis not he.—What would you, sir!

*Wildb.* I would crave a little rest, lady,  
And for my hurts some surgery; I am a gentleman,  
That fortune of a fight—

*Mistress.* A handsome gentleman!  
Alas, he bleeds! a very handsome gentleman!

*Wildb.* A sweet young wench! beshrew my  
heart, a fair one!

Fortune has made me some recompense.  
*Mistress.* Pray, come in; the air is hurtful for  
you; [sently]  
Pray let me lead you; I'll have a bed for you pre-  
I'll be your surgeon too. Alas, sweet gentleman!

*Wildb.* I feel no hurts! the morning comes too  
fast now.

*Mistress.* Softly, I beseech you! [Exit.]

SCENE III.—The Street before ALGRIVE'S  
House.

Enter Lady and Toby.

*Toby.* He is not up yet, madam; what meant  
To come forth so early? [you]

*Lady.* You blockhead!

Your eyes are sowed up still; they cannot see  
When it is day.—Oh, my poor Maria!—  
Where be the women?

*Toby.* They said they would follow us.

*Lady.* He shall not laugh thus at my misery;  
And kill my child, and steal away her body,  
And keep her portion too.

*Toby.* Let him be hang'd for't;

You have my voice.

*Lady.* These women not come yet?

A son-in-law! I'll keep a conjurer,  
But I'll find out his knavery.

*Toby.* Do, and I'll help him.

And, if he were here, this whip should conjure him:  
Here's a *capias*, an it catch hold on's breech,  
I'd make him soon believe the devil were there.

*Lady.* An old usurer!

*Toby.* He married the money; that is all he  
look'd for;

For your daughter, let her sink or swim.

*Lady.* I'll swim him!

This is his house: I wonder they stay thus.  
That we might rail him out on's wits!

*Toby.* They'll come,

Fear not, madam, and bring clappers with 'em.  
Or some have lost their old wont: I have heard  
(No disparagement to your ladyship) some o' their  
Like Tom-a-Lincoln, three miles off. [tongues,

*Lady.* Oh fy!

How tedious are they!

*Toby.* What an we lost no time?

You and I shall make a shift to begin with him,  
And tune our instruments till the consort come  
To make up the full noise: I'll knock.

*Alg.* [At a window.] Who is that raps so saucily?

*Toby.* 'Tis I;

*Toby;* Come down, or else we'll fetch you down.  
Alas, this is but the saunce-bell; here's a gentle-  
woman

Will ring you another peal: Come down, I say!

*Alg.* Some new fortifications! look to my doors!  
Put double bars! I will not have her enter,  
Nor any of her tribe: They come to terrify me.  
Keep out her tongue too, if you can!

*Lady.* I hear you,

And I will send my tongue up to your worship;  
The echo of it shall fly o'er the street.

My daughter, that thou kill'dst with kindness,  
Jew,

That thou betray'dst to death, thou double Jew,  
And after stol'st her body!

*Toby.* Jew's too good for him.

*Alg.* I defy you both!

Thy daughter played the villain, and betrayed me,  
Betrayed my honour.

*Lady.* Honour, rascal?

And let that bear an action, I'll try it with thee.  
Honour?

*Toby.* Oh, reprobate!

*Lady.* Thou musty justice,

Buy an honourable halter, and hang thyself!

*Toby.* A worshipful rope's end is too good for  
him.

*Lady.* Get honour that way; thou wot die a dog

*Toby.* Come, and be whipt first! [cisc.]

*Lady.* Where's her portion?

*Alg.* Where

I'll keep it safely.

*Nurse.* Traitor, thou shalt not keep it!

*Enter Nurse and Women.*

*Alg.* More of the kennel? Put more bolts to th' doors there,  
And arm yourselves! Hell is broke loose upon us.  
*Toby.* I am glad ye are come; we'll blow the house down.  
*Lady.* Oh, Nurse, I have such cause—  
*Women.* Villain, viper!—  
Although you had no cause, we are bound to help.  
*Nurse.* Yes, and believe; we come not here to examine;  
And, if you please, we'll fire the house.  
*Alg.* Call the constable!  
*Toby.* A charitable motion! fire is comfortable.  
*Lady.* No, no; we'll only let him know our minds;  
We will commit no outrage; he's a lawyer.  
*Alg.* Give me my musquet!  
*Lady.* Where's my daughter's body,  
That I may bury it?  
*Women.* Speak, or we'll bury thee!  
*Nurse.* Alive we'll bury thee; speak, old Iniquity!  
*Toby.* Bury him alive, by all means, for a testimony.  
*Alg.* Their voices make my house reel; oh, for officers!  
I am in a dream!—Thy daughter's spirit walks  
A-nights, and troubles all the neighbours: Go  
Hire a conjurer; I'll say no more.  
*Lady.* The law shall say more!  
*Women. Nurse.* We are witnesses;  
And, if thou be'st not hang'd—

*Enter LURCHER and ALATHE, disguised as Pedlars.*

*Lurc.* Buy a Book of good manners,  
A short book of good manners!  
*Alathe.* Buy a ballad,  
A ballad of the maid was got with child!  
*Toby.* That might ha' been my case last night;  
I'll ha't,  
Whate'er it cost me.  
*Alathe.* A ballad of the witches hang'd at Ludlow!  
*Toby.* I'll have that too;  
There was an aunt of mine, I think, amongst 'em;  
I would be glad to hear her testament.  
*Lurc.* A new book of women!  
*Alg.* The thunder's laid; how they stare at him!  
*Lurc.* A new book of fools, a strange book,  
Very strange fools!  
*Alg.* I'll owe thee a good turn, whate'er thou  
*Lurc.* A book of walking spirits! [art.  
*Alg.* That I like not.  
*Toby.* Nor I; they walk'd me the fools' morris.  
*Lurc.* A book of wicked women!  
*Alg.* That's well thought on.  
*Lurc.* Of rude, malicious women, of proud women,  
Of scolding women;—We shall ne'er get in.  
*Alathe.* A ballad of wrong'd maids!  
*Lady.* I'll buy that.  
*Lurc.* A little, very little book,  
Of good and godly women, a very little one,  
So little you may put it in a nutshell!  
*Toby.* With a small print that nobody can read it.  
*Nurse.* Peace, sirrah, or I'll tear your books.  
*Alg.* Open the door and let him in; I love him.

*Lurc.* A book of evil magistrates!  
*Lady.* Ay, marry!  
D'ye hear that, justice?  
*Lurc.* And their eviller wives,  
That wear their places in their petticoats!  
*Alg.* D'ye hear that, Lady?  
*Alathe.* A book new printed against playing,  
dancing,  
Masking, may-poles; a zealous brother's book,  
And full of fables!  
*Lurc.* Another book of women, of mad women,  
Women that were burn in March!  
[*Exit with ALATHE into the house.*  
*Lady.* Are you got in?  
We would ha' pull'd your knave's hide else!—  
This fellow  
Was sent to abuse us; but we shall have time  
To talk more with this justice.  
*Alg.* Farewell, madam!  
As you like this, come visit me again,  
You and your treble strings. Now scold your hearts out!  
*Wom.* Shall he carry it thus away?  
*Nurse.* Go to the judge,  
And what you'll have us swear—  
*Lady.* I thank ye heartily;  
I'll keep that for the last. I will go home,  
And leave him to his conscience for a while;  
If it sleep long, I'll wake it with a vengeance!  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.—*An Out-House near the same.*

*Enter Servants.*

1 *Serv.* What book has he given thee?  
2 *Serv.* A dainty book; a book of the great  
Of fifteen hundred ships of cannon-proof, [navy,  
Built upon whales to keep their keels from sinking,  
And dragons in 'em, that spit fire ten mile,  
And elephants that carry goodly castles.  
1 *Serv.* Dost thou believe it?  
2 *Serv.* Shall we not believe books in print?  
1 *Serv.* I have John Taylor's book of hempseed  
too,  
Which, for two lines I happen'd on by chance,  
I reverence.  
2 *Serv.* I pry'thee what are they?  
1 *Serv.* They are so pat upon the time, as if  
He studied to answer the late *Histriomastix*;  
Talking of change and transformations,  
Thus wittily and learnedly he bangs him;  
"So may a Puritan's ruff, though starch'd in print,  
Be turn'd to paper, and a play writ in't."  
A play in the Puritan's ruff? I'll buy his works  
And confute Horace with a water-poet. [for't,  
What hast there? a ballad too?  
2 *Serv.* This? This is  
A piece of poetry indeed.—

[*He sings. ALORIFE cries within.*  
What noise is that?

1 *Serv.* Some cry i' th' streets: Pr'ythee sing on!  
[*Sings again. Another cry.*  
2 *Serv.* Again! dost not hear? 'Tis i' th' house  
certainly.  
1 *Serv.* 'Tis a strange noise! and has a tang o'  
th' justice.  
2 *Serv.* Let's see!  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.—*A Room in the same House.*

*Re-enter Servants, bringing in their Master bound and gagged.*

1 *Serv.* Untve his feet; pull out his gag,  
He will choak else! What desperate rogues were  
2 *Serv.* Give him fresh air. [these!

*Alg.* I'll never study books more!  
I am undone; these villains have undone me!  
Rifed my desk; they have undone me, learnedly!  
A fire take all their books! I'll burn my study.—  
Where were you, rascals, when the villains bound  
You could not hear? [me,

1 *Serv.* He gave us books, sir, dainty books to  
busy us;

And we were reading, in that which was the brew-  
house,

A great way off; we were singing ballads too,  
And could not hear.

*Alg.* This was a precious thief;  
A subtle trick to keep my servants safe!

2 *Serv.* What ha' you lost, sir?

*Alg.* They ransack'd all before my face, and  
threaten'd

To kill me if I cough'd; they have a chain,  
My rings, my box of casting gold, my purse too.  
They robb'd me miserably; but that which most  
grieves me,

They took away some writings; 'twas a rogue  
That knew me, and set on by the old Lady;  
I will indite her for't.

1 *Serv.* Shall we pursue 'em?

*Alg.* Run, run, curs'd rascals!  
I am out of my wits! Let not a creature in,  
No, not with necessaries!

2 *Serv.* We shall be starved.

*Alg.* I'll buy my meat at window, as they pass  
by,

(I wo' not trust my scrivener, he has books too)  
And bread I'll ha' flung up; I charge ye all  
Burn all the books i' th' house!

1 *Serv.* Your little prayer book?

*Alg.* I'll never pray again! I'll have my doors  
Made up, nothing but walls, and thick ones too:  
No sound shall tempt me again! Remember, I  
Have forswore books.

2 *Serv.* If you should be call'd to take your  
oath?

*Alg.* I will forswear all oaths, rather than see  
A thing but in the likeness of a book;  
An I were condemn'd, I'll rather chuse to hang  
Than read again. Come in, and search all places;  
They may be about the house: Were the doors  
lock'd?

1 *Serv.* But the keys in 'em; and if they be  
gone,

They could not want wit to lock us in, sir.

*Alg.* Never was man so miserably undone;  
I would lose a limb, to see their rogueships totter!  
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.—*An Apartment in the LADY'S  
House.*

*Enter LADY and Nurse.*

*Lady.* Thy brother's daughter, say'st, and born  
in Wales?

*Nurse.* I have long time desired to see her, and  
Your ladyship will not be offended. [I hope

*Lady.* No, no.

*Nurse.* I should be happy, if she might be  
serviceable

To you, madam.

*Lady.* Beshrew me, but at first she took me much.  
Is she not like Maria? setting aside  
Her language, very like her! and I love her  
The better for't. I pr'ythee call her hither.  
She speaks feat English.

*Nurse.* Why, Guennith, Guennith! du hummah,  
Guennith!

She is coarse, madam, after her country guise;  
And were she in fine clothes—

*Lady.* I'll have her handsome.

*Enter MARIA as a Servant.*

What part of Wales were you born in?

*Maria.* In Abehundis, madams.

*Nurse.* She speaks that name in Welsh, which  
we call Brecknock.

*Lady.* What can you do?

*Maria.* Her was toe many tings in Walls; know  
not

The fashions in Londons. Her was milk the cows,  
Make seze and butters, and spin very well  
The Welsh freeze; her was cooke to te mountain  
cots,

And sing very fine Prittitish tunes; was mage good  
ales

And breds; and her know to dance on Sunday,  
Marge you now, madams!

*Lady.* A pretty innocence!

I do like her infinitely, Nurse; and if I live—

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Here's Master Heartlove, madam, come  
to see you.

*Lady.* Alas, poor gentleman! Pr'ythee admit  
him.

*Enter HEARTLOVE and Gentlemen.*

*Heartl.* Madam, I am come to take my last  
leave—

*Lady.* How, sir.

*Heartl.* Of all my home affections, and my  
friends:

For the interest you had once in Maria,  
I would acquaint you when I leave the kingdom.

*Lady.* 'Would there were anything in my poor  
power

That might divert your will, and make you happy!  
I am sure I have wronged her too; but let your  
pardon

Assure me you are charitable: She is dead,  
Which makes us both sad. What do you look on?

*Heartl.* The likest face—

*Maria.* Pless us awle? why does that sentilman  
make

Such undars and mazements at her! I know bet  
not.

*Heartl.* Be not offended, maid!

*Lady.* How the wench blushes!

She represents Maria's loss to him.

*Maria.* Will the sentilman hart her? Pray you  
be her defences!

Was have mad phianomies; is her troubled  
With lunaticks in her prain-pans? Pless us awle!

*Heartl.* Where had you this face?

*Maria.* Her faces be our nowne, I warrant her.

*Heartl.* I wo' not hurt you.—All the lineaments

That built Maria up, all those springing beauties,  
Dwell on this thing; change but her tongue, I  
know her.

Let me see your hand!

*Maria. Duguin!* Was never thieves and rob-  
beries;

Here is no sidge in her hands, warrant her.

*Heartl.* Trust me, the self-same white  
And softness! Pr'ythee speak our English dialect.

*Maria.* Ha leggs? what, does her speage hard  
urds to her,

To make poor Guennith ridicules? was no man-  
nerly

Sentilman, to abuse her.

*Heartl.* By the love,

That everlasting love I bear Maria—

*Maria.* Maria? her name was Guennith; and  
goed names;

Was poor else, oman maid; her have no fine  
kanags,

To mage her tricsy; yet, in her own cuntries,  
Was held a fine ense, her can tell her, and honest  
Ense too, marg you dat now: Her can keep  
Her little legs close enough, warrant her.

*Lady.* How prettily this anger shews!

*1 Gent.* She gabbles innocently.

*Heartl.* Madam, farewell; and all good fortune  
dwell wi' ye!

With me my own affections! Farewell, maid,  
Fair gentle maid!

*2 Gent.* She sighs.

*Maria.* *Du cut a whee!*

*Heartl.* I cannot go; there's somewhat calls  
me back.

*Maria.* Poor Frank, [Aside.

How gladly would I entertain thy love,  
And meet thy worthy flame, but shame forbids  
me!—

If please her ladyships, dwell here with Guennith,  
And learn to spin and card ull, to mage flannels,  
And linsye-ulseis, sal tawge cood urds  
To her ladyships urships for her.—The tears flow  
from him. [Aside.

The tears of true affection! woe is me!  
Oh, cursed love, that glories in maids' miseries,  
And true men's broken hearts!

*Lady.* Alas, I pity him!—

The wench is rude, and knows you not; forgive  
her.

*Maria.* Wipe your eyes, pray you! though was  
porn in Walls, [Takes his hand.

Mong craggy rocks and mountains, yet heart is  
soft:

Look you, hur can weep too, when her see men  
mage

Prinie tears and lamentations.

*Heartl.* How hard she holds me!

Just as Maria did; weeps the same drops.  
Now, as I have a living soul, her sigh too!  
What shall I think?—Is not your name Maria?  
If it be not, delude me with so much charity  
To say it is.

*Maria.* Upon her life, you was mighty deal in  
love

With some podies; your pale seeks and hollow  
nyes,

And pantings upon her posom, know very well.  
Because, look you, her think her honest sentilman,  
You sall call her Maria.

*Heartl.* Good madam, think not ill I am thus  
saucy.

*Lady.* Oh, no, sir; be you not angry with the  
wench.

*Heartl.* I am most pleased.

*1 Gent.* Let's interrupt him; he'll be mad out-  
right else.

*2 Gent.* Observe a little more.

*Heartl.* 'Would I could in your language beg a  
kiss!

*Maria.* If her have necessities of a kiss, look  
you,

Dere is one in sarities!

*Heartl.* Let me suffer death,

If in my apprehension two twinn'd cherries  
Be more akin, than her lips to Maria's:  
And, if this harsh illusion would but leave her,  
She were the same.—Good madam, shall I have  
Your consent now—

*Lady.* To what?

*Heartl.* To give this virgin to me.

*Lady.* She is not mine; this is her kinswoman,  
And has more power to dispose.—Alas, I pity  
him!

Pray, gentlemen, prevail with him to go;  
More that I wish his comfort than his absence.

*Heartl.* You have been always kind to me; will  
you

Deny me your fair cousin?

*Nurse.* 'Twere fit you first obtain'd her own  
consent.

*Heartl.* He is no friend that wishes my depar-  
ture;

I do not trouble you!

*1 Gent.* 'Tis not Maria.

*Heartl.* Her shadow is enough; I'll dwell with  
that.

Pursue your own ways!—Shall we live together?

*Maria.* If her will come to-morrow and tauge to  
her,

Her will tell her more of her meanings; and then  
If her be melancholy, her will sing her  
A Welsh song too, to make her merries: But  
Guennith

Was very honest; her was never love  
But one sentilman, and he was bear her  
Great teal of good-ills too. Was marry one day:  
Saint Davy! her give her five pair of white gloves  
If her will dance at her weddings.

*Heartl.* All I am worth,

And all my hopes, this strange voice would for-  
sake her.

For then she should be—Pr'ythee stay a little!  
Hark in thine ear! dissemble not, but tell me,  
And save my life: I know you are Maria:  
Speak but, as I do, ten words to confirm me.  
You have an English soul; do not disguise it  
From me with these strange accents!—

[Exit MARIA.

She pinched hard

Again, and sigh'd.

*Lady.* What ails the wench? [Exit.

*Nurse.* Why, Guennith!

*Heartl.* She's gone too!

*2 Gent.* Come, leave this dream.

*Heartl.* A dream? I think so.

But 'twas a pleasing one. Now I'll obey,  
And forget all these wonders; lead the way!

[Exeunt.

## ACT IV.

SCENE I.—*The Street before ALGRIPK'S House.**Enter WILDBRAIN and TOBY.**Wildb.* Honest Toby!*Toby.* Sweet Master Wildbrain! I am glad I ha' met wi' ye.*Wildb.* Why? did my aunt send for me?*Toby.* Your aunt's a mortal; and thinks not on For aught I can perceive. [you,*Wildb.* Is my cousin Alive again?*Toby.* Neither; and yet we do not Hear that she's buried.*Wildb.* What should make thee glad then?*Toby.* What should make me glad? Have I not cause?

To see your princely body well, and walk thus, Look blithe and bonny, and your wardrobe whole still!

*Wildb.* The case is clear; and I ha' found a mine,A perfect Indie, since my aunt cashier'd me: What think'st of this? [*Chinking money.**Toby.* Oh, delicate bells!*Wildb.* Thou puttest me in mind, We are to ring anon; I meant to send for thee: Meet me at the old parish-church.*Toby.* Say no more.*Wildb.* When thy Lady is a-bed, we ha' con- A midnight peal, for joy. [*spired**Toby.* If I fail, Hang me i' th' bell-ropes!*Wildb.* And how? and how does my aunt?*Toby.* She's up to th' ears in law:

I do so whirl her to the counsellor's chambers, And back again, and bounce her for more money, And to again—I know not what they do with her, But she's the merriest thing among these law-drivers,

And in their studies half a day together.

If they do get her with *Magna Charta*, she swears, By all the ability of her old body, She will so claw the justice—she will sell The tiles of the house, she vows, and sack out o' th' cellar,

(That she worships to idolatry) but she'll hang him.

*Wildb.* I would she could! But hark thee, honest If a man have a mistress, may we not, [*Toby!* Without my aunt's leave, borrow now and then A coach to tumble in, toward the Exchange, And so forth?*Toby.* A mistress?*Wildb.* She may be thine when we are married.*Toby.* Command, I'll carry you both in pomp; And let my Lady go a-foot a law-catching, And exercise her corns. Where is she, Master*Wildb.* 'Sha't see her. [*John?**Toby.* Shall we ring for her?*Wildb.* And drink her health.*Toby.* Drink stiffly for five hours?*Wildb.* We'll drink fifteen.*Toby.* To-night? We will ha' fifty torches then, And through the streets drive on triumphantly, Triumphantly we'll drive: By my Lady's door, As I'm a Christian coachman, I will rattle you, And urine in her porch, and she shall fear me.If you say more, I shall run mad outright! I will drink sack, and surfeit instantly; I know not where I am now! [*Exit.**Enter LURCINA.**Wildb.* Hold, for thy buttons' sake! the knave's*Luro.* Jack Wildbrain? [*transported.**Wildb.* Honest Tom, how thrives The felonious world with thee now?*Luro.* You look and talk as you were much ex- alted.*Wildb.* Thou art i' th' right, Tom. I will tell thee: First,

I ha' shook off my aunt, and yet I live still, And drink, and sing; her house had like to ha' spoil'd me.

I keep no hours now, nor need any false key To the old woman's cabinets; I ha' money Upon my word, and pawn no oaths to th' butler; No matrimonial protestations For sack-possets, to the chambermaid: I praise My fate, there be more ways to th' wood, Tom.

*Luro.* Pr'ythee

Release my wonder.

*Wildb.* I'll increase it: Wipe thine eyes; Here is a chain worth money, an some man had it, A foolish diamond, and other trifles—*Luro.* The very same! Oh, gypsey! infidel! All that I sweat, and ventured my neck for, He has got already: Who would trust a strumpet!*Wildb.* This? this is nothing to what I possess At home.*Luro.* What home?*Wildb.* A house that shall be nameless. The mistress of it mine too; such a piece For flesh and blood! added to that, so loving!*Luro.* Is she married?*Wildb.* I know not, nor I care not: But such a prize, so mounting, so delicious! Thou wilt run mad: I'll tell thee more hereafter.*Luro.* Nay pr'ythee a word more.*Wildb.* I took no pains to find out all this Paradise;My destiny threw me upon't i' th' dark; I found Wanting a lodging too. [*it,**Luro.* No old acquaintance?*Wildb.* Never, never saw her:

But these things happen not in every age. I cannot stay; if thou wilt meet anon At my own rendezvous, (thou know'st 'st the tavern;) We'll sup together; after that, a company Of merry lads have made a match to ring.

*Luro.* You keep your exercise i' th' old church?*Wildb.* No other;

There is no music to the bells: We would Have bonfires, if we durst. An thou wouldst come, It shall cost thee nothing, Tom: Hang pilfering. And keep me company! In time I may Shew thee my wench too.

*Luro.* I cannot promise; but you will be there?*Wildb.* We'll toss the bells, and make the steeple roar, boy:

But come to supper then!

*Luro.* My hand; and expect me.—Yes, I will come or send, and to some purpose.— Art come, boy? [*Exit WILDBRAIN.*

Enter ALATHE with Gown, Beard, and Constable's Staff.  
Excellent knave! How didst thou purchase these?

Alathe. The staff I stole last night from a sleeping constable;

The rest I borrow'd by my acquaintance with  
The players' boys. You were best to lose no time,  
sir. [Puts the Gown on LURCHER.]

Lurc. So, so; help, boy! 'tis very well; do not  
I look

Like one that breaks the king's peace with author-  
rity?

You know your charge; prepare things hand-  
somely,

My diligent boy, and leave me to my office.

Alathe. There wants nothing; all ready: But I  
fly, sir. [Exit.]

Lurc. Now, Fortune, prove no slut, and I'll  
adore thee! [Knocks.]

Serv. [At the door.] Who's there?

Lurc. A friend would speak with master justice.

Serv. Who are you?

Lurc. I'm the constable.

Serv. My master's not at leisure to hear business.

Lurc. How? not at leisure to do the king ser-  
vice?

Take heed what you say, sir! I know his worship,  
If he knew my business, would [make] no excuse.

Serv. You must go to another justice; I'll assure  
My master is not well in health.

Lurc. I know not;

But if your worshipful be not at leisure

To do himself a benefit—I am gone, sir—

An infinite benefit, and the state shall thank him  
for't;

Thank him, and think on him too. I am an officer,

And know my place; but I do love the justice;

I honour any authority above me:

Beside, he is my neighbour, and I worship him.

Serv. You have no books, nor ballads, Master  
Constable,

About you?

Lurc. What should I do with books? does it  
become

A man of my place to understand such matters?

Pray call your master; if he please to follow me,

I shall discover to him such a plot

Shall get him everlasting fame: I'll be hang'd for't,

An he be not knighted instantly, and for reward

Have some of the malefactors' lands I'll bring him

But I cannot dally time! [to;]

Alg. [At the Window.] Who's that?

Serv. A constable, sir, would speak about some  
business,

He says will bring you fame, and mighty profit.

Lurc. Please your worship come down, I'll make  
you happy:

The notablest piece of villainy I have in hand, sir,

And you shall find it out; I ha' made choice

To bring your worship to the first knowledge, and

Thank me, as you find the good on't afterwards.

Alg. What is it? treason?

Lurc. 'Tis little better, I can tell you; I have  
lodged

A crew of the most rank and desperate villains—

They talk of robberies, and ways they did 'em,

And how they left men bound in their studies.

Alg. With books and ballads?

Lurc. That, sir, that, and murders,

And thousand knaveries more; they are very rich,  
sir,

In money, jewels, chains, and a hundred more  
Deives.

Alg. Happy, happy constable! I'll meet you  
At the back door.—Get ready, knaves!

Lurc. Not a man, I beseech you!

I have privately appointed strength about me:

They cannot start; your men would breed suspi-

All my desire is, you would come alone, [cion:

That you might have the hope o' th' enterprise,

That you might hear 'em first, and then proceed,

Alg. I come, I come! [sir.]

Lurc. 'Tis very well.

Alg. Keep all my doors fast. It is something  
late.

Lurc. So, so! An't please your worship, I'll  
direct you. [Exeunt.]

SCENE II.—A Room in a Hovel.

Enter ALATHE.

Alathe. My master stays: I doubt his lime-twigs  
catch not:

If they do, all's provided. But I all

This while forget my own state: Fair Maria

Is certainly alive; I met her in

Another habit, with her Nurse; 'twas she!

There is some trick in't: But when this is over

I'll find it out. This project for the usurer

May have good effect; however, 'twill be sport

To mortify him a little.

Enter LURCHER.

He's come without him!—  
Have you fail'd, sir?

Lurc. Prosper'd, my little engineer: Away!

He is i' th' next room; be not you seen, sirrah!

[Exit.]

Alathe. The pit-fall's ready; never justice

Was caught in such a noose: Ere he get out,

He shall run through a scouring purgatory,

Shall purge him to the quick. 'Tis night already.

[Retires.]

Enter ALORISE and LURCHER.

Lurc. Come softly; yet, sir, softly! are you not  
weary?

Alg. Thou hast brought me into a melancholy  
I see no creature. [place;]

Lurc. This is, sir, their den,

Where they suppose themselves secure. I am faint

With making haste; but I must be thus troubled,

And therefore never go without a cordial;

Without this I should die: How it refreshes me.

[Seems to drink.]

Already! Will't please your worship—I might have  
had

The manners to ha' let you drink before me.

Now am I lusty.

Alg. [Drinks.] 'T has a good taste.

Lurc. Taste?

How do you find the virtue? Nay, sir, spare it not!

My wife has the receipt. Does it not stir

Your worship's body? When you come to examine,

'Twill make you speak like thunder.

Alg. Hoy he! [He yawns.]

Lurc. It works already. [Aside.]

Alg. Is there never a chair? I was wearier than

I thought.

But who shall we have to take 'em, Master Con-  
stable?

*Luro.* Let me alone! when I but give the watch-word,  
We will have men enough to surprise an army.  
*Alg.* I begin to be sleepy: What, hast a chair?

*Enter another with a Chair.*

*Luro.* They do not dream of us.—'Tis early rising,  
Care, care, and early rising! commonwealth's men  
Are ever subjects to the nods: Sit down, sir;  
A short nap is not much amiss.—So, so! he's fast,  
Fast as a fish i' th' net; he has winking powder  
Shall work upon him to our wish. Remove him!  
Nay, we may cut him into collops now,  
And he ne'er feel. Have you prepared the vault,  
sirrah?

*Alathe.* Yes, yes, sir; everything in's place.

*Luro.* When we ha' placed him, you and I,  
boy, must  
About another project hard by: His potion  
Will bind him sure enough till we return.  
This villainy weighs mainly; but we'll purge you.

[*Exeunt, carrying ALATHE out.*]

### SCENE III.—*Before a Church.*

*Enter Sexton. [Bells ring within.]*

*Sexton.* Now for mine ears! mine ears, be constant to me!  
They ring a wager, and I must deal justly;  
Ha, boys!

*Enter LURCER and ALATHE.*

*Luro.* Dost hear 'em? hark! these be the ringers.

*Alathe.* Are you sure the same?

*Luro.* Or my directions fail. The coast is clear:  
How the bells go! how daintily they tumble!  
And methinks they seem to say, "Fine fools, I'll fit you!"

*Sexton.* Excellent again, good boys!—Oh, that

*Luro.* Who's that? [*was naught.*]

*Alathe.* Be you conceal'd by any means yet.  
Hark!

They stop: I hope they'll to't again. Close, sir!

*Enter WILDBRAIN, TOBY, and Ringers.*

*Wildb.* A palpable knock!

*Ringer.* 'Twas none!

*Toby.* Be judged by the Sexton then!  
If I have years—

*Sexton.* A knock, a knock, a gross one!

*Toby.* Carman, your gallon of wine! you ring most impiously!

Art thou o' th' worshipful company of the knights  
O' th' West, and handle a bell with no more dex-  
You think you are in Thames-street, [*terity?*]  
Jusling the carts: Oh, a clean hand's a jewel!

*Alathe.* Good speed to your good exercise!

*Toby.* You are welcome!

*Alathe.* I come, sir, from a gentleman, and  
neighbour hard by,

One that loves your music well—

*Toby.* He may have more on't.—

Handle a bell as you were haling timber?

Gross, gross, and base, absurd!

*Ringer.* I'll mend it next peal.

*Alathe.* To treat a knowledge of you, whether  
it be

By th' ear you ring thus cunningly, or by th' eye;  
For, to be plain, he has laid ten pounds upon't.

*Wildb.* But which way has he laid?

*Alathe.* That your ear guides you,  
And not your eye.

*Toby.* He has won, he has won; the ear's  
Our only instrument.

*Alathe.* But how shall we  
Be sure on't?

*Toby.* Put all the lights out: to what end  
Serve our eyes then?

*Wildb.* A plain case!

*Alathe.* You say true.

'Tis a fine cunning thing to ring by th' ear, sure!  
And can you ring i' th' dark so?

*Wildb.* All night long, boy.

*Alathe.* 'Tis wonderful! Let this be certain,  
gentlemen,  
And half his wager he allows among ye:  
Is't possible you should ring so!

*Toby.* Possible?

Thou art a child! I'll ring when I'm dead-drunk.  
Out with the lights! no twinkling of a candle!

I know my rope too, as I know my nose,  
And can bang it soundly i' th' dark, I warrant you.

*Wildb.* Come, let's confirm him straight, and  
win the wager! [*Exeunt.*]

*Alathe.* Let me hear, to strengthen me: and  
I'll bring the money to you. [*when ye have rang.*]

*Luro.* So, so, follow 'em: [*Exit ALATHE.*]

They shall have a cool reward; one hath gold of  
mine,

Good store in's pocket; [*Ring.*]  
But this will be revenged in a short warning.

They are at it lustily: Hey, how wantonly  
They ring away their clothes! how it delights me!

*Enter ALATHE with Clothes.*

*Alathe.* Here, here, sir!

*Luro.* Hast Wildbrain's?

*Alathe.* His whole case, sir; I felt it out; and,  
by the guards,

This should be the coachman's; another suit too.

*Luro.* Away, boy, quickly now to th' usurer!

His hour to wake approaches.

*Alathe.* That once finish'd,  
You'll give me leave to play, sir. Here they come.

[*Exeunt.*]

### SCENE IV.—*Within the Church.*

*WILDBRAIN, TOBY, and Ringers, discovered.*

*Wildb.* I am monstrous weary!

*Toby.* Fy, how I sweat! Reach me my cloak to  
cover me.

I run to oil, like a porpoise. 'Twas a brave peal!

*Sexton.* Let me light my candle first, then I'll  
wait on you. [*Exit Sexton.*]

*Wildb.* A very brave peal!

*Toby.* Carman, you came in close now.

*Wildb.* Sure 'tis past midnight.

*Ringer.* No stirring in the streets I hear.

*Toby.* Walk further!

Was that a pillar? 'Tis harder than my nose.

Where's the boy promised us five pounds?

*Wildb.* Room! I sweat still.

Come, come, my cloak! I shall take cold.

*Enter Sexton.*

*Sexton.* Where lies it?

*Wildb.* Here, here, and all our clothes.

*Sexton.* Where, where ?

*Ringer.* I' th' corner.

*Toby.* Is thy candle blind too? Give me the bottle!

I can drink like a fish now, like an elephant.

*Sexton.* Here are the corners, but here are no Yes, here's a cuff. [clothes;

*Wildb.* A cuff? Give me the candle!

Cuffs wo' not cover me.—I smell a knavery.

*Toby.* Is't come to a cuff? my whole suit turn'd to a button?

*Wildb.* Now am I as cold again as though 'twere Christmas,

Cold with my fear; I'll never ring by the ear more.

*Toby.* My new clothes vanish'd?

*Wildb.* All my clothes, Toby!

*Ringer.* Here's none.

*Toby.* Not one of my dragon's wings left to Have I mew'd all my feathers? [adorn me?

*Wildb.* Cheated by th' ear; a plot to put out the candle!

I could be mad! my chain, my rings, the gold, the gold!

*Toby.* The cold, the cold, I cry, and I cry truly, Not one sleeve, nor a cape of a cloak to warm me!

*Wildb.* What miserable fools were we!

*Toby.* We had e'en best, gentlemen, Every man chuse his rope again, and fasten it, And take a short turn to a better fortune.— To be haws to our miseries, and put our own lights out!

*Wildb.* Pr'ythee, Sexton, let's have a fire at thy house,

A good fire; we'll pay thee some way for't: I am stone-cold.

*Sexton.* Alas, I pity you! Come quickly, gentlemen.

*Wildb.* Sure I ha' been in a dream! I had no mistress,

Nor gold, nor clothes, but am a ringing rascal.

*Toby.* Fellows in affliction, let us take hands all! Now are we fit for tumblers. [Exeunt.

SCENE V.—*A Vault, with a Lamp burning.*

*Enter LURCHER and others, bringing in ALORIFE.*

*Lurch.* So, so! Presently His sleep will leave him, and wonder seize upon Bid 'em within be ready. [him:

*Alg.* [Waking.] What sound's this? What horrid din? What dismal place is this I never saw before? and now behold it But by the half-light of a lamp, that burns here? My spirits shake, [and] tremble through my body.

*Enter two disguised as Furies with Black Tapers, bearing a Dagger and a Cup.*

Help, help! Mercy protect me! my soul quakes. What dreadful apparitions! How I shudder!

1 & 2 *Fury.* Algripe!

*Alg.* What are you?

1 *Fury.* We are hell-hounds, hell-hounds, That have commission from the prince of darkness, To fetch thy black soul to him.

*Alg.* Am I not alive still?

1 *Fury.* Thou art; but we have brought thee Will quickly rid thy miserable life. [instruments Stab!

2 *Fury.* Poison!

1 *Fury.* Hang thyself! this choice is offered.

2 *Fury.* Thou canst not hope for Heaven; thy Lost to all hope of mercy. [base soul is

1 *Fury.* Quickly, quickly!

The torments cool.

2 *Fury.* And all the fiends expect thee.

Come with us to that pit of endless horror, Or we will force thee.

*Alg.* Oh, oh, oh!

1 *Fury.* Groans are too late: Sooner the ravisher, Whose soul is hurl'd into eternal frost,

Stung with the force of twenty thousand winters,

To punish the distempers of his blood,

Shall hope to get from thence, than thou avoid

The certainty of meeting hell where he is.

Shall murderers be there for ever dying,

Their souls shot through with adders, torn on

Dying as many deaths for killing one, [engines,

(Could any imagination number them,)

As there be moments in eternity;

And shall that justice spare thee, that hast slain,

Murder'd by thy extortion, so many?

*Alg.* Oh, oh!

2 *Fury.* Do execution quickly; or we'll carry Alive to hell. [thee

*Alg.* Gently, gentle devils! do not force me

To kill myself, nor do not you do't for me!

Oh, let me live! I'll make amends for all.

1 *Fury.* Tell us of thy repentance? perjured villain!

Pinch off his flesh! he must be whipt, salted and whipt.

*Alg.* Oh, misery of miseries! [Recorders.

1 & 2 *Fury.* Tear his accursed limbs, to hell with him!—Ha!

*Enter ALATHE like an Angel.*

A mischief on that innocent face! away!

[They creep in.

*Alathe.* Malicious furies, hence! choak not the Of holy penitence. [seeds

*Alg.* This must be an angel:

How at his presence the fiends crawl away!

Here is some light of mercy.

*Alathe.* Be thou wise,

And entertain it, wretched, wretched man!

What poor defence hath all thy wealth been to thee!

What says thy conscience now?

*Alg.* By my good angel, here I promise thee

To become honest, and renounce all villainy:

Enjoy me any penance; I'll build churches,

A whole city of hospitals.

*Alathe.* Take heed!

There is no dallying; nor are these imposed.

*Alg.* Name anything within my power, sweet angel;

And, if I do not faithfully perform it,

Then whip me every day, burn me each minute,

Whole years together let me freeze to isicles!

*Alathe.* I' th' number of thy foul oppressions,

Thou hast undone a faithful gentleman,

By taking forfeit of his land.

*Alg.* Young Lurcher!

I do confess.

*Alathe.* He lives most miserable,

And in despair may hang or drown himself:

Prevent his ruin! or his blood will be

More sin in thy account. Hast thou forgotten

He had a sister?

*Alg.* I do well remember it.

*Alathe.* Couldst thou for Mammon break thy solemn vow

Made once to that unhappy maid, that weeps  
A thousand tears a-day for thy unkindness?  
Was not thy faith contracted, and thy heart?  
And couldst thou marry another?

*Alg.* But she's dead;  
And I will make true satisfaction.

*Alathe.* What do I instance these, that hast been  
To all the world? [false

*Alg.* I know it, and will henceforth  
Practise repentance. Do not frown, sweet angel!  
I will restore all mortgages, forswear  
Abominable usury, live chaste;  
For I have been wanton in my shroud, my age:  
And if that poor innocent maid, I so abused,  
Be living, I will marry her, and spend  
My days to come religiously.

*Alathe.* I was commanded but a messenger  
To tell thee this, and rescue thee from those  
Whose malice would have dragg'd thee quick to  
If thou abuse this mercy, and repent not, [hell:  
Double damnation will expect thee for it;  
But if thy life be virtuous hereafter,  
A blessedness shall reward thy good example.  
Thy fright hath much distracted thy weak senses;  
Drink of this phial, and renew thy spirits!  
I ha' done my office; think on't, and be happy!

[*He drinks, and falls asleep.*

*Enter LURCHER.*

*Lurch.* So, so! He gapes already; now he's fast.  
Thou hast acted rarely; but this is not all:  
First, help to convey him out o' th' vault.

*Alathe.* You will  
Dispense with me now, as you promised, sir?

*Lurch.* We will make shift without thee; thou  
hast done well.

By our device, this bandog may 'scape hell.  
[*Exeunt, bearing him out.*

SCENE VI.—*An Apartment in the Lady's House.*

*Enter Lady, Nurse, and MARIA.*

*Lady.* Didst think, Maria, this poor outside, and  
Dissembling of thy voice, could hide thee from  
A mother's searching eye, though too much fear,  
Lest thou wert not the same, might blind a lover,  
That thought thee dead too? Oh, my dear Maria,  
I hardly kept my joys in from betraying thee:  
Welcome again to life! We shall find out  
The mystery of thy absence. Conceal  
Thy person still, (for Algripe must not know thee)  
And exercise this pretty dialect:  
If there be any course in law to free thee,  
Thou shalt not be so miserable. Be silent,  
Good Nurse!

*Nurse.* You shall not need to fear me, madam;  
I do not love the usuring Jew so well;  
Beside, 'twas my trick to disguise her so.

*Lady.* Be not dejected, Mall.

*Maria.* Your care may comfort me;  
But I despair of happiness.—  
Heartlove? I dare not see him.

*Enter HEARTLOVE.*

*Nurse.* We'll withdraw.

*Lady.* I shall but grieve to see his passions too,  
Since there's no possibility to relieve him. [*Exeunt.*

*Heartl.* The world's a labyrinth, where unguided  
Walk up and down to find their weariness: [men  
No sooner have we measured with much toil  
One crooked path, with hope to gain our freedom,  
But it betrays us to a new affliction.  
What a strange mockery will man become  
Shortly to all the creatures! Oh, Maria!  
If thou be'st dead, why does thy shadow fright me?  
Sure 'tis because I live: Were I but certain  
To meet thee in one grave, and that our dust  
Might have the privilege to mix in silence,  
How quickly should my soul shake off this burthen!

*Enter ALATHE.*

*Alathe.* Thus far my wishes have success: I'll  
lose  
No time.—Sir, are you not call'd Master Heart-  
Pardon my rudeness! [love?

*Heartl.* What does that concern thee?  
Boy, 'tis a name cannot advantage thee;  
And I am weary on't.

*Alathe.* Had you conceal'd,  
Or I forgot it, sir, so large were my  
Directions, that you could not speak this language,  
But I should know you by your sorrow.

*Heartl.* Thou  
Wert well inform'd, it seems. Well, what's your

*Alathe.* I come to bring you comfort. [business!  
*Heartl.* Is Maria

Alive again? that's somewhat; and yet not  
Enough to make my expectation rise to  
Past half a blessing; since we cannot meet  
To make it up a full one! Thou'rt mistaken.

*Alathe.* When you have heard me, you'll think  
In vain I should report Maria living; [otherwise:  
The comfort that I bring you must depend  
Upon her death.

*Heartl.* Thou'rt a dissembling boy;  
Some one has sent thee to mock me; though my  
Stoop not to punish thy green years, unripe [anger  
For malice, did I know what person sent thee  
To tempt my sorrow thus, I should revenge it.

*Alathe.* Indeed, I have no thought so unchari-  
Nor am I sent to grieve you; let me suffer [table,  
More punishment than ever boy deserved,  
If you do find me false! I serve a mistress  
Would rather die than play with your misfortunes;  
Then, good sir, hear me out!

*Heartl.* Who is your mistress?

*Alathe.* Before I name her, give me some en-  
couragement,

That you receive her message: She is one  
That's full acquainted with your misery,  
And can bring such a portion of her sorrow,  
In every circumstance so like your own,  
You'll love and pity her, and wish your griefs  
Might marry one another's.

*Heartl.* Thou art wild:  
Canst thou bring comfort from so sad a creature?  
Her miserable story can, at best,  
But swell my volume, large enough already.

*Alathe.* She was late beloved, as you wert:  
promised faith,

And marriage; and was worthy of a better  
Than he, that stole Maria's heart.

*Heartl.* How's that?

*Alathe.* Just as Maria dealt with your affection.  
Did he that married her deal with my mistress;  
When, careless both of honour and religion,  
They cruelly gave away their hearts to strangers.

*Heartl.* Part of this truth I know ; but pr'ythee, boy,  
Proceed to that thou cam'st for ! thou didst promise  
Something, thy language cannot hitherto  
Encourage me to hope for.

*Alathe.* That I come to ;  
My mistress thus unkindly dealt withal,  
You may imagine, wanted no affliction ;  
And had, ere this, wept herself dry as marble,  
Had not your fortune come to her relief,  
And twin to her own sorrow, brought her comfort.

*Heartl.* Could the condition of my fate so equal,  
Lessen her sufferings ?

*Alathe.* I know not how,  
Companions in grief sometimes diminish  
And make the pressure easy : By degrees  
She threw her troubles off, remembering yours ;  
And from her pity of your wrongs, there grew  
Affection to your person ; this increased,  
And, with it, confidence that those whom Nature  
Had made so even in their weight of sorrow,  
Could not but love as equally one another,  
Were things but well prepared : This gave her  
To employ me thus far. [boldness]

*Heartl.* A strange message, boy !  
*Alathe.* If you incline to meet my mistress' love,  
It may beget your comforts : Besides that,  
'Tis some revenge that you, above their scorn  
And pride, can laugh at them, whose perjury  
Hath made you happy, and undone themselves.

*Heartl.* Have you done, boy ?

*Alathe.* Only this little more ;  
When you but see, and know my mistress well,  
You will forgive my tediousness ; she's fair,  
Fair as Maria was—

*Heartl.* I'll hear no more !  
Go, foolish boy, and tell thy fonder mistress  
She has no second faith to give away ;  
And mine was given to Maria. Though her death  
Allow me freedom—

*Enter MARIA and Nurse.*

See the picture of her !

I would give ten thousand empires for the sub-  
yet, for Maria's sake, whose divine figure [stance :  
That rude frame carries, I will love this counterfeit  
Above all the world ; and had thy mistress all  
The grace and blossom of her sex, now she  
Is gone, that was a walking spring of beauty,  
I would not look upon her.

*Alathe.* Sir, your pardon !  
I have but done a message, as becomes  
A servant ; nor did she, on whose commands  
I gladly waited, bid me urge her love  
To your disquiet ; she would chide my diligence  
If I should make you angry.

*Heartl.* Pretty boy !

*Alathe.* Indeed I fear I have offended you ;  
Pray, if I have, enjoin me any penance for't :  
I have perform'd one duty, and could as willingly,  
To purge my fault, and shew I suffer with you,  
Plead your cause to another.

*Heartl.* And I'll take thee  
At thy word, boy ; thou hast a moving language  
That pretty innocent copy of Maria  
Is all I love ; I know not how to speak ;  
Win her to think well of me, and I will  
Reward thee to thy wishes.

*Alathe.* I undertake  
Nothing for gain ; but since you have resolved

To love no other, I'll be faithful to you ;  
And my prophetic thoughts bid me already  
Say I shall prosper.

*Heartl.* Thou wert sent to bless me !

*Alathe.* Pray give us opportunity.

*Heartl.* Be happy !

[Exit.

*Nurse.* He's gone.

*Alathe.* With your fair leave, mistress !

*Maria.* Have you business with her, pray you ?

*Alathe.* I have a message from a gentleman ;  
Please you vouchsafe your ear more private !

*Nurse.* You  
Shall have my absence, niece.

[Exit.

*Maria.* Was the gentleman

Afraid to declare his matters openly ?

Here was no podies was not very honest :  
If her like not her errands the petter, was wis't

To keep her preaths to cool her porridges,  
Can tell her that now, for aule her private hearings  
And tawngings.

*Alathe.* You may, if please you, find another  
And with less pains be understood. [language ;

*Maria.* What is her meaning ?

*Alathe.* Come, pray speak your own English.

*Maria.* Have poyls lost her itts and memories ?  
Pless us aule !

*Alathe.* I must be plain then : Come, I know  
Maria ; this thin veil cannot obscure you : [you are  
I'll tell the world you live. I have not lost you,  
Since first, with grief and shame to be surpris'd,  
A violent trance took away show of life :  
I could discover by what accident  
You were convey'd away at midnight, in  
Your coffin ; could declare the place and minute  
When you revived ; and what you have done since,  
As perfectly—

*Maria.* Alas, I am betray'd to new misfortunes !

*Alathe.* You are not, for my knowledge ; I'll be  
For ever, rather than be such a traitor. [dumb  
Indeed I pity you ; and bring no thoughts,  
But full of peace. Call home your modest blood !  
Pale hath too long usurped upon your face :  
Think upon love again, and the possession  
Of full-blown joys, now ready to salute you !

*Maria.* These words undo me more than my  
own griefs.

*Alathe.* I see how fear would play the tyrant  
But I'll remove suspicion : Have you in [with you  
Your heart an entertainment for his love,  
To whom your virgin faith made the first promise ?

*Maria.* If thou mean'st Heartlove, thou dost  
wound me still !

I have no life without his memory,  
Nor with it any hope to keep it long.  
Thou seest I walk in darkness, like a thief,  
That fears to see the world in his own shape ;  
My very shadow frights me : 'tis a death  
To live thus, and not look day in the face.  
Away, I know thee not !

*Alathe.* You shall hereafter know, and thank  
me, lady :

I'll bring you a discharge at my next visit,  
Of all your fears : Be content, fair Maria !  
'Tis worth your wonder.

*Maria.* Impossible !

*Alathe.* Be wise, and silent ! Dress yourself :  
You shall be what you wish.

*Maria.* Do this, and be  
My better angel !

*Alathe.* All your cares on me ! [Exeunt severally.

## ACT V.

SCENE I.—*A Street before the House of LURCHER'S Mistress.*

*Enter LURCHER and ALATHE.*

*Luro.* I must applaud thy diligence.

*Alathe.* It had been nothing  
To have left him in the porch. I call'd his ser-  
vants;  
With wonders they acknowledged him; I pre-  
tended

It was some spice sure of the falling sickness,  
And that 'twas charity to bring him home;  
They rubb'd and chafed him, plied him with strong-  
water;

Still he was senseless, clamours could not wake  
him;

I wish'd 'em then get him to bed; they did so,  
And almost smother'd him with rugs and pillows,  
And, 'cause they should have no cause to suspect  
me,

I watch'd him till he waked.

*Luro.* 'Twas excellent!

*Alathe.* When his time came to yawn, and  
stretch himself,

I bid 'em not be hasty to discover  
How he was brought home; his eyes fully open,  
With trembling he began to call his servants,  
And told 'em he had seen strange visions;  
That should convert him from his heathen courses;  
They wonder'd, and were silent; there he preached  
How sweet the air of a contented conscience  
Smelt in his nose now, asked 'em all forgiveness  
For their hard pasture since they lived with him;  
Bid 'em believe, and fetch out the cold sirloin,  
Pierce the strong beer, and let the neighbours joy  
in't;

The conceal'd muskadine should now lie open  
To every mouth; that he would give to th' poor,  
And mend their wages; that his doors should be  
Open to every miserable suitor.

*Luro.* What said his servants then?

*Alathe.* They durst not speak,  
But bless'd themselves, and the strange means  
that had

Made him a Christian: In this over-joy  
I took my leave, and bade 'em say their prayers,  
And humour him, lest he turn'd Jew again.

*Luro.* Enough, enough!—Who's this?

*Enter Toby.*

'Tis one of my ringers, (stand close!) my lady's  
coachman!

*Toby.* Buy a mat for a bed, buy a mat!—

'Would I were at rack and manger among my  
horses!

We have divided the Sexton's household-stuff  
Among us; one has the rug, and he's turn'd Irish;  
Another has a blanket, and he must beg in't;  
The sheets serve another for a frock,  
And with the bed-cord he may pass for a porter;  
Nothing but the mat would fall to my share, which,  
With the help of a tune, and a hassock out o'  
th' church,

May disguise me till I get home. A fox  
O' bell-ringing by the ear! if any man  
Take me at it again, let him pull mine  
To the pillory. I could wish I had lost

Mine ears, so I had my clothes again: The weather  
Wo' not allow this fashion; I do look  
For an ague besides.

*Luro.* How the rascal shakes!

*Toby.* Here are company!

Buy a mat for a bed, buy a mat!  
A hassock for your feet, or a piss clean and sweet!  
Buy a mat for a bed, buy a mat!—  
Ringing, 'I renounce thee! I'll never come to  
*Luro.* You with a mat! [church more.

*Toby.* I am called. If any one

Should offer to buy my mat, what a case were I in!  
Oh, that I were in my oat-tub with a horse-load,  
Something to hearten me! I dare not hear 'em.—  
Buy a mat for a bed, buy a mat!

*Luro.* He's deaf.

*Toby.* I am glad I am: Buy a mat for a bed!

*Luro.* How the rascal sweats! what a pickle he  
is in!

Every street he goes through will be a new tor-  
ment.

*Toby.* If ever I meet at midnight more a-  
jangling—

I am cold, and yet I drop.—Buy a mat for a bed,  
buy a mat!

*Luro.* He has punishment enough. [*Exit Toby.*

*Enter WILDBRAIN in a Rug-gown, with a Bill.*

Who's this? my t'other youth? he is turn'd bear.

*Wildb.* I am half afraid of myself: This poor  
shift

I got o' th' Sexton, to convey me handsomely  
To some harbour; the wench will hardly know me;  
They'll take me for some watchman of the parish.  
I ha' ne'er a penny left me, that's one comfort;  
And ringing has begot a monstrous stomach,  
And that's another mischief: I were best go home,  
For everything will scorn me in this habit.  
Besides, I am so full of these young bell-ringers—  
If I get in a-doors, not the power o' th' country,  
Nor all my aunt's curses, shall disembogue me.

*Luro.* Bid her come hither presently. Hum! 'tis  
he. [*Exit ALATHE into the house.*

*Wildb.* I am betray'd to one that will eternally  
laugh at me!

Three of these rogues will jeer a horse to death.

*Lurch.* 'Tis Master Wildbrain, sure; and yet,  
methinks,

His fashion's strangely alter'd.—Sirrah, watch-  
man!

You ragamuffin! turn, you lousy bear's-skin,  
You with the bed-rid bill!

*Wildb.* He has found me out;

There's no avoiding him: I had rather now  
Be arraign'd at Newgate for a robbery,  
Than answer to his articles.—Your will, sir?  
I am in haste.

*Luro.* Nay, then I will make bold wi' ye.

[*Seizes his bill.*

A watchman, and ashamed to shew his coun-  
tenance,

His face of authority?—I have seen that physi-  
ognomy:

Were you never in prison for pilfering?

*Wildb.* How the rogue worries me!

*Luro.* Why may not this

Be the villain robb'd my house last night,  
And walks disguised in this malignant rug,  
Arm'd with a ton of iron? I will have you  
Before a magistrate.

*Wildb.* What will become of me!

*Luro.* What art thou? speak!

*Wildb.* I am the Wandering Jew, an't please  
your worship.

*Luro.* By your leave, rabbi, I will shew you then  
A synagogue, y-clept Bridewell, where you,  
Under correction, may rest yourself.

You have brought a bill to guard you; there be  
dog-whips

To firk such rugged curs, whips without bells  
Indeed.

*Wildb.* Bells?

*Luro.* How he sweats!

*Wildb.* I must be known; as good at first.—  
Now jeer on, *[Throws off his gown.]*

But do not anger me too impudently;  
The rabbi will be moved then.

*Luro.* How! Jack Wildbrain?

What time o' th' moon, man, ha? What strange  
bells

Hast in thy brains?

*Wildb.* No more bells,

No more bells! they ring backwards.

*Luro.* Why, where's the wench, the blessing  
that befel thee?

The unexpected happiness? where's that, Jack?

Where are thy golden days?

*Wildb.* It was his trick, as sure as I am lousy!

But how to be revenged—

*Luro.* Fy, fy, Jack!

Marry a watchman's widow in thy young days,

With a revenue of old iron and a rug?

Is this the paragon, the dainty piece,

The delicate divine rogue?

*Wildb.* 'Tis enough! I am undone,  
Mark'd for a misery, and so leave prating.  
Give me my bill.

*Luro.* You need not ask your tailor's,  
Unless you had better linings. It may be,  
To avoid suspicion, you are going thus  
Disguised to your fair mistress.

*Wildb.* Mock no further,

Or, as I live, I'll lay my bill o' thy pate;  
I'll take a watchman's fury into my fingers,  
To ha' no judgment to distinguish persons,  
And knock thee down.

*Luro.* Come, I ha' done; and now  
Will speak some comfort to thee: I will lead thee  
Now to my mistress, hitherto conceal'd.  
She shall take pity on thee too; she loves  
A handsome man; thy misery invites me  
To do thee good; I'll not be jealous, Jack;  
Her beauty shall commend itself: But do not,  
When I have brought you into grace, supplant me!

*Wildb.* Art thou in earnest? by this cold iron—

*Luro.* No oaths; I am not costive.—Here she  
comes.

*Enter Mistress from the House.*

Sweetheart, I have brought a gentleman,  
A friend of mine, to be acquainted with you;  
He's other than he seems. Why do ye stare thus?

*Mistress.* Oh, sir, forgive me! I have done you  
wrong. *[Kneels to LURCHER.]*

*Luro.* What is the matter? didst ever see her  
afore, Jack?

*Wildb.* Pr'ythee do what thou wot wi' me; if  
thou hast

A mind, hang me up quickly!

*Luro.* Never despair; I'll give thee my share  
rather:

Take her; I hope she loves thee at first sight,  
She has petticoats will patch thee up a suit:  
I resign all, only I'll keep these trifles;  
I took some pains for 'em, I take it, Jack.—  
What think you, pink of beauty? Come, let me  
Counsel you both to marry; she has a trade,  
If you have audacity to hook in gamesters:  
Let's ha' a wedding! You'll be wond'rous rich;  
For she is impudent, and thou art miserable;  
'Twill be a rare match.

*Mistress.* As you're a man, forgive me! I'll re-  
dress all.

*Luro.* You wo' not to this geer of marriage then?

*Wildb.* No, no, I thank you, Tom! I can watch  
for

A groat a-night, and be every gentleman's fellow.

*Luro.* Rise, and be good; keep home, and tend  
your business! *[Exit Mistress.]*

*Wildb.* Thou hast done't to purpose. Give me  
thy hand, Tom:

Shall we be friends? Thou see'st what state I am  
I'll undertake this penance to my aunt, *[in:]*  
Just as I am, and openly I'll go;

Where, if I be received again for current,  
And Fortune smile once more—

*Luro.* Nay, nay, I'm satisfied;

So, farewell, honest, lousy Jack!

*Wildb.* I cannot

Help it; some men meet with strange destinies.

If things go right, thou may'st be hang'd, and I

May live to see't, and purchase thy apparel:

So, farewell, Tom! Commend me to thy polecat!  
*[Exeunt severally.]*

SCENE II.—*A Room in the Lady's House.*

*Enter Lady, Nurse, and Servant.*

*Lady.* Now, that I have my counsel ready, and  
my cause ripe;

The judges all inform'd of the abuses;

Now that he should be gone—

*Nurse.* No man knows whither;

And yet they talk he went forth with a constable  
That told him of strange business, that would bring  
him

Money and lands, and Heaven knows what; but  
they

Have search'd, and cannot find out such an officer:

And as a secret, madam, they told your man

Nicholas, whom you sent thither as a spy,

They had a shrewd suspicion 'twas the devil

I' th' likeness of a constable, that has tempted him

By this time to strange things: There have been  
men,

As rich as he, have met convenient rivers,

And so forth; many trees have borne strange fruits;

D'ye think he has not hang'd himself?

*Lady.* If he

Be hang'd, who has his goods?

*Nurse.* They are forfeited,

They say.

*Lady.* He has hang'd himself for certain then,

Only to cozen me of my girl's portion.

*Nurse.* Very likely!

*Lady.* Or did not the constable carry him to some prison?

*Nurse.* They thought on that too, and search'd everywhere.

*Lady.* He may be close for treason, perhaps executed.

*Nurse.* Nay, they did look among the quarters too,

And muster'd all the Bridge-house for his night-cap.

*Enter Servant.*

*Serv.* Madam, here is the gentleman again.

*Lady.* What gentleman?

*Serv.* He that loved my young mistress.

*Lady.* Alas, 'tis Heartlove: 'twill but feed his melancholy

To let him see Maria, since we dare not Yet tell the world she lives; and certainly, Did not the violence of his passion blind him, He would see past her borrowed tongue and habit.

*Nurse.* Please you entertain him a while, madam, I'll cast about for something with your daughter.

*Lady.* Do what thou wo't!—Pray Master Heartlove enter.

*[Exeunt Servant and Nurse severally.]*

*Enter HEARTLOVE.*

*Heartl.* Madam, I come to ask your gentle pardon.

*Lady.* Pardon? for what? you ne'er offended me.

*Heartl.* Yes, if you be the mother of Maria.

*Lady.* I was her mother, but that word is can- And buried with her: In that very minute [cell'd, Her soul fled from her, we lost both our names Of mother and of daughter.

*Heartl.* Alas, madam,

If your relation did consist but in Those naked terms, I had a title nearer, Since love unites more than the tie of blood: No matter for the empty voice of mother! Your nature still is left, which in her absence Must love Maria, and not see her ashes And memory polluted.

*Lady.* You amaze me!

By whom?

*Heartl.* By me; I am the vile profaner.

*Lady.* Why do you speak thus indiscreetly, sir? You ever honour'd her.

*Heartl.* I did, alive;

But, since she died, I ha' been a villain to her.

*Lady.* I do beseech you say not so; all this Is but to make me know how much I sinn'd, In forcing her to marry.

*Heartl.* Do not mock me,

I charge you by the virgin you have wept for; For I have done an impious act against her, A deed able to fright her from her sleep, And through her marble ought to be revenged; A wickedness, that, if I should be silent, You as a witness must accuse me for't.

*Lady.* Was I a witness?

*Heartl.* Yes; you knew I loved Maria once; or, grant you did but think so, By what I have profess'd, or she has told you, Was't not a fault unpardonable in me, When I should drop my tears upon her grave; Yes, and proof sufficient—

*Lady.* To what?

*Heartl.* That I, forgetful of my fame and vows

To fair Maria, ere the worm could pierce Her tender shroud, had changed her for another. Did you not blush to see me turn a rebel? So soon to court a shadow, a strange thing, Without a name? Did you not curse my levity, Or think upon her death with the less sorrow, That she had 'scaped a punishment more killing? Oh, how I shame to think on't!

*Lady.* Sir, in my Opinion, 'twas an argument of love To your Maria, for whose sake you could Affect one that but carried her small likeness.

*Heartl.* No more! you are too charitable: But I know my guilt, and will from henceforth never Change words with that strange maid, whose innocent face,

Like your Maria's, won so late upon me: My passions are corrected, and I can Look on her now, and woman kind, without Love in a thought. 'Tis this I came to tell you: If, after this acknowledgment, you'll be So kind to shew me in what silent grave You have disposed your daughter, I will ask Forgiveness of her dust, and never leave, Till, with a loud confession of my shame, I wake her ghost, and that pronounce my pardon. Will you deny this favour?—Then, farewell! I'll never see you more.—Ha!

*Enter Nurse, and MARIA in her own Apparel; after some shew of wonder, HEARTLOVE goes towards her.*

*Lady.* Be not deluded, sir! Upon my life, This is the soul whom you but thought Maria, In my daughter's habit.—What did you mean.

*Nurse?*—

I knew she would but cozen you: Is she not like now?

*Heartl.* One dew unto another is not nearer.

*Nurse.* She thinks she is a gentlewoman; and Imagination has so taken her, [that She scorns to speak. How handsomely she carries As if she were a well-bred thing, her body! [it, And, I warrant you, what looks!

*Lady.* Pray, be not foolish.

*Heartl.* I disturb nobody. Speak but half a word,

And I am satisfied! But what needs that?

I'll swear 'tis she.

*Lady.* But do not, I beseech you;

For, trust me, sir, you know not what I know.

*Heartl.* Peace then,

And let me pray! She holds up her hands with me.

*Lady.* This will betray all.

*Heartl.* Love, ever honour'd, And ever young, thou sovereign of all hearts, Of all our sorrows the sweet ease.—She weeps now! Does she still cozen me?

*Nurse.* You'll see anon.

'Twas her desire; expect the issue, madam.

*Heartl.* My soul's so big, I cannot pray! 'Tis I will go nearer. [she!

*Enter ALGRIFE, LURCHER, and ALATHE.*

*Nurse.* Here is Master Algrife, And other strangers, madam.

*Alg.* Here, good lady;

Upon my knees, I ask thy worship's pardon! Here's the whole sum I had with thy fair daughter: 'Would she were living, I might have her peace too. And yield her up again to her old liberty! I had a wife before, and could not marry:

My penance shall be, on that man that honour'd  
To confer some land. [her

*Lady.* This is incredible!

*Alg.* 'Tis truth.

*Lurc.* Do you know me, sir?

*Alg.* Ha! The gentleman I deceived!

*Lurc.* My name is Lurcher.

*Alg.* Sha't have thy mortgage.

*Lurc.* I ha' that already; no matter for the deed,  
If you release it.

*Alg.* I'll do't before thy witness.

But where's thy sister? if she live, I am happy,  
Though I conceal'd our contract, which was stol'n  
With the evidence of this land. [from me

[*ALATHE goes to MARIA, and gives her a Paper; she wonders, and smiles upon HEARTLOVE; he, amazed, approaches her; afterwards she shows it her Mother, and then gives it to HEARTLOVE.*

*Nurse.* Your daughter smiles.

*Lurc.* I hope she lives; but where I cannot tell,

*Alathe.* Even here, an't please you, sir. [sir.

*Alg.* How!

*Alathe.* Nay, 'tis she.

To work thy fair way, I preserved you, brother,  
That would have lost me willingly, and served you  
Thus like a boy: I served you faithfully,  
And cast your plots but to preserve your credit;  
Your foul ones I diverted to fair uses,  
So far as you would hearken to my counsel,  
That all the world may know how much you owe  
me.

*Alg.* Welcome, entirely! welcome, my dear  
Alathe!

And, when I lose thee again, blessing forsake me!  
Nay, let me kiss thee in these clothes!

*Lurc.* And I too,

And bless the time I had so wise a sister!

Wert thou the Little Thief?

*Alathe.* I stole the contract,  
I must confess, and kept it to myself;  
It most concern'd me.

*Heartl.* Contracted? this destroys  
His after-marriage.

*Maria.* Dare you give this hand  
To this young gentleman? my heart goes with it.

*Alg.* Maria alive! how my heart's exalted!

'Tis my duty;

Take her, Frank Heartlove, take her; and all joys  
With her; besides some land to advance her  
jointure!

*Lady.* What I have is your own; and blessings  
crown ye!

*Heartl.* Give me room,  
And fresh air to consider, gentlemen!  
My hopes are too high.

*Maria.* Be more temperate,  
Or I'll be Welsh again!

*Alg.* A day of wonder!

*Alathe.* Lady, your love! I ha' kept my word;  
there was

A time, when my much suffering made me hate  
And to that end I did my best to cross you; [you,  
And hearing you were dead, I stole your coffin,  
That you might never more usurp my office.  
Many more knacks I did, which at the weddings  
Shall be told of as harmless tales. [Shout within.

*Enter WILDBRAIN.*

*Wildb.* Hollo your throats a-pieces! I'm at  
If you can roar me out again— [home;

*Lady.* What thing is this?

*Lurc.* A continent of fleas: Room for the  
pageant!

Make room afore there! Your kinsman, madam.

*Lady.* My kinsman! let me wonder!

*Wildb.* Do, and I'll wonder too, to see this  
At peace with one another. [company

*Maria.* 'Tis not worth

Your admiration; I was never dead yet.

*Wildb.* You are merry, aunt, I see, and all your  
company:

If ye be not, I'll fool up, and provoke ye;  
I will do anything to get your love again:  
I'll forswear midnight taverns, and temptations;  
Give good example to your grooms; the maids  
Shall go to bed, and take their rest this year;  
None shall appear with blisters in their bellies.

*Lurc.* And, when you'll fool again, you may go

*Wildb.* Madam, have mercy! [ring.

*Lady.* Your submission, sir,

I gladly take, (we will  
Enquire the reason of this habit afterwards,)  
Now you are soundly shamed; well, we restore  
you.—

Where's Toby? where's the coachman?

*Nurse.* He's a-bed, madam,

And has an ague, he says.

*Lurc.* I'll be his physician.

*Lady.* We must a-foot then.

*Lurc.* Ere the priest ha' done,

Toby shall wait upon you with his coach,  
And make your Flanders mares dance back again  
wi' ye,

I warrant you, madam.—You are mortified;  
Your suit shall be granted too.

*Wildb.* Make room, make room afore there!

*Lady.* Home forward with glad hearts! home, [child!

*Maria.* I wait you.

*Heartl.* On joyfully!—The cure of all our grief  
Is owing to this pretty Little Thief. [Exeunt.

**THE MASQUE**  
OF  
**THE INNER-TEMPLE AND GRAY'S INN,  
GRAY'S INN AND THE INNER-TEMPLE;**

**PRESENTED BEFORE HIS MAJESTY, THE QUEEN'S MAJESTY, THE PRINCE, COUNT PALATINE AND  
THE LADY ELIZABETH THEIR HIGHNESSES,**

*In the Banqueting-House at Whitehall, on Saturday, the 20th day of February, 1612.*

---

**DEDICATION.**

---

**TO THE WORTHY SIR FRANCIS BACON, HIS MAJESTY'S SOLICITOR-GENERAL,  
AND  
THE GRAVE AND LEARNED BENCH OF THE ANCIENTLY-ALLIED HOUSES OF GRAY'S INN AND THE  
INNER-TEMPLE, THE INNER-TEMPLE AND GRAY'S INN.**

You that spared no time nor travel, in the setting forth, ordering, and furnishing of this Masque, (being the first fruits of honour, in this kind, which these two societies have offered to his majesty,) will not think much now to look back upon the effects of your own care and work: For that, whereof the success was then doubtful, is now happily performed and graciously accepted; and that which you were then to think of in straits of time, you may now peruse at leisure: And you, Sir Francis Bacon, especially, as you did then by your countenance and loving affection advance it, so let your good word grace it and defend it, which is able to add value to the greatest and least matters.

---

**INTRODUCTION.**

This Masque was appointed to have been presented the Shrove-Tuesday before, at which time, the masquers, with their attendants, and divers other gallant young gentlemen of both houses, as their convoy, set forth from Winchester-house (which was the rendezvous) towards the court, about seven of the clock at night.

This voyage by water was performed in great triumph: the gentlemen masquers being placed by themselves in the king's royal barge, with the rich furniture of state, and adorned with a great number of lights, placed in such order as might make best show.

They were attended with a multitude of barges and galleys, with all variety of loud music, and several peals of ordnance; and led by two admirals.

Of this show his majesty was graciously pleased to take view, with the prince, the Count Palatine and the Lady Elizabeth their highnesses, at the windows of his privy gallery, upon the water, till their landing, which was at the privy stairs; where they were most honourably received by the lord-chamberlain, and so conducted to the vestry.

The hall was by that time filled with company of very good fashion, but yet so as a very great number of principal ladies, and other noble persons, were not yet come in, whereby it was foreseen that the room would be so scant as might have been inconvenient; and thereupon his majesty was most graciously pleased, with the consent of the gentlemen masquers, to put off the night until Saturday following, with this special favour and privilege, that there should be no let, as to the outward ceremony of magnificence until that time.

At the day that it was presented, there was a choice room reserved for the gentlemen of both their houses, who, coming in troop about seven of the clock, received that special honour and noble favour, as to be brought to their places by the Right Honourable the Earl of Northampton, Lord-Privy Seal.

## THE MASQUE.

## THE DEVICE OR ARGUMENT.

JUPITER and Juno, willing to do honour to the marriage of the two famous rivers, Thamesis and Rhine, employ their messengers severally, Mercury and Iris, for that purpose. They meet and contend: Then Mercury, for his part, brings forth an anti-masque all of spirits or divine natures; but yet not of one kind or livery (because that had been so much in use heretofore) but, as it were, in consort, like to broken music: And preserving the propriety of the device; for that rivers in nature are maintained either by springs from beneath, or showers from above, he raiseth four of the Naiades out of the fountains, and bringeth down five of the Hyades out of the clouds to dance. Hereupon, Iris scoffs at Mercury, for that he had devised a dance but of one sex, which could have no life: But Mercury, who was provided for that exception, and in token that the match should be blessed both with love and riches, calleth forth out of the groves four Cupids, and brings down from Jupiter's altar four statues of gold and silver to dance with the nymphs and stars: in which dance, the Cupids being blind, and the statues having but half life put into them, and retaining still somewhat of their old nature, giveth fit occasion to new and strange varieties both in the music and paces. This was the first anti-masque.

Then Iris, for her part, in scorn of this high-flying device, and in token that the match shall likewise be blessed with the love of the common people, calls to Flora, her confederate (for that the months of flowers are likewise the months of sweet showers and rainbows) to bring in a May dance, or rural dance, consisting likewise not of any suited persons, but of a confusion or commixture of all such persons as are natural and proper for country sports. This is the second anti-masque.

Then Mercury and Iris, after this vying one upon the other, seem to leave their contention; and Mercury, by the consent of Iris, brings down the Olympian knights, intimating that Jupiter having, after a long discontinuance, revived the Olympian games, and summoned thereunto from all parts the liveliest and activer persons that were, had enjoined them, before they fell to their games, to do honour to these nuptials. The Olympian games pretend to the match celebrity, victory, and felicity. This was the main masque.

The fabric was a mountain with two descents, and severed with two traverses.

At the entrance of the king, the first traverse was drawn, and the lower descent of the mountain discovered, which was the pendant of a hill to life, with divers bosages and grovets upon the steep or hanging grounds thereof; and at the foot of the hill, four delicate fountains running with water, and bordered with sedges and water flowers.

Iris first appeared; and presently after Mercury, striving to overtake her.

Iris apparelled in a robe of discoloured taffeta, figured in variable colours, like the rainbow, a cloudy wreath on her head, and tresses.

Mercury in doublet and hose of white taffeta, a white hat, wings on his shoulders and feet, his caduceus in his hand, speaking to Iris as followeth:—

*Merc.* Stay, stay!

Stay, light-foot Iris! for thou striv'st in vain;  
My wings are nimbler than thy feet.

*Iris.* Away,

Dissembling Mercury! my messages  
Ask honest haste; not like those wanton ones  
Your thund'ring father sends.

*Merc.* Stay, foolish maid!

Or I will take my rise upon a hill,  
When I perceive thee seated in a cloud,

In all the painted glory that thou hast,  
And never cease to clap my willing wings,  
Till I catch hold of thy discoloured bow,  
And shiver it, beyond the angry power  
Of your curst mistress to make up again.

*Iris.* Hermes, forbear! Juno will chide and strike.

Is great Jove jealous that I am employed  
On her love-errands? She did never yet  
Clasp weak mortality in her white arms,  
As he hath often done: I only come  
To celebrate the long-wished nuptials  
Here in Olympia, which are now performed  
Betwixt two goodly rivers, which have mixed  
Their gentle rising waves, and are to grow  
Into a thousand streams, great as themselves.  
I need not name them, for the sound is loud  
In heaven and earth; and I am sent from her,  
The queen of marriage, that was present here,  
And smiled to see them join, and hath not chid  
Since it was done. Good Hermes, let me go!

*Merc.* Nay, you must stay; Jove's message is  
the same,

Whose eyes are lightning, and whose voice is thunder,  
Whose breath is any wind he will; who knows  
How to be first on earth, as well as Heaven.

*Iris.* But what hath he to do with nuptial rites?  
Let him keep state upon his stary throne,  
And fright poor mortals with his thunderbolts,  
Leaving to us the mutual darts of eyes!

*Merc.* Alas, when ever offered he to abridge  
Your lady's power, but only now, in these,  
Whose match concerns his general government?  
Hath not each god a part in these high joys?  
And shall not he, the king of gods, presume  
Without proud Juno's licence? Let her know,  
That when enamoured Jove first gave her power  
To link soft hearts in undissolving bands,  
He then foresaw, and to himself reserved,  
The honour of this marriage. Thou shalt stand  
Still as a rock, while I, to bless this feast,  
Will summon up, with my all-charming rod,  
The nymphs of fountains, from whose watry locks  
(Hung with the dew of blessing and increase)  
The greedy rivers take their nourishment.—

Ye nymphs, who, bathing in your loved springs,  
Beheld these rivers in their infancy,  
And joyed to see them, when their circled heads  
Refreshed the air, and spread the ground with  
flowers;

Rise from your wells, and with your nimble feet  
Perform that office to this happy pair,  
Which in these plains you to Alphæus did,  
When passing hence, through many seas unmixed,  
He gain'd the favour of his Arethuse!

*Immediately upon which speech, four Naiades arise gently out of their several fountains, and present themselves upon the stage, attired in long habits of sea-green taffeta, with bubbles of crystal intermixt with powdering of silver resembling drops of water, blueish tresses on their heads, garlands of water-lilies. They fall into a meazure, dance a little, then make a stand.*

*Iris.* Is Hermes grown a lover? By what power,  
Unknown to us, calls he the Naiades?

*Merc.* Presumptuous Iris, I could make thee  
Till thou forgott'st at thy lady's messages, [dance,

And rann'st back crying to her! Thou shalt know  
My power is more; only my breath, and this,  
Shall move fixed stars, and force the firmament  
To yield the Hyades, who govern showers,  
And dewy clouds, in whose dispersed drops  
Thou form'st the shape of thy deceitful bow.—  
Ye maids, who yearly at appointed times  
Advance with kindly tears the gentle floods,  
Descend, and pour your blessing on these streams,  
Which rolling down from heaven-aspiring hills,  
And now united in the fruitful vales,  
Bear all before them, ravished with their joy,  
And swell in glory, till they know no bounds!

*Five Hyades descend softly in a cloud from the firmament, to the middle part of the hill, apparelled in sky-coloured taffeta robes, spangled like the heavens, golden tresses, and each a fair star on their head; from thence descend to the stage, at whose sight the Naiades, seeming to rejoice, meet and join in a dance.*

*Iris.* Great wit and power hath Hermes, to con-  
A lifeless dance, which of one sex consists! [trive  
*Merc.* Alas, poor Iris! Venus hath in store  
A secret ambush of her winged boys;  
Who, lurking long within these pleasant groves,  
First struck these lovers with their equal darts;  
Those Cupids shall come forth, and join with these  
To honour that which they themselves began.

*Enter four Cupids from each side of the bosage, attired in flame-coloured taffeta close to their body, like naked boys, with bows, arrows, and wings of gold; chaplets of flowers on their heads, hoodwinked with tiffing scarfs, who join with the Nymphs and the Hyades in another dance. That ended, MERCURY speaks.*

*Merc.* Behold the statues which wise Vulcan  
Under the altar of Olympian Joy, [placed  
And gave to them an artificial life,  
Shall dance for joy of these great nuptials.  
See how they move, drawn by this heavenly joy,  
Like the wild trees, which followed Orpheus' harp!

*The Statues enter, supposed to be before descended from Jove's altar, and to have been prepared in the covert with the Cupids, attending their call.*

*These Statues were attired in cases of gold and silver close to their bodies, faces, hands, and feet, nothing seen but gold and silver, as if they had been solid images of metal, tresses of hair as they had been of metal embossed, girdles and small aprons of oaken leaves, as if they likewise had been carved or moulded out of the metal: At their coming, the music changed from violins to hautboys, cornets, &c. and the air of the music was utterly turned into a soft time, with drawing notes, excellently expressing their natures, and the measure likewise was fitted unto the same, and the statues placed in such several postures, sometimes altogether in the center of the dance, and sometimes in the four utmost angles, as was very graceful, besides the novelty. And so concluded the first Anti-masque.*

*Merc.* And what will Juno's Iris do for her?

*Iris.* Just match this show, or my invention  
Had it been worthier, I would have invoked [fails:  
The blazing comets, clouds, and falling stars,  
And all my kindred meteors of the air,  
To have excelled it; but I now must strive  
To imitate confusion: Therefore thou,  
Delightful Flora, if thou ever felt'st  
Increase of sweetness in those blooming plants  
On which the horns of my fair bow decline,  
Send hither all the rural company  
Which deck the May-games with their country  
Juno will have it so. [sports!

*The second Anti-masque rush in, dance their measures, and as rudely depart; consisting of a Pedant, May Lord, May Lady; Servingman, Chambermaid; a Country Clown, or Shepherd, Country Wench; a Host, Hostess; a He-Baboon, She-Baboon; a He-Fool, She-Fool, ushering them in.*

*All these persons, apparelled to life, the Men issuing out of one side of the bosage, and the Women from the other. The music was extremely well fitted, having such a spirit of country jollity, as can hardly be imagined; but the perpetual laughter and applause was above the music.*

*The dance likewise was of the same strain; and the dancers, or rather actors, expressed every one their part so naturally and aptly, as when a man's eye was caught with the one, and then past on to the other, he could not satisfy himself which did best. It pleas'd his Majesty to call for it again at the end, as he'd likewise for the first Anti-masque; but one of the Statues by that time was undressed.*

*Merc.* Iris, we strive,  
Like winds at liberty, who should do most  
Ere we return. If Juno be the queen  
Of marriages, let her give happy way  
To what is done, in honour of the state  
She governs!

*Iris.* Hermes, so it may be done  
Merely in honour of the state, and these  
That now have proved it; not to satisfy  
The lust of Jupiter, in having thanks  
More than his Juno; if thy snaky rod  
Have power to search the Heavens, or sound the  
Or call together all the ends of earth, [see  
To bring in anything that may do grace  
To us, and these; do it, we shall be pleased.

*Merc.* Then know, that from the mouth of Jove  
himself,  
Whose words have wings, and need not to be borne.  
I took a message, and I bare it through  
A thousand yielding clouds, and never stayed  
Till his high will was done: The Olympian games,  
Which long have slept, at these wished nuptials,  
He pleased to have renewed, and all his knights  
Are gathered hither, who within their tents  
Rest on this hill; upon whose rising head  
Behold Jove's altar, and his blessed priests  
Moving about it!—Come, you holy men,  
And with your voices draw these youths along,  
That till Jove's music call them to their games,  
Their active sports may give a blest content  
To those, for whom they are again begun.

*The main Masque.—The second traverse is drawn and the higher ascent to the mountain is discovered, wherein, upon a level, after a great rise of the hill, were placed two pavilions: open in the front of them the pavilions were to sight as of cloth of gold, and they were trimmed on the inside with rich armour and military furniture, hanged up as upon the walls; and behind the tents there were represented, in perspective, the tops of divers other tents, as if it had been a camp. In these pavilions were placed fifteen Olympian Knights, upon seats a little embossed near the form of a crescent, and the Knights appeared first, as consecrated persons, all in white, like to copes, of silver tiffing, and gathered, and falling a large compass about them, and over their heads high mitres, with long pendants behind falling from them; the mitres were so high, that they received their hats and feathers, that nothing was seen but veil. In the midst between both the tents, upon the very top of the hill, being a higher level than that of the tents, was placed Jupiter's altar gilt, with three great tapers upon golden candlesticks burning upon it; and the four Statues, two of gold, and two of silver, as supporters.*

and *Jupiter's Priests* in white robes about it. Upon the sight of the King, the veils of the Knights did fall easily from them, and they appeared in their own habit.

*The Knights' attire.*—Arming doublets of carnation satin, embroidered with blazing stars of silver plate, with powderings of smaller stars betwixt; gorgets of silver mail; long hose of the same, with the doublets laid with silver lace spangled, and enriched with embroidery between the lace; carnation silk stockings embroidered all over; garters and roses suitable; pumps of carnation satin embroidered, as the doublets; hats of the same stuff, and embroidery cut like a helmet before, the hinder part cut into scallops, answering the skirts of their doublets; the bands of the hats were wreaths of silver in form of garlands of wild olives, white feathers, with one fall of carnation; belts of the same stuff, and embroidered with the doublet; silver swords; little Italian bands and cuffs embroidered with silver; fair long tresses of hair.

*The Priests' habits.*—Long robes of white taffeta; long white heads of hair; the High-Priest a cap of white silk shag close to his head, with two labels at the ears, the midst rising in form of a pyramid, in the top thereof a branch of silver; every Priest playing upon a lute; twelve in number.

*The Priests descend, and sing this song following; after whom the Knights likewise descend, first laying aside their veils, belts, and swords.*

## SONG.

Shake off your heavy trances,  
And leap into a dance,  
Such as no mortals use to tread,  
Fit only for Apollo  
To play to, for the Moon to lead,  
And all the stars to follow!

*The Knights by this time are all descended, and fallen into their place, and then dance their first measure.*

## SONG.

On, blessed youths! for Jove doth pause,  
Laying aside his graver laws  
For this device:

And at the wedding such a pair,  
Each dance is taken for a prayer,  
Each song a sacrifice.

*The Knights dance their second measure.*

## SONG.

[Solo.] More pleasing were these sweet delights,  
If ladies moved as well as knights;  
Run every one of you, and catch  
A nymph, in honour of this match;  
And whisper boldly in her ear,  
Jove will but laugh, if you forswear!

[Chorus.] And this day's sins, he doth resolve,  
That we his priests should all absolve.

*The Knights take their ladies to dance with them galliards, durets, corantoes, &c. and lead them to their places; then loud music sounds, supposed to call them to their Olympian games.*

## SONG.

Ye should stay longer if we durst:  
Away! Alas, that he that first  
Gave Time wild wings to fly away,  
Hath now no power to make him stay!  
But though these games must needs be play'd,  
I would this pair, when they are laid,  
And not a creature nigh 'em,  
Could catch his scythe as he doth pass,  
And out his wings and break his glass,  
And keep him ever by 'em.

*The Knights dance their parting measure, and ascend, put on their swords and belts; during which time, the Priests sing the fifth and last song.*

## SONG.

Peace and silence be the guide  
To the man, and to the bride!  
If there be a joy yet new  
In marriage, let it fall on you,  
That all the world may wonder!  
If we should stay, we should do worse,  
And turn our blessing to a curse,  
By keeping you asunder.

---

---

THE POEMS  
or  
FRANCIS BEAUMONT.

## RECOMMENDATORY POEMS.

### TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFUL THE WORTHILY HONOURED ROBERT PARKHURST, ESQ.

WEAR these but worthless poems or light rhymes,  
Writ by some common scribbler of the times,  
Without your leave I durst not then engage  
You to ennoble 'em by your patronage ;  
But these, though orphans, and left fatherless,  
Their rich endowments shew they do possess  
A father's blessing, whom the fates thought fit  
To make a master of a mine of wit :  
Whose ravishing conceits do tower so high,  
As if his quill had dropt from Mercury :  
But when his fancy chanced of love to sing,  
You'd swear his pen were plum'd from Cupid's wing.  
He doth an amorous passion so discover,  
As if, save Beaumont, none had e'er been lover ;  
Some praise a manly bounty, some incline  
More to applaud the virtues feminine ;  
Some several graces in both sexes hid,  
But only Beaumont's, he alone that did  
By a rare stratagen of wit connex  
What's choice and excellent in either sex.  
Then, cherish, sir, these saplings, whose each strain  
Speaks them the issue of brave Beaumont's brain ;  
Which made me thus dare to prefix your name,  
Which will, if aught can, add unto their fame.

I am, sir,

Your most humble and devoted servant,  
LAWRENCE BLAICKLOCK.

### IN LAUDEM AUTHORIS.

LIKE to the weak estate of a poor friend,  
To whom sweet fortune hath been ever slow,  
Which dally doth that happy hour attend,  
When his poor state may his affection show,  
So fares my love, not able as the rest,  
To chaunt thy praises in a lofty vein ;  
Yet my poor muse doth vow to do her best,  
And, wanting wings, she'll tread an humble strain ;  
I thought at first her homely steps to raise,  
And for some blazing epithets to look :  
But then I feared that by such wondrous praise,  
Some men would grow suspicious of thy book :  
For he that doth thy due deserts rehearse,  
Derives that glory from thy worthy verse.

W. B.

### TO THE AUTHOR.

EITHER the goddess draws her troops of loves  
From Paphos, where she erst was held divine,  
And doth unyoke her tender-necked doves,  
Placing her seat in this small pap'ry shrine ;  
Or the sweet graces through th' Idalian grove,  
Led the best author in their danced rings ;  
Or wanton nymphs in watry bow'rs have wove,  
With fair Myleasian threads, the verse he sings ;  
Or curious Pallas once again doth strive  
With proud Arachne, for illustrious glory,  
And once again doth loves of Gods revive,  
Spinning in silver twists a lasting story :  
If none of these, then Venus chose his sight,  
To lead the steps of her blind son aright.

SIR JOHN BEAUMONT.

### TO THE AUTHOR.

THE matchless lust of a fair poesy,  
Which was erst buried in old Rome's decays,  
Now 'gins with heat of rising majesty,  
Her dust-wrapt head from rotten tomb to raise,  
And with fresh splendour gilds her fearless crest,  
Rearing her palace in our poet's breast.

The wanton Ovid, whose enticing rhymes  
Have with attractive wonder forced attention,  
No more shall be admired at ; for these times  
Produce a poet, whose more rare invention  
Will tear the love-sick myrtle from his brows,  
T' adorn his temples with deserved boughs.

The strongest marble fears the smallest rain ;  
The rusting canker eats the purest gold ;  
Honour's best dye dreads envy's blackest stain ;  
The crimson badge of beauty must wax old :  
But this fair issue of thy fruitful brain,  
Nor dreads age, envy, cank'ring rust, or rain.

JOHN FLETCHER.

## BEAUMONT'S POEMS.

### TO THE TRUE PATRONESS OF ALL POETRY, CALLIOPE.

It is a statute in deep wisdom's lore,  
That for his lines none should a patron chuse  
By wealth and poverty, by less or more,  
But who the same is able to peruse :  
Nor ought a man his labour dedicate,  
Without a true and sensible desert,  
To any power of such a mighty state ;  
But such a wise defendress as thou art :  
Thou great and powerful Muse, then pardon me  
That I presume thy maiden cheek to stain  
In dedicating such a work to thee,  
Sprung from the issue of an idle brain :  
I use thee as a woman ought to be,  
I consecrate my idle hours to thee.

### THE AUTHOR TO THE READER.

I SING the fortune of a luckless pair,  
Whose spotless souls now in one body be ;  
For beauty still is Prodrumus to care,  
Cross'd by the sad stars of nativity :  
And of the strange enchantment of a well,  
Given by the Gods, my sportive muse doth write,  
Which sweet-lipp'd Ovid long ago did tell,  
Wherein who bathes, straight turns Hermaphro-  
I hope my poem is so lively writ, [dite :  
That thou wilt turn half-mad with reading it.

### SALMACIS AND HERMAPHRODITUS : OR, THE HERMAPHRODITE. FROM OVID.

MY wanton lines do treat of amorous love,  
Such as would bow the hearts of gods above.  
Thou Venus, our great Cytherean queen,  
That hourly trip'st on the Idalian green ;  
Thou laughing Erycina, deign to see  
These verses wholly consecrate to thee :  
Temper them so within thy Paphian shrine,  
That every lover's eye may melt a line ;  
Command the god of love, that little king,  
To give each verse a slight touch with his wing ;  
That, as I write, one line may draw the other,  
And every word skip nimbly o'er another.  
There was a lovely boy the nymphs had kept,  
That on th' Idalian mountains oft had slept,  
Begot and born by pow'rs that dwell above,  
By learned Mercury on the queen of love.  
A face he had that show'd his parents' fame,  
And from them both conjoined he drew his name.  
So wondrous fair he was, that (as they say)  
Diana being hunting on a day,  
She saw the boy upon a green bank lay him,  
And there the virgin huntress meant to slay him ;  
Because no nymphs would now pursue the chase,  
For all were struck blind with the wanton's face.

But when that beauteous face Diana saw,  
Her arms were nummed, and she could not draw,  
Yet did she strive to shoot, but all in vain,  
She bent her bow, but loosed it straight again :  
Then she began to chide her wanton eye,  
And fain would shoot, but durst not see him die.  
She turn'd and shot, but did of purpose miss him,  
She turn'd again, but could not choose but kiss  
him.

Then the boy ran : for some say had he staid,  
Diana had no longer been a maid.  
Phœbus so doated on this roscate face,  
That he hath oft stol'n closely from his place,  
When he did lie by fair Leucothoe's side,  
To dally with him in the vales of Ide ;  
And ever since this lovely boy did die,  
Phœbus each day about the world doth fly,  
And on the earth he seeks him all the day,  
And every night he seeks him in the sea.  
His cheeks were sanguine, and his lips were red,  
As are the blushing leaves of the rose spread ;  
And I have heard that till this boy was born,  
Roses grew white upon the virgin thorn ;  
Till one day walking to a pleasant spring,  
To hear how cunningly the birds could sing,  
Laying him down upon a flow'ry bed,  
The roses blushed and turn'd themselves to red :  
The rose that blushed not for his great offence,  
The gods did punish, and for 's impudence  
They gave this doom, and 'twas agreed by all,  
The smell of the white rose should be but small.  
His hair was bushy, but it was not long ;  
The nymphs had done his tresses mighty wrong,  
For as it grew they pull'd away his hair,  
And made habiliments of gold to wear.  
His eyes were Cupid's, for until his birth  
Cupid had eyes, and lived upon the earth ;  
Till on a day, when the great queen of love  
Was by her white doves drawn from heav'n above,  
Unto the top of the Idalian hill,  
To see how well the nymphs her charge fulfil,  
And whether they had done the goddess right  
In nursing of her sweet Hermaphrodite ;  
Whom when she saw, although compleat and full,  
Yet she complain'd his eyes were somewhat dull ;  
And therefore, more the wanton boy to grace,  
She pull'd the sparkling eyes from Cupid's face.  
Feigning a cause to take away his sight,  
Because the ape would sometimes shoot for spite :  
But Venus set those eyes in such a place,  
As graced those clear eyes with a clearer face.  
For his white hand each goddess did him woo,  
For it was whiter than the driven snow ;  
His leg was straighter than the thigh of Jove,  
And he far fairer than the god of love.

When first this well-shaped boy, being's chief  
Had seen the labour of the fifteenth spring, [king,

How curiously it painted all the earth,  
 He 'gan to travel from his place of birth,  
 Leaving the stately hills where he was nurst,  
 And where the nymphs had brought him up at  
 He loved to travel unto coasts unknown, [first,  
 To see the regions far beyond his own,  
 Seeking clear ivory springs to bathe him in,  
 For he did love to wash his ivory skin.  
 The lovely nymphs have oft times seen him swim,  
 And closely stol'n his clothes from off the brim,  
 Because the wanton wenches would so fain  
 See him come nak'd to ask his clothes again.  
 He loved besides to see the Lycian grounds,  
 And know the wealthy Carians' utmost bounds.

Using to travel thus, one day he found  
 A crystal brook that trill'd along the ground ;  
 A brook that in reflection did surpass  
 The clear reflection of the clearest glass.  
 About the side there grew no foggy reeds,  
 Nor was the front compass'd with barren weeds,  
 But living turf grew all along the side,  
 And grass that ever flourish'd in his pride.  
 Within this brook a beauteous nymph did dwell,  
 Who for her comely feature did excel :  
 So fair she was, of such a pleasing grace,  
 So straight a body, and so sweet a face,  
 So soft a belly, such a lusty thigh,  
 So large a forehead, such a crystal eye,  
 So soft and moist a hand, so smooth a breast,  
 So fair a cheek, so well in all the rest,  
 That Jupiter would revel in her bower  
 Were he to spend again his golden shower.  
 Her teeth were whiter than the morning milk,  
 Her lips were softer than the softest silk ;  
 Her hair as far surpass'd the burnished gold,  
 As silver doth excel the basest mold.  
 Jove courted her for her translucent eye,  
 And told her he would place her in the sky ;  
 Promising her, if she would be his love,  
 He would engrave her in the heavens above :  
 Telling this lovely nymph, that if she would,  
 He could deceive her in a shower of gold ;  
 Or, like a swan, come naked to her bed,  
 And so deceive her of her maidenhead.  
 But yet, because he thought that pleasure best  
 Where each consenting joins each loving breast,  
 He would put off that all-commanding crown,  
 Whose terror struck the aspiring giants down ;  
 That glittering crown, whose radiant sight did toss  
 Great Pelion from the top of mighty Osse,  
 He would depose from his world-swaying head,  
 To taste the amorous pleasure of her bed ;  
 This added ; he besides, the more to grace her,  
 Like a bright star he would in heaven's vault place  
 By this the proud lascivious nymph was moved, [her.  
 Perceiving that by great Jove she was loved :  
 And hoping as a star she should ere long  
 Be stern or gracious to the seaman's song,  
 (For mortals still are subject to the eye,  
 And what it sees they strive to get as high)  
 She was contented that almighty Jove  
 Should have the first and best fruits of her love ;  
 For women may be likened to the year,  
 Whose first fruits still do make the daintiest cheer ;  
 But yet Astræa first should plight her troth,  
 For the performance of Jove's sacred oath ;  
 Just times decline, and all good days are dead,  
 When heavenly oaths had need be warranted.  
 This heard great Jupiter, and liked it well,  
 And hastily he seeks Astræa's cell,

About the massy earth searching her tower ;  
 But she had long since left this earthly bower,  
 And flew to Heaven above, loathing to see  
 The sinful actions of humanity :  
 Which when Jove did perceive he left the earth,  
 And flew up to the place of his own birth,  
 The burning heavenly throne, where he did spy  
 Astræa's palace in the glittering sky.  
 This stately tower was builded up on high,  
 Far from the reach of any mortal eye ;  
 And from the palace' side there did distil  
 A little water through a little quill,  
 The dew of justice, which did seldom fall,  
 And when it dropt the drops were very small.  
 Glad was great Jove, when he beheld her tower,  
 Meaning a while to rest him in her bower.  
 And therefore sought to enter at her door :  
 But there was such a busy rout before,  
 (Some serving-men, and some promoters be)  
 That he could pass no foot without a fee.  
 But as he goes he reaches out his hands,  
 And pays each one in order as he stands,  
 And still as he was paying those before,  
 Some slipp'd again betwixt him and the door.

At length, with much ado, he passed them all,  
 And entering straight into a spacious hall,  
 Full of dark angles and of hidden ways,  
 Crooked meanders, infinite delays,  
 All which delays and entries he must pass  
 Ere he could come where just Astræa was ;  
 All these being past by his immortal wit,  
 Without her door he saw a porter sit,  
 An aged man that long time there had been,  
 Who used to search all those that entered in ;  
 And still to every one he gave this curse,  
 " None must see Justice but with empty purse."  
 This man search'd Jove for his own private gain,  
 To seek the money which did yet remain,  
 Which was but small, for much was spent before  
 On the tumultuous rout that kept the door ;  
 When he had done, he brought him to the place,  
 Where he might see divine Astræa's face.  
 There the great king of gods and men in went,  
 And saw his daughter Venus there lament,  
 And crying loud for justice, whom Jove found  
 Kneeling before Astræa on the ground ;  
 And still she cried and begg'd for a just doom  
 Against black Vulcan, that unseemly groom,  
 Whom she had chosen for her only love,  
 Though she was daughter to great thund'ring Jove ;  
 And though the fairest goddess, yet content  
 To marry him, though weak and impotent.  
 But for all this they always were at strife :  
 For ever more he rail'd at her his wife,  
 Telling her still, " Thou art no wife of mine,  
 Another's strumpet, Mars his concubine."  
 By this Astræa spied almighty Jove,  
 And bowed her finger to the queen of love  
 To cease her suit, which she would hear anon,  
 When the great king of all the world was gone.  
 Then she descended from her stately throne,  
 Which seat was builded all of jasper stone,  
 And o'er the seat was painted all above  
 The wanton, unseen stealths of amorous Jove.  
 There might a man behold the naked pride  
 Of lovely Venus in the vale of Ide,  
 When Pallas, and Jove's beauteous wife, and she,  
 Strove for the prize of beauty's rarity :  
 And there lame Vulcan and his Cyclops strove  
 To make the thunderbolt for mighty Jove.

From this same stately throne she down descended,  
 And said the griefs of Jove should be amended,  
 Asking the king of gods what luckless cause,  
 What great contempt of state, what breach of laws,  
 (For sure she thought some uncouth cause befell,  
 That made him visit poor Astræa's cell.)  
 Troubled his thoughts; and, if she might decide it,  
 Who next great Jove full dearly should abide it:  
 Jove only thank'd her, and began to shew  
 His cause of coming, (for each one doth know  
 The longing words of lovers are not many,  
 If they desire to be enjoyed of any.)  
 Telling Astræa, it would now befell  
 That she might make him blest that blesseth all:  
 For as he walk'd upon the flow'ry earth,  
 To which his own hands whilome gave a birth,  
 To see how straight he held it, and how just  
 He ruled this massy ponderous heap of dust;  
 He laid him down by a cool river's side,  
 Whose pleasant water did so gently slide,  
 With such soft whispering, for the brook was deep,  
 That it had lull'd him in a heavenly sleep.  
 When first he laid him down there was none near  
 him,

(For he did call before, but none could hear him)  
 But a fair nymph was bathing when he waked,—  
 (Here sigh'd great Jove, and after brought forth)—  
 naked.

He seeing, loved the nymph, yet here did rest  
 Where just Astræa might make Jove be blest,  
 If she would pass her faithful word so far  
 As that great Jove should make the nymph a star.  
 Astræa yielded, at which Jove was pleased,  
 And all his longing hopes and fears were eased;  
 Jove took his leave, and parted from her sight,  
 Whose thoughts were full of lovers' sweet delight;  
 And she ascended to the throne above,  
 To hear the griefs of the great queen of love:  
 But she was satisfied, and would no more  
 Rail at her husband as she did before;  
 But forth she tripp'd apace, because she strove  
 With her swift feet to overtake great Jove.  
 She slept so nimbly as she went to look him,  
 That at the palace-door she overtook him.  
 The way was plain and broad as they went out,  
 And now they could see no tumultuous rout,  
 Here Venus, fearing lest the love of Jove  
 Should make this maid be placed in heaven above,  
 Because she thought this nymph so wond'rous bright  
 That she would dazzle her accustomed light,  
 And fearing now she should not first be seen.  
 Of all the glittering stars as she had been,  
 But that the wanton nymph would every night  
 Be first that should salute each mortal sight,  
 Began to tell great Jove she grieved to see  
 The heaven so full of his iniquity:  
 Complaining that each strumpet now was graced,  
 And with immortal goddesses was placed,  
 Intreating him to place in heaven no more  
 Each wanton strumpet and lascivious whore.

Jove, mad with love, minded not what she said,  
 His thoughts were so entangled with the maid;  
 But furiously he to his palace leapt,  
 Being minded there till morning to have slept;  
 For the next morn, so soon as Phœbus' rays  
 Should yet shine cool by reason of the seas,  
 And ere the parting tears of Thetis' bed  
 Should be quite shaken from off his glittering head,  
 Astræa promised to attend great Jove  
 At his own palace in the heavens above,

And at that palace she would set her hand  
 To what the love-sick god should her command:  
 But to descend to earth she did deny;  
 She loath'd the sight of any mortal eye,  
 And for the compass of the earthly round  
 She would not set one foot upon the ground:  
 Therefore Jove meant to rise but with the sun,  
 Yet thought it long until the night was done.

In the mean space Venus was drawn along,  
 By her white doves, unto the sweating throng  
 Of hammering blacksmiths, at the lofty hill  
 Of stately Etna, whose top burneth still;  
 For at that [lofty] mountain's glittering top  
 Her cripple husband Vulcan kept his shop.  
 To him she went, and so colloques that night  
 With the best strains of pleasure's sweet delight,  
 That ere they parted she made Vulcan swear  
 By dreadful Styx, (an oath that gods do fear)  
 If Jove would make the mortal maid a star,  
 Himself should frame his thunderbolts of war:  
 He then took oath by black Cocytus' lake  
 He never more a thunderbolt would make;  
 For Venus so this night his senses pleased,  
 That now he thought his former griefs were eased;  
 She with her hands the blacksmith's body bound,  
 And with her ivory arms she twin'd him round;  
 And still the fair queen with a pretty grace  
 Dispersed her sweet breath o'er his swarthy face;  
 Her snowy arms so well she did display,  
 That Vulcan thought they melted as they lay.  
 Until the morn in this delight they lay,  
 Then up they got, and hasted fast away,  
 In the white chariot of the queen of love,  
 Towards the palace of great thund'ring Jove;  
 Where they did see divine Astræa stand  
 To pass her word for what Jove should command.  
 In limp'd the blacksmith; after steeped his queen,  
 Whose light arrayment was of lovely green.  
 When they were in, Vulcan began to swear  
 By oaths that Jupiter himself doth fear,  
 If any whore in heaven's bright vault were seen  
 To dim the shining of his beauteous queen,  
 Each mortal man should the great god disgrace,  
 And mock almighty Jove unto his face;  
 And giants should enforce bright heaven to fall  
 Ere he should frame one thunderbolt at all.  
 Jove did entreat him that he would forbear;  
 The more he spake the more did Vulcan swear.  
 Jove heard the words, and 'gan to make his moan,  
 That mortal men would pluck him from his throne,  
 Or else he must incur the plague, he said,  
 Quite to forego the pleasure of the maid;  
 And once he thought, rather than lose these blisses,  
 Her heavenly sweets, her most delicious kisses,  
 Her soft embraces and the amorous nights,  
 That he should often spend in her delights,  
 He would be quite thrown down by mortal hands,  
 From the best place where his bright palace stands;  
 But afterwards he saw with better sight,  
 He should be scorn'd by every mortal wight,  
 If he should want his thunderbolts to beat  
 Aspiring mortals from his glittering seat;  
 Therefore the god no more did woo or move her,  
 But left to seek her love, though not to love her:  
 Yet he forgot not that he wooed the lass,  
 But made her twice as beauteous as she was,  
 Because his wanted love he needs would shew.  
 This have I heard, but yet not thought it true;  
 And whether her clear beauty was so bright,  
 That it could dazzle the immortal sight

Of gods, and make them for her love despair,  
 I do not know, but sure the maid was fair.  
 Yet the fair nymph was never seen resort  
 Unto the savage and the bloody sport  
 Of chaste Diana, nor was ever wont  
 To bend a bow, nor never used to hunt;  
 Nor did she ever strive with pretty cunning  
 To overgo her fellow nymphs in running:  
 For she was the fair water-nymph alone  
 That unto chaste Diana was unknown.  
 It is reported that her fellows used  
 To bid her (though the beauteous nymph refused)  
 To take a painted quiver or a dart,  
 And put her lazy idleness apart.  
 But she would none; but in the fountains swims,  
 Where oft she washeth o'er her snowy limbs:  
 Sometimes she comb'd her soft dishevell'd hair,  
 Which with a fillet tied she oft did wear;  
 But sometimes loose she let it hang behind,  
 When she was pleased to grace the eastern wind,  
 For up and down it would her tresses hurl,  
 And as she went it made her loose hair curl:  
 Oft in the water did she see her face,  
 And oft she used to practise what quaint grace  
 Might well become her, and what comely feature  
 Might be best fitting so divine a creature.  
 Her skin was with a thin veil overthrown,  
 Through which her naked beauty clearly shone;  
 She used in this light raiment as she was  
 To spread her body on the dewy grass:  
 Sometimes by her own fountain as she walks  
 She nipt the flowers from off the fertile stalks,  
 And with a garland of the sweating vine  
 Sometimes she doth her beauteous front entwine.  
 But she was gathering flowers with her white hand,  
 When she beheld Hermaphroditus stand  
 By her clear fountain, wond'ring at the sight,  
 That there was any brook could be so bright;  
 For this was the bright river where the boy  
 Did die himself, that he could not enjoy  
 Himself in pleasure, nor could taste the blisses  
 Of his own melting and delicious kisses.  
 Here did she see him, and by Venus' law  
 She did desire to have him as she saw:  
 But the fair nymph had never seen the place  
 Where the boy was, nor his enchanting face,  
 But by an uncouth accident of love  
 Betwixt great Phœbus and the son of Jove,  
 Light-headed Bacchus: for upon a day  
 As the boy-god was keeping on his way,  
 Bearing his vine-leaves and his ivy-bands  
 To Naxos, where his house and temple stands,  
 He saw the nymph, and seeing he did stay,  
 And threw his leaves and ivy-bands away,  
 Thinking at first she was of heavenly birth,  
 Some goddess that did live upon the earth;  
 Virgin Diana that so lovely shone  
 When she did court her sweet Endymion;  
 But he, a god, at last did plainly see  
 She had no mark of immortality:  
 Unto the nymph went the young god of wine,  
 Whose head was chafed so with the bleeding vine  
 That now or fear or terror he had none,  
 But 'gan to court her as she sat alone.  
 "Fairer than fairest!" (thus began his speech)  
 "Would but your radiant eye please to enrich  
 My eye with looking, or one glance to give  
 Whereby my other parts may feed and live,  
 Or with one sight my senses to inspire  
 Far livelier than the stol'n Promethean fire;

Then might I live; then by the sunny light  
 That should proceed from thy chief radiant sight,  
 I might survive to ages; but that missing,"—  
 (At that same word he would have fain been kiss-  
 ing)—

"I pine, fair nymph; oh, never let me die  
 For one poor glance from thy translucent eye,  
 Far more transparent than the clearest brook."  
 The nymph was taken with his golden hook;  
 Yet she turn'd back and would have tripp'd away,  
 But Bacchus forced the lovely maid to stay,  
 Asking her why she struggled to be gone,  
 Why such a nymph should wish to live alone?  
 Heaven never made her fair that she should vaunt  
 She kept all beauty, yet would never grant  
 She should be born so beauteous from her mother,  
 But to reflect her beauty on another:  
 "Then with a sweet kiss cast thy beams on me,  
 And I'll reflect them back again on thee.  
 At Naxos stands my temple and my shrine,  
 Where I do press the lusty swelling vine;  
 There with green ivy shall thy head be bound,  
 And with the red grape be encircled round;  
 There shall Silenus sing unto thy praise  
 His drunken reeling songs and tipping lays.  
 Come hither, gentle nymph."—Here blushed the  
 maid,

And fain she would have gone, but yet she stayed.  
 Bacchus perceived he had o'ercome the lass,  
 And down he throws her in the dewy grass,  
 And kissed the helpless nymph upon the ground,  
 And would have strayed beyond that lawful bound.

This saw bright Phœbus, for his glittering eye  
 Sees all that lies below the starry sky;  
 And for an old affection that he bore  
 Unto this lovely nymph long time before,  
 (For he would oft times in his circle stand,  
 And sport himself upon her snowy hand.)  
 He kept her from the sweets of Bacchus' bed,  
 And 'gainst her will he saved her maidenhead.  
 Bacchus perceiving this, apace did his  
 Unto the palace of swift Mercury;  
 But he did find him far below his birth,  
 Drinking with thieves and catchpoles on the earth,  
 And they were parting what they stole to-day,  
 In consultation for to-morrow's prey.  
 To him went youthful Bacchus, and began  
 To shew his cause of grief against the Sun;  
 How he bereft him of the heavenly blisses,  
 His sweet delight, his nectar-flowing kisses,  
 And other sweeter sweets that he had won  
 But for the malice of the bright-faced Sun;  
 Intreating Mercury by all the love  
 That had him borne amongst the sons of Jove,  
 (Of which they two were part) to stand his friend  
 Against the God that did him so offend.  
 The quaint-tongued issue of great Atlas' race,  
 Swift Mercury, that with delightful grace,  
 And pleasing accents of his feigned tongue,  
 Had oft reform'd a rude uncivil throng  
 Of mortals, that great messenger of Jove,  
 And all the meaner gods that dwell above,  
 He whose acute wit was so quick and sharp  
 In the invention of the crooked harp;  
 He that's so cunning with his jesting sleights  
 To steal from heavenly Gods, or earthly wights,  
 Bearing a great hate in his grieved breast  
 Against that great commander of the West,  
 Bright-faced Apollo; for upon a day  
 Young Mercury did steal his beasts away;

Which the great God perceiving, straight did show  
The piercing arrows and the fearful bow  
That kill'd great Python, and with that did threat him,  
To bring his beasts again, or he would beat him ;  
Which Mercury perceiving, unespied,  
Did closely steal his arrows from his side :  
For this old grudge he was the easier won  
To help young Bacchus 'gainst the fiery Sun.

And now the Sun was in the middle way,  
And had o'ercome the one half of the day ;  
Scorching so hot upon the reeking sand  
That lies upon the mere Egyptian land,  
That the hot people, burnt even from their birth,  
Do creep again into their mother Earth :  
When Mercury did take his powerful wand,  
His charming caduceus in his hand,  
And the thick beaver which he used to wear,  
When aught from Jove he to the Sun did bear,  
That did protect him from the piercing light  
Which did proceed from Phoebus' glittering sight ;  
Clad in these powerful ornaments he flies  
With out-stretch wings up to the azure skies,  
Where, seeing Phoebus in his orient shrine,  
He did so well revenge the god of wine,  
That, whilst the Sun wonders his chariot reels,  
The crafty god had stol'n away his wheels.  
Which when he did perceive he down did slide,  
(Laying his golden coronet aside)  
From the bright spangled firmament above,  
To seek the nymph that Bacchus so did love,  
And found her looking in the wat'ry glass,  
To see how clear her radiant beauty was :  
And (for he had but little time to stay,  
Because he meant to finish out his day)  
At the first sight he 'gan to make his moan,  
Telling her how his fiery wheels were gone ;  
Promising her if she would but obtain  
The wheels that Mercury had stol'n again,  
That he might end his day, she should enjoy  
The heavenly sight of the most beauteous boy  
That ever was. The nymph was pleased with this,  
Hoping to reap some unaccustom'd bliss,  
By the sweet pleasure that she should enjoy  
In the blest sight of such a melting boy.  
Therefore at his request she did obtain  
The burning wheels that he had lost again ;  
Which when he had received, he left the land,  
And brought them thither where his coach did stand,  
And there he set them on, for all this space  
The horses had not stirr'd from out their place ;  
Which when he saw he wept, and 'gan to say,  
" 'Would Mercury had stol'n my wheels away  
When Phaëton, my hair-brain'd issue, tried  
What a laborious thing it was to guide  
My burning chariot! then he might have pleased me,  
And of a father's grief he might have eased me :  
For then the steeds would have obey'd his will,  
Or else at least they would have rested still."  
When he had done he took his whip of steel,  
Whose bitter smart he made his horses feel ;  
For he did lash so hard to end the day,  
That he was quickly at the western sea.  
And there with Thetis did he rest a space,  
For he did never rest in any place  
Before that time ; but ever since his wheels  
Were stol'n away, his burning chariot reels  
Tow'rd the declining of the parting day ;  
Therefore he lights and mends them in the sea.  
And though the poets feign that Jove did make  
A treble night for fair Alcmena's sake,

That he might sleep securely with his love,  
Yet sure the long night was unknown to Jove :  
But the Sun's wheels one day disorder'd more,  
Were thrice as long a-mending as before.  
Now was the Sun environ'd with the sea,  
Cooling his wat'ry tresses as he lay,  
And in dread Neptune's kingdom while he sleeps,  
Fair Thetis clips him in the wat'ry deeps ;  
There mermaids and the Tritons of the west,  
Straining their voices to make Titan rest ;  
The while the black Night, with her pithy hand,  
Took just possession of the swarthy land,  
He spent the darksome hours in this delight  
Giving his power up to the gladsome Night ;  
For ne'er before he was so truly blest  
To take an hour or one poor minute's rest.  
But now the burning God this pleasure feels  
By reason of his newly crazed wheels ;  
There must he stay until lame Vulcan send  
The fiery wheels which he had took to mend.

Now all the night the smith so hard had  
wrought,

That ere the Sun could wake his wheels were  
brought ;

Titan being pleased with rest and not to rise,  
And loth to open yet his slumbering eyes,  
And yet perceiving how the longing sight  
Of mortals waited for his glittering flight,  
He sent Aurora from him to the sky  
To give a glimpsing to each mortal eye.  
Aurora, much ashamed of that same place  
That great Apollo's light was wont to grace,  
Finding no place to hide her shameful head,  
Painted her chaste cheeks with a blushing red,  
Which ever since remain'd upon her face  
In token of her new-received disgrace :  
Therefore she not so white as she had been,  
Loathing of every mortal to be seen,  
No sooner 'gan the rosy-finger'd Morn  
Kiss every flower that by her dew is born,  
But from the golden window she doth peep  
When the most part of earthly creatures sleep.  
By this bright Titan opened had his eyes,  
And 'gan to jerk his horses through the skies,  
And taking in his hand his fiery whip,  
He made Æous and swift Æthon skip  
So fast, that straight he dazzled had the sight  
Of fair Aurora, glad to see his light.

And now the Sun in all his fiery haste  
Did call to mind his promise lately past,  
And all the vows and oaths that he did pass  
Unto fair Salmacis, the beauteous lass :  
For he had promised her she should enjoy  
So lovely, fair, and such a well-shaped boy,  
As ne'er before his own all-seeing eye  
Saw from his bright seat in the starry sky.  
Remembering this he sent the boy that way  
Where the clear fountain of the fair nymph lay ;  
There was he come to seek some pleasing brook.  
No sooner came he but the nymph was struck,  
And though she longed to embrace the boy,  
Yet did the nymph a while defer her joy,  
Till she had bound up her loose flagging hair,  
And well ordered the garments she did wear,  
Feigning her count'nance with a lover's care,  
And did deserve to be accounted fair ;  
When thus much spake she while the boy abode,  
" O boy, more worthy to be thought a god !  
Thou may'st inhabit in the glorious place  
Of gods, or may'st proceed from human race ;

Thou may'st be Cupid, or the god of wine  
 That lately wooed me with the swelling vine :  
 But whosoe'er thou art, O happy he  
 That was so blest to be a sire to thee !  
 Thy happy mother is most blest of many,  
 Blessed thy sisters, if her womb bare any ;  
 Both fortunate, Oh ! and thrice happy she  
 Whose too much blessed breast gave suck to thee !  
 If any's wish with thy sweet bed be blest,  
 Oh, she is far more happy than the rest !  
 If thou hast any, let her name be known,  
 Or else let me be she, if thou hast none."  
 Here did she pause awhile, and then she said,  
 " Be not obdurate to a silly maid ;  
 A flinty heart within a snowy breast  
 Is like base mold lock'd in a golden chest ;  
 They say the eye's the index of the heart,  
 And shews th' affection of each inward part :  
 Then love plays lively there, the little god  
 Hath a clear crystal palace of abode ;  
 Oh ! bar him not from playing in thy heart,  
 That sports himself upon each outward part."  
 Thus much she spake, and then her tongue was  
 hush'd.

At her loose speech, Hermaphroditus blush'd ;  
 He knew not what love was, yet love did shame  
 him,  
 Making him blush, and yet his blush became him.  
 Then might a man his lively colour see  
 Like the ripe apple on a sunny tree,  
 Or ivory dyed o'er with a pleasing red,  
 Or like the pale morn being shadowed.  
 By this the nymph recovered had her tongue,  
 That to her thinking lay in silence long,  
 And said, " Thy cheek is mild : Oh, be thou so !  
 Thy cheek saith, aye, then do not answer, no ;  
 Thy cheek doth shame, then do thou shame," she  
 " It is a man's shame to deny a maid ; [said,  
 Thou look'st to sport with Venus in her bower,  
 And be beloved of every heavenly power ;  
 Men are but mortals, so are women too,  
 Why should your thoughts aspire more than ours  
 For sure they do aspire : else could a youth, [do ?  
 Whose countenance is full of spotless truth,  
 Be so relentless to a virgin's tongue ?  
 Let me be wooed by thee but half so long ;  
 With half those terms do but my love require,  
 And I will easily grant thee thy desire :  
 Ages are bad when men become so slow,  
 That poor unskilful maids are forced to woo."

Her radiant beauty and her subtle art  
 So deeply struck Hermaphroditus' heart,  
 That she had won his love, but that the light  
 Of her translucent eye did shine too bright ;  
 For long he looked upon the lovely maid,  
 And at the last Hermaphroditus said :  
 " How should I love thee, when I do espy  
 A far more beauteous nymph hid in thy eye ?  
 When thou dost love let not that nymph be nigh  
 thee,  
 Nor, when thou woo'st, let that same nymph be  
 by thee ;  
 Or quite obscure her from thy lover's face,  
 Or hide her beauty in a darker place."  
 By this the nymph perceived he did espy  
 None but himself reflected in her eye ;  
 And, for himself no more she meant to shew him,  
 She shut her eyes, and blindfold thus did woo him :  
 " Fair boy, think not thy beauty can dispense  
 With any pain due to a bad offence ;

Remember how the gods punish'd that boy,  
 That scorn'd to let a beauteous nymph enjoy  
 Her long-wished pleasure ; for the peevish elf,  
 Loved of all others, needs would love himself :  
 So may'st thou love perhaps : thou may'st be blest  
 By granting to a luckless nymph's request ;  
 Then rest awhile with me amidst these weeds,  
 The Sun, that sees all, winks at lovers' deeds.  
 Phoebus is blind when love-sports are begun,  
 And never sees until their sports be done.  
 Believe me, boy, thy blood is very staid,  
 Thou art so loth to kiss a youthful maid :  
 Wert thou a maid and I a man, I'll shew thee  
 With what a manly boldness I would woo thee :  
 ' Fairer than Love's queen' (thus I would begin)  
 ' Might not my over-boldness be a sin,  
 I would entreat this favour, if I could,  
 Thy roseate cheeks a little to behold !'  
 Then would I beg a touch, and then a kiss,  
 And then a lower yet a higher bliss ;  
 Then would I ask what Jove and Leda did,  
 When like a swan the crafty god was hid.  
 What came he for ? Why did he there abide ?  
 Surely I think he did not come to chide ;  
 He came to see her face, to talk and chat,  
 To touch, to kiss : came he for nought but that ?  
 Yes, something else : what was it he would have ?  
 That which all men of maidens ought to crave."

This said, her eyelids wide she did display,  
 But in this space the boy was run away ;  
 The wanton speeches of the lovely lass  
 Forced him for shame to hide him in the grass.  
 When she perceived she could not see him near her,  
 When she had called, and yet he would not hear her ;  
 Look, how, when autumn comes, a little space  
 Paleth the red blush of the Summer's face,  
 Tearing the leaves, the Summer's covering,  
 Three months in weaving by the curious Spring,  
 Making the grass, his green locks, go to wrack,  
 Tearing each ornament from off his back :  
 So did she spoil the garments she did wear,  
 Tearing whole ounces of her golden hair.  
 She, thus deluded of her longed bliss,  
 With much ado at last she uttered this :  
 " Why wert so bashful, boy ? Thou hast no part  
 Shews thee to be of such a female heart !  
 His eye is grey, so is the Morning's eye,  
 That blusheth always when the day is nigh.  
 Then is grey eyes the cause ? that cannot be,  
 The grey-eyed Morn is far more bold than he ;  
 For with a gentle dew from Heaven's bright tower,  
 It gets the maidenhead of every flower :  
 I would to God he were the roseate Morn,  
 And I a flower from out the earth new-born.  
 His face was smooth ; Narcissus face was so,  
 And he was careless of a sad nymph's woe :  
 Then that's the cause ; and yet that cannot be,  
 Youthful Narcissus was more bold than he,  
 Because he died for love, though of his shade ;  
 This boy nor loves himself, nor yet a maid.  
 Besides, his glorious eye is wondrous bright ;  
 So is the fiery and all-seeing light  
 Of Phoebus, who at every morning's birth  
 Blusheth for shame upon the sullen earth :  
 Then that's the cause : and yet that cannot be,  
 The fiery Sun is far more bold than he ;  
 He nightly kisseth Thetis in the sea ;  
 All know the story of Leucotoë.  
 His cheek is red, so is the fragrant rose,  
 Whose ruddy cheek with over-blushing glows ;

Then that's the cause : and yet that cannot be,  
Each blushing rose is far more bold than he ;  
Whose boldness may be plainly seen in this,  
The ruddy rose is not ashamed to kiss ;  
For always, when the day is new begun,  
The spreading rose will kiss the morning sun."

This said, hid in the grass she did espy him,  
And stumbling with her will, she fell down by him,  
And with her wanton talk, because he woo'd not,  
Begg'd that which he, poor novice, understood not.  
And (for she could not get a greater bliss)  
She did entreat at least a sister's kiss ;  
But still the more she did the boy beseech,  
The more he pouted at her wanton speech.  
At last the nymph began to touch his skin,  
Whiter than mountain-snow hath ever been ;  
And did in pureness that clear spring surpass  
Wherein Acteon saw the Arcadian lass.  
Thus did she dally long, till at the last  
In her white palm she lock'd his white hand fast ;  
Then in her hands his wrist she 'gan to close,  
When through his pulses straight his warm blood  
glows,

Whose youthful music, fanning Cupid's fire,  
In her warm breast kindled a fresh desire ;  
Then did she lift her hand unto his breast,  
A part as white and youthful as the rest,  
Where, as his flow'ry breath still comes and goes,  
She felt his gentle heart pant through his clothes.  
At last she took her hand from off that part,  
And said it panted like another heart :  
" Why should it be more feeble and less bold ?  
Why should the blood about it be more cold ?  
Nay, sure that yields, only thy tongue denies,  
And the true fancy of thy heart believeth."  
Then did she lift her hand unto his chin,  
And praised the pretty dimpling of his skin.  
But straight his skin she 'gan to overslip,  
When she beheld the redness of his lip,  
And said : " Thy lips are soft, press them to mine,  
And thou shalt see they are as soft as thine."  
Then would she fain have gone unto his eye,  
But still his ruddy lip standing so nigh,  
Drew her hand back, therefore his eye she miss'd,  
'Ginning to clasp his neck, and would have kiss'd :  
But then the boy did struggle to be gone,  
Vowing to leave her in that place alone :  
But the bright Salmacis began to fear,  
And said : " Fair stranger, I will leave thee here,  
Amid these pleasant places all alone."  
So turning back, she feigned to be gone :  
But from his sight she had no power to pass,  
Therefore she turned and hid her in the grass ;  
When to the ground bending her snow-white knee,  
The glad earth gave new coats to every tree.

He then supposing he was all alone,  
Like a young boy that is espied of none,  
Runs here and there, then on the banks doth look,  
Then on the crystal current of the brook ;  
Then with his feet he touch'd the silver streams,  
Whose drowsy waves made music in their dreams,  
And, for he was not wholly in, did weep,  
Talking aloud and babbling in their sleep :  
Whose pleasant coolness when the boy did feel,  
He thrust his foot down lower to the heel.  
O'ercome with whose sweet noise he did begin  
To strip his soft clothes from his tender skin.  
When straight the scorching Sun wept tears of  
brine,  
Because he durst not touch him with his shine,

For fear of spoiling that same ivory skin  
Whose whiteness he so much delighted in ;  
And then the Moon, mother of mortal ease,  
Would fain have come from the Antipodes  
To have beheld him naked as he stood,  
Ready to leap into the silver flood ;  
But might not, for the laws of Heaven deny  
To show men's secrets to a woman's eye :  
And therefore was her sad and gloomy light  
Confined unto the secret-keeping night.

When beauteous Salmacis a while had gazed  
Upon his naked corpse, she stood amazed,  
And both her sparkling eyes burnt in her face,  
Like the bright sun reflected in a glass :  
Scarce can she stay from running to the boy,  
Scarce can she now defer her hoped joy :  
So fast her youthful blood plays in her veins,  
That, almost mad, she scarce herself contains ;  
When young Hermaphroditus, as he stands  
Clapping his white sides with his hollow hands,  
Leapt lively from the land whereon he stood  
Into the main part of the crystal flood ;  
Like ivory then his snowy body was,  
Or a white lily in a crystal glass.  
Then rose the water-nymph from where she lay,  
As having won the glory of the day,  
And her light garments cast from off her skin,  
" He's mine," she cried, and so leapt sprightly in.  
The flattering ivy who did ever see  
Inclasp the huge trunk of an aged tree,  
Let him behold the young boy as he stands  
Inclapt in wanton Salmacis' pure hands ;  
Betwixt those ivory arms she lockt him fast,  
Striving to get away ; till at the last,  
Fondling she said, " Why striv'st thou to be gone ?  
Why should'st thou so desire to be alone ?  
Thy cheek is never fair when none is by,  
For what is red and white but to the eye ?  
And for that cause the heavens are dark at night,  
Because all creatures close their weary sight ;  
For there's no mortal can so early rise  
But still the morning waits upon his eyes.  
The early-rising and soon-singing lark  
Can never chant her sweet notes in the dark ;  
For sleep she ne'er so little or so long,  
Yet still the morning will attend her song.  
All creatures that beneath bright Cynthia be  
Have appetite unto society ;  
The overflowing waves would have a bound  
Within the confines of the spacious ground,  
And all their shady currents would be lead  
In hollow of the solitary waste,  
But that they loath to let her soft streams sing  
Where none can hear their gentle murmuring."  
Yet still the boy, regardless what she said,  
Struggled apace to overswim the maid ;  
Which when the nymph perceived she 'gan to say,  
" Struggle thou may'st, but never get away :  
So grant, just gods, that never day may see  
The separation 'twixt this boy and me !"  
The gods did hear her prayer, and feel her woe.  
And in one body they began to grow.  
She felt his youthful blood in every vein,  
And he felt her's warm his cold breast again ;  
And ever since was woman's love so blest,  
That it will draw blood from the strongest breast.  
Nor man nor maid now could they be esteem'd,  
Neither and either might they well be deem'd.  
When the young boy, Hermaphroditus, said,  
With the set voice of neither man nor maid :

" Swift Mercury, thou author of my life,  
 And thou my mother, Vulcan's lovely wife,  
 Let your poor offspring's latest breath be blest  
 In but obtaining this his last request :  
 Grant that whoever, heated by Phœbus' beams,  
 Shall come to cool him in these silver streams,  
 May never more a manly shape retain,  
 But half a virgin may return again."  
 His parents hearken'd to his last request,  
 And with that great pow'r they the fountain blest ;  
 And since that time who in that fountain swims,  
 A maiden's smoothness seizeth half his limbs.

## THE REMEDY OF LOVE.

*From Ovid.*

WHEN Cupid read this title, straight he said,  
 " Wars, I perceive, against me will be made."  
 But spare, oh Love ! to tax thy poet so,  
 Who oft hath borne thy ensign 'gainst thy foe ;  
 I am not he by whom thy mother bled,  
 When she to heaven on Mars his horses fled.  
 I oft, like other youths, thy flame did proye,  
 And if thou ask, what I do still ? I love.  
 Nay, I have taught by art to keep Love's course,  
 And made that reason which before was force.  
 I seek not to betray thee, pretty boy,  
 Nor what I once have written to destroy.  
 If any love, and find his mistress kind,  
 Let him go on, and sail with his own wind ;  
 But he that by his love is discontented,  
 To save his life my verses were invented.  
 Why should a lover kill himself ? or why  
 Should any, with his own grief wounded, die ?  
 Thou art a boy, to play becomes thee still,  
 Thy reign is soft ; play then, and do not kill ;  
 Or if thou'lt needs be vexing, then do this,  
 Make lovers meet by stealth, and steal a kiss :  
 Make them to fear lest any overwatch them,  
 And tremble when they think some come to catch  
 them ;

And with those tears that lovers shed all night,  
 Be thou content, but do not kill outright.—  
 Love heard, and up his silver wings did heave,  
 And said, " Write on ; I freely give thee leave."

Come then, all ye despised, that love endure,  
 I, that have felt the wounds, your love will cure ;  
 But come at first, for if you make delay,  
 Your sickness will grow mortal by your stay :  
 The tree, which by delay is grown so big,  
 In the beginning was a tender twig ;  
 That which at first was but a span in length,  
 Will, by delay, be rooted past men's strength.  
 Resist beginnings, medicines bring no curing  
 Where sickness is grown strong by long enduring.  
 When first thou seest a lass that likes thine eye,  
 Bend all thy present powers to descry  
 Whether her eye or carriage first would shew  
 If she be fit for love's delights or no :  
 Some will be easy, such an one elect ;  
 But she that bears too grave and stern aspect,  
 Take heed of her, and make her not thy jewel,  
 Either she cannot love, or will be cruel.  
 If love assail thee there, betime take heed,  
 Those wounds are dangerous that inward bleed ;  
 He that to-day cannot shake off love's sorrow,  
 Will certainly be more unapt to-morrow.  
 Love hath so eloquent and quick a tongue,  
 That he will lead thee all thy life along,

And on a sudden clasp thee in a yoke,  
 Where thou must either draw, or striving choke.  
 Strive then betimes, for at the first one hand  
 May stop a water-drill that wears the sand ;  
 But, if delayed, it breaks into a flood,  
 Mountains will hardly make the passage good.  
 But I am out, for now I do begin  
 To keep them off, not heal those that are in.

First, therefore, lovers, I intend to shew  
 How love came to you, then how he may go.  
 You that would not know what love's passions be,  
 Never be idle, learn that rule of me.  
 Ease makes you love, as that o'ercomes your wills,  
 Ease is the food and cause of all your ills.  
 Turn ease and idleness but out of door,  
 Love's darts are broke, his flame can burn no more.  
 As reeds and willows love the water's side,  
 So love loves with the idle to abide.  
 If then at liberty you fain would be,  
 Love yields to labour, labour and be free.  
 Long sleeps, soft beds, rich vintage, and high feed-  
 ing,

Nothing to do, and pleasure of exceeding,  
 Dulls all our senses, makes our virtue stupid,  
 And then creeps in that crafty villain Cupid.  
 That boy loves ease a' life, hates such a stir,  
 Therefore thy mind to better things prefer.  
 Behold thy country's enemies in arms,  
 At home love gripes the heart in his sly charms ;  
 Then rise and put on armour, cast off sloth,  
 Thy labour may at once o'ercome them both !  
 If this seem hard and too unpleasant, then  
 Behold the law set forth by God and men ;  
 Sit down and study that, that thou may'st know  
 The way to guide thyself, and others shew.  
 Or if thou lov'st not to be shut up so,  
 Learn to assail the deer with trusty bow,  
 That through the woods thy well-mouth'd hounds  
 may ring,

Whose echo better joys than love will sing :  
 There may'at thou chance to bring thy love to end ;  
 Diana unto Venus is no friend.  
 The country will afford thee means enow,  
 Sometimes disdain not to direct the plough ;  
 To follow through the fields the bleating lamb,  
 That mourns to miss the comfort of his dam.  
 Assist the harvest, help to prune the trees,  
 Graft, plant, and sow, no kind of labour leese.  
 Set nets for birds, with hook'd lines bait for fish,  
 Which will employ thy mind and fill thy dish ;  
 That, being weary with these pains, at night  
 Sound sleep may put the thoughts of love to flight.  
 With such delights, or labours as are these,  
 Forget to love, and learn thyself to please.  
 But chiefly learn this lesson, for my sake,  
 Fly from her far, some journey undertake :  
 I know thou'lt grieve, and that her name once told,  
 Will be enough thy journey to withhold ;  
 But when thou find'st thyself most bent to stay,  
 Compel thy feet to run with thee away.  
 Nor do thou wish that rain or stormy weather  
 May stay your steps, and bring you back together ;  
 Count not the miles you pass, nor doubt the way,  
 Lest those respects should turn you back to stay.  
 Tell not the clock, nor look not once behind,  
 But fly like lightning, or the northern wind :  
 For where we are too much o'ermatch'd in might,  
 There is no way for safe-guard but by flight.  
 But some will count my lines too hard and bitter :  
 I must confess them hard ; but yet 'tis bitter

To fast a while, that health may be provoked,  
 Than feed at plenteous tables and be choked.  
 To cure the wretched body, I am sure  
 Both fire and steel thou gladly wilt endure :  
 Wilt thou not then take pains by any art  
 To cure thy mind, which is thy better part ?  
 The hardness is at first, and that once past,  
 Pleasant and easy ways will come at last.  
 I do not bid thee strive with witches' charms,  
 Or such unholy acts, to cure thy harms ;  
 Ceres herself, who all these things did know,  
 Had never power to cure her own love so :  
 No, take this medicine, (which of all is sure)  
 Labour and absence is the only cure.

But if the fates compel thee in such fashion,  
 That thou must needs live near her habitation,  
 And canst not fly her sight, learn here of me,  
 Thou that would'st fain, and canst not yet be free :  
 Set all thy mistress' faults before thine eyes,  
 And all thy own disgraces well advise ;  
 Say to thyself, that " she is covetous,  
 Hath ta'en my gifts, and used me thus and thus ;  
 Thus hath she sworn to me, and thus deceived ;  
 Thus have I hoped, and thus have been bereaved.  
 With love she feeds my rival, while I starve,  
 And pours on him kisses which I deserve :  
 She follows him with smiles, and gives to me  
 Sad looks ; no lover's, but a stranger's fee.  
 All those embraces I so oft desired,  
 To him she offers daily unrequired ;  
 Whose whole desert, and half mine weighed to-  
 gether,

Would make mine lead, and his seem cork and  
 feather ;

Then let her go, and, since she proves so hard,  
 Regard thyself, and give her no regard."  
 Thus must thou school thyself, and I could wish  
 Thee to thyself most eloquent in this.  
 But put on grief enough, and do not fear,  
 Grief will enforce thy eloquence t' appear.  
 Thus I myself the love did once expel  
 Of one whose coyness vex'd my soul like hell.  
 I must confess she touch'd me to the quick,  
 And I, that am physician, then was sick ;  
 But this I found to profit : I did still  
 Ruminat what I thought in her was ill ;  
 And, for to cure myself, I found a way,  
 Some honest slanders on her for to lay :  
 Quoth I, " How lamely doth my mistress go !"  
 (Although I must confess it was not so :)  
 I said her arms were crooked, fingers bent,  
 Her shoulders bow'd, her legs consumed and spent ;  
 Her colour sad, her neck as dark as night,  
 When Venus might in all have ta'en delight.  
 But yet, because I would no more come nigh her,  
 Myself unto myself did thus bely her.  
 Do thou the like, and, though she fair appear,  
 Think vice to virtue often comes too near ;  
 And in that error (though it be an error)  
 Preserve thyself from any further terror.  
 If she be round and plump, say she's too fat ;  
 If brown, say black, and thick, who cares for that ?  
 If she be slender, swear she is too lean,  
 That such a wench will wear a man out clean.  
 If she be red, say she's too full of blood ;  
 If pale, her body nor her mind is good ;  
 If wanton, say, she seeks thee to devour ;  
 If grave, neglect her, say, she looks too sour.  
 Nay, if she have a fault, and thou dost know it,  
 Praise it, that in thy presence she may show it :

As, if her voice be bad, crack'd in the ring,  
 Never give over till thou make her sing ;  
 If she have any blemish in her foot,  
 Commend her dancing still, and put her to't ;  
 If she be rude of speech, incite her talk ;  
 If halting lame, provoke her much to walk ;  
 Or if on instruments she have small skill,  
 Reach down a viol, urge her to that still ;  
 Take any way to ease thy own distress,  
 And think those faults be which are nothing less.  
 Then meditate besides what thing it is  
 That makes thee still in love to go amiss.  
 Advise thee well, for as the world now goes,  
 Men are not caught with substance but with shows.  
 Women are in their bodies turn'd to French,  
 That face and body's least part of a wench.  
 I know a woman hath in love been troubled  
 For that which tailors make, a fine neat doublet ;  
 And men are even as mad in their desiring,  
 That oftentimes love women for their tiring :  
 He that doth so, let him take this advice :  
 Let him rise early, and not being nice,  
 Up to his mistress' chamber let him hie  
 Ere she arise, and there he shall espie  
 Such a confusion of disordered things,  
 In boddices, jewels, tires, wires, lawns, and rings,  
 That sure it cannot choose but much abhor him,  
 To see her lie in pieces thus before him ;  
 And find those things shut in a painted box,  
 For which he loves her and endures her mocks.  
 Once I myself had a great mind to see  
 What kind of things women undressed be ;  
 And found my sweetheart, just when I came at her,  
 Screwing her teeth, and dipping rags in water.  
 She missed her perrwig, and durst not stay,  
 But put it on in haste the backward way ;  
 That, had I not o' th' sudden changed my mind,  
 I had mistook and kiss'd my love behind :  
 So, if thou wish her faults should rid thy cares,  
 Watch out thy time, and take her unawares ;  
 Or rather put the better way in proof,  
 Come thou not near, but keep thyself aloof.  
 If all this serve not, use one medicine more,  
 Seek out another love, and her adore ;  
 But choose out one in whom thou well may'st see  
 A heart inclined to love and cherish thee :  
 For, as a river parted slower goes,  
 So love, thus parted, still more evenly flows.  
 One anchor will not serve a vessel tall,  
 Nor is one hook enough to fish withal ;  
 He that can solace him and sport with two,  
 May in the end triumph as others do.  
 Thou, that to one hast shewed thyself too kind,  
 May'st in a second much more comfort find ;  
 If one love entertain thee with despite,  
 The other will embrace thee with delight ;  
 When by the former thou art made accurst,  
 The second will contend to excel the first,  
 And strive with love to drive her from thy breast :  
 That first to second yields, women know best.  
 Or if to yield to either thou art loth,  
 This may perhaps acquit thee of them both :  
 For what one love makes odd, two shall make  
 even ;

Thus blows with blows, and fire with fire's out-  
 driven. [heart,

Perchance this course will turn thy first love's  
 And when thine is at ease, cause her's to smart.  
 If thy love's rival stick so near thy side,  
 Think, women can copartners worse abide ;

For though thy mistress never means to love thee,  
 Yet from the other's love she'll strive to move thee:  
 But let her strive, she oft hath vex'd thy heart,  
 Suffer her now to bear herself a part;  
 And though thy bowels burn like Ætna's fire,  
 Seem colder far than ice, or her desire;  
 Feign thyself free, and sigh not overmuch,  
 But laugh aloud when grief thy heart doth touch.  
 I do not bid thee break through fire and flame,  
 Such violence in love is much to blame;  
 But I advise that thou dissemble deep,  
 And all thy passions in thine own breast keep.  
 Feign thyself well, and thou at last shalt see  
 Thyself as well as thou didst feign to be:  
 So have I often, when I would not drink,  
 Sat down as one asleep, and feign'd to wink,  
 Till, as I nodding sat, and took no heed,  
 I have at last fall'n fast asleep indeed;  
 So have I oft been angry, feigning spite,  
 And, counterfeiting smiles, have laughed outright;  
 So love by use doth come, by use doth go,  
 And he that feigns well shall at length be so.  
 If e'er thy mistress promised to receive thee  
 Into her bosom, and did then deceive thee,  
 Locking thy rival in, thee out of door,  
 Be not dejected, seem not to deplore,  
 Nor when thou seest her next take notice of it,  
 But pass it over, it shall turn to profit:  
 For if she sees such tricks as these perplex thee,  
 She will be proud, and take delight to vex thee,  
 But if she prove thee constant in this kind,  
 She will begin at length some sleights to find,  
 How she may draw thee back, and keep thee still  
 A servile captive to her fickle will.  
 But now take heed, here comes the proof of men,  
 Be thou as constant as thou seemest then:  
 Receive no messages, regard no lines,  
 They are but snares to catch thee in her twines;  
 Receive no gifts, think all that praise her flatter;  
 What'e'r she writes believe not half the matter.  
 Converse not with her servant, nor her maid,  
 Scarce bid good-morrow, lest thou be betray'd.  
 When thou goest by her door never look back,  
 And though she call do not thy journey slack.  
 If she should send her friends to talk with thee,  
 Suffer them not too long to walk with thee;  
 Do not believe one word they say is sooth,  
 Nor do not ask so much as how she doth;  
 Yea, though thy very heart should burn to know,  
 Bridle thy tongue, and make thereof no show:  
 Thy careless silence shall perplex her more  
 Than can a thousand sighs sigh'd o'er and o'er.  
 By saying, thou lovest not, thy loving prove not,  
 For he's far gone in love, that says, "I love not:"  
 Then hold thy peace, and shortly love will die,  
 That wound heals best, that cures not by and by.  
 But some will say, "Alas, this rule is hard!  
 Must we not love where we may find reward?  
 How should a tender woman bear this scorn,  
 That cannot, without art, by men be borne?"  
 Mistake me not; I do not wish you show  
 Such a contempt to them whose love you know;  
 But where a scornful lass makes you endure  
 Her slight regarding, there I lay my cure.  
 Nor think in leaving love you wrong your lass,  
 Who one to her content already has;  
 While she doth joy in him, joy thou in any,  
 Thou hast, as well as she, the choice of many:  
 Then, for thy own contempt, defer not long,  
 But cure thyself, and she shall have no wrong.

Among all cures I chiefly do commend  
 Absence in this to be the only friend;  
 And so it is, but I would have ye learn  
 The perfect use of absence to discern.  
 First then, when thou art absent to her sight,  
 In solitariness do not delight:  
 Be seldom left alone, for then I know  
 A thousand vexing thoughts will come and go.  
 Fly lonely walks, and uncouth places sad,  
 They are the nurse of thoughts that make men mad.  
 Walk not too much where thy fond eye may see  
 The place where she did give love's rights to thee:  
 For even the place will tell thee of those joys,  
 And turn thy kisses into sad annoys.  
 Frequent not woods and groves, nor sit and muse  
 With arms across, as foolish lovers use;  
 For as thou sitt'st alone thou soon shalt find  
 Thy mistress' face presented to thy mind,  
 As plainly to thy troubled phantasy,  
 As if she were in presence, and stood by.  
 This to eschew open thy doors all day,  
 Shun no man's speech that comes into thy way;  
 Admit all companies, and when there's none,  
 Then walk thou forth thyself, and seek out one;  
 When he is found, seek more, laugh, drink, and  
 Rather than be alone do anything. [sing;  
 Or if thou be constrained to be alone,  
 Have not her picture for to gaze upon:  
 For that's the way, when thou art eased of pain,  
 To wound anew and make thee sick again;  
 Or if thou hast it, think the painter's skill  
 Flattered her face, and that she looks more ill;  
 And think, as thou dost musing on it sit,  
 That she herself is counterfeit like it:  
 Or rather fly all things that are inclined  
 To bring one thought of her into thy mind;  
 View not her tokens, nor think on her words,  
 But take some book, whose learned womb affords  
 Physic for souls, there search for some relief  
 To 'guile the time, and rid away thy grief.  
 But if thy thoughts on her must needs be bent,  
 Think what a deal of precious time was spent  
 In quest of her; and that thy best of youth  
 Languish'd and died while she was void of truth;  
 Think but how ill she did deserve affection,  
 And yet how long she held thee in subjection;  
 Think how she changed, how ill it did become her,  
 And thinking so, leave love, and fly far from her.  
 He that from all infection would be free,  
 Must fly the place where the infected be:  
 And he that would from love's affection fly,  
 Must leave his mistress' walks, and not come nigh.  
 Sore eyes are got by looking on sore eyes,  
 And wounds do soon from new-heal'd scars arise;  
 As embers touch'd with sulphur do renew,  
 So will her sight kindle fresh flames in you.  
 If then thou meet'st at her, suffer her go by thee,  
 And be afraid to let her come too nigh thee:  
 For her aspect will cause desire in thee,  
 And hungry men scarce hold from meat they see.  
 If e'er she sent thee letters, that lie by,  
 Peruse them not, they'll captivate thy eye,  
 But lap them up, and cast them in the fire,  
 And wish, as they waste, so may thy desire.  
 If e'er thou sent'st at her token, gift, or letter,  
 Go not to fetch them back; for it is better  
 That she detain a little paltry peif,  
 Than thou should'st seek for them and lose thyself:  
 For why? her sight will so enchant thy heart  
 That thou wilt lose thy labour, I my art.

But if, by chance, there fortune such a case,  
 Thou needs must come where she shall be in place,  
 Then call to mind all parts of this discourse,  
 For sure thou shalt have need of all thy force.  
 Against thou goest curl not thy head and hair,  
 Nor care whether thy band be foul or fair;  
 Nor be not in so neat and spruce array  
 As if thou mean'st to make it holiday;  
 Neglect thyself for once, that she may see  
 Her love hath now no power to work on thee;  
 And if thy rival be in presence too,  
 Seem not to mark, but do as others do;  
 Salute him friendly, give him gentle words,  
 Return all courtesies that he affords:  
 Drink to him, carve him, give him compliment;  
 This shall thy mistress more than thee torment:  
 For she will think, by this thy careless show,  
 Thou can'st not now whether she love or no.  
 But if thou canst persuade thyself indeed  
 She hath no lover, but of thee hath need,  
 That no man loves her but thyself alone,  
 And that she shall be lost when thou art gone;  
 Thus sooth thyself, and thou shalt seem to be  
 In far more happy taking than is she.  
 For if thou think'st she's loved and loves again,  
 Hell-fire will seem more easy than thy pain.  
 But chiefly when in presence thou shalt spy  
 The man she most affecteth standing by,  
 And see him grasp her by the tender hand,  
 And whispering close, or almost kissing stand;  
 When thou shalt doubt whether they laugh at thee,  
 Or whether on some meeting they agree;  
 If now thou canst hold out, thou art a man,  
 And canst perform more than thy teacher can;  
 If then thy heart can be at ease and free,  
 I will give o'er to teach, and learn of thee.  
 But this way I would take: among them all,  
 I would pick out some lass to talk withal,  
 Whose quick inventions and whose nimble wit  
 Should busy mine and keep me from my fit:  
 My eye with all my heart should be a-wooing,  
 No matter what I said so I were doing;  
 For all that while my love should think at least  
 That I, as well as she, on love did feast;  
 And though my heart were thinking of her face,  
 Of her unkindness and my own disgrace,  
 Of all my present pains by her neglect,  
 Yet would I laugh, and seem without respect.  
 Perchance, in envy thou should'st sport with any,  
 Her beck will single thee from forth of many:  
 But, if thou canst, of all that present are,  
 Her conference alone thou should'st forbear;  
 For if her looks so much thy mind do trouble,  
 Her honied speeches will distract thee double.  
 If she begin once to confer with thee,  
 Then do as I would do, be ruled by me:  
 When she begins to talk, imagine straight,  
 That now to catch thee up she lies in wait;  
 Then call to mind some business or affair,  
 Whose doubtful issue takes up all thy care;  
 That while such talk thy troubled fancies stirs,  
 Thy mind may work, and give no heed to her's.  
 Alas! I know men's hearts, and that full soon,  
 By women's gentle words we are undone;  
 If women sigh or weep, our souls are grieved,  
 Or if they swear they love, they are believed.  
 But trust not thou to oaths if she should swear,  
 Nor hearty sighs, believe they dwell not there.  
 If she should grieve in earnest or in jest,  
 Or force her arguments with sad protest,

As if true sorrow in her eyelid sate,  
 Nay, if she come to weeping, trust not that;  
 For know that women can both weep and smile,  
 With much more danger than the crocodile.  
 Think all she doth is but to breed thy pain,  
 And get the power to tyrannize again;  
 And she will beat thy heart with trouble more  
 Than rocks are beat with waves upon the shore.  
 Do not complain to her then of thy wrong,  
 But lock thy thoughts within thy silent tongue.  
 Tell her not why thou leav'st her, nor declare  
 (Although she ask thee) what thy torments are.  
 Wring not her fingers, gaze not on her eye;  
 From thence a thousand snares and arrows fly:  
 No, let her not perceive, by sighs and signs,  
 How at her deeds thy inward soul repines.  
 Seem careless of her speech, and do not bark.  
 Answer by chance as though thou didst not mark;  
 And if she bid thee home, straight promise not,  
 Or break thy word as if thou hadst forgot;  
 Seem not to care whether thou come or no,  
 And if she be not earnest do not go;  
 Feign thou hast business, and defer the meeting,  
 As one that greatly cared not for her greeting:  
 And as she talks cast thou thine eyes elsewhere,  
 And look among the lasses that are there;  
 Compare their several beauties to her face,  
 Some one or other will her form disgrace;  
 On both their faces carry still thy view,  
 Balance them equally in judgment true:  
 And when thou find'st the other doth excel  
 (Yet that thou canst not love it half so well)  
 Blush that thy passions make thee dote on her  
 More than on those thy judgment doth prefer.  
 When thou hast let her speak all that she would,  
 Seem as thou hast not one word understood:  
 And when to part with thee thou see'st her heat,  
 Give her some ordinary compliment,  
 Such as may seem of courtesy, not love,  
 And so to other company remove.  
 This carelessness, in which thou seem'st to be,  
 (Howe'er in her) will work this change in thee,  
 That thou shalt think, for using her so slight,  
 She cannot choose but turn her love to spite:  
 And if thou art persuaded once she hates,  
 Thou wilt beware, and not come near her baits.  
 But though I wish thee constantly believe  
 She hates thy sight, thy passions to deceive;  
 Yet be not thou so base to hate her too,  
 That which seems ill in her do not thou do;  
 'Twill indiscretion seem, and want of wit,  
 Where thou didst love to hate instead of it;  
 And thou may'st shame ever to be so mated,  
 And joined in love with one that should be hated:  
 Such kind of love is fit for clowns and hinds,  
 And not for debonair and gentle minds;  
 For can there be in man a madness more  
 Than hate those lips he wish'd to kiss before,  
 Or loath to see those eyes, or hear that voice  
 Whose very sound hath made his heart rejoice?  
 Such acts as these much indiscretion shews,  
 When men from kissing turn to wish for blows:  
 And this their own example shews so naught,  
 That when they should direct they must be taught:  
 But thou wilt say, "For all the love I bear her,  
 And all the service, I am ne'er the nearer;"  
 And, which thee most of all doth vex like hell,  
 "She loves a man ne'er loved her half so well:  
 Him she adores, but I must not come at her,  
 Have I not then good reason for to hate her?"

I answer, no ; for make the cause thine own,  
 And in thy glass her actions shall be shown :  
 When thou thyself in love wert so far gone,  
 Say, couldst thou love any but her alone ?  
 I know thou could'st not, though with tears and cries  
 These had made deaf thine ears, and dim thine eyes :  
 Would'st thou for this that they hate thee again ?  
 If so thou would'st, then hate thy love again :  
 Your faults are both alike ; thou lovest her,  
 And she in love thy rival doth prefer :  
 If then her love to him thy hate procure,  
 Thou should'st for loving her like hate endure :  
 Then do not hate ; for all the lines I write  
 Are not address'd to turn thy love to spite,  
 But writ to draw thy doting mind from love,  
 That in the golden mean thy thoughts may move ;  
 In which, when once thou find'st thyself at quiet,  
 Learn to preserve thyself with this good diet :

## THE CONCLUSION.

Sleep not too much ; nor longer than asleep  
 Within thy bed thy lazy body keep ;  
 For when thou, warm awake, shall feel it soft,  
 Fond cogitations will assail thee oft :  
 Then start up early, study, work, or write,  
 Let labour, others' toil, be thy delight.  
 Eat not too much, or if thou much dost eat,  
 Let it not be dainty or stirring meat ;  
 Abstain from wine, although thou think it good,  
 It sets thy meat on fire, and stirs thy blood ;  
 Use thyself much to bathe thy wanton limbs,  
 In coolest streams which o'er the gravel swims :  
 Be still in gravest company, and fly  
 The wanton rabble of the younger fry,  
 Whose lustful tricks will lead thee to delight  
 To think on love, where thou shalt perish quite ;  
 Come not at all where many women are,  
 But, like a bird that lately 'scaped the snare,  
 Avoid their garish beauty, fly with speed,  
 And learn by her that lately made thee bleed ;  
 Be not too much alone, but if alone,  
 Get thee some modest book to look upon ;  
 But do not read the lines of wanton men,  
 Poetry sets thy mind on fire again :  
 Abstain from songs and verses, and take heed  
 That not a line of love thou ever read.

## AN ELEGY ON THE LADY MARKHAM.

As unthrifths groan in straw for their pawn'd beds,  
 As women weep for their lost maidenheads,  
 When both are without hope or remedy,  
 Such an untimely grief I have for thee.  
 I never saw thy face, nor did my heart  
 Urge forth mine eyes unto it whilst thou wert ;  
 But being lifted hence, that, which to thee  
 Was death's sad dart, proved Cupid's shaft to me.  
 Whoever thinks me foolish that the force  
 Of a report can make me love a corpse,  
 Know he that when with this I do compare  
 The love I do a living woman bear,  
 I find myself most happy : now I know  
 Where I can find my mistress, and can go  
 Unto her trimm'd bed, and can lift away  
 Her grass-green mantle, and her sheet display ;  
 And touch her naked ; and though th' envious mold  
 In which she lies uncover'd, moist, and cold,  
 Strive to corrupt her, she will not abide  
 With any art her blemishes to hide,

As many living do, and know their need ;  
 Yet cannot they in sweetness her exceed,  
 But make a stink with all their art and skill,  
 Which their physicians warrant with a bill ;  
 Nor at her door doth heaps of coaches stay,  
 Footmen and midwives to bar up my way ;  
 Nor needs she any maid or page to keep,  
 To knock me early from my golden sleep,  
 With letters that her honour all is gone,  
 If I not right her cause on such a one.  
 Her heart is not so hard to make me pay  
 For every kiss a supper and a play :  
 Nor will she ever open her pure lips  
 To utter oaths, enough to drown our ships,  
 To bring a plague, a famine, or the sword,  
 Upon the land, though she should keep her word ;  
 Yet, ere an hour be past, in some new vein  
 Break them, and swear them double o'er again.  
 Pardon me, that with thy blest misery  
 I mingle mine own former misery :  
 Yet dare I not excuse the fate that brought  
 These crosses on me, for then every thought  
 That tended to thy love was black and foul,  
 Now all as pure as a new-baptiz'd soul :  
 For I protest, for all that I can see,  
 I would not lie one night in bed with thee ;  
 Nor am I jealous, but could well abide  
 My foe to lie in quiet by thy side.

You worms, my rivals, whilst she was alive,  
 How many thousands were there that did strive  
 To have your freedom ? for their sake forbear  
 Unseemly holes in her soft skin to wear :  
 But if you must (as what worms can abstain  
 To taste her tender body ?) yet refrain  
 With your disordered eatings to deface her,  
 But feed yourselves so as you most may grace her.  
 First, through her ear-tips see you make a pair  
 Of holes, which, as the moist inclosed air  
 Turns into water, may the clean drops take,  
 And in her ears a pair of jewels make.  
 Have ye not yet enough of that white skin,  
 The touch whereof, in times past, would have been  
 Enough to have ransom'd many a thousand soul  
 Captive to love ? If not, then upward roll  
 Your little bodies, where I would you have  
 This Epitaph upon her forehead grave :  
 " Living, she was young, fair, and full of wit ;  
 Dead, all her faults are in her forehead writ." "

## A CHARM.

SLEEP, old man, let silence charm thee,  
 Dreaming slumbers overtake thee,  
 Quiet thoughts and darkness arm thee,  
 That no creaking do awake thee.  
 Phoebe hath put out her light,  
 All her shadows closing ;  
 Phoebe lend her horns to-night  
 To thy head's disposing.  
 Let no fatal bell nor clock  
 Pierce the hollow of thy ear :  
 Tongueless be the early cock,  
 Or what else may add a fear.  
 Let no rat nor silly mouse  
 Move the senseless rushes,  
 Nor a cough disturb this house  
 Till Aurora blushes.  
 Come, my sweet Corinna, come,  
 Laugh, and leave thy late deploring :

Sable Midnight makes all dumb,  
But thy jealous husband's snoring.  
And with thy sweet perfum'd kisses  
Entertain a stranger:  
Love's delight, and sweetest bliss is  
Got with greatest danger.

ON THE MARRIAGE OF A BEAUTEOUS YOUNG  
GENTLEWOMAN WITH AN ANCIENT MAN.

FONDLY, too curious Nature, to adorn  
Aurora with the blushes of the morn:  
Why do her rosy lips breathe gums and spice,  
Unto the East, and sweet to Paradise?  
Why do her eyes open the day? her hand  
And voice intrance the panther, and command  
Incensed winds; her breasts, the tents of love,  
Smooth as the godded swan, or Venus' dove;  
Soft as the balmy dew whose every touch  
Is pregnant; but why those rich spoils, when such  
Wonder and perfection must be led  
A bridal captive unto Tithon's bed?  
Ag'd, and deformed Tithon! must thy twine  
Circle and blast at once what care and time  
Had made for wonder? must pure beauty have  
No other foil but ruin and a grave?  
So have I seen the pride of Nature's store,  
The orient pearl, chained to the sooty Moor;  
So hath the diamond's bright ray been set  
In night, and wedded to the negro jet.  
See, see, how thick those showers of pearl do fall  
To weep her ransom, or her funeral,  
Whose every treasured drop, congealed, might bring  
Freedom and ransom to a fettered king,  
While tyrant Wealth stands by, and laughs to see  
How he can wed love and antipathy.  
Hymen, thy pine burns with adulterate fire;  
Thou and thy quivered boy did once conspire  
To mingle equal flames, and then no shine  
Of gold, but beauty, dressed the Paphian shrine;  
Roses and lilies kiss'd; the amorous vine  
Did with the fair and straight-limb'd elm entwine.

THE GLANCE.

COLD Virtue guard me, or I shall endure  
From the next glance a double calenture  
Of fire and lust! Two flames, two Semeles,  
Dwell in those eyes, whose looser glowing rays  
Would thaw the frozen Russian into lust,  
And parch the negro's hotter blood to dust.  
Dart not your balls of wild-fire here; go throw  
Those flakes upon the eunuch's colder snow,  
Till he in active blood do boil as high  
As he that made him so in jealousy.  
When that loose queen of love did dress her eyes  
In the most taking flame to win the prize  
At Ida; that faint glare to this desire  
Burnt like a taper to the zone of fire:  
And could she then the lustful youth have crowned  
With thee his Helen, Troy had never found  
Her fate in Sinon's fire; thy hotter eyes  
Had made it burn a quicker sacrifice  
To lust, whilst every glance in subtle wiles  
Had shot itself like lightning through the piles.  
Go blow upon some equal blood, and let  
Earth's hotter ray engender and beget  
New flames to dress the aged Paphians' quire,  
And lend the world new Cupids borne on fire.

Dart no more here those flames, nor strive to throw  
Your fire on him who is immured in snow!  
Those glances work on me like the weak shine  
The frosty sun throws on the Appenine,  
When the hill's active coldness doth go near  
To freeze the glimmering taper to his sphere:  
Each ray is lost on me, like the faint light  
The glow-worm shoots at the cold breast of night.  
Thus virtue can secure; but for that name  
I had been now sin's martyr, and your flame.

A SONNET.

FLATTERING Hope, away and leave me,  
She'll not come, thou dost deceive me;  
Hark the cock crows, th' envious light  
Chides away the silent night;  
Yet she comes not, oh! how I tire  
Betwixt cold fear and hot desire.

Here alone enforced to tarry  
While the tedious minutes marry,  
And get hours, those days and years,  
Which I count with sighs and fears:  
Yet she comes not, oh! how I tire  
Betwixt cold fear and hot desire.

Restless thoughts a while remove  
Unto the bosom of my love,  
Let her languish in my pain,  
Fear and hope, and fear again;  
Then let her tell me, in love's fire,  
What torment's like unto desire?

Endless wishing, tedious longing,  
Hopes and fears together thronging;  
Rich in dreams, yet poor in waking,  
Let her be in such a taking:  
Then let her tell me, in love's fire,  
What torment's like unto desire?

Come then, Love, prevent day's eying,  
My desire would fain be dying:  
Smoother me with breathless kisses,  
Let me dream no more of blisses;  
But tell me, which is in Love's fire  
Best, to enjoy, or to desire?

TRUE BEAUTY.

MAY I find a woman fair,  
And her mind as clear as air,  
If her beauty go alone,  
'Tis to me as if't were none.

May I find a woman rich,  
And not of too high a pitch;  
If that pride should cause disdain,  
Tell me, lover, where's thy gain?

May I find a woman wise,  
And her falsehood not disguise;  
Hath she wit as she hath will,  
Double arm'd she is to ill.

May I find a woman kind,  
And not wavering like the wind:  
How should I call that love mine,  
When 'tis his, and his, and thine?

May I find a woman true,  
There is Beauty's fairest hue,  
There is Beauty, Love, and Wit:  
Happy he can compass it.

## THE INDIFFERENT.

NEVER more will I protest,  
To love a woman but in jest :  
For as they cannot be true,  
So, to give each man his due,  
When the wooing fit is past  
Their affection cannot last.

Therefore, if I chance to meet  
With a mistress fair and sweet,  
She my service shall obtain,  
Loving her for love again :  
Thus much liberty I crave,  
Not to be a constant slave.

But when we have tried each other,  
If she better like another,  
Let her quickly change for me,  
Then to change am I as free.  
He or she that loves too long  
Sell their freedom for a song.

## LOVE'S FREEDOM.

WHY should man be only tied  
To a foolish female thing,  
When all creatures else beside,  
Birds and beasts, change every spring ?  
Who would then to one be bound,  
When so many may be found ?

Why should I myself confine  
To the limits of one place,  
When I have all Europe mine,  
Where I list to run my race.  
Who would then to one be bound,  
When so many may be found ?

Would you think him wise that now  
Still one sort of meat doth eat,  
When both sea and land allow  
Sundry sorts of other meat ?  
Who would then to one be bound,  
When so many may be found ?

Ere old Saturn changed his throne,  
Freedom reigned and banish'd strife,  
Where was he that knew his own,  
Or who called a woman, wife ?  
Who would then to one be bound,  
When so many may be found ?

Ten times happier are those men  
That enjoyed those golden days :  
Until time redress't again  
I will never Hymen praise.  
Who would then to one be bound,  
When so many may be found ?

## AN EPITAPH.

HERE she lies, whose spotless fame  
Invites a stone to learn her name.  
The rigid Spartan, that denied  
An epitaph to all that died,  
Unless for war, in charity  
Would here vouchsafe an elegy.  
She died a wife, but yet her mind,  
Beyond virginity refined,  
From lawless fire remain'd as free,  
As now from heat her ashes be.  
Her husband, yet without a sin,  
Was not a stranger, but her kin ;  
That her chaste love might seem no other  
To her husband than a brother.

Keep well this pawn, thou marble chest,  
Till it be call'd for let it rest ;  
For while this jewel here is set,  
The grave is like a cabinet.

## A SONNET.

LIKE a ring without a finger,  
Or a bell without a ringer ;  
Like a horse was never ridden,  
Or a feast and no guest bidden ;  
Like a well without a bucket,  
Like a rose if no man pluck it :  
Just such as these may she be said  
That lives, ne'er loves, but dies a maid.

The ring, if worn, the finger decks,  
The bell pulled by the ringer speaks ;  
The horse doth ease if he be ridden,  
The feast doth please if guest be bidden ;  
The bucket draws the water forth,  
The rose when pluck'd is still most worth :  
Such is the virgin, in my eyes,  
That lives, loves, marries, ere she dies.

Like to a stock not grafted on,  
Or like a lute not played upon ;  
Like a jack without a weight,  
Or a bark without a freight ;  
Like a lock without a key,  
Or a candle in the day :  
Just such as these may she be said  
That lives, ne'er loves, but dies a maid.

The grafted stock doth bear best fruit,  
There's music in the finger'd lute :  
The weight doth make the jack go ready,  
The freight doth make the bark go steady ;  
The key the lock doth open right,  
The candle's useful in the night :  
Such is the virgin, in my eyes,  
That lives, loves, marries, ere she dies.

Like a call without, " Anon, sir !"  
Or a question and no answer ;  
Like a ship was never rigg'd,  
Or a mine was never digg'd ;  
Like a wound without a tent,  
Or civet-box without a scent :  
Just such as these may she be said  
That lives, ne'er loves, but dies a maid.

Th' Anon, sir ! doth obey the call,  
The question answered pleaseth all ;  
Who rigs a ship sails with the wind,  
Who digs a mine doth treasure find ;  
The wound by wholesome tent hath ease,  
The box perfumed the senses please :  
Such is the virgin, in my eyes,  
That lives, loves, marries, ere she dies.

Like marrow-bone was never broken,  
Or commendations and no token ;  
Like a fort and none to win it,  
Or like the moon and no man in it ;  
Like a school without a teacher,  
Or like a pulpit and no preacher :  
Just such as these may she be said  
That lives, ne'er loves, but dies a maid.

The broken marrow-bone is sweet,  
The token doth adorn the greet ;  
There's triumph in the fort being won,  
The man rides glorious in the moon ;

The school is by the teacher still'd,  
The pulpit by the preacher fill'd :  
Such is the virgin, in my eyes,  
That lives, loves, marries, ere she dies.

Like a cage without a bird,  
Or a thing too long deferr'd ;  
Like the gold was never tried,  
Or the ground unoccupied ;  
Like a house that's not possess'd,  
Or the book was never press'd :  
Just such as these may she be said  
That lives, ne'er loves, but dies a maid.

The bird in cage doth sweetly sing,  
Due season prefers every thing ;  
The gold that's tried from dross is purged,  
There's profit in the ground manured ;  
The house is by possession graced,  
The book when press'd is then embraced :  
Such is the virgin, in my eyes,  
That lives, loves, marries, ere she dies.

A FUNERAL ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF THE  
LADY PENELOPE CLIFTON.

SINCE thou art dead, CLIFTON, the world may see  
A certain end of flesh and blood in thee ;  
Till then a way was left for man to cry,  
Flesh may be made so pure it cannot die ;  
But now thy unexpected death doth strike  
With grief the better and the worse alike ;  
The good are sad they are not with thee there,  
The bad have found they must not tarry here.  
Death, I confess, 'tis just in thee to try  
Thy pow'r on us, for thou thyself must die ;  
Thou pay'st but wages, Death, yet I would know  
What strange delight thou tak'st to pay them so ;  
When thou com'st face to face thou strik'st us  
And all our liberty is to dispute [mute  
With thee behind thy back, which I will use :  
If thou hadst bravery in thee, thou wouldest choose  
(Since thou art absolute, and canst controul  
All things beneath a reasonable soul)  
Some look'd for way of killing ; if her day  
Had ended in a fire, a sword, or sea,  
Or hadst thou come hid in a hundred years  
To make an end of all her hopes and fears,  
Or any other way direct to thee  
Which Nature might esteem an enemy,  
Who would have chid thee ? now it shews thy hand  
Desires to cozen where it might command :  
Thou art not prone to kill, but where th' intent  
Of those that suffer is their nourishment ;  
If thou canst steal into a dish, and creep  
When all is still as though into a sleep,  
And cover thy dry body with a draught,  
Whereby some innocent lady may be caught,  
And cheated of her life, then thou wilt come  
And stretch thyself upon her early tomb,  
And laugh as pleased, to shew thou canst devour  
Mortality as well by wit as pow'r.  
I would thou hadst had eyes, or not a dart,  
That yet at least, the clothing of that heart  
Thou struck'st so spitefully might have appear'd  
To thee, and with a reverence have been fear'd :  
But since thou art so blind, receive from me  
Who 'twas on whom thou wrought'st this tragedy ;  
She was a lady, who for public fame,  
Never (since she in thy protection came,  
Who sett'st all living tongues at large) received  
A blemish ; with her beauty she deceived

No man ; when taken with it, they agree  
'Twas Nature's fault, when from 'em 'twas in thee.  
And such her virtue was, that although she  
Received as much joy, having pass'd through thee,  
As ever any did ; yet hath thy hate  
Made her as little better in her state,  
As ever it did any being here ;  
She lived with us as if she had been there.  
Such ladies thou canst kill no more, but so  
I give thee warning here to kill no more ;  
For if thou dost, my pen shall make the rest  
Of those that live, especially the best,  
Whom thou most thirstest for, to abandon all  
Those fruitless things, which thou wouldest have us  
Preservatives, keeping their diet so, [call  
As the long-living poor their neighbours do :  
Then shall we have them long, and they at last  
Shall pass from thee to her, but not so fast.

THE EXAMINATION OF HIS MISTRESS'S  
PERFECTIONS.

STAND still my happiness, and swelling heart  
No more, till I consider what thou art.  
Desire of knowledge was man's fatal vice,  
For when our parents were in paradise,  
Though they themselves, and all they saw was good,  
They thought it nothing if not understood ;  
And I (part of their seed struck with their sin)  
Though by their bounteous favour I be in  
A paradise where I may freely taste  
Of all the virtuous pleasures which thou hast,  
Wanting that knowledge, must in all my bliss  
Err with my parents, and ask what it is.

My faith saith 'tis not Heaven, and I dare swear  
If it be Hell no sense of pain is there ;  
Sure 'tis some pleasant place, where I may stay,  
As I to Heaven go in the middle way.  
Wert thou but fair and no whit virtuous,  
Thou wert no more to me but a fair house  
Haunted with spirits, from which men do them bless,  
And no man will half furnish to possess :  
Or hadst thou worth wrapt in a rivell'd skin,  
'Twere inaccessible ; who durst go in  
To find it out ? far sooner would I go  
To find a pearl covered with hills of snow ;  
'Twere buried virtue, and thou mightst me move  
To reverence the tomb, but not to love,  
No more than dotingly to cast mine eye  
Upon the urn where Lucrece' ashes lie.

But thou art fair and sweet, and every good  
That ever yet durst mix with flesh and blood :  
The devil ne'er saw in his fallen state  
An object whereupon to ground his hate  
So fit as thee : all living things but he  
Love thee ; how happy then must that man be  
Whom from amongst all creatures thou dost take ?  
Is there a hope beyond it ? Can he make  
A wish to change thee for ? This is my bliss,  
Let it run on now, I know what it is.

TO THE MUTABLE FAIR.

HERE, Celia, for thy sake I part  
With all that grew so near my heart ;  
The passion that I had for thee,  
The faith, the love, the constancy ;  
And that I may successful prove,  
Transform myself to what you love.  
Fool that I was, so much to prize  
Those simple virtues thou despise !

Fool, that with such dull arrows strove,  
Or hoped to reach a flying dove !  
For you that are in motion still  
Decline our force and mock our skill ;  
Who, like Don Quixote, do advance  
Against a windmill our vain lance.

Now will I wander through the air,  
Mount, make a stoop at every fair,  
And with a fancy unconfined  
(As lawless as the sea, or wind)  
Pursue you wheresoe'er you fly,  
And with your various thoughts comply.  
The formal stars do travel so  
As we their names and courses know ;  
And he that on their changes looks,  
Would think them govern'd by our books ;  
But never were the clouds reduced  
To any art the motion used,  
By those free vapours are so light,  
So frequent, that the conquer'd sight  
Despairs to find the rules that guide  
Those gilded shadows as they slide ;  
And therefore of the spacious air  
Jove's royal consort had the care,  
And by that power did once escape  
Declining bold Ixion's rape ;  
She with her own resemblance graced  
A shining cloud, which he embraced.

Such was that image, so it smiled  
With seeming kindness, which beguiled  
Your Thirsis lately, when he thought  
He had his fleeting Celia caught ;  
'Twas shaped like her, but for the fair  
He fill'd his arms with yielding air,  
A fate for which he grieves the less,  
Because the gods had like success :  
For in their story one, we see,  
Pursues a nymph and takes a tree ;  
A second with a lover's haste  
Soon overtakes what he had chased ;  
But she that did a virgin seem,  
Possess'd, appears a wand'ring stream.  
For his supposed love a third  
Lays greedy hold upon a bird ;  
And stands amazed to see his dear  
A wild inhabitant of the air.

To such old tales such nymphs as you  
Give credit, and still make them new ;  
The amorous now like wonders find  
In the swift changes of your mind.

But, Celia, if you apprehend  
The muse of your incensed friend,  
Nor would that he record your blame,  
And make it live, repeat the same ;  
Again deceive him, and again,  
And then he swears, he'll not complain ;  
For still to be deluded so  
Is all the pleasures lovers know.  
Who, like good falconers, take delight  
Not in the quarry but the fight.

#### FLIE ON LOVE.

Now, flie on foolish Love ! it not befits  
Or man or woman know it.  
Love was not meant for people in their wits,  
And they that fondly shew it  
Betray the straw and feathers in their brain,  
And shall have Bedlam for their pain :  
If single love be such a curse,  
To marry is to make it ten times worse.

#### SECRECY PROTESTED.

FEAR not, dear love, that I'll reveal  
Those hours of pleasure we two steal ;  
No eye shall see, nor yet the sun  
Descry, what thou and I have done ;  
No ear shall hear our love, but we  
Silent as the night will be ;  
The god of love himself, whose dart  
Did first wound mine and then thy heart,  
Shall never know that we can tell  
What sweets in stol'n embraces dwell :  
This only means may find it out,  
If when I die physicians doubt  
What caused my death, and there to view  
Of all their judgments which was true,  
Rip up my heart ; O ! then I fear  
The world will see thy picture there.

#### ETERNITY OF LOVE PROTESTED.

How ill doth he deserve a lover's name,  
Whose pale weak flame  
Cannot retain  
His heat in spite of absence or disdain ;  
But doth, at once, like paper set on fire,  
Burn and expire.  
True love can never change his seat,  
Nor did he ever love that could retreat ;  
That noble flame, which my breast keeps alive,  
Shall still survive  
When my soul's fled ;  
Nor shall my love die when my body's dead,  
That shall wait on me to the lower shade,  
And never fade.  
My very ashes in their urn  
Shall, like a hallowed lamp, for ever burn.

#### THE WILLING PRISONER TO HIS MISTRESS.

LET fools great Cupid's yoke disdain,  
Loving their own wild freedom better,  
Whilst proud of my triumphant chain  
I sit and court my beauteous fetter.  
Her murd'ring glances, snaring hairs,  
And her bewitching smiles, so please me,  
As he brings ruin that repairs  
The sweet afflictions that displease me.  
Hide not those panting balls of snow  
With envious veils from my beholding ;  
Unlock those lips, their pearly row  
In a sweet smile of love unfolding.  
And let those eyes, whose motion wheels  
The restless fate of every lover,  
Survey the pains my sick heart feels,  
And wounds themselves have made discover.

#### ON THE TOMBS IN WESTMINSTER-ABBAY.

MORTALITY, behold, and fear,  
What a change of flesh is here !  
Think how many royal bones  
Sleep within this heap of stones ;  
Here they lie, had realms and lands,  
Who now want strength to stir their hands ;  
Where, from their pulpits seal'd with dust,  
They preach, " In greatness is no trust !"  
Here's an acre sown indeed  
With the richest, royal'st seed,  
That the earth did e'er suck in  
Since the first man died for sin :

Here the bones of birth have cried,  
 "Though gods they were, as men they died;"  
 Here are sands, ignoble things  
 Dropt from the ruin'd sides of kings.  
 Here's a world of pomp and state  
 Buried in dust, once dead by fate.

MR. FRANCIS BEAUMONT'S LETTER TO  
 BEN JONSON,

Written before he and Master Fletcher came to London  
 with two of the precedent Comedies, then not finished,  
 which deferred their merry Meetings at the Mermaid.

THE sun (which doth the greatest comfort bring  
 To absent friends, because the self-same thing  
 They know they see, however absent) is  
 Here our best hay-maker, (forgive me this !  
 It is our country's style.) In this warm shine  
 I lie, and dream of your full Mermaid wine.  
 Oh, we have water mix'd with claret lees,  
 Drink apt to bring in drier heresies  
 Than beer, good only for the sonnet's strain,  
 With fustian metaphors to stuff the brain;  
 So mix'd, that, given to the thirstiest one,  
 'Twill not prove alms, unless he have the stone :  
 I think with one draught man's invention fades,  
 Two cups had quite spoil'd Homer's Iliades.  
 'Tis liquor that will find out Suteliff's wit,  
 Lie where he will, and make him write worse yet.  
 Fill'd with such moisture, in most grievous quains,  
 Did Robert Wisdom write his singing psalms ;  
 And so must I do this : And yet I think  
 It is a potion sent us down to drink,  
 By special Providence, keeps us from fights,  
 Makes us not laugh when we make legs to knights.  
 'Tis this that keeps our minds fit for our states,  
 A medicine to obey our magistrates :  
 For we do live more free than you ; no hate,  
 No envy at one another's happy state,  
 Moves us ; we are all equal ; every whit  
 Of land that God gives men here is their wit,  
 If we consider fully ; for our best  
 And gravest man will with his main house-jest,  
 Scarce please you ; we want subtilty to do  
 The city-tricks, lie, hate, and flatter too :  
 Here are none that can bear a painted show,  
 Strike when you wink, and then lament the blow ;  
 Who, like mills set the right way for to grind,  
 Can make their gains alike with every wind :  
 Only some fellows, with the subtlest pate  
 Amongst us, may perchance equivocate  
 At selling of a horse, and that's the most.  
 Methinks the little wit I had is lost  
 Since I saw you ; for wit is like a rest  
 Held up at tennis, which men do the best [seen  
 With the best gamesters : What things have we  
 Done at the Mermaid ! heard words that have been  
 So nimble, and so full of subtle flame,  
 As if that every one from whence they came  
 Had meant to put his whole wit in a jest,  
 And had resolved to live a fool the rest  
 Of his dull life ; then when there hath been thrown  
 Wit able enough to justify the town  
 For three days past ; wit that might warrant be  
 For the whole city to talk foolishly  
 Till that were cancell'd ; and when that was gone,  
 We left an air behind us, which alone  
 Was able to make the two next companies  
 Right witty ; though but downright fools, mere wise.  
 When I remember this, and see that now  
 The country gentlemen begin to allow

My wit for dry-bobs, then I needs must cry,  
 I see my days of ballading grow nigh ;  
 I can already riddle, and can sing  
 Catches, sell bargains, and I fear shall bring  
 Myself to speak the hardest words I find,  
 Over as oft as any, with one wind,  
 That takes no medicines : But one thought of thee  
 Makes me remember all these things to be  
 The wit of our young men, fellows that shew  
 No part of good, yet utter all they know ;  
 Who, like trees of the garden, have growing souls.  
 Only strong Destiny, which all controuls,  
 I hope hath left a better fate in store  
 For me thy friend, than to live ever poor,  
 Banish'd unto this home ! Fate once again  
 Bring me to thee, who canst make smooth and plain  
 The way of knowledge for me, and then I,  
 Who have no good but in thy company,  
 Protest it will my greatest comfort be  
 To acknowledge all I have to flow from thee.  
 Ben, when these scenes are perfect, we'll taste wise ;  
 I'll drink thy muse's health, thou shalt quaff mine.

AD COMITISSAM RUTLANDIÆ.

MADAM, so may my verses pleasing be,  
 So may you laugh at them and not at me,  
 'Tis something to you gladly I would say ;  
 But how to do't I cannot find the way.  
 I would avoid the common beaten ways  
 To women used, which are love or praise :  
 As for the first, the little wit I have  
 Is not yet grown so near unto the grave,  
 But that I can, by that dim fading light,  
 Perceive of what, or unto whom I write.  
 Let such as in a hopeless, witless rage,  
 Can sigh a quire, and read it to a page ;  
 Such as do backs of books and windows fill,  
 With their too furious diamond or quill ;  
 Such as were well resolved to end their days  
 With a loud laughter blown beyond the seas ;  
 Who are so mortified that they can live  
 Contemned of all the world, and yet forgive,  
 Write love to you : I would not willingly  
 Be pointed at in every company ;  
 As was that little tailor, who till death  
 Was hot in love with Queen Elizabeth :  
 And, for the last, in all my idle days  
 I never yet did living woman praise  
 In prose or verse : and when I do begin  
 I'll pick some woman out as full of sin  
 As you are full of virtue ; with a soul  
 As black as you are white ; a face as foal  
 As you are beautiful : for it shall be  
 Out of the rules of physiognomy  
 So far, that I do fear I must displace  
 The art a little, to let in her face.  
 It shall at least four faces be below  
 The devil's ; and her parched corpse shall show  
 In her loose skin as if some sprite she were  
 Kept in a bag by some great conjurer.  
 Her breath shall be as horrible and wild  
 As every word you speak is sweet and mild ;  
 It shall be such a one as will not be  
 Covered with any art or policy :  
 But let her take all powders, fumes, and drink,  
 She shall make nothing but a dearer stink ;  
 She shall have such a foot and such a nose,  
 She shall not stand in anything but prose ;  
 If I bestow my praises upon such,  
 'Tis charity, and I shall merit much.

My praise will come to her like a full bowl,  
Bestowed at most need on a thirsty soul;  
Where, if I sing your praises in my rhyme,  
I lose my ink, my paper, and my time;  
And nothing add to your o'erflowing store,  
And tell you nought, but what you knew before.  
Nor do the virtuous-minded (which I swear,  
Madam, I think you are) endure to hear  
Their own perfections into questions brought,  
But stop their ears at them; for if I thought  
You took a pride to have your virtues known,  
Pardon me, madam, I should think them none.

To what a length is this strange letter grown,  
In seeking of a subject, yet finds none!  
But your brave thoughts, which I so much respect  
Above your glorious titles, shall accept  
These harsh disordered lines. I shall ere long  
Dress up your virtues new, in a new song;  
Yet far from all base praise and flattery,  
Although I know what'er my verses be,  
They will like the most servile flattery show,  
If I write truth, and make the subject you.

AN ELEGY ON THE DEATH OF THE VIRTUOUS  
LADY ELIZABETH, COUNTESS OF RUTLAND.

I MAY forget to drink, to eat, to sleep,  
Remembering thee: but when I do, to weep  
In well-weighed lines, that men shall at thy hearse  
Envy the sorrow which brought forth my verse;  
May my dull understanding have the might  
Only to know her last was yesternight!  
Rutland, the fair, is dead! and if to hear  
The name of Sidney will more force a tear,  
'Tis she that is so dead! and yet there be  
Some more alive profess not poetry;  
The statesmen and the lawyers of our time  
Have business still, yet do it not in rhyme.  
Can she be dead, and can there be of those  
That are so dull to say their prayers in prose?  
It is three days since she did feel Death's hand;  
And yet this isle not feel the poet's land?  
Hath this no new ones made? and are the old  
At such a needful time as this grown cold?  
They all say they would fain; but yet they plead  
They cannot write, because their muse is dead.  
Hear me then speak, which will take no excuse;  
Sorrow can make a verse without a muse.  
Why didst thou die so soon? O, pardon me,  
I knew it was the longest life to thee,  
That e'er with modesty was called a span,  
Since the Almighty left to strive with man;  
Mankind is sent to sorrow; and thou hast  
More of the business which thou cam'st for past,  
Than all those aged women, which, yet quick,  
Have quite outlived their own arithmetic.  
As soon as thou couldst apprehend a grief,  
There were enough to meet thee; and the chief  
Blessing of women, marriage, was to thee  
Nought but a sacrament of misery;  
For whom thou hadst, if we may trust to fame,  
Could nothing change about thee but thy name:  
A name which who (that were again to do't)  
Would change without a thousand joys to boot?  
In all things else thou rather led'st a life  
Like a betrothed virgin than a wife.  
But yet I would have called thy fortune kind,  
If it had only tried the settled mind  
With present crosses: not the loathed thought  
Of worse to come, or past, then might have  
wrought

Thy best remembrance to have cast an eye  
Back with delight upon thine infancy.  
But thou hadst, ere thou knew'st the use of  
tears,

Sorrow laid up against thou cam'st to years;  
Ere thou wert able who thou wert to tell,  
By a sad war thy noble father fell,  
In a dull clime, which did not understand  
What 'twas to venture him to save a land.  
He left two children, who for virtue, wit,  
Beauty, were loved of all; thee and his wit:  
Two was too few; yet death hath from us took  
Thee, a more faultless issue than his book,  
Which now the only living thing we have  
From him, we'll see, shall never find a grave  
As thou hast done. Alas! 'would it might be  
That books their sexes had, as well as we,  
That we might see this married to the worth,  
And many poems like itself bring forth!  
But this vain wish divinity controuls;  
For neither to the angels, nor to souls,  
Nor anything he meant should ever live,  
Did the wise God of nature sexes give.

Then with his everlasting work alone  
We must content ourselves, since she is gone;  
Gone, like the day thou diedst upon; and we  
May call that back again as soon as thee.  
Who should have looked to this? Where were you  
all,

That do yourselves the help of nature call,  
Physicians? I acknowledge you were there  
To sell such wares as one in health would hear:  
So died she. Curst be he who shall defend  
Your art of hastening nature to its end!  
In this you shewed that physic can but be  
At beat an art to cure your poverty.  
Ye're many of you impostors, and do give  
To sick men potions that yourselves may live.  
He that hath surfeited, and cannot eat,  
Must have a medicine to procure you meat;  
And that's the deepest ground of all your skill,  
Unless it be some knowledge how to kill.  
Sorrow and madness make my verses flow  
Cross to my understanding; for I know  
You can do wonders: Every day I meet  
The looser sort of people in the street  
From desperate diseases freed; and why  
Restore you them, and suffer her to die?  
Why should the state allow you colleges,  
Pensions for lectures, and anatomies,  
If all your potions, vomits, letting blood,  
Can only cure the bad, and not the good,  
Which only they can do? and I will show  
The hidden reason, why you did not know  
The way to cure her: You believed her blood  
Ran on such courses as you understood;  
By lectures you believed her arteries  
Grew as they do in your anatomies:  
Forgetting that the state allows you none  
But only whores and thieves to practise on:  
And every passage 'bout them I am sure  
You understood, and only them can cure;  
Which is the cause that both —  
Are noted for enjoying so long lives.  
But noble blood treads in too strange a path  
For your ill-got experience, and hath  
Another way of cure. If you had seen  
Penelope dissected, or the Queen  
Of Sheba; then you might have found a way  
To have preserved her from that fatal day.

As 'tis, you have but made her sooner blest,  
By sending her to Heaven, where let her rest.  
I will not hurt the peace which she would have,  
By longer looking in her quiet grave.

TO MY DEAR FRIEND M. BEN JONSON, UPON  
HIS FOX. 1605.

If it might stand with *justice* to allow  
The swift conversion of all follies ; now,  
Such is my *mercy*, that I could admit  
All sorts should equally approve the wit  
Of this thy even work, whose growing fame  
Shall raise thee high, and thou it, with thy name.  
And did not manners and my love command  
Me to forbear to make those understand,  
Whom thou, perhaps, hast in thy wiser doom  
Long since firmly resolved, shall never come  
To know more than they do ; I would have shewn  
To all the world, the art, which thou alone  
Hast taught our tongue, the rules of time, of place,  
And other rites, delivered, with the grace  
Of comic style, which, only, is far more  
Than any English stage hath known before.  
But, since our subtle gallants think it good  
To like of nought, that may be understood,  
Lest they should be disapproved ; or have, at best,  
Stomachs so raw, that nothing can digest  
But what's obscene, or barks : let us desire  
They may continue, simply, to admire  
Fine clothes, and strange words ; and may live, in  
To see themselves ill brought upon the stage, [age,  
And like it : whilst thy bold and knowing muse  
Contemns all praise, but such as thou wouldst  
choose.

UPON THE SILENT WOMAN. 1609.

HEAR, you bad writers, and though you not see,  
I will inform you where you happy be :  
Provide the most malicious thoughts you can,  
And bend them all against some private man,  
To bring him, not his vices, on the stage ;  
Your envy shall be clad in some poor rage,  
And your expressing of him shall be such,  
That he himself shall think he hath no touch.  
Where he that strongly writes, although he mean  
To scourge but vices in a laboured scene,  
Yet private faults shall be so well express'd  
As men do get 'em, that each private breast,  
That finds these errors in itself, shall say,  
" He meant me, not my vices, in the play."

TO MY FRIEND M. BEN JONSON, UPON HIS  
CATILINE. 1611.

If thou hadst itch'd after the wild applause  
Of common people, and hadst made thy laws  
In writing such as catch'd at present voice,  
I should commend the thing, but not thy choice.

But thou hast squared thy rules by what is good,  
And art three ages yet from understood :  
And (I dare say) in it there lies much wit  
Lost, till the reader can grow up to it ;  
Which they can ne'er outgrow, to find it ill,  
But must fall back again, or like it still.

TO MY FRIEND MR. JOHN FLETCHER, UPON HIS  
FAITHFUL SHEPHERDESS.

I know too well, that, no more than the man,  
That travels through the burning deserts, can,  
When he is beaten with the raging sun,  
Half-smother'd with the dust, have power to run  
From a cool river, which himself doth find,  
Ere he be slaked ; no more can he, whose mind  
Joys in the Muses hold from that delight,  
When Nature and his full thoughts bid him  
write.

Yet wish I those, whom I for friends have known,  
To sing their thoughts to no ears but their own.  
Why should the man, whose wit ne'er had a stain,  
Upon the public stage present his vein,  
And make a thousand men in judgment sit,  
To call in question his undoubted wit,  
Scarce two of which can understand the laws  
Which they should judge by, nor the party's  
cause ?

Among the rout, there is not one that hath  
In his own censure an explicit faith ;  
One company, knowing they judgment lack,  
Ground their belief on the next man in black ;  
Others, on him that makes signs, and is mute ;  
Some like, as he does in the fairest suit ;  
He, as his mistress doth ; and she, by chance ;  
Nor want there those, who, as the boy doth dance  
Between the acts, will censure the whole play ;  
Some like if the wax-lights be new that day ;  
But multitudes there are, whose judgment goes  
Headlong according to the actors' clothes.  
For this, these public things and I agree  
So ill, that, but to do a right to thee,  
I had not been persuaded to have huri'd  
These few ill-spoken lines into the world ;  
Both to be read and censured of by those  
Whose very reading makes verse senseless prose ;  
Such as must spend above an hour to spell  
A challenge on a post, to know it well.  
But since it was thy hap to throw away  
Much wit, for which the people did not pay,  
Because they saw it not, I not dislike  
This second publication, which may strike  
Their consciences, to see the thing they scorn'd,  
To be with so much wit and art adorn'd.  
Besides, one 'vantage more in this I see,  
Your censurers must have the quality  
Of reading, which I am afraid is more  
Than half your shrewdest judges had before.

## GLOSSARY.

### A

**ABRAM-MAN**, a cant term for a sturdy beggar who counterfeited madness

**Adamants**, loadstones

**Addressed**, ready, prepared

**Affect**, to, to love

**Affects**, passions, affections

**Afront**, meet front to front

**Aplets**, spangles, ("Two Noble Kinsmen," Act iii, Scene 4.)

**Aim**, to cry aim. ("The False One," Act v, Scene 4.) "*Aim!* (for so it should be printed, and not *cry aim*) was always addressed to the person about to shoot (at the game of archery); it was an hortatory exclamation of the by-standers, or as Massinger has it, the *idle lookers on*, intended for his encouragement."—Gifford

**Aichoroden**, or **Aichochoden**, i. e. the planet which rules in the principal parts of an astrological figure, at the nativity of any person, and which regulates the number of years he has to live

**Ajferes**, ensign. (Spanish)

**Aiguasier**, alguazil, a bailiff or officer

**Aligant**, Alicant

**Allow**, approve

**Almucanturies**, circles of altitude parallel to the horizon, the common pole of which is the zenith—BAILEY

**Almuten**, in astrology, is the lord of a figure, the most powerful star at a nativity

**Ambr-ace**, the lowest throw of the dice

**Ambered**, seasoned with ambergris, a favourite condiment in former times

**Anatomy**, a skeleton

**Angels**, evil angels, bad money. An angel was a coin worth about ten shillings

**Anti-masque**, something opposed to the principal masque, and admitting the wildest extravagancies

**Arbour**, when their arbour's made. ("The Beggars' Bush," Act v, Scene 2.) a hunting phrase, signifying "when they are cut up"

**Argory**, a large vessel

**Argot**, ("The Coxcomb," Act iii, Scene 2.) a corruption of argent, silver

**Arrose**, water, sprmkle. (French)

**Arsinego**, a young ass, a fool

**Asper**, a Turkish coin, worth about three farthings

**Assay**, a term in hunting, signifying to run the knife along the breast of the deer, to ascertain the depth of the fat

**Assoil**, this word is used in the sense of soil, stain, or attain, in "The Queen of Corinth," Act iii, Scene 1

**Atomies**, atoms

**Atonement**, reconciliation

**Auberge**, inn. (French)

### B

**Back**, or **belly cheats**, stolen apparel

**Backrack**, **Bacharach**, a German wine

**Bair**, a bounding bair, ("The Wild Goose Chase," Act ii, Scene 1,) a bairn, a child

**Baldrick**, a belt

**Band**, bond

**Banquet**: was similar to our *dessert*, and was composed of sweetmeats, fruits, &c.

**Baratto**, an Indian boat

**Basta**, enough (Spanish)

**Bastard**, a kind of sweet wine

**Batten**, fatten

**Bavian**, baboon (Dutch)

**Beadsman**, one who offers up prayers to heaven for the welfare of another

**Bearing cloth**, the fine mantle or cloth, with which a child is usually covered, when it is carried to the church to be baptized

**Bear-ward**, a bear-keeper

**Belly-cheat**, an apron

**Be-les**, ("The Mad Lover," Act v, Scene 4.) a contraction for *believe*

**Bene-dosse**, good drink

**Better cheap**, at a less price. *Cheap* means market; and the expressions *good cheap*, and *better cheap*, for cheap and cheaper, are common in our old writers

**Bever**, a refreshment between meals

**Biggon**, a kind of close cap

**Bilboes**, a bar of iron, with fetters annexed to it, by which mutinous and disorderly sailors were anciently linked together—STRASVANS

**Billet-dealers**, vendors of wood for fuel

**Billet**, *single billet*, ("The Captain," Act ii, Scene 1.) seems to be a forced expression for *single stick*

**Birding-pills**, to go a-birding, is frequently used for going a-wenching; hence perhaps birding-pills are pills to cure the consequences of wenching

**Bisognios**, needy fellows, beggars; from the Italian *bisogno*, signifying want

**Blacks**, mourning

**Black-guard**, ("Woman Hater," Act i, Scene 3.) the lowest menials of the court, the scullions, &c.

**Black Jacks**, tankards made of leather

**Blench**, flinch, start, fly off

**Block**, a Spanish block, a Spanish hat

**Blue-bottle**, a footman, in allusion to his blue coat, the usual costume of ancient footmen

**Blurred**, scorned

**Bodkin**, frequently used for the small dagger worn at the time

**Bombast**, the lining of a doublet, generally of cotton

**Bona-roba**, a lady of pleasure

**Bored**, baffled and dored. ("Spanish Curate," Act iv, Scene 5.) To bore a man's nose is at this day a common expression, and means to make a fool of him—MASON

**Bord**, rim, or circumference. (French)

**Bolt**, an arrow

**Bout-hammer**, a blacksmith's hammer, from *bout*, which formerly signified a blow

**Boot**, booty

**Bouidge**, ("The Humorous Lieutenant," Act ii, Scene 4.) *Bouidge* at *this*, perhaps, start, be moved at—Gifford. (JONSON, iv, 222.) would read *Boude*, i. e. pout

**Bourgeois**, buds

**Bouze**, drink

**Bousing-ken**, a cant term for an ale-house

**Bow-hand**, the left hand. The hand in which the bow was held

**Bots**, a distemper incident to horses

**Brache**, a scenting dog: used also by corruption for a bitch. "A brach is a mannerly name for all hound-bitches."—Gent. Recr. p. 27.

**Brack**, breach, flaw

**Brand-wine**, brandy.

**Braggat**, a liquor made of honey and ale

**Brave**, fine, handsome

**Brevis**, broth

**Breeze**, the gad-fly

**Bridling-cast**, has been conjectured to mean a draught while the horse is bridling

**Broock**, originally a clasp or buckle, but generally used for any jewel or gold ornament

*Brood, to*, to guard with vigilance, as birds with a brood of unfledged young ones  
*Broggs*, properly brogues, shoes of untanned leather; but in "The Fair Maid of the Inn," Act iv, Scene 2, the word appears to be used for a kind of breeches, not shoes  
*Brucket*, bankrupt  
*Brusle*, to crack  
*Brute*. *Then bear up bravely with your Brute, my lads*. ("Beggars' Bush," Act v, Scene 2.) Alluding to Brute, or Brutus, a Trojan, and descendant of Æneas, said to have landed, settled, and reigned in England  
*Buff-jerkin men*, sheriffs' officers; so called from their dress  
*Bugs' words*, haughty, menacing words; from bugs, terrors, or hobgoblins  
*Bullions*, seems to have meant some article of finery, (trunk-hose, &c.) so called from the large globular gilt buttons on it. See the "Beggars' Bush," Act iv, Scene 5, and "The Chances," Act v, Scene 3  
*Burmoother*, the Bermudas  
*But you*, excepting you, without you  
*Butter-print*, a child  
*Bulle*, the mark at which arrows were shot  
*Buzzard*, or bald kite, one of the worst species of hawks  
*By'r lakin*, by our ladykin, a diminutive of lady  
*Eye and main*, phrases in cockfighting

## C

*Cacafuego*, from the Spanish *caca-fuego*! similar to our phrase spitfire  
*Cackling-cheats*, a cant term for cooks or campers  
*Cataya*, the ancient name for China  
*Cal*, calling  
*Calkings*, hinder parts of a horse-shoe  
*Calltraps*, instruments composed of three spikes of iron, and so disposed as to wound the feet of horses in whatever way they lie  
*Canaries*, a quick, lively dance  
*Candle*, a small piece  
*Capper*, one who makes or sells caps  
*Carbine*, a horse soldier  
*Caracmet*, a necklace  
*Card*, the card that guides us, ("The Chances," Act iv, Scene 3.) the mariner's compass  
*Carie*, a churl, a clown  
*Carock'd*, coaxed; *carock*, a coach  
*Carrack*, a large ship of burthen  
*Carvel*, a small ship  
*Casting bottle*, a bottle for casting or sprinkling perfumes  
*Cater*, caterer  
*Cautelous*, cautious  
*Canvas*, to sift, to examine  
*Cease*, to cease is frequently used as a verb active, for to destroy, to stop, to end  
*Cestron*, sistern  
*Civil*, solemn, grave, sober  
*Chare*, task-work; *all's chared when he is gone*, ("Two Noble Kinsmen," Act iii, Scene 3.) all is done  
*Charneco*, wine made at the village of Charneco, near Lisbon  
*Chary*, careful  
*Chaudrons*, entrails  
*Charger*, a great dish

*Check*: to check, is when the hawk forsakes her game and quarry, to fly at other birds  
*Cherally*, a liquor; of what kind is uncertain  
*Cheure*, *cheur'd*, corrupt forms of *chare*, *char'd*: see above  
*Chevrel*, soft, pliable kid leather  
*Cheyney*, china  
*Chibbals*, a sort of onions  
*Chidded*, broken-backed  
*Chink*, *chinche*, a bug  
*Chive*, *foul chive him*, ("Knight of the Burning Pestle," Act 1, Scene 3.) evil befal him; may it succeed evilly with him!  
*Cinque-pace*. "The name of a dance, the measures whereof are regulated by the number five."—SIR JOHN HAWKINS  
*Cittern-head*, wooden head, in allusion to the heads carved on the handles of citterns or lutes  
*Cithern*, a kind of guitar  
*Clapper*, a clapper or clap dish, is a wooden cup, with a moveable cover to it. Originally it was appropriated for lepers, who clapped down the cover, to give notice of their approach, and that alms might be given without touching the object. It afterwards became common among beggars  
*Clapperdageon*, a cant term. "A clapperdageon is, in English, a beggar born."—DEKKER'S *Villanies Discovered*  
*Cleped*, called  
*Clinguant*, glittering, shining  
*Closely*, privately  
*Clote*, the great bur  
*Clouted*, aimed at; the clout was the white mark in the centre of the batts  
*Cloves*, a cant term for thieves  
*Cloy'd*, that his artillery is cloy'd by me. ("The False One," Act v, Scene 4.) That is, nailed or spiked up; derived from the French verb, *clouer*—MABON  
*Coast*—Take your horse and coast 'em. ("Loyal Subject," Act v, Scene 6.) to keep close to, pursue; also, to approach ("Maid in the Mill," Act 1, Scene 1)  
*Cock-shoot*, twilight  
*Coccolock*, a poor diseased wretch  
*Codes*, a vulgar oath  
*Cop*, flatter, wheedle  
*Cogging*, lying, cheating  
*Coll*, stir, bustle  
*Cold-pics*, swords  
*Coolestars*, strong poles on which a barthen is carried between two  
*Coll, to*, to fool, trick, or deceive  
*Collections*, inferences  
*Collet*, the setting of a jewel  
*Collogue*, to wheedle, to flatter  
*Companion*, a scurvy fellow  
*Concealments*: *She keeps an office of concealments*, ("Humorous Lieutenant," Act ii, Scene 2) an allusion to the practice in the time of Queen Elizabeth, of begging lands which had formerly been appropriated to superstitious uses. The holders of these lands did their best to conceal the charges upon them, which occasioned several commissions of discovery, which were much abused

*Concell*, a pleasant thought, a clinch of wit, a fanciful conception  
*Confirmed*, convinced  
*Consort*, a band of musicians, a concert  
*Conveyance*, trick, artifice, juggling  
*Cooling-card*: this phrase originated probably from card-playing, when the exultation of one of the parties is cooled by his being over-trumped  
*Corderwan*, Spanish leather  
*Costermonger*, a dealer in apples  
*Counsel*, a secret  
*Courser*: *A courser of broken-winded women*, ("The Captain," Act v, Scene 1.) a dealer, as *horse-courser*, a dealer in horses  
*Courtship*: is often used for courtly breeding; the behaviour of a courtier  
*Cox*, a foolish fellow; probably a contraction of coxoomb  
*Coxcomb*, skull: the term is derived from the oop of the licensed fool having been being frequently made to terminate in a cock's head and comb  
*Crab*: *Crab your shoulders*, ("Monsieur Thomas," Act iv, Scene 6) beat with a crab-stick  
*Cracknel*, a hard brittle cake  
*Cranes*, or *crepance*, strings secured to the hawk's jesses when it was let fly before it was thoroughly reclaimed, to prevent its flying too far, or escaping  
*Crank*, spiritfult, brisk  
*Cranks*, a cant term. "Counterfeit cranks are such as pretend to have the falling sickness, and by putting a piece of white soap into the corner of their mouths, will make the froth to come boiling forth to cause pity in the beholders: they stare wildly with their eyes, to appear as if distracted; and go half naked, to move the greater compassion."—EWEAN ROOPE, II, 122  
*Crave*, a small vessel  
*Creeel*, worsted  
*Crocheteur*, a porter (French)  
*Cross*, a piece of money; many coins being stamped on one side with a cross  
*Curdled*, curdled  
*Cry*: *When all men cry Man*, ("Humorous Lieutenant," Act 1, Scene 1.) cry him up, speak loudly in his praise  
*Cuck-stools*, the punishment of scolds; a chair or stool fixed at one end of a lever, by means of which the scold was ducked in the water  
*Cue*, small portions  
*Cullis*, a broth of meat strained "fit for a sick or weak bodie"—CRABBE  
*Curtious*, precise, punctilious, cautious to excess  
*Curst*, malicious, froward, shrewish  
*Curstened*, charistened  
*Cur*, a familiar term for a common horse  
*Cut and long tail*, dogs of all kinds: any sort of persons  
*Cusper*, the entrance of any "house" in astrology  
*Cutter*, a swaggering fellow  
*Cutwork*, linen ornamented with open work, cut or stamped out

## D

*Dare*, scare, frighten  
*Dag*, a pistol  
*Darnes carpet*, a carpet of Turkey:

from Doornick, the Flemish name of that town

*Day-beds*, couches

*Debased*, debauched

*Degambaya*, viol de gambra

*Della*, ("The Beggar's Bush," Act II, Scene 1) "Young ripe wenches, who have not lost their virginity, which the upright man (*i. e.* the vilest, stoutest rogue in the pack) has a right to the enjoyment of; after which they are used in common by the whole fraternity"—*Collection of canting words at the end of BAUER'S Dictionary*

*Depart*: is sometimes used in the sense of part

*Dependants*, an old term for the subjects of quarrels

*Deveiling*, Dublin

*Devest*, undress

*Device*: *The king's device! The sin's as universal as the sun is, &c.* ("The Humorous Lieutenant," Act IV, Scene 1.) Device means the king's ensign armorial, a common acceptance of the word. The device of Antigonus was a sun, as appears from a speech of Celia's, in Scene 2 of this Act, when she says to Antigonus:

"Be as your emblem is, a glorious lamp

Set on the top of all, to light all perfectly."

To this she alludes in the present passage—*MASON*

*Devotions*: *Priests and all devotions*, ("The Double Marriage," Act IV, Scene 4.) Devotions here means the same as *devoted*, or holy things—*SYMPSON*

*Diet*, sauce

*Disable*, disparage, hold cheap

*Discoloured taffeta*, ("A Masque,") *i. e.* variegated with a variety of colours

*Diffusely*, disorderly or negligently

*Discourse*: ("The Little French Lawyer," Act I, Scene 1.) frequently signified reason; or, as Mr. Gifford explains it, "a more rapid deduction of consequences from premises, than was supposed to be effected by reason." *Tell us the discourse between Tyranes and our king, and how we got the victory*, ("A King and No King," Act II, Scene 1.) This was one of the numerous words derived from the Latin, which were used with a great latitude of meaning by our ancestors. Here it signifies, as Mr. Mason observes, transaction, not conversation—*WARREN*

*Disposed*, merry

*Dissolve*, to solve

*Doers*: "Thy story I'll have written, and in gold too; in prose and verse, and by the ablest doers;" makers of verses. The word is a literal translation of the Greek *poetrys*, which means not only simply a maker or doer, but a maker of verses—*WARREN*

*Dog-bolt*, a term of reproach

*Dog-leach*, dog-doctor

*Dole*, grief, sorrow

*Dommerers*, a cant term; beggars who counterfeit dumbness

*Donsel* (a Spanish word), a youth of gentle blood

*Dor*, means the chaffer; to give the *der*, to mock, play on, outwit

*Dorsers* or *Dossers*, panniers

*Dotterel*, a silly kind of bird, which imitates the actions of the fowler till at last he is taken

*Dowsets*, the genitals of a deer, (used in "The Coxcomb," Act II, Scene 3, in reference to the tight pantaloons of the Irishman)

*Doxies*, ("The Beggar's Bush," Act II, Scene 1.) "Such as have been deflowered by the upright men, and are after common to any of the brotherhood"—*ENGLISH ROUGH*, I. 184

*Dragon's water*: this word occurs in "The Knight of the Burning Pestle," the well-known gum

*Dread*, to, to frighten

*Drolleries*, puppet-shows

*Dry-fat*, the old way of spelling dry vat

*Droyle*, drudges

*Du cat a whee*, *Du gata whee*; corruptions of the Welsh *Duw cadw chw*, God bless or preserve you

*Dudgeon-dagger*, a wooden-handled dagger; particularly applied to daggers with handles of box-wood

*Duds*, clothes

*Dumpy*, a mournful ditty

*Dunkirk*, or *the Dunkirk*, ("The Elder Brother," Act IV, Scene 2,) an allusion to the practical vessels belonging to Dunkirk

*Dun's in the wire*, an obsolete game.

*Dun* is a vulgar name for a horse

*Dure*, endure

*Durindan*, the sword of Orlando

*Dust-point*, a game

## E

*Ela*, the highest note in the scale of music

*Emulate*, is used in "The Faithful Friends," Act I, Scenes 1 and 3, in the sense of envy

*Endless*: *All love's endless*, ("Love's Pilgrimage," Act II, Scene 3) that is fruitless

*Endue*, or *endew*, in falconry is when a hawk digesteth her meat, that she not only dischargeeth her gorge thereof, but likewise cleanseeth her pannel—*BLOOM*

*Entertain*, is used in the "Faithful Friends," Act III, Scene 2, in the sense of entertainment

*Entreat*, treat, use

*Envy*, often used for malice or hatred

*Equal*, just

*Erra pater*, a name given to some old astrologer

*Ettins*, giants

*Exhibition*, allowance

*Eyes*: *An eye of tame pheasants*, ("Boggar's Bush," Act II, Scene 1) a brood of pheasants

*Eyees*, or *eyas*, a young unfledged hawk

## F

*Facers*, shameless people

*Facing*, effrontery

*Fading*: the name of a dance, also the burden of a ballad

*Fadge*, quit with, agree

*Fairity*, *a*, a term in fencing; what is now called a feint

*Fambles*, a cant term for hands

*Farces*, stuffs

*Far-fet*, far-fetched

*Fast and loose*, the cheating game known at the present day as "pricking at the belt or girdle"

*Favours*, sometimes used to mean countenances

*Fear*, to, to frighten or make afraid

*Fearful*, frightful or furious

*Feat*, fine, neat—*MIRZAW*

*Fending*: *Such fending and such proving!* ("Humorous Lieutenant," Act V, Scene 5,) defending

*Ferkt*, cheated, fobbed

*Feshue*, a small wire, by which those who teach to read, point at the letters

*Fewterer*, a dog-keeper

*Figenti*, busy, stirring, sidgety

*Figuary*, vagary

*Firk*: a word of various meanings; beat, steal, tease, irritate, gambol

*Firecock*, ("Wit Without Money," Act II, Scene 2,) firecock, the cock of the firelock, is a modern reading for *Arug*

*Fire-drake*, a fiery dragon

*Fitchcock*, a polecat

*Filters*, pieces, fragments

*Flaws*, storms or gusts

*Fleshed*, hardened

*Fleeten face*: to fleet is to skim milk; a fleeten face means what we now call a whey-face—*MASON*

*Flight*, ("Bonduca," Act I, Scene 1,) an arrow

*Florentines*, a kind of pie

*Froater*, a cant term. "A froater is one that, with a counterfeit patent, goeth about with a wallet at his back and a black box at his girdle, to beg for some hospital or spittle-house"—*ENGLISH ROUGH*, II. 121

*Foin*, a thrust in fencing

*Foist*, a light galley that has about 16 or 18 oars on a side, and two rowers to an oar—*CORSAVA*

*Foisted*, cheated

*Fond*, foolish

*Foot cloth*, caparisons for horses

*Fox*, a cant term for a sword

*Fore-flap*, bands such as those worn by clergymen and lawyers

*Force*, enforce, dwell upon

*Forks*, the gallows

*Formal heat*, a metaphysical and logical term for the soul

*Founded*, living upon a charitable foundation

*Foyson*, abundance

*Frapmel*, fretful, peevish, cross, froward

*Frayed*, affrayed, frightened

*Fried*; *fried me*, made me drunk

*Frippery*, an old clothes shop

*Fumbumbis*: *A cow comes and fumbumbis to it*, ("The Beggar's Bush," Act II, Scene 1.) Fumbumbis is explained by Theobald, probably without any authority but the context, "to your guard and postures." But I think, with the last editors, that it was rather a fancied watch-word than a cant term—*WARREN*

*Fucus*, a paint or cosmetic in use among the ladies of the day

*Fumers*, perfumers

*Furies*: ("The Elder Brother," Act III,

Scene 2) pilferers, persons with rapacious talons  
*Fylchock, fletcher, polecat*

## G

*Gage*, a cant term for quart pot  
*Galliard*, a lively air in triple time; also, a popular dance of a very sprightly description—*Sir JOHN HAWKINS*  
*Galingale*, a root brought from the East Indies, where it is used medicinally, and also as an ingredient in savoury dishes—*MASON*  
*Gallifoot*, the old name for the Lord Mayor's barge  
*Gallimaufry*, medley  
*Gally-gaskins*, slops, wide breeches  
*Gawdrited*, with the legs tied together  
*Garbage*: ("Thierry and Theodoret," Act v, Scene 1.) I have never met with this word, but suppose it to allude to the guards or lazes of ancient breeches—*WESSA*  
*Gaskins*, wide hose, breeches  
*Gastered*, frightened  
*Gime*, ("Faithful Friends," Act II, Scene 2.) *Gime* must be either the name of the horse, or, what is more likely, an absurd corruption of jennet—*WESSA*  
*Gin*, a trap, but frequently used as a contraction for engine, and in that sense applied to swords and other warlike weapons or machines  
*Girdle-lead*, the place where the girdle is worn  
*Glade*: a glade to catch woodcocks, ("The Wild Goose Chase," Act v, Scene 4.) in allusion to the mode practised in snaring woodcocks in glades, open spaces in woods  
*Glaives*, weapons shaped like halberds  
*Glorious*, ostentatious, gorgeously attired, vain, proud  
*Gloriously*, proudly  
*God-den*, an abbreviation of good evening  
*Gog's-bones*, a corruption of the ancient oath God's bones  
*Golls*, a cant term for hands  
*Gom*, a man  
*Gords*, false dice  
*Grand-guard*, a part of the armour worn by knights on horseback  
*Grass*: this word is used in "Love's Pilgrimage," Act III, Scene 3, for fat; *gras*, Fr. gross  
*Grave Maurice*: ("Love's Cure," Act I, Scene 2) Graaf Maurice; Count Maurice. (German)  
*Greet*, greeting  
*Grindle-tails*: trindle, or trundle-tails, a common name for puppies  
*Growthold*, a thick head  
*Grunting-cheats*, a cant term for pigs  
*Guards*, lace, trimming, embroidery  
*Guarded*, fringed, embroidered  
*Gules*, the heraldic term for red  
*Gummed*: *She was never gummed yet, boy, nor fretted*, ("Woman Hater," Act IV, Scene 2,) both these terms were usually applied to velvet. The gum was used to stiffen velvet, which was then very liable to chafe or fret  
*Gusts*, relishes  
*Gymnal*, a sort of double ring

## H

*Halter-sack*, a term equivalent to gal-lows-bird  
*Hand-wolf*, a tamed wolf  
*Hang-bies*, hangers on  
*Hangers*, ornamented loops attached to the girdle, in which the dagger or small sword usually hung  
*Haggard*, an unreclaimed hawk  
*Harmanbeck*, cant word, the constable  
*Harness*, armour  
*Harry-groat*, a groat coined in the reign of Henry VIII  
*Harrying*, pillaging, plundering  
*Hatched*, among cutlers, means when the hilts of a sword are gilt.—*THEOBALD*  
*Hatchments*, the ornament of the hilt of a sword, the inlaying, &c.  
*Head-bound*, turbaned  
*Head—the last couple in hell*: ("The Scornful Lady," Act v, Scene 4.) an allusion to the game of barley-break  
*High-racked*, screwed up too high. An allusion to the rack or screw of a cross-bow  
*Hilding*, a low pitiful person; a common term of contempt  
*Hippocras*, a drink composed of wine (generally red wine) with sugar and spices  
*Historical shirt*: ("Custom of the Country," Act II, Scene 3.) A shirt adorned with worked or woven figures  
*Hobs*, hobgoblins  
*Hobby-headed*, shag-headed, from hobby, a horse or pony  
*Holt*, a wood  
*Hollock*, the name of a wine  
*Housel*: *May zealous smith so housel all our hacknies*, ("Wit without Money," Act III, Scene 1.) To housel is to administer the sacrament; the allusion is a very profane one,—to giving the viaticum for the final journey  
*Honesty*, credit; also continence  
*Huffing*, proud, strutting  
*Hull, to*, a vessel is said to hull, when she floats, or rides idle to and fro upon the water.—*THEOBALD*  
*Hum*, a kind of strong liquor  
*Hushers*, ushers  
*Hyleg*: this term, Lilly, the astrologer, explains—prorogator of life

## I

*Ijfer*, in faith  
*Ill bearing*, ill behaviour  
*Imboet*, foaming  
*Imborture*, raised work  
*Important*, used in the sense of important  
*Imp, to*, a term of falconry. When the wing or tail feathers of a hawk were dropped, or forced out by any accident, it was usual to supply as many as were deficient. This operation was called to *imp a hawk*  
*Inclosed*, is used for foreclosed, in reference to mortgages of land, and incloser for forecloser  
*Indued*, endowed  
*Inevitable*, irresistible  
*Ingrum*, perhaps a corruption of ignorant  
*Innocent*, an, an idiot, a natural fool  
*Inquire*, find out  
*Intend*, regard, pay attention to

*Insect*, inveigh  
*Inward*, familiar, intimate  
*Irish*, the game of, a kind of back-gammon  
*Isgrim*, the name of the wolf in the romance of Reynard the Fox

## J

*Jacks*, fellows  
*Jack of beer*, a leathern tankard  
*Jack-a-lent*, puppets made to throw at in Lent  
*Jackman*, a cant term. "A jackman is one that can read and write; even some of them have a smattering in the Latine tongue: which learning of theirs advances them in office amongst the beggars, as to be clerk of their hall, or the like. His employment is to make gyes with jacks to them, which are counterfeit licenses with seals"—*EWALDUS ROOVS*, li. 121.  
*Jack-merlin*, a small kind of hawk  
*Jacob's staff*, a kind of astrolabe  
*Jave*: *Ye jave judgments*. ("Two Noble Kinsmen," Act III, Scene 3.) A word of uncertain meaning  
*Jennets*: *Do you conceive as our jennets do, with a west wind?* ("Rule a Wife and have a Wife," Act IV, Scene 3.) Jennets are a celebrated breed of Spanish horses, a cross of the Arabian; and that they were engendered by the wind is a favourite fiction in romance  
*Jerker*, a whipper, a leasher  
*Jovy*, jovial, merry  
*Jump*, just, exact  
*Justice*: *What justice have you now unto this lady?* ("Island Princess," Act II, Scene 7.) right, claim, pretence

## K

*Keeps*, dwells, resides  
*Kell*, the same as the oar or ornament of a boat  
*Kembed*, combed  
*Ken*, cant term for a house  
*Kimmel*, a salting tub  
*Kind*, nature  
*King's-takers*, officers of the household, who, when the king was on his progress, were employed to take up carriages and other necessaries for his use.—*MASON*  
*Kitrome*, Christian  
*Kites*, sharpeners; *piping kites*, in allusion to the noise made by one species of kite when flying  
*Kix*, a dry stalk, generally of henlock

## L

*Lag*: "*Milling a lag of duds*," robbing a buck (basket or parcel) of clothes.—*DEKKER'S Villanies Discovered*, sign. M, 3.  
*Lambed*, soundly beaten  
*Lamming*, beating  
*Lancepriado*, the lowest officer of foot  
*Lare*, ("Wild-geese Chase," Act III, Scene 1.) fatten  
*Laughing-stake*, laughing-stock  
*Lavolta*, a lively bounding dance  
*Lavolletere*, a dancer of lavoltas  
*Laye*, *laye ground*, unploughed, uncultivated ground  
*Leach*, a physician

*Leger*, a *leiger*, ambassador resident at a foreign court

*L'Envoiy*, a kind of epilogue frequently added to ancient poems; also, a conclusion, generally

*Leese*, loose

*Let*, to obstruct, hinder, prevent

*Lets*, hindrances

*Letters of wart*, letters of marque or reprisal

*Lettice-cap*, probably a common medicinal cooling application in those times.—WEBER. From the opium contained in lettuces, it may have been efficacious in producing sleep, See ("Monsieur Thomas," Act ii, Scene 3)

*Level*, a blast on the trumpet; probably that by which the soldiers are called in the morning.—JOHNSON

*Lvead*, bad, vile

*Lieger*, *lay here*, *lieger*. ("Love's Cure," Act ii, Scene 2.) resident. See "Leger."

*Liked*, pleased

*Lism'd*, painted

*Lin*, cease, stop, or leave off

*Lingell*, a thread of hemp rubbed with rosin, &c.

*Livery*, an allowance of victual, meat, &c.

*Lockram*, a kind of linen

*Looking-glass*, a by-word for a chamber-pot; see ("Beggars' Bush," Act ii, Scene 3); where Vandunke being drunk calls for a looking-glass

*Lope*, to leap

*Lour*, a cant term for money

*Lour-bell*, a hand-bell used in fowling

*Lucern*. This animal is nearly the size of a wolf. It is covered with an exceeding rich fur, the colour between red and brown, and something mottled like a cat, intermixed with black spots.—*Edit.* 1778

*Lungies*, a long, awkward fellow

*Lure*, in falconry, an artificial bird, with which the young hawk is trained

## M

*Madrid*, Madrid

*Mahound*, Mahomet

*Mail*, to fasten down the wings of a hawk with a girdle

*Malligo*, Malaga

*Manchet*, a small loaf of fine white bread

*Man*, used for husband. See ("Beggars' Bush," Act ii, Scene 3)

*Mankind*, masculine, impudent

*Manner*, taken i' th' manner. ("Rule a Wife, and have a Wife," Act v, Scene 4.) i. e. in the *mainour*, with the stolen goods in possession, a law term

*Mann'd*, to man was to attend upon, and protect a lady

*Marchpane*, a very favourite kind of confectionary, and very fashionable at banquets. It was composed of filberts, almonds, pistachios, pine-kernels, and sugar of roses, with a small proportion of flour, and frequently formed to represent cities, towns, and other fopperies of the kind.—WEBER

*Margery-praters*, a cant term for hens

*Martern*, a large species of weasel

*Maumet*, idol, puppet

*Maund*, to beg

*Maunder*, to beg; also to grumble, murmur

*Maunderers*, beggars

*Mate*, to oppose; also to daunt or terrify

*Mattachin*, a dance with swords

*Mazard*, head

*Mazer*, bowl or goblet

*Meach*, to lurk

*Meacock*, a cowardly fellow

*Measure*, a solemn stately dance

*Meecher*, or *Micher*, a skulker, one indulging in secret amours

*Meeking*, or *Miching*, lying hid, acting by stealth

*Meg*; such a *meg* as this. ("Scornful Lady," Act v, Scene 2.) An allusion to the celebrated Long Meg of Westminster

*Memoirs*, or *memoirs raised to you*. ("Humorous Lieutenant," Act iv, Scene 5.) Memorials raised to you.

*Merit*; this word is used in "Thierry and Theodore," Act iv, Scene 1, in the sense of profit by

*Methridatam*, Mithridate, a composition of a vast variety of herbs, supposed to be a preservative against poison and the plague

*Mew*, to moult; also to keep shut up

*Micher*, see *Meecher*

*Mis-ken*, a dunghill

*Moans*, grieves

*Moi!*, a mule

*Mona*, the Isle of Anglesea

*Mops* and *moves*, grimaces and distortions of the face

*Morriscoes*, morris-dancers; also the dances themselves

*Morglays*, swords, from Morglay, the sword of Bevis of Southampton

*Mort*, a cant term. Morts are of two kinds: *Walking Morts*, who have borne *lullaby* cheats, or children, but were never married; and *Autem Morts*, who are married generally to rufflers, upright men, wild rogues, &c. According to DEKKAN, the former are older than doxies, and profess themselves to be widows.—WEBER

*Mortar*, a cap in the shape of a mortar

*Motion*. Puppet-shows were called "Motions."

*Motions*, puppets

*Molley*, a fool's dress

*Moyle*, an old word for a mule

*Muckender*, a handkerchief

*Muffer*, a piece of linen worn by women, which covered the lower part of the face

*Murderer*. ("The Woman's Prize," Act i, Scene 2.) A very destructive kind of cannon

*Murrain*, a disease incident to cattle

*Murrion*, *morion*, an iron skull-cap

*Muse*. ("The Two Noble Kinsmen," Act iii, Scene 1.) opening in a fence or thicket, through which a hare passes

## N

*Nab*, head

*Nelson*. ("Wit without Money," Act v, Scene 2.) probably a cant term for sword

*Nesh*, tender, delicate

*Nicely*, with foolish punctiliousness

*Niffes*, frivolous baubles

*Niggle*, to company with a woman—DEKKAN

*Night shade*, a cant term for a prostitute

*Night snaps*, thieves

*Nipitato*, ale

*Noble sciences*, the noble science of defence.

*Noise*, rumour, report

*Noice*: to the *noice*, for the present purpose.

## O

*Observed*, obeyed

*Officious*. "The most officious falsehood." ("Cupid's Revenge," Act iii, Scene 2.) Officious seems here to relate to duty, office, and again in the same sense, Act ii, Scene 1

*Often*, (used as an adjective) frequent

*Open yourself*, declare who you are. ("The Queen of Corinth," Act ii, Scene 2)

*Opillation*, obstruction

*Opinion*, reputation, fame

*Orient hetress*. *The orient hetress*, *The Margarita*, *sir* ("Rule a Wife and Have a Wife," Act i, Scene ii.) A quibble upon the name. Margarita is Spanish for a pearl.

*Ouches*. ("The Woman's Prize," Act iv, Scene 1) seems to mean necklaces; the word, used to signify jewels of different sorts, is of uncertain etymology

*Ought*, owed

*Out-look*, face down

*Over-Aie*, to hasten before another

*Owe*, is often used for *own*, possess

## P

*Packed*, combined, conspired

*Pads*. *Maund on your own pads*, a cant expression for beg on your own roads

*Pair*. "Two pair of cards" ("The Sea Voyage," Act i, Scene ii) two packs of cards

*Palliard*, a debauchee, a whore-master

*Pane*. "A pane of wainscot," a panel

*Paned hose*, were a kind of trunk breeches, formed of stripes of various coloured cloth, occasionally intermixed with slips of silk or velvet, stitched together.—GIRFORD

*Pantoffe*, slipper

*Paramentos*, articles of dress, caparisons

*Paratour*, an apparitor

*Parcel-drunk*, half-drunk

*Parcels*, a law term, meaning that part of a deed in which land or other things to be conveyed, are described

*Partious*, keen, shrewd

*Partizan*, a pike or halbert

*Partlet*, a ruff

*Partage*, a share or division

*Passion*, sorrow

*Passionate*, full of complaint; full of amorous exclamation

*Pasterns*, shackles or fetters for unruly or unbroken horses.—COTGRAVE

*Patck*, a general term for a fool

*Patrico*, a cant term. "A Patrico is their priest; every hedge is his parish, and every wandering rogue and whore his parishioners"—EWALD ROOUS, ii. 123

*Patron*, in "The Little French Lawyer," Act I, Scene I, is used in the Latin sense of a pleader or advocate—**BARWARD**

*Paven*, a peacock

*Pead on*, pad on, go on

*Pea-goose*, a silly creature

*Pedlar's French*, equivalent to thieves' Latin, the cant language of beggars and thieves

*Peal*, pet

*Pea*. See *Velvet-pea*

*Peeler*, or *Peter-se-mea*, a wine; a corruption of Pedro-Ximenes

*Pelling*, low, despicable

*Penner*, a case for holding pens

*Penny-rooms*, those portions of the theatre where spectators were admitted for a penny

*Perdie*, a corruption of *par Dieu*

*Perdus*. *Enfants perdus* (French.) The forlorn hope

*Perepicie*, properly *perepicil*; a perspective glass

*Pestle*, a leg; most frequently used in the expression "a pestle of pork"

*Petronel*, a small gun used by the cavalry

*Pheer*, companion

*Phillip*, a familiar name for a sparrow; also a kind of stuff

*Pickadel*, a ruff: according to GURSON, "simply a diminution of *picca*, (Spanish and Italian,) a spear head; and was given to this article of foppery, from a fancied resemblance of its stiffened plaits to the bristled points of those weapons"

*Pink*, a technical term of the tailors of the time; to cut or slash the clothes according to the fashion of the times

*Pink*, a narrow-sterned ship

*Plackets*, petticoats

*Plaintain*: a plantain leaf was supposed to be an excellent styptic

*Platique*, a ray cast from one planet to another, not exactly, but within the orbit of its own light—**RAILY**

*Play-pleers*, play-fellows

*Plump*, a collection

*Plurisy*, fullness, superabundance

*Poaking-sticks*, sticks, or irons, for adjusting the plaits of ruffs

*Poey*: with *scarfs* and *rings*, and *poey* in 'my hand, ("Knight of the Burning Pestle," Act V, Sc. 3.) The word is here used for *poey*, a motto, or short sentence

*Points*, laces with metal tags to them, or metal hooks, to keep up the breeches

*Polsure*, weight

*Pollard*, a stag that has shed its horns

*Polled*, bald-headed

*Powander*, a ball made of different perfumes, and worn in the pocket or about the neck to prevent infection

*Pompillion*, an ointment made of black poplar buds

*Poor John*, dried and salted hake

*Portigue*, a Portuguese coin worth four pounds, ten shillings

*Pote*, a catarrh, or defluxion of rheum

*Possees*, to inform

*Post*: *Are you in post?* ("The Honest Man's Fortune," Act IV, Scene 1.) are you in haste?

*Polargo*: this should be *bolargo*, a savoury composition made of the roes of mullets—**MASON**

*Potguns*, pogguns

*Pouncings*, perforations in dresses; formerly fashionable

*Powdered*, salted

*Practises*, artifices, stratagem, or plot

*Prancers*, horses: *prigged the prancers*, a cant term for stole the horses

*Pregnancy*, readiness of wit

*Presence*, the audience chamber at a palace

*Presence*, a woman of a presence, i. e. a fine stately form

*Prest*, prepared, ready

*Prevent*, to prevent, to be beforehand with

*Prick*, a thorn

*Prickant*, pricking or spurring along

*Pricket*, a buck in the second year

*Pricking*, riding briskly, spurring

*Prime*: *two-edged winds that prime the maiden blossoms.* ("The Coxcomb," Act IV, Scene 2.) If the text be right, seems to mean *deflower*.

*Prodigious*, horrible, terrible, portentous

*Propping*, ("The Spanish Curate," Act III, Scene 3.) stealing: the right spelling is *proping*

*Promoters*, informers

*Proreant*, provokian

*Puckfolst*, *puckball*, or *puckfest*, and *puffball*, names for a fungus full of dust

*Purchase*, property acquired illegally

*Purfe*, to embroider

*Pur'id*, ("The Sea Voyage," Act I, Scene 3.) laced; from *pur*, a border

## Q

*Quality*, profession

*Quarrel*, a square of glass

*Queer-cuffin*, a cant term for the justice

*Querpo*, used only in the phrase in *querpo*, in a close dress, without a cloak: from the Spanish *querpe*

*Querry*, querry

*Quiddit*, subtleties, shifts in the law

*Quillets*, tricks

*Quit*, to requite, revenge, or repay the loss of

*Quot-quean*, a corruption of *Cotquean*, a man who employs himself in women's affairs

## R

*Rack*, clouds in motion

*Rag*, ("The Captain," Act IV, Scene 2,) a cant term for a farthing

*Rails*, loose gowns, night-gowns

*Rakers*, guns with which the enemies' ship may be raked

*Rands*, long pieces, something like steaks

*Rap*, *Sure he would rap me into something*, ("Island Princess," Act III, Scene 1.) transport, carry away

*Rascal*, a lean deer

*Ravin*. *She sees the ravin's prey.* ("The Maid in the Mill," Act V, Scene 2.) That is the ravenous creature's prey

*Reaching*: a *reaching colour*, ("The Woman Hater," Act V, Scene 1,) a penetrating colour

*Rearly*, early

*Rebeck*, instruments of the fiddle kind

*Reclaimed*, made tame; a term in falconry

*Record*, to sing; applied particularly to the singing of birds

*Recorder*, a flageolet, or small flute

*Red Bull*, one of the old playhouses, in St. John Street, Clerkenwell

*Remorse*, is frequently used for  *pity*

*Revolue*, frequently used for convince, sometimes satisfy

*Rest*, "Up goes my rest." "I have set up my rest." Terms derived from the game of primero, at a certain period of which, the players rest upon the cards in hand, and decline to discard or to call for more cards

*Ride the wild mare*, a game which seems to have been popular at the time

*Rider*, a Dutch coin impressed with the figure of a man on horseback, and worth about twenty-seven English shillings

*Riget*, or *riding*, a ram half castrated

*Ring*, a *Kilkenny ring*, ("The Coxcomb," Act II, Scene 3,) perhaps a *Kilkenny ring*, a rough stick

*Ring-tail*, a sort of kite

*Ripter*, *Ripter*, one that carries fish from the sea-side; a hawk of fish

*Roads*, inroads

*Rogers*, a cant term for geese

*Rogue*, is frequently used for a beggar

*Ropery*, roquetry

*Roses*, shoe-rose, consisting of large bunches of ribands

*Rounds*, roundelays

*Rouse*, a full glass, a large draught, a drinking bout, a bumper

*Rowell*: *to rowell*, to apply a seton.

*Ruffin*, a cant term for the devil

*Ruffie*, to be noisy, to swagger

*Ruffians*, a cant term for hedges

*Rundlets*, a kind of small barrels

*Runs*, cattle

*Rutter*, ("Custom of the Country," Act III, Scene 3.) a German horse-soldier; used perhaps with an allusion to the *rutting* of deer

## S

*Sad*, sage, wise, serious

*Safeguard*, ("The Noble Gentleman," Act II, Scene 1,) an outward petticoat, to preserve the other clothes from soiling

*Saliant*, leaping, bounding

*Salmson*, the oath of the beggars

*Salvage*, savage

*Santie*: a *black santie*, ("The Mad Lover," Act IV, Scene 1.) A black sanctus, a kind of burlesque hymn; used also for any confused and violent noise

*Sardine*, a fish resembling the anchovy or plichard

*Sattin*: *I am in sattin*, ("The Honest Man's Fortune," Act IV, Scene 1.) "I am a gentleman:" an allusion to his dress

*Sawnee-bell*, or *sance-bell*: *sanctus-bell*, rung when the priest said, "Sanctus, sanctus, sanctus, Dominus Deus Sabaoth."—*Coxcomb's English Diet.*

*Say*: *to be a say*, a sample or example

*Say*: *assay*, a hunting term for the first cut of the deer, to ascertain the depth of fat

*Scald*, scabby, mean, shabby

*Scallion*, a kind of onion  
*Scarabs*, a kind of beetles that breed in dung  
*Scenes*, a petty fortification  
*Sealed up*, a term of falconry; properly spelt *seeled*. When a hawk was first taken, a thread was run through its eyelids, so that it might see very little, till it became tractable  
*Seared*, shrunk or dried up  
*Servant*, lover or admirer; so also to do me service, to become my servant  
*Shadows*, disguises  
*Shape*, habit or dress; a theatrical term  
*Shent*, soiled  
*Shog off*, jog off  
*Shotten-souled*: you pilchers, you shotten-souled slight fellows, ("Wit without Money," Act iii, Scene 4.) A term used in allusion to the fish (pilchard) which, when he has spent his roe, is said to be shotten  
*Sibbe*, akin  
*Sicker*, groaning  
*Simming*, simmering  
*Skewed at*, looked at sidelong, obliquely  
*Skull*: I skill not, I care not: it skills not, it matters not  
*Skink*, to serve out liquor  
*Skir*, to scour  
*Slubberduggillon*, a word formed from *slubber*, and *gull*  
*'Swails*, an abbreviation of the oath, "by God's nails," i. e. the nails of the cross  
*Snap-haunces*, firelocks; used metaphorically, ("Women Pleas'd," Act iii, Scene 2)  
*Snick up*, equivalent to Go hang!  
*Swigled*, caught; a fisherman's term for catching eels  
*Sort*, a company  
*Sort*, men of sort, men of quality  
*Sousder*, a herd of wild swine  
*Souse*, pickle  
*Souse*, to, to strike with sudden violence, as a bird strikes its prey  
*Soester*, a cobbler  
*Spanish block*, a hat in the Spanish fashion  
*Sparkle*, to scatter, disperse  
*Spiced*, precise, scrupulous  
*Spoom*, a nautical term for sailing on steadily  
*Springall*, or *springald*, a youth  
*Springs*, tunes, ("The Prophets," Act v, Scene 3)  
*Spur-royals*, spur-royals, a gold coin current in the reign of James I. and worth 15s., being half a rose-royal  
*Square-eaters*, ("Bonduca," Act ii, Scene 3), hearty feeders  
*Stuggers*, a disease incident to horses  
*Stale*, a word in fowling, meaning a halt or decoy to catch birds; a stalking-horse; also applied to a strumpet, from the idea of her enticing or ensnaring  
*Stall*, install  
*Stammel*, a coarse kind of red cloth  
*Stamp*, coin, a halfpenny  
*Standergrass*, satyrion  
*Stark*, strong  
*Slate*, properly the raised platform on which a throne or chair of state is placed; but it is also applied to the canopy over the chair, and to the chair itself. Also estate, courtly

behaviour, and a person of high distinction  
*Startups*, rustic shoes, with high tops, or half gaiters  
*Statist*, generally used for a statesman; but sometimes, as in "The Laws of Candy," for a secretary  
*Staved*, beaten with staves  
*Starting*: a strange staving fellow, ("The Pilgrim," Act ii, Scene 2), explained by the commentators,—having a pilgrim's staff in his hands  
*Stillatory*, distillery  
*Stinger*, a provocation, a corroative  
*Stitches*, grimaces  
*Stiver*, a strumpet  
*Stock*, stocking  
*Stock*: to, a chevalier would stock a needle's point, ("Love's Cure," Act iii, Scene 4); that is, would hit it with a stoccard, a thrust with his rapier  
*Stock*: nay, then I must buy the stock; send me good carding, ("Humorous Lieutenant," Act iv, Scene 1); i. e. I must play out the game; I must take in the cards: buying the stock is a term used at gleek—THEOBALD  
*Stoop*, a vessel for drinking  
*Stoops*: she makes her stoops, is an allusion to the term in falconry, when the hawk stoops (darts down) upon the quarry, the game pursued  
*Strain*, constrain or force  
*Strike*, cant term: strike all the cheats, steal everything you meet with  
*Strike*: strike a fresh piece of wine, ("Monsieur Thomas," Act v, Scene 10), tap a fresh butt of wine  
*Stringer*, a phrase similar to *striker*, denoting a wench  
*Strip*, outstrip  
*Strommel*, a cant term for straw  
*Structures*, contrivances  
*Stupes*, ("The Lover's Progress," Act 1, Scene 2), pledgets of flax or tow, dipped in medicaments, and applied to wounds  
*Style*, title; an heraldic phrase  
*Sucker*, a sucking rabbit  
*Buckets*, confectionary  
*Summed*, a term in falconry for full plumed  
*Summer*, a summoner; an apparitor  
*Sumpters*, the burdens of a pack-horse; also used for the horse itself  
*Surcingle*, the jesses of a hawk  
*Surdung*, see *Sardina*  
*Surquedry*, pride or presumption  
*Swaddle*: ("The Captain," Act ii, Scene 2), to beat  
*Swary*, a blow, a sudden stroke  
*Swash*, black  
*Swash-buckler*: this is equivalent to roaring, blustering fellow  
*Sweet ulandi*: ("Rule a Wife and have a Wife," Act iii, Scene 2), alluding to the West Indies  
*Swinge*, to beat  
*Synnet*, a short flourish of music, generally on cornets

## T

*Table*: a table of the passion, ("Custom of the Country," Act iv, Scene 2.) a picture of the [Lord's] Passion  
*Tables*, table-books, or memorandum books; also the game of backgammon  
*Tall*: You're a tall soldier, ("Humor-

ous Lieutenant," Act i, Scene 2.) a stout, bold, or courageous soldier  
*Tally*: you that stand so tally on your reputation, ("The Captain," Act ii, Scene 2), you that hold yourself so strong, or brave, on your reputation. See *Tall*  
*Tang*, i. e. twang  
*Tarmont*, a corruption of *terragant*  
*Tartarian*, a cant term for thief  
*Taudry lace*, a sort of band, for the head or waist  
*Taxes*: all private taxes ("Knight of the Burning Pestle," Introduction,) all reflections on individuals  
*Teer*: Irish heads of teer ("The Scornful Lady," Act iii, Scene 1.) alludes to the enormous horns of the moose deer found in the bogs of Ireland—MASON  
*Tell*, count, reckon  
*Tenter*: tenter his credit, stretch his credit to the utmost extent, as cloth is expanded upon the tenter-hooks  
*Terzagant* was a Saracen deity, very clamorous and violent, in the old moralities—PASCY  
*Terwers*, persons frequenting London during the term time  
*Tettish*, peevish, tetchy, fretful, irritable  
*Tew*, to beat, to stretch. The word properly means to use as leather is used in dressing; to tew a hide is to dress it  
*Teugh*, a fishing line, rope  
*Tial*, this word is used in the "Wild-goose Chase," Act ii, Scene 1, for a bond or tie  
*Tibs*, of the *buttery*—green  
*'Till* is frequently used for *whilst*, and *vice versa*  
*Tiller*, a steel bow  
*Timonst*, a misanthrope; an allusion to Timon of Athens  
*Tine* is used for *tear*, sorrow  
*Tivvaces*, ("Monsieur Thomas," Act iii, Scene 1.) Perhaps a misprint for *tiptoes*  
*Tive*, to, to tear or rend in pieces; to prey upon  
*Tith*, tight, strong  
*Thereafter* is sometimes used for accordingly  
*Thicks*, thickets  
*Three pils*, an allusion to three-piled velvet, the most costly kind of velvet  
*Toad-stone*. It was commonly believed that a stone, of high medicinal qualities, was contained in the head of toads  
*Tod-ivy* and *lod of ivy*, tuft or bush of ivy  
*Tod*, applied to wool and hay, signifies a certain weight, i. e. 28 pounds  
*Tole*, draw, or entice forward  
*Topless*, supreme, having nothing superior  
*Trapt*, accoutred; as we still use the word trappings  
*Trash*, to keep back; he trasht me, ("Bonduca," Act i, Scene 1.) he checked my flight: a word of doubtful origin  
*Tra-trip*, a game played with dice, and probably in the tables  
*Traunce*, tramp  
*Treach*, traitor  
*Trechmore*, a bolsterous kind of dance to a lively tune  
*Trickments*. See "trickt"

*Trick and blazed.* ("The Night-walker," Act i, Scene 7.) *Tricking* is drawing any person's arms with pen and ink; *blazoning* them is to set them forth in their proper colours  
*Trine*, cant term for hang  
*Trossers*, tight drawers  
*Troul*: *troul the black bowl to me*, pass the bowl round to me; so *troul* a catch  
*True man*, an honest man; generally used in opposition to a thief  
*Trump*, a game at cards  
*Trunk-hose*, a kind of large slope or breeches  
*Trutch sword*, a sword of ceremony at funerals  
*Tub*, the sweating tub, commonly used for the cure of the venereal disease  
*Turkey toms*, turkey pies  
*Tueang*, (cant term,) lie with  
*Twirl*, ("Women Pleased," Act iv, Scene 1,) to peep out, glance at obliquely  
*Twire-pipe*, ("Monsieur Thomas," Act iii, Scene 1.) NARES (*Gloss.*) remarks, that "to *twire* sometimes means to sing [or chirp], and to this *twire-pipe* seems to allude."

## U

*Umbrana*, a fish, the umber, or grayling  
*Unaffected*, insensible of affections  
*Uncertainty*, in the sense of inconsistency  
*Unhappy*, in the sense of mischievous; it is also sometimes used for waggish.—*What unhappy meaning hast thou*.—"Loyal Subject," Act ii, Scene 2.)  
*Unmanned hawk*, an untamed hawk, one not yet made familiar with man  
*Unready*, undressed  
*Unwappered*, perhaps, unworried; according to STEVENS, undebilitated by venery  
*Unworded*, without speaking  
*Upright lord*, a cant term. "The upright man [of a company of beggars] is the chief of the ragged regiment: he walks like a commander, with a

short truncheon in his hand, which he calls his *Nickman*; pretends himself to be a decayed soldier, and claims a share in all the booties which any inferior rogues do get: he hath all the *morts* and *doxies* at his back, and can command any other of the gang at pleasure"—ENGLISH ROOVS, ii. 121

*Upsey-Dutch*, } Cant terms of tip-  
*Upsey-English*, } plers, for being in-  
 toxicated—in the Dutch fashion, &c.  
*Use*, to frequent, lodge  
*Use*, interest of money; behaviour  
*Ut-r*: *to utter socks*, ("The Captain," Act ii, Scene 1,) to sell

## V

*Velure*, velvet  
*Velvet-head*, ("The Chances," Act iv, Scene 3,) in allusion to the velvet hood worn by the bawd. *Velvet-headed cuckold*, ("The Coxcomb," Act i, Scene 3,) perhaps a twofold allusion to the down on the young horns of deer, and the velvet caps worn by old men  
*Velvet-pec*, ("Love's Cure," Act ii, Scene 2,) perhaps, as Mason conjectures, should be *velvet-peel*, i. e. velvet covering  
*Venie*, a bout of fighting  
*Vent*, ("Love's Pilgrimage," Act i, Scene 1.) *Venta*, (Spanish) an inn  
*Vie*. *Vie* and *revie* are terms in the old game at cards, called *gleek*  
*Vitify*, hold cheap  
*Virginals*, a musical instrument of the spinnet kind  
*Virtuous*, salutiferous  
*Visited houses*, houses visited by the plague  
*Voider*, a basket or tray into which the broken meat, &c. was swept, and carried from table

## W

*Wafer-woman*, a woman that sells wafer cakes; often employed in amorous embassies  
*Waist-coateers*, strumpets. A kind of

waistcoat was peculiar to that class of females  
*Wale*, texture  
*Wannion*, with a *wannion*, equivalent to—with a vengeance, or plague  
*Warden*, a kind of pear  
*Washing-beetle*, a rammer or beating-staff, used by laundresses to press the linen in washing  
*Wassel*, or *Wassail*, is a word still in use in the midland counties, and it signifies what is sometimes called *lambs-wool*, i. e. roasted apples in strong beer, with sugar and spice. It is sometimes also used for general riot, intemperance, or festivity  
*Waster*, a cudgel  
*Wemb*, belly

*Where*, is frequently used for *whereas*  
*Whids*: *cut bene whids*, in cant language, speak better words  
*Whiffer*, a person who cleared the way for a procession: in Chapman's verses on the *Faithful Shepherdess*, it means a person to introduce  
*Whipstock*, the stock or handle of a whip, but frequently used for the whip itself  
*White-boy*, a usual term of endearment  
*Whiting-mops*, young whittings; a term of endearment  
*Whodub*, a corruption of hubbub  
*Whooed*, cried out upon, hooted  
*Wigher*, neigh  
*Will*, wilfulness  
*Wittols*, patient cuckolds  
*Won*, dwell  
*Wood*, mad  
*Woodcock*, a term for a foolish fellow. The woodcock was proverbial as a foolish bird  
*Wreak*, revenge  
*Wyth*, a band of twisted osiers or other twigs, and thence applied to a halter: *A wyth take him*, ("The Coxcomb," Act iii, Scene 2,) a halter take him

## Y

*Yoke*, in a nautical sense, to grapple with

## Z

*Zany*, a buffoon, a mimic

THE END.